GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT IN THE LIGHT OF HISTORICAL RESEARCH

BY
A. T. ROBERTSON, M.A., D.D., LL.D., LITT.D.
Professor of Interpretation of the New Testament in the
Southern Baptist Theological Seminary
Louisville, Ky.

Digitized by Ted Hildebrandt at Gordon College, Wenham, MA
March 2006

ς ἔχομεν δὲ τὸν θησαυρὸν τοῦτον ἐν ὀστρακίνοις σκεύσειν,
ίνα ἡ ὑπεβολὴ τῆς δυνάμεως ἢ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ μὴ ἔξ ἡμῶν.
— 2 COR. 4:7

THIRD EDITION
HODDER & STOUGHTON
LONDON : : : MCMXIX
TO

THE MEMORY OF

John A. Broadus

SCHOLAR  TEACHER  PREACHER
PREFACE

IT is with mingled feelings of gratitude and regret that I let this book go to the public. I am grateful for God's sustaining grace through so many years of intense work and am fully conscious of the inevitable imperfections that still remain. For a dozen years this Grammar has been the chief task of my life. I have given to it sedulously what time was mine outside of my teaching. But it was twenty-six years ago that my great predecessor in the chair of New Testament Interpretation proposed to his young assistant that they together get out a revised edition of Winer. The manifest demand for a new grammar of the New Testament is voiced by Thayer, the translator of the American edition of Winer's Grammar, in his article on "Language of the New Testament" in Hastings' Dictionary of the Bible.

I actually began the work and prepared the sheets for the first hundred pages, but I soon became convinced that it was not possible to revise Winer's Grammar as it ought to be done without making a new grammar on a new plan. So much progress had been made in comparative philology and historical grammar since Winer wrote his great book that it seemed useless to go on with it. Then Dr. Broadus said to me that he was out of it by reason of his age, and that it was my task. He reluctantly gave it up and pressed me to go on. From that day it was in my thoughts and plans and I was gathering material for the great undertaking. If Schmiedel had pushed through his work, I might have stopped. By the time that Dr. James Hope Moulton announced his new grammar, I was too deep into the enterprise to draw back. And so I have held to the titanic task somehow till the end has come. There were many discouragements and I was often tempted to give it up at all costs. No one who has not done similar work can understand the amount of research, the mass of detail and the reflection required in a book of this nature. The mere physical effort of writing was a joy of expression in comparison with the rest. The title of Cauer's brilliant book, Grammatica Militans (now in the third edition), aptly describes the spirit of the grammarian who to-day attacks the
problems of the language of the New Testament in the light of historical research.

From one point of view a grammar of the Greek New Testament is an impossible task, if one has to be a specialist in the whole Greek language, in Latin, in Sanskrit, in Hebrew and the other Semitic tongues, in Church History, in the Talmud, in English, in psychology, in exegesis.\(^1\) I certainly lay no claim to omniscience. I am a linguist by profession and by love also, but I am not a specialist in the Semitic tongues, though I have a working knowledge of Hebrew and Aramaic, but not of Syriac and Arabic. The Coptic and the Sanskrit I can use. The Latin and the Greek, the French and German and Anglo-Saxon complete my modest linguistic equipment. I have, besides, a smattering of Assyrian, Dutch, Gothic and Italian.

I have explained how I inherited the task of this Grammar from Broadus: He was a disciple of Gessner Harrison, of the University of Virginia, who was the first scholar in America to make use of Bopp's *Vergleichende Grammatik*. Broadus' views of grammar were thus for long considered queer by the students who came to him trained in the traditional grammars and unused to the historical method; but he held to his position to the end.

This Grammar aims to keep in touch at salient points with the results of comparative philology and historical grammar as the true linguistic science. In theory one should be allowed to assume all this in a grammar of the Greek N. T., but in fact that cannot be done unless the book is confined in use to a few technical scholars. I have tried not to inject too much of general grammar into the work, but one hardly knows what is best when the demands are so varied. So many men now get no Greek except in the theological seminary that one has to interpret for them the language of modern philology. I have simply sought in a modest way to keep the Greek of the N. T. out in the middle of the linguistic stream as far as it is proper to do so. In actual class use some teachers will skip certain chapters.

Alfred Gudemann,\(^2\) of Munich, says of American classical scholars: "Not a single contribution marking genuine progress, no work on an extensive scale, opening up a new perspective or breaking entirely new ground, nothing, in fact, of the slightest scientific value can be placed to their credit." That is a serious charge, to be sure, but then originality is a relative matter. The

\(^1\) Cf. Dr. James Moffatt's remarks in The Expositor, Oct., 1910, p. 383 f.

true scholar is only too glad to stand upon the shoulders of his predecessors and give full credit at every turn. Who could make any progress in human knowledge but for the ceaseless toil of those\(^1\) who have gone before? Prof. Paul Shorey,\(^2\) of the University of Chicago, has a sharp answer to Prof. Gudemann. He speaks of "the need of rescuing scholarship itself from the German yoke." He does not mean "German pedantry and superfluous accuracy in insignificant research — but . . . in all seriousness from German inaccuracy." He continues about "the disease of German scholarship" that "insists on 'sweat-boxing' the evidence and straining after 'vigorous and rigorous' demonstration of things that do not admit of proof." There probably are German scholars guilty of this grammatical vice (are American and British scholars wholly free?). But I wish to record my conviction that my own work, such as it is, would have been impossible but for the painstaking and scientific investigation of the Germans at every turn. The republic of letters is cosmopolitan. In common with all modern linguists I have leaned upon Brugmann and Delbrtick as masters in linguistic learning.

I cannot here recite my indebtedness to all the scholars whose books and writings have helped me. But, besides Broadus, I must mention Gildersleeve as the American Hellenist whose wit and wisdom have helped me over many a hard place. Gildersleeve has spent much of his life in puncturing grammatical bubbles blown by other grammarians. He exercises a sort of grammatical censorship. "At least whole grammars have been constructed about one emptiness."\(^3\) It is possible to be "grammar mad," to use The Independent's phrase.\(^4\) It is easy to scout all grammar and say: "Grammar to the Wolves."\(^5\) Browning sings in A Grammarian's Funeral:

"He settled Hoti's business — let it be!
Properly based Oun
Gave us the doctrine of the enclitic De,
Dead from the waist down."

---

\(^1\) F. H. Colson, in an article entitled "The Grammatical Chapters in Quintilian," I, 4–8 (The Cl. Quarterly, Jan., 1914, p. 33), says: "The five chapters which Quintilian devotes to 'Grammatica' are in many ways the most valuable discussion of the subject which we possess," though he divides "grammatica" into "grammar" and "literature," and (p. 37) "the whole of this chapter is largely directed to meet the objection that grammar is 'tenuis et jejuna.'"

\(^2\) The Cl. Weekly, May 27, 1911, p. 229.


\(^4\) 1911, 717.

\(^5\) Article by F. A. W. Henderson, Blackwood for May, 1906.
Perhaps those who pity the grammarian do not know that he finds joy in his task and is sustained by the conviction that his work is necessary. Prof. C. F. Smith (The Classical Weekly, 1912, p. 150) tells of the joy of the professor of Greek at Bonn when he received a copy of the first volume of Gildersleeve's Syntax of Classical Greek. The professor brought it to the Seminar and "clasped and hugged it as though it were a most precious darling (Liebling)." Dr. A. M. Fairbairn¹ once said: "No man can be a theologian who is not a philologist. He who is no grammarian is no divine." Let Alexander McLaren serve as a good illustration of that dictum. His matchless discourses are the fruit of the most exact scholarship and spiritual enthusiasm. I venture to quote another defence of the study of Greek which will, I trust, yet come back to its true place in modern education. Prof. G. A. Williams, of Kalamazoo College, says²: "Greek yet remains the very best means we have for plowing up and wrinkling the human brain and developing its gray matter, and wrinkles and gray matter are still the most valuable assets a student can set down on the credit side of his ledger."

Dr. J. H. Moulton has shown that it is possible to make grammar interesting, as Gildersleeve had done before him. Moulton protests³ against the notion that grammar is dull: "And yet there is no subject which can be made more interesting than grammar, a science which deals not with dead rocks or mindless vegetables, but with the ever changing expression of human thought." I wish to acknowledge here my very great indebtedness to Dr. Moulton for his brilliant use of the Egyptian papyri in proof of the fact that the New Testament was written in the vernacular koinē. Deissmann is the pioneer in this field and is still the leader in it. It is hard to overestimate the debt of modern New Testament scholarship to his work. Dr. D. S. Margoliouth, it is true, is rather pessimistic as to the value of the papyri: "Not one per cent. of those which are deciphered and edited with so much care tell us anything worth knowing."⁴ Certainly that is too

¹ Address before the Baptist Theological College at Glasgow, reported in The British Weekly, April 26, 1906.
² The Cl. Weekly, April 16, 1910.
³ London Quarterly Review, 1908, p. 214. Moulton and Deissmann also disprove the pessimism of Hatch (Essays in Biblical Greek, p. 1): "The language of the New Testament, on the other hand, has not yet attracted the special attention of any considerable scholar. There is no good lexicon. There is no good philological commentary. There is no adequate grammar."
⁴ The Expositor, Jan., 1912, p. 73.
gloomy a statement. Apart from the linguistic value of the papyri and the ostraca which has been demonstrated, these letters and receipts have interest as human documents. They give us real glimpses of the actual life of the common people in the first Christian centuries, their joys and their sorrows, the little things that go so far to make life what it is for us all. But the student of the Greek New Testament finds a joy all his own in seeing so many words in common use that were hitherto found almost or quite alone in the New Testament or LXX. But the grammar of the N. T. has also had a flood of light thrown on it from the papyri, ostraca and inscriptions as a result of the work of Deissmann; Mayser, Milligan, Moulton, Radermacher, Thumb, Volker, Wilcken and others. I have gratefully availed myself of the work of these scholars and have worked in this rich field for other pertinent illustrations of the New Testament idiom. The material is almost exhaustless and the temptation was constant to use too much of it. I have not thought it best to use so much of it in proportion as Radermacher has done, for the case is now proven and what Moulton and Radermacher did does not have to be repeated. As large as my book is, the space is precious for the New Testament itself. But I have used the new material freely. The book has grown so that in terror I often hold back. It is a long step from Winer, three generations ago, to the present time. We shall never go back again to that standpoint. Winer was himself a great emancipator in the grammatical field. But the battles that he fought are now ancient history.

It is proper to state that the purpose of this Grammar is not that of the author's Short Grammar which is now in use in various modern languages of America and Europe. That book has its own place. The present volume is designed for advanced students in theological schools, for the use of teachers, for scholarly pastors who wish a comprehensive grammar of the Greek New Testament on the desk for constant use, for all who make a thorough study of the New Testament or who are interested in the study of language, and for libraries. If new editions come, as I hope, I shall endeavour to make improvements and corrections. Errata are sure to exist in a book of this nature. Occasionally (cf. Accusative with Infinitive) the same subject is treated more than once for the purpose of fulness at special points. Some repetition is necessary in teaching. Some needless repetition can be eliminated later. I may explain also that the
works used by me in the Bodleian Library and the British Museum had the citations copied twice with double opportunity for errors of reference, but I have guarded that point to the best of my ability. I have been careful to give credit in detail to the many works consulted.

But, after all is said, I am reluctant to let my book slip away from my hands. There is so much yet to learn. I had hoped that Mayser's *Syntax der griechischen Papyri* could have appeared so that I could have used it, but he sorrowfully writes me that illness has held him back. Neither Helbing nor Thackeray has finished his *Syntax of the LXX*. The N. T. Vocabulary of Moulton and Milligan, though announced, has not yet appeared. Deissmann's *Lexicon* is still in the future. Thumb's revision of Brugmann's *Griechische Grammatik* appeared after my book had gone to the press.¹ I could use it only here and there. The same thing is true of Debrunner's revision of Blass' *Grammatik des neatest. Griechisch*. New light will continue to be turned on the Greek Of the N. T. Prof. J. Rendel Harris (*The Expository Times*, Nov., 1913, p. 54 f.) points out, what had not been recently noticed, that Prof. Masson, in his first edition of Winer in 1859, p. vii, had said: "The diction of the New Testament is the plain and unaffected Hellenic of the Apostolic Age, as employed by Greek-speaking Christians when discoursing on religious subjects . . . Apart from the Hebraisms — the number of which has, for the most part, been grossly exaggerated — the New Testament may be considered as exhibiting the only genuine fac-simile of the colloquial diction employed by unsophisticated Grecian gentlemen of the first century, who spoke without pedantry — as ἰδιωταί and not as σοφισταί." The papyri have simply confirmed the insight of Masson in 1859 and of Lightfoot in 1863 (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 242). One's mind lingers with fascination over the words of the New Testament as they meet him in unexpected contexts in the papyri, as when ἄρετή (cf. 1 Pet. 2 : 9) occurs in the sense of 'Thy Excellency,' ἔχω παρα-σχέυν τῇ σῇ ἄρετῇ, 0. P. 1131, 11 f. (v/A.D.), or when ὑπερψον (Ac. 1:13) is used of a pigeon-house, τὸν ὑπερψον τόπον τῆς ὑπαρχούσης αὐτῷ ἐν Μουχλυψρ οἰκίας, 0. P. 1127, 5-7 (A.D. 183). But the book must now go forth to do its part in the elucidation of the New

¹ Prof. E. H. Sturtevant (Cl. Weekly, Jan. 24, 1914, p. 103) criticises Thumb because he retains in his revision of Brugmann's book the distinction between accidence and syntax, and so is "not abreast of the best scholarship of the day." But for the N.T. the distinction is certainly useful.
Testament, the treasure of the ages. I indulge the hope that the toil has not been all in vain. Marcus Dods (Later Letters, p. 248) says: "I admire the grammarians who are content to add one solid stone to the permanent temple of knowledge instead of twittering round it like so many swallows and only attracting attention to themselves." I make no complaint of the labour of the long years, for I have had my reward in a more intimate knowledge of the words of Jesus and of his reporters and interpreters. 

Theta rhymanata e'geno lela'leikha um'inn pnev'ma estin kai zwh' estin (Jo. 6:63).

I must record my grateful appreciation of the sympathy and help received from many friends all over the world as I have plodded on through the years. My colleagues in the Seminary Faculty have placed me under many obligations in making it possible for me to devote myself to my task and in rendering substantial help. In particular Pres. E. Y. Mullins and Prof. J. R. Sampey have been active in the endowment of the plates. Prof. Sampey also kindly read the proof of the Aramaic and Hebrew words. Prof. W. 0. Carver graciously read the proof of the entire book and made many valuable suggestions. Dr. S. Angus, of Edinburgh, read the manuscript in the first rough draft and was exceedingly helpful in his comments and sympathy. Prof. W. H. P. Hatch, of the General Episcopal Theological Seminary, New York, read the manuscript for the publishers and part of the proof and exhibited sympathetic insight that is greatly appreciated. Prof. J. S. Riggs, of the Auburn Theological Seminary, read the proof till his health gave way, and was gracious in his enthusiasm for the enterprise. Prof. Walter Petersen, Ph.D., of Bethany College, Lindsborg, Kansas, read all the proof and freely gave his linguistic attainments to the improvement of the book. Last, but not least in this list, Mr. H. Scott, of Birkenhead, England, read the book in galley proof, and in the Accidence verified all the references with minute care and loving interest, and all through the book contributed freely from his wealth of knowledge of detail concerning the Greek N. T. The references in Syntax were verified by a dozen of my students whose labour of love is greatly appreciated. Pres. J. W. Shepherd, of Rio Janeiro, Brazil, and Prof. G. W. Taylor, of Pineville, La., had verified the Scripture references in the MS., which were again verified in proof. The Index of Quotations has been prepared by

1 Brilliant use of the new knowledge is made by Dr. James Moffatt's New Testament (A New Translation, 1913).
Rev. W. H. Davis, of Richmond College, Va.; the Index of Greek Words by Rev. S. L. Watson, Tutor of N. T. Greek for this session in the Seminary. All this work has been done for me freely and gladly. The mere recital of it humbles me very much. Without this expert aid in so many directions the book could not have been produced at all. I must add, however, that all errors should be attributed to me. I have done the best that I could with my almost impossible task. I have had to put on an old man's glasses during the reading of the proof.

I must add also my sincere appreciation of the kind words of Prof. Edwin Mayser of Stuttgart, Oberlehrer H. Stocks of Cottbus, Pres. D. G. Whittinghill of Rome, Prof. Caspar Rene Gregory of Leipzig, the late Prof. E. Nestle of Maulbronn, Prof. James Stalker of Aberdeen, Prof. Giovanni Luzzi of Florence, Prof. J. G. Machen of Princeton, Profs. G. A. Johnston Ross and Jas. E. Frame of Union Seminary, and many others who have cheered me in my years of toil. For sheer joy in the thing Prof. C. M. Cobern of Allegheny College, Penn., and Mr. Dan Crawford, the author of *Thinking Black*, have read a large part of the proof.

I gladly record my gratitude to Mr. G. W. Norton, Misses Lucie and Mattie Norton, Mr. R. A. Peter (who gave in memory of his father and mother, Dr. and Mrs. Arthur Peter), Rev. R. N. Lynch, Rev. R. J. Burdette, Mr. F. H. Goodridge, and others who have generously contributed to the endowment of the plates so that the book can be sold at a reasonable price. I am indebted to Mr. K. B. Grahn for kindly co-operation. I am deeply grateful also to the Board of Trustees of the Seminary for making provision for completing the payment for the plates.

It is a pleasure to add that Mr. Doran has shown genuine enthusiasm in the enterprise, and that Mr. Linsenbarth of the University Press, Cambridge, has taken the utmost pains in the final proofreading.

I should say that the text of Westcott and Hort is followed in all essentials. Use is made also of the Greek Testaments of Nestle, Souter, and Von Soden whose untimely death is so recent an event. In the chapter on Orthography and Phonetics more constant use is made, for obvious reasons, of variations in the manuscripts than in the rest of the book. It is now four hundred years since Cardinal Francisco Ximenes de Cisneros had printed the Greek New Testament under the auspices of the University of Alcalá or Complutum, near Madrid, though it
was not circulated till 1522. Erasmus got his edition into circulation in 1516. "The Complutensian edition of 1514 was the first of more than a thousand editions of the New Testament in Greek" (E. J. Goodspeed, The Biblical World, March, 1914, p. 166). It thus comes to pass that the appearance of my Grammar marks the four hundredth anniversary of the first printed Greek New Testament, and the book takes its place in the long line of aids to the study of the "Book of Humanity." The Freer Gospels and the Karidethi Gospels show how much we have to expect in the way of discovery of manuscripts of the New Testament. I think with pleasure of the preacher or teacher who under the inspiration of this Grammar may turn afresh to his Greek New Testament and there find things new and old, the vital message all electric with power for the new age. That will be my joy so long as the book shall find use and service at the hands of the ministers of Jesus Christ.

A. T. ROBERTSON.

LOUISVILLE, KY., 1914.

PREFACE TO SECOND EDITION

THE second edition has been called for so soon that I did not have the opportunity for rest that I desired before preparing for it. But I have gone steadily through the book with eager eyes. The result is that some five hundred changes have been made in the text here and there, all for the improvement of the book in one way or another, besides the Addenda at the end of the book. Most of the changes are small details, but they are all worth making. The Addenda are as few as possible because of the great size of the volume. I have been more than gratified at the kindly reception accorded the book all over the world in spite of the distraction of the dreadful war. Many scholars have offered helpful criticisms for which I am deeply grateful. In particular I wish to mention Prof. C. M. Cobern, Allegheny College, Meadville, Penn.; Prof. D. F. Estes, Colgate University, Hamilton, N. Y.; Prof. Basil L. Gildersleeve, The Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore; Prof. E. J. Goodspeed, the University of Chicago; Prof. D. A. Hayes, Garrett Biblical Institute, Evanston, Ill.; Prof. James Moffatt, Mansfield College, Oxford, England; Prof.
C. W. Peppler, Trinity College, Durham, N. C.; Prof. W. Petersen, Bethany College, Lindsborg; Kansas; Mr. William Pitfield, Manchester, England; Rev. Dr. Alfred Plummer, Bideford, England; Mr. H. Scott, Birkenhead, England; Prof. James Stalker, United Free Church College, Aberdeen, Scotland; Dr. Gross Alexander, Nashville, Tenn. I hope that future editions may make it possible to improve the book still further. Various minor repetitions have been removed, though more still remain than is necessary. But the book is at least made more intelligible thereby. The numerous cross-references help also.

In the *Neutestamentliche Studien* (1914) in honour of the seventieth birthday of Dr. Georg Heinrici of the University of Leipzig there is a paper by Heinrich Schlosser "Zur Geschichte der biblischen Philologie." He tells the story of "the first grammar of the New Testament Greek" (1655). It is by Georg Pasor and is entitled *Grammatica Graeca Sacra Novi Testamenti Domini nostri Jesu Christi*. His son, Matthias Pasor, Professor of Theology at Groningen, found his father’s manuscript and let it lie for eighteen years because many held grammatical study to be puerile or pedantic and the book would have few readers. Finally he published it in 1655, since he held grammar to be "clavis scientiarum omnisque soliciiae eruditionis ac fundamentum." He was cheered by Melanchthon’s "fine word": "Theologia vera est grammatica quaedam divinae vocis." It is only 260 years since 1655.

New books continue to come out that throw light on the language of the New Testament. Part I (through a) of Moulton and Milligan’s *Vocabulary of the Greek Testament Illustrated from the Papyri and Other Non-literary Sources* (1914) is now a rich treasure in the hands of students. Sharp’s *Epictetus and the New Testament* (1914) is a very helpful monograph full of suggestions. A note from Dr. Albert Thumb announces that he is at work on a revision of his *Hellenismus*. So the good work goes on.

A. T. ROBERTSON.

AUGUST, 1915.
MY grammar has had to live and do its work in spite of the Great War, but the time for the Third Edition has come. In a letter Dr. Alfred Plummer says: "That so technical and expensive a volume should be already in a third edition in the fifth year of the war is indeed triumphant evidence of the value of the book. Scientific grammar is appreciated more widely than one would antecedently have ventured to expect." These few years have allowed time for a thorough verification of the multitudinous references. This enormous task has been done as a labor of love by Mr. H. Scott, of Birkenhead, England, whose patient skill has placed all users of the book under a debt of gratitude that can never be paid. He had already put his invaluable services at my disposal, but now his leisure permitted him to employ his really wonderful statistical knowledge of the Greek New Testament for the benefit of students. These extremely useful tables are found in the Addenda to this Edition. I am sure that all New Testament students will appreciate and profit greatly from these tables.

A brilliant student of mine, Rev. W. H. Davis, has found some striking illustrations in the papyri that appear in the Addenda, besides a number from my own readings. Dr. Davis is at work on the lexical aspects of the papyri and the inscriptions. If his studies lead him on to prepare a New Testament lexicon, the world will be the better for such an outcome.

Mr. J. F. Springer, of New York City, has also made some valuable contributions which appear in the Addenda. I am indebted also to Prof. Robert Law, of Knox College, Toronto, for errata.

I have watched with eagerness for criticisms of the book and have done my best to turn them to the improvement of the grammar. It is gratifying to know that ministers are using it in their studies as one of the regular tools in the shop. In the classroom only selected portions can be covered; but the preacher can use it every day (as many do) in his reading and study of the Greek New Testament. There are many ministers who read the Greek New Testament through once a year, some of it every day, besides the solid, critical study of a Gospel or Epistle with commentary, lexicon and grammar. This is the work that pays one a hundredfold in his preaching. My own reward for the long years of devotion to this grammar is found in the satisfaction that
scholarly ministers are using the book for their own enrichment. I have been gratified to learn of laymen who use the book regularly.

Besides the correction of infelicities and errata that could be found here and there and the Addenda at the end of the volume I have inserted a detailed Table of Contents which will greatly aid one in finding topics in the various chapters. The minute subdivisions with page references will supplement the various Indices to great advantage. The Index of Greek words, large as it is, was still incomplete. It has been doubled in this edition by Mr. Scott's assistance. The Additional Bibliography records the most important recent contributions.

Death has been busy with New Testament linguists. Dr. Gross Alexander, of Nashville, has been claimed by death. Dr. George Heinrici, of Leipzig, is dead. Dr. Albert Thumb, of Marburg, has likewise passed on. Dr. H. B. Swete, of Cambridge, and Principal James Denney, of Glasgow, have also joined the great majority. These are irreparable losses, but there are others and even greater ones. Dr. Caspar Rene Gregory, of Leipzig, though seventy years old, volunteered for the army and was killed in battle in France. With his death perished the hope of a new and revised edition of Tischendorf's _Novum Testamentum Graece_ for many years to come. A younger man must now take hold of this problem and make available for students the new textual knowledge.

Dr. James Hope Moulton fell a victim in April, 1917, in the Mediterranean Sea, to the German submarine. He was placed in a boat, but after several days succumbed to the exposure and cold. It was he who first applied in detail Deissmann's discovery that the New Testament was written in the current κοινή as seen in the Egyptian papyri. He had planned three volumes on the New Testament grammar. Volume I (the Prolegomena) appeared in 1906 (Third Ed., 1908). He had nearly finished Volume II (Accidence), but had done nothing on Syntax, the most important of all. His death is an unspeakable calamity, but his work will live, for his Prolegomena preserves his interpretation of the New Testament language. The Accidence will appear in due time (is already in press). Prof. George Milligan, of Glasgow, has completed the publication of the Vocabulary of the New Testament.

The workers die, but the work goes on. It is pleasant to think that Greek is renewing its grip upon the world. Professors Stuart and Tewksbury are preparing a grammar and lexicon for Chinese students of the New Testament. Japan will do likewise. Prof.
H. P. Houghton, of Waynesburg College, Pennsylvania, is confident that Greek can be saved for the college and the university, for "it is the basis of true culture" (The Classical Weekly, Dec. 11, 1916, p. 67). There is nothing like the Greek New Testament to rejuvenate the world, which came out of the Dark Ages with the Greek Testament in its hand. Erasmus wrote in the Preface to his Greek Testament about his own thrill of delight: "These holy pages will summon up the living image of His mind. They will give you Christ Himself, talking, healing, dying, rising, the whole Christ in a word; they will give Him to you in an intimacy so close that He would be less visible to you if He stood before your eyes." The Greek New Testament is the New Testament. All else is translation. Jesus speaks to us out of every page of the Greek. Many of his *ipsissima verba* are here preserved for us, for our Lord often spoke in Greek. To get these words of Jesus it is worth while to plow through any grammar and to keep on to the end.

At the age of sixteen John Brown, of Haddington, startled a bookseller by asking for a copy of the Greek Testament. He was barefooted and clad in ragged homespun clothes. He was a shepherd boy from the hills of Scotland. "What would *you* do with that book?" a professor scornfully asked. "I'll try to read it," the lad replied, and proceeded to read off a passage in the Gospel of John. He went off in triumph with the coveted prize, but the story spread that he was a wizard and had learned Greek by the black art. He was actually arraigned for witchcraft, but in 1746 the elders and deacons at Abernethy gave him a vote of acquittal, though the minister would not sign it. His letter of defence, Sir W. Robertson Nicoll says (The British Weekly, Oct. 3, 1918), "deserves to be reckoned among the memorable letters of the world." John Brown became a divinity student and finally professor of divinity. In the chapel at Mansfield College, Oxford, Brown's figure ranks with those of Doddridge, Fry, Chalmers, Vinet, Schleiermacher. He had taught himself Greek while herding his sheep, and he did it without a grammar. Surely young John Brown of Haddington should forever put to shame those theological students and busy pastors who neglect the Greek Testament, though teacher, grammar, lexicon are at their disposal.

In Current Opinion for January, 1919, page 18, in an article called "Europe's Ideas of Wilson the Man," one notes a pertinent sentence: "President Wilson once told a member of the diplo-
matic corps in Washington, who repeated it later in Paris, that if he were going to college all over again he would pay more attention to the Greek language, and literature, which American universities, on the whole, neglect." So the scholar-statesman feels. So the preacher ought to feel.

A. T. ROBERTSON.
## FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PREFACE</td>
<td>vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PREFACE TO SECOND EDITION</td>
<td>xv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION</td>
<td>xvii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LIST OF WORKS MOST OFTEN REFERRED TO</td>
<td>lxiii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADDITIONAL BIBLIOGRAPHY TO THIRD EDITION</td>
<td>lxxv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>PART I — INTRODUCTION</strong></td>
<td>1-139</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### CHAPTER I. New Material

3-30

The Ideal Grammar?

I. The Pre-Winer Period

3

II. The Service of Winer

(a) Winer's Inconsistencies

4

(b) Winer Epoch-Making

4

(c) Schmiedel

4

(d) Buttmann

5

(e) Blass

5

III. The Modern Period

5

(a) Deissmann

5

(b) Thumb

6

(c) Moulton

6

(d) Other Contributions

6

(c) Richness of Material

7

IV. The New Grammatical Equipment

8

(a) Comparative Philology

8

  1. The Linguistic Revolution

  8

  2. A Sketch of Greek Grammatical History

  8

  3. The Discovery of Sanskrit

  10

  4. From Bopp to Brugmann

  10

(b) Advance in General Greek Grammar

12

(c) Critical Editions of Greek Authors

13

(d) Works on Individual Writers

13

(e) The Greek Inscriptions

14

(f) Fuller Knowledge of the Dialects

16

(g) The Papyri and Ostraca

17

(h) The Byzantine and the Modern Greek

21

xxi
(i) The Hebrew and Aramaic
1. The Old View 24
2. A Change with Kennedy 25
3. Deissmann's Revolt 25
4. The Language of Jesus 26

(j) Grammatical Commentaries 29

V. The New Point of View 30

CHAPTER II. The Historical Method 31-48

I. Language as History 31
(a) Combining the Various Elements 31
(b) Practical Grammar a Compromise 32

II. Language as a Living Organism 33
(a) The Origin of Language 33
(b) Evolution in Language 34
(c) Change Chiefly in the Vernacular 34

III. Greek Not an Isolated Language 36
(a) The Importance of Comparative Grammar 36
(b) The Common Bond in Language 37
(c) The Original Indo-Germanic Speech 38
(d) Greek as a "Dialect" of the Indo-Germanic Speech 39

IV. Looking at the Greek Language as a Whole 40
(a) Descriptive Historical Grammar 41
(b) Unity of the Greek Language 41
(c) Periods of the Greek Language 43
(d) Modern Greek in Particular 44

V. The Greek Point of View 46

CHAPTER III. The Κοινή 49-75

I. The Term Κοινή 49

II. The Origin of the Κοινή 51
(a) Triumph of the Attic 51
(b) Fate of the Other Dialects 52
(c) Partial Koinés 53
(d) Effects of Alexander's Campaigns 53
(e) The March toward Universalism 54

III. The Spread of the Κοινή 54
(a) A World-Speech 54
(b) Vernacular and Literary 56
1. Vernacular 56
2. Literary 57
(c) The Atticistic Reaction 58
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>IV. The Characteristics of the Vernacular Κοινή</th>
<th>60</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(a) Vernacular Attic the Base</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Other Dialects in the Κοινή</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Non-Dialectical Changes</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) New Words, New Forms, or New Meanings to Old Words</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Provincial Influences</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) The Personal Equation</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Résumé</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phonetics and Orthography</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vocabulary</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Word-Formation</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Accidence</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syntax</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. The Adaptability of the Κοινή to the Roman World</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHAPTER IV. The Place of the New Testament in the Κοινή</td>
<td>76-139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. The New Testament Chiefly in the Vernacular Κοινή</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Not a Biblical Greek</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Proof that N. T. Greek is in the Vernacular Κοινή</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lexical</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grammatical</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. Literary Elements in the New Testament Greek</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. The Semitic Influence</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Tradition</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The View of Deissmann and Moulton</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Little Direct Hebrew Influence</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) A Deeper Impress by the Septuagint</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Aramaisms</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Varying Results</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Latinisms and Other Foreign Words</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. The Christian Addition</td>
<td>112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. Individual Peculiarities</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Mark</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Matthew</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Luke</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) James</td>
<td>123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Jude</td>
<td>124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Peter</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Paul</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) Writer of Hebrews</td>
<td>132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) John</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. N. T. Greek Illustrated by the Modern Greek Vernacular</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART II—ACCIDENCE

CHAPTER V. Word-Formation 143-176

I. Etymology 143

II. Roots 144

III. Words, with Formative Suffixes 146
   (a) Verbs 146
      1. Primary or Primitive Verbs 146
      2. Secondary or Derivative Verbs 147
   (b) Substantives 150
      1. Primary or Primitive Substantives 150
      2. Secondary or Derivative Substantives 151
         (α) Those from verbs 151
         (β) Those from substantives 154
         (γ) Those from adjectives 156
   (c) Adjectives 157
      1. Primary or Primitive Adjectives 157
      2. Secondary or Derivative Adjectives 158
         (α) Those from verbs 158
         (β) Those from substantives 158
         (γ) Those from adjectives 159
         (δ) Those from adverbs 160
   (d) The Adverb 160

IV. Words Formed by Composition (Composita) 160
   (a) Kinds of Compound Words in Greek 161
   (b) Inseparable Prefixes 161
   (c) Agglutinative Compounds (Juxtaposition or Parathesis) 163
      1. Verbs 163
      2. Substantives 165
      3. Adjectives 168
      4. Adverbs 169

V. Personal Names Abbreviated or Hypocoristic 171

VI. The History of Words 173

VII. The Kinship of Greek Words 174

VIII. Contrasts in Greek Words or Synonyms 175

CHAPTER VI. Orthography and Phonetics 177-245

I. The Uncertainty of the Evidence 177
   (a) The Ancient Literary Spelling 177
   (b) The Dialect-Coloured Vernacular 178
   (c) The Uncials 179
   (d) The Papyri 181
## II. Vowel-Changes

(a) The Changes (Interchanges) with α
- α and ε
- ε and α
- α and η
- α and ο
- α and ω
- α and αι
- αι and ε

(b) The Changes with ε
- ε and ει
- ε and η
- ε and ι
- ε and ο
- ει and ειν

(c) The Changes with η
- η and ι
- η and ει
- ι and ει
- η and η
- η and υ

(d) The Changes with ι
- ι and ει
- ει and ι
- ι and ο
- ι and οι
- ι and υ

(e) The Changes with ο
- ο and ου
- ο and υ
- ο and ω
- ω and ο

(f) The Changes with υ
- υ and ευ
- ευ and υ
- υ and ου

(g) The Changes with ω
- ω and ου
- ω and ωυ

(h) Contraction and Syncope
(i) Diphthongs and Dieresis
(j) Aphaeresis and Prothetic Vowels
(k) Elision
(l) Crisis

## III. Consonant-Changes

(a.) Origin and Character of the Consonants
(b) The Insertion of Consonants
(c) The Omission of Consonants 210
(d) Single or Double Consonants 211
(e) Assimilation of Consonants 215
(f) Interchange and Changing Value of Consonants 217
(g) Aspiration of Consonants 219
(h) Variable Final Consonants 219
(i) Metathesis 221

IV. Breathings 221
(a) Origin of the Aspirate 221
(b) Increasing De-aspiration (Psilosis) 222
(c) Variations in the MSS. (Aspiration and Psilosis) 223
(d) Transliterated Semitic Words 225
(e) The Use of Breathings with ρ and ρρ 225
(f) The Question of Αὐτοῦ 226

V. Accent 226
(a) The Age of Greek Accent 226
(b) Significance of Accent in the Κοινή 228
(c) Signs of Accent 229
(d) Later Developments in Accent 229
(e) N. T. Peculiarities 230
   1. Shortening Stem-Vowels 230
   2. Separate Words 231
   3. Difference in Sense 232
   4. Enclitics (and Proclitics) 233
   5. Proper Names 235
   6. Foreign Words 235

VI. Pronunciation in the Κοινή 236

VII. Punctuation 241
(a) The Paragraph 241
(b) Sentences 242
(c) Words 243
(d) The Editor's Prerogative 244

CHAPTER VII. The Declensions 246-302
I. The Substantive 246
1. History of the Declensions 246
2. The Number of the Cases 247
   (a) The History of the Forms of the Cases 247
   (b) The Blending of Case-Endings 249
   (c) Origin of Case-Suffixes 250
3. Number in Substantives 251
4. Gender in Substantives 252
   (a) Variations in Gender 252
(b) Interpretation of the LXX
(c) Variations Due to Heteroclisis and Metaplasm

5. The First or \( \alpha \) Declension
   (a) The Doric Genitive-Ablative Singular \( \alpha \)
   (b) The Attic Genitive-Ablative Singular
   (c) Vocative in \( \text{—} \alpha \) of masc. nouns in \( \text{—} \tau \eta \xi \)
   (d) Words in \( \text{—} \rho \alpha \) and Participles in \( \text{—} \upsilon \alpha \)
   (e) The Opposite Tendency to (d)
   (f) Double Declension
   (g) Heteroclisis and Metaplasm
   (h) Indeclinable Substantives

6. The Second or \( \omicron \) Declension
   (a) The So-Called Attic Second Declension
   (b) Contraction
   (c) The Vocative
   (d) Heteroclisis and Metaplasm
   (e) The Mixed Declension
   (f) Proper Names

7. The Third Declension (consonants and close vowels \( \iota \) and \( \upsilon \))
   (a) The Nominative as Vocative
   (b) The Accusative Singular
   (c) The Accusative Plural
   (d) Peculiarities in the Nominative
   (e) The Genitive-Ablative Forms
   (f) Contraction
   (g) Proper Names
   (h) Heteroclisis and Metaplasm

8. Indeclinable Words

II. The Adjective
   1. The Origin of the Adjective
   2. Inflection of Adjectives
      (a) Adjectives with One Termination
      (b) Adjectives with Two Terminations
      (c) Adjectives with Three Terminations
      (d) The Accusative Singular
      (e) Contraction in Adjectives
      (f) Indeclinable Adjectives
   3. Comparison of Adjectives
      (a) The Positive
      (b) The Comparative
      (c) The Superlative

III. Numerals
   1. The Origin of Numerals
   2. Variety among Numerals
      (a) Different Functions
      (b) The Cardinals
IV. Pronouns
   1. Idea of Pronouns
   2. Antiquity of Pronouns
   3. Pronominal Roots
   4. Classification
      (a) The Personal Pronouns
      (b) The Intensive Pronoun
      (c) Reflexive Pronouns
      (d) Possessive Pronouns
      (e) Demonstrative Pronouns
      (f) Relative Pronouns
      (g) Interrogative Pronouns
      (h) Indefinite Pronouns
      (i) Distributive and Reciprocal Pronouns

V. Adverbs
   1. Neglect of Adverbs
   2. Formation of the Adverb
      (a) Fixed Cases
         (1) The Accusative
         (2) The Ablative
         (3) The Genitive
         (4) The Locative
         (5) The Instrumental
         (6) The Dative
      (b) Suffixes
      (c) Compound Adverbs
      (d) Analogy
      (e) The Comparison of Adverbs
   3. Adverbial Stems
      (a) Substantives
      (b) Adjectives
      (c) Numerals
      (d) Pronouns
      (e) Verbs
   4. Use of Adverbs
      (a) Adverbs of Manner
      (b) Adverbs of Place
      (c) Adverbs of Time
   5. Scope of Adverbs
      (a) Relation between Adverbs and Prepositions
      (b) Adverbs and Conjunctions
      (c) Adverbs and Intensive Particles
      (d) Adverbs and Interjections
# FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHAPTER VIII. Conjugation of the Verb</td>
<td>303-376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Difficulty of the Subject</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. Nature of the Verb</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Verb and Noun</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Meaning of the Verb</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Pure and Hybrid Verbs</td>
<td>304</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. The Building of the Verb</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. The Survival of – μι Verbs</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) A Cross Division</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Oldest Verbs</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Gradual Disappearance</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) N. T. Usage as to - μι Verbs</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. The Second Aorists (active and middle)</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Some - μι Presents</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Some – μι Perfects</td>
<td>319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. The Modes</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Number of the Moods or Modes ( Modi )</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Distinctions between the Moods</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Indicative</td>
<td>322</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Subjunctive</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) The Optative</td>
<td>325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) The Imperative</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. The Non-Thematic Stem</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. The Thematic Stem</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. The Suffix – θι</td>
<td>328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. The Suffix - τω</td>
<td>328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. The Old Injunctive Mood</td>
<td>328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Forms in — σαι</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. The Form in – σον</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. First Person</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. Prohibitions</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Perfect Imperative</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. Periphrastic Presents</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. Circumlocutions</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. The Voices</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Transitive and Intransitive</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Names of the Voices</td>
<td>331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Relative Age of the Voices</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The So-Called &quot;Deponent&quot; Verbs</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) The Passive Supplanting the Middle</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) The Personal Endings</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Cross-Divisions</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) The Active Endings</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(i) The Middle Endings
(j) Passive Endings
(k) Contract Verbs

VII. The Tenses
(a) The Term Tense
(b) Confusion in Names
(c) The Verb-Root
(d) The Aorist Tense
(e) The Present Tense
  1. The Root Class
  2. The Non-Thematic Reduplicated Present
  3. The Non-Thematic Present with –υα– and –υυ–
  4. The Simple Thematic Present
  5. The Reduplicated Thematic Present
  6. The Thematic Present with a Suffix
    (α) The τ class
    (β) The ν class
    (γ) The σκ class
    (δ) The τ class
    (ε) The θ class
(f) The Future Tense
(g) The Perfect Tenses
  1. The Name
  2. The Original Perfect
  3. The κ Perfect
  4. The Aspirated Perfects
  5. Middle and Passive Forms
  6. The Decay of the Perfect Forms
  7. The Perfect in the Subjunctive, Optative, Imperative
  8. The Perfect Indicative
  9. Σ in Perfect Middle and Passive and Aorist Passive
(h) Reduplication
  1. Primitive
  2. Both Nouns and Verbs
  3. In Three Tenses in Verbs
  4. Three Methods in Reduplication
  5. Reduplication in the Perfect
(i) Augment
  1. The Origin of Augment
  2. Where Found
  3. The Purpose of Augment
  4. The Syllabic Augment
  5. The Temporal Augment
  6. Compound Verbs
  7. Double Augment

VIII. The Infinitive
  1. No Terminology at First
FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

2. Fixed Case-Forms 368
3. With Voice and Tense 369
4. No Personal Endings 370
5. Dative and Locative in Form 370
6. The Presence of the Article 371
7. The Disappearance of the Infinitive 371
8. Some N. T. Forms 371

IX. The Participle 371
   1. The Name 371
   2. Verbal Adjectives 372
   3. True Participles 373
   4. In Periphrastic Use 374

PART III — SYNTAX 377-1208

CHAPTER IX. The Meaning of Syntax 379-389
   I. Backwardness in the Study of Syntax 379
   II. New Testament Limitations 381
   III. Recent Advance by Delbruck 383
   IV. The Province of Syntax 384
      (a) The Word Syntax 384
      (b) Scope of Syntax 385
      (c) Construction of Words and Clauses 385
      (d) Historical Syntax 386
      (e) Irregularities 386
   V. The Method of this Grammar 387
      (a) Principles, not Rules 387
      (b) The Original Significance 387
      (c) Form and Function 387
      (d) Development 388
      (e) Context 388
      (f) Translation 389
      (g) Limits of Syntax 389

CHAPTER X. The Sentence 390-445
   I. The Sentence and Syntax 390
   II. The Sentence Defined 390
      (a) Complex Conception 390
      (b) Two Essential Parts 390
      (c) One-Membered Sentence 391
      (d) Elliptical Sentence 391
      (e) Only Predicate 391
      (f) Only Subject 393
      (g) Verb not the Only Predicate 394
(h) Copula not Necessary 395
(i) The Two Radiating Foci of the Sentence 396
(j) Varieties of the Simple Sentence 397

III. The Expansion of the Subject 397
(a) Idea-Words and Form-Words 397
(b) Concord and Government 397
(c) The Group around the Subject 398
   1. Subordinate Clause 398
   2. With the Article 398
   3. The Adverb 398
   4. The Adjective 398
   5. The Substantive
      (α) By an oblique case 398
      (β) Apposition 398

IV. The Expansion of the Predicate 400
(a) Predicate in Wider Sense 400
(b) The Infinitive and the Participle 400
(c) The Relation between the Predicate and Substantives 400
(d) The Pronoun 400
(e) Adjectives 401
(f) The Adverb 401
(g) Prepositions 401
(h) Negative Particles οὐ and μη 401
(i) Subordinate Clauses 401
(j) Apposition with the Predicate and Looser Amplifications 401

V. Subordinate Centres in the Sentence 402

VI. Concord in Person 402

VII. Concord in Number 403
(a) Subject and Predicate 403
   1. Two Conflicting Principles 403
   2. Neuter Plural and Singular Verb 403
   3. Collective Substantives 404
   4. The Pindaric Construction 404
   5. Singular Verb with First Subject 405
   6. The Literary Plural 406
(b) Substantive and Adjective 407
(c) Representative Singular 408
(d) Idiomatic Plural in Nouns 408
(e) Idiomatic Singular in Nouns 409
(f) Special Instances 409

VIII. Concord in Gender 410
(a) Fluctuations in Gender 410
(b) The Neuter Singular 411
## FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

(c) Explanatory ὢ ἐστιν and τοῦτο ἐστιν 411

(d) The Participle 412

(e) Adjectives 412

IX. Concord in Case 413

(a) Adjectives 413

(b) Participles 413

(c) The Book of Revelation 413

(d) Other Peculiarities in Apposition 416

(e) The Absolute Use of the Cases (nominative, genitive, ab-
    lative and accusative) 416

X. Position of Words in the Sentence 417

(a) Freedom from Rules 417

(b) Predicate often First 417

(c) Emphasis 417

(d) The Minor Words in a Sentence 418

(e) Euphony and Rhythm 419

(f) Prolepsis 423

(g) Hysteron Proteron 423

(h) Hyperbaton 423

(i) Postpositives 424

(j) Fluctuating Words 424

(k) The Order of Clauses in Compound Sentences 425

XI. Compound Sentences 425

(a) Two Kinds of Sentences 425

(b) Two Kinds of Compound Sentences 426

(c) Paratactic Sentences 426

(d) Hypotactic Sentences 426

XII. Connection in Sentences 427

(a) Single Words 427

(b) Clauses 428

1. Paratactic Sentences 428

2. Hypotactic Sentences 429

3. The Infinitive and Participle as Connectives 431

(c) Two Kinds of Style 432

(d) The Parenthesis 433

(e) Anacoluthon 435

1. The Suspended Subject 436

2. Digression 437

3. The Participle in Anacolutha 439

4. Asyndeton Due to Absence of δὲ and ᾧ λαλάτα 440

(f) Oratio Variata 440

1. Distinction from Anacoluthon 440

2. Heterogeneous Structure 441
### A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3. Participles in Oratio Variata</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Exchange of Direct and Indirect Discourse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Connection between Separate Sentences</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) Connection between Paragraphs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. Forecast</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### CHAPTER XI. The Cases 446-543

| I. History of the Interpretation of the Greek Cases | 446 |
| (a) Confusion | 446 |
| (b) Bopp's Contribution | 446 |
| (c) Modern Usage | 447 |
| (d) Green's Classification | 447 |
| (e) Syncretism of the Cases | 448 |
| (f) Freedom in Use of Case | 448 |
| II. The Purpose of the Cases | 449 |
| (a) Aristotle's Usage | 449 |
| (b) Word-Relations | 449 |
| III. The Encroachment of Prepositions on the Cases | 450 |
| (a) The Reason | 450 |
| (b) No "Governing" of Cases | 450 |
| (c) Not Used Indifferently | 450 |
| (d) Original Use with Local Cases | 451 |
| (e) Increasing Use of Prepositions | 451 |
| (f) Distinction Preserved in the N. T | 452 |
| IV. The Distinctive Idea of Each of the Cases | 453 |
| (a) Fundamental Idea | 453 |
| (b) Cases not Used for One Another | 454 |
| (c) Vitality of Case-Idea | 454 |
| (d) The Historical Development of the Cases | 454 |
| (e) The Method of this Grammar | 456 |
| V. The Nominative Case | 456 |
| (a) Not the Oldest Case | 456 |
| (b) Reason for the Case | 457 |
| (c) Predicate Nominative | 457 |
| (d) Sometimes Unaltered | 458 |
| (e) The Nominative Absolute | 459 |
| (f) The Parenthetical Nominative | 460 |
| (g) In Exclamations | 461 |
| (h) Used as Vocative | 461 |
| VI. The Vocative Case | 461 |
| (a) Nature of the Vocative | 461 |
(b) Various Devices
(c) Use of the Vocative
(d) Adjectives Used with the Vocative
(e) Apposition to the Vocative
(f) Vocative in Predicate
(g) The Article with the Vocative

VII. The Accusative Case
(a) The Name
(b) Age and History
(c) The Meaning of the Accusative
(d) With Verbs of Motion
(e) Extent of Space
(f) Extent of Time
(g) With Transitive Verbs
(h) The Cognate Accusative
(i) Double Accusative
(j) With Passive Verbs
(k) The Adverbial Accusative
(l) The Accusative by Antiptosis
(m) The Accusative by Inverse Attraction
(n) The Accusative with the Infinitive
(o) The Accusative Absolute
(p) The Accusative with Prepositions

VIII. The Genitive (True) Case
(a) Two Cases with One Form
(b) Name Incorrect
(c) The Specifying Case
(d) The Local Use
(e) The Temporal Use
(f) With Substantives
   1. The Possessive Genitive
   2. Attributive Genitive
   3. The Predicate Genitive
   4. Apposition or Definition
   5. The Subjective Genitive
   6. The Objective Genitive
   7. Genitive of Relationship
   8. Partitive Genitive
   9. The Position of the Genitive
  10. Concatenation of Genitives
(g) The Genitive with Adjectives
(h) The Genitive with Adverbs and Prepositions
(i) The Genitive with Verbs
1. Very Common
2. Fading Distinction from Accusative
3. Verbs of Sensation
4. Verbs of Emotion
5. Verbs of Sharing, Partaking and Filling
6. Verbs of Ruling
7. Verbs of Buying, Selling, Being Worthy of
8. Verbs of Accusing and Condemning
9. Genitive Due to Prepositions in Composition
10. Attraction of the Relative

(j) The Genitive of the Infinitive
(k) The Genitive Absolute

IX. The Ablative Case
(a) The Name
(b) The Meaning
(c) Rare with Substantives
(d) The Ablative with Adjectives
(e) The Ablative, with Prepositions
(f) The Ablative with Verbs
1. Verbs of Departure and Removal
2. Verbs of Ceasing, Abstaining
3. Verbs of Missing, Lacking, Despairing
4. Verbs of Differing, Excelling
5. Verbs of Asking and Hearing
6. Verbs with the Partitive Idea
7. Attraction of the Relative

X. The Locative Case
(a) The Name Locative
(b) The Significance of the Locative
(c) Place
(d) Time
(e) Locative with Adjectives
(f) Locative with Verbs
(g) The Locative, with Substantives
(h) The Locative with Prepositions
(i) The Pregnant Construction of the Locative

XI. The Instrumental Case
(a) The Term Instrumental
(b) Syncretistic?
(c) Place
(d) Time
(e) The Associative Idea
(f) With Words of Likeness and Identity
(g) Manner
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(h) Degree of Difference</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Cause</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j) Means</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(k) With Prepositions</td>
<td>534</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. The Dative (True) Case</td>
<td>535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Syncretism</td>
<td>535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Decay of the Dative</td>
<td>535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Idea of the Dative</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Dative with Substantives</td>
<td>536</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) With Adjectives</td>
<td>537</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) With Adverbs and Prepositions</td>
<td>537</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) With Verbs</td>
<td>538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Indirect Object</td>
<td>538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Dativus Commodi vel Incommodi (Ethical)</td>
<td>538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Direct Object</td>
<td>539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. The Dative with Intransitive Verbs</td>
<td>541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Possession</td>
<td>541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Infinitive as Final Dative</td>
<td>541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. The Dative of the Agent</td>
<td>542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. The Dative because of the Preposition</td>
<td>542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) Ambiguous Examples</td>
<td>543</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHAPTER XII. Adverbs</td>
<td>544-552</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Special Difficulties</td>
<td>544</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Nature of the Adverb</td>
<td>544</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Narrower Sense of Adverb</td>
<td>544</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. Adverbs with Verbs</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Commonest Use</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) N. T. Usage</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Predicative Uses with γίνομαι and εἰμί</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) With ἔχω</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) With Participles</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Loose Relation to the Verb</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. Adverbs Used with Other Adverbs</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Adverbs with Adjectives</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. Adverbs with Substantives</td>
<td>547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. Adverbs Treated as Substantives</td>
<td>547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. The Pregnant Use of Adverbs</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. Adverbs as Marks of Style</td>
<td>548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. The Adverb Distinguished from the Adjective</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Different Meaning</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Difference in Greek and English Idiom</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. Adverbial Phrases</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------</td>
<td>-----</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Incipient Adverbs</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Prepositional Phrases</td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Participles</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Verb Used Adverbially</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER XIII. Prepositions</th>
<th>553-649</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I. The Name</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Some Postpositive</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Not Originally Used with Verbs</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Explanation</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. The Origin of Prepositions</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Originally Adverbs</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Reason for Use Of Prepositions</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Varying History</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. Growth in the Use of Prepositions</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Once No Prepositions</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Prepositions Still Used as Adverbs in Homer</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Decreasing Use as Adverbs after Homer</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Semitic Influence in N. T.</td>
<td>556</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) In Modern Greek</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Prepositions in Composition with Verbs</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Not the Main Function</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Preposition Alone</td>
<td>558</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Increasing Use</td>
<td>558</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Repetition after Verb</td>
<td>559</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Different Preposition after Verb</td>
<td>560</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Second Preposition Not Necessary</td>
<td>562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Effect of Preposition on Meaning of the Verb</td>
<td>562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) Dropping the Preposition with Second Verb</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Intensive or Perfective</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j) Double Compounds</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. Repetition and Variation of Prepositions</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Same Preposition with Different Cases</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Repetition with Several Nouns</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Repetition with the Relative</td>
<td>566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Condensation by Variation</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. The Functions of Prepositions with Cases</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Case before Prepositions</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Notion of Dimension</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Original Force of the Case</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(d) The Ground-Meaning of the Preposition 568
(e) The Oblique Cases Alone with Prepositions 568
(f) Original Freedom 568
(g) No Adequate Division by Cases 569
(h) Situation in the N. T.
   1. Those with One Case 570
   2. Those with Two Cases 570
   3. Those with Three Cases 570
   4. Possibly Four with ἐπί 570
(i) Each Preposition in a Case 570
VII. Proper Prepositions in the N. T 571
   (a) ἀνά 571
   (b) ἀντί 572
   (c) ἀπό 574
       1. Original Significance 575
       2. Meaning 'Back' 576
       3. "Translation-Hebraism" in φοβεῖσθαι ἀπό 577
       4. Comparison with ἐκ 577
       5. Comparison with παρά 578
       6. Compared with ὑπό 579
   (d) Διά 580
       1. The Root-Idea 580
       2. 'By Twos' or 'Between' 580
       3. 'Passing Between' or 'Through' 581
       4. 'Because of' 583
   (e) ἐν 584
       1. Old Use of ἐν with Accusative or Locative 584
       2. ἐν Older than εἰς 585
       3. Place 586
       4. Expressions of Time 586
       5. 'Among' 587
       6. 'In the Case of,' 'in the Person of' or simply 'in' 587
       7. As a Dative? 588
       8. Accompanying Circumstance 588
       9. 'Amounting to,' 'Occasion,' 'Sphere' 589
       10. Instrumental Use of ἐν 589
   (f) ἐις 591
       1. Original Static Use 591
       2. With Verbs of Motion 593
       3. With Expressions of Time 594
       4. Like a Dative 594
       5. Aim or Purpose 594
       6. Predicative Use 595
       7. Compared with ἐπί and πρὸς 596
   (g) ἐκ 596
       1. Meaning 596
       2. In Composition 596
3. Place 597
4. Time 597
5. Separation 597
6. Origin or Source 598
7. Cause or Occasion 598
8. The Partitive Use of ἐκ 599
9. ἐκ and ἐν 599
(h) ἔπι 600
1. Ground-Meaning 600
2. In Composition in the N. T 600
3. Frequency in N. T. 600
4. With the Accusative 601
5. With the Genitive 602
6. With the Locative 604
7. The True Dative 605
(i) ᾧτα 605
1. Root-Meaning 605
2. Distributive Sense 606
3. ᾧτα in Composition 606
4. With the Ablative 606
5. With the Genitive 607
6. With the Accusative 607
(j) μετα 609
1. The Root-Meaning 609
2. In Composition 609
3. Compared with aim 609
4. Loss of the Locative Use 610
5. With the Genitive 610
6. With the Accusative 612
(k) παρα 612
1. Significance 612
2. Compared with πρός 613
3. In Composition 613
4. With the Locative 614
5. With the Ablative 614
6. With the Accusative 615
(l) περί 616
1. The Root-Meaning 617
2. In Composition 617
3. Originally Four Cases Used 617
4. With the Ablative 617
5. With the Genitive 618
6. With the Accusative 619
(m) πρό 620
1. The Original Meaning 620
2. In Composition 620
3. The Cases Used with πρό 621
4. Place 621
FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

5. Time 621
6. Superiority 622

(n) Πρός
1. The Meaning 622
2. In Composition 623
3. Originally with Five Cases 623
4. The Ablative 623
5. With the Locative 624
6. With the Accusative 624

(o) Σύν
1. The Meaning 626
2. History 627
3. In Composition 627
4. N. T. Usage 628

(p) ὑπέρ
1. The Meaning 629
2. In Composition 629
3. With Genitive? 629
4. With Ablative 630
5. The Accusative with ὑπέρ 632

(q) ὑπό
1. The Original Meaning 633
2. In Composition 633
3. The Cases Once Used with ὑπό 634
4. With the Accusative 635
5. With the Ablative 635

VIII. The "Adverbial" Prepositions 638
1. ἀμα 638
2. ἀνευ 638
3. ἀντικρο(ς) 638
4. ἀντίπερα 638
5. ἀπέναντι 639
6. ἀτερ 639
7. ἀχρι(ς) 639
8. ἐγγύς 639
9. ἐκτός 640
10. ἐμπροσθεν 640
11. ἐναντι 640
12. ἐναντίον 640
13. ἐνεκα 641
14. ἐντός 641
15. ἐνώπιον 641
16. ἐξω 642
17. ἐξωθεν 642
18. ἐπ-άνω 642
19. ἐπέκεινα 642
20. ἐσω 642
21. ἐως 643
22. κατέναντι 643
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Preposition/Adjective</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Κατευνόπιον</td>
<td>644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Κυκλόθεν</td>
<td>644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>Κύκλαψ</td>
<td>644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>Μέσον</td>
<td>644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27</td>
<td>Μεταξύ</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>Μέχρι</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>&quot;Οπισθεν</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>'Οπίσω</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>'Οψέ</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32</td>
<td>Παρα-πλήσιον</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Παρ-εκτός</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>Πέραν</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Πλήν</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>Πλησίον</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>'Υπερ-άνω</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>'Υπερ-έκεινα</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39</td>
<td>'Υπερ-έκ-περισσοῦ</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>'Υπο-κάτω</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
<td>Χάριν</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>Χωρίς</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

IX. Compound Prepositions

X. Prepositional Circumlocutions

(a) Μέσον
(b) 'Ονομα
(c) Πρόσωπον
(d) Στόμα
(e) Χείρ

CHAPTER XIV. Adjectives

I. Origin of Adjectives

II. The Adjectival or Appositional Use of the Substantive

III. The Adjective as Substantive

(a) Any Gender
(b) With Masculine Adjectives
(c) With Feminine Adjectives
(d) With the Neuter

IV. Agreement of Adjectives with Substantives

(a) In Number
(b) In Gender
(c) In Case
(d) Two or More Adjectives

V. The Attributive Adjective

VI. The Predicate Adjective

VII. Adjective Rather than Adverb
### FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>VIII. The Personal Construction</td>
<td>657</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. Adjectives Used with Cases</td>
<td>658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. Adjectives with the Infinitive and Clauses</td>
<td>658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI. The Adjective as Adverb</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. The Positive Adjective</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Relative Contrast</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Used as Comparative or Superlative</td>
<td>660</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) With Prepositions</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Comparison Implied by</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) In Absolute Sense</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. The Comparative Adjective</td>
<td>662</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Contrast or Duality</td>
<td>662</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Degree</td>
<td>663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Without Suffixes</td>
<td>663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Double Comparison</td>
<td>663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Without Object of Comparison</td>
<td>664</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Followed by</td>
<td>666</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Followed by the Ablative</td>
<td>666</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) Followed by Prepositions</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) The Comparative Displacing the Superlative</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. The Superlative Adjective</td>
<td>669</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Superlative Vanishing</td>
<td>669</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) A Few True Superlatives in the N. T.</td>
<td>669</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Elative Superlative</td>
<td>670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) No Double Superlatives</td>
<td>670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Followed by Ablative</td>
<td>670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) No &quot;Hebraistic&quot; Superlative</td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV. Numerals</td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) (\epsilon\iota\varsigma) and (\pi\varphi\omega\tau\sigma\varsigma)</td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Simplification of the &quot;Teens&quot;</td>
<td>672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Inclusive Ordinal</td>
<td>672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Distributives</td>
<td>673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) The Cardinal (\epsilon\pi\tau\acute)</td>
<td>673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Substantive Not Expressed</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Adverbs with Numerals</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) (\epsilon\iota\varsigma) as Indefinite Article</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) (\epsilon\iota\varsigma = \tau\iota\varsigma)</td>
<td>675</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j) The Distributive Use of (\epsilon\iota\varsigma)</td>
<td>675</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### CHAPTER XV. Pronouns 676-753

I. Personal Pronouns 676

(a) The Nominative 676

1. The First Person 677

2. The Second Person 678

3. The Third Person 679
(b) The Oblique Cases of the Personal Pronouns
  1. Originally Reflexive
  2. Αὖτοῦ
  3. Genitive for Possession
  4. Enclitic Forms
(c) The Frequency of the Personal Pronouns
(d) Redundant
(e) According to Sense
(f) Repetition of the Substantive

II. The Possessive Pronouns
(a) Just the Article
(b) Only for First and Second Persons
(c) Emphasis, When Used
(d) With the Article
(e) Possessive and Genitive Together
(f) Objective Use
(g) Instead of Reflexive

III. The Intensive and Identical Pronoun
(a) The Nominative Use of Αὐτός
(b) Varying Degrees of Emphasis
(c) Αὐτός with οὖτος
(d) Αὐτός almost Demonstrative
(e) In the Oblique Cases
(f) Αὐτός Side by Side with the Reflexive
(g) ὁ οὖτος

IV. The Reflexive Pronoun
(a) Distinctive Use
(b) The Absence of the Reflexive from the Nominative
(c) The Indirect Reflexive
(d) In the Singular
(e) In the Plural
(f) Article with
(g) Reflexive in the Reciprocal Sense
(h) Reflexive with Middle Voice
(i) The Use of Ἰδιός

V. The Reciprocal Pronoun

VI. Demonstrative Pronouns
(a) Nature
(b) Different Shades of Meaning
(c) ὁ, ἡ, τό
(d) ὡς
(e) ὡς ὡς
(f) Οὗτος
1. The Purely Deictic 697
2. The Contemptuous Use of Οὗτος 697
3. The Anaphoric Use 697
4. In Apposition 698
5. Use of the Article 700
6. Article Absent 701
7. Οὗτος in Contrast with ἐκεῖνος 702
8. As Antecedent of the Relative Pronoun 703
9. Gender and Number of Οὗτος 704
10. The Adverbial Uses of τοῦτο and ταῦτα 704
11. The Phrase τοῦτο ἢ ἐστὶν 705
12. In Combination with Other Pronouns 705
13. Ellipsis of Οὗτος 705
14. Shift in Reference 706

(g) Ἐκεῖνος 706
1. The Purely Deictic 707
2. The Contemptuous Use 707
3. The Anaphoric 707
4. The Remote Object (Contrast) 707
5. Emphasis 708
6. With Apposition 708
7. Article with Nouns except when Predicate 708
8. As Antecedent to Relative 708
9. Gender and Number 708
10. Independent Use 709

(h) Αὐτός 709
(i) The Correlative Demonstratives 709

VII. Relative Pronouns 710
(a) List in the N T. 710
(b) The Name "Relative" 711
(c) A Bond between Clauses 711
(d) ὁς 711
1. In Homer 711
2. Comparison with Other Relatives 711
3. With Any Person 712
4. Gender 712
5. Number 714
6. Case 714
   (a) Absence of attraction normal 714
   (β) Cognate accusative 715
   (γ) Attraction to the case of the antecedent 715
   (δ) Inverse attraction 717
   (ε) Incorporation 718
7. Absence of Antecedent 719
8. Prepositions with the Antecedent and the Relative 721
9. Relative Phrases 721
10. Pleonastic Antecedent 722
11. The Repetition of ὅς
12. A Consecutive Idea
13. Causal
14. In Direct Questions
15. In Indirect Questions
16. The Idiom οὐδεὶς ἐστὶν ὅς

(e) ὁστις
1. Varied Uses
2. The Distinction between ὅς and ὁστις
3. The Indefinite Use
4. The Definite Examples
5. Value of ὅς?
6. Case
7. Number
8. Gender
9. Direct Questions
10. Indirect Questions

(f) ὁιος
1. Relation to ὅς
2. Incorporation
3. Indirect Question
4. Number
5. ὁιον τέ ἐστιν

(g) ὁποιος
1. Qualitative
2. Double Office
3. Correlative

(h) ὁσος
1. Quantitative
2. Antecedent
3. Attraction
4. Incorporation
5. Repetition
6. With ἀν
7. Indirect Questions
8. In Comparison
9. Adverbial

(i) ἡλίκος

(j) ὁ as Relative

VIII. Interrogative Pronouns

(a) Τίς
1. Substantival or Adjectival
2. The Absence of Gender
3. Τίς = ποίος
4. Indeclinable τί
5. Predicate Use of τί with τοῦτο
6. In Alternative Questions
7. The Double Interrogative
8. As Relative  
9. Adverbial Use  
10. With Prepositions  
11. With Particles  
12. As Exclamation  
13. Indirect Questions  
14. Τίς or τίς  

(b) Ποίος  
1. Qualitative  
2. Non-qualitative  
3. In Indirect Questions  

(c) Πόσος  
1. Less Frequent than ποίος  
2. Meaning  
3. In Indirect Questions  
4. The Exclamatory Use  

(d) Πηλίκος  
1. Rare  
2. Indirect Questions  

(e) Ποταπός  

(f) Πότερος  

IX. Indefinite Pronouns  

(a) Τίς  
1. The Accent  
2. Relation to τίς  
3. Τίς as Substantive  
4. With Numerals= 'About'  
5. With Substantives  
6. With Adjectives  
7. As Predicate  
8. The Position of τίς  
9. As Antecedent  
10. Alternative  
11. The Negative Forms  
12. Indeclinable τι  

(b) Ἐίς = Τίς  

(c) Πᾶς = 'any one'  

(d) 'Ὁ Δέινα  

X. Alternative or Distributive Pronouns  

(a) Ἀμφότεροι  

(b) Ἐκαστὸς  
1. Without Substantive  
2. With Substantive  
3. With Ἐίς  
4. With Genitive  
5. Partitive Apposition  
6. Rare in Plural  
7. Repetition
(c) ἀλλος
1. Used absolutely= ‘An-other,’ ‘One Other’ 746
2. For Two 746
3. As Adjective 747
4. With the Article 747
5. The Use of ἀλλος ἀλλο 747
6. In Contrast for 'Some - Others' 747
7. Ellipsis of ἀλλος 747
8. The Use of ἀλλος and ἐτερος Together 747
9. =’Different’ 747
10. ’Ἀλλότριος 748

(d) ἐτερος
1. Absolutely 748
2. With Article 748
3. Second of Pair 748
4. = 'Different' 748
5. = 'Another' of Three or More 749
6. In Contrast 749

(e) Other Antithetic Pronouns

XI. Negative Pronouns 750
(a) οὐδείς
1. History 750
2. οὐθείς 750
3. Gender 751
4. οὐδε έις 751
5. έις—οὐ 751

(b) Μηδείς 751
(c) Οὕτις and Μήτις 751
(d) With Πᾶς
1. Οὐ πᾶς 752
2. Οὐ —πᾶς 752
3. Μή — πᾶς 752
4. Οὐ μή — πᾶν 753
5. Πᾶς — οὖ 753
6. Πᾶς — μή 753
7. Πᾶς — οὖ μή 753
8. Οὐ — πάντες 753
9. Πάντες οὖ 753

CHAPTER XVI. The Article 754-796
I. Other Uses of δ’, ἡ, τό 754
II. Origin and Development of the Article 754
(a) A Greek Contribution 754
(b) Derived from the Demonstrative 755
III. Significance of the Article 755
IV. The Method Employed by the Article 756
(a) Individuals from Individuals 756
(b) Classes from Other Classes 757
(c) Qualities from Other Qualities 758

V. Varied Usages of the Article 758
(a) With Substantives 758
   1. Context 758
   2. Gender of the Article 759
   3. With Proper Names 759
   4. Second Mention (Anaphoric) 762
(b) With Adjectives 762
   1. The Resumptive Article 762
   2. With the Adjective Alone 762
   3. The Article not Necessary with the Adjective 763
   4. With Numerals 764
(c) With Participles 764
(d) With the Infinitive 765
(e) With Adverbs 765
(f) With Prepositional Phrases 766
(g) With Single Words or Whole Sentences 766
(h) With Genitive Alone 767
(i) Nouns in the Predicate 767
(j) Distributive 769
(k) Nominative with the Article=Vocative 769
(l) As the Equivalent of a Possessive Pronoun 769
(m) With Possessive Pronouns 770
(n) With Αὐτός 770
(o) With Demonstratives 770
(p) With "Ολος, Πᾶς ("Απας) 771
(q) Πολύς 774
(r) Ακρος, Ημισυς, Εσχατος, Μέσος 775
(s) With "Αλλος and "Ετερος 775
(t) Μόνος 776

VI. Position with Attributives 776
(a) With Adjectives 776
   1. Normal Position of the Adjective 776
   2. The Other Construction (Repetition of the Article) 776
   3. Article Repeated Several Times 777
   4. One Article with Several Adjectives 777
   5. With Anarthrous Substantives 777
   6. With Participles 777
(b) With Genitives 779
   1. The Position between the Article and the Substantive 779
   2. Genitive after the Substantive without Repetition of the Article 779
   3. Repetition of Article with Genitive 780
4. The Article Only with Genitive 780
5. Article Absent with Both 780
6. The Correlation of the Article 780
(c) With Adjuncts or Adverbs 782
1. Between the Article and the Noun 782
2. Article Repeated 782
3. Only with Adjunct 782
4. Only with the Noun 782
5. When Several Adjuncts Occur 783
6. Phrases of Verbal Origin 784
7. Exegetical questions 784
8. Anarthrous Attributives 784
(d) Several Attributives with Καί 785
1. Several Epithets Applied to the Same Person or Thing 785
2. When to be Distinguished 786
3. Groups Treated as One 787
4. Point of View 787
5. Difference in Number 788
6. Difference in Gender 788
7. With Disjunctive Particle 789
VII. Position with Predicates 789
VIII. The Absence of the Article 790
(a) With Proper Names 791
(b) With Genitives 791
(c) Prepositional Phrases 791
(d) With Both Preposition and Genitive 792
(e) Titles of Books or Sections 793
(f) Words in Pairs 793
(g) Ordinal Numerals 793
(h) In the Predicate 794
(i) Abstract Words 794
(j) Qualitative Force 794
(k) Only Object of Kind 794
IX. The Indefinite Article 796

CHAPTER XVII. Voice 797-820
I. Point of View 797
(a) Distinction between Voice and Transitiveness 797
(b) Meaning of Voice 798
(c) Names of the Voices 798
(d) History of the Voices 793
(e) Help from the Sanskrit 798
(f) Defective Verbs 799
II. The Active Voice 799
(a) Meaning of the Active Voice 799
FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

(b) Either Transitive or Intransitive 799
(c) Effect of Prepositions in Composition 800
(d) Different Tenses Vary 800
(e) The Active as Causative 801
(f) Active with Reflexives 802
(g) Impersonal Active 802
(h) Infinitives 802
(i) Active Verbs as Passives of Other Verbs 802

III. The Middle Voice 803
(a) Origin of the Middle 803
(b) Meaning of the Middle 803
(c) Often Difference from Active Acute 804
(d) The Use of the Middle not Obligatory 804
(e) Either Transitive or Intransitive 806
(f) Direct Middle 806
(g) Causative or Permissive Middle 808
(h) Indirect Middle 809
(i) Reciprocal Middle 810
(j) Redundant Middle 811
(k) Dynamic (Deponent) Middle 811
(l) Middle Future, though Active Present 813
(m) The Middle Retreating in the N. T. 814

IV. The Passive Voice 814
(a) Origin of the Passive 814
(b) Significance of the Passive 815
(c) With Intransitive or Transitive Verbs 815
(d) The Passive Usually Intransitive 816
(e) Aorist Passive 816
(f) Future Passive 818
(g) The Agent with the Passive Voice 820
(h) Impersonal Construction 820

CHAPTER XVIII. Tense 821-910

I. Complexity of the Subject 821
1. The Difficulty of Comparing Greek Tenses with Germanic Tenses 821
2. Bad Influence of the Latin on Greek Grammarians 822
3. Absence of Hebrew Influence 822
4. Gradual Growth of the Greek Tenses 822
5. "Aktionsart" of the Verb-Stem 823
6. The Three Kinds of Action Expressed in Terms of Tense 824
7. Time Element in Tense 824
8. Faulty Nomenclature of the Tenses 825
9. The Analytic Tendency (Periphrasis) 826
10. The Effect of Prepositions on the Verb 826
11. "Aktionsart" with Each Tense 828
12. Interchange of Tenses 829

II. Punctiliar Action 830
1. The Aorist 831
   (a) Aktionsart in the Aorist 831
      (α) Constative Aorist 831
      (β) Ingressive Aorist 834
      (γ) Effective Aorist 834
   (b) Aorist Indicative 835
      (α) The Narrative or Historical Tense 835
      (β) The Gnomic Aorist 836
      (γ) Relation to the Imperfect 837
      (δ) Relation to the Past Perfect 840
      (ε) Relation to the Present 841
      (ζ) Relation to Present Perfect 843
      (η) Epistolary Aorist 845
      (θ) Relation to the Future 846
   (i) Aorist in Wishes 847
   (κ) Variations in the Use of Tenses 847
   (λ) Translation of the Aorist into English 847
   (c) The Aorist Subjunctive and Optative 848
      (α) No Time Element in Subjunctive and Optative 848
      (β) Frequency of Aorist Subjunctive 848
      (γ) Aktionsart 850
      (δ) Aorist Subjunctive in Prohibitions 851
      (ε) Aorist Subjunctive with οὐ μη 854
   (ζ) Aorist Optative 854
   (d) The Aorist Imperative 855
   (e) The Aorist Infinitive 856
   (f) The Aorist Participle 858
      (α) Aktionsart 858
      (β) ὁ and the Aorist Participle 859
      (γ) Antecedent Action 860
      (δ) But Simultaneous Action is Common also 860
      (ε) Subsequent Action not Expressed by the Aorist Participle 861
   (ζ) Aorist Participle in Indirect Discourse (Complementary Participle) 864
2. Punctiliar (Aoristic) Present 864
   (a) The Specific Present 865
   (b) The Gnomic Present 866
   (c) The Historical Present 866
   (d) The Futuristic Present 869
3. The Punctiliar (Aoristic) Future 870
   (a) Punctiliar or Durative 870
### FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Modal Aspect of the Future</td>
<td>872</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(α) Merely Futuristic</td>
<td>873</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) The Volitive Future</td>
<td>874</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(γ) Deliberative Future</td>
<td>875</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Future in the Moods</td>
<td>876</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(α) The Indicative</td>
<td>876</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) The Subjunctive and Optative</td>
<td>876</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(γ) The Infinitive</td>
<td>876</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(δ) The Participle</td>
<td>877</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Periphrastic Substitutes for the Future</td>
<td>878</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. Durative (Linear) Action</td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Indicative</td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Present (ὁ ἐνεστῶς) for Present Time</td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(α) The Descriptive Present</td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) The Progressive Present</td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(γ) The Iterative or Customary Present</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(δ) The Inchoative or Conative Present</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ε) The Historical Present</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ζ) The Deliberative Present</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(η) The Periphrastic Present</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(θ) Presents as Perfects</td>
<td>881</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ι) Perfects as Presents</td>
<td>881</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(κ) Futuristic Presents</td>
<td>881</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Imperfect for Past Time</td>
<td>882</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(α) Doubtful Imperfects</td>
<td>882</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) The Descriptive Tense in Narrative</td>
<td>883</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(γ) The Iterative (Customary) Imperfect</td>
<td>884</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(δ) The Progressive Imperfect</td>
<td>884</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ε) The Inchoative or Conative Imperfect</td>
<td>885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ζ) The &quot;Negative&quot; Imperfect</td>
<td>885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(η) The &quot;Potential&quot; Imperfect</td>
<td>885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(θ) In Indirect Discourse</td>
<td>887</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ι) The Periphrastic Imperfect</td>
<td>887</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(κ) Past Perfects as Imperfect</td>
<td>888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Future for Future Time</td>
<td>888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(α) The Three Kinds of Action in the Future (futuristic, volitive, deliberative)</td>
<td>889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) The Periphrastic Future</td>
<td>889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Subjunctive and Optative</td>
<td>889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Imperative</td>
<td>890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Infinitive</td>
<td>890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Participle</td>
<td>891</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Time of the Present Participle Relative</td>
<td>891</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) Futuristic</td>
<td>891</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Descriptive</td>
<td>891</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Conative</td>
<td>892</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Antecedent Time</td>
<td>892</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Indirect Discourse</td>
<td>892</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(g) With the Article 892
(h) Past Action Still in Progress 892
(i) “Subsequent” Action 892
(j) No Durative Future Participles 892

IV. Perfected State of the Action 892

1. The Idea of the Perfect 892
   (a) The Present Perfect 892
   (b) The Intensive Perfect 893
   (c) The Extensive Perfect 893
   (d) Idea of Time in the Tense 894

2. The Indicative 894
   (a) The Present Perfect 894
      (a) The Intensive Present Perfect 894
      (β) The Extensive Present Perfect—a completed state 895
      (γ) The Present Perfect of Broken Continuity 896
      (δ) The Dramatic Historical Present Perfect 896
      (ε) The Gnomic Present Perfect 897
      (ζ) The Perfect in Indirect Discourse 897
      (η) Futuristic Present Perfect 898
      (θ) The "Aoristic" Present Perfect 898
      (ι) The Periphrastic Perfect 902
      (κ) Present as perfect 903

   (6) The Past Perfect 903
      (α) The Double Idea 903
      (β) A Luxury in Greek 903
      (γ) The Intensive Past Perfect 904
      (δ) The Extensive Past Perfect 904
      (ε) The Past Perfect of Broken Continuity 905
      (ζ) Past Perfect in Conditional Sentences 906
      (η) The Periphrastic Past Perfect 906
      (θ) Special Use of ἔκειμην 906

   (c) The Future Perfect 906

3. The Subjunctive and Optative 907

4. The Imperative 908

5. The Infinitive 903
   (a) Indirect Discourse 903
   (b) Perfect Infinitive not in Indirect Discourse 909
      (α) Subject or Object Infinitive 909
      (β) With Prepositions 909

6. The Participle 909
   (a) The Meaning 909
   (b) The Time of the, Tense 909
   (c) The Perfect Tense Occurs with Various Uses of the Participle 910
   (d) The Periphrastic, Participle 910

CHAPTER XIX. Mode 911-1049

Introductory 911
A. Independent or Paratactic Sentences 914
## FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I. The Indicative Mode</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Meaning of the Indicative Mode</td>
<td>914</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Kinds of Sentences Using the Indicative</td>
<td>915</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Either Declarative or Interrogative</td>
<td>915</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Positive and Negative</td>
<td>917</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Special Uses of the Indicative</td>
<td>918</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Past Tenses</td>
<td>918</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(α) For Courtesy</td>
<td>918</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(β) Present Necessity, Obligation, Possibility, Propriety in Tenses of the Past</td>
<td>919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(γ) The Apodosis of Conditions of the Second Class</td>
<td>921</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(δ) Impossible Wishes</td>
<td>923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Present</td>
<td>923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Future</td>
<td>924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. The Subjunctive Mode</td>
<td>924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Relations to Other Modes</td>
<td>924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Aorist Subjunctive and the Future Indicative</td>
<td>924</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Subjunctive and the Imperative</td>
<td>925</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Subjunctive and the Optative</td>
<td>925</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Original Significance of the Subjunctive</td>
<td>926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Threefold Usage</td>
<td>928</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Futuristic</td>
<td>928</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Volitive</td>
<td>930</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Deliberative</td>
<td>934</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. The Optative Mode</td>
<td>935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. History of the Optative</td>
<td>935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Significance</td>
<td>936</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. The Three Uses</td>
<td>937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Futuristische or Potential</td>
<td>937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Volitive</td>
<td>939</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Deliberative</td>
<td>940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. The Imperative</td>
<td>941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Origin of the Imperative</td>
<td>941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Meaning of the Imperative</td>
<td>941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Disappearance of the Imperative Forms</td>
<td>941</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Alternatives for the Imperative</td>
<td>942</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Future Indicative</td>
<td>942</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Subjunctive</td>
<td>943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Optative</td>
<td>943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Infinitive</td>
<td>943</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) The Participle</td>
<td>944</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Uses of the Imperative</td>
<td>946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Command or Exhortation</td>
<td>946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Prohibition</td>
<td>947</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Entreaty</td>
<td>947</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Permission</td>
<td>948</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(e) Concession or Condition
(f) In Asyndeton
(g) In Subordinate Clauses
(h) The Tenses
(i) In Indirect Discourse

B. Dependent or Hypotactic Sentences

Introductory

(a) Use of Modes in Subordinate Sentences
(b) The Use of Conjunctions in Subordinate Clauses
(c) Logical Varieties of Subordinate Clauses

1. Relative Sentences

(a) Relative Sentences Originally Paratactic
(b) Most Subordinate Clauses Relative in Origin
(c) Relative Clauses Usually Adjectival
(d) Modes in Relative Sentences
(e) Definite and Indefinite Relative Sentences
(f) The Use of ἐν in Relative Clauses
(g) Special Uses of Relative Clauses
(h) Negatives in Relative Clauses

2. Causal Sentences

(a) Paratactic Causal Sentences
(b) With Subordinating Conjunctions
(c) Relative Clauses
(d) Διότι and the Infinitive
(e) The Participle

3. Comparative Clauses

(a) The Relative ὅσος
(b) Relative ὅς with κατὰ
(c) Καθότι in a Comparative Sense
(d) Ὑπὸς and its Compounds

4. Local Clauses

5. Temporal Clauses

(a) Kin to Relative Clauses in Origin and Idiom
(b) Conjunctions Meaning 'When'
(c) The Group Meaning 'Until' ('While')
(d) Some Nominal and Prepositional Phrases
(e) The Temporal Use of the Infinitive
(f) Temporal Use of the Participle

6. Final and Consecutive Clauses

(a) Kinship
(b) Origin in Parataxis
(c) Pure Final Clauses
   (α) ἦν
   (β) ὅπως
   (γ) ὅπως
   (δ) ἄρα, ἄραν, πότε, ἦν πώς
   (ε) Relative Clauses
   (ζ) The Infinitive
   (η) The Participle
(d) Sub-Final Clauses
  (α) "Ἰνα 991
  (β) "Ὁπως 994
  (γ) Μη, μή πως, μή ποτε 995
  (δ) The Relative Clause 996
  (ε) The Infinitive 996
  (ζ) Εί and ὅτι 997

(e) Consecutive Clauses 997
  (α) "Ἰνα 997
  (β) "Ὁστε 999
  (γ) "Ὡς 1000
  (δ) "Ὅτι 1001
  (ε) The Relative 1001
  (ζ) The Infinitive 1001

7. Wishes 1003
8. Conditional Sentences 1004
  (a) Two Types 1004
  (b) Four Classes 1004
    (α) Determined as Fulfilled 1007
    (β) Determined as Unfulfilled 1012
    (γ) Undetermined, but with Prospect of Determination 1016
    (δ) Remote Prospect of Determination 1020
  (c) Special Points 1022
    (α) Mixed Conditions 1022
    (β) Implied Conditions 1022
    (γ) Elliptical Conditions 1023
    (δ) Concessive Clauses 1026
    (ε) Other Particles with ει and εάν 1027

9. Indirect Discourse 1027
  (a) Recitative "Ὅτι in Oratio Recta 1027
  (b) Change of Person in Indirect Discourse 1028
  (c) Change of Tense in Indirect Discourse 1029
  (d) Change of Mode in Indirect Discourse 1030
  (e) The Limits of Indirect Discourse 1031
  (f) Declarative Clauses 1032
    (α) "Ὅτι and the Indicative 1032
    (β) The Infinitive 1036
    (γ) The Participle 1040
    (δ) Καὶ ἐγένετο 1042
  (g) Indirect Questions 1043
    (α) Tense 1043
    (β) Mode 1043
    (γ) Interrogative Pronouns and Conjunctions Used 1044
  (h) Indirect Command 1046
    (α) Deliberative Question 1046
    (β) The Conjunctions "Ἰνα and ὅπως 1046
    (γ) The Infinitive 1046
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(i) Mixture</td>
<td>1047</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j) The Subordinate Clause</td>
<td>1048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Series of Subordinate Clauses</td>
<td>1048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>(CHAPTER XX. Verbal Nouns)</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Kinship</td>
<td>1050</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. The Infinitive</td>
<td>1051</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Origin</td>
<td>1051</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Development</td>
<td>1052</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Prehistoric Period</td>
<td>1052</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Earliest Historic Period</td>
<td>1052</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Classic Period from Pindar on</td>
<td>1054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The (\text{Koinh}) Period</td>
<td>1054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) The Later Period</td>
<td>1056</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Significance</td>
<td>1056</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Substantival Aspects of the Infinitive</td>
<td>1058</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Case (Subject or Object Infinitive)</td>
<td>1058</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Articular Infinitive</td>
<td>1062</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Prepositions</td>
<td>1068</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Infinitive with Substantives</td>
<td>1075</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) The Infinitive with Adjectives</td>
<td>1076</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) The Infinitive with Verbs</td>
<td>1077</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) The Appositional Infinitive</td>
<td>1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Verbal Aspects of the Infinitive</td>
<td>1079</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Voice</td>
<td>1079</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Tense</td>
<td>1080</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Cases with the Infinitive</td>
<td>1082</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The Infinitive in Indirect Discourse</td>
<td>1082</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Personal Construction with the Infinitive</td>
<td>1085</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Epexegetical Infinitive</td>
<td>1086</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) Purpose</td>
<td>1087</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) Result</td>
<td>1089</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Cause</td>
<td>1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j) Time</td>
<td>1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(k) The Absolute Infinitive</td>
<td>1092</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(l) Negatives</td>
<td>1093</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(m) (^\chi) with the Infinitive</td>
<td>1095</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. The Participle</td>
<td>1095</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. The Verbals in (\text{--\tau\oslash}) and (--\text{\tau\epsilon\oslash})</td>
<td>1095</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. History of the Participle</td>
<td>1098</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The Sanskrit Participle</td>
<td>1098</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Homer's Time</td>
<td>1098</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) The Attic Period</td>
<td>1098</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) The (\text{Koinh})</td>
<td>1099</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Modern Greek</td>
<td>1099</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Significance of the Participle</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Originally an Adjective</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) The Addition of the Verbal Functions</td>
<td>1101</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

| (c) The Double Aspect of the Participle | 1101 |
| (d) Relation between Participle and Infinitive | 1101 |
| (e) Method of Treating the Participle | 1103 |

4. Adjectival Aspects of the Participle
   (a) Declension | 1104 |
   (b) Attributive Participle | 1105 |
     (α) Anarthrous | 1105 |
     (β) Articular | 1106 |
   (c) Predicate Participle | 1108 |
   (d) The Participle as a Substantive | 1108 |
   (e) The Participle as an Adverb | 1109 |

5. Verbal Aspects of the Participle
   (a) Voice | 1110 |
   (b) Tense | 1111 |
     (α) Timelessness of the Participle | 1111 |
     (β) The Aorist | 1112 |
     (γ) The Present | 1115 |
     (δ) The Perfect | 1116 |
     (ε) The Future | 1118 |
   (c) Cases | 1119 |
   (d) The Supplementary Participle | 1119 |
     (α) The Periphrastic Construction | 1119 |
     (β) A Diminution of the Complementary Participle | 1120 |
     (γ) Verbs of Emotion | 1121 |
     (δ) Indirect Discourse | 1122 |
   (e) The Circumstantial Participle | 1124 |
     (α) The General Theory | 1124 |
     (β) Varieties of the Circumstantial Participle | 1125 |
     (γ) The Absolute Participle in Subordinate Clauses | 1130 |
   (f) The Independent Participle in a Sentence | 1132 |
   (g) Co-ordination between Particles | 1135 |
   (h) Οὗ and μη with the Participle | 1136 |
   (i) Other Particles with the Participle | 1139 |

CHAPTER XXI. Particles | 1142-1193 |

I. Scope | 1142 |

II. Intensive or Emphatic Particles | 1144 |
   1. Limitations | 1144 |
   2. The N. T. Illustrations | 1147 |
     (a) Γέ | 1147 |
     (b) Δή | 1149 |
     (c) Εἰ μην, νη and ναί | 1150 |
     (d) Μέν | 1150 |
     (e) Πέρ | 1153 |
     (f) Τότε | 1154 |

III. Negative Particles | 1155 |
   1. The Objective ὁὗ and its Compounds | 1155 |
     (a) Origin | 1155 |
lx        A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

(b) History 1156  
(c) Meaning 1156  
(d) Uses 1156
   (i) The Indicative 1157
      (a) Independent Sentences 1157
      (b) Subordinate Clauses 1158
   (ii) The Subjunctive 1160
   (iii) The Optative 1161
   (iv) The Imperative 1161
   (v) The Infinitive 1162
   (vi) The Participle 1162
   (vii) With Nouns 1163

(e) Kai Ou 1164
(f) Redundant or Pleonastic Ou 1164
(g) Repetition of Ou 1164
(h) The Intensifying Compound Negative 1164
(i) The Disjunctive Negative 1165

2. The Subjective Negative Mi and Its Compounds 1166
   (a) The History of Mi 1166
   (b) Significance of Mi 1167
   (c) Uses of Mi 1168
      (i) The Indicative 1168
      (ii) The Subjunctive 1169
      (iii) The Optative 1170
      (iv) The Imperative 1170
      (v) The Infinitive 1170
      (vi) The Participle 1172
      (vii) Nouns 1172
   (d) The Intensifying Compounds with Mi 1172
      (e) Kai Mu 1173
      (f) Disjunctive Use of Mi 1173

3. Combination of the Two Negatives 1173
   (a) Mi Ou 1173
   (b) Ou Mu 1174

IV. Interrogative Particles 1175
   1. Single Questions 1175
      (a) Direct Questions 1175
         (i) No Particle at All 1175
         (ii) The Use of Negative Particles 1175
         (iii) Other Particles 1176
         (iv) Interrogative Pronouns 1176
         (v) Interrogative Conjunctions 1176
      (b) Indirect Questions 1176
         (i) Pronouns 1176
         (ii) Conjunctions 1177

2. Double Questions 1177
   (i) Direct 1177
   (ii) Indirect 1177
### FULL TABLE OF CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PAGE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lxii</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>V. Conjunctions</th>
<th>1177</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Paratactic Conjunctions</td>
<td>1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Copulative</td>
<td>1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Τέ</td>
<td>1178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ii) Καί</td>
<td>1179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iii) Δέ</td>
<td>1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iv) ΑΛΛΆ</td>
<td>1185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Adversative</td>
<td>1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Δé</td>
<td>1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ii) ΑΛΛΆ</td>
<td>1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iii) ΠΛΗ</td>
<td>1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iv) Μέντοι</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(v) ΟΜΩΣ</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(vi) ΕΙ ΜΗ</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Disjunctives</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Υ</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ii) ΕΙΤΕ--ΕΙΤΕ (ΕΙΑΝΤΕ--ΕΙΑΝΤΕ)</td>
<td>1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iii) ΟΥΤΕ--ΟΥΤΕ (ΜΗΤΕ—ΜΗΤΕ)</td>
<td>1109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Inferential Conjunctions</td>
<td>1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) ΥΡΑ</td>
<td>1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ii) ΓΑΡ</td>
<td>1190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(iii) ΟΥ</td>
<td>1191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Hypotactic Conjunctions</td>
<td>1192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. Interjections</td>
<td>1193</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHAPTER XXII. Figures of Speech</th>
<th>1194-1208</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I. Rhetorical, not Grammatical</td>
<td>1194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. Style in the N. T.</td>
<td>1194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. Figures of Idea or Thought</td>
<td>1198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Figures of Expression</td>
<td>1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) Parallels and Contrasts</td>
<td>1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Contrasts in Words</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Contraction and Expansion</td>
<td>1201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Metaphors and Similar Tropes</td>
<td>1206</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ADDITIONAL NOTES</th>
<th>1209-1221</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. ΚΑΘΕΡΙΞΩ or ΚΑΘΕΡΙΞΩ</td>
<td>1209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Prothetic Vowels hi the N. T</td>
<td>1209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Elision</td>
<td>1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. ΠΑΡΡΗΣΙΑ</td>
<td>1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Assimilation of έν μέσω</td>
<td>1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Rules for Assimilation of Consonants</td>
<td>1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. Metathesis</td>
<td>1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Enclitics and Proclitics</td>
<td>1211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. ΒΟΥΣΤΡΟΦΗΣΟΥ</td>
<td>1211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Perfect of ΩΡΑ</td>
<td>1211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11. Augment in the Past Perfect</td>
<td>1211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12. List of Important Verbs</td>
<td>1212-1220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13. Ablaut</td>
<td>1220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Section</td>
<td>Page Range</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX OF SUBJECTS</td>
<td>1223-1248</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX OF GREEK WORDS</td>
<td>1249-1290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX OF QUOTATIONS</td>
<td>1291-1376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) New Testament</td>
<td>1291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) Old Testament</td>
<td>1361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) Inscriptions</td>
<td>1366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) Papyri and Ostraca</td>
<td>1367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) Greek Literature</td>
<td>1372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i) Classical</td>
<td>1372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(ii) Κοινή</td>
<td>1373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) Latin</td>
<td>1376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADDENDA TO THE SECOND EDITION</td>
<td>1377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX TO ADDENDA TO SECOND AND THIRD EDITIONS</td>
<td>1433-1454</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
LIST OF WORKS MOST OFTEN REFERRED TO

I HAD prepared an exhaustive analytic bibliography of the pertinent literature, but it was so long that, on the advice of several friends, I have substituted an alphabetical list of the main works mentioned in the book. The editions of Greek authors, the papyri and the inscriptions will be found in the Index of Quotations. Look there for them. For full histories of grammatical discussion one may turn to Sandys, *A History of Classical Scholarship*, vols. I–III (1906-1908); Gudemann, *Grundriss der Geschichte der klassischen Philologie* (2. Aufl., 1909); and Hubner, *Grundriss zu Vorlesungen uber die griechische Syntax* (1883). By no means all the works consulted and referred to in the Grammar are given below. Only the most important can be mentioned. Hundreds that were consulted are not alluded to in the Grammar. But the following list represents fairly well the works that have contributed most to the making of my book. The chief journals quoted are also mentioned here.

______, *Johannine Grammar* (1906).
______, *Johannine Vocabulary* (1905).
ALLEN, H. F., *The Infinitive in Polybius compared with the Infinitive in Biblical Greek* (1907).

lxiii
APOSTOLIDES, Essai sur l'Hellenisme Egyptien et ses rapports avec l'Hellenisme classique et l'Hellenisme moderne (1898).

_______, Du grec alexandrin et des rapports avec le grec ancien et le grec moderne (1892).

Archiv für Papyrysforshung und verwandte Gebiete (Leipzig).

ARNAUD, Essai sur le caractère de la langue grec du N. T. (1899).

ARNOLD and CONWAY, The Restored Pronunciation of Greek and Latin (1885).

AUDOIN, E., De la declinaison dans les langues indo-europeennes (1898).


BACON, ROGER, Oxford Greek Grammar. Edited by Nolan and Hirsch (1902).

BAMBERG, Hauptregeln der griechischen Syntax (1890).

BARON, Le Pronom Relatif et la Conjonctive en Grec (1892).

BARRY, W., The Holy Latin Tongue (Dublin Rev., April, 1906); Our Latin Bible (ib., July).

BAUMLEIN, Untersuchungen über die griech. Modi und die Partikeln κεν und αὐ (1846).

_______, Untersuch. über griech. Partikeln (1861).

BEKKER, Anecdota Graeca. 3 Bde. (1814-1821).

BE.NARD, Formes verbales en grec d'apres le texte d'Herodote (1890).

BERDOLT, Der Konsekutivsatz in der ahem griech. Lit. (1896).

BERNHARDY, G., Wissenschaftliche Syntax der griechischen Sprache (1829).


Bibl. Gr. V., Bibliotheque grecque vulgaire (Paris).


BIRKE, De Particularum μή et οὖ ḥ ὧ Polybiano Dionysiaeo Dio- doreo Straboniano (1897).

BIRKLEIN, F., Entwickelungsgeschichte des substantivierten Infinitivs (1882).


_______, Die griech. Beredsamkeit von Alex. bis auf August. (1865).

_______, Die Rhythmen der asianischen und romischen Kunstprosa (1905).


_______, Evangelium sec. Lukam (1897).
   ______, Hermeneutik and Kritik (1892).
   ______, Pronunciation of Ancient Greek (translation by Purton in 1890 of 3. Aufl. of Uber die Aussprache des Griech. 1888).
BLASS-DEBRUNNER, Grammatik d. neut. Griech. 4. Aufl. (1913).
BLOOMFIELD, Study of Greek Accent (A. J. Ph., 1883).
BOHMER, J., Das biblische "im Namen" (1898).
BOISACQ, Les dialectes doriens (1891).
   ______, Dictionnaire etymol. de la langue grecque (1907 ff.).
BONHOFFER, A., Epiktet und das N. T. (1911).
BOPP, Vergleichende Grammatik (1857).
BROADUS, JOHN A., Comm. on Matt. (1886).
BROCKELMANN, C., Grunclriss der vergleichenden Grammatik der semitischen Sprachen (1907).
BRUGMANN, K., Elements of Comparative Grammar of the Indo-Germanic Languages (translation by Wright, 1895).
   ______, Griechische Grammatik. 3. Aufl. (1900), the ed. quoted.
   Vierte vermehrte Aufl. of A. Thumb (1913).
   ______, Kurze vergleichende Grammatik der indogermanischen Sprachen (1904).
BULTMANN, R., Der Stil der paulinischen Predigt und die kynisch-stoische Diatribe (1910).
BURKITT, F. C., Syriac Forms of N. T. Proper Name 1912).
BURROWS, R. M., Discoveries in Crete (1907).
   ______, Harvard Lectures on Greek Subjects (1904).
BUTTMANN, A., Grammatik d. neut. Sprachgebrauchs (1859).
BUTTMANN-THAYER, A Grammar of the N. T. Greek (1880).
BYWATER, J., The Erasinian Pronunciation of Greek and its Pre-
cursors (1908).

Byz. Z., Byzantinische Zeitschrift (Leipzig).


CAUER, Grammatica Militans. 3d ed. (1912).

CHANDLER, H., A Practical Introduction to Greek Accentuation.

2d ed. (1881).


CHRIST, W., Geschichte der griech. Literatur bis auf die Zeit Jus-

CHURTON, The Influence of the Septuagint upon the Progress of
Christianity (1861),

CLAFLIN, EDITH, Syntax of Boeotian Dialect Inscriptions (1905).

CLASSEN, J., De Grammaticae Graecae Primordiis (1829).

Cl. Ph., Classical Philology (Chicago).

Cl. Q., Classical Quarterly (London).


Cl. W., Classical Weekly (New York).

CLYDE, J., Greek Syntax (1876).

COMPERNASS, De Sermone Gr. Volg. Pisidiae Phrygiaeque men-
dionalis (1895).

CONYBEARE and STOCK Selections from the LXX. A Gram-
matical Introduction (1905).

COURTOZ, Les Prefixes en Grec, en Latin et en Francais (1894).

CREMER, H., Biblico-Theological Lexicon of N. T. Greek (1892).

Urwick's translation.


Cremer-Kogel, neue Aufl. (1912).

CRONERT, W., Memoria Graeca Herculanensis (1903).

________, Questiones Herculanenses (1898).

CRUM, W. E., Coptic Ostraca from the Collections of the Egypt
Exploration Fund, the Cairo Museum and others (1902).

CURTIS, G., Greek Etymology. 2 vols. (1886).

________, Studien zur griech. and lat. Grammatik (1868-1878).

DALMAN, G., Grammatik des judisch-palastinischen Aramaisch
(1894).

________, Worte Jesu (1902).

Dawes, E. S., Pronunciation of the Gk. Aspirates (1894).

D. B., Dictionary of the Bible (Hastings, 1898-1904).

DEISSMANN, A., Bible Studies (1901). Tr. by A. Grieve; cf. Bibelstudien (1895) and Neue Bibelstudien (1897).
_______, Biblische Gracitat etc. (Theol. Rundschau, Okt. 1912).
_______, Die neut. Formel "in Christo" (1892).
_______, Hellenistisches Griechisch (Herzog-Hauck's Realencyc., VII, 1899).
_______, Licht vom Osten (1908).
_______, Light from the Ancient East (1910). Tr. by Stachan.
_______, New Light on the N. T. (1907). Tr. by Strachan.
_______, St. Paul in the Light of Social and Religious History (1912).
DELBRJYCE, B., Ablativ Localis Instrumentalis (1867).
_______, Syntaktische Forschungen. 5 Bde. (1871-1888).
DICK, Der schriftstellerische Plural bei Paulus (1900).1
DIEL, De enuntiatis finalibus apud graecarum rerum scriptores posterioris aetatis (1894).
DRAEGER, Hist. Syntax d. lat. Sprache (1878-1881).
DURR, Sprachliche Untersuchungen (1899).
DYROFF, A., Geschichte des Pronomen Reflexivum (1892, 1893).
EARLE, M. L., Classical Papers (1912).
EBELING, H., Griechisch-deutches Worterbuch zum N. T. (1913).
E. G. T., Expositor's Greek Testament.
ENGEL, E., Die Aussprache des Griechischen (1887).
ERNARUFT, Du Parfait en Grec et en Latin (1886).
EVANS, A. J., Cretan Pictographs and Pre-Phoenician Script (1895).
________, Further Researches (1898).
Exp., The Expositor (London).
Expous. T., The Expository Times (Edinburgh).
FARNELL, L. R., Greek Conditional and Relative Sentences (1892).
FARRAR, F. W., Greek Syntax (1876).
FICK-BECHTEL, Die griechischen Personennamen. 2.1Aufl. (1894).
FIELD, F., Otium NorVicense. Pars Tertia (1881).
FLENSBERG, Uber Ursprung und Bildung des Pron. αὐτός (1893).
FOY, K., Lautsystem der griech. Vulgarsprache (1879).
FRANKEL, Griechische Denominativa (1906).
FRENZEL, Die Entwickl der relativen Satzbaues im Griech. (1889).
________, Die Entwickl. der Satze mit πρότ (1896).
FUCHS, A., Die Temporalsatze mit den Konjunktionen "bis" und "so lang als" (1902).
FUHRER, De Particulae ως cum Participiis et Praepos. punctae
Usu Thucydideoe (1889).
GALLOWAY, W. F., On the Use of Μή with the Participle in Classical Greek (1897).
GEDDES, A Compendious Greek Grammar (1888).
GELDART, The Modern Greek Language in Its Relation to Ancient Greek (1870).
GERSDORF, C. G., Beiträge zur Sprachcharakteristik der Schriftsteller des N. T. (1816).
GESENIUS-KATITZSCH, Hebrew Grammar.
GEYER, M., Observationes epigraphicae de praepositionum graec. forma et usu (1880).
GILDERSLEEVE, B. L., Editions of Pindar and Justin Martyr.
________, Latin Grammar. Many editions since 1867.
________, Notes on Stahl's Syntax of the Greek Verb (1910).
________, Numerous articles in the American Journal of Philology.
GILDERSLEEVE and MILLER, Syntax of Classical Greek. Part I (1900), Part II (1911).
GILES, P., A Short Manual of Comparative Philology. 2d ed.
(1901).

GOETZELER, L., De Polybii elocutione (1887).


GOODWIN, W. W., Greek Grammar. Various editions.


GREEN, Μή for οὖ before Lucian (Studies in Honour of B. Gildersleeve, 1902).

GREEN, B., Notes on Greek and Latin Syntax (1897).


GRIMM-THAYER, A Greek-English Lexicon of the N. T. (1887).


GUILLEMAND, W. H., Hebraisms in the Greek Testament (1879).

GUNTHER, R., Die Prapos. in d. griech. Dialektinschriften (Indog. Forsch., 1906).

HADLEY and ALLEN, Greek Grammar (1895).

HADLEY, JAMES, Essays Philological and Critical (1873).


______, The Cum Constructions (Studies in Class. 1887).


HAMILTON, The Negative Compounds in Greek (1899).

HAMMER, De τέ Particulae Usu Herodotoe Thucydideo Xenophonete (1904).

HAMMERSCHMIDT, Uber die Grundb. von Konjunktiv and Optativ.
HARRIS, J. RENDEL, Side-Lights on N. T. Research (1908).
HARRISON, GESSNER, A Treatise on the Philology of Greek Prepositions (1858).
HARRISON, Miss JANE, Prol. to the Study of Greek Religion (1903).
HATCH, E., Essays in Bibl. Greek (1892).
HATZIDAKIS, G. N., Einleitung in die neugriechische Grammatik (1892).
HAVERS, W., Untersuch. zur Kasussyntax der indog. Sprachen (1911).
HEINE, G., Synonymik des neutest. Griechisch (1898).
HEIMULLER, W., Im Narnen Jesu (1902).
HELBING, R., Die Prapos. bei Herodot und andern Historikern (1904).
_______, Grammatik der Septuaginta. Laut- und Wortlehre (1907).
_______, Uber den Gebrauch des echten und soziativen Dativs bei Herodot.
Hermes, Zeitschrift fur klassische Philologie.
HESSELING, D. C., De Koine en de oude dialekten van Griechenland (1906).
HICKS, E. L., St. Paul and Hellenism (Studia Biblica et Eccl., 1896).
_______, Traces of Greek Philosophy and Roman Law in the N. T. (1896).
_______, Use of Political Terms in the N. T. (Class. Rev., March and April, 1887).
    2. Aufl. (1912).
HOFFMANN, F., Neutestamentliche Bibelstudien. '5 Bde. (1903).
    Uber die Entwick. des Begriffs der Grammatik bei den
    Alten (1891).
HOFFMANN, O., Das Prdsens der indog. Grundsprache (1889).
    ______, Die Makedonen, ihre Sprache und ihr Volkstum (1906).
    ______, Geschichte d. griech. Sprache (1911).
HOGARTH, D. G., Philip and Alexander (1897).
HOLL, K., Das Fortleben der Volkssprachen in nachchristlicher
    Zeit (Hermes, 1908, 43, pp. 243 ff.).
HORT, F. J. A., Notes on Orthography (pp. 141-173, vol. II of the
    N. T. in the Original Greek, 1882).
HOWES, The Use of Μὴ with the Participle (Harv. St. in Cl. Ph.,
    1901).
HATCH and REDPATH, Concordance to the LXX (1897).
HUBNER, E., Grundriss zu Vorlesungen uber die griech. Syntax
    (1883).
HUBSCHMANN, Zur Kasuslehre (1875).
HUMPHREYS, M. W., The Problems of Greek (Congress of Arts
    and Sciences, 1904, vol. III, pp. 171 ff.).
Indog. Forsch., Indogermanische Forschungen (Stratiburg).
IMMER, J., Hermeneutics of the N. T. Tr. by A. H. Newman
    (1877).
Intern. Woch., Internationale Wochenschrift.
JACOBSTHAL, H. K., Der Gebrauch der Tempora und Modi in
    den kretischen Dialektinschriften (1906).
JACQUIER, E., Histoire des Livres du N. T. Tomes I–IV. Ch. ii,
    Tome I, Langue du N. T.
JANNARIS, A. N., A Historical Greek Grammar (1897).
    93 ff.).
JEBB, R. C., Attic Orators. 2d ed. (1893).
    ______, Introduction to the Iliad and the Odyssey (1892).
    ______, On the Relation of Classical to Modern Greek (Appendix
    to Vincent and Dickson's Handbook to Mod. Gk., 1887).
    (1866).
________, Geschichte des Infinitivs im Indog. (1873).
JOY, On the Syntax of Some Prepositions in the Greek Dialects (1905).
JULICHER, A., Introduction to the N. T. Tr. by Ward (1904).
KAERST, J., Geschichte des hellenistischen Zeitalters (1901).
KAIBEL, Stil und Text der Αθηναίων Πολιτεία.
KALKER, F., Questioned de elocutione Polybiana (1880).
KAUTZSCH, E., Grammatik d. bibl. Aram. (1884).
KENNEDY, H. A. A., Recent Research in the Language of the N. T. (The Expos. T., xii, 1901).
________, Sources of N. T. Greek (1895).
________, St Paul and the Mystery Religions (1913).
KENYON, F. G., Evidence of the Papyri for Textual Criticism of the N. T. (1905).
________, Handbook to the Textual Crit. of the N. T. 2d ed. (1912).
________, Palaeography of the Greek Papyri (1899).
________, Papyri (Hastings' D. B., extra vol., 1904).
KING and COOKSON, The Principles of Sound and Inflexion as Illustrated in the Greek and Latin Languages (1888).
KRAUSS, S., Griechische and lateinische Lehnwörter in Talmud, Midrasch und Targum. I (1898), II (1899).
KREBS, F., Die Prapositionen bei Polybius (1882. Schanz' Beiträge).
KRENKEL, Josephus und Lukas (1894).
KRETSCHMER, P., Die Einl. in die Geschichte der griech. Sprache (1906).
________, Die griech. Vaseninschriften ihrer Sprache nach untersucht (1894).
KRUMBACHER, K., Beiträge zu einer Geschichte der griech. Sprache (Kuhn's Zeitschr., 1885, pp. 481-545).
________, Das Problem d. neugriech. Schriftsprache (1902).
________, Das Programm des neuen Thesaurus d. griech. Spr. (1909).
KUHNER-BLASS, Ausführliche Grammatik d.griech. Sprache.
  TII, Bde. I, II (1898, 1904).
KUHRING, G., De praepositionum Graecarum in chartis Aegyptiacis (1906).
K. Z., Kuhn's Zeitschrift fur vergl. Sprachforschung (Berlin).
LAMBERT, Etude sur le dialecte eolien (1903).
LANG, A., Homer and His Age (1906).
LAQUEUR, Questiones epigraphicae et papyrologicae selectae (1904).
LA ROCHE, Beitrag zur griech. Gr. (1883).
________, Das Augment des griech. Verbums (1882).
LAUGHLIN, T. C., The Solecisms of the Apocalypse (1902).
LAUTENSACH, Verbalflexion der attischen Inschriften (1887).
LEFEVRE, Race and Language (1909).
LELL, Der Absolut-Akk. im Griech. bis zu Aristoteles (1892).
LIDDELL and SCOTT, Greek-English Lexicon. 8th, ed. (1882).
LIGHTFOOT, TRENCH, ELLICOTT, The Revision of the N. T. (1873).
LIVINGSTON, The Greek Genius and Its Meaning to Us (1912).
LOBECK, C. A., Phrynichi ecloga nominum et verborum Atticorum (1820).
LOCK, W., The Bible and Christian Life (1905).
LOISY, A., Histoire critique du texte et des versions de la Bible (1892).
LOTTICH, B., De sermone vulgari Atticorum (1881).
MADVIG, Bemerk. über einige Punkte des Griech. (1848).
__________, Syntax of the Greek Language (1880).
__________, Greek Life and Thought (1896).
__________, Progress of Hellenism in Alexander's Empire (1905).
__________, The Greek World under Roman Sway (1890).
__________, What Have the Greeks Done for Civilization? (1909).
__________, L'aoriste en lat. (Revue de Phil., 1897, p. 81 f.).
__________, Notes d'Etymologie Grecque (1896).
MEISTER, R., Beitrage zur Lautlehre d. LXX (1909).
__________, Prol. zu einer Gramm. d. LXX (1907).
MEISTERHANS-SCHWYZER, Gramm. d. attischen Inschriften. 3. Aufl. (1900) of Meisterhans.
MERRIAM, A. C., Temporal Coincidence of the Aor. Part. with the Principal Verb (Proc. Am. Phil. Assoc., 1877).
MEYER, A., Jesu Muttersprache (1896).
MEYER, L., Griech. Aoriste (1879).
MIDDLETON, Analogy in Syntax (1892).
__________, The Doctrine of the Greek Article (1855).
MILDEN, The Limitations of the Predicate Position in Greek.
MILLIGAN, G., Selections from the Greek Papyri (1910).
MILLIGAN, G., The Greek Papyri with Special Reference to their Value for N. T. Study (1912).
        , The N. T. Documents (1913).
MITSOTAKIS, Praktische Gr. d. neugriech. Schrift- und Umgangs-
         sprache (1891).
MITTEIs und WILCKEN, Grundztige und Chrestoinathie der Papy-
         ruskunde. 2 Bde. (1912).
MOMMSEN, T., Beitrage zur Lehre der griech. Prapositionen (1886-1895).
        , Die Prap. σύν and μετά bei den nachhom. Epikern (1879).
        , Characteristics of N. T. Greek (The Expositor, 1904).
        , Einleitung in die Sprache des N. T. (1911).
        , Grammatical Notes from the Papyri (The Expositor, 1901, pp. 271-282; 1903, pp. 104-121, 423-439. The Classical Re-
        , Language of Christ (Hastings' One-vol. 1 B., 1909).
        , N. T. Greek in the Light of Modern Discovery (Cambr.
        , The Science of Language (1903).
MOULTON, W. F., and GEDEN, A. S., A Concordance to the Greek Testament (1897).
MOULTON and MILLIGAN, Lexical Notes from the Papyri (The Expos., 1908--).
        , The Vocabulary of the N. T. Illustrated from the Papyri and other Non-Literary Sources. Part I (1914), II, III.
MULLACH, F., Grammatik d. griech. Vulgarsprache (1856).
MULLER, I., Handbuch d. klass. Altertumswissenschaft (1885-).
MURRAY, G., A History of Ancient Greek Lit. (1897).
MUTZBAUER, C., Die Grundbedeutung des Konjunktivs und Op-
         tatifs und ihre Entwick. im Griech. (1908).
        , Die Grundlagen der griech. Tempuslehre kind des horn.
         Tempusgebrauchs. I (1893), II (1909).
NACHManson, E., Beitrage zur Kenntnis der altgriech. Volks-
sprache (1910).
________, Epigraphisch-grammatische Bemerkungen (Eranos 11,
1912).
________, Laute und Formen der magnetischen Inschriften (1903).
NAGELI, T., Der Wortschatz des Apostels Paulus. α — ε (1905).
116-130).
     Introd. to the Textual Crit. of the N. T. (Tr. 1901).
________, Novum Testamentum Graece. 8th ed. (1910).
________, Septuagint (Hastings' D. B., 1902).
NEUBAUER, Studia Biblica (1885).
N. k. Z., Neue kirchliche Zeitschrift (Leipzig).
N. Jahrb. kl. Alt., Neue Jahrbucher für das klass. Altertum
   (Leipzig).
NILSSON, Kausalsatze im Griech. bis Aristoteles. I., Die Poesie.
OERTEL, H., Lectures on the Study of Language (1902).
OGDEN, De infinitivi finalis vel consecutivi constr. apud priscos
   poetas Graecos (1913).
PALEY, Greek Particles and their Combinations (1881).
PALLIS, A., A Few Notes on the Gospel (1903).
   ________, Ἡ Νέα Διαθήκη (1902). The N. T. (Gospels) in modern
      Greek vernacular.
PATER, W., The Renaissance (1904).
PETERSEN, W., Greek Diminutives in —ων (1910).
PFEIFAUß, Der Artikel vor Personen- und Gotternamen bei Thuk.
   und Herod. (1908).
PFISTER, Die parataktische Darstellungsform in der volkstum-
   lichen Erzählung (Woch. f. klass. Phil., 1911, pp. 809-813).
Ph. W., Philologische Wochenschrift.
Ph. Z., Philologus: Zeitschrift f. d. kl. Alt. (Gottingen).
   (1905).
PREUSCHEN, E., Vollstandiges griechisch-deutsches HandwOrter-
   buch zu den Schriften d. N. T. und d. iibrigen urchristlichen
   Literatur (1908).
PSICHARI, J., Essai sur le grec de la Septante (Rev. des etudes juives, April, 1908).
______, Essais de grammaire historique neo-grecque (1886-1889).
RAMSAY, W. M., Cities and Bishoprics of Phrygia. 2 vols. (1895, 1897).
______, St. Paul the Traveller (1896).
R. E., Herzog-Hauck's Realencyclopalie.
R. E. Gr., Revue des etudes grecques (Paris).
REFTEL, Uber den Sprachgebr. D. Agathias.
REIK, Der Opt. bei Polyb. and Philo (1907).
REINACH, S., Pap. grecs et demotiques (1905).
REINHOLD, H., De graecitate Patrum (1898).
REITZENSTEIN, Geschichte d. greek. Etym. (1897).
RENAUD, The Distributed Emphasis of the Pers. Pronoun (1884).
Rev. and Exp., The Review and Expositor (Louisville).
Rev. of Th. & Ph., Review of Theology and Philosophy (Edin-
burgh).
Rh. M., Rheinisches Museum (Bonn).
RIEMANN and GOELZER, Grammaire Comparee du Grec et du Latin. I (1897), II (1901).
RIES, Was ist Syntax? (1894).
ROBERTS, A Short Proof that Greek was the Language of Jesus (1893).
ROBERTS-GARDNER, Introduction to Greek Epigraphy (1883).
3d ed. (1912).
______, Syllabus on N. T. Greek Syntax (1900).
ROBERTSON-BONACCORSI, Breve grammatica del Nuovo Testamento greco (1910).
ROBERTSON-GROSHEIDE, Beknopte Grammatica op het Griekse Nieuwe Testament (1912).
ROBERTSON-MONTET, Grammaire du grec du N. T. (1911).
ROBERTSON-STOCKS, Kurzgefasste Grammatik des neut. Griechisch (1911).
ROSE, A., Christian Greece and Living Greek (1898).
ROSSBERG, C., De prapos. graecarum in chartis aegyptiis ptolem, aetatis usu (1909).
ROUFFIAC, J., Recherches sur les caracteres du grec dans le N. T. d'apres les inscriptions de Priene (1911).
RUTHERFORD, W. G., A Chapter in the History of Annotation (1905).
________, The New Phrynichus (1881).
RUGER, Prap. bei Joh. Antiochenus (1896).
________, Prap. bei Pausanias (1889).
SANDAY, W., The Criticism of the Fourth Gospel (1905).
________, Principles of Comparative Philology (1875).
SCHANZ, M., Beitrag zur histor. Syntax d. griech. Sprache (1882—).
SCHLAGETER, J., Der Wortschatz d. ausserhalb Attikas gefundenen Inschriften (1912).
SCHMID, J., Uber den gnomischen Aor. des Griech. (1894).
SCHMID, W., Der Atticismus in seinen Hauptvertretern. 4 Bde. (1887-1897).
SCHMIDT, De Articulo in nominibus propriis apud Att. scriptores (1890).
SCHMIDT, W., De Flavii Josephi elocutione (1894).
SCHMITT, P., Uber den Ursprung des Substantivsatzes mit Relativpartikeln im Griech. (1889).
SCHOEMANN, Die Lehre von den Redet. nach den Alten (1862).

SCHULZE, Der schriftsteller. Charakter und Wert des Petrus, Judas und Jakobus (1802).

SCHULZE, W., Graeca, Latina (1901).


_______, Grammatik der pergamen. Inschriften (1898).


SCHWYZER (SCHWEIZER), E., Die Weltsprachen des Altertums (1902).


_______, Life in the Homeric Age (1907).

_______, The Use of the Gk. Aor. Part. (Trans. Am. Phil. Assoc., XII, 1881, pp. 88 ff.).

S. H., Sanday and Headlam on Romans.

SHARP, G., Remarks on the Definitive Article in the Greek of the N. T. (1803).

SHEFFIELD, A. D., Grammar and Thinking (1912).


_______, The Writers of the N. T.


SMITH, R. H., The Theory of Conditional Sentences in Greek and Latin (1894).


_______, Griechisches N. T. Text mit kurzem Apparat (1913).

SOLMSEN, F., Beiträge zur griech. Wortforschung (1909).

_______, Inscriptiones graecae selectae (1905).

_______, Untersuch. zur griech. Laut- und Verslehre (1901).
SOPHOCLES, E. A., Greek Lexicon of the Roman and Byzantine Period (1888).


__________, Introduction to the Psychology and Science of Language (1900).


STERRETT, J. R. S., Homer's Iliad with Grammar (1907).

STOCKS, H., Das neutestamentliche Griechisch im Lichte der modernen Sprachforschung (Neue kirchliche Zeitschrift, XXIV. Jahrgang, 633-700).


STURTEVANT, Studies in Greek Noun Formation (Labial Terminations, I, 1910; II, 1911; III and IV, 1913).

SUSEMIHL, Gesch. der griech. Lit. in der Alexandrinerzeit. I (1891), II (1892).

SUTTERLIN, Gesch. der Verba denom. in Altgriech. (1891).

SWEET, History of Language (1900).


______, The Apocalypse of St. John (1906).

______, The O. T. in Greek according to the Septuagint (1887). 3 vols.

SZUCZURAT, De Inf. Horn. Usu (1902).


______, Relation of St. Paul to Contemporary Thought (1900).

THAYER, J. H., Greek-English Lexicon of the N. T. (1887).

______, Language of the N. T. (Hastings' D. B., 1900).

Th. L.-Z., Theologische Literaturzeitung (Leipzig).

Th. R., Theologische Rundschau (Tubingen).

Th. St. u. Kr., Theol. Studien und Kritiken (Gotha).


THOLUCK, Beitrage zur Spracherklarung des N. T.


THOMSON, J. E. H., The Language of Palestine during the Time of Our Lord (Temple Bible Dict.).


THUMB, Die griech. Sprache im Zeitalter des Hellenismus (1901).


THUMB-ANGUS, Handbook of the Modern Greek Vernacular (1912).

TISCH., Novum Testamentum Graece, by C. Tischendorf. Edi-
tio octava critica major. 2 vols. (1869-1872).

TRENCH, R. C., Synonyms of the N. T. 11th ed. (1890). Deutsche Ausgabe von Werner (1907).

TSOUNTAS and MANATT, The Mycenaean Age (1897).

TUCKER, T. G., Introduction to the Natural History of Language (1908).

VANDACLE, L’Optatif Grec (1897).

VEITCH, W., Greek Verbs, Irregular and Defective. 2d ed. (1871).


VIERECK, Die Papyrsliteratur in den 70 Jahren bis 1898 (1900).


VIERECK, Sermo Graecus quo senatus populusque Romanus (1888).

VIERKE, De μη Particulae cum Indicativo Conjunctae Usu Antiquiore (1876).
VINCENT and DICKSON, A Handbook to Modern Greek (1887).
VITEAU, J., Essai sur la syntax des voix dans le grec du N. T.,
(Rev. de Phil., 1894).
________, Etude sur le grec du N. T. I, Le Verbe (1893); II, Le Suje,
(1896).
VOGEL, H., Zur Charakteristik des Lukas nach Sprache und Stil
(1899).
VOGRINZ, Grammatik d. hom. Dial. (1889).
VOLKER, F., Papyrorum graecorum syntaxis specimen (1900).
________, Syntax d. griech. Papyri. I, Der Artikel (1903).
WACKERNAGEL, J., Das Dehnungsgesetz der griech. Komposita
(1889).
________, Die hellenistische Gemeinsprache. (Die Kult. d. Gegenwart,
________, Die Sprache des Plut. etc. Teile I, II (1895-1896).
WAGNER, R., Questions de epigrammatis graecis ex lapidibus
collectis grammaticae (1883).
WALCH, Observationes in Matt. ex graecis inscriptionibus (1779).
WALKER, D., Elementary Greek Syntax (1897).
WARFIELD, B. B., An Introduction to the Textual Criticism of
the N. T. New ed. (1914).
WARREN, WINIFRED, A Study of Conjunctional Temporal Clauses
in Thucyd. (1897).
WEBER, P., Entwick. der Absichtssatze. Heft I (1884), Heft II
(1885).
WECKLEIN, Curae epigraphicae ad grammaticam graecam et ad
poetas scenicos pertinentes (1869).
WEISS, B., Der Gebr. des Artikels bei den Gottesnamen (Th.
________, Textkritik (1894 ff.).
WEISS, J., Beitrage zur paulinischen Rhetorik (1897).
WELLHAUSEN, J., Einl. in die drei ersten Evangelien (1905).
2. Ausg. (1911).
WENDLAND, P., Christentum und Hellenismus (1907).
________, Hellen.-rom. Kultur. 3. Aufl. (1912).
________, Lit. der Papyruskunde (Stud. zur Palaogr. und Pap. I,
1901, pp. 17-20; II, 1902, pp. 43-52).
________, Proleg. ad papyrorum graecorum novam collectionem eden-
dam (1883).
WESTCOTT, B. F., Language of the N. T. (Smith's B. D.).
_________, The N. T. in the Original Greek. Introduction and Appendix (1882).
WEYMOUTH, On the Rendering into English of the Greek Aorist and Perfect (1894).
WHIBLEY, L., Companion to Greek Studies (1905). 2d ed. (1906).
WHITNEY, S. W., The Revisers' Greek Text. 2 vols. (1892).
__________, Language and the Study of Language (1867).
__________, Life and Growth of Language (1875).
__________, Uber die Entstehung der griech. Schriftsprachen (Verf. deutscher Phil. and Schulm., 1879, pp. 36-41).
WILHELM, A., Beitrage zur griech. Inschriftenkunde (1909).
WILHELMS, A., Beitrag zur griech. Inschriftenkunde (1909).
WILKE, Neutestamentliche Rhetorik (1843).
WILSON, A. J., Emphasis in the N. T. (Jour. of Th. Stud., VIII, pp. 75 ff.).
WINER, G. B., De verborum cum praep. compos. in N. T. Usu (1834-1843).
WINER-SCHMIEDEL, Winer's Grammatik des neutest. Sprachidioms. 8. Aufl. (1894-).
WITKOWSKI, ST., Bericht uber die Lit. zur Koine aus den Jakiren 1898-1902 (Bursian's Jahrb. CXX, 1904, pp. 153-256).
WITKOWSKI, ST., Epistulae privatae graecae (1906).
__________, Prodromus grammaticae papyrorum graecarum aetatis Lagidarum (1897).
WRIGHT, J., A Comparative Grammar of the Greek Language (1912).
YOUNG, Language of Christ (Hastings’ D. C. G.).
ZAHN, TH., Einl. in das N. T. Bd. I (190G), II (1907).
ZARNCKE, E., Die Entstehung der griech. Literatursprachen (1890).
ZEITLIN, The Acc. with Inf. and Some Kindred Constrs. in English (1908).
Z. N.-T. W., Zeitschrift fur neut. Wissenschaft (Giessen).
ADDITIONAL BIBLIOGRAPHY FOR
THIRD EDITION

BALLY, Le Langage et la Vie (1913).
BLOMFIELD, An Introduction to the Study of Language (1914).
BRUGMANN, Lehre von den Wortformen und ihren Gebrauch.
III. Teil. 2. Lieferung (1917).
BUCK, Studies in Greek Noun-formation (Classical Philology, 1917 and 1918).
DAWKINS, Modern Greek in Asia Minor (1916).
DURHAM, The Vocabulary of Menander in Relation to the Koine (1915).
DUTTON, Studies in Greek Prepositional Phrases: διά, ἀπό, ἐκ, εἰς, ἐν (1916).
HERWERDEN, VAN, Lexicon Graecum Suppletorium et Dialecticum. 2d ed. (1910).
HOUGHTON, Saving Greek in the College (The Cl. Weekly, Dec. 11, 1916).
KAERST, Geschichte des Hellenismus. 2d ed. (1917).
LIVINGSTONE, A Defense of Classical Education (1916).
MAIDHOF, Zur Begriffsbestimmung der Koine besonders auf Grund des Attizisten Moiris (1912).
MAIGNIEN, Le Futur Grec (1912).
MILLIGAN, Greek Papyri (The Expositor, March, 1918).

lxxxv
MOULTON, J. H., From Egyptian Rubbish Heaps (1916).
________, The Christian Religion in the Study and the Street (1918).
PETERSON, W., Origin of the Indo-Eur. Nominal Stem-suffixes
________, Syncretism in the Eur. Dative (Am. J. of Phil., Jan.,
1918).
SANDYS, A Short History of Classical Scholarship (1915).
SLATEN, Qualitative Nouns in the Pauline Epistles and Their
Translation in the Revised Version (1918).
SMITH, General Relative Clauses in Greek (The Review, May–
June, 1917).
SMYTH, A Greek Grammar for Schools and Colleges (1916).
SONNENSCHEIN, The Ind. in Rel. Clauses (The Cl. Review, May–
June, 1918).
STURTEVANT, Linguistic Change (1918).
TOD, Progress in Greek Epigraphy for 1914-1915 (The Journal of
Hellenic Studies, Jan., 1916).
WACKERNAGEL, Ueber die Geschichte der Griechischen Sprache
(1913).
________, Sprachliche Untersuchungen zu Homer (Glotta, 7. 161
319).
WEST, Value of the Classics (1917).
PART I

INTRODUCTION
CHAPTER I

NEW MATERIAL

The Ideal Grammar? Perhaps the ideal grammar of the New Testament Greek may never be written. It is a supremely difficult task to interpret accurately the forms of human speech, for they have life and change with the years. But few themes have possessed greater charm for the best furnished scholars of the world than the study of language.¹

The language of the N. T. has a special interest by reason of the message that it bears. Every word and phrase calls for minute investigation where so much is at stake. It is the task and the duty of the N. T. student to apply the results of linguistic research to the Greek of the N. T. But, strange to say, this has not been adequately done.²

New Testament study has made remarkable progress in the sphere of criticism, history and interpretation, but has lagged behind in this department. A brief survey of the literary history of the subject shows it.

I. The Pre-Winer Period. It was Winer who in 1822 made a new epoch in N. T. grammatical study by his *Neutestamentliches Sprachidiom*. It is hardly possible for the student of the present day to enter into sympathy with the inanities and sinuosities that characterized the previous treatises on the N. T. idiom. Not alone in the controversy between the Purists and Hebraists was this true, but writers like Storr, by a secret system of *quid pro quo*, cut the Gordian knot of grammatical difficulty by explaining one term as used for another, one preposition for another, one case for another, etc. As a university tutor Winer

¹ See J. Classen, De Gr. Graecae Primordiis, 1829, p. 1, who says: "Inter humani ingenii inventa, quae diuturna consuetudine quasi naturae iura adepta cunt, nullum fere magis invaluit et pervulgatum est, quam grammaticae ratio et usus."

² "And despite the enormous advance since the days of Winer toward a rational and unitary conception of the N. T. language, we still labour to-day under the remains of the old conceptions." Samuel Dickey, Prince. Theol. Rev., Oct., 1903, "New Points of View."
combated "this absurd system of interpretation," and not without success in spite of receiving some sneers. He had the temerity to insist on this order of interpretation: grammatical, historical, theological. He adhered to his task and lived to see "an enlightened philology, as deduced and taught by Herrmann and his school," triumph over the previous "unbridled license."  

II. The Service of Winer.

(a) WINER'S INCONSISTENCIES. It must be said, however, that great as was the service of Winer to this science, he did not at all points carry out consistently his own principles, for he often explained one tense as used for another. He was not able to rise entirely above the point of view of his time nor to make persistent application of the philosophical grammar. It is to be borne in mind also that the great science of comparative philology had not revolutionized linguistic study when Winer first wrote. In a true sense he was a pathfinder.

(b) WINER EPOCH-MAKING.--WINER IN ENGLISH. But none the less his work has been the epoch-making one for N. T. study. After his death Dr. Gottlieb Lunemann revised and improved the Neutestamentliches Sprachidiom. Translations of Winer's Grammatik into English were first made by Prof. Masson of Edinburgh, then by Prof. Thayer of Harvard (revision of Masson), and finally by Prof. W. F. Moulton of Cambridge, who added excellent footnotes, especially concerning points in modern Greek. The various editions of Winer-Thayer and Winer-Moulton have served nearly two generations of English and American scholars.

(c) SCHMIEDEL. But now at last Prof. Schmiedel of Zurich is thoroughly revising Winer's Grammatik, but it is proceeding slowly and does not radically change Winer's method, though use is made of much of the modern knowledge.  

1 See Pref. to the sixth and last ed. by Winer himself as translated by Dr. J. H. Thayer in the seventh and enlarged ed. of 1869.

2 Winer's Gr. des neutest. Sprachidiom. 8. Aufl. neu bearbeitet von Dr. Paul Wilhelm Schmiedel, 1894—.

(d) BUTTMANN. Buttmann's *Grammatik des neutestamentlichen Sprachgebrauchs* had appeared in 1859 and was translated by Thayer as Buttmann's *Grammar of N.T. Greek* (1873), an able work.

(e) BLASS. It is not till the *Grammatik des neutestamentlichen Griechisch* by Prof. Blass in 1896 that any other adequate grammar appears in this field. And Blass departs a little from traditional methods and points of view. He represents a transition towards a new era. The translation by H. St. John Thackeray has been of good service in the English-speaking world.¹

III. The Modern Period. It is just in the last decade that it has become possible to make a real advance in New Testament grammatical study. The discovery and investigation that have characterized every department of knowledge have borne rich fruit here also.

(a) DEISSMANN. Deissmann² sees rightly the immensity of the task imposed upon the N. T. grammarian by the very richness of the new discoveries. He likewise properly condemns the too frequent isolation of the N. T. Greek from the so-called "profane Greek."³ Deissmann has justly pointed out that the terms "profane" and "biblical" do not stand in linguistic contrast, but rather "classical" and "biblical." Even here he insists on the practical identity of biblical with the contemporary later Greek of the popular style.⁴

It was in 1895 that Deissmann published his *Bibelstudien*, and his *Neue Bibelstudien* followed in 1897. The new era has now fairly begun. In 1901 the English translation of both volumes by Grieve appeared as *Bible Studies*. In 1907 came the *Philol-

¹ First ed. 1898, second ed. 1905, as Blass' Gr. of N. T. Gk. A revision of the work of Blass (the 4th German edition) by Dr. A. Debrunner has appeared as these pages are going through the press.

² Die sprachl. Erforsch. der griech. Bibel, 1898, p. 5: "Durch neue Erkenntnisse befriedigt steht die griechische Philologie gegenwartig im Zeichen einer vielverheissenden Renaissance, die fordert von der sprachlichen Erforschung der griechischen Bibel, dass sie in engste, Fühlung trete mit der historischen Erforschung der griechischen Sprache."

³ Ib., p. 7. Like, for instance, Zerschwitz, Profangrac. und bibl. Sprachg., 1859.

ogy of the Bible. His Licht vom Osten (1908) was his next most important work (Light from the Ancient East, 1910, translated by Strachan). See Bibliography for full list of his books. The contribution of Deissmann is largely in the field of lexicography.

(b) THUMB. It was in 1901 that A. Thumb published his great book on the κοινή, Die griechische Sprache im Zeitalter des Hellenismus, which has done so much to give the true picture of the κοινή. He had already in 1895 produced his Handbuch der neu-griechischen Volkssprache. In 1912 the second enlarged edition was issued in English by S. Angus, as Handbook of Modern Greek Vernacular. This hook at once took front place for the study of the modern Greek by English students. It is the only book in English that confines itself to the vernacular.

(c) MOULTON. In 1895, J. H. Moulton, son of W. F. Moulton, the translator of Winer, produced his Introduction to N. T. Greek, in a noble linguistic succession. In 1901 he began to publish in The Classical Review and in The Expositor, "Grammatical Notes from the Papyri," which attracted instant attention by their freshness and pertinency. In 1906 appeared his now famous Prolegomena, vol. I, of A Grammar of N. T. Greek, which reached the third edition by 1908. With great ability Moulton took the cue from Deissmann and used the papyri for grammatical purposes. He demonstrated that the Greek of the N. T. is in the main just the vernacular κοινή of the papyri. In 1911 the Prolegomena appeared in German as Einleitung in die Sprache des Neuen Testaments.

(d) OTHER CONTRIBUTIONS. It is not possible to mention here all the names of the workers in the field of N. T. grammar (see Bibliography). The old standpoint is still found in the books of Hatch, Essays in Biblical Greek (1889); Hoole, The Classical Element in the N. T. (1888); Simcox, The Language of the N. T. (1890); Schaff, A Companion to the Greek Testament and English Version (1889); Viteau, Étude sur le grec du N. T. — Le Verbe (1893); Le Sujet (1896). The same thing is true of Abbott's Johannine Vocabulary (1905) and Johannine Grammar (1906); Burton's Syntax of the Moods and Tenses of the N. T. Greek (1888, third ed. 1909) is yet a genuine contribution. In Kennedy's Sources of N. T. Greek (1895) we see a distinct transition toward the new era of N. T. grammar. In 1911 Radermacher's Neutestamentliche Grammatik is in fact more a grammar of the κοινή than of the N. T., as it is designed to be an Einleitung. The author's Short Grammar of the Greek N. T. (1908) gives the new
knowledge in a succinct form. The Italian translation (1910) by Bonaccorssi has additional notes by the translator. Stocks (1911) made numerous additions to the Laut- und Formenlehre of the German edition. Grosheide in the Dutch translation (1912) has made a revision of the whole book. The French edition (1911) by Montet is mainly just a translation. The fourth enlarged edition in English appeared in 1916. Many special treatises of great value have appeared (see Bibliography), by men like Angus, Buttmann, Heinrici, Thieme, Vogel, Votaw, J. Weiss, Wellhausen.

(c) RICHNESS OF MATERIAL. Now indeed it is the extent of the material demanding examination that causes embarrassment. And only thirty years ago K. Krumbacher\(^1\) lamented that it was not possible to give "a comprehensive presentation of the Greek language" because of the many points on which work must be done beforehand. But we have come far in the meantime. The task is now possible, though gigantic and well-nigh insurmountable. But it is not for us moderns to boast because of the material that has come to our hand. We need first to use it. Dieterich\(^2\) has well said that the general truth that progress is from error to truth "finds its confirmation also in the history of the development that the Greek language has received in the last two thousand years." By the induction of a wider range of facts we can eliminate errors arising from false generalizations. But this is a slow process that calls for patience. Dionysius Thrax,\(^3\) one of the Alexandrian fathers of the old Greek grammar (circa 100 B.C.), said: Οἱ γραμματικῶν ἔστιν ἐμπειρία τῶν παρὰ ποιητάς τε καὶ συγγγρα-θεύσεων, ως ἐπὶ τὸ πολὺ λεγομένων. Andrew Lang\(^4\) indeed is a disciple of Dionysius Thrax in one respect, for he contends that students are taught too much grammar and too little language. They know the grammars and not the tongue. A bare outline can be given of the sources of the new material for such grammatical study.


\(^{4}\) Morning Post, Lond., May 5, 1905.
IV. The New Grammatical Equipment for N. T. Study.

(a) COMPARATIVE PHILOLOGY. We must consider the great advance in comparative philology. The next chapter will deal somewhat at length with various phases of the historical method of linguistic study.

1. The Linguistic Revolution. A revolution has been wrought in the study of language. It must be confessed that grammatical investigation has not always been conducted on the inductive principle nor according to the historical method. Too often the rule has been drawn from a limited range of facts. What is afterwards found to conflict with a rule is called an "exception." Soon the exceptions equal or surpass the rule. Unfortunately the ancients did not have the benefit of our distinctions of "regular" and "irregular." Metaphysical speculation with lofty superiority to the facts is sometimes charged upon grammarians.1 "Grammar and logic do not coincide."2 Comparative grammar is merely the historical method applied to several languages together instead of only one.3

2. A Sketch of Greek Grammatical History. The Greek has had its own history, but it is related to the history of kindred tongues. "From the days of Plato's Kratyloς downward . . . the Greek disputed as to whether language originated by convention (νόμῳ) or by nature (φύσει)."4 Indeed formal Greek grammar was the comparison with the Latin and began "with Dionysius Thrax, who utilized the philological lucubrations of Aristotle and the Alexandrian critics for the sake of teaching Greek to the sons of the aristocratic contemporaries of Pompey at Rome."5 His Greek grammar is still in existence in Bekker's Anecdota,6 and is the cause of much grotesque etymology since.7

This period of grammatical activity came after the great creative period of Greek literature was over, and in Alexandria, not

1 So Dr. John H. Kerr, sometime Prof. of N. T. in the Pac. Theol. Sem. in conversation with me. 2 Paul, Prin. of the Hist. of Lang., 1888, p. 18. 3 Ib., pp. 1 ff. So Oertel, Lect. on the Study of Lang., 1901, p. 42, "Comparative grammar in Schleicher's sense is in its essence nothing but historical grammar by the comparative method." 4 Sayce, Prin. of Comp. Philol., 1875, p. 259 f. 5 Ib., p. 261. 6 Op. cit., pp. 629-643. 7 See Sayce, Intr. to the Sci. of Lang., 1880, vol. I, p. 19 f.; Dionysius Thrax's τέχνη γραμματική was developed into a system by Apollonius Dysco- lus (ii/A.D.) and his son Herodian. Dionysius Thrax was born B.C. 166. Dyscolus wrote a systematic Gk. Syntax of accentuation in 20 books (known to us only in epitome) about 200 A.D.
NEW MATERIAL

in Athens.\(^1\) Rhetoric was scientifically developed by Aristotle long before there was a scientific syntax. Aristotle perfected logical analysis of style before there was historical grammar.\(^2\) With Aristotle ὁ γραμματικός was one that busied himself with the letters (γράμματα). He was not ὁ γράμματος; ἡ γραμματική then had to do with the letters and was exegetical.\(^3\) Plato does not treat grammar, though the substantive and the adjective are distinguished, but only dialectics, metaphysics, logic.\(^4\) The Stoic grammarians, who succeeded Plato and Aristotle, treated language from the logical standpoint and accented its psychological side.\(^5\) So the Alexandrian grammarians made γραμματική more like κριτική. They got hold of the right idea, though they did not attain the true historical method.\(^6\)

Comparative grammar was not wholly unknown indeed to the ancients, for the Roman grammarians since Varro made a comparison between Greek and Latin words.\(^7\) The Roman writers on grammar defined it as the "scientia recte loquendi et scribendi,"\(^8\) and hence came nearer to the truth than did the Alexandrian writers with their Stoic philosophy and exegesis. It has indeed been a hard struggle to reach the light in grammar.\(^9\) But Roger Bacon in this "blooming time" saw that it was necessary for the knowledge of both Greek and Latin to compare them.\(^10\) And Bernhardy in 1829 saw that there was needed a grammatico-historical discussion of syntax because of the "distrust of the union of philosophy with grammar."\(^11\)

---

\(^1\) See Jebb in Whibley's Comp. to Gk. Stud., 1905, p. 147 f.
\(^2\) See Steinthal, Gesch. der Sprachw. bei den Griech. und Rom., 2. TI., 1891, p. 179.
\(^3\) F. Hoffmann, Über die Entwickelung des Begriffs der Gr. bei den Alten, 1891, p. 1.
\(^4\) Ib., p. 144. The early Gk. grammarians were "ohne richtiges historisches Bewusstsein" (Steinthal, Gesch. der Sprachw. etc., 1. TI., 1863, p. 39). Even in Plato's Kratylus we do not see "das Gauze in seiner Ganzheit" (p. 40).
\(^5\) Ib., p. 277 f. For a good discussion of Dion. Thr. see Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 34 f.
\(^6\) See Kretschmer, Einl. in die Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1896, p. 1.
\(^7\) See Kretschmer, op. cit., p. 4.
\(^8\) F. Blass, Hermen. und Krit., 1892, p. 157 f.
\(^9\) Steinthal, Gesch. etc., 2. TI., 1891, p. 1, calls this time of struggle "ihre Blutezeit."
\(^10\) Roger Bacon, Oxford Gk. Gr., edited by Nolan and Hirsch, 1902, p. 27: "Et in hac comparatione Grammaticae Graecae ad Latinam non solum est necessitas propter intelligendum Grammaticam Graecam, sed omnino necssarium est ad intelligentiam Latinae Grammaticae."
point of the historical Syntax." Humboldt is quoted by Oertel as saying: "Linguistic science, as I understand it, must be based upon facts alone, and this collection must be neither one-sided nor incomplete." So Bopp conceived also: "A grammar in the higher scientific sense of the word must be both history and natural science." This is not an unreasonable demand, for it is made of every other department of science.

3. The Discovery of Sanskrit. It is a transcendent fact which has revolutionized grammatical research. The discovery of Sanskrit by Sir William Jones is what did it. In 1786 he wrote thus:

"The Sanskrit language, whatever may be its antiquity, is of wonderful structure; more perfect than the Greek, more copious than the Latin, and more exquisitely refined than either; yet bearing to both of them a stronger affinity, both in the roots of verbs and the forms of grammar, than could have been produced by accident; so strong that no philologer could examine all the three without believing them to have sprung from some common source which no longer exists. There is a similar reason, though not so forcible, for supposing that both the Gothic and the Celtic, though blended with a different idiom, had the same origin with the Sanskrit." He saw then the significance of his own discovery, though not all of it, for the Teutonic tongues, the Lithuanian and Slav group of languages, the Iranian, Italic, Armenian and Albanian belong to the same Aryan, Indo-Germanic or Indo-European family as it is variously called.

4. From Bopp to Brugmann. But Bopp is the real founder of comparative philology. Before Bopp's day "in all grammars the mass of ‘irregular’ words was at least as great as that of the ‘regular’ ones, and a rule without exception actually excited suspicion." Pott's great work laid the foundation of scientific phonetics. Other great names in this new science are W. von

1 Lect. on the Study of Lang., 1901, p. 47.
2 See C. Herrmann, Philos. Gr., 1858, p. 422: "Die Natur der philosophischen Grammatik war von Anfang an bestimmt worden als die eine Grenzwissenschaft zwischen Philosophie und Philologie." But it is a more objective task now.
4 See his Vergl. Gr., 1857. He began publication on the subject in 1816.
5 Delbruck, Intr. to the Study of Lang., 1882, p. 25.
Humboldt, Jacob Grimm, Schlegel, Schleicher, Max Muller, Curtius, Verner, Whitney, L. Meyer.

But in recent years two men, K. Brugmann and B. Delbruck, have organized the previous knowledge into a great monumental work, *Grundriss der vergleichenden Grammatik der indogermanischen Sprachen*. This achievement is as yet the high-water-mark in comparative grammar. Brugmann has issued a briefer and cheaper edition giving the main results. Delbruck has also a brief treatise on Greek syntax in the light of comparative grammar, while Brugmann has applied comparative philology to the *Laut- and Formenlehre* of Greek grammar. In the *Grundriss* Brugmann has Bde. I, II, while Delbruck treats syntax in Bde. III-V. In the new edition Brugmann has also that part of the syntax which is treated in Vol. III and IV of the first edition. The best discussion of comparative grammar for beginners is the second edition of P. Giles's *Manual*. Hatzidakis successfully undertakes to apply comparative grammar to the modern Greek. Riemann and Goelzer have made an exhaustive comparison of the Greek and Latin languages. There are, indeed, many interesting discussions of the history and principles growing out of all this linguistic development, such as the works

1 Always mentioned by Bopp with reverence.
2 Deutsche Gr., 1822. Author of Grimm's law of the interchange of letters. Next to Bopp in influence.
3 Indische Bibl.
4 Vergl. Gr. der indoger. Spr., 1876, marks the next great advance.
5 Lect. on the Sci. of Lang., 1866. He did much to popularize this study.
7 The discovery of Verner's law, a variation from Grimm's law, according to which *p, t* and *k*, pass into *b, d* and *g*, instead of *f, th* and *h* when not immediately followed by the word-accent.
8 Life and Growth of Lang., 1875; Sans. Gr., 1892, etc.
9 Vergl. Gr., 1865.
11 Kurze vergl. Gr., 1902-1904.
14 A Short Man. of Comp. Philol., 1901.
15 Einl. in die neugr. Gr., 1892.
16 Gr. comparee du Grec et du Lat.: Syntaxe, 1897; Phonetique et Etude de Formes, 1901. Cf. also King and Cookson's Prin. of Sound and Inflexion as illustrated in the Gk. and Lat. Lang., 1888.
of Jolly, Delbruck, Sweet, Paul, Oertel, Moulton, Whitney, Max Muller, Sayce. It is impossible to write a grammar of the Greek N. T. without taking into consideration this new conception of language. No language lives to itself, and least of all the Greek of the N. T. in the heart of the world-empire. It is not necessary to say that until recently use of this science had not been made by N. T. grammars.

(b) ADVANCE IN GENERAL GREEK GRAMMAR. There has been great advance in the study of general Greek grammar. The foundations laid by Crosby and Kiihner, Kruger, Curtius, Buttman, Madvig, Jelf and others have been well built upon by Hadley, Goodwin, Gildersleeve, Gerth, Blass, Brugmann, G. Meyer, Schanz, Hirt, Jannaris, etc. To the classical student this catalogue of names is full of significance. The work of Kuhner has been thoroughly revised and improved in four massive volumes by Blass and Gerth, furnishing a magnificent apparatus for the advanced student. Hirt's handbook gives the modern knowledge in briefer form, a compendium of comparative grammar, while G. Meyer and Brugmann are professedly on the

1 Schulgr. und Sprachw., 1874.  
3 The Hist. of Lang., 1899.  
5 Lect. on the Study of Lang., 1901.  
6 The Sci. of Lang., 1903.  
7 Lang. and the Study of Lang., 1867.  
8 Three Lect. on the Sci. of Lang., 1891.  
9 Prin. of Comp. Philol., 1875.  
10 By "die historische Sprachforschung" the Gk. tongue is shown to be a member of the Indo-Germanic family; thus is gained "der sprachgeschichtliche Gesichtspunkt," and then is gained "ein wesentlich richtiges Verstandnis . . . fur den Entwicklungsgang der Sprache." Brugmann, Griech. Gr., 1885, p. 4. Cf. p. 3 in third ed., 1901.  
12 The late G. N. Hatzidakis contemplated a thesaurus of the Gk. language, but his death cut it short.  
basis of comparative philology. Jannarisl is the first fairly successful attempt to present in one volume the survey of the progress of the language as a whole. Schanz makes a much more ambitious undertaking and endeavours in a large number of monographs to furnish material for a future historical grammar. Gildersleeve has issued only two volumes of his work, while the grammars of Hadley-Allen and Goodwin are too well known to call for remark. New grammars, like F. E. Thompson's (1907, new ed.) and Simonson's (2 vols., 1903, 1908), continue to appear.

(c) CRITICAL EDITIONS OF GREEK AUTHORS. The Greek authors in general have received minute and exhaustive investigation. The modern editions of Greek writers are well-nigh ideal. Careful and critical historical notes give the student all needed, sometimes too much, aid for the illumination of the text. The thing most lacking is the reading of the authors and, one may add, the study of the modern Greek. Butcher well says "Greek literature is the one entirely original literature of Europe." Homer, Aristotle, Plato, not to say AEschylus, Sophocles and Euripides are still the modern masters of the intellect. Translations are better than nothing, but can never equal the original. The Greek language remains the most perfect organ of human speech and largely because "they were talkers, whereas we are readers." They studied diligently how to talk.

(d) WORKS ON INDIVIDUAL WRITERS. In nothing has the tendency to specialize been carried further than in Greek grammatical research. The language of Homer, Thucydides, Herodotus, the tragic poets, the comic writers, have all called for minute investi-

3 Synt. of Class. Gk., 1900, 1911.
4 Harv. Lect. on Gk. Subj., 1904, p. 129. See also Butcher, Some Aspects of the Gk. Genius, 1893, p. 2: "Greece, first smitten with the passion for truth, had the courage to put faith in reason, and, in following its guidance, to take no account of consequences." So p. 1: "To see things as they really are, to discern their meanings and adjust their relations was with them an instinct and a passion."
5 Ib., p. 203.
and those of interest to N. T. students are the monographs on Polybius, Josephus, Plutarch, etc. The concordances of Plato, Aristotle, etc., are valuable. The Apostolic Fathers, Greek Christian Apologists and the Apocryphal writings illustrate the tendencies of N. T. speech. Cf. Reinhold, *De Graec. Patr. Apost.* (1898). The universities of America and Europe which give the Ph.D. degree have produced a great number of monographs on minute points like the use of the preposition in Herodotus, etc. These all supply data of value and many of them have been used in this grammar. Dr. Mahaffy, indeed, is impatient of too much specialism, and sometimes in linguistic study the specialist has missed the larger and true conception of the whole.

(e) THE GREEK INSCRIPTIONS. The Greek inscriptions speak with the voice of authority concerning various epochs of the language. Once we had to depend entirely on books for our knowledge of the Greek tongue. There is still much obscurity, but it is no longer possible to think of Homer as the father of Greek nor to consider 1000 B.C. as the beginning of Greek culture. The two chief names in epigraphical studies are those of August Boeckh (*Corpus Inscriptionum Graecarum*) and Theodor Mommsen (*Corpus Inscriptionum Latinarum*). For a careful review of "the Nature of the New Texts" now at our service in the inscriptions see Deissmann, *Light*, etc., pp. 10-20. See W. H. P. Hatch's article (*Jour. of Bibl. Lit.*, 1908, pp. 134-146, Part 2) on "Some Illustrations of N. T. Usage from Greek Inscriptions of Asia Minor." Cf. also Thieme, *Die Inschriften von Magnesia am Maander and das Neue Test.* (1906), and Rouffiac, *Recherches sur les Caracteres du Grec dans le N. T. d'apres les Inscriptions de Priene* (1911). Deissmann, op. cit., p. 18, thinks that αὐδη[πη]νυ is rightly restored in a pagan inscription in Pisidia of the imperial period. For the Christian inscriptions see Deissmann, *op. cit.*, p. 19. Schliemann has not only restored the story of Troy to the reader of the historic past, but he has revealed a great civi-

---

1 Cf., for instance, Die Spr. des Plut. etc., T1. I. II, 1895, 1896; Krebs, Die Prapositionen bei Polybius, 1881; Goetzeler, Einfl. des Dion. Hal. auf die Sprachgesch. etc., 1891; Schmidt, De Flavii Josephi eloc. observ. crit., 1894; Kaelker, Quest. de Eloc. Polyb. etc.

2 "A herd of specialists is rising up, each master of his own subject, but absolutely ignorant and careless of all that is going on around him in kindred studies." Survey of Gk. Civilization, 1897, p. 3.

3 Mycenae and Tiryns, 1878.
lization at Mycenae. Homer stands at the close of a long antecedent history of linguistic progress, and once again scholars are admitting the date 850 or even 1000 B.C. for his poems as well as their essential unity, thus abandoning Wolff's hypothesis. They have been driven to this by the abundant linguistic testimony from the inscriptions from many parts of Greece. So vast is this material that numerous grammatical discussions have been made concerning the inscriptions, as those by Roehl, Kretschmer, Lautensach, Rang, Meisterhans, Schweizer, Viteau, Wagner, Nachmanson, etc.

These inscriptions are not sporadic nor local, but are found in Egypt, in Crete, in Asia Minor, the various isles of the sea, in Italy, in Greece, in Macedonia, etc. Indeed Apostolides seems to show that the Greeks were in Egypt long before Alexander the Great founded Alexandria. The discoveries of Dr. A. J.

---

1 See also Tsountas and Manatt, The Mycenaean Age, 1897.
2 Ridgeway (Early Age of Greece, vol. I, 1901, p. 635) says that the methods applied to dissection of the Iliad and the Odyssey would pick to pieces the Paradise Lost and The Antiquary. "The linguistic attack upon their age may be said to have at last definitely failed." (T. W. Allen, Cl. Rev., May, 1906, p. 193.) Lang, Homer and His Age (1906), advocates strongly the unity of the Homeric poems.
3 Inscr. Graecae Antiq., 1882.
4 Die griech. Vaseninschr. und ihre Spr., 1894.
5 Verbalfl. der att. Inschr., 1887.
6 Antiquites hellen., 1842.
7 Gr. der att. Inschr., 3. Aufl. von E. Schwyzer, 1900.
8 Gr. der perg. Inschr., 1898.
9 La decl. dans les inscr. att. de l'Empire, 1895.
10 Quest. de epigram. Graecis, 1883.
12 As, for example, Paton and Hicks, The Inscr. of Cos, 1891; Kern, Die Inschr. von Magn., 1900; Gartingen, Inschr. von Priene, 1906; Gartingen and Paton, Inschr. Maris Aegaei, 1903; Letronne, Rec. des inscr. lat. et grec. de l'Egypte, 1842. As early as 1779 Walch made use of the inscriptions for the N. T. Gk. in his Observationes in Matth. ex graecis inscriptionibus. Cf. also the works of E. L. Hicks, Lightfoot; Ramsay.
13 Essai sur l'Hellenisme Egypt., 1908, p. vi. He says: "Les decouvertes recentes des archeologues ont dissipe ces illusions. Des ruines de Naucratis, de Daphne, de Gurob, et de l'Illahoun (pour ne citer que les localites dans lesquelles les recherches ont donne le plus de resultats) est sortie toute une nouvelle Grece; une Grece anterieure aux Ramses...; et, si les recherches se continuent, on ne tardera pas, nous en sommes convaincus, acquerr la certitude que les Grecs sont aussi anciens en Egypte qu'en Grece meme."
Evans in Crete have pushed back the known examples of Greek a thousand years or more. The linear script of Knossos, Crete, may be some primitive form of Greek 500 years before the first dated example of Phoenician writing. The civilization of the Hellenic race was very old when Homer wrote, — how old no one dares say.¹ For specimens of the use of the inscriptions see Buck's *Introduction to the Study of the Greek Dialects* (Grammar, Selected Inscriptions, Glossary), 1910.

(f) FULLER KNOWLEDGE OF THE DIALECTS. The new knowledge of the other dialects makes it possible to form a juster judgment of the relative position of the Attic. There has been much confusion on this subject and concerning the relation of the various Greek races. It now seems clear that the Pelasgians, Achaeans, Dorians were successively dominant in Greece.² Pelasgian appears to be the name for the various pre-Achaean tribes, and it was the Pelasgian tribe that made Mycenae glorious.³ Homer sings the glories of the Achaeans who displaced the Pelasgians, while "the people who play a great part in later times — Dorians, AEolians, Ionians — are to Homer little more than names."⁴ The Pelasgian belonged to the bronze age, the Achaean to the iron age.⁵ The Pelasgians may have been Slavs and kin to the Etruscans of Italy. The Achans were possibly Celts from northern Europe.⁶ The old Ionic was the base of the old Attic.⁷ This old Ionic-Attic was the archaic Greek tongue, and the choruses in the Attic poets partly represent artificial literary Doric. There was not a sharp division⁸ between the early dialects owing to the successive waves of population sweeping over the country. There were numerous minor subdivisions in the dialects (as the Arcadian, Boeotian, Northwest, Thessalian, etc.) due to the mountain ranges, the peninsulas, the islands, etc., and other causes into which we cannot enter. For a skilful attempt at grouping and relating the dialects to each other see Thumb's *Handbuch*, p. 54 f. The matter cannot be elaborated here (see ch. III). But the point needs to be emphasized that

² See Ridgeway, *The Early Age of Greece*, vol. I, p. 84.
³ Ib., p. 293. For the contribution of the dialects to the koinh see ch. III.
⁸ Hoffmann, *Die griech. Dial.*, Bd. I, p. 7. A more recent treatment of the dialects is Thumb's *Handbuch. der griech. Dial.* (1909), which makes use of all the recent discoveries from the inscriptions. On the mixing of the dialects see Thumb, p. 61 f.
the literary dialects by no means represent the linguistic history of Greece itself and still less that of the islands and other colonies (cf. Buck's *Greek Dialects*, p. 1). The blending of these dialects into the κοινή) was not complete as we shall see.1 "Of dialects the purest Hellenic is Dorian, preserved in religious odes, — pure because they kept aloof from their subjects. The next is the AEolic, preserved in lyric odes of the Lesbian school. The earliest to be embodied in literature was Ionic, preserved in epic poems. The most perfect is Attic, the language of drama, philosophy and oratory. This arose out of the Ionic by introducing some of the strength of Doric-AEolic forms without sacrificing the sweet smoothness of Ionic."2 In general concerning the Greek dialects one may consult the works of Meister,3 Ridgeway,4 Hoffmann,5 Thumb,6 Buck,7 Boisacq,8 Pezzi,9 etc.

(g) THE PAPYRI AND OSTRACA. Thiersch in 1841 had pointed out the value of the papyri for the study of the LXX in his *De Pentateuchi versione Alexandrina*, but nobody thought it worth while to study the masses of papyri in London, Paris and Berlin for the N. T. language. Farrar (*Messages of the Books*, 1884, p. 151) noted the similarity of phrase between Paul's correspondence and the papyri in the Brit. Mus. "N. T. philology is at present undergoing thorough reconstruction; and probably all the workers concerned, both on the continent and in English-speaking countries, are by this time agreed that the starting-point for the philological investigations must be the language of the non-literary papyri, ostraca, and inscriptions" (Deissmann, *Light*, etc., p. 55). The κοινή is now rich in material for the study of the vernacular or popular speech as opposed to the book language. This distinction belongs to all languages which have a literature and to all periods of the language. It is particularly true of the modern

---

2 MS. Notes on Gk. Gr. by H. H. Harris, late Prof. of Gk. at Richmond College.
7 Gk. Dialects.
Greek to-day as it was true in the early period. The Athenian newspapers as a rule affect the καθαρεύουσα. Occasionally a writer like Aristophanes would on purpose write in the language of the street. It is not therefore a peculiarity of the κοινή that the vernacular Greek prevailed then. It always prevails. But the καθαρεύουσα has secured a more disastrous supremacy over the δημοτική than in any other language. And we are now able to estimate the vernacular κοινή, since the great papyri discoveries of Flinders-Petrie, Grenfell and Hunt and others. We had already the excellent discussions of Mullach, Niebuhr, Blass, Foy and Lottich. But in the last fifteen years or so a decided impetus has been given to this phase of Greek grammatical research. It is in truth a new study, the attention now paid to the vernacular, as Moulton points out in his Prolegomena (p. 22).

"I will go further and say that if we could only recover letters that ordinary people wrote to each other without being literary, we should have the greatest possible help for the understanding of the language of the N. T. generally" (Bishop Lightfoot, 1863, as quoted in Moulton's Prol., 2d and 3d ed., p. 242). If Lightfoot only lived now! Cf. Masson's Preface to Winer (1859).

The most abundant source of new light for the vernacular κοινή is found in the papyri collections, many volumes of which have already been published (see Index of Quots. for fuller list), while more are yet to be issued. Indeed, Prof. W. N. Stearns com- plains: "There would seem to be a plethora of such material already as evidenced by such collections as the Berlinische Urkunde and the Rainier Papyri." But the earnest student of the Greek tongue can only rejoice at the "extraordinary and in part unexpected wealth of material from the contemporary and the later languages." See the publications of Drs. Grenfell and Hunt.

---

1 Gr. der griech. Vulgarspr., 1856.
3 Die griech. Beredsamkeit von Alex. bis auf Aug., 1865.
4 Lauts. der griech. Vulgarspr., 1879.
5 De Serm. vulg. Att., 1881.
Mahaffy,¹ Goodspeed,² the Berlinische Urkunde,³ Papyri in the British Museum,⁴ the Turin Papyri,⁵ the Leyden Papyri,⁶ the Geneva Papyri,⁷ Lord Amherst's collection (Paris, 1865), etc. For general discussions of the papyri see the writings of Wilcken,⁸ Kenyon,⁹ Hartel,¹⁰ Haberlin,¹¹ Viereck,¹² Deissmann,¹³ de Ricci,¹⁴ Wessely,¹⁵ A great and increasing literature is thus coming into existence on this subject. Excellent handbooks of convenient size are those by H. Lietzmann, Greek Papyri (1905), and by G. Milligan, Greek Papyri (1910). For a good discussion of the papyri and the literature on the subject see Deissmann, Light, etc., pp. 20-41. The grammatical material in the papyri has not been exhausted. There are a number of excellent workers in the field such as Mayser,¹⁶ St. Witkowski,¹⁷ Deissmann,¹⁸ Moulton,¹⁹ H. A. A. Kennedy,²⁰ Jannaris,²¹ Kenyon,²² Voelker,²³ Thumb.²⁴

¹ Flinders-Petrie Pap., 1891, 1892, 1893.
² Gk. Pap. from the Cairo Mus., 1902, 1903.
³ Griech. Urk., 1895, 1898, 1903, 1907, etc.
⁵ Peyron, 1826, 1827.
⁶ Zauber Pap., 1885; Leeman's Pap. Graeci, 1843.
⁷ J. Nicole, 1896, 1900; cf. Wessely's Corpus Pap., 1895.
⁸ Griech. Papyrusurk., 1897; Archly fur Papyrusforsch. und verve. Gebiete, 1900—.
¹⁰ Uber die griech. Pap.
¹² Ber. uber die altere Pap.-Lit., Jahresb. uber d. Fortschr. etc., 1898, 1899.
¹⁴ Bul. papyrologique in Rev. des Rt. grecques since 1901.
¹⁸ B. S., 1901; Light, etc.; art. Hell. Griech. in Hauck's Realencyc.; art. Papyrus in Encyc. Bibl., etc.
¹⁹ Gr. Notes from the Pap., Cl. Rev., 1901; Notes on the Pap., Exp., April, 1901, Feb., 1903; Characteristics of N. T. Gk., Exp., March to Dec., 1904; Pro/. to Gr. of N. T. Gk., 1908, 3d ed., etc.
²⁰ Sources of N. T. Gk., 1895; Recent Res. in the Lang. of the N. T., Exp. Times, May, July, Sept., 1901.
²² Art. Papyri in Hast. D. B.
²³ Syntax der griech. Pap., Tl. I, 1903.
²⁴ Die Forsch. uber die hell. Spr. in d. Jahr. 1896-1901, Archiv fur Papyrusforsch., 1903, pp. 396-426; Die Forsch. uber die hell. Spr. in d. Jahr. 1902-4,
These are all helpful, but Cronert\(^1\) is right in urging that we need a comprehensive discussion of the syntax of the Ptolemaic papyri in order to set forth properly the relation of the papyri both to the N. T. Greek and to the older Attic. This will require time, for the mass of material is very great and is constantly growing.\(^2\) But enough already is clear for us to see the general bearing of the whole on the problem of the N. T. It is just here that the papyri have special interest and value. They give the language of business and life. The N. T. writers were partly ἀγράμματοι, but what they wrote has become the chief Book of Mankind.\(^3\) Hear Deissmann\(^4\) again, for he it is who has done most to blaze the way here: "The papyrus-leaf is alive; one sees autographs, individual peculiarities of penmanship — in a word, men; manifold glimpses are given into inmost nooks and crannies of personal life in which history has no eyes and historians no glasses . . . It may seem a paradox, but it can safely be affirmed that the unliterary papyri are more important in these respects than the literary." Some of the papyri contain literary works, fragments of Greek classics, portions of the LXX or of the N. T., though the great mass of them are non-literary documents, letters and business papers. Cf. also Deissmann, *Light*, etc., p. 29. Unusual interest attaches to the fragments containing the Logia of Jesus, some of which are new, dating from the second or third centuries A.D. and showing a Gnostic tinge.\(^5\) It is no longer possible to say, what even Friedrich Blass\(^6\) did in 1894, that the N. T. Greek "is to be regarded something by itself and following laws of its own." That view is doomed in the presence of the papyri. Hatch\(^7\) in particular laboured under this error. The N. T. Greek

---

5. See Λόγια Ἰησοῦ, Sayings of Jesus, by Grenfell and Hunt, 1897. New Sayings of Jesus, by Grenfell and Hunt, 1904. See also two books by Dr. C. Taylor, The Oxyrhyn. Logia, 1899; The Oxyrhyn. Sayings of Jesus, 1905; Lock and Sanday, Two Lect. on the Sayings of Jesus, 1897.
7. Essays in Bibl. Gk., 1892, p. 11 f. The earliest dated papyrus is now
will no longer be despised as inferior or unclassical. It will be seen to be a vital part of the great current of the Greek language. For the formal discussion of the bearing of the papyri on the N. T. Greek see chapter IV. A word should be said concerning the reason why the papyri are nearly all found in Egypt. It is due to the dryness of the climate there. Elsewhere the brittle material soon perished, though it has on the whole a natural toughness. The earliest known use of the papyri in Egypt is about 3400 B.C. More exactly, the reign of Assa in the fifth dynasty is put at 3360 B.C. This piece of writing is an account-sheet belonging to this reign (Deissmann, Light from A. E., p. 22). The oldest specimen of the Greek papyri goes back to "the regnal year of Alexander AEgus, the son of Alexander the Great. That would make it the oldest Greek papyrus document yet discovered" (Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 29). The discoveries go on as far as the seventh century A.D., well into the Byzantine period. The plant still grows in Egypt and it was once the well-nigh universal writing material. As waste paper it was used to wrap the mummies. Thus it has come to be preserved. The rubbish-heaps at Faram and Oxyrhynchus are full of these papyri scraps.

Mention should be made also of the ostraca, or pieces of pottery, which contain numerous examples of the vernacular koinē. For a very interesting sketch of the ostraca see Deissmann, Light, etc. (pp. 41-53). Crum and Wilcken have done the chief work on the ostraca. They are all non-literary and occur in old Egyptian, Arabic, Aramaic, Coptic, Greek and Latin. "Prof. Wilcken, in his Griechische Ostraka, has printed the texts of over sixteen hundred of the inscribed potsherds on which the commonest receipts and orders of Ptolemaic and Roman Egypt were written." It was the material used by the poorer classes.

(h) THE BYZANTINE AND THE MODERN GREEK. The Byzantine and modern Greek has at last received adequate recognition.
The student of the N. T. idiom has much to learn from the new books on this subject. The scorn bestowed on the koinh by the intense classicists was intensified by the modern Greek, which was long regarded as a nondescript jumble of Greek, Albanian, Turkish, Italian, etc. Indeed the modern Greeks themselves have not always shown proper appreciation of the dignity of the modern vernacular, as is shown, for instance, in the recent upheaval at Athens by the University students over the translation of the Gospels into the Greek vernacular (δημοτική) of to-day, though the N. T. was manifestly written in the vernacular of its day. "While the later Greeks, however, could no longer write classically, they retained a keen sense for the beauties of the classical language." Just as the "popular Latin finally suppressed the Latin of elegant literature," so the vernacular koinh lived on through the Roman and Byzantine periods and survives to-day as the modern Greek. There is unity in the present-day Greek and historical continuity with the past. Dr. Rose is possibly extreme in saying: "There is more difference between the Greek of Herodotus and the Greek of Xenophon than there is between the Greek of the latter and the Greek of to-day." And certainly Prof. Dickey is right in affirming "that the Greek of N. T. stands in the centre of the development of which classical and modern Greek may be called extremes, and that of the two it is nearer to the second in character than the first. The interpretation of the N. T. has almost entirely been in the sole light of the ancient, i. e. the Attic Greek, and, therefore, to that extent has been unscientific and often inaccurate." Hatzidakis indeed complained that the whole subject had been treated with

1 Dr. Achilles Rose, Chris. Greece and Living Gk., 1898, p. 7.
2 R. C. Jebb, On the Rela. of Mod. to Class. Gk., in V. and D.'s Handb.: to Mod. Gk., 1887, p. 287. "In other words, the Bible was cast into spoken Latin, familiar to every rank of society though not countenanced in the schoolroom; and thus it foreshadowed the revolution of ages whereby the Roman tongue expanded into what we may label as Romance." W. Barry, "Our Latin Bible," in Dublin Rev., July, 1906, p. 4; cf. also art. on The Holy Latin Tongue, in April number.
3 Chris. Greece and Living Greek, p. 253.
5 Einl. in die neugr. Gr., 1892, p. ix; cf. also H. C. Muller, Hist. Gr. dehell. Spr., 1891.
unworthy "dilettanteism" and not without ground for the complaint. He himself did much by his great work to put the study of modern Greek on a scientific basis, but he has not worked alone in this important field. Another native Greek, Prof. Sophocles, has produced a Greek Lexicon of the Roman and Byzantine Periods in which there is an excellent discussion for that time of the koinē, the Byzantine and the modern Greek. Other scholars have developed special phases of the problem, as Krumbacher, who has enriched our knowledge of the Byzantine or Middle Ages Greek. Dieterich also has done fine work in this period of Greek, as has Thumb. Worthy of mention also is the work of G. Meyer, Geldart and Prestel, though the latter have not produced books of great value. See also Meyer-Lithke's grammar, Jannaris' Historical Greek Grammar and the writings of Psichari. In general great progress has been made and it is now possible to view the development of the N. T. idiom in the light of the modern Greek. The apparent drift in the vernacular

1 "Und wenn es mir gelingt, die wissenschaftliche Welt von ihrer wohlberechtigten Zurückhaltung abzubringen und ihr nachzuweisen, dass das Mittel- und Neugriechische ein vielversprechendes unkultivirtes Gebiet der Wissenschaft ist, woraus man viel, sehr viel bezüglich der Sprachwissenschaft überhaupt wie des Altgriechischen speziell lernen kann, so ist mein Zweck vollkommen erreicht." Ib., p. x.

2 1870. One of the pressing needs is a lexicon of the papyri also. See Contopoulos, Lex. of Mod. Gk., 1868, and others.

3 Das Problem der neug. Schriftspr., 1903. "Heute bedarf das Studiengebiet der byzantinischen und neugriechischen Philologie keine Apologie," p. 3. In his hands the middle Gk. (Byzantine) is shown to be a rich field for the student both of philology and literature; cf. also Gesch. der byzant. Lit., p. 20.


6 Neugr. Stud., 1894.


8 Zur Entwickelungsgesch. der griech. Spr.

9 Gr. der romanischen Spr.

κοινή of the N. T., like ἵνα in the non-final clause, is too common for remark in the modern Greek. Indeed the N. T. had a pre-
dominant influence on the later Greek as the chief literature of
the period, and especially as Christianity won the victory over
heathenism. The Byzantine Greek is in subject-matter largely
ecclesiastical. The sermons and treatises of the Greek Christian
Fathers constitute a large and valuable literature and amply il-

lustrate the language of the time. The modern Greek is in all
essential points the same as the Byzantine Greek of 1000 A.D.
In forty years we have seen a revolution in the study of the
modern Greek. But as late as 1887 Vincent and Dickson3 could
can say: "By many it is believed that a corrupt patois of Turkish
and Italian is now spoken in Greece; and few even among pro-

fessed scholars are aware how small the difference is between the
Greek of the N. T. and the Greek of a contemporary Athenian
newspaper." The new Greek speech was developed not out of
the Byzantine literary language, but out of the Hellenistic popular
speech.

(i) THE HEBREW AND ARAMAIC. Less that is new has come
from the Hebrew and Aramaic field of research. Still real ad-

vance has been made here also. The most startling result is the
decrease of emphasis upon Hebraisms in the N. T. style. In
chapter IV, iii the Semitic influence on the N. T. language is dis-

cussed. Here the literary history is sketched.

1. The Old View. It was only in 1879 that Guillemard5 issued
his Hebraisms in the Greek Testament, in which he said in the
Preface: "I earnestly disavow any claim to an exhaustive exhibi-
tion of all the Hebraisms, or all the deviations from classical
phraseology contained in the Greek Testament; of which I have
gathered together and put forward only a few specimens, in the
hope of stimulating others to fuller and more exact research."
Even in 1889, Dr. Edwin Hatch6 says: "Biblical Greek is thus a

1 See the Migne Lib. and the new Ben Royal Lib. ed.
2 Dieterich, op. cit., p. 10.
3 Handb. to Mod. Gk., p. 3. See also Horae Hellenicae, by Stuart Blackie,
1874, p. 115: "Byzantine Gk. was classical Gk. from beginning to end, wit"
only such insignificant changes as the altered circumstances, combined with
the law of its original genius, naturally produced." Cf. Rangabe, Gr. Abre-
gee du grec actuel; Γεννάδιος, Γραμματική τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς Γέωργης.
4 Dieterich, op. cit., p. 5.
5 See also A. Miller, Semit. Lehnw. in alteren Griech., Bezzenb. Beitr.
6 Essays in Bibl. Gk., p. 11.
language by itself. What we have to find out in studying it is what meaning certain Greek words conveyed to a Semitic mind." Again he says: "The great majority of N. T. words are words which, though for the most part common to biblical and to contemporary secular Greek, express in their biblical use the conceptions of a Semitic race, and which must consequently be examined by the light of the cognate documents which form the LXX." And W. H. Simcox says: "Thus it is that there came to exist a Hellenistic dialect, having real though variable differences from the Common or Hellenic."

2. A Change with Kennedy. But a turn comes when H. A. A. Kennedy says: "But while the writer began with a complete, though provisional, acceptance of Hatch's conclusions, the farther the inquiry was pushed, the more decidedly was he compelled to doubt those conclusions, and finally to seek to establish the connection between the language of the LXX and that of the N. T. on a totally different basis." He finds that common bond in "the colloquial Greek of the time."

3. Deissmann's Revolt. The full revolt against the theory of a Semitic or biblical Greek is seen in the writings of Deissmann, who says: "The theory indicated is a great power in exegesis, and that it possesses a certain plausibility is not to be denied. It is edifying, and what is more, is convenient. But it is absurd. It mechanizes the marvellous variety of the linguistic elements of the Greek Bible and cannot be established either by the psychology of language or by history." There is here some of the zeal of new discovery, but it is true. The old view of Hatch is dead and gone. The "clamant need of a lexicon to the LXX" is emphasized by Deissmann himself. Prof. H. B. Swete of Cambridge has laid all biblical students under lasting obligation

---

1 Ib., p. 34. See also p. 9: "Biblical Gk. belongs not only to a later period of the history of the language than classical Gk., but also to a different country." On page 14 we read: "It is a true paradox that while, historically as well as philologically, the Gk. (LXX) is a translation of the Hebrew, philologically, though not historically, the Hebrew may be regarded as a translation of the Gk."

2 The Lang. of the N. T., 1890, p. 15. Note the date, as late as 1890.

3 Die sprachl. Erforsch. der griech. Bibel, 1898; B. S., 1901; Hell. Griech., Hauck's Realencyc., New Light (1907), etc.

4 Ib., p. 146.

5 Sources of N. T. Gk., 1895, p. v.

6 B. S., p. 65.

7 Schleusner, 1821, is hopelessly inadequate and out of date. Hatch and Redpath have issued in six parts (two volumes) a splendid concordance to the LXX and other Gk. versions of the 0. T., 1892-1896, 1900.
to him by his contribution to the study of the Septuagint, consisting of an edition of the LXX\(^1\) with brief critical apparatus and a general discussion\(^2\) of the Septuagint. Brooke and McLean are publishing an edition of the Septuagint with exhaustive critical apparatus.\(^3\) Students of the LXX now rejoice in Helbing's *Gr. der Septuaginta: Laut- u. Formenlehre* (1907) and Thackeray's *Gr. of the O. T. in Greek*, vol. I (1909). Conybeare and Stock's *Selections from the Septuagint* (1905) has the old standpoint. Other modern workers in this department are Nestle,\(^4\) Lagarde,\(^5\) Hartung,\(^6\) Ralf's,\(^7\) Susemihl,\(^8\) Apostolides.\(^9\)

4. *The Language of Jesus.* Another point of special interest in this connection, which may be discussed as well now as later, is the new light concerning the Aramaic as the language habitually spoken by Jesus. This matter has been in much confusion and the scholars are not at one even now. Roberts\(^10\) maintains that Greek, not Hebrew, was "the language of the common public intercourse in Palestine in the days of Christ and His apostles." By Hebrew he means Aramaic. In *The Expositor* (1st series, vols. VI, VII) Roberts argued also that Christ usually spoke Greek. He was replied to (vol. VII) by Sanday. Lightfoot (on Gal. 4:6) holds that Jesus said \(\text{Ἀββᾶ ο\(\)πατ\(\)ήρ\) thus, Mark not having translated it. Thomson, "The Language of Palestine" (*Temple Bible Dict.*), argues strongly that Christ spoke Greek, not Aramaic.

Neubauer\(^11\) contends that there was spoken besides at Jerusalem and in Judea a modernized Hebrew, and comments\(^12\) on "how

---

1 The O.T. in Gk. according to the LXX, vols. I–III, 1887-1894. He does not give an edited text, but follows one MS. at a time with critical apparatus in footnotes.

2 An Intr. to the O. T. in Gk., 1900; 2d ed., 1914.

3 The Larger Camb. LXX, 1906—.


5 Sept.-Stud., 1891-1892.  6 Ib., 1886.  7 Ib., 1904.


7 Du grec Alexandrin et de ses rapports avec le grec ancien et le grec moderne, 1892. Cf. among the older discussions, Sturz, De dial. Maced. et Alexan., 1808; Lipsius, Gr. Unters. fiber die bibl. Grac., 1853; Churton, The Infl. of the LXX upon the Prog. of Chris., 1861. See also Anz, Subs. ad cognos. Graec. srm. vulg. e Pent. vers. Alexan., 1894.

8 Disc. on the Gosp., pt. I, On the Lang. Employed by Our Lord and His Apost., 1864, p. 316; A Short Proof that Greek was the Language of Jesus (1893).


10 Stud. Bibl., p. 54.
little the Jews knew Greek." A. Meyer\(^1\) urges that the vernacular of Jesus was Aramaic and shows what bearing this fact has on the interpretation of the Gospels. A. Julicher\(^2\) indeed says: "To suppose, however (as, e.g. G. B. Winer supposes, because of Mk. 7:34; Jo. 7: 25; 12:20) that Jesus used the Greek language is quite out of the question." But Young, vol. II, *Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels* (Hastings), article "Language of Christ," admits that Christ used both, though usually he spoke Aramaic. So Moulton, *Prolegomena*, p. 8. But Dalman\(^3\) has done more than any one in showing the great importance of the Aramaic for the interpretation of the words of Jesus. He denies the use of a modernized Hebrew in Jerusalem and urges that proper names like בַּרְכֶּרֶדְא, רֵיִשׁ נֵרֶב, are Aramaic (but see J. Rendel Harris, *Side Lights on the N. T.*, p. 71 f.). Dalman further urges that "Aramaic was the mother tongue of the Galileans."\(^4\) J. T. Marshall\(^5\) makes out a plausible case for the idea of a primitive Aramaic Gospel before our Mark, and this would make it more probable that Jesus spoke Aramaic. E. A. Abbott\(^6\) also attempts to reproduce the original Aramaic of the words of Jesus from the Greek. But Prof. Mahaffy\(^7\) can still say: "And so from the very beginning, though we may believe that in Galilee and among His intimates our Lord spoke Aramaic, and though we know that some of His last words upon the cross were in that language, yet His public teaching, His discussions with the Pharisees, His talk

\(^1\) Jesu Mutterspr.: das galilaische Aram. in seiner Bedeut. fur die Erkl. der Reden Jesu und der Evang. uberhaupt, 1896. So Deissmann (Light, etc., p. 57) says that Jesus "did not speak Gk. when He went about His public work," and, p. 1, "Jesus preaches in his Aramaic mother-tongue."

\(^2\) Art. Hellenism in Encyc. Bibl. Canon Foakes-Jackson (Interp., July, 1907, p. 392) says: "The Jews of high birth or with a reputation for sanctity are said to have refused to learn any language but their own, and thus we have the strange circumstance in Roman Palestine of the lower orders speaking two languages and their leaders only one."

\(^3\) The Words of Jesus considered in the Light of the post-Bibl. Jewish Writings and the Aram. Lang., 1902. Cf. also Pfannkuhe (Clark's Bibl. Cab.).

\(^4\) Ib., p. 10.

\(^5\) Exp., ser. IV, VI, VIII. See also Brockelmann, Syrische Gr., 1904; Schwally, Idioticon des christl.-palestinischen Aramäisch, 1893; Riggs, Man. of the Chaldean Lang., 1866; Wilson, Intr. Syriac Meth. and Man., 1891; Strack, Gr. des bibli. Aramaicen.

\(^6\) Clue, A Guide through Gk. to Heb., 1904.

\(^7\) The Prog. of Hellen. in Alexan. Emp., 1905, p. 130 f. Hadley (Ess. Phil. and Crit., p. 413) reaches the conclusion that Jesus spoke both Gk. and Aram.
with Pontius Pilate, were certainly carried on mainly in the Greek." Zahn (Intr. to the N. T.) labours needlessly to show that Hebrew was no longer the language of Palestine, but he does not prove that Aramaic was everywhere spoken, nor that Jesus always spoke Aramaic. Wellhausen (Einl. in die drei erst. Evang.) is prejudiced in favour of the Aramaic theory. It may be admitted at once that Aramaic was known to the majority of the Jews in Palestine, particularly in Judea. Cf. Ac. 1:19: τῇ διαλέκτῳ αὐτῶν Ἀκελλαδαμάχ; 22:2, ἄκοψαντες ὅτι τῇ Ἑβραϊδὶ διαλέκτῳ προσέ-ϕώνει αὐτοῖς μᾶλλον παρέσχον ἡσυχίαν. There is no doubt which language is the vernacular in Jerusalem. Cf. also 26:14. Josephus confirms Luke on this point (War, V, 6. 3), for the people of Jerusalem cried out τῇ πατρίῳ γλώσσῃ, and Josephus also acted intermediary for Titus, τῇ πατρίῳ γλώσσῃ (War, VI, 2. 1). See also 2 Macc. 7: 8, 21. Josephus wrote his War first in Aramaic and then in Greek. The testimony of Papias that Matthew wrote his λόγια in Aramaic bears on the question because of the tradition that Mark was the interpreter of Peter. The brogue that Peter revealed (Mt. 26:73) was probably due to his Galilean accent of Aramaic. Aramaic was one of the languages for the inscription on the cross (Jo. 19:20). It is clear therefore that the Hellenizing work of Jason and Menelaus and Antiochus Epiphanes received a set-back in Palestine. The reaction kept Greek from becoming the one language of the country. Even in Lycaonia the people kept their vernacular though they understood Greek (Ac. 14:11). On the other hand Peter clearly spoke in Greek on the Day of Pentecost, and no mention is made of Greek as one of the peculiar "tongues," on that occasion. It is clear that Paul was understood in Jerusalem when he spoke Greek (Ac. 22:2). Jesus Himself laboured chiefly in Galilee where were many gentiles and much commerce and travel. He taught in Decapolis, a Greek region. He preached also in the regions of Tyre and Sidon (Phoenicia), where Greek was necessary, and he held converse with a Greek (Syro-Phcenician) woman. Near Caesarea-Philippi (a Greek region), after the Transfiguration, Jesus spoke to the people at the foot of the mountain. At the time of the Sermon on the Mount Jesus addressed people from Decapolis and Perea (largely Hellenized), besides the mixed multitudes from Galilee, Jerusalem and Judea (Mt. 4:25). Luke (6:17) adds that crowds came also from Tyre and Sidon, and Mark (3:8) gives "from Iduma." It is hardly possible that these crowds understood Aramaic. The fact that Mark
twice (5:41; 7:34) uses Aramaic quotations from the words of Jesus does not prove that He always spoke in that tongue nor that He did so only on these occasions. In Mk. 14:36, Ἄββα ὁ πατήρ, it is possible that Jesus may have used both words as Paul did (Ro. 8:15). In the quotation from Ps. 22:1, spoken on the cross, Mt. 27:46 gives the Hebrew, while Mk. 15:34 has an Aramaic adaptation. There is no reason to doubt that Jesus knew Hebrew also. But Thomson (Temple Bible, Lang. of Palestine) proves that Matthew gives the quotations made by Christ in the words of the LXX, while his own quotations are usually from the Hebrew. It is clear, therefore, that Jesus spoke both Aramaic and Greek according to the demands of the occasion and read the Hebrew as well as the Septuagint, if we may argue from the O. T. quotations in the Gospels which are partly like the Hebrew text and partly like the LXX.¹ In Lu. 4:17 it is not clear whether it was the Hebrew text or the LXX that was read in the synagogue at Nazareth.² One surely needs no argument to see the possibility that a people may be bilingual when he remembers the Welsh, Scotch, Irish, Bretons of the present day.³ The people in Jerusalem understood either Greek or Aramaic (Ac. 22:2).

(j) GRAMMATICAL COMMENTARIES. A word must be said Concerning the new type of commentaries which accent the grammatical side of exegesis. This is, to be sure, the result of the emphasis upon scientific grammar. The commentary must have other elements besides the grammatical. Even the historical element when added does not exhaust what is required. There still remains the apprehension of the soul of the author to which historical grammar is only an introduction. But distinct credit is to be given to those commentators who have lifted this kind of exegesis out of the merely homiletic vein. Among the older writers are to be mentioned Meyer, Ellicott, Godet, Broadus, Hackett, Lightfoot and Westcott, while among the more recent commentators stand out most of the writers in the International

¹ See C. Taylor, The Gospel in the Law, 1869; Boehl, Altestamentl. Cit. im N. T., 1878; Toy, Quota. in the N. T., 1884; Huhn, Die alttestamentl. Cit. etc., 1900; Gregory, Canon and Text of the N. T., 1907, p. 394.
Critical Commentary, Holtzmann's Hand Comm., The Expositor's Greek Test., Swete, Mayor, G. Milligan, Lietzmann's Handbuch, Zahn's Kommentar, The Camb. Gk. Test., etc. In works like these, grammatical remarks of great value are found. There has been great advance in the N. T. commentaries since Winer's day, when these comments "were rendered useless by that uncritical empiricism which controlled Greek philology."¹

V. The New Point of View. It will hardly be denied, in view of the preceding necessarily condensed presentation of the new material now at hand that new light has been turned upon the problems of the N. T. Greek. The first effect upon many minds is to dazzle and to cause confusion. Some will not know how to assimilate the new facts and to co-ordinate them with old theories nor be willing to form or adopt new theories as a result of the fresh phenomena. But it is the inevitable duty of the student in this department to welcome the new discoveries and to attack the problems arising therefrom. The new horizon and wider outlook make possible real progress. It will not be possible to avoid some mistakes at first. A truer conception of the language is now offered to us and one that will be found to be richer and more inspiring.² Every line of biblical study must respond to the new discovery in language. "A new Cremer, a new Thayer-Grimm, a new Winer will give the twentieth century plenty of editing to keep its scholars busy. New Meyers and Alfords will have fresh matter from which to interpret the text, and new Spurgeons and Moodys will, we may hope, be ready to pass the new teaching on to the people."³ The N. T. Greek is now seen to be not an abnormal excrescence, but a natural development in the Greek language; to be, in fact, a not unworthy part of the great stream of the mighty tongue. It was not outside of the world-language, but in the very heart of it and influenced considerably the future of the Greek tongue.

¹ Winer, Gr. of the N. T. Idiom, Thayer's transl., p. 7.
CHAPTER II

THE HISTORICAL METHOD

I. Language as History. The scientific grammar is at bottom a grammatical history, and not a linguistic law-book. The seat of authority in language is therefore not the books about language, but the people who use the language. The majority of well-educated people determine correct usage (the mos loquendi as Horace says). Even modern dictionaries merely record from time to time the changing phenomena of language. Wolff was right when he conceived of philology as the "biography of a nation." The life of a people is expressed in the speech which they use.¹

We can well agree with Benfey² that "speech is the truest picture of the soul of a people, the content of all that which has brought a people to self-consciousness." However, we must not think that we can necessarily argue race from language.³ The historical conception of grammar has had to win its way against the purely theoretical and speculative notion. Etymology was the work of the philosophers. The study of the forms, the syntax, the dialects came later. The work of the Alexandrians was originally philology, not scientific grammar.⁴

(a) COMBINING THE VARIOUS ELEMENTS. It is not indeed easy to combine properly the various elements in the study of language. Sayce considers Steinthal too psychological and Schleicher too physical.⁵ The historical element must be added to both. Paul⁶ objects to the phrase "philosophy of language" as suggesting "metaphysical speculations of which the historical investigation...

¹ See Oertel, Lect. on the Study of Lang., 1902, p. 9 f.
³ See Sayce, Prin. of Comp. Philol., 1875, p. 175
⁴ See Kretschmer, Einl. in die Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1896, pp. 2, 3.
⁵ Prin. of Comp. Philol., p. xvi.
⁶ Prin. of the Hist. of Lang., 1888, p. xxi. "The truth is that the science of which we are thinking is philosophy in the same way as physics or physiology is philosophy, neither more, nor less."
of language needs to take no count." He prefers the term "science of principles." The study of language is a true science, a real philosophy, with a psychical as well as a physical basis. It is properly related to the historical natural sciences which have been subject "to the misdirected attempt at excluding them from the circle of the sciences of culture."¹ Language is capable of almost perfect scientific treatment. Kretschmer² outlines as modern advances over ancient grammar the psychological treatment of language, the physiology of sound, the use of the comparative method, the historical development of the language, the recognition of speech as a product of human culture, and not to be separated from the history of culture, world-history and life of the peoples. He thinks that no language has yet received such treatment as this, for present-day handbooks are only "speech-pictures," not "speech-histories."

(b) PRACTICAL GRAMMAR A COMPROMISE. Historical practical grammars have to make a compromise. They can give the whole view only in outline and show development and interrelation in part. It is not possible then to write the final grammar of Greek either ancient or modern. The modern is constantly changing and we are ever learning more of the old. What was true of Mistriotes³ and Jannaris⁴ will be true of the attempts of all. But none the less the way to study Greek is to look at it as a history of the speech-development of one of the greatest of peoples. But it is at least possible now to have the right attitude, thanks to the books already mentioned and others by Bernhardy,⁵


² Einl. in die Gesch. der griech. Spr., pp. 3-5. He himself here merely outlines the historical background of the Gk. language.

³ "Κατά ταύτα λοιπόν ή γραμματολογία δὲν εἶναι οὔτε ἀμιγής ἰστορική, οὔτε ἀμιγής αἰσθητικὴ ἐπιστήμη ἀλλὰ μετέχει ἀμφιστέρως." Ελληνική Γραμματολογία, 1894, p. 6.

⁴ "As a matter of course, I do not presume to have said the last word on all or most of these points, seeing that, even in the case of modern Gk., I cannot be expected to master, in all its details, the entire vocabulary and grammar of every single Neohellenic dialect." Hist. Gk. Gr., 1897, p. X.

⁵ Wissensch. Synt. der griech. Spr., 1829.
THE HISTORICAL METHOD

Christ, Wundt, Johannsen, Krumbacher, Schanz, G. Meyer, I. Miller, Hirt, Thumb, Dieterich, Steintal. The Latin syntax received historical treatment by Landgraf, not to mention English and other modern languages.

II. Language as a Living Organism.

(a) THE ORIGIN OF LANGUAGE. Speech is indeed a characteristic of man and may be considered a divine gift, however slowly the gift was won and developed by him. Sayce is undoubtedly correct in saying that language is a social creation and the effort to communicate is the only true solution of the riddle of speech, whether there was ever a speechless man or not. "Grammar has grown out of gesture and gesticulation." But speech has not created the capacities which mark the civilized man as higher than the savage. Max Muller remarks that "language forms an impassable barrier between man and beast." Growls and signs do not constitute "intellectual symbolism." Paul indeed, in opposition to Lazarus and Steintal, urges that "every linguistic creation is always the work of a single individual only." The psychological organisms are in fact the true media of linguistic

1 Gesch. der griech. Lit., 1893.
2 Volkerpsychol., 1900, 3. Aufl., 1911 f.
3 Beitr. zur griech. Sprachk., 1890.
4 Beitr. zu einer Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1885.
5 Beitr. zur hist. Synt. der griech. Spr., Bd. I–XVII.
7 Handb. der Altertumswiss. He edits the series (1890—).
9 Die griech. Spr. im Zeitalter des Hellen., 1901.
10 Untersuch. zur Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1898.
16 Three Lect. on the Sci. of Lang., 1891, p. 9. See also The Silesian Horse-herd: "Language and thought go hand in hand; where there is as yet no word, there is as yet no idea." Many of the writers on animals do not accept this doctrine.
17 Prin. of the Hist. of Lang., p. xliii.
development. Self-observation and analogy help one to strike a general average and so make grammar practical as well as scientific.

(b) EVOLUTION IN LANGUAGE. Growth, then, is to be expected in a living tongue. Change is inseparable from life. No language is dead so long as it is undergoing change, and this must be true in spoken and written usage. It is not the function of the grammarian to stop change in language, a thing impossible in itself. Such change is not usually cataclysmic, but gradual and varied. "A written language, to serve any practical purpose, must change with the times, just like a living dialect."

In general, change in usage may be compared to change in organic structure in "greater or lesser fitness." The changes by analogy in the speech of children are very suggestive on this point. The vocabulary of the Greek tongue must therefore continually develop, for new ideas demand new words and new meanings come to old words. Likewise inflections vary in response to new movements. This change brings great wealth and variety. The idea of progress has seized the modern mind and has been applied to the study of language as to everything else.

(c) CHANGE CHIEFLY IN THE VERNACULAR. Linguistic change occurs chiefly in the vernacular. From the spoken language new words and new inflections work their way gradually into the written style, which is essentially conservative, sometimes even anachronistic and purposely archaic. Much slang is finally accepted in the literary style. The study of grammar was originally confined to the artificial book-style. Dionysius Thrax expressly defined grammar as έμπειρία τῶν παρὰ ποιητὰς τε καὶ συγγραφεύσιν ώς ἐπὶ τὸ πολὺ λεγομένων. It was with him a concern for the poets and writers, not "die Sprache des Lebens." Grammar (γραμματική, γράφω), then, was first to write and to understand what was written; then the scientific interpretation of this literature; later the study of literary linguistic usage. It is only the moderns who have learned to investigate the living speech for its own historical value. Before the discovery of the Greek inscriptions the distinction between the vernacular and the literary style could not be so sharply drawn for the Greek of the classical

---

1 Paul, Prin. of the Hist. of Lang., p. 481.
3 Kretschmer, Einl. in die Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1896, pp. 3-5.
period, though Aristophanes should have taught us much. We have moved away from the position of Mure who said: "The distinction between the language of letters and the vulgar tongue, so characteristic of modern civilization, is imperceptible or but little defined in the flourishing age of Greece. Numerous peculiarities in her social condition tended to constitute classical expression in speaking or writing, not, as with us, the privilege of a few, but a public property in which every Hellene had an equal interest." The people as a whole were wonderfully well educated, but the educated classes themselves then, as now with us, used a spoken as well as a literary style. Jannaris is clear on this point: "But, speaking of Attic Greek, we must not infer that all Athenians and Atticized Greeks wrote and spoke the classical Attic portrayed in the aforesaid literature, for this Attic is essentially what it still remains in modern Greek composition: a merely historical abstraction; that is, an artistic language which nobody spoke but still everybody understood." We must note therefore both the vernacular and the literary style and expect constant change in each, though not in the same degree. Zarncke indeed still sounds a note of warning against too much attention to the vernacular; though a needless one. In the first century A.D. the vernacular Greek was in common use all over the world, the character of which we can now accurately set forth. But this non-literary language was not necessarily the speech of the illiterate. Mahaffy is very positive on this point. "I said just now that the Hellenistic world was more cultivated in argument than we are nowadays. And if you think this is a strange assertion, examine, I pray you, the intellectual aspects of the Epistles of St. Paul, the first Christian writer whom we know to have been thoroughly educated in this training. Remember that he was a practical teacher, not likely to commit the fault of speaking over the heads of his audience, as the phrase is." Hatzidakis laments that the monuments of the Greek since the Alexandrian period are no longer in the pure actual living speech of the time, but in the ar-

4 Prog. of Hellen. in Alex. Emp., 1905, p. 137.
5 Einleitung, p. 3.
tificial Attic of a bygone age. The modern Greek vernacular is a living tongue, but the modern literary language so proudly called κοθηρευτοσία is artificial and unreal.¹ This new conception of language as life makes it no longer possible to set up the Greek of any one period as the standard for all time. The English writer to-day who would use Hooker's style would be affected and anachronistic. Good English to-day is not what it was two hundred years ago, even with the help of printing and (part of the time) dictionaries. What we wish to know is not what was good Greek at Athens in the days of Pericles, but what was good Greek in Syria and Palestine in the first century A.D. The direct evidence for this must be sought among contemporaries, not from ancestors in a distant land. It is the living Greek that we desire, not the dead.

III. Greek not an Isolated Language.

(a) THE IMPORTANCE OF COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR. Julius Caesar, who wrote a work on grammar, had in mind Latin and Greek, for both were in constant use in the Roman world.² Formal Sanskrit grammar itself may have resulted from the comparison of Sanskrit with the native dialects of India.³ Hence comparative grammar seems to lie at the very heart of the science. It cannot be said, however, that Painini, the great Sanskrit scholar and grammanian of the fourth century B.C., received any impulse from the Greek civilization of Alexander the Great.⁴ The work of Panini is one of the most remarkable in history for subtle originality, "une histoire naturelle de la langue sanscrite." The Roman and Greek grammarians attended to the use of words and sentences, while the Sanskrit writers analyzed words into syllables⁵ and studied the relation of sounds to each other. It is not possible to state the period when linguistic comparison was first made. Max Muller in The Science of Language even says: "From an historical point of view it is not too much to say that the first Day of Pentecost marks the real beginning of the Science of language." One must not think that the comparative method is "more characteristic of the study of language than of other

² King, Intr. to Comp. Gr., p. 2.
³ Sayce, Prin. of Comp. Philol., p. 261.
⁴ Goblet d'Alviella, Ce que l'Inde doit a la Grece, 1897, p. 129.
branches of modern inquiry."¹ The root idea of the new grammar is the kinship of languages. Chinese grammar is said to be one of the curiosities of the world, and some other grammatical works can be regarded in that light. But our fundamental obligation is to the Hindu and Greek grammarians.²

(b) THE COMMON BOND IN LANGUAGE. Prof. Alfredo Trombetti, of Rome, has sought the connecting link in all human speech.³ It is a gigantic task, but it is doubtless true that all speech is of ultimate common origin. The remote relationships are very difficult to trace. As a working hypothesis the comparative grammarians speak of isolating, agglutinative and inflectional languages. In the isolating tongues like the Chinese, Burmese, etc., the words have no inflection and the position in the sentence and the tone in pronunciation are relied on for clearness of meaning. Giles⁴ points out that modern English and Persian have nearly returned to the position of Chinese as isolating languages. Hence it is inferred that the Chinese has already gone through a history similar to the English and is starting again on an inflectional career. Agglutinative tongues like the Turkish express the various grammatical relations by numerous separable prefixes, infixes and suffixes. Inflectional languages have made still further development, for while a distinction is made between the stem and the inflexional endings, the stems and the endings do not exist apart from each other. There are two great families in the inflexional group, the Semitic (the Assyrian, the Hebrew, the Syriac, the Arabic, etc.) and the Indo-Germanic or Indo-European (the Indo-Iranian or Aryan, the Armenian, the Greek, the Albanian, the Italic, the Celtic, the Germanic and the Balto-Slavic).⁵ Ind-European also are Illyrian, Macedonian, Phrygian, Thracian and the newly-discovered Tocharian. Some of these groups, like the Italic, the Germanic, the Balto-Slavic, the Indo-Iranian, embrace a number of separate tongues which show an inner affinity, but all the groups have a general family likeness.⁶

¹ Whitney, Life and Growth of Lang., 1875—, p. 315.
³ See his book, The Unity of Origin of Lang. Dr. Allison Drake, Disc. in Heb., Gaelic, Gothic, Anglo-Sax., Lat., Basque and other Caucasian Lang., 1908, undertakes to show "fundamental kinship of the Aryan tongues and of Basque with the Semitic tongues."
⁴ Man. of Comp. Philol., 1901, p. 36.
⁶ See Misteli, Characteristik der hauptsächlichsten Typen des Sprach-
(c) THE ORIGINAL INDO-GERMANIC SPEECH. It is not claimed that the original Indo-Germanic speech has been discovered, though Kretschmer does speak of "die indogermanische Ursprache," but he considers it only a necessary hypothesis and a useful definition for the early speech-unity before the Indo-Germanic stock separated.¹ Brugmann speaks also of the original and ground-speech (Ur- and Grundsprache) in the prehistoric background of every member of the Indo-Germanic family.² The science of language has as a historic discipline the task of investigating the collective speech-development of the Indo-Germanic peoples.³ Since Bopp's day this task is no longer impossible. The existence of an original Indo-Germanic speech is the working hypothesis of all modern linguistic study. This demands indeed a study of the Indo-Germanic people. Horatio Hale⁴ insists that language is the only proper basis for the classification of mankind. But this test breaks down when Jews and Egyptians speak Greek after Alexander's conquests or when the Irish and the American Negro use English. The probable home and wanderings of the original Indo-Germanic peoples are well discussed by Kretschmer.⁵ It is undeniable that many of the same roots exist in slightly different forms in all or most of the Indo-Germanic tongues. They are usually words that refer to the common domestic relations, elementary agriculture, the ordinary articles of food, the elemental forces, the pronouns and the numerals. Inflectional languages have two kinds of roots, predicative (nouns and verbs) and pronominal. Panini found 1706 such roots in Sanskrit, but Edgren has reduced the number of necessary Sanskrit roots to 587.⁶ But one must not suppose that these hypothetical roots ever constituted a real language, though there was an original Indo-Germanic tongue.⁷

¹ Einl. in die Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1896, pp. 7-9.  
² Kurze vergl. Gr., 1. Lief., 1902, p. 3.  
³ Ib., p. 27.  
⁵ Einl. in die Gesch. etc., pp. 7-92.  
⁶ See Max Muller, Three Lect. on the Sci. of Lang., 1891, p. 29.  
⁷ Sayce, Prin. of Comp. 1875, p. vi.
(d) GREEK AS A "DIALECT" OF THE INDO-GERMANIC SPEECH.

Greek then can be regarded as one of the branches of this original Indo-Germanic speech, just as French is one of the descendants of the Latin, like Spanish, Portuguese, Italian. Compare also the relation of English to the other Teutonic tongues. To go further, the separation of this original Indo-Germanic speech into various tongues was much like the breaking-up of the original Greek into dialects and was due to natural causes. Dialectic variety itself implies previous speech-unity. Greek has vital relations with all the branches of the Indo-Germanic tongues, though in varying degrees. The Greek shows decided affinity with the Sanskrit, the Latin and the Celtic languages. Part of the early Greek stock was probably Celtic. The Greek and the Latin flourished side by side for centuries and had much common history. All the comparative grammars and the Greek grammars from this point of view constantly compare the Greek with the Latin. See especially the great work of Riemann and Goelzer, *Grammaire comparee du Grec et du Latin.* On the whole subject of the relation of the Greek with the various Indo-Germanic languages see the excellent brief discussion of Kretschmer. But the hypothesis of an original Graeco-Italic tongue cannot be considered as proved, though there are many points of contact between Greek and Latin. But Greek, as the next oldest branch known to us, shows more kinship with the Sanskrit. Constant use of the Sanskrit must be made by one who wishes to understand the historical development of the Greek tongue. Such a work as Whitney's *Sanskrit Grammar* is very useful for this purpose. See also J. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik,* I, Lautlehre (1896). II, 1, *Einleitung zur Wortlehre* (1905). So Thumb's

1 See Meyer-Lübke, Gr. der rom. Spr., 3 Bde., 1890, 1894, 1899.
3 Whitney, Lang. and the Study of Lang., 1868, p. 185. See Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 5: "Die griechische, lateinische, indische u.s.w. Grammatik sind die konstitutiven Teile der indogermanischen Grammatik in gleicher Weise, wie z. B. die dorische, die ionische u.s.w. Grammatik die griechische Grammatik ausmachen."
7 Prof. B. L. Gildersleeve, Johns Hopkins Univ., has always taught Greek, but his Latin Grammar shows his fondness for Latin. See also Henry, A Short Comp. Gr. of Gk. and Lat., 1890, and A Short Comp. Gr. of Eng. and Ger., 1893.
playfully remarks: "It has often been said that no one can know anything of the science of language who does not know Sanskrit, and that is enough to frighten anybody away from its study." It is not quite so bad, however. Sanskrit is not the parent stock of the Greek, but the oldest member of the group. The age of the Sanskrit makes it invaluable for the study of the later speech-developments.

The Greek therefore is not an isolated tongue, but sustains vital relations with a great family of languages. So important does Kretschmer consider this aspect of the subject that he devotes his notable Einleitung in die Geschichte der griechischen Sprache to the setting forth of "the prehistoric beginnings of the Greek speech-development." This effort is, of necessity, fragmentary and partly inferential, but most valuable for a scientific treatment of the Greek language. He has a luminous discussion of the effect of the Thracian and Phrygian stocks upon the Greek when the language spread over Asia Minor.

IV. Looking at the Greek Language as a Whole. We cannot indeed make an exhaustive study of the entire Greek language in a book that is professedly concerned only with one epoch of that history. As a matter of fact no such work exists. Jannaris indeed said that "an ‘historical’ grammar, tracing in a connected manner the life of the Greek language from classical antiquity to the present time, has not been written nor even seriously attempted as yet." Jannaris himself felt his limitations when he faced so gigantic a task and found it necessary to rest his work upon the classical Attic as the only practical basis. But so far

1 Three Lect. on the Sci. of Lang., 1891, p. 72.
2 P. 5. Prof. Burrows (Disc. in Crete, 1907, pp. 145 ff.)
3 See pp. 171-243.
he departed from the pure historical method. But such a gram-
mar will come some day.

(a) DESCRIPTIVE HISTORICAL GRAMMAR. Meanwhile descriptive
historical grammar is possible and necessary. "Descriptive gram-
mar has to register the grammatical forms and grammatical con-
ditions in use at a given date within a certain community speaking
a common language."\(^1\) There is this justification for taking
Attic as the standard for classical study; only the true historical
perspective should be given and Attic should not be taught as
the only real Greek. It is possible and essential then to correlate
the N. T. Greek with all other Greek and to use all Greek to
throw light on the stage of the language under review. If the
Greek itself is not an isolated tongue, no one stage of the lan-
guage can be so regarded. "Wolff\(^2\) deprecates the restriction of
grammar to a set of rules abstracted from the writings of a
‘golden’ period, while in reality it should comprise the whole his-
tory of a language and trace its development." H. C. Muller\(^3\)
indeed thought that the time had not arrived for a grammar of
Greek on the historical plan, because it must rest on a greater
amount of material than is now at hand. But since then a vast
amount of new material has come to light in the form of papyri,
inscriptions and research in the modern Greek. Miller's own
book has added no little to our knowledge of the subject. Mean-
while we can use the historical material for the study of N. T.
Greek.

(b) UNITY OF THE GREEK LANGUAGE. At the risk of slight repe-
tition it is worth while to emphasize this point. Muller\(^4\) is apolo-
getic and eager to show that "the Greek language and literature
is one organic, coherent whole." The dialectical variations, while
confusing to a Certain extent, do not show that the Greek did not
possess original and continuous unity. As early as 1000 B.C. these
dialectical distinctions probably existed and the speech of Homer
is a literary dialect, not the folk-speech.\(^5\) The original sources of

---

\(^1\) Paul, Prin. o the Hist. of Lang., 1888, p. 2.
\(^2\) Oertel, Lect. on the Study of Lang., 1902, p. 27. Thumb (Theol. Litera-
turzeit., 1903, p. 424) expresses the hope that in a future edition of his Gr.
des N. T., Blass may do this for his book: "Die Sprache des N. T. auf dem
grossen Hintergrund der hellenistischen Sprachentwicklung beschreiben zu
konnen."
\(^3\) Hist. Gr. der hell. Spr., 1891, p. 14 f.
\(^4\) Ib., p. 16. Op "die griechische Sprache als Einheit" see Thumb's able
discussion in Handb. d. griech. Dial. (pp. 1-12). With all the diversity of
dialects there was essential unity in comparison with other tongues.
the Greek speech go back to a far distant time when as one single language an Asiatic idiom had taken Europe in its circle of influence. The translator of Buttmann's Greek Grammar speaks of Homer "almost as the work of another language." This was once a common opinion for all Greek that was not classic Attic. But Thiersch entitled his great work Griechische Grammatik vorzuglich des homerischen Dialekts, not simply because of the worth of Homer, "but because, on the contrary, a thorough knowledge of the Homeric dialect is indispensably necessary for those who desire to comprehend, in their whole depth and compass, the Grecian tongue and literature." But Homer is not the gauge by which to test Greek; his poems are invaluable testimony to the early history of one stage of the language. It is a pity that we know so little of the pre-Homeric history of Greek. "Homer presents not a starting-point, but a culmination, a complete achievement, an almost mechanical accomplishment, with scarcely a hint of origins." But whenever Greek began it has persisted as a linguistic unit till now. It is one language whether we read the Epic Homer, the Doric Pindar, the Ionic Herodotus, the Attic Xenophon, the AEolic Sappho, the Atticistic Plutarch, Paul the exponent of Christ, an inscription in Pergamus, a papyrus letter in Egypt, Tricoupis or Vlachos in the modern time. None of these representatives can be regarded as excrescences or impertinences. There have always been uneducated persons, but the Greek tongue has had a continuous, though checkered, history all the way. The modern educated Greek has a keen appreciation of "die Schonenheiten der klassischen Sprache." Muller complained that "almost no grammarians have treated the Greek language as a whole," but the works of Krumbacher, Thumb, Dieterich, Hatzidakis, Psichari, Jannaris, etc., have made it possible to obtain a general survey of the Greek language up to the present time. Like English, Greek has emerged into a new sphere of unity and consistent growth.

2 Sandford, Pref. to Thiersch's Gk. Gr., 1830, p. viii.
3 Miss Harrison, Prol. to the Study of Gk. Rel., 1903, p. vii.
4 Hatzidakis, Einl. in die neugr. Gr., 1892, p. 4.
(c) PERIODS OF THE GREEK LANGUAGE. It will be of service to present a brief outline of the history of the Greek tongue. And yet it is not easy to give. See the discussion by Sophocles in his *Greek Lexicon* (p. 11f.), inadequate in view of recent discoveries by Schliemann and Evans. The following is a tentative outline: The Mycenaean Age, 1500 B.C. to 1000 B.C.; the Age of the Dialects, 1000 B.C. to 300 B.C.; the Age of the *Koinh*, 300 B.C. to 330 A.D.; the Byzantine Greek, 330 A.D. to 1453 A.D.; the modern Greek, 1453 A.D. to the present time. The early stage of the Byzantine Greek up to 600 A.D.) is really *koinh* and the rest is modern Greek. See a different outline by Jannaris¹ and Hadley and Allen.² As a matter of fact any division is arbitrary, for the language has had an unbroken history, though there are these general epochs in that history. We can no longer call the pre-Homeric time mythical as Sophocles does.³ In naming this the Mycenaean age we do not wish to state positively that the Mycenaeans were Greeks and spoke Greek. "Of their speech we have yet to read the first syllable."⁴ Tsountas⁵ and Manatt, however, venture to believe that they were either Greeks or of the same stock. They use the term "to designate all Greek peoples who share in the Mycenaean civilization, irrespective of their habitat."⁶ Ohnefalsch-Richter (*Cont. Rev.*, Dec., 1912, p. 862) claims Cyprus as the purveyor of culture to the Creto-Mycenaean age. He claims that Hellenes lived in Cyprus 1200 to 1000 B.C. The Mycenaean influence was widespread and comes "down to the very dawn of historical Greece."⁷ That Greek was known and used widely during the Mycenaean age the researches of Evans at Knossos, in Crete, make clear.⁸ The early linear

² Moulton (Prol., p. 184) counts 32 centuries of the Gk. language from 1275 B.C., the date of the mention of the Achmans on an Egyptian monument.
³ Gk. Gr., 1885, p. 1 f. Deissmann indeed would have only three divisions, the Dialects up to 301 B.C., Middle Period up to 600 A.D., and Mod. Gk. up to the present time. Hauck's Realencyc., 1889, p. 630. Cf. Muller, Hist. Gr. der hell. Spr., 189, pp. 42-62, for another outline.
⁴ Tsountas and Manatt, The Mycenaean Age, 1897, p. 316.
⁵ Ib., p. 335 ff.
⁶ Ib., p. 235.
⁷ Ib., p. 325. See also Beloch, Griech. Gesch., I, 85: "Auch sonst kann kein Zweifel sein, dass die mykendische Kultur in Griechenland bis in das VIII. Jahrhundert geherrscht." Flinders-Petrie (Jour. of Hell. Stud., xii, 204) speaks of 1100 to 800 B.C. as the "age of Mycenaean decadence."
⁸ Cretan Pictographs and Pre-Phoenician Script, 1895, p. 362; cf. also
writing of the Cretans came from a still earlier pictograph. The Greek dialects emerge into light from about 1000 B.C. onward and culminate in the Attic which flourished till the work of Alexander is done. The Homeric poems prove that Greek was an old language by 1000 to 800 B.C. The dialects certainly have their roots deep in the Mycenaean age. Roughly, 300 B.C. is the time when the Greek has become the universal language of the world, a Welt-sprache. 330 A.D. is the date when the seat of government was removed from Rome to Constantinople, while A.D. 1453 is the date when Constantinople was captured by the Turks. With all the changes in this long history the standards of classicity have not varied greatly from Homer till now in the written style, while the Greek vernacular to-day is remarkably like the earliest known inscriptions of the folk-speech in Greece.\(^1\) We know something of this history for about 3000 years, and it is at least a thousand years longer. Mahaffy has too poor an idea of modern Greek, but even he can say: "Even in our miserable modern pigeon-Greek, which represents no real pronunciation, either ancient or modern, the lyrics of Sophocles or Aristophanes are unmistakably lovely."\(^2\)

(d) MODERN GREEK IN PARTICULAR. It is important to single out the modern Greek vernacular\(^3\) from the rest of the language for the obvious reason that it is the abiding witness to the perpetuity of the vernacular Greek as a living organism. It is a witness also that is at our service always. The modern Greek popular speech does not differ materially from the vernacular Byzantine, and thus connects directly with the vernacular κοινή. Alexandria was "the great culture-reservoir of the Greek-Oriental world . . . the repository of the ancient literary treasures."\(^4\) With this

---

\(^1\) Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 13. See also Hatzidakis, Einl. in die neugr. Gr., 1892, p. 3.


\(^3\) The modern literary language (καθαρεύουσα) is really more identical with the ancient classical Gk. But it is identity secured by mummifying the dead. It is identity of imitation, not identity of life. Cf. Thumb-Angus, Handb. of Mod. Gk. Vern., Foreword (p. xi f.).

\(^4\) Dieterich, Gesch. der byz. und neugr. Lit., 1902, p. 2.
THE HISTORICAL METHOD

general position Thumb heartily agrees.¹ Hatzidakis² even says: "The language generally spoken to-day in the towns differs less from the common language of Polybius than this last differs from the language Homer." Since this is true it at first seems odd that the students at the University of Athens should object so much to the translation of the N. T. into the modern vernacular. They forget that the N. T. is itself written in the vernacular κοινή. But that was so long ago that it is now classic to them. Certainly in the Gospels, as Wellhausen³ insists, the spoken Greek became literature. Knowledge of the modern Greek⁴ helps the student to escape from "the Procrustean bed of the old Greek" which he learned as a fixed and dead thing.⁵ It is probable that Roger Bacon had some Byzantine manual besides the old Greek grammars.⁶ "In England, no less than in the rest of Western Europe, the knowledge of Greek had died away, and here also, it was only after the conquest of Constantinople that a change was possible."⁷ Western Christians had been afraid of the corruptions of paganism if they knew Greek, and of Mohammedanism if they knew Hebrew (being kin to Arabic!). But at last a change has come in favour of the modern Greek. Boltz indeed has advocated modern Greek as the common language for the scholars of the World since Latin is so little spoken.⁸ There is indeed need of a new world-speech, as Greek was in the N. T. times, but there is no language that can now justly make such a claim. English comes nearer to it than any other. This need has given rise to the artificial tongues like Volaptik and Espe-

¹ "Die heutige griechische Volkssprache ist die natürliche Fortsetzung der alten ΚΟΙΝΗ." Die neugr. Spr., 1892, p. 8. See Heilmeier's book on the Romaic Gk. (1834), who first saw this connection between the mod. vern. and the vern. ΚΟΙΝΗ.
³ Einl. in die drei ersten Evang., 1905, p. 9.
⁵ Thumb, Handb. der neugr. Volkspr., 1895, p. x.
⁷ Ib., p. xlii.
rantos,1 the latter having some promise in it. But the modern
Greek vernacular has more merit than was once conceded to it.
The idioms and pronunciation of the present-day vernacular are
often seen in the manuscripts of the N. T. and other Greek docu-
ments and much earlier in inscriptions representing one or an-
other of the early dialects. The persistence of early English forms
is easily observed in the vernacular in parts of America or Eng-
land. In the same way the late Latin vernacular is to be compared
with the early Latin vernacular, not with the Latin of elegant
literature. "Speaking generally, we may say that the Greek of a
well-written newspaper [the literary language] is now, as a rule,
far more classical than the Hellenistic of the N. T., but decidedly
less classical than the Greek of Plutarch."2 What the rela-
tion between the N. T. Greek and the modern Greek is will be
shown in the next chapter. It should be noted here that the
N. T. Greek had a strong moulding influence on the Byzantine,
and so on the modern Greek because of the use of the Greek New
Testament all over the world, due to the spread of Christianity
throughout the Roman Empire.3 The great Christian preachers
did not indeed use a peculiar ecclesiastical Greek, but the N. T.
did tend to emphasize the type of koinh in which it was writter
"The diction of the N. T. had a direct influence in moulding
the Greek ordinarily used by Christians in the succeeding cen-
turies."4 Compare the effect of the King James Version on the
English language and of Luther's translation of the Bible on
German.

V. The Greek Point of View. It sounds like a truism to
insist that the Greek idiom must be explained from the Greek
point of view. But none the less the caution is not superfluous.
Trained linguists may forget it and so commit a grammatical
vice. Even Winer5 will be found saying, for instance: "Appel-
latives which, as expressing definite objects, should naturally

---

2 Jebb, On the Rela. of Mod. to Class. Gk., in Vincent ands Dickson's
Handb. to Mod. Gk., 1887, p. 294. Blass actually says: "Der Sprachge-
brauch des Neuen Testaments, der vielfältig vom Neugriechischen her eine
viel bessere Beleuchtung empfängt als aus der alten klassischen Literatur."
Kuhner's Ausf. Gr. etc., 1890, p. 25. Blass also says (ib., p. 26) that "eine
wissenschaftliche neugriechische Grammatik fehlt." But Hatzidakis and
others have written since.
3 See Reinhold, De Graecitate Patrum, 1898.
4 Jebb, ib., p. 290.
5 Gr. of the N. T. Gk., Moulton's transl., 1877, p. 147.
have the article, are in certain cases used without it." That "should" has the wrong attitude toward Greek. The appelle-
ative in Greek does not need to have the article in order to be
definite. So when Winer often admits that one tense is used
"for" another, he is really thinking of German and how it would
be expressed in German. Each tongue has its own history and
genius. Parallel idioms may or may not exist in a group of lan-
guages. Sanskrit and Latin, for instance, have no article. It is
not possible to parallel the Hebrew tenses, for example, with the
Greek, nor, indeed, can it be done as between Greek and English.
The English translation of a Greek aorist may have to be in the
past perfect or the present perfect to suit the English usage, but
that proves nothing as to how a Greek regarded the aorist tense.
We must assume in a language that a good writer knew how to
use his own tongue and said what he meant to say. Good Greek
may be very poor English, as when Luke uses ἐν τῷ εἰσαγαγέ
tοῦ γονέως τῷ παιδίῳ Ἰησοῦν (Lu. 2:27). A literal translation of this
neat Greek idiom makes barbarous English. The Greeks simply
did not look at this clause as we do. "One of the commonest and
gravest errors in studying the grammar of foreign languages is
to make a half-conjectural translation, and then reason back
from our own language to the meaning of the original; or to ex-
plain some idiom of the original by the formally different idiom
which is our substantial equivalent."¹ Broadus was the greatest
teacher of language that I have known and he has said nothing
truer than this. After all, an educated Greek knew what he
meant better than we do. It is indeed a great and difficult task
that is demanded of the Greek grammarian who to-day under-
takes to present a living picture of the orderly development of
the Greek tongue "zu einem schonerten und grorren Ganzen" and
also show "in the most beautiful light the flower of the Greek
spirit and life."² Deissmann³ feels strongly on the subject of the
neglect of the literary development of Primitive Christianity, "a

¹ Broadus, Comm. on Mt., 1886, p. 316. See also Gerber, Die Spr. als
Kunst, 1. Bd., 18'1, p. 321: "Der ganze Charakter dieser oder jener Sprache
ist der Abdruck der Natur des Landes, wo sie gesprochen wird. Die griechi-
sche Sprache ist der griechische Himmel selbst mit seiner tiefdunklen Blaue,
die sich in dem sanft wogenden agaischen Meere spiegelt."
² Kuhner, Aus Gr. der griech. Spr., 1834, p. iv. How much more so
now!
neue Folge, 1882, p. 429 ff.
subject which has not yet been recognized by many persons in its full importance. Huge as is the library of books that have been written on the origin of the N. T. and of its separate parts, the N. T. has not often been studied by historians of literature; that is to say, as a branch of the history of ancient literature."
CHAPTER III

THE KOINH

The Greek of the N. T. has many streams that flow into it. But this fact is not a peculiarity of this phase of the language. The κοινή itself has this characteristic in a marked degree. If one needs further examples, he can recall how composite English is, not only combining various branches of the Teutonic group, but also incorporating much of the old Celtic of Britain and receiving a tremendous impress from the Norman-French (and so Latin), not to mention the indirect literary influence of Latin and Greek. The early Greek itself was subject to non-Greek influence as other Indo-Germanic tongues were, and in particular from the side of the Thracians and Phrygians in the East, and in the West and North the Italic, Celtic and Germanic pressure was strong.

I. The Term Κοινή. The word κοινή, sc. διάλεκτος, means simply common language or dialect common to all, a world-speech (Weltsprache). Unfortunately there is not yet uniformity in the use of a term to describe the Greek that prevailed over Alexander's empire and became the world-tongue. Kuhner-Blass speak of 'ἡ κοινή ή διάλεκτος.' So also Schmieidel follows Winer exactly. But Hellenic language is properly only Greek language, as Hellenic culture is Greek culture. Janannaris suggests Panhellenic or new Attic for the universal Greek.

1 Kretschmer, Einl. in die Gesch. der griech. Spr., 1896, pp. 171-243. But the true Phrygians were kin to the Greeks. See Percy Gardner, New Ch. of Gk. Hist., p. 84.
2 Kretschmer, op. cit., pp. 153-170, 244-282.
4 W.-Sch., N. T. Gr., p. 17.
5 Mahaffy, Prog. of Hellen. in Alex. Emp., p. 3. Mahaffy does use Hellenism like Droysen in his Hist. of Hellenism, as corresponding to Hellenistic, but he does so under protest (p. 3 f.). He wishes indeed that he had coined the word "Hellenicism." But Hogarth (Philip and Alexander, p. 277) had already used "Hellenisticism," saying: "Hellenisticism grew out of Hellenism."
the Greek par excellence as to common usage. Hellenistic Greek would answer in so far as it is Greek spoken also by Hellenists differing from Hellenes or pure Greeks. Krumbacher applies Hellenistic to the vernacular and κοινή to the "conventional literary language" of the time, but this is wholly arbitrary. Krumbacher terms the Hellenistic "ein verschwommenes Idiom." Hatzidakis and Schwyzer include in the κοινή both the literary and the spoken language of the Hellenistic time. This is the view adopted in this grammar. Deissmann dislikes the term Hellenistic Greek because it was so long used for the supposedly peculiar biblical Greek, though the term itself has a wide significance. He also strongly disapproves the terms "vulgar Greek," "bad Greek," "graecitas fatiscens," in contrast with the "classic Greek." Deissmann moreover objects to the word κοινή because it is used either for the vernacular, the literary style or for all the Greek of the time including the Atticistic revival. So he proposes "Hellenistic world-speech." But this is too cumbersome. It is indeed the world-speech of the Alexandrian and Roman period that is meant by the term κοινή. There is on the other hand the literary speech of the orators, historians, philosophers, poets, the public documents preserved in the inscriptions (some even Atticistic); on the other hand we have the popular writings in the LXX, the N. T., the Apostolic Fathers, the papyri (as a rule) and the ostraca. The term is thus sufficient by itself to express the Greek in common use over the world, both oral and literary, as Schweizer uses it following Hatzidakis. Thumb identifies κοινή and Hellenistic Greek and applies it to both vernacular and written style, though he would not regard the Atticists as proper producers of the κοινή. Moulton uses the term κοινή for both spoken and literary κοινή. The doctors thus disagree very widely.

On the whole it seems best to use the term κοινή (or Hellenistic Greek) both for the vernacular and literary κοινή, excluding the Atticistic revival, which was a conscious effort to write not κοινή

1 Munchener Sitzungsber., 1886, p. 435.
3 Ib., p. 630.
4 Gr. der perg. Inscr., p. 19 f. 5 Die griech. Spr. etc., p. 9.
6 Prol., p. 23. It is not necessary to discuss here the use of "Hellenistic" Gk. as "Jewish-Gk." (see "Semitic Influence" in ch. IV), for it is absurd. The notion that the κοινή is Macedonian Gk. is quite beside the mark, for Mac. Gk. is too barbarous. The theory of an Alexandrian dialect is obsolete. Du Canges, in his Glossarium called Hell. Gk. "corruptissima lingua," and Niebuhr (Uber das Agyp.-Griech., Kl. Schr., p. 197) calls it "jargon."
but old Attic. At last then the Greek world has speech-unity, whatever was true of the beginning of the Greek language.

II. The Origin of the Κοινή.

(a) TRIUMPH OF THE ATTIC. This is what happened. Even in Asiatic Ionia the Attic influence was felt. The Attic vernacular, sister to the Ionic vernacular, was greatly influenced by the speech of soldiers and merchants from all the Greek world. Attic became the standard language of the Greek world in the fifth and the fourth centuries B.C. "The dialect of Athens, the so-called Attic— one of the Ionic group--prevailed over all other sister dialects, and eventually absorbed them. It was the Attic, because Athens, particularly after the Persian wars, rose to absolute dominion over all the other Greek communities, and finally became the metropolis of all Greek races." This is rather an overstatement, but there is much truth in it. This classic literary Attic is did more and more lose touch with the vernacular. "It is one of our misfortunes, whatever be its practical convenience, that we are taught Attic as the standard Greek, and all other forms and dialects as deviations from it . . . when many grammarians come to characterize the later Greek of the Middle Ages or of to-day, or even that of the Alexandrian or N. T. periods, no adjective is strong enough to condemn this 'verdorbenes, veruneinigtes Attisch'" (S. Dickey, Princeton Rev., Oct., 1903). The literary Attic was allied to the literary Ionic; but even in this crowning development of Greek speech no hard and fast lines are drawn, for the artificial Doric choruses are used in tragedy and the vernacular in comedy. There was loss as well as gain as the Attic was more extensively used, just as is true

---

1 Blass indeed contrasts the literature of the Alex. and Rom. periods on this principle, but wrongly, for it is type, not time, that marks the difference. "If then the literature of the Alexandrian period must be called Hellenistic, that of the Roman period must be termed Atticistic. But the popular language had gone its own way." Gr. of the N. T. Gk., 1898 and 1905, p. 2. On the Gk. of Alexandria and its spread over the world see Wackernagel, Die Kult. der Gegenw., Tl. I, Abt. 8, p. 304 f.


of modern English. "The orators Demosthenes and AEschines may be counted in the new Attic, where other leading representatives in literature are Menander, Philemon and the other writers of the New Comedy." As the literary Attic lived on in the literary κοινή, so the vernacular Attic survived with many changes in the vernacular κοινή. We are at last in possession of enough of the old Attic inscriptions and the κοινή inscriptions and the papyri to make this clear. The march of the Greek language has been steadily forward on this Attic vernacular base even to this present day. In a sense, therefore, the κοινή became another dialect (AEolic, Doric, Ionic, Attic, κοινή). Cf. Kretschmer, Die Entstehung der κοινή, pp. 1-37. But the κοινή was far more than a dialect. Kretschmer holds, it is fair to say, that the κοινή is "eine merkwürdige Mischung verschiedenster Dialecte" (op. cit., p. 6). He puts all the dialects into the melting-pot in almost equal proportions. Wilamowitz-Mollendorff considers the Ionic as the chief influence in the κοινή, while W. Schmidt denies all Doric and Ionic elements. Schwyzer rightly sees that the dialectical influences varied in different places, though the vernacular Attic was the common base.

(b) FATE OF THE OTHER DIALECTS. The triumph of the Attic was not complete, though in Ionia, at the end of the third century B.C., inscriptions in Attic are found, showing that in Asia Minor pure Ionic had about vanished. In the first century B.C. the Attic appears in inscriptions in Boeotia, but as late as the second century A.D. Ionic inscriptions are found in Asia Minor. Ionic first went down, followed by the AEllie. The Doric made a very stubborn resistance. It was only natural that the agricultural communities should hold out longest. See Thumb, Hellen., p. 28 f. Even to-day the Zaconian patois of modern Greek vernacular

1 Simonson, Gk. Gr., Accidence, 1903, p. 6. He has a good discussion of the dialects, pp. 221-265.
2 Riemann and Goelzer well say: "Quant au dialecte attique, grace aux grands ecritours qui l'illustrent, grace a la preponderance politique et commerciale d'Athenes, grace aussi a son caractere de dialecte intermediaire entre l'ionien et les dialectes en a, il se repandit de bonne heure, hors de son domaine primitif, continua a s'etendre meme apres la chute de l'empire politique d'Athenes et finit par embrasser tout le monde sur le nom de langue commune (κοινή διαλεκτος)" (Phonetique, p. 16). And yet the common people understood Homer also as late as Xenophon. Cf. Xenophon, Com. 3, 5, και ὕμνον δυναμήν δὲ θλιασά ὡς καὶ ὄσυσαιν ἀπὸ στόματος εἰπεῖν. Cf. Lottich, De Serm. vulg. Attic., 1881. On the "Growth of the Attic Dialect" fee Rutherford, New Phrynichus, pp. 1-31.
has preserved the old Laconic Doric "whose broad á holds its ground still in the speech of a race impervious to literature and proudly conservative of a language that was always abnormal to an extreme." It is not surprising that the Northwest Greek, because of the city leagues, became a kind of Achaean-Dorian κοινή2 and held on till almost the beginning of the Christian era before it was merged into the κοινή of the whole Graeco-Roman world.3 There are undoubtedly instances of the remains of the Northwest Greek and of the other dialects in the κοινή and so in the N. T. The Ionic, so near to the Attic and having flourished over the coast of Asia Minor, would naturally have considerable influence on the Greek world-speech. The proof of this will appear in the discussion of the κοινή where remains of all the main dialects are naturally found, especially in the vernacular.4

(c) PARTIAL KOINES. The standardizing of the Attic is the real basis. The κοινή was not a sudden creation. There were quasi-koinēs before Alexander's day. These were Strabo's alliance of Ionic-Attic, Doric-AEolic (Thumb, Handb., p. 49). It is therefore to be remembered that there were "various forms of κοινή" before the κοινή which commenced with the conquests of Alexander (Buck, Gk. Dialects, pp. 154-161), as Doric κοινή, Ionic κοινή, Attic κοινή, Northwest κοινή. Hybrid forms are not uncommon, such as the Doric future with Attic ou as in poihsou̱nti (cf. Buck, p. 166). There was besides a revival here and there of local dialects during the Roman times.

(d) EFFECTS OF ALEXANDER'S CAMPAIGNS. But for the conquests of Alexander there might have been no κοινή in the sense of a world-speech. The other Greek koinēs were partial, this alone was a world-speech because Alexander united Greek and Persian, east and west, into one common world-empire. He respected the

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 32.  
2 Ib., p. 37.  
3 Radermacher (NT. Gr., p. 1) puts it clearly: "Es genugt zu sagen, dass die κοινή starksten Zusammenhang mit dem Attischen, in zweiter Linie mit dem Ionischen, verrat. In der altesten Periode des Hellenismus zeigt sich daneben geringer Einfluss arderer Dialekte, des Dorischen and Aolischen."  
4 "Il est a peine besoin de repeter que ces caracteres s'effacenta, mesure que l'on descend vers l'ere chretienne. Sous Finfluence sans cesse grandissante de l'atticisme, il s'etablit une sorte d'uniformite." Boisacq, Les Dial. Dor., 1891, p. 204. "The Gk. of the N. T. is not, however, mere κοινή. In vocabulary it is fundamentally Ionic" (John Burnet, Rev. of Theol. and Phil., Aug., 1906, p. 95). "Fundamentally" is rather strong, but ἀπόστολος, as ambassador, not mere expedition, εὐλογία, ἡστεία, give some colour to the statement. But what does Prof. Burnet mean by "mere κοινή?"
customs and language of all the conquered nations, but it was inevitable that the Greek should become the *lingua franca* of the world of Alexander and his successors. In a true sense Alexander made possible this new epoch in the history of the Greek tongue. The time of Alexander divides the Greek language into two periods. "The first period is that of the separate life of the dialects and the second that of the speech-unity, the common speech or κοινή" (Kretschmer, *Die Entst. d. Koinh*, p. 1).

(e) THE MARCH TOWARD UNIVERSALISM. The successors of Alexander could not stop the march toward universalism that had begun. The success of the Roman Empire was but another proof of this trend of history. The days of ancient nationalism were over and the κοινή was but one expression of the glacial movement. The time for the world-speech had come and it was ready for use.

III. The Spread of the Koinh.

(a) A WORLD-SPEECH. What is called ἡ κοινή was a world-speech, not merely a general Greek tongue among the Greek tribes as was true of the Achaean-Dorian and the Attic. It is not speculation to speak of the κοινή as a world-speech, for the inscriptions in the κοινή testify to its spread over Asia, Egypt, Greece, Italy, Sicily and the isles of the sea, not to mention the papyri. Marseilles was a great centre of Greek civilization, and even Cyrene, though not Carthage, was Grecized.¹ The κοινή was in such general use that the Roman Senate and imperial governors had the decrees translated into the world-language and scattered over the empire.² It is significant that the Greek speech becomes one instead of many dialects at the very time that the Roman rule sweeps over the world.³ The language spread by Alexander's army over the Eastern world persisted after the division of the kingdom and penetrated all parts of the Roman world, even Rome itself. Paul wrote to the church at Rome in Greek, and Marcus Aurelius, the Roman Emperor, wrote his *Meditations* (τῶν εἰς ἑαυτόν) in Greek. It was the language not only of letters, but of commerce and every-day life. A common language for all

² Viereck, Sermo Graecus quo Senatus Popul. Rom. etc., 1888, p. xi.
men may indeed be only an ideal norm, but "the whole character of a common language may be strengthened by the fact of its transference to an unquestionably foreign linguistic area, as we may observe in the case of the Greek κοινή."\(^1\) The late Latin became a κοινή for the West as the old Babylonian had been for the East, this latter the first world-tongue known to us.\(^2\) Xenophon with the retreat of the Ten Thousand\(^3\) was a forerunner of the κοινή. Both Xenophon and Aristotle show the wider outlook of the literary Attic which uses Ionic words very extensively. There is now the "Gross-Attisch." It already has γίνομαι, ἔνεκεν, —τώσαν, ἐπα and ἡμεγκα, ἐδώκαμεν and ἐδωκαν, βασίλεισσα, δεικνύω σος, ναός. Already Thucydides and others had borrowed σος from the Ionic. It is an easy transition from the vernacular Attic to the vernacular κοινή after Alexander's time. (Cf. Thumb's Handbuch, pp. 373-380, "Entstehung der Κοινή.") On the development of the κοινή see further Wackernagel, Die Kultur der Gegenwart, Tl. I, Abt. 8, p. 301 ff.; Moulton, Prol., ch. I, II; Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., Iap. I. But it was Alexander who made the later Attic the common language of the world, though certainly he had no such purpose in view. Fortunately he had been taught by Aristotle, who himself studied in Athens and knew the Attic of the time. "He rapidly established Greek as the lingua franca of the empire, and this it was which gave the chief bond of union to the many countries of old civilizations, which had hitherto been isolated. This unity of culture is the remarkable thing in the history of the world."\(^4\) It was really an epoch in the world's history when the babel of tongues was hushed in the wonderful language of Greece. The vernaculars of the eastern Roman provinces remained, though the Greek was universal; so, when Paul came to Lystra, the people still spoke the Lycaonian speech

---

\(^1\) Paul, Prin. of the Hist. of Lang., p. 496. See also Kaerst, Gesch. d. hellenist. Zeit., 101, p. 420: "Die Weiterentwicklung der Geschichte des Alttum's, so weit sie für unsere eigene Kultur entscheidende Bedeutung erlangt hat, beruht auf einer fortschreitenden Occidentalisation; auch das im Oriente emporgekommene Christentum entfaltet sich nach dem Westen zu und gelangt hier zu seiner eigentlich weltgeschichtlichen Wirksamkeit."

\(^2\) Schwyzter, Die Weltspr. etc., p. 7.

\(^3\) See Mahaffy, Prog. of Hellen. in Alex. Emp., p. 7; cf. also Rutherford New Phrynichus, 1881, p. 160 f.; Schweizer, Gr. der perg. Inschr., p. 16. Moulton (Prol., p. 31) points out that the vase-inscriptions prove the statement of the Const. of Athens, 11. 3, that the Athenians spoke a language compounded of all Greek and barbarian tongues besides.

\(^4\) Mahaffy, Prog. of Hellen., etc., p. 40.
of their fathers.\textsuperscript{1} The papyri and the inscriptions prove beyond controversy that the Greek tongue was practically the same whether in Egypt, Herculaneum, Pergamum or Magnesia. The Greeks were the school-teachers of the empire. Greek was taught in the grammar schools in the West, but Latin was not taught in the East.

(b) VERNACULAR AND LITERARY.

1. Vernacular. The spoken language is never identical with the literary style, though in the social intercourse of the best educated people there is less difference than with the uncultured.\textsuperscript{2} We now know that the old Attic of Athens had a vernacular and a literary style that differed considerably from each other.\textsuperscript{3} This distinction exists from the very start with the κοινή, as is apparent in Pergamum and elsewhere.\textsuperscript{4} This vernacular κοινή grows right out of the vernacular Attic normally and naturally.\textsuperscript{5} The colonists, merchants and soldiers who mingled all over Alexander's world did not carry literary Attic, but the language of social and business intercourse.\textsuperscript{6} This vernacular κοινή at first differed little from the vernacular Attic of 300 B.C. and always retained the bulk of the oral Attic idioms. "Vulgar dialects both of the ancient and modern times should be expected to contain far more archaisms than innovations."\textsuperscript{7} The vernacular is not a variation from the literary style, but the literary language is a development from the vernacular.\textsuperscript{8} See Schmid\textsuperscript{9} for the relation between the literary and the vernacular κοινή. Hence if the vernacular is the normal speech of the people, we must look to the inscriptions and the papyri for the living idiom of the common Greek or κοινή. The pure Attic as it was spoken in Athens is preserved only in

\textsuperscript{1} Schwyzer, Weltspr., p. 29.  \textsuperscript{2} Schweizer, Gr. der perg. etc., p. 22.
\textsuperscript{4} Schweizer, Gr., p. 27.
\textsuperscript{5} Thumb, Griech. Spr. im Zeitalter etc., p. 208 f. Lottich in his De Serm. vulg. Attic. shows from the writings of Aristophanes how the Attic vernacular varied in a number of points from the literary style, as in the frequent use of diminutives, desiderative verbs, metaphors, etc.
\textsuperscript{6} Schweizer, Gr., p. 23.
\textsuperscript{7} Geldart, Mod. Gk. Lang. in its Rela. to Anc. Gk., 1870, p. 73. See also Thumb, Griech. Spr. etc., p. 10, who calls "die κοινή weniger ein Abschluss als der Anfang einer neuen Entwicklung." On the older Gk. κοινή see Wackernagel, Die Kult. der Gegenw., Tl. I, Abt. 8, p. 300 f.
\textsuperscript{8} Deissmann, Hell. Griech., Hauck's Realencyc., p. 633.
\textsuperscript{9} Atticismus, Bd. IV, pp. 577-734. A very important treatment of the whole question is here given.
the inscriptions. In the Roman Empire the vernacular κοινή would be understood almost everywhere from Spain to Pontus. See IV for further remarks on the vernacular.

2. Literary. If the vernacular κοινή was the natural development of the vernacular Attic, the literary κοινή was the normal evolution of the literary Attic. Thumb well says, "Where there is no development, there is no life." In style and syntax the literary Common Greek diverges more widely from the colloquial. This is natural and in harmony with the previous removal of the literary Attic from the language of the people. The growth of the literary κοινή was parallel with that of the popular κοινή and was, of course, influenced by it. The first prose monument of literary Attic known to us, according to Schwyzer, is the Constitution of Athens (before 413), falsely ascribed to Xenophon. The forms of the literary κοινή are much like the Attic, as in Polybius, for instance, but the chief difference is in the vocabulary and meaning of the same words. Polybius followed the general literary spirit of his time, and hence was rich in new words, abstract nouns, denominative verbs, new adverbs. He and Josephus therefore used Ionic words found in Herodotus and Hippocrates, like ἔνδειξις, παραφυλακή, not because they consciously imitated these writers, but because the κοινή, as shown by papyri and inscriptions, employed them. For the same reason Luke and Josephus have similar words, not because of use of one by the other, but because of common knowledge of literary terms, Luke also using many common medical terms natural to a physician of culture. Writers like Polybius aimed to write without pedantry and without vulgarism. In a true sense then the literary κοινή was a "compromise between the vernacular κοινή and the literary Attic," between "life and school." There is indeed no Chinese

---

1 Hirt, Handb. der griech. Laut- und Formenl., 1902, p. 41.
4 Jannaris, Hist. C-k. Gr., p. 5. Deissmann (New Light on the N. T., 1907, p. 3 f.) shows that part of Norden's criticism of Paul's Gk. is nothing but the contrast between literary κοινή and vernacular κοινή; cf. Die ant. Kunstpr.
5 Schwyzer, Die Weltspr. der Alt., p. 15. See also Christ, Gesch. der griech. Lit., p. 305. See Die pseudoxenophontische Αθηναίων Πολιτεία, von E. Kalinka, 1913.
6 Schweizer, Gr., p. 21. 7 Christ, op. cit., p. 588.
8 Thumb, Griech. Spr. etc., p. 213. See also Goetzeler, De Polyb. Floc., 1887, p. 15.
9 Thumb, ib., p. 225 f. See also Krenkel, Josephus und Lukas, 1894, pp. 283 ff.
10 Thumb, ib., p. 8.
wall between the literary and the vernacular κοινή, but a constant
inflow from the vernacular to the written style as between prose
and poetry, though Zarncke\textsuperscript{1} insists on a thorough-going distinc-
tion between them. The literary κοινή would not, of course, use
such dialectical forms as τούς πάντες, τοίς πραγμάτοις, etc., com-
mon in the vernacular κοινή.\textsuperscript{2} But, as Krumbacher\textsuperscript{3} well shows,
no literary speech worthy of the name can have an independent
development apart from the vernacular. Besides Polybius and
Josephus, other writers in the literary κοινή were Diodorus, Philo,
Plutarch, though Plutarch indeed is almost an "Anhanger des
Atticismus "\textsuperscript{4} and Josephus was rather self-conscious in his use of
the literary style.\textsuperscript{5} The literary κοινή was still affected by the
fact that many of the writers were of "un-Greek or half Greek
descent," Greek being an acquired tongue.\textsuperscript{6} But the point must
not be overdone, for the literary κοινή "was written by cosmopolit-
ian scholars for readers of the same sort," and it did not make
much difference "whether a book was written at Alexandria or
Pergamum."\textsuperscript{7} Radermacher\textsuperscript{8} notes that, while in the oldest
Greek there was no artificiality even in the written prose, yet in
the period of the κοινή all the literary prose shows "eine Kunst-
Sprache." He applies this rule to Polybius, to Philo, to the N. T.,
to Epictetus. But certainly it does not hold in the same manner
for each of these.

(c) THE ATTICISTIC REACTION. Athens was no longer the centre
of Greek civilization. That glory passed to Alexandria, to Per-
gamum, to Antioch, to Ephesus, to Tarsus. But the great cre-
ative epoch of Greek culture was past. Alexandria, the chief seat
of Greek learning, was the home, not of poets, but of critics of
style who found fault with Xenophon and Aristotle, but could
not produce an \textit{Anabasis} or a \textit{Rhetoric}. The Atticists wrote, to
be sure, in the κοινή period, but their gaze was always backward
to the pre-κοινή period. The grammarians (Dionysius, Phryni-

\textsuperscript{1} Zarncke in Griech. Stud., Hermann Lipsius, 1894, p. 121. He considers
the Homeric poetry a reflection of the still older historical prose and the epic
the oldest literary form. See his Die Entst. der greech. Literaturspr., 1896.
Phil., 1878, p. 36 f.
\textsuperscript{2} Hatzidakis, Einl. in die neugr. Spr., p. 6.
\textsuperscript{3} Das Prob. der neugr. Schriftspr., 1903, p. 6. A valuable treatment of
this point.
\textsuperscript{5} Jos., Ant., XIV, t, 1.
\textsuperscript{6} Susemihl, Gesch. der greech. Lit. in der Alexandrienzeit, 1. Bd., 1891, p. 2.
\textsuperscript{8} N. T. Gr., p. 2.
thus, Moeris) set up Thucydides and Plato as the standards for pure Greek style, while Aratus and Callimachus sought to revive the style of Homer, and Lucian and Arrian\(^1\) even imitated Herodotus. When they wished to imitate the past, the problem still remained which master to follow. The Ionic revival had no great vogue, but the Attic revival had. Lucian himself took to Attic. Others of the Atticists were Dionysius of Halicarnassus, Dio Chrysostom, Aristides, Herodes Atticus, AElian, etc. "They assumed that the limits of the Greek language had been forever fixed during the Attic period."\(^2\) Some of the pedantic declaimers of the time, like Polemon, were thought to put Demosthenes to the blush. These purists were opposed to change in language and sought, to check the departure from the Attic idiom. "The purists of to-day are like the old Atticists to a hair."\(^3\) The Atticists were then archaic and anachronistic. The movement was rhetorical therefore and not confined either to Alexandria or Pergamum. The conflict between the κοινή (vernacular and literary) and this Atticistic reaction affected both to some extent.\(^4\) This struggle between "archaism and life" is old and survives to-day.\(^5\) The Atticists were in fact out of harmony with their time,\(^6\) and not like Dante, who chose the language of his people for his immortal poems. They made the mistake of thinking that by imitation they could restore the old Attic style. "The effort and example of these purists, too, though criticized at first, gradually became a sort of moral dictatorship, and so has been tacitly if not zealously obeyed by all subsequent scribes down to the present time."\(^7\) As a result when one compares N. T. Greek,\(^8\) one

---

\(^1\) A sharp distinction as a rule must be made between the language of Arrian and Epict. The Gk. of Epict. as reported by Arrian, his pupil, is a good representative of the vern. κοινή of an educated man. Arrian's introduction is quite Atticistic, but he aims to reproduce Epictetus' own words as far as possible.

\(^2\) Sophocles, Lex., p. 6. Athenaeus 15. 2 said: Εἴ μὴ ἵ α τροὶ ἡ σαν, οὐδὲν ἢ τὸν γραμματέων μιμότερον.


\(^6\) Ib., p. 252 f.

\(^7\) Moulton, Prol., p. 26. The diction of Aristophanes is interesting as a specimen of varieties of speech of the time. Cf. Hope, The Lang. of Parody; a Study in the Diction of Aristophanes (1906). Radermacher (N. T. Gk., p. 3) holds that we must even note the "barbarisches Griechisch" of writers like John Philoponos and Procles.
must be careful to note whether it is with the book Greek (κα-θορεύουσα) or the vernacular (ὀμιλουμένη). This artificial reactionary movement, however, had little effect upon the vernacular κοινή as is witnessed by the spoken Greek of to-day. Consequently it is a negligible quantity in direct influence upon the writers of the N. T.  

But the Atticists did have a real influence upon the literary κοινή both as to word-formation\(^2\) and syntax.\(^3\) With Dionysius of Halicarnassus beauty was the chief element of style, and he hoped that the Attic revival would drive out the Asiatic influence.\(^4\) The whole movement was a strong reaction against what was termed "Asianism" in the language.\(^3\) It is not surprising therefore that the later ecclesiastical literary Greek was largely under the influence of the Atticists. "Now there was but one grammar: Attic. It was Attic grammar that every freeman, whether highly or poorly educated, had learned."\(^6\) "This purist conspiracy" Jannaris calls it. The main thing with the Atticists was to have something as old as Athens. Strabo said the style of Diodorus was properly "antique."\(^7\)

IV. The Characteristics of the Vernacular Κοινή.

(a) VERNACULAR ATTIC THE BASE. One must not feel that the vernacular Greek is unworthy of study. "The fact is that, during the best days of Greece, the great teacher of Greek was the common people."\(^8\) There was no violent break between the vernacular Attic and the vernacular κοινή, but the one flowed into the other as a living stream.\(^9\) If the reign of the separated dialects was over, the power of the one general Greek speech had just begun on the heels of Alexander's victories. The battle of Chaeronea broke the spirit of the old Attic culture indeed, but the Athenians

---

\(^1\) Schmid, Der Atticismus etc., Bd. IV, p. 578.  
\(^2\) Ib., p. 606 f.  
\(^3\) Troger, Der Sprachgeb. in der pseudolong. Schr., 1899, Tl. I, p. 61.  
\(^4\) Schmid, ib., Bd. I, pp. 17, 25. See Bd. IV, pp. 577-734, for very valuable summary of this whole subject.  
\(^6\) Jannaris, op. cit., p. 11. See also Fritz, Die Briefe des Bischofs Syri- 

\(^7\) Strabo, 13. 4, 9.  
\(^8\) Sophocles, Lex. of Rom. and Byz. Period, p. 11.  
\(^9\) Deissmann, Die sprachl. Erforsch. etc., p. 11. Rutherford (New Phryn., p. 2) says that "the debased forms and mixed vocabulary of the common dialect would have struck the contemporaries of Aristophanes and Plato as little better than jargon of the Scythian policemen." On the form of the κοινή see Wackernagel, Kult. etc., Tl. I, Abt. 8, p. 305.
gathered up the treasures of the past, while Alexander opened the
flood-gates for the change in the language and for its spread over
the world. "What, however, was loss to standard Attic was
gain to the ecumenical tongue. The language in which Hellenism
expressed itself was eminently practical, better fitted for life than
for the schools. Only a cosmopolitan speech could comport with
Hellenistic cosmopolitanism. Grammar was simplified, excep-
tions decreased or generalized, flexions dropped or harmonized,
construction of sentences made easier" (Angus, Prince. Rev.,
Jan., 1910, p. 53). The beginning of the development of the ver-
nacular koinh is not perfectly clear, for we see rather the com-
pleted product. But it is in the later Attic that lies behind the
koinh. The optative was never common in the vernacular Attic
and is a vanishing quantity in the koinh. The disappearance of
the dual was already coming on and so was the limited use of the
superlative, --τωσαν instead of —ντων, and --σθωσαν instead of —σθων,
γίνομαι, σος, είπα, τίς instead of πότερος, ἐκαστος and not ἐκατερος.3
But while the Attic forms the ground-form of the koinh it must
not be forgotten that the koinh was resultant of the various forces
and must be judged by its own standards. There is not complete
unanimity of opinion concerning the character of the vernacular
koinh. Steinhall6 indeed called it merely a levelled and debased
Attic, while Wilamowitz7 described it as more properly an Ionic
popular idiom. Kretschmer8 now (wrongly, I think) contends that
the Northwest Greek, Ionic and Boeotian had more influence on
the koinh than the Attic. The truth seems to be the position of
Thumb,9 that the vernacular koinh is the result of the mingling with
all dialects upon the late Attic vernacular as the base. As between
the Doric α and the Ionic η the vernacular koinh follows the Attic

1 Christ, Gesch. der griech. Lit., 1905, p. 509 f. For "the Attic ground-
character of the koinh" see Mayser, Gr. der griech. Pap. (1906, p. 1).
2 Kaibel, Stil and Text der Αθηναίων Πολιτεία, p. 37.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 3. Even in the literary koinh the dual is nearly
gone, as in Polybius and Diodorus Siculus; cf. Schmidt, De Duali Graec. et
4 Gott. Gel.-Anz., 1895, p. 30 f.; Hatzidakis, Einl. in die neugr. Gr.,
5 "Die Erforschung der koinh hat lange genug unter dem Gesichtswinkel des
‘Klassicismus’ gestanden." Thumb, Griech. Spr. etc., p. 10.
6 Gesch. der Sprachw., p. 37f.
7 Verhandl. der 32. phil. Versamml.; p. 40.
8 Wochenschr. für klass. Philol., 1899, p. 3; Die Entst. der koinh, 1900.
usage, and this fact alone is decisive.\(^1\) Dieterich\(^2\) indeed sums up several points as belonging to the "Attic κοινή" such as verbs in –ωμ in place of –υμι, in –ωσαυ instead of –ων, in contract imperfects, disuse of the temporal and the syllabic augment in composition, disuse of reduplication, —νυ instead of —η in acc. sing. of adj. in –ης, —ου instead of –ους in gen. sing. of third declension, —α instead of —ω in proper names, disuse of the Attic declension, —ες for —ας in accusative plural, τόν as relative pronoun, ίδιος as possessive pronoun. But clearly by "Attic κοινή" he means the resultant Attic, not the Attic as distinct from the other dialects. Besides the orthography is Attic (cf. Ἰλεως, not Ἰλαος) and the bulk of the inflections and conjugations likewise, as can be seen by comparison with the Attic inscriptions.\(^3\) Schlageter\(^4\) sums the matter up: "The Attic foundation of the κοινή is to-day generally admitted."

(b) THE OTHER DIALECTS IN THE Κοινή. But Kretschmer\(^5\) is clearly wrong in saying that the κοινή is neither Attic nor decayed Attic, but a mixture of the dialects. He compares the mixture of dialects in the κοινή to that of the high, middle and low German. The Attic itself is a κοινή out of Ionic, AEolic and Doric. The mixed character of the vernacular κοινή is made plain by Schweizer\(^6\) and Dieterich.\(^7\) The Ionic shows its influence in the presence of forms like ἰδίη, σπείρης, εἰδώλα, —υίς, καθε ἔτος (cf. vetus), ὀστέα, χειλέων, βλαβέων, χρυσέων, —ας, —άδος; absence of the rough breathing (psilosis or de-aspiration, AEolic also); dropping of μι in verbs like διδώ; κιθών (χιτών), τέσσερα, πράσσω for πράττω (Attic also), etc. Ionic words like μον-όφθαλμος (Herod.) instead of Attic ἐτερ-όφθαλμος occur. Conybeare and Stock (Sel. from LXX, p. 48) suggest that Homer was used as a text-book in Alexandria and so caused Ionisms like σπείρης in the κοινή. The spread of the Ionic over the East was to be expected. In Alexander's army many of the Greek dialects were represented.\(^8\) In the Egyptian army of the Ptolemies nearly all the dialects were spoken.\(^9\) The Ionians were, besides, part of the Greeks who settled in Alex-

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 33 f.
2 Unters. zur Gesch. griech. Spr., 1898, p. 258 f.
3 Meisterhans, Gr. der Att. Inschr.
4 Der Wortsch. der ausserhalb Attikas gefundenen att. Inschr., 1912.
5 Wochenschr. für klass. Phil., 1899, p. xvii.
6 Gr. der perg. Inschr., p. 201 f.
7 Unters. zur Gesch. etc., p. 259 f.
8 Arrian, II, 20. 5.
9 Myer, Das Heerwesen der Ptolemäer und Romer in Agypten, 1900.
andria. Besides, even after the triumph of the Attic in Greece the Ionic had continued to be spoken in large parts of Asia Minor. The Ionic influence appears in Pergamum also. The mixing of the Attic with foreign, before all with Ionic, elements, has laid the foundation for the koinh. The AEolic makes a poor showing, but can be traced especially in Pergamum, where Schweizer considers it one of the elements of the language with a large injection of the Ionic. AEolic has the α for η in proper names and forms in ας. Boeotian-AEolic uses the ending –σαν, as εἶχοςσαν, so common in the LXX. Moulton points out that this ending is very rare in the papyri and is found chiefly in the LXX. He calls Boeotian-AEolic also "the monophthongizing of the diphthongs." In the Attic and the Ionic the open sound of η prevailed, while in the Boeotian the closed. In the koinh the two pronunciations existed together till the closed triumphed. Psilosis is also Ionic. The Doric appears in forms like λαός (λεώς), ναός (νεώς), πιάζω (πιέζω), ἑσπούδαξ, η λιμός, τό πλοῦτος, ἀλέκτωρ, κλίβανος (κρίβανος); and in the pronunciation perhaps β, γ, δ had the Doric softer sound as in the modern Greek vernacular. But, as Moulton argues, the vernacular koinh comes to us now only in the written form; and that was undoubtedly chiefly Attic. The Arcadian dialect possibly contributes αφεώνται, since it has αφεώσθη, but this form occurs in Doric and Ionic also. Cf. also the change of gender η λιμός (Luke) and τὸ πλοῦτος (Paul). The Northwest Greek contributed forms like ἀρχόντος, τοῦς λέγοντες, ἔταί (ἡμήν cf. Messenian and Lesbian also), ἡρώτων (like Ionic), εἶχοσαν (cf. Boeotian), λέλυκαν. The accusative plural in —ες is very common in the papyri, and some N. T. MSS. give τέσσερες for τέσσερας. The Achaen-Dorian koinh had resisted in Northwest Greece the inroads of the common Greek for a century or so. The Mace-

2 Kaibel, Stil Lnd Text etc., p. 37.
4 Prol., p. 33. The caution of Psichari (Essais de Gr. Hist. Neo-grq., 2ème ed., 1889, p. cxlix) is to be noted, that the vernacular is not necessarily dialectical, but "des tinee au peuple et venait du peuple." Cf. on AEolic elements, Mayser, p. 9. He cites η λιμός in the pap.; Λαός is also AEolic.
5 Prol., p. 34.
6 Moulton, ib., p. 38, n. 3. For Doric elements in the pap. see Mayser, Gr., p. 5 f.
7 W. H., Intr. to the Gk. N. T., App., p. 150.
donian Greek, spoken by many of Alexander's soldiers, naturally had very slight influence on the koivh. We know nothing of the old Macedonian Greek. Polybius\(^1\) says that the Illyrians needed an interpreter for Macedonian. Sturz\(^2\) indeed gives a list of Macedonian words found in the koivh, as ἀσπιλος, κοράσιον, παρεμ-βολή, ρύμη. But he also includes ἀγγέλλω! The Macedonians apparently used β instead of φ as βιλίπος, δοθός as δυνατος, σ=β as σέρεθρον. Plutarch\(^3\) speaks of Alexander and his soldiers speaking to each other Μακεδονιστή. For full discussion of the Macedonian dialect see O. Hoffmann, Die Makedonen, ihre Sprache und Volkstüm, 1906, pp. 232-255.

(C) NON—DIALECTICAL CHANGES. It is not always possible to separate the various peculiarities of the koivh into dialectical influences. "Where Macedonian, Spartan, Boeotian, Athenian and Thessalian were messmates a koivh was inevitable. Pronounced dialecticisms which would render unintelligible or ludicrous to others were dropped" (see Angus, Prince. Theol. Rev., Jan., 1910, p. 67). The common blood itself went on changing. It was a living whole and not a mere artificial mingling of various elements. There is less difference in the syntax of the koivh and that of the earlier Greek than in the forms, though the gradual disappearance of the optative, use of ἦνα and finite verb in the non-final sense rather than the infinitive or even ὥστε, the gradual disuse of the future part. may be mentioned. It was in the finer shades of thought that a common vernacular would fail to hold its own. "Any language which aspires to be a Weltsprache (world-language), as the Germans say, must sacrifice much of its delicacy, its shades of meaning, expressed by many synonyms and particles and tenses, which the foreigner in his hurry and without contact with natives cannot be expected to master."\(^4\)

\(^1\) Polybius, 28. 8, 9.
\(^3\) I, 592 B, 694 C. Kennedy (Sources of N. T. Gk., p. 17) says: "In any case, the Macedonian type of Greek, whether or not it is admissible to call it a special dialect, was so far removed from ordinary Attic as to make it certain that the latter on Macedonian lips must soon and inevitably suffer thorough-going modification."
\(^4\) Mahaffy, Survey of Gk. Civilization, p. 220. Cf. Geldart, Mod. Gk. Lang. in its Rela. to Anc. Gk., p. 73, for discussion of "the levelling tendency common to all languages."
(d) NEW WORDS, NEW FORMS OR NEW MEANINGS TO OLD WORDS. Naturally most change is found either in new words or in new meanings in old words, just as our English dictionaries must have new and enlarged editions every ten years or so. This growth in the vocabulary is inevitable unless the life of a people stops. A third-century inscription in Thera, for instance, shows συναγωγή used of a religious meeting, πάροικος (not the Attic μέτοικος) for stranger, ἀπόστολος and κατήχησις in their old senses like those Americanisms which preserve Elizabethan English ("fall" for "autumn," for instance). Here are some further examples. It is hard to be sure that all of these are words that arose in the κοινή, for we cannot mark off a definite line of cleavage. We mention ἀγάπη, ἀγιότης, ἀγνώτης, άθεσμος, άθετησις, ἀλλωτριεπίσκοπος, ἀκατάλυτος, ἀκροατήριον, ἀνθρωπάρεσκος, ἀντίλυτρον, ἀνακαινών (and many verbs in —οω, —αξω, —ιξω), ἀναγεννάω, βάπτισμα (many words in --μα), βαπτισμός, βαπτιστής, γρηγορέω (cf. also στήκω), δεισδαιμονία, δημάρχον, δικαιοκρισία, ἐλεημοσύνη, ἐκκακέω, ἐκμυκτέριζω, θείότης, θεόπνευστος, λογία, κατηχέω, κράβαττος, μαθητεύω, οἰκοδεσπότης, ὀρθρίζω, ὀψαρίνον, ὀψώνιον, πρόσκαιρος, ῥομφαία, συμβούλιον, τελώνιον, υἱοθεσία, ὑποπόδιον, φιλαδελφία, ωτίον, etc. Let these serve merely as examples. For others see the lists in Deissmann's Bible Studies, Light from the Ancient East, Moulton and Milligan's "Lexical Notes on the Papyri" (Expositor, 1908--), Winer-Schmiedel (p. 22), Thayer's Lexicon, (p. 691 f.), Rutherford's New Phrynichus, and the indices to the papyri collections. One of the pressing needs is a lexicon of the papyri and then of the κοινή as a whole. Many of these words were already in the literary κοινή, though they probably came from the vernacular. Some old words received slightly new forms, like ἀνάθεμα 'curse' (ἀναθήμα 'offering'), ἀπάντησις (ἀπάντημα), ἀποστασία (ἀπόστασις), ἀροτριάω (ἀρώ, βασίλισσα (βασίλεια), γενέσια (γενέθλια), δεκατῶν (δεκατεύω), λυχνία (λυχνίον), μισθαποδοσία (μισθοδοσία), μονόφθαλμος (μετρόφθαλμος), νουθεσία (νουθέτησις), οἰκοδομή (οἰκοδομή (οἰ...
Words (old and new) receive new meanings, as ἀνακλίνω ('recline at table'). Cf. also ἀναπίπτω, ἀνάκειμαι, ἀντιλέγω ('speak against'), ἀποκρίθημαι (passive not middle, 'to answer'), δαιμόνιον ('evil spirit,' 'demon'), δώμα ('house-top'), ἐρωτάω ('beg'), εὐχαριστέω ('thank'), ἐπιστέλλω ('write a letter'), ὄψαριον ('fish'), ὄψωνιον ('wages'), παρακαλέω ('entreat'), παραφροσύνη ('confidence'), περισπάομαι ('distract'), παιδέω ('chastise'), πτώμα ('corpse'), συγκρίνω ('compare'), σχολή ('school'), φθάνω ('come'), χορτάζω ('nourish'), χρηματίζω ('be called'). ¹ This is all perfectly natural. Only we are to remember that the difference between the koine vocabulary and the Attic literature is not the true standard. The vernacular koine must be compared with the Attic vernacular as seen in the inscriptions and to a large extent in a writer like Aristophanes and the comic poets. Many words common in Aristophanes, taboo to the great Attic writers, reappear in the koine. They were in the vernacular all the time.² Moulton³ remarks that the vernacular changed very little from the first century A.D. to the third. "The papyri show throughout the marks of a real language of daily life, unspoilt by the blundering bookishness which makes the later documents so irritating." It is just in the first century A.D. that the koine comes to its full glory as a world-language. "The fact remains that in the period which gave birth to Christianity there was an international language" (Deissmann, Light from the Ancient East, p. 59). It is not claimed that all the points as to the origin of the koine are now clear. See Hesseling, De koine en de oude dialekten van Griekenland (1906). But enough is known to give an intelligible idea of this language that has played so great a part in the history of man.

(e) PROVINCIAL INFLUENCES. For all practical purposes the Greek dialects were fused into one common tongue largely as a result of Alexander's conquests. The Germanic dialects have gone farther and farther apart (German, Dutch, Swedish, Norwegian, Danish, English), for no great conqueror has arisen to

¹ Schlageter (Wortsch. etc., pp. 59-62) gives a good list of words with another meaning in the koine.
² Cf. Kennedy, Sour. of N. T. Gk., pp. 70 f., 147,
³ Cl. Quar., April, 1908, p. 137,
bind them into one. The language follows the history of the people. But the unification of the Greek was finally so radical that "the old dialects to-day are merged into the general mass, the modern folk-language is only a continuation of the united, Hellenistic, common speech."¹ So completely did Alexander do his work that the balance of culture definitely shifted from Athens to the East, to Pergamum, to Tarsus, to Antioch, to Alexandria.² This "union of oriental and occidental was attempted in every city of Western Asia. That is the most remarkable and interesting feature of Hellenistic history in the Greco-Asiatic kingdoms and cities."³ Prof. Ramsay adds: "In Tarsus the Greek qualities and powers were used and guided by a society which was, on the whole, more Asiatic in character." There were thus non-Greek influences which also entered into the common Greek life and language in various parts of the empire. Cf. K. Holl, "Das Fortleben der Volkssprachen in nachchristlicher Zeit" (Hermes, 1908, 43, p. 240). These non-Greek influences were especially noticeable in Pergamum, Tarsus and Alexandria, though perceptible at other points also. But in the case of Phrygia long before Alexander's conquest there had been direct contact with the Arcadian and the AEolic dialects through immigration.⁴ The Greek inscriptions in the Hellenistic time were first in the old dialect of Phrygia, then gliding into the \textit{koinh} then finally the pure \textit{koinh}.⁵ Hence the \textit{koinh} won an easy victory in Pergamum, but the door for Phrygian influence was also wide open. Thus, though the \textit{koinh} rests on the foundation of the Greek dialects, some non-Greek elements were intermingled.⁶ Dieterich⁷ indeed gives a special list of peculiarities that belong to the \textit{koinh} of Asia Minor, as, for instance, \textit{–ων} instead of \textit{–α} in the accus. sing. of 3d decl., proper names in \textit{άς}, \textit{τίς} for \textit{ός}, \textit{τίς} for \textit{δος}, \textit{εἶμι} for \textit{εἰμι}, use of \textit{θέλω} rather than future tense. In the case of Tarsus "a few traces of the Doric

¹ Kretschmer, Einl. in die Gesch. etc., p. 417.
⁴ Schweizer, dr. der perg. Inschr., pp. 15 ff.
⁵ Ib., p. 25.
dialect may perhaps have lingered" in the κοινή, as Ramsay suggests (Expositor, 1906, p. 31), who also thinks that ναοκόρος for νεωκόρος in Ac. 19:35 in D may thus be explained.

But no hard and fast distinction can be drawn, as --αυ for --ν as accusative appears in Egypt also, e.g. in θυγατέραν. Is it proper to speak of an Alexandrian dialect? Blass¹ says so, agreeing with Winer-Schmiedel² (Ἡ 'Αλεξανδρέων διάλεκτος). This is the old view, but we can hardly give the name dialect to the Egyptian Greek. Kennedy³ says: "In all probability the language of the Egyptian capital had no more right to be called a dialect than the vernacular of any other great centre of population." Schweizer⁴ likewise refuses to consider the Alexandrian κοινή as a dialect. Dieterich⁵ again gives a list of Egyptian peculiarities such as οὶ instead of αἱ, —α instead of —ας in nominatives of third declension, adjectives in —η instead of —α, ἔσωθ for σωθ, καθείς for ἐκστος, imperfect and aorist in —α, ημην for ην, disuse of augment in simple verbs, indicative instead of the subjunctive. Mayser (Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 35-40) gives a list of "Egyptian words" found in the Ptolemaic papyri. They are words of the soil, like πάπυρος itself. But Thumb⁶ shows that the majority of the so-called Alexandrian peculiarities were general in the κοινή like ἡλθοσαν, εἰχαν, γέγοναν, ἐώρακες, etc. "There was indeed a certain unwieldiness and capriciousness about their language, which displays itself especially in harsh and fantastic word-composition." As examples of their words may be mentioned κατανωτιζόμενος, παρα-συγγράφειν, φιλανθρωπείν, etc. It is to be observed also that the κοινή was not the vernacular of all the peoples when it was spoken as a secondary language. In Palestine, for instance, Aramaic was

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., 1905, p. 3 note.
² Gr. des neut. Sprachid., § 3. 1, n. 4.
³ Sour. of N. T. Gk., 1895, p. 23. Irenaeus (Minucius Pacatus) and Demetrius Ixion wrote treatises on "the dialect of Alexandria" (Swete, Intr. to the 0. T. in Gk., p. 289). But they probably did not understand that the vernacular κοινή, which differed from the literary κοινή, was international (Thackeray, Gr. of the O. T. in Gk., vol. I, p. 19). "It is certain that many forms of this later language were specially characteristic of Alexandria" (ib.).
⁴ Gr. der perg. Inschr., p. 27.
⁵ Unters. zur Gesch. etc., pp. 258 ff.
the usual language of the people who could also, most of them, speak Greek. Moulton's parallel of the variations in modern English is not therefore true, unless you include also peoples like the Welsh, Scotch, Irish, etc.

But as a whole the vernacular ἱνή was a single language with only natural variations like that in the English of various parts of the United States or England.\(^1\) Thumb perhaps makes too much of a point out of the use of ἐμὸς rather than ἐμοῦ in Asia Minor in its bearing on the authorship of the Gospel of John where it occurs 41 times, once only in 3 Jo. and Rev. (34 times elsewhere in the N. T.), though it is interesting to note, as he does, that the infinitive is still used in Pontus. But there were non-Greek influences here and there over the empire as Thumb\(^2\) well shows. Thumb\(^3\) indeed holds that "the Alexandrian popular speech is only one member of a great speech-development."

(f) THE PERSONAL EQUATION. In the vernacular ἱνή, as in the literary language, many variations are due to differences in education and personal idiosyncrasies. "The colloquial language in its turn went off into various shades of distinction according to the refinement of the speaker" (Deissmann, *Light from the Ancient East*, p. 59). The inscriptions on the whole give us a more formal speech, sometimes official decrees, while the papyri furnish a much wider variety. "The papyri show us the dialect of Greek Egypt in many forms, — the language of the Government official, of the educated private person, of the dwellers in the temples, of the peasantry in the villages."\(^4\) We have numerous examples of the papyri through both the Ptolemaic and the Roman rule in Egypt. All sorts of men from the farm to the palace are here found writing all sorts of documents, a will or a receipt, a love-

\(^1\) Sir Jonathan Williams, an Eng. savant, is quoted in the Louisville Courier-Journal (May 9, 1906) as saying: "I have found in the city of Louisville a pronunciation and a use of terms which is nearer, to my mind, to Addison and the English classicists than anything which the counties of England, the provinces of Australia, or the moors of Scotland can offer." He added that the purest English known to him is spoken in Edinburgh and Louisville. These two cities, for geographical reasons, are not provincial.

\(^2\) Griech. Spr. etc., pp. 102-161; Theol. Literaturzeit., 1903, p. 421; cf. also Moulton, Pro.: p. 40. Moulton sets over against ἐμὸς the fact that John's Gospel uses ἑμα rather than the infinitive so often. Much of the force of such an argument vanishes also under the personal equation.

\(^3\) Griech. Spr. etc., p. 171. Cf. also Zahn, Einleitung in das N. T., I, 38.

letter or a dun, a memorandum or a census report, a private letter or a public epistle. "Private letters are our most valuable sources; and they are all the better for the immense differences that betray themselves in the education of the writers. The well-worn epistolary formulae show variety mostly in their spelling; and their value for the student lies primarily in their remarkable resemblances to the conventional phraseology which even the N. T. letter-writers were content to use."¹ Deissmann² has insisted on a sharp distinction between letters and epistles, the letter being private and instinct with life, the epistles being written for the public eye, an open letter, a literary letter. This is a just distinction. A real letter that has become literature is different from an epistle written as literature. In the papyri therefore we find all grades of culture and of illiteracy, as one would to-day if one rummaged in the rubbish-heaps of our great cities. One need not be surprised at seeing τῶν μὴ τρως, τῶν θέσων, and even worse blunders. As a sample Jannaris³ gives ἄξιωθεῖς ὑπαιρατῶν γράμματα μεὶ ἐιδώτων, for ἄξιωθεῖς ὑπ’ αὐτῶν γράμματα μή ἐιδότων. Part of these are crass errors, part are due to identity of sounds in pronunciation, as ο and ω, ει and η, ει and ι. Witkowski⁴ properly insists that we take note of the man and the character of work in each case.

It is obvious that by the papyri and the inscriptions we gain a truer picture of the situation. As a specimen of the vernacular κοινή of Egypt this letter of the school-boy Theon to his father has keen interest (see 0. P. 119). It belongs to the second century A.D. and has a boy's mistakes as well as a boy's spirit. The writing is uncial.

¹ Moulton, Prol., p. 27 f.
² B. S., 1901, pp. 3-59. "The distinction holds good, even if we cannot go all the way with Deissmann in pronouncing all the Pauline writings 'letters' rather than 'Epistles.'" G. Milligan, Gk. Pap., p. xxxi.
³ Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 7. Quoted from Griech. Urk., Berlin, 13 ², belonging to year 289 A.D.
⁴ The papyri contain "exempla ex vita deprompta, cum sermo scriptorum ut solutae ita poeticae orationis nullo modo veram nobis imaginem sermonis illius actatis praebeat. Etenim sermo, quem apud auctores hellenisticos deprehendimus, arti, non vitae, debetur." Witkowski Prodr. gr. pap. Graec., etc., 1898, p. 197. He urges that in case of variations in forms or syntax one must inquire "utrum ab alia qua dialecto petita sit an in Aegypto nata, utrum ab homine Graeco an barbaro formata." Ib., p. 198. He thinks it is necessary that we have "librum de sermo papyrorum, librum de sermo titulorum, librum de sermo auctorum poeticae et pedestris orationis illius actatis, librum de dialeuco Macedonica tractantem." Ib.
On the other side:

Milligan (Greek Papyri, p. xxxii) admits that there may be now a temptation "to exaggerate the significance of the papyri." But surely his book has a wonderful human, not to say linguistic, interest. Take this extract from a letter of Hilarion to his wife Alis (P. Oxy. 744 B.C. 1): 'Εδών πολλαπλασιών τεχνών, εδών ἡν ἃρσενον, ἄφες, ἐδών ἦν θήλεα, ἔκβαλε.

(g) RESUME. To all intents and purposes the vernacular κοινὴ is the later vernacular Attic with normal development under historical environment created by Alexander's conquests. On this base then were deposited varied influences from the other dialects, but not enough to change the essential Attic character of the language. There is one κοινὴ everywhere (cf. Thumb, Griech. Spr., p. 200). The literary κοινὴ was homogeneous, while the vernacular κοινὴ was practically so in spite of local variations (cf. Angus, The Koine: "The Language of the N. T.," Prince. Theol. Rev., Jan., 1910, p. 78 f.). In remote districts the language would be Doric-coloured or Ionic-coloured.

Phonetics and Orthography. It is in pronunciation that the most serious differences appear in the κοινὴ (Moulton, Prol., p. 5). We do not know certainly how the ancient Attic was pronounced, though we can approximate it. The modern Greek vernacular pronunciation is known. The κοινὴ stands along the path of progress, precisely where it is hard to tell. But we know enough
not to insist too strongly on "hair-splitting differences hinging on forms which for the scribe of our uncialsohad identical value phonetically, e.g. ιι, η, η, ω, 1=ε in feet, or αι=ε (Angus, op. cit., p. 79). Besides itacisms the 1-monophthongizing is to be noticed and the equalizing of ο and ω. The Attic ττ is κσ except in a few instances (like ἐλάττων, κρέιττων). The tendency is toward de-aspiration except in a few cases where the reverse is true as a result of analogy (or a lost digamma). Cf. ἐφ᾽ ἐλπίδι. Elision is not so common as in the Attic, but assimilation is carried still further (cf. ειμίςω). There is less care for rhythm in general, and the variable final consonants ν and ζ appear constantly before consonants. The use of –ει – for –ει – in forms like πείν, and ταμείον probably comes by analogy. Οὔθείσ and μυθείσ are the common forms till 100 B.C. when οὔδείσ and μυθείσ begin to regain their ascendency.

Vocabulary. The words from the town-life (the stage, the market-place) come to the front. The vocabulary of Aristophanes is in point. There was an increase in the number of diminutive forms. The κοινή was not averse to foreign elements if they were useful. Xenophon is a good illustration of the preparation for the κοινή. Cf. Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 8.

Word-Formation. There is the natural dropping of some old suffixes and the coining of new suffixes, some of which appear in the modern Greek vernacular. The number of compound words by juxtaposition is greatly increased, like πληρο-φορέω, χειρό-γραφω. In particular two prepositions in compounds are frequent, like συν-αντι-λαμβάνομαι. New meanings are given to old words.

Accidence. In substantives the Ionic –ρης, not –ρος, is common, bringing nouns in –ρα into harmony with other nouns of the first declension (Thackeray, Gr. of the 0. T. in Gk., p. 22). The Attic second declension disappears. Some feminine nouns in –ος become masculine. The third declension is occasionally assimilated to the first in forms like νύκραν, θυγατέραν. Contraction is absent sometimes in forms like ὑδέων. Both χάριν and χάριτα occur. Adjectives have forms like ἀσφαλής, πλήρης indeclinable, πᾶν for πᾶντα (cf. μέγαν), δωρί for δωδόν. The dual, in fact, has disappeared in all inflections and conjugations. Pronouns show the disappearance of the dual forms like ἐκάτερος and πότερος. Τίς is used sometimes like ὁ στίς, and δές ἦν is more frequent than δές ἦν about A.D. 1. Analogy plays a big part in the language, and this is proof of life. In the verb there is a general tendency toward simplification, the two conjugations blending into one (μι verbs going).
New presents like ἀποκτέννω, ὀπτάνω, are formed. There is confusion in the use of —ἀω and —ἐω verbs. We find γίνομαι, γινώσκω. The increase of the use of first aorist forms like ἔσχα (cf. ἔπον and ἔπα in the older Greek). This first aorist termination appears even in the imperfect as in ἔχα. The use of —οσαν (ἐχοσαν, ἔσχοσαν) for —ον in the third plural is occasionally noticeable. The form —αν (δέδωκαν) for —ασι may be due to analogy of this same first aorist. There is frequent absence of the syllabic augment in the past perfect, while in compound verbs it is sometimes doubled like ἀπεκατέστησαν. The temporal augment is often absent, especially with diphthongs. We have —τωσαν rather than —υτων, —σθωσαν rather than —σθων.

Syntax. There is in general an absence of many Attic refinements. Simplicity is much more in evidence. This is seen in the shorter sentences and the paratactic constructions rather than the more complex hypotactic idioms. The sparing use of particles is noticeable. There is no effort at rhetorical embellishment. What is called "Asianism" is the bombastic rhetoric of the artificial orators. Atticism aims to reproduce the classic idiom. The vernacular κοινή is utterly free from this vice of Asianism and Atticism. Thackeray (op. cit., p. 23) notes that "in the breach of the rules of concord is seen the widest deviation from classical orthodoxy." This varies a great deal in different writers as the papyri amply testify. The nominativus pendens is much in evidence. The variations in case, gender and number of substantives, adjectives and verbs are frequent κατὰ σύνεσιν. The neuter plural is used with either a singular or plural verb. The comparative does duty often for the superlative adjective. The superlative form usually has the elative sense. Πρῶτος is common (as sometimes in older Greek) when only two are compared. Ἐαυτῶν occurs for all three persons. The accusative is regaining its old ascendancy. There is an increase in the use of the accusatives with verbs and much freedom in the use of transitive and intransitive verbs. The growth in the use of prepositions is very marked both with nouns and in composition, though some of the old prepositions are disappearing. Few prepositions occur with more than two cases. Phrases like βλέπω ἀπό show a departure from the old idiom. New adverbial and prepositional phrases are coming into use. The cases with prepositions are changing. The instrumental use of ἐν is common. The optative is disappearing. The future participle is less frequent. The infinitive (outside τοῦ, ἐν τῶ, εἰς τό and the inf.) is receding before
\( \text{ήνα}, \) which is extending its use very greatly. There is a wider use of \( \text{ότι}. \) Everywhere it is the language of life and not of the books. The N. T. use of expressions like \( \text{εἰς τὸ ὄνομα, δύο δύο}, \) once cited as Hebraisms, is finding illustration in the papyri (cf. Deissmann, *Light*, etc., p. 123 f.). \( \text{Μὴ} \) begins to encroach on \( \text{οὐ}, \) especially with infinitives and participles. The periphrastic conjugation is frequently employed. The non-final use of \( \text{ήνα} \) is quite marked. Direct discourse is more frequent than indirect. Clearness is more desired than elegance. It is the language of nature, not of the schools.

V. The Adaptability of the \( \text{Κοινὴ} \) to the Roman World. It is worth while to make this point for the benefit of those who may wonder why the literary Attic could not have retained its supremacy in the Graeco-Roman world. That was impossible. The very victory of the Greek spirit made necessary a modern common dialect. Colonial and foreign influences were inevitable and the old classical culture could not be assimilated by the Jews and Persians, Syrians, Romans, Ethiopians. "In this way a Panhellenic Greek sprang up, which, while always preserving all its main features of Attic grammar and vocabulary, adopted many colonial and foreign elements and moreover began to proceed in a more analytical spirit and on a simplified grammar."\(^1\) The old literary Attic could not have held its own against the Latin, for the Romans lamented that they were Hellenized by the Greeks after conquering them.\(^2\) Spenserian English would be an affectation to-day. The tremendous vitality of the Greek is seen precisely in its power to adjust itself to new conditions even to the present time. The failure of the Latin to do this not only made it give way before the Greek, but, after Latin became the speech of the Western world during the Byzantine period, the vernacular Latin broke up into various separate tongues, the modern Romance languages. The conclusion is irresistible therefore that the \( \text{κοινὴ} \) possessed wonderful adaptability to the manifold needs of the Roman world.\(^3\) It was the international language. Nor must one think that it was an ignorant age. What we call the "Dark Ages" came long afterwards. "Let me further insist that this civilization was so perfect that, as far as it reached, men were

\(^1\) Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 6.
\(^2\) Cf. Sharp, Epictetus and the N. T. (1914), for useful comparison of language and thought of Epictetus and the N. T.
\(^3\) Lafoscade, Infl. du Lat. sur le Grec, pp. 83-158, in Bibliothe. de l'Ecole des hautes et., 1892.
more cultivated in the strict sense than they ever have been since. We have discovered new forces in nature; we have made new inventions; but we have changed in no way the methods of thinking laid down by the Greeks . . . The Hellenistic world was more cultivated in argument than we are nowadays."1 Moulton2 cannot refrain from calling attention to the remarkable fact that the new religion that was to master the world began its career at the very time when the Mediterranean world had one ruler and one language. On the whole it was the best language possible for the Groeco-Roman world of the first century A.D.

1 Mahaffy, Prog. of Hellen. in Alex. Ernp., 1905, p. 137. He adds (p. 111): "The work of Alexandria was a permanent education to the whole Greek-speaking world; and we know that in due time Pergamum began to do similar work."
2 Prol., p. 6. See also Breed, Prep. of the World for Chr., 1904, ch. IX, The Hellenizing of the Nations, and ch. XI, The Unification of the World. Jannaris (op. cit., p. 8) indeed puts the LXX, N. T. and many pap. into "the Levantine group" of the literary language, but this is a wrong assignment for both the LXX and the N. T.
I. The New Testament Chiefly in the Vernacular Κοινή. Observe "chiefly," for not quite all the N. T. is wholly in the vernacular Κοινή as will be shown. But the new point, now obvious to every one, is just this, that the N. T. is in the normal Κοινή of the period. That is what one would have looked for, when you come to think of it. And yet that is a recent discovery, for the Purists held that the N. T. was in pure Attic, while the Hebraists, explained every peculiarity as a Hebraism. The Purists felt that revelation could only come in the "best" Greek, and hence it had to be in the Attic. This, as we now know, could only have been true if the N. T. writers had been Atticistic and artificial stylists. So the Hebraists got the better of the argument and then overdid it. The most popular language in the N. T. is found in the Synoptic Gospels. Even Luke preserves the words of Jesus in colloquial form. The Epistle of James and the Johannine writings reflect the vernacular style very distinctly. We see this also in the Epistles of Peter (Second Peter is very colloquial) and Jude. The colloquial tone is less manifest in Acts, some of Paul's Epistles and Hebrews. Cf. Deissmann, Light from the Ancient East, p. 63f. Wellhausen (Einl., p. 9) stresses the fact that in the Gospels the Greek spoken by the people makes its entry into literature.

(a) NOT A BIBLICAL GREEK. As late as 1893 Viteau says: "Le grec du N. T. est une variété du grec hebraisant." Again: "C'est par le grec des LXX qu'il faudrait expliquer, le plus souvent, le grec du N. T." Viteau is aware of the inscriptions and the papyri and even says: "The Greek of the N. T. must be compared continually with the post-classical Greek in its various branches: with the Greek of the profane writers, the Greek of the inscrip-

---

1 Cf. Deissmann, Light, pp. 55, 69.
4 Ib., p. lv.
tions of the Alexandrian and Graeco-Roman periods, the Hebrewizing Greek, finally the Christian Greek. But he labours under Hatch's false idea of a distinct biblical Greek of which the N. T. is a variety; both of these ideas are erroneous. There is no distinct biblical Greek, and the N. T. is not a variety of the LXX Greek. Jowett over forty years ago said: "There seem to be reasons for doubting whether any considerable light can be thrown on the N. T. from inquiry into language." That prophecy is now almost amusing in the light of modern research. Simcox admitted that "the half-Hebraized Greek of the N. T. is neither a very elegant nor a very expressive language," but he found consolation in the idea that "it is a many-sided language, an eminently translatable language." Dr. Hatch felt a reaction against the modern Atticistic attitude toward the N. T. language: "In almost every lexicon, grammar and commentary the words and idioms of the N. T. are explained, not indeed exclusively, but chiefly, by a reference to the words and idioms of Attic historians and philosophers." In this protest he was partly right, but he went too far when he insisted that "biblical Greek is thus a language which stands by itself. What we have to find in studying it is what meaning certain Greek words conveyed to a Semitic mind."

Dr. Hatch's error arose from his failure to apply the Greek influence in Palestine to the language of Christianity as he had done to Christian study. Judea was not an oasis in the desert, but was merged into the Graeco-Roman world. Rothe had spoken "of a language of the Holy Ghost. For in the Bible it is evident that the Holy Spirit has been at work, moulding for itself a distinctively religious mode of expression out of the language of the country." Cremer, in quoting the above, says; "We have a very clear and striking proof of this in N. T. Greek:" Winer had indeed seen that "the grammatical character of the N. T. language has a very slight Hebrew colouring," but exactly how slight he could not tell. Winer felt that N. T. Greek was "a species of a species," "a variety of later Greek," in a word, a sort of dialect. In this he was wrong, but his notion (op. cit., p. 3) that a grammar of the N. T. should thus presuppose a grammar of the later

1 Ib., p.
2 Ess. and Rev., P. 477.
3 Lang. of the N. T., 1890, p. 20.
4 Ess. in Bibl. Gk., 1889, p. 2.
5 Ib., p. 11.
6 Dogmatik, 1863, p. 238.
Greek or κοινή is quite right, only we have no such grammar even yet. Winer made little use of the papyri and inscriptions (p. 21 ft. n.). We still sigh for a grammar of the κοινή though Thumb has related the κοινή to the Greek language as a whole. Kennedy\(^1\) contended that there was "some general characteristic" about the LXX and N. T. books, which distinctly marked them off from the other Greek books; but "they are both children of the same parent, namely, the colloquial Greek of the time. This is the secret of their striking resemblance." Even in the Hastings' Dictionary Thayer\(^2\) contends for the name "Hellenistic Greek" as the proper term for N. T. Greek. That is better than "biblical" or "Jewish" Greek, etc. But in simple truth we had better just call it N. T. Greek, or the Greek of the N. T., and let it go at that. It is the Greek of a group of books on a common theme, as we would speak of the Greek of the Attic orators, the Platonic Greek, etc. It is not a peculiar type of Greek except so far as that is due the historical conditions, the message of Christianity, and the peculiarities of the writers. Deissmann,\(^3\) however, is the man who has proven from the papyri and inscriptions that the N. T. Greek is not a separate variety of the Greek language. He denies that the N. T. is like the LXX Greek, which was "a written Semitic-Greek which no one ever spoke, far less used for literary purposes, either before or after."\(^4\) Blass\(^5\) at first stood out against this view and held that "the N. T. books form a special group--one to be primarily explained by study," but in his Grammar of N. T. Greek he changed his mind and admitted that "a grammar of the popular language of that period written on the basis of all these various authorities and remains" was better than limiting oneself "to the language of the N. T."\(^6\) So Moulton\(^7\) concludes: "The disappearance of that word 'Hebraic' from its prominent place in our delineation of N. T. language marks a change in our conceptions of the subject nothing less than revolutionary." The new knowledge of the κοινή has buried forever the old controversy; between Purists and Hebraists.\(^8\) The men who wrote the N. T.

---

\(^1\) Sour. of N. T. Gk., 1895, p. 146.
\(^3\) B. S., 1901; Hell. Griech., Hauck's Realencyc. etc.
\(^4\) B. S., p. 67.
\(^5\) Theol. Literaturzeit., 1895, p. 487.
\(^6\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 2.
\(^7\) Prol., p. 1.
\(^8\) Thumb, Griech. Spr. etc., p. 120. It lasted "solange die biblische citat als etwas isoliertes betrachtet wurde." Thumb attacks the idea of N. T. dialect or a peculiar biblical variety of the κοινή, pp. 162-201. For history of the Purist controversy see W.-Th. § 1, W.-Sch. § 2.
were not aloof from the life of their time. "It embodied the lofty conceptions of the Hebrew and Christian faith in a language which brought them home to men's business and bosoms."\(^1\)

Wackernagel understates the matter: "As little as the LXX does the N. T. need to be isolated linguistically."\(^2\)

(b) PROOF THAT N. T. GREEK IS IN THE VERNACULAR **Koine**. The proof is now at hand. We have it in the numerous contemporary Greek inscriptions already published and in the ever-increasing volumes of papyri, many of which are also contemporary. As early, as 1887 a start had already been made in using the inscriptions to explain the N. T. by E. L. Hicks.\(^3\) He was followed by W. M. Ramsay,\(^4\) but it is Deissmann who has given us most of the proof that we now possess, and he has been ably seconded by J. Hope Moulton. Deissmann\(^5\) indeed insists: "If we are ever in this matter to reach certainty at all, then it is the inscriptions and the papyri which will give us the nearest approximation to the truth." Hear Deissmann\(^6\) more at length: "Until the papyri were discovered there were practically no other contemporary documents to illustrate that phase of the Greek language which comes before us in the LXX and N. T. In those writings, broadly, what we have, both as regards vocabulary and morphology, and not seldom as regards syntax as well, is the Greek of ordinary intercourse as spoken in the countries bordering on the Mediterranean, not the artificial Greek of the rhetoricians and litterateurs, strictly bound as it was by technical rules. This language of ordinary life, this cosmopolitan Greek, shows unmistakable traces of a process of development that was still going on, and in many respects differs from the older dialects as from the classical

---

3 Cl. Rev., 1887.
5 B. S., p. 81. Deissmann calls attention also to a booklet by Walch, Observ. in Matthaeun graecis inscr., 1779. So in 1850, Robinson in the Pref. to his N. T. Lex. says: "It was, therefore, the spoken language of common life, and not that of books, with which they became acquainted"; cf. also the works of Schweizer, Nachmanson, Dittenberger, etc.
6 Encyc. Bibl., art. Papyri. "At the time when the ancient Greek culture was in conflict with Christianity, the assailants pointed sarcastically at the boatman's idiom of the N. T., while the defenders, glorying in the taunt, made this very homeliness their boast. Latin apologists were the first to make the hopeless attempt to prove that the literary form of the Bible as a whole, and of the N. T. in particular, was artistically perfect." Deissmann, Exp. Times, Nov., 1906, p. 59; cf. also Norden, Kunstpr., II, pp. 512 f., 526 f.
As Moulton\(^1\) puts it, "the Holy Ghost spoke absolutely in the language of the people."

The evidence that the N. T. Greek is in the vernacular koινή is partly lexical and partly grammatical, though in the nature of the case chiefly lexical. The evidence is constantly growing. See Deissmann, *Bible Studies, Light from the Ancient East*; Moulton and Milligan's "Lexical Notes on the Papyri" (*The Expositor*, 1908). We give first some examples of words, previously supposed to be purely "biblical," now shown to be merely popular Greek because of their presence in the papyri or inscriptions:

- αγάπη, ακατάγνωστος, ἀναζώ, ἀναστατώ, ἀντιλήμπτωρ, ἀλλογενής,
- ἀφιλάργυρος, αὐθεντέω, βροχή, ἔναντι, ἔνδιδόσκω, ἔνωπιον, ἐπικατάρατος,
- ἐπισυναγωγή, εὐάρεστος, εὐπροσωπέω, ἕρατει, ἕματίς, καταπέτασμα,
- καταγγελέως, κατήγωρ, καθαρίζω, κόκκινος, κυριακός, λειτουργικός, λογεία,
- νεόφυτος, ὀθειλή, παραβολεύομαι, περισσεία, πληροφορέω, προσκαρτέρησις,
- προσκυνήτης, πρωτότοκος, σιτομέτριον, συναντηλιαμβάνομαι,
- φιλοσωτέω, φρενασάτης, etc. For a lively discussion of these words see Deissmann (*Bible Studies*, pp. 198-247; *Light*, etc., pp. 69-107). The recovery of the inscription on the marble slab that warned the gentiles from the ἱερόν is very impressive. Μηθένα ἀλλογονή εἰσπορεύεσθαι ἐντὸς τοῦ περὶ τὸ ἱερόν τρυφάκτου καὶ περιβόλου. ὁς δ' ἂν ληφθῇ ἐαυτῷ αἵτιος ἐστὶν διὰ τὸ ἐξακολουθεῖν θάνατον. The words above are no longer biblical ἄπαξ λεγόμενα. But this is not all. Many words which were thought to have a peculiar meaning in the LXX or the N. T. have been found in that very sense in the inscriptions or papyri, such as ᾠδελφός in the sense of 'common brotherhood,' ἀδείπτης, ἀμετανόησις, ἀμφότερος=πάντας, ἀναστρέφομαι, ἀναφέρω, ἀντιλήψις, ἀπέχω, ἀπόκρισις, ἀρετή, ἀρκετός, Ἀσίάρχης, ἀσίμος, ἀπάξιοι, ἀτομος, βασσάξις, βεβαιότης,
- βιάζομαι, βούλομαι, γένη, γογγύζω, γραμματεύς, γράφω, δειπνέω, δέων ἐστί, διαβάλλω, διασέειν, δίκαιος, διότι = ὅτι, διγονομέω, δοκίμος, δόκιμος, δώμα, δῶδα = ἄν, ἐκ μὴν, ἐδοκιμάζω, ἐκτένεια, ἐκτόσο, ἐκτινάσσω, ἐν, ἐνεδρεύω, ἐνοχος, ἐνυγχάνω, ἐπιβαλλων ἐπίσκοπος, ἐρωτάω, εὐσχήμων, ἐπιούσιος, εὐχαριστεῖν, ἔως, ἠγοῦμαι, ἡλικία, ἠσυχία, θεμέλιον, θεωρέω, ἱδίος, ἱλαστήριον, ἱλεως, ἱστορέω, καθαρίζω, καθαρός, καινός, κακόπαθεια, κατα, κατάκριμα, καυντάω, κλή, κολάζωμαι, κολλάω, κολαφίζω, κόπος, κοράσιν, κτάομαι, κύριος, λικμάω, λίψ, λούομαι, λευκονυγγο, μαρτυρομαι, μετζότερος, μικρός, μυγιλάδος, μνημή, ναός, νεκροί, νή, νομός, οἰκίας, ὁμολογέω, ὄνομα, ὄψινιον, παρά, παράδεισος, παραθήκη, παρακύπτω, παρεισφέρω, παρεπίδημος, πάρεσις, πάροικος, παροξύνομαι, πατροπαράδοτος, περισσάω, περιτέμνω, πῆχυς, πλευνεκτέω, πλήθος, πληροφορέω, πράγμα,
praēktwr, presbuētorj, proqesij, prose<xw, proskartere<w, profh<thj, sapro<j, sku<llw, sko<lloy, smara<gdinoj, souda<rion, sfragi<zw, sfuri<j, suggenh<j, sumbou<lion, sunei<dhsij, sun-e<xw, syndokh<ew, sunevph<emoai, suneistmij, sωma, sωtήr, tήrēsij, tόpos, uiōs, uīōs theou, uιōs, uipouj, uipouj, up<stasij, fάsis, fέρw, fβάw, filos, filostorgia, filotimēmij, χάραγμα, χάρις τω θεω χρεία, χρόνos, ψωμίων, ψυχήν σῶsai. This seems like a very long list, but it will do more than pages of argument to convince the reader that the vocabulary of the N. T. is practically the same as that of the vernacular koinh in the Roman Empire in the first century A.D.1 This is not a complete list, for new words will be added from time to time, and all that are known are not here included. Besides neither Deissmann nor Moulton has put together such a single list of words, and Kenyon's in Hastings' D. B. (Papyri) is very incomplete. After compiling this list of words I turned to the list in the Hastings' Dictionary of the Bible by Thayer (art. "Language of the N. T.") where are found some thirty new words common to the N. T. and the vernacular koinh, words not common in the classic Greek. Thayer's list is entirely different save a half-dozen In his list are comprised such interesting words as ἀλληγορέω, ἀντοθαλμέω, ἀποκαραδοκία, δεισιδαιμονία, ἐγχρίω, ἐγγίζω, ἐπιχορηχέω, εὐδοκέω, εὐκαιρέω, θριαμβεύω, etc. This list can be largely increased also by the comparison between words that are common to the N. T. and the comic poets (Aristophanes, Menander, etc.) who used the language of the people. See Kennedy's lists in Sources of N. T. Greek (ch. VI). Many of these, as Kennedy shows, are theological terms, like αἰσθητήριον, ἀρραβών, βαπτίζω, εὐχαριστία, κυρία, μυστήριον, φιλαδελφία. The Christians found in common use in the Roman Empire terms like ἀδελφός, ἐπιφάνεια, ἐπιφανής, κύριος, λειτουργία, παρουσία, πρεσβύτερος, προγραφάω, σωτήρ, σωτηρία, υἱός θεοῦ. They took these words with the new popular connotation and gave them "the deeper and more spiritual

1 It is not meant, or course, that the bulk of the N. T. words are new as compared with the old Gk. Far from it. Of the 4829 words in the N. T. (not including proper names) 3933 belong to older classic language (literary and vernac.) while 996 are late or foreign words. See Jacquier, Hist. des Livres du N. T., tome 1er, 1006, p. 25. Thayer's Lex. claimed 767 N. T. words, but Thayer considered 89 as doubtful and 76 as late. Kennedy (Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 62) found about 550 "biblical" words. But now Deissmann admits only about 50, or one per cent. of the 5000 words in the N. T. (Light, etc., p. 72 f.). Findlay (Exp. Gk. T., 1 Cor., p. 748) gives 5594 Greek words in the N. T. (whole number), while Viteau (Syntaxe des Prop., p. xxx) gives 5420.
sense with which the N. T. writings have made us familiar" (Milligan, *Greek Papyri*, p. xxx). They could even find τοῦ μεγάλου θεοῦ εὐεργέτου καὶ σωτῆρος (GH 15, ii/B.C.). Cf. Tit. 2:13; 2 Pet. 1:1.¹ The papyri often show us how we have misunderstood a word. So ἀπογραφή (Lu. 2:2) is not "taxing," but "enrolling" for the census (very common in the papyri). But this is not all, for the modern Greek vernacular will also augment the list of N. T. words known to belong to the oral speech. When this much is done, we are ready to admit the vernacular character of all the words not known to be otherwise. The N. T. Greek is like the κοινή also in using many compounded ("sesquipedalian") words like ἀνεκδηγητὸς, ἀνεξεραύνητος, ἀλλοτριευσκοπος, ὑπερευγ-χάνω, etc. There is also the same frequency of diminutives, some of which have lost that significance, as πλοιάριον, ὠτάριον, ὡτίον, etc. The new meanings to old words are well illustrated in the list from the papyri, to which may be added ἄνλύω, ἔντροπή, ἐξωποιέω, σχολή, χορτάζω, etc.

As to the forms we need say less, but the evidence is to the same effect. The papyri show examples of Ἀκύλα (and —οu) for genitive, δωῦν and δωσί, ἔγεναμην, ἔλαβα, ἔλεγας, ἔλειψα, ἠλθα, ἠνοίγην, ἠρπάγην, ἤξα, δέδωκες, οἴδες, ἕγραψες, τίθω, σπείρης; the imperative has only the long forms —τῶ σαν, —σοθωσαν, etc. The various dialects are represented in the forms retained in the N. T., as the Attic in βούλει, διδόσαι, ἤμελλε, etc.; the Ionic in μαχαίρης, γίνομαι, γινώσκω, etc.; the Doric in ἁφέωνται, ἤτω, etc.; the AEolic in ἀποκέννω, 3d plural in —σαν, etc.; the Northwest Greek in accusative plural in —ες, perfect in —αν (3d plural), confusion of —αω and —εω verbs, etc.; the Arcadian-Cyprian group in accusative singular in —αν, ἀφέωνται (also). It is curious that Thayer in Hastings' D. B., follows Winer's error in giving ἔδίδοσαν as an example of a form like εἰχόσαν, for the present stem is δίδο—, and σαν is merely the usual μι ending. See Mayser, *Gr. d. griech. Pap.*, pp. 4-20.

Among the syntactical peculiarities of N. T. Greek which are less numerous, as in the κοινή, the following are worthy of note and are found in the κοινή: the non-final use of ἧνα; the frequent use of the personal pronoun; the decreased use of the possessive pronouns; disuse of the optative; increased use of ὡτι; disuse of the future participle; use of participle with εἰμί; article with the infinitive (especially with ἔν and εἰς); ἀφες and βλέπε with subjunctive without conjunction; the absence of the dual; use of ὁφελον as conjunction; frequency of ἐδω; ὡταν, etc., with indicative;

¹ Moulton, Prol., p. 84; Wendland, Hell.-rom. Kult., p. 100.
interchange of ἐὰν and ἃν; μὴ increasing upon οὐ; decreased use of indirect discourse; ἐίς = τίς; disuse of some interrogative particles; use of ἔδωκας as possessive pronoun; παρά and ὑπὲρ with comparatives; disappearance of the superlative; frequency of prepositions; vivid use of present tense (and perfect); laxer use of particles; growth of the passive over the middle, etc.

Various phrases are common both to the N. T. and to the papyri, like δεξίαν δίδωμι, ἐν τοῖς = 'in house of,' ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν, εἰς τὸ δηνικές, καθὼς γέγραπται, ἐκ συμφώνου, ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό, κατὰ ὀνομα, κατὰ τὸ ἔθος, οὕχ ὁ τυχόν, παρέχομαι ἐμαυτόν, τὸ αὐτό φρονεῖν. "There is placed before us in the N. T. neither a specific speech-form nor a barbaric Jewish-Greek, but a natural phase of the Hellenistic speech-development."¹ Deissmann (Exp. Times, 1906, p. 63) properly holds the N. T. to be the Book of Humanity because it "came from the unexhausted forces below, and not from the feeble, resigned culture of a worn-out upper class." Swete (0. T. in Gk., pp. 295 ff.) shows how the LXX is influenced by the vernacular κοινῆ. As early as 1843 B. Hase (Wellhausen, Einl., p. 14) explained the LXX as "Volkssprache." Thackeray (Gram- mar, pp. 22 ff.) gives a good summary of "the κοινῆ basis of LXX Greek."

II. Literary Elements in the New Testament Greek. It is true then, as Blass² sums it up, that "the language employed in the N. T. on the whole, such as was spoken in the lower circles of society, not such as was written in works of literature." The N. T. writers were not Atticists with the artificial straining after the antique Attic idiom. But one must not imagine that they were mere purveyors of slang and vulgarisms. Freudenthal³ speaks of the Hellenistic Jews as "one of those societies without a mother-tongue which have never attained to any true excellence in literature." And even Mahaffy⁴ speaks of the Greek learned by the Jews as "the new and artificial idiom of the trading classes" which had neither "traditions nor literature nor those precious associations which give depth and poetry to words." That is a curious mistake, for it was the Atticistic revival that was artificial. The κοινῆ had all the memories of a

² Gr. of the N. T. Gk., p. 1.
³ Hell. Stud., 1875.
⁴ Gk. Life and Thought, 1896, p. 530.
people's life. Instance Robert Burns in Scotland. It is to be
said for Mahaffy, however, that he changed his mind, for he later¹
wrote: "They write a dialect simple and rude in comparison with
Attic Greek; they use forms which shock the purists who examine
for Cambridge scholarships. But did any men ever tell a great
story with more simplicity, with more directness, with more
power? . . . Believe me against all the pedants of the world, the
dialect that tells such a story is no poor language, but the out-
come of a great and a fruitful education." The N. T. uses the
language of the people, but with a dignity, restraint and pathos
far beyond the trivial nonentities in much of the papyri remains.
All the N. T. Greek is not so vernacular as parts of the LXX.²
The papyri often show the literary κοινή and all grades of varia-
tion, while the lengthy and official inscriptions³ "often approxi-
mate in style to the literary language." Long before many
words are used in literature they belong to the diction of polite
speech.⁴ In a word, the N. T. Greek "occupies apparently an in-
termediate position between the vulgarisms of the populace and
the studied style of the litterateurs of the period. It affords a
striking illustration of the divine policy of putting honour on
what man calls common."⁵ It would indeed have been strange
if men like Paul, Luke and the author of Hebrews had shown no
literary affinities at all. Prof. J. C. Robertson (The Classical
Weekly, March 9, 1912, 139) in an article entitled "Reasons
for Teaching the Greek N. T. in Colleges" says: "Take the par-
able of the Prodigal Son, for instance. In literary excellence this
piece of narrative is unsurpassed. Nothing more simple, more
direct, more forceful can be adduced from among the famous
passages of classical Greek literature. It is a moving tragedy of

Hellen. in the Jew. Regions. He shows how Gk. and Lat. words were common
in the Aram. and how thoroughly Gk. the Jews of the Dispersion were. On
this point see Schurer, Diaspora, in ext. vol. of Hast. D. B. "Greek was the
mother-tongue of the Jews" all over the gentile world. Susemihl holds that
in Alexandria the Jews gave "quite a considerable Hebraic tinge" to the
κοινή, Gesch. der griech. Lit., Bd. II, 1892, p. 602. An excellent discussion
of the literary elements in the Gk. N. T. is to be found in Heinrici's Der lit.
Charakter der neutest. Schr. (1908). He shows also the differences between
Palestinian and Alexandrian Judaism.
² Cf. Geldart, Mod. Gk. in its Rela. to Anc. Gk., 1870, p. 180. Cf. also
Kennedy, Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 65; Frankel, Altert. von Perg., 1890, p. xvii.
⁴ Kennedy, Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 77.
reconciliation. Yet its literary excellence is not accidental. The elements of that excellence can be analyzed." In an age of unusual culture one would look for some touch with that culture. "I contend, therefore, that the peculiar modernness, the high intellectual standard of Christianity as we find it in the N. T., is caused by its contact with Greek culture."¹ In his helpful article on N. T. Times Buhl² underrates, as Schurer³ does, the amount of Greek known in Palestine. It is to be remembered also that great diversity of culture existed among the writers of the N. T. Besides, the educated men used much the same vernacular all over the Roman world and a grade of speech that approached the literary standard as in English to-day.⁴ One is not to stress Paul's language in 1 Cor. 2:1-4 into a denial that he could use the literary style. It is rather a rejection of the bombastic rhetoric that the Corinthians liked and the rhetorical art that was so common from Thucydides to Chrysostom.⁵ It is with this comparison in mind that Origen (c. Celsus, vii, 59 f.) speaks of Paul's literary inferiority. It is largely a matter of standpoint. Deissmann⁶ has done a good service in accenting the difference between letters and epistles. Personal letters not for the public eye are, of course, in the vernacular. Cicero's Letters are epistles written with an eye on posterity. "In letters one does not look for treatises, still less for treatises in rigid uniformity and proportion of parts."⁷ There may be several kinds of letters (private, family, pastoral or congregational, etc.). But when a letter is published consciously as literature, like Horace's Ars Poetica, for instance, it becomes a literary letter or epistle. Epistles may be either genuine or unauthentic. The unauthentic may be either merely

⁵ Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 15.
⁶ B. pp. 16 ff. However, one must not think that the N. T. Epistles always fall wholly in one or the other category. Ramsay calls attention to the "new category" in the new conditions, viz., a general letter to a congregation Let. to the Seven Chur., p. 24).
⁷ Ib., p. 11. See also Walter Lock, The Epistles, pp. 114 ff., in The Bible and Chr. Life, 1905.
pseudonymous or real forgeries. If we examine the N. T. Letters or Epistles in the light of this distinction, we shall see that Philemon is a personal letter. The same is true of the Pastoral Epistles; but Ephesians is more like an epistle from its general nature. The Thessalonian, Corinthian, Galatian, Colossian, Philippian writings are all congregational and doctrinal letters. Romans partakes of the nature of a letter and an epistle. Jacquier, however (Histoire des Livres du N. T., 1906, tome 1er, p. 66), remarks that "The Pauline Epistles are often more discourse than letter." It will thus be seen that I do not agree with Deissmann (Bible Studies, p. 3 f.) in calling all the Pauline writings "letters" as opposed to "epistles." Milligan (Greek Papyri, p. xxxi) likewise protests against the sweeping statement of Deissmann. Deissmann gives a great variety of interesting letters from the papyri in his Light from the Ancient East, and argues here (pp. 224-234) with passion that even Romans is just "a long letter." "I have no hesitation in maintaining the thesis that all the letters of Paul are real, non-literary letters." Hebrews is more like an epistle, as are James, 1 John, 1 Peter, 2 Peter, Jude while 2 and 3 John are again letters. The Letters to the Seven Churches again are epistles. This is a useful distinction and shows that the N. T. writers knew how to use one of the favourite literary methods of the Alexandrian period. Dr. Lock concludes: "Letters have more of historic and literary interest, epistles more of central teaching and practical guidance."1 That Paul could use the more literary style is apparent from the address on Mars Hill, the speech before Agrippa,2 and Ephesians and Romans. Paul quotes Aratus, Menander and Epimenides and may have been acquainted with other Greek authors. He seems also to have understood Stoic philosophy. We cannot tell how extensive his literary training was. But he had a real Hellenic feeling and outlook. The introduction to Luke's Gospel and the Acts show real literary skill. The Epistle to the Hebrews has oratorical flow and power with traces of Alexandrian culture. Viteau3 reminds

1 Bible and Chr. Life, p. 117. For the history and literature of ancient letters and epistles see Deissmann, B. S.; Susemihl, Gesch. der griech. Lit.; Overbeck, Uber die Anf. der patrist. Lit. The oldest known Gk. letter was written on a lead tablet and belongs to the iv/B.C. and comes from near Athens. It was discovered by Prof. Wunsch of Giessen. See art. by Dr. Wilhelm of Athens in Jahresh. des osterreich. archaeol. Inst. (1904, vii, pp. 94 ff.).

2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 5.

3 Le Verbe: Synt. des Prop., p. xxx.
us that about 3000 of the 5420 words in the Greek N. T. are found in ancient Attic writers, while the syntax in general "obeys the ordinary laws of Greek grammar."1 These and other N. T. writers, as James, occasionally use classic forms like ἐγέρειν, ἔστε, ἐσώρι, ἐξηγεραν, etc. König2 in his discussion of the Style of Scripture finds ample illustration in the N. T. of the various literary linguistic devices, though in varying degree. See "Figures of Speech" (ch. XXII). But the literary element in the N. T. is subordinate to the practical and is never artificial nor strained. We have the language of spirit and life. The difference between the old point of view and the new is well illustrated by Hort's remark (Notes on Orthography, p. 152 f.) when he speaks of "the popular Greek in which the N. T. is to a certain extent written." He conceives of it as literary κοινή with some popular elements. The new and the true view is that the N. T. is written in the popular κοινή with some literary elements, especially in Luke, Paul, Hebrews and James.

Josephus is interesting as a background to the N. T. He wrote his War in Aramaic and secured the help of Greek writers to translate it, but the Antiquities was composed in Greek, probably with the aid of similar collaborateurs) for parts of Books XVII-XIX copy the style of Thucydides and are really Atticistic.3 It is interesting to take a portion of 1 Maccabees as we have it translated from the Hebrew original and compare it with the corresponding portion of Josephus. The Greek of 1 Macc. is, like the LXX, translation Greek and intensely Hebraistic, while Josephus smooths out all the Hebraistic wrinkles and shifts it into the rolling periods of Thucydides. The N. T. has slight affinities in vocabulary, besides Josephus, with Philo, Plutarch, Polybius, Strabo, Diodorus and a few other writers in the literary κοινή.4

Deissmann (Light from the Ancient East, p. 64) holds that Paul's "Greek never becomes literary." "It is never disciplined, say, by the canon of the Atticists, never tuned to the Asian rhythm:

1 W.-M., p. 37. Kennedy indeed (Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 134) says that 80 per cent. of the N. T. words date from before 322 B.C.
4 Kennedy, Sour. of N. T. Gk., pp. 50 ff. Hoole, The Class. Elem. in the N. T., 1888, gives an interesting list of Gk. and Rom. proper names that occur in the N. T.
it remains non-literary." But has not Deissmann given a too special sense to "literary"? If 1 Cor. 13 and 15, Ro. 8 and Eph. 3 do not rise to literary flavour and nobility of thought and expression, I confess my ignorance of what literature is. Harnack (Das hohe Lied des Apostels Paulus von der Liebe und seine religionsgeschichtliche Bedeutung, 1911) speaks of the rhythm, the poetic form, the real oratory, the literary grace of 1 Cor. 13. The best literature is not artificial nor pedantic like the work of the Atticists and Asian stylists. That is a caricature of literature. We must not forget that Paul was a man of culture as well as a man of the people. Deissmann (Light, p. 64 f.) does admit the literary quality of Hebrews. This epistle is more ornate as Origen saw (Eus., Eccl. Hist., VI, xxv, 11).

III. The Semitic Influence. This is still the subject of keen controversy, though not in the same way that the Purists and the Hebraists debated it. Now the point is whether the N. T. Greek is wholly in the κοινή or whether there is an appreciable Semitic colouring in addition. There is something to be said on both sides of the question.

(a) THE TRADITION. See I, (a), for proof of the error of this position. It is certain that the idea of a special Hebraic Greek for the N. T. is gone. Schaff\(^1\) said that the Greek spoken by the Grecian Jews "assumed a strongly Hebraizing character," and the N. T. Greek shared in this "sacred and Hebraizing character." According to Hatch\(^2\) "the great majority of N. T. words . . . express in their biblical use the conceptions of a Semitic race." Viteau\(^3\) calls it "Hebraizing Greek," while Simcox\(^4\) speaks of "the half-Hebraized Greek of the N. T." Reuss\(^5\) calls it "the Jewish-Greek idiom." Hadley\(^6\) considered the "Hellenistic dialect, largely intermixed with Semitic idioms." Westcott\(^7\) spoke of "the Hebraic style more or less pervading the whole N. T." But Westcott\(^8\) admitted that "a philosophical view of the N. T. language as a whole is yet to be desired," as Hatch\(^9\) lamented that the N. T. Greek "has not yet attracted the attention of any considerable scholar." That cannot now be said after the work of Blass, Deissmann, Moulton, Radermacher and others, and was an overstatement then. And yet the old view of "biblical Greek"

\(^1\) Comp. to the Gk. Test., 1885, pp. 22, 25.  
\(^2\) Ess. in Bibl. Gk., p. 34.  
\(^3\) Synt. des Prop., p. xxxvi.  
\(^4\) Lang. of the N. T., p. 20.  
\(^5\) list. of the N. T., 1885, p. 36.  
\(^6\) Lang. of the N. T., Smith's B. D.  
\(^7\) Art. N. T., Smith's B. D.  
\(^8\) Ib.  
\(^9\) Ess. in Bibl. Gk., p. 1.
THE PLACE OF THE NEW TESTAMENT IN THE KOINH

for both N. T. and LXX is still championed by Conybeare and Stock in their grammar of the Septuagint (Selections from the Sept., 1905, p. 22 f.). They insist, against Deissmann, on the "linguistic unity" of the LXX and of the N. T. as opposed to the vernacular κοινή. They admit, of course, that the LXX is far more Hebraic than the N. T. This sturdy contention for the old view is interesting, to say the least. Wellhausen (Einl. in die drei ersten Evangelien) is rather disposed to accent the "Semiticisms" (Aramaicisms) in the Synoptic Gospels in contrast with the Attic Greek. Nobody now, claims the N. T. Greek to be Attic in purity. "No one denies the existence of Semiticisms; opinions are only divided with reference to the relative proportion of these Semiticisms" (Deissmann, Light from the Ancient East, p. 65). The old view is dead beyond recall.

(b) THE VIEW OF DEISSMANN AND MOULTON. Over against the old conceptio stands out in sharp outline the view of Deissmann who says: "The linguistic unity of the Greek Bible appears only against the background of classical, not of contemporary 'profane' Greek." Note the word "only." Once more: "The few Hebraizing expressions in those parts of the N. T. which were in Greek from the first are but an accident which does not essentially alter the fundamental character of its language." The portions of the Synoptic Gospels which were either in Aramaic or made use of Aramnic originals he considers on a par with the LXX. They use translation Greek. No one "ever really spoke as he may have translated the Logia-collection, blessed — and cramped — as he was by the timid consciousness of being permitted to convey the sacred words of the Son of God to the Greeks." Thumb accepts the view of Deissmann and admits "Hebraisms in a few cases" only and then principally the meaning of words. In 1879 Guillemard disclaimed any idea of being able to give "an exhaustive exhibition of all the Hebraisms," but he "put forward only a few specimens"! Moulton admits practically no Hebraisms nor Aramaicisms outside of "translation Greek." "Between these two extremes the N. T. writers lie; and of them all

1 B. S., 1901, p. 66.  
2 Ib., p. 177.  
3 Ib., p. 76. "What would we give if we could recover but one papyrus book with a few leaves containing genuine Aramaic sayings of Jesus! For those few leaves we would, I think, part willingly with the theological output of a whole century" (Deissmann, Light, p. 57).  
4 Griech. Spr. etc., p. 121.  
5 Hebraisms iii the Gk. Test., Pref.  
6 Prol., p. 10.
we may assert with some confidence that, where translation is not involved, we shall find hardly any Greek expression used which would sound strangely to speakers of the koinê in Gentile lands." Once more: "What we can assert with assurance is that the papyri have finally destroyed the figment of a N. T. Greek which in any material respect differed from that spoken by ordinary people in daily life." Moulton\(^1\) realizes "the danger of going too far" in summing up thus the issue of the long strife over N. T. Hebraisms. According to Moulton (p. 18) the matter is complicated only in Luke, who, though a gentile, used Aramaic sources in the opening chapters of the Gospel and Acts.' This new and revolutionary view as to Semitisms is still challenged by Dalman\(^3\) who finds many more Aramaisms in the Synoptic Gospels than Moulton is willing to admit. Deissmann indeed is not disposed in his later writings to be dogmatic on the subject. "The last word has not yet been said about the proportion of Semiticisms" (Expositor, Jan., 1908, p. 67). He is undoubtedly right in the idea that many so-called Semiticisms are really "international vulgarisms." Schurer, Theol. Literaturzeitung, 1908, p. 555, criticizes Deissmann (Licht vom Osten, 1908, p. 35) for running the parallel too close between the N. T. and the unliterary scriptions. Both the Purists and the Hebraists were wrong. The old view cannot stand in the light of the papyri and in-papyri. It is truer of the LXX than of the N. T. Many words and idioms heretofore claimed as Hebraisms are shown to be current in the vernacular koinê. As specimens one can mention ἐνώπιον ( nonprofits) according to Winer-Liinemann, p. 201, and "biblical" according to Kennedy, Sources of N. T. Greek, p. 90) as found in the papyri; πρεσβύτεροι in the official sense occurs in the papyri of Egypt in combinations like πρεσβύτεροι ἱερεῖς; ἐρωτάω = 'to beg' is in the papyri; ἔς in sense of πρῶτος also;

---

1 Prol., p. 18.
2 Ib., p. 18. He quotes approvingly Deissmann's remark that "Semitisms which are in common use belong mostly to the technical language of religion" and they do not alter the scientific description of the language. Moulton (Interp., July, 1906, p. 380) says: "Suffice it to say that, except so far as the N. T. writers are quoting baldly literal translations from the LXX, or making equally literal translations from the Aramaic in which the Lord and His disciples usually spoke, we have no reason whatever to say that the N. T. was composed in a Greek distinguishable from that spoken all over the Roman Empire."
3 Wds. of Jes., 1902.
4 See Deissmann (B. S. and Light) and Moulton (Prol.).
προσευχή can no longer be regarded as a word of Jewish formation for a Jewish place of prayer, since it appears in that sense in a Ptolemaic inscription in Lower Egypt in the III cent. B.C.; ὀνόμα occurs also in the sense of "person"; expressions like υἱὸς θανάτου are found in the papyri; βλέπειν ἀπό occurs in a papyrus letter; εἰς ὀνόμα is in inscriptions, ostraca, papyri; δύο δύο is matched in the papyri by τρία τρία (this idiom has been traced in Greek for 2500 years.); the instrumental use of ἐν as ἐν μαχαίρῃ is common; the use of ἐν τῷ and the infinitive so common in Luke appears in the papyri; and even εἰς ἀπάντησιν meets us in the papyri (Tebt. Pap. 43, II cent. B.C.). Certainly a full list of the words and phrases that can no longer be called Hebraisms would be very formidable. Besides, the list grows continually under the researches of Deissmann, Moulton, Mayser, Thumb, Kalker, Witkowski, Milligan and other scholars. The presumption is now clearly against a Hebraism. The balance of evidence has gone over to the other side. But after all one has the conviction that the joy of new discovery has to some extent blurred the vision of Deissmann and Moulton to the remaining Hebraisms which do not indeed make Hebraic Greek or a peculiar dialect. But enough remain to be noticeable and appreciable. Some of these may vanish, like the rest, before the new knowledge. The LXX, though "translation Greek," was translated into the vernacular of Alexandria, and one can but wonder if the LXX did not have some slight resultant influence upon the Alexandrian κοινὴ itself. The Jews were very numerous in Alexandria. "Moreover, it remains to be considered how far the quasi-Semitic colloquialisms of the papyri are themselves due to the influence of the large Greek-speaking Jewish population of the Delta" (Swete, The Apocalypse of St. John, 1906, p. cxx). Thackeray (Gr. of the O. T. in Gk., vol. I, p. 20) Uses the small number of Coptic words in the Greek papyri against the notion of Hebrew influence on the κοινὴ in Egypt. However, Thackeray (p. 27) notes that the papyri so far discovered tell us little of the private life of the Jews of Egypt and of the Greek used by them specifically. The marshes of the Delta were not favourable for the preservation of the papyri. The κοινὴ received other foreign influences we know. The Jews of the Dispersion spoke the vernacular κοινὴ everywhere, but they read the LXX, "a written Semitic Greek which no one ever spoke, far less used for literary purposes, either before or after."1 And yet

1 Deissmann, B. S., p. 67. See also Angus, N. T. Philol., Harv. Theol. Rev., July, 1909, p. 453. The LXX, though translation Greek (see above),
the Hellenistic Jews all over the world could not read continually
the LXX and not to some extent feel the influence of its peculiar
style. No one to-day speaks the English of the King James Ver-
sion, or ever did for that matter, for, though like Shakespeare, it
is the pure Anglo-Saxon, yet, unlike Shakespeare, it reproduces
to a remarkable extent the spirit and language of the Bible. As
Luther's German Bible largely made the German language, so the
King James Version has greatly affected modern English (both
vernacular and literary). The situation is not the same, but there
is enough of truth to justify the comparison. There are fewer
details that preserve the Semitic character, but what does not
disappear is the Hebrew cast of thought in a writer like John, for
instance. No papyrus is as much a parallel to John's Gospel as
the Book of Job, for instance. Westcott¹ has true insight when
he says of N. T. Greek: "It combines the simple directness of He-
brew thought with the precision of Greek expression. In this way
the subtle delicacy of Greek expression in some sense interprets
Hebrew thought." What is true of John's Gospel is true also of
James. The numerous quotations both from the LXX and the
Hebrew in the N. T. put beyond controversy the constant use of
the 0. T. in Greek on the part of the N. T. writers. Besides,
with the possible exception of Luke and the author of Hebrews,
they all knew and used Aramaic as well as Greek. The point is
that the N. T. writers were open to Semitic influence. How great
that was must be settled by the facts in the case, not by pre-
sumptions for or against. Dr. George Milligan (Greek Papyri,
p. xxix f.) says: "In the matter of language, we have now abun-
dant proof that the so-called 'peculiarities' of biblical Greek are
due simply to the fact that the writers of the N. T. for the most
part made use of the ordinary colloquial Greek, the koinh
of their
day. This is not to say that we are to disregard altogether the
influence of 'translation Greek,' and the consequent presence of
undoubted Hebraisms, both in language and grammar. An over-
tendency to minimize these last is probably the most pertinent

¹ Exp., 1887, p. 241. Thumb (Griech. Spr. etc., p. 132) denies any influ-
ence on the development of the Gk. But Thayer (Hast. D. B., Lang. of the
N. T., III, 40) is not surprised to find "idioms having a distinctly Hebra-
istic flavour even in native Greek circles." Cf. also Reuss, Hist. of the N. T.,
criticism that can be directed against Dr. J. H. Moulton's *Pro-
legomena* do his *Grammar of N. T. Greek.*" So Dr. Swete
"deprecates the induction which, as it seems to him, is being
somewhat hastily based upon them (the papyri), that the Greek
of the N. T. has been but slightly influenced by the familiarity of
the writers with Hebrew and Aramaic" (*Apocalypse of St. John*,
p. cxx).

Von Soden\(^1\) sums up the whole matter as follows: "It was
unavoidable but that the primitive Christian writers often used
compulsion with the Greek tongue and offended against its
genius. They wished to bring to expression things which, up
to that time, were foreign to the Greek spirit and only found ex-
pression in Semitic languages. And besides, it is only natural
that the phraseology of the Greek translation of the O. T., to
which they were habituated from their youth, should uncon-
sciously flow from their pens, and still more, that when their sub-
ject-matter brought them into close contact with the O. T. or
when they translated from the Aramaic dialect of Palestine, their
Greek should receive a foreign tinge." This by no means makes
a special N. T. dialect or even Jewish-Greek, but it admits a
real, though slight, Semitic influence even where it is not "trans-
lation Greek." This position is more nearly in accord with all
the facts as we now know them. It is pleasing to find Deissmann
rather reacting a bit from the first extreme position. He accents
here strongly the influence of the LXX on the N. T. "It is one
of the most painful deficiencies of biblical study at the present
day that the reading of the LXX has been pushed into the back-
ground, while its exegesis has been scarcely even begun." (*Ib.*, p. 293) : "A single hour lovingly devoted to the text of the Sep-
tuagint will further our exegetical knowledge of the Pauline
Epistles more than a whole day spent over a commentary." (*Ib.*, p. 294): "This restoration of the Greek Bible to its own epoch is
really the distinctive feature of the work of modern scholarship."
That hits the point. We cordially agree with his remark (*Exposi-
tor*, Nov., 1907, p. 435) that the Semiticisms of the Greek Bible
do not place the N. T. outside of the scope of Greek philology,
but are merely its birth-marks. In the Dec. (1907) *Expositor*
(p. 520) Deissmann comments feelingly on the fact that the LXX
"has served the Christian Church of Anatolia in unbroken con-
tinuity down to the present day."

\(^1\) Early Chr. Lit., 1906, p. 11 f.
(C) LITTLE DIRECT HEBREW INFLUENCE. The Hebrew was not a living language any longer. Less than half of the O. T. quotations in the N. T. are from the Hebrew text. It was still read in most of the synagogues of Palestine and it is possible that a modernized Hebrew was in use to some extent for literary purposes. Perhaps the Hebrew text was consulted by the N. T. writers who used it much as a modern minister refers to his Greek Testament. The reading of the Hebrew O. T. would give one dignity of style and simplicity of expression. The co-ordination of clauses so common in the Hebrew is not confined to the Hebrew, but is certainly in marked contrast with the highly developed system of subordinate sentences of the Greek. But this paratactic construction is partly Hebraic and partly colloquial. The total absence of extended indirect discourse is a case in point also. Compare the historical books of the N. T. with Xenophon and Thucydides. Likewise the frequent use of καί and the sparing use of particles may be mentioned. The pleonastic use of pronouns like ἢν οὐδεὶς δύναται κλείσαι αὐτὴν (Rev. 3:8) finds an occasional parallel (Moulton) in the papyri, but none the less its frequency in the N. T. is due to the Hebrew. The same remark applies to the effort to express in Greek the Hebrew infinitive absolute by the participle, as βλέποντες βλέψετε (Mt. 13:14), or the instrumental, as χαρᾷ χαίρει (Jo. 3:29). Both of these constructions are found in the Greek, but with far less frequency. The use of προστίθημι with an infinitive for repetition, as προσέθετο τρίτων πέμψας. (Lu. 20:12) is in evident imitation of the Hebrew

Εἴ= Οὐ does not mean οὐ as in εἴ δοθήσεται σημείον (Mk. 8:12), but is apophasis, the apodosis not being expressed. This use is in the papyri. Οὐ-πᾶς in the sense of οὐδεὶς is due to the LXX translation of ἢν ἄλλον though Moulton (p. 246) has found in the papyri ἄνευ and χωρίς so used with πᾶς.

The use of ὅμοια, in the sense of ἅμα ‘thing’ is a Hebraism after the LXX. The classic Greek already has λόγος in this sense. Προσωπον λαμβάνειν, ἸΗΕΡ ΡΥΘ is a clear Hebraism. Προσωπολημπτέω first appears in the N. T. So also is ἄρέσκειν εὐωπίον τινος rather than ἄρέσκειν τινί a Hebraism. Cf. the circumlocations πρὸ προσώπου τῆς εἰσόδου αὐτοῦ (Acts 13:24) rather than the simple πρὸ αὐτοῦ. The frequent use of the article in address, though occasional in Greek,

1 Swete, Intr. to the O. T. in Gk., 1900, pp. 381-405.
2 Schurer, Jew. Peo. in Times of Ch., div. II, vol. I, p. 10. 'Hebrew also continued to be the language of the learned, in which even the legal discussions of the scribes were carried on.'
is like the Hebrew and Aramaic vocative. The common use of ἡν or ἐστι and the participle suits both the Hebrew and the analytic tendency of the κοινή. Cf. the more frequent use of the instrumental ἐν the frequent construction ἐιναι εἰς is due to ἦ in Hebrew, though in itself not out of harmony with the Greek genius. It occurs in the papyri. Ἀπὸ προσώπου = ἰναι and πρὸ προσώπου = ἵναι are both Hebraisms. The use of διδώναι in the sense of τιθέναι, is due to ἅντων having both senses (Thackeray, Gr. of the 0. T. in Gk., p. 39); cf. Deut. 28:1, δῶσεις σε ὑπεράνω. So ἑμέραν takes the flavour of the Hebrew בָּר, and εἰρήνη is used in salutation like σαλώς. The superfluous pronoun calls for notice also. The frequency of ἐν τῷ with the infinitive is due to β. So also υἱός occurs in some Hebraistic senses like ἱ, but the papyri have some examples of υἱός for 'quality,' 'characteristic.' Thackeray (p. 42) notes the Hebrew fondness for "physiognomical expressions" like ὁφθαλμῶς, πρόσωπων, στόμα, χείρ, πούς, etc. The increased use of ἀνήρ and ἀνθρώπως like υἱός rather than τῖς, πᾶς, ἐκαστὸς must be observed. The very extensive use of prepositions is accentuated by the Hebrew. Καὶ ἐγένετο translates ἅντων. The use of a question to express wish is like the Hebrew idiom (cf. 2 Kgs. 18:33). But these constructions are doubtless due to the LXX rather than to Hebrew itself. It is not possible to give in clear outline the influence of the Hebrew Bible on the N. T. apart from the LXX and the Aramaic, though there was a little of just that kind. Kennedy¹ gives thirteen words common to the LXX and the N. T. (Thackeray, Gr., pp. 31 ff., gives a list of "Hebraisms in Vocabulary") and counts "twenty Hebrew and Aramaic words which do not occur in the LXX, e.g. ζιζάνιον, μαμωνᾶς, δακά, ὀσμαννᾶ." The words in the N. T. known to be Hebrew and not Aramaic are as follows: αβαδδών = ἱδων; αλληλουία = ἀλληλούϊα; αμήν = ἀμήν; αμαγεδδών = ἀμαγεδών; απεβάνων = ἀπεβάνων; βατός = βατός; βελεζβουβ = βελεζβουβ; βοανηργός = βοανηργός (cf. Dalman, Words of Jesus, p. 49); βύσσος = βυσσός (cf. also βύσσονος); ἐβραϊστί from ἐβραῖος; ἠλεί = ἠλεί (MSS. Mt. 27:46); κάμηλος = καμήλα; ιουδαισώ, ιουδαισμός, ιουδαιικός, ιουδαιός = Ἰουδαῖος; κοβαδ = κουβαδ; κυμινον = κυμινων; λίβανος = λιβανός; μάννα = μανά; μωρεί = μωρεί; πασχά = πασχα (LXX, but same for Aramaic נִפְשַׁל); ῥαββα = ῥαββα (LXX, but same for Aramaic רְבָּב); ῥάββα = ῥαββα; σαβαωθ = σαβαωθ; σαββατον = σαββατον; σατανάς = σατανάς; σάπ - φειρος = σαφειρος; ωσμαννα = ὀσμαννα (Dalman, Words of Jesus, p. 222). Some of these were already in classical Greek (βύσσος,

¹ Sour. of the N. T. Gk., p. 110 f. Cf. Gregory, Prol., etc., p. 102 f., for foreign words in the N. T.
λίβανος, σάμπφειρος). Of doubtful origin are νάρδος, νίτρον (Jer. 2:22), σωκάμινος. This is a fairly complete list of the Hebrew words in the N. T. The Aramaic words will be given later. There are to be added, however, the very numerous Hebrew proper names, only a few samples of which can be given, as Μαριάμ=מריא; Μελχισεκέκ=מלכים; Σαωλ=יאו; Σαμουηλ=سامול; κτλ. Deissmann is correct in saying ("Papyri," Encyc. Bibl.) that lexical Hebraisms "must be subjected to careful revision," but these remain.

Certain it is that the bulk of the examples of Hebraisms given by Guillemard vanish in the light of the papyri and inscriptions. He feared indeed that his book was "a return to old exploded methods." It is indeed "exploded" now, for the N. T. is not "unlike any other Greek, with one single exception, and absolutely unique in its peculiarities."¹ There are three ways of giving these Semitic words: mere transliteration and indeclinable, transliteration and declinable, Greek endings to Aramaic words.

(d) A DEEPER IMPRESS BY THE LXX. It is true that the N. T. at many points has affinities with the LXX, the "single exception" of Guillemard, but the LXX is not "the basis of the Christian Greek."² In his second volume Viteau began to see that he had been too extreme in his notion that the N. T. was Hebraized Greek: "The language of the N. T. is not derived from that of the LXX; it is its sister. It is the same familiar Greek language which one finds employed in the one or the other. But the Greek of the LXX has exercised a considerable influence upon that of the N. T."³ But even in this volume Viteau overestimates the influence of the LXX on the N. T. Westcott⁴ had the old idea that the N. T. language, "both as to its lexicography and as to its grammar, is based on the language of the LXX." It is undoubtedly true⁵ that a very large proportion of the N. T.

words are found in the LXX, but there are very few words that are found in the N. T. and the LXX and nowhere else.\(^1\) Both the LXX and the N. T. use the current vocabulary. There are indeed numerous theological terms that have a new meaning in the LXX, and so in the N. T., like ἀγιάζειν, ἀφεσίς, γέεννα, ἐκκλησία, κύριος, λόγος, λυτρῶ, μονογενὴς, πνεῦμα, σωτηρία, χριστός, κτλ. (See longer list in Swete, *Introduction to 0. T. in Greek*, p. 454.) So also many N. T. phrases are found in the LXX, like εἰκὼν θεοῦ, ὑσμὴ ἐγνώμιας, πρόσωπον πρὸς πρόσωπον, λαμβάνειν πρόσωπον, ἡ διασπορά κτλ. (*ib.*). The O. T. apocryphal books also are of interest on this point. We have a splendid treatment of the LXX Greek by Thackeray. He shows "the κοινή basis of LXX Greek," as to vocabulary, orthography, accidence and syntax (pp. 16-25). He notes σσ, τεσσεράκοντα, finds ν movable before consonants, ναός, νύκταν, πλήρης indeclinable, ἀσεβήν, disappearance of μι-verbs, ἡλθοσαι, ἡθανατοσαι, ἐώρακαιν, δς έαν, οὐθείς, nominativus pendens, even in apposition with genitive (cf. Apocalypse), *constructio ad sensum*, λέγων and λέγοντες with construction like ἀπηγγέλη λέγοντες, recitative on, neuter plurals with plural verb, partial disappearance of the superlative and usually in elative sense, πρῶτος instead of πρῶτης, ἐντούς, ὀ-ων, ὀ-σι, for all three persons, disappearance of the optative, great increase of τοῦ and the infinitive, co-ordination of sentences with καί, genitive absolute when noun in another case is present, blending of cases, increase of adverbial phrases and prepositions, εἰμί εἰς, interchange between ἐν and εἰς (increase of εἰς), etc. See also Psichari (*Revue des etudes juives*, 1908, pp. 173-208) for a discussion of the Semitic influence on the N. T. Greek. The use of εἰμί occurs occasionally in the papyri, the inscriptions and κοινή writers, but it is extremely common in the LXX because of the Hebrew ה. In the realm of syntax the LXX is far more Hebraistic than the N. T., for it is a translation by Jews who at many points slavishly follow the Hebrew either from ignorance of the Hebrew or the Greek, perhaps sometimes a little of both. B in Judges, Ruth, 2-4 Kings, has ἐγὼ εἰμί with indicative, as ἐγὼ εἰμι καθίσμαι (Judges 6: 18).\(^2\) BA in Tobit 5:15 have ἔσομαι διδόναι. B in Eccl. 2:17 has ἐμίσησα σὺν τῇ ζωῆ = βιογραφία.

\(^{1}\) The 150 words out of over (?) 4800 (not counting proper names) in the N. T. which Kennedy (Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 88) gives as "strictly peculiar to the LXX and N. T." cut a much smaller figure now. New pap. may remove many from the list that are still left.

\(^{2}\) Cf. Swete, Intr. to 0. T. in Gk., p. 308.
Swete\(^1\) finds this misunderstanding of ΝΧ common, in A in Ecclesiastes and six times in 3 Kings. It is the characteristic of Aquila.\(^2\) No such barbarisms as these occur in the N. T., though the "wearisome iteration of the oblique cases of personal pronouns answering to the Hebrew suffixes" finds illustration to some extent in the N. T. books, and the pleonastic use of the pronoun after the Greek relative is due to the fact that the Hebrew relative is indeclinable.\(^3\) The N. T. does not have such a construction as ἤρεσεν τοῦ ὁκονδομεῖν (2 Chron. 3:1), though τοῦ εἰσελ-.θεῖν with ἐγένετο (Ac. 10:25) is as awkward an imitation of the Hebrew infinitive construct. The LXX translators had great difficulty in rendering the Hebrew tenses into Greek and were often whimsical about it. It was indeed a difficult matter to put the two simple Hebrew timeless tenses into the complicated and highly developed Greek system, and "Vav conversive" added to the complexity of the problem. Conybeare and Stock, Selections from the LXX, p. 23, doubt if the LXX Greek always had a meaning to the translators, as in Num. 9:10; Deut. 33:10. The LXX Greek is indeed "abnormal Greek,"\(^4\) but it can be understood. Schurer\(^5\) is wrong when he calls it "quite a new language, swarming with such strong Hebraisms that a Greek could not understand it." It is indeed in places "barbarous Greek," but the people who spoke the vernacular κοινὴ could and did make it out. Many of the Hellenistic Jews knew no Hebrew or Aramaic but only the κοινὴ. The Greek proselyte, like the Ethiopian eunuch, could read it, if he did need a spiritual interpreter. Schurer,\(^6\) who credits the Palestinian Jews with very little knowledge of the current Greek, considers "the ancient anonymous Greek translation of the Scriptures" to be "the foundation of all Ju-dae-Hellenistic culture." He is indeed right in contrasting the hardness of Palestinian Pharisaism with the pliable Hellenistic Judaism on the soil of Hellenism.\(^7\) But the Jews felt the Greek spirit (even if they could not handle easily oratio obliqua) not only in the Diaspora, but to a large extent in the cities of Palestine, especially along the coast, in Galilee and in the Decapolis.

\(^{1}\) Intr. to O. T. in Gk., p. 308.
\(^{2}\) Use should be made of the transl. of Aquila, Theodotion and Symmachus, though they are of much less importance. Cf. Swete, p. 457 f.
\(^{3}\) Swete, ib., p. 307.
\(^{4}\) Moulton, Prep., p. 13.
\(^{7}\) Ib., p. 157.
On the spread of Greek in Palestine see Milligan, N. T. Documents, pp. 39 ff. The prohibition,¹ about the time of the siege of Jerusalem, against a Jew teaching his son Greek, shows that it had previously been done. The quotations in the N. T. from the O. T. show the use of the LXX more frequently than the Hebrew, sometimes the text quoted in the Synoptics is more like that of A than B, sometimes more like Theodotion than the LXX.² In the Synoptic Gospels the quotations, with the exception of five in Matthew which are more like the Hebrew, closely follow the LXX. In John the LXX is either quoted or a free rendering of the Hebrew is made. The Acts quotes from the LXX exclusively. The Catholic Epistles use the LXX. The Epistle to the Hebrews "is in great part a catena, of quotations from the LXX."³ In Paul's Epistles more than half of the direct quotations follow the LXX. Here also the text of A is followed more often than the text of B. Swete⁴ even thinks that the literary form of the N. T. would have been very different but for the LXX. The Apocalypse indeed does not formally quote the O. T., but it is a mass of allusions to the LXX text. It is not certain⁵ that the LXX was used in the synagogues of Galilee and Judea, but it is clear that Peter, James, Matthew and Mark, Jewish writers, quote it, and that they represent Jesus as using it. In the Hellenistic synagogues of Jerusalem it would certainly be read. It would greatly facilitate a just conclusion on the general relation of the N. T. Greek to the LXX Greek if we had a complete grammar and a dictionary of the LXX, though we are grateful for the luminous chapter of Swete on the Greek of the Septuagint in his Introduc-

2 Swete, Intr. to O. T. in Gk., p. 395. Cf. Deissmann in Exp. Times, Mar., 1906, p. 254, who points out that Pap. Heid. (cf. Deissmann, Die Sept. Pap., 1905) "assimilates such passages as are cited in the N. T., or are capable of a Christian meaning, as far as possible, to their form in the N. T. text, or to the sphere of Christian thought." Heinrici shows the same thing to be true of Die Leip. Pap. frag. der Psalmen, 1903.
3 Swete, Intr., etc., p. 402. All these facts about LXX quotations come from Swete.
5 Ib., pp. 29 ff.
eray for vol. I of his Grammar. It is now possible to make intelligent and, to a degree, adequate use of the LXX in the study of N. T. Greek. The completion of Helbing's Syntax and of Thackeray's Syntax will further enrich N. T. students. The Oxford Concordance of Hatch and Redpath and the larger Cambridge Septuagint are of great value. Swete lamented that the N. T. grammars have only "incidental references to the linguistic characteristics of the Alexandrian version."

The translation was not done all at once, and not by men of Jerusalem, but by Jews of Alexandria who knew "the patois of the Alexandrian streets and markets." One doubts, however, if these translators spoke this mixture of Egyptian koinē and Hebrew. On this point Swete differs from most scholars and insists that "the translators write Greek largely as they doubtless spoke it." They could not shake off the Hebrew spell in translation. In free Greek like most of the N. T. the Semitic influence is far less. Mahaffy was quick to see the likeness between the papyri and the LXX. But one must not assume that a N. T. word necessarily has the same sense that it has either in the LXX or the koinē. The N. T. has ideas of its own, a point to be considered later. We agree with Swete that the LXX is "indispensable to the study of the N. T." Nestle justly remarks that the Greek of the LXX enjoys now a much more favourable judgment from philologists than some twenty years ago. Conybeare and Stock (Sel. from the LXX, p. 22) observe that, while the vocabulary of the LXX is that of the market-place of Alexandria, the syntax is much more under the influence of the Hebrew original. The LXX does, of course, contain a few books like 4 Maccabees, written in Greek originally and in the Greek spirit, like Philo's works. Philo represents the Atticistic revival in Alexandria that was a real factor with a few. But the "genitivus hebraicus," like ὁ κριτής τῆς δήκιας, is paralleled in the papyri and the inscriptions, though not so often as in the LXX. Cf. Radermacher, N. T. Greek, p. 19. So also (p. 21) τῶς ἐξ ἐπιθέειας (Ro. 2:8) is like ἐκ πλήρους in the papyri and already in the tragic poets. Thumb properly takes the side of Deissmann against Viteau's exaggerated

1 Intr., p. 289.
2 BD., p. 9.
3 Ib., p. 299.
4 Exp. Times, iii, p. 291.
5 Intr. to O. T. in Gk., p. 450 f. Hitzig, of Heidelberg, used to open his lectures on O. T. by asking: "Gentlemen, have you a LXX? If not, sell whatever you have and buy a LXX." Nestle, LXX, in Hast. D. B., p. 438.
7 Griech. Spr. etc., pp. 128-132.
idea of LXX influence (following Hatch). It is not always easy to decide what is due to the use of the LXX and what to the development of the κοινὴ vernacular. One must have an open mind to light from either direction. Deissmann is clearly right in calling for a scientific investigation of the Hebraisms of the LXX. Even the LXX and N. T. use of ἄρετη (Is. 42:8, 12; 1 Pet. 2: 9; 2 Pet. 1:3) is paralleled by an inscription in Caria.

We are not then to think of the Jews or the Christians as ever using in, speech or literature the peculiar Greek used in the translation of the Hebrew O. T., which in itself varied much in this respect in different parts. The same intense Hebraistic cast appears in the O. T. apocryphal books which were originally in Hebrew and then translated, as Tobit, Ecclesiasticus, 1 Maccabees, etc. Contrast with these the Greek of the Wisdom of Solomon, 2 Maccabees and the Prologue to the Greek translation of Ecclesiasticus, and the difference is at once manifest. The Wisdom of Solomon is of special interest, for the author, who wrote in Greek and revealed knowledge of Greek culture, art, science and philosophy, was yet familiar with the LXX and imitated some of its Hebraisms, being a Jew himself. Cf. Siegfried, "Book of Wisdom," Hastings' D. B. It must never be forgotten that by far the greatest contribution of Alexandrian prose to the great literature of the world is this very translation of the O. T. The name Christ (Χριστός) is found in the LXX "and so the very terms Christian and Christianity arose out of the language employed by the Alexandrian interpreters." The only Bible known to most of the Jews in the world in the first Christian century was the LXX. The first complete Bible was the Greek Bible. The LXX was the "first Apostle to the Gentiles" and was freely used for many centuries by the Christians. Conybeare and Stock (Sel. from the LXX, p. 24) go so far as to say that the N. T. itself would not have been but for the LXX. Certainly it would not

---

1 Hell.-Griech., Hauck's Realencyc., p. 638.
3 Deissmann, B. S., p. 76 f. He rightly calls attention to the fact that many of the Ptolemaic pap. are contemporary with the LXX and bristle with proof that the LXX on the whole is in the vernac. κοινὴ of Egypt The Hebraisms came from the Hebrew itself in the act of translating.
4 Mahaffy, Prog. of Hellen. in Alex. Emp., p. 80.
have been what it is. "The Bible whose God is Yahweh is the Bible of one people, the Bible whose God is Κύριος is the Bible of the world" (Deissmann, Die Hellen. des Semit. Mon., p. 174).

Thackeray (Grammar of the O. T. in Greek, pp. 25-55) gives a careful survey of the "Semitic Element in the LXX Greek." He admits that the papyri have greatly reduced the number of the Hebraisms heretofore noted in the LXX. He denies, however (p. 27), that the Greek of the LXX gives "a true picture of the language of ordinary intercourse between Jewish residents in the country." He denies also any influence of the Hebrew on the vernacular Greek of the Jews in Alexandria outside of the vocabulary of special Jewish words like ἀκροβυστία. He thinks (p. 28) the Book of Tobit the best representative of the vernacular Greek of the Jews. There are more transliterations like γεωργίας for Aramaic קֶּרֶם (Heb. נָּץ) in the later books where the early books had παροικός or προσήλυτος. The fact of a translation argues for a fading of the Hebrew from the thought of the people. In the early books the translation is better done and "the Hebraic character of these books consists in the accumulation of a number of just tolerable Greek phrases, which nearly correspond to what is normal and idiomatic in Hebrew" (p. 29). But in the later books the Hebraisms are more numerous and more marked, due to "a growing reverence for the letter of the Hebrew" (p. 30).

We cannot follow in detail Thackeray's helpful sketch of the transliterations from the Hebrew, the Hellenized Semitic words, the use of words of like sound, Hebrew senses in Greek words like διδώμι= τίθημι after κήλει, νόος οδικίας, ὄφθαλμος, πρόσωπον, στόμα, χείρ, the pleonastic pronoun, extensive use of prepositions, καὶ ἐγένετο, ἐν accompaniment or instrument, etc.

(e) ARAMAISMS. N. T. grammars have usually blended the Aramaic with the Hebrew influence. Schmiedel notes that the Aramaisms have received too little attention. But Dalman retorts that Schmiedel himself did not do the matter justice, and still less did Blass. Moulton recognizes the distinction as just and shows that Aramaisms are found chiefly in Mark and Matthew, but does not point out the exact character of the Aramaisms in question. We take it as proved that Jesus and the Apostles, like most of their Jewish contemporaries in Palestine who moved in public life, spoke both Aramaic and Greek and read Hebrew.

1 W.-Sch., Gr., § 2, 1 c. And Dalman (Words of Jesus, p. 18 f.) criticizes Schmiedel for not distinguishing Aramaism from Hebraisms.
2 Words of Jesus, p. 18.
3 Prol., p. 8.
(cf. Lu. 4:17). Even Schurer admits that the educated classes used Greek without difficulty. There is no doubt about the Aramaic. Jerome says that all the Jews of his time knew the Hebrew O.T. The LXX disproves that, but Hebrew was used in the schools and synagogues of Palestine and was clearly read by many. The discourses of Jesus do not give the impression that he grew up in absolute seclusion, though he undoubtedly used the Aramaic in conversation and public address on many occasions if not as a rule. The Aramaic tongue is very old and its use as a diplomatic tongue (Is. 36:11) implies perhaps a previous Aramaic leadership. There was a literary as well as a vernacular Aramaic. The Aramaic portions of Daniel, Ezra, the Targum of Onkelos are in the literary Aramaic. Dalman suggests that Matthew wrote his Gospel originally in the Judean literary Aramaic rather than the Galilean vernacular, but the reason is not very apparent. Zahn doubts the validity of Dalman's distinction between a Judean and a Galilean Aramaic, but Peter was recognized in Jerusalem by the Galilean pronunciation (Mt. 26:73). The Galileans had difficulty with the gutturals and pluck. This Aramaic is not to be confounded with the later Christian Aramaic or Syriac into which the N.T. was translated. The Aramaic spoken in Palestine was the West Aramaic, not the East Aramaic (Babylonia). So keenly does Dalman feel the difference between Hebraisms and Aramaisms that he avers that "the Jewish Aramaic current among the people was considerably freer from Hebrew influence than the Greek which the Synoptists write." Not many can go with him in that statement. But he is right in insisting on a real difference, though, as a matter of fact, no great point was made about it at the time. With Josephus ἵπάτριος γλῶσσα was the Aramaic (B. J. pr. § 1; v. 6, § 3;
v. 9, § 2). He wrote his *War* originally in the native tongue for τοῦς ἄνω βαρβάρους. John (5:2; 19:13, 17, 20; Rev. 9:11; 16:16) uses Ἐβραῖστι in the sense of the Aramaic. So Luke has Ἐβραῖς διάλεκτος (Ac. 21:40; 22:2; 26:14). The people understood Paul's Greek, but they gave the more heed when he dropped into Aramaic. 4 Macc. (12:7; 16:15) likewise employs Ἐβραῖς φωνή. The two kinds of Jewish Christians are even called (Ac. 6:1) Ελληνισταί and Ἐβραῖοι, though Ελληνισταί and Συρισταί would have been a more exact distinction.1 It is beyond controversy that the gospel message was told largely in Aramaic, which to some extent withstood the influx of Greek as the vernacular did in Lycaonia2 (Ac. 14:11). One cannot at this point discuss the Synoptic problem. It is not certain that Luke, probably a gentile, knew either Aramaic or Hebrew, though there is a real Semitic influence on part of the Gospel and Acts, due, Dalman3 holds, to the LXX example and a possible Aramaic or Hebrew original for the opening chapters of the Gospel, already put into Greek. Mark was probably written in Rome; not Palestine. Hence the Aramaic original of Mark, Bousset argues, cannot be considered as proved.4 He rightly insists, as against Wellhausen,5 that the question is not between the classic Greek and Aramaic, but between the vernacular κοινή and Aramaic. But whatever is or is not true as to the original language of Mark and of Matthew, the gospel story was first told largely in Aramaic. The translation of the Aramaic expressions in Mark proves this beyond all doubt, as ταλαιθά, κούμ by τό κοράσιον, ἔγειρε (Mk. 5:41). Dalman6 indeed claims that every Semitism in the N. T. should first be looked upon as an Aramaism unless it is clear that the Aramaic cannot explain it. The Mishna (Neo-Hebraic) was not itself unaffected by the Greek, for the Mishna has numerous

---

1 Dalman, Words of Jesus, p. 7.  
2 Schweyzer, Weltspr. etc., p. 27.  
5 Einl. in die drei Evang., §§ 2-4.  
6 Words of Jesus, p. 19; cf. also Schaff, Comp. to the Gk. N. T., p. 28. In 1877 Dr. John A. Broadus said in lecture (Sum. of the Leading Peculiarities of N. T. Gk. Gr., Immer's Hermen., p. 378) that the N. T. Gk. had a "Hebrew and Aramaic tinge which arises partly from reading Hebrew and chiefly (so his own correction) from speaking Aramaic." If instead of Hebrew he had said LXX, or had added LXX to Hebrew, he would not have missed it far.
Greek words and phrases that were current in the Aramaic.1 The Aramaisms of vocabulary that one can certainly admit in the N. T. are the following words: ἀββά = אבב; ἀκέλαδαμάχ = האנקל; ἁλὴν; 
all words beginning with βαρ = בבר like Βαρνάβας; βεζεβοῦλ = בֶזֶבּוּל, ἄβιλ; Βηθεσδᾶ = בֶשֶד; Ἠβᾶθα = אבת; Γαββαθᾶ = 
 sperma; γεεννᾶ = גן; Γολγοῦθα = גולגולם; ἐλῳ ἐλὼ; λαμά σαβαχθανεί (or probably Heb. לְלָי = הלי, and the rest Aramaic, Dal-
man, Words of Jesus, p. 53 f.) = יינתבכע Shopify להצק; έφεβαθᾶ = 
 πηθεח; κορβανάς = קורבת; μαμωνάς = ממון; μαρανά, θά = θά 
 κορμᾶ; Μεσσίας = מיסי; πάσχα = פסח; φαρισαῖοι = פּרִי; ραββο(ου)ν (ε) = 
 ינקון; ρακά = קיר; ράββατα = קרב; σατανάς = סatan; σάτου = סטוע; 
 σίκερα = סקר; תָּנָא, κοῦ = "יומ אֲשֶר שֶם; names of persons like 
 Κηφᾶ = קיפ; Ταβέθα = תיבט, etc.

Aramaisms of syntax are seen in the following. The expression γεύσθαι θανάτου seems to be in imitation of the Aramaic. Well-hausen (Einl. in die drei Evang., pp. 31 ff.) suggests that ἐῖς καθ' ἐῖς (Mk. 14: 19) is a hybrid between the Aramaic ἐῖς ἐῖς (but this is, an old Greek idiom) and the vernacular (κοψή) καθ' ἐῖς. He suggests also that Aramaic meanings are found in such words as σωζέν, ποιεῖν καρπόν, συμβούλλον ποιεῖν (διδόναι), εἰρήνη, εἰρήνην διδόναι, ὁδὸς 
 θεοῦ, πλήρωμα, etc. As already explained, apart from the question of a possible original Aramaic Mark and an original Aramaic Matthew and Aramaic sources for the early chapters of Luke and the first twelve chapters of Acts,3 many of the discourses of Christ were undoubtedly in Aramaic. There was translation then from this Aramaic spoken (or written) gospel story into the vernacular κοψή as we now have it in large portions of the Synoptic Gospels and possibly part of Acts. The conjectural efforts to restore this Aramaic original of the words of Jesus are suggestive, but not always convincing. On the whole subject of Semitic words in the Ptolemaic papyri see Mayser, Grammatik, pp. 40-42. The list includes ἄρ(μ) ἄρων, βύσσος, κύμινον, λίβανος, σφαχμίνος, χιτῶν. It is not a very long list indeed, but shows that the Orient did have some little influence on the Greek vocabulary. These words occur in older Greek writers.

Yiddish.
3 See Blass, Philol. of the Gosp., ch. XI; Dalman, Words of Jesus, pp. 17-
78; Wellhausen, Einl. in die drei Evang. (Die aram. Grundl. der Evang., pp.
14-43).
(f) VARYING RESULTS. It is natural that different writers in the N. T. should diverge in the amount of Semitic influence manifest in their writings. They all used the vernacular ὀινή which in itself may have had a very faint trace of Semitic influence. But of the nine authors of the N. T. six were probably Palestinian Jews.¹ Now these six writers (Mark, Matthew, James, Peter, Jude, John) are just the very ones who reveal the Semitic mould of thought. It is often merely the Hebrew and Aramaic spirit and background. In Mark the Aramaic influence appears; in Matthew² the LXX is quoted along with the Hebrew, and Aramaisms occur also; in James there is the stately dignity of an O. T. prophet with Aramaic touches (cf. his address and letter in Ac. 15) but with many neat turns of Greek phrase and idiom; Peter's two letters present quite a problem and suggest at least an amanuensis in one case or a different one for each letter (cf. Biggs, Int. and Crit. Comm.); Jude is very brief, but is not distinctly Hebraic or Grecian; John in his Gospel is free from minor Semitisms beyond the frequent use of καί like ), but the tone of the book is distinctly that of a noble Jew and the sum total of the impression from the book is Semitic, while the Apocalypse has minor Hebraisms and many grammatical idiosyncrasies to be discussed later, many of which remind one of the LXX. If the absence of the optative be taken as a test, even when compared with the vernacular ὀινή, Matthew, James and John do not use it at all, while Mark has it only once and Jude twice. Peter indeed has it four times and Hebrews only once, but Luke uses the optative 28 times and Paul 31. The remaining three writers (Paul, Luke, author of Hebrews) were not Palestinian Jews. Paul was a Hellenistic Jew who knew his vernacular ὀινή well and spoke Aramaic and read Hebrew. His Epistles are addressed chiefly to gentile Christians and naturally show little Semitic flavour, for he did not have to translate his ideas from Aramaic into Greek. In some of his speeches, especially the one delivered in Aramaic, as reported by Luke in Ac. 22, a trace of the Semitic point of view is retained. In contrast with Ac. 22 note Paul's address on the Areopagus in 17. The author of Hebrews makes abundant use of the LXX but exhibits possible Alexandrian origin or training, and it is not clear that he knew either

¹ Swete, Intr. to the O. T. in Gk., p. 381.
² Dalman (Wds. of Jes., p. 42) thinks that the Heb. of Mt. are due to the LXX.
Hebrew or Aramaic. Luke presents something of a problem, for he seems to have had Aramaic sources in Lu. 1 and 2 (possibly also Ac. 1-12), while it is uncertain whether he was familiar with the Aramaic. There seems little evidence that he knew Hebrew. Blass thinks that he may have read his Aramaic sources or had them translated for him. Curiously enough, though a gentile and capable of writing almost classic Attic (Lu. 1:1-4), yet Luke uses Semitisms not common elsewhere in the N. T. Dalman shows that the genuine Hebraisms in Luke like λόγος in sense of things (9:28 but classical authority for this exists), διά στόματος (1:70) are due to the LXX, not the Hebrew. The use of ἐν τῷ with the infinitive occurs 34 times in Luke, 8 in Acts, twice in Mark, thrice in Matthew, 4 in Paul, 4 in Heb. See ἐν τῷ ὄποιοστρέφειν τῶν Ἰησοῦν (Lu. 8:40). Blass calls this an Aramaism. But it is not a peculiarity of the discourses of Jesus, as it is found there only in ἐν τῷ σπειρεῖν (common to all the Synoptics, Mk. 4:4; Mt. 13:4; Lu. 8:5), and in Lu. 10:35; 19:15. Hence the idiom is common in Luke from some other cause. The construction occurs in "classical historians, in Polybius and in papyri," but is most common in the LXX, and the parallel is wanting in the spoken Aramaic. Luke also freely uses καὶ ἐγένετο (almost peculiar to him in the N. T.), which at once suggests ññ. He doubtless got this from the LXX. He has three constructions, viz. καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ ἠλθε, καὶ ἐγένετο ἠλθε καὶ καὶ ἐγένετο ἐλθεῖν. The first two are common in the LXX, while ἐγένετο ἐλθεῖν is due to the Greek vernacular as the papyri testify. The superfluous ἀφείς, ἠρέατο, etc., are Aramaisms, while εἰμὶ and the participle is Aramaic, like the Hebrew, and also in harmony with the analytic vernacular κοινή. Nestle

1 Biesenthal (Das Trostschreiben des Ap. Paulus an d. Heb., 1878) even thinks that the Ep. was written in Aram. or Heb. 2 Philol. of the Gosp., p. 205. 3 Wds. of Jes., p. 38 f. Cf. also Blass, Philol. of the Gosp., pp. 113 f., 118; Vogel, Zur Charac. des Lukas, p. 27. 4 Dalman, Wds. of Jes., p. 33. 5 Evang. sec. Lucam, p. xxii. But ἐν τῷ with the inf. occurs with great frequency in the LXX, 555 times in the O. T., Apoc. and N. T. (Votaw, Inf. in Bib. Gk., p. 20), chiefly in the LXX (455 times, only 55 in the N. T.). It occurs nearly as often in the LXX as all other prepositions with the infinitive together. 6 Dalman, Wds. of Jes., p. 34. 7 Moulton, Prol., p. 14 (1st ed.). 8 W.-M., p. 760 note. 9 Cf. Thackeray, ya Gr., pp. 50 ff. We have the type ἐγένετο ἠλθε 145 and ἐγένετο καὶ ἠλθε 269 times in the LXX, but ἐγένετο ἐλθεῖν only once (1 Kgs 11:43 B). 10 Moulton, Prol., p. 17. 11 Zeitschr. fur neutest. Wiss., 1906, p. 279 f.
agrees with Blass (p. 131) in taking ὀμολογεῖν ἐν in Mt. 10:32-
Lu. 12:8 as a Syrism. ἡ with ΠΡΩΣ is not in the Hebrew, nor ὀμολ. ἐν in the LXX, but ΠΡΩΣ is used with ἡ in the Jewish-Aramaic and Christian-Syriac. Nestle refers to ὀμολογοῦντας τῷ ὄνοματι (Heb. 13:15) as a Hebraism, for in such a case the Hebrew used ἡ. The LXX and the Aramaic explain all the Semitisms in Luke. Dalman ventures to call the LXX Hebraisms in Luke "Septuagint-Graecisms" and thinks that the same thing is true of the other Synoptists. Certainly it is proper to investigate the words of Jesus from the point of view of the peculiarities of style in each reporter of them. But, after all is said, the Semitisms in the N. T. Greek, while real and fairly numerous in bulk, cut a very small figure in comparison with the entire text. One can read whole pages in places with little suggestion of Semitic influence beyond the general impress of the Jewish genius and point of view.

IV. Latinisms and Other Foreign Words. Moulton considers it "hardly worth while" to discuss Latin influence on the κοινή of the N. T. Blass describes the Latin element as "clearly traceable." Swete indeed alleges that the vulgar Greek of the Empire "freely adopted Latin words and some Latin phraseology." Thumb thinks that they are "not noteworthy." In spite of the conservative character of the Greek language, it yet incorporated Latin civil and military terms with freedom. Inasmuch as Judea was a Roman province, some allusion to Roman customs and some use of Latin military and official terms was to be expected, though certainly not to the extent of Romanizing or Latinizing the language. Cicero himself described Latin as provincial in comparison with the Greek. Latin words are fairly common in the Mishna. Latin names were early naturalized into the Greek vernacular and in the N. T. we find such Roman names as Aquila, Cornelius, Claudia, Clemens, Crescens, Crispus, Fortunatus, Julia, Junia, Justus, Linus, Lucius, Luke, Mark,

1 Wds. of Jes., p. 41.  
2 Ib., p. 72.  
3 Prol., p. 20.  
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 4.  
5 Comm. on Mk., 1898, p. xliiv.  
6 Griech. Spr. etc., p. 152.  
7 Hoole, Class. Element in the N. T., p. 4.  
9 Schurer, Jew. Peo. in Time of Ch., div. II, vol. I, pp. 43 ff. Krauss (Griech. und Lehnw. im Tal., Ti. I, p. xxxi) says: "One speaks of the Language of the Romans with the greatest respect as the speech of the soldiers."
Niger, Paul, Priscilla, Publius, Pudens, Rufus, Sergius, Silvanus (Silas), Tertius, Titus among the Christians themselves (Jewish and gentile), while Agrippa, Augustus (translated Σεβαστός), Caesar, Claudius, Gallio, Felix, Festus, Julius, Nero (Text. Rec.), Pilate, Tertullus are typical Roman names. Note the Roman cities mentioned in Ac. 28, Caesarea and Tiberias in Palestine. More than forty Latin names of persons and places occur in the N. T. The other Latin words, thirty (or thirty-one), are military, judicial, monetary or domestic terms. They come into the N. T. through the vernacular κοινή, none of them appearing in the LXX and but two in Polybius. "Plutarch uses Latin words more frequently than Polybius, but for the most part not those employed in the N. T."\(^1\) Jannaris\(^2\) observes that "the Roman administration, notwithstanding its surrendering to Greek culture and education, did not fail to influence the Greek language."

But in the N. T. only these Latin words are found: ἀσάριον (as), δημάριον (denarius), ἔχω = aëstimo (ἔχε με παρήσιμον, Lu. 14:18), εὐρακύλων, θρημβεύειν, κεντυρίων (centurio), κήνσος (census), κοδράντις (quadrans), κολωνία (colonia), κοσμητία (custodia), λεγιών (legio), λεύτιον, (linteum), λιβερτίνος (libertinus), λίτρα (libra), μακελλον (macellum), μεμβράνα (membrana), μίλιον (mille), μόδιος (modius), ἐξοστής (sextarius), πραιτώριον (praetorium), σικάριος (sca- caries), σιμικίνθιον (semicinctium), σουδάριον (sudarium), σπεκουλάτωρ (speculator), αἰταβέρναι (taberna), τίτλος (titlus), φελώνης (paenula), φόρον (forum), φραγελλίον (flagellum), φραγγίλων (flagello), χάρτης (? charta), χάρος (corus). This is at most (31) not a formidable list. A few Latin phrases occur like ἐργασίαν δοθήναι (ope- ram dare), τὸ ἰκανὸν λαμβάνειν (satis accipere), τὸ ἰκανὸν ποιεῖν (satis facere), συμβουλίον λαμβάνειν (consilium capere). But Deissmann (Light from the Ancient East, p. 117 f.) notes the use of ἐργασίαν δίδωμι, in an Oxyrhynchus papyrus letter of the vulgar type in 2d cent. B.C. and also in an inscription in Caria with a decree of the Senate. A lead tablet at Amorgus shows κρίνω τὸ δίκαιον (cf. Lu. 12:57). So συναίρω λόγον (Mt. 18:23 f.) occurs in two pa- pyri letters of 2d cent. A.D. (Moulton, The Expositor, April, 1901, p. 274 f.). Thayer\(^3\) calls attention also to σὺ δῆσῃ (Mt. 27:4) as

---

\(^1\) Burton, Notes on N. T. Gr., 1904, p. 15.
being like \( \text{videris} \). So also \( \text{δψεσθε αυτοι} \) (Ac. 18:15). Grimm\(^1\) considers \( \text{λαμβάνειν} \) in Jo. 5:34, 41 equal to \( \text{capto} \) (‘to catch at’). The majority of these instances occur in Mark and Matthew, Mark using more Latinisms than any other N. T. writer. Too much, however, cannot be argued from this point.\(^2\) There are besides such adjectives as \( \text{'Ηρωδιανοй, Χριστιανοι, Φιλιππησιοι} \), which are made after the Latin model.

Blass\(^3\) thinks that the syntax shows a greater Latin influence, but admits that it is difficult to tell the difference between native development in the Greek and a possible Latin bent. It is indeed difficult to speak with decision on this point. Ultimately Greek and Latin had great influence on each other, but at this stage the matter is at least too doubtful to appeal to with confidence.\(^4\) Paul indeed may have spoken in Latin at Lystra, according to Prof. Ramsay.\(^5\) Thayer\(^6\) indeed gives a longer list of Latin syntactical influences on N. T. Greek, but not all of them are certain. The anticipatory position of \( \text{απο} \) and \( \text{προ} \) in expressions of time and place, as \( \text{προσ ξ ε ημερων} \) (Jo. 12:1), is a possible Latinism, though only of the secondary sort, since the Doric and the Ionic use this construction occasionally and the \( \text{κοινή} \) frequently (cf. Moulton, Prolegomena, p. 101). Cf. also \( \text{μετα πολλας ταυτας ημερας} \) (Ac. 1:5).\(^7\) The increased use of the subjunctive rather than the optative after a past tense of the indicative is a necessary result of the disappearance of the optative rather than a Latinism. The alleged blending of present perfect and aorist might

---

\(^1\) Gk.-Eng. Lex. of the N. T.
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 4.
\(^5\) Exp., Sept., 1905, and March, 1906. "As his father, and possibly also his grandfather, had possessed the Roman citizenship, the use of Latin speech and names was an inheritance in the family" (Ramsay, Exp., Aug., 1906, p. 160). Cf. also Ramsay, Pauline and Othet Studies (1906, p. 65), where he says it is "certain" that he spoke the Latin language. So holds Alex. "Souter (Did Paul Speak Latin?, Exp., April, 1911). At Iconium "a certain affectation of speaking Latin was fashionable." Moulton also thinks that Paul preached in Lat. at Lystra, since the earliest inscriptions there are Lat. (Prol., p. 233).
\(^6\) Lang. of the N. T., Hast. D. B.
\(^7\) On this matter of time see Schulze, Graeca Lat., pp. 13 ff.
be a Latinism, but it is at least doubtful if that is found in the
N. T. The use of ὅτι and ἵνα rather than the infinitive follows
naturally as the infinitive vanishes, but it is parallel to the grow-
ing use of ut with rogo, etc. Ἄπό and the ablative after φυλάσσειν
may be due to caverere ab or to the general analytic tendency to
express the preposition with the case (cf. the Hebrew also).
Other smaller details are the absence of ὅ with the vocative, σῶν
as equal to καί, ὅς = καὶ οὔτος (qui = et hic), γαμέω with dative = nu-
bere alicui, infinitive alone with κελεύω. There is no evidence that
the absence of the article in Latin had any influence on the ver-
nacular κοινή, though Schmid¹ thinks he sees it in the irregular
use of the article in AElian. It is interesting in this connection
to note the development in the vernacular Latin as represented
in the Old Latin and the Vulgate versions. Unusual cases are
used with many verbs; prepositions are much more frequent; the
indicative with final ut and in indirect questions; common use of
quia and quoniam like quod with verb rather than the accusative
and infinitive; ille, ipse, hic, is, more like the article, as the later
Italian il, Spanish el, French le.²

Other foreign words had, of course, entered the κοινή or the
earlier Greek, like βουνός (Cyrenaic and Sicilian); ῥέδη (Gallic or
Celtic); ἐγγαρεύω (even Aeschylus), γάζα, παράδεισος, σανδάλιον (Per-
sian); χιτών (Oriental); κράβαττος (cf. Latin grabatus), παρεμβολή,
ῥύμη (Macedonian); ἀρραβών, κιννάμωμον, κύμινον, μυά (Phoenician);
βιβλίον, βίβλος, βύσσος, σίνα Πι, σινδών (Egyptian or Semitic?);
ζίζά-
νιον (Arabic?). On the Egyptian words in the Ptolemaic papyri
see Mayser, Grammatik, pp. 35-40; on the Persian words, ib.,
p. 42 f., including γάζα and παράδεισος. Σίναπι is of uncertain origin.
But Greek was known in all parts of the Roman Empire except
parts of North Africa and the extreme west of Europe. There were
great libraries in Alexandria, Pergamum and elsewhere. Schools
were numerous and excellent. But none the less the mass of the
people were βάρβαροι to the real Greeks and inevitably brought
9 ff., who gives a good discussion of the Latinisms in κοινή writers.

¹ Atticismus etc., p. 64. Cf. Georgi, De Latinismis N. T., iii, Vita, 1733.
² On this whole subject see Ronsch, Itala und Vulgata. Das Sprachid. der
urchristl. Ital und der Lath. Vulg. unter Berucks. der ram. Volksspr., 1875,
p. 480 f. Cf. also The Holy Lat. Tongue, W. Barry, in Dublin Rev., April,
with local differences in every part of Italy, in Gaul, Spain and Africa, saw
its happy moment arrive when Christianity spread over those shores" (Dub-
V. The Christian Addition. But was there a Christian addition if there was no separate biblical Greek, not to say a special Christian Greek? Winer\(^1\) admitted "religious technical terms" in the Christian sense, but thought that "the subject scarce lies within the limits of philological inquiry." Blass has nothing to say on the subject. But even Deissmann\(^2\) insisted that "the language of the early Christians contained a series of religious terms peculiar to itself, some of which it formed for the first time," but he added that this enrichment did not extend to the "syntax." Once more hear Deissmann\(^3\): "Christianity, like any other new movement affecting civilization, must have produced an effect upon language by the formation of new ideas and the modification of old ones." Moulton\(^4\) sounds a note of warning when he says that "it does not follow that we must promptly obliterate every grammatical distinction that proves to have been unfamiliar to the daily conversation of the first century Egyptian farmer . . . The N. T. must still be studied largely by light drawn from itself." Westcott\(^5\) indeed thinks the subject calls for "the most careful handling" in order to avoid Jewish usage on the one hand and the later ecclesiastical ideas on the other. This is obviously true. Connect the discussion of the Semitic influence on the N. T. with this point and recall the revolutionary effect that Christianity had upon the Greek language in the ecclesiastical Greek of the Byzantine period, and the difficulty will be appreciated. Mahaffy\(^6\) does not hesitate to say that the main cause of the persistence of Greek studies to-day is due to the fact that the Gospels are written in Greek. "Greek conquered Jew and Jew conquered Greek and the world inherited the legacy of their struggle through Roman hands." Under the influence of Christianity some of the old heathen vocabulary vanished and the remaining stock "was now considerably reduced and modified in a Christian and modern spirit."\(^7\) The

---

1 W.-M., p. 36.
2 B. S., p. 65 (note).
5 Smith's D. B., art. N. T.
on Gk. Subj., 1894, p. 2 f., calls the power of Jew and Gk. on modern life one of "the mysterious forces of the spirit." "Each entered on a career of world-wide empire, till at length the principles of Hellenism became those of civilization itself, and the religion of Judea that of civilized humanity."
7 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 10 f.
N. T. Greek became the standard for ecclesiastical Greek as the Attic had been for the ancient world.

Winer\(^1\) indeed curtly says: "To attempt to explain such expressions of the apostolical terminology by quotations from Greek authors is highly absurd." Rutherford\(^2\) almost despairs of understanding N. T. Greek as well as "classical Greek," since it contains so many alien elements, "but it has at least begun to be studied from the proper point of view," though he overestimates the difficulty and the difference when he speaks of "the singular speech in which the oracles of God are enshrined." On the other hand\(^3\) we must not let the papyri make us swing so far away from the old "biblical" Greek idea as to imagine that we can find in the vernacular \(\text{koinh}\) all that Christianity has to offer. The Christian spirit put a new flavour into this vernacular \(\text{koinh}\) and lifted it to a new elevation of thought and dignity of style that unify and glorify the language. This new and victorious spirit, which seized the best in Jew and Greek, knew how to use the Greek language with freedom and power.\(^4\) If the beauty of the N. T. writings is different from the ancient standard, there is none the less undoubted charm. Matthew Arnold put the Gospels at the acme of simplicity and winsomeness, and Renan spoke of Luke's Gospel as the most beautiful book in the world. Norden\(^5\) admits that the N. T. style is less exclusive and more universal. There was indeed a compromise between the old and the new. The victory of the new brought rhythm (not the technical sort) and unity as the chief characteristics.\(^6\) In Christianity Hellenism becomes really cosmopolitan.\(^7\) If Christianity had merely used the Greek language and had been entirely alien to Hellenism, the

\(^1\) W.-M., p. 36, n. 3. \(^2\) Epis. to the Rom., p. x f. \(^3\) Cf. Zerschwitz, Profangriic. and bibl. Sprachg., 1859, p. 4, where he speaks of "dieses neue geistige Princip an der Sprache." Deissmann (Die sprachl. Erforsch. der griech. Bibel, p. 8) accents the difference between the Christian ideas and the Greco-Rom. heathen words that express them. \(^4\) Ib., p. 12. Norden (Die griech. Kunstpr., Bd. II, pp. 453 ff.) indeed thinks that the N. T. wants the "freedom" (\textit{Freiheit}) and "serenity" (\textit{Heiterkeit}) of the ancient literature. This is true in part of Paul's writing, where passion rages fiercely, and in Rev. and other apocalyptic passages. But what can excel Lu. and Jo. in lucidity and beauty? "\textit{Heiterkeit} — blitheness or repose, and \textit{Allgemeinheit} — generality or breadth, are the supreme characteristics of the Hellenic ideal." Walter Pater, The Renaissance, 1904, p. 225. \(^5\) Die griech. Kunstpr., Bd. II, p. 456. \(^6\) Ib., Bd. I, p. 290. \(^7\) Ib., Bd. II, p. 463.
N. T. would not have belonged to Greek literature, but this
sympathy with the best in the world must not be overworked. The N. T. language is real Greek, though with the Christian
spirit supreme in it because Christianity seized the Hellenic spirit and transformed it. W. Christ rightly calls attention to
the fact that Christianity brought "a renewal of the human race," "the moral worth of man and a purer view of God." So "this ethical new birth of mankind" found expression in the N. T. The touch of life is what distinguishes the N. T. writings from the philosophical, historical, religious and ethical writings of the time. In the Synoptic Gospels this quality reaches its height. "Far above these details is the spirit, the literary conception of a life to be written without ornament, without reflection, without the writer's personality." This fact constitutes a literary phenomenon amounting almost to a miracle. This vital spirit discloses itself on every page and baffles analysis. It is the essence of the N. T. language, but "is as pervasive as the atmosphere," "as intangible as a perfume." If some concentration and strength are lost, there is great adaptability. Thayer does not hesitate to speak of the fitness of N. T. Greek for its providential office. It is the language of men's business and bosoms. It is the language of life, not of the study nor the cloister. It is not the language of a bygone age, but the speech of the men of the time. "The Book of the people has become, in the course of centuries, the Book of all mankind" (Deissmann, Light, p. 142). Christianity "began without any written book at all" except the Old Testament. There was only the living word — the gospel, but no Gospels. Instead of the letter was the spirit. The beginning, in fact, was Jesus Himself (ib., p. 245). The N. T. is in close sympathy with both Jew and Greek, in a sense has both languages to draw on, can reach both the Semitic and the gentile mind, becomes a bond of union, in a word (as Broadus used to say) it is better suited to be the vehicle of truth conveyed by Jewish minds than classical Greek would have been. And a grammarian must admit that, however necessary and fundamental grammat-

1 Cf. Hatch, Infl. of Hellen. on Christ.
3 Hicks, Gk. Phil. and Rom. Law in the N. T., 1896, p. 12.
6 Rodwell, N. T. Gk., 1899, p. 2.
ical exegesis is, it forms only the basis for the spiritual exposition which should follow.

When one comes to details, he notes that the influence of Christianity is chiefly lexical, not grammatical. But a few points in syntax are to be observed, as in expressions like ἐν Χριστῷ; ἐν Κυρίῳ; πιστεύω; ἐπί with the locative, εἰς with the accusative, ἐπί with the locative or the accusative, πιστεύω with the dative, with the accusative or absolutely. As to the lexical element the lists of ἀπαξ εὑρημένα require severe sifting. It is too soon to pass a final verdict, but in the nature of the case the number would be small. Such words as ἀντίχριστος, ἐπεροδιδασκαλεῖω, εὐαγγελιστής, συνσταυρῶν, ψευδάδελφος, ψευδαπόστολος, etc., naturally spring out of the Christian enterprise. The vocabulary of the N. T. Greek is not very extensive, somewhere near 5600 words, including proper names. But the main point to note is the distinctive ideas given to words already in use, like ἁγίασθε, ἁγιάζω, ἀδελφός, ἀντίτυπος, ἀντιμισθία, ἀπολύτρωσις, ἀπωλεία, ἀπόστολος, ἀρτος, βασιλεία, βαπτιστής, βάπτισμα (-μος), γλωσσα, διάκονος, δικαιος, δικαίωσις, δικαίωσις, ἐκλεκτός, ἐλπίς, ἐπίσκοπος, ἐπιστρέφομαι, ἔργα, εὐαγγέλιον, εὐαγγελιστής, εὐαγγελισμός, εὐαγγελίστης, εὐφρενών, ζωή, θάνατος, Ιερεύς, καλέω, καταλλαγή, καταλλάσσω, κηρύσσω, κλητός, κόσμος, κοινωνία, λύτρων, λυτρών, μετάνοια, ὁδός, παράκλητος, πίστος, πιστεύω, πνεῦμα, πνευματικός, πρεσβύτερος, πρόσκομμα, σάρξ, σταυρός, συνείδησις, σώζω, σωτήρ, σωτηρία, ταπεινός, ταπεινωφοροῦν, οὐιός τοῦ θεοῦ, οὐιός τοῦ ἄνθρωπου, υἱοθεσία, χάρις, Χριστός, ψυχή, ψυχικός. When one considers the new connotations that these words bear in the N. T., it is not too much "to say that in the history of these and such like words lies the history of Christianity." The fact that these and other terms were used

2 Cf. Deiss., Die neuest. Formel "in Christo Jesu" untersucht, 1892.
4 Cf. Deiss., Hell.-Griech., Hauck's Realencyc., p. 636. Not 550 (as Kennedy, Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 93) bibl. words, but only 50 N. T. formations (Deissmann, Exp., Jan., 1908; Light, p. 73).
5 Kennedy, Sour. of N. T. Gk., p. 88. The Eng. of the King James Vers. (0. T. and N. T.) contains only about 6000 words (Adye, The Eng. of the King James Vers.). Max Muller (Sci. of Lang., p. 16) says that we use only about 4000 words in ordinary Eng.
6 Westcott, Smith's B. D., N. T. Cf. also Hatch, Ess. in Bibl. Gk., p. 11. "Though Greek words were used they were the symbols of quite other than Greek ideas." That is, when the distinctively Christian ideas are given. On the influence of Gk. on other languages see Wack., Die Kult. der Gegenw., Tl. I, Abt. 8, pp. 311 ff.
in the popular language of the day gives a sharper point to the new turn in the gospel message. The deification of the emperor made Christians sensitive about the words θεός, νῦν θεοῦ, θείος, κύριος, κυριακός, σωτήρ, χάραγμα, βασιλεύς, βασιλεία. See the luminous discussion of Deissmann (Light, pp. 343-384). The papyri and the inscriptions throw almost a lurid light on these words. Cf. Κύριος Καίσαρ and Κύριος Ἰησοῦς (Martyrium Polycarpi, viii, 2) with 1 Cor. 12:1-3. The Christians did not shrink from using these words in spite of the debased ideas due to the emperor-cult, Mithraism, or other popular superstitions. Indeed, Paul (cf. Col. 2:1 f.) often took the very words of Gnostic or Mithra cult and filled them with the riches of Christ. Cf. The Expositor for April, 1912, "Paul and the Mystery Religions," by H. A. A. Kennedy. For the stimuli that Christianity derived from popular notions of law, religion and morality see Deissmann, Light, pp. 283-290. The mass of the N. T. vocabulary has been transfigured. The worshippers of a Caesar would indeed call him σωτήρ τοῦ κόσμου or νῦν θεοῦ, but the words were empty flattery. Deissmann¹ well shows that a LXX word, for instance, in the mouth of a citizen of Ephesus, did not mean what it did in the LXX, as ἀρχεῖρευς, διαθήκη, θεός, προφήτης, σωτηρία. Much more is this true of the N. T. The new message glorified the current κοινή, took the words from the street and made them bear a new content, linked heaven with earth in a new sense. In particular the N. T. writers took and greatly enriched the religious vocabulary of the LXX.

VI. Individual Peculiarities. The language of Christianity was not stereotyped at first and there was more play for individualism. If the style is not all of the man, certainly each writer has his own style. But style varies with the same man also at different stages of his own development, with varying moods and when discussing different themes. Style is thus a function of the subject. All these points of view must be kept in mind with several of the N. T. writers, as Paul, Luke, Peter and John, whose writings show marked variations. Simcox² notes that in the Thessalonian and Corinthian letters Paul uses ἐν παντὶ twelve

² Writers of the N. T., p. 37. A. Souter (The Exp., 1904, Some Thoughts on the Study of the Gk. N. T., p. 145) says: "We must take each writer's grammar by itself."
times, in the Pastoral Epistles ἐν πασί five (or six) times, while in Ph. 4:12 he has both. In thus accenting the individuality of the N. T. writers one must not forget that each writer had access to the common religious terminology of early Christianity. There was a common substratum of ideas and expressions that reappear in them all, though in certain cases there may have been actual use of documents. But one can never be sure whether Peter had James, or the author of Hebrews Luke's writings. Peter probably had some of Paul's letters when he wrote 1 Peter, and 2 Peter 3:15f. expressly refers to them. The grammarian cannot be expected to settle questions of authorship and genuineness, but he has a right to call attention to the common facts of linguistic usage. Immer⁴ indeed complains that the linguistic peculiarities of the N. T. writers have been worked more in the interest of criticism than of exegesis. The modern method of biblical theology is designed to correct this fault, but there is a work here for the grammarian also. Winer² declines to discuss this question and is horrified at the idea of grammars of each writer of the N. T.³ Language is rightly viewed from the point of view of the speaker or writer. The rapid and continued changes in the individual mind during the mental process of expressing thought find a parallel in the syntactical relations in the sentence.⁴ One cannot protest too strongly against the levelling process of an unsympathetic and unimaginative linguistic method that puts all the books of the N. T. through the same syntactical mill and tags this tense as "regular" and that one as "irregular." It is not too much to say that the characteristic of the Greek literature of this time was precisely that of individuality (cf. Plutarch's Lives).⁵ Viteau⁶ has a brief discussion of "The Psychological Character of the Syntax of the N. T." for, added to all other things, there is "the influence of the moment." Differences in

1 Hermen. of the N. T., 1877, p. 132. Thayer (Lex. of N. T. Gk., p. 689) speaks of "the monumental misjudgments committed by some who have made questions of authorship turn on vocabulary alone."
3 W.-M., p. 4. He did not live to see Dr. Abbott's two stout volumes, Joh. Vocab. (1905) and Joh. Gr. (1906).
4 Cf. Steinthal, Intr. to the Psych. and Sci. of Lang.
6 Le Verbe; Synt. des Prop., pp. xli ff.
culture, in environment, in gifts, in temperament inevitably af-
fect style, but this fact is not to be stressed so as to make a new
dialect for each writer. In the following discussions some lexical
comments are given besides the grammatical to give a better idea
of the writer's style as a whole.

(a) MARK. Certainly Blass' theory of an original Aramaic
Mark is not proven, but Peter often spoke in Aramaic, and Mark
was bilingual like Peter. For the Aramaisms and Hebraisms of
Mark see previous discussion (Semitic Influence). The idea that
Mark first wrote in Latin need not be seriously discussed. Mat-
thew and Luke have also nearly as many Latinisms as Mark.
It is not in his vocabulary that Mark is most distinctive, for of
the 1270 words in Mark (besides 60 proper names) only 80 are
peculiar to him among the N. T. writers. He has 150 in common
with Matthew and Luke alone, while only 15 belong to Mark and
John and nowhere else in the N. T. About 40 words belong
only to Mark and the LXX in the Greek Bible, while Mark has
38 (besides proper names) occurring nowhere else in the N. T. or
the LXX; but these are not all real ἀπαξ λεγόμενα, for there are
the papyri! Mark seems fond of diminutives like the vernacular
κοινή in general (θυγάτριον, κοράσιον, κωνάριον, etc.); εἰμί and ἔρχομαι
with the participle are common, as in Luke (cf. 1:6, ἦν ... ἐκ-
δεσμεύοντας 1:39, ἥλθεν κηρύσσων); in fact he multiplies pictorial
participles (cf. 14:67, ἐδούσα ... ἐμβλέψασα λέγει); ἄν occurs with
past tenses of the indicative (3:11, ἦσον αὐτὸν ἐθεώρειν); he loves
the double negative (1:44, μηδὲν μηδὲν ἐπιτης); the article is com-
mon (as in N. T. generally) with the infinitive and sentences
(9:23, τὸ ἐὰν δύνη); broken and parenthetic clauses are frequent
(cf. 7:19, καθαρίζων); at times he is pleonastic (2:20, τότε ἐν
ἐκείνη τῇ ἡμέρᾳ); he uses εὐθύς (W. H. text) 41 times; he is emo-
tional and vivid, as shown by descriptive adjectives, questions
and exclamations (cf. 1:24; 2:7); the intermingling of tenses
(9:33 ff., ἐπιτράπω ... λέγει ... ἔπεμψε) is not due to ignorance of
Greek or to artificiality, as Swete well says, but to "a keen sense

1 As Simcox does in Writers of the N. T., p. 1.
3 Swete, Comm. on Mk., 1898, p. xl. Thayer (Lex. of N. T. Gk., App., p. 699) gives 102, but the text of some 32 is in dispute. Hawkins, Hor. Syn., p. 200, gives 71. Swete gives interesting lists of Mark's vocabulary from various points of view. Cf. also Salmond, Mark (Gosp. of), in Hast. D. B.
4 Swete, Comm. on Mk., p. xliii. Thieme (Die Inschr. von Magn. am Maander and das N. T., 1906, p. 4) says: "Die Gruppe der sogenannten Ha-
of the reality and living interest of the facts; there are 151 historic presents in the W. H. text against 78 in Matthew and 4 in Luke; there is frequent and discriminating use of prepositions (2:1, 2, 10, 13); the connective is usually καὶ rather than δέ, seldom οὖν; there is little artistic effect, but much simplicity and great vividness of detail; the vernacular κοινὴ is dominant with little literary influence, though εἶτε, παρεδόθην and ὁψία are held so by Norden.  

Πεπλήρωται (Mk. 1:15) is paralleled by ἐπληρώθη in a Fayum papyrus and συμπόσια συμπόσια, πρασιά πρασιάι by τάγματα τάγματα in the "Shepherd of Hermas" (Goodspeed, Bibl. World, 1906, p. 311 f.). In general Mark is not to be considered illiterate, though more Semitic in his culture than Greek. Wellhausen has noted that D has more Aramaisms in Mark's text than B. But Mark's Semitisms are not really barbarous Greek, "though Mark's extremely vernacular language often makes us think so, until we read the less educated papyri" (Moulton, Camb. Bibl. Essays, p. 492). Even his fondness for compound (even double compound) verbs is like the vernacular κοινὴ. If the influence of Peter is seen in the Gospel of Mark, it was thoroughly congenial as to language and temperament.  

He gives an objective picture of Jesus and a realistic one.

(b) MATTHEW. The writer quotes both the Hebrew and the LXX and represents Jesus as doing the same. He has 65 allusions to the 0. T., 43 of them being verbal quotations. And yet the book is not intensely Hebraistic. He has the instinct for Hebrew parallelism and the Hebrew elaboration, and his thought and general outlook are Hebraistic, though his language is "colourless Hellenistic of the average type" (Moulton, Camb. Bibl. Essays, p. 484). We need not enter into the linguistic peculiarities of Q as distinct from our Greek Matthew if that hypothesis be correct. In Mt. 9:6 we see κλίνη rather than the vulgar κράβαττος of Mark. In 12:14 Matthew has ζυμβούλιον ἐλάβον for σ. ἐδίδον of Mark (Moulton, op. cit., p. 485). He can use paronomasia as in κακοὺς κακῶς ἀπολέσει αὐτούς (21:41). He uses τότε 91 times against 6 in Mark and 14 in Luke; he has ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν 32 times, while he

paxlegomena ist bedenklich zusammengeschrumpft; es handelt sich im Neuen Testament meistens um ἀπαξ εὐρημένα, nicht ἀπαξ εἰρημένα."

2 Mk. 6:39 f.  
has ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ 4 times (Mk. 14; Lu. 32); he uses ὁ πατήρ ὁ οὐράνιος 7 times and ὁ πατήρ ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς 13 times; he 12 times quotes the 0. T. with the formula ἵνα (ὤπως) πληρωθῇ τὸ ῥήθεν or τότε ἐπληρώθη τὸ ῥήθεν, whereas Luke does not have it at all, Mark only once and John 7 times; κατ' ὄναρ occurs 6 times and nowhere else in N. T.; like Luke he uses καὶ ἵδον often (27 times) and ἦσοῦ after the genitive absolute 11 times; he alone speaks of ἡ ἁγία πόλις and πόλις τοῦ μεγάλου βασιλέως; like Mark he uses Ἱεροσόλυμα always save once (23:37), whereas Luke usually has Ἱερουσαλήμ; ὁμνύω ἐν or εἰς, common in Matthew, does not occur in the other Gospels; τάφος, not in the other Gospels, is found 6 times; συντέλεια τοῦ αἰῶνος occurs 5 times, and only once more in the N. T. (Heb.); note the pleonastic use of ἄνθρωπος as ἄνθρω- 
πος βασιλεὺς; he twice uses εἰς τὸ ὄνομα, but the other Gospels ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι or ἐπὶ; the oriental particularity is seen in using προσέρχομαι 51 times while Mark has it only 5 and Luke 10 times; συνάγειν is used by Matthew 24 times; the vernacular κοινή is manifest in many ways as in the use of μονόφθαλμος (like Mark), κολλυβισταί. Thayer in his list (Lexicon, p. 698 f.) gives 137 words occurring in Matthew alone in the N. T., but 21 are doubtful readings. Matthew has fewer compound verbs than Mark. Matthew does not use adverbial πολλά, while Mark has it 9 times. He has δὲ where Mark has καὶ about 60 times. Matthew has ὅτι after verbs of saying 38 times, while Mark has it 50 times. Of the 151 historic presents in Mark only 21 appear in Matthew, though Matthew has 93 historic presents in all. See Hawkins, Horae Synopt., p. 144 f. Matthew frequently has aorist when Mark has imperfect (see Allen, Matthew, p. xx f.). The periphrastic tenses are less common in Matthew than in Mark and Luke (op. cit., p. xxii). Matthew is less fond than Mark of redundant phrases (op. cit., p. xxvi). The Gospel is largely in the form of discourses with less narrative element than Mark. The style is more uniform and less graphic than either Mark or Luke and so less individual.1

(c) LUKE. Whether Luke knew Hebrew or Aramaic or both, cannot be stated with certainty. He did make use of Aramaic documents or sayings in Lu. 1 and 2, and in the early part of the Acts. He was also quite familiar with the LXX, as his quo-

---

tations from it show. The Semitic influence in his writings has already been discussed. "He consciously imitates the Greek Bible, and in the parts of his narrative which have their scene in Palestine he feels it congruous to retain the rough diction of his sources" (Moulton, *Camb. Bibl. Essays*, p. 479). One thing is certain about him. He had a good command of the vernacular κοινή and even attains the literary κοινή in Lu. 1:1-4 and Ac. 1:1-5; 17:16-34. The preface to his Gospel has often been compared to those of Thucydides and Herodotus, and it does not suffer by the comparison, for his modesty is an offset to their vain-glory.¹ Selwyn² thinks that Luke was a Roman citizen, and he was a fit companion for Paul. He exhibits the spirit of Paul in his comprehensive sympathy and in his general doctrinal position.³ Renan⁴ calls Luke's Gospel the most literary of the Gospels. He writes more like an historian and makes skilful use of his materials⁵ and with minute accuracy.⁶ His pictures in the Gospel have given him the title of "the painter." Norden indeed thinks that Luke alone among the N. T. writers received Atticistic influence (*Kunstprosa*, II, pp. 485 ff. Cf. Blass, *Die Rhythmen der asianischen und romischen Kunstprosa*, p. 42). But we need not go so far. His versatility is apparent in many ways, but withal he makes a faithful use of his materials.⁷ His vocabulary illustrates his breadth of culture, for he uses 750 (851 counting doubtful readings) words not occurring elsewhere in the N. T.⁸ Some of them are still ἀπαξ λέγομενα. One special item in his vocabulary is the large number of medical terms in his writings, as is natural, since he was a physician.⁹ His command of nautical phraseology is abun-

² St. Luke the Prophet, 1901, p. 81.
³ Davidson, Intr. to N. T., ii, p. 17.
⁶ Ramsay, St. Paul the Traveller, 1895; Was Christ Born at Bethlehem?; Chase, Credibility of Acts, 1902.
⁷ Vogel (Zur Charak. des Lukas, 1899, p. 19) calls attention Ito differences in the speeches of Stephen, Peter and Paul in the Acts.
⁸ See the lists of Thayer (Lex., pp. 699 ff.), Plummer (Comm., pp. lii Hawkins (Hon Syn.², pp. 201-207). Of the 851 some 312 occur in the Gospel and 478 in the Acts.
⁹ Hobart, Medical Lang. of St. Luke, 1882. Many of these occur in the LXX also, but plenty remain to show his knowledge of the medical phraseology of the time.
dantly shown in Ac. 27 and 28.1 The question of a double edition of the Gospel and Acts does not belong here.2 His language is that of a man of culture with a cosmopolite tone, who yet knows how to be popular also (Deissmann, *Light*, p. 241 f.). He not only has a rich vocabulary, but also fine command of the κοινή diction. In particular his style is more like that of Paul and the writer to the Hebrews. Among matters of detail in Luke one will note his use of the infinitives with ἔν τῷ (34 times) and of τοῦ with the infinitive (24 instances); σὺν (23 times) is frequent, though seldom in the other Gospels; καὶ αὐτός (αὐτή) he has 28 times, and often constructions like αὐτός ὁ χρόνος; καὶ ἐγένετο or ἐγένετο δέ he uses 43 times; he has δὲ καὶ 29 times; he loves πορεύομαι (88 examples); he uses εἰ as an interrogative 19 times; τὸ occurs often before a clause, especially an indirect question; he makes frequent use of καὶ ἰδοὺ; ἱκανὸς is common with him; ἦν with present participle occurs 55 times; the descriptive genitive is common; πρός with the accusative occurs 296 times with him and very often in the rest of the N.T.; he is fond of ἐνώπιον; τε (and τε καὶ) is almost confined to him in the N.T.; the optative is alone used by Luke in indirect questions and more often otherwise than by any other N. T. writer save Paul. This is a literary touch but not Atticistic. He alone makes any special use of the future participle; he is fond πᾶς and ἀπας; ὃς in temporal sense is common in Luke, once in Mark, not in Matthew; a good many anacolutha occur in Acts, and the change from direct to indirect discourse is frequent; the relative is often attracted to the case of the antecedent and often begins a sentence (Ac. 2:24); ἐπιστάτα is used 7 times (peculiar to Luke) rather than κύριος or ἱερέας; the syntax is throughout in general that of the κοινή of the time.3

---

1 Smith, Voy. and Shipw. of St. Paul, 1882.
Luke is also fond of ὁ μὲν οὗν (Acts). The historic present is rare in Luke (4 or 6 times). Luke uses the conjunctions and subordinate clauses with more literary skill than the other N. T. writers. He makes choice use of words and idioms. Cf. his report of Paul's speech on Mars Hill. He accumulates participles, especially in the Acts, but not without stylistic refinement. In the Acts he is fond of εἰς when ἐν, would ordinarily be used.

(d) JAMES. It is at first surprising that one recognized as such a thorough Jew as James, the brother of our Lord, and who used Aramaic, should have written in such idiomatic Greek. "In the skilful use of the Greek language its [Epistle of James] author is inferior to no N. T. writer." There are very few Hebraisms in the Epistle, though the tone is distinctly Jewish, perhaps the earliest Christian document in the N. T. But one cannot think that James wrote the book in Aramaic, for the indications of translation are not present, as Bishop John Wordsworth once argued. There is not, however, in James studied rhetoric or keen dialectics. The author of Hebrews, Luke and Paul far surpass him in formal rhetoric. "The Epistle of James is from the beginning a little work of literature," "a product of popular literature" (Deissmann, Light, p. 235). The writer uses asyndeton very often and many crisp aphorisms. Just as the Synoptic Gospels preserve the local colour of the countryside, so the Epistle of James is best understood in the open air of the harvest-field (ib., p. 241). The incongruity of such a smooth piece of Greek as this Epistle being written by a Palestinian Jew like James vanishes when we consider the bilingual character of the people of Palestine (cf. Moulton, Camb. Biblical Essays, p. 487). Nevertheless, the author has a Hebrew mould of thought reminiscent of O. T. phrases. The atmosphere is Jewish and "international vulgarisms" do not explain it all. The pleonasms are just those seen in the LXX, and the book has the fondness for assonance so common in the O. T. Cf. Oesterley, Exp. Gk. Test., p. 394. He uses many examples that re-

1 Thayer, Lang. of N. T., Hast. D. B.
mind one vividly of the parables of Jesus and many of the ideas and phrases of the Sermon on the Mount are here. There is also a marked similarity between this Epistle and the speech of James in Ac. 15 and the letter there given, which was probably written by him. He is fond of repeating the same word or root, as θρησκός, θρησκεία (1:26 f.); his sentences, though short, are rhythmical; he is crisp, vivid, energetic; there is little in the forms or the syntax to mark it off from the current κοινή or the N. T. representatives of it, though his idiomatic use of the pronouns is worth mentioning, as is also that of ἀγε as an interjection, the gnomic aorist, the possible nominative μεστή in apposition with γλῶσσαν (3:8). But it is in the vocabulary that James shows his individuality, for in this short epistle there are 73 (9 doubtful) words not appearing elsewhere in the N. T., some of which are found in the LXX, like παραλλαγή. The use of συναγωγή (2:2) of a Christian assembly is noteworthy (cf. ἐκκλησία in 5:14 and ἐπισυναγωγή in Heb. 10:25). He has many compound words like ἀδιάκριτος, bookish words like ἐμφύτως, philosophical terms like ὕλη, picturesque words like ὀλολύξω, some of a technical nature like πηδάλιον, some strictly classical like ἐοικε, χρή.

(e) JUDE. It is here assumed against Spitta and Biggs that Jude is prior to 2 Peter, the second chapter of which is so much like Jude. There is not in Jude the epigram of James, but he has a rugged rotundity of style that is impressive and vigorous, if a bit harsh. His style is marked by metaphor and the use of triplets. He cannot be said to be "steeped in the language of the LXX" with Chase, but there is a more Hebraistic flavour than is observed in James, his brother. He has literary affinities with some of the apocryphal books and with some of Paul's writings. If he shows a better command of Greek than 2 Peter, yet his

---

1 See this point well worked out by Mayor, James (Epis. of), Hast. D. B. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 279.
3 Ib., p. cci f. Mayor, ch. viii, has also a luminous discussion of the "Grammar of St. James," which shows conclusively that he has little that is distinctive in his grammar. Cf. Thayer (Lex., p. 708) for list of words peculiar to James.
5 Der Zweite Brief des Petrus and der Brief des Judas, 1885.
6 Comm. on St. Peter and St. Jude, 1901.
7 Jude (Epis. of), Hast. D. B.
"Greek is a strong and weighty weapon over which, however, he has not a ready command."¹ Per contra, there is little that is peculiar in his grammar, for he shows a normal use of the Greek idiom. The optative occurs twice (πληθωνεῖτη, verse 2, and ἐπιτιμήσαι, in 9) and the article is used skilfully with the participle. Cases, pronouns, tenses, free use of participles, indicate a real mastery of current Greek. The true superlative occurs in τῇ ἁγιωτάτῃ πίστει. The idiomatic use of ἔβδομος without article is seen in Jude 14. The adverbial accusative is seen in τὸ δεύτερον 5 and τὸν ἔμοιον τρόπον 7. For further details see Mayor on "Grammar of Jude and of Peter" (Comm., pp. xxvi–lv). He has 20 words (one doubtful) not found elsewhere in the N. T.² A few of them like πλανήτης occur in the LXX. Some of them have a stately ring like κύματα ἀγρία, and a number occur which are found in writers of the literary κοινὴ. He uses ἡ κοινὴ σωτηρία ("the safety of the state") in a Christian sense, and so οἱ προγεγραμμένοι ("the proscribed"). But he has also command of technical Christian terms like ἁγιοί, κλητοί, πίστεις, πνεῦμα, ψυχικός as Paul used them. The vividness of his style hardly justifies the term "poetic."³ Deissmann (Light, p. 235) considers Jude a literary epistle in popular style and "cosmopolite" in tone (p. 242), with a certain degree of artistic expression. The correctness of the Greek is quite consonant with the authorship of the brother of Jesus, since Palestine was a bilingual country (Moulton, Camb. Bibl. Essays, p. 488). Besides, the Epistle has only 25 verses.

(f) PETER. As Peter was full of impulses and emotions and apparent inconsistencies, the same heritage falls to his Epistles. The most outstanding difference between 1 Peter and 2 Peter is in the vocabulary. 1 Peter has 361 words not found in 2 Peter, while 2 Peter has 231 not in 1 Peter.⁴ Many in each case are common words like ἁγιάζω, ἑλπίζω, ἐυαγγελίζω, etc., in 1 Peter, and βασιλεία, ἐπαγγελία, ἐπιγνώσκω, etc., in 2 Peter. 1 Peter has 63 words not in the rest of the N. T., while 2 Peter has 57 (5 doubtful); but of these 120 words only one (ἀπόθεσις) occurs in both.⁵ This is surely a remarkable situation. But both of them have a

¹ Chase, Jude (Epis. of), Hast. D. B.
² See Thayer's list (Lex., p. 709). For fresh discussion of the gram. aspects of Jude and 2 Pet. see Mayor's Comm. (1908). He accepts the genuineness of Jude, but rejects 2 Peter.
³ Maier, Der Judasbrief, 1906, p. 169.
⁴ Bigg, Comm. on St. Peter and St. Jude, p. 225.
number of words in common that occur elsewhere also in the N. T., like ἀναστροφή, ψυχή, etc.\textsuperscript{1} Both use the plural of abstract nouns; both have the habit, like James, of repeating words,\textsuperscript{2} while Jude avoids repetitions; both make idiomatic use of the article; both make scant use of particles, and there are very few Hebraisms; both use words only known from the vernacular koinh; both use a number of classical words like ἀναγκαστώς (1 Peter, Plato), πλαστοῖς (Her., Eur., Xen., 2 Peter)\textsuperscript{3}; both use picture-words\textsuperscript{4}; both seem to know the Apocrypha; both refer to events in the life of Christ; both show acquaintance with Paul's Epistles, and use many technical Christian terms. But, on the other hand, 1 Peter is deeply influenced by the LXX, while 2 Peter shows little use of it; 1 Peter is more stately and elevated without affectation, while 2 Peter has grandeur, though it is, perhaps, somewhat "grandiose" (Bigg) and uses a number of rare words like παράταρσις; 1 Peter makes clear distinctions between the tenses, prepositions, and uses smooth Greek generally, while 2 Peter has a certain roughness of style and even apparent solecisms like βλέμμα (2:8), though it is not "baboo Greek" (Abbott)\textsuperscript{5} nor like modern "pigeon English"; 1 Peter shows little originality and rhetorical power, while 2 Peter, though not so original as Jude, yet has more individuality than 1 Peter.

Deissmann (Light, p. 235) says: "The Epistles of Peter and Jude have also quite unreal addresses; the letter-like touches are purely decorative. Here we have the beginnings of a Christian literature; the Epistles of Jude and Peter, though still possessing as a whole many popular features, already endeavour here and there after a certain degree of artistic expression." It is not for a grammarian to settle, if anybody can, the controversy about those two Epistles, but Simcox\textsuperscript{6} is not far wrong when he says of 2 Peter that "a superficial student is likelier than a thorough student to be certain that it is spurious." Spitta,\textsuperscript{7} Bigg\textsuperscript{8} and

\textsuperscript{2} Bigg, Comm., p. 225 f. Cf. also Schulze, Der schriftsteller. Charakter und Wert des Petrus, Judas und Jacobus, 1802.
\textsuperscript{3} Cf. excellent lists by Chase, Hast. D. B., 1 Peter and 2 Peter. Many of these words are cleared up by the pap., like δοκίμιον and ἄρετή.
\textsuperscript{5} Exp., ser. 2, v. III. Chase, Hast. D. B., p. 808\textsuperscript{a}, finds needless difficulty with παρεσφέρειν (2 Pet. 1:5), for παρά is 'alongside, ' 'in addition.'
\textsuperscript{6} Writers of the N. T., p. 64.
\textsuperscript{7} Der Zweite Brief des Petrus.
\textsuperscript{8} Comm. on St. Peter and Jude.
Zahn\(^1\) among recent writers suggest that in 2 Peter we have Peter's own composition, while in 1 Peter we have the Greek of an amanuensis who either wrote out Peter's ideas, revised them or translated Peter's Aramaic into Greek. We know that Peter had interpreters (Mark, for instance), and Josephus used such literary help and Paul had amanuenses. On the other hand Chase (Hastings' *D. B.*) and others reject 2 Peter entirely. It is worth mentioning that 2 Peter and the Apocalypse, which are the two books that furnish most of the linguistic anomalies in the N. T., both have abundant parallels among the less well-educated papyri writers, and it is of Peter and John that the terms *ἀγράμματοι* and *ἰδιωταί* are used (Ac. 4:13). As we have a problem concerning 1 Peter and 2 Peter on the linguistic side, so we have one concerning John's Gospel and Epistles on the one hand and Revelation on the other. The use of the article in 1 Peter is quite Thucydidean in 3:3 (Bigg), and eight times he uses the idiom like τὸν τῆς παροικίας ὑμῶν χρόνον (1:17) and once that seen in τὸ βούλημα τῶν ἔθνων (4:3), the rule in the N. T. The article is generally absent with the attributive genitive and with prepositions as εἰς ῥαντισμὸν ἀἵματος (1:2). There is a refined accuracy in 1 Peter's use of ὡς (Bigg), cf. 1:19; 2:16, etc. A distinction is drawn between μη and οὖ with the participle in 1:8. Once ἓνα occurs with the future indicative (3:1). The absence of ἀν and the particles ἀρα, γε, ἐπει, ἐπειδή, τε, δή, ποὺ, πῶς is noticeable. 1 Peter makes idiomatic use of μέν, while 2 Peter does not have it. 2 Peter uses the "compact" structure of article, attributive and noun, like 1 Peter (cf. 2 Pet. 2:1, 10, 16, 21), but the "uncompact" occurs also (cf. 2 Pet. 1:3, 9, 11, 14). In Jude and 2 Peter the commonest order is the uncompact (Mayor, *Jude and Second Peter*, p. xxii). The single article in 2 Pet. 1:1, 11 is used of two names for the same object. Cf. also Jude 4. The article with the infinitive does not occur in 2 Peter (nor Jude).

2 Peter has some unusual uses of the infinitive after ἔχω (2 Pet. 1:15) and as result (2 Pet. 3:1 f.). 1 Peter has the article and future participle once (3:13) ὁ κακῶσων. Both 1 Pet. (1 : 2) and 2 Pet. (1:2) have the optative πληθυνθείη (like Jude). 1 Peter twice (3:14, 17) has εἰ and the optative. See further Mayor on "Grammar of Jude and 2 Peter" (Comm., pp. xxvi–lv).

(g) PAUL. There was a Christian terminology apart from Paul, but many of the terms most familiar to us received their

\(^1\) Einl. in d. N. T. Mayor in his Comm. on Jude and 2 Peter (1907) rejects 2 Peter partly on linguistic grounds.
interpretation from him. He was a pathfinder, but had inexhaustible resources for such a task. Reseck has done good service in putting together the words of Paul and the words of Jesus. Paul's rabbinical training and Jewish cast of mind led Farrar to call him a Haggadist. Simcox says that "there is hardly a line in his writings that a non-Jewish author of his day would have written." Harnack points out that Paul was wholly unintelligible to such a Hellenist as Porphyry, but Ramsay replies that Porphyry resented Paul's use of Hellenism in favour of Christianity. But Hicks is certainly right in seeing a Hellenistic side to Paul, though Pflieiderer goes too far in finding in Paul merely "a Christianized Pharisaism" and a "Christianized Hellenism." Paul and Seneca have often been compared as to style and ideas, but a more pertinent linguistic parallel is Arrian's report of the lectures of Epictetus. Here we have the vernacular of an educated man in the second century A.D. The style of Paul, like his theology, has challenged the attention of the greatest minds. Farrar calls his language "the style of genius, if not the genius of style." There is no doubt about its individuality. While in the four groups of his letters each group has a style and to some extent a vocabulary of its own, yet, as in Shakespeare's plays, there is the stamp of the same tremendous mind. These differences of language lead some to doubt the genuineness of certain of the Pauline Epistles, especially the Pastoral Group, but criticism is coming more to the acceptance of all of them as genuine. Longinus ranks Paul as master of the dogmatic style (Παῦλος ὁ Ταρσεύς ὁντινα καὶ πρώτων φημι προιστάμενον)

1 Der Paulinismus und die Logia Jesu, 1904.
3 Writers of the N. T., p. 27.
5 Exp., 1906, p. 263.
7 Urchristentum, pp. 174-478.
8 See Excursus I to vol. I of Farrar's Life of Paul.
9 Ib., p. 623. On Paul's style cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 1, 5, 251, 276, 279, 281 f., 284 f., 289, 300-305. As to the Pastoral Epistles it has been pointed out that there is nothing in Paul's vocabulary inconsistent with the time (James, Genuin. and Author. of the Past. Epis., 1906). It is natural for one's style to be enriched with age. The Church Quart. Rev. (Jan., 1907) shows that all the new words in the Past. Epis. come from the LXX, Aristotle, κοινή writers before or during Paul's time. Cf. Exp. Times, 1907, p. 245 f.
δόγματος ἀνυποδείκτου). Baur¹ says that he has "the true ring of Thucydidès." Erasmus (ad Col. 4:16) says: "Tonat, fulgurat, meras flammas loquitur Paulus." Hausrath² correctly says that "it is hard to characterize this individuality in whom Christian fulness of love, rabbinc keenness of perception and ancient will-power so wonderfully mingle." It is indeed the most personal³ and the most powerful writing of antiquity. He disclaims classic elegance and calls himself ἰδιωτὴς τῷ λόγῳ (2 Cor. 11:6), yet this was in contrast with the false taste of the Corinthians. But Deissmann (St. Paul, p. 6) goes too far in making Paul a mere tentmaker, devoid of culture. He is abrupt, paradoxical, bold, antithetical, now like a torrent, now like a summer brook. But it is passion, not ignorance nor carelessness. He was indeed no Atticist. He used the vernacular κοινή of the time with some touch of the literary flavour, though his quotation of three heathen poets does not show an extended acquaintance with Greek literature.⁴ The difference between the vernacular and the literary κοινή is often a vanishing point. Paul's style is unhellenic in arrangement, but in Ro. 8 and 1 Cor. 13 he reaches the elevation and dignity of Plato.⁵ Certainly his ethical teaching has quite a Hellenic ring, being both philosophical and logical.⁶ Hatch⁷ considers Paul to be the foremost representative of the Hellenic influence on early Christianity. He shows some knowledge of Roman legal terms⁸ and uses arguments calling for educated minds of a high order.⁹ The grammar shows little Semitic influence. He uses many rhetorical figures such as paronomasia, paradox, etc., which will be discussed in the chapter on that sub-

⁶ Hicks, St. Paul and Hellen., 1896, p. 9.
⁷ Hibbert Lect. (Infl. of Hellen. on Chris., p. 12).
⁹ Mahaffy, Surv. of Gk. Civiliz., p. 310.
ject, some thirty kinds occurring in his writings. Farrar\(^1\) suggests that Paul had a teacher of rhetoric in Tarsus. He is noted for his varied use of the particles and writes with freedom and accuracy, though his anacolutha are numerous, as in Gal. 2:6-9. He uses prepositions with great frequency and discrimination. The genitive is employed by Paul with every variety of application. The participle appears with great luxuriance and in all sorts of ways, as imperative or indicative or genitive absolute, articular, anarthrous, etc. He is 'Εβραϊος ἐξ Ἐβραίων, but he handles his Greek with all the freedom of a Hellenist. He thinks in Greek and it is the vernacular κοινή of a brilliant and well-educated man in touch with the Greek culture of his time, though remaining thoroughly Jewish in his mental fibre. The peculiar turns in Paul's language are not due to Hebraisms, but to the passion of his nature which occasionally (cf. 2 Cor.) bursts all bounds and piles parenthesis and anacoluthon on each other in a heap. But even in a riot of language his thought is clear, and Paul often draws a fine point on the turn of a word or a tense or a case. To go into detail with Paul's writings would be largely to give the grammar of the N. T. In Phil. 2:1 we have a solecism in ἐὰν τις σπλαγχνα. His vocabulary is very rich and expressive. Thayer (Lexicon, pp. 704 ff.) gives 895 (44 doubtful) words that are found nowhere else in the N. T., 168 of them being in the Pastoral Epistles. Nageli\(^2\) has published the first part of a Pauline lexicon (from α to ε) which is very helpful and makes use of the papyri and inscriptions. The most striking thing in this study is the cosmopolitan character of Paul's vocabulary. There are very few words which are found only in the Attic writers, like αἰσχρότης, and no cases of Atticism, though even in the letters α to ε he finds some 85 that belong to the literary κοινή as shown by books, papyri and inscriptions, words like ἀθανασία, ἀθέτεω, etc. In some 50 more the meaning corresponds to that of the literary κοινή, as in ἄναλώ (Ph. 1:23). To these he adds words which appear in the literary κοινή, papyri and inscriptions after Paul's time, words like ἀρπαγμός, ἀναζήν, etc. Then there are words that, so far as known, occur first in the N. T. in the Christian sense, like ἐκκλησία. But the vernacular κοινή as set


\(^2\) Der Wortsch. des Apost. Paulus, 1905. He says (p. 86): "Es uberrascht uns nicht mehr, dass jeder paulinische Brief eine Reihe von Wortern enthalt, die den ubrigen unbekannt sind." This is well said. Each letter ought to have words not in the others.
forth in the papyri and inscriptions furnishes the ground-work of his vocabulary, when to this is added the use of the LXX (including the Apocrypha) as in ἀντιλαμβάνομαι, ἀγιάζω. Especially noteworthy are some nice Greek points that are wanting in Paul (as well as in the rest of the N. T.) and in the papyri and inscriptions, as οἶδος τέ εἰμι, αἰσθάνομαι, πάνυ, μάλα, ἔπομαι (seldom in the inscriptions), etc. Nageli sums up by saying that no one would think that Paul made direct use of Plato or Demosthenes and that his diligent use of the LXX explains all his Hebraisms besides a few Hebrew words like ἀμήν or when he translated Hebrew. His Aramaisms (like ἀββά) are few, as are his Latinisms (like πραγματίζων). "The Apostle writes in the style natural to a Greek of Asia Minor adopting the current Greek of the time, borrowing more or less consciously from the ethical writers of the time, framing new words or giving a new meaning to old words . . . His choice of vocabulary is therefore much like that of Epicurus save that his intimate knowledge of the LXX has modified it." Paul's Greek, in a word, "has to do with no school, with no model, but streams unhindered with overflowing bubbling right out of the heart, but it is real Greek" (Wilamowitz-Mollendorff, Die griechische Literatur des Altertums, 2. Aufl., p. 159. Cf. Die Kultur der Gegenwart, Tl. I, Abt. 8, 1905). Deissmann (Light, p. 234) sees Paul wholly as "a non-literary man of the non-literary class in the Imperial Age, but prophet-like rising above his class and surveying the contemporary educated world with the con-
of superior strength."

1 Walter Lock, Jour. of Theol. Stud., 1906, p. 298. Athletic figures are almost confined to Paul (and Heb.), and Ramsay (Exp., 1906, pp. 283ff.) thinks Tarsus left this impress on him. A further discussion of Paul's rhetoric will be found in the chapter on Figures of Speech. Cf. J. Weiss, Beitr. zur paulin. Rhetorik, 1897; Blass, Die Rhythm. der asien. and rain. Kunstpr., 1905. Deiss. (Theol. Literaturzeit., 1906, pp. 231 ff.) strongly controverts Blass' idea that Paul used conscious rhythm. Cf. Howson, Metaph. of St. Paul. On Paul's Hellen. see Hicks, St. Paul and Hellen. (Stud. Bibl. et Feel., 1896); Curtius, Paulus in Athens (Gesamm. Abhandl., 1894, pp. 527 ff.); Ramsay, Cities of St. Paul (pp. 9, 30-41); Heinrici, Zum Hellen. des Paulus (2 Cor. in Meyer); Wilamowitz-Moll., Die griech. Lit. des Altert. (p. 157); G. Milligan, Epis. to the Th. (1908, p. 1v). Paul had a full and free Gk. vocab., thought in Gk., wrote in Gk. as easily as in Aramaic. But his chief indebtedness seems to be to the LXX, the vernac. κοινή and the ethical Stoical writers. Milligan (see above, pp. lli–lv) has a very discriminating discussion of Paul's vocab. and style. Garvie (Stud. of Paul and His Gospel, p. 6 f.) opposes the notion that Paul had a decided Gk. influence.
Writings of Hebrews. Bruce\(^1\) is certain that the author was not a disciple of Paul, while Simcox\(^2\) is willing to admit that he may have belonged once to the school of Philo, as Paul did to that of Gamaliel. Harnack suggests Priscilla as the author. If Paul had "imperial disregard for niceties of construction," Hebrews shows "a studied rhetorical periodicity."\(^3\) Von Soden\(^4\) considers that in the N. T. Hebrews is "the best Greek, scarcely different in any point from that of contemporary writers." This is the more surprising when one observes the constant quotation of the LXX. The grammatical peculiarities are few, like the frequent use of παρά in comparison, ἐπεί with apodosis (protasis suppressed), the perfect tense to emphasize the permanence of the Scripture record which sometimes verges close to the aorist (4:3), the frequent participles, the varied use of particles, periphrases, the absence of the harsher kinds of hiatus, the presence of rhythm more than in any of the N. T. books, and in general the quality of literary style more than in any other N. T. writing. Westcott notes "the parenthetical involutions." "The calculated force of the periods is sharply distinguished from the impetuous eloquence of St. Paul." The writer does not use Paul's rhetorical expressions τί ὄν; τί γάρ; Moulton (Camb. Bibl. Essays, p. 483) notes the paradox that the Epistle to the Hebrews was written by one who apparently knew no Hebrew and read only the LXX. The use of subordinate sentences is common and the position of words is carefully chosen. There is frequent use of μέν, and τε as well as ὅθεν and διό. The optative occurs only once and illustrates the true κοινή. The studied style appears particularly in ch. 11 in the use of πιστεῖ. The style is hortatory, noble and eloquent, and has points of contact with Paul, Luke and Peter. The vocabulary, like the style, is less like the vernacular than any book in the N. T. Of 87 words which are found in the LXX and in this book alone in the N. T., 74 belong to the ancient literary works and only 13 to the vernacular. 18 other words peculiar to this Epistle are found in the literary κοινή. There are 168 (10 doubtful) words in Hebrews that appear nowhere else in the N. T. (cf. Thayer, Lexicon, p. 708). These 168 words are quite characteristic also, like ἀφοράν, αἰσθητήριον, πανήγυρις, πρωτοτόκια. Writings of the N. T., p. 42.

\(^1\) D. B., Hebrews.
\(^2\) Thayer, Lang. of the N. T., Hast. D. B.
cott\(^1\) considers the absence of words like \(\text{εὐαγγέλιον}, \text{μυστήριον}, \text{πληρώω}\) remarkable. The chief bond of contact in the vocabulary of Hebrews with the \(\text{koinή}\) is in the use of "sonorous" words like \(\text{ἀντίκαθιστήμι}, \text{εὐπερίστατος}\), but the author is by no means an Atticist, though he does approach the literary \(\text{koinή}\). Deissmann\(^2\) indeed considers Hebrews as alone belonging "to another sphere: as in subject-matter it is more of a learned theological work, so in form it is more artistic than the other books of the N. T." He even feels that it "seems to hang in the background like an intruder among the N. T. company of popular books" (\textit{Light}, p. 243).

(i) JOHN. The Johannine question at once confronts the modern grammarian who approaches the books in the N. T. that are accredited to John. It is indeed a difficult problem.\(^3\) There is a triple difficulty: the Gospel presents a problem of its own (with the Epistles), the Apocalypse also has its burden, and there is the serious matter of the relation of the Gospel and Apocalypse on the linguistic side. Assuming that John the Apostle wrote the Gospel, Epistles and Apocalypse, we have the following situation. The Gospel of John has a well-defined character. There are few Hebraisms in detail beyond the use of \(\text{ὑοὶ φωτός} (12:36), \text{καί} in the sense of "and yet" or "but" (cf. Hebrew)\(^4\) and \text{καί} in LXX\(^5\) as in 20:14, the absence of the particles save \(\text{οὐ}\), and the constant co-ordination of the sentences with rhythmical parallelism. In the formal grammar the Greek is much like the vernacular (and literary) \(\text{koinή}\) but the cast of thought is wholly Hebrew. Ewald\(^4\) rightly calls its spirit "genuinely Hebrew," while Renan\(^5\) even says that the Gospel "has nothing Hebrew" in its style. Godet\(^6\) calls the Gospel a Hebrew body with a Greek dress and quotes Luthardt as saying that it "has a Hebrew soul in the Greek language." Schaff\(^7\) compares Paul to an Alpine torrent and John to an Alpine lake. There is indeed in this Gospel great simplicity and profundity. John's vocabulary is somewhat limited, some 114 words (12 doubtful, Thayer, \textit{Lexicon}, p. 704) be-

\(^1\) Comm. on Heb., p. xlv.
\(^3\) Cf. Drummond, Charac. and Author. of the Fourth Gosp., 1904; Sanday, Crit. of the Fourth Gosp., 1905; Bacon, The Fourth Gosp: in Res. and Debate, 1910.
\(^4\) Quoted in Schaff, Comp. to Gk. N. T., p. 67.
\(^5\) Ib. On p. 73 Schaff puts Jo. 1:18 side by side in Gk. and Heb The Heb. tone of the Gk. is clear.
\(^7\) Comp. to Gk. N. T., p. 66.
longing to the Gospel alone in the N. T. But the characteristic words are repeated many times, such as ἀλήθεια, ἀμαρτία, γινώσκω, δόξα, ζωή, κόσμος, κρίσις, λόγος, μαρτυρέω, πιστεύω, σκότος, φῶς, etc. "He rings the changes on a small number of elementary words and their synonyms." But words like έκκλησία, εὐαγγέλιον, μετάνοια, παραβολή, πίστις, σοφία do not occur at all. However, too much must not be inferred from this fact, for πιστεύω and εὐαγγελίζω do appear very often. Other characteristics of the Gospel are the common use of ἵνα in the non-final sense, the distinctive force of the pronouns (especially ἐκείνος, ἔμοι, ἴδιος), the vivid use of the tenses (like Mark), the unusual use of οὐν, ζωή αἰώνιος is frequent (21 times, and more than all the rest of the N. T.), frequent repetition, favourite synonyms. The Johannine use of καί, δέ, ἀλλά, γάρ, εἰ, ὅτι, μή, οعلامة, etc., is all interesting (see Abbott). The prepositions, the cases, the voices, the modes all yield good results in Abbott's hands. The Epistles of John possess the same general traits as the Gospel save that οὐν does not occur at all save in 3 Jo. 8 while ὅτι is very common. Καί is the usual connective. Only eight words are common alone to the Gospel and the Epistles in the N. T., while eleven are found in the Epistles and not in the Gospel. Westcott, however, gives parallel sentences which show how common phrases and idioms recur in the Gospel and the First Epistle. The Apocalypse has much in common with the Gospel, as, for instance, no optative is found in either; ὅπως is not in either save in Jo. 11:57; ἵνα is very common in Gospel, 1 John and Apocalypse, more so than in any other book of the N. T. save Mark, and ἵνα μή is very common in Gospel and Apocalypse; οὐν is almost absent from the Apocalypse

1 Abb., Joh. Vocab., p. 348.
2 Ib., p. 158. Abbott has luminous remarks on such words as πιστεύω, ἐξουσία, and all phases of John's vocabulary.
3 Occurs 195 times in the Gospel and only 8 of the instances in the discourses of Jesus. Nearly all of these are in the transitional sense. Cf. Abb., Joh. Gr., 1906, p. 165.
4 On Joh. Synon. (like θεωρέω, ὁράω) see ch. III of Abbott's Joh. Vocab., 1905. In John ὁράω is not used in present (though often ἐώρακα), but βλέπω, and θεωρέω. Luke uses it also in present only 3 times, Heb. 2, Jas. 2, Ac. 8, Apoc. 18. On the whole subject of Joh. gr. see the same author's able work on Joh. Gr. (1906), which has a careful and exhaustive discussion of the most interesting points in the Gospel.
as in Epistles and the discourses of Jesus, being common as transitional particle in narrative portion of Gospel\(^1\); ἄρα, common in other Evangelists and Paul, is not found in Gospel, Epistles or Apocalypse; μὲν, so common in Matthew, Luke (Gospel and Acts), Paul and Hebrews, is not found at all in Apocalypse and John's Epistles and only eight times in his Gospel; ὄστε, which appears 95 times elsewhere in the N. T., is not found in Gospel, Epistles or Apocalypse save once in Jo. 3:16; μὴ ποτε, fairly common in Matthew, Luke and Hebrews, does not occur in John's writings save in Jo. 7:26 (Paul uses it also once only, 2 Tim. 2:25, preferring μὴ πώς, which he alone uses, 13 exx.); μαρτυρέω is more frequent in Gospel than in 1 John and Apocalypse, but μαρτυρία is as common in Apocalypse as Gospel; ὄνομα is frequent in Gospel and Apocalypse as applied to God; οἶδα is found less often in Apocalypse than in Gospel; ἀληθινός is common in Gospel, Epistle and Apocalypse, though ἀληθής and ἀληθεία do not appear in the Apocalypse; νικάω occurs only once in Gospel (16:33), but is common in 1 John and Apocalypse; διδωμι is more frequent in Gospel and Apocalypse than in any other N. T. book (even Matt.); δεικνύμι appears about the same number of times in Gospel and Apocalypse; λόγος is applied to Christ in Jo. 1:1 and Rev. 19:13; the peculiar expression καὶ νῦν ἐστίν which occurs in John 5:25 is similar to the καὶ ἐσμεν of 1 Jo. 3:1, and the καὶ οὐκ εἰσί of Rev. 2:2, 3:9; all are fond of antithesis and parenthesis and repeat the article often. Over against these is to be placed the fact that the Apocalypse has 156 (33 doubtful) words not in the Gospel or Epistles, and only nine common alone to them. Certainly the subject-matter and spirit are different, for the Son of Thunder speaks in the Apocalypse. Dionysius\(^2\) of Alexandria called the language Of the Apocalypse barbaric and ungrammatical because of the numerous departures from usual Greek assonance. The solecisms in the Apocalypse are not in the realm of accidence, for forms like ἄφθικς, πέπτωκαν, διδώ, etc., are common in the vernacular κοινή. The syntactical peculiarities are due partly to constructio ad sensum and variatio structurae. Some ("idiotisms" according to Dionysius) are designed, as the expression of the unchangeableness of God by ἄπο ὦν (1:4). As to ὡν the relative use of ὡν in Homer may be recalled. See also ὡν οὐάι in 11:14, ζημοίου νίον in 14:14, οὐαὶ τοῦς κ. in 8:13. Benson

---

\(^1\) Similarly τε, which occurs 160 times in the Acts, is found only 8 times in Luke's Gospel. Cf. Lee, Speaker's Comm., p. 457.

\(^2\) Apud Eus. H. E., VII, xxv.
(Apocalypse) speaks of "a grammar of Ungrammar," which is a bold way of putting it. But the "solecisms" in the Apocalypse are chiefly cases of anacolutha. Concord is treated lightly in the free use of the nominative (1:5; 2:20; 3:12), in particular the participles λῆγων, and ἔχων (4:1; 14:14); in the addition of a pronoun as in 3:8; in gender and number as in 7:9; in the use of parenthesis as in 1:5. Cf. Swete, Apocalypse, p. cxviii

The accusative, as in the vernacular κοινή (cf. modern Greek) has encroached upon other cases as with κατηγορεῖν (12:10). The participle is used freely and often absolutely in the nominative as ὁ νικῶν (2:26). Most of the variations in case are with the participle or in apposition, as ὁ μάρτυς after Χριστοῦ (1:5). Moulton¹ has called attention to the numerous examples of nominative apposition in the papyri, especially of the less educated kind. The old explanation of these grammatical variations was that they were Hebraisms, but Winer² long ago showed the absurdity of that idea. It is the frequency of these phenomena that calls for remark, not any isolated solecism in the Apocalypse. Moulton³ denies that the Apocalypse has any Hebraisms. That is possibly going too far the other way, for the book is saturated with the apocalyptic images and phrases of Ezekiel and Daniel and is very much like the other Jewish apocalypses. It is not so much particular Hebraisms that meet us in the Apocalypse as the flavour of the LXX whose words are interwoven in the text at every turn. It is possible that in the Apocalypse we have the early style of John before he had lived in Ephesus, if the Apocalypse was written early. On the other hand the Apocalypse, as Bigg holds true

² W.-M., p. 671.
³ Prol., p. 9. Cf. also Julicher, Intr. to N. T.; Bousset, Die Offenb. Joh., 1896; Lee, Speaker's Comm. on Rev. Swete (Apoc. of St. John, 1906, p. cxx) thinks that John's "eccentricities of syntax belong to more than one cause: some to the habit which he may have retained from early years of thinking in a Semitic language; some to the desire of giving movement and vivid reality to his visions, which leads him to report them after the manner of shorthand notes, jotted down at the time; some to the circumstances in which the book was written." The Apoc. "stands alone among Gk. literary writings in its disregard of the ordinary rules of syntax, and the success with which syntax is set aside without loss of perspicuity or even of literary power." Swete welcomes gladly the researches of Deissmann, Thumb and Moulton, but considers it precarious to compare a literary document like the Apoc. with slips in business letters, etc.
of 2 Peter, may represent John's real style, while the Gospel and Epistles may have been revised as to Greek idioms by a friend or friends of John in Ephesus (cf. Jo. 21:24). With this theory compare Josephus' War and Antiquities. One is slow (despite Moffatt's positiveness in the Exp. Gk. Test.), in the light of Dante, Shakespeare, Milton, to say that John could not have written the Apocalypse, though it be the last of his books. Besides what has been said one must recall that the Apocalypse was composed on the Isle of Patmos, in some excitement, and possibly without careful revision, while the Gospel and First Epistle probably had care and the assistance of cultured friends. At any rate the vernacular κοινή is far more in evidence in the Apocalypse than in the Gospel and Epistles. "As Dante had the choice between the accepted language of education, Latin, and the vulgar tongue, so St. John had to choose between a more artificial kind of Greek, as perpetuated from past teaching, and the common vulgar speech, often emancipated from strict grammatical rules, but nervous and vigorous, a true living speech."

VII. N. T. Greek Illustrated by the Modern Greek Vernacular. Consant use will be made of the modern Greek in the course of the Grammar. Here a brief survey is given merely to show how the colloquial κοινή survives in present-day Greek vernacular. Caution is necessary in such a comparison. The literary modern Greek has its affinities with the literary κοινή or even with the Atticists, while the vernacular of to-day often shows affinities with the less educated writers of papyri of the N. T. time. The N. T. did indeed have a great effect upon the later κοινή when theological questions were uppermost at Alexandria and Constantinople. The cleavage between the literary and the vernacular became wider also. But apart from ecclesiastical terms there is a striking likeness at many points between the Vernacular κοινή and modern Greek vernacular, though modern Greek has, of course, Germanic and other elements not in the κοινή. The diminutive is more common in the modern Greek than in

---

3 Thumb, Indoger. Forsch., 1903, p. 359 f. Boltz (Die hell. Spr., 1881, p. 10) quotes Rangabe as saying that the mod. Gk. is as far removed from that of the LXX as from that of Xenophon.
the κοινή and usually in τ, as τό ἀρνύ. The optative is rare in the N. T.; in the modern Greek it has disappeared. The infinitive is vanishing before ένα in the N. T.; in the modern Greek νά has displaced it completely save with auxiliary verbs. ¹ The accusative² in modern Greek has made still further headway and is used even with ἀπό and all prepositions. The μι verb has entirely vanished in modern Greek vernacular except εἶναι. The forms in —οςαν, —οςαυ are very common, as are the α forms in aorist and imperfect. The forms in —ες (—ας) for perfect and first aorist are also frequent. The middle voice has almost vanished as a separate voice (cf. Latin). Prepositions in the vernacular (chiefly εις) have displaced the dative. The superlative is usually expressed by the article and the comparative. Kennedy³ gives an interesting list of words that appear either for the first time or with a new sense in the LXX or the N. T. (or the papyri) that preserve that meaning in the modern Greek, as δώμα (‘roof’), θυσιαστήριν (‘altar’), καθηγητής (‘professor,’ in N. T. ‘master’), εξένοδοχεῖον (‘hotel,’ in N. T. εξένοδοχέω = ‘entertain strangers’), παιδεύω (‘chastise,’ from παῖς), φθάνω (‘arrive’), χορτάζω (‘feed’), etc. The list could be greatly extended, but let these suffice.⁴ A specimen of modern Greek vernacular is given from Pallis’ translation of Jo. 1:6-8: Βγήκε ἐνας ἀνθρωπος σταλμένος ἀπό το θεό τ’ θυμόν του ἰωάνης. Αυτός ἵρθε γιά κήρυγμα γιά νά κηρύξει το φως, πού νά κάνει κι’ ὅλοι νά πιστέψουν. Δέν είταν ἐκείνος το φως παρά γιά νά κηρύξει το φως. The literary modern Greek in these verses differs very little from the original N. T. text, only in the use of ὑπήρξεν, ὄνομαζόμενος, διά νά, δέν, ἤτο. Moulton⁵ in an interesting note gives some early illustrations of modern Greek vernacular. In the second century A.D. ἐστο; is

¹ It still persists in Pontic-Cappadocian Γκ. according to Thumb, Theol. Literaturzeit., 1903, p. 421.
² There is a riot of indifference as to case in the vernacular Byz. Γκ., as σύν τής γυναικός. Cf. Mullach, Gr. der griech. Vulgarspr., p. 27. Jean Psichari, Ρόδα καὶ Μήλα (1906), has written a defence of the mod. Γκ. vernac. and has shown its connection with the ancient vernac. The mod. Γκ. has like freedom in the use of the genitive case (cf. Thumb, Handb., pp. 32 ff.). Prepositions have displaced the partitive gen., the genitive of material and of comparison (abl.), in mod. Γκ. The mod. Γκ. shows the acc. displacing the gen. and dat. of the older Γκ. (op. cit., p. 35 ff.) after ἀκολουθῶ, ἀκούω, ἀπαντῶ, etc. The double acc. goes beyond anc. Γκ. usages (op. cit., p. 36) as ὁλα ροδίνα τά βλέπω, ‘I see everything rosy.’
³ Sour. of N. T. Γκ., pp. 153 ff.
⁴ Cf. Thumb’s Handb. der neugr. Volksspr. (1895); V. and D., Handb. to Mod. Γκ. (1887); Thumb-Angus, Handb. of Mod. Γκ. Vernac. (1912).
⁵ Prol., p. 234.
found in OP 528. He quotes Thumb (BZ ix, 234) who cites from an inscription of the first century A.D. ἔχουσαι as nominative and accusative plural. And Ramsay (Cities and Bish., II, p. 537) gives ἐπιτηδεύσουν as third plural form on a Phrygian inscription of the third century A.D. As one illustration note Paul's use of κατέχω (Ro. 1:18). In modern Greek dialects κατέχω=ῆξεύρω, 'I know.'
PART II

ACCIDENCE
CHAPTER V

WORD–FORMATION

I. Etymology. Grammar was at first a branch of philosophy among the Greeks, and with the foundation of the Alexandrian library a new era began with the study of the text of Homer.1 After Photius etymology "rules the whole later grammatical literature."2 The Stoic grammarians were far better in etymology than in anything else and we owe them a real debt in this respect, though their extended struggle as to whether analogy or anomaly ruled in language has left its legacy in the long lists of "exceptions" in the grammars.3 In some grammars the term etymology is still applied to the whole discussion of Forms or Accidence, Formenlehre. But to-day it is generally applied to the study of the original form and meaning of words.4 The word ἐτυμολογία is, of course, from ἐτυμος and λόγος, and ἐτ-ὑμος, meaning 'real' or 'true,' is itself from the same root ἐτ— from which ἐτ-εός, 'true,' comes. So also ἐτ-ἀζω, 'to test.' Compare also Sanskrit sat-yas, 'true,' and sat-yam, 'truth,' as well as the Anglo-Saxon soth, 'sooth.' Τὸ ἐτυμον is the true literal sense of a word, the root. No more helpful remark can be made at this point than to insist on the importance of the student's seeing the original form and import of each word and suffix or prefix. This is not all that is needed by any means, but it is a beginning, and the right beginning.5 "It was the comparative study of languages that first

1 Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet. et Et. des Formes Grq. et Lat., 1901, p. 245.
2 Reitzenstein, Gesch. der griech. Etym., 1897, p. vi.
3 Steinthal, Gesch. der Sprachw. etc., 2. pp. 347 ff.
4 "ὁ ἐτυμος λόγος heissit ja auch 'die wahre Bedeutung '; dass man hier ἐτυμος sagte und nicht ἀληθής, liegt daran, dass ionische Sophisten, namentlich Prodikos, die E tymologie und Synonymik aufbrachten." F. Blass, Hermen.
gave etymology a surer hold."¹ Curtius means etymology in the modern sense, to be sure.

II. Roots.² It is not to be supposed that what are called roots necessarily existed in this form. They represent the original stock from which other words as a rule come. What the original words actually were we have no means of telling. They were not necessarily interjections, as some have supposed. Mere articulate sounds, unintelligible roots, did not constitute speech. Some interjections are not roots, but express ideas and can often be analyzed, as "jemine"= Jesu Domine.³ Others, like most nursery words, are onomatopoetic. There is, besides, no evidence that primitive man could produce speech at will.⁴ But a few root-words appear like the Latin i (‘go’) and probably the Greek ἴ (though ἴ is found in Epic Greek). The number of Greek roots is comparatively few, not more than 400, probably less. Harris⁵ observes that of the 90,000 words in a Greek lexicon only 40,000 are what are termed classic words. The new words, which are constantly made from slang or necessity, are usually made from one of the old roots by various combinations, or at any rate after the analogy of the old words.⁶ Words are "the small coin of language,"⁷ though some of them are sesquipedalian enough. There seem to be two ultimate kinds of words or roots, verbs and pronouns, and they were at last united into a single word as φη-μί, ‘say I.’

² The whole subject of N. T. lexicography calls for reworking. Deissmann is known to be at work on a N. T. Lex. in the light of the pap. and the inscr. Meanwhile reference can be made to his Bible Studies, Light, and his New Light on the N. T.; to J. H. Moulton's articles in the Exp. (1901, 1903, 1904, 1908); to Kennedy's Sour. of N. T. Gk. (for LXX and N. T.); to Thayer's N. T. Gk. Lex. and his art. on Lang., of N. T. in Hast. D. B.; to Cremer's Theol. Lex. of N. T.; to Mayser's Gr. d. griech. Pap. For the LXX phenomena see careful discussion of Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 112-136. Nothing like an exhaustive discussion of N. T. word-formation can yet be attempted. But what is here given aims to follow the lines of historical and comparative grammar. We must wait in patience for Deissmann's Lex. George Milligan is at work with Moulton on his Vocabulary of the New Testament. Cf. also Nageli, Der Wortsch. des Apost. Paulus, a portion of which has appeared. Especially valuable is Abb. Joh. Vocab. (1905). For the LXX cf. also Swete, Intr. to 0. T. in Gk., pp. 302-304. The indices to the lists of inscr. and pap. can also be consulted with profit.
⁵ MS. notes on Gk. Gr.
⁷ Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 235.
It does not seem possible to distinguish between verbal and nominal roots, as in English to-day the same word is indifferently verb or noun, "walk," for instance. The modern view is that verbs are nominal in origin (Hirt, Handb., p. 201). The pronominal roots may furnish most of the suffixes for both verbs (δήματα) and nouns (ονόματα). Verbs, substantives and pronouns (αντωνομία), therefore, constitute the earliest parts of speech, and all the others are developed from these three. Adjectives (ονόματα ἐπίθετα) are merely variations from substantives or pronouns. Adverbs (ἐπιρήματα) are fixed case-forms of substantives or adjectives or pronouns. Prepositions (προθέσεις) are adverbs used with nouns or with verbs (in composition). Conjunctions (σύνδεσμοι) are adverbs used to connect words and sentences in various ways. Intensive (ἐπίτασεως) particles are adverbs from nominal or pronominal stems of a special kind. Speech has made a very small beginning with isolated words; in fact the sentence is probably as old as human speech, though we first discuss words. The number of root-words with the mere ending is not very great, but some few survive even in the N. T., where the case-ending is added directly to the root, as ἄλ-ς (ἄλα, Mk. 9:50), with which compare Latin sal, English sal-t. So ναῦς (Ac. 27:41), Latin nau-is. Instead of ἄλς the N. T. elsewhere follows the κοινή in using τὸ ἄλας, and τὸ πλοῖον instead of ναῦς. In ποῦς (πόδ-ς) the root is only slightly changed after the loss of δ (analogy of ὁς or ὁδοὺς). The pronoun ἐς (ἐν-ς) is similarly explained. Pronouns and numerals use the root directly. In verbs we have many more such roots used directly with the personal endings without the thematic vowel o/ε and sometimes without any tense-suffix for the present, like φη-μι (φῶ-μι). The whole subject of verbs is much more complicated, but in general the non-thematic forms are rapidly disappearing in the N. T., while in the vernacular modern Greek the non-thematic or μι verbs are no longer used (save in the case of εἰμαι), as δίδω for δίδω-μι, for instance. A number of these roots go back to the common Indo-Germanic stock. Take δίκ, the root of δέκυν-μι. The Sanskrit has dic-a-mi; the Latin dic-o, in-dic-o, jü-dex; the Gothic teiho; the German zeigen. Take the thematic verb σκέπ-το-μαι. The Sanskrit root is spac (‘look’), spac= spy. The Zend has cpac, the Latin spec-io, spec-alum, spec-to, etc. In the Greek root metathesis has taken place and σπεκ has become

1 Uber das relative Alter der einen oder der anderen Wortklasse sich nichts Sicheres ausmachen" (Vogrinz, Gr. des horn. Dial., 1889, p. 164).
skep in σκέπ-το-μαι (‘to spy out’), σκοπ-ή (‘a watching’), σκοπ-ιά (‘a watch-tower’), σκοπ-ός (‘a spy,’ ‘a goal’), σκόψ’ (‘owl’). 1 Cf. Ph. 3:14 κατά σκοπόν. The old Greek writers 2 made μυστήριον = μύς τηρεῖν!

III. Words with Formative Suffixes. The Indo-Germanic languages have a highly developed system of affixes, 3 prefixes, infixes, suffixes. The suffixes are used for various purposes, as case-endings of nouns, as personal endings of verbs, as aids in the creation of words (formative suffixes). The Greek is rich in these formative suffixes, which are more or less popular at various periods of the language. The suffixes in the Greek are quite similar to those in the older Sanskrit. When the formative suffixes are used directly with the root, the words are called primitives; when the stem of the word is not a root, it is called a derivative. Hence there are primitive and derivative verbs, primitive and derivative substantives, primitive and derivative adjectives. There are, of course, in the N. T. Greek no "special" formative suffixes, though the κοινή does vary naturally in the relative use of these terminations from the earlier language. In the modern Greek a number of new suffixes appear like the diminutives –πουλός (πωλός, ‘foal’), κτλ. "In all essentials the old patterns are adhered to" in the N. T. word-formation.4 See also Hadley-Allen (pp. 188 ff.) for the meaning of the Greek formative suffixes.

(a) VERBS. On the stem-building of the verb one can consult Hirt or Brugmann for the new point of view.5 Without attempting a complete list of the new words in the κοινή, I give what is, I trust, a just interpretation of the facts concerning the new words appearing from the time of Aristotle on that we find in the N. T. Hence some classes of words are not treated.

1. Primary or Primitive Verbs. No new roots are used to make verbs with old or new terminations 6 in the κοινή. The ten-

2 Blass, Hermen. und Krit, Bd. I, p. 191. Heine, Synon. des neutest. Griech., 1898, has a very helpful discussion of N. T. word-building (pp. 28-65), but does not distinguish the κοινή words.
dency is all towards the dropping of the non-thematic or μι forms both with the simple root and with the suffix. The remnants of the μι forms, which are not quite obsolete in the N. T., will be given in the chapter on the Conjugation of the Verb. Here may be mentioned ἀπόλλυμι, which uses the suffix –νυ. Thematic verbs made from the root by the addition of ο/ε are very common, like λέγων, λείπων (λιπ). The N. T., as the κοινή, has new presents like κρύβω, νίπτω, χύννω, etc. These kept increasing and are vouched for by modern Greek. Cf. Thumb, Handbook, pp. 129 ff.

2. Secondary or Derivative Verbs. Not all of these verbs are formed from nouns; many come also from verbs. Denominatives are made from nouns, like τιμάω from τιμή, while verbal verbs (post-verbals, Jannaris) are made from verbs. The simple denominatives, ending in –ω, –έω, –εύω, –άζω, –ίζω are not always distinguished from the intensive verbal verbs or the causative denominatives, though –άω, –άίνω, –ύνω more commonly represent the latter. ὑπάνω (from ὑπτω) besides Ac. 1:3 appears in the LXX, Hermes, Tebt. Papyri. Cf. also the rare λιμπάνω. The κοινή is rich in new verbs in --νω. Verbs in –άω are common in the N. T., as in the κοινή, like τιμάω, διψάω, ζάω, etc. Ἀνά-ζάω occurs in Artem., Photius, inscriptions, etc. In the modern Greek verbs in –άω have gained at the expense of verbs in –εω. They belong to the oldest Greek speech and come from feminine stems in –α. Verbs in –άζω show great increase in the N. T. as in the κοινή and modern Greek, like ἀγίαζω (ἀγίος, ἀγίζω, LXX), ἐνταφιάζω (ἐντάφια, Anthol., Plut.), νηπιάζω (νηπίος) in Hippocrates, στυγνάζω (from στυγνός) in Schol. on AEsch. and in LXX στυνάζω (στυνίον, eccl., Byz.). Πυρράζω (Mt. 16:2 f.) occurs in LXX and Philo, but W. H. reject this passage. The majority of the new verbs in --νω are compound, as ἀσχημονέω, πληροφορέω (πληρο-φόρος, LXX, pap.), but δινατέω (only in N. T.) is to be noticed on the other side. Ἀκαίρεω (from ἀκαίρος) is found

1 On history of the μι verbs see Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 234. In the pap. verbs in -μι keep the non-thematic form in the middle, while in the active both appear. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 3S.
3 Harris, MS. Notes on Gk. Gr.
6 Thumb, Handb. of Mod. Gk., V., p. 135 f. There is frequent interchange between forms in –άζω, –ίζω and –ώ.
7 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 61.
in Diodorus; εὐπροσωπέω (εὐπρόσωπος) is found in Gal. 6:12 (in papyri, 114 B.C.; ὅπως εὐπροσωπῶμεν, Tebt. P. No. 1912 f.). Cf. Moulton, *Expositor*, 1903, p. 114. These verbs have always been very numerous, though –ἐω gradually retreats before –ἀω. Γρηγορέω (Arist., LXX, Jos.) is formed from the perfect ἐγρήγορα, which is not in the N. T., but Winer long ago found a similar form in ἐπικεχειρέω (Papyri Taurin. 7). 1 'Ελαττούνεω (Arist., LXX, pap.) is from ἐλλατον. Ελλογέω (and –ἀω) is in inscriptions and papyri. Ἐξεκολουθέω (Polyb., Plut., inscriptions) is not "biblical" as Thayer called it. Αὐθεντέω (αὐθέντης, αὐτός and ἐντεα) is in the κοινή, according to Moeris, for the Attic αὐτοδικέω. (In the late papyri see Deissmann, *Light*, p. 85.) No great distinction in sense exists between –ἀω and –ἐω.

Verbs in –ἐω are also very common and are formed from a great variety of stems. Ἀἰχμαλωτέω (from αἰχμάλωτος) is read in 2 Tim. 3:6 only by D ε EKL al. p1. Or., the form in –ιζω being genuine. It is, however, common in the LXX, as is ἐγκρατεύμαι (1 Cor. 9:25), from ἐγκρατής (in Aristotle). Γεμιντεύω (not γαμιντεύω, Dio Chrys., Plut., Dio Cass., etc.) is found in 1 Cor. 4:11 and is from γαμινήτης. Ζήλευε (Simplic., Democr.), not ζήλῳσον, is the correct text in Rev. 3:19 (so W. H. with ABC against ΚΡ). Both are from ζήλος. Θριαμβεύω (from θρίαμβος) is in the literary κοινή. 2 Ἰερατεύω (Lu. 1:8) is from ἱερεύς and is found in the LXX, the κοινῆ writers and the inscriptions. Μεσιτεύω (Heb. 6:17) is from μεσίτης and is found in Arist., Polyb. and papyri. Μαθητεύω is from μαθήτης (Plut., Jambl.); ὀλοθρεύω (Heb. 11:28, LXX) is from ὀλθερος (ADE read ὀλθερέων in Heb. 11:28). In Ac. 3:23 ἔξολοθρεύω) is the form accepted by W. H. after the best MSS. of the LXX. 3 Παγιδεύω (Mt. 22:15) is from παγίς and occurs in the LXX. Παρα-βολεύμαι is the correct word in Ph. 2:30 against CKLP which read παρα-βολεύμαι. The word is from παρά-βολος, which has not been found in other writers, but an inscription (ii/A.D.) at Olbia on the Black Sea has the very form παραβολευσάμενος used by Paul (cf. Deissmann, *Light*, p. 84). Πέρπερεύμαι (1 Cor. 13:4) is made from πέρπερος and is found in

1 W.-M., p. 115.
Antoninus. Χρηστεύομαι is from χρηστός. Three verbs in –ω appear which are made from verbs in –άω and –εώ, viz. άλήω (άλεω), κυήω (κυάω) νήω (νέω), one (νήω) being found also in Plato Polit. (p. 289 c). Cf. modern Greek θέω (τίθημι).

The causative ending –όω is usually formed on noun-stems and is very common, sometimes supplanting verbs in –εώω or –ίςω, as άνα-καινώ (Isocrates, άνακαινίζω), άναστατώ (from άνάστατος, LXX, papyri. Cf. άναστατοί με, 'he upsets me,' Deissmann, Light, p. 81); άφ-υπνώ (Anthol., classical άφυπνίζω); δεκατώ (classical δεκατεύω); δολίω (LXX, from δόλιος); δυσαμώ (LXX, eccl. and Byz., from δύσαμι); έξουδενώ (often in LXX, but W. H. read έξουδενέω in Mk. 9:12, Plutarch even έξουδενίζω); θεμελίω (LXX) is from θεμέλιον; καυσώ (from καῦσος, Disc., Galen); κεφαλίω (Lob., ad Phryn., p. 95, κεφαλίζω, though not in any known Greek author) W. H. read in Mk. 12:4 with XBL as against κεφαλαίων and it means 'beat on the head' (cf. κολαφίζω). So κολοβώ (from κόλοβος, Arist., Polyb., Diod.); νεκρώ (from νεκρός, Plut., Epict., M. Aur., inscriptions); κραταίω (LXX, eccl.), from κρατύω; σαρώ (Artem., Apoll., Dusc.), from σάρω (σάρος); σημείω (from σημείον, Theoph., Polyb., LXX, Philo, Dion. Hal., etc.); σθενώ (Rhet. Gr.), from σθένεω (σθένος); χαριτώ (LXX, Jos., eccl.), from χάρις. Verbs in –όω do not always have the full causative idea, 'άξιόω=’deem worthy’ and δικαίω=’deem righteous.’

Verbs in –ίςω do not necessarily represent repetition or intensity. They sometimes have a causative idea and then again lose even that distinctive note and supplant the older form of the word. Forms in –ίςω are very common in modern Greek. Ραντίζω (LXX, Athen.), for instance, in the N. T. has displaced ράινω, and βαπτίζω (since Plato) has nearly supplanted βάπτω. These verbs come from many sorts of roots and are very frequent in the N. T., as the κοινή is lavish with them. The new formations in the κοινή appearing in the N. T. are as follows: αίρετίζω (from αίρετός, LXX, inscriptions); αίχμαλωτίζω (literary κοινή and LXX), from αίχμα-λωτός; αναθεμάτίζω (LXX and inscriptions), from ανάθεμα; ανεμίζω (Jas. 1:6) is found in schol. on Hom. Od. 12, 336, the old form being ανεμώ; ατενίζω (from ατενής, Arist., Polyb., Jos.); δειγματίζω (from δείγμα) appears in apocryphal Acts of Peter and Paul; δογματίζω (from δόγμα) is in Diodorus and the LXX; ἐγγίζω (from ἐγγύς, from Polyb. and Diod. on); ἕξ-υπνίζω (from ἕπνος LXX, Plut.); θεατρίζω (from θεατρον) in ecclesiastical and Byzantine writers, ἐκθεατρίζω being in Polybius; ἴματίζω (from ἴματιον) is

1 Cf. Zur Gesch. der Verba Denom., p. 95.  2 Ib.
found in Serapeum papyrus 163 B.C.; Ἰουδαίζω (from Ἰουδαῖος) is found in the LXX and Josephus and is formed like ἐλληνίζω and, similar ethnic terms; καθαρίζω (classic καθαίρω, from καθαρός, LXX, Jos., inscriptions); κρυσταλλίζω (from κρύσταλλος, Rev. 21:11) is still "not found elsewhere" (Thayer); μυκτηρίζω (from μυκτήρ, the nose) is in the LXX; ὁρθρίζω (from ὁρθρός) is in the LXX; πελεκίζω (from πέλεκυς) is common in literary κοινή; σκορπίζω (akin to σκορπίος, root skerp) is in LXX and in literary κοινή, Attic form being σκεδάννυμι, old Ionic according to Phrynichus; σπλαγχνίζομαι (from σπλάγχνα, Heb. סְפָּלָגְּחָ) occurs in LXX, Attic had an active σπλαγχνεύω; συμμορφίζω (from σύμμορφος) is the correct text in Ph. 3:10 against συμμορφώ (EKL), though neither word is known elsewhere, perhaps coined by Paul; φυλακίζω (from ῥωμ φυλακή) is in LXX and Byzantine writers. Of verbs in –ούς, only ἰησούς is found in the LXX and papyri.

Verbs in –ύω are fairly common, like παροξύνω. Only one word calls for mention, σκληρύνω (from σκληρός), which takes the place of the rare σκληρύνω and is found in LXX and Hippocrates. No new verbs in –αίνω (like εὐφραίνω) appear in the N. T. Verbs in –σκω are, like the Latin verbs in –scio, generally either inchoative or causative. It is not a very common termination in the N. T., though εὐρίσκω, γινώσκω and διδάσκω occur very often, but these are not derivative verbs. In the N. T. the inchoative sense is greatly weakened. The suffix belongs to the present and the imperfect only. In modern Greek it has nearly disappeared save in the dialects.1 Γομίσκω (accepted by W. H. in Lu. 20:34) rather than γαμίζω is causative (Arist. pol.); γηράσκω and μεθύσκω both come from the earlier Greek.2 Ἐν-διδύ-σκω occurs in the LXX, Jos., inscriptions. The new present στήκω (Mk. 11:25) is made from the perfect stem ἐστήκα (στεκώ in modern Greek). As in N. T., so in modern Greek desideratives in –σείω, –σίαω drop out. The verbs in –ῐῶ still retained (ἀγαλλίαω, ἀροτρίαω, θυμ-ίαω, κοπ-ίαω) have no desiderative meaning. Of these ἀγαλλίαω, for the old ἀγάλλομαι, is late κοινή; ἀροτρίαω is from Theophr. on, κοπίαω is late in the sense of ‘toil.’ No new reduplicated verbs appear in the N. T.

(b) SUBSTANTIVES.

1. Primary or Primitive Substantives. Here the formative (stem-suffix) suffix is added to the root. It is important to seek the

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 302; Thumb, Handb., p. 133.
meaning not only of the root, but of this formative suffix also when possible. The root has in most cases the strong form, as in λόγ(λεγ)-ο-ς. These substantives are thus from the same root as the verb. With —μό-ς, —μή, expressing action, are formed in the old Greek words like θύ-μός, -τι-μή. With —μα, denoting result, we find ἀντ-απόδο-μα (LXX, old Greek ἀντ-από-δο-σις, from ἀντ-απο-διδωμι); διά-στη-μα (from διά-στημι Arist., Polymb., Philo); ἔν-δυ-μα (from ἔν-δυω, LXX, Strabo, Jos., Plut.); θέλη-μα (from θέλω, Arist. and LXX); κατά-κρι-μα (from κατά-κρίνω, Dion. Hal., pap.); κατά-λυ-μα (from κατά-λυ-ω, literary κοινή for old κατ-αγωγείου, and with idea of place); κατά-στη-μα (καθ-ίστη-μι, Plut. and the LXX); κτίσ-μα (from κτίζω Strabo, Dion. Hal.); πρόσ-κομ-μα (from προσ-κόπ-τω, in LXX and Plut.). The suffix —σι-ς, meaning action (abstract), appears in ἄνα-βλεψ-ις (Arist., LXX); ἄνα-δειξ-ις (from ἄνα-δείκνυ-μι-- Plut., Diod., Strabo, Sirach); θέλη-σις in Heb. 2:4 (from θέλω), a "vulgarism," according to Pollux); κατά-νυξ-ις (from κατά-νυς-σ-ω, LXX); κατά-κρίσις (from κατά-κρίνω, Vettius Valens, eccl.); πε-ποίθη-σις (from πέ-ποιθ-α, πείθω, Josephus and Philo, condemned by the Atticists); πρόσ-κλι-σις (from προσ-κλι-νω, Polyb. and Diod.); πρόσ-χυ-σις (from προσ-χέ-ω, Justin Martyr and later). The suffix —μονή is used with πεισ-μονή (from πείθω, Ignatius and later) and επι-λησ-μονή (ἐπι-λανθάνειν, ἐπι-λήσ-μων, Sirach). Σαγ-ήνη (LXX, Plut., Lucian) has suffix —ήνη (cf. —ον, —ονη, etc.). Δια-σσερ-ά (δια-σπείρω, LXX, Plut.) and προσ-ευχ-ή (προσ-ευχ-ομαι, LXX, inscriptions) use the suffix —α (—η). Cf. ἄπο-γραφ-ή (N. T., papyri), ἄπο-δοχή (inscriptions), βροχή (papyri), ἐμπλοκή (ἐμπλέκω inscriptions), δια-τάγη (δια-τάσσω, papyri, inscriptions, later writings). The agent is usually —της (Blass, Gr., p. 62), not —τωρ or —τηρ as in διώκτης (from διωκω, earliest example) and δό-της (from δι-δωμι, classic δοκή. But cf. σω-τήρ). See γνώστης (γι-νώσκω, LXX, Plut.), κτίσ-της (κτίζω, Arist., Plut., LXX), ἐπι-στάτης (only in Luke, ἐφίστημι). See further under compound words for more examples. In modern Greek —της is preserved, but —τωρ and τηρ become —τορρης, —τηρος. Jannaris, op. cit., p. 288; Thumb, Handbook, p. 49. I pass by words in —ευς, —μην, —τον, etc.

2. Secondary or Derivative Substantives. Only important words not in common use in the older Greek can be mentioned.

(a) Those from verbs. Words in —μός expressing action. From verbs in —αζω come ἀγιασ-μός (ancient Greek ἀγίζω, but later form common in LXX and N. T.); ἀγιυσ-μός (from ἀγίνω, Dion. Hal., LXX, Plut.); ἀπαρτισ-μός (Dion. Hal., Apoll. Dysc., papyri); ἀρπαγ-μός (ἀρπάζω is from root ἀρπ, like Latin rapio. Ἀρπαγ-μός once
in Plutarch, ἀρπαγή common from AEschylus; γογγυσ-μός (from γογγύς, Antonin.); ἐνταφιασ-μός (Plutarch and scholia to Eur. and Arist., ἐνταφιάζω); ἰματισ-μός (from ἰματίζω, LXX, Theophr., Polyb., Diod., Plut., Athen.); πειρασ-μός (from πειράζω and common in the LXX). From verbs in -ίζω have βαπτισ-μός (Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 62) used by Josephus of John’s baptism, but not in the N. T. of the ordinance of baptism, save in Col. 2:12, in *BD* FG 47, 67**, 71, a Western reading rejected by W. H.; ὁνειδισ-μός (Plutarch and Dion. Hal.); παροργισ-μός (not found earlier than LXX nor in κοινή writers, Dion. uses παροργίζω); τορισ-μός (Sap., Polyb., Jos., Plut., Test. XII Patr.); ῥαντισ-μός (LXX); σαιβατισ-μός (Plut. and eccl. writers); σωφρονισ-μός (Jos., Plut., etc.); ψιθυρισ-μός (from ψιθυρίζω, LXX, Clem. Rom., Plut., onomatopoetic word for the hissing of the snake). The ending -μός survives in literary modern Greek. Cf. Jannaris, op. cit., p. 288. The tendency to make new words in —μός decreased. The modern Greek vernacular dropped it (Thumb, Handbook, p. 62).

Abstract nouns in —σις are βίω-σις (in Sirach, from βιώω); ἀνακάινω-σις (ἀνακαίνω-ω, Etym. M. Herm.); ἀπάντη-σις (ἀπ-αντώ-ω, LXX, Polyb., Diod., papyri); ἀποκαλύψις (LXX, Plut.); ἀποκάταστα-σις (Poly., Diod., papyri, etc.); ἀποστασία (LXX); ἐκζητησις (ἐκζητέω, true text in 1 Tim. 1:4, Basil Caes., Didym.). ἐνδόμη-σις (from ἐνδομέω, Jos., also ἐνδώμησις ἐπιθέθη-σις (LXX, from ἐπιθέτω); ὑπ-ἀντη-σις (LXX, Jos., App.). Words in —σις, common in Hebrews, make few new formations in the later Greek. Ἀγάπη begins to displace ἀγάπησις (LXX, inscription in Pisidia, and papyrus in Herculaneum). Abstract nouns in —εία (W. H. —ια) are chiefly from verbs in —εύω as ἀρεσκεία (from ἀρεσκεύω, Polyb., Diod., papyri, and usually in bad sense); ἐπιπόθεια (so W. H., not ἐπιποθία, in Ro. 15:23, from ἐπιποθέω probably by analogy like ἐπιθυμία. Not found elsewhere). Ἔριθεία (from ἐριθεύω, Arist pol. The verb from ἐριθός, ’working for hire’); ἱερατεία (from ἱερατεύω, Arist. pol., Dion. Hal., LXX, inscriptions); λογεία (—ια) is from λογεύω (’collect’) and is found in inscriptions, ostraca, papyri (see Deissmann, Light, p. 105); μεθοδεία (from μεθοδεύω, which occurs in the κοινή, from μέθοδος, but not the abstract noun).

From ὧφεῖλω we have ὧφειλῇ (common in the papyri), ὧφειλτμα (Plato, Arist., LXX). Words in –μα (result) are more common in the later Greek and gradually take an abstract idea of –ςις in modern Greek. The new formations appearing in the N. T. are ἄ-γνωσ-μα (0. T. Apoc., from ἄγνωσω; αἰτίω-μα (correct text in Ac. 25:7, and not αἰτίαμα, from αἰτιόμαι). Cf. αἰτίωςις in Eustathius, p. 1422, 21. This form as yet not found elsewhere); ἀντλημα (from ἀντλέω, Plut., what is drawn, and then strangely a thing to draw with, like ἀντλητὴρ or ἀντλητήριον); ἀπ-ἀγγας-μα (from ἀπανγάζω, and this from ἀπό and ἀγγή, in Wisdom and Philo); ἀπο-σκίασ-μα (from ἀποσκίαζω, and this from ἀπό and σκία. Only in Jas. 1:17); ἀσθένη-μα (from ἀσθενέω, in physical sense in Arist. hist., papyri); βάπτισ-μα (from βαπτίζω), "peculiar to N. T. and ecclesiastical writers," Thayer). In βάπτισ-μα, as distinct from βαπτίσ-μός, the result of the act is included (cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 62); ἐξέρα-μα (from ἐξεράω, in Dioscor., example of the verb, cf. Lob., ad Phryn., p. 64); ἦπτη-μα (from ἦπτό-μαι, LXX, in ecclesiastical writers); ἰεράτευ-μα (from ἰερατέω, LXX); κατ-όρθω-μα (from κατ-ορθῶ, literary as Polyb., Diod., Strabo, Jos., Plut., Lucian and 3 Macc.); ῥάπισ-μα (from ῥαπίζω, Antiph., Anthol., Lucian); στερέω-μα (from στερέω, Arist., LXX). Blass calls attention to the fact that in the later Greek words in –μα, like those in –ςις, –της, --τος often prefer stems with a short vowel, as δόμα (δόσις), θέμα (θέσις), though this form is already in the older Doric, κλί-μα, κρί-μα, πόμα (Attic πώμα). Hence ἀνάθεμα in N. T., though ἀνάθημα in Lu. 21:5 (W. H. acc. to BLQG, etc.), and in the papyri "nouns in –μα are constantly showing short penult." But ἀνάθεμα, like θέμα and δόμα, belongs to the list of primary substantives.

Words in --της (agent) are fairly numerous, like βαπτισ-της (from βαπτίζω, Jos.); βιας-της (from βιάζω. Pind., Pyth. and others use βιαστάς); γογγυσ-της (from γογγύζω, Thedotion and Symm. translation of the LXX); ἐλληνισ-της (from ἐλληνίζω, not in Greek authors, though ἐλληνίζω is, as in Xen., Anab., and Strabo, etc.); ἐξορκισ-της (from ἐξορκίζω, Jos., Lucian, eccl. writers); έναγγέλιο-της

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 62 f. For same thing in LXX (ἀνάθεμα, πρόσθεμα, δόμα, etc.) H C. and S., Sel. from LXX, p. 28.
3 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 108. He instances besides ἀνάθεμα in the sense of 'curse,' θέμα, ἐπίθεμα, πρόσθεμα, πρόδομα. On ἀνάθεμα, for exx. in iii/B.C. inscr., see Glaser, De Rat., quae interc. inter Berm. Polyb. etc., 1894, p. 82.
A few late words in —θριον (from —θρ and —θον) occur as ἀκροαθριον (from ἀκροαομαι, Plut. and other κοινή writers) where —θριον means 'place'; ἱλασθριον (from ἱλάσκομαι, LXX, inscriptions, papyri, Dio Chrys.) is a substantive in the N. T., made probably from the adjective ἱλαστήριος (cf. σωτήριος) and means 'propitiatory gift' or 'means of propitiation' and does not allude to the mercy seat or covering. However, in Heb. 9:5 ἱλασθριον does have the meaning of 'place of propitiation' or 'mercy seat' (cf. θυμαθριον). Deissmann passed this passage by, though he is correct in Ro. 3:25. Cf. φυλακθριον.

(β) Those from substantives. Several words expressing place are formed after the fashion of the older Greek as ἀφεδρων (probably from the Macedonian ἀφεδρος, and that from ἑδρα and ἀπό) which may be compared with κοπρων; βραβειον (from βραβευς, Menand. Mon., Opp., Lycohp., Clem. Rom.); ἑλαιον (from ἑλαιον, like ἀμπελων from ἀμπελος, in the LXX, Jos., inscriptions and papyri), with which compare μυλων (—ωνος) in Mt. 24:41 according to DHM and most cursive instead of μύλος. Moulton (The Expositor, 1903, p. 111) has found φοικων (—ωνος), 'palm-grove,' in A. P. 31 (112 B.C.). Εἰδώλειον (—ιον W. H.), found first in 1 Macc. and 1 Esd., is formed after the analogy of μουσείον. Τελώνιον (from τελώνης) is found in Strabo. Τετράδιον (Philo) is from τετράς, the usual guard in the prisons. Several new words in —της (quality) appear, as ἀδελφότης (from ἀδελφος, 1 Macc., 4 Macc., Dio Chrys., eccl. writers); θεότης (from θεός, Lucian, Plut.); κυριώτης

1 See Deiss., B. S., p. 131 f., where a lucid and conclusive discussion of the controversy over this word is given. See also Zeitschr. fur neutest. Wiss., 4 (1903), p. 193.

2 Blass is unduly sceptical (Gr., p. 64). Deiss. (B. S., p. 208 f.) finds nine examples of ἑλαιον= 'place of olives' or 'olive orchard' in vol. I of the Ber. Pap., and Moulton (Exp., 1903, p. 111; Prol., p. 49) has discovered over thirty in the first three centuries A.D. In Ac. 1:12 it is read by all MSS. and is correct in Lu. 19:29 (ag. W. H.) and 21:37 (ag. W. H.). Ἐλαιων is right in Lu. 19:37, etc. In Lu. 19:29; 21:37, question of accent. Cf. also ἀμπελων (from ἀμπελος, LXX, Dion., Plut.) which is now found in the pap.
(from κύριος, originally adj., eccl. and Byz. writers). Συρο-φοινίκισσα is the text of ΝΑΚΛ, etc., in Mk. 7:26 as against Σύρα Φοινίκισσα in BEFG, etc. In either case φοινίκισσα, not φοινισσα (Text. Rec.) which is the usual feminine of φοινιξ, as Κύλισσα is of Κύλις. Lucian has a masculine Συροφοινίξ and Justin Martyr a feminine Συροφοινίκη. From this last φοινίκισσα probably comes. Cf. the use of βασίλισσα, the Atticists preferring βασιλίς or βασίλεια.

Ἡρωδιανός (from Ἡρώδης) and Χριστ-ιανός (from Χριστός) first appear in the N. T., and are modelled after Latin patronymics like Caesarianus (Καισαρ-ιανός, Arrian-Epictetus). Blass1 goes unnecessarily far in saying that the N. T. form was Χρηστ-ιανός (from Χηρστός), though, of course, i and η at this time had little, if any, distinction in pronunciation. Μεγιστάν is from μέγιστος (as νεός from νέος). Cf. Latin megistanes. Μεγιστάν is found in LXX, Jos., Maneth. Πλημμύρα (LXX, Dion. Hal., Jos., Philo) is from πλημμυρή. There was, of course, no "Christian" or "biblical" way of forming words.

Diminutives are not so common in the N. T. as in the Byzantine and modern Greek2 where diminutives are very numerous, losing often their original force. Βιβλαρίδιον (a new form, but compare λίθαρίδιον) is read in Rev. 10:2 by ΚΑΚΠ against βιβλιαρίδιον (fragment of Aristoph.) according to C* and most of the cursive and Βιβλίον (by B). Variations occur also in the text of verses 8, 9, 10. Γυναικάριον (from γυνή) is used contemptuously in 2 Tim. 3:6 (also in Antonin. and Epict.). Ἰχθύδιον (from Ἰχθύς), κλινίδιον and κλινάριον (from κλίνη) occur from Aristoph. on. Κοράσιον (from κόρη, called Maced. by Blass) is used disparagingly in Diog. Laert. and Lucian, but in LXX and Epict. as in the N. T. that is not true, though it hardly has the endearing sense (sometimes found in the diminutive) in κυνάριον (κόνες=street-dogs'), but that sense appears often in παιδίον as in Jo. 21:5. Ὕναριον (from ὑνος) is found in Machon and Epictetus. Ὀψάριον (from ὀψων) is found in Alexis and Lucian, and ὀψώνιον (likewise from ὀψων) is used by Dion., Polyb., Jos., Apocrypha and papyri. Πτε-
ρύγιον (from πτέρυξ) comes from Arist. down, but ψιχίον (from ψῆξ) does not appear elsewhere. Both ωτάριον (Anthol., Anax.) and ωτίον (LXX) are from οὐς, but have lost the diminutive idea, just as μάτι in modern Greek means merely 'eye' (ὅμμάτιον). Blass\(^1\) indeed accuses Luke of atticising when he uses οὐς in Lu. 22:50.

(γ) Those from adjectives. The new substantives derived from adjectives in the later Greek found in the N. T. all have suffixes expressing quality. With –ία we find ἀποτιμ-ία (from ἀπότιμος, Diod., Dion., papyr.); ἔλαφρία (from ἔλαφρος, cf. Lob., ad Phryn., p. 343. Cf. αἰσχρ-ία from αἰσχρός, Eust.); παραφρον-ία (from παραφρών. Greek writers use παραφροσύνη, but cf. εὐδαιμον-ία from εὐδαίμων). So περισσεία (from περισσός, LXX, inscriptions, Byz.). W. H. use the ending –ία with κακοπάθ-εία (from κακοπάθής).

With –σύνη several new words occur from adjectives in -ος, with the lengthening of the preceding vowel, as ἀγαθώσ-σύνη (from ἀγαθός, eccl.); ἀγνώσ-σύνη (from ἀγνός, not in earlier Greek writers); μεγαλω-σύνη (from stem μεγέλος of μέγας, LXX and eccl.). These forms are like ἰερω-σύνη from ἱερός (also in N. T.) which is as old as Herod. and Plato. Still μεγάλω-σύνη and ἱερο-σύνη are both found in inscriptions or in Glycas.\(^2\) Most of the words in –σύνη belong to the later language.\(^3\)

Rather more numerous are the new words in –της,\(^4\) as ἀγιώ-της (from ἀγιός, 2 Macc.); ἀγνό-της (from ἀγνός, inscriptions); ἀδηλό-της (from ἀδηλός, Polyb., Dion. Hal., Philo); ἀφελότης (from ἀφελής, eccl. writers, ancient Greek ἀφέλεια); γυμνό-της (from γυμνός, Deut., Antonin.); ματαιό-της (from μάταιος, LXX and eccl. writers); μεγαλείο-της (from μεγαλείος, Athen., Jer.); πίο-της (from Arist., Theophr., LXX). Ἄκαθαρ-της (Rev. 17:4) is not supported by any Greek MSS.

The neuter (and often the masculine and feminine) of any adjective can be used as a substantive with or without the article, as τὸ δοκίμου (from δοκίμος, Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 259 f., Dion. Hal., Long., LXX, papyri). Like μεθόριον (the Syrian reading for θρία in Mk. 7:24) is προσφάγιον, (προσφάγιος, —ον from προσφά-
γείν inscriptions), σφάγιον (σφάγιος, --ον, σφαγή, Am., Ezek.), ύπο-
λήμιον (ύπολήμιος, --ον, from ύπο λήμνον, Demiopr. in Poll., Geop., LXX.
Cf. ύπο-ζύγιον). As already seen, ἰλασ-τήριον is probably the neuter
of the adjective ἰλασ-τήριος, —α, —ον (from ἰλάσκομαι). So φυλακ-
tήριον is the neuter of the adjective (φυλακ-τήριος, —α, —ον (from
φυλακτήρ, φυλάσσω), Dem., Diosc., Plut., LXX).1 Σωτήριον and
σωτηρία (from σωτήριος) are both common in the old Greek as
is the case with ύπερ-ψων (from ύπερψις, -ως). Ζευκ-τήρια (from
ζευκ-τήριος, only in Ac. 27:40) reverts to the abstract form in —ια.

(c) ADJECTIVES.

1. Primary or Primitive Adjectives. These, of course, come
from verbal roots. Ἀμαρ-ωλός (from root ἀμαρτ-άω, Arist.,
Plut., LX, inscriptions) is like φειδ-ωλός (4 Macc. 2:9), from
φειδ-ομαί. Πειθ-ός (W. H. πιθ-ός from πείθω, as φειδ-ός from φειδομαί)
is not yet found elsewhere than in 1 Cor. 2:4, but Blass2 regards
it as "a patent corruption," πειθός for πειθή. The evidence is
in favour of πειθός (all the uncials, most cursive and versions).
Φάγος (from root φαγ--') is a substantive in the N. T. with paroxy-
tone accent as in the grammarians, the adjective being φαγ-ός.
The other new adjectives from roots in the N. T. are verbals in
-τος. There is only one verbal (gerundive) in —τέος (Lu. 5:38,
elsewhere only in Basil), and that is neuter (βλητέον), "a survival
of the literary language in Luke."3 The sense of capability or
possibility is only presented by the verbal παθη-τός (from root
παθ-, πάσχω, eccl. writers). But the weakened sense of the verbal
in —τός, more like an ordinary adjective, is very common in the
later Greek.4 But they are rare in the modern Greek (Thumb,
Handb., p. 151). These verbals correspond to the Latin participle
in —tus,5 like γυωστός, or to adjectives in —bilis, like ὀρατός. They
are common in the N. T., though not many new formations
appear. They are usually passive like γραπ-τός (from γράφω,
Georg. apd., LXX), though προσ-ηλυ-τός (προσ-ἐρχ-ομαί, root
-ηλυθ-, LXX, Philo) is active in sense. The ancient form was

1 This termination became rather common in the later Gk., as, for instance,
in ἀνακαλυπήριον, δεπητήριον, θανατήριον, ιαματήριον. See also Stratton, hap-
2 Gr. of N T. Ok., p. 64. So W.-Sch., p. 135.
3 Viteau, ss. sur la Synt. des Voix, Rev. de Philol., p. 38.
4 Jann., H st. Gk. Or., p. 297. Ἐκών also is wholly adjective and μέλλων,
5 W.-M., . 120. Cf. Viteau, Ess. sur le Synt. de Voix, Rev. de Philol.,
p. 41. For deriv. adj. in the Ptol. pap. see Mayser, Gr., pp. 447-455.
A number of new verbals were formed on compound words which will be discussed later. For the syntactical aspects of the verbal adjectives see discussion of the participle (cf. Moulton, Prolegomena, p. 221).

2. Secondary or Derivative Adjectives.

(a) Those from verbs. Στίσσ-τός (from στίζω, Jos., Athen.) is to be mentioned. It is equivalent to the Latin saginatus and is passive in meaning.

(b) Those from substantives. Some new words in --ποιός occur as ἀμαράντινος (from ἀμαράντος, Philost., inscriptions); καθήμερ-ινός (from καθ’ ἡμέραν, Athen., Plut., Jos.) is for ancient καθημερίος; κόκκ-ινος is from κόκκος (LXX, Plut., Epict., papyri); ὁρθ-ινός (from ὁρθος, LXX, older form ὁρθοιος), with which compare ἐσπερ-ινός (from ἐσπέρα, from Xen. on) in the minusc. 1, 118, 209 (Lu. 12:38); πρωινός (so W. H., from πρωί, for the older πρώιος, LXX, Plut., Athen., etc.); πύρ-ινος (from πῦρ, Arist., LXX, Polyb., Plut.); τὰχινός (from τάχα) from Theocritus on (LXX also).

There are several words in –ικός, like ἐθνικός (from ἔθνος, Polyb., Diod.) κεραμ-ικός (from κέραμος, Hipp., Plat. pol., LXX) which supplanted the earlier κεράμιος, κεραμεοῦς; κυρι-ικός (from κύριος, -ικός instead of —ικός after i, eccl. writers) is found in papyri of Faytim and in inscriptions of Phrygia and Lydia.1 So λειτουργι-κός (from λειτουργία, LXX, papyri) and ὄνικός (from ὄνος, in a contract in the Fayum Papyri dated Feb. 8, A.D. 33).

Of special interest are several words in -ινός and –ικός. Ὀστράλ-ινος (from ὀστρακον, Hipp., Anthol., LXX), 'made of clay,' 'earthen'; σάρκ-ινος (from σάρξ, Aristoph., Plato, Arist.) is thus not a new word, but is used in Heb. 7:16 and by Paul in 1 Cor. 3:1; Ro. 7:14 (correct text in each instance), where many MSS. have σαρκ-ικός. Indeed σάρκινος in these two passages must mean more than made of flesh or consisting in flesh, perhaps "rooted in the flesh" (Thayer).2 Cf. relation of ἀληθ-ινός to ἀληθ-θές. Still a real distinction seems to be observed between σάρκ-ινος and σαρκ-ικός in 1 Cor. 3:1 and 3:3. Σαρκ-ικός (from σάρξ, Arist., Plut., LXX) is a man who lives according to the flesh and is here opposed to those who are πνευμ-ικόι. (from πνεῦμα, from Arist. down, but not in LXX, pertaining to the wind). But ὁ ψυχ-ικός (from ψυχή, Arist., Polyb., down) is the man pos-

---

2 See comm. in loco. W.-M. (p. 123) held that σάρκινος was "hardly to be tolerated" in Heb. 7:16, but Schmiedel (p. 139) has modified that statement. Cf. on --ινός, Donaldson, New Crat., p. 45S.
sessed of mere natural life (1 Cor. 2:14) as opposed to regenerate (πνευματ-ικός) life (1 Cor. 2:15). Σαρκ-ικός can be applied to either of these two distinct classes.¹ But in 1 Cor. 3:3 ἔτι γὰρ σαρκικοί ἔστε Paul reproaches the Corinthians. Proper names also have -ικός, as Ἕβρα-ικός. Note accent in Τύχ-ικός. ῾Ρωμα-ικός (from ῾Ρώμη) is read in Lu. 23:38 by the Western and Syrian MSS., common in the literary κοινή (Polyb., Diod., etc.).

Ἀιώνιος, though found in Plato and Diod., is not a common adjective. But cf. LXX, 0. T. Apoc., Philo, inscriptions, papyri. Cf. Moulton and Milligan, Expositor, 1908, p. 174. Δοκίμιος is from δοκίμη (Dion. Hal., Long., LXX, papyri). Μίσθιος is from μισθός (LXX, Plut.), while ῾Ρωμαῖος is common in the literary κοινή. Μελίσσιος (from μέλισσα, like καλάσσιος from θάλασσα) is read by the Syrian class of documents in Lu. 24:42. The word occurs nowhere else, though Nic. has μελισσαίος and Eustath. μελίσσειος.

(γ) Those from adjectives. There are only a few new adjectives of this character, but they present special difficulties. About ἐπιούσιος (found only in Mt. 6:11 and Lu. 11:3 and used with ἄρτος) there has raged a long controversy. It has been derived successively from ἐπὶ and ὀψία, 'bread for sustenance,' though ὀψία only has the sense of ὑπάρχει in philosophical language (another theory, 'bread of substance' in the spiritual sense); from ἐπὶ and ὦν (ἐπόντιος, ἐπούσιος, like ἐκὼν, ἐκούσιος, etc.), 'bread for the present,' though the i in ἐπὶ is not allowed to remain with a vowel save when a digamma existed as in ἐπιείκης; from ἐπ-ιών (ἐπ-εἰμι, 'approach'), like ἡ ἐπιούσια (ἡμέρα), 'the next day' (Ac. 16:11), this last a common idiom. Lightfoot² has settled the matter in favour of the last position. See also ἡρεμικός (from ἡρεμία, adv. ἡρέμα, Lucian, Eustath., Hesych); νεωτερικός (from νεωτέρος, 3 Mac., Polyb., Jos.). In περιούσιος (from περι-ών, περίειμι, LXX) no serious problem in etymology arises, for περί retains the i in composition with vowels. It is used with λαός, to express the idea that Israel belongs to God as his very own.³ Πιστ-ικός (from πιστος,

¹ See Trench, N. T. Synon., 1890, pp. 268 ff.
³ Cf. Lightfoot, Rev. of the N. T., pp. 234-242, for full discussion of περιούσιος.
Plato, Diog., Dion. Hal., in sense of persuading, but Artem., Cedrenus and other late writers in sense of 'genuine') is hardly to be derived from πιπίσκω or πίω and hence = drinkable.'

‘Genuine nard’ is a much more probable meaning. For curious details see Winer-Schmiedel, p. 138, n. 24. Ποταμός is from the older ποδαπός and occurs in Dion. Hal., Philo, Jos., papyri.

(8) Those from adverbs. From άνω come άνωτέρος (Polyb., LXX, Arist.) and άνω-τερικός (Hippoc., Galen); ἐξώ-τερος (LXX, Strabo, etc.). See also ἐσώ-τερος (only N. T.); κατώ-τερος (Theoc., Hippoc., Athen.). Cf. Hagen, Bildung d. griech. Adverbien.

(d) THE ADVERB. The adverb φειδόμενως (from the participle φείδεμενος, Plut., Mosch., Alex.) is a new word of this nature. Cf. ὁμολογομένως in the older Greek. So τυχόν, ἀντως and ὑπερβαλλόντως. The neuter accusative singular and plural of adjectives continue to be used adverbially. Βαθέως occurs also in Theoc. and AElian. Ακμή (Theoc., Polyb., Strabo) is in the inscriptions also as well as ἐν ἀκμά (cf. Ditt., Syll. 326, 12). Ἐβραϊστί (Sirach) is properly formed (cf. Ἑλληνιστί) from Ἐβραῖς. Ιουδαϊκός is in Jos. See also ἔθνικός (Apol.), Ἰουδαῖος and Αἰθιοπ. Ἐτεν (correct text Mk. 4:28) is a rare Ionic form for ἐπτα (papyri also). Κενως is used from Arist. on. Ὀλίγως occurs out of the N. T. only in Anthol. and Aquila. Πρώτως (correct text Ac. 11:26) occurs here for the first time. Πρώτως is found in Polyb., Strabo, Plut.

Ῥωμαῖστι is common in the literary κοινή (Plut., App., etc.) and in Epictetus. Σωματικός comes from Aristotle and Plutarch. Τυπικός is in the ecclesiastical writers. Φυσικός is in Aristotle, Philo, etc. Mayser (Gr., pp. 455-459) has a good list of derivative adverbs. See ch. VII for full discussion of the formation of the adverb.

IV. Words Formed by Composition (Composita). The Greek in the Ptolemaic papyri is not equal to modern German in the facility with which agglutinative compound words (διπλά Aristotle termed them) are formed, but it is a good second. The N. T. writers make use of many of the new compounds (some new kinds also), but not more than the literary κοινή, though more than the Atticists or Purists. The following lists will show how fond the N. T. is of double prepositional compounds like ἀντ-ανα-πληρόω, ἀπο-κατ-ἀλλάσσω, ἐπι-σω-ἀγω, σω-αντι-λαμβάνομαι, etc. So also compound prepositional adverbs like ἐνώπιον, κατενώπιον, κατένως, etc.

On the whole subject of compound words in the Ptolemaic papyri see Mayser, Gr., pp. 466-506. Compound words played an in-

1 Schmid, Der Atticismus, Bd. IV, p. 730.

(a) KINDS OF COMPOUND WORDS IN GREEK: proper composition (σύνθεσις), copulative composition (παράθεσις), derivative composition (παρασύνθεσις). In the first class the principal idea is expressed by the second part of the word, while the first and qualifying part is not inflected, but coalesces with the second, using merely the stem with connective vowel. As an example take ὁίκο-νόμος, 'manager of the house.' The second kind of composition, paratactic or copulative, is the mere union of two independent words like παρά-κλητος. It is not common in the old Greek save in the case of prepositions with verbs, and even this usage is far more frequent in the later Greek. It is seen in many late compound adverbs as in ὑπερ-ἀνω. The third or derivative composition is a new word made on a compound, whether proper or copulative, as εἰδωλο-λατρία (or –εία) from εἰδωλο-λατρεύω. The above classification is a true grammatical distinction, but it will be more serviceable to follow a more practical division of the compound words into two classes. Modern linguists do not like the term "proper composition." In principle it is the same as copulative.

(b) INSEPARABLE PREFIXES. These make a cross-line in the study of compound words. They enter into the formation of verbs, substantives, adjectives and adverbs. By prefixes here is not meant the adverbs and prepositions so commonly used in composition, but the inseparable particles ἀ- (ἀν--) privative, ἀ--collective or intensive, ἀρχι-, δυσ-, ἡμι-, νη-. As examples of such new formations in the N. T. may be taken the following substantives and adjectives (chiefly verbals) with ἀ-- privative: ἀ-βαρῆς (from Arist. down, papyri, in metaphysical sense); ἀ-γενεα-λόγητος (LXX); ἀ-γναφός (Thom. Mag.); ἀ-γνύθμα (0. T. Apoc., papyri); ἀγρι-έλαιος (Arist., papyri); ἀ-γυνέω (Apost., papyri); ἃ-δηλότης (Polyb., Dion. Hal., Philo); ἃ-διά-κριτος (from Hippocrates down); ἃ-διά-λειπτος (Tim. Loer., Attic inscriptions, i/B.C.); ἃ-δια--φθορία (not in ancient Greek); ἃ-δυνατέω (LXX, ancient Greek means 'to be weak'); ἃ-θέμιτος (for earlier ἃ-θέμιστος); ἃ-θεσίς (LXX, Diod., Philo, Jos., Plut.); ἃ-θετέω (LXX, Polyb.); ἃ-καιρέω (Diod.); ἃ-θετήσις (Diog. Laert., eccl. writers, papyri); ἃ-κατά-γνωστός (2 Macc., eccl. writers, inscriptions, papyri); ἃ-κατα-κάλυπτος (Polyb., LXX, Philo); ἃ-κατά-κριτος (earliest example); ἃ-κατά-λυτος (4 Macc., Dion. Hal.); ἃ-κατά-παστός (found only here.
This is the reading of AB in 2 Pet. 2:14 rather than ἀ-κατά-
παύστος, verbal of καταπαύω, found in Polyb., Diod., Jos.,
cf. W. H., App., p. 170; Moulton, Prol., p. 47; ἀ-κατα-στασία
(Polyb., Dion. Hal., papyri); ἀ-κατα-στατός (Hippocr., Polyb.,
LXX); ἀ-κατά-σχέτος (LXX, Diod.); ἀ-κυρώ (Diod., Dion. Hal.,
Plut., 1 Esdr.); ἀ-λάλητος (Anth. Pal.); ἀ-μέθυστος (LXX, Dion.
Hal., Plut.); ἀ-μετά-θετος (Polyb., LXX, Diod., Plut., inscriptions);
ἀ-μετα-νόητος (Lucian, Philo, papyri); ἀ-ἀντί-ρητος (from Polyb.
down, inscriptions); ἀ-ν-ἀπο-λόγητος (Polyb., Dion. Hal., Plut.);
ἀ-ν-ἐκ-δι-ήγητος (Clem. Horn., Athen.); ἀ-ν-ἐκ-λειπτός (Diod., Plut.,
papyri); ἀ-ν-ἐν-δεκτός (Artem., Diog. Laert., eccl., Byz.); ἀ-ἐ-ερεύνητος
(LXX, Symm., Dio Cass.); ἀ-ἐ-χριστόστος (LXX, eccl.
writers); ἀ-ἐ-π-αίσχυντος (Jos.); ἀ-ἐ-ῦ-θετος (Moschion); ἀ-ἰ-λεως
(within reading in Jas. 2:13 of L, other MSS. have ἀ-ἐ-λεος, old Greek
ἀ-ηλείς); ἀ-νομοι (LXX, ἀ-νομία from Thuc.); ἀ-ν-ὑπό-τακτος (Artem.,
Philb.); ἀ-παρά-βατος (Jos., Plut., papyri, etc.); ἀ-πειραστός (Jos.,
eccl., old Greek ἀ-πειράτος); ἀ-περί-τμητος (LXX, Philo, Plut.);
ἀ-πρόσ-ιτος (lit. κοινή); ἀ-πρόσ-κοπος (Sir., Sext., inscriptions); ἀ-ραφός
(LXX, Jos.); ἀ-σπλήν (Anthol., eccl.); ἀ-στατέω (Anthol.); ἀ-στοχέω
(Polyb., Plut., Lucian, papyri); ἀ-στηρικτός (Anthol.); ἀ-φελότης
(eccl. writers); ἀ-φθαρτός (Arist., Wisd., Plut., inscriptions); ἀ-φιλ-
ἀγαθός (papyri and 2 Tim. 3:3); ἀ-φιλ-ἀργυρος (Diod., Hippocr.,
inscriptions, papyri).1

With ἀρχ- (from ἄρχω) we have ἄρχ-άγγελος (eccl.); ἄρχ-ιερα-
τικός (inscr., Jos.); ἄρχ-ιερεύς (LXX, inscr.); ἄρχ-ποιμήν (Test.
of 12 Patr., wooden tablet from Egypt, Deissmann, Exp. Times,
1906, p. 61); ἄρχ-συν-άγγελος (inscr., eccl.); ἄρχ-τελώνης (only in
Lu. 19:2); ἄρχ-τρι-κλίνος (Heliod., cf. σμόποσι-άρχης in Sirach).

With ἀ— connective or intensive are formed ἀ-νεψιός (for ἀ-νε-
πτιός, LXX, cf. Lat. con-nepot-ius), ἀ-τενίζω (Polyb., Diod., Jos.,
Lucian).2

With δυσ— we have δυσ-βάστακτος (LXX, Philo, Plut.); δυσ-
εντερίου (late form, correct text in Ac. 28:8, older form δυ-ε-
ντερία);
WORD-FORMATION

With ἕμι-- (cf. Lat. *semi*) are found only ἕμι-θανής (Dion. Hal., Diod., LXX, Strabo), ἕμι-ὡρον, (so W. H., Strabo, Geop., ἘΠ have --ώριον). Cf. ἕμισυς.

For ἔτη— note νηπιαζέω (Hippoc., eccl.).

(c) AGGLUTINATIVE COMPOUNDS (*Juxtaposition or Parathesis*).

This sort of composition includes the prepositions and the copulative composition (*dvandva*). This last is much more common in the *κοινή* than in the older Greek. Cf. Jannaris, *op. cit.*, p. 310, and Mayser, *Gr.*, p. 469.

1. Verbs. The new compound verbs are made either from compound substantives or adjectives or by combining adverbs with a verb-stem or noun-stem or by adding a preposition to the older verb. This last method is very frequent in the later Greek due to "a love for what is vivid and expressive." 1 This embellishment of the speech by compounds is not absent from the simplest speech, as Blass 2 shows in the case of Titus, where over thirty striking compound words are found, omitting verbals and other common ones. Moulton (*Cl. Quarterly*, April, 1908, p. 140) shows from the papyri that the compound verb is no mark of the literary style, but is common in the vernacular also. The preposition fills out the picture as in ἀντι-μετρέω (Lucian), and so ἀντι-αμβάνω (Diod., Dio Cass., LXX). So also observe the realistic form of the preposition in ἐξ-αστράπτω (LXX, Tryphiod.) in Lu. 9:29; κατα-λθάζω (eccl. writings) in Lu. 20:6. The modern Greek even combines two verbs to make a compound, as παιξω-γελάω.

As examples of new compound verbs may be given ἀγαθοποιέω, ἀγαθομερεύω, in 1 Tim. 6:18 (eccl.); ἀγαθο-ποιέω (LXX, later writers); ἀλλ-γορέω (Philo, Jos., Plut., grammatical writers); ἀνα-κάω (inscriptions, later writers); ἀνα-θεωρ-εω (Diod., Plut., Lucian); ἀνα-στάτω-ω (LXX, papyri); ἀν-ετάζω (LXX, papyri); ἀντι-δια-τίθημι


2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 70. Mostly adj., but πειθ-αρχεῖν occurs in the list. Blass, ib., p. 65, even thinks that it is not the province of grammar to discuss the numerous compounds with prepositions. It belongs to the lexicon. The lists that I give are not complete for prepositional compounds because of lack of space. See Helbing (Gr. d. Sept., pp. 128-136) for good list of compound verbs in the LXX. Mayser (Gr., pp. 486-506) gives list of compound verbs in the Ptol. pap. The *κοινή* is fond of compound verbs made of noun and verb. Cf. εἰ ἐκενωτρόφησεν, εἰ ἐξευνοδόχησεν (1 Tim. 5:10). So ψηλοφρονεῖν (text of W. H. in 6:17).
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

(Philo, eccl. writers); ἀντὶ-παρ-ἐχρο-μαι (Anthol., Sap., eccl. writers, Byz.); ἀντ-οφθαλμέω (Sap., Polyb., eccl. writers); ἀπ-εκπίζω (LXX, Polyb., Diod., inscriptions); ἀπο-γράφομαι (papyri); ἀπο-θήσαυρίζω (Sir., Diod., Jos., Epict.); ἀπο-κεφαλίζω (LXX, Epict., etc.); αὐθ-εντέω (Polyb., papyri); γονο-πετέω (Polyb., Heliod., eccl. writers); δια-γνωρίζω (Philo, schoi. in Bekk.); δια-γογγύζω (LXX, Heliod., Byz.); δια-γρηγορέω (Herod., Niceph.); δι-αυγάζω (Polyb., Plut.); δια-φημίζω (Aratus, Dion. Hal.); δι-ερμηνεύω (2 Macc. Pilyb., Philo); δι-οδεύω (LXX, Polyb., Plut.); δουλ-αγωνίζω (Diod. Sic. and on); εἰρηνο-ποιέω (LXX, Hermes); ἐκ-δαπανάω (Polyb.); ἐκ-δικεύω (LXX, Apol.); ἐμ-βατεύω (inscr.); ἐν-κανίζω (LXX); ἐν-κακέω (Polyb., Symm. translation of LXX, Philo, Clem. Rom.); ἐν-χρίω (Tob., Strabo, Anthol., Epict.); ἔξ-αρτίζω (Jos., Hipp.); ἔξ-ισχύω (Sir., Strabo, Plut.); ἔπι-σκηνόω (Polyb.); ἐπί-φασικώς (LXX, Acta Thom.); ἐπι-χρηστίζω (Dion. Hal., Phil., Diog. Laert., Alex. Aphr.); ἐτερο-διδασκαλέω (eccl. writers); ἐτερο-κυγγεύω (LXX); εὖ-αρεστέω (LXX, Philo, Diod.); εὐδοκέω (probably simply from εὖ and δοκέω, as there is no such form as δόκος or εὐδόκος and cf. καρα-δοκέω in Polyb., Diod., Dion. Hal.); εὖθυ-δρομέω (Philo); εὖ-καρέω (from Polybius on, papyri); εὖ-προσ-ωπέω (P. Tb., ChrYS.); θηριο-μαχέω (Diod., Artem., Ign.); ζωο-γονέω (Theophr., Diod., Lucian, Plut.); ζωο-ποιέω (Arist., Theophr., LXX); κακ-ουχέω (from obsolete κακ-οὐχος, i.e. κακόν, ξω, LXX, Diod., Dio Cass., Plut.); καλο-ποιέω (Etym. Magn., LXX, Philo); κατα-βαρέω (Polyb., Diod., App., Lucian papyri); κατ-αγωνίζομαι (Polyb., Jos., Lucian, Plut., AElian); κατ-αντάω (Polyb., Diod., eccl. writers, papyri); κατα-κληρο-δοτέω (LXX); κατα-πονέω (2 and 3 Macc., Hipp., Polyb., Diod., Jos., AEI, etc.); κατ-ἐξ-οισιάζω (only N. T.); κατ-οπτρίζω (Athen., Diog. Laert., Philo); if the conjectural κεν-εμ-βατεύω in Col. 2:18 be correct (as is now no longer probable), κεν-εμ-βατής has to be presupposed; λα-τομέω (LXX, Diod., Dion. Hal., Strabo); λιθο-βολέω (LXX, Diod., Plut.); λόγο-μαχέω (only instance in 2 Tim. 2:14); μακρο-θυμέω (LXX, Plut.); μεθ-ερμηνεύω (Polyb., Diod., Sir., Plut.); μετα-μορφώ (Diod., Philo); μετριο-παθέω (Philo, Jos.); μοσχο-ποιέω (LXX and eccl. writers); μυ-ωπάζω (Arist.); οἶκο-δεσποτέω (Lucian, Plut.); ὁμείρομαι is a puzzle (Fritzsche derives it from ὁμοῦ and ἐιρήνω, but other compounds with ὁμοῦ have instrumental-associative, not genitive case, as ὁμι-λέω, from ὁμιλοῦ (ὁμοῦ, ὡς) Photius and Theophr. get it from ὁμοῦ ἤρμοσθήσαταί; but, as Nicander uses μείρομαι ἤμείρομαι, modern editors print ὁμειρόμενοι in 1 Th. 2:8 (ὁ-- W. H., elsewhere only in Job and Symm., Ps. 62); ὀρθο-ποδέω (only instance); ὀρθο-τομέω (LXX, eccl.
writers); ὑχλο-ποιεῖν (only in Ac. 17:5); παρα-βολεύομαι (inser.
ii./A.D.); παρ-εἰσ-ἐρχομαι (Polyb., Philo, Plut.); περι-λάπω (Diod.,
Jos., Plut.); πληθρο-φορέω (LXX, eccl. writers); προ-ἐλπίζω (Posid.,
Dexipp., Greg. N.); προσ-ἐγγίζω (LXX, Polyb., Diod., Lucian);
προσ-κληρόω (Philo, Plut., Lucian); προσωπο-λήμπτεω (N. T. word);
συν-αυξάνω (LXX, inscriptions); συν-ἀποστέλλω (LXX, papyri, in-
scriptions); στρατο-λογέω (Diod., Dion. Hal., Jos., Plut., etc.);
συν-υπο-κρίνομαι (Polyb., Plut.) and many other verbs with συν;
tεκτο-γονέω (Anthol.); τεκνο-τροφέω (Arist.); τετρα-αρχέω (Jos.);
τροπο-φορέω (LXX and eccl. writers, so W. H. with KBDHLP,
etc., in Ac. 13:18); τροφο-φορέω (LXX and eccl. writers, so ACE
and some cursives in Ac. 13:18); ύπερ-πλεονάζω (Ps. Sal, He-
rond., Herm.); ύπο-λειμπάνω (Themist., Dion. Hal., eccl. and Byz.);
φιλο-πρωτεύω (Artem., Plut.); φρευ-απατάτω (eccl. and Byz. writers);
χρονο-τριβέω (Arist., Plut., Heliod., Byz. writers). Thus, it will
be noticed, verbs compounded with nouns are very common in
the κοινή.

Often two prepositions are used in composition with the same
verb, where the proper meaning must be given to each. The use
of double prepositional compounds grew rapidly in the κοινή; cf.
papyri (Gr., pp. 497-504), some of which are old and some new.
Of 162 examples 96 are new. The N. T. is in perfect accord with
the κοινή here. So it is with ἀντι-παρ-ἐρχομαι (Anthol., Wisdom,
eccl. and Byz. writers) in Lu. 10:31; ἀντι-ἀνα-πληρώ Col. 1:24
(Dem., Dio Cass., Apoll. Dysc.); ἀντι-δια-τίθημι (Philo, Diod.);
ἀπο-κατ-αλλάσσω (not in old Greek), ἐπι-δια-τάσσομαι (only in
N. T.); ἐπι-συν-ἀγω (LXX, AEosop, Polyb.); κατ-εξ-ουσιάζω (only in
N. T.); παρ-εἰσ-ἐρχομαι (Polyb., Philo, Plut.); προ-εν-ἀρχομαι (only
in N. T.); συν-ἀνα-μίγνυμι (LXX, Plut.); συν-ἀνα-παύομαι (LXX,
Dion. Hal., Plut.); συν-ἀντι-λαμβάνομαι (LXX, Dion., Jos., inscrip-
tions, papyri); ὕπερ-ἐκ-χύνω (LXX) ὕπερ-ἐν-τυγχάνω (eccl.). There
is in the papyri (P. Th. I, 66) a triple prepositional compound,
προ-ἀντ-αν-αιρέω.

2. Substantives. Here again the new compound substantive
draws on verbs, substantives, adjectives, adverbs and preposi-
tions for part or all of the word. There are also double compound
substantives from compound substantives, adjectives, adverbs and
prepositions like προσωποληψια, ἀλλοτριεπίσκοπος, διαπαρατριβή. The
great majority have substantive or adjective for the second half
of the word. These nouns are more often abstract than concrete.
Ἄγαθο-ποιία (from adjective and verb-stem, eccl. writers); ἀγαθο-
ποιός (adjective and verb-stem, Sirach, Plut. and later papyri);
άργι-έλαιος (from ἀργίος and ἐλαιός, Arist.);
αἴματ-εκ-χυσία (from substantive, preposition and verb χύνω, eccl. writers);
άκρο-βυστία (LXX);
ἀλεξτρο-φωνία (AEsop, Strabo, eccl. writers);
ἀλλοτρι-επι-σκοπος (from ἀλλότριος and ἐπί-σκοπος, Dion. Areop., eccl. writers.
Deissmann finds a synonym for the word in ἀλλοτριῶν ἐπιθυμη-
τής, Fayum Papyri. See Bible Studies, p. 224);
ἀμφ-οδον (LXX, Aristoph., Hyper., papyri);
ἀνά-χυσίς (Sir., Polyb., Plut.);
ἀνά-
ύπατος in the ethical sense (LXX, Polybius on, inscriptions in
Pergamum and Magnesia);
ἀνά-δειξις (Strabo, Philo, Plut.);
ἀνα-
στροφή (Polyb., Dion. Hal., Lucian, Plut., inscriptions);
ἀντί-λυτρον (one translation of Ps. 48:9, Orph.);
ἀντί-χριστος (probably formed by John, eccl.);
ἀργυρο-κόπος (Plut., LXX, papyri);
ἀρσενο-
κοίτης (Anthol., eccl.);
ἀσκ-καρα-δοκία (verb – ἐω in LXX, Jos., Plut.);
ἀσι-ἀρχής (inscriptions, Polyc.);
γαζο-φυλάκιον (LXX, Jos., Strabo);
γλωσσό-κοιμίον (earlier γλωσσοκοιμεῖον, LXX, Jos., Plut., Longin., in-
scriptions, papyri);
δεισι-δαιμονία (Polyb., Dion., Jos., Plut.);
δεσμο-
φύλαξ (Jos., Lucian, Artem., ἀρχ-δεσμο-φύλαξ, LXX); δι-ερμή-
νία (only in AD 1 Cor. 12:10; δι-ερμηνευτής probably correct 1 Cor.
14:28, ΕΚΛ against ἐρμηνευτής by BDFG); δια-παρα-τριβή (not
found elsewhere) is the correct text for 1 Tim. 6:5, not παρα-
δια-τριβή, which may be compared with παρα-κατα-θή-
κη in 2 Tim.
1:12, but παρα-θη-κη (Herod., LXX, inscriptions, papyri) is the
true reading; δωδεκά-φυλον (Clem. of Rome, N. T. Apoc.);
δικαιο-
κρισία (Test. xii Pat., eccl., papyri); δωρο-φορία is read by MSS.
BDFG against διακονία in Ro. 15:31; ἡθελο-θησία (from verb
ἐθέλω and θησία, eccl., cf. ἐθελο-δουλεία);
ἐδωκολ-λατρεία (W. H. – ία, two substantives, eccl.) and ἐδω-
κολο-λατρεία (eccl.);
ἐλι-κρίνεια (LXX, Theophr. Sext., Stob.);
ἐκ-πλήρωσις (2 Macc., Dion. Hal., Philo, Strabo);
ἐκ-τένεια (2 Macc., Judith, inscriptions);
ἐν-εδρόν (late form of ἐνέδρα, LXX);
ἐν-ἀνά-στα-σίς (double compound, Polyb.);
ἐπι-συν-αγωγή (double compound, 2 Macc., inscriptions, Artem.,
Ptol.);
ἐπι-σύ-στασις (double compound, LXX, Philo, Sext.);
ἐπι-
γορηγία (eccl.);
ἐδ-δοκία (LXX, inscriptions);
ἐφ-ακώλων (a hybrid
from εὖρος and Lat. aquilo, like auto-mobile; so W. H. for Text.
Rec. εὐρο-κλώδων in Ac. 27:14, which is Etym. Magn. alone);
ήδυ-οσμός (Strabo, Theophr.);
Ἠερο-σολυμείτις (Jos.);
καλλι-έλαιος (Arist.);
καλο-διδάσκαλος (only in Tit. 2:3);
καρδιο-γνώστης (eccl.
writers);
κατ-αγγελεύς (inscriptions);
κατ-θεμα (only in Rev. 22:3);
κατά-κριμα (Sir., Dion. Hal., papyri);
κατά-λειμα (R¹DEFGKLP
in no. 9:27 for ὑπό-λ, LXX, Gal.);
κατ-ἡγωρ (papyri; cf. Deiss-
mann, Light, p. 90; Radermacher, Gr., p. 15);
κατά-λυμα (LXX,
Polyb, Diod.); κατα-πέτασμα (LXX, Jos., Aristeas, Philo, inscriptions); κενο-δόξια (4 Macc., Polyb., Philo, Plut., Lucian); κοσμοκράτωρ (Orph., eccl. writers, inscriptions); κωμό-πολίς (Strabo, Ag. and Theod., eccl.); λογο-μαχία (only in 1 Tim. 6:4); ματαιο-λογία (Plut., Porph.); μεσο-νυκ-τιον (Arist., LXX, κοινή writers); μεσότοιχον (Erat.); μεσο-ουράνια (Manetho, Plut.); μετ-οικεσία (LXX, Anthol.); μισθο-δοσία and -δότης (eccl.); μυρο-λογία (Arist., Plut.); νομο-διδάσκαλος (eccl.).

υψο-θήμερον (Alex., App., Geop.); οίκο-δεσπότης (Alessis, Jos., Plut., Ign., etc.); οίκο-δομή (possibly Arist., Theophr., certainly LXX, Diod., Philo, Jos., Plut., condemned by Phrynichus); οίνο-πότης (Polyb., LXX, Anthol., Anacr.).

όλιγο-πιστία (eccl. and Byz.); ολο-κληρία (LXX, Diog. Laert., Plut.); ορκ-ουμοσία (LXX, Jos., τα ορκ-ωμάσια in Attic); ορο-θεσία (eccl.).

οθελο-δοσία (only instance is in N. T.); παλιν-γενεσία (Philo, Longin., Lucian, Plut.); πανο-κράτωρ (LXX, Anthol.).

παρά-κλητος (Aq. Theod., Diog. Laert., Dio Cass., papyri, inscriptions); παρα-χειμασία (Polyb., Diod.); παρτι-άρχης (LXX); περί-θεσις (Arr., Gal., Sext.); περι-κάθ-αρμα (LXX, Epict., Curt.);

περι-ογή (Theophr., Diod., Plut., etc.); περι-τομή (LXX, Jos., papyri); περι-ψήμα (Tob., Ign.); πραι-παθία (Philo, Ign.); προ-άλιοι (Pollux); προ-σάββατον (LXX, eccl.); προσ-αίτης (lit. κοινή); πρόσ-κομμα (LXX, Plut.); προ-σάββατον (inscriptions, 81 A.D.);

προσ-κυνητής (inscriptions, eccl., Byz.); προσ-φάγιον (inscriptions, ὑψόν Ἀττικῶς, προσ-φάγιον Ἑλληνικῶς, Moeris); προσώπο-λήμπτης (Chrys.).

προσώπο-ληψία (eccl.); πρωτο-καθεδρία (eccl.; πρωτο-κλησία (eccl. writers); πρωτο-τόκια (LXX, Philo, Byz.); ῥαβδ-οὐχος (ῥάβδος, ἐχώ, literary κοινή); ραδί-οὐγγήμα (literary κοινή), eccl.; σαρδ-όνυξ (Jos., Plut., Ptol.); σιτο-μέτριον (Polyb., Diod., Jos., inscriptions);

σκηνο-πηγία (Arist., LXX, Philo, inscriptions); σκηνο-ποιίς (Aelian, eccl.); σκληρο-καρδία (LXX); στρατο-πέδ-αρχος, -άρχης (reading of Syrian class in Ac. 28:16), though critical text rejects both (Dion. Hal., Jos., Lucian); συκό-μορέα (Geop.); various new words with σύν, like συν-αιχμάλωτος, συν-κατά-θεσ-ις, συν-κληρονόμος (Philo, inscriptions); συν-κοινωνώς, συν-οδία (LXX, Strabo, Jos., Epict., Plut.); συν-πρεσ-βύτερος, σύν-τροφός (LXX), etc.; τάπεινο-φροσύνη (Jos., Epict.); τεκνο-γονία (Arist.); τετρα-άρχης (Strabo, Jos.);

υἱο-θεσία (Diod., Diog. Laert., inscriptions); ύπερ-έκεινα (Byz. and eccl.);

ὑπό-γραμμός (2 Macc., Philo, eccl.); ὑπό-λειμμα (from ὑπό-λειψις, LXX, Arist., Theoph., Plut., Galen); ὑπό-λήψις (LXX, Demioph.); ὑπό-πάδιον (LXX, Lucian, Att.); in ὑπό-στολή (Jos., Plut.); ὑπό-ταγή (Dion. Hal.); ὑπό-τύπωσις (Sext. Emp., Diog. Laert.).

φρεν-ἀπάτης (papyri, eccl. writers); χαλκο-λίβανον (LXX); χειρό-γραφον (Polyb.);
Dion. Hal., Tob., Plut., Artem., papyri; χρε-οφειλέτης (from χρέος or χρέως and οφειλέτης, LXX, AESop, Plut., Dion. Hal.); χρηστο-λογία (Eust., eccl. writers); χρυσό-λιθος (Diod., LXX, Jos.); χρυσό-πρασος (only in Rev. 21:20); ψευδ-αδελφός, ψευδ-απάστολος ψευδό-διδάσκαλος, ψευδό-χριστός are all compounds of ψευδής and are N.T. words; ψευδο-προφήτης (ancient Greek ψευδόμαντις) is found in LXX, Philo, Jos.; ψευδό-μαρτυς (LXX) and ψευδό-μαρτυρία both go back to Plato and Aristotle. The papyri show many examples of such compounds. Cf. κωμό-γραμματεύς, P. Tb 40 (B.C. 117).

3. Adjectives. It will not be necessary to repeat the adjectives formed with inseparable prefixes (α--, etc. The method of many grammars in dividing the compounds according to the element in the first or second part has not been followed here. It is believed that the plan adopted is a simpler and more rational exposition of the facts. These adjectives are compounded of two adjectives like ὀλιγό-ψυχος, an adjective and substantive like ἀκρο-γυναῖος or vice versa ἀνθρωπ-ἀρεσκος; a substantive and a verbal like χειρο-ποιήτος; a preposition and a verb like συμ-παθής, with two prepositions and verbal like παρ-εἰς-ακτός; an adverb and a preposition and a verbal like εὖ-πρόσ-δεκτος, etc. The adjective compounds used in the N. T. characteristic of the κοινή are somewhat numerous. Ἄγαθο-ποιός (Sirach, Plut.); ἀγρι-ἐλαιός (Anthol.); ἀκρο-γυναῖος (eccl.); ἀλλο-γενής (LXX and Temple inscriptions meant for gentiles to read); ἀν-εξ-κακος (from ἀνά, ἔχομαι and κακός, Lucian, Justin M., Poll., papyri); ἀνθρωπ-ἀρεσκος (LXX, eccl.); ἀπό-δεκτος (Sext. Emp., Plut., inscriptions); ἀπο-συν-ἀγνωσ (2 Eschl.); ἀρτι-γέννητος (Lucian, Long.); αὐτό-κατά-κριτος (eccl. writers); βαρύ-τιμος (Strabo); γρα-ώδης (from γραύς, ἔδος, Strabo, Galen); δεξιο-λάβως (true reading in Ac. 23:23, late eccl. writers); δευτερο-πρώτος (cf. δευτερ-ἐσχατος, only MSS. in Lu. 6:1); δι-θάλασσας (Strabo, Dio Chrys., eccl.); δι-ψυχος (eccl.); ἐκ-θαμβος (Polyb., eccl.); ἐκ-τενής (Polyb., Philo); ἐκ-τρομος (only in ND Heb. 12:21, other MSS., ἐκ-τρομος, LXX, Plut.); ἐκ-φοβος (Arist., Plut.); ἐπι-θανάτιος (Dion. Hal.); ἐπι-πόθητος (eccl.); ἐτερό-γλωσ-σος (LXX, Strabo, Philo); εὖ-ἀρέστος (Wisd., eccl., inscr., but Xen. has εὐαρέστεως) εὖ-κοπος (Polyb., LXX); εὖ-λογιτός (LXX, Philo); εὖ-μετά-δοτος (Anton.); εὖ-παρ-εδρος (for Text. Rec. εὖ-πρόσ-εδρος, Hesych.); εὖ-περί-στατος (only in Heb. 12:1); εὖ-πρόσ-δεκτος Plut., eccl.); εὕρ-χωρος (Arist., LXX, Diom., Jos.); εὖ-σπλαγχνος (Hippoc., LXX, eccl. writers); θεο-διδακτος (eccl.); θεόπνευστος (Plut., Phoc., eccl. writers, inscriptions); ἰσ-ἀγγελος (cf. ἰσό-θεος,
Philo, eccl.; ἵσῳ-τιμὸς (cf. ἵσῳ-ψυχος, Philo, Jos., Plut., Lucian, AELia, etc.); καθημερινός (from καθ’ ἡμέραν, Judith, Theophr., Athen., Plut., Alciph., Jos.); κατ-εἰ-δῶλος (only in Ac. 17:16); κενό-δοξος (Polyb., Diod., Philo, Anton., eccl. writers); λα-ξευτός (LXX); λεπι-ουργικός (LXX, eccl. writers); μακρο-χρόνιος (LXX, Hipp., Agath.); μεταοι-λόγος (Telest.); μου-λάλος (LXX, schol. to Lucian); νεό-φυτος (LXX, papyri, Aristophanes?); άκτα-ήμερος (eccl. writers); οἰγό-πιστος (only in N. T.); οἰγό-ψυχος (LXX, Artem.); ἀλο-τελής (Plut., Hexapla, eccl. writers); παν-οὐργός (Arist., κοινή, LXX); παραλυτικός (eccl. writers); παρε-ἰς-ακτός (Strabo); παρε-ἐπί-δημος (Polyb., Athen., LXX); πατρο-παρά-δοτος (Diod., Dion. Hal., eccl. writers); πεντέ-και-δέκατος (Diod., Plut., etc.); πολλα-πλασίων (Polyb., Plut., etc.); πολυ-σπλαγχνος (LXX, Theod. Stud.); πολυ-τιμος (Plut., Herodian, Anatol.); ποτομοφόρητος (only in Rev. 12:15 and Hesych.); προ-βατικός (from πρό-βατον, LXX, Jo. 5:2); πρόσ-καιρος (4 Macc., Jos., Dio Cass., Dion. Hal., Strabo, Plut., Herodian); προ-φητικός (Philo, Lucian, eccl.); πρωτό-τοκος (LXX, Philo, Anatol., inscriptions, eccl.); στητό-βρωτος (LXX, Sibyll. Or.); σκληρο-τράχηλος (LXX); σκυλοκ-βρωτος (Theophr.); σύμ-μορφος (Lucian, Nicand.); συμ-παθής (LXX); σύν-ψυχος (eccl. writers); συν-εκ-λεκτός (only in 1 Pet. 5:13); σύν-σωμος (eccl. writers); συν-στατικός (Ding. Laert.); ταπεινό-φρων (from ταπεινός, φρήν, LXX, Plut.); τρί-στεγος (Dion. Hal., Jos., Symm.); φθιν-οπωρινός (Arist., Polyb., Strabo, Plut.); φιλ-αγαθός (Arist., Polyb., Wisd., Plut., Philo); φιλ-αυτός (Arist., Philo, Plut., Jos., Sext.); φιλ-ήδονος (Polyb., Plut., Lucian, etc.); φιλό-θεος (Arist., Philo, Lucian, etc.); φρεν-απάτης (eccl. writers); χειρ-αγωγός (Artem., Plut., etc.); χειρο-ποίητος (LXX, Polyb., Dion. Hal., papyri); χρυσο-δακτύλιος (Jas. 2:2, elsewhere only in Hesych.). It will be apparent from this list how many words used in the N. T. appear first in Aristotle or the literary κοινή. Aristotle was no Atticist and broke away from the narrow vocabulary of his contemporaries. Many of these late words are found in the papyri and inscriptions also, as is pointed out. But we must remember that we have not learned all that the papyri and inscriptions have to teach us. Cf. also the numeral adjective δέκα-τεσσαρές (LXX, Polyb., papyri).1 See further chapter VII, Declensions.

4. Adverbs. The late Greek uses many new adverbs and new kinds of adverbs (especially compounds and prepositional adverbs). For list of the new prepositional adverbs see chapter on

---

1 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 70,
prepositions. These are usually formed either from adjectives like ἐν-ὀπίον (neuter of ἐν-ὀπίος) or by composition of preposition and adverb as in ὑπὲρ-ἀνω, or preposition and adjective as in ἐκ-περισσοῦ, or two or more prepositions (prepositional adverbs as in ἀπε-ἐν-αντί), or a preposition and a noun-root as in ἀπο-τόμως, or a substantive and a verb as in νοτ-ἐχως, or an adjective and a substantive as in παν-πληθεί, or an adjective and an adverb as in παν-τοτε, or a preposition and a pronoun as in ἐκ-αὐτῆς. In a word, the compound adverb is made from compound adjectives, substantives, verbs with all sorts of combinations. The κοινή shows a distinct turn for new adverbiale combinations and the N. T. illustrates it very clearly. Paul, especially, doubles his adverbs as in ὑπὲρ-ἐκ-περισσοῦ. These adverbs are generally formed by parathetic composition and are used as prepositions in the later Greek, incorrectly so according to Blass.1 But it must be remembered that the κοινή developed according to its own genius and that even the Atticists could not check it. In Luke παν-πληθεί, (Lu. 23:18) and παν-οικεί (Ac. 16:34) are not derived from adjectives or previous adverbs, but from substantives (perhaps assoc. instr.). As to the use of adverbs as prepositions, all prepositions were originally adverbs (cf. ἐν-αντίον). In the later language we simply can see the process of development in a better state of preservation. No magical change has come over an adverb used with a case. It is merely a helper of the case-idea and is part of the analytic linguistic development.

The chief compound adverbs used in the N. T. characteristic of the κοινή are here given. As the list of adverbs is much smaller than those of verbs, substantives and adjectives, compounds with ἀ-- privative are included here. Ἀ-δια-λεῖπτως (Polyb., Diod., Strabo, 1 Macc., papyri); ἀνα-μεσον and ἀνα-μερος is the Text. Rec. in Rev. 7:17 and 1 Cor. 14:27, but this is not the modern editing, rather ἀνα μέσον, etc.; ἀν-αντι-ρήτως (Polyb., etc.); ἀντι-πέρα (Xen. ἀντι-πέραν, Polyb., etc.); ἀπ-ἐναντί (Polyb., LXX, papyri and inscriptions); ἀ-περι-σχάστως (Polyb., Plut.); ἀπο-τόμως (Polyb., Diod., Wisd., Longin.); δηλ-αυγῶς (so ΝΧΔ in Mk. 8:25 for τηλ-αυγῶς); δια-παντός is the way Griesbach and Tisch. print δια παντός; ἐκ-παλαι (Philo and on, inscriptions); ἐν-τενῶς (Polyb., LXX, inscriptions); ἐν-ἀντί (LXX, inscriptions); ἐν-ὀπίον (Theoc., LXX, papyri); ἐξ-ἀπία (LXX, Jamb., Byz.); ἐξ-αὐτῆς (Theogn., Arat., Polyb., Jos., etc.); ἑφ-ἀπαξ (Lucian, Dio Cass.,

etc.); καθ-εξής (AElian, Plut.); κατ-έν-αντι (LXX, Hermas); κατ-
εν-ώπιον (LXX); νουν-εχώς (Arist., Polyb.); παν-πληθεί (Dio Cass.);
παν-οικεί (rejected by the Atticists for πανοικία [LXX], Plato Eryx.,
Philo, Jos.); παν-τοτε (Sap., Menand., Dion. Hal., condemned by
the Atticists for ἐκδόστος); παρ-εκτός (LXX); προσ-φάτως (LXX, Polyb.,
Alciph.); ὑπερ-άνω (Arist., LXX, Polyb., Jos., Plut., etc.);
ὑπερ-ἐκείνα (Byz. and eccl.); ὑπερ-εκ-περισσόυ (Dan. 2:22, Ald.,
Compl.); ὑπερ-εκ-περισσῶς (T, W. H. marg. 1 Th. 5 : 13, Clem.
Rom.); ὑπερ-λίαν (Eust.); ὑπερ-περισσῶς (only Mk. 7:37). There
are two ways of writing some of these compound adverbs, either
as single words or as two or more words. The editors differ as
to διὰ παντός, ἐφ’ ἀπεξ, ἐκ-πάλαι, καθ’ ἡμέραν, καθ’ ὀλου, ὑπὲρ ἐκείνα
etc. The editors do as they wish about it. These compound
adverbs were still more numerous in the Byzantine writers.1 For
further list of verbs compounded with prepositions see "Language
of the N. T." by Thayer, in Hastings' D. B. The κοινή was fond
of compound words, some of which deserve the term sesquiped-
dalian, like καταδύναστεώς, συναντιλαμβάνομαι, etc. We must not for-
get that after all these modern words from Aristotle onwards
are only a small portion of the whole. Kennedy (Sources of N. T.
Greek, p. 62) claims that only about 20 per cent. of the words in
the N. T. are post-Aristotelian. Many of this 20 per cent. reach
back into the past, though we have no record as yet to observe.
The bulk of the words in the N. T. are the old words of the
ancients, some of which have a distinct classic flavour, literary
and even poetic, like αἰσθητήριον, πολυποίκιλος. See list in Thayer's
article in Hastings' D. B., III, p. 37.

These lists seem long, but will repay study. They are reason-
ably complete save in the case of verbs compounded with preposi-
tions and substantives so compounded. As a rule only words
used by Aristotle and later writers are given, while Demosthenes
is not usually considered, since he was more purely Attic.

V. Personal Names Abbreviated or Hypocoristic. The chap-
ter on Orthography will discuss the peculiarities of N. T. proper
names in general. Here we are concerned only with the short
names formed either from longer names that are preserved or
from names not preserved. This custom of giving short pet-
names is not a peculiarity of Greek alone. It belonged, moreover,
to the early stages of the language and survives still.2 It was used
not merely with Greek names, but also with foreign names brought
into the Greek. It is proof of the vernacular κοινή in the N. T.

Cf. English "Tom" and "Will." These abbreviated names are regularly from compounds, as ζηνᾶς for ζηνό-δωρος (Tit. 3:13). Of the various forms used in these abbreviated names only three occur in the N. T., —ας, —ης, —ως. The great majority belong to —ας or —ας. 1 'Αμπλίας (or —ιας) is the reading of the Western and Syrian classes in Ro. 16:8 for 'Αμπλιάτος (Latin Ampliatus); 'Ανδρέας is, according to Blass, 2 "a genuine old Greek form," while Schmiedel 3 thinks it can come from 'Ανδρομέδης; 'Αντίπας is an abbreviation of 'Αντίπατρος (Rev. 2:13) (found in inscription iii/A.D. at Pergamum 4); 'Απολλώς, possibly 5 an abbreviation for 'Απολλώνιος, is the reading of D in Ac. 18:24, though Ν 15, 180 read 'Απελλῆς here, while 'Απελλῆς is read by all MSS. in Ro. 16:10 (cf. Doric 'Απελλᾶς in inscriptions, PAS, ii, 397); 'Αρτέμιᾶς (Tit. 3:12) is an abbreviation of 'Αρτέμιδωρος; Δημᾶς (Col. 4:14; Phil. 24; 2 Tim. 4:10) is probably an abbreviation of Δημήτριος, though Δημαρχος is possible (Δημέας also=Δημᾶς) not to mention Δημάρατος, Δημαρδοκός; 'Επαφράς (Col. 1:7; 4:12; Phil. 23) is (Ramsay so takes it, Expositor, Aug., 1906, p. 153. Cf. genitive 'Επαφράδος, PAS, iii, 375; Fick-Bechtel, p. 16) an abbreviation of 'Επαφρόδιτος (Ph. 2:25; 4:18), but it does not follow that, if true, the same man is indicated in Ph. and Col.; 'Ερμᾶς (Ro. 16:14) is from the old Doric form abbreviated from 'Ερμόδωρος; 'Ερμής (Ro. 16:14) may be merely the name of the god given to a man, though Blass doubts it. 6 Likewise we may note that θεοῦς (Ac. 5:36) is possibly an abbreviation of θεόδωρος; 'Ιουνίας (sometimes taken as feminine 'Ιουνία, Ro. 16:7) may be 'Ιουνίᾶς as abbreviation of 'Ιουνιανός; Κλεόπας (Lu. 24:18) is apparently an abbreviation of Κλεόπατρος; Λουκᾶς (Col. 4:14; Phil. 24; 2 Tim. 4:11) is an abbreviation of Λουκανός and of Λούκιος 7; Νυμφᾶς (Col. 4:15) is probably derived from Νυμφόδωρος; 'Ολυμπᾶς

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 71.
3 W.-Sch., p. 143. 4 Deiss., B. S., p. 187.
6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 71. Cf. also Fick-Bechtel, p. 304. Fick (xxxviii) takes it from 'Ερμοκράτης, as also 'Ερμᾶς.
7 Ramsay (Exp., Dec., 1912, pp. 504 ff.) quotes inscription of Pisid. Antioch where Λουκᾶς and Λούκιος are used for the same person.
(Ro. 16:15) is apparently abbreviated from 'Ολυμπιόδωρος, though 'Ολυμπιάνος is possible; Παρμενάς (Ac. 6:5) is probably an abbreviation of Παρμενίδης, though Blass\(^1\) suggests Παρμένων; Πατρόβας (Ro. 16:14) is derived from Πατρόβιος; Σίλας (Ac. 15:22, etc.) is the same man as Σιλούανος (MSS. often Σιλβανός), as Paul always calls him (1 Th. 1:1, etc. So Peter in 1 Pet. 5:12); Στεφανάς (1 Cor. 1:16; 16:15, 17) may be either a modification of Στέφανος or an abbreviation of Στεφανηφόρος; Σώσπατρος (Ac. 20:4) is read Σωσίπατρος by a dozen of the cursive and the Sah. Cop. Arm. versions, while Σωσίπατρος is the correct text in Ro. 16:21, but it is not certain that they represent the same man, for Σώσπατρος is from Beroea and Σωσίπατρος from Corinth, though it is possible. 'Αρχέλαος, Νικόλαος appear in the N. T. in the unabbreviated forms, though in the Doric the abbreviated forms in –ας were used. On the subject of the N. T. proper names one can consult also Thieme, Die Inschriften von Magnesia am Maander und das N. T., 1906, p. 39 f. He finds twenty of the N. T. names in the Magnesia inscriptions, such as 'Απφία, 'Αρτεμάς (‘Αρτεμίδωρος), etc. Κυρία is a common proper name (cf. Hatch, Journal of Bibl. Lit., 1908, p. 145). For the papyri illustrations see Mayser, Gr. der griech. Papyri (Laut- und Wortlehre, 1906), p. 253 f. Cf. also Traube, Nomina Sacra (1907), who shows that in both B and \(\Xi\) as well as D the abbreviation ΙΗΧ ΧΠ is found as well as the more usual IC XC. Cf. Nestle, Exp. Times, Jan., 1908, p. 189. Moulton (Cl. Quarterly, April, 1908, p. 140) finds 'Ακουσίλαος in the body of a letter in a papyrus and 'Ηκούτι, the abbreviated address, on the back. See also Burkitt, Syriac Forms of N. T. Proper Names (1912), and Lambertz, Die griech. Sklavennamen (1907).

VI. The History of Words. This subject concerns not merely the new words appearing in the N. T. but all words there used. This is the best place for a few remarks on it. It is not enough to know the etymology, the proper formation and the usage in a given writer. Before one has really learned a word, he must know its history up to the present time, certainly up to the period which he is studying. The resultant meaning of a word in any given instance will be determined by the etymology, the history and the immediate context.\(^2\) The etymology and the history belong to the lexicon, but the insistence on these principles is within

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 71. Cf. Meisterh., Gr. der att. Inschr. (pp. 114-118), for formation of proper names.

the purview of grammar. The N. T. Greek on this point only calls for the same treatment granted all literature in all languages and ages.

Take σκάνδαλον, for instance. It is a shorter form of the old Greek word σκανδάληθρον, ‘trap-stick.’ The root σκανδήθρον is seen in the Sanskrit skandami, ‘to dart,’ ‘to leap.’ The Latin has it in scando, de-scendo. The termination –άληθρον is possibly the suffix –τρον, (–θρον) for instrument and σκανδή-άλα(ν). The form σκανδάληθρον occurs in Alcephro, of which σκάνδα-αλο-ν is simply the neuter variation. Σκάνδα-αλο-ν occurs first in the LXX as a translation for ἄψις or ἐπιγάμος, 'a noose,' 'a snare,' as in Ps. 69 (68):23. It was the trap-stick, the trap, the impediment; then a stumbling-block or any person who was an occasion of stumbling, as in Josh. 23:13. So Peter became a stumbling-block to Jesus, σκάνδαλον εἰς ἐμοῦ (Mt. 16:23). Christ crucified became a σκάνδαλον to the Jews (1 Cor. 1:23). Take again ἐκ-κλησία (from ἐκ-κλητος, ἐκκαλέω). The root καλ appears in the Latin cal-endae, con-cil-i um, nomen-ch a-tor; in the Old High German hal-on, 'to call.' Originally ἐκ-κλησία was a calling-out of the people from their homes, but that usage soon passed away. It became the constitutional assembly of Athens and "we must banish from our minds all remembrance of its etymology."¹ In the LXX the word is used as the equivalent of ἴλπα, the assembly of the Israelites as a whole. In the N. T. the word takes a further advance. It still appears in the sense of ‘assembly’ at times, as in 1 Cor. 11:18, but usually, as Thayer shows (Lexicon), the idea of the word is that of body or company of believers whether assembled or not, the body of Christ. This is true at times where the idea of assembly is impossible, as in Ac. 8:3. The word in this sense of body of Christians is used either in the local (Ac. 8:3) or the general sense (Mt. 16:18). In the general sense the word does not differ greatly from one aspect of the word βασιλεία. These examples must suffice.

VII. The Kinship of Greek Words. The study of the family tree of a word is very suggestive. Δείκ-υν-μι is a good illustration in point. It has the root δείκ which appears in the Sanskrit dic-ami, ‘to show,’ Latin dic-o, Gothic teiho, German zeigen, etc. On the root δείκ a number of Greek words are built, as δείκ-η, ‘the way pointed out,’ ‘right’ or ‘justice’; δείκην, ‘after the way’ or 'like'; δείκ-ης, 'a showing'; 'something shown'; δείκ-αίως, ‘a man who seeks to go the right way,’ ‘righteous’; δείκ-αίω, ‘to

¹ Hicks, Cl. Rev., 1887, p. 43. See also Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., pp. 57-60.
make or declare one to be righteous'; δικ-αίω-σις, 'the act of declaring one righteous'; δικ-αίω-μα, 'the thing declared to be right'; δικ-αίωσ, 'the quality of being right,' 'righteousness'; δικ-αίως, 'righteously' or 'justly'; δικ-ασ-τήριον or δικ-θασ-τής, one who decides righteously'; δικ-ασ-τήριον, 'the place for judging righteously.'

Each of these words occurs in the N. T. save three, δίκη, δικ-αίω-τής, δικασ-τήριον. With these twelve words the difference in meaning is not so much due to historical development (like ἐκκλησία) as to the idea of the various suffixes. It is, of course, true that the N. T. has a special doctrine of righteousness as the gift of God which colours most of these words. The point is that all these various points of view must be observed with each word. Another illustration that will not be followed up is λύτρον (Mt. 20:28), ἀπο-λύτρω-σις (Ro. 3:24). The ideas of action, agent, result, instrument, quality, plan, person, etc., as shown by the suffixes, differentiate words from each other.


The development of this line of study will amply repay the N. T. student.

VIII. Contrasts in Greek Words or Synonyms. The Greek is rich in synonyms. In English one often has a choice between the Anglo-Saxon word or its Norman-French equivalent, as "to ask" or "to inquire." The Greeks made careful distinctions in words. Socrates tripped the Sophists on the exact meaning of words as often as anywhere. We are fortunate in N. T. study in the possession of two excellent treatises on this subject. Trench, *Synonyms of the N. T.*, 1890, is valuable, though not exhaustive. But he gives enough to teach one how to use this method of investigation. Heine, *Synon. des neatest. Griech.*, 1898, is more comprehensive and equally able. The matter can only be mentioned

---

1 § 149, new ed., 1904.
here and illustrated. With δίκαιος, for instance, one should com-
pare ἀγαθός, ἁγιός, καθαρός, καλός, ὁσίος, before he can obtain a
complete idea of N. T. goodness or righteousness. We see Jesus
himself insisting on the use of ἀγαθός for the idea of absolute
goodness in Mk. 10:18, οὐδεὶς ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ ἐὰν ὁ θεός. Both ἀγαθός
and δίκαιος occur in Lu. 23:50. In Lu. 8:15 the phrase καρδία
ἀγαθή καὶ καλή approaches Socrates' common use of καλὸς κ’ ἀγαθὸς
for "the beautiful and the good." It is also the Greek way of
saying "gentleman" which no other language can translate. To
go no further, τέρας, δύναμις and σημείον are all three used to de-
scribe the complete picture of a N. T. miracle. Νέος is 'young'
and 'not yet old,' καινὸς is 'recent' and 'not ancient.'
CHAPTER VI

ORTHOGRAPHY AND PHONETICS

The term orthography is used to include all that pertains to the spelling of Greek words. Phonetics deals with the sounds of the letters. The orthography was constantly changing, but not so rapidly as did the sounds. Each had an independent development as is seen very strikingly in the modern Greek vernacular (Thumb, Handbook of the Mod. Gk. Vernac., p. 6). There has never been a fixed orthography for the Greek tongue at any stage of its history. There has always been an effort to have new phonetic spelling to correspond to the sound-change. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 6. The confusion in spelling grew with the centuries as in English. Many delicate questions confront us at once. It has not seemed possible to give the explanation of all the varied phonetic (true or merely analogical) and orthographic changes in the use of the vowels and consonants. An orderly collection of the facts with historical side-lights is all that is attempted.

I. The Uncertainty of the Evidence. It is difficult to tell what is the vernacular usage in N. T. times on many points, though somewhat less so since the discovery of the papyri.

(a) THE ANCIENT LITERARY SPELLING. The difficulty is much increased by the comparison of the phonetic spelling of the modern vernacular with the historical orthography of the ancient literary Greek.¹ This method applied to any language may lead one into error. Modern conversational English differs widely in orthography from Spenser's Faerie Queene. For most of the history of the Greek language no lexicons or grammars were in use. There were the schools and the books on the one hand and popular usage on the other. The movement of the Atticists was just the opposite of the modern phonetic spelling movement in English. The Atticists sought to check change rather than hasten it. It is to be remembered also that the Atticists were the cloister

copyists of the ancient Greek writings and of the N. T. Later copyists reflect local types, some more conservative, some less so. The law of life is best here, as always, without artificial impulse or restraint. In seeking to restore the orthography of the vernacular of the first century A.D. one must not be handicapped by the literary Attic nor the modern Greek vernacular, though each will be of service. In simple truth one has to be less dogmatic these days concerning what could or could not have been in the past. Breasted\(^1\) calmly assures us that before 3000 B.C. "the alphabetic signs, each of which stood for one consonant," were in use in Egypt. He adds: "Had the Egyptian been less a creature of habit, he might have discarded his syllabic signs 3500 years before Christ, and have written with an alphabet of 24 letters."

The Greek language was a growth and did not at first have 24 letters. \(\varepsilon\), even in early Attic,\(^2\) not to mention Cretan, had the force of \(\varepsilon, \eta\) and sometimes \(\epsiloni\). Indeed Jannaris\(^3\) asserts that "the symbols \(\eta\) and \(\omega\), in numerous cases also \(\iota\), originated at school as mere compensatory marks, to represent positional or 'thetic' \(\varepsilon\) or \(\omicron\)." It is not surprising with this origin of vowels (and consonants do not differ) that variations always exist in the sound and use of the Greek letters. Blass\(^4\) is clearly right when he points out that in changes in the sounds of words "it is usual for the spelling not to imitate the new sound off-hand," and in the case of the N. T. writers there was "no one fixed orthography in existence, but writers fluctuated between the old historical spelling and a new phonetic manner of writing." Moulton\(^5\) adds that the N. T. writers had to choose "between the literary and illiterate Greek of their time," and "an artificial orthography left the door open for not a few uncertainties." Here is a "letter of a prodigal son" (B.G.U. 846 ii/A.D. See Milligan, Gk. Papyri, p. 93 f.) in which we have "phonetic" spelling in abundance: Kai διά πάντων[ν] ἐξομαί σαί ὑγειαίειν. Τῷ προσκύνημα σοι [ποι]ῶ κατ᾽ ἀικάστην ἡμαίραν παρὰ τῷ κυρίῳ [Σερ]άπειδει. Γεινώσκειν σαί θέλω κτλ. There is here interchange of \(\varepsilon\) and \(\alphai\), of \(\iota\) and \(\epsiloni\).

(b) THE DIALECT-COLOURED VERNACULAR. The dialects explain some variations in orthography. One copyist would be a better representative of the pure vernacular κοινή while another might

---

\(^1\) A Hist. of Egypt, 1906, p. 45.

\(^2\) Meisterh., Gr. etc., p. 3; Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 26 f.; Solmsen, Inscr. Graecae etc., pp. 52 ff.

\(^3\) Op. cit., p. 27.

\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 6.

\(^5\) Prol., p. 42.
live where Attic, Ionic, Doric or Northwest Greek had still positive influence. Often what looks like a breaking-down of the language is but the survival or revival of old dialectical forms or pronunciation. But these variations are mainly due to the personal equation. It was not till the time of Marcus Aurelius that the learned grammarians succeeded in formulating the artificial rules which afterwards prevailed for writing the old classical Greek. The first century A.D. was still an age of freedom in orthography. Even in the fourth century A.D. the scribe of Ξ prefers i rather than ei, while in the case of B ei often occurs where i, is the rule elsewhere. This is not mere itacism, but is also individual preference.1 "The oldest scribes whose work we possess (centuries 4 to 6) always kept themselves much freer from the schools than the later."2 But, even if Luke and Paul did not know the old historical spelling in the case of i mute (subscript) and ei, it is merely cutting the Gordian knot to "follow the Byzantine school, and consistently employ the historical spelling in the N. T." and that "without any regard to the MS. evidence." It is not the spelling of the Byzantine school nor of the Attic dialect that we are after, but the vernacular Greek of the first century A.D., and this is not quite "the most unprofitable of tasks," as Blass would have us believe.3

(c) THE UNCIALS. They do complicate the situation. On some points, as noted above, the great uncial Ξ and B differ, but usually that is not true. There is a general agreement between the older uncial in orthography as against the later uncial and the cursive which fell under the spell of the Byzantine reformers, who sought to restore the classical literary spelling. The Syrian class of documents therefore fails to represent the orthography of

---

1 Hort, The N. T. in Orig. Gk., App., Notes on Sel. Read., p. 152. But in the Intr. (p. 304) Hort is not willing to admit "peculiarities of a local or strictly dialectic nature" in the N. T. Still Hort (Notes on Orth., p. 151) allows the Doric δαγγεστ (δαγγεστως) in "single MS." like B and D, προσσαγειν in B, δασσων in D, etc. Hirt (Handb. d. Griech., p. 53) attributes much of the vocal change to dialect-mixing and analogy. On Ξ and B see Hort, op. cit., p. 306 f.

2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 6 f.

3 Ib., p. 7. Hort (p. 302 f. of the Intr. to the N. T. in Orig. Gk.) makes a strong defence of his effort to give as nearly as possible "the spelling of the autographs by means of documentary evidence." There must not be "slovenly neglect of philological truth." But Moulton (Prol., p. 47) does not "set much store by some of the minutiae which W. H. so conscientiously gather from the great uncial." Certainly "finality is impossible, notwithstanding the assistance now afforded by the papyri" (Thack., Gr., p. 71).
the vernacular κοινή of the first century A.D. The Syrian class, for instance, reads Καρεβραούμ, not Καθεβραούμ. But do the MSS. which give us the pre-Syrian types of text preserve the autographic orthography? The fourth century is a long time from the first and the presumption might seem to be to some extent against the Neutral, Alexandrian and Western classes also. The temptation is constant to spell as people of one's time do. This difficulty is felt by every editor of classical Greek texts and often purely arbitrary rules are used, rules made by modern critics. Hort\(^1\) is willing to admit that in some instances the spellings found in the great uncials which are at variance with the Textus Receptus are due to the "literary spellings of the time" when the MSS. were written, "but for the most part they belong to the 'vulgar' or popular form of the language." Hort could see that before we had the new knowledge from the papyri and inscriptions. He adds\(^2\): "A large proportion of the peculiar spellings of the N. T. are simply spellings of common life. In most cases either identical or analogous spellings occur frequently in inscriptions written in different countries, by no means always of the more illiterate sort." This fact showed that the unclassical spellings in the uncials were current in the Apostolic age and were the most trustworthy even if sometimes doubtful. "Absolute uniformity belongs only to artificial times," Hort\(^3\) argues, and hence it is not strange to find this confusion in the MSS. The confusion existed in fact in the first century A.D. and probably the autographs did not follow uniform rules in spelling. Certain it is that the N. T. writings as preserved in the MSS. vary. But itacism applies to all the MSS. to a certain extent and makes it difficult to know what vowel or diphthong was really before the scribe. In general the N. T., like the LXX, is grounded in matters of orthography on the rules of the grammarians of the time of the Caesars (Apollonius and Herodian) rather than upon those of the time of Hadrian, when they had an archaistic or Atticistic tendency (Helbing, *Grammatik d. LXX*, p. 1). Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 42) thinks that "there are some suggestive signs that the great uncials, in this respect as in others, are not far away from the autographs." But Thackeray (*op. cit.*, p. 56) denies that this

---

\(^1\) *Op. cit.*, p. 303 f. Jann. (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 35) calls attention to the fact that the professional copyists not only had to copy accurately, but "in the received uniform spelling." Cf. also Helbing, Gr. d. LXX, p. 2. For further remarks on the phenomena in the LXX MSS. see Swete, 0. T. in Gk. p. 300 f.


conclusion can be drawn *ipso facto* of the LXX, since it was translated (the Pentateuch certainly) some three centuries earlier than the N. T. was written.

(d) THE PAPYRI. They strengthen the case for the uncials. Deissmann¹ and Moulton² show that the great uncials correspond in orthography not only with the contemporaneous inscriptions as Hort had seen, but also with the papyri of the better-educated writers. Among the strictly illiterate papyri writers one can find almost anything. The case of εᾱν=ᾱν in relative clauses is worked out well by Moulton to prove this point. In the papyri dated B.C. the proportion of εᾱν to ἀν in such cases is 13 to 29, while in the first century A.D. it is 76 to 9. But in the fourth century A.D. it is 4 to 8 and the usage disappears in the sixth century A.D.

Thackeray (Grammar, vol. I, pp. 65 ff.) shows (after Deissmann³) how the LXX confirms this conclusion for εᾱν=ᾱν. The usage appears in B.C. 133; copyists are divided in different parts of the same book as in Exodus or Leviticus; it is predominant in the first and second centuries A.D., and then disappears. Thackeray (p. 58) traces οὐδεῖς (οὐθεῖς) "from its cradle to its grave" (from 378 B.C. to end of ii/A.D.) and shows how in ii/A.D. οὐδεῖς is supreme again. This point very strikingly confirms the faithfulness of the uncials in orthography in a matter out of harmony with the time when the MSS. were written. We may conclude then that Hort is right and the uncials, inscriptions and papyri give us the vernacular orthography of the *koinh* with reasonable correctness.

II. Vowel-Changes (*στοιχεῖα φωνήματα*). In the old times the vowels underwent many changes, for orthography was not fixed. Indeed is it ever fixed? If the Atticists had let the *koinh* have a normal development, Dr. Rutherford would not have complained that Greek was ruined by their persistence "in an obsolete orthography instead of spelling as they speak."⁴ But as early as 403 B.C. the orator Archinos⁵ had a law passed in Attica prescribing the use of the Ionic alphabet in the schools. The early Greek used only α, ε, ι, ο, υ, and no distinction was made in writing be-

between long and short vowels, as indeed was never done in "the
case of i and u. The Ionic invented\(^1\) \(\Omega\) for long o. Before the
introduction of the Ionic alphabet, I.E. a and e were represented
by \(\epsilon\). H was at first the aspirate like Hebrew \(\Pi\) and then now
aspirate and now long \(\epsilon\) or \(\alpha\) as the inscriptions amply show. It
is very common in the early inscriptions to see \(\epsilon\) thus used as
long and o likewise, as in \(\epsilon\nu\alpha\iota\) and \(\tau\omicron\varsigma\). Cf. \(\epsilon\), o for spurious diph-
thongs \(\epsilon\iota\), \(\omicron\omicron\). The kinship of these vowels with the Phoenician
alphabet is plain, as \(\alpha\) is from \(\kappa\), \(\epsilon\) from \(\Pi\), \(\iota\) from \(\omicron\), o from \(\omicron\), u from the doubling of \(\omicron\) (and so a Greek invention). It is inter-
esting to note that the Sanskrit has three pure vowels, a, i, u,
while e and o are diphthongs in origin. In Sanskrit a far surpasses
all other vowel-sounds, more than twice as many as all other vowel-
sounds put together.\(^2\) Schleicher\(^3\) speaks of the weakening of a
into i and u, and thus he, goes back to an original a sound for all
the vowels. In Latin also a breaks into e, i and u.\(^4\) Even in
Attica in the first century B.C., in spite of Archinos' law, the in-
scriptions use sometimes \(\omicron\alpha\iota\) and \(\alpha\epsilon\iota\) and \(\iota\eta\) and \(\iota\), \(\omicron\) and \(\omicron\), \(\iota\) and \(\epsilon\iota\) interchangeably.\(^5\) Uniformity did not exist in one dialect,
not to mention the persistent differences between the various Greek
dialects. These changes were going on constantly all over the
Greek world in the first century A.D. For the alphabetical changes
in the dialects see Buck's *Greek Dialects*, pp. 15 ff. These inter-
changes between vowels are interesting.

(a) THE CHANGES (INTERCHANGES) WITH \(\alpha\). The first sound
made by a baby is \(\alpha\). These changes became dialectical peculiari-
ties in many words like the Lesbian \(\kappa\rho\omicron\tau\omicron\varsigma\) (\(\kappa\rho\acute{\alpha}t\omicron\varsigma\), "ablaut" varia-
tions), the Boeotian \(\acute{\epsilon}\tau\omicron\rho\omicron\varsigma\) (\(\acute{\epsilon}\tau\omicron\rho\omicron\varsigma\)), Doric \(\acute{\iota}\omicron\rho\omicron\varsigma\) (\(\acute{\iota}\epsilon\omicron\rho\omicron\varsigma\)).\(^6\) So in the
vernacular Attic we find , \(\acute{\epsilon}\rho\nu\epsilon\tau\iota\) (\(\acute{\epsilon}\rho\nu\epsilon\tau\iota\)) where a breaks to \(\epsilon\) before
\(\epsilon\) (vowel assimilation), as in the Ionic-Attic a sometimes changes
to \(\epsilon\) after \(\iota\) and \(\omicron\).\(^7\) See Kuhner-Blass\(^6\) for many examples.

---

\(^1\) Riem. and Goelzer, Gr. Comp. du Grec et du Lat., Phonét., p. 38.
Cf. also Donaldson, The New Crat., pp. 207 ff.; K.-B1., Griech. Gr., Tl. I,
Bd. I, pp. 39 ff.; Earle, Names of the Orig. Letters of the Gk. Alph. (Class-
Sir Arthur Evans gets the Gk. Alph. from Crete.


\(^3\) Vergl. Gr., p. 55. His opinion is now considered antiquated.

\(^4\) Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 149 f.

\(^5\) Telfy, Chron. and Topog. d. grec. Ausspr. etc., 1893, p. 39. See also
Larsfeld, Griech. Epig., 1892, pp. 494 ff.; King and Cookson, Sounds and
Inflex. in Gk. and Lat., 1888.


\(^7\) Hirt, Handb. der griech. Laut- u. Formenl., pp. 115, 119. \(\Gamma\delta\), is the form
α and ε. Αγγαρεύω appears as ἑγγαρ. in Κ (Mt. 5:41) and ΚΒ (Mk. 15:21).1 The New Ionic ἐνεκένυ (more commonly ἐνεκένυ) has nearly displaced the Attic ἐνεκα which Blass2 admits only in Αc. 26:21. Ἐδεικτεῖν for ἦδετα appears in Mk. 4:28 as a rare Ionic form. Herodotus3 had both ἦδετα and ἐπειτα. Καθαρίζω in the aorist (active and passive) and perfect middle has ε for the second α in many of the best MSS. both in LXX and N. T. (cf. Mk. 1:42; Mt. 8: 3 W. H.). Gregory, Prolegomena, p. 82, gives the facts. Blass4 points out that Πατέρα (Πατάρα) occurs in AC in Ac. 21:1. Τεσσεράκοντα is the form given always by W. H. This is an Ionic form (vowel assimilation) which is not so common in the papyri as in the N. T. MSS.5 In modern Greek both σαράντα and σεράντα survive. Likewise W. H. always give the preference to τέσσερα, though the papyri do not use it till the fourth century A.D.6 But in the inscriptions τέσσερα is found several times,7 one case in the first century A.D.8 Τέσσερας, however, does not occur in the N. T. MSS., though the papyri have it in the Byzantine age.9 The Ionic and the modern Greek have τέσσαρες and τέσσερα. The N. T. thus differs from the κοινή papyri, but is in harmony with the Ionic literature and inscriptions. In some MSS. in both LXX and N. T.

in Doric and Boeotian, while γε is found in the Ionic, Attic and Cypriote


1 Deiss., B. S., p. 182, gives ἑγαρίας in a pap. (iv/A.D.).
3 According to Phrynicus (Rutherford, New Phryn., p. 204) both of these words are ἑσχάτως βάρβαρα.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 20.5 Moulton, Prol., p. 46.
7 Dieterich, Unters. zur Gesch. der griech. Spr., p. 4; also Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., p. 163.
8 Nachm., Laute and Formen d. magn. Inschr., p. 146.
9 Moulton, Prol., p. 46. For further evidence see Cronert, Mem. Graeca Hercul., 1903, p. 199. In the Apostolic Fathers and the N. T. Apoc. τέσσερα and τεσσεράκοντα are common as well as ἐκαθερίσθη (Reinhold, De Graecitate Patr. Apostol. etc., p. 38 f. On the whole subject of α and ε in the papyri see careful discussion of Mayser, Gr., pp. 54-60, where he mentions έκοιλω, ἐγγαρεύω, ἐπελευσασθαί (for similar confusion of aorist and fut. inf. see ἐκφεύξασθαί, 2 Macc. 9:22 V). Τέσσερα and τεσσεράκοντα are very common also in the LXX MSS. Cf. Hellbing, Gr. d. LXX, p. 5; Thack., Gr., p. 62f. This spelling occurs as early as iv/B.C. in Pergamum (Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., p. 163 f.). In Egypt it hardly appears before i/A.D. and is not common till ii/A.D. (Thack., Gr., p. 62). The uncials give the later spelling. See "Additional Notes."
τέσσαρες is accusative as well as nominative, like the Achaean dialect, but this is another story. K in Rev. 3:16 has χλειρός. The common (Ionic and Northwest Greek) use of —éω instead of —άω with verbs as in ἐρωτέω will be discussed in the chapter on Verbs.

Conversely ε is sometimes changed to α. Ἀμφιέζει is accepted by W. H. in Lu. 12:28 rather than either the late ἀμφιέζει or the early ἀμφιένυσι. The form ἔραυνάω instead of ἔρευνάω W. H. have everywhere received into the text, and so with ἔξεραυνώω and ἀνεξεραύνητος. K always read it so, sometimes AC. It is supported by the papyri. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 113; Helbing, Gr. d. LXX, p. 7, for similar phenomena in the LXX.

Initial ε often becomes α in modern Greek vernacular, as ἀλαφρός (ἐλαφρός), ἀντερα (ἐντερα), etc. Cf. Thumb, Handbook, p. 14. So the Doric πιάζω is used in the N. T. everywhere save in Lu. 6:38, where, however, πεπεισμένος has the original idea ('pressed down,' not 'seized'). Both occur in the LXX. The Attic forms φιάλη, άσαλος are retained in the N. T. (as in LXX) rather than the Ionic and vernacular κοινή forms in ε, a mark of the influence of the literary κοινή.

Some verbs in —έω also use —αω forms, like ἐλεάω, ἐλλογάω, ἐμφαίω. See the chapter on Verbs.

Changes in α take place in a few Hebrew proper names. Καπερναοῦμ, is the Syrian reading for Καφαρναοῦμ (W. H.). So W. H. read Μαλελεήλ in Lu. 3:37, not Μελ. (Tisch.), and Ναθαναήλ. Σελαθηλ (instead of Σαλ.) appears in B. Thumb remarks that these changes between α and ε occur to-day in the Kappadocian dialect.

α and η. The Doric forms ὀδαγός, ὀδαγῶ are found in the κοινή, though Schweizer calls it hardly a Dorism. So in N. T. MSS. we have προσαγέω in B (Ac. 27:27) and βάσσω in D (Mk. 9:18). The Ptolemaic papyri regularly have ἀνηλίσκειν till ii/A.D. (Mayser, Gr., p. 345). For α and ᾃ see η and η under (c).

α and ο. The changes between these two vowels are seen in the Lesbian ὑπά (ὑπά), Arcadian τριακάστοι, Doric ἐκατοτι (ἐκαστοτι), etc. W. H. give βατταλογέω in Mt. 6:7 (cf. βατταρίζω) instead of βαττολογέω. ABK and twice Χ and many cursives have πρός Κολασσαεῖς

---

1 Dieterich Unters. etc., p. 70. Cf. Thack., Gr., vol. I, p. 75 f. So Δαλματία in 2 Tim. 4:10, though C has Δελμ. as Lat. has both. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 21. Both forms are in the pap., Deiss., B. S., p. 182.

2 Hellen. (Griech. Spr.), p. 76. See also Rademacher, N. T. Gr., pp. 34 ff.


So A in 2 Macc. 6:21.

4 K.-B1., Tl. I, Bd. I, p. 117 f. Cf. Meisterh., Gr. etc., p. 117, where Attic inscr. are shown to have Νεοπολίτης.
as the title, while in Col. 1:2 nearly all MSS. read ἐν Κολοσσαῖς. Blass finds the title in a also in accordance with the coins and the profane writers; Xen., Anab. I, 2. 6, has a variant reading in Κολοσσαῖς. In Mk. 13:35 B has μεσανυκτίου and D in Lu. 11:5 instead of μεσονυκτίου. In 1 Tim. 1:9 W. H. give μητρολφαίς and πατρολφαίς (instead of –αλοίας) on the authority of ΝДФГЛ. Blass compares πατροκτόνος.

α and ω. Ἀνάγαιον is read by the most and the best MSS. in Mk. 14:15; Lu. 22:12. Ἀνώγεον, ἀνώγαιον, ἀνώγεων, ἀνάγεον have only "trifling authority." Γαῖος is Doric and Ionic.

α and αι. The papyri sometimes have the Epic and Ionic αἰεί, though the N. T. only reads αεί. The i early dropped out between the vowels. Cf. Maysen, Gr., p. 103. B has αἰεί in 1 Esd. 1:30. The N. T., like the LXX, has καίω and κλαίω, though the Ptolemaic papyri rarely have κάω and κλάω.

α and αυ. In Lu. 2:1 ΝΚΔ have Ἀγούστου instead of Αὐγούστου. This spelling of α for αυ is found in Pergamum by Schweizer in the reflexive pronoun ἐατόν, while Meisterhans gives examples of it as early as 74 B.C. in the Attic inscriptions. Moulton is probably correct in saying that we need not assume the existence of this spelling in the N. T. autographs, though it is not impossible. He indorses Mayor's suggestion (Exp., VI, x, 289) "that ἀκαταπάστους in 2 Pet. 2:14 AB may be thus explained: he compares ἀχμηρῶ 1:19 A." This dropping of u between vowels extended to the dropping of u before consonants. In the modern Greek we have αὐτός (aftos) and ἀτός (in Pontus), whence comes τό (not the article). The examples of Ἀγούστος and ἀτός (ἀτογεννητόν, once) in the papyri are very common. Thackeray (Gr., p. 79) finds no instances in the LXX.

1 Hort (Notes on Orth., p. 152) compares μέσαβον, and Blass (Gr., p. 21) μεσαστύλιον. Μετοχύ (μεταξύ) is in 1 Clem. and Barn. (Reinhold, De Grace., p. 40. Cf. Maysen, Gr., p. 60 f., ἄλλοι for ἄλλοι). Illiterate scribes confused α and ο, α and ε in the LXX (as μετοχύ) and in the pap. (Thack., Gr., p. 77).

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 21.


4 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 31, 1904, p. 107. 5 Gr. etc., p. 91 f.

6 Gr. etc., p. 61. Cf. also Dieterich, linters, etc., p. 78.

7 Prol., p. 47.


9 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 33; 1904, p. 107. He quotes Laurent (B.C.H., 1903, p. 356) as saying that this phenomenon was very common in the latter half of i/B.C.
\( \alpha \) and \( \varepsilon \). \( \alpha \) was written \( \alpha \varepsilon \) in early Boeotian and Attic inscriptions (cf. Latin transliteration) and so gradually was pronounced as \( \varepsilon \) (Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 28). By 100 A.D. in the κοινή \( \alpha \) was the mere equivalent of \( \varepsilon \). The Egyptian papyri show abundant illustrations of it. Especially do the LXX MSS. exhibit it (Thackeray, Gr., p. 78). The modern Greek pronounces both these vowel-sounds alike, as indeed did the Boeotian dialect long before the κοινή. Numerous examples of this interchange of spelling exist in the Pompeian wall-inscriptions and in the vernacular κοινή from 100 A.D. on. Indeed in the N. T. MSS. it is very common to find –σθαν –σθαν used indiscriminately, probably representing the common later pronunciation which was already developing in the first century A.D. Hort\(^2\) compares this "shortening of an identical sound" to the late στόλος for στῦλος and κρίμα for κρίμα. So common did this blending become that Blass\(^3\) places little confidence in the N. T. MSS. on this point. Such readings occur as ἑτεῖσθε for αὐτεῖσθε and γυνέκαις for γυναῖκες. Sometimes only the context\(^4\) can decide between \( \varepsilon \) and \( \alpha \) where different forms result, as in ἀνάπεσε or –αν (Lu. 14:10), ἐγείρε or –αν (Mt. 9:5), ἐπάναγκαι (Ac. 15:28), ἐρχεσθε or –σθαν in ΚΑΔΛ (Lu. 14:17), ἔτεροις or ἐταίροις (Mt. 11:16 Syrian reading), παρένευκε or –αν (Mk. 14:36), etc. In Gal. 4:18 both Κ and B read ζηλοῦσθε for ζηλοῦσθαι. B reads Αἰλαμίται in Ac. 2:9, from Ὁ Ἔλ, the rest Ἐλ. The authority according to Hort\(^6\) is "usually preponderant" for ἐξέφυνης and ἑφυδίδιος instead of αίφ. So κερέα, for κεραία is accepted\(^7\) in Mt. 5:18; Lu. 16:17, and κρεπάλη for κραιπάλη in Lu. 21:34. Likewise W. H. receive Λασέα for λαίλαψ in Ac. 27:8. ΚΑΣ in 2 Pet. 2:17 read λέλαπος, but λαίλαψ is the undoubted reading in Matthew, Luke. The uncials all have ἰδή, not ράδη, in Rev. 18:13. So all the early uncials but A have Συκομορέα (not –α) in Lu. 19:4. Hort\(^8\) accepts also φελόνης for φαιλόνης (2 Tim. 4:13), though Moulton\(^9\) doubts, because of the Latin paenula.

\(^1\) W.-Sch., p. 47.  
\(^2\) Notes on Orth., p. 150. Cf. on at and E, Mayser, Gr., p. 107.  
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 9.  
\(^4\) W.-Sch., p. 47.  
\(^5\) Ἐπ' ἀνάγκαις "Alexandrian only" according to Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 151.  
\(^6\) Ib.  
\(^7\) Ib. Cf. the Western καυνοφωμίας for κενοφωμίας in 1 Tim. 6:20. In 1 Th. 3:3 instead of σαίνεσθαι FG read σιένεσθαι. Nestle (Neut.-Zeit., 1906, p. 361) finds parallels in the forms σιανομένων and σιαυνθείς.  
\(^8\) Notes on Orth., p. 151.  
(b) THE CHANGES WITH ε. The interchanges of ε and α have already been discussed under (a), but others took place with η, ι, o.

ε and ei In the Boeotian these were freely interchanged and the same interchange occurs in the Doric, New Ionic and Attic as πλέων, or πλείων. The Attic inscriptions show this common phenomenon. The ι before a vowel easily and early loses its force and drops out. Before the adoption of the scholastic orthography at Athens (B.C. 403) ε stood for ι, η, ει. Sooner or later ει became everywhere a monophthong (Buck, *Greek Dialects*, p. 28). But the κοινή usually wrote ει before vowels rather than ε (Thackeray, *Gr.*, p. 81). The LXX MSS. reveal the same traits as the N. T. 

'Αρεοπαγίτης is in Acts 17:34, but Ἀρείος occurs (Ac. 17:19, 22). 

'Αχρείος is uniform in the N. T., but in Ro. 3:12 we have ἡχρεώ-θησαν (XABDG). In Lu. 3:13; Jo. 21:15; Ac. 15:28, W. H. print πλέου (Attic has even πλέονος), but elsewhere the N. T. has forms in ει. The derivatives all have ε like πλεονεκτέω. But the N. T. has only τελείος, τελείω, though Herodotus always and the Attic usually used τελέω. Dc has τελεωσαί in Heb. 10:1. Of words with ε and ει before consonants one may note that ἀποστείλω in Ac. 7:34 is aorist subjunctive. (Cf. Ex. 3:10.) Both ἐνεκέν and ἐνεκέν occur in the N. T. (both Ionic and Attic). The N. T. never has ἐς, but always εις. However, ἔσω is the uniform reading in the N. T. Homer used either ἐςω or ἔςω.

ε and η. Numerous examples of long ε occur in the inscriptions like μετε (μήτε). These changes are probably all analogical and not phonetic. But in the N. T. we have only the shortening of η back to short ε in some words like ἀνάθημα, though this particular word ("curse") came to be distinct from ἀνάθημα ("votive offering").

Ἀνάθημα occurs only once in the N. T. (Lu. 21:5), and even here ΧΑΔΧ, etc., have ἀνάθημα. Tisch. quotes Moeris as saying ἀνάθημα ἀττικῶς, ἀνάθημα ἐλληνικῶς. But the use of ἀνάθημα as 'curse'
"is not an innovation of biblical Greek" (Moulton, *Prolegomena*, p. 46). In Ac. 11:11 ΚΑΒΔΓ reads ἡμεν, not ἡμήν. Perhaps this exchange between ε and η bears on the use of στήκετε with ἵνα in Mk. 11:25; 1 Th. 3:8, and of MS. evidence for θαυμάζετε in Jo. 5:20 and ἔξωμολογήσεται in Ph. 2:11. Cf. also ὄψησθε and ὄψεσθε in Lu. 13:28. So in 13:25. Mayser (*Gr.*, p. 64) thinks that sometimes ε represents an original open η as in παρεστεκότες.

The κοινή shows quite a preference for words in —εμα rather than —ημα (Mayser, *Gr.*, p. 65 f.), and the LXX has new words in —εμα, though some words have both forms (Thackeray, *Gr.*, p. 80).

In the papyri this shortening (as in the LXX) appears in words like ἐπίθεμα, πρόσθεμα, etc. The interchanges between η and ει, ηι, and ει will be discussed under η (c). Mayser (*Gr.*, p. 63 f.) thus (η for ε) explains πλήρης as an indeclinable neuter form.

ε and ι. Dieterich mentions as one of the marks of the Attic and Egyptian κοινή the fact that ι and ε interchange when used with λ and ν. Cf. the modern Greek, and the Lesbian Greek used τέρτος for τρίτος, and the Thessalian θῖς for θεός. It is a Doric characteristic. This variation appears in the inscriptions especially in the case of Λεγίων, which is also Λεγεων and even Λεγειων, not to mention a genitive Λεγίονς (ο and ω having the same sound). Λεγίων, is the reading of the best N. T. MSS. (ΚΒΔΛ; cf. Latin legio), as in the papyri. Especially in the case of the Latin short ι does the κοινή have ε. Αλεις, not ἐλεις, is the reading in the N. T. according to the best MSS. (Mk. 1:16, etc.). This is a natural assimilation after a liquid. The frequency of ε for ι in the Egyptian papyri may be due in part to the Coptic, which has no short ι (Steindorff, *Kopt. Gr.*, p. 13). Note a soldier's use of χέραν for χειραν, B.G.U. 423 (ii/A.D.). Λέτιον (Jo. 13:4, Latin linteum) is a change in the other direction, Latin ι to Greek ε. Blass says that λέντευον would have looked

---

1 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 108. Cf. also Moulton, Prol., p. 46, and Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., pp. 47 ff., has good discussion of this shortening of η to ε and also ω to ο. "Ε and η interchange times without number from v/B.C. down to ix/A.D." (Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 36). Reinhold (De Graec. Patr. etc., p. 101 f.) shows how the confusion between η and ε led to forms like ἔδων ἀγάπητε. Cf. the mod. Gk. στέκω (στήκω) and θέω (θήτω).

2 Unters. etc., p. 136. 3 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., P. 43 f.


5 Αλεις occurs in pap. also. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 307; Thackeray, p. 84.

6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 22.
unnatural to a Greek. Νηφάλιος also is alone well-attested,\(^1\) not νηφαλεός (1 Tim. 3:2, etc.). Ποσίωλοι in Ac. 28:13 represents the Latin Puteoli, using ι for ε (cf. Dittenberger, p. 145). Σιμικινθιον (not —ειν) is the N. T. reading (Ac. 19:12) for Latin semicinctium. So Τιβέριος (not Τεβέριος) is the N. T. rendition of Tiberius in Lu. 3:1, though the later Greek writers used Τεβέριος, Δομέτριος, etc.\(^2\)

It is really surprising that more examples of this exchange of ε and ι do not appear. The interchanges between ει and ι are discussed under (d), those between ευ and ι under (f).

ε and ι. The Lesbian AEolic had στρόφιος for the Doric στράφω.

The Ionic-Attic made it στρέφω. Meisterhans\(^3\) gives numerous examples of this change in ε and ι: οδολός for οδελός as early as the middle of the fourth century B.C. Dieterich\(^4\) mentions the assimilation of ε and ι as one of the marks of the Egyptian κοινή. In Ac. 18:24 Κ 15. 180. Cop. arm. and in 19:1 Κ 180. read ἀπελλής for ἀπολώς, though D has ἀπολλώνιος in 18:24. The Doric and the Attic inscriptions\(^5\) had ἀπέλλαω, ἀπελλώνιος, ἀπέλλιος, etc. In 1 Cor. and Titus we have only ἀπολλώς. Indeed Blass\(^6\) suggests that ἀπελλής is the reading of the α text in Acts and that ἀπολλώς is an interpolation from 1 Cor. It is more likely to think that the two old forms of the name were still in use, though ἀπολλώς is the correct text in Acts also. The MSS. of the N. T., even good uncials, have ὀλοθρεύω, ἐξολοθρεύω, ὀλοθρευτής as well as the usual ὀλεθρεύω, etc. (cf. οδολός for οδελός by assimilation), and Hort\(^7\) accepts the ε form only in Ac. 3:23. The Syrian class has the ι form. Blass,\(^8\) who usually cares little for such points, properly insists on the documentary evidence. In Heb. 11:28 only ADE have the ε form, while in 1 Cor. 10:10 DFG read ε.

---

\(^1\) Notes on Orth., p. 151.


\(^6\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 21. Cf. Mayser (Gr., pp. 94-97) for a discussion of the pap. situation.

\(^7\) Notes on Orth., p. 152.

\(^8\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 21. He quotes Buresch, Rhein. Mus., p. 216 f., as in favour of ε in the N. T. as well as the LXX. Ὄλεθρος appears in the Apost. Fathers (Goodspeed, Index) and ὀλοθρεύω in N. T. Apoc. (Reinholt, p. 40). For assimilation between ε and ι in mod. Gk. see Dieterich, Unters. etc., p. 274.
The LXX according to \textit{KAB} reads \(\epsilon\), though the modern Greek has \(\xi\omega\lambda\theta\epsilon\rho\varepsilon\omega\). But \(\delta\lambda\epsilon\theta\rho\sigma\varsigma\) is the uniform spelling in the N. T. and is the rule in the LXX (Thackeray, \textit{Gr.}, p. 88).

In Mk. 8:14 B has \(\epsilon\pi\epsilon\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\nu\tau\circ\) as is common in the LXX (Thackeray, \textit{Gr.}, p. 89). Cf. also \(\alpha\pi\epsilon\delta\epsilon\tau\circ\) (Heb. 12:16, LXX), \(\epsilon\xi\epsilon\delta\epsilon\tau\circ\) (Mk. 12:1), \(\delta\iota\epsilon\delta\epsilon\tau\circ\) (Ac. 4:35), \(\pi\alpha\rho\epsilon\delta\delta\epsilon\tau\circ\) (1 Cor. 11:23), and \(\epsilon\xi\epsilon\kappa\rho\epsilon\mu\epsilon\tau\circ\) (Lu. 19:48 \textit{KB}). Hort (Appendix, p. 167 f.) explains these changes as "euphonic," but it is a change of the root-vowel of \(\delta\sigma\), a confusion of thematic and athematic conjugations.

\(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) and \(\alpha\nu\). See also I (d) under Papyri. This is as good a place as any to say a word further on the interchange of these two forms, not strictly vowel-changes, however. We have also \(\epsilon\iota\alpha\nu\), (really \(\epsilon\iota+\alpha\nu\)) as in P Eleph. 1 (B.c. 311). See also \(\alpha\iota\alpha\nu\) for \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\), B.G.U. 530 (i/A.D.). The use of \(\epsilon\alpha\nu=\) modal \(\alpha\nu\) in relative sentences, so common in the LXX, N. T. and papyri of i/ii A.D., is not an exchange of vowels, but possibly a slurring over of the \(\epsilon\) before \(\alpha\).

\(\alpha\nu=\epsilon\alpha\nu\) survives from the ancient Greek in a few instances, as Jo. 5:19 (\textit{KB}); 12:32 (B and accepted by W. H.); 13:20 DEFG, etc., have \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\), but \(\textit{KBC} \alpha\nu\) and accepted by W. H.); 16:23 (BACD, accepted by W. H.); 20:23 (twice and accepted by W. H., though AD have first \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) and \(\textit{KAD} \alpha\nu\) second). In Ac. 9:2 only \(\textit{KE} \alpha\nu\) and \(\textit{W. H.} \epsilon\alpha\nu\). Blass\(^1\) thinks that as \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) made encroachment into the province of \(\alpha\nu\) "a kind of interchange of meaning between the two words" grew up. The modern Greek vernacular uses \(\alpha\nu\) for 'if.' Hort\(^2\) considers the whole subject of the interchange between \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) and \(\alpha\nu\) after relatives "peculiarly irregular and perplexing. Predominantly \(\alpha\nu\) is found after consonants, and \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) after vowels, but there are many exceptions." Cf. \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) in Mt. 20:4 and \(\alpha\nu\) in Mt. 20:26 f. Moulton\(^3\) has shown that \(\epsilon\alpha\nu=\alpha\nu\) is scarce in the papyri save from 100 B.C. to 200 A.D. In the Magnesian inscriptions\(^4\) only \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) appears, not \(\alpha\nu\) nor \(\nu\nu\), \(\nu\nu=\epsilon\alpha\nu\) is not in the N. T. But in the Herculaneum papyri these particles interchange freely.\(^5\) The Attic inscriptions uniformly have \(\alpha\nu\) with relatives.\(^6\)

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 60. Omitted by Debrunner in ed. 4.
\(^2\) Notes on Orth., p. 173. Hort has a curious error here, for the references under \(\alpha\nu\) and \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\) should be exactly reversed. "\(\alpha\nu=\epsilon\alpha\nu\) (‘if’) is rarely found in the pap. also. Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 434) gives \(\alpha\nu \mu\eta \delta\pi\omicron\delta\omega\iota\). (AP 43, ii/B.C.). Cf. also Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 32; Mayser, Gr., p. 152 f. Mayser gives exx. of \(\epsilon\alpha\nu=\alpha\nu\) and of \(\alpha\nu=\epsilon\alpha\nu\).\(^3\) Prol., p. 43; Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 32, etc.
\(^4\) Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 68. See Gregory, Prol. (Nov. Test. Gr.), p. 96, for the facts about the N. T. MSS. and \(\epsilon\alpha\nu\).
\(^5\) Cronert, Mem. Graeca Here., p. 130.
\(^6\) Dieterich, Unters. etc., p. 326.
Indeed Attic often contracts this particle εαν= ην. But modal δαν is found in Xen. Mem., ὃ δαν ἀφμόττητα, in Lysias, οὐς δαν βουληθόςιν, etc. (see Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 421). This use of δαν occurs sixty-one times in the N. T. Examples occur in late Greek of ει—δαν, as well as ει—δαν, instead of δαν. Cf. Reinhold, De Graecitate Patrum Apost. etc., p. 35; Moulton, Classical Review, 1901, p. 32. Thackeray (Gr., pp. 65 ff.) finds that in the ii/B.C. the papyri nearly always have δς δαν, while in the i/A.D. they nearly always have δς δαν. In the books of Exodus and Leviticus he notes that in the first half of each book both forms occur while in the second part δς δαν almost vanishes. Each book may have been written on two rolls.

(c) THE CHANGES WITH η. The changes between η and α, η and ε have already been discussed.

η and ι. As already stated, originally Η was merely the rough breathing, but the Ionic psilosis left a symbol useless, and heta was called eta. Thus the new letter took the old long ε value in Ionic and Attic and also largely supplanted the long α where α became ε. The Sanskrit used long a, the Greek η and the Latin either e or i. This new (in spelling) η (v/B.c.) gradually turned more to the i sound in harmony with the growing itacism of the language, though there was some etacism on the other hand. As early as 150 B.C. the Egyptian papyri show evidence of the use of ι for η. By the middle of the second century A.D. the confusion between η and ι, η and ει, ηι and ει is very general. By the Byzantine times it is complete and the itacism is triumphant in the modern Greek. Reinhold thinks that the exchange between η and ι was natural in view of the relation between η and ε and the interchange between ε and ι. As early as the fifth century B.C. the change between η and ι is seen on vases and inscriptions. But the Ptolemaic papyri show little of it and it is rare in the LXX MSS. ηAB (Thackeray, Gr., p. 85). In the N. T. times the interchanges between η and ι, η and ει, ηι and ει are not many. In 1 Cor. 4:11 W. H. read γυμνιτεύω, though L and most of the cursive have η.

1 Thumb, Hellen., p. 92.
3 Thumb, Hellen., p. 98 f.
4 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 29. Cf. also Thumb, Hellen., p. 138. In Boeotia also η and ι interchange in ii/B.C. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 46. Mayser (Gr., p. 82) cites from a Hom. pap. of i/B.C. ζηκε for ζηκε, and per contra (p. 84) οὐτηκετο.
5 Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., p. 47. He gives επη for επί from a Byz. inscr.
6 De Graec. Patr. etc., p. 41. Cf. also Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 34 f.
The N. T. always has δηνάριον, though δινάριον appears very early. For κάμπλος in Mt. 19:24 and Lu. 18:25 a few late cursive MSS. substitute κάμπλος (‘rope’), a word found only in Suidas and a scholium on Arist. But "it is certainly wrong," a mere effort to explain away the difficulty in the text, an effort as old as Cyril of Alexandria on Luke. For Κυρήνιος B3 its. vg. sah. have Κυρίνος, while B* has Κυρέινος and A has Κηρύνιος, a striking example of itacism, η, ει, υ having the same sound in these MSS. The N. T. MSS. give συμκίνδυνον in Ads 19:12, but Liddell and Thayer both suggest σημα as an alternative spelling like the Latin semicinctium. So also the best MSS. in Rev. 18:12 read σηρκός, though some cursive MSS. have στιρκός (like Jos. and others), and still others στρικός.3 Indeed in 1 Pet. 2:3 for χρηστός L and many cursive MSS. have Χριστός. The heathen misunderstood the word Χριστός and confounded it with the familiar χρηστός, pronounced much alike. Suetonius (Claudius 25) probably confused Christus with Chrestus. In Ac. 11:26 K 61 have Χρηστιανός, while B has Χρειστ. So in Ac. 26:28 K has Χρηστιανόν for Χριστόν, while B has again ει. The same thing occurs in 1 Pet. 4:16.

η and ει. The Boeotian and the Thessalian dialects early changed4 η for ει, τιθεμαι=τιθημαι. Schweizer5 gives παράδειγμα στον Παράδειγμα (Byzantine inscription). In Lu. 14:13 (21) we have ἀνάπειρος (ABDEL), ἀνάπηρος (GHK, etc.), and --πιρ (KR). This itacism is condemned by Phrynichus the Atticist as vulgar.6 In the LXX K has ἀνάπειρος in Tob. 14:2 and AV show it in 2 Macc. 8:24 (Thackeray, Gr., p. 83). In Heb. 6:14 W. H. follow ΚΑΒΖ in reading ει μην rather than η μην. This form occurs in the LXX and in the papyri. Moulton7 has shown that several times in the papyri it is obviously for η μην by mere itacism, and so is not due to a confusion between the Hebraistic use of ει μη = Κ7 ΝΧ, thus correcting Hort. The uncials and the

1 Blass, Ausspr. d. Griech., pp. 37, 94.
2 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 151.
4 W.-Sch. (p. 46) mention θηβην, θιβην, θειβην, in Ex. 2:3-6.
5 Perg. Inscr., p. 47. Cf. also p. 56. See numerous exx. of this change in Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inscr., p. 47 f.
6 Cf. Bekker, Anec., I, pp. 9, 22. It is found also in 2 Macc. 8:24. Hort (Notes on Orth., p. 15) shows that ἀπειρος (not ἀπηρος) is read in Herod. i. 32.
7 Prol., p. 46; Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 33. See also Thackeray, p. 83.
papyri here agree. Deissmann\(^1\) calls attention to the use of ηι in a Doric inscription of the first century B.C. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 306) observes that a papyrus reads κηρία for κειρία (cf. Jo. 11:44; κειρ—, κηρ—, κηρ-ιαίς).

ηι and ει. In the old Attic there was no ηι in writing, only ει, since ηι was not used as a vowel. As early as 400 B.C. the Attic used ηι and ει interchangeably, κληω becoming κλείω, κλης=κλείς, λητουργός=λειτουργός, etc.\(^2\) This usage was not very common in Pergamum\(^3\) nor in Magnesia.\(^4\) Cronert finds this interchange in the Herculaneum papyri only in the papyri copies of Epicurus and Polystratus.\(^5\) In the N. T λειτουργός, —ία, —ειν, —ικός are taken over from the Attic, but they occur also in Pergamum\(^6\) and Magnesia.\(^7\) The Attic indeed carried the fondness for ει so far that it was used always in writing in the second singular indicative middle everywhere, the other dialects using η save the Ionic. The κοινή has η save in βούλει, ο̄ει, ϐει. In the N. T. η is universal according to W. H. save in Lu. 22:42 where βούλει is genuine, though some MSS. have ει in other passages. Blass\(^8\) observes that this is a literary touch in Luke for the colloquial θελεις. Hatziakis\(^9\) notes how difficult this process made it to tell the difference between ποιήσης and ποιήσεις, for instance, because of this Attic intermixture of the diphthongs. Blass\(^10\) will not hear of this as a possible explanation in any cases, but one must remark how well this vowel-blending harmonized with the kinship in meaning between the aorist subjunctive and the future indicative (cf. δώση in some MSS. for δώσει in Jo. 17:2) and made it easy for the later so-called future subjunctive (cf. Latin) to develop. Winer-Schmiedel indeed accept as possible this vowel confusion in several instances.\(^11\) In Mk. 8:35 (Lu. 17:33) δς δυν ἀπολέσει, Lu. 12:8 δς δυν ὠμολογήσει, 2 Cor. 12:21 μη ταπεινώσει, Ro. 3:4 (Ps. 51:6)

\(^3\) Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., p. 60 f.
\(^4\) Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 50 f.
\(^6\) Schweizer, op. cit., p. 60.
\(^7\) Nachm., op. cit., p. 51.
\(^9\) Einl. in d. neugr. Gr., p. 306. He gives exx. from the N. T. Apoc.
\(^10\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 8.
\(^11\) W.-Sch., p. 47. Moulton (Prol., p. 168) would take indifferently ὑπάγει or ὑπάγη in Rev. 14:4. For many similar exx. in the inscr. see Dittenb., ὑπως δυν ὑπάρχει (117. 17), εἰρέθησαν (352. 66), etc.
194  A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

nikήσεις (cf. διακιωθής), Ac. 5:15 ἴνα ἐπισκιάσει, 8:31 ἑαυτὸν ὀδηγήσει. Winer-Schmiedel would find the aorist subjunctive and not the future indicative. This is possible but by no means certain, since the future indicative was undoubtedly used both with ἑαυτὸν and ἴνα (ὅπως). W. H. read Ἰωάννει instead of η in Mt. 11:4 = Lu. 7:18.

Τῷ διοικητῇ occurs in papyri Brit. Mus. I, Nr. 2. 135. In 2 Coy. 2:9 AB 109 have ἦ where εἶ is probably correct.

η and η. Irrational Iota. The iota subscript was iota adscript till the twelfth century A.D., but as early as the third century B.C. it was not pronounced.1 When a was practically equal to η in sound, it was natural that η (η) should be. The ι was then dropped in sound long before it was subscript.2 Gradually it was felt to be a matter of indifference in some words whether this iota was written or not. Examples of η instead of η occur in the inscriptions of Pergamum3 as ἐν η as well as in the Attic.4 Moulton finds irrational ι adscript (ἐχωμι, for instance) abundant in the Ptolemaic Tebt. Papyri (Classical Review, 1904, p. 106). Cf. Mayser (Gr., pp. 122-126) who gives many examples. In the N. T. ι has dropped from θυνήσκω. Indeed since the second century B.C. ι adscript in the diphthongs η, ω had become mute. Hort,5 however, argues for the retention of ι in ζήν6 and infinitives in —ἀν instead of the Doric-Attic form, as well as in ἀθωσι, εἰκη, ζῶν, Ἱηρόθης, κρυφή, λάθρα, πανταχῇ πάντῃ, πρόφα, σφυζῳ, ὑπερζον, ζῶν, though he hesitated to put σφζω in the text. It is just as well to finish the discussion of the iota adscript here, though some of these examples go beyond the range of η. The best editors print also σμοστία, ἰδία, μητρολώαις, πατρολώαις, πατρώος, πεζή, Σαμοθράκης, Τρώας, though μμνήσκων and πράος. W. H. have forms in —ων also, as κατασκηνών (Mt. 13:32). Moulton7 gives a curious example of the loss of the irrational ι in the case of the subjunctive η which sometimes in the papyri appears as ην, having lost the ι, and taken on irrational ν. As a matter of fact iota adscript (iota

1 Blass, Pronun., etc., p. 50.  2 Hirt, Handb. d. Griech., p. 114.
3 Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., p. 65.
4 Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 64. In the iv/n.e. the Attic often wrote ει for η, but not for η. In the Thess., AEol and Ionic inscriptions the ι with η, ω is freely omitted or wrongly inserted (irrational), as in τῇ πόλει, τὰ δρῆ, as early as vi/B.C. Cf. K.-B1., Tl. I, Bd. I, p. 183 f. Strabo (14. 41) says that many regularly dropped the ι in spurious diphthongs. πολικοὶ γάρ χρῶσι τοῦ ι γράφουσι τὰς θετικάς, καὶ έκβάλλουσι δὲ τὸ ἔθος φυσικῷ αἴτων οὐκ ἔχουν. Cf. Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 29 f. Schweizer (Perg. Inschr., p. 47) cites τῆν εὔνοιαν.
5 Introd. to N. T. Gk., p. 314.
6 Mayser, Gr., p. 121, finds not ι with ἀν in the pap.  7 Prol., pp. 49, 168, 187.
subscript not yet, of course) does not appear in the great uncials save ἶμισίαν in D (Mk. 1:34) and ξύλωι in K (Lu. 23:31).1 Forms with and without the mute iota appear in the Herculaneum papyri,2 as εἰκήι or εἰκή. Blass3 would also restore ι to ἀντιπέρα(α). He doubts if ι was written in such new optative forms as δών (δοίνυ Attic) though it should be put in the text.

η and υ. Since these two vowels came to be pronounced alike as in modern Greek,4 it was to be expected that some interchange would come, though any early examples are wanting. However, by the second century A.D. the inscriptions give many instances such as θήρα (θύρα), μηστήριον (μουστ.), σκύπτρον (σκηπτρον), etc.5 It is already in the Egyptian κοινή according to Thumb.6 Hence we are not surprised to see the N. T. MSS. get mixed over ημεῖς and ὑμεῖς. Especially in 1 Peter does this itacism lead to a mixing of the historical7 standpoint as in 1:12, where ὑμῖν is read by ΧABCL, etc., ημῖν by K and most cursives Syrșch Cop. In 1 Pet. 5:10 the MSS. similarly support ὑμᾶς and ημᾶς. In 2 Cor. the personal relations of Paul and his converts are involved in this piece of orthography as in 8:7 εξ ὑμῶν ἐν ἦμῖν (ΧCDE, etc.) or εξ ἦμῶν ἐν ὑμῖν (B 30, 31, 37, etc.). See especially καθ’ ημᾶς in Ac. 17:28 (B 33 Cop., etc.) which reading would make Paul identify himself with the Greeks on this occasion.

(d) THE CHANGES WITH ι. For ι and ε see under (b); for ι and η see under (c); for iota subscript (adscript), mute or irrational ι, see under (c). For irrational iota see also Infinitive under Verb. The papyri show it in queer forms like αληθήι, λέγωι, P. Oxy. 37 (A.D. 49).

ι and ει. The interchange between these vowel-symbols began very early (certainly by the sixth century B.C.8) and has been very persistent to the present day. The inscriptions give numerous examples9 in the fifth century B.C., such as ἄποκτινη, Επαφρόδειτος. This was apparently the beginning10 of itacism which was extended to υ, η, and then to ι, οι, υι. Jannaris11 thinks that the introduc-

---

3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 7. The LXX phenomena are similar. Cf. Helbing, Griech. d. LXX, pp. 3  
4 Hatz., Einl. in neugr. Gr., p. 304.  
6 Hellen., p. 171.  
7 Hort, Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 310. On the subject of η and υ see Mayser, Gr., p. 85 f. He denies (p. 86) that the itacising pronunciation of η prevailed in the Ptolemaic period.  
8 Jann., Hist. Gk. Or., p. 47.  
9 Ib.  
10 Ib.  
11 Ib., p. 41.
tion and rapid spread of η contributed to this confusion as by that time ει was pronounced like ι, and η was taken by many, not as long ε, but equal to ι. The confusion apparently began in the Boeotian dialect\(^1\) and in postclassical times, but swept the field in all the dialects till every ει (closed and open) was pronounced as ι. By 100 B.C. the Attic inscriptions show a general interchange between ει and ι, and in the second century A.D.\(^2\) the confusion exists between ει and ι. Dieterich\(^3\) thinks that this itacism had its widest development in Egypt. The Ptolemaic papyri of ii/B.C. show itacism very frequently. It is only the more illiterate scribes that use ει for ι, though B has ἄρειον (Thackeray, Gr., p. 86 f.). Thumb\(^4\) considers the interchange between ι and ει in the κοινή on a par with that between ο and οι. In Pergamum\(^5\) the change from ι to ει is much more common than that from ει to ι, though forms in –αι for –εια occur, as ἀμελία. The same thing is true in Magnesia, where ημεία (ἡμία) is common.\(^6\) The Herculanum papyri tell the same story,\(^7\) while it is so common in the Egyptian papyri that Moulton\(^8\) is unable to set much store by the minutiae gathered by W. H. from the great uncials, "for even W. H. admit that their paramount witness, B, 'has little authority on behalf of ει as against ι.'" Clearly the partiality of Χ for ι and of B for ει throw them both out of court as decisive witnesses on this point.\(^9\) So it is not merely itacism that we have to deal with in the numerous N. T. examples of exchange between ι and ει, but "genuine peculiarities of original orthography" also.\(^10\) Whatever Dr. Hort meant, all that is true is that different scribes merely preferred one or the other method of representing ι. The whole matter therefore remains in doubt and one is prepared for all sorts of variations in the N. T. MSS., because the κοινή no

---

1 K.-B1., p. 131. Mayser (Gr., pp. 87-94) has a full discussion of the problem in the pap. of the first three centuries B.C. and finds that in Egypt the pronunciation of ει closely approached that of ι.

2 Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 49. In the succeeding pages he gives numerous exx. in chron. order of the various interchanges between ι and ει, many of them identical with the N. T. exx.

3 Unters. etc., p. 45.

4 Hellen., p. 172. The next most common interchange of vowels in the N. T. MSS. are αι and ε, η and ι or ει, αι and υ (Warfield, Text. Crit. of the N. T., p. 103).

5 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 53 f.


8 Prol., p. 47. For the LXX see Helbing, Gr. d. LXX, pp. 7 Thack. (Gr., p. 86 f.) thinks that the orthography in this point is older than that of Χ and A.

9 Warfield, Text. Crit. of the N. T., p. 103.

10 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 152.
longer insisted in the vernacular on the distinction between long or short i and ei. The examples here presented will give a fair idea of the situation. For the textual evidence see careful discussion by Gregory.¹ Where ei is written for i it is to be pronounced like i. Ei is shortened to i in some abstract substantives, --ία instead of --εία, as² Ἀτταλία, ἀγνία (possibly), perhaps ἀκριβία, ἀλαζονία, ἀναδία, ἀρεσκία, perhaps ἀπεθανία, ἑθελοθησία (but θησεία), ei'dωλοπλετία (but λατρεία), εἰλικρίνια, perhaps ἐκτενία, ἐπιείκεια, ἐρθία, ἐρμηνία, Ἠρατία, Καίσαρία, κακοθία, κακοπαθία, κολακία, κυβία, Λαοδίκια, μαγία, μεθοδία, όμοθαλμοδουλία (δουλία doubtful), possibly παυδία (cf. Ps. 53:5), πολιτία, πορία, πτωχία, πραγματία, πραῦταθία, probably Σαμαρία, Σελευκία, perhaps στρατία, φαρμακία, Φίλαδεφία, ωφελία. Deissmann³ shows that it is λογεία, not λογία in the papyri and so in 1 Cor. 16:1 f. Some MSS. have ἐπάρχεια (for --ία), εὑρταπέλεια (for --ία), late MSS. κολωνεία.

The endings --είον, and --είος appear sometimes as --ίον, --ιος. So αἴγιος, Ἄριος (Πάγος), Ἀστιος, δάνιον (cf. δανίζω, δανισσάτις), ei'dώλιον, Ἐπικούριος, ἐπιτήδειος, μεγάλια (cf. μεγαλίστης), πανδοκίον, στοιχίον.

Strong testimony exists for all these. So also --ινός for —εινός appears in ὄρινός, σκοτινός, φωτινός.

Further examples of i for ei are found as in the MSS. in αἴδαι-λιπτος, αὐκέλπιστος, ἀλίψω, ἀπιθέω, ἀπιθής, ἀπίθα, ἀποδεχιμένος, Ἀρεσπαγίτης, δίγμα, ἐξαλίφω, καταλειμμένος (Ac. 25:14), ἐπεν κρίσσων, λίμμα, λιτουργός, μαργαρίτης (cf. πολίτης, τεχνίτης), μεσίτης, οἰκτίρω, παραδιγματίζω, πιθὸς ὑπόλιμμα, φιλόνικος, φιλονικία, χρεοφιλέτης. This is not to mention the verb-forms ὤδυον, ὤδαν, ὤδειν which W. H. count alternate forms in Revelation, but which are pure examples of itacism. In the case of Ικόνιον (Ac. 13:51; 14:1) the inscriptions give both Ἰκ. and Εἰκ.⁴

The use of ei for i is seen in several ways also in N. T. MSS. In Mt. 28:3 W. H. give ei'dέα, not ιδέα. Γεινομαι and γεινούσκω are very common in the best MSS. Ἡμένι and ύμεν are rarely seen, however. Ἀξείνη, Γαλειαία, Ἐλαμεῖτης, Λευείτης, Λευειτικός, λείαν, Νυνεῖτης, Πελλάτος, Σαμαρείτης all are found, as well as τραπεζείτης, Φαρείσαλοι. Τάχειον appears in John and Hebrews. In the Pastoral Epistles, Hort⁵ finds —λειπ— for —λιπ— forms. Κείριας is correct in Jo. 11:44. Hort⁶ also prefers πανοικί, but παμπληθεί is undisputed. Such verb-forms occur as μείγμαμι, τειμάω, τείσω.

² According to Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 153.
³ B. S., pp. 142 f., 219 f.
⁴ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 8.
⁵ Notes on Orth., p. 155.
⁶ Ib., p. 154.
Semitic proper names in have ει as 'Αδδεί,  'Αρπεί,  'Εσλεί,  'Ηλεί,  Μελχεί,  Νηρεί. Cf. also 1 'Αδρείν,  'Αχείμ,  βενιαμείν,  Δαυείδ,  'Ελιακείμ,  ωρείμ,  Κείς,  Λευείς,  Νεφθαλείμ,  Σαλείμ,  Σεμεείν,  χερουβείν,  Χαραζείν. So also 'Ελεισαβέτ,  'Ηλείας,  θυάτειρα,  'Ιδείρος,  'Ιρειχόω,  'Ιωσείς,  'Οξείας,  Σάμπφειρα,  Ταβειθά. Cf. also ηλεί ῥαββεί ῥαββουνεί, σαβαχθαεί. But ει appears as ι in 'Αμιναδάβ,  Μελχισεδέκ,  Σινά,  Σιών. Likewise the MSS. usually read Ανανίας,  Βαραχίας,  'Εζεκίας,  Ζαχαρίας,  'Ιερεμίας,  'Ιερουνίας,  Μαθήας,  Ματτάθας,  Ούρίας.

In many of these examples of changes in ι and ει the testimony is greatly divided and one must not stickle too much for either spelling. The papyri and the inscriptions have nearly all of them. See 1 (c) for remarks on the difficulty of relying on the uncials in the matter of orthography. It is impossible to be dogmatic on the subject.

ι and ο. It is a peculiar change, as Blass2 observes, that we have in ίμειρόμενοι for ίμειρόμενοι (1 Th. 2:8). It appears in the LXX (some MSS. for Job 3:21 and Symm. at Ps. 62:2). The only example so far brought to light is ύπερωμείρεσθαί in Iren. 60. Winer-Schmiedel3 sees no comparison in καταντροκοῦ for καταντικρύ. Meisterhans4 gives ἀπαντροκυ for ἀπαντικρύ.

ι and ο. Jannaris5 possibly defends the exchange of ι and οι as early as the fifth century B.C. Certainly in the first century B.C. Αὐγουστόῖνος occurs in the inscriptions.6 Οι was exchanged with ει and η as well as with ι. In the N. T. the only example is in Mk. 11:8 where ACSVTXG Or. have στοιβάς for the usual στιβάς (from στείβω). N and a few other MSS. read στυβάς. Zonar. illustrates this also by using στοιβάς. Cf. also στοιβή, στοιβάζω, etc. This word thus illustrates well the common itacistic tendency, showing forms in –ι, –οι, –υ and —ει (in the verb). The LXX has only στίχος and στίχιζων, not στοιχ. (Thackeray, Gr., p. 92).

ι and υ. These two vowels sometimes have the force of the consonants7 j (ν) and υ (cf. Latin). Cf. αυ– (af) and ευ– (ef) in modern Greek, and ε in πόλεως. In modern Greek "every i- or e-sound which collides in the middle of a word with a succeeding

1 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 155.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 22. But it is quite possible (see j) that this is a case of prothetic o.
3 W.-Sch., p. 52.
4 Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 81.
6 Jann., ib., p. 52. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 112.
7 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 27, 55, etc.
vowel, loses its syllabic value and becomes consonanted" (Thumb, Handb., p. 10). So ἀγίος = ayos. The ι is the last of the five original vowel-sounds in this order: α, ο, υ, ε, ι. This relative value has persisted in modern Greek (Thumb's Handbook, p. 12 f.). Jannaris1 gives ἀπωθούμενοι as an illustration of this gradation in sound. But as a matter of fact the interchange between ι and υ is not frequent. Meisterhans2 finds only five examples in the Attic inscriptions, two of which, βυβλίον and Μυτυλήναος, are found in N. T. MSS. (assimilation). Examples occur in the κοινή of Asia Minor, though Thumb3 agrees with Kretschmer in calling it a "barbarism." Still the old distinction in sound between ι and υ slowly broke down till in modern Greek the two vowels have the same sound. βηρωλος in Rev. 21:20 is spelled also in MSS. βηριλλος, βυριλλος, βυρυλλος, a fine illustration of itacism. D reads βυβλος for βυβλος in Mk. 12:26 and Lu. 20:42: In Ac. 20:14 Μυτυλήνη is the correct text for the old Μυτ., but AE have Μυτυλίνη and L Μυτυλίνη. For the Τρωγýλιον of Strabo and the Byzantine writers the Textus Receptus addition to Ac. 20:15 has Τρωγύλία, other MSS. Τρωγύλλιον, Τρωγύλιον.4 The LXX shows also ἡμυσυ in Θ Dan. 7:25 (13). The Ptolemaic papyri vary in this word (Thackeray, Gr., p. 95). In Lu. 19:8 D has ἡμυσοι.

(e) THE CHANGES WITH ο. For changes with α see under (a), for ο and ε under (b), for ο and ι under (d).

ο and ου. The old Attic used Διόσκορος, which Phrynichus5 prefers, though Thucyd. and Plato have the form in –ουρος also (Epic or Ionic). In Ac. 28:11 only some of the cursives have the form in –ορος. Both forms appear in the inscriptions.6 This exchange is rather common in the Ptolemaic papyri (Mayser, Gr., pp. 10 f., 116 f.). In the LXX Χ shows sometimes ὄκ for οὐκ (Thackeray, Gr., p. 91). The modern Greek dialects have much diversity of usage on this point. Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 8.

---

o and υ. The MSS. vary between \( \pi\rho\alpha\omicron\varsigma \) (Syrian) and \( \pi\rho\alpha\upsilon\varsigma \) in Mt. 11:29; 1 Pet. 3:4, as well as between \( \pi\rho\alpha\acute{o}\nu\tau\varsigma \) and \( \pi\rho\alpha\uproot{2}{\upsilon}\tau\upsilon\varsigma \) Pauline Epistles. W. H. adopt the form in –υ. Von Soden varies between these forms, giving no reasons. It is the old distinction surviving in the κοινή. The LXX has the υ form. The papyri have other illustrations (Mayser, Gr., p. 97). Cf. Ποτιόλοι in Ac. 28:13 for the Latin Puteoli.

o and ω. Originally o represented both the short and long noun so that it was easy with careless pronunciation for more or less confusion to exist after ω came into use. The Boeotian Pindar, for instance, has \( \Delta\omicron\omicron\upsilon\upsilon\varsigma\omicron\varsigma \) instead of \( \Delta\omicron\upsilon\upsilon\sigma\upsigma\upsigma\upsigma\varsigma \). The New Ionic ζώη (parox.) appears in lieu of ζωή. However, the introduction of the Ionic alphabet in 403 B.C. kept the two vowels pretty distinct in Attic till the Roman time, though the change began in the third century B.C. After the second century B.C. the exchange of these two vowels was indiscriminate in the more illiterate vernacular. The confusion was earliest in Egypt, but the Attic inscriptions kept the distinction well till 100 A.D. The early uncial for the LXX and the N.T. show little evidence of the interchange (Thackeray, Gr., p. 89). Jannaris finds it common. The modern Greek makes no difference in sound between o and ω except medial o as in not. "In the early papyri the instances of confusion between o and ω are innumerable." The inscriptions tell the same story about the κοινή in Magnesia and Pergamum. In some instances, like δόμα for δῶμα and πρόδομα an ω is shortened to o after the analogy of ε from η in θέμα. In the N. T. MSS. "probably the commonest permutation is that of o and ω, chiefly exemplified in the endings —οιμεν, and –ωμεν." It is useless to follow the MSS. through their variations on this point. In Ro. 5:1 ζχωμεν is supported by all the best documents and gives a difficult sense at first, though a better one on reflection than ζχομεν. In 1 Cor. 15:49 the evidence is so nearly balanced that

1 Gregory, Prol., p. 82.
2 K.-B1., I, p. 141.
3 Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 24 f., gives numerous exx. of the exchange in inscr. of various dates.
4 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 37. Jann. quotes a Louvre pap. (165 B.C.) which has το αυτο τρόπων. Mayser (Gr., pp. 97 ff.) finds only two exx. of this confusion of o and ω in the Ptol. pap. of iii/B.C., but seventy in the next two.
6 Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 64.
9 Hort, Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 309.
W. H. cannot decide between φορέσωμεν and φορέσομεν (the latter in the margin). Von Soden gives –σω–. This difficulty of distinguishing between ο and ω in the indicative and subjunctive increased in later κοινή times. Several further N. T. examples of interest are ἀγοράσωμεν (Lu. 9:13), ἵνα ἀναπαύσονται (Rev. 14:13), ἵνα ἀναπαύσονται, (Rev. 6:11), ἐὰν ἀποθνῄσκομεν as read by Lachmann (Ro. 14:8), ἵνα γινώσκομεν (1 Jo. 5:20), ἵνα διώκουται according to Tisch. (Gal. 6:12), ἵνα διέρχομαι according to Treg. (Jo. 4:15), δώσωμεν according to Treg. and Tisch., and preceded by ἀγορά- σωμεν (Mk. 6:37), ἰῶσομαι (Mt. 13:15; cf. Is. 6:10), ἵνα καυχήσωμαι ορ καυχήσωμαι (1 Cor. 13:3), ἵνα ξυρήσονται (Ac. 21:24). In all these instances syntactical questions enter also besides the mere question of vowel interchange.

The ο appears instead of ω in πόμα (1 Cor. 10:4; Heb. 9:10), πρόιμος (Jas. 5:7), Στοϊκός (Ac. 17:18), συκομόρεα, not –μωρέα (Lu. 19:4), χρεωφιλείτης according to W. H. and not χρεωφιελείτης (Soden) nor χρεωφιελέτης according to LU, etc. (Lu. 7:41; 16:5). But ω is correct apparently in ἄγαθωσύνη, ἄγιοσύνη, ἐνδώμησις (Rev. 21:18, Soden —δώμ–), ἰερωσύνη, μεγαλωσύνη, πρωτόν. So also the LXX, but πρόιμος (Thack., Gr., p. 90). Codex B shows others in the LXX (ib.). In Lu. 18:5 and 1 Cor. 9:27 the MSS. vary between ὑπωπιάζω (from ὑπ-ώπιον) and ὑποπιάζω (—πείζω old form), though the best MSS. read ὑπωπιάζω. In Ro. 13:3 τῷ ἀγαθῷ ἔργῳ may possibly be τῷ ἀγαθοθεργῷ. So in 2 Pet. 3:6. δι’ ὑν may be for δι’ ὅν. In Rev. 4:7 ἔχων, not ἔχον (Soden), is read by the best MSS., though the substantive is ζῷον. Now second century B.C. papyri have ὑπόμυθμα ἔχων where ω and ο are exchanged.

(f) THE CHANGES WITH υ. For the changes with υ and ι see under (d), υ and ο under (e).

υ and ευ. Only one example of this exchange appears in the N. T., that of πρεσβύτης in Phil. 9. Here the sense seems to demand πρεσβευτής. Bentley suggested it long ago and Lightfoot (comm. in loco) collected a number of instances of the omission

---

2 W.-Sch., p. 48.
3 Hort thinks so "perhaps." The Doric had στοιά. Blass (Gr. N. T. Gk., p. 22) prefers the correct Στωικός, Von Soden Στοϊκός
4 Acc. to W.-Sch. (p. 48 f.) this is not orthographical at all, but etymological. Why not both?
5 Ib., p. 48.
6 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 37. Doubtless other vowel-exchanges in Rev. may have a similar explanation and so do not violate concord of gender.
of ε from ευ, in single MSS. Hort\(^1\) thinks it due to a scribe and not to Paul, since the earlier Greek shows no examples of this interchange. However, Wood\(^2\) has found πρεσβεύτερος for πρεσβύτερος in an Ephesian inscription (analogy: in modern Greek ευ=εф). Thackeray (Gr., p. 97) finds this "natural error" in the LXX MSS.

\(υ\) and \(ου\). This has always been a rare exchange in the Greek, the Boeotian dialect having retained the original \(υ\) sound of \(υ\) after the Attic gave it up.\(^3\) The Zaconian preserves it in the modern Greek.\(^4\) The Κοινή has sometimes χρωσός for χρυσός.\(^5\) But \(ου\) was rather frequent in the Κοινή to represent the Latin \(u\) as Δροῦσος.\(^6\) In Rev. 3:18 the MSS. have κολλούριον, κολλύριον, κολλούριον, etc. (Latin collyrium). W. H. prefer κολλούριον, though ΝΒC read –ύριον (so Soden).—Blass\(^7\) observes that we have long \(υ\) —ύρυον. In the LXX shows the same variations (Thack., Gr., p. 92). The Ptolemaic papyri have few instances. Cf. change of \(υ\) and \(ου\) (Mayser, Gr., p. 118). Thumb (Hellen., p. 193 f.) thinks that \(υ\) in the Κοινή was pronounced like German \(ii\,\text{ and also } u\).

In Rev. 1:5 the distinction between λύσαυτι (ΝΑC) and λούσαυτι (BP) is more than mere orthography, though the confusion was rendered easy. \(\Upsilon\) is always so written in the N. T. uncial MSS.,\(^8\) though the iota was sometimes dropped in, the inscriptions.

\(g\) THE CHANGES WITH \(ω\). For changes with \(ω\) and \(α\) see under (a), for \(ω\) and \(ο\) under (e).

\(ω\) and \(ου\). The Thessalian dialect\(^9\) changed \(ω\) to \(ου\) as in τοῦ κοινοῦ for τῶ κοινω. This change reappears in Rhodes and the AEolico-Doric.\(^10\) Buresch\(^11\) finds the change between \(ω\) and \(ου\) common in the Egyptian vernacular, as in the Sahidic dialect oo is often used for \(ω\).\(^12\) It is, of course, possible, according to the view of Winer-Schmiedel,\(^13\) that some indicatives in \(ου\) may really

---

\(^1\) Notes on Sel. Read., p. 136.  
\(^2\) Disc. at Ephesus, App., p. 24.  
\(^4\) Hatz., Einl. etc., p. 103.  
\(^5\) Thumb, Hellen., p. 85.  
\(^7\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 22. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 118.  
\(^8\) Cf. Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 46 f.; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 9 f., observes that B occasionally divides thus δ/ιος at end of a line and so practically A and D.  
\(^10\) Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 70 f.  
\(^12\) Tattam's Egyp. Gr., p. 5.  
be subjunctive as a result of this vowel-interchange. The contract form for the present participle τῷ ικούντι is read by AC in Rev. 2:17 and A in 2:7, a change more likely due to confusion of –άω and –έω verbs. So with ἵνα ζηλοῦτε (Gal. 4:17) and ἵνα φισιοῦσθε (1 Cor. 4:6), but the present indicative can be used with ἵνα, and one is slow to credit this form to a mere vowel-exchange. The same remark applies to ἵνα τρέψουσιν (W. H. marg. Rev. 12:6) as well as ἵνα γινώσκουσιν (Tisch. and Treg., Jo. 17:3) and ἵνα σωφρονίζουσιν (Tisch. and Treg., Tit. 2:4). The future indicative with ἵνα as καταδουλώσουσιν (Gal. 2:4), προσκυνήσουσιν (Rev. 9:20), σταυρώσουσιν (Tisch., Treg., Lach., Mk. 15:20), σφάξουσιν (Rev. 6:4) has rival readings with ω, aorist subjunctive. It is hardly mere vocal similarity. Similar instances are μήποτε καταπατήσουσιν (Mt. 7:6), ἔαν μετανοήσουσιν (Rev. 2:22), ὃ ἔαν δούλεύσουσιν (Ac. 7:7). In these and similar examples where the MSS. vary between ω and ου it is probable that, as with η and ε, ο and ω, the difference in mode may have been blurred by the tendency to exchange these vowels. But the syntactical question is not essentially altered by this incidental orthographical problem.

ω and ωuí. Lachmann, Tregelles, W. H. all write ωυ in Μωσής, but Thayer urges that the word is a trisyllable Μωσής (Fritzsche, Gesenius, Tisch., Soden). The Ionic ἐωστοῦ is a trisyllable. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 138. Blass1 indeed says that the diphthong ωυ is non-existent in the N. T. as in the Attic. The Text. Rec. reads Μωσής, following Strabo and Josephus in the Antiquities, though in the LXX and Josephus elsewhere we have Μωσής.

(h) CONTRACTION AND SYNCOPE. In general the κοινή uses contraction of vowels from the standpoint of the Attic,2 though a strong Ionic infusion3 is present also as in forms like χειλέων, ὑρέων, etc. The N. T. examples of unusual contraction find illustration4 in the κοινή. In the N. T. contraction is rarely neglected, as Winer saw, though ἐδέετο (κ for Lu. 8:38, though BL 33 read ἐ̂δείτο), νοῦ (1 Cor. 1:10, etc.), ὀστέα (Lu. 24:39), ὀστέων (Mt. 23:27, etc.), ὑρέων (Rev. 6:15, Attic as well as Ionic), χειλέων (Heb. 13:15), χρυσέων (Rev. 2:1, Lach., Treg.) show that the N. T. in this respect was like the κοινή and not the literary Attic. Blass5 observes that the N. T. Greek did not go quite as far in

---

contracting vowels as the Attic did. In illustration can be mentioned ἀγαθοργεῖν (1 Tim. 6:18), though ἀγαθοργωὖν is the correct text in Ac. 14:17. But we have ἀμπελουργός, ἱερουργεῖν, κακουργός, οἰκουργός, πανουργός, not to mention the conjectural reading ἀγαθοθεργός for Ro. 13:3 on the other hand. In Col. 2:16 νομημαῖα for the Attic νομημαία is read by W. H., though supported only by BFG 121 f g vg. So the LXX (Thack., Gr., p. 98). In the case of ἐλεινός W. H. have the regular form in Rev. 3:17, but ἐλεινός in 1 Cor. 15:19. Blass¹ reminds us, however, that even ἐλεινός may represent ἐλείνος. The N. T. likewise has νοσσός in Lu. 2:24 (like the LXX) and νοσσία (or νοσσία) in Lu. 13:34; Mt. 23:37. Phrynichus² condemned this dropping of ε in νοσσός. Καμμώ (Mt. 13:15; Ac. 28:27, both from Is. 6:10) comes from the Epic and the old vernacular. Κατ was an old form parallel with Κατά.

There are several noteworthy points about ι. The ι is retained in ἀλλοτριεπίσκοπος (1 Pet. 4:15). The same thing is true with ἠμίφωτον (Rev. 8:1), like ἠμίφωτον in the Attic inscriptions.³ The form ἔστων in Mk. 1:6 (already in Homer) is a twin rather than a syncopated form of ἔστιων (Mt. 11:19).⁴ In the N. T. the ι is not dropped in such forms as βιώσεσθε, ἐνύπνιον, σιωπᾶν, υἱός. Blass⁵ calls the contraction of ιεί=ιει "an entirely new kind," though it appears in the Κοινή, as in ἐπεικῶς, ταμεῖον, ὕγεια, etc.⁶ When ει came to be equal to ι, the two sounds naturally blended into one. Cf. the Ionic dative πόλι for πόλι. So in the N. T. we find πεῖν (BCD), even πῦ (KAL) for πεῖν in Jo. 4:9, and elsewhere in the N. T. In Mt. 6:6, etc., ταμεῖον is read for ταμεῖον.⁷

On the other hand in Rev. 21:20 A reads σαρδίνως for σαρδόνως. W. H. read τετρααρχέω, τετραάρχης rather than τετραρχέω, etc. The use of γλωσσοδόκομον instead of the earlier γλωσσοκόμειον (—ιον) should be noticed also. For the use of εάν = modal ἀν see under (b), p. 190.

(i) DIPHTHONGS AND DIAERESIS. The Boeotians monophthongized the diphthongs αι, ει, οι, ου in the fourth and fifth

---

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 23.
² Rutherford, New Phryn., p. 287. For other syncopated forms in the LXX see Thack., Gr., p. 99.
³ Meisterh., Gr. etc., p. 23.
⁴ Hort., Notes on Orth., p. 145.
⁵ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 23. Omitted by Debrunner.
⁷ See Deiss., B. S., p. 183, for pap. illustrations of πεῖν, πῦ, ταμεῖον. Moulton, Prol., p. 45, calls this coalescence of two successive ι sounds "a universal law of Hellenistic phonology." Cf, for the LXX Thack., Gr., pp. 22, 63 f., 98.
centuries B.C. The Boeotians pronounced χαίρετι = cheri as the vernacular κουνή did. Thumb (Hellenismus, p. 228) objects to "this emphasizing of Boeotian" by Kretschmer (Die griech. Vaseninschriften; Einl. in d. Gesch.). Moulton (Prolegomena, p. 33 f.) allows this Boeotian influence on the κοινή with a "perhaps." The itacising process still further developed this use of the diphthongs as monophthongs. Indeed Jannaris\(^2\) insists that the term διφθογγος as applied to συλλαβή concerned the eye rather than the ear and meant more biliteral than bivocal. The spurious diphthongs show the process in a state of completion. The papyri, unlike the inscriptions, do not dissect a diphthong at the close of a line.\(^3\) Where two vowels do not blend into one syllable, it is necessary to indicate it. Hence from very early times marks of diaeresis were used to show that each vowel has its own sound. The mark is put over the τ or υ which might otherwise be considered to unite with the preceding vowel. These marks are found in the oldest N. T. MSS. with such words as ἀλληλοοία, (Rev. 19:1; but in the case of proper names transliterated from the Hebrew or Aramaic W. H. follow the Hebrew or Aramaic spelling. Cf. Hort, Intr., p. 313. So in other examples below), Ἀχαΐα, Ἀχαϊκός (1 Cor. 16:17), Βηθσαϊδα, Γάιος (also Γαίος in Ac. 20:4, etc., but cf. Allen, Harvard Studies in Class. Philol., ii, 1891, pp. 71 ff.), διψίλευν (Mt. 23:24), Ἐβραϊτί, ἑλώ (Mk. 15:34), Ἐφραίμ, however, or Ἑφρέμ (K in Jo. 11:54), Ἡσαίας, though B usually without,\(^4\) Ἰούδαϊκώς, ἵσχυ (2 Pet. 2:11), Καϊάφας, Καϊν (W. H. Καίν), so W. H. Καινάν (not Καϊνάν nor —άμ), Λευήτης and not Λευίτης in W. H., Λωίς (W. H. —ις), Μωυσής in W. H., not Μωυσής, Νυνεύτης and not Νυνεύτης, πρόιμος according to W. H., but πρώι, πρωινός. W. H. have Πτολεμαίδα in Ac. 21:7 and Ρωμαίστι in Jo. 19:20. D reads Χοραζαίν. The Semitic etymology complicates the matter with some of these words.\(^5\) Many of the MSS. use diaeresis at the beginning of words as in ἴνα.\(^6\) ΝΑ regularly write η, while ω is correct also.\(^7\) See Giles\(^8\) on the subject of diphthongs. For iota subscript see under (c).

(j) APHAERESIS AND PROTHETIC VOWELS. θέλω, not έθέλω, is the only form in the N. T., as it is the common form in the κοινή and is that used in modern Greek. It is as old as Homer, and since

\(^{2}\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 29.
\(^{3}\) Ib., p. 43. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 153 f.
\(^{4}\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 17. So Ιεσσαί.
\(^{5}\) Ib. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 34.
\(^{6}\) Gregory, Prol. etc., p. 108.
\(^{7}\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 10.
\(^{8}\) Comp. Philol., pp. 158 ff.
206 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

250 B.C. is the only form in the Attic1 and Ionic2 inscriptions. The augment, however, is always η. Cronert3 finds ἔθέλω after consonants. The κοινή does not follow the Ionic in the use of κεῖνος for ἐκεῖνος. Aphaeresis is frequent4 in the modern Greek vernacular, κεί and ἐκεί, δέν for οὐδέν, etc. But the N. T. has only ἔχθες (so LXX) in the best MSS. (cf. Jo. 4:52 ἀββάδ; Ac. 7:28 ΒΖΘ; Heb. 13:8 ΑΒζ), the usual Attic form, though the papyri sometimes have χθές instead of the common ἔχθες. The N. T. does not have δύρωμαι, κέλλω, μείρωμαι, where o is dropped. Cf. Kuhner-Blass, Tl. I, Bd. 1, p. 186. The form μείρωμαι (cf. ὁμείρομενοι, in 1 Th. 2:8) occurs in Nicander for ἰμείρωμαι. It is possible that in ὁ(ὁ)μείρωμαι we have prothetic o instead of apharesis. Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 152; Winer-Schmiedel, p. 141. See Additional Notes for full list.

(k) ELISION. Besides the use of the movable final ν and ζ the Greeks had two other methods of obviating hiatus (elision, crisis). The hiatus was distasteful to the finished writers, though more freedom was exercised in poetry. The avoidance of hiatus was always a more or less artificial matter and hiatus was unavoidable in the most careful Attic writers, as in the case of ὁτι, περί, πρό, τι τι, the article, relative, the small "form-words" (καί, εἰ, ἢ), etc. But the harsher hiatus like ἐδίδοτο αὕτῳ would be avoided by the literary κοινή writers as well as by the Atticists. The inscriptions and the papyri show far less concern about hiatus than do the literary writers of the κοινή. As might be expected the N. T. books agree in this matter with the vernacular κοινή and the MSS. vary greatly among themselves. Blass5 considers this situation in harmony with the tendency to greater isolation of the words in the later language. Indeed he thinks that only one6 book in the N. T. (Hebrews) shows the care of an artistic writer in the avoidance of hiatus. By omitting the 0. T. quotations and chapter 13 he finds that hiatus where there is a pause is a matter of indifference, as also with καί. He finds fifty-two other instances of hiatus, whereas Romans goes beyond that num-

---

1 Meisterh., Gr., p. 178.
6 Ib., p. 296 f. On indifference of later Gk. to hiatus see Bischoff, Neut. Wiss., 1906, p. 268; Thieme, ib., p. 265. Moulton (ProL, p. 92) quotes Kaelker (Qumst., p. 245 f.) as saying that Polyb. uses ὁστις for ὅς merely to avoid hiatus. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 160.
ber as far as ch. 4:18. But even then Blass has to admit cases of harsher hiatus in Hebrews, like ἀδελφοὶ ἀγίοι, ἐνοχοὶ ἰσαυ, etc.

The Attic inscriptions show that the vernacular tongue did not care much about hiatus. The lighter elisions like δ’ were used or not at will, while the heavier ones like δίκαί ὀπως were rare. The same indifference to elision appears in the κοινή inscriptions and in the papyri. In general in the N. T. elision takes place regularly before pronouns and particles and before nouns in combinations of frequent occurrence like κατ ὁσιον. Blass has carefully worked out the following facts in the N. T. MSS. Τε, οὐτε, μήτε, ἀμα, ἀφα, γε, ἐμε ἔτι, ὤνα, ὀψτε, etc., do not undergo elision nor do noun- or verb-forms. The verse of Menander quoted in 1 Cor. 15:33 is properly printed χρηστα ομιλιαί by W. H. Even the compound words τεσσερακονταετής (Ac. 7:23) and ἐκατονταετής (Ro. 4:19) do not suffer elision, while τετρα-ἀρχής has no elision in καθα (Alexandrian, Hort). Τοῦτ ἐστι or τούτεστι is the only example in the pronouns that we have in the N. T. It is in the particles then that most N. T. elisions occur, though there are comparatively few. ‘Ἀλλα, according to Gregory, has elision in 215 cases and fails to have it in 130, though the MSS. vary much. Hort observes that in ἀλλα elision is usual before articles, pronouns and particles, but rare before nouns and verbs. Ro. 6:14-8:32 has many non-elisions of ἀλλα, and the elision varies before the different vowels except that it is constant before rarely suffers elision outside of ὃς δ’ ἄν, but here frequently, while W. H. read δὲ αὐτό in Ph. 2:18 after ΧΒΠ. In 2 Cor. 3:16 W. H. put ἡμίκα δ’ ἄν in the margin, text ἡμ. δὲ ἔδα (so Tisch, Nestle). In οὐδε elision takes place several times, as in οὐδε ἄν (Heb. 8:4), οὐδ’ ἐ (Ac. 19:2, ΚΑΒ), οὐδ’ ἴνα (Heb. 9:25), οὐδ’ ὅτι (Ro. 9:7), οὐδ’ ο (Mt. 24:21; Heb. 13:5), οὐδ’ οὐτος (1 Cor. 14:21). Blass further notes that prepositions seldom use elision

1 Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 69 f.
3 Cronert, Mem. Graec. Hercul., p. 138 f. Cf. also Thumb, Hellen. etc., p. 82.
4 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 146.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 18. Cf. also Gregory, p. 93 f.
6 Moulton (Cl. Rev., Feb. 31, 1901) finds that the pap. like the Lat. have a vowel not used in the metre. The inscr. concur in this practice. Moulton, Prol., p. 45. Cf. also Mayser, Gr., pp. 155-158, 160-162. He shows that in the pap. it is largely a matter of indifference. On the scarcity of elision in the LXX see Helbing, Gr. d. LXX, p. 12 f.; Thackeray, pp. 22, 136 f.
7 Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 306) refers to the Ὀξυρυχνῆς pap., which have τοῦτ εἶπὼν in Jo. 20:22
8 Prol., p. 93 f.
9 Notes, p. 146.
10 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 18.
with proper names, since it was thought better, as on the inscriptions, to keep the name distinct and readily discernible, though W. H. read δι' Ἄβραάμ in Heb. 7:9. Elision is most common with διά as δι' ἑσόπτρου (1 Cor. 13:12), "because there were already two vowels adjacent to each other" Blass thinks. Ἀντί has elision only in ἄνθρω (Lu. 1:20, etc.). Elsewhere the prepositions show elision with pronouns and in current phrases, as in διά ἀγιας, ἀπ' ἀρτι, ἀπ' ἀυτοῦ, ἀπ' ἐμοῦ, ἐπ' ἀυτῷ, κατ' ἐμέ, κατ' ἑδίαιν (καθ' ἑδιαν), κατ' ὀικον, μετ' ἐμοῦ, παρ' ἄν, ὑπ' ἡμῶν, ὑπ' ὁδενός (1 Cor. 2:15). So the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 137).

(1) CRASIS. The Attic official inscriptions make little use of crasis, though it is fairly common in the vase-inscriptions of the fifth century B.C. In Magnesia Nachmanson finds only a few examples of καί and the article. The same thing is true of Pergamum. In the N. T. it is confined also to καί and the article. And in the case of καί crasis only occurs if the following word is a pronoun or a particle. Καί thus often, though not always, coalesces with ἐγώ and the oblique cases, as καγώ, καμοι, καμέ. If there is a "distinct co-ordination of ἐγώ with another pronoun or a substantive," crasis does not take place. Even the MSS. vary greatly. Κακείνως also is found as well as κακεῖ and κακείθεν. Καί likewise blends only occasionally with ἐὰν in the sense of 'and if,' as in Mk. 16:18; Lu. 13:9; Jas. 5:15. In the sense of 'even if' the crasis is more common, as in Mt. 26:35; Jo. 8:14. In the sense of 'if it be but' or 'if only' the crasis is uniform as in Mk. 5:28; 6:56; 2 Cor. 11:16. Cf. καν--καί ἐὰν (Jo. 8:14, 16). The article suffers crasis very often in the older Greek, but in the N. T. it is seldom so. Hort declines to accent ταυτά for ταυτα in 1 Cor. 9:8 or ταυτά for τα αυτά in Lu. 6:23, 26; 17:30, though supported in Luke by some good MSS. He does, however, accept τονομα in Mt. 27:57 and τοναντιον in 2 Cor. 2:7; Gal. 2:7; 1 Pet. 3:9 ("stereotyped as a single word," Blass). Crasis is quite rare in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 137).

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 18. See Additional Notes.
2 For more minute details about the prep. see Gregory, Prol., pp. 94 ff.
3 Meisterh., Att. Inschr., pp. 70 ff.
4 Magn. Inschr., p. 74.
5 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 133. Cf. Mayser, Gr., pp. 158 ff., for the common pap. exx. like καγώ, τάληθές, etc.
6 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 145.
7 See Gregory, Prol., p. 96; Von Soden, I, p. 1380.
8 See Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 18, and W.-Sch., p. 38; Von Soden, I, p. 1380. Blass gives κασθύμει from D (Lu. 15:16).
9 Notes on Orth., p. 145.
10 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 19. For scarcity in LXX see Helbing, Gr. d. LXX, p. 13 ff.
III. Consonant-Changes (στοιχεία σύμμφωνα). The Greek, like other Indo-Germanic tongues, wrote out both vowels and consonants save in the case of iota adscript, which was not always used. But, as with the Phoenician and Hebrew, which wrote only consonants, the consonants form the backbone of the language. Both consonants and vowels are originally pictographie. "Beth" (βῆτα) is 'house,' "gimul" (γάμμα) is 'camel,' "daleth" (δέλτα) is 'door,' etc.1 The Greek indeed developed the vowels α, ε, ι, ο out of the Phoenician consonants αλφ, ή, θ, ω.2

(a) ORIGIN AND CHARACTER OF THE CONSONANTS. Though the Greek consonants undoubtedly come chiefly from the Phoenician symbols, they were not all used at once nor in the same places. At first the digraphs Κ, T, Π were used for the later Χ, Θ, Φ, and even after these letters won a foothold КΣ, ΧΣ, ΠΣ, ΦΣ were used in Attic for ξ, ψ. It is only since 403 B.C. that the Greek alphabet (δαλφα βητα) has had regularly twenty-four letters. Jannaris3 gives an interesting study of the way the Greek letters looked in eighth, sixth, fifth and fourth centuries B.C. as shown by the inscriptions. In the inscriptions, however, κόπτα continued to be used (like Latin Q) and βαυ or διγαμμα. This last, though called double γάμμα, perhaps represents the Phoenician ναυ. On the use of digamma in Homer see Kuhner-Blass.4 It is a half-vowel in fact, as ι and υ are partly consonant in force, like Latin u (u) and i (j).5 The dropping of digamma affected many words, some of which have the rough breathing, though Thumb6 and Moulton7 think that this is an accident simply, and the rough breathing is due to analogy and not to the digamma in cases like καθε raped, etc. But changes in the use of the consonants did not cease when the Euclidean spelling reform was instituted 403 B.C. As the vowels underwent steady development, so it was and is with the consonants. B early began occasionally to have the force of ι, and γ sometimes the j value of ι as in modern Greek, and it was even inserted (irrational γ).8 In general in the κοινή the

6 Hellen., pp. 245 ff.
7 Prol., p. 44. But Sommer, Gr. Lautstudien, shows that the rough breathing is sometimes due to digamma.
consonant-changes are much fewer than those of the vowel. Such peculiarities as σγ, γίνομαι, λήμψομαι are common (Thackeray, Gr., p. 100).

(b) THE INSERTION OF CONSONANTS. In the older Greek 8 is inserted in áν-δ-ρός, and so with β in μεσημ-β-ρία.1 The Attic used either form in ἐμπί(μ)πλημι, ἐμπί(μ)πρημι. So in Ac. 14: 17 DEP read ἐμπιμπλῶν, (D ἐμ-), and in Ac. 28: 6 ΝΒΗΛΠ most cursives have πίμπρασθαι. The LXX MSS. show the same variation. D in Lu. 2: 32, etc., has Ιστραλ. The retention of μ in all the forms (derivatives also) of λαμβάνω (root λαβ) is in accord with the usage of the papyri ("almost invariably")2 and the inscriptions of the κοινή, and is due to the Ionic λήμψομαι.3 Hence λήμψομαι, ἐλήμφθην, etc. In the Ptolemaic age (iii/i B.C.) the papyri give both forms. From i/iv A.D. the papyri and uncials (LXX and N. T.) give almost wholly forms. In the Byzantine period (vi/viii A.D.) the classic λήμψομαι reappears. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 108 f.; Maysor, Gr., p. 194 f.; Cronert, Mem., p. 66. In the LXX the uncials give the spelling of their own date, not that of the translation. In Mk. 7: 32 the extra γ in μογ(γ)λάλον is inserted by the Syrian class only and is not to be accepted. In Heb. 11: 32 π is added to Σαμψών (Σαμψών). So also in Ac. 3: 7 (ΘΑΒΓ) δ is added to σφυ(δ)ρόν which is as yet "unexplained."4 In the case of Ἀδραμυννηψ (Ac. 27: 2), read by W. H. on authority of AB 16 Copt. instead of Ἀδραμυττηψ, a slightly different situation exists. Two ways of pronouncing and spelling the name of the city existed.

(c) THE OMISSION OF CONSONANTS. There are not many cases where a consonant drops out of a N. T. word. In Rev. 13: 2 the correct reading (all the uncials) is undoubtedly ἄρκου, not ἄρκτου. This form is found also in the LXX and in inscriptions of the first or second century A.D.5 W. H., following B and Ν, also (save in Mk. 3: 22) read βεζεβολαί instead of βεζεβολαί. Γίνομαι and γινώσκω are the exclusive forms in the N. T., though some MSS., as in the papyri and inscriptions, have γειν—. Nach-

1 Blass compares the insertion of consonants in Semitic names like γεασ-δ-πας, Μαμ-β-ρη.  
2 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 34.  
3 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 179 f. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 64, for full references concerning the use of μ with λαμβάνω. Cf. Gregory (Prol., p. 72) for list and references of the various compounds of λαμβάνω and λήμψις in the N. T., ἀνα--, ἀνεται--, ἀντε--, ἀπο--, κατα--, μετα--, παρα--, προ--, προσ--. The LXX MSS. have λήμψομαι (Q λήψονται) and ἐλήψθην. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 22.  
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 24; W.-Sch., p. 64.  
5 Ib., p. 65.
manson\(^1\) states clearly the facts. The Ionic as early as the fifth century B.C. used the \(\gamma\nu\) forms, and the Doric shows the same situation in the fourth century. Even in Athens the \(\gamma\nu\), forms appear, and in the \(\kappa\omega\nu\gamma\) the \(\gamma\gamma\nu\) forms vanish. \(\Gamma\omega\lambda\gamma\theta\alpha\) follows the Hebrew \(\tau\nu\nu\nu\nu\nu\) rather than the Chaldaic \(\tau\nu\nu\nu\nu\nu\) in having only one \(\lambda\). According to Winer-Schmiedel\(^2\) the two forms \(\kappa\alpha\delta\alpha\) and \(\kappa\lambda\alpha\delta\alpha\) (Ac. 27:16) represent two different islands near each other, which were confused in the MSS. It is hardly worth while to remark that \(\sigma\acute{\rho}\delta\acute{i}\nu\omega\) (correct text in Rev. 4:3) is a substantive, while \(\sigma\acute{\rho}\delta\iota\nu\sigma\) (Text. Rec.) is an adjective.

\(\text{(d) SINGLE OR DOUBLE CONSONANTS. Blass}^3\) and Winer-Schmiedel\(^4\) comment on the obscurity concerning the use of single or double consonants in the \(\kappa\omega\nu\gamma\). The phenomena in the N. T. in general correspond to the situation in the \(\kappa\omega\nu\gamma\).\(^5\) In the modern Greek vernacular (cf. Thumb, \textit{Handbook}, p. 27) the double consonants, except in Southeastern Greek dialects, have the value of only one. In the oldest Attic inscriptions in most cases where the doubling of consonants was possible the single consonant was used.\(^6\) The rule with initial \(\rho\) was that when it passed to the middle of a word as a result of reduplication or the prefixing of a preposition, etc., it was doubled. But \(\rho\beta\rho\alpha\nu\tau\sigma\mu\acute{\epsilon}\nu\gamma\) is read by \textit{NACDP} in Heb. 10:22 as in Ionic and late Greek, \(\beta\rho\iota\mu\acute{\mu}\epsilon\nu\) in D (Mt. 9:36), and \(\pi\epsilon\rho\iota\rho\epsilon\rho\alpha\mu\mu\acute{\epsilon}\nu\gamma\) in K (Rev. 19:13). Blass\(^7\) observes

\(^{1}\) Magn. Inschr., p. 108. Cf. also Hoffmann, Griech. Dial., Bd. III, p. 173; Meisterh., p. 128; Maysier, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 165; Schmid, Atticismus, Bd. IV., p. 579 (for the Atticistic \(\gamma\gamma\nu\nu\)); Cronert, Mem. Greac. Hercul., p. 91 f.; Reinhold, De Greac. Patr. etc., pp. 46-48. In the LXX \(\gamma\nu\nu\nu\nu\nu\) and \(\gamma\nu\nu\nu\nu\nu\) are uniform. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 21. Thack. (Gr., p. 111 f.) finds illustrations of the omission of intervocalic \(\eta\) in the LXX uncials as in the pap. (Maysier, Gr., p. 167 f.).

\(^{2}\) P. 65, where a full discussion of the geographical points is given.

\(^{3}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 10.

\(^{4}\) P. 55; cf. also Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., pp. 225 ff.

\(^{5}\) See Thumb, Hellen., pp. 20 ff.; Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., pp. 122 ff.; Nachm., Magn. Inschr., pp. 88 ff.; Cronert, Mem. Greac. Hercul., pp. 74 ff. Cf. Maysier, Gr., pp. 211-219. For the LXX see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 14-16. The MSS. of the LXX are largely the same as those of the N. T. and show similar phenomena in orthography. So in Ex. 7:10 B has \(\tau\epsilon\iota\psi\epsilon\nu\), \(\Lambda\rho\rho\). Both \(\alpha\rho\alpha\beta\omega\nu\), and \(\alpha\rho\alpha\beta\omega\nu\) occur, and it is in the pap. that we can often find the true Ptolemaic spelling. A curiously has usually \(\gamma\nu\nu\mu\alpha\) and B \(\gamma\nu\nu\nu\mu\alpha\).

\(^{6}\) Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 93.

\(^{7}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 10, 328. Similar variations in usage as to \(\rho\) or \(\rho\rho\) appear in the inscr. of the \(\kappa\omega\nu\gamma\) (Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 124, \(\alpha\nu\nu\tau\rbar\iota\rbar\iota\)w\), etc.; Nachm., Magn. etc., p. 91) and even in the Attic inscr. (Meisterh., p. 95, \(\alpha\nu\nu\rho\theta\iota\nu\tau\epsilon\tau\nu\kappa\), etc.). Cf. Reinhold, De Greac. etc., p.42, for exx. of \(\epsilon\acute{\rbar}\sigma\acute{\tau}\alpha\), etc.
that the Syriac versions use ḫ][/kh for ἱμη, though some Attic inscriptions use initial pp. In Mt. 9:20 αἰμορροῦσα is correct (ᐊ来回 one ṁ). In Ac. 10:29 BD 61 read ἀνατηρήσως, and in Ac. 19:36 BL have ἀνατηρήσων. In Ac. 27:43 W. H. follow Ἐ in ἀπορίσαντας, and in Lu. 19:35 all but the Syrian class read ἐπιρίσαντες and ἘAB have the same form in 1 Pet. 5:7. In Mt. 9:36 the Neutral (and Alexandrian) class has ἔριμμένοι, the Syriac ἔρρ, while D has ἔριμμ–. In Mt. 15:30 ἘDL read ἔρρψαν, while B and the rest have ἔρρψαν, but see Ac. 27:19. But in Lu. 17:2 ἔρρπται is supported by all MSS. save II and p<sup>str</sup>. In Jo. 19:23 ἄραφος is read by W. H., though B has app. In 2 Cor. 12:4 ἀρητα is right as ἀρωστός in Mk. 6:5, 13, etc. In 2 Cor. 1:22 W. H. follow BCD vs. ᾸAL in reading ἄρραβώνα, a Semitic word which in its Semitic form has the doubling of the consonant and the metrical prosody – ṭ – according to Blass, who compares also the Latin arrha. W. H. have διαρέξας in Mk. 14:63 after BN, while in Lu. 8:29 διαρήσων is supported by ABCRUD. In Mt. 26:65 W. H. give διέρησεν on the authority of only θ according to Tisch., though BL read διερήσετο in Lu. 5:6. But προσέρησεν in Lu. 6:48 is supported by ᾸBDL and in 6:49 by BDL. In Ac. 16:22 περιρήξαντες is the reading of all uncials save P, but most cursive s follow P. But in Ac. 14:14 all MSS. have διαρήξας and in Lu. 9:42 the same thing is true of ἔρρησεν. In Mk. 2:21 ἐπιρρᾶτει is read by all the best MSS. and the Syrian class is divided, and the same is true of Mt. 26:67 ἔραπισαν. In 2 Cor. 11:25 ἐραβδίσθην, is correct, while likewise ἐράντισεν (Heb. 9:19, 21) has all save late Syrian support. So –ρρ– in ἔρρηθη (BD ἐρρήθη, not W. H., Mt. 5:21, etc.) is the constant reading in the N. T. In Eph. 3:17 (18) and Col. 2:7, all MSS. have ἔρριςθην. W. H. follow B alone in 2 Cor. 1:10; 2 Pet. 2:7 with ἐρύσατο, while in Col. 1:13 B is joined by FGP. In 2 Tim. 3:11 AD read ἐρύσατο, and ἘAC 37 give ἐρύσθην in 2 Tim. 4:17. All MSS. have ἐρρῳσθε (Ac. 15:29). Μύρρα (B) is changed to Μύρα in the Syrian text (Ac. 27:5; cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 160), but Winer-Schmiedel (p. 58) found only Μύρα in the inscriptions. Παραρῳσθεν (Heb. 2:1) is read by all the pre-Syrian classes. Παρρησία, παρρησίαζομαι (from πανρησία), not παρη–, is the usual reading in the N. T. (see Additional Notes), as occasionally in the inscriptions.  

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 10. Ἐλαβών "only Western," Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 148. But the pap. (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 33; Deiss., B. S., p. 183 f.) frequently have ἐραβδών, and, as Deissmann remarks, people are not always particular to preserve mere etymology.  

2 CIGII, 2722. 5. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 56,
Rev. 6:4 and 12:3, though the evidence is pretty evenly balanced.\(^1\) The Alexandrian class has πυράζει in Mt. 16:2, but W. H. reject the passage. The MSS. all have Χειμάρρου in Jo. 18:1.

The other instances outside of ρ are not so numerous. The MSS. (all but late Syrian) support (βαλλάντιον, not βαλλάντιον, as do the papyri.\(^2\) Blass\(^3\) argues for it also on metrical grounds. Γένημα, because given by no grammarian, was "attributed by Fritzsche (on Mark, pp. 619 ff.) to the carelessness of transcribers" (Thayer), but as sometimes in the LXX (Ezek. 36:30) so in the N. T. the best MSS. distinguish between γένημα (from γενώνω), 'living creatures,' as γεννήματα ἐχίδνων (Mt. 3:7) and γένημα (from γινόμαι, 'the fruits of the earth,' as ἐκ τοῦ γεννήματος τῆς ἀμπέλου (Mk. 14:25). Phrynichus\(^4\) condemns the use of γένημα=καρπός (Diodorus, Polybius, etc.). Root of both verbs is γεν. This distinction between γένημα and γένημα appears in the papyri also, though γεννήθεντα occurs in the Fayum Papyri (B.U. 110. 14) "undoubtedly from γεννάω."\(^5\) So N. T. MSS. vary\(^6\) about γένημα. The grammarians (Lobeck, ad Phrynichum, p. 726) reject ἐκχύων for ἐκχέω, but the best MSS. give ἐκχύων everywhere in the N. T. W. H. accept this AEolic form in Mt. 23:35; 26:28; Mk. 14:24; Lu. 11:50 marg.; Lu. 22:20 (bracket the passage); and Ac. 22:20. So also συνχύων (W. H.) in Ac. 9:22; 21:31. Cf. ὑπερεκχύωνόμενον in Lu. 6:38. Likewise MSS. support ἀναβαίνων, ὀπτάννομαι, while the AEolic ἀποκτένων is received by W. H. in Rev. 6:11 and ἀποκτεννώ in Mk. 12:5, though rejected elsewhere in N. T. on divided testimony. Ἄναστος has been restored throughout the N. T. by W. H. instead of ἔννατος of the Text. Rec. The inscriptions support the N. T. MSS. in this change (Thayer). So W. H. give ἔννηκοντα (Mt. 18:12 ff.; Lu. 15:4, 7) but ἐννέα always. Ἄνεώς, not ἔνεώς, W. H. give (Ac. 9:7) as the LXX (Is. 56:10), a word possibly identical with ἄνεως (ἄναος). W. H. present\(^7\) κράβαττος instead of the κράββατος of the Text. Rec., though κράβατος would more nearly represent the Latin grabatus as it appears in Etym. M. (154. 34; 376. 36). Κραβάττιος is found also for the

---

\(^1\) The inscr. show πυράς also (Dittenb., 177. 15; 748. 20).
\(^2\) Cronert, Mem. Graec. Hercul., p. 76.
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 11.
\(^4\) Rutherford, New Phryn., p. 348.
\(^6\) Gregory, Prol., p. 79.
\(^7\) In Mk. B (5) has κράβαττος, but is not followed by W. H. in Jo. and Ac. (6). Thumb, Hellen., p. 22, argues for ββ as the correct form from mod. Gk. usage. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 328) cites both κράβαττος and κραβάττον from Arrian's Diss. Epict. and κράββαττος from the papyri. Cf. Moulton's note in Einl.
Latin grabatarius (CIGII 2114 d I). Ἡ, however, has 10/11 times the strange form κράβακτος (—ττ— only in Ac. 5:15). Φασεά (Ac. 27:8) is Ἐφσαια in some MSS. Μαμωνᾶς, from Aramaic שָׁמֵר, is correct. Μασάομαί is the right reading in Rev. 16:10 (KACP). Only the Western class has πλημύρης for πλημμύρης in Lu. 6:48. W. H. properly have ῥάκος, not ῥάκκος, from ῥήγγυμι (Mt. 9:16; Mk. 2:21). In the Western interpolation in Ac. 20:15, W. H. read Τρωγύλιον, not —ύλιον nor —λιον. Some Latin MSS. read ὑγος for ὀσιοκος in Jo. 19:29 and Heb. 9:19. Φυγέλος, not —ελλος, is read in 2 Tim. 1:15 by all save A and most cursives.

Cf. Φυγέλιος in CIGII 3027.

The Hebrew and Aramaic proper names call for special remark. "Alexander =אָלֵיָה (Josephus Αλεξανδρός) may be due to the dropping of α or to the analogy of Αλεξανδρός. W. H. (Ac. 1:23; 15:22) prefer Βαρσαββᾶς (from הַשָּׁבֵב) to Βαρσαββᾶς (from הַשָּׁבֵב, 'son of Saba'). The Text. Rec. has Φελπόσαρτ (W. H. Γεννησαρέτ) in Mk. 6:53, elsewhere —ν—. The N. T. and 1 Macc. have 'Ισαίας, not 'Ελισαιος. (Syrian) in Lu. 4:27=Wispiי. 'Ισοσαί (Lu. 3:32, etc.) comes from 'Ψιτ. The N. T. and 1 Macc. have 'Ισαίας, but the ancient grammarians and lexicographers prefer 'Ισίας.

In Lu. 3:27 'Ιωάναν (indeclinable) is the right text. W. H. prefer 'Ιωάν (Iωάν) to 'Ιωάνας in Lu. 8:3; 24:10. But more doubt exists concerning 'Ιωάνας, which W. H. read everywhere save in Ac. 4:6; 13:5; Rev. 22:8, following B and sometimes D. The single ν prevails in D in Luke and Acts, while 'Ιωάνας is more common in D in Matthew, Mark, John. Ἡ has the single ν in the part written by the scribe of B. The inscriptions have it both ways. Blass finds the explanation in the Hebrew termination –an, which was treated as a variable inflection in the Greek, the LXX MSS. having now 'Ιωάναν and now 'Ιωάνον. This fact opposes the derivation of the name 'Ιωάνας from 'Ιωάναν-ης, leaving the —ης unexplained. Μαρίαμ (Mariam) =Μαρίαμη in Josephus. Μεσσίας is from the Aramaic שֶׁמֶטֶד = Hebrew שֶׁמֶטַם but the Syr-
IAN class reads Μεσίας in Jo. 1:41 (42); 4:25. Σάρρα, Heb. Νήσμαν, is read by MSS. generally in N. T., though L has Σάρρας in Ro. 4:19 (vulg. Sarai). All the MSS. have νν in Σουσάννα (Lu. 8:3) after the Heb. Νήσμαν (‘a lily’). Χαρράν is supported by most MSS., though D and a few cursive MSS. have Χαράν in Ac. 7:2 after the Hebrew לִיפָר. The LXX has Χαρράν and the Greek writers (Strabo, etc.) have Κάρραν, Latin Carrhae.

Doubling of the Aspirate. As a rule the aspirated mutes (Θ, Χ, Φ) are not doubled in more correct writing either in early or late Greek, but N. T. MSS. give examples of ΘΘ, ΧΧ, ΦΦ. In Phil. 2 D has ΑΦΦΙΑ, while 3 has ΑΠΠΙΑ (so vulg.) and FG, etc., even ΑΜΦΙΑ. In Mk. 7:34 all MSS. have ΘΦΦΘΑ (or ΕΦΦΘΑ) save Δ and two Coptic MSS. which have ἘΠΦΑΘΑ. W. H. give ΜΑΘΑΙΟΣ = Hebrew נֶרֶף; in the N. T. (Mt. 9:9 ff., etc.), and ΜΑΘΑΙΟΝ in Mt. 1:15. W. H. read ΜΑΘΘΑΤ in Lu. 3:24, but ΜΑΘΘΑΤ in Lu. 3:29. In Ac. 1:23, 26 W. H. have ΜΑΘΘΑΙΟΣ, but in Lu. 3:25 f. they prefer ΜΑΤΤΑΘΙΑΣ to ΜΑΘΘΑΙΟΣ. In Ac. 5:1, W. H. consider ΣΑΦΦΕΙΡΑ Western and read ΣΑΦΦΕΙΡΑ (either Aramaic כַּרְרַא, 'beautiful,' or Hebrew כַּרְרַא 'precious stone').

The LXX MSS. show the same variations. Cf. Thackera.y, Gr., p. 121.

(e) ASSIMILATION OF CONSONANTS. In the early period of the Greek language the inscriptions often show assimilation of consonants between separate words. The words all ran together in the writing (scriptura continua) and to some extent in pronunciation like the modern French vernacular. Usage varies very early, but the tendency was constantly towards the distinctness of the separate words (dissimilation). However, ĕε came finally to be written ĕk before consonants, though ĕγ, ĕκκ, ĕχ, ĕγκ and even ĕ (cf. Latin) are found in Attic inscriptions, as ĕγ νήσουν, etc. Only sporadic examples outside of ĕε and ĕκ appear in the N. T. as άνέγιλπτος in D (Lu. 12:33), άπεγδύσει in B (Col. 2:11), άγγονα in D (1 Tim. 5:4), έγγόνα, not έγνόνα. The Attic inscriptions even have ζ assimilated in τούλ λίθους. The most

1 On the whole subject see Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 159, and Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 11. Cf. also Schweizer, Perg. etc., pp. 110 f., 114 f. Cf. for the pap., Mayser, Gr., pp. 190-224; Soden, I, pp. 1372 ff.
3 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 12; Ausspr, etc., p. 123. Alexandrian writers followed the Attic in this assimilation. Blass compares the guttural use of α in δήλο (Mt. 27:46) in L and in the LXX ἀερμόν, ἀενδώρ.
common assimilation between separate words is in words ending in --n especially with the article and ἐν. Examples like τῷ ἐνθεὶν, τὸλ λόγον, τὸρ Ρόδιον, ἐλ Λέσβῳ, ἐσ Σιδώνι, etc., are very common.¹

Similar phenomena occur in the Κοινή inscriptions, though the failure to assimilate is far more noticeable. See list of examples in Nachmanson.² As a rule the papyri do not assimilate such cases.³ In the N. T., as in the later Κοινή generally, only a few remnants survive of this assimilation of ν between words. Blass,⁴ who has used the MSS. to good purpose, finds several, as, for instance, ἐγ γαστρὶ in A (Lu. 21:23), ἐγ Κανᾶ in AF (Jo. 2:11), ἐμ μέσω in AC (Rev. 1:13; 2:1, etc.), in AP (Heb. 2:12), in ΛΔ (Mt. 18:2; Lu. 8:7), ἐμ πραύτητι in Β (Jas. 1:21), σῦμ Μαριάμ in AE, etc. (Lu. 2:5), σῦμ πάσιν in EG, etc. (Lu. 24:21). The earlier papyri (up to 150 B.C.) show a good deal of this assimilation between words (Thackeray, Gr., p. 131). This assimilation between separate words is common in modern Greek (cf. Thumb, Handb., pp. 16 ff.).

So τὸν πατέρα=tombatera. But a much more difficult matter is presented in the case of ἐν and σῦν in composition, though in general "assimilation is the rule in compounds of ἐν, retention of ν in those of σῦν."⁵ But in 1 and 2 Peter assimilation is the rule (only two clear exceptions) for both σῦν and ἐν due possibly⁶ to the absence of uncials. The later papyri as a rule do not assimilate σῦν, though often ἐν.⁷ In the N. T. no examples occur of ἐν or σῦν before ξ or ρ.⁸ Hort⁹ gives a list of what he considers "the certain and constant forms" of ἐν and σῦν in composition. "All other compounds of σῦν and ἐν are included in the list of alternative readings." Hort thus reads ἐμ— before the labials (π, β, φ) and the liquid μ except ἐνπεριπατήσω (2 Cor. 6:16), possibly ἐνπνέων (Ac. 9:1), and ἐνπροσθεν once (Rev. 4:6) and Western class elsewhere. So assimilation takes place before the liquid λ, as ἐλλαγάω. But before the palatals κ, γ the usage varies, though before χ we have ἐγχρίσαι (Rev. 3:18) with reading ἐν.

⁴ Ib., pp. 11 f., 306.
⁵ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 149.
⁶ Ib. In general see Wecklein, Curae Epigr. ad Gr. Graeca.e etc., 1869, p. 47 f.
⁸ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 149. See for LXX Thackeray, pp. 132
We read ἐνεγραμμένη in 2 Cor. 3:2 f. (KABCDGF) and ἐνκαίνια, ἐνκαινίω, ἐνκατακείμαι, ἐνκεντρίζω, ἐνκρίνω, though ἐγκαλέω, ἐγκλήμα, etc., and ἐγκαταλείπω except in Acts.¹ As to σῦν here is Hort's decision. Συνπ— he accepts save in συμπόσια. On the other hand Hort has only συνβασιλεύω, συνβιβάζω, elsewhere συμβ— as in συμβαίνω; only σύνφημι, συνφώ, but συμφ— as in συμφέρω. With the palatals Hort reads συνκ— always, as in συνκάθασιμαι, only συγγενής, συγκαλύπτω, but συνχρώμαι and σύγχυσις. He has both συναλέω, συνυποδέμαι and συνλαμβάνω, συλλέγω; συνμαθητής, etc., but συμμορφίζω, σύμμορφος. Hort has συνζώ, etc., but σύζυγε; σύνψυχος, but has both συνσταυρώ, etc., and συστρέφω, etc. For the detailed W. evidence see Gregory.² Hort also prefers παλινγενεσία, but is doubtful about κενχρεαί, πανπληθεῖ.  

(f) INTERCHANGE AND CHANGING VALUE OF CONSONANTS. One cannot here go into the discussion of the labial, palatal, dental, velar stops, the spirants, liquids, nasals. One can give only the special variations in the N. T. The b sound was rare in the older Indo-Germanic languages and easily glided into u or v.³ The Greek βαίνω is like venio in Latin, βίος is like vivus though different in history. In modern Greek β has sound of v. In the N. T. as in the LXX all the uncial have υ in Δαμιάδ (W. H.) where the minuscules read Δαβίδ.⁴ In the case of βελίαρ (2 Cor. 6:15) it is from ράβη (‘lord of the forest’), while the Text. Rec. βελίαλ is from ράβη (‘worthlessness’).⁵ The variation between ρσ and ρρ, Moulton⁶ observes, runs down to modern Greek. The Attic ρρ did not displace the Ionic and early Attic ρσ entirely in the Attic inscriptions.⁷ In the N. T., like the rest of the κοινή, usage is divided.⁸ Hort (p. 149) prefers άρσην except άρρην perhaps 4/4 times in Paul. In the Gospels and Acts άρσος and the two imperatives άρσει, άρσετε are uniform, but in 2 Cor. (5:6, 8; 7:16; 10:1, 2) and Heb. (13:6)

¹ About ἐν, in composition see Gregory, Prol. etc., p. 76 f.; Soden, I, p. 1383. Ἐν in MSS. appears in composition as ἐν—, ἐγ— and even ἐκ—, as ἐκκόπην. On ἐνπροσθεῖν in the pap. see Mayser, Gr., p. 45.
² Prol. etc., p. 73 f. Cf. Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 91-97, for the history of this subject during various stages of the language.
³ Cf. Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., pp. 98, 124
⁴ Cf. W.-Sch., p. 66 note.
⁵ Cf. ib., p. 58 note, for further discussion.
$\theta\alpha\rho\rho\varepsilon\iota\nu$ is the correct text. $\zeta$ displaces $\sigma$ in a few words. Voiced $\sigma$ in union with voiced consonants had the sound of $\z$, and $\zeta$ was pronounced $\sigma\delta$. $^1$ $\chi\zeta\omega\tau\omicron\varsigma$ (Ac. 8:40) $\tau\omicron\tau\nu\chi\varepsilon\kappa\iota$, Ashdod. Lagarde's LXX has $\mathrm{'}\$\alpha\sigma\varepsilon\delta\delta\omega\delta$ in Josh. 11:22 (A has $\mathrm{'}\$\alpha\sigma\tau\nu\delta\omega\delta, B \mathrm{'}\$\alpha\sigma\varepsilon\delta\delta\omega$). $\kappa\gamma\nu\rho\nu$ is rendered also $\mathrm{'}\varepsilon\zeta\rho\alpha\varsigma$ or $\mathrm{'}\varepsilon\sigma\delta\rho\alpha\varsigma$. But in the N. T. period $\zeta$ is changing from the $\delta\varsigma$ sound to $\sigma$. $\mathrm{'}\$\alpha\rho\mu\omicron\varsigma\omega$, not the Attic $\acute{\alpha}$/,$\omicron$,$\rho\omicron\mu\omicron\acute{\omicron}\omicron$, is the N. T. form. $^2$ Lachmann has $\mu\alpha\zeta\omicron\omicron$ for $\mu\alpha\sigma\tau\omicron\omicron\varsigma$ in Rev. 1:13. In 1 Th. 5:19 BDFG (Western class) read $\zeta\beta\varepsilon\nu\nu\nu\nu\varepsilon\nu\varepsilon$, simply phonetic spelling. Hort $^4$ considers $\mathrm{Z}\mu\omicron\omicron\nu\nu\nu\nu\alpha$ as Western only in Rev. 1:11; 2:8, but the papyri and inscriptions both give it. $^5$ The most noticeable feature of all is, however, that the Attic and Boeotian $\omicron$,$\tau\tau$ did not hold against the Ionic $\sigma$,$\sigma$. Papyri, inscriptions and N. T. MSS. all unite in using $\sigma$,$\sigma$ as the rule, though all occasionally have $\omicron$,$\omicron$. It does not seem possible to reduce the usage to an intelligent rule. $^6$ $\mathrm{'}\$\epsilon\kappa\pi\lambda\nu\tau\omicron\tau\omicron\mu\omicron\omicron\nu\omicron\omicron\nu\omicron\omicron$ is accepted by W. H. in Ac. 13:12, elsewhere $\sigma$,$\sigma$. Both $\epsilon\lambda\alpha\sigma\sigma\sigma\sigma\nu\nu$ (Jo. 2:10; Ro. 9:12) and $\epsilon\lambda\alpha\tau\omicron\tau\omicron\nu\nu$ (1 Tim. 5:9; Heb. 7:7) are found, but only the "literary" (so Blass) words $\epsilon\lambda\alpha\tau\omicron\tau\omicron\nu\nu\nu$ (Jo. 3:30; Heb. 2:7, 9) and $\epsilon\lambda\alpha\tau\omicron\tau\omicron\nu\nu$ (2 Cor. 8:15). Similar diversity exists between $\tilde{\eta}$,$\sigma$,$\sigma$,$\nu$,$\sigma$, (1 Cor. 11:17; 2 Cor. 12:15) and $\eta$,$\sigma$,$\sigma$,$\omicron$,$\omicron$ (2 Cor. 12:13) on the one hand and $\eta$,$\tau$,$\tau$,$\nu$,$\nu$ (1 Cor. 6:7; Ro. 11:12) and $\eta$,$\tau$,$\tau$,$\sigma$,$\omicron$ (2 Pet. 2:19 f.) on the other. In Heb. 6:9; 10:34 W. H. read $\kappa\rho\epsilon\iota\sigma$,$\sigma$,$\nu$,$\sigma$,$\omicron$,$\omicron$, elsewhere $\kappa\rho\iota\tau\omicron\omicron$ (Heb. 1:4; 7:7, 19, 22; 8:6; 9:23; 11:16, 35, 40; 12:24), and Hebrews has some literary influence, an argument for Blass' idea above. Paul has $\kappa\rho\iota\tau\omicron\omicron$ only in 1 Cor. 7:9, while $\kappa\rho\iota\sigma$,$\sigma$,$\nu$,$\sigma$,$\omicron$ is found in 1 Cor. 7:38; 11:17; Ph. 1:23. Hort accepts $\kappa\rho\iota\tau\omicron\omicron$ in 1 Pet. 3:17

$^1$ Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., pp. 113, 115. On the whole subject of the exchange of consonants in the pap. see Mayser, Gr., pp. 169-188, 219-224. For the LXX exx. (οὐδέν, οὐδέν; γλώσσα, γλώττα; φυλάσσω, φυλάττω; $\epsilon\lambda\alpha\sigma\sigma\nu\nu$, $\epsilon\lambda\alpha\tau\omicron\tau\omicron\nu\nu$; $\sigma\rho\rho\omicron\omicron$, $\sigma\omicron$,$\omicron$,$\omicron$,$\omicron$), etc.) see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 17-20; Thack., Gr., pp. 100-124.


$^3$ Cf. $\chi\zeta\beta\epsilon$,$\beta\sigma\tau\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron$ in N (Mk. 9:43), $\epsilon\gamma\nu\varsigma\mu\omicron\omicron\nu$,$\omicron\omicron$,$\omicron$,$\omicron$,$\omicron$, etc., in pap. (W.-Sch., p. 59).

$^4$ Notes on Orth., p. 148.

$^5$ Deiss., B. S., p. 185. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 45; Dittenb., 458. 41, iv

$\mathrm{Z}\mu\omicron\omicron\nu\nu$.

$^6$ Cf. Thumb, Hellen., pp. 53, 78 ff.; Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 125; Nachm., Magn. etc., p. 95 f.; Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 32; Prol., p. 45; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 23; Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 148; Reinhold, De Grace. etc., p. 43 f. Giles (Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 115) thinks that the $\sigma$,$\sigma$ in Athens was a literary mannerism and pronounced just like $\omicron$,$\omicron$. 

Zμωρνη.

"Ορνῖς (Lu. 13:34) is called Western by Hort, though Moulton,¹ observes that it has some papyrus support and is like the modern Greek (Cappadocian) ὧρνῖς.

(g) ASPIRATION OF CONSONANTS. There is besides some fluctuation in the aspiration of consonants. See under (d) for the double aspirates like Ἀφφία, etc. This uncertainty of aspiration is very old and very common in the inscriptions and papyri,² though the N. T. has only a few specimens. W. H. read Ἀκελδαμᾶς in Ac. 1:19, Κρῆς Ἰεριχ. So ρακά (Mt. 5:22), Κρῆς but σαβαχθανεί (B has -κτ-) in Mt. 27:46. Γεννησαρέτ is correct; the Syrian class has –θ in Mt. 14:34. W. H. have uniformly Καφαρναοῦμ, and read Ναξαρέτ save in four passages, Ναξαρέθ in Mt. 21:11; Ac. 10:38, and Ναξαρᾶ in Mt. 4:13; Lu. 4:16. In Lu. 11:27; 23:29 DFG have μασθοῖ for μαστοί, likewise Χ in Rev. 1:13. Ἐθεόθη is read by cursive, Clem., Or., etc., in 1 Cor. 5:7. In οὐθεῖς and μηθεῖς after elision of η the δ has blended with the εις as if it were τ and become θ. It is first found in an inscr. 378 B.C. and is the usual form in the pap. in iii/B.C. and first half of ii/B.C. By i/A.D. the δ forms are supreme again (Thack., Gr., pp. 58 ff). Blass³ finds οὐθενός in Lu. 22:35 (ABQT); 2 Cor. 11:8 (KMP); οὐθέν, in Lu. 23:14 (KBT); Ac. 15:9 (BHL); 19:27 (ABHP); 26:26 (KB); 1 Cor. 13:2 (KABCL); μηθέν in Ac. 27:33 (KAB). But ἐξουθενέω in the LXX and the N. T. prevails, though W. H. (after BD) read ἐξουθενηθη in Mk. 9:12. Χ and KD read the Attic πανδοκείον, -εύς in Lu. 10:34 f., but W. H. accept πανδοχείον, --εύς (from δέχομαι). Σάρπηστα in Lu. 4:26 is the LXX rendering of Νήπία. Τροσφοφορέω and τροφοφορέω are two distinct words, though the MSS. differ widely in Ac. 13:18, the Neutral and Western supporting τρο- Horts considers σφυρίς for σπυρίς right (Mt. 15:37, etc.). It is well attested by the papyri.⁴ W. H. read φοβηθρον, not φοβητρον, in Lu. 21:11.

(h) VARIABLE FINAL CONSONANTS. The use of ν ἐφελκυστικόν (paragogic ν) cannot be reduced to any clear rule. The desire to avoid hiatus extended this usage, though it probably originally had a meaning and was extended by analogy to cases where it had none. Cf. English articles a, an (Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 208).

² Cf. W.-Sch., p. 59.
⁴ Moulton, Prol., p. 45. The Ptol. pap. have both spellings, Deiss., B. S., p. 185. Cf. Mayser, Gr., p. 173.
The same thing is true of movable final ζ. In the old Attic before 403 B.C. this movable ν was seldom used. It is more frequent in the new Attic up to 336 B.C., and most common in the κοινή, vanishing again in the modern Greek, as ν easily disappears in pronunciation. Meisterhans\(^1\) has an interesting table on the subject, showing the relative frequency in different centuries. This table proves that in the κοινή it came to be the rule to use the movable ν both before consonants and vowels. This is shown also by the inscriptions\(^2\) and the Ptolemaic papyri. Per contra note the disappearance of final ν in modern Greek vernacular, when not pronounced (Thumb, Handb., pp. 24 ff.). However, as a rule, this movable final ν occurs only with the same classes of words as in the Attic as after –σι, εστί and ε in verbs (3d sing. past tenses). The irrational ν mentioned as common later by Hatzidakis\(^3\) is rare. The older N. T. MSS. (RABC) are in harmony with the κοινή and have the movable ν and ζ both before consonants and vowels with a few exceptions. The later N. T. MSS. seem to feel the tendency to drop these variable consonants. Moulton\(^4\) mentions μείζων (Jo. 5:36) as a good example of the irrational ν in N. T. MSS. (ABEGMA). Cf. also the irrational ν with the subjunctive in the papyri. So ἐὰν θυν ἐροενὸν P. Oxy. 744 (i/B.C.) for η. See Moulton, Prol., pp. 168, 187, for further examples. The failure to use this ν was originally most common in pause, sometimes even before vowels.\(^5\) Blass\(^6\) observes that it was only the Byzantine grammarians who made the rule that this ν should be used before vowels and not before consonants, a rule of which their predecessors did not have the benefit, a thing true of many other grammatical rules. We moderns can teach the ancients much Greek! Since the N. T. MSS.\(^7\) show no knowledge of this later grammatical "rule," W. H. follow a mechanical one indeed,

---

\(^1\) Att. Inschr., p. 114.
\(^4\) Prol., p. 49. Cf. also Reinhold, De Graec., p. 37.
\(^5\) W.--Sch., p. 62.
\(^6\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 19.
\(^7\) Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 147 ff.; Gregory, Prol., p. 97 f. In simple truth ν movable was not so uniform in the earlier Gk. (esp. Thuc.) as the grammars imply. Cf. Maasson, De littera ν Graec. parag., 1881, pp. 47, 61.
but the only practical guide under the circumstances. They go
by the testimony of the oldest uncials. Hort gives a considerable
list of examples where the ν is wanting in one or more of the older
uncials, but where W. H. have ν, as in ἀρωσίν (Mt. 4:6), πᾶσιν
(Mt. 5:15), etc. But in Lu. 1:3 ἔδωξε is read by ΚΒ. In Ac.
24:27 κατέληπε is supported by ΚΒ. There are about a dozen
more instances in Hort’s long list of alternative readings where
W. H. prefer the form without ν, rather more frequently after at,
than after ε.1 W. H., however, have εἰκὸς everywhere, as was
usually the case in the Attic inscriptions and always in the Ptole-
maic papyri and the LXX MSS. both before vowels and con-
sonants.2 So ἔρποσθεν, ἔξωθεν, ὄπισθεν in the N. T. Likewise
πέρνησι is correct in 2 Cor. 8:10; 9:2.3

The variables calls for a few words more. All good MSS. give
ἀντικρὺς Χίου in Ac. 20:15.4 But as in Attic, the N. T. MSS.
usually have ἀχρί and μέχρι even before vowels. Ἠρχι (always
before consonants) thus precedes vowels some fifteen times, and
once only do we certainly5 have ἀχρίς (Gal. 3:19), though it is
uncertain whether it is followed by ἄν or οὐ. Μέχρι is always used
in the N. T. before a consonant and once before a vowel, μέχρι
Ἰωάνου (Lu. 16:16). The early N. T. editors used to print οὐτο
before consonants and οὔτως before vowels, but W. H. print οὔτως
196 times before consonants and vowels and only ten times οὔτω
(all before consonants). These ten instances are Mk. 2:7; Mt.
3:15; 7:17; Ac. 13:47; 23:11; Ro. 1:15; 6:19; Ph. 3:17; Heb.
12:21; Rev. 16:18.6

(i) METATHESIS. Φαίλόνης (2 Tim. 4:13), Latin paenula. See
Additional Notes.

IV. Breathings.

(a) ORIGIN OF THE ASPIRATE. As is well known, in the modern
Greek no distinction is made in pronunciation between spirit-
itus asper and spiritus lenis, or πνεῦμα δασύ and πνεῦμα ψιλόν. That

---

1 See Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 19; Gregory, Prol., p. 97.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 328, and references there given. Cf. Thack.,
Gr., p. 135.
3 Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 19) quotes Attic usage for πέρνησιν before vowels.
4 For the Hom. ἄντικρυ and further items see W.-Sch., p. 63 and note.
5 Ἠρχι (καταντικρύ) in Attic is ‘downright,’ not ‘over against’ (Blass, Gr. of
6 For illustrations from the κοινή inscr. see Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 112.
is to say, the "rough" breathing is only a conventional sign used in writing. This sign is indeed a comparatively modern device, ‘and’, in use in the MSS. generally since the eleventh century A.D.¹ This form was an evolution from H (Phoenician □, he), then ❀ and ❀, then ❇ and ❇.² This breathing (rough or smooth) did not find a place in the Greek alphabet, and so is not found in the early uncial MSS. It becomes therefore a difficult question to tell whether the modern ignoring of the rough breathing was the rule in the first century A.D. The MSS., as Hort³ points out, are practically worthless on this point. The original use of H as equal to h or the rough breathing was general in the old Attic and the Doric, not the AEolic and Ionic. And even in the Attic inscriptions the usage is very irregular and uncertain. Numerous examples like HEKATON occur, but some like HEN also, so that even H was not always rough.⁴ The modern English cockneys have no monopoly of trouble with h's. In French h is silent as l'homme. The Greeks always found the matter a knotty problem. The use of H=η in the Ionic and Attic (after 403 B.C.) left the Greeks without a literary sign for h. The inscriptions show that in the vernacular H continued to be so used for some time.

(b) INCREASING DE-ASPIRATION (Psilosis). But there was a steady decrease in the use of the h sound. The Ionic, like the AEolic, was distinguished by psilosis, and the κοκυή largely⁵ followed the Ionic in this respect. More certain is the use of the aspirated consonants χ, θ, φ, which succeeded the older KH, TH, ΠΗ.⁶ But certainly the rough breathing was in early use as the

---

¹ Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 63. The marking of the rough breathing was general in the earlier forms in vii/A.D., ib., p. 65.
³ Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 310. Cf. also Sitterley, Praxis in MSS. of the Gk. Test., 1898, p. 32. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 25 f., for remarks on breathings in the LXX MSS., where Aolic and Ionic psilosis occur in ἐπ’ ὄδοῦ κατ’ ἑνα as well as exx. of aspirated consonants like καθ’ ὀφθαλμοὺς, καθ’ ἕνιαυτόν, ἑφ’ ἐδεν, not to mention οὐκ ἐμφάκασιν and οὕχ ἰδοῦ. For further remarks on breathings in the LXX see Swete, 0. T. in Gk., p. 302.
⁵ Cf. Thumb., p. 73 f. The Laconic Gk. used H in interaspiration as well as at the beginning (ib., p. 8). Dawes (Pronun. of the Gk. Aspirates, 1894, p. 103) is not able to reach a final decision as to whether the Gk. aspirates are genuine aspirates like the Sans. according to Brugmann, Curtius, etc.
⁶ Cf. Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 91. On the whole subject of the aspirated
inscriptions show, though not with much consistency.\(^1\) Sometimes the rough breathing may be due to the disappearance of a digamma, though sometimes a smooth breathing displaces it, as \(\varepsilon \rho \gamma \nu \nu\) from \(F\varepsilon \rho \gamma \nu \nu\)\(^2\) (cf. English ‘work’). Then again the disappearance of \(\sigma\) has the same result, as \(\iota \sigma \alpha \rho \dot{\theta} = \iota \epsilon \rho \dot{\theta}\).\(^3\) It is not strange therefore that usage in the \(\kappa \o \nu \nu\) is not uniform. Examples like \(\dot{u} \rho \dot{a} \alpha \nu \tau \theta, \dot{u} \phi \alpha \nu \tau \theta, \alpha \dot{u} \nu \theta, \dot{o} \nu \kappa \varepsilon \omega \omega \mu \epsilon \nu\), etc., appear in the Pergamum inscriptions, not to mention \(\kappa \alpha \theta \varepsilon \tau \varsigma, \kappa \alpha \theta \iota \delta \iota \alpha \nu\), etc.\(^4\) The same story of uncertainty is told elsewhere in the \(\kappa \o \nu \nu\) as in Magnesia,\(^5\) Herculaneum.\(^6\) Some of this variation is probably due to analogy,\(^7\) so that though "de-aspiration was the prevailing tendency,"\(^8\) yet the N. T. shows several examples in the opposite direction.

(c) VARIATIONS IN THE MSS. (Aspiration and Psilosis). The aspiration of the consonants \(k, \pi, \tau\) in case of elision is therefore a matter of documentary evidence\(^9\) and occurs in the case of \(\alpha \nu \tau \tilde{\iota}, \varepsilon \pi \tau, \kappa \alpha \tau \tilde{\alpha} \varepsilon, \alpha \nu \kappa, \dot{u} \pi \tilde{\alpha}\). The N. T. MSS. vary considerably among themselves as in the LXX, though some like D in the Gospels and Acts are wholly untrustworthy about aspiration.\(^10\) In general Attic literary usage cannot be assumed to be the \(\kappa \o \nu \nu\) vernacular. Hort\(^11\) prefers \(\Upsilon \delta \rho \alpha \mu \mu \nu \tau \theta \nu \rho \dagger \varsigma \) (Ac. 27:2) like Hadrumetum. \(\Upsilon \lambda \omega \omega\) (1 Cor. 9:9 f.; 1 Tim. 5:18) is connected with \(\alpha \lambda \omega \varsigma\) or \(\alpha \lambda \omega \eta\) and may be compared with \(\dot{a} \pi \rho \lambda \iota \nu \tau \theta \varsigma\) (\(\eta \lambda \iota \varsigma\)).\(^12\) Hort (p. 144) prefers avats (Mk. 5:3), but \(\epsilon \iota \lambda \kappa \iota \rho \iota \nu \varsigma\) and \(\epsilon \iota \lambda \kappa \iota \nu \iota \nu \iota \varsigma\), though \(\epsilon \iota \lambda\) has ancient authority. \(\Upsilon \alpha \phi \varepsilon \lambda \pi \iota \zeta \varsigma \nu \tau \nu \varsigma\) is read by DP in Lu. 6:35 and the LXX has several similar instances,\(^13\) not to mention one

consonants see Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., pp. 194 ff., and for the dialects and interaspiration see K.-B.1, Bd. I, pp. 107-114.

\(^1\) Cecil Bendall, Jour. of Philol., 1904, pp. 199 ff.
\(^2\) R. Weiss, De Dig. etc., 1889, p. 47. Cf. also Paues, De Dig. Hesiodes Quest., 1887, p. 48.
\(^3\) Cf. Sommer, Griech. Lautstudien, 1905, p. 2. On metathesis in aspiration, as \(\varepsilon \chi \omega (\overline{\varepsilon \chi \omega})\), see Meisterh., p. 102, exx. of \(\varepsilon \chi \omega\) in Attic inscr. v/b.C. See also article by Pernot in Rev. des Et. Grq., 1906, pp. 10-23, on La Metathese dans les Dial. de Chio.
\(^4\) Schweizer, Perg. Inschr. etc., pp. 116 ff. The Attic had only \(\gamma \iota \delta \iota \varsigma\), but (Meisterh., p. 87).
\(^7\) Thumb, Hellen. etc., p. 64.
\(^8\) Moulton, Prol., p. 44. Cf. also for the inscr., Dittenb., \(\dot{e} \phi \varepsilon \tau \varsigma\) (458. 71), \(\kappa \alpha \theta \iota \delta \iota \alpha \nu\) (233. 49), and for the pap., Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901 (pp. 33, 434) and 1904 (p. 106). Cf. also Hort, Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 312.
\(^9\) Ib., p. 311.
\(^10\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 15.
\(^11\) Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 313; App., p. 160.
\(^12\) W.-Sch., p. 40.
\(^13\) Gregory, Prol., p. 91; Thack., p. 125.
in Hermas and in the Attic. In Ro. 8:20 W. H. accept ἐφ', ἐλπίδι, while various MSS. support it in Ac. 2:26; 1 Cor. 9:10; Ro. 4:18; 5:2; Tit. 1:2, and FG have καθ' ἐλπίδα in Tit. 3:7. Hort² thinks this is due to digamma dropped as well as in the case of ἀφίδω (Ph. 2:23), but analogy to ἀκοπάβα may be the explanation.³ Εὐφοδε is read by a few MSS. in Ac. 4:29 as ἐφίδεν in Lu. 1:25. Gregory⁴ gives many examples of ἀφ--, ἐφ--, καθ-- with ἐλπίζω and ἐδού in the LXX. W. H. offer οὖχ ἰδού as an alternative reading in Ac. 2:7, while B reads οὖχ ἰδόντες in 1 Pet. 1:8 and οὖχ ἐδού in Gal. 1:19. A has οὖχ ὑπεσθε in Lu. 17:22. W. H.⁵ put οὖχ 'Ιουδαίκώς in the margin in Gal. 2:14. Καθ' ἰδίαν appears in Χ once, in B eight times, in D three times, in Α once (Mt. 14:23; 17:1, 19; 20:17; 24:3; Mk. 4:34; 6:31; 9:28; 13:3). But W. H. nowhere accept it, not even when B combines with Χ or D. ΧΒ have it in Mt. 24:3. The form καθ' ἰδίαν is common in the κοινή inscriptions and the papyri. Καθείδωλον is read by Μ in Ac. 17:16. On the other hand καθ' ἔτος, so common in the κοινή (cf. Latin vetus), is not found in the N. T., all MSS. in Lu. 2:41 reading κατ' ἔτος.

Hort⁶ considers οὖχ ἐστηκέν (Jo. 8:44) to be merely the imperfect indicative of στήκω. So also as to ἐστηκέν in Rev. 12:4. Χ has ἐφιστήκησεις in Mt. 5:33, a form common in the Doric inscriptions.⁷ DP have ἐφιστήκος in 1 Tim. 1:10. In Rev. 12:11 A reads οὖχ ἡγάπησεν, while οὖχ ὀλίγος is read in the LXX and papyri as well as a number of times in Ac. (12:18 by ΧΑ, 14:28 by Χ, 17:4 by B, 19:23 by ΧΑΔ, 19:24 by Χ, 27:20 by Α).

In Ac. 5:28 D has ἑφαγαγέν. W. H. print on the other hand ἀποκαταστάνει in Mk. 9:12 rather than ἀποκαταστάνει though with hesitation.⁸ So likewise W. H. give ἐπίσταται instead of ἐφιστάται.

---

² Notes on Orth., p. 143.  
³ Moulton, Prol., p. 44; Thumb, Spir. Asper, p. 71. Moulton (Cl. Rev., Mar., 1910, p. 53) now says: "I am quite willing to be convinced that the long-lost digamma was an accessory here if no better explanation turns up." Thumb (Spir. Asper, pp. 11, 71) admits the possibility of the digamma explanation in some cases.  
⁴ Prol., p. 91.  
⁵ Cf. Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 313 f., where Hort really favours οὖχ 'Ιουδ. and the rough breathing for all the forms of 'Ιουδας, 'Ιουδαίος, etc. For the variations in the LXX MSS. see Thack., p. 125.  
⁶ Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 312.  
⁷ Rutherford, New Phryn., p. 363. For this transfer of aspiration cf. Curtius, Gk. Verb, II, 109. Nestle (Am. Jour. of Theol., July, 1909, p. 44S) urges that, since the Gk. of the Bible is an "east-west language," attention must be paid to oriental tongues. He notes that the Coptic has aspiration in helpis, hisos, for ἐλπίς, ἵσος.  
⁸ Notes on Orth., p. 168.
in 1 Th. 5:3 (like B in Sap. 6:8), a wholly unusual' absence of aspiration in compounds of ἰστήμι. For the LXX phenomena see Thackeray, Gr., p. 127 f. It is wholly doubtful whether ὸμείρωμαι or ὸμείρωμα is right (1 Th. 2:8). Οὐκ εὗρον in some MSS. in Lu. 24:3, and οὔκ ἐνεκεν in 2 Cor. 7:12, Blass considers as clerical errors, though they are common in the LXX and in the inscriptions. Thackeray, Gr., p. 127 f. It is wholly doubtful whether ομειρωμαι or ομειρωμα is right (1 Th. 2:8).

Ouκ eu#ron in some MSS. in Lu. 24:3, and ouκ e@neken in 2 Cor. 7:12, Blass considers as clerical errors, though they are common in the LXX and in the inscriptions. N. T. MSS. (late cursive) even have αντεω, δστεων, όχλος, etc. For μηθεις, ουθεις see this chapter p. 219, the Interchange of Consonants and chapter on Pronouns, pp. 750 f.

(d) TRANSLITERATED SEMITIC WORDS. The aspirate in the case of transliterated Semitic words (chiefly proper names) causes some difficulty. Blass calls it "insoluble," though he accepts Hort's practice as rational, expressing Χ and Ψ by the smooth breathing and Π and Π by the rough breathing. The MSS. disagree and are not consistent, but Blass calls the result of this procedure "strange." Hence Hort argues for ᾽Αβελ (Π), ᾽Αβραάμ (Χ), ᾽Αγαβος (Ψ), ᾽Αγαρ (Π), ᾽Ακελλαμάχ (Π), ᾽Αλφαίος (Π), ᾽Ανανίας (Π), ᾽Αννα (Π), ᾽Αρέτας (Π), ᾽Αριμαθαία (Π), ᾽Αρχον (Π), ᾽Εβέρ (Ψ), ᾽Εβραίος (Ψ), ᾽Εβραῖς (Ψ), ᾽Εβραϊστί (Ψ), ᾽Ελίσαιας (Ψ), ᾽Ελμαδάμ (Χ), ᾽Ελωί (Χ), ᾽Εμμώρ (Π), ᾽Ενώχ (Π, but ᾽Ενώς, Χ), ᾽Ερρώμ (Π, but ᾽Εσλει, Εύβ (Π), ᾽Ηλει (Χ), but ᾽Ηλεί (Π), ᾽Ηλείας (Χ), ᾽Ηρ (Ψ), ᾽Υσσωπος (Χ), ᾽ψαμνά (Π), ᾽Ωσηὲ (Π). Hort gives, moreover, the smooth breathing to all names beginning with α as ᾽Ησαίας. Besides he considers it a "false association" to connect ᾽Ιερείμας, ᾽Ιερείχω, ᾽Ιεροσάλμια ( mamma), ᾽Ιερουσαλήμ with ᾽Ιερός, though Blass retains ᾽Ιεροσαλημμα rather inconsistently.

(e) THE USE OF BREATHINGS WITH ρ AND ρρ. W. H. follow Tischendorf and Lachmann in dropping the breathings in ρρ as in ἀρφης (2 Cor. 12:4), though retaining the rough breathing with initial ρ as in ῥήματα (Ib.). Winer argued that the Romans heard an aspiration with ρρ, since they used Pyrrhus, Tyrrenhus, etc. W. H. seem justified in using the smooth breathing with the first ρ in the word ὑεραντισμένοι. (Heb. 10:22) by old Greek cus-

---

1 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 144.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 16.
3 W.-Sch., p. 39.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 16.
5 Hort, Intr. to N. T. Gk., p. 313. Cf. also Gregory, Prol., p. 106 f., for list of these words.
6 Strange as it may seem, "Hebrew" rather than "Ebrew" is modern (Hort, Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 313).
7 Hort (Notes, etc., p. 144), however, merely follows custom and prints ὑσσάρ.
8 Intr. to N. T. Gk., p. 313.
9 Ib.
11 W.-M., p. 53.
The MSS., of course, give no help in the matter. The breathing with ρ is not written in the modern Greek vernacular text as in Pallis or Thumb.

(f) THE QUESTION OF Αὐτοῦ. This is somewhat knotty. It seems clear that as a rule αὐτός and not ἀυτοῦ is to be printed in the N. T. A number of reasons converge² on this point. The older Greek often used αὐτοῦ rather than έαυτοῦ as shown by the aspiration of the prepositions like ἄφι αὐτοῦ, etc. In the N. T. there is not a single case of such aspiration after elision save in a few single MSS. Add to this the fact that the N. T. uses the reflexive pronoun much less than the earlier Greek, "with unusual parsimony" (Hort). Besides the personal pronouns of the first and second persons are frequently employed (Buttmann) where the reflexive might have been used. Buttmann urges also the point that in the N. T. we always have σεαυτοῦ, not σαυτοῦ. The earliest uncial MSS. of the N. T. and the LXX that use the dia-critical marks belong to the eighth century, but they all have αὐτοῦ, not αὐτός. Even in the early times it was largely a matter of individual taste as to whether the personal or the reflexive pronoun was used. Blass (p. 35) indeed decides absolutely against αὐτός. But the matter is not quite so easy, for the Kotin' inscriptions give examples of ὑφ αὐτοῦ in first century B.C. and A.D.³ Mayser⁴ also gives a number of papyri examples like καθ’ αὐτοῦ μεθ’ αὐτοῦ, ὑφ’ αὐτῶν, where the matter is beyond dispute. Hort agrees with Winer in thinking that sometimes αὐτοῦ must be read unless one insists on undue harshness in the Greek idiom. He instances Jo. 2:24, αὐτὸς δὲ Ἰησοῦς οὐκ ἐπίστευσεν ἀυτὸν ἀυτίς, and Lu. 23:12, προΰπήρχων γάρ ἐν ἐξθρα ὄντες πρός αὐτοὺς. There are other examples where a different meaning will result from the smooth and the rough breathing as in 1 Jo. 5:10 (αὐτῶ), 18 (αὐτόν αὐτοῦ, Eph. 1:5 (αὐτόν), 10 (αὑτῶ), Col. 1:20 (αὐτόν), 2:15 (αὐτῶ). W. H. print αὑτοῦ about twenty times. Winer leaves the matter "to the cautious judgment of the editors."

V. Accent.

(a) THE AGE OF GREEK ACCENT. The MSS. are worth as little for accent as for breathings. The systematic application of accent in the MSS., like the regular use of the spiritus lenis, dates

¹ Cf. W.-Sch., p. 40 f.
² On the whole matter see Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 144 f.; W.-M., p. 188 f.; Buttmann, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 111; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 35.
⁴ Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 306.
from the seventh century A.D. Hort caustically remarks that most modern grammarians have merely worked out "a consistent system of accentuation on paper" and have not recovered the Greek intonations of voice, though he has little to offer on the subject. Chandler indeed laments that modern scholars scatter their Greek accents about rather recklessly, but he adds: "In England, at all events, every man will accent his Greek properly who wishes to stand well with the world." It is a comfort to find one's accents irreproachable, and Chandler rightly urges that the only way to use the accents properly is to pronounce according to the accent. The ancients were interested in Greek accent. Herodian in his Καθολικὴ προς ὀψία investigated the accent of 60,000 words, but the bulk of his twenty books is lost. Chandler found most help from Gottling, though others have written at length on the subject. There are no accent-marks in the early inscriptions and papyri; in fact tradition ascribes the invention of these signs as a system to Aristophanes of Byzantium in the third century B.C., though the beginnings appear in the preceding century. He and his disciple, Aristarchus, made the rules at any rate. The Alexandrian grammarians developed these rules, which have shown a marvellous tenacity even to the present day in the modern Greek, though, of course, some words would naturally vary in accent with the centuries. There is the Harris papyrus of Homer in the first century A.D. which has accents, and clearly the word had the accent in pronunciation like English long before it was written out. After the fourth century A.D. the use of accentual rhythm in Greek in place of quantitative rhythm had a tendency

---

2 Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 314.
3 Gk. Accentuation (1881), p. xxiii.
4 Ib., p. xvii.
7 Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., p. 77.
to make the accent rather more stable.1 "Of all the phonetic peculiarities of a language accent is the most important."2 The earlier use of accents and breathings was probably "for the text of poetry written in dialect"3 (cf. our reading-books for children). They were not written out "in ordinary prose till the times of minuscule writing," though Euthalius (A.D. 396) made use of them in his edition of the N. T.4 The Christian hymns early show signs of changing from tone (pitch) to stress as is the rule in modern Greek. Cf. Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 6.

(b) SIGNIFICANCE OF ACCENT IN THE Κοινή. In Greek it is pitch, not stress, that is expressed by the accent, though in modern Greek the accents indicate stress. "In the ancient Sanskrit and the ancient Greek the rise and fall in musical tone was very marked."5 In English we are familiar with stress-accent. "Hadley has ably argued that the compass of tone used by the Greeks was a musical fifth, i.e. from C= do to G= sol, involving also the intermediate third or E= me."6 It was not a stronger current of breath,7 but a higher musical note that we have. It was in a word "das musikalische Moment."8 Hadley ("Nature and Theory of Gk. Accent," Essays Philol. and Crit., p. 111 f.) points out that προσωπία comes from a root meaning ‘to sing’ (like the Latin accentus) and so ὁξύς and βαρύς answer to our high and low pitch. Giles9 thinks that in the original Indo-Germanic language pitch and stress-accent were more evenly balanced. The accent singles out one syllable sharply and raises it higher than the rest, though as a matter of fact each syllable in a word has an accent or pitch lower down in the scale: Cf. the secondary accent in the English "incompatibility." The Harris papyrus of Homer even accents every syllable in each word.10 Then again "the accent of a sentence is as much under the influence of a law of some kind as the accent of the word."11 Language without accent or musical va-

---

1 Sophocles, Lex. of Rom. and Byz. Period, p. 48.
2 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 91.
5 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 92.
8 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 129.
9 Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 94.
riety in tone would be hopelessly monotonous and ineffective. An instance of the importance of accent and breathings is seen in οὐ οὖ, Ac. 19:40.

(c) SIGNS OF ACCENT. In practical usage (in our school grammars) there is only one distinction, the accented syllable and the unaccented syllables. The Greeks themselves distinguished the pronunciation of the acute and the circumflex. The difference is well illustrated by εἰμι and εἰμί. The three signs (acute or ὀξεῖα, grave or βαρεῖα, circumflex or περιστροφή) come to symbolize the higher pitch of the accented syllable.¹ Originally the accented syllable was marked by the acute and all the unaccented syllables by the grave (merely the absence of the acute), but by and by this use of the grave accent was felt to be useless and was dropped.² Then the grave accentual mark of falling inflection was used for the acute when an oxytone word comes before another word (not enclitic), though this "grave" accent has the pitch of the unaccented syllable. Similarly in contraction of two syllables with acute and grave (ʼʼ) arose the circumflex, the grave and the acute making acute still. The actual use in pronunciation of both acute and grave in the contracted syllable disappeared, so that the circumflex in pitch differed little, if any, from the acute. The difference, for instance, between the acute in δὴ λῶσσαί, and the circumflex in δὴ λῶσσαι at was not perceptible in sound.³ The Greek and the Latin agree in having the accent only on one of the three last syllables and thus differ from English and French for instance. It is not necessary here to go into the rules (not wholly arbitrary) which the Greeks developed for the accent of words. In the use of unaccented words (proclitics or enclitics) Greek does not differ radically from English. If the Greek has εἶν οὖκ, the English has "at-home." If the Greek has εἶπε μοί, the English has "tell-me."⁴

(d) LATER DEVELOPMENTS IN ACCENT. There was not indeed uniformity among the dialects in the use of accent. They agreed only in the one point of not accenting further back than the third syllable from the end. "In other respects the Greek dialects show the widest divergencies in their accentuation. The two antipodes are AEolic and Doric, which are so closely allied phonetically: AEolic throws the accent as far back as possible in

all words, e.g. \( \beta\alpha\sigma\iota\lambda\epsilon\upsilon\zeta = \beta\alpha\sigma\iota\lambda\epsilon\upsilon\zeta \), ...; Doric, on the contrary, faithfully preserves the original oxytone accent. Between these two dialects lie Ionic and Attic, which, however, are much nearer to Doric than to AEolic. But all the dialects, including Doric, observe the rule that, in those forms of the verb which are capable of being conjugated, the accent goes back as far as possible. AEolic, for instance, has \( \acute{\eta}\sigma\eta \) where the Attic has \( \acute{\eta}\sigma\eta \). But all the dialects\(^2\) have \( \acute{\epsilon}\gamma\omega, \acute{\epsilon}\gamma\omega\gamma\epsilon \). On this point in general see Kuhner-Blass, I, pp. 323 ff. The Dorians even had \( \acute{\alpha}\nu\theta\rho\omega\pi\omicron\alpha, \acute{\epsilon}\lambda\upsilon\sigma\alpha\nu, \) etc. Perfect uniformity was no more possible in Greek than in English. The modern Greek preserves the three-syllable accent rule. Examples like \( \acute{\epsilon}\pi\alpha\sigma\epsilon, \acute{\epsilon}\beta\rho\alpha\delta\upsilon\alpha\sigma\epsilon \) are not exceptions, since the \( \iota \) and \( \upsilon \) count as consonants. Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 28. French follows tone like the ancient Greek. Pecheur is 'fisher,' while pecheur is 'sinner,' for example, a difference only in quality, not in accent.

(e) N. T. PECULIARITIES. Where so much is in doubt, excessive refinement is certainly not desirable. But the following points call for remark, and Gregory\(^3\) can be consulted for the actual evidence (very slight) from the N. T. MSS. on the subject of accent. D alone among the older uncials has the accent (and that the occasional circumflex) save by the hand of a corrector.

1. Shortening Stem-Vowels. There is quite a tendency in the \( \kappa\omicron\nu\eta \) towards shortening some of the stem-vowels, especially in words in --\( \mu\alpha \). Hence W. H. do not follow the Attic accent here, but that of the \( \kappa\omicron\nu\eta \), and give us \( \kappa\lambda\iota\mu\alpha, \kappa\prime\iota\mu\alpha, \mu\iota\gamma\mu\alpha \) (cf. \( \acute{\epsilon}\iota\gamma\gamma\mu\alpha \)), \( \pi\omicron\mu\alpha, \chi\rho\iota\sigma\mu\alpha \), though as to \( \chi\rho\iota\sigma\mu\alpha \) Blass\(^4\) suggests that \( \chi\rho\iota\sigma\mu\alpha \) is correct because of \( \chi\rho\iota\sigma\tau\omicron\varsigma \) and because B (1 Jo. 2:20, 27) has \( \chi\rho\iota\sigma\mu\alpha \). Analogy plays havoc with rules. Herodian\(^5\) says that \( \iota \) and \( \upsilon \) were usually shortened before So W. H. give us \( \kappa\rho\omicron\upsilon\epsilon \), \( \kappa\rho\omicron\xi\alpha\iota, \sigma\tau\eta\rho\iota\xi\alpha \) (Ro. 16:25), probably \( \phi\omega\iota\nu\iota\epsilon, \chi\sigma\iota\nu\iota\epsilon \). According to Winer-Schmiedel\(^6\) this rule applies to \( \psi \) also, but W. H. and Blass\(^7\) do not agree. So W. H. have \( \theta\lambda\iota\psi\iota\varsigma, \rho\iota\psi\alpha\nu \) (Lu.

---

3 Prol., p. 99 f.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 15.
6 P. 68.
7 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 15. Blass urges that B has \( \Theta\lambda\iota\psi\iota\varsigma \), but W. H. refuse to follow B in matters of orthography. But the Herculaneum rolls here reinforce B with \( \epsilon\iota \) before \( \psi \). On the whole subject see Lipsius, Gr. Unters., pp. 31 ff.; Lobeck, Parall., pp. 400 ff.; Cobet, N. T. Vatic., pp. xlix ff.
4:35). By parity of reasoning W. H. reject the circumflex accent in ἐλκύσαί, λίνον, μύρον, στῦλος, στύλος, συντρίφθαι (Mk. 5:4), though συντρίβων (Lu. 9:39) and σκῦλα (Lu. 11:22). Cf. μῦθος, μαργαρίται, νῖκος, σῖτος, σῶκον etc. W. H. read ψύχος also. The length of ο in κύπτω is uncertain; ἀνακυψαί and παρακυψαί usually appear in the N. T. W. H. have, however, κράζων in Gal. 4:6 and λαλάψι in Mk. 4:37. But ἔσταναι (Ac. 12:14) is right, though ἄραι (Mt. 24:17), θυμάσαι (Lu. 1:9) because of long a. Cf. also ἐστάναι (Lu. 18:13), ἐπιφάναι (Lu. 1:79), πρᾶξαι. (Ac. 26:9), but πιάσαι (Jo. 7:30). So καταλύσαι (Mt. 5:17), κατευθύναι (Lu. 1:79) and κωλύσαι (Ac. 10:47).

2. Separate Words. These are not so easily classified. W. H. read ἀγοραίοι, not ἀγοραίοι; ἀντικρ., not ἀντικρυ; ἀντίπερα(υ), ἀπόδεκτος, not ἀποδεκτός but ἀκλεκτός, εὐλογητός, μισθωτός; ἀρεσκία (from ἀρεσκεῖν) with which compare ἐρείπθεια (from ἐρείπθευ); ἀρακία (Attic ἀχρείος), as also ἐρημος (Attic ἐρήμος), ἔτοιμος (Attic ἔτοιμος), μωρός (Attic μωρός), ὄμοιος (Attic ὄμοιος), χλωρός (Attic χλωρός); βραδυτής (3d decl.), but ἄροτης (3d decl.); γαζοφυλάκων, not —είον and εἰδώλων, with which compare τελώνων, γλωσσόκομων being for the earlier γλωσσοκόμων; δέσμη, not δεσμῇ; διετής (Mt. 2:16), not διετής (Attic), and so with other compounds of -ετής, like ἐκατονταετής, etc., but ἐκατονταρχῶν (Ac. 23:17) is from –άρχης, not –αρχος; εἰπόν is the imperative (Mt. 18:17), for εἰπον is only Attic, and Charax calls εἰπόν Syracusan,1 with which one may compare ἴδε (ἰδέ only Attic according to the Alexandrian grammarians, though Bornemann urged ἴδε when verb and ἴδε when exclamation) and λάβε (λαβέ only Attic); θρησκός (Jos. 1:26), not θρήσκος; ἱδρώς (Lu. 22:44), not ἱδρὼς; ἰμάντα (Mk. 1:7), not the Attic ἰμάντα; ἰσος, not the ἰσος; ἰχθῦς (Mt. 7:10), not ἰξθος; ὀσφύς (Mt. 3:4), not ὀσφύς; ἰσχύς, not ἰσχύς; κλεῖς in nominative singular (Rev. 9:1), though κλέες (1:18) and κλείδας (Mt. 16:19) in accusative plural, etc., with which compare πούς (Mk. 9:45), not πούς, and στής (Mt. 6:19), not στῆς; κτίστης (1 Pet. 4:19), not κτιστής, as γυνώστης, etc.; κρυπτη, not κρυπτή (Lu. 11:33); μογιλάλος (Mk. 7:32), not –λάλος; μυλῶν (Mt. 24:41) is read only by DHM and most of the cursives, μύλος being correct; μυριάδων (–άς) as in Lu. 12:1; Rev. 5:11, not the Attic μυριάδων, and so as to χιλιάδων; ὄργυια (Ac. 27:28), not ὄργυια; οὐά (Mk. 15:29), not οὐά; ποιμνίον (Lu. 12:32), not ποιμνίον, and τρύβλιον in Mk. 14:20

1 Cf. W.-M., p. 58.
2 As shown in W.-M. (p. 60), the N. T. MSS. have ἔσω, not ἔσω, though εἶς, not ἐς.
but τεκνίον always; πλημμύρα (Lu. 6:48) is preferred by Winer-Schmiedel as nominative to πλημμύρης rather than -μῦρα; πονήρος always, not πόνηρος in the physical sense (Rev. 16:2) and πονήρος in the moral (Gal. 1:4); πρώπα (Ac. 27:41), not πρώπα; σπέιρα (Mk. 15:16), not σπείρα; φλύαρος (1 Tim. 5:13), not φλυαρός. The compound adverbs ἐπέκεινα, ὑπερ-ἐκείνα have thrown back the accent.

3. Difference in Sense. With some words the accent makes a difference in the sense and is quite important. We have, for instance, Ἁγια, not ἁγια, in Heb. 9:2. W. H. read ἀλλα, not ἀλλα, in Jo. 6:23. In Jas. 1:15 W. H. have ἀποκυεῖ (from –ἐω), not ἀποκωκεῖ (from –κύω). So W. H. print ἄρα (interrog.) in Gal. 2:17, not Ἰρα (illative). Αὐτὴ and αὐτή are easily confused, but W. H. prefer αὐτὴ to αὐτή in Mt. 22:39 (αὐτὴ in margin); Ro. 7:10; 1 Cor. 7:12; and αὐτή to αὐτὴ in Lu. 2:37; 7:12; 8:42; Ro. 16:2. In Rev. 2:24 the adjective βαθεα is correct, not the substantive βεθεα (uncontracted from βάθος). Δεξιολάβος or δεξιόλαβος is possible in Ac. 23:23 (cf. Winer-Schmiedel, p. 69). So W. H. give us ἐγχρίσαι (infinitive) in Rev. 3:18, not ἐγχρίσαι (imperative). Cf. also ἐπιτιμήσαι (Jude 9), optative, not infinitive –ήσαι. Note the difference between φοβήθητε (subjunctive) and φοβήθητε (imperative) in Lu. 12:5. In Jo. 7:34, 36, W. H. prefer εἰμί rather than εἶμι (not elsewhere used in the N. T. save in composition with prepositions ἀπό, εἰς, ἐξ, ἐπί, σύν). In Mk. 13:28 and Mt. 24:32 W. H. have ἐκφυῇ (present active subjunctive), not ἐκφυῃ (second aorist passive subjunctive). In Lu. 19:29; 21:37 W. H. prefer Ἐλαἰών, not Ἐλαἰων (the correct text in Ac. 1:12, and possibly in Luke also according to the papyri, though Ἐλαἰώνα would be the form expected). In Mk. 4:8, 20, W. H. put ἐν in the text and ἐν in the margin. ὶἘνι, not ἐνι, occurs with οὐκ several times, once (1 Cor. 9:21 ὶὤκ ἐνι ἐν). In Lu. 9:38, W. H. read ἐπιθελέσαι (infinitive), not ἐπιθελέσαι (imperative). In 1 Cor. 5:11 W. H. read ἃ (subjunctive), not ἃ (conjunction as Rec.). In Ro. 1:30 W. H. follow most editors in giving θεοστυγέεις (passive), not θεοστύγεεις (active sense of the adjective). In Mk. 5:29 all editors have the perfect ἔτασαι, not the present ἔτασαι. In Lu. 22:30 W. H. read καθήσῃς (subjunctive), not καθήσῃς (indicative) nor καθήσῃς (future, margin). In 1 Cor. 9:21 W. H. prefer κερδανῶ (future indicative) to κερδάνω (aorist subjunctive), and in

1 Cf. W.-S., p. 73. 2 Ib., p. 72. 3 Ib., p. 69. 4 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 69. On accent of the vernac. see Apostolides, Γλακωσσικαὶ Μελέται (1906).
1 Cor. 6:2 κρίνονσιν (future) to κρίνουσιν (present indicative in marg.). In Mk. 12:40 we have μακρά, not μακρά. In 1 Cor. 3:14 W. H. prefer μενεί (future) to μένει (present), and in Jo. 14:17 they have μένει. In 1 Cor. 4:15 (14:19) and Mt. 18:24 no distinction can be made in the accent of μυρίοι (‘innumerable’) and μύριοι (‘ten thousand’) because of the cases. Dr. E. J. Goodspeed, of Chicago University (Expository Times, July, 1909, p. 471 f.), suggests ὑφεληθης in Mk. 7:11 instead of ὑφεληθης. It is entirely possible. In 1 Cor. 14:7 ὅμως is correct, not ὅμως-ὁμοίως. In Jo. 18:37 W. H. give οὐκοδον, not οὐκον, in Pilate’s question. In Ac. 28:6 W. H. print πιμπράσθαι (μι verb), not πεπράσθαι (ω verb). In Rev. 17:5 πορνών (feminine) is probably right, not πόρνων (masculine). Πρωτότοκος (Col. 1 : 15), not πρωτοτόκος, is manifestly right. The difference between the interrogative τίς and the indefinite τίς calls for frequent attention. In Heb. 5:12 W. H. have τινά, not τίνα, but in Heb. 3:16 τίνες, not τινές, and in 3:17 τίσιν, not τισίν. While in Mt. 24:41, 1 Th. 4:6, 1 Cor. 15:8 and 16:16 the article τῷ is to be read, not the indefinite τῷ, which form does not occur in the N. T. In 1 Cor. 10:19 τί ἐστιν (twice) is not interrogative, but the enclitic indefinite with the accent of ἐστιν. In Jas. 3:6 τρόχος (‘wheel’) is properly read, not τρόχος (‘course’). In Mt. 14:12 W. H. read συνιώσῃ, not συνιόσῃ, as συνιώσῃ in Mt. 13:13. Winer¹ considers the suggestion of φωτῶν for φῶτων in Jas. 1:17 "altogether absurd."

4. Enclitics (and Proclitics). Proclitics are regular in the N. T. The accent of enclitics calls for comment. As a rule W. H. do not accent them. So we have αὐτῶν τινάς (Mt. 12:13), εἴναι τίνα (Ac. 5:36), ἧδοι τινες (Mt. 28:11), ὀδόν εἰσιν (Lu. 8 : 12), ἀσύνετοι ἔστε (Mk. 7:18), γάρ ἐστε (Mk. 13:11), καί φησί (Ac. 10:31; 25:24). However, plenty of cases call for accent on the enclitic, as, for example, in εὑρεῖν τινάς (Ac. 19:1) for emphasis, γάρ, φησίν (Heb. 8:5 and cf. Mt. 14:8; Ac. 25:5, 22; 26:25; 1 Cor. 6:16; 2 Cor. 10:10) for clearness in punctuation, καί εἰσιν (Mt. 19:12 and cf. Ac. 5:25) for emphasis, θεοῦ ἐσμέν (1 Jo. 3:2), ὑπὸ τινῶν (Lu. 9:8) likewise, οὐκ εἰμί (Jo. 1:21). In ὅπως εἰμί (Jo. 7:34, 36) the accent is regular, though some critics wrongly prefer εἰμι.

The use of ἐστίν and ἐστιν demands special comment. When unemphatic, not at the beginning of a sentence, not preceded by ἀλλ', εἰ, καί, οὐκ, ὅτι, τούτ', or a paroxytone syllable, as, for example, in οὐδαίων ἐστίν (Jo. 4:22), we have unaccented ἐστίν as in ἀγρός ἐστιν (Mt. 13:38, 39), καθώς ἐστιν (1 Jo. 3:2), etc. In some ex-

¹ W.-M., p. 62.
amples of mild emphasis W. H. have ἦστιν, as in νῦν ἦστιν (Jo. 4:23; 5:25), ποῦ ἦστιν (Mt. 2:2; Mk. 14:14). But the cases are numerous where ἦστιν is correct, as when it is emphatic, and expresses existence or possibility, as in εἶδες ἦστιν (Rev. 17:18), αὐτοῦ ἦστιν (Ac. 2:29), ἄγιον ἦστιν (Ac. 19:2), ὁ εἰς ἦστιν (Rev. 17:10), οὐδεὶς ἦστιν (Lu. 1:61; 7:28; 18:29). ἦστιν is also the accent at the beginning of sentences, as in Jo. 21:25; 1 Cor. 15:41; 1 Jo. 5:16 f.; Heb. 11:1. Cf. ἦστιν in Col. 1:15 and ἦστιν in 1:17. Then again we have, according to the usual rule, ἦστιν after ἀλλ' (Jo. 13:10), εἰ (1 Cor. 15:44), καὶ (Mk. 12:11; 2 Cor. 4:3), ἦτα (2 Th. 2:4; Mk. 6:55; Heb. 11:6), but ὅτι ἦστιν (Ac. 23:5) when the idea of existence is not stressed, οὐκ (1 Cor. 11:20; Ro. 8:9, etc.), τοῦτ' (Mk. 7:2; Ro. 7:18). W. H. give only ἦστιν after ποῦ (Jo. 9:12; 11:57; Mk. 14:14).

Sometimes two enclitics come together. Here the critics differ and W. H.¹ do not make clear the reasons for their practice. In Ac. 13:15 W. H. have εἰ τίς ἦστιν and in Gal. 6:15 περιτομὴ τι ἦστιν, because they take go ἦστιν to be emphatic in both instances. In Jo. 6:51 W. H. have σάρξ μου ἦστιν. But in many examples the first enclitic is accented and the second unaccented as in Lu. 8:46 ἡψατό μοι τίς, 10:29 τίς ἦστιν μου, Jo. 5:14 χειρόν σοι τι, 8:31 μαθηταί μοῦ ἦστε, 12:47 εὰν τίς μου, 14:28 μεῖζων μοῦ ἦστιν Ac. 2:25 δεξιῶν μοῦ ἦστιν, 25:5 εἰ τί ἦστιν, 25:14 ἄνηρ τίς ἦστιν, 1 Cor. 10:19 εἰςωλοθύτων τι ἦστιν and εἰςωλοθύν τι ἦστιν, 11:24 τοῦτο μοῦ ἦστιν, 2 Cor. 11:16 μη τίς με, Ro. 3:8 καθώς φασίν τινες Heb. 1:10 χειρῶν σοῦ εἰσίν, 2:6 δὲ ποῦ τίς, Tit. 1:6 εἰ τίς ἦστιν. Modern Greek only has a second accent when the accent is in the third syllable as in τ' ἀρματά μας (Thumb, Handbook, p. 29).

The personal pronouns now have the accent in W. H. and now are without it, as ὁφθαλμῷ σοῦ and ὁφθαλμῷ σου (both in Mt. 7:4). Cf. also ἐγὼ σε (Jo. 17:4), σὺ με (17:8), but τι ἐμοί καὶ σοί (Lu. 8:28). With prepositions generally the enclitics are accented, as ἐν σοί (Jo. 17:21), though ἐμπροσθεν μου and ὀπίσω μου (Jo. 1:30 both, and so continually with these two prepositions). ἐνυπιον ἐμοῦ (Lu. 4:7) and ἐνυπιοίν μου (Ac. 2:25) both appear. With the prepositions usually ἐμοὶ, not μου, occurs as ἐνεκα ἐμοῖ (Mt. 5:11). It is only with πρὸς that we have much trouble. The N. T. editors have generally printed πρὸς σε, but W. H. have that only in Mt. 25:39, elsewhere πρὸς σε as in Mt. 26:18. Usually we have, according to W. H., πρὸς με as in Mt. 25:36; Jo. 6:65; 7:37, etc., and where the "me" is emphatic in sense,
as Mt. 3:14; 11:28, in the first of which Tisch. and Griesbach have πρός μέ, a usage not followed by W. H., though kept in the LXX text of B, as in Is. 48:16; etc.\(^1\) W. H. a few times prefer πρός ἐμ (not enclitic) as in Lu. 1:43; Jo. 6:35, 37 (both ways here), 44 (marg.), 45; Ac. 22:8, 13; 23:22; 24:19. Occasionally the enclitic τινὲς is found at the beginning of a sentence, as in Mt. 27:47; Lu. 6:2; Jo. 13:29; Ph. 1:15; 1 Tim. 5:24.

5. **Proper Names** cannot always be brought under rules, for in Greek, as in English, men claim the right to accent their own names as they will. On the accent of the abbreviated proper names see chapter V, v. It is difficult to make a clear line of distinction as to why Ἀντίπας (Rev. 2:13) is proper, but Αρτέμιας (Tit. 3:12), save that in Αρτέμιδωρος the accent was already after μ. But cf. Κλεόπας (Lu. 24:18) and Κλωπάς (Jo. 19:25).\(^2\)

In general one may say that proper names (geographical and personal) throw the accent back, if the original adjectives or substantives were oxytone. This is for the sake of distinction. Αλεξάνδρος (Ac. 27:6; 28:11) is the adjective. Ασσός (Ac. 20:13 f.) is doubtless correct, though Pape gives Ασσός also.\(^3\) In Αχαίος (1 Cor. 16:17) the accent is not thrown back nor is it in Απολλώ (1 Cor. 16:12). Ασύλβριτος (Ro. 16:14) retains the accent of the adjective, like Τρόφιμος (Ac 20:4) and Τρίμνας (1 Tim. 1:20). But we have Βλάστος (Ac. 12:20), Διοτρέφης (3 Jo. 9), Επαίνετος (Ro. 16:5), Εραστός (16:23), Ερμογένης. (2 Tim. 1:15), Εὐτυχος (Ac. 20:9), Χάμπος (2 Tim. 4:13), probably Ουνσίφορος (2 Tim. 1:16; 4:19), Πάταρα (Ac. 21:1), Πόρος (Ac. 20:4), Σωφράη (Ph. 4:2), Σωθένης (1 Cor. 1:2), Τίμων (Ac. 6:5), Τύχικος (Ac. 20:4) Φίλητος (2 Tim. 2:17). But Χριστός always retains the oxytone accent whether proper name (1 Tim. 1:1) or verbal adjective (Mt. 16:16). In 2 Tim. 4:21 Λίνος, not Λίνος, is read. So Τίτος (2 Cor. 2:13, etc.). In Ac. 27:17 Συρίτις is read by W. H. But Φηλιξ in Ac. 24:22, etc.

6. **Foreign Words**. These always give occasion for diversity of usage in transliterating them into another tongue. Blass\(^4\) lets the quantity of the vowel in Latin determine the accent in the Greek equivalent for Latin words. So Marcus, Μάρκος, etc., but W. H. do not accept this easy principle and give us Μάρκος in Ac. 12:25, etc., Κρίσσως (1 Cor. 1:14), etc. W. H. likewise

---

\(^1\) Cf. Lipsius, Gr. Unters., p. 61. Cf. also W.-Sch., p. 78.

\(^2\) In W.-Sch., p. 74 f., see remarks on the subject.

\(^3\) Cf. W.-Sch., p. 73. This word is, of course, not to be confounded with Δσσος (Ac. 27:13) as Text. Rec. did.

\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 15.
throw the accent back on Latin names like Κούρατος (Ro. 16:23), Πρίσκιλλα (Ac. 18:2), Σκούνδος (Ac. 20:4), Τέρτυλλος (24:2), but we have on the other hand Γαίος (Ro. 16:23), not Γαίως, Οὐρ=βαυς (Ro. 16:9), Σιλουανός (2 Cor. 1:19), Σκευάς (Ac. 19:14).

But not even Blass attempts to bring the Semitic words under regular rules. Still, it is true, as Winer shows, that indeclinable Semitic words (especially proper names) have the accent, as a rule, on the last syllable, though the usage of Josephus is the contrary, because he generally inflects the words that in the LXX and the N. T. are indeclinable. So Ἀκρών, Ἀβαδδών, Ἀβία, Ἀβιοῦδ, Ἀβραᾶμ, to take only the first two pages of Thayer's Lexicon, though even here we find on the other side Ἀβελ and Ἀμάθας.

If you turn over you meet Ἀγας, Ἀδάμ, Ἀδεί, Ἀδείν, Ἀκόρ, etc. It is not necessary here to give a full list of these proper names, but reference can be made to Lu. 3:23-38 for a good sample.

In this list some indeclinable words have the accent on the penult, as Ἐλιεξέρ (29), θορμαθέλ (27), Λάμαχ (36), Φάλεκ (35). The inflected Semitic words often throw the accent back, as Ἄξωτος, Ἰάκωβος, Λάζαρος. Many of the Aramaic words accent the ultima, as Ἀββᾶ, Γαλγοθᾶ, Κορβᾶν, Ἐλωί, σαβαχθανεί, etc. For further remarks on the subject see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 26-31. The difficulties of the LXX translators are well illustrated here by Helbing.

VI. Pronunciation in the Κοινή. This is indeed a knotty problem and has been the occasion of fierce controversy. When the Byzantine scholars revived the study of Greek in Italy, they introduced, of course, their own pronunciation as well as their own spelling. But English-speaking people know that spelling is not a safe guide in pronunciation, for the pronunciation may change very much when the spelling remains the same. Writing is originally an effort to represent the sound and is more or less successful, but the comparison of Homer with modern Greek is a fruitful subject.

Roger Bacon, as Reuchlin two centuries later, adopted the Byzantine pronunciation. Reuchlin, who introduced Greek to the further West, studied in Italy and passed on the Byzantine pronunciation. Erasmus is indirectly responsible for the current pronunciation of ancient Greek, for the Byzant-
tine scholars pronounced ancient and modern alike. Jannaris\(^1\) quotes the story of Voss, a Dutch scholar (1577-1649), as to how Erasmus heard some learned Greeks pronounce Greek in a very different way from the Byzantine custom. Erasmus published a discussion between a lion and a bear entitled *De Recta Latini Graecique sermonis pronuntiatione*, which made such an impression that those who accepted the ideas advanced in this book were called Erasmians and the rest Reuchlinians. As a matter of fact, however, Engel has shown that Erasmus merely wrote a literary squib to "take off" the new non-Byzantine pronunciation, though he was taken seriously by many. Dr. Caspar Rene Gregory writes me (May 6, 1912) : "The philologians were of course down on Engel and sided gladly with Blass. It was much easier to go on with the totally impossible pronunciation that they used than to change it." Cf. Engel, *Die Aussprachen des Griechischen*, 1887. In 1542 Stephen Gardiner, Chancellor of the University of Cambridge, "issued an edict for his university, in which, e.g. it was categorically forbidden to distinguish at from ε, ει and οι from ι in pronunciation, under penalty of expulsion from the Senate, exclusion from the attainment of a degree, rustication for students, and domestic chastisement for boys!"\(^2\) Hence though the continental pronunciation of Greek and Latin was "Erasmian," at Cambridge and Oxford the Reuchlinian influence prevailed, though with local modifications. Geldart,\(^3\) however, complains that at Eton, Rugby and Harrow so little attention is paid to pronouncing according to accent that most Greek scholars handle the accents loosely. The *Classical Review* (April, 1906, p. 146 f.) has the scheme approved by the Philological Societies of Cambridge and Oxford for "The Restored Pronunciation of Latin," which is the virtual adoption of the Continental principle. The modern Greeks themselves rather vehemently insist that ancient Greek should be pronounced as modern Greek is. Muller,\(^4\) for instance, calls the "Erasmian" pronunciation "false" because it treats Greek "as dead." Geldart (Modern Gk. Language in Its Relation to Ancient Gr., p. vii) says: "Modern Greek is nothing but ancient Greek made easy." It is not

\(^2\) Blass, Pronun. of Anc. Gk., Purton's transl., p. 3.
\(^3\) Guide to Mod. Gk., p. X.
\(^4\) Hist. Gr. der hell. Spr. (pp. 26, 36). In pp. 35-40 he states the case against the squib of Erasmus. Cf. Engel (Die Ausspr. des Griech., 1887) who defends the mod. Gk. method, as already stated.
quite as simple as that. Foy\textsuperscript{1} properly distinguishes between the old Greek vocal sounds and the modern Greek and refers to the development of Latin into the several Romance languages. There is this difference in the Greek, however, that it has only one modern representative (with dialectical variations) of the ancient tongue. One must not make the mistake of comparing the pronunciation of the modern Greek vernacular with the probable pronunciation of the literary Attic of the fifth century B.C. Then, as now, there was the literary and the vernacular pronunciation. The changes in pronunciation that have come in the modern Greek have come through the Byzantine Greek from the κοινή and thus represent a common stream with many rills. The various dialects have made contributions to the pronunciation of the κοινή and so of the modern Greek. In cultivated Athens at its best there was a closer approximation between the people and the educated classes. "Demosthenes, in his oration περὶ στεφάνου called AEschines a μύσωτών, but had accented the word erroneously, namely, μύσωτον, whereupon the audience corrected him by crying μύσωτών."\textsuperscript{2} Like the modern Italian, the ancient Greek had a musical cadence that set it above all other European tongues.\textsuperscript{3}

We can indeed appeal to the old Greek inscriptions for the popular pronunciation on many points.\textsuperscript{4} According to this evidence in the first century B.C. in Attica αι = ae, ει = i, η = i, υ = u, οι = i, β = v (English v).\textsuperscript{5} Clearly then in the κοινή the process of itacism was already at work before the N. T. was written. What was true of the κοινή vernacular then does not of course argue conclusively for the pronunciation of cultivated Athenians in the time of Socrates. In versatile Athens "a stranger, if introduced on the stage, is always represented as talking the language or dialect of the people to which he belongs."\textsuperscript{6} Blass indeed thinks that in Tarsus the school-teacher taught Paul Atticistic Greek! "Ισμενεων\textsuperscript{7},

\textsuperscript{1} Lautsystem der griech. Vulgarspr., 1879, p. 83 f.
\textsuperscript{2} Achilles Rose, Chris. Greece and Living Gk., 1898, p. 61.
\textsuperscript{6} Rutherford, The New Phryn., p. 32.
\textsuperscript{7} Philol. of the Gosp., p. 9,
he must have said, are the true forms which you must employ if you care to be considered a cultivated speaker or writer." Yet in Paul's Epistles he constantly has ᾗδαμεν, --ατε, --ασιν. The Atticistic pronunciation was no more successful than the Atticistic spelling, forms and syntax. We maybe sure of one thing, the pronunciation of the vernacular κοινή was not exactly like the ancient literary Attic nor precisely like the modern Greek vernacular, but veering more towards the latter. In Greek as in English the pronunciation has perhaps varied more than the spelling. Giles' observes that English pronunciation "is really a stumbling-block in tracing the history of the English language." Hadley has a very able and sane discussion of this matter of changes in Greek pronunciation. He insists on change all through the centuries (p. 139), which is the only rational position. If we turn to the earliest N. T. MSS. we shall find undoubtedly traces of this process of change from the old Attic toward the Byzantine or modern Greek pronunciation. Indeed in the fourth and fifth centuries A.D., the date of the earliest uncials, the process is pretty well complete. The N. T. scribes make no hesitation in writing αι or ει; ι, η, η; οι or υ according to convenience or individual taste. Blass, contrary to his former view about Tarsus, says that it is impossible to suppose that there was anybody in the schools at Tarsus who would have taught Paul the correct historical spelling or pronunciation. To the student of the κοινή, as to us, in a sense "the Greek γράμματα were dead symbols, from which must be recovered the living sounds." Of one thing we may be sure, and it is that other dialects besides the Attic contributed to the κοινή pronunciation. The κοινή would be dialect-coloured here and there in its pronunciation. Alexander's conquest, like the railroad and the steamship of the present day, levelled the dialectical variations in many points, whereas before every valley in Greece had its own pronunciation of certain words. One taught the κοινή in a Doric environment

1 Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 103. Cf. also Ellis, Early Eng. Pronun.
3 Hatzidakis, Einl. etc.
4 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 34 f.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 6 f.
6 Nicklin, Cl. Rev., Mar., 1906, p. 116. This is precisely the objection that Jannaris (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 33) brings against the ancient grammarians as "post-Christian scribes" and unable to "speak with authority of the pronunciation of classical Greek."
would show it somewhat. As a matter of fact the Boeotian dialect contributed largely to the κοινή vernacular pronunciation (and so the modern Greek) in points where the Boeotian differed radically from the old Attic.\(^1\) Boeotian Greek "modified its vowel-system more than any other Greek dialect."\(^2\) Thus already in Boeotian we find both αι and αε in the earliest inscriptions and finally η. So in Boeotian η became\(^3\) έι in sound, as ἐπίθει = ἐπίδη. The early Greek generally, as already shown, made no distinction in sign between o and ω, and η was a slow development from ε. The Ionic dialect never took kindly to the rough breathing and greatly influenced the κοινή and so the modern Greek. By the Christian era β is beginning to be pronounced as ν, as the transliteration of Latin words like Βεργίλιος shows. Z is no longer ḗσ, but z, though δ seems still usually d, not θ. Who is right, therefore, the "Erasmians" or the Reuchlinians? Jannaris\(^4\) sums up in favour of the Reuchlinians, while according to Riemann and Goelzer\(^5\) the "Erasmians" are wholly right. As a matter of fact neither side is wholly right. In speaking of ancient Greek one must recognise other dialects than the literary Attic of the fifth century B.C. If you ask for the pronunciation of the vernacular κοινή of the first century A.D., that will be found as a whole neither in the literary Attic alone nor in the N. T. MSS. of the fifth century A.D. The papyri and the inscriptions of the time throw light on a good many points, though not on all. But even here the illiterate papyri do not furnish a safe standard for the vernacular of a man like Paul or Luke. It is small wonder therefore that N. T. MSS. show much confusion between —σεί (future indicative) and ση (aorist subjunctive), -ομεν (indicative) and —ομεν (subjunctive), -σαί (infinitive) and -σε (indicative middle), etc. It is possibly as well to go on pronouncing the N. T. Greek according to the literary Attic, since we cannot reproduce a clear picture of the actual vernacular κοινή pronunciation, only we must understand frankly that this

\(^1\) Cf. Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., p. 41.

\(^2\) Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 540.

\(^3\) Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., pp. 41, 46. Thumb (Hellen., p. 228) warns us against overemphasis of the Boeotian influence.

\(^4\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 31. "The pronunciation of ancient Gk. in the manner of the present Greeks had been traditionally accepted at all times, before and through the Middle Ages, as a matter of unquestioned fact."

\(^5\) Phonet., p. 56. "En resume, la prononciation grecque ancienne etait, sur presque tous les points, differente de la prononciation moderne."
is *not* the way it was done. On the other hand the modern Greek method misses it by excess, as the literary Attic does by default. There was, of course, no Jewish pronunciation of the κοινή. The Coptic shows the current pronunciation in many ways and probably influenced the pronunciation of the κοινή in Egypt. Cf. a German's pronunciation of English.

**VII. Punctuation.** In the spoken language the division of words is made by the voice, pauses, emphasis, tone, gesture, but it is difficult to reproduce all this on the page for the eye. Many questions arise for the editor of the Greek N. T. that are not easy of solution. Caspar Rene Gregory insists that whenever N. T. MSS. have punctuation of any kind, it must be duly weighed, since it represents the reading given to the passage.

(a) THE PARAGRAPH. As early as Aristotle's time the paragraph (παράγραφος) was known. A dividing horizontal stroke was written between the lines marking the end of a paragraph. Some other marks like > (διπλή) or γ (κορώνις) were used, or a slight break in the line made by a blank space. Then again the first letter of the line was written larger than the others or even made to project out farther than the rest.¹ The paragraph was to the ancients the most important item in punctuation, and we owe a debt to the N. T. revisers for restoring it to the English N. T. Cf. Lightfoot, Trench, Ellicott, *The Revision of the N. T.*, 1873, p. xlvi. Euthalius (A.D. 458) prepared an edition of the Greek N. T. with chapters (κεφαλαία), but long before him Clement of Alexandria spoke of περικοπά and Tertullian of capitula. These "chapters" were later called also τίτλοι.² The στίχος of Euthalius was a line of set length with no regard to the sense, like our printer's ems. W. H. have made careful use of the paragraph in their Greek N. T. The larger sections are marked off by spaces and the larger paragraphs are broken into smaller sub-paragraphs (after the French method) by smaller spaces.³ Another division is made by W. H. in the use of the capital letter at the beginning of an important sentence, while the other sentences, though after a period, begin with a small letter. This is a wholly arbitrary method, but it helps one better to understand W. H.'s interpretation of the text.

¹ On the paragraph see Thompson, Handb. of Gk. and Lat. Palaeog., pp. 67 ff. Occasionally the double point (:) was used to close a paragraph.
³ Hort. Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 319. For the στίχος see further Gregory, Prol., p. 112 f.
W. H. 1 have also printed in metrical form passages metrical in rhythm like the Magnificat of Mary (Lu. 1:46-55), the fragment of a hymn in 1 Tim. 3:16, etc., while Lu. 2:14 and the non-metrical hymns in Revelation are merely printed in narrower columns. The Hebrew parallelism of O. T. quotations is indicated also.

(b) SENTENCES. The oldest inscriptions and papyri show few signs of punctuation between sentences or clauses in a sentence, 2 though punctuation by points does appear on some of the ancient inscriptions. In the Artemisia, papyrus the double point (:) occasionally ends the sentence. 3 It was Aristophanes of Byzantium (260 B.C.) who is credited with inventing a more regular system of sentence punctuation which was further developed by the Alexandrian grammarians. 4 As a rule all the sentences, like the words, ran into one another in an unbroken line (scriptura continua), but finally three stops were provided for the sentence by the use of the full point. The point at the top of the line (↑) (στίγμη τελεία, 'high point') was a full stop; that on the line (.) (ὑπόστιγμη) was equal to our semicolon, while a middle point (στίγμη μέση) was equivalent to our comma. 5 But gradually changes came over these stops till the top point was equal to our colon, the bottom point became the full stop, the middle point vanished, and about the ninth century A.D. the comma (,) took its place. About this time also the question-mark (;) or ἔρωτηματικόν appeared. These marks differed from the στίχοι in that they concerned the sense of the sentence. Some of the oldest N. T. MSS. show these marks to some extent. B has the higher point as a period, the lower point for a shorter pause. 6 But still we cannot tell how much, if any, use the N. T. writers themselves made of punctuation points. We may be sure that they did not use the exclamation point, the dash, quotation-marks, the parenthesis, etc. 7 Parenthetical clauses were certainly used, which will be discussed elsewhere, though no signs were used for this structure by the ancient Greeks. W. H. represent the parenthesis either by the comma (Ro. 1:13) or the dash with comma (1 Tim. 2:7). Instead of

1 Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 319 f. 2 Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 62. 3 Thompson, Handb., etc., p. 69. 4 Ib., p. 70; Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 67. 5 I follow Thompson (Handb., etc., p. 70) on this point instead of Jannaris (pp. 63 and 67), who makes the ὑπόστιγμη = our comma. 6 Cf. Gregory, Prol., pp. 345, 348; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 17. D has the στίχοι, in the way of sense-lines (Blass, ib.). 7 Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 67.
quotation-marks W. H. begin the quotation with a capital letter
with no punctuation before it, as in Jo. 12:19, 21. One way of
expressing a quotation was by τό, as in Ro. 13:9. In the case
of O. T. quotations the Scripture is put in uncial type (Jo. 12:13).
The period (περίμετρος) gives very little trouble to the modern edi-
tor, for it is obviously necessary for modern needs. Here the
ditor has to make his interpretation sometimes when it is doubt-
ful, as W. H. give ἐν ὑγόν ου ἔν, not ἐν ὑγόν ου ἔν (Jo. 1:4). So
W. H. read θαυμάζετε, διά τοῦτο Μωυσῆς in Jo. 7:22, not θαυμάζετε
dιά τοῦτο. Μωυσῆς, etc. The colon (κῶλον),1 ‘limb of the sentence’
formed a complete clause. See Jo. 3:31 for example of use of
colon made by W. H. The comma (κόμμα) is the most common
division of the sentence and is often necessary, as with the voca-
tive. So Διδασκαλε, τί ποιήσωμεν; (Lu. 3:12) and many common
examples. In general W. H. use the comma only where it is
necessary to make clear an otherwise ambiguous clause, whether
it be a participial (Col. 2:2) or conjunctonal phrase (Col. 1:23),
or appositive (Col. 1:18), or relative (Col. 2:3). The first chap-
ter of Colossians has a rather unusual number of colons (2, 6, 14,
16, 18, 20, 27, 28) as Paul struggles with several long sentences,
ot to mention the clashes (21, 22, 26). The Germans use the
comma too freely with the Greek for our English ideas, leaving
out the Greek! Even Winer defended the comma after καρπών in
Jo. 15:2 and οὐκαθών in Rev. 3:12, not to mention Griesbach's
"excessive" use of the comma, Winer himself being judge.2 My
friend, Rev. S. M. Provence, D.D. (Victoria, Tex.), suggests a full
stop before μαθών in Ac. 23:27 f. That would help the character
of Claudius Lysias on the point of veracity.

(c) WORDS. The continuous writing of words without any
space between them was not quite universal, though nearly so.3
The oldest Attic inscription (Dipylon vase, probably eighth cen-
tury B.C.) is written from right to left. With the common method
it was not always easy for the practised eye to distinguish between
words. Hence there arose the διαστολή or ύποδιαστολή a comma
used to distinguish between ambiguous words, as ὅ τι, not ὅ τι.
But W. H. make no use of this mark, not even in ὅ τι to dis-
tinguish it from the conjunction ὅ τι. They print uniformly ὅ τι
(Lu. 10:35; Jo. 2:5; 14:13; 1 Cor. 16:2, etc.), not to men-

1 Thompson, Handb., etc., p. 81. So Suidas. The colon is the main semi-
division of the sentence, but mod. Eng. makes less use of all marks save the
period and comma.
3 Thompson, Handb., etc., p. 67.
tion doubtful cases like those in Mk. 9:11, 28; Jo. 8:25; 2 Cor. 3:14. As to the marks of diaeresis (') reference may be had to the discussion of diphthongs and diaeresis in this chapter under II (i). W. H., like other modern editors, use the apostrophe (') (or smooth breathing) to represent elision, as ἀπ’ ἀρχής (Mt. 24:21). The coronis is the smooth breathing used also to show when crasis has taken place, as in καῦμοι (Lu. 1:3). The hyphen, a long straight line, was used in the Harris-Homer MS. to connect compound words, but it is not in the N. T. The editors vary much in the way such words as ἀλλὰ γε, ἱνα τί, τοῦτ' ἔστι, etc., are printed. The MSS. give no help at all, for τοῦτο δὲ ἔστιν in Ro. 1:12 is not conclusive against τοῦτ' ἔστιν elsewhere. W. H. prefer ἀλλὰ γε (Lu. 24:21; 1 Cor. 9:2), ἀφα γε (Ac. 8:30), διὰ γε (Lu. 11:8; 18:5), εἰ γε (2 Cor. 5:3, etc.), καὶ γε (Ac. 2:18; 17:27), ὅς γε (Ro. 8:32), διὰ παντός (Mk. 5:5, etc.), διὰ τί (Mt. 9:11, etc.), ἱνα τί (Mt. 9:4, etc.), εἰ πως (Ac. 27:12), μή ποτε (everywhere save in Mt. 25:9 where μὴ ποτε), μή που (Ac. 27:29), μή πως (1 Cor. 9:27, etc.), μὴ τίς (1 Cor. 16:11, etc.). So also δῆλον ὅτι in 1 Cor. 15:27, ὅστις οὖν (Mt. 18:4). But on the other hand W. H. print διότι as well as εἰτε, οὔτε, μήτε, ὡστε, καίπερ, μὴ ποτε (once), μηδέποτε, μηδέως οὐδέποτε, μηκετε, οὐκέτι, μητερ, οὔπω, μητιγε, ενε μῆγε (Mt. 6:1), καθά καθό, καθὸς, καθάπερ, καθότι, καθόλου, ὡσπερ, ὡσει, ὡσπερεὶ (1 Cor. 15:8), etc. But W. H. give us καθ’ εἰς in Ro. 12:5, ἀνά μέσον in Mt. 13:25, etc.; Κατὰ μόνας in Mk. 4:10, καθ’ ὄσον in Heb. 3:3.

Adverbs like ἐπέκειναι (Ac. 7:43), ὑπερέκειναι (2 Cor. 10:16), παρεκτός (2 Cor. 11:28) are, of course, printed as one word. W. H. properly have ὑπερ ἐγὼ (2 Cor. 11:23), not ὑπερεγὼ. In Ac. 27:33 τεσσαρεσκαίδεκατος is one word, but W. H. have ἰερὰ Πόλις in Col. 4:13 and Νέα πόλις in Ac. 16:11. It must be confessed that no very clear principles in this matter can be set forth, and the effort of Winer-Schmiedel at minute analysis does not throw much light on the subject.

(d) THE EDITOR'S PREROGATIVE. Where there is so much confusion, what is the editor's prerogative? Blass boldly advances

---

1 W.-Sch., p. 35.
2 See this ch. ii (k) for discussion of elision. For origin and early use of the apostrophe see Thompson, Handb., etc., p. 73.
4 Thompson, Handb., etc., p. 72.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 14. For the usage of Tisch. in the union and the separation of particles see Gregory, Prol., pp. 109-111. In most cases Tisch. ran the particles together as one word.
6 P. 35.
7 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 17. Left out by Debrunner.
the German idea: "The most correct principle appears to be to punctuate wherever a pause is necessary for reading correctly." But Winer' shrinks from this profusion of punctuation-marks by the editors, which "often intruded on the text their own interpretation of it." The editor indeed has to interpret the text with his punctuation, but certainly good taste demands that the minimum, not the maximum, of punctuation-marks be the rule. They must of necessity decide "a multitude of subtle and difficult points of interpretation." Hort indeed aimed at "the greatest simplicity compatible with clearness," and this obviously should be the goal in the Greek N. T. But the editor's punctuation may be a hindrance to the student instead of a help. It is the privilege of each N. T. student to make his own punctuation.

1 W.-M., p. 63.  
2 Hort, Intr. to Gk. N. T., p. 318.
CHAPTER VII

THE DECLENSIONS (ΚΛΙΣΕΙΣ)

Space will not be taken for the inflection of the nouns and pronouns, for the student of this grammar may be assumed to know the normal Attic inflections. Aristotle\(^1\) used the term "inflection" (πρώσις) of noun and verb and even adverb, but practically inflection is applied to nouns and conjugation (κλίσις ῥημάτων = συμμετοχή) to verbs. Noun (ὁνόμα) does, of course, include both substantive and adjective without entering the psychological realm and affirming the connection between name and thing (cf. Plato's Cratylus).

I. THE SUBSTANTIVE (ΤΟ ΟΝΟΜΑ)

The Substantive (τὸ ὄνομα) is either concrete (σώμα) or abstract (πρᾶγμα), ordinary appellative (ὄνομα προσηγορικόν) or proper (ὄνομα κύριον).

1. History of the Declensions. It is only since the seventeenth century A.D. that modern grammarians distinguish for convenience three declensions in Greek. The older grammars had ten or more.\(^2\) In the modern Greek vernacular the first and third declensions have been largely fused into one, using the singular of the first and the plural of the third.\(^3\) Thumb (Handbook, pp. 43 ff.) divides the declension of substantives in modern Greek vernacular according to gender simply (masculine, feminine, neuter). This is the simplest way out of the confusion. In Sanskrit five declensions are usually given as in Latin, but Whitney\(^4\) says: "There is nothing absolute in this arrangement; it is merely believed to be open to as few objections as any other." Evidently

---

\(^1\) Donaldson, New Crat., p. 421. It is in the accidence that the practical identity of N. T. Gk. with the popular κοινή is best seen, here and in the lexical point of view (Deissmann, Exp., Nov., 1907, p. 434).


\(^3\) Ib., pp. 105, 111. Cf. Hatzidakis, Einl. etc., pp. 376 ff.

\(^4\) Sans. Gr., p. 111.
therefore the ancient Greeks did not have the benefit of our modern theories and rules, but inflected the substantives according to principles not now known to us. The various dialects exercised great freedom also and exhibited independent development at many points, not to mention the changes in time in each dialect. The threefold division is purely a convenience, but with this justification: the first has α stems, the second ο stems, the third consonant and close vowel (ι, υ) stems. There are some differences in the suffixes also, the third declension having always the genitive ending in –ος. In the third declension especially it is not possible to give a type to which all the words in all the cases and numbers conform. Besides, the same word may experience variations. Much freedom is to be recognized in the whole matter of the declensions within certain wide limits. See metaplasm or the fluctuation between the several declensions.

2. The Number of the Cases (πτώσεις). The meaning and use of the cases will have a special chapter in Syntax (ch. XI).

(a) THE HISTORY OF THE FORMS OF THE CASES. This is called for before the declensions are discussed. The term "case" (πτώσεις, cases) is considered a "falling," because the nominative is regarded as the upright case (πτώσεις ὁρθή, εὐθεία), though as a matter of fact the accusative is probably older than the nominative (πτώσεις δυναματική or ὁρθή). The other cases are called oblique (πλάγιαι) as deviations from the nominative. In simple truth the vocative (κλητική or προσαγωγεύτικη) has no inflection and is not properly a case in its logical relations. It is usually the noun-stem or like the nominative in form. There are only three other case-endings preserved in the Greek, and the grammars usually term them accusative (πτώσεις αἰτιατική), genitive (πτώσεις γενική) and dative (πτώσεις δοτική). There is no dispute as to the integrity of the accusative case, the earliest, most common of all the oblique cases and the most persistent. In the breakdown of the other cases the accusative and the prepositions reap the benefit. In truth the other oblique cases are variations from the normal accusative. But this subject is complicated with the genitive and the dative. It is now a commonplace in comparative philology that the Greek genitive has taken over the function of the ablative (ἀφαίρετική) also. In the singular the Sanskrit had already the same

1 Mod. Gk. vernac. has only three cases (nom., gen. and acc.) and these are not always formally differentiated from each other. The mod. Gk. has thus carried the blending of case-forms almost as far as mod. Eng. Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 31.
ending (–ας) for genitive and ablative, while in the plural the Sanskrit ablative had the same form as the dative (bhyas; cf. Latin ibus). Thus in the Sanskrit the ablative has no distinctive endings save in the singular of a stems like kamat (‘love’) where the ablative ending –t (d) is preserved. In Latin, as we know, the ablative, dative, locative and instrumental have the same endings in the plural. The Latin ablative singular is partly ablative, partly locative, partly instrumental. Some old Latin inscriptions show the d, as bened, in altod marid, etc. In Greek the ablative forms merged with the genitive as in the Sanskrit singular, but not because of any inherent "internal connection between them, as from accidents affecting the outward forms of inflection."¹ The Greek did not allow τ or δ to stand at the end of a word. So the Greek has πρός (not πρότι for προτι). Καλως may be (but see Brugmann²) the ablative καλωτι and so all adverbs in —ως. The meaning of the two cases remained distinct in the Greek as in the Sanskrit. It is not possible to derive the ablative (source or separation) idea from the genitive (or γένος) idea nor vice versa. The Greek dative (δοτική) is even more complicated. "The Greek dative, it is well known, both in singular and plural, has the form of a locative case, denoting the place where or in which; but, as actually used, it combines, with the meaning of a locative, those of the dative and instrumental."³ This is only true of some datives. There are true datives like ὀδώρ, χωρα. The Indo-Germanic stock, as shown by the Sanskrit, had originally three separate sets of endings for these cases.


² Brugmann (Griech. Gr., 1900, p. 225), who considers the ζ in οὕτως, κτλ., due to analogy merely, like the ζ in ἐγγύς, κτλ. But he sees an abl. idea in ἐκ-τός. Cf. also οὐρανό-θε like coeli-tus.

³ Hadley, Ess. Phil. and Crit., p. 52.
The Greek plural uses for all three cases either "the locative in –σι or the instrumental forms in –οις."¹ "The forms in –αισ, Latin –is, from –a stems, are a new formation on the analogy of forms from –o stems."² 'Αθήνηςα is locative plural. In the singular of consonant, ι and υ stems, the locative ending –ι is used for all three cases in Greek, as νυκτί. In the a declension the dative ending –αι is the same as locative α+ι. The form –αι contracts with the stem-vowel α into ι or η. A few examples of the locative here survive, as in πάλαι, Ὄλυμπια, θηβαι-γενής.³ Χαμαί may be either dative or locative. In the o declension also the dative ending –αι is the usual form, contracting with the o into ω. But a few distinct locative endings survive, like ἵθμοι, ὄκοι (cf. ὁκυω), ποι, etc. The Homeric infinitive δόμεν and the infinitive like φερει are probably locatives also without the ι, while the infinitives in –αι (δόμεναι, δόναι, λευκέναι, λύεσθαι, λυσαί, etc.) are datives.⁴ The instrumental has left little of its original form on the Greek singular. The usual Sanskrit is a. Cf. in Greek such words as ἄμα, ἕνεκα, ἕνα, μετά, παρά, πεδά, possibly the Doric κρυφά, Lesbian δάλλα. Brugmann⁵ thinks the Laconic πη-ποκα = Attic πω-ποτε is instrumental like the Gothic he (English why). Cf. the in "the more the better," etc. Another Greek suffix –φι (Indo-Germanic, bhi) is found in Homer, as βίηφι, θεόφιν (plural). But this –φι was used also for ablative or locative, and even genitive or dative. It is clear therefore that in Greek the usual seven (eight with the vocative) Indo-Germanic cases are present, though in a badly mutilated condition as to form. The ideas, of course, expressed by the cases continued to be expressed by the blended forms. In actual intelligent treatment it is simpler to preserve the seven case-names as will be seen later.

(b) THE BLENDING OF CASE-ENDINGS. This is a marked peculiarity of the Indo-Germanic tongues. Neuter nouns illustrate

¹ Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 287.
² Ib., p. 290. For survivals of the dat. —at see the Rhodian ταί, (Bjorkegren, De Sonis dial. Rhod., p. 41).
⁴ Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 278 f.
the same tendency, not to mention the dual. The analytic process has largely triumphed over the synthetic case-endings. Originally no prepositions were used and all the word-relations were expressed by cases. In modern French, for instance, there are no case-endings at all, but prepositions and the order of the words have to do all that was originally done by the case-forms. In English, outside of the old dative form in pronouns like *him*, *them*, etc., the genitive form alone remains. Finnish indeed has fifteen cases and several other of the ruder tongues have many.\(^1\) On the other hand the Coptic had no case-endings, but used particles and prepositions like NTE for genitive, etc. It is indeed possible that all inflectional languages passed once through the isolating and agglutinative stages. English may some day like the Chinese depend entirely on position and tone for the relation of words to each other.

(C) ORIGIN OF CASE, SUFFIXES. Giles\(^2\) frankly confesses that comparative philology has nothing to say as to the origin of the case-suffixes. They do not exist apart from the noun-stems. Some of them may be pronominal, others may be positional (postpositions), but it adds nothing to our knowledge to call some of the cases local and others grammatical. They are all grammatical. The ablative and the locative clearly had a local origin. Some cases were used less often than others. Some of the case-forms became identical. Analogy carried on the process. The desire to be more specific than the case-endings led to the use of prepositional adverbs. As these adverbs were used more and more there was "an ever-increasing tendency to find the important part of the meaning in the preposition and not in the case-ending."\(^3\)

In the modern Greek vernacular, as already stated, only three case-forms survive (nominative, genitive, accusative), the dative vanishing like the ablative.\(^4\)

\(^1\) Farrar, Gr. Synt., p. 23.
\(^2\) Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 271. Bergaigne (Du Role de la Deriv. dans la Decl. Indo-Europ., Mem. de la Soc. de Ling. de Paris, to. ii, fasc. 5) and G. Meyer (Zur Gesch. der indo-germ. Stamm. und Decl.) both argue that case-endings had no distinctive meaning in themselves nor separate existence. But see also Hirt, Handb. etc., pp. 231-288, for careful treatment of the cases. On the general subject of syncrretism in the Gk. cases see Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., 1. Tl., pp. 189 ff., 195 f. See also Sterrett, Horn. II., N. 15, for traces of abl., loc. and instr. forms in Hom. (loc. --ι, --θι; instr., --φι, --φιν; abl., --θεν).
\(^3\) Giles, op. cit., p. 273.
\(^4\) Dieterich, Unters. etc., p. 149. Cf. also Keck, Uber d. Dual bei d. griech. Rednern etc., 1882.
3. Number (ἀριθμός) in Substantives. The N. T. Greek has lost the dual (διδύμος) and uses only the singular (ἕνικός) and the plural (πλαγιντικός). The Sanskrit and the Hebrew had the dual, but the Latin had only duo and ambo (and possibly octo and viginti) which had a plural inflection in the oblique cases. Coptic¹ had no plural nor dual save as the plural article distinguished words. English has only the dual twain, but we now say twins.

The scholars do not agree as to the origin of the dual. Moulton² inclines to the idea that it arose "in prehistoric days when men could not count beyond two." It is more likely that it is due to the desire to emphasize pairs, as hands, eyes, etc., not to accept "Du Ponceau's jest that it must have been invented for lovers and married people."³ In the oldest Indo-Germanic languages the luxury of the dual is vanishing, but Moulton considers its use in the Attic as a revival.⁴ It never won a foothold in the AEolic and the New Ionic, and its use in the Attic was limited and not consistent.⁵ The dual is nearly gone in the late. Attic inscriptions,⁶ while in the κοινή it is only sporadic and constantly vanishing in the inscriptions and papyri.⁷ In Pergamum⁸ and Pisidia⁹ no dual appears in the inscriptions. The only dual form that occurs in the LXX and the N. T. is δυο (not δώ) for all the cases (as genitive in 1 Tim. 5:19), save δυσι for the dative-locative-instrumental, a plural form found in Aristotle, Polybius, etc., and called a barbarism by Phrynichus.¹⁰ Only in 1 Macc. 1:28 A δυον is found, but δειν in ΝV, as in Polybius and the Atticists (Thackeray, p. 187). For examples of δυσι for see Mt. 6:24 = Lu. 16:13; Ac. 21:33; Heb. 10:28, etc. In the papyri, however, δώ, δυό, δειν occasionally appear¹¹ along with δυσι for. In the modern Greek the dual is no longer used. Ἀμφω has vanished in the N. T. while ἀμφότεροι occurs fourteen times (Mt. 9:17, etc.),

once (Ac. 19:16) apparently in the sense of more than two, like the occasional use of the English "both" and the Byzantine use of ἀμφότεροι and "two clear examples of it in NP 67 and 69 (iv/A.D.)." Once for all then it may be remarked that in the N. T. both for nouns and verbs the dual is ignored. The dual was rare in the later Ionic and the κοινή follows suit (Radermacher, N. T. Gk., p. 184). The syntactical aspects of number are to be discussed later.

4. Gender (γένος) in Substantives. In the long history of the Greek language gender has been wonderfully persistent and has suffered little variation. It is probably due to the natural difference of sex that grammatical gender arose. The idea of sense gender continued, but was supplemented by the use of endings for the distinction of gender. This personification of inanimate objects was probably due to the poetic imagination of early peoples, but it persists in modern European tongues, though French has dropped the neuter (cf. the Hebrew) and modern English (like the Persian and Chinese) has no grammatical gender save in the third personal pronoun (he, she, it) and the relative. Analogy has played a large part in gender. The Sanskrit, Latin and Greek all gave close attention to gender and developed rules that are difficult to apply, with many inconsistencies and absurdities. In Greek ήλιος is masculine and σελήνη feminine, while in German we have die Sonne and der Mond. Perhaps we had better be grateful that the Greek did not develop gender in the verb like the Hebrew verb. Moulton thinks it "exceedingly strange" that English should be almost alone in shaking off "this outworn excrescence on language." The N. T., like Homer and the modern Greek, preserves the masculine (ἀρσενικόν), feminine (θηλυκόν) and neuter (οὐδέτερον). Some words indeed have common (κοινόν) sex, like ὁ θεός, ὁ νόμος, ὁ θεός, while others, applied to each sex, are called epicene (ἐπίκοινον), like ἡ αλώπηξ, ἄρκτος. In German we actually have das Weib (‘wife’)!

(a) VARIATIONS IN GENDER. They are not numerous. ἄρωστος (χῶρα) is a substantive in the LXX (Gen. 1:2, etc.) and the N. T. (Lu. 8:31, etc.), elsewhere so only in Diogenes Laertes.

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 80.  
5 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., pp. 64, 259.  
In Mk. 14:3 W. H. and Nestle properly read τὴν ὀλίβαστρον, though the Western and Syrian classes give τὸν ὀλ. after Herodotus, and a few of the late MSS. τὸ ὀλ. In Rev. 8:11 ὁ (not ἦ) ὀλίβαστρος is read, though ἦ and some cursives omit the article, because the word is a proper name. In Mk. 12:26 all editors have ὁ βαστός (the Attic form according to Moeris), elsewhere ἦ βαστός (Lu. 20:37; Acts 7:35). θέος may be either masculine as in Ac. 19:11 or feminine as in Ac. 19:37, but in Ac. 19:27 we have θεός (Text. Rec. also in 35, 37), an "apparently purposeless variation." Thieme (Die Inschr. von Magn., p. 10) says that ἦ θεός is used in the inscriptions of Asia Minor in formal religious language. Burnet (Review of Theology and Philosophy, 1906, p. 96) says that in Athens ἦ θεός was used in every-day language, but ἦ θεά in the public prayers, thus taking the Ionic θεά. Cf. Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Papyri (Laut- and Wortlehre, 1906), p. 254 f., for papyri illustrations. Blass considers ἦ Ἠεροσολήμ (Ac. 5:28, etc., the common form in LXX, Luke and Paul) feminine because it is a place-name, and hence he explains πᾶσα Ἠεροσολήμα (Mt. 2:3) rather than by πόλις understood. Λημός in Rev. 14:19 strangely enough has both masculine and feminine, τὴν λημόν . . . τὸν μέγαν but ἦ fem. (bis). The feminine is the common construction, but the masculine is found in LXX in Is. 63:2 only. Λίθος is always ὁ in the N. T., even when it means a precious stone (Rev. 5 times), where Attic after 385 B.C. had ἦ. Λίμος is masculine in Lu. 4:25 as in the Attic, but is chiefly feminine in Acts and Luke, like the Doric and late Attic, as in Lu. 15:14; Acts 11:28. In Lu. 13:4, Jo. 9:7, 11 we have ὁ Σιλωάμ, while Josephus has both ἦ (War, V, 12. 2) and ὁ (War, II, 16. 2). Blass explains the use of ὁ in the Gospels by the participle ἀπεσταλμένος in Jo. 9:7. Στάμνος in Heb. 9:4 is feminine after the Attic instead of the Doric ὁ στ., as in Ex. 16:33. In Rev. 21:18 (21) we read also ὁ ὧναλός rather than ἦ ὧναλός as is customary with

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 60, but he adds "is explained by inscriptions." Cf. Nachmanson, Magn. Inschr., p. 126, for many exx.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 32. Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 160. Mk. and Jo. have only τὸ Ἠεροσολήμα and Mt. usually.
3 Meisterhans, Att. Inschr., p. 129.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 32.
precious stones.¹ "γυναικείας (Heb. 9:19; Jo. 19:29) reveals its
gender only in the LXX (Lev. 14:6, 51 f.) where it is masc. in
BA, fem. in E and 1 (3) Ki. 4:19 BA. The neuter τὸ ἀλάς occurs
in papyri as early as third century B.C. (Moulton and Milligan,
Expositor, 1908, p. 177).

(b) INTERPRETATION OF THE LXX. In Ro. 11:4 Paul uses
τῇ βασιλείᾳ rather than the frequent LXX τῷ βασιλείᾳ. The feminine is
due, according to Burkitt, to the Q'ri, θηρ. (αἰσχρούνη). Moulton
speaks of τῇ βασιλείᾳ as occurring "three times in LXX and in Ascen-
sio Isaiae 12."² But τῇ βασιλείᾳ occurs "everywhere in the pro-
phetic books, Jer., Zeph., Hos., etc." (Thayer), though not so
common in the historical books, far more than the "three times" of
Moulton. In Mk. 12:11 and Mt. 21:42 the LXX αὐτή is due to
ɲį, though the translators may have "interpreted their own Greek
by recalling κεφαλήν γυναικα."³ In Gal. 4:25 Paul has not mis-
takenly used τό with ᾿Αγαρ, for he is treating the name as a word
merely. Any word can be so regarded.

(c) VARIATIONS IN GENDER DUE TO HETEROCLISIS AND ME-
TAPLASM. These will be discussed a little later. Delbruck thinks
that originally all the masculine substantives of the first or α de-
clension were feminine and that all the feminine substantives of
the second or ο declension were masculine.

5. The First or α Declension. There was a general tendency
wards uniformity⁴ in this declension that made it more popular
than ever. Here only the N. T. modifications in this general de-
velopment can be mentioned.

(a) THE DORIC GENITIVE—ABLATIVE SINGULAR α. This form
survives in βορρα (Lu. 13:29; Rev. 21:13) and was common in
the Attic after 400 B.C. Note also μαμωνα (Lu. 16:9). It is fre-
quent in the LXX, papyri, inscriptions, though mainly in proper
names. These proper names in —ας, chiefly oriental, make the
genitive-ablative in —α or, if unaccented —ας, in a. So Ακύλα and
᾿Ακύλα in papyri (Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 187), though, no
gen. in N. T. (only —ας and —αυ) ᾿Αγρίππα⁵ (Ac. 25:23), ᾿Ανανία

² Moulton, Prol., p. 59. He corrects this erratum in note to H. Scott.
³ Ib.
⁴ Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 106. Swete, 0. T. in Gk., p. 304 f., has some
good illustrations and remarks about the declensions in the LXX.
⁵ Both ᾿Αγρίππα and ᾿Αγρίππας occur in the pap. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev.,
1901, pp. 34 and 434. This gen. in —α gradually became "a ruling principle"
THE DECLENSIONS (ΚΛΙΣΕΙΣΙ) 255

(from –ας, so Thayer), 'Αννα (Lu. 3:2), 'Αντίπας (indeclinable here or mere slip for –α, Rev. 2:13), 'Αρέτα (2 Cor. 11:32), Βαροββά (gen. does not appear, only nom. –ας as Mk. 15:7, and accus. –αν as 15:11, etc.), Βαρνάβα (Gal. 2:1; Col. 4:10; see Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 187), 'Επαφρά (Col. 1:7), 'Ερμάν (Ro. 16:14, Doric accusative), Ζηνά (Tit. 3:13); 'Ηλεία (Lu. 1:17) according to Β (so W. H.) 'Ιωάννα (person, Lu. 3:33; Mk. 6:3; tribe, Mt. 2:6; Heb. 8:8; land, Lu. 1:39), 'Ιωνά (Mt. 12:39), Καιλάφα (Lu. 3:2; Jo. 18:13), Κηφά (1 Cor. 1:12), Κλωπά (Jo. 19:25), Λουκάς (only in nominative, as Col. 4:14, but genitive would be –α), Σατανάς (Mk. 1:13), Σίλας (dative Σίλα in Ac., and genitive Σίλα in Jos. Vit., 17), Σκεύα (Ac. 19:14), Στεφανό (1 Cor. 1:16). Nach- manson finds the Doric genitive fairly common with such short proper names and mentions Σηνά in his list.1 Very common in modern Greek, cf. Hatzidakis, Einl., p. 76.

(b) THE ATTIC GENITIVE-ABLATIVE. The usual Attic form for the masculine gen. abl. (ου) is found also as in Αίνεας (so Lobeck, Prol. Pathol., p. 487), 'Ανδρέα (Mk. 1:29), Βαρσείου (Mt. 23:35), 'Εξεκίου (so LXX), 'Ηλείου (Lu. 4:25), 'Ησαίου (Mt. 3:3, etc.), 'Ιερεμίου (Mt. 2:17), Λυσανίου (Lu. 3:1), Ουρίου (Mt. 1:6), Ζαχαρίου (Lu. 1:40). These Hebrew proper names ended in but receive the regular inflection for masculine nouns of the first declension. There are likewise some proper names in –ης with genitive-ablative in –ου. 'Ιαννής and 'Ιαμβρής (2 Tim. 3:8) only appear in the N. T. in the nominative. Κρήσκης (2 Tim. 4:10) and Πούδης (2 Tim. 4:21) belong to the 3d declension. Ευφράτης (Rev. 9:14; 16:12) has only accusative and dative (instrumental-locative) in the oblique cases in the N. T., though the genitive-ablative form is –ου. 'Ηρώω (Mt. 2:1) and 'Ιορδάνω (Mt. 3:5) follow the usual rule like ζώο (Mt. 16:18). 'Απελλής (Ro. 16:10), 'Ερμής (Ro. 16:14), like κοδράντυς (Mt. 5:26) and φελών (2 Tim. 4:13), have no oblique case in the N. T. save the accusative (–η).2 'Ιωάννης in W. H. always has genitive-ablative in –ου for the Apostle and in Jo. 1:42; 21:15, 16, 17, for the father of Simon Peter, though Βαρισωά in Mt. 16:17.3 So for John Mark (Acts 12:12).


1 Magn. Inschr., p. 120. Cf. also Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 139.
2 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 94.
3 Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 159. See Nachmanson (Magn. Inschr., p. 119) and Schweizer (Perg. Inschr., p. 138 f.) for illustrations of these points from the κοινή inscr. The gen. in –ου is more common in the pap. than that in
Σωσθένης has accusative in –ης (Ac. 18:17) for the first declension and is heteroclitic. ¹ We have only ξεστω in Mk. 7:4. Words like νεανίας have the genitive-ablative in –ου (Ac. 7:58).

(c) Voc. in –α of masc. nouns in -της in δέσποτα, ἐπιστάτα, καρδιογνώστα, ὑποκριτά. Cf. ἡδη.

(d) WORDS IN –πα AND PARTICIPLES IN —υία. These come regularly ² to have the genitive-ablative in —της and the dative-locative-instrumental in –η like the Ionic. Moulton ³ indeed thinks that "analogical assimilation," on the model of forms like δόξα, δόξης, had more to do with this tendency in the koine than the Ionic influence. Possibly so, but it seems gratuitous to deny all Ionic influence where it was so easy for it to make itself felt. The "best MSS." ⁴ support the testimony of the papyri and the inscriptions here. ⁵ So W. H. read μαχαίρης (Rev. 13:14), πλημμύρης (Lu. 6:48), πρώρης (Ac. 27:30), Σαπφείρη (Ac. 5:1), σπείρης (Ac. 21:31; 27:1). In Acts B is prone to have —ας, —α as with D in Ac. 5:1, but W. H. do not follow B here. In Ac. 5:2 συνειδω ης may be compared with ἐπιβεβηκων (1 Sam. 25:20), and other examples in the LXX, ⁶ but the forms —υίας, —υία still survive in the Ptolemaic period. ⁷ The preference of the LXX MSS. and the early papyri for μαχαίρας (—πα) shows that it is a matter of growth with time. In the early Empire of Rome —πης forms are well-nigh universal. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 142. On the other hand note the adjective στερα, (Lu. 1:36). Words like ἡμέρα (—ρα) and ἀλήθεια, μία (ία, εία) preserve the Attic inflection in —ας, α.⁸

(e) THE OPPOSITE TENDENCY TO (d). We see it in such examples as Λύδδας (Ac. 9:38, but Soden reads —δης with EHL Π) and Μάρθας (Jo. 11:1). Moulton ⁹ finds the Egyptian papyri giving Ταμύσθας as genitive. θέρμα is given by Lobeck, though not in N. T. (genitive —ης, Ac. 28:3), and note πρύμνα in Ac. 27:41.

—α. See Mayser, Gr. grieκ. Pap., 1906, p. 250 f. (Laut- u. Wortlehre). For the contracted forms see p. 252. It is also more frequent in the LXX. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 161 f.

¹ W.-Sch., p. 94. ² B. S., p. 186. ³ Prol., p. 48; Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 34. where a number of exx. are given like αρουρης, καθηκους, etc. Cf. Thumb, Hellen., p. 69. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 31-33, and Thack., Gr., p. 140 f., for similar phenomena in the LXX.
⁴ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 156. ⁵ Deissmann, B. S., p. 186.
⁷ Moulton, Prol., p. 48.
⁸ Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 25.
Moulton\textsuperscript{1} suggests that \textit{Νῦμφαν} (Col. 4:15 according to the correct text) is not clue to a Doric \textit{Νῦμφαν}, but by a "reverse analogy process" the genitive \textit{Νῦμφης} produced the short nominative \textit{Νῦμφα} like δόξα, δόξης. Blass\textsuperscript{2} calls \textit{χρυσάν} (Rev. 1:13) "a gross blunder, wrongly formed on the model of \textit{χρυσάς} 1:12," but Moulton\textsuperscript{3} holds that we have "abundant parallels."

(f) DOUBLE DECLENSION. This phenomenon appears in the case of \textit{Νέαν Πόλιν} (Ac. 16:11) and \textit{Γερά Πόλει} (Col. 4:13), the adjective as well as the substantive being treated separately in the first and third declensions.

(g) HETEROCLISIS (ἐτερὸκλισις) AND METAPLASM (μεταπλησμός). Blass\textsuperscript{4} makes no distinction in his treatment of heterocolisis and metaplasm, though the distinction is observed in Winer-Schmiedel.\textsuperscript{5} For practical use one may ignore the distinction and call all the examples metaplasm with Blass or heterocolisis with Moulton. The fluctuation is rare for the first declension in the N. T. In Ac. 28:8 editors properly read \textit{δυσεντέριον} rather than \textit{δυσεντέρια} (supported only by a few cursive). The form \textit{θεά} (Ac. 19:27) and the usual Attic \textit{ἡ θεός} (Ac. 19:37) are both found. This variation between the first and the second declensions is well illustrated by \textit{Γομώρρας} (2 Pet. 2:6) and \textit{Γομώρρων} (Mt. 10:15; —οίς, Mk. 6:11 Rec.), \textit{Λύστραν} (Ac. 14:6) and \textit{Λύστροις} (Ac. 14:8). Moulton\textsuperscript{7} finds abundant parallel in the Egyptian papyri use of place-names. In Rev. 1:11 ABC and some cursive read \textit{θυάτεραν} instead of the usual \textit{θυάτερα}. So in Ac. 27:5 some of the MSS. read \textit{Μύρραν} instead of \textit{Μύρρα} as accus., a reading confirmed by Ramsay,\textsuperscript{8} who found the accus. in —ον and the gen. in —ων. Moulton\textsuperscript{9} cites \textit{ἡ Ιεροσόλυμα} from two MSS. of xi/A.D. (Usener, \textit{Pelagia}, p. 50).

The chief variation between the first and second declensions appears in the compounds in —αρχης and (Attic) —αρχος. Moulton\textsuperscript{10} finds examples of it \textit{passim} in the papyri and calls the minute work of Winer-Schmiedel "conscientious labour wasted thereon." But Hort\textsuperscript{11} does not think these variations in good MSS. "wholly

\textsuperscript{2} Gr., p. 25, but 4th ed., p. 28, cites P. Lond. I, 124, 26, \textit{χρυσάν ἡ ἀργυράν}.
\textsuperscript{3} Prol., p. 48. "Falsche Analogie" acc. to W.-Sch., p. 81.
\textsuperscript{4} Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 28 f.
\textsuperscript{5} Pp. 83 ff. Thack. (Gr., p. 153) includes heterocolisis under metaplasm.
\textsuperscript{6} Prol., p. 48.
\textsuperscript{7} Ib., p. 244.
\textsuperscript{8} St. Paul the Traveller, p. 129. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 48. \textsuperscript{9} Ib.
\textsuperscript{10} Ib. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 34.
\textsuperscript{11} Notes on Orth., p. 156.
irregular." In the N. T. forms in -αρχς, like most of the dialects and the κοινή are greatly in the majority. Thus in the N. T. we have Ἀσιάρχης (Ac. 19:31; not in nom. in N. T.), έθναρχης (2 Cor. 11:32), πατριάρχης (Heb. 7:4), πολιτάρχης (Ac. 17:6, 8), τετραάρχης (Lu. 3:19), but always χιλιάρχος. In the addition of the β text to Ac. 28:16 the MSS. divide between στρατοπέδαρχος (HLP) and –άρχης (cursives). Εκατόνταρχος is the nominative in Mt. (8:5, 8; 27:54), and the accusative in —χον is found once in Acts (22:25). Elsewhere in all cases in Matthew, Luke and Acts the form in —χης is read by the best MSS. (as Ac. 10:1).

The first and the third declensions show variation in δίψως (old form δίψα) in 2 Cor. 11:27, where indeed B has δίψη instead of δίψει. Νίκη (the old form) survives in 1 Jo. 5:4, but elsewhere the late form νίκος prevails (as 1 Cor. 15:54 f.). The LXX likewise shows τὸ δίψως, τὸ νίκος interchangeably with the ή forms. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 49; Thackeray, Gr., p. 157. The dative Ιωάνης (third declension) instead of Ιωάν (first declension) is accepted a few times by W. H. (Mt. 11:4; Lu. 7:18; Rev. 1:1). Σαλαμίνη (first declension) for Σαλαμίνι (third declension) in Ac. 13:5, Hort considers only Alexandrian.

The third declension nouns often in various N. T. MSS. have the accusative singular of consonant stems in —ν in addition to —α, as χειραν in Jo. 20:25 (XAB), 1 Pet. 5:6 (XA). This is after the analogy of the first declension. Other examples are ἀρσεναν Rev. 12:13 (A), ασεβήν in Ro. 4:5 (XDFG), ἀστεραν in Mt. 2:10 (NC), ἀσφαλήν in Heb. 6:19 (ACD), Δίαν in Ac. 14:12 (DEH), εἰκόναν in Rev. 13:14 (A), μηναν in Rev. 22:2 (A), ποδήρην in Rev. 1:13 (A), συγγενήν in Ro. 16:11 (ABD), ὕψιν in Jo. 5:11 (X).

Blass rejects them all in the N. T., some as "incredible," though properly recalling the Attic τριήρην, θημοσθένην. Moulton finds this conformation to the "analogy of first declension nouns" very common in "uneducated papyri, which adequately foreshadows

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 28; K.-B1., I, 3, 502. Cf. also W.-M., p. 70 f; W.-Sch., p. 82; Soden, p. 1387 f. For illustrations from the LXX see W.-M. Cf. also Nachmanson, Magn. Inschr., p. 121. For numerous pap. examples of compounds from ἀρχω see Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap. (Laut- u. Wortl.), p. 256 f. For the LXX see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 37 f. Thack., Gr., p. 156, finds —αρχης outing —αρχος.

2 Notes on Orth., p. 156.


its victory in modern Greek." The inscriptions\(^1\) as well as the papyri have forms like γυνάκων, ἄνδραν, etc. It is these accusative forms on which the modern Greek nominative in ἀρχονται is made (of. Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 47) and thus blended the first and the third declensions.\(^2\) Hort\(^3\) will accept none of these readings in the N. T. because of the "irregularity and apparent capriciousness" of the MS. evidence, though he confesses the strength of the testimony for ἀσφαλῆν in Heb. 6:19, συγγενήν in Ro. 16:11, and χειραν in Jo. 20:25. These nouns are treated here rather than under the third declension because in this point they invade the precincts of the first. The LXX MSS. exhibit the same phenomena (ἐλπίδαν, μονογενήν, etc.). See Helbing, *Gr. d. Sept.*, p. 50; Thackeray, *Gr.*, p. 147. The opposite tendency, the dropping of ν in the first declension accusative, so common in modern Greek, is appearing in the papyri, as δέξιαν χειραν (Volker, *Papyrorum Graecorum Syntaxis* etc., p. 30 f.).

(h) INDECLINABLE SUBSTANTIVES. These are sometimes inflected in some of the cases in the first declension. Βηθαμά is accusative in Lu. 19:29, and so indeclinable, like Βηθφαγη, but elsewhere it is inflected regularly in the first declension (so –ιαν Mk. 11:1, etc.) save once or twice in B. Βηθσαίδα has accusative Βηθσαιδάν in Mk. 6:45; 8:22, but it may be only another alternate indeclinable form (Thayer) like Μαγαδάν. So likewise Γολγοθά has accusative in in Mk. 15:22. Hort\(^4\) finds "the variations between Μαρία and the indeclinable Μαριάμ" "singularly intricate and perplexing, except as regards the genitive, which is always –ιας, virtually without variation, and without difference of the persons intended." It is not necessary to go through all the details save to observe that as a rule the mother of Jesus and the sister of Martha are Μαριάμ, while Mary of Clopas is always Μαρία. Mary Magdalene is now Μαριάμ, now Μαρία. In the Aramaic as in the Hebrew probably all were called Μαριάμ. Μαρία is merely the Hellenized form of Μαριάμ. It is probably splitting too fine a hair to see with Hort\(^5\) a special appropriateness in Μαριάμ in Jo. 20:16, 18.

6. The Second or o Declension. There is no distinctively feminine inflection in the o declension, though feminine words oc-

---

\(^{1}\) Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 133.


\(^{3}\) Notes on Orth., p. 158. Kretschmer (Entst. der κοινή, p. 28) finds this acc. in —αυ in various dialect inscriptions. Cf. also Reinhold, De Graec. etc., p. 24, for χάριταν, etc.\(^{4}\) Notes on Orth., p. 156.  

\(^{5}\) Ib.
cur, like ἡ δῶξ. But the neuter has a separate inflection. Modern Greek preserves very few feminines in –ος.\(^1\) Thumb (Handb., p. 53 f.) gives none. The main peculiarities in the N. T. are here noted.

(a) THE SO-CALLED ATTIC SECOND DECLENSION. It is nearly gone. Indeed the Attic inscriptions began to show variations fairly early.\(^2\) The κοινὴ inscriptions\(^3\) show only remains here and there and the papyri tell the same story.\(^4\) Already λαός (as Lu. 1:21) has displaced λεώς and ναός (as Lu. 1:21) νεώς, though νεω-κόρος survives in Ac. 19:35. 'Ανάγαιον likewise is the true text in Mk. 14:15 and Lu. 22:12, not ἀνώγεων nor any of the various modifications in the MSS. In Mt. 3:12 and Lu. 3:17 ἡ ἀλων may be used in the sense of ἡ ἀλως (see Thayer) by metonymy. The papyri show ἀλως (Attic second declension) still frequently (Moulton and Milligan, Expositor, Feb., 1908, p. 180). Cf. same thing in LXX. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 49 f.; Con. and Stock, Sel. fr. LXX, p. 26; Thackeray, Gr., p. 144. 'Απολλώς has accusative in –ων in 1 Cor. 4:6 and Tit. 3:13, though the Western and Syrian classes have –ω in both instances. In Ac. 19:1 'Απολλώ is clearly right as only A2L 40 have –ων. The genitive is 'Απολλώ without variant (1 Cor. ter). So the adjective ἵλεως is read in Mt. 16:22 and Heb. 8:12, though a few MSS. have ἵλεος in both places. The best MSS. have τὴν Κώ in Ac. 21:1, not Κών as Text. Rec. Cf. 1 Macc. 15:23. Blass\(^5\) compares alb:os of the third declension.

(b) CONTRACTION. There is little to say here. The adjectives will be treated later. 'Οστοῦν (Jo. 19:36) has ὀστέα, accus. pl., in the best MSS. in Lu. 24:39 and ὀστέων in Mt. 23:27 and Heb. 11:22. So also ὀστέων in the Western and Syrian addition to Eph. 5:30. 'Ορνέου (Rev. 18:2) and ὀρνεα (Rev. 19:21) are without variant. The papyri show this Ionic influence on uncontracted vowels in this very word as well as in various adjectives (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 435). For examples in the LXX (as ὀστέων, 2 Ki. 13:21) see Winer-Schmiedel, p. 82, and Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 36; Thackeray, p. 144; Con. and Stock, Sel. fr. LXX, p. 27. Moulton\(^6\) considers it remarkable that the N. T. shows

---

\(^4\) Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 34. See also Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., 1906, p. 259 f. For the LXX see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 38 f., where a few exx. occur.
\(^5\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 25. Νεως appears in 2 Macc. 6:2, etc.
\(^6\) Prol., p. 48 f. He thinks it proof that the N. T. writers were not illiterate, since the pap. examples are in writers "with other indications of illiteracy." Cf. also Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 34.
no traces of the contraction of κύριος into κύρις and παιδίον into παιδί, for instance, since the papyri have so many illustrations of this tendency. The inscriptions\(^1\) show the same frequency of the –ις, –υν forms which finally won the day in modern Greek. Cf. Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 61.

(c) THE VOCATIVE. In the o declension it does not always end in ε in the masculine singular. θεός in ancient Greek is practically always retained in the vocative singular. The N. T. has the same form as in Mk. 15:34 (cf. also Jo. 20:28), but also once (Mt. 27:46). This usage is found occasionally in the LXX and in the late papyri.\(^2\) So also Paul uses Τιμόθεου twice (1 Tim. 1:18; 6:20). Aristophanes had Ἀμφίθεου, Lucian Τιμόθεου, and the inscriptions φιλόθεου.\(^3\) Note also the vocative υἱὸς Δαυείδ (Mt. 1:20) and even in apposition with κύριε (Mt. 15:22). The common use of the article with the nominative form as vocative, chiefly in the third declension, belongs more to syntax. Take as an instance of the second declension μὴ φοβοῦ, τὸ μικρὸν ποίμνιον (Lu. 12:32).

(d) HETEROCLISIS AND METAPLASM. Variations between the first and second declensions have been treated on p. 257. The number of such variations between the second and third declensions is considerable. Νοῦς is no longer in the second declension, but is inflected like βοῦς, viz. νοὸς (2 Th. 2:2), νοὶ (1 Cor. 14:15, 19). So πλοῦς in Ac. 27:9, not πλοῦ.\(^4\) The most frequent interchange is between forms in –ος, masculine in second declension and neuter in the third. In these examples the N. T. MSS. show frequent fluctuations. Τὸ ἔλεος wholly supplants τὸν ἔλεου (Attic) in the N. T. (as in the LXX), as, for instance, Mt. 9:13; 12:7; 23:23; Tit. 3:5; Heb. 4:16, except in a few MSS. which read ἔλεου. Without variant we have ἐλέους and ἐλεέ. On the other hand ὁ ζήλως is the usual N. T. form as in the ancient Greek (so ζήλω, Ro. 13:13; 2 Cor. 11:2), but τὸ ζήλως is the true text in 2 Cor. 9:2 and Ph. 3:6. In Ac. 5:17 only B has ζήλους, and all read ζῆλου in Acts 13:45. Ἡχος is usually masculine and in the second declension, as in Heb. 12:19 (cf. Lu. 4:37; Ac. 2:2), and for the

---

\(^1\) Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 125; Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 143. On the origin of these forms see Hatz., Einl., p. 318; Brug., Grundr., § 62 n.; Moulton, *Cl. Rev.*, 1901, p. 34.

\(^2\) Moulton, *Cl. Rev.*, 1901, pp. 34, 434.


\(^4\) Cf. Arrian, Peripl., p. 176. See W.-Sch., p. 84, for similar exx. in the inscr., as ὤδης, ὥδε in late Gk. For pap. exx. of βοῦν, πλοῦν and χοῦν see Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 257 f., 268 f.
earlier according to Moeris and Blass.\(^1\) In Lu. 21:25 W. H. read ἐχούς from ἐχῶ but Hort\(^2\) admits ἐκούς from τὸ ἐκούς to be possible, and Nestle reads ἐχούς in his sixth edition. In Ac. 3:10 C reads θεμβοῦ instead of θαμβοῦς. In eight instances in Paul (2 Cor. 8:2; Ph. 4:19; Col. 1:27; 2:2; Eph. 1:7, 2:7; 3:8, 16) in the nominative and accusative we have τὸ πλοῦτος, but ὁ πλοῦτος in Gospels, Jas., Heb., Rev. The genitive is always --του. Τὸ σκότος instead of ὁ σκότος is read everywhere in the N. T. save in the late addition to Heb. 12:18 where σκότω appears, though ζόφω is the true text. The form δάκρυσιν (Lu. 7:38, 44) is from δάκρυ, an old word that is found now and then in Attic, but τὸ δάκρυσσυν appears also in Rev. 7:17; 21:4; δακρύσσυν may belong to either decl. Σάββατον (–του, --τω) is the form used in the N. T. always, as Mk. 6:2, but σάββασιν as Mk. 1:21, etc. B has σαββάσιος, like the LXX sometimes, in Mt. 12:1, 12. Κατήγωρ is accepted by W. H. and Nestle in Rev. 12:10 on the authority of A against ΒC, which have the usual κατήγορος. According to Winer-Schmiedel\(^3\) this is not Greek, but a transliteration of the Aramaic ρβγγρ. Blass,\(^4\) however, thinks it is formed on the model of ρήμωρ.

Several words fluctuate between the masculine and the neuter in the second declension. In Lu. 14:16; Rev. 19:9, 17, several MSS. read δείπνος instead of the usual δείπνων. Like the old Greek, δεσμός has the plural δεσμα in Lu. 8:29; Ac. 16:26; 20:23, but οἱ δεσμοί in Ph. 1:13. Before Polybius –ζυγόν was more common. (Thayer), but in the N. T. it is ζυγός (Mt. 11:30). \(^5\) Ο θεμέλιος is the only form of the nom. sing. in the N. T., as 2 Tim. 2:10 (supply λόθος); Rev. 21:19, but τὰ θεμέλια (acc) in Ac. 16:24 like the LXX and the Attic. The plural θεμελίων we have in Help 11:10; Rev. 21:14, 19. θεμέλιον (acc.) may be either masculine, or neuter. In Ro. 11:10 ὁ νῶτος is used in the quotation from the 0. T. instead of the older τὸ νῶτον. In the early Greek ὁ σῖτος (never τὸ σίτου) had a plural in σῖτα as well as σῖτοι. The same, thing is true of the N. T. MSS. for Ac. 7:12 except that they divide between τὰ σῖτα and τὰ σῖτια, and σῖτια is the correct text.

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 28. Cf. LXX MSS., for like variations in 7-6 and ζ., ἐλεος and τὸ ἐλ., ἦ χος and τὸ ἦν, ὁ πλοῦτος and τὸ πλ. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 47 f. See p. 49 for σαββασι and σαββάτοις, δάκρυνον, δάκρυσιν and Cf. also Thack., Gr., pp. 153 ff.

\(^2\) Notes on Orth., p. 158. See W.-Sch., p. 84, for exx. of ἐκούς in the LXX.

\(^3\) P. 85. So also Thayer, the Rabbin's name for the devil.

\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 29; Deiss., Light, p. 90; Raderm., Gr., p. 15.
THE DECLENSIONS (ΚΛΙΣΕΙΣ) 263

Blass\(^1\) indeed objects that σιτία does not suit the sense. Στάδιον has στάδιος rather than the Attic στάδια in Lu. 24:13; Jo. 6:19 (W. H. and Nestle, but Tisch. στάδια ΝΔ), and is a marginal reading in Rev. 21:16 instead of στάδιοι.

(e) THE MIXED DECLENSION. Some substantives with special inflection have this. It is particularly in foreign names in the α and ο declensions that this inflection became popular. "The stem ends in a long vowel or diphthong, which receives —ς for nominative and --ν for accusative, remaining unchanged in vocative, genitive, and dative singular."\(^2\) Ιησοῦς is the most conspicuous of many N. T. examples. It plays a large part in modern Greek.\(^2\)

Hence we have Ιησοῦς nominative, Ιησοῦ genitive-ablative, as Mt. 26:6; dative, etc., as Mt. 27:57; vocative Mk. 1:24. Some MSS. of the LXX have dative Ιησών in Deut. 3:21, etc. The accusative is Ιησοῦν, as Mt. 26:4. Ιωσήφ is the genitive of Ιωσής according to the reading of Mt. 27:56 in W. H. Mg. instead of Ιωσήφι, but in Mk. 6:3 Ιωσήτος is the reading. So runs Λευές (nominative, Lu. 5: 29), Λευέι (genitive, Lu. 3: 24), Λευέιν (accusative, Lu. 5: 27). Dative appears only in the LXX as Gen. 34:30 Λευέι. Μανασσής has accusative Μανασσή in Mt. 1:10 and the genitive in ἦ (Rev. 7:6), but Hort\(^3\) calls attention to the fact that Ν B have Μανασσή instead of the nominative in Mt. 1:10, making the word indeclinable.

(f) PROPER NAMES. Ιακώβ is indeclinable in Mt. 1:2, but we have Ιακώβιον in Mt. 4:21. Several proper names have only the plural, as θυάτερα (Rev. 2:18, but B-ρη and ABC-ραν, 1:11), Ιεροσόλυμα (Mt. 2:1, but πάσα 'λ., 2:3), Φίλιπποί (Ac. 16:12), Καύδα (Ac. 27:16), Μῦρρα (Ac. 27:5), Πάταρα (Ac. 21:1), Σάρεπτα (Lu. 4:26), Σόδομα (Jude 7). The Latin words μόδιος (Mt. 5:15) and μάκελλον (1 Cor. 10:25) are inflected. So Latin proper names like Ιούστος (Ac. 18:7) and Παύλος (Ro. 1:1). For Γμόρρας and Λύστραν see 5 (g).

7. The Third Declension (consonants and close vowels ι and υ). The third declension could easily be divided into several and thus we should have the five declensions of the Sanskrit and the Latin. But the usual seven divisions of the third declension have the genitive-ablative singular in --ος (--ως). The consonantal

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 28. In the LXX MSS. we find δεσμοί and —α, ζυγοί, and —ά, θεμέλιοι and —α, νάτοι and —α, στάδιον and στάδιοι, σίτος and σίτα. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 46 f.; Thack., p. 154f.  
\(^2\) Moulton, Prol., p. 49.  
\(^3\) In the LXX proper names have great liberty in inflection. This is quite natural in a transl. Cf. Thack., Gr., pp. 160-171.
stems show more sweeping changes than the vocalic (sonantic) stems in this declension. Only those changes that are related to the N. T. Greek can be here discussed.

(a) THE NOMINATIVE AS VOCATIVE. There is an increasing use of nominative forms as vocatives. This usage had long existed for nouns that were oxytone or had labial or guttural stems. Elsewhere in general the stem had served as vocative. No notice is here taken of the common use of the article with the nominative form as vocative, like ἡ παῖς (Lu. 8:54), a construction coming under syntactical treatment. According to Winer-Schmieder the use of the singular without the article belongs also to syntax and the solution of W. H. is called "certainly false." Hort had suggested that in the case of θυγατήρ as vocative (Mk. 5:34; Lu. 8:48; Jo. 12:15) and πατήρ (Jo. 17:21, 24, 25) the long vowel (η) was pronounced short. Why not the rather suppose that the vocative is like the nominative as in the case of labial and guttural stems? The usage is thus extended sometimes to these liquids. Indeed, in Jo. 17:25 we have πατήρ ἀγαθε that the adjective having the vocative form. In Mk. 9:19 (Lu. 9:41) we have ὁ γεμεδ ἀπίστος and ἀφρών in Lu. 12:20; 1 Cor. 15:36. See also ὁ πάτης (Ac. 13:10) for —ίς, which might be an indeclinable form like the accusative (II, 2 (f)). But these adjectives show that the usage is possible with substantives. There are indeed variant readings in the MSS. above, which have θυγατήρ and πατήρ, but in Mt. 9:22 DGL have θυγατήρ. Note also ἄνερ (1 Cor. 7:16) and γώναι (Lu. 13:12). For peculiarities in nom. see (d).

(b) THE ACCUSATIVE SINGULAR. The theoretical distinction that consonant-stems had the accusative singular in –α and vocalic stems in –υ began to break down very early. From the third century B.C. Jannaris suspects that popular speech began to have all accusative singulars with –υ, an overstatement, but still the tendency was that way. The use of –υ with words like πόλιν, ναῦν (Ac. 27:41, only time in N. T., elsewhere vernacular πλοῖον, etc., together with the analogy of the first and second declensions, had a positive influence. See p. 258 for discussion of the double accusative ending –α plus –υ, like ἀνδραυ in the papyri. These forms belong in reality to the third declension, though formed after the analogy of the first, and so were presented when first reached in the Lis-

cussion. However, there are other consonant-stems which form the accusative in –ν instead of –α. In Tit. 3:9 and Ph. 1:15 we have ἕριν instead of ἕριδα. 1 So in Rev. 3:7 and 20:1 the Attic κλεῖν is read, for this is not a new tendency by any means, but Lu. 11:52 the MSS. have κλεῖδα, though here also D has κλεῖν. Κλεῖδα is found in the LXX as in Judg. 3:25. Χάριτα appears in Ac. 24:27 and Ju. 4, and A has it in Ac. 25:9, but the Attic χάριν holds the field (forty times). 2 In the LXX the Ionic and poetical χάριτα occurs only twice (Zech. 4:7; 6:14) and is absent from the papyri before the Roman period. Cf Thackeray, Gr., p. 150. For the irrational ν with μείζων in Jo. 5:36 see Adjectives. In Ac. 27:40 the correct text is αρτέμουνα, not --ονα, from nom. αρτέμων.

(c) THE ACCUSATIVE PLURAL. In Winer-Schmiedel (p. 88) ἕρεις is given as nominative and accusative except in 1 Cor. 1:11 (ἔριδες, nom.), but as a matter of fact the accusative plural does not appear in the N. T. except as an alternative reading ἕρεις in ΡςACKLP, in Tit. 3:9 (correct text ἕριν). In Gal. 5:20 W. H. put ἕρεις in the margin rather than ἕρις, probably "an itacistic error." 3 W. H. read τας κλεις in Rev. 1:18, but κλεῖδας in Mt. 16:19. In Ac. 24:27 χάριτας is supported by HP and most of the cursive against χάριτα (correct text) and χάριν (ΡςEL, etc.). The accusative in -νς has changed into -ας with --u and --ου stems, as βόςς from βοῦς (Jo. 2:14 f., cf. LXX), βότρυας from βότρυς (Rev. 14:18), ἰχθυας from ἰχθύς (Mt. 14:17). 4 This simplification of the accusative plural was carried still further. Just as πόλεας had long ago been dropped for πόλεις, so βασιλεας has become --εις like the nominative, "and this accusative plural is regular in N. T. for all words in --εις." 5 In the LXX --εις appears a few times, but since 307 B.C. the Attic inscriptions show --εις as accusative. 6 It is found indeed sometimes in Xenophon and

---

1 Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 157. For the LXX see Thack., p. 140; Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 40 f., where the N. T. situation is duplicated.
2 See Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 151, for illustr. of these accs. in the inscr. For the pap. see Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 35, both χάριτας and χάριν, etc. Cf. Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 271 f.
3 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 157.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 26.
Thucydides, though the strict Atticists disown it. Cf. γραμματεῖς in Mt. 23:34, etc. A few forms in —ες survive in the inscriptions.  

1 Νήστεις (from νῆστις) is the correct accusative in Mk. 8:3 and Mt. 15:32. Ἡ here reads νῆστις, but is unreliable on this itacism (Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 157). The Achaean, Elean, Delphian and Phocian inscriptions\(^2\) (Northwest Greek) have the accusative plural in —ες just like the nominative (cf. Latin).  

It is very common in the modern Greek vernacular and in the papyri.\(^4\) Moulton\(^5\) finds many examples like γυναῖκες, μήνες, ὄντες, πάντες, τέκτονες, τέσσαρες, etc. In the LXX τέσσαρες as accusative is very common as a variant in the text of Swete.\(^6\) In Herodotus τεσσάρεσκαιδέκα is indeclinable and τρεισκαίδεκα in Attic since 300 B.C.\(^7\) So in the N. T. some MSS. read τέσσαρες (though the most still have τέσσαρας) as ΝΑ in Jo. 11:17, Ν in Ac. 27:29, ΑΠ in Rev. 4:4; 7:1, Ν in Rev. 9:14.\(^8\) In Rev. 4:4 the best authority (Ν, ΑΠ, etc.) is really on the side of τέσσαρες (second example).\(^9\) Indeed "in the N. T. τέσσαρας never occurs without some excellent authority for τέσσαρες."\(^10\) In the first 900 of Wilcken's ostraca, Moulton (Prol., p. 243) finds forty-two examples of accusative τέσσαρες and twenty-nine of τέσσαρας. Moulton\(^11\) considers it probable that other nominative forms in Revelation, like αὐτέρες in Α (Rev. 1:16), may be illustrations of this same tendency.

---

\(^1\) Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 150.  
\(^3\) Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 546.  
\(^6\) W.-Sch., p. 87.  
\(^7\) Ib. Cf. Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 163 f.  
\(^8\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 26. Cf. Jann., p. 120.  
\(^10\) Moulton, Prol., p. 36. "In Rev. CB have —ρας, Ν 3/5, ΑΠ 3/6." H. Scott.  
\(^11\) Ib. This use of —ες as acc. may be compared with the common acc. pl. in —ες in the mod. Gk. vernac. Cf. Thumb, Handb., pp. 47 ff. Cf. nom. like ὁ πατέρας (Psichari, Ess. de Gr. Hist. Neo-grecque, 1886, I partie, p. Even ἡμέρες, πολίτες, etc. In the Eleatic dialect. the loc.-dat. pl. is —οις as in χρηματοις. Cf. Meister, Bd. II, p. 61. The LXX MSS. show τέσσαρες as acc. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 54. The acc. in —ες rare in LXX MSS. outside of τέσσαρες. Thack., Gr., p. 148. Moulton (Prol., p. 243, ed. 2) suggests that this tendency started with τέσσαρες because it is the only early cardinal that had a separate form for the acc. plural.
(d) PECULIARITIES IN THE NOMINATIVE. In general one may say that the various ways of forming the nominative singular in Greek are blending gradually into unity, the masculine in ζ and the feminine in α or η. Many of the new substantives went over to the first declension.¹ Luke has gen. 'Ελαιώνος, in Ac. 1:12 from nom. 'Ελαιών, and the papyri give nearly thirty examples of this noun.² Jos. also (Ant. vii, 9, 2) has 'Ελαιώνος. On the other hand the use of 'Ελαία is frequent (in Jos. also), as εἰς τὸ ὄρος τῶν 'Ελαιῶν, (Mt. 21:1). But in Lu. 19:29 we have πρὸς τὸ ὄρος τὸ καλὸμένου 'Ελαιῶν, (W. H.),and in Lu. 21:37 εἰς τὸ ὄρος κτλ. In both these examples it would be possible to have 'Ελαιών, not as an indeclinable substantive, but as a lax use of the nominative with ὁ καλὸμένος (cf. Revelation and papyri). So Deissmann.³ But even so it is still possible for 'Ελαιῶν to be proper (on the whole probably correct) in these two disputed passages.⁴ It is even probable that the new nominative 'Ελαιῶν, is made from the genitive 'Ελαιῶν.⁵ Ἑρεῖς is a variant with ἔρεις in Gal. 5:20 ( marg. W. H.), 1 Cor. 3:3; 2 Cor. 12:20; 1 Tim. 6:4, but in 1 Cor. 1:11 all MSS. have ἔρεις. W. H. once (Ac. 1:10) accept the rare form ἐσθησίς (2, 3 Macc.) rather than the usual ἐσθης, though the Alexandrian and Syrian classes have it also in Lu. 24:4. In Lu. 13:34 ΝΔ read nominative not found in ancient Greek (Thayer), though the Doric used the oblique cases ὅρνιχος, etc.⁶ Elsewhere in all MSS. the usual ὅρνις occurs, as Mt. 23:37, and in the N. T. only the nominative singular is found.⁷ Another contrary tendency to the usual ζ in the nominative singular is seen in ὁδίς (1 Th. 5:3; cf. also Is. 37:3) for the usual ὁδίς. The papyri show forms like ὁξύρπυν.

One or two points about neuter substantives call for remark. The inflection in —ας, —αος = —ως, has nearly vanished.⁸ A few examples still survive in the inscriptions.⁹ In Lu. 1:36 the Ionic form γῆρει from γῆρας is found, as often in the LXX and Test.

¹ Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 121.
² Moulton, ProL, p. 49; Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 35. Deiss., B. S., pp. 208 ff.
⁴ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 159. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 93. Moulton (ProL., pp. 69, 235) has a full presentation of the facts.
⁵ Moulton, ProL., p. 235.
⁶ The form ὅρνιξι appears several times in the pap. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 35. Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 149.
⁷ W.-Sch., p. 89. LXX ὅρνιθων.
⁹ Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 156.
XII Pat. 1. Κέρας always in the N. T. (as in LXX) has the Attic plural κέρατα (Rev. 8 times) and τέρας regularly τέρατα (11 times). The plural κρέα (from κρέας) is the only form in the N. T. (1 Cor. 8:13; Rom. 14:21) as in the LXX, though a MSS. or so in each case has κρέας (singular).

(e) THE GENITIVE-ABLATIVE FORMS. These call for little remark save in the adjective, for which see later. Συνάπεως (from σύναπτι) is uniform in the N. T., as Mt. 17:20. Πηχυς has no genitive singular in the N. T. though πηχεως is common in the LXX, but has πηχεπων (from Ionic πηχεέων or through assimilation to neuters in –ος), not the Attic πηχεων. In Jo. 21:8 only A Cyr. have πηχεευν and in Rev. 21:17 only Χ. 3. For the genitive singular of ιωσης and Μανασσης see 6 (e).

(f) CONTRACTION. It is not observed in ὄρεων (Rev. 6:15) and χειλεόν (Heb. 13:15). In both instances the Ionic absence of contraction is always found in the LXX (Prov. 12:14). This open form is not in the Attic inscriptions, though found in MSS. of Attic writers and the poets especially. 4 In the κοινη it is a "widespread tendency" to leave these forms in —ος uncontracted, though ἐτων is correct in Ac. 4:22, etc. 5 So the LXX, Thackeray, Gr., p. 151.

(g) PROPER NAMES. Μωσης has always the genitive-ablative Μωσεως (Jo. 9:28), though no nominative Μωσευς is known. The genitive Μωση appears usually in the LXX, as Num. 4:41, and the vocative Μωση as in Ex. 3:4. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 163 f. W. H. have Μωσει (always with v. r. —η) as in Mk. 9:4, except in Ac. 7:44 where the form in —η is due to the LXX (usual form there). 6 The accusative is Μωσεα once only (Lu. 16:29), elsewhere —ην, as in Ac. 7:35 (so LXX). Σολομων (so in the nominative, not —ων) is indeclinable in Χ in Mt. 1:6 as usually in the LXX. But the best MSS. in Mt. 1:6 have the accusative Σολομωνα, a few —ωνα. So the genitive Σολομωνος in Mt. 12:42;

4 W.-Sch., p. 88. 5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 27.
6 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 158. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 581-60, for discussion of the decl. of proper names in the LXX. The phenomena correspond to those in N. T. MSS. Προμηθευς had an Attic nom. —ης, gen. —εως, Thumb, Handb., § 330. 1,
though a few MSS. have –ωντος. The Gospels have uniformly the genitive in —ωνος. But in Ac. 3:11 W. H. accept Σολομώντος (so also 5:12), though BD etc. have ωνος in 5:12. Cf. Ξενοφωντος (from nominative –ων). Διοσκήρ (3 Jo. 9) and Ερμογένης (2 Tim. 1:15) occur in nom. There are other proper names (Roman and Semitic) which are inflected regularly like Βαβυλών (Mt. 1:11), Γαλλίων (Ac. 18:12), Ελαιών (Ac. 1:12) Καίσαρ (Mt. 22:17), Σαρών (Ac. 9:35), Σιδών (Mt. 11:21), Σίμων (Mt. 4:18). There should be mentioned also Σαλαμίς (dative —ινι, Ac. 13:5). Cf. proper names in the LXX, Thackeray, Gr., pp. 163 ff.

(h) HETEROCLISIS AND METAPLASM. Most of the examples have already been treated under the first declension 5 (g) or the second declension 6 (d). The accusative ἀλά (Mk. 9:50) is like the old Greek ὁ ἀλάς. Some MSS. (Western and Syrian classes) in Mk. 9:49 have ἄλι also. In Mk. 9:50 ΧΑΛA have τὸ ἄλα as nominative (cf. Lev. 2:13) like γάλα. But the best MSS. (ΚΒΔΛΔ) give τὸ ἄλας in the first two examples in 9:50 and ἄλα (accusative) in the third (so W. H.). So also Mt. 5:13 and Lu. 14:34. Cf. dative ἄλατι in Col. 4:6. In the LXX τὸ ἄλας is rare (Thackeray, Gr., p. 152). Papyri show τὸ ἄλας in third century B.C. (Moulton, and Milligan, Expositor, Feb., 1908, p. 177). Instead of ὁρνις in Rev. 18:2 we have the genitive ὁρνεου, from ὁρνεον (good old Greek word), ὁρνεόκις in Rev. 19:17, and ὁρνεα in 19:21. In Mk. 6:4 and Lu. 2:44 συγγενεύσι. (cf. 1 Macc. 10:88) is probably1 from συγγενεύς, not συγγενής. Cf. 1 Macc. 10:89. This is a good place for me to record the admiration which has possessed me as I have tested the work of Hort through the maze of details in the MS. evidence concerning the forms.

8. Indeclinable Words. These do not, of course, belong to any declension. Josephus Grecized most of the Hebrew proper names like Ἀμίναβος (Mt. 1:4, Ἀμιναδαβ).2 Some he put in the first declension, many in the second and third declensions.3 Blass4 sums the matter up by observing that "the Hebrew personal names of the 0. T., when quoted as such," are indeclinable. This is an overstatement. But certainly many that in the LXX and the N. T. are not inflected, might have been, such, for instance, as Ἀαρών, Ἰακώβ, Κεδρών, Σαλμών, Συμεών, to go no further.5 It is hardly worth while to give the entire list of these words.

1 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 158. 2 Ib. for extensive list. 3 W.-Sch., p. 91. 4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 29. 5 Thack., Gr., p. 169, suggests that place-names in —ων are declined or indeclinable according to rank and distance.
They include such other words as the majority of those in the genealogy in Mt. 1 and that in Lu. 3, besides many other proper names, including such geographical names as Ἀϊνὼν, Βηθφαγη, Σίων, Σινα, etc.

There are other indeclinable Hebrew and Aramaic words such as Κορβᾶν (Mk. 7:11), μάννα (Rev. 2:17), πάσχα (Lu. 2:41), σικέρα (Lu. 1:15 as in LXX). The gender (fem.) of the indeclinable οὐαί (Rev. 9:12; 11:14) is probably due, as Blass suggests, to θλίψις. In 1 Cor. 9:16 οὐαί is used as a substantive (so also LXX).

The use of ὅ ὁν καὶ ὅ ην καὶ ὅ ἐρχόμενος in the nominative after ἀπό in Rev. 1:4, etc., belongs more to syntax than to acidence. It is evidently on purpose (to express the unchangeableness of God), just as ὅ διδάσκαλος καὶ ὅ κύριος is in apposition with με (Jo. 13:13) in lieu of quotation-marks.

II. THE ADJECTIVE ("ΟΝΟΜΑ "ΕΠΙΘΕΤΟΝ)

Donaldson is probably right in saying that, in general, the explanation of the adjective belongs to syntax rather than to etymology. But there are some points concerning the adjective that demand treatment here.

1. The Origin of the Adjective. Adjectives are not indispensable in language, however convenient they may be. In the Sanskrit, for instance, the adjective plays an unimportant part. Whitney says: "The accordance in inflection of substantive and adjective stems is so complete that the two cannot be separated in treatment from one another." He adds that this wavering line of distinction between substantive and adjective is even more uncertain in Sanskrit than in the other early Indo-Germanic tongues. Most of the Sanskrit adjectives have, three endings, the masculine and neuter being usually α stems while the feminine may have α or ι, this matter being "determined in great part only by actual usage, and not by grammatical rule." So likewise Giles in his Comparative Philology has no distinct treatment of adjectives. The adjective is an added descriptive appellative (ὁνομα επιθετον) while the substantive is an essential appellative (ὁνομα ουσιαστικών). But substantives were doubtless

---

1 See further list in W.-Sch., p. 91.  
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 32.  
3 New Crat., p. 502.  
5 Sans. Gr., p. 111.  
6 Ib. Cf. Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 117, for the adjectival use of the substantive.
used in this descriptive sense before adjectives arose, as they are still so used. So, for instance, we say brother man, Doctor A., Professor B., etc. Cf. in the N. T. ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνη ποταμῷ (Mt. 3:6), etc. This is, indeed, apposition, but it is descriptive apposition, and it is just at this point that the adjective emerges in the early period of the language.¹ Other Greek adjectives in form as in idea are variations from the genitive case, the genus case.² In itself the adjective is as truly a noun as the substantive. As to the form, while it is not necessary³ that in every case the adjective express its gender by a different inflection, yet the adjectives with three genders become far commoner than those with two or one.⁴ From the etymological point of view this inflection in different genders is the only distinction between substantive and adjective.⁵ The Greek has a much more highly developed system of adjectives than the Sanskrit, which has survived fairly well in modern Greek, though a strong tendency is present to simplify adjectives to the one declension (—ος, —η, —ον). Participles, though adjectives in inflection, are also verbs in several respects and call for separative discussion. The process of treating the adjective as a substantive belongs to syntax.⁶ The substantivizing of the adjective is as natural, though not so common in Greek as in Latin, as the adjectivizing of the substantive which we have been discussing.⁷ The distinction between adjective and substantive is hard to draw in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 66). In modern Greek every adjective has a special feminine form. The development is complete. Cf. Thumb, pp. 66 ff.

2. Inflection of Adjectives. In Greek as in Sanskrit, the adjective has to follow the inflection of the substantive in the various declensions, the three genders being obtained by combining the first with the second or the third declensions.

(a) ADJECTIVES WITH ONE TERMINATION. Of course at first this may have been the way the earliest adjectives arose. Then the genders would be formed. But analogy soon led to the formation of most adjectives with three endings. Some of these

² Donaldson, New Crat., p. 474.
⁴ Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 139.
⁶ Brug. (Griech. Gr., pp. 413–417) has no discussion of the adjective save from the syntactical point of view.
⁷ See Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 414 f., for numerous exx. in the earlier Gk.
adjectives with one ending were used only with the masculine or the feminine, and few were ever used with the neuter. Jannaris considers them rather substantives than adjectives, but they illustrate well the transition from substantive to adjective, like ἀξίας, μάκαρ, φυγάς. In fact they are used of animated beings. In the N. T. we have ἄρσκει (Mt. 7:15; 1 Cor. 5:10), πένης (2 Cor. 9: 9. Cf. πλάνης, Jude 13 B), and συγγενείς (Lu. 1:36). Συγγενείς is a later feminine form like εὐγενής for the usual συγγενής (both masculine and feminine) which Winer treats as a substantive (so Thayer). Strictly this feminine adjective belongs only to words in -τής and -εῦς. Blass quotes εὐγενίδων γυναικῶν by way of comparison. Modern Greek still has a few of these adjectives in use. The ancient adjectives in -ής (εὐγενής) have disappeared from the modern Greek vernacular (Thumb, Handb., p. 72).

(b) ADJECTIVES WITH TWO TERMINATIONS. Some adjectives never had more than two endings, the masculine and the feminine having the same form. In the so-called Attic second declension this is true of ὄλεως (Mt. 16:22). But a few simple adjectives of the second declension never developed a feminine ending, as, for instance, βάρδαρος (1 Cor. 14:11), ε(α)φυίδιος (Lu. 21: 34), σπωτήριος (Tit. 2:11). In the N. T. ἡσυχίας has changed to ἡσυχίος (1 Pet. 3:4). The adjectives in the third declension which end in -ής or -ων have no separate feminine form. So εὐγενής (Lu. 19:12), εὐσεβής (Ac. 10: 7) μείζων (Jo. 15:13), etc. Then again some simple adjectives varied in usage in the earlier Greek, especially in the Attic, and some of these have only two endings in the N. T., like ἀξίας (Ro. 1:20), ξήμενος (Ac. 1:20, etc., and often as substantive with γῆ or χώρα not expressed), κόσμιος (1 Tim. 2:9), ὁφράντιος (Lu. 2:13; Ac. 26:19), φλύαρος (1 Tim. 5:13), φρόνιμος (Mt. 25:2, 4, 9), ὑφέλιμος (1 Tim. 4:8; 2 Tim. 3:16). With still others N. T. usage itself varies as in the case of αἰώνιος (Mt. 25:46, etc.) and αἰωνία (Heb. 9:12; 2 Th. 2:16, and often as a variant reading); ἐτοίμος (Mt. 25:10) and ἐτοίμη (1 Pet. 1:5); μᾶταῖος (Jas. 1:26) and ματάεια (1 Pet. 1:18); ὁμοίος (Rev. 4: 3, second example correct text) and ὁμοία (Rev. 9:10),


7 In the LXX we see a very slight tendency towards giving a fem. form to all adj. Thack., Gr., p. 172.
though W. H. put ὀμοίας in the margin instead of ὀμοίας, 19); ἢσιος (1 Tim. 2:8; so probably, though ἢσιος may be construed with ἐπαίροντας instead of χαίρας). The early Attic inscriptions furnish examples of two endings with such adjectives as δόκιμος (no feminine example in the N. T.) and λοιπός with either two or three (N. T. only three).¹ The papyri furnish ἔρημος and οὐφάνιος as feminine and others not so used in the N. T., as δικαίος, μέτριος, σπόριμος.² It was the rule with compound adjectives to have only two endings, for the most of them never developed a feminine form, as ὁ ἐλλειπεν.³ This tendency survives in the inscriptions, especially with compounds of α— privative and prepositions, and in the papyri also we have abundant examples.⁴ The N. T. usage is well illustrated by 1 Pet. 1:4, εἰς κληρονομιὰν ἀφθαρτὸν καὶ ἀμὴν-τὸν καὶ ἀμάραντον. Cf. Jas. 3: 17.

(c) ADJECTIVES WITH THREE TERMINATIONS. The great majority of Greek adjectives, like αγαθός, --η, --ον, developed three endings and continue normal (cf. Thumb, Handbook, p. 68), as is universal in the modern Greek. Some of the compound adjectives also had three endings, especially compounds in --ικός and --ιος, as μοναρχική, ἀναξία (Plato).⁵ The same thing is observed in the inscriptions⁶ and the papyri.⁷ In the N. T. we have several examples, as ἀργός, --η (Attic always ἀργός, though Epimenides has --η) in 1 Tim. 5:13; Tit. 1:12; Jas. 2:20 according to BC. In Mk. 4:28 αὐτοματή is not entirely new, for classic writers use it. In 2 Jo. 13 (and probably also 1) we have ἐκλεκτή. In Mt. 4:13 the MSS. give παραθαλασσία, but D has --ίον. However, in Lu. 6:17 παράλιος is the feminine form, though occasionally the LXX and older Greek had --α, varying like the other compounds in --ιος. Other adjectives of three endings belong to the third and

¹ Cf. Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 148. Cf. also αἰώνιος, κόσμιος, in Magnesia Magn. Inschr., p. 140). Aristophanes used βασιλείος, βέβαιος, μακά-ριος, οὐφάνιος, πάριος with two endings (G. Wirth, De Motione Adjectivorum, 1580, p. 51). This is true also of Euripides (ib., p. 49 f.). For further discussion of adjectives with two endings see Wilhelm, Zur Motion der Adjec. dreier End. in Griech. etc., p. 23; Wilhelm, Der Sprachgebr. der Lukianos etc., p. 23. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 57 f. On the whole the LXX shows the extension of the fem. so that adj.s which in Attic have two or three terminations have three in the LXX (ἀγριος, βέβαιος, δικαίος, ἐλευθερος, μάταιος). Thack., Gr., p. 172.
⁵ K.-B1., I, p. 538 f.
⁶ Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 158.
⁷ Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 291.
the first declensions, like ὀξύς, ὀξεῖα, ὀξύ; πᾶς, πᾶσα, πᾶν; ἐκών, ἐκοῦσα, ἐκοῦν; μέλας, μέλαινα, μέλαν; μέγας, μεγάλη, μέγα; πλύς, πολλή, πολύ.


(d) THE ACCUSATIVE SINGULAR. Some adjectives of the third declension have ν after the analogy of the first declension. See this chapter, 1, 5, (g), for the discussion in detail. W. H. reject them all, though in a few cases the testimony is strong.¹ They are ἀσεβήν (Ro. 4 :5), ἀσφαλήν (Heb. 6:19), μείζων (Jo. 5:36), συγγενήν (Ro. 16:11), ὑγίην (Jo. 5:11). The use of irrational ν with μείζω (Jo. 5:36 μείζων in ABEGM D) is likened by Moulton (Prol., p. 49) to irrational ν with subjunctive η (ην). Cf. ch. VI, II (h), p. 220.

(e) CONTRACTION IN ADJECTIVES. Two points are involved, the fact of contraction (or the absence of it) and the use of α or η after ε, ι, ρ. The uncontracted forms of adjectives are not so common as is the case with substantives. Cf. this chapter, 1, 6, (b). The contracted forms are practically confined to forms in –ους, like ἀπλοῦς, διπλοῦς, ἀργυροῦς, πορφυροῦς, σιδηροῦς, χαλκοῦς, χρυσοῦς. Here again we have a still further limitation, for the uncontracted forms occur chiefly in the Apocalypse and in Ξ and in the case of χρυσοῦς.² Cf. Rev. 4:4; 5:8, where Ξ reads χρυσέους, –έας. But in Rev. 2:1 ΞPB read χρυσάων, while AC have χρυσάων. Χρυσάων in Rev. 1:13, though accepted by W. H. and read by ΥΑC, is rejected by Blass, but admitted by Debrunner (p. 28), as shown on p. 257. P. Lond. reads χρυσάων ἦ ἀργυράν, and L. P.⁴ (ii/iii A.D.) also has χρυσάων ἦ ἀργυράν. In each instance probably analogy has been at work.⁴ Thackeray (Gr., p. 172 f.) gives a very few uncontracted forms in –νσ in the LXX. W. H. accept the genitive βαθέως in Lu. 24:1 and πραέως in 1 Pet. 3:4 instead of the usual form in –νς. Hert⁵ considers the variations in ἄμισος as "curious," but they find abundant parallel in the

¹ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 157 f. For pap. exx. of ὑγίην see Mays, Gr. d. grieich. Pap., p. 295. Thack. (Gr., p. 146) considers it a vulgarism, though it began as early as iv/B.C. (see Σωκράτην, τριήρην). It is common i/ii A.D.

² Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 157; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 25. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 34 f., for LXX.


⁵ Notes on Orth., p. 158.
THE DECLENSIONS (ΚΛΙΣΕΙΣ) 275

papyri as does χρυσέων above. In Mk. 6:23 ἡμίσως, not --εος, is the genitive form, the usual (probably only) form in the papyri. The neuter plural ἡμίσεα has practically no support in Lu. 19:8, though ἡμίση is the Text. Rec. on the authority of late uncials and cursives. Τά ἡμίσυ has slight support. W. H. read τά ἡμίσια (RQ 382, L having itacistic —εια) and derive it from a possible ἡμίσιος. But it is possible, if not probable, that ἡμίσεα was the earlier form changed by itacism to ἡμίσια. The plural of νήσις is νήστεις (Mk. 8:3; Mt. 15:32), and not νήστις as already shown. For participles in —ωια, —ωις see this chapter, p. 256.

As a rule the forms in —ωις and —ρης predominate, but note στείρα, in Lu. 1:36. In the case of ὑγιής, whereas the Attic had accusative ὑγία (ὑγιή in Plato, Phadr. 89 d), the N. T., like the inscriptions, papyri and the LXX, has only ὑγιή (Jo. 5:11, 15; 7:23). In Jo. 18:1 χειμάρρου is almost certainly from χείμαρρος instead of the classical χειμάρρους. In 2 Pet. 2:5 ὄγδουν is not contracted, though sometimes the papyri have ὄγδους, ὄγδουν.

(f) INDECLINABLE ADJECTIVES. The papyri have cleared up two points of much interest here. One is the use of πλήρης in N. T. MSS. in an oblique case. In Mk. 4:28 Hort (Appendix, p. 24) suggests πλήρης στον (C* two lectionaries) as probably the original. In Ac. 6:5 W. H. put ἄνδρα πλήρης in the margin, though πλήρη is read only by B among the MSS. of importance. In Jo. 1:14 all the MSS. (save D 5 followed by Chrys. and Theoph.) have πλήρης. Moulton indeed suggests that πλήρη was the original text, which was changed to the vulgar πλήρης. But the argument can be turned round just as easily. In almost every N. T. instance of an oblique case of πλήρης good uncials have the indeclinable form (Moulton, Prol., p. 50). The LXX also has examples of indeclinable πλήρης (cf. Hort, Appendix, p.

1 Χρυσέω is exceedingly common in the pap. (Moulton, Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901, p. 435).
2 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 294 f. Cf. also Deiss., B. S., p. 186; Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 34. So also the LXX, Thack., Gr., p. 179.
4 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 87. 'Ημίσεια occurs in Antoninus Liberalis (ab. 150 A.D.) and οικείος is analogous.
5 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 157. 6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 25.
7 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 35. For adjs. with acc. in —η (and sometimes ν added, —ην) see Dieterich, Unters., p. 175. Cf. this ch., II, 2, (d).
8 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 25. 9 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 294.
10 Prol., p. 50. See Cronert, Mem., p. 179; Turner, Jour. Theol. St., I, pp. 100 ff. Milligan (N. T. Doc. s, p. 65) finds one ex. of indecl. πλήρης B.C.
24). So Job 21:24, \(x\ABC.\) The examples of \(\pi\lambda\eta\rho\eta\varsigma\) so used are "fairly common" in the papyri\(^1\) and come as early as the second century B.C.\(^2\) There seems therefore no reason to refuse to consider \(\pi\lambda\eta\rho\eta\varsigma\) in Jo. 1:14 as accusative and to accept it as the text in Mk. 4:28 and Ac. 6:5. The other example of indeclinable adjectives is found in comparative forms in \(-\omega\), like \(\pi\lambda\epsilon\iota\omega\). Moulton\(^3\) points out that in Mt. 26:53 \(\text{BD}\) read \(\pi\lambda\epsilon\iota\omega\ \delta\omega\delta\epsilon\kappa\alpha\ \lambda\epsilon\gamma\iota\omega\nu\alpha\varsigma\), while the later MSS. have mended the grammar with \(\pi\lambda\epsilon\iota\omega\varsigma\). He quotes also Cronert\(^4\) who has furnished abundant evidence from the papyri and literature of such a use of these forms just like \(\pi\lambda\eta\rho\eta\varsigma\). Cf. Mayser, \(Gr. d. griech. Papyri\), p. 63 f.

3. Comparison of Adjectives. The comparative is a natural development in the adjective, as the adjective itself is a growth on the substantive.

(a) THE POSITIVE (\(\theta\epsilon\tau\iota\kappa\omega\dot{\nu} \dot{o}\nu\mu\alpha \text{ OR } \dot{o}\nu\mu\alpha \dot{a}\pi\lambda\omega\dot{\nu}\nu\)). This is the oldest form of the adjective, the most common and the most persistent. It is not always true that the comparative and superlative forms represent an actually higher grade than the positive. The good is sometimes more absolute than better or even best. See \(\dot{a}\gamma\alpha\theta\dot{\omicron}\varsigma\) in Mk. 10:18, for instance. Sometimes indeed the positive itself is used to suggest comparison as in Mt. 18:8, \(\kappa\alpha\lambda\omicron\nu \sigma\nu\varsigma \dot{e}\st\iota\nu \epsilon\iota\sigma\epsilon\lambda\theta\epsilon\iota\nu \ldots \hat{\eta} \dot{d}\upsilon\omega \chi\epsilon\iota\rho\alpha\varsigma\), \(\kappa\tau\lambda\). This construction is common in the LXX, suggested perhaps by the absence of comparison in Hebrew.\(^5\) The tendency of the later Greek is also constantly to make one of the degrees do duty for two. Cf. Thackeray, \(Gr.,\) p. 181. But this matter belongs rather to the syntax of comparison. Participles are, of course, used only in the positive save in a few cases where the adjective-idea has triumphed wholly over the verb-conception.\(^6\) Verbs in —τος sometimes have comparison, though \(\mu\underline{\alpha}\lambda\lambda\nu\), may be freely used with participles.

(b) THE COMPARATIVE (\(\sigma\nu\gamma\kappa\rho\iota\tau\iota\kappa\iota\kappa\dot{\nu} \dot{o}\nu\mu\alpha\)). The stem may be (besides adjective) either a substantive (\(\beta\alpha\sigma\iota\lambda\epsilon\upsilon\tau\epsilon\rho\omega\varsigma\)) or an adverb (\(\pi\rho\omega\tau\epsilon\rho\omega\varsigma\)). Cf. Monro, \(Homeric Grammar\), p. 82. The primary comparative-ending —\(\iota\nu\nu\), (Sanskrit \(iyans\)) is probably kin to the adjective-ending —\(\iota\omega\).\(^7\) This form along with the superlative —\(\iota\sigma\tau\omega\) is

1 Moulton, \(Cl. Rev.,\) 1901, p. 35. For the indecl. \(\pi\lambda\eta\rho\eta\varsigma\) in Acta Thomae see Reinhold, De Graec. etc., p. 24. Cf. Sir. 19 : 26. See Helbing, \(Gr. d. Sept.,\) p. 52. It is not till i/A.D. that it is common in the pap. Thack. (\(Gr.,\) p. 176) thinks it not genuine in the LXX.
3 \(Prol.,\) p. 50.
4 \(Philologus,\) LXI., pp. 161 ff.
5 \(W.-M.,\) p. 302.
7 Hirt, \(Handb. etc.,\) p. 290; Farrar, \(Gk. Synt.,\) p. 30,
probably originally qualitative in idea and does not necessarily imply excess. In the modern Greek these forms are not used at all.¹ They have disappeared before the secondary comparative form —τερος, which even in the earlier Greek is far more common. The ending —τερος does imply excess and appears in various words that are not usually looked upon as comparatives, as ἕτερος (‘one of two), ἐκάτερος (‘each of two’), ἄμετατος (nos-ter), ὑμετατος (vos-ter), ὑστερος.² So also δεύτερος like πρότερος (cf. Latin al-ter, English other) is a comparative form.³ "The comparison-suffixes ἰων, ἱστος, τερος belong to the Indo-Germanic ground speech."⁴ In the N. T. the forms in —ιων), as in the papyri,⁵ hold their own only in the most common words. Schwab (op. cit., p. 5) makes —ατος older than —τατος. ⁶ Αμείωνω is not used in the N. T. and Βέλτιον only as an adverb once (2 Tim. 1:18). Ἐλάσσων appears four times, once about age as opposed to μείζων (Ro. 9:12), once about rank as opposed to κρείσσων (Heb. 7:7), once about excellence (Jo. 2:10) as again opposed κρείσσων, and once as an adverb (Ἐλασσον, 1 Tim. 5:9) in the sense of less, not μικρότερος (‘smaller’). ⁷ Ησσον (neuter only) is found in 1 Cor. 11:17 as opposed to κρείσσων, and as an adverb in 2 Cor. 12:15. Κάλλιον (Ac. 25:10) is an adverb. Κρείσσων, is confined to Peter, Paul's Epistles and Hebrews (some eighteen examples, ten of them in Heb.). Μείζων is common (some fifty times), though some of them displace the superlative as we shall see directly. The neuter plural (μείζονα) appears once as μείζω (Jo. 1:50).⁶ Once also (3 Jo. 4) the double comparative form μείζοντερος occurs, several similar examples appearing in the papyri, as μείζοντερος, μελαντύτερον, προσβυτερώτα.⁷ A few other examples in poetry and late Greek are cited by Winer-Moulton,⁸ like κρειττότερος, μείζοντερος, μειζό-

¹ Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 73.
² Cf. Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 292; Brug., Indoger. Forsch., 1903, pp. 7 ff.
⁶ The papy. have many exx: of the form without ν as in πλείων (ους), etc. See Mayser., Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 298 ff. But the usage varies greatly. The LXX MSS. show similar variations. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 54 f. As LXX exx. of uniformity in form of comp. note α γαθώτερος and αἰσχρότερος, but only ἐγγύς ( —στος), not ἐγγύτερος ( —τατος), C. and S., Sel. fr. LXX, p. 29. Thack. (Gr., pp. 184 ff.) gives a careful summary of the exx. of —ιων, —ιστος in the LXX.
⁸ P. 81. Cf. also Dieterich, Unters. etc., p. 180, for ὀλιζότερος.
τερος itself, μειώτερος, πλειώτερος. Cf. English vernacular "lesser."

Τάχιον (W. H. ειον), not θάσσουν, is the N. T. form as we read in the papyri also. Cf. Jo. 20:4, etc. Χείρων is found eleven times (cf. Mt. 9:16). The ending --τερος more and more the usual one. Cf. τομώτερος (Heb. 4:12). Some comparative adjectives are derived from positive adverbs like ἔξωτερος (Mt. 8:12), ἐσώτερος (Ac. 16:24), κατώτερος (Eph. 4:9). These latter adjectives are common in the LXX and the later Greek, not to say Attic sometimes. Αὐτώτερος (Mt. 23:15) is for the old Attic διπλώστερος. So Appian also. Cf. ἀπλότερον, Anthol. Pal., III, 158 (Dieterich, Unters., p. 181). The Ionic already had ὀλιγώτερος and ταχύτερος (Radermacher, Gr., p. 56). Cf. ἁγαθώτερος (Hermas, Mand. VIII, 9, 11) and ἁγαθώτατος (Diod., 16, 85). The rules for the use of —ώτερος and —ότερος apply in the N. T. As μᾶλλον is often used with the positive in lieu of the comparative ending, so it is sometimes with the comparative, a double comparative (μᾶλλον κρείσσον, Ph. 1:23; μᾶλλον πεισσότερν, Mk. 7:36), a construction not unknown to the classic orators of Athens where emphasis was desired. Paul did not perpetrate a barbarism when he used ἐλαχιστότερος (Eph. 3:8), a comparative on a superlative. It "is correctly formed according to the rule of the common language." Cf. also such a late form as ἐγχατώτερος.

(C) THE SUPERLATIVE (ὑπερθετικῶν ὄνομα). As with the comparative, so with the superlative there are primary and secondary forms. The primary superlative ending --ιστος (old Indian isthas, Zend. and Goth. ista) did not perhaps represent the true superlative so much as the dative (intensive like English "very") superlative. It was never very widely used and has become extinct in modern Greek. The κοινη inscriptions show only a few examples like ἀγχιστα, ἐγχιστα, καλιστος, κρατιστος, μεγιστος, πλειστος. In the papyri Mayser notes βελτιστος, ἐλάχιστον (--ιστη also), καλλιστη, καρτιστος, πλειστοι, ταχιστην (—ιστα), χεριστην. In the N. T., however, the superlative in --ιστος is more common than that in --τατος, though none too frequent in itself. They are besides usually elative (intensive) and not true superlatives. D reads ἑγ-
O ἐλάχιστος (1 Cor. 15:9) is a true superlative, a thing so rare in the N. T. that Blass attributes this example either to the literary language or to corruption in the text. But Moulton is able to find a parallel in the Tb.P. 24, ii/B.C. But more about true and elative superlatives in Syntax (ch. XI; V, xiv). In 2 Cor. 12:9, 15 (D in Ac. 13:8), we have ἡδιστα. Κράτιστε (Lu. 1:3, etc.) is "only a title" (Moulton, p. 78). Μάλιστα appears a dozen times only, though μᾶλλον is exceedingly common. Blass indeed suggests that a popular substitute for μάλιστα as for πλείστα was found in the use of περισσός. This is much more true of the use of περισσός as the equivalent of μᾶλλον or πλείων (cf. Mt. 5:37; 27:23). Paul uses the comparative adverb περισσοτέρως (Ph. 1:14. Cf. double comparative in Mk. 7:36). In Heb. 7:15 (cf. 2:1; 13:19—ως) περισσότερον ἐτί κατά-δήλων we have more than μᾶλλον. Cf. μέγιστος (2 Pet. 1:4) and πλείστος in Mt. 11:20; 21:8; 1 Cor. 14:27. Τάχιστα (Ac. 17:15) Blass credits again to the literary element in Luke. In ὑψιστός we have a superlative that occurs thirteen times and always about God or heaven (as Mk. 5:7; 11:10).

When we take up the form in —τατός in the N. T. the story is soon told. Brugmann finds the origin of this ending in forms like δέκατος (cf. Latin decimus), πρώτος (cf. Latin primus), ὕπατος, ὕστατος. It has no direct parallel in the other languages. Hirt suggests —ταμος and —ατος as two forms which finally resulted in —τατος. It is true that the forms in —ατος faded away as superlatives and ἕσχατον became ἕσχατωτατον in the koine inscriptions, but this is true also of the forms in —τατος. The papyri have "scores" of examples of superlatives in —τατος (chiefly elative). The rarity of the —τατος forms in the N T. may be purely accidental (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154). It is not quite true that

1 Ib. 3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 33 f. 4 Ib., p. 33. 5 Indog. Forsch., 1903, pp. 7-9. Ascoli (Curtius' Stud., etc., 1876, p. 351) suggests τρίτος (cf. Hom. τρίτατος) also. Cf. also ἕσχατος. 6 Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 294. 7 Ib. 8 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 161. 9 This double superl. does not appear in the N. T., but various instances are noted in the pap. and the later Gk. as ἐλαχιστότατος, μεγιστότατος, πρώτιστα. So Lat. minissimus, pessimissimus. Cf. W.-M., p. 81; Dieterich, Unters., p. 181.

10 Moulton, Prol., p. 78; Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 297 f. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept. pp. 54-57, for corresponding infrequency of the superl. forms in the LXX. The compar. is driving it out. Cf. also ib., p. vii.
"only one example of the --τατος superlative" (Moulton, Prol., p. 78) survives in the N. T. There are three with --τατος, besides those with --στος: ἀγιώτατος (Ju. 20), ἀκριβέστατος (Acts 26:5), τιμώτατος (Rev. 18:12; 21:11). Thackeray (Gr., p. 182) finds —τατος much more common in the LXX, though chiefly in the elative sense and in the more literary books of the LXX (Wisd., 2-4 Mace.; Prov., Esd.). Ἀκριβέστατος (Ac. 26:5) Blass again credits to the literary language. Ἐσχάτος and πρώτος (ω from =ωρα, Doric α) are both very frequent in the N. T. See Mt. 19:30 for the contrasted πρώτοι ἔσχατι κτλ. The very great number of times that πρώτος (πρώτου included) is used in the N. T. (some 200) in contrast to only ten instances of πρότερον and one of πρότερα (Eph. 4:22) deserves comment. This seems in conflict with the observed disuse of the superlative in favour of the comparative. But a counter-tendency is at work here. The disappearance of duality before plurality has worked against πρότερον. Luke does not use πρότερον at all and it appears only once in Grenfell and Hunt's four volumes of papyri.1 The LXX shows πρώτος displacing πρότερος (Thackeray, Gr., p. 183). So in English we say first story of a house with only two, first edition of a book which had only two, etc. It is almost an affectation in Greek and English, however good Latin it may be, to insist on πρότερος. So in Jo. 1:15 (πρώτος μου), 15:18 (πρῶτον ὑμῶν), Ac. 1:1 (τὸν πρῶτον λόγον) we have merely first of two and in the two first instances the ablative construction as with the comparative. Winer properly saw this usage of πρῶτον to be true to the Greek genius.2 In Mt. 27: 64 we have both ἔσχατος and πρώτος used of two, ἔσται ἡ ἔσχατη πλάνη χείρων τῆς πρώτης. Πρότερος is indeed used in the sense of the former in Eph. 4:22, whereas πρότερον in the sense of the first of two does appear in Heb. 7:27 (πρότερον—ἐπείτα).3 It is probably a defect in both Latin and Greek that the same forms were used to express the elative and true superlative sense (so as to comparative also). As the dual vanished, so it was inevitable that with the same principle at work either the comparative or the superlative would. Outside of ἔσχατος and πρώτος where the principle crossed with a different application because πρότερος was disappearing, it is the superlative that goes down, especially the true superlative as opposed to the dative (intensive). Hermas, though in the vernacular, still uses the superlative in the elative (inten-

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 79
2 W.-M., p. 306.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 34.
sive) sense very often. In the N. T. then the comparative is beginning to take the place of the superlative, a usage occasionally found in classical Greek, and found now and then in the papyri. See 1 Cor. 13: 13 τὰ τρία ταύτα μείζων δὲ τούτων ἡ ἀγάπη. See also ὁ μείζων (Mt. 18:4). But this matter will call for more comment under Syntax (ch. XIV, XIII, (i)).

III. NUMERALS (ἈΡΙΘΜΟΙ).

No great space is demanded for the discussion of the non-syntactical aspects of the numerals.

1. The Origin of Numerals. Donaldson thinks that seven of the first ten numerals may be traced to primitive pronominal elements. Pronouns and numerals belong to the stable elements of language, and the numerals are rather more stable than the pronouns in the Indo-Germanic tongues. See the numerals in substantial integrity in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., pp. 80-84). The system of numeration is originally decimal (cf. fingers and toes) with occasional crossing of the duodecimal. There possibly were savages who could not count beyond two, but one doubts if the immediate ancestors of the Indo-Germanic peoples were so primitive as that. See previous discussion in this chapter, I, 3. Counting is one of the first and easiest things that the child learns. It is certain that the original Indo-Germanic stock had numerals up to 100 before it separated. The roots are widespread and fairly uniform.

2. Variety among Numerals.

(a) DIFFERENT FUNCTIONS. The numerals may be either substantive, adjective or adverb. So ἡ χίλιας (Lu. 14:31), χίλιοι (2 Pet. 3:8), ἐπτάκις (Mt. 18:21). Number thus embraces separate ideas.

(b) THE CARDINALS (ὄνοματα ἀριθμητικά). They may be either declinable or indeclinable, and this according to no very well-defined principle. The first four are declinable, possibly from their frequent use. After 200 (δια-κόσιοι, --οι, --α) they have the regular

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 33. He cites the mod. Italian also which makes no distinction between the comp. and superl.
4 New Crat., p. 294.
5 Giles, Man., etc., p. 393.
6 Ib.
7 However, see Moulton, Prol., p. 58. Cf. Taylor, Prim. Cult., I, p. 242 f.
8 Moulton, Prol., p. 58.
10 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 35.
inflection of adjectives of the second and first declensions. The
history of εἰς, μία, ἕν is very interesting, for which see the comparative grammars.1 Ἐἰς is exceedingly common in the N. T. as a
cardinal (Mt. 25:15) and as an indefinite pronoun (Mt. 8:19),
approaching the indefinite article. For the use of εἰς in sense
of ordinal see Syntax, ch. XIV, xv, (a), but it may be remarked
here that the papyri have τῇ μιᾷ καὶ εἰκόνι (Moulton, Cl. Rev.,
1901, p. 35). The indeclinable use of εἰς (or adverbial use of κατά)
is common in later Greek. Cf. καθ’ εἰς in Mk. 14:19; (Jo. 8:9);
Ro. 12:5.2 So modern Greek uses ἕνα as neuter with which
Maysers3 compares ἕνα as feminine on an early ostrakon. But the
modern Greek declines ἕνας, μία, ἕνα in all genders (Thumb, Handb.,
p. 81). Οὐδείς and μηδείς are both very common in the N. T. with
the inflection of εἰς. Μηθείς occurs only once (Ac. 27:33). W. H.
admit οὐθείς only seven times (all in Luke and Paul, as Ac. 20:33),
and once (Ac. 15:9) οὖδεν is in the margin. Jannaris (Hist. Gk.
Gr., p. 170) calls this form in θ chiefly Alexandrian, rare in Attic,
but Mayser (Gr., p. 180) notes οὐδείς as "Neubildung" while
οὐθείς is good Attic. For history of it see Orthography and Pho-
netics, p. 219. The frequent use of δῶς as indeclinable save in the
plural form δώσι in the later Greek has already been commented
on in this chapter (1, 3), as well as the disappearance of ἄμφω before ἄμφοτέρων. Indeclinable δῶς is classical, and after Aristotle δωσί
is the normal dative (Thackeray, Gr., p. 186). Τρία (possibly also
τρίς) is occasionally indeclinable in the papyri.4 The common use
of τέσσερα in the κοινή and the occasional occurrence of τέσσερας
as accusative in N. T. MSS. (like Northwest Greek) have been
noticed in chapters VI, 2, (a), and VII, 1, 7, (c).5 Πέντε, ἕξ and ἑπτά
need not detain us. The originally dual form ὀκτώ is found only
ten times, and five of them with other numerals. Ἐννέα appears
only five times, while δέκα is nothing like so common as ἑπτά, not
to mention the first five cardinals. Ἐνδέκα is found six times, but
dώδεκα is quite common, due chiefly to the frequent mention of the
Apostles. From thirteen to nineteen in the N. T., like the pa-
pyri6 and the modern Greek, δέκα comes first, usually without καί,

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 211; Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 311; Giles, Man., p. 394.
On numerals in the LXX see Thack., Gr., pp. 186-190; C. and S., Sel. fr. the
LXX, p. 30 f.
3 Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 312. Perhaps the earliest ex. of indeclinable ἕνα.
For the LXX usage cf. W.-Sch., p. 90.
4 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 315.
5 Ib. Cf. also Dittenb., 674. 28.
6 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 316.
as δέκα δέκτω (Lu. 13:4), though once with καί (Lu. 13:16). But unlike the papyri the N. T. never has δεκαδύο.  
1 But δεκανέντε (as Jo. 11:18) and δεκατέσσαρες (as Gal. 2:1) occur several times each. Εἴκοσι is a dual form, while τριάκοντα and so on are plural.  
2 Ἐκατόν is one hundred like ᾠ-παξ. W. H. accent ἐκατονευτής, not ἐκατόντης. Usually no conjunction is used with these numerals, as εἴκοσι τέσσαρες (Rev. 19:4), Ἐκατόν εἴκοσι (Ac. 1:15), but τεσσαράκοντα καὶ ἕξ (Jo. 2:20). Cf. Rev. 13:18. In the LXX there is no fixed order for numbers above the "teens." Thackeray, Gr., p. 188. The N. T. uses χίλιοι often and δισθίλιοι once (Mk. 5:13) and τρισθίλιοι once (Ac. 2:41). The N. T. examples of μῆρις by reason of case do not distinguish between μῦροι, 'ten thousand' (Mt. 18:24) and μῦροι, 'many thousands' (1 Cor. 4:15). The N. T. uses μῆρις several times for the latter idea ('myriads'), sometimes repeated, as μυριάδες μυριάδων (Rev. 5:11). So also χίλιαι is more common in the N. T. than χίλιοι, both appearing chiefly in Revelation (cf. 5:11). In Rev. 13:18 B and many cursive have χις = ἓνακόσιον ἕξθοκνυτα ἕξ, while the cursive 5 has χις = ἓνακόσιον δέκα ἕξ. As a rule in the N. T. MSS. the numbers are spelled out instead of mere signs being used.

(c) THE ORDINALS (ὀνόματα τακτικά). They describe rank and raise the question of order, πόστος.  
3 They are all adjectives of three endings and all have the superlative form —τος save πρότερος and δεύτερος which are comparative.  
4 In most cases the ordinals are made from the same stem as the cardinals.  
5 But this is not true of πρώτος nor indeed of δεύτερος (not from δύο, but from δύομαι).  
6 Cf. the English superlative 'first' (with suffix -isto). Πρώτος has driven πρότερος out of use in the N. T. except as an adverb (or τὸ πρότερον) save in one instance, προτέραν ἀναστροφὴν (Eph. 4:22). The disappearance of πρώτος before the ordinal use of ἕξ belongs to Syntax. In the N. T. as in the papyri the ordinals up to twelve are regular. From 13 to 19 the N. T., like the vernacular papyri  
7 (so Ionic and κοινή generally), puts the smaller

---

1 Δέκα δύο is normal in the papa. of the Ptol. age. Cf. Rec., Ac. 19:7. Cf. Thack., Gr., p. 188. So also δέκα τρεῖς, and even δέκα μιᾶς once. Always δέκα τέσσαρες, δέκα πέντε, δέκα ὀκτώ. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 35.
2 Giles, Man., p. 398.
4 These both have a superl., as πρῶτος and δεύτερος (Horn.). Brug., Gr. Gr., p. 212.
6 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 318.
7 Ib. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 35.
number first and as a compound with καί, only the second half of the word in the ordinal form. So τεσσαρεσκαίδεκάτος (Ac. 27: 27), not τέσσαρες καὶ δέκατος (Attic). But the papyri show examples of the usual Attic method, as ἔννομος καὶ έκκοστός. The distinction between the decades (like τριακοστός) and the hundreds (like τριακοσιοστός) should be noted. In modern Greek all the ordinals have disappeared out of the vernacular save πρῶτος, δεύτερος, τρίτος, τέταρτος. The article with the cardinal is used instead.

(d) DISTRIBUTIVES IN THE N. T. The multiplicative distributives (with ending –πλοῦς) occur in the N. T. also. Απλοῦς as an adjective is found only twice (Mt. 6:22= Lu. 11:34), both times about the eye. Διπλοῦς appears four times (as 1 Tim. 5:17). Cf. the Latin sim-plex, du-plex, English simple, diplomatic. The proportional distributives end in –πλασίων. As examples one may note ἐκατοταπλασίων (Lu. 8:8) and πολλαπλασίων (Lu. 18: 30). Cf. English "two-fold," "three-fold," etc. One of the commonest ways of expressing distribution is by repetition of the numeral as in δύο δύο (Mk. 6:7). Cf. συμπόσια συμπόσια (Mk. 6:39 f.). In Lu. 10:1 we have ἀνά δύο δύο in the text of W. H., a "mixed distributive" (Moulton, Prol., p. 97). The modern Greek has either ἀπὸ δυό or δύο δύο (Thumb, Handb., p. 83). It is a vernacular idiom which was given fresh impetus (Brugmann, Distributiva, p. 9) from the Hebrew idiom. Deissmann cites τρία τρία from 0. P. 121 (iii/A.D.). Moulton (Prol., p. 21) follows Thumb (Hellen., p. 152) in denying that it is a Hebraism. See further ch. XIV, xv (d).

(e) NUMERAL ADVERBS. These are of two kinds, either like ἀμα (Ac. 24: 26), δίχα, 'in two' (not in the N. T., though see δίχαζω Mt. 10:35), or like ἀπαξ, δίς, τρίς, etc. The one kind answers to multiplicatives and the other to proportionals. The numeral adverbs continue in use in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 189 f.). The modern Greek instead of the numeral adverb uses φορά (Thumb, Handb., p. 83).

IV. PRONOUNS ( ἈΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΑΙ)

1. Idea of Pronouns. It is not the idea of a subject or object that is set forth by the pronoun, but the relation of a subject or object to the speaker. Sometimes, to be sure, as in conversation,
the pronoun does not strictly stand in the place of a substantive. When one person addresses another, "I" and "thou" are plain enough from the nature of the circumstances. The pronoun indicates, but does not name the speaker, etc. In a sense then language is a sort of drama in which there are three characters, the speaker, the person addressed and the person spoken of.¹ Hence the first and second personal pronouns have no gender, while the third person, who may or may not be present, has gender. Giles² cites the case of Macaulay who repeated the substantive so often as almost to make the pronoun useless, though the reverse tendency is more common. The right use of pronouns is a good index of style.

2. Antiquity of Pronouns. The personal pronouns are probably the oldest part of the Indo-Germanic declension.³ Pronouns (and numerals) are the most persistent parts of speech. They are essential to the very life of a language.⁴ Strange enough, the Coptic and the Hebrew, for instance, are only alike in their pronouns and their numerals.⁵ In Greek as in Sanskrit and English the pronouns maintain themselves with great tenacity. The pronouns are also closely akin in all the Indo-Germanic tongues. Cf. Sanskrit ahám, Greek ἐγώ, Latin ego, Gothic ik, Anglo-Saxon ic, German ich, English I, French je. They retain the case-forms better than any other parts of speech.

3. Pronominal Roots. Indeed pronouns present an independent set of roots parallel to the verbal and nominal roots. As verb, noun, adjective, adverb, preposition, conjunctions, intensive particles grow up around the old verbal (and nominal) roots, so pronouns represent a separate history. There are two great root-stocks then (verbal or nominal and pronominal).⁶ The pronouns can be resolved into monosyllabic roots.⁷ One may not follow Donaldson⁸ (now obsolete), when he calls all the pronouns originally demonstrative, and yet something can be said for that idea. In the Sanskrit Whitney⁹ calls this "very limited set of roots, the so-called pronominal or demonstrative roots." Monro¹⁰ remarks that noun-stems name or describe while pronouns only

¹ Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 32. He accents πρόσωπον (persona) as illustrating this dramatic aspect.
⁵ Renan, Hist. des Lang. Semit., p. 84 f.
⁸ Ib., p. 245. ⁹ Sans. Gr., p. 185.
¹⁰ Hom. Gr., p. 57; Bopp, Vergl. Gr., § 105.
point out; the one is predicative, the other demonstrative. The difference then is fundamental. "Pronouns are found to contain the same elements as those which furnish the person-endings of verbs." (Monro, ib.)

4. Classification. Pronouns are either substantive in signification and inflection as ἐγώ, adjective as ἡμετέρος, or adverb as οὕτως. The other classification is into nine or ten great classes: personal, intensive, reflexive, possessive, demonstrative, relative, interrogative, indefinite, distributive.¹ The correlative pronouns can be regarded separately also. These classes will call for special comment in detail See also ch. XV, 1.

(a) THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS. In all the Indo-Germanic tongues the personal pronouns vary a good deal in inflection from the substantives and adjectives.² The various Greek dialects show great variety in the inflection of the personal pronouns.³ The nominative singular has a different stem in the first personal pronoun from the other cases in all the Indo-Germanic languages. The N. T. follows current and ancient usage fairly well in the form of the first and second personal pronouns. The same thing is true as to the enclitic and the emphatic forms in the oblique cases. The MSS. vary between μου and ἐμου, etc. Not only do MSS. give the regular πρός με, but the papyri⁴ furnish ἔις με, περὶ μου, ὑπὸ μου. The question whether σου or σοῦ should be read is a very delicate one and rests almost wholly with the editor. W. H. have, for instance, ἐκ τοῦ ὁφθαλμοῦ σου and ἐν τῷ ὁφθαλμῷ σοῦ in the same sentence (Mt. 7:4. Cf. also the next verse). Nestle here has no such refinement, but σου all through these verses. The third personal pronoun gave trouble in Greek as in some other languages. In Attic the old οὗ, οί, ἐ (without nominative) was chiefly reflexive,⁵ though not true of the Ionic. Possibly this pronoun was originally reflexive for all the persons, but came to be used also as the simple pronoun of the third person, whereas in Latin it remained reflexive and was restricted to the third person.⁶ The N. T. is like the κοινὴ

¹ K.-B1., I, p. 579, have only five.
² Hirt, Handb., p. 296. Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 84, for mod. Gk.
⁵ Cf. Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 33. He illustrates by the Eng.: "I will lay me down and sleep." Cf. ὑμῖν in Mt. 6:19 f.
⁶ Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., p. 341.
in the use of \( \alphaυτ\) (common also in Attic) instead of \( ου \) as the third personal pronoun. It is used in all three genders and in all cases save that in the nominative it usually has emphasis (cf. Mt. 1:21), a matter to be discussed under Syntax. Indeed \( \alphaυτ\), whatever its etymology, is originally an intensive pronoun (like Latin *ipse*), not a personal pronoun.\(^1\) The "frequent and almost inordinate use" (Thayer) of \( \alphaυτ\) in the LXX (cf. Jer. 18:3 f.) and the N. T. is noticeable. So modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 86)

(b) THE INTENSIVE PRONOUN. The N. T. has nothing new to say as to the form of the intensive \( \alphaυτ\). It is usually in the nominative that it is intensive like \( \alphaυτ\ μ\) (Jo. 6:15), though not always (cf. Jo. 14:11). The modern Greek\(^2\) uses also a shorter form \( του \), etc. (also Pontic \( \alphaτου \)), as personal pronoun. The use of \( ο\ αυτ\) may be compared with \( ο\ έδ\). See ch. XV, III, (g).

(c) REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS. The reflexive form is nothing but the personal pronoun plus the intensive \( \alphaυτ\). The reflexive is one use of this intensive in combination with the personal pronoun. They were originally separate words.\(^3\) So \( \alphaυτ\ έγ\) (Ro. 7:25) which is, of course, not reflexive, but intensive. The Greek reflexives have no nominative and the English has almost lost "himself," "myself" as nominative.\(^4\) In the N. T. the first and second persons have a distinct reflexive form only in the singular (\( έ\)μ\ αυτ\, \( σ\)\ε\αυτ\)). In 2 Th. 1:4 \( \alphaυτ\ η\) is obviously intensive, not reflexive. In 1 Cor. 7:35 \( \η\ αυτ\) it is doubtful.\(^5\) See ch. XV, iv, for further discussion. The contracted form \( σ\)\αυτ\ is not found in the N. T. It is common in the Kingdom books in the LXX and occurs in the papyri. See even \( σ\)\αυτ\ \( απ\ τ\)\( ιουδ\)\( α\)\( ω\)\( ν\), B.G.U. 1079 (A.D. 41). So as to \( αυτ\). Cf. Thackeray, *Gr.*, p. 190. The modern Greek uses \( τ\)\( ω\) \( ε\)\( μ\)\ αυτ\, \( μ\)\( ο\) for the reflexive (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 88). The reflexive for the third person\(^6\) (usually \( ε\)\( αυτ\) in the singular, about twenty times \( αυτ\), etc., in W. H., as \( αυτ\) in Jo. 2:24), while the only reflexive form for all persons in the plural in the N. T. has no secure place in the N. T. for the first and second person singular. The possible reflexive (or demonstrative?) origin of a made this usage natural. It appears in the papyri\(^7\) (\( τ\)\( α\)\( υ\)\( τ\)\( ο\)\, Pet. I. 15, 15) and the

---

1 Flensberg (Uber Urspr. und Bild. des Pron. \( \alphaυτ\), 1893, p. 69) denies that it is from \( ου \), but rather from \( αυ\). Cf. Brug., *Griech. Gr.*, p. 244.
3 K.-Bl., I, p. 596.
4 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 62.
5 Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 144.
7 Mayser, Gd. grieched. Pap., p. 303 f.
late inscriptions\(^1\) for the first and second person singular. In the modern Greek the same thing is true.\(^2\) But in the N. T. only late MSS. read \(\text{αδι} \, \text{εαυτοῦ} \) against \(\text{από} \, \text{σεαυτοῦ} \) (\(\text{KBCL})\) in Jo. 18:34. In Gal. 5:14 and Ro. 13:9 only Syrian uncials have \(\text{εαυτόν} \) for \(\text{σεαυτόν} \).\(^3\) This use of \(\text{εαυτῶν} \) for all three persons is fairly common in classical Attic. Indeed the personal pronoun itself was sometimes so used (\(\text{δοκῶ} \, \text{μοι} \)), for instance).\(^4\)

\((d) \, \text{POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS (κτητικὰ} \, \text{αντωνυμίαι)}\). It is somewhat difficult in the discussion of the pronouns to keep off syntactical ground, and this is especially true of the possessive adjectives. For the etymology of these adjectives from the corresponding personal pronouns one may consult the comparative grammars.\(^5\) But it is the rarity of these adjectives in the N. T. that one notices at once. The third person possessives (\(\text{δός}, \, \text{σφέτερος})\) have entirely disappeared. \(\Sigmaός \) is found in only two of Paul's letters: 1 Cor. and Phil., and these only three times. \(\text{Σός} \) is found about twenty-six times and \(\text{υμέτερος} \) eleven (two doubtful, Lu. 16:12; 1 Cor. 16:17). \(\text{Υμέτερος} \) appears in Paul only in 1 and 2 Cor., Gal., Ro. \(\text{Υμέτερος} \) appears only nine times counting Lu. 16:12, where W. H. have \(\text{υμέτερον} \) in the margin, and Ac. 24:6 which W. H. reject. It is only \(\text{ἐμός} \) that makes any show at all in the N. T., occurring some seventy-five times, about half of them (41) in the Gospel of John. Thumb\(^6\) and Moulton\(^7\) have made a good deal of the fact that in Pontus and Cappadocia the use of \(\text{ἐμός}, \, \text{σός}, \) etc., is still common, while elsewhere the genitive personal pronoun prevails.\(^8\) The point is that the Gospel of John thus shows Asiatic origin, while Revelation is by another writer. But one can easily go astray in such an argument. The Gospel of Luke has \(\text{ἐμός} \) three times, but Acts not at all. The large amount of dialogue in the Gospel of John perhaps explains the frequency of the pronoun there. The possessive \(\text{ἐμός} \) is naturally in the mouth of Jesus (or of John his reporter) more than \(\text{σός}, \) for Jesus is speaking so much about himself. The possessive is more formal and more emphatic in the solemn

---

\(^1\) Schweizer, Gr. d. perg. Inschr., p. 161.  
\(^2\) Thumb, Handb., p. 88.  
\(^3\) Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 167. These last two quote Lev. 19:18.  
\(^4\) Cf. Simcox, ib.; Dyroff, Gesch. des Pron. Reflex., 2. Abt., pp. 23 (Hefte 9 and 10 in Schanz's Beitr. etc.).  
\(^5\) Cf. Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 63; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 167.  
\(^6\) Giles, Man., p. 301; Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 250; Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 307.  
\(^7\) Theol. Literaturzeit., 1893, p. 421.  
\(^8\) Prol., p. 40 f. He admits that the other possessives do not tell the same story.
words of Jesus in this Gospel. This is probably the explanation coupled with the fact that John was doubtless in Asia also when he wrote the Gospel and was open to whatever influence in that direction was there. The discussion of details will come later, as will the common use of the genitive of the personal pronouns rather than the possessive adjective, not to mention the article. The reflexive pronoun itself is really possessive when in the genitive case. But this as well as the common idiom ὁ ἴδιος need only be mentioned here. The Boeotian inscriptions show ἴδιος in this sense as early as 150 B.C. (Claflin, Syntax of Boeotian Inscriptions, p. 42). The line of distinction between the pronouns is thus not always distinct, as when έαυτώ (αὐτώ) is used in the reciprocal sense (Lu. 23:12), a usage known to the ancients. The necessity in the N. T. of using the genitive of personal pronouns in the third person after the disappearance of ὁς is like the Latin, which used ejus, suus being reflexive. Farrar (Greek Syntax, p. 34) recalls the fact that its is modern, his being originally neuter also.

(c) DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS (δεικτικαὶ ἀντώνυμαί). But deictic must have a special limitation, for all pronouns were possibly originally deictic (marking an object by its position). The anaphoric (ἀναφορικαί) pronouns develop out of the deictic by usage. They refer to or repeat. The true relative is a further development of the anaphoric, which includes demonstrative in the narrower sense. In a strict historical method one should begin the discussion of pronouns with the demonstratives in the larger sense and show how the others developed. But here we must treat the demonstrative pronouns in the narrower sense as distinct from the original deictic or the later relative. The demonstrative thus applies both to position and relation. The declension of the demonstratives is more akin to that of substantives than any of the other pronouns. ὁ ὁδὲ occurs only ten times in the N. T., and eight of these in the form τὰ ὁδὲ, seven of which come in the formula in Rev. τὰ ὁδὲ λέγει (as Rev. 2:1, etc.). The others are τὰ ὁδὲ (Ac. 21:11), τῇ ὁδὲ (Lu. 10:39), τῇ νῦν (Jas. 4:13).
The inscriptions and the papyri agree with the N. T. in the great rarity of ὅς in the later κοινή.¹ But in the LXX it is commoner, and chiefly here also τα ὅς άγεται (Thackeray, Gr., p. 191). There are also many examples of ὅς as a demonstrative, as Ro. 14:5 and also cf. ὅ, ἧ, τό with ὅς, as ὅ δέ in Mt. 27:4. This latter demonstrative construction is very common. Αὐτός is beginning to have a semi-demonstrative sense (common in modern Greek) in the N. T., as in Lu. 13:1, ἐν αὐτῷ καίρῳ. There is little to say on the non-syntactical side about and ἐκεῖνος and ὁ ὅς save that both are very common in the N. T., ὁ ὅς extremely so, perhaps four times as often as ἐκεῖνος which is relatively more frequent in John.² Blass³ points out the fact that ὁ ὅς-ί, does not appear in the N. T. (nor in the LXX), though the adverb νῦν-ί is fairly common in Paul and twice each in Acts and Hebrews. Ὅχι is much more frequent especially in Luke and Paul. Smyth⁴ compares ἐκεῖνος (κεῖνος in Homer) to Oscan e-tanto. Modern Greek uses both forms and also ὅ-τοῦτος and τοῦτος in the nominative.⁵

Of the correlative demonstratives of quality τοιός is not found in the N. T. and τοιόνδε only once (2 Pet. 1:17). Τοιότοτος (neuter τοιότοτο and -ον) occurs fifty-seven times, chiefly in the Gospels and Paul’s earlier Epistles (Gal. 5:21). We find neither τόσον nor τόσονδε and τόσοντος (the only correlative demonstrative of quantity) is less frequent than τοιότοτος (cf. Lu. 7:9). The neuter is also in –ον and –ο. Of the correlatives of age τηλικοῦτος alone is found four times (cf. Jas. 3:4). See also ch. XV,

(f) RELATIVE PRONOUNS (ἀναφορικαὶ ἀντωνυμίαι). Homer shows the transition of the demonstrative to the relative, using five forms (ὁ, ὃ τε, ὅς, ὅς τε, ὅς τις). Attic dropped ὃ and ὃ τε as well as ὃσ τε. This use of τε with ὃ and ὅς may be compared with the common use of the Latin qui = et is. So the Hebrew יְהֵ֫ (‘this’) is sometimes relative. Cf. German der and English that.⁶ Relat-
ives in the narrower sense grew naturally out of the anaphoric use of the demonstrative. The weakening of ὃ to the article and the introduction of the longer demonstratives (ὁδέ, ὁ ὅς, ἐκεῖνος) left ὅς more and more for the true relative use. Ὅ and ὅς have a

¹ See Nachm., Magn. p. 145; Dieterich, Unters., p. 197; Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 308.
² Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 171. ³ Ib., p. 35; Thackeray, p. 191.
⁴ The Ionic Dial., p. 448.
different etymology. Relative ḍσ= Sanskrit yas. There are thus
Only two pure relatives that survive in the N. T., ḍσ and ḍστις,
for ḍσπερ and ḍσδήποτε are not found save that the Western and
Syrian classes read ḍσπερ in Mk. 15:6. ṪΟσδήποτε in Jo. 5:4 dis-
appears with the rejection of that verse. Already the papyri1
and the inscriptions2 show the rare occurrence of ḍστις, confined as
a rule to the nominative and gradually disappearing in the mod-
ern Greek before ḍ ṩσιος and even ποι.3 Compare the vulgar
"whar" in "the man whar said that." ṪΟστις is, of course, merely
Ḥσ plus the indefinite τις in the sense of 'any one' or again of 'some-
body in particular.' Both of these senses occur in the N. T. usage.
The N. T. follows the papyri and inscriptions in using only the
nominative of ḍστις save the neuter accusative ḍ τι (Lu. 10:35),
and the genitive in set phrases like ἕως ὀστου (Jo. 9:18). It is
used in both the singular and the plural, however, but is other-
wise nearly indeclinable. ṪΟς γε (Ro. 8:32) is, of course, simply
Ḥσ plus the intensive particle γε. ṪΟς itself is many times more
common in the N. T. than ḍστις and raises no questions save many
syntactical ones. ṪΟς, ὀποίος, ὀσος, ἡλίκος are also relatives of
quality, quantity and age. ṪΟς is found only fourteen times in
the N. T., ten of them in Paul's writings (cf. 2 Cor. 10:11).
Οσοις can count up only five examples, four in Paul if we credit
to him Ac. 26:29. This is a little strange when one recalls how
common it is in the modern Greek. But the correlatives generally
are weak in the vernacular4 κοινή. Οσός is not in the N. T.
nor modern Greek, but ḍσος (1 Cor. 7:39) holds its own. As to
ハウス, it drops to four instances, two of them in the same sentence
(Jas. 3:5).

(g) INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS. Τις, (τί) is fairly common in
the N. T. both in direct (Mt. 21:31) and indirect questions (Mt.
26:22) like the papyri usage. Τις, τί in the Thessalian Greek
is κιςκι. So Sanskrit kas, Latin quis, Gothic hwas, English who,
German wer. In Latin and English the relative is formed from
the same root, but not so in the Greek. In modern Greek, how-
ever, τις has vanished before ποιος (cf. ḍστις before ḍ ποιος),6
accented ποιός, though τί (indeclinable) survives strangely enough
in the sense of "what sort."7 In the N. T. the qualitative cor-

6 Thumb, Handb., p. 94. 7 Ib.
relative πῶς is used fairly often as a direct interrogative (cf. Mk. 11:28) and sometimes as an indirect interrogative (Mt. 24:42). Ποταμός is used a few times in direct (Mt. 8:27) and indirect also (Lu. 7:39). Πόσος is still used as a direct interrogative (Mt. 12:12) in quantitative questions and a few times in indirect questions (Mk. 15:4). Ἡλίκος occurs only twice (one of these doubtful, Gal. 6:11, W. H. ἡλίκιος margin) and both times in indirect question (Heb. 7:4). The disappearance of duality has taken πότερος entirely away, though πότερον occurs once as an adverb in an indirect question (Jo. 7:17). In the LXX we find πότερον only once in Job (Thackeray, Gr., p. 192). Modern Greek does not use πηλίκος, though πόσος survives.

(h) INDEFINITE PRONOUNS. Like the Latin ali-quis (interrogative quis) the Greek τις differs from the interrogative τίς only in accent. It is very common in the N. T. (as Lu. 1:5), but already it is giving way to είς (Mt. 8:19), a usage not unknown to the older Greek. In the N. T. we have είς τις together (Mk. 14:47; Lu. 22:50). Modern Greek has supplanted τις, τί by κανεις (κανύ, είς) and καθείς (cf. καθείς είς in N. T.) The negative forms μητις and ουτις do not appear in the N. T. save that μητι occurs in questions (Mt. 12:23) and μη τις with άνα. But μηδεις and ουδεις are very common. The old δεινα meets us only once (Mt. 26:18), but hangs on in the modern Greek. Ου πας and μη πας belong wholly to Syntax.

(1) DISTRIBUTIVE AND RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS. These pronouns have an insecure place in the N. T. with the exception of αλλος, αλλήλων, ἐκαστος and ἐτερος. Ἐκάτερος like πότερος has vanished, as implying duality. It is rare in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 192). Ἄμφω is gone, but ἄμφωτεροι lingers on in some fourteen instances (cf. Mt. 9:17). Ἀλλήλων (composed of αλλος, αλλος) is naturally only in the oblique cases of the plural, but is fairly common (cf. Jo. 4:33). It has vanished in the modern Greek. Ἐκαστος on the other hand appears only in the singular except in Ph. 2:4 (probably twice there). It too has disappeared in the modern Greek. Ἐτερος is beside ἄμφωτεροι the only surviving dual pronoun, and it goes down in the modern Greek along with ἄμφωτεροι. It is less common (97 times) in the N. T.

2 Thumb, Handb., p. 95 ff.
3 Ib., p. 98.
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 179. The pap. (Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 312) show a few examples of ἐκάτερος, μηδέτερος, ὁπότερος. Once (Prov. 24:21) the LXX has μηθέτερος.
than ἀλλος (150), chiefly in Matthew; Luke, Paul, Heb., never in 
Revelation, Peter, and only once in Jo. (19:37) and Mk. (16:12) 
and this latter in disputed part. It is usually in the singular 
(73 times, plural 24). The distinction (not always observed in 
the N. T.) between ἀλλος and ἐτερος belongs to Syntax. The use 
of ἐς τὸν ἑνα as reciprocal (1 Th. 5:11) and of ἐςαυτῶν (1 Cor. 6:7) 
along with other uses of ἀλλος and ἐτερος will receive treatment 
under Syntax.

V. ADVERBS (ἘΠΙΡΡΗΜΑΤΑ)

1. Neglect of Adverbs. A glance at the average grammar will 
show that the grammarians as a rule have not cared much for the 
adverb, though there are some honorable exceptions. Winer has 
no discussion of the adverb save under Syntax. Still others have 
have not understood the adverb. For instance, Green¹ says that once 
in the N. T. "a preposition without change is employed as an 
adverb," viz. ὑπὲρ ἐγὼ (2 Cor. 11:23). That is a perfunctory 
error which assumes that the preposition is older than the 
adverb. It is of a piece with the idea that regards some adverbs 
as "improper" prepositions. Donaldson² says that, with com-
pliments to Horne Tooke, "the old grammarian was right, who 
said that when we know not what else to call a part of speech, 
we may safely call it an adverb." Certainly it is not easy 
nor practicable always to distinguish sharply between the ad-
verb and preposition, conjunction, interjections and other 
particles.³ But the great part played by the adverb in the 
history of the Greek language makes it imperative that justice 
shall be done to it. This is essential for the clear understand-
ing of the prepositions, conjunctions and particles as well as 
the adverb itself. Substantive and verb blend at many points 
and glide easily into each other in English, for instance. At-
tention has often been called to the use of "but" in English 
as adverb, preposition, conjunction, substantive, adjective and 
pronoun.⁴

¹ Handb. to the Gr. of the N. T., p. 138.
² Gk. Gr., p. 37. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, pp. 535-643, has the most com-
plete treatment of the adv.
³ Brug., Gk. Gr., p. 250. In the Sans. the line is still less clearly drawn 
between the various indeclinable words (Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 403).
p. 35 f.; Delbruck, Grundr., Bd. III, p. 536 f.
2. Formation of the Adverb. The name suggests a mere addendum to the verb, an added word (like the adjective) that is not necessary. But in actual fact adverbs come out of the heart of the language, expressions fixed by frequent usage.

(a) FIXED CASES. A large number\(^1\) of words retain the case-ending in the adverb and often with the same function. Perhaps the bulk of the adverbs are either the simple case used directly in an adverbial sense or the formation by analogy. It is just because adverbs are usually fixed case-forms or remnants of obsolete case-forms that they deserve to be treated under the head of Declensions. They have to be approached from the standpoint of the cases to understand their history. Leaving analogy for the moment let us see some examples of the cases that are so used. The cases most commonly used thus are the ablative, locative, instrumental and accusative.\(^2\) The dative and genitive are seldom employed as adverbs. The vocative never occurs in this sense, and the nominative (so occasionally in Sanskrit) only in a phrase like καθ' ἔξως in the addition to John's Gospel (Jo. 8:9), τὸ καθ' ἔξως (Ro. 12:5). Cf. ἀνα-μίξ. Examples of the various cases as used in the N. T. will be given without attempting to be exhaustive. The κοινή and the modern Greek illustrate the same general tendencies as to adverbs that we see in the earlier Greek. Here the N. T. is in close accord with the papyri as to adverbs in use.\(^3\)

(1) The Accusative. The most obvious illustration of the accusative in adverbs is the neuter of adjectives in the positive, comparative and superlative (singular and plural). In the comparative the singular is the rule, in the superlative the plural, but variations occur.\(^4\) In the modern Greek accusative plural is more common even in the comparative (Thumb, Handb., p. 77). Take for the positive αὕριον, εὖθυ (ξ added later), πολλά, μακράν. The comparative may be illustrated by ὑστερον, βέλτιον, and the superlative by πρῶτον (and πρῶτα) and ἐξιστα. Cf. also ταχίστην. Sometimes the article is used with the adjective where the adverbial idea is encroaching, as τὸ λοιπόν, τὰ πολλά, and note also τήν ἀρχήν (Jo. 8:25), substantive with article. But the substantive alone has abundant examples also, as ἀκμήν, ἀρχήν, δωρεάν, πέραν, χάριν.

---

\(^1\) Brug., Griech. Gr., pp. 250
\(^2\) Hirt, Handb. etc., pp. 320 ff.
\(^3\) Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 456 ff.

(2) *The Ablative.* All adverbs in –ως are probably ablatives. Καλώς, for instance, is from an original καλώδ. The δ (Sanskrit t) is dropped and a final ς is added. Cf. old Latin *meritod, facilumed.* The οὐτώς, ως of the Greek correspond exactly with the old Sanskrit *tād, yād.* The ending in –ως comes by analogy to be exceedingly common. Practically any adjective can by –ως make an adverb in the positive. Some, like ἀδιαλείπτως, belong to the later Greek (κοινή). Participle also may yield such adverbs as *φειδομένως* (2 Cor. 9:6), ὀμολογομένως (1 Tim. 3:16), ὀντώς (Mk. 11:32). Radermacher (N. T. Gk., p. 54) cites ἀρκουντως, τετολμηκτως (Diod., XVI, 74. 6), etc. The bulk of the adverbs in –ως are from adjectives and pronouns. But the examples of –ως are rare in the modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 77).

(3) *The Genitive.* There are not many adverbs in this case outside of those ending in –ου, like θυτοῦ, ὑπου, ποῦ, ὑμου and –ης (ἐξης). This use survives in modern Greek. Cf. the local use of the genitive in Ἐφέσου (Ac. 19:26). The common use of ἤμερας, νυκτός verges toward the adverb. Cf. also τοῦ λοιποῦ (Gal. 6:17). The genitive is almost never used adverbially in Sanskrit.

(4) *The Locative.* This is a rare use in Sanskrit, but more frequent in Greek. Instance ἐκεῖ, κύκλω, ὅκοι, πρωί. So also ἀεί, πέριστι, etc. Hirt (but not Brugmann) likewise treats examples like δημοσίᾳ, ἰδιᾳ, πεςη, etc., as locative. Certainly ποι is locative, but it does not appear in the N. T. Cf. also τῷ ὄντι (article and participle) in adverbial sense (Ro. 7:23).

(5) *The Instrumental.* This case lends itself naturally to the adverb where the idea of manner (associative) is so common. In the Sanskrit it is very common for adverbs to be in the instrumental. Such adverbs as ἀμα (cf. ablative ὁμως from same root), εἶκη, κρυφὴ(η), λάθρα(α), μάλα, πάντη(η), πανταχὴ(η), τάχα, etc., are doubt-

---

1 Giles, Man., p. 240.  
2 Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 320.  
4 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 252.  
6 Ib.  
8 Hirt, Handb., p. 321.  
less instrumental. In some cases τ is added to bring it in harmony with the locative-dative cases with which it blended. ¹ Brugmann ² also puts here such words as ἄνω, κάτω, ἐξω, ἄνωτέρω, ἄνωτάτω, οὗτω. --Πω is by ablaut from --πη (so Laconic πη-ποκα).

(6) The Dative. As in the Sanskrit, ³ so in the Greek the dative is very rare in adverbs. Indeed Hirt ⁴ is not far wrong when he says that it is not easy to find any dative adverbs distinct from the locative, though he accepts παραί χαμαί, κτλ. as dative (p. 260). Brugmann ⁵ thinks otherwise, and one is slow to dissent from the modern master of comparative grammar. He cites πάλαι, χαμαί, καταί, παραί, κύκλω, σπουδή, etc. But Delbruck ⁶ is against Brugmann here. Besides the dative in its proper sense is a little difficult to fit into an adverb. But we have given enough to justify the treatment of adverbs under the declensions. ⁷

(b) SUFFIXES. Other adverbs are formed by suffixes which may be relics of lost case-endings that are no longer clear to us. Here only the main suffixes in use in the N. T. will be mentioned. For --άκι-ς take πολλάκις and the numeral adverbs like τετράκις, etc. For --άχοθ note πανταχοθ. For --δε take οίκαδε. For --δων take óμο-
θυμαδόν (Ac. 18:12). For –ς we may note ἔξαίφνης, ἔξης, ἔφεξης. Those in –θε(ν) are numerous, like ἄνωθεν, ἔξωθεν, οὕρανοθεν, παιδίο-
θεν, etc. Αὐτόθι is common in the papyri, but not in the N. T. ⁸

The deictic ι appears in νυNil and οὐχί. An example of --ς appears in μόλις (cf. μόγις Text. Rec. in Lu. 9:39). For –τι note Ἐβραϊ-
ςτί, Ἑλληνιστί, Λυκανοιστί, Ρωμαῖοιστί. For –κα take ἦνικα. For –ν we have νῦν, πάλιν. For --τε we may mention ὀ-τε, πό-τε. Then –ν is added in the case of δίς, τρίς and various other words like ἀρίς, εὐθύς, χέρις, οὕτως, τετράκις, χωρίς, etc. Ἐκαίσε is an instance of --σε. Then -τος appears in ἐκτός, ἐντός. Finally -χα is seen in ἐν-
νυχα. The papyri furnish parallels for practically all these N. T. examples (and many more). ⁹ Ἶπαξε seems to stand by itself.

(c) COMPOUND ADVERBS. Some adverbs are due to the blend-

¹ Hirt, Handb., p. 321 f.
⁵ Griech. Gr., p. 252. Cf. also p. 229 f., where he acknowledges the other point of view as possible.
⁶ Grundr., p. 60 f.
ling of several words into one word, perhaps with modification by analogy. The κοινή is rather rich in these compound ad-
verbs and Paul fairly revels in them. As samples take ἐκπαλαῖ (2 Pet. 2:3), κατέγυρτι (2 Cor. 12:19), κατενώπιον (Eph. 1:4), παραυτίκα (2 Cor. 4:17), ἀπροσωπολήμπτως (1 Pet. 1:17), παρα-
χρήμα (Lu. 1:64), ὑπεράνω (Eph. 4:10), ὑπερέκεινα (2 Cor. 10:16), ὑπερεκπερισσοῦ (1 Th. 3:10), ὑπερλίαν (2 Cor. 11:5), ὑπερπερισσῶς (Mk. 7:37), etc. The intense emotion in 2 Cor. explains the
piling-up and doubling of some of these prepositional phrases. Occasionally a verbal clause is blended into one word and an ad-
verb made by analogy with --ως. So (from νο------+------+ν έχω) νο unlaw (Mk.
12:34), used by Aristotle and Polybius along with another ad-
verb like νο unlawοντως in Isocrates.1 But in Mark it is used without
any other adverb. ὑπερβαλλόντως (2 Cor. 11:23) is made from
the participle and is common in Attic (Xen., Plato). There are,
besides, adverbial phrases like ἀπRedirectedshift μακρόθεν (Mk. 15:40) ἀπRedirectedshift ἀνω-
θεν, ἔως κάτω (Mt. 27:51), etc. Cf. Con. and Stock, Sel. fr. LXX,
p. 47. See chapter V, p. 170, for discussion of the formation of
compound adverbs which are very common in the κοινή. Paul
uses the idiom frequently. For the use of adverbs in the
see Mayser's careful list from the papyri, pp. 455 ff., and Nach-
Manson, Magn. Inschr., p. 138 f. New adverbs are continually
made in the later Greek, though many of the older ones survive
in the modern Greek. Cf. Thumb, Handb., pp. 78ff. He groups
tillem under place, time, manner and quantity.

(d) ANALOGY. A word is needed to accent the part played by
analogy in the formation of adverbs, though it has already been
alluded to. The two examples mentioned above, νο unlawοντως and
ὑπερβαλλόντως will serve as good illustrations of the work done by
the principle of analogy. The bulk of the --ως adverbs are abla-
tives made by analogy.2

(e) THE COMPARISON OF ADVERBS. In general the adverb is
like the adjective save that in the comparative the accusative
singular is used, like τάχιστα, and the accusative plural in the super-
lative, like τάχιστα. But, per contra, note πρῶτον and κατωτέρω
(Mt. 2:16), περισσοτέρως (2 Cor. 1:12), σπουδαιότέρως (Ph. 2:28),
ἐσχάτως (Mk. 5:23), πορρωτέρω (Lu. 24:28. AB – poi). Cf. fur-
ther ch. XII, III.

3. Adverbial Stems. The derivation of the adverb deserves
a further word, though the facts have already been hinted at.
Brief mention is all that is here called for by way of illustration.

1 Giles, Man., p. 240.  
2 Ib.
(a) SUBSTANTIVES. As N. T. examples of adverbs from substantives may be mentioned ἀρχήν, δωρεάν, χάριν.

(b) ADJECTIVES. It was and is always possible to make an adverb from any Greek adjective by the ablative ending –ως. Cf. both ταχύ (accusative) and ταχέως (ablative). Indeed the line between the adjective and adverb was never sharply drawn, as will be shown when we come to the study of the syntax of the adjective (cf. English "looks bad," "feels bad," a different idea from the adverb, however). In passing note ἐκουσα (Rom. 8:20) and δευτεραιοί (Acts 28:13) in strict accordance with the Greek idiom. The comparison of adverbs is another link between adverb and adjective. In most cases, however, it is merely the use of the comparative and superlative forms of the adjective as an adverb. But in some cases the comparative and superlative adverb is made without any corresponding adjective, done by analogy merely. So μᾶλλον, μᾶλστα, from μᾶλα, ἀνώτερον from the adverb ἄνω. Cf. also ἐγγύτερον (Rom. 13:11) from ἐγγύς, κατώτέρω (Mt. 2:16) from κάτω, and πορφύτερον (Luke 24:28) from πόρρω. Comparative adjectives made from positive adverbs are, on the other hand, seen in ἐξώτερος (Mt. 8:12), ἑσωτερος (Heb. 6:19), κατώτερος (Eph. 4:9). Κατώτερω, περισσότερως (Heb. 2:1, often in Paul; Gal. 1:14), σπουδαιότερως (Phil. 2:28), τολμηρότερως (Rom. 15:15) rather than the forms in —τερον are due to analogy of the ablative –ως. Adverbs made from participles can be looked upon as adjectival or verbal in origin, since the participle is both verb and adjective.

(c) NUMERALS. All that is necessary here is to mention such words as πρῶτον, δίς, ἐπτάκις etc. In Ac. 11:26 we have πρῶτως instead of πρῶτον. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 58) cites for –ως Clem., Hom. 9, 4; 16, 20; Polyb. vi, 5, 10; Diod., etc.

(d) PRONOUNS. The pronominal adverbs are very numerous, like οὔτως, ὡς' αὐτε'ς, etc., αὐτοῦ, ποτε', τότε, ὥδε, etc. As with the correlative pronouns, so the correlative adverbs are lessening. Of the indefinite adverbs only ποτε', ποῦ (a few times), and πως (only in έπιπως, μή πως) appear. Forms like ο', ὄποι, ποί have vanished before οὐ, ὄπου, ποῦ. Cf. English, "where (rather than 'whither') are you going?" Cf. also the accusative τί. (Mark 10:18) = 'why.'

(e) VERBS. Besides such words as νομοθέτως (verbal phrase) and participles like ὑπερβαλλόντως, θείδημόνως, υπερβαλλόντως one should note Ἐβραίστι (from Ἐβραίζω), Ἐλληνιστί (from Ἐλληνίζω),

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 59 f, 2 Green, Handb. to N. T. Gk., p. 137.
etc. In Jas. 4:13; 5:1 ἄγε is used with the plural as an adverb, if indeed it is not in reality an interjection. The modern view of the imperative forms like ἄγε (cf. vocative ἄγε from ἄγως) is that it is merely the root without suffix.¹ In the case of δέωρο we actually have a plural δέωρε. Moulton² illustrates the close connection between interjectional adverb and verb by the English "Murder!" which could be mere interjection or verbal injunction according to circumstances.

4. Use of Adverbs. This is still another way of looking at the subject, but it is a convenience rather than a scientific principle. Blass³ in his N. T. Grammar follows this method solely.

(a) ADVERBS OF MANNER. These are very numerous indeed, like πνευματικῶς, σπουδαίως, etc. Ἑσχάτως ἔχει (Mk. 5:23) is not like the English idiom. The phrase really means that she has it in the last stages. Cf. βαρέως ἔχονσα (Pap. Brit. M., 42). ἑδ, so common in Attic, has nearly gone in the N. T. (only in Mk. 14:7; Mt. 25:21, 23; Ac. 15:29; Eph. 6:3 quot.). Ἑσχάτως ἔχει occurs also in Lu. 19:17 (W. H. text, margin ἑδ). Καλῶς is common. Βέλτιον, appears once (2 Tim. 1:18) and κρείσσον often (1 Cor. 7:38). The comparative adverb διπλῶτερον (Mt. 23:15) is irregular in form (ἄπλούστερον) and late.⁴

(b) ADVERBS OF PLACE. These answer the questions "where" and "whence." "Whither" is no longer a distinct idea in N. T. Greek nor the κοινή generally. Even in ancient Greek the distinction was not always maintained.⁴ Blass⁶ carefully illustrates how "here" and "hither" are both expressed by such words as ἐνθέδε (Ac. 16:28; Jo. 4:16), oddly enough never by ἐνταθα, though θεδε (especially in the Gospels) is the common word (Lu. 9:33, 41). But ἐκεῖ is very common in the sense of 'there' and 'thither' (here again chiefly in the Gospels) as in Mt. 2:15, 22. Ἐκείσσεν ("thither") is found only twice, and both times in Acts (21:3; 22: 5), which has a literary element. So οὖ in both senses (Lu. 4:16; 10:1) and ὕπου (very common in John's Gospel, 14:3 f.). The interrogative τιο (Jo. 1:39; 3:8) follows suit. The indefinite ποῦ is too little used to count (Heb. 2:6) and once without local idea, rather 'about' (Ro. 4:19). Ἀλλαχοῦ occurs once (Mk. 1:38), but πανταχοῦ several times (Lu. 9:6, etc.). Ὅμοῦ is found four times only (Jo. 4:36, etc.), and once D adds ὅμοιος (Ac. 20:

¹ Moulton, Prol., p. 171.
² Ib., p. 171 f. But adv. from verbs are "late and always rare," Giles, Man., p. 342.
³ Gr. of N. T. Gr., pp. 58 ff.
⁴ Ib. ⁵ Ib. ⁶ Ib.
18. Πανταχάνη (ν) likewise is read once (Ac. 21:28), Syrian class —ου. In Ac. 24:3 πάνται (ν) is contrasted with πανταχόδου. Other adverbs of place in the N. T. are ἀνω, ἐντός, ἐκτός, ἕσω, ἔξω, κάτω.

A number of adverbs answer to the question "whence." They are usually words in —θεν. Ἀλλαχόθεν (Jo. 10:1) is found only once in the N. T. ἀνωθεν (Mk. 15:38) is more frequent, though never κατωθεν. The only pronominal forms that appear in the N. T. are ἐκεῖθεν (Rev. 22:2, rather common in Matthew), ἔνθεν (Mt. 17:20), ἐντὸ θεν (twice in Jo. 19:18, and in contrast with ἐκεῖθεν Rev. 22:2), πάντοθεν (Mk. 1:45), ὁθεν (Mt. 12:44), πόθεν (Mt. 21:25). The last two are fairly frequent. Blass1 notes how "stereotyped and meaningless" the ending —θεν has become in many examples, especially with ἔμπροσθεν, (common in Matthew and Luke) and ὅπωρθεν (rare). See both in Rev. 4:6. In some cases by a little effort the real force of —θεν may be seen, but the old Greek soon allowed it to become dim in these words. In the case of ἔσωθεν and ἔξωθεν Blass2 insists on the force of —θεν, only in Mk. 7:18, 21, 23; Lu. 11:7. Cf. also κυκλώθεν (Rev. 4:8). The addition of ἀπό occasionally may be due either to the weakened sense of —θεν or to a fuller expansion of its true idea. So ἀποθεν once (Mt. 27:51, so W. H. against ΚL ἀνωθεν, Mk. 15:38), ἀπὸ μακρόθεν (Mk. 5:6; 15:40, etc.), ἐκ παιδιόθεν (Mk. 9:21).

Blass3 observes that both μακρόθεν and παιδιόθεν are late words and that late writers are fond of using prepositions with —θεν as Homer had ἀποθεν ὄφρανόθεν. But Luke used only ὄφρανόθεν in Ac. 14:17.

(c) ADVERBS OF TIME. The list is not very great, and yet appreciable. Αεί (Ac. 7:51) is not in the Gospels at all and is largely supplanted by πάντοτε (Jo. 6:34) like the κοινή and modern Greek. Ηνίκα is read twice only (2 Cor. 3:15 f.). Ἑπεια (1 Cor. 12:28) and ἐπα (Mk. 4:17) are about equally frequent. ὅτε (Mt. 9:25) occurs 101, ὅταν (Mt. 9:15) 130 times. ὅποτε appears only in the Syrian class in Lu. 6:3 against the neutral and Western ὅτε (so W. H.). Ἡπότε (Mt. 17:17) and ποτέ (Lu. 22:32) are both far less common than ὅτε and ὅταν. But τότε and πάλιν amply atone for this scarcity. All the numeral adverbs (ἀπαξ, πρῶτον, δίς, ἐπτάκις etc.) belong here also.

5. Scope of Adverbs. Here again we are retracing ground and crossing our steps, but a brief word will be useful to show how from adverbs grew other parts of speech. The fact has been stated before. What is here called for is some of the proof and illustration.

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 59, 2 Ib. 3 Ib.
(a) RELATION BETWEEN ADVERBS AND PREPOSITIONS. When we come to study prepositions (ch. XIII) a fuller discussion of this matter will be given. Here the principle will be stated. "The preposition therefore is only an adverb specialized to define a case-usage."¹ That puts the matter in a nutshell. Many of the older grammars have the matter backwards. The use of prepositions with verbs is not the original one. In Homer they are scattered about at will. So with substantives. "Anastrophe is therefore no exception, but the original type"² like τίνος ἐνεκα (Ac. 19:32). To quote Giles³ again, "between adverbs and prepositions no distinct line can be drawn." As samples of cases in prepositions take παρ-ός (gen.), παρ-άι (dat.), περ-ί (loc.), παρ-ά (instr.). It is unscientific to speak of adverbs which "may be used like prepositions to govern nouns"⁴ and then term them "preposition adverbs" or "spurious prepositions." Prepositions do not "govern" cases, but more clearly define them. When adverbs do this, they are just as really prepositions as any others. These will be treated therefore in connection with the other prepositions. They are words like ἀμα, ἀνευ, ἔξω, ὀπίσω, etc.

(b) ADVERBS AND CONJUNCTIONS. These are usually of pronominal origin like ὅ-τε (acc. plus τε) οὗ (gen.), ὃς (abl.), ἀλλά (acc. plural), ἕνα (instr.), etc. Some conjunctions are so early as to elude analysis, like δέ, τέ, etc.⁵ But in most cases the history can be traced. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 60) remarks on the poverty of the N. T. Greek in particles, a poverty as early as the Ἐνθηγάυων Πολιτεία of Aristotle, which is much barer than the N. T. These conjunctions and other particles in the N. T. are cited by Blass: ἀλλά, ἀμα, ἀρα, ἀραγε, ἀρα, ἀρά γε, ἀρχις(ψ), γάρ, γε, δέ, δή, δήσω, διά διόπερ, έάν, ἐάντερ, εί, είτερ, είτα, είτε, ἐπάν επει, ἐπειδή, ἐπειδήσερ, ἐπείπερ (only as variation in Ro. 3:30), ἐπείς, ἐκ, ἡ, ἤ ὡς, ἤ, ἦ ο ο ο ο ο ο ο ο ο, ἦτινα (ἡτερ only variation in Jo. 12:43), ἥτιοι, ἰνα, καθά, καθάπερ, καθό, καθότι, καθώς, καί, καίπερ, καίτοι(γε), μέν μενούνγε, μέντοι, μέχρις(ψ) οὗ (μέχρις[ψ] variation for), μή, μηδέ, μήτε, μήτι, ναι, νή, ὅμως, ὅποτε, ὅπως, ὅταν, ὅτε, ὅτι, ο, οὐ, οὐχι, οὐδέ, ούκουν, οῦν, οὔτε, περ with other words, πληθυ, πριν τε, τοι, (in καίτοι, μέντοι, etc.), τοι-γαρ-οὖν, τοίνυν, ὃς, ὃς, ὃς, ὃς, ὃς, ὃς, ὃς. Several of these occur only once (δήποτε, ἐπειδήσερ, νη, ὅποτε, οὐ-
kou?n). But Blass has not given a complete list. Cf. also διότι, ὀδευ, ὀ, ὅποι, πότε, etc. Fifteen other Attic particles are absent from this N. T. list. The matter will come up again in ch. XXI.

(c) ADVERBS AND INTENSIVE PARTICLES. Πέρ is an older form of περ-ί. Usually, however, as with γε, the origin is obscure. Others used in the N. T. are δή, δήποι, μέν τοί (with other particles). See ch. XXI.

(d) ADVERBS AND INTERJECTIONS. Interjections are often merely adverbs used in exclamation. So with Ἠ, δεύρο, δεύτε, ἔα, ἴδε, ἴδο, οῦα, οὐαί, ὦ. Interjections may be mere sounds, but they are chiefly words with real meaning. Ἡ ἶδε and ἴδε are both verb-stems and ἴδο is kin to ἴδε. The origin of the adverbs here used as interjections is not always clear. Οὐαί as in Mt. 11:21 (common in the LXX, N. T. and Epictetus) has the look of a dative, but one hesitates. As a substantive ἤ οὐαί is probably due to θλῦσ or ταλαιπωρία (Thayer). Cf. chapters XII, v, and XVI, v, (e), for use of article with adverb, as τοῦ νῦν. For the adverb like adjective, as ἤ ὑπερ σχίρα (1 Tim. 5:5), see p. 547. In Lu. 12:49 τί may be an exclamatory adverb (accusative case), but that is not certain. Δεύρο sometimes is almost a verb (Mk. 10:21). The relative adverb ὦς is used as an exclamation in ὦς ὑπαίθει (Ro. 10:15) and ὦς συνεφεύγησα (Ro. 11:33). The interrogative πῶς is likewise so employed, as πῶς δύσκολόν ἐστι (Mk. 10:24), πῶς συνέχομαι (Lu. 12:50), πῶς ἐφίληκ ταῦτα (Jo. 11:36). Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 258. Thus we see many sorts of adverbs and many ways of making them.
CHAPTER VIII

CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ('PHMA)

I. Difficulty of the Subject. The discussion of the verb gives greater difficulty than that of the noun for two reasons especially. For one thing the declension (κλασις) of nouns is more stable than the conjugation (συζυγία) of the verb. This difficulty applies to both the forms and the syntax of the verb. There is besides special difficulty in the Greek verb due to the ease and number of new verbal formations. Sanskrit and Greek can be compared with more ease than Greek and Latin. Giles indeed calls the Latin verb-system "only a mutilated fragment" of the original parent stock, so that "a curious medley of forms" is the result, while in the syntax of the verb no two Indo-Germanic languages are further apart than Greek and Latin. Both noun and verb have suffered greatly in the ravages of time in inflection. It is in declension (cases) and conjugation (personal endings) that noun and verb mainly differ. "These suffixes [used for the present tense], however, are exactly parallel to the suffixes in the substantive, and in many instances can be identified with them."

II. Nature of the Verb.

(a) VERB AND NOUN. In itself verbum is merely 'word,' any word, and so includes noun also. As a matter of fact that was probably true originally. In isolating languages only position and the context can determine a verb from a noun, and that is often true in English to-day. But in inflected tongues the case-endings and the personal endings mark off noun and verb. But in simple truth we do not know which is actually older, noun or verb; both probably grew up together from the same or similar roots. Schoemann, however, is much more positive that "the first word

which man spoke was essentially much more a verb than a noun." But, whether the verb is the first word or not, it is undoubtedly the main one and often in the inflected tongue forms a sentence in itself, since the stem expresses the predicate and the ending the subject. It is worth noting also that by the verb-root and the pronominal root (personal endings) the verb unites the two ultimate parts of speech. The verb and noun suffixes, as already said, are often identical (Giles, Manual, etc., p. 424). In all sentences the verb is the main part of speech (the word *par excellence*) save in the copula (ἐστι) where the predicate is completed by substantive or adjective or adverb (another link between verb and noun). "A noun is a word that designates and a verb a word that asserts" (Whitney, *Am. Jour. of Philol.*, xiii, p. 275). A man who does not see that "has no real bottom to his grammatical science."

(b) MEANING OF THE VERB. Scholars have found much difficulty in defining the verb as distinct from the noun. Indeed there is no inherent difference between nouns and verbs as to action, since both may express that. The chief difference lies in the idea of affirmation. The verb *affirms*, a thing not done by a noun except by suggested predication. Verbs indicate affirmation by the personal endings. Affirmation includes negative assertions also. Farrar cites also the German "abstract conception of existence" (Humboldt) and action (*Tüitigkeitswort*), but they do not fit the facts. Curiously enough many ancient grammarians found time to be the main idea in the verb.

(c) PURE AND HYBRID VERBS. The close kinship between nouns and verbs appears in the verbal nouns which partake of both. The infinitive is a verbal substantive, and the participle is a verbal adjective. There is also the verbal in —το and —τεο Some of the properties of both verb and noun belong to each. They are thus hybrids. They are generally called non-finite

---

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 1. In the Sans. it is to be noted that the noun had an earlier and a more rapid development than the verb. The case-endings appear first in the Sans., the verb-conjugation in the Gk., though the personal endings are more distinct in the Sans. 2 Cf. Garnett, Philol. Ess. 3 Cf. Gr. Gen. of Port Royal; Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 38. 4 Ib. He considers the verb later than the noun because of its complex idea. Cf. Schramm, Uber die Bedeutung der Formen des Verbums (1884); Curtius, Die Bildung der Tempora und Modi im Griech. und Lat. (1846); Junius, Evolution of the Greek Verb from Primary Elements (1843); Lautensach, Verbalflexion der att. Inschr. (1887); Hogue, Irregular Verbs of Attic Prose (1889).
verbs, because they do not make affirmation. They have no personal endings. They fall short of being mere verbs, but they are more than the noun. The pure verb has personal endings and is thus finite (limited). The two must be kept distinct in mind, though they run together sometimes in treatment. The finite verb has person and number expressed in the personal ending.¹

The verbum finitum has modes while the verbum infinitum, (infinitive and participle) has no modes.

III. The Building of the Verb. This is not the place for a full presentation of the phenomena concerning verb-structure. The essential facts as to paradigms must be assumed. But attention can be called to the fact that the Greek verb is built up by means of suffixes and affixes around the verb-root. So it was originally, and a number of such examples survive. Afterwards analogy, of course, played the main part. The oldest verbs are those which have the simple root without a thematic vowel like φη-μι or ε-βη-ν. This root is the ground floor, so to speak, of the Greek verb. On this root the aorist and present-tense systems were built by merely adding the personal endings. This was the simplest form of the verb. There is no essential difference in form between ε-φη-ν and ε-στη-ν. We call one imperfect indicative and the other second aorist indicative, but they are originally the same form.² The term second aorist is itself a misnomer, for it is older than the so-called first aorist —σα or —α. The thematic stem (vowel added to root) is seen in verbs like —λιμο/ε. On this model the rest of the verb is built. So all Greek root-verbs are either non-thematic or thematic. The denominative verbs like τιμά-ω are all thematic. On roots or stems then all the verbs (simple or compound) are built. The modes, the voices, the tenses all contribute their special part to the whole. The personal endings have to carry a heavy burden. They express not only person and number, but also voice. There are mode-signs and tense-suffixes, but no separate voice suffixes apart from the personal endings. The personal pronouns thus used with the verb-root antedate the mode and tense suffixes. The Sanskrit preserves the person-endings more clearly than the Greek, though the Greek has a more fully developed system of modes and tenses than the later classical Sanskrit.³ It seems certain that these pro-

² Hirt, Handb., p. 363 f. Cf. also Giles, Man., pp. 425
³ Donaldson, New Crat., pp. 570
nominal suffixes, like --μι, --σι, --τι, are not in the nominative, but
an oblique case\(^1\) connected with the stem: με, σε, τι (cf. demonstrative τό). But the subject of personal endings is a very extensive
and obscure one, for treatment of which see the comparative grammars.\(^2\) There is a constant tendency to syncretism in
the use of these personal endings. Homer has fewer than the
Sanskrit, but more than Plato. The dual is gone in the N. T.
and other endings drop away gradually. The nominative pro-
noun has to be expressed more and more, like modern English.

IV. The Survival of --μι Verbs.
(a) A CROSS DIVISION. Before we take up modes, voices,
tenses, we are confronted with a double method of inflection that
cuts across the modes, voices and tenses. One is called the —μι,
inflection from the immediate attachment of the personal endings
to the stem. The other is the —ω inflection and has the them-
ic vowel added to the stem. But the difference of inflection
is not general throughout any verb, only in the second aorist and
the present-tense systems (and a few second perfects), and even so
the --μι conjugation is confined to four very common verbs (γιμί,
Υπερτεμί, διδωμί, τιθεμί), except that a number have it either in the
present system, like δικ-νυ-μί. (with νυ inserted here), or the aorist,
like ε-βημί.\(^3\) The dialects differed much in the use of non-thematic
and thematic verbs (cf. Buck, "The Interrelations of the Greek
(b) THE OLDEST VERBS. This fact is a commonplace in Greek
grammar. It is probable that originally all verbs were —μι verbs.
This inflection is preserved in optative forms like λυομί, and in
Homer the subjunctive\(^4\) εθελωμί, Υδωμί, etc. The simplest roots
with the most elementary ideas have the —μι form.\(^5\) Hence the
conclusion is obvious that the —μι conjugation that survives in
some verbs in the second aorist and present systems (one or
both) is the original. It was in the beginning λεγ-ο-μί with them-
ic as well as φημί with non-thematic verbs.\(^6\)
(c) GRADUAL DISAPPEARANCE. In Latin the —μι, ending is
seen only in inquam and sum, though Latin has many athematic
stems. In English we see it in am. Even in Homer the —μι

\(^3\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 232 f.
\(^4\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 51.
\(^5\) Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 46.
and Goelzer, Phonet., pp. 347.
forms are vanishing before the –ω conjugation. Jannaris (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 234) has an excellent brief sketch of the gradual vanishing of the –μι forms which flourished chiefly in pre-Attic Greek. The LXX MSS. show the same tendency towards the disappearance of –μι forms so noticeable in the N. T., the papyri and other representatives of the κοινή. See numerous parallel illustrations in Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 104-110. In the LXX the transition to –ω verbs is less advanced than in the N. T. (Thackeray, Gr., p. 244) and the middle –μι forms held on longest. In the κοινή this process kept on till in modern Greek vernacular είμαι is the only remnant left. In the Attic δείκνυμι, for instance, is side by side with δεικνύω. In the N. T. we find such forms as διδώ (Rev. 3:9), ἵστω (Ro. 3:31, EKL), συνιστώ (2 Cor. 3:1, BD).

(d) N. T. USAGE AS TO –μι VERBS. The –μι verbs in the N. T. as in the papyri are badly broken, but still in use.

1. The Second Aorists (active and middle). We take first the so-called second aorists (athematic) because they come first save where the present is practically identical. In some verbs only the second aorist is athematic, the stem of the verb having dropped the –μι inflection. A new view¹ makes the second aorist sometimes "a reduced root," but this does not show that in the parent stock the old aorist was not the mere root. Analogy worked here as elsewhere. Kaegi² properly calls the old aorists of verbs like βάλλω (ἐ-βλη-το instead of the thematic and later ἐ-βάλ-ε-το) "primitive aorists." In the early Epic the root-aorists and strong thematic aorists outnumber the σ or weak aorists by three to one.³ The important N. T. –μι verbs will now be considered.

Βαίνω. Only in composition in N. T. (ἀνά-- προσ-ανα--, συν-- ἀνα--, ἀ-πο--, δια--, ἐκ--, ἐμ--, κατα--, μετα--, παρα--, προ--, συμ--). In the LXX it is rare in simplex. The papyri use it freely with nine prepositions.⁴ Note the common forms like ἀνέβη (Mt. 5:1). The "contract" forms are in the imperative as in the Attic poets (ἐ-σβα, καταβα).⁵ Mayser⁶ gives no examples from the papyri, nor does the LXX have any (LXX only ἀναβηθη, καταβηθη, --βητε,--βητω, --βητωσαν).⁷ So ἀνάβα (Rev. 4:1), ἀνάβατε (Rev. 11:12), κατάβα (Syrian class in Mk. 15:30), καταβάτω (Mt. 24:17; 27:42. Cf.

¹ Cf. King and Cookson, Prin. of Sound and Inflexion, 1888, pp. 225
² Gk. Gr., 1893, p. 245.
³ Thompson, Hom. Gr., 1890, p. 127.⁴ Mayser, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 50.
also Mk. 13:15; 15:32; Lu. 17:31), μετάβα (Mt. 17:20). On the other hand note the usual κατάβηθι (Mt. 27:40, etc.), μετάβηθι (Jo. 7:3), προσανάβηθι (Lu. 14:10). The forms in –άω, –ατε, –άτωσαν are like the Doric.

Γινώσκω. This verb in the Ionic and κοινή γέν. form is very common in John's Gospel and the First Epistle. It is used in composition with ἀνα-, δια-, ἔπι-, κατα-, προ-, the papyri adding still other compounds. The N. T. shows the usual second aorist forms like ἔγνων (Lu. 16:4). What calls for remark is the second aorist subjunctive γνοί instead of γνῶ. W. F. Moulton's view\(^2\) on this point is confirmed by the papyri\(^3\) parallel in ἐπιγνοί and accepted by W. H. and Nestle. Analogy seems to have worked here to make γνοί like δοι. But Winer-Schmiedel (p. 115) cite γνοί from Hernias, Mand. IV, 1, 5 K. It is in accordance with the contraction of –οω verbs when we find forms like γναί, δοι, etc., ὑπὸ = οί instead of ὑπὸ. For γνοί see Mk. 5:43; 9:30; Lu. 19:15. But see also γνῶ in Jo. 7:51; 11:57 (D has γναί); 14:31; Ac. 22:24 (ἔπι—we). But the MSS. vary in each passage. In the LXX the regular γνῶ occurs save in Judith 14:5, where B has ἐπίγνοι.

Δίδωμι. This very common verb is frequently compounded (ἀνα-, ἀντ-, ἀπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, ἔπι-, μετα-, παρα-, προ-) as in the papyri.\(^4\) The old indicative active appears only in παρεδοσάν in the literary preface to Luke's Gospel (1:2).\(^5\) Elsewhere the first aorist forms in --κα (like τικα, ξοκα) sweep the field for both singular and plural. These κ forms for the plural appear in the Attic inscriptions in the fourth century B.C.\(^6\) and rapidly grow. In the papyri Mayser\(^7\) finds only the κ aorists. The other modes go regularly δος, δό, etc. The indicative middle occasionally, as the imperfect, has ε for ο of the root. This is possibly due to proportional analogy (ἐξεδότο: ἐξεδόμην=ἐλύτειο: ἐλύψει).\(^8\) These forms are ἀπέδεικτο (Heb. 12:16), ἐξεδέκτο (Mk. 12:1; Mt. 21:33; Lu. 20:9). The usual form ἀπεδοσθε, etc., appears in Ac. 5:8; (23) 7:9. The subjunctive active third singular shows great variation between δοι, δό (cf. γνοί above), and δω (especially in Paul's Epistles).\(^9\) The LXX MSS. occasionally give --δοι and

---

4 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 392.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 49.
6 Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 188 f.
7 Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 367 f.
9 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 49.
even δή by assimilation (Thackeray, Gr., p. 255 f.). For papyri examples see references under γινώσκω. Mark four times (all the examples) has also δοί according to the best MSS. (4:29; 8:37; 14:10 f.) and John one out of three (13:2). Tisch. (not W. H.) reads ἀποδοί in 1 Th. 5:15, but all MSS. have ἀπόδω in Mt. 18:30. W. H. accept δῶ in Jo. 15:16; Eph. 3:16; 1 Th. 5:15 (ἀπο--). Most MSS. read δῶ in Eph. 1:17 and 2 Tim. 2:25, in both of which places W. H. put δω (opt. for δοί) in the text and δῶ in the margin. The opt. δῶ appears in the LXX (Jer. 9:2) in the text of Swete. Con. and Stock, Sel. from LXX, p. 45, give δω twenty-nine times in LXX and δοί three times as variant. They give an interesting list of other forms of διδωμι and its compounds in the LXX. Hort¹ is doubtful about such a subjunctive in δω except in the epic poets. Blass² is willing to take δῶ, and Moulton³ cites Boeotian and Delphian inscriptions which preserve this Homeric form. He adds that the subjunctive seems "a syntactical necessity" in Eph. 1:17 and 2 Tim. 2:25. The opt. δῶ= δοί (cf. subjunctive δοί= δῶ) is without variant in 2 Th. 3:16; 2 Tim. 1:16, 18.⁴ Blass⁵ scouts the idea of a possible first aorist active ἔδωσα from ένα δῶση (Jo. 17:2 KcAC), δῶσωμεν (Mk. 6:37, KD), on the ground that η and ε, o and ω so often blend in sound in the κοινή. The so-called future subjunctive will be discussed later (ch. XIX).

Τημι. Not in simplex in N. T. (see p. 314 for details), but ἀφίημι is quite common (especially in the Gospels), and συνήμι less so. Besides a few examples occur also of ἀνήμι, καθήμι παρήμι. The papyri⁶ use the various prepositions freely in composition with ημι. The common μ second aorists, like ἀφες (Mt. 3:15), ἀφη (Mk. 12:19), ἀνέντες (Ac. 27:40), are found. In the indicative active, however, the form in -κα is used alone in both singular and plural, as ἀφήκαμεν (Mt. 19:27), ἀφήκατε (Mt. 23:23), ἀφήκαν (Mk. 11:6). This is true of all the compounds of ημι in the N. T. as in LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 252). The form ἀφήκες (Rev. 2:4) is on a par with the second person singular perfect active indicative as accepted by W. H. in κεκοπίακες (Rev. 2:3), πέτουκες (Rev. 2:5), ἐληφες (Rev. 11:17).⁷ Ἀφήκαμεν is aorist in Mk. 10:28 as well as in its parallel Mt. 19:27

¹ Notes on Orth., p. 168. Cf. also W.-Sch., p. 121.
² Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 48 f.
³ Prol., p. 55. Cf. Dittenb., Syll., 462. 17, etc.
⁴ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 168.
⁵ Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 49, 212.
⁷ Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 166. The evidence is "nowhere free from
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

(= Lu. 18:28). So also as to συνήκατε in Mt. 13:51. The perfect in –έκα does not, however, occur in the N. T. nor in the LXX (cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 51), though the papyri have it (Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 331).

"Ιστημι. This verb is used freely by itself, especially in the Gospels, and occurs in twenty prepositional combinations according to Thayer (άν--, επ-αν--, ἐξ-αν--, ἰνθ--, ἰφ--, δι--, ἐν--, ἐξ--, ἐπ--, ἐφ--, κατ-ἐφ--, συν-ἐφ--, καθ--, ἀντι-καθ--, ἀπο-αθ--, μεθ--, παρ--, περι--, προ--, συν--), going quite beyond the papyri in richness of expression.1 The second aorist active indicative ἔστη (ἀπέστη, etc.) is common and is intransitive as in Attic, just like ἔστάθη (cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 50). The other forms are regular (στῶ, στήθι, etc.) save that ἀνάστα (like ἀνάβα) is read in a few places (Ac. 9:11; 12:7; Eph. 5:14), but στήθι, ἀνάστηθι (Ac. 9:6, 34), ἔπιστηθι, στήθε, ἀντίστηθε, ἀπόστηθω.2 Winer3 cites ἀπόστα, παράστα also from late writers and a few earlier authors for ἀνάστα. The LXX shows a few examples also.4

Οὐνίνημι. This classic word (not given in the papyri, according to Mayser's Grammatik) is found only once in the N. T., the second aorist opt. middle ὀνάμην (Phil. 20).

Τιθημι. The compounds of τιθημι in the N. T. (ἀνα-, προσ-ἀνα-, ἀπο-, δια-, ἀντι-δια-, ἐκ-, ἐπι-, συν-ἐπι-, κατα-, συν-κατα-, μετα-, παρα-, περι-, προ-, προσ-, συν-, ὑπο—) vie with those of ἵστημι and equal the papyri use.5 The first aorist active in –κα alone appears (so LXX) in the indicative singular and plural as ἔθηκαν (Mk. 6:29), but the subjunctive in –θώ (Mt. 22:44), imperative πρόσθες (Lu. 17:5). The middle has the regular second aorist ἔθετο (Ac. 19:21 and often).

Φημι. If one is surprised to see this verb put under the list of second aorist, he can turn to Blass,6 who says that it is "at once doubt," some MSS. read ἐδωκες (Jo. 17:7 f.) and ἀφηκετε (Mt. 23:23), not to say ἐώρακες (Jo. 8:57), ἑλήλυθες (Ac. 21:22, B also). Moulton (Prol., p. 52) considers -ες a "mark of imperfect Gk." For further exx. of this -ες ending in the LXX and κοινή see Buresch, Rhein. Mus. etc., 1891, p. 222 f. For ἴνμι and its compounds in the LXX see C. and S., Sel. fr. LXX, p. 45 f., showing numerous --ω forms, αφηκαν (Xen. ἔκαν), etc.

1 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 398.  
2 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 168.  
3 Thack., Gr., p. 254. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 122 f. On ιστάναι and its compounds in the LXX see interesting list in C. and S., Sel. fr. LXX, p. 43 f., giving --ω forms, transitive ἔστακα, etc.
4 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 411.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 50. The verb is mentioned here to impress the fact that it is aorist as well as imperfect.
imperfect and aorist." It is common in the N. T. as aorist (Mt. 4:7, for instance, ἔφη). It is not always possible to decide.

2. Some — μι Presente. It is difficult to group these verbs according to any rational system, though one or two small groups (like those in — νμι, —ημι) appear. The presents are more common in the N. T. than the aorists. The list is based on the uncompounded forms.

Δείκ-υμ-μι. Already in the Attic δείκνυω is common, but Blass observes that in the N. T. the middle-passive — μι forms are still rather common. It is compounded with ανα-, απο-, ἔν-, επι-, ὑπο-. No presents (or imperfects) occur with ανα- and ὑπο-. The word itself is not used very extensively. The form δείκνυμι is found once (1 Cor. 12:31), —ω not at all. So on the other hand δείκνυεις occurs once (Jo. 2:18), —ς not at all. Δείκνυσιν is read by the best MSS. (Mt. 4:8; Jo. 5:20). The middle ἐνδείκνυσαί appears in Ro. 2:15. The — μι participle active is found in Ac. 18:28 (ἐπιδείκνυσι) and 2 Th. 2:4 (ἀποδεικνύσα). The middle — μι participle is seen in Ac. 9:39; Tit. 2:10; 3:2 (—μενος, etc.). In Heb. 6:11 the infinitive ἐνδεικνυσθαι is read, but δείκνυει (Mt. 16:21 B —ον). The other N. T. verbs in — μι (ἀπόλλυμι, ἐφύσαμι, ὑπο-, εὐφύσαμι, ἐμμυρι, σβένυμι, στρώνυμι, ὑποστρώνυμι, κτλ.) will be discussed in alphabetical order of the simplex. The inscriptions show these forms still in use (Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 178). The verbs in --νμι were the first to succumb to the —ω inflection. In the LXX the — μι forms are universal in the middle, but in the active the —ω forms are more usual (Thack., Gr., p. 245).

Διδωμι. See under (d), 1, for list of compounds in the N. T. Attic Greek had numerous examples from the form διδ-ω (διδου, ἐδίδουν, —ους, —ου). This usage is extended in the N. T. as in the papryi to διδω (Rev. 3:9), though even here BP have διδωμι. In Wisd. of Sol. 12:19 διδοῖ occurs, but Lu. 22:48 has the regular παραδίδω. Διδωσι is common (in LXX, Ps. 37:21, διδοὶ appears) and διδοσιν in Rev. 17:13. The uniform imperfect ἐδίδου (Mt. 15:36) is like the Attic. Hort observes that Mk. (15:23) and Ac. (4:33; 27:1) prefer ἐδίδουν. Jo. (19:3) has, however, ἐδίδοσιν and Acts once also (16:4). Διδου (Attic present imperative) is read by Syrian MSS. in Mt. 5:42 for δῶς. In Rev. 22:2 the

1 Ib., p. 48.
2 In the pap. both — μι and —ω but only — μι. Mayser, Gr. d. grieææ. Pap., p. 392.
text has participle ἀποδίδον, for —όν (marg. —οὺς), while παραδί-δόν is read by Ν in Mt. 26:46 and D in Mk. 14:42, etc.¹ The middle-passive forms in —έτο (imperfect) from a present δίδω are like the aorist forms, which see above. So δειδεήτο (Ac. 4:35) and παρεδίδετο (1 Cor. 11:23). So also subjunctive παραδίδοι is found only once (1 Cor. 15:24) and is probably to be rejected (BG), though the papyri amply support it.² In the imperfect ἔδιδοσαν holds its place in the LXX, while in the present the forms generally prevail (Thackeray, Gr., p. 250). The LXX is quite behind the N. T. in the transition from —μι to —ω forms.

Δύναμαι. The use of δύνη (Mk. 9:22; Lu. 16:2; Rev. 2:2) instead of δύνασαι argues for the thematic δύνομαι. Elsewhere δύνασαι (Lu. 6:42, etc.). This use of δύνη is found in the poets and from Polybius on in prose (Thayer), as shown by inscriptions³ and papyri.⁴ Hort⁵ calls it a "tragic" form retained in the κοινή. It is not surprising therefore to find B reading δύνομαι (also —όμεθα, —όμενος) in Mk. 10:39; Mt. 19:12; 26:53; Ac. 4:20; 27:15; Is. 28:20 (so Ν in Is. 59:15). The papyri⁶ give plenty of illustrations also. MSS. in the LXX give δύνομαι and δύνη.

Εἰμί. The compounds are with ἀπ--, ἐν--, ἐκ-- (only ἐξεστίν, ἐξόν), παρ--, συν--, συν-παρ--. The papyri⁷ show a much more extended use of prepositions. This very common verb has not undergone many changes, though a few call for notice. In the present indicative there is nothing for remark. The imperfect shows the middle ἦμιν, ἦμεθα regularly (as Mt. 25:43; 23:30), as modern Greek uniformly has the middle present εἶμαι, etc., as well as imperfect middle. Cf. already in ancient Greek the future middle ἐσμαι.

The use of seen in the papyri⁸ and inscriptions⁹ also, served to mark it off from the third singular ἦν. But examples of ἦμεν still survive (Ro. 7:5, etc.). Moulton¹⁰ quotes from Ramsay¹¹ a Phrygian inscription of εἶμαι for early fourth century A.D. He cites also the Delphian middle forms ἦται, ἔται, Messenian ἦνται,

¹ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 167. Cf. also W.-Sch., p. 121.
² Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 37.
³ Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 177.
⁶ Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 355; Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 36.
⁷ Mayser, ib., p. 394.
⁸ Ib., p. 356.
⁹ Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 178.
¹⁰ Prol., p. 56. D (M. shows) alone has ἦν in Ac. 20:18.
¹¹ Cities and Bish. of Phrygia, II, 565.
Lesbian ζσηςα, as early instances of this tendency, not to mention the Northwest Greek.¹ The peculiar classical second person ησθα is found in Mk. 14:67; Mt. 26:69, but elsewhere is (Jo. 11:21, 32, etc.), the common form in the κοινη.² Ητε (Ro. 6:20, for instance) is regular. So with the imperative (Mt. 2:13, etc.). Ἡτω (as 1 Cor. 16:22) is less common³ than the usual ζστω (Gal. 1:8). Εστωσαν (never ὅντων nor ζστων), as in Lu. 12:35, is a form found in Attic inscriptions since 200 B.C.⁴ Some of the papyri even have ἢτωσαυ.⁵ Mention has already (Orthography) been made of the irrational ν with the subjunctive in the papyri,⁶ as in ὅταν ην—δηλώσω. The use of ἑνὶ=ἐνεστι (as 1 Cor. 6:5; Gal. 3:28, etc.) an old idiom. Ἐνὶ=ἐν and in modern Greek has supplanted ἐστί in the form ἐνε or ἐναι (so for ἐστί, also).⁷ Cf. Sir. 37:2. N. T. has no example of imperative ζστε.

Ειμι. Only in compounds (ἀπ--, ἐις--, ἔς--, ἐπ--, συν--). The papyri⁸ and the inscriptions⁹ show only the compound forms. Blass¹⁰ indeed denies that even the compound appears in the popular κοινη, but this is an overstatement. The Attic employed ἐρχομαι for the present indicative and kept ειμι for the future indicative. The κοινη followed the Ionic (and Epic) in the use of ἐρχομαι for all the tenses to the neglect of ειμι. In the N. T. only Luke and the writer of Hebrews (once) use these compound forms of ειμι and that very rarely. Ἀπειμι, only occurs in the imperfect indicative (Ac. 17:10, ἀπήσασαυν). Εἰσειμι appears four times, two in the present indicative (Ac. 3:3; Heb. 9:6), two in the imperfect indicative (Ac. 21:18, 26), while εἰσέρχομαι, appears over two hundred times. Εξειμι also occurs four times, all in Acts (13:42; 17:15; 20:7; 27:43), against a host of instances of εξέρχομαι. Ἐπειμι is read five times in Acts and all of them in the participle τη ἐπιουση (Ac. 7:26, etc.). Σύνειμι is found only in Lu. 8:4. B reads εἰσιθαυ in Ac. 9:6, not εἰσελθε. Blass¹¹ rather

¹ Prol., p. 37.
² W.-Sch., p. 117:
³ Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 56. Both forms in pap. and inscr. On ημην, ης, ημεθα, ἤτω, ΕΣΤΩΣΑΝ in the LXX see C. and S., Sel. fr. LXX, p. 31 f. Thack., Gr., P. 256 f. Beyond this the LXX goes very little.
⁵ Moulton, Rev., 1901, p. 436.
⁶ Ib., p. 38. Cf. Gen. 6:17 E, according to Moulton, Prol., p. 49.
⁸ Mayser, GRF d. griech. Pap., p. 355.
¹⁰ Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 52, 54.
¹¹ Ib., p. 52.
needlessly construes ἐξεύγνυμ (Ac. 13:42) in the aoristic sense (so as to 17:10, 15; 21:18, 26). ἐμι is nearly gone from the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 257).

Επίσταμαι. This verb occurs fifteen times in the N. T., chiefly in Acts (10:28, etc.) and always in the present tense.¹

Ζεύγνυμι. Only in the compound συ-ζεύγνυμι and in the aorist active alone, συνέζευξεν (Mk. 10:9 = Mt. 19:6).

Ζώνυμι. The compounds are with ἄνα--, δια--, περι--, ὑπο--. Curiously enough the verb does not appear in Mayser, Nachmannson nor Schweizer, though Mayser (p. 397) does mention ζεύγνυμι which on the other hand the N. T. does not give save the one form above. But the uncompounded form is read in the N. T. only three times, one aorist indicative (Ac. 12:8), one future indicative (Jo. 21:18), and one imperfect (Jo. 21:18, ἐξώνυμεν, a form in –ω, not –μι). There is only one instance of the compound with ἄνα-- and that an aorist participle (1 Pet. 1:13). The three examples of διαζ., all in Jo. (13:4, etc.), yield no presents nor imperfects. The same thing is true of the half-dozen instances of περιζ., as Lu. 12:35, The LXX has περιζώνυμαι (Thackeray, Gr., p. 269). The one instance of ὑποζ. is in Ac. 27:17 and shows the form in –μι, ὑποζωνύμενες.

Ἡμι. It is only in the compound form κάθημαι that this verb is seen in the N. T. and thus very frequently, twice with συν-prefixed (Mk. 14:54; Ac. 26:30). It is usually the participle κατημένος that one meets in the N. T. (as Mt. 9:9). The imperfect is regularly ἐκάθητο, etc. (as Mt. 13:1), the future καθησμαι, (as Mt. 19:28). No –ω forms appear in the present, though κάθη (Ac. 23:3) is a contract form like δύνη for καθησο (already in Hyperides).² The short imperative κάθου for καθησαι (as Jas. 2:3) is already in the LXX (cf. Mt. 22:44 from Ps. 110:1) and indeed in the late Attic (Blass, ib.), though chiefly postclassical.³

ἲμι. Like ἐμι this verb only appears in the N. T. in the compound form (ἄν-, ἄφ-, καθ-, παρ-, συν--). The same thing appears to be true of the papyri as given by Mayser,⁴ though fifteen combinations greet us in the papyri. But the papyri and the κοινη inscriptions have not yet furnished us with the –ω formation with ἲμι compounds which we find in ἄφ-- and συνไขμ.

¹ Just so the pap., Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 395.
² Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 52. Cf. also for pap., Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 38. For LXX see Thackeray, p. 272.
³ W.-Sch., p. 118; Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 177; Reinhold, De Graec., p. 89.
⁴ Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 398.
in the N. T. ¹ and the LXX. ² But Philo ³ and the N. T. Apocrypha and early Christian writers ⁴ follow the LXX and the N. T.  'Ανίημι indeed has only ἀνιέντες (Eph. 6:9) in the present stem. So also καθίημι shows only καθιέμενον (καθιέμενον) in Ac. 10:11; 11:5, while παρίημι has no present, but only an aorist (Lu. 11: 42) and a perfect passive (Heb. 12:12).  'Αφίημι is the form of the verb that is common in the N. T. In Rev. 2:20 ἀφεῖς is probably a present from ἀφεῖ. ⁵ But Blass (p. 51, of N. T. Grammar) compares the Attic ἀφίεις and πίθεις. Only ἀφίημι (Jo. 14: 27) and ἀφίησι (Mt. 3:15) occur, but in Lu. 11:4 ἀφίομεν, is from the Ionic ἀφίω (cf. θίδω). So also in Rev. 11:9 ἀφίουσιν and in Jo. 20:23 marg. W. H. have ἀφίονται. Elsewhere ἀφίεται (Mt. 9:2, etc.). In the imperfect ἤμεν from ἀφίω is read in Mk. 1:34; 11:16.  'Αφεὼνται (Lu. 5:20, 23, etc.) is a perfect passive (Doric Arcadian, Ionic). ⁶ Cf. Ionic ἔωκα. Simcox (Language of the N. T., p. 38) quotes also ἀνέωνται from Herodotus. With συνίημι the task is much simpler. Blass⁷ sums it up in a word. In Ac. 7:25 συνιέναι, gives us the only undisputed instance of a –μι form. All the others are –ω forms or have –ω variations. However συνιέντος is correct in Mt. 13:19 and συνιέναι in Lu. 24:45. There is a good deal of fluctuation in the MSS. in most cases. W. H. read συνίουσιν (Mt. 13:13), συνίωσιν, (Mk. 4:12), συνίὼν (Ro. 3 : 11). In 2 Cor. 10:12 W. H. read συνίσιν after B. In the LXX only the compounded verb occurs, and usually the –μι forms save with συνίημι (Thackeray, Gr., p. 250 f.).

'Iστημι. Cf. also ἔπ-ισταμαί (see above) and στήκω (from ἐστήκα, imperfect ἐστήκη in Rev. 12:4, στέκω in modern Greek). For the list of compounds⁸ see list of aorists (1). But the essential facts can be briefly set forth. The –μι form in the present stem has disappeared in the active voice save in καθίστησιν, (Heb. 7:28; 2 Pet. 1:8), συνίστημι (Ro. 16:1) and συνίστησι (2 Cor. 10:18; Ro. 3:5; 5: 8).⁹ The middle (passive) forms retain the –μι inflection regularly with ἵστημι and its compounds (ἀν–, ἀφ–, ἀθο–, ἔξ–, ἐφ–, προ–, συν–), as καθίστατι (Heb. 5:1), περιστασό

---

¹ Mayser, ib., p. 354; Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 167.
² W.-Sch p. 123. Herod. is cited for the use of ἔξει and μετίει as –ω presents.
³ Ib.
⁴ Reinhold, De Graec., p. 94.
⁶ Moulton, Prol., p. 38 f.
⁷ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 51. He gives the MS. variations and parallels in Hermas and Barn. See further A. Buttmann, Gr., p. 48.
⁹ Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 168; Blass, Gr. of N. T., p. 48.
(2 Tim. 2:16). Two --ω forms supplant the --μι conjugation of ιστήμη and its compounds, that in -άω and that in -άνω, though usually the MSS. vary greatly between the two. In 1 Cor. 13:2 NKDEFG read μεθοστάναι, though W. H. follow ACKL in μεθι-
στάνειν. The form in -άω is found in various MSS. for ιστάω (as ιστάμεν Ro. 3:31), ἄποκαθαρο:, ἐξιστάω, καθιστάω, μεθιστάω, συνιστάω, but is nowhere accepted in the W. H. text, though Hort4 prefers συνιστάναι to συνιστάνειν in 2 Cor. 3:1. In 2 Cor. 4:2 a threefold division occurs in the evidence. For συνι-
στάνοντες we have ABP (so W. H. and Nestle), for συνιστάντες KCD*FG, for συνιστώτες D*EKL.5 The form in -άνω is uniformly given by W. H., though the form in -άω comes from Herodotus on and is frequent in the LXX.6 But the --μι forms hold their own pretty well in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 247). The form in -άνω, may be compared with the Cretan στανύειν and is found in the late Attic inscriptions.7 Instances of the form in -άνω in the W. H. text are Ac. 1:6; 8:9; 17:15; 1 Cor. 13:2; 2 Cor. 3:1; 5:12; 6:4; 10:12, 18; Gal. 2:18; Ro. 3:31; 6:13, 16). In Mk. 9:12 W. H. (not so Nestle) accept the form ἄποκαθαστάναι after B, while KD read ἄποκαθαστάναι (cf. Cretan στανύω). D has this form also in Ac. 1:6 and 17:15.

Κείμαι. This defective verb is only used in the present and imperfect in the N. T. as in the papyri,8 and with a number of prepositions in composition like the papyri also. The prepositions are ἀνα-, συν-ἀνα-, ἀντι-, ἀπο-, ἐπι-, κατα-, παρα-, περι-, προ-. The regular --μι forms are always used, and sometimes as the passive

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T., p. 49.
2 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 168; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 49.
3 Here Hort (Notes, etc., p. 168) differs from Westcott and prefers -άναι.
4 Ib.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 48.
6 Ib. W.-Sch., p. 122.
7 Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 177. For many --νω verbs in mod. Gk. see
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB (PHMA) 317

for the papyri. The form1 κρέμαται is read in Mt. 22:40 and the participle κρεμάμενος (v) in Gal. 3:13; Ac. 28:4. In Lu. 19:48 ΡΒ (so W. H. anq Nestle) read ἐξεκρέμετο, an –ω form and the only compound form of the verb in the N. T. The other forms are aorists which come from an active present κρεμάννυμι, ἀννύω, ἀω or ἀξω. They are κρεμάσαντες (Ac. 5:30) and κρεμάσθη (Mt. 18:6). But none of these presents occurs in the N. T. Cf. Veitch, Greek Verbs, p. 343 f., for examples of the active and the middle.

So also no present of κρέμνυμι, (compound σω--) is found in the N. T., but only the perfect passive (Rev. 14:10) and the aorist active (Rev. 18:6).

Μίγνυμι. The only μι form is the compound σων-ανα-μίγνυσθαι (1 Cor. 5:9, 11) and so 2 Th. 3:14 according to W. H., instead of σων-ανα-μίγνυσθε. Elsewhere, as in the papyri,2 the N. T. has only the perfect passive (Mt. 27:34) and the aorist active (Lu. 13:1).

Οἰγνυμι. This verb does not appear in the N. T. in the simple form, but always compounded with ἀν- or δι-αν- . Besides it is always an –ω verb as in the papyri3 and the LXX.4 It is worth mentioning here to mark the decline of the –μι forms.

Ολλυμι. Only in the common απ-- and once with σων-απ-- (Heb. 11:31). In the active only the –ω forms are found as απολλύει (Jo. 12:25), ἀπόλλυε (Ro. 14:15). But in the middle (passive) only the –μι, forms5 meet us, as ἀπόλλυται (1 Cor. 8:11), ἀπώλευτο (1 Cor. 10:9). So the LXX.

Ομνυμι. A half-dozen examples of the present tense of this verb occur in the N. T. All but one (ὁμνύαι, Mk. 14:71) belong to the –ω inflection, as ὁμνύει. (Mt. 23:21 f.). The Ptolemaic papyri also have one example of ὁμνύμι, the rest from ὁμνύω.6 The LXX sometimes has the –μι form in the active and always in the middle (Thackeray, Gr., p. 279). Neither πήγνυμι. (aorist Heb. 8:2) nor προσπήγνυμι (aorist Ac. 2:23) appears in the present in the N. T.

Πίμπλημι. No present tense in the N. T., though a good many aorists, save the compound participle ἐμπιπλῶν, from the –ω verb –άω. Mayser7 gives no papyri examples. LXX has –ω form usually.

1 In the LXX the active goes over to the —ω class. Thack., Gr., p. 273.
2 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 403.
3 Ib., p. 404. And indeed the old Attic ἄνοίγω, Meisterh., p. 191.
4 Thack., Gr., p. 277.
5 So the pap. Mayser, Gr., p. 352; Thackeray, p. 246.
6 Mayser, ib., pp. 351 f., 404.
7 Ib., p. 406.
The simple verb occurs once only, πιμπρασθαι. (Ac. 28:6) according to W. H.1 This is the only instance where a present occurs at all in the N. T. The papyri give no light as yet. No simplex in the LXX, but ἐνεπίμπρων in 2 Macc. 8:6 (Thackeray, Gr., p. 249).

Πιμπρημι. The compounds are with δια--, περι--, προσ--. No presents appear save in the simple verb and διαρ-. With διαρ. only the -ω forms are used as διερήσσετο (Lu. 5:6), διαρήσσων (Lu. 8:29). But we have Ρήγνυσται (Mt. 9:17) and Ρήγνοι (Mk. 9:18). Mayser gives no papyri examples of the present.

Ρήγνυμι has no presents at all in the N. T., but only the, perfect passive imperative ἔρρωσθε (Ac. 15:29).

Σβένυμι. This verb has only three presents in the N. T. and all of the form, one active σβένυτε (1 Th. 5:19, Tisch. ξβεννυντε), two middle σβένυται (Mk. 9:48) and σβένυνται (Mt. 25:8). The LXX has only -- μι forms and in the more literary books (Thackeray, Gr., p. 284).

Στρώνυμι. The compounds are with κατα--, ὑπο-. There are only two present stems used in the N. T., ἐστρῶνυνυν (Mt. 21:8) and ὑποσττ. (Lu. 19:36). Thus the -- μι form is wholly dropped as in the papyri2 and the LXX.3

Τίθημι. For the list of compounds see Aorist (1). This verb has preferred the -- μι form of the present stem as a rule in the κοινὴ. The inscriptions4 do so uniformly and the papyri5 use the -ω inflection far less than is true of δίδωμι. In the present indicative D has τίθει (τίθει) for τίθεσται6 (Lu. 8:16). In the imperfect ἔτιθει is read twice (Ac. 2:47; 2 Cor. 3:13) from τίθεω, as already in the Attic. So likewise ἔτιθεν (as in Attic) twice (Ac. 3:2; 4:35), but the best MSS. have ἔτιθεσαν in Mk. 6:56 (κβλα) and Ac. 8:17 (κακοκ, though B has -- σαν and C -- εσαν).7 The reading of B in Ac. 8:17 (ἔτιθεσαν) calls for a present τίθω which the papyri supply against the idea of Winer-Schmiedel,8 as παρατιθομενος (BM 239), παρακατατίθομαι (B.0 326).9 Good cursives show that the late language used τιθεω in the present (Mk. 10:16; 15:17). Cf. ὑποτιθοισα in second century papyrus (B.U. 350).10 In the LXX forms prevail in the present and imperfect (Thackeray, Gr., p. 250).

1 Tisch. reads ἔμπρασθαι from πιμπραω. Nestle agrees with W. H.
2 Mayser, Gr., p. 352.
4 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 352 f. 7 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 167.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 49. 8 P. 121.
10 Ib. Mod. Gk. has θέτω.
Φημί. The only N. T. compound is with σω-, none in the papyri according to Mayser.¹ In the papyri φάσω (lengthened form) is usually employed for the participle and infinitive² of φημί. The participle is so used in the N. T. (Ac. 24:9; Ro. 1:22). Σύνφημι appears only once (Ro. 7:16). The —μι inflection is uniform in Φημί both in the present and the imperfect (aorist). The only forms in the N. T. are φημί (1 Cor. 7:29), φησίν (Mt. 13:29), φασίν (Ro. 3:8), and the common ἔφη (Mt. 4:7). It is regular —μι in the LXX.

Χρή. This impersonal verb had a poetic infinitive χρήναι of the —μι inflection, but Veitch (p. 627) and L. and S. get it from χράω. At any rate χρή is found only once in the N. T. (Jas. 3:10), δει having supplanted it. Mayser does not find it in the papyri nor Nachmanson and Schweizer in the inscriptions.

3. Some —μι Perfects. There are only three verbs that show the active perfects without (κ)α in the N. T. (mere root, athematic).

Θυμίσκω. The compounds are ἀπο— (very common), σω-απο— (rare). The uncompounded verb occurs nine times and forms the perfect regularly as an —ο verb (τέθηκα), save that in Ac. 14:19 DEHLP read τέθυναμι instead of τέθυνέμαι, but the —μι form is not accepted by W. H. The N. T. has always τέθυκεν, never τευθύνεσ. In the LXX these shorter second perfect forms occur a few times in the more literary books (Thackeray, Gr., pp. 253, 270). They show “a partial analogy to verbs in —μι,” (Blass, Gr., p. 50).

Οἴδα is a —μι perfect in a few forms (Ἰσμεν, ἵστε) from root ιδ– (cf. Latin vid-eo Greek ἤδαιν). The word is very common in the N. T. and σώναιδα is found twice (Ac. 5:2; 1 Cor. 4:4). The present perfect indicative like the papyri³ usually has οἴδα, οἴδας, οἴδε, οἴδαμεν, —απε, —ασίν, which was the Ionic inflection and so naturally prevailed in the κοινή. Three times indeed the literary Attic ἵστε appears (Jas. 1:19; Eph. 5:5; Heb. 12:17). The passage in James may be imperative instead of indicative. In Ac. 26:4 ἵσασιν (literary Attic also) is read. The imperfect also runs ἦδειν, ἦδεις, etc. Ἡδέσκων (Mk. 1:34; 14:40) is like ἵστεκείσαν (Rev. 7:11).⁴ The other modes go regularly εἶδω (Mt. 9:6), εἶδεναι (1 Th. 5:12), εἶδως (Mt. 12:25). The LXX usage is in accord with the N. T. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 278.

Ἰσττμί. See Aorist (1) for compounds. The second perfect is in the N.T. the infinitive ἔσταναι (Lu. 13:25; Ac. 12:14);

1 Cor. 10:12) and the participle ἔστως (Mt. 20:6, etc.) though ἔστηκὼς (—ω form) also sometimes (Mk. 13:14; 15:35, etc.), ἔστωσα (1 Cor. 7:26; 2 Pet. 3:5), ἔστος (Mt. 24:15; Rev. 14:1) although ἔστηκος also (Rev. 5:6 text, W. H. marg. —ως). The same variation occurs in the papyri. Curiously enough the earlier LXX books show less of the short perfect than the later ones and the N. T. Thackeray (Gr., p. 253) suggests an "Atticistic reversion" for a while. The form ἔστακα (papyri also) belongs to the —ω form as well as the late present στήκω from the perfect stem. These —μι perfects of ἔστημι in are always intransitive, while ἔστηκα is intransitive and ἔστακα is transitive. This in brief is the story of the —μι verbs in the N. T. The new transitive perfect ἔστακα is common in the κοινή from second century B.C. onwards. Cf. Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 185; Mayser, Gr., p. 371.

V. The Modes (ἔγκλισεῖς). The meaning and use of the modes or moods belongs to syntax. We have here to deal briefly with any special items that concern the differentiation of the modes from each other by means of mode-signs. There is no clearly proper method of approaching the study of the verb. One can begin with tense, voice and then mode or vice versa. The first is probably the historical order to a certain extent, for the matter is complicated. Some tenses are later than others; the passive voice is more recent than the other two, the imperative as a complete system is a late growth. Since no purely historical treatment is possible by reason of this complicated development, a practical treatment is best. There are reasons of this nature for taking up modes first which do not apply to syntax. The two main ideas in a verb are action and affirmation. The state of the action is set forth by the tense, the relation of the action to the subject by voice, the affirmation by mode. Tense and voice thus have to do with action and mode with affirmation. Mode deals only with the manner of the affirmation. The same personal endings used for voice limit the action (hence finite verbs) in person and number.

(a) THE NUMBER OF THE MOODS OR MODES (Modi). This is not so simple a matter as it would at first appear. Modern grammarians generally agree in declining to call infinitives, participles and the verbal adjectives in —τός and —τέος moods. Some refuse to call the indicative a mood, reserving the term for the variations

3 See Hoffmann, Die griech. Dial., Bd. II, pp. 572 ff., for —μι verbs in North Achaia. For the "strong" perfects, like γέγωνα, see VII, (g), 2.
from the indicative as the normal verb by means of mode-signs. Thus Clyde\(^1\) thinks of "only two moods, viz. the subjunctive and the optative, because, these only possess, in combination with the personal endings, a purely modal element." There is point in that, and yet the indicative and imperative can hardly be denied the use of the term. Jannaris\(^2\) admits three moods; indicative, subjunctive and imperative. He follows Donaldson\(^3\) in treating the subjunctive and optative as one mood. Others, like Monro,\(^4\) find the three in the subjunctive, optative and imperative. Once again five moods are seen in early Greek by Riemann and Goelzer\(^5\): the indicative, injunctive, subjunctive, optative, imperative. On the injunctive see Brugmann, *Griechische Grammatik*, p. 332, though he does not apply the term mode to the indicative. So Hirt, *Handbuch*, p. 421 f. Moulton\(^6\) admits this primitive division, though declining to call the indicative a mode save when it is a "modus irrealis." The injunctive is no longer regarded as a separate mood, and yet it contributed so much to the forms of the imperative that it has to be considered in an historical review. The indicative can only be ruled out when it is regarded as the standard verb and the moods as variations. Certainly it is best to let the indicative go in also. The modern Greek, having no optative, has a special conditional mode (\(\text{úpōθεν}τική\)). Cf. Sanskrit. Indeed, the future indicative is considered by some grammarians as a separate mode. Cf. Thompson, *Syntax of Attic Greek*, p. 494; Moulton, *Prolegomena*, p. 151. Thumb accepts the four modes in modern Greek (*Handbook*, p. 115).

(b) THE DISTINCTIONS BETWEEN THE MOODS. These are not absolute, as will be seen, either in form or in syntax. The indicative and the imperative blend in some forms, the subjunctive and the indicative are alike in others, the injunctive is largely merged into the imperative and subjunctive, while the subjunctive and optative are closely akin and in Latin blend into one. Greek held on to the optative with separate values to each mood.\(^7\) Moulton\(^8\) indeed despair of our being able to give the primitive root-idea of each mood. That subject belongs to

\(^2\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 179.  
\(^3\) New Crat., p. 617 f.  
\(^4\) Hom. Gr., p. 49.  
\(^5\) Phonet., p. 455.  
\(^6\) Prol., p. 164 f. Farrar (Gk. Synt., p. 45) refers to Protagoras as the one who first distinguished the moods.  
\(^7\) Giles, Man., p. 459.  
\(^8\) Prol., p. 164,
syntax, but the history of the mode-forms is in harmony with this position. As with the cases so with the moods: each mood has fared differently in its development and long history. Not only does each mood perform more functions than one, but the same function may sometimes be expressed by several\(^1\) moods. The names themselves do not cover the whole ground of each mood. The indicative is not the only mood that indicates, though it does it more clearly than the others and it is used in questions also. The subjunctive not merely subjoins, but is used in independent sentences also. The optative is not merely a wish, but was once really a sort of past subjunctive. The imperative has the best name of any, though we have to explain some forms as "permissive" imperatives, and the indicative and subjunctive, not to say injunctive, invade the territory of the imperative." It is probable, but not demonstrable, that the indicative was the original verb-form, from which the others were evolved by morphological changes" (Thompson, *Syntax of Attic Greek*, p. 494). The origin of the mode-signs cannot yet be explained.


\(^2\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 201.
in the κοινή have practically vanished.¹ Thus we can clearly see the gradual growth of the modes. In modern English we have almost dropped the subjunctive and use instead the indicative. In the modern Greek the indicative survives with as much vigor as ever. The N. T. peculiarities of the indicative can best be treated under Syntax. It may be here remarked, however, that besides the regular indicative forms a periphrastic conjugation for all the tenses of the indicative appears in the N. T. The present is thus found as ἔστιν προσαναπληροῦσα (2 Cor. 9:12), the perfect as ἔστιν πεπραγμένον (Ac. 26:26), the imperfect as ἦν διδάσκων (Lu. 5:17), the past perfect as ἦσαν προεωρικότες (Ac. 21:29), even the aorist as ἦν βληθείς (Lu. 23:19), the future as ἐσεσθε λα-

³ούστες (1 Cor. 14:9), the future perfect as ἔσομαι πεποιθῶς (Heb. 2:13). This widening of the range of the periphrastic conjugation is seen also in the LXX. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 195.

(d) THE SUBJUNCTIVE (ὑποτακτική). The function of the subjunctive as of the other modes will be discussed under Syntax. Changes come in function as in form. Each form originally had one function which varied with the course of time. But the bond between form and function is always to be noted.² The German grammarians (Blass, Hirt, Brugmann, etc.) call this the conjunctive mode. Neither conjunctive nor subjunctive is wholly good, for the indicative and the optative both fall often under that technical category.³ It is in the Greek that mode-building reaches its perfection as in no other tongue.⁴ But even in the Greek subjunctive we practically deal only with the aorist and present tenses, and in the Sanskrit the subjunctive rapidly dies out save in the first person as an imperative.⁵ In Homer ἵμεν is indicative⁶ and ἤμεν is subjunctive so that non-thematic stems make the subjunctive with the thematic vowel ο/ε. Thematic stems made the subjunctive with a lengthened form of it ὥ/η. Cf. in the Ionic, Lesbian, Cretan inscriptions⁷ forms like ἄμείψεταί. The same thing appears in Homer also in the transition period.⁸ Jannaris⁹ indeed calls the aorist subjunctive a future subjunctive because he

² For contrary view see Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 1.
³ Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 45 f.
⁴ Bd. II, p. 40. ⁵ Giles, Man., p. 458 f.
⁶ Ib., p. 459. In the Boeotian dial. the subj. does not appear in simple sentences (Clafllin, Synt. of Bmotian, etc., p. 73)
⁷ Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., p. 456 f.
⁸ Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 49.
⁹ Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 179.
conceives of the aorist as essentially past, a mistaken idea. The subjunctive does occur more freely in Homer than in the later Greek, partly perhaps because of the fact that the line of distinction between it and the indicative (especially the aorist subjunctive and the future indicative) had not been sharply drawn.\(^1\) Add to this the fact that ποιήση and ποιήσει came to be pronounced exactly alike and one can see how the confusion would come again. Cf. ίνα δώσει (δώση) in the N. T. MSS.\(^2\) On the short vocal ending of the subjunctive and its connection with the indicative one may recall ἔδομαι, πίωμαι, φάγομαι, in the N. T., futures which have a strange likeness to the Homeric subjunctive ἔμεν. They are really subjunctives in origin. It is still a mooted question whether the future indicative is always derived from the aorist subjunctive or in part corresponds to the Sanskrit या.\(^3\) The only aorist subjunctives that call for special comment in the N. T. are the forms γνώ and δό, for which see this chapter, iv, (d), 1.\(^4\) There are parallels in the papyri as is there shown. The form ὑψηθεί in Lu. 13:28 (supported by AL, etc., against ὑψεσθε, BD) is probably a late aorist form like ἔδωσα (δώση) rather than the Byzantine future subjunctive.\(^5\) As already pointed out, the examples in N. T. MSS. of the Byzantine future subjunctive are probably due to the blending of o with ω, εί with η, ε with η, etc. N. T. MSS., for instance, show examples of ἀρκεσθησώμεθα (1 Tim. 6:8), γνώσωνται (Ac. 21:24), γεμησθησθε (Jo. 15:8), δώσωσιν (Lu. 20:10; Rev. 4:9), εὑρήσωσιν (Rev. 9:6), ζήσονται (Mk. 5:23), ἥσωσιν (Rev. 3:9), καυθήσωμαι (1 Cor. 13:3), κερδηθήσωνται (1 Pet. 3:1), πορέσωμαι (Ro. 15:24), σωζήσονται (Ro. 11:26), etc. It is to be admitted, however, that the Byzantine future subjunctive was in use at the age of our oldest Greek N. T. MSS. Cf. Winer-Schmieudel, p. 107. Hort dismisses them all (Appendix, "Notes on Orthography," p. 172). The present subjunctive διδοῖ, is parallel to δοῖ. No ex-


\(^2\) Cf. already in the Attic inscr. the spelling of the subj. in –εί. Meisterh., Att. Inscr., p. 166. For this phenomenon in the pap. see Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 324.


\(^4\) Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 37, and 1904, p. 111, for subjs. ἀποδοῖ, ἐπιγνώσι in the pap.

\(^5\) Cf. ἀρέσθῃς in Lu. 13:25, but ἀρέσθῃς (BEG, etc.) and ἀρέσθῃς (KAD, etc.) in verse 26.
ample of the periphrastic present subjunctive appears in the
N. T. In Gal. 4:17 (ἵνα ζηλοῦστε) the contraction of οἱ is like that of
the indicative ὁς, unless indeed, as is more probable, we have here
(cf. also 1 Cor. 4:6, φωσιοῦσθε) the present indicative used with is
as in 1 Jo. 5:20 (γινώσκομεν). In Gal. 6:12 ACFGKLP read ἵνα μὴ
does not exist in the N. T. save in the second perfect εἰδῶ (ἵνα
εἰδῶμεν, 1 Cor. 2:12) and the periphrastic form as ἵνα πεποιθήκως (Jas.
5:15. Cf. πεποιθότες ὑμεν, 2 Cor. 1:9) and usually in the passive
as ἵνα πεπληρωμένη (Jo. 16:24). In Lu. 19:40 Rec. with most MSS.
read κεκράξουται (LXX). In the papyri ἤν sometimes is subjunctive
=ἥν. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 38, 1904, p. 108; Prolegomena,
pp. 49, 468. He cites ὁσα έα<ν ἤν in Gen. 6:17E. But the
modern Greek constantly uses ἐὰν with the indicative, and we find
it in the N. T. and papyri (Deissmann, Bible Studies, pp. 203 ff.).
Some of the papyri examples may be merely the indicative with
ἐὰν, but others undoubtedly give the irrational ν. In the LXX the
subjunctive shows signs of shrinkage before the indicative with
ἐὰν, ὀταν, ὑν (Thackeray, Gr., p. 194).

(e) THE OPTATIVE (εὐκτική). Like the subjunctive the optative
is poorly named, as it is much more than the wishing mood.
As Giles remarks, difference of formation is more easily discerned
in these two moods than difference of meaning. In the Sanskrit
the subjunctive (save in first person) gave way before the
optative, as in Latin the optative largely (sim originally op-
tative) disappeared before the subjunctive. The Greek, as
already stated, is the only language that preserved both the
subjunctive and the optative, and finally in the modern
Greek the optative has vanished, μὴ γένοιτο being merely "the
coffin of the dead optative." It is doubtful if the optative was
ever used much in conversation even in Athens (Farrar, Greek
Syntax, p. 142), and the unlearned scribes of the late Greek blun-

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 48. But in 1 Cor. 16:2 we have regularly εὔο-
δῶται (marg. εὔοδοθή). Hort (Notes on Orth., pp. 167, 172) is uncertain whether
εὔοδῶται is perf. ind. or subj. (pres. or perf.). He cites παραξηλοῦμεν (1 Cor.
10:22) and διαφεβεσιοῦται (1 Tim. 1:7) as possible pres. subjs.
of works on optative.
4 Giles, ib., p. 459. On the blending of subj. and opt. in Ital., Germ. and
Gk. mingling of subj. and ind. in Hatz., Einl., p. 216 f.
5 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 84.
dered greatly when they did use it (Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 204). Moulton (Prol., p. 240) agrees with Thumb that the optative was doomed from the very birth of the κοινή and its disappearance was not due to itacism between οἶ and η, which was late. Clyde, however, suggests that the blending of sound between οἷ and η had much to do with the disappearance of the optative. But apart from this fact the distinction was never absolutely rigid, for in Homer both moods are used in much the same way. And even in the N. T., as in Homer and occasionally later, we find an instance of the optative after a present indicative, οὐ παύο-μαι εὐχαριστῶν ἵνα δῶη (Eph. 1:17, text of W. H., subj. δῶῃ or δῶ in marg., question of editing). Jannaris calls the Greek optative the subjunctive of the past or the secondary subjunctive (cf. Latin). Like the indicative (and originally the subjunctive) the non-theatic and thematic stems have a different history. The non-theatic stems use η (ις) and the thematic οῖ (composed of ο and ι). The σ αorist has αφι besides the form in —εια. This two-fold affix for the optative goes back to the earlier Indo-Germanic tongues (Sanskrit ya and i). The optative was never common in the language of the people, as is shown by its rarity in the Attic inscriptions. The Boeotian dialect inscriptions show no optative in simple sentences, and Dr. Edith Claflin reports only two examples in subordinate clauses. The optative is rare also in the inscriptions of Pergamum. The same thing is true of the papyri. In the N. T. the future optative no longer appears, nor does the perfect. The classic idiom usually had the perfect subjunctive and optative in the periphrastic forms. Examples of the periphrastic perfect optative survive in the papyri, but not in the N. T. There are only sixty-seven examples of the optative in the N. T. Luke has twenty-eight and Paul thirty-one (not including Eph. 1:17), whereas John, Matthew and James do not use it at all. Mark and Hebrews show it only once each, Jude twice and Peter four times. The non-theatic aorist appears in the N. T. sometimes, as δωη (perhaps by analogy). So W. H. read without reservation in 2 Th. 3:16; Ro. 15:5; 2 Tim. 1:16, 18. This is the

preferred text in Eph. 1:17; 2 Tim. 2:25, but in Jo. 15:16; Eph. 3:16, W. H. read δω (subjunctive). In Eph. 1:17 the margin has δων (subjunctive) also.1 The inscriptions2 and the papyri3 show the same form (—ψην instead of —οίην). In Eph. 1:17 Moulton4 considers δων (subjunctive) absolutely necessary in spite of the evidence, for δων (optative). But see above. The aorist optative in —αι is the usual form, as κατευθύναι (1 Th. 3:11), πλεονάσαι καὶ περισσέωσαι (1 Th. 3:12), καταρτίσαι (Heb. 13:21), etc., not the AEolic-Attic —ειε. So also ποιήσαιεν (Lu. 6:11), but θηλαφήσειαν (Ac. 17:27) according to the best MSS. (B, etc.).5 Blass6 comments on the fact that only one example of the present optative appears in the simple sentence, viz. ἐξη (Ac. 8:20), but more occur in dependent clauses, as πάροχοτε (1 Pet. 3:14). The optative is rare in the LXX save for wishes. Thackeray, Gr., p. 193.

(f) THE IMPERATIVE (προστακτική). The imperative is a later development, in language and is in a sense a makeshift like the passive voice. It has no mode-sign (cf. indicative) and uses only personal suffixes.7 These suffixes have a varied and interesting history.

1. The Non-Thematic Stem. An early imperative was just the non-thematic present stem.8 In the imperative the aorist is a later growth, as will be shown directly. Forms like ἐστη, δείκνυ are pertinent.

2. The Thematic Stem. Cf. ἀγε, λέγε. This is merely an interjection (cf. vocative λόγε).9 This is the root pure and simple with the thematic vowel which is here regarded as part of the stem as in the vocative λόγε. The accent εἴπε, ἐλθέ, ἐφέ, ἰδέ, λαβέ was probably the accent of all such primitive imperatives at the beginning of a sentence.10 We use exclamations as verbs or nouns.11

1 Hort, Instr. to N. T. Gk., p. 168. Cf. LXX.
2 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 191.
7 K.-B1., Bd. II, p. 41. 9 Ib., p. 269.
8 Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 464.
9 Ib., p. 464. Cf. Brug., Grundr., II, § 958; Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., p. 359. It is coming more and more to be the custom to regard the thematic vowel as part of the root. Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 415.
11 Moulton, Prol., p. 171 f.
In Jas. 4:13 we have ἄγε νῦν οἱ λέγουντες, an example that will illustrate the origin of ἄγε. Note the common interjectional use of ὥστε (so N. T.). Cf. also accent of λάβε. The adverb δέωρ (Jo. 11:43, Αἴξαρε δέωρ ἔξω) has a plural like the imperative in —τε (Mt. 11:28, δεῦτε πρός με πάντες οἱ κοπιῶντες).

3. The Suffix –θι. The non-thematic stems also used the suffix –θι (cf. Sanskrit dhi, possibly an adverb; cf. "you there!"). So γνῶθι for second aorist active, ἵσθι for present active, φάνηθι, λῷ-θητι for second and first aorist passive.1 In the N. T. sometimes this –θι is dropped and the mere root used as in ἀνάβα (Rev. 4:1), μετάβα (Mt. 17:20), ἀνάστα (Eph. 5:14; Ac. 12:7) according to the best MSS.2 The plural ἀνάβατε (Rev. 11:12) instead of ἀνάβητε is to be noted also. The LXX MSS. exhibit these short forms (ἀνάστα, ἀπόστα, but not ἀνάβα) also. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 70; Con. and Stock, Sel. from LXX, p. 46. See ἔμβα, κατάβα, etc., in Attic drama. But ἀνάστηθι (Ac. 8:26), ἐπίστηθι 2 Tim. 4:2), μετάβηθι (Jo. 7:3), κατάβηθι (Lu. 19:5), προσανάβηθι (Lu. 14:10) occur as usual. In the papyri –θι has practically disappeared save in ἵσθι.3

4. The Suffix –τω. It is probably the ablative of the demonstrative pronoun (Sanskrit tad). It is used with non-thematic (ἔστω) and thematic stems (λέγε-τω). The Latin4 uses this form for the second person also (agito). In the case of ἔστω (Jas. 1:19) the N. T. has also ἤτω (Jas. 5:12).5 The form καταβάτω (Mt. 24:17) has the unlengthened stem, but ἔλθατω is like the first aorist ἐπιστρεψάτω. The N. T. like the κοινὴ generally6 has the plural only in τωσαν which is made by the addition of σαν to τω. Cf. ἔστωσαν (Lu. 12:35). The middle σθω (of uncertain origin)7 likewise has the plural in the N. T. in σθωσαν. So προσευξάσθωσαν (Jas. 5:14). This is true of the plural of both present and aorist as in papyri and inscriptions. So the LXX cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 69 f.

5. The Old Injunctive Mood. It is responsible for more of the imperative forms than any other single source. "The injunctive

---

2 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 168.  
3 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 327.  
5 So pap. and late inscr., Moulton, Prol., p. 56.  
7 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 343 (he cfs. ἐπέσθω with ἐπέσθαν); Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 430. Giles (Comp. Philol., p. 467 f.) gets it from τω by analogy of τε and σθε.
was simply an imperfect or aorist indicative without the augment."¹ So λαβῶν corresponds to ἐ-λάβεσο, λάβεσθε was ἐ-λάβεσθε, λάβῃτε was ἐ-λάβῃτε, λάβετε was ἐ-λάβετε.² So σχές (ἐ-σχές) may be compared with ἐ-λυς (θίγως with θῆγες), but δος, ἔς, θής Brugmann considers of uncertain origin, possibly subjunctive.³ Forms like λαετε may be injunctive (ἐ-λαετε)⁴ or merely the indicative.⁵ Note the difficulty of deciding on imperative and indicative in forms like ἀραυνάτε (Jo. 5:39), πιστεύετε (Jo. 14:1) ἵστε (Jas. 1:19). But in these cases, except Jo. 5:39, we probably have the imperative. In the case of ἵστε the N. T. indicative would be οἴτατε.⁶ In the N. T. κάθου (Jas. 2:3) is the shorter form of κάθησο, though not by phonetic processes. The injunctive survives to some extent in the Sanskrit and borders on the subjunctive and the imperative and was specially common in prohibitions.⁷ It consists of the bare stem with the personal endings.

6. Forms in –σαι. These, like βάπτισαι (Ac. 22:16), are probably just the infinitive sigmatic aorist.⁸ Cf. δεῖξαι. Cf. also Latin legimini with the Homeric infinitive λεγόμενα.⁹ The infinitive is common in the Greek inscriptions in the sense of an imperative.¹⁰ In the N. T. as in the papyri this use is not infrequent. So χαίρειν (Jas. 1:1), στοιχεῖν (Ph. 3:16), μη συναναγίγνυσθαι (2 Th. 3:14). In modern Greek instead of the imperative in —σαι the form λύσου occurs with the sense of λύθητι.¹¹

7. The Form in —σον (λύσον). It is difficult of explanation. It may be injunctive or a verbal substantive.¹² The N. T. has εἰπόν (Mt. 4:3) rather than εἶπε (Mt. 8:8) in about half the instances in W. H.¹³ This is merely in keeping with the common κοινὴ custom of using first aorist endings with second aorist stems. The form εἰπόν is traced to the Syracusan dialect.¹⁴

8. First Person. The Sanskrit used the first person subjunctive as imperative of the first person. Cf. English "charge we the foe." The Greek continued this idiom. But already in the N. T. the use of the imperative ἅφες (Cf. modern Greek as and third person subjunctive) is creeping in as a sort of particle with the subjunctive. So ἅψες, ἐκβάλω (Mt. 7:4). Cf. English "let" with infinit-

tive. Cf. ἀποκτείνωμεν in Mt. 21:38. Besides ἀγαπεῖτε we may have ἀπέα with the subjunctive (Mt. 8:4), ἐφεστε with future indicative (Heb. 3:12).

9. Prohibitions. Here the aorist subjunctive with μὴ held its own against the aorist imperative quite successfully. In the Sanskrit Veda the negative ma is never found with the imperative, but only with the subjunctive.\(^1\) Later the Sanskrit uses the present imperative with ma, but not the aorist. This piece of history in the Greek\(^2\) is interesting as showing how the imperative is later than the other modes and how the aorist imperative never won its full way into prohibitions. However, in the N. T. as in the inscriptions and papyri, we occasionally find the aorist imperative with μὴ in 3d person. So μὴ καταβάτω (Mt. 24:17).

10. Perfect Imperative. In the Sanskrit the imperative is nearly confined to the present tense. The perfect imperative is very rare in the N. T. (only the two verbs cited) as in all Greek. We find ἔστωσο ὑμῖν (Ac. 15:29; in 23:30 W. H. reject ἔστωσο) and περίμωσο (Mk. 4:39). The perfect imperative also occurs in the periphrastic form as ἔστωσαν περιεξωμέναι, (Lu. 12:35).

11. Periphrastic Presents. Other periphrastic forms of the imperative are ἔσθη ἐνώνω (Mt. 5:25), ἔσθη ἔχων (Lu. 19:17), μὴ γίνεσθε ἐτεροζυγοῦντες (2 Cor. 6:14) and even ἔστε γινώσκοντες (Eph. 5:5).

12. Circumlocutions. But even so other devices (see Syntax) are used instead of the imperative, as the future indicative (ἀγαπεῖς, Mt. 5:43); ἵνα and the subjunctive (Eph. 5:33); a question of impatience like οὐ παύση διαστρέφων (Ac. 13:10), etc.

VI. The Voices (διαθέσεις).

(a) TRANSITIVE AND INTRANSITIVE. The point is that "transitive" is not synonymous with "active." Transitive verbs may belong to any voice, and intransitive verbs to any voice. Take ἐδίδαξα, ἐδίδαξαμην, ἐδίδαξατο, which may be transitive in each voice. On the other hand εἰμί γίνομαι, ἐλάθην, are intransitive. The same verb may be transitive or intransitive in the same voice, as ἀγαπέω. A verb may be transitive in Greek while intransitive in English, as with καταγελάω and vice versa. This matter properly belongs to syntax, but it seems necessary to clear it up at once before we proceed to discuss voice. Per se the question of transitiveness belongs to the idea of the verb itself, not to that of voice. We

\(^1\) Monro, Hom. Cr., p. 240.

\(^2\) Ib.; cf. also Delbruck, Synt. Forsch., IV, p. 120. Hence Delbruck argues that the aorist imper. did not come into use until after the pres. imper. The imper. was originally only positive, not negative.
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB (ῬΗΜΑ) actually find Green\(^1\) making four voices, putting a neuter (οὐδὲντερον) voice (using active and middle endings) on a par with the others! The Stoic. grammarians\(^2\) did speak of a neuter voice as neither active (κατηγόρημα ὑποθέν) nor passive (ὑπτίον), meaning the middle (μέση). Jannaris\(^3\) confounds transitiveness with voice, though he properly says (p. 356) that "the active voice is usually transitive," i.e. verbs in the active voice, not the voice itself. Even Whitney\(^4\) speaks of the antithesis between transitive and reflexive action being effaced in Sanskrit. Was that antithesis ever present? Farrar\(^5\) speaks of verbs with an "active meaning, but only a passive or middle form," where by "active" he means transitive. Even the active uses verbs which are either transitive (ἀλλοπαθη) or intransitive (αὐτοπαθη). So may the other voices. If we clearly grasp this point, we shall have less difficulty with voice which does not deal primarily with the transitive idea. That belongs rather to the verb itself apart from voice.\(^6\) On transitive and intransitive verbs in modern Greek see Thumb, \textit{Handb.}, p. 112.

(b) THE NAMES OF THE VOICES. They are by no means good. The active (ἐνεργητική) is not distinctive, since the other voices express action also. This voice represents the subject as merely acting. The Hindu grammarians called the active parasmai padam ("a word for another") and the middle (μέση) atmane padam ("a word for one's self").\(^7\) There is very little point in the term middle since it does not come in between the active and the passive. Indeed reflexive is a better designation of the middle voice if direct reflexive is not meant. That is rare. The middle voice stresses the interest of the agent. Cf. Moulton, \textit{Prolegomena}, p. 155 f. In truth we have no good name for this voice. Passive (παθητική) is the best term of all, for here the subject does experience the action even when the passive verb is transitive, as in ἔδιδαχθην. But this point encroaches upon syntax.

1 Handb. to the Gk. of N. T., p. 55.
3 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 179.
4 Sans. Gr., p. 200.
6 Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 476: "The distinction between the transitive and intransitive meanings of the active voice depends upon the nature of the root in each case."
7 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 200. Cf. also Brug., Kurze vergl. Gr., II, p. 492. See also Clark, Comp. Gr., p. 182, for the meaningless term "middle." It is as active as the "active" voice. Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 119.
(c) THE RELATIVE AGE OF THE VOICES. It is a matter of doubt as between the active and middle. The passive is known to be a later development. The Sanskrit passive is the \textit{ya} class.\footnote{Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 275; Thumb, Handbuch d. Skt., pp. 394ff.} In Homer the passive has not reached its full development. The passive future occurs there only twice. The aorist middle is often used in passive sense (\textit{βλητο}, for instance).\footnote{Sterrett, Hom. II., Dial. of Hom., p. 27.} That is to say, in Homer the passive uses all the tenses of the middle with no distinct forms save sometimes in the aorist. In later Greek the future middle (as \textit{τιμηδομαι}) continued to be used occasionally in the passive sense. The aorist passive in fact used the active endings and the future passive the middle, the passive contributing a special addition in each case (\textit{η}, \textit{ο}, \textit{ς}, \textit{θσ}). Some languages never developed a passive (Coptic and Lithuanian, for instance), and in modern English we can only form the passive by means of auxiliary verbs. Each language makes the passive in its own way. In Latin no distinction in form exists between the middle and the passive, though the middle exists as in \textit{potior, utor, plangor}, etc. Giles\footnote{Comp. Philol., p. 477.} thinks that the causative middle (like \textit{διδακμαι}, 'get taught') is the explanation of the origin of the Greek passive. Cf. \textit{βάπτισαι} (Ac. 22:16). It is all speculation as between the active and middle. An old theory makes the middle a mere doubling of the active (as \textit{μα-μι=μαι}).\footnote{Moulton, Prol., p. 152.} Another view is that the middle is the original and the active a shortening due to less stress in accent, or rather (as in \textit{τιμεμαι} and \textit{τιμημι}) the middle puts the stress on the reflexive ending while the active puts it on the stem.\footnote{Griech. Gr., p. 346. Cf. Kurze vergl. Gr., II, p. 599. Cf. Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 419.} But Brugmann\footnote{Griech. Gr., p. 346. Cf. Kurze vergl. Gr., II, p. 599. Cf. Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 419.} considers the whole question about the relation between the personal suffixes uncertain. Of one thing we may be sure, and that is that both the active and the middle are very old and long antedate the passive.

(d) THE SO-CALLED "DEPONENT " VERBS. These call for a word (cf. ch. XVII, (k)) at the risk of trespassing on syntax. Moulton\footnote{Prol., p. 153,} is certainly right in saying that the term should be applied to all three voices if to any. The truth is that it should not be used at all. As in the Sanskrit\footnote{Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 200.} so in the Greek some verbs were used in both active and middle in all tenses (like \textit{λω}); some verbs in some tenses in one and some in the other (like \textit{βαίνω},
βήσομαι): some on one voice only (like κείμαι). As concerns voice these verbs were defective rather than deponent. Note also the common use of the second perfect active with middle verbs (ινομαι γέγονα). A number of verbs sometimes have the future in the active in the N. T. which usually had it in the middle in the older Greek. These are: ἀκούσω (Jo. 5:25, 28, etc., but ἀκούσομαι, Ac. 17:32), ἀμαρτήσω (Mt. 18:21), ἀπαντήσω (Mk. 14:13), ἄρπάσω (Jo. 10:28), βλέψω (Ac. 28:26), γελάσω (Lu. 6:21), διώξω (Mt. 23:34), ζήσω (Jo. 5:25), ἐπιορκήσω (Mt. 5:33, LXX), κλαύσω (Lu. 6:25), κράξω (Lu. 19:40), παίξω (Mk. 10:34), ἰέρω (Jo. 7:38), σωπήσω (Lu. 19:40), σπουδάσω (2 Pet. 1:15), συναντήσω (Lu. 22:10). But still note ἀποθανόμαι, ἔσομαι, ζήσομαι, θαυμάσομαι, λήψομαι, ὄψομαι, πεσομαι, πίωμαι, τέξομαι, φάγομαι, φεύξομαι, etc. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 42 f.; Winer-Schmiedel, p. 107; Moulton, Prol., p. 155. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 89 f.; Thackeray, pp. 231 ff., for illustrations in the LXX. The term "deponent" arose from the idea that these verbs had dropped the active voice. Verbs do vary in the use of the voices in different stages of the language.

(c) THE PASSIVE SUPPLANTING THE MIDDLE. In Latin the middle and passive have completely blended and the grammars speak no more of the Latin middle. Greek indeed is the only European speech which retains the original middle form and usage. In fact, when we consider other tongues, it is not strange that the passive made inroads on the middle, but rather that there was any distinction preserved at all. In most modern languages the middle is represented only by the use of the reflexive pronoun. The Greek itself constantly uses the active with reflexive pronoun and even the middle. Jannaris has an interesting sketch of the history of the aorist and future middle and passive forms, the only forms where the two voices differ. As already remarked, the old Greek as in Homer did not distinguish sharply between these forms. In Homer the middle is much more common than in later Greek, for the passive has no distinct form in the future and not always in the aorist. In the modern Greek the middle has no distinctive form save λύσω (cf. λύσαμαι)

---

2 Hirt, Handb., p. 334; Moulton, Prol., p. 154.
4 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 55.
6 Sterrett, Horn. II., Hom. Dial., p. 27.
7 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 7.
and this is used as passive imperative second singular. Elsewhere in the aorist and future the passive forms have driven out the middle. These passive forms are, however, used sometimes in the middle sense, as was true of ἀπεκρίθη, for instance, in the N. T. The passive forms maintain the field in modern Greek and appropriate the meaning of the middle. We see this tendency at work in the N. T. and the κοινή generally. Since the passive used the middle forms in all the other tenses, it was natural that in these two there should come uniformity also. The result of this struggle between the middle and passive in the aorist and future was an increasing number of passive forms without the distinctive passive idea. So in Mt. 10:26 (μη φοβηθήτε αὐτοῦς) the passive is used substantially as a middle. Cf. the continued use of τιμήσωμαι as future passive in the earlier Greek as a tendency the other way. The history of this matter thus makes intelligible what would be otherwise a veritable puzzle in language. Here is a list of the chief passive aorists in the N. T. without the passive idea, the so-called "deponent" passives: ἀπεκρίθην (Mt. 25:9 and often, as John, Luke chiefly having Attic ἀπεκρίνατο also, Ac. 3:12), διεκρίθην (Ro. 4:20), συνυπεκρίθην (Gal. 2:13), ἀπελογήθην (Lu. 21:14, but see 12:11), ἡγαλλιάθην (Jo. 5:35), ἐγενήθην (Mt. 6:10, but also ἐγενόμην often, as Ac. 20:18); cf. γέγονα and γεγένημαι, ἐδείκθην (Lu. 5:12); ἡγέρθην (Lu. 24:34), ἡδυνάσθην (Mk. 7:24, as New Ionic and LXX) and ἡδυνήθην (Mt. 17:16), διελέχθην (Mk. 9:34), ἑθαμάσθην (Rev. 13:3, but passive sense in 2 Th. 1:10), ἑθαμβήθην (Mk. 1:27), ἐνθυμηθεῖς (Mt. 1:20), μετεμελήθην (Mt. 21:32), ἑρωθήθην (Mt. 21:46), ἐυλαβηθεῖς (Heb. 11:7), etc. For the LXX usage see Thackeray, p. 238. The future passives without certain passive sense are illustrated by the following: ἀνακληθομαι (Mt. 8:11), ἀποκριθομαι (Mt. 25:37), ἐπαναπαύσηται (Lu. 10:6), θαυμασθομαι (Rev. 17:8), κοιμηθομαι (1 Cor. 15:51), ἐντραπήσονται (Mk. 12:6), μεταμεληθομαι (Heb. 7:21), φανήσομαι (Mt. 24:30), φοβηθομαι (Heb. 13:6). But we have γενήσομαι, δυνήσομαι, ἑπιμεληθομαι, πορεύσομαι. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gr., p. 44 f.; Winer-Schmiedel, p. 108. For the rapid development of this tendency in later Greek see Hatzidakis, Einl., p. 192 f. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 97-100, and Thackeray, p. 240 f., for similar phenomena in the LXX. These so-called deponents appear in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 113). Cf. ch. XVII, iv, (e).

1 Thumb, Handb., p. 111. So mod. Gk. has only two voices; V. and D., Handb., to Mod. Gk., p. 81.  
3 Ib. κοινή exx. are numerous, like ἡδέςθην, ἐνεθυμήθην, ἐπορεύθην, ἑφοβήθην, etc.
(f) THE PERSONAL ENDINGS. They are probably pronominal,¹ though Brugmann² does not consider the matter as clear in all respects. One point to note is the heavy burden that is placed upon these endings. They have to express voice, person and number, everything in truth that has to do with the subject. Mode and tense are indicated otherwise. There was a constant tendency to slough off these personal endings and get back to the mode and tense-stems. Hence διδωμι becomes διδω (papyri) in late Greek. Αψω was originally λψωμι.³

(g) CROSS-DIVISIONS. These personal endings have two cross-divisions. The active and middle have a separate list, the passive having none of its own. Then there is another cleavage on the line of primary and secondary tenses in the indicative, i.e. the unaugmented and the augmented tenses. The subjunctive mode falls in with the primary endings and the optative uses the secondary endings. But the first person active singular of the optative has one primary ending (as λψωμι).⁴ But may it not be a reminiscence of the time when there was no distinction between subjunctive and optative? The imperative has no regular set of endings, as has already been shown, and does not fall in with this development, but pursues a line of its own. As a matter of fact the imperative always refers to the future.

(h) THE ACTIVE ENDINGS. They have received some modification in the N. T. Greek. The imperative can be passed by as already sufficiently discussed. The disappearance of the —μι forms in favour of the —ω inflection has been carefully treated also, as ἀψίμεν (Lu. 11:4). The subjunctive δι and optative δψη have likewise received discussion as well as the optative —αι and —ειε. But some interesting points remain.

The use of —σαυ instead of —ς is very common in the LXX (as Jer. 5:23, 26) and was once thought to be purely an Alexandrian peculiarity (Simcox, Language of the N. T., p. 37). For the LXX phenomena see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 65-67; Con. and Stock, Sel. from the LXX, p. 32 f. The LXX is the principal witness to the —σαυ forms (Thackeray, Gr., p. 195), where they

¹ Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 53. ² Gk. Gr., p. 346. ³ Cf. Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 54. The same thing has happened in Eng. where the loss is nearly complete save 2d and 3d pers. sing. ⁴ It is not worth while here to take time to make a careful discussion of each of these endings. For the hist. treatment of them see Brug., Griech. Gr., pp. 345 ff.; Giles, Comp. Philol., pp. 413 ff.; Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., pp. 348 ff.
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

are exceedingly frequent (ib., pp. 212 ff.). It is not so abundant outside of the LXX, but the Boeotians used it for the imperfect and optative. Mayser\(^2\) has found more examples of it in the Tebtunis Papyri, both aorist and imperfect, than Moulton\(^3\) had discovered. The inscriptions also show it.\(^4\) In the N. T. the contract verb ἐξελώσαν (Ro. 3:13) is a quotation from the LXX. In Jo. 15:22, 24, the imperfect ἐξχοσαν has to be admitted. In 2 Th. 3:6 παρελάβοσαν is read by ΝΑΔ and W. H. put it in the margin. The text παρελάβετε is supported by BFG. This use of the —μι inflection may be compared with the use of τω-σαν in the imperative. In the modern Greek it is common with contract verbs (cf. LXX) like ἐδολιώσαν above. The modern Greek ἔρωτοσα is a new formation (Thumb, Handb., p. 171) modelled after it.

Blass\(^5\) needlessly hesitates to accept —αν in the present perfect instead of the usual —ασι, and even Moulton\(^6\) is reluctant to admit it for Paul and Luke, preferring to regard it "a vulgarism due to the occasional lapse of an early scribe." It is certainly not a mere Alexandrianism as Buresch\(^7\) supposed. The ending —αντι in the Doric usually dropped ν and became —ασι in Attic, but the later Cretan inscriptions show —αν after the analogy of the aorist.\(^8\) The Alexandrian κοινη followed the Cretan. The papyri examples are very numerous\(^9\) and it is in the inscriptions of Pergamum\(^10\) also. Hort (Notes on Orthography, p. 166) considers it "curious," but has to admit it in various cases, though there is always some MS. evidence for —ασι. Thackeray (Gr., pp. 195, 212) thinks that in some instances —αν with the perfect is genuine in the LXX. The earliest examples are from Lydia, παρείλαφαν (246 B. C.) and ἀπέσταλκαν (193 B. C.). Cf. Dieterich, Unters., p. 235 f. The N. T. examples are ἀπέσταλκαν (Ac. 16:36), γέγο-

---

2 Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 323.
3 Prol., p. 52; Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 36, 1904, p. 110.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 46.
6 Prol., p. 52.
8 K.-B1., Bd. II, p. 48 f.
10 Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 167. Thumb (Hellen., p. 170) rightly denies that it is merely Alexandrian. For LXX exx. (ἐώρακαν, πέτρακαν, etc.) see Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 67.
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ( ’PHMA) 337

ναν (Ro. 16:7; Rev. 21:6), ἐγνωκαν (Jo. 17:7), ἐφηκαν (Rev. 19:3), εἰσελήμυθαν (Jas. 5:4), ἐώρακαν (Lu. 9:36; Col. 2:1), πέπτωκαν (Rev. 18:3), τετήρκαν (Jo. 17:6). On the other hand the Western class of documents (RADN Syr. Sin.) read ἡκασίαν in Mk. 8:3 instead of εἰσίν. But it is in the LXX (Jer. 4:16), and Moulton finds ἡκασίαν in the papyri. The form of ἡκω is present, but the sense is perfect and the κ lends itself to the perfect ending by analogy.

Another ending that calls for explanation is the use of –ες instead of –ας in the present perfect and the first aorist (in —κα especially). Hort considers the MS. evidence "scanty" save in Revelation. The papyri give some confirmation. Moulton cites αφήκες, ἐγραψες, etc., from "uneducated scribes" and thinks that in Revelation it is a mark of "imperfect Greek." Deissmann finds the phenomenon common in a "badly written private letter" from Fayum. Mayser confirms the rarity of its occurrence in the papyri. In the inscriptions Dieterich finds it rather more frequent and in widely separated sections. In Mt. 23:23 B has αφηκετε; in Jo. 8:57 B has εώρακες; in Jo. 17:7 and in 17:8 B has ἐδωκες; once more in Ac. 21:22 B gives ἐλήμυθες. It will hardly be possible to call B illiterate, nor Luke, whatever one may think of John. D has απεκάλυψες in Mt. 11:25. W. H. accept it in Rev. 2:3 (κεκοπίακες), 2:4 (αφήκες), 2:5 (πέπτωκες), 11:17 (ἐπιλήψες), all perfects save αφήκες. It is rare in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 215); found in A (Ex. 5:22, ἀπέσταλκες) and in ἐδωκες (Ezek. 16:21; Neh. 9:10). The modern Greek has it as in ἐδεσσα, —ες (Thumb, Handb., p. 152).

We have both ἡσσα (Mt. 26:69) and is (Mt. 25:21). The form in —θα is vanishing (Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 166). Cf. also Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 321. The papyri have (acts, as N. T., and ἐφης. But see —μι Verbs.

Much more common is the use of the first aorist endings —α, —ας, etc., with the second aorist stem and even with the imperfect. This change occurs in the indicative middle as well as active. This matter more technically belongs to the treatment of the

2 Ib.: Prol., p. 52.
3 B. S., p. 192.
5 Unters. etc., p. 239. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 46, cites Apoll., Synt., I, 10, p 37, as saying that ἐφηκες, ἐγραψες, γραψέτω, etc., gave the grammarians trouble.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 46.
7 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 113.
aorist tense, as the -α is part of the tense-stem, but it is also conveniently discussed here. The Attic already had εἰπα, ἔπεσα, ἤνεγκα. The Attic inscriptions indeed show ἔσχα, εὐράμην and even the imperfects ἡπίςα, ἔθερα. This tendency towards uniformity spread in the κοινή somewhat extensively. Moulton finds the strong aorists with --α chiefly in "uneducated writing" in the papyri, but common in general. This process of assimilation of the strong with the weak aorist was not yet complete. Blass thinks it an "intermediate" form already in the ancient Greek which spread in the κοινή. Cf. the liquid form ἥγγειλα. But both the strong and the weak aorists appear in the N. T. Thackeray (Cr., p. 195; cf. also pp. 210 ff.) notes that the --αν termination was finally extended to all past tenses, though in the LXX the imperfect forms are due to later copyists. In the modern Greek we note it regularly with κατέλαβα, ἦθελα, εἰχα, etc. (Thumb, Handb., pp. 152, 160, etc.). Hort has a detailed discussion of the matter in the N. T. This mixture of usage is shown in εἰπα and εἶπον. The -α form is uniform with endings in –τ (εἰπατε, εἰπάτω, εἰπάτωσαν). Both εἰπόν and εἰπέ occur. We have ἀπειπάμεθα (2 Cor. 4:2) and προεἰπαμεν (1 Th. 4:6). The participle is usually –ών, but sometimes εἰπάς. Both εἰπάς and εἰπες, εἰπον and εἰπαν meet us. We always have the ἤνεγκα inflection save in the infinitive and the imperative. And even here we once have ἀνενέγκαι (1 Pet. 2:5) and once also προσένεγκον (Mt. 8:4 BC). So also with ἔπεσα we have the weak or first aorist inflection in the indicative and imperative plural πέσατε (Lu. 23:30; Rev. 6:16). But in these two examples Hort (against W. 1-1.) favours πέσετε on MS. grounds (KABD, KBC). In Lu. 14:10; 17:7 ἀνάψεσε is correct. The other forms that are accepted by W. H. are ἔβαλαν

4 Ib. Cf. Deiss., B. S.; p. 190 ff. 2
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 45. The LXX is in harmony with this tendency also. Is it Cilician according to Heraclides? W.-Sch., p. 111 note. Cf. in Hom. forms like ἤςωντα, ἔβησετο, where the sec. aorist endings go with the first aorist stern (Sterrett, Hom. 11., N. 42).
7 Notes on Orth., p. 164. Moulton (Prol., p. 51) speaks of "the functionally useless difference of ending between the strong and the weak aorist."
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB (PHMA) 339

once (Ac. 16:37); ἐπέβαλαν twice (Mk. 14:46; Ac. 21:27); ἐδαν, ἐδαμεν in a few places (Mt. 13:17; Lu. 10:24; Mt. 25:37, etc.); the indicatives ἀνείλαν (Ac. 10:39), ἀνείλατε (Ac. 2:23), ἀνείλατο (Ac. 7:21), ἐλατο (2 Th. 2:13), ἐξειλάμην (Ac. 23:27), ἐξέιλατο (Ac. 7:10; 12:11); ἐμαν once (Lu. 8:35, or ἀνεμαν, ἐμαν once (Lu. 23:2), and ἐμάμενος once (Heb. 9:12); the imperatives ἐλατε, ἐλαττω uniformly; both Ἰλουν and Ἰλουν, once ἀπήλθα (Rev. 10:9), regularly Ἰλομεν (Ac. 21:8). There are many other ex-
amples in various MSS. which W. H. are not willing to accept, but which illustrate this general movement, such as ἀπεθαν (Mt. 8:32, etc.), ἠλαβαν (Jo. 1:12), ἠλαβαμεν (Lu. 5:5), ἠλάμβατε (1 Jo. 2:27), ἠξεβαλαν (Mk. 12:8), ἠπαν (1 Cor. 10:4 D), ἠφυναν (Lu. 8:34 D), κατέφαγαν (Mk. 4:4 D), συμέρχαν (Ac. 7:57 D), γενάμενος (Lu. 22:41 ἐκ), etc. But let these suffice. Moulton¹ is doubtful about allowing this –α in the imperfect. But the papyri support it as Deissmann² shows, and the modern Greek³ reinforces it also as we have just seen. W. H. receive ἤχαν in Mk. 8:7; Ac. 28:2 (παρεχαν); Rev. 9:8; ἤχαμεν, in 2 Jo. 5. But D has ἤχαν in Jo. 15:22, 24; ἐκ has ἤχαν in Jo. 15:22, 24; ἐκ has ἤχαν in Jo. 9:10; 11:36, etc. There is a distinct increase in the use of the sigmatic aorist as in ἡμάρτησα (Mt. 18:15), ὡψηςευ (Lu. 13:28). It appears already in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 235). But see further under vii, (d).

The past perfect has the –εν forms exclusively as uniformly in the κόινη.⁴ So εἴστήκεσαν (Rev. 7:11), ἦδεισαν (Mk. 14:40), πεποιήσεσαν (Mk. 15:7). So the LXX. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 68. But the imperfect ἐξήσεσαν (Ac. 17:15) is to be observed.

(i) THE MIDDLE ENDINGS. These call for less remark. βουλει (Lu. 22:42) is the only second singular middle form in —ει, for ὡψη (Mt. 27:4) displaces ὡψει. The inscriptions⁵ sometimes show βουλη. Blass⁶ regards βουλει a remnant of literary style in Luke,

² B. S., p. 191, ἤποιησας, etc.
⁵ Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 168. Cf. also Mayser, Gr. d. grieck. Pap., p. 328. The pap. do not show ὡητα and ὡψει, but only βουλει.
but the papyri also have βοῦλει. The occasional use of δύνη (Mk. 9:22 f.) has been discussed under μι. Verbs. It appears only once in the LXX, but the "poetic and apparently Ionic" εκίστη is more frequent (Thackeray, Gr., p. 217). Cf. also καθεύ (Jas. 2:3) as LXX and καθη (Ac. 23:3). On the other hand we have φάγεσαι and πίεσαι (Lu. 17:8). This revival of the use of –σαί parallel with –μαι, –ταί in the perfect of vowel verbs in the vernacular amounts to a "new formation" in the view of Blass. So Moulton, Prol., p. 54 f. To call this revival a "survival" is "antediluvian philology." In the LXX πίεσαι is universal and φάγεσαι outside of the Pentateuch where φάγη holds on (Thackeray, p. 218). The –σαί form is universal in modern Greek. The love of uniformity made it triumph. But see Contract Verbs for further discussion. The middle form ήμεν (Mt. 25:35) and ήμεθα (Mt. 23:30) is like the κοινή generally and the modern Greek εἶμαι. Cf. also εἴσομαι. For εἴεξεντο (Mt. 21:33) with loss of root o and o inflection (thematic ε) see –μι Verbs. Cf. also εἴεκρέμετο (Lu. 19:48). The LXX has εἰς ντο for –ντο (Thackeray, p. 216).

(j) PASSIVE ENDINGS. As already observed, the passive voice has no distinctive endings of its own. The second aorist passive, like ἐ-φάνη-ν, is really an active form like ἐ-βη-ν (ἐ-φάνη-ν, is the proper division).2 Cf. Latin tace-re. So ἐ-χαρη-ν from χαιρέω. The first aorist in –θην seems to have developed by analogy out of the old secondary middle ending in –θη (ἐ-δαθη-ς) parallel with σο (Sanskrit thas).3 The future passive is a late development and merely adds the usual σο/ε and uses the middle endings. The ending in –θην is sometimes transitive in Archilochus,4 as the middle often is, and perhaps helps to understand how in the κοινη these forms (first aorist passive) are so often transitive ("deponents") as in ἀπεκριθη, ἔφθοβηθην, etc. The second aorist passive as noticed above is really an active form. So the passive forms have a decidedly mixed origin and history. There is nothing special to note about these passive endings in the N. T. save the increased use of them when even the passive idea does not exist. In some verbs σ is inserted contrary to Attic practice. So κακέλεσται (Lu. 11:7), λέλουσμαι (Heb. 10:22). It is a common usage in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., pp. 219 ff.). See also VII,

4 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 411.
(g), 9. In Rev. 8:12; 18:23, W. H. print φανη (first aorist active, cf. ἐπιθύνασι in Lu. 1:79) rather than the passive φανη. Note ἐκφύη (Mt. 24:32, but Rec. ἐκφύη, though ἐκφύη in Mk. 13:28), συνθεῖσαι (Lu. 8:7) and παρεισδύσαν (Ju. 4) for ἔδων (Rec. Mk. 1:32) which the LXX retains (Thackeray, Gr., p. 235). In the LXX, when a verb had both first and second aorist passive forms, the first disappeared (ib., p. 237). But see (d), for further discussion.

(k) CONTRACT VERBS. The use of –σαί was mentioned above. It appears1 in καυχάσασι (1 Cor. 4:7; Ro. 2:17, etc.) and δισωάσασι (Lu. 16:25) where αε regularly contracts into α. See χαρίσασι (=–εἰσαύ P. Oxy. 292 (A.D. 25).

Verbs in –αω. The confusion with verbs in —εω is already seen in the Ionic (Herodotus). The LXX in general preserves the distinction between –αω and —εω verbs, but ΧΑΒ occasionally have the confusion (Thackeray, Gr., p. 241). In the modern Greek the blending is complete. One conjugation is made up, some forms from –αω, some from —εω (Thumb, Handb., p. 169 f.). The N. T. MSS. vary. W. H. receive ἐρώτουν in Mt. 15:23 (ΧΒΔ), but ἐρωτουν in Mk. 4:10 though —ουν, is here supported by ΧΚ and by single MSS. elsewhere. Hatzidakis (Einl. in d. Neug., p. 128 f.) considers ἐρώτουν due to Ionic influence. In Mt. 6:28 we have κοπιοῦσιν, LP in B 33, but W. H. reject2 it, as they do νικοῦντι in Rev. 2:7, 17; 15:2, and κατεγέλουν (Lu. 8:53). In Mk. 14:5 W. H. read ἐνεβριμόντο (ΧΚ –οῦντο) and in Jo. 11:38 ἐμβριμώμενος (ΧΑ –ούμενος). So there is a variation as to ἡπτώνται (2 Pet. 2:20) from ἡπτάομαι and ἡπσώθητε (2 Cor. 12:13) from ἐσσῶν after the analogy of ἐλάσσων.3 W. H. print ζήν (Ro. 8:12). This is a matter of much dispute with the editors, but it is more than doubtful if W. H. are correct. On the other side see Winer-Schmiedel4 and Moulton.5 But both —ζω (Ro. 8:12) and χράομαι (1 Tim. 1:8) have the 17 contraction rather than α (—νω verbs, Moulton, Prol., p. 54). In Ro. 7:9 B even has ζησω for ζων. But the κοινα uses χράσσαι, though not in the N. T.6 Paul

1 Cf. Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 328, for χαρίσασι. The LXX (1 Ki. 14:6 A) shows ἀπεξενοῦσαι. The only certain instance in the LXX is κτᾶσαι (Sir. 6:7). See Thack., p. 218. Cf. further Hatz., Einl., p. 188.
2 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 166.
3 Ib. Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 36) cites ἐνύκει and τιμοῦντες from pap.
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 54.
has χρησταί (pres. subj.) in 1 Tim. 1:8. Elsewhere also the α forms prevail in the κοινη as in διψαν and πειναν. So πεινα (1 Cor. 11:21), πειναν (Ph. 4:12), διψα, (Ro. 12:20) as subjunctive (so πεινα same verse). The LXX keeps Attic ζην and χρησθαι, but διψαν and πειναν (Thackeray, Gr., p. 242). 1

Verbs in –εω sometimes show forms in –αω. So ἐλλογα in Phil. 18, ἐλλογαται in Ro. 5:13, ἐλεάτε in Ju. 22, 23, and ἐλεώντος in Ro. 9:16, but ἐλει στρεβλων in Ro. 6:18. LXX has both forms. The κοινη usually has the –ειφ forms. 2 For further examples of this confusion between –αω and –εω in LXX and isolated N. T. MSS. see Winer-Schmiedel. 3 In 1 Cor. 11:6 all editors print εὐρασθαι (cf. κερασθαι just before), though in 1 Cor. 11:5 εὐρημενη and εὐρησουται (Ac. 21:24) probably come from εὐρέω. 4 Cf. εάω, εάσω. 5

Contraction does not always take place with εε in verbs in –εω.

In Lu. 8:38 W. H. follow BL in giving ἐδείτο but Hort6 admits that it is not free from doubt. Blass7 and Moulton 8 consider ἐδέετο correct and the contraction a mere correction, and it is supported by the LXX and papyri. AP even have ἐδείτο. In Rev. 16:1 ἐκχέετε is undoubtedly right and ἐξέχεεν, in 16:2, but note ἐκχειται (Mt. 9:17). In Mk. 14:3 κατέχεεν is to be noticed also (cf. Attic aorist). On the other hand in Jo. 3:8 note πνει, ἐξέπλει (Ac. 18:18), πλειν, ἀποπλειν (Ac. 27:1 f.). In the LXX these words appear now one way, now the other. 9  Δέω (‘to bind’), ἰδον have no εε forms in the N. T. W. H. accept in text only ἐξοδευτώνω in all the dozen examples in the N. T. (as Lu. 18:9, ἐξοδοδοντώνς), but in Mk. 9:12 they have θ instead of θ. 10 Observe also ἀφέωνται (Lu. 5:20, etc.) instead of ἀφωνται or the regular ἀφείνται. In the N. T., W. H. give ἐρόθη (Gal. 3:16; Mt. 5:21, etc.), but Hort11 thinks the Attic ἐρόθη should appear always in Matthew.

Verbs in –οω have two knotty problems. In Gal. 4:17 ζηλοῦτε and 1 Cor. 4:6 φυσιοῦσθε are regular if indicative. But if they are subjunctive, the contraction ον is like the indicative οε (cf. indicative.
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB (＇PHMA) 343
tive and subjunctive of —οω verbs). So Blass and Moulton. Hort doubts the indicative here. If εὐδῶται (1 Cor. 16:2) be regarded as a present subjunctive no problem in contraction is raised. But in Col. 4:17 we have the subjunctive in ηνα πληροις as in Attic for both indicative and subjunctive. In Ro. 3:13 έδολοιςαν is the common LXX form in —οσαν. The other point is the infinitive in —ουν, or —οιν. W. H. give —οιν for this infinitive everywhere except πληροιν in Lu. 9:31. Cf. and —ην in W. H. Blass considers the —οιν termination "hardly established for the N. T." since even in the N. T. the evidence is "small," though "of good quality." Hort contends. In Mt. 13: 32 κατασκηνοιν is supported by BD (in Mk. 4:32 by B), in 1 Pet. 2:15 φιμοιν has Ρ, and in Heb. 7:5 άποδεκατοιν has BD. Moulton finds no support earlier in date than B save one inscription cited in Hatzikiakis (Einl., p. 193) and one papyrus of second century A.D. Mayser likewise finds no infinitive in —οιν till after first century and gives some references for this late infinitive form. It looks as if the case will go against W. H. on this point. The form is probably due to some late grammarian's refinement and is linguistically unintelligible.

Πηειν, is often contracted (sounded finally ι, then ι) into πειν (so W. H., Jo. 4:7, 9, etc.) and in some MSS. (Ρ 8/9 times) into πιν. But πειν is the Syrian reading (Mt. 20:22, etc.). Contraction in —αω, —εω, —οω verbs, of course, takes place only in the present, imperfect and present participle.

VII. The Tenses (χρόνοι).

(a) THE TERM TENSE. It is from the French word temps, 'time,' and is a misnomer and a hindrance to the understanding of this aspect of the verb-form. Time does come finally to enter relatively into the indicative and in a limited way affects the optative, infinitive and participle. But it is not the original nor the general idea of what we call tense. Indeed it cannot be shown of

2 Prol., p. 54. 3 Notes on Orth., p. 171 f.
5 Hort, ib., p. 166. 6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 48.
7 Notes on Orth., p. 166.
9 Cr. d. griech. Pap., p. 349; Raderm., p. 74.
10 Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 170.
any verb-form that it had originally any reference to time. We
must therefore dismiss time from our minds in the study of the
forms of the tenses as well as in the matter of syntax. It is too
late to get a new name, however.

(b) CONFUSION IN NAMES. The greatest confusion prevails in
the names given to the various tenses. The time idea appears in
the names present, past perfect and future. The state of the ac-
tion rules in the names aorist, imperfect and perfect. Thus it is
clear that the time idea did not prevail with all the names that
the grammarians used. In the indicative, indeed, in the past three
tenses appear, in the present two, in the future one (sometimes
two). In the other modes as a rule only three tenses are found;
in truth, in the subjunctive, optative and imperative practically
only two are in common usage, the aorist and the present.

As a matter of fact there are nine possible tenses for each
voice in the indicative: the aorist present, the imperfect pres-
et, the perfect present, the aorist past, the imperfect past, the
perfect past; the aorist future, the imperfect future, the perfect
future. These ideas do occur. In the past the distinction is
clear cut. In the present no sharp line is drawn between the
aorist and durative (unfinished or imperfect) save when the peri-
phrastic conjugation is used or when Aktionsart comes in to
help out the word itself. In the future, as a rule, no distinction
at all is made between the three ideas. But here again the peri-
phrastic conjugation can be employed. As a rule the future is
aoristic anyhow. For further discussion see Jannaris, Hist. Gk.
Gr., p. 180; Farrar, Greek Syntax, p. 120, and the references there
to Harris' Hermes, Harper's Powers of the Greek Tenses, and
H. Schmidt's Doctrina Temporum Verbi Graeci et Latini. The
modern Greek preserves as distinct forms the aorist, present, im-
perfect; the future, the perfect and past perfect using periphrastic
forms. Mr. Dan Crawford reports 32 tenses for Bantu.

(c) THE VERB-ROOT. There were originally two types of verb-
roots, the punctiliar and the durative. The tense called aorist
(\(\acute{\alpha}\delta\rho\sigma\tau\omicron\omicron\gamma\zeta\), 'undefined action') is due to the use of the punctiliar
verbs (the idea of a point on a line). The present tense comes
out of the durative verb-root. But it is worth repeating that
tenses are a later development in the use of the verb.\(^1\)

Hence it was natural that some verbs never developed a pres-
ent tense, like \(\epsilon\lambda\delta\omicron\omicron\), and some made no aorist, like \(\dot{o}\rho\acute{\alpha}\omicron\omicron\). The de-
fective verbs thus throw much light on the history of the tenses.

\(^1\) Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 482 f.
Out of these two ideas grew all the tenses. Each language had its own development. Some aorists in Sanskrit had no presents, like the Greek εἶπον. Each tense in the Greek pursued its own way. It is a complex development as will be seen. The idea of comparing the aorist to a point and the present to a line is due to Curtius, but it has since been worked out at length. Instead of saying "irregular" verbs, Delbruck (Vergl. Syntax, Tl. II, p. 256) speaks of "several roots united to one verb."

This Aktionsart or kind of action belongs more specifically to syntax. But it is not possible to make a modern study of the tense formations without having clearly in mind this important matter. It will come out at every turn. Along with the various tense-suffixes which came to be used to express the tense-distinctions as they were developed there remains also the meaning of the verb-root itself. This is never to be left out of sight. Prepositions also enter into the problem and give a touch much like a suffix (perfective). So θυνήκειν is 'to be dying' while ἀποθανέω is 'to die' and ἀποτεθυμέναι is 'to be dead.' Cf. ἔχει, and ἀπέχει, ἔφαγον and κατέφαγον. But more of this in Syntax. The point here is simply to get the matter in mind.

(d) THE AORIST TENSE (ἀόριστος χρόνος). It is not true that this tense was always the oldest or the original form of the verb. As seen above, sometimes a durative root never made an aorist or punctiliar stem. But the punctiliar idea is the simplest idea of the verb-root, with many verbs was the original form, and logically precedes the others. Hence it can best be treated first. This is clearer if we dismiss for the moment the so-called first aorists and think only of the second aorists of the --μι form, the oldest aorists. It is here that we see the rise of the aorist. Henry has put this matter tersely: "The ordinary grammars have been very unfortunate in their nomenclature; the so-called second perfects are much more simple and primitive than those called first perfects; the same is the case with the second aorists passive as contrasted with the first aorists," etc. The same remark applies to second aorists active and middle. The non-thematic second aorists represent, of course,
the most primitive form. The survivals of these forms in the N. T. have been discussed under — μ Verbs. The difference between the strong aorist (both thematic and non-thematic) and similar presents is syntactical and not formal. The point is that the strong aorists and the corresponding presents represent the simple stem of the verb. Brugmann indeed treats them together. It is not possible to make an etymological distinction between the imperfects εφην, εραφον and the aorists εστην, εφυγον. The imperfect, of course, differs from the present only in the augment and secondary endings. The kinship between the aorist and present stems is further shown in reduplication. Reduplication in the aorist, as ἤγαγον, is supposed to be originally causative. Cf. the use of it with inceptive presents like γι(γ)νώσκω. The aorist was quite common in the older Sanskrit, but is rare in the later language. Cf. the blending of the aorist and the present perfect forms in Latin. The strong aorist (both non-thematic and thematic) is far more common in Homer than in the later Greek. Indeed in the modern Greek the strong aorist has well-nigh vanished before the weak aorist.

As often, the grammars have it backwards. The so-called second is the old aorist, and the so-called first is the late form of the verb. This weak form of the aorist has a distinct tense-sign, σ, the sigmatic aorist. The σ (—σα) was not always used, as with liquid verbs, like εστειλα. This sigmatic aorist appears also in the Sanskrit. The distinction was not always observed between the two forms, and mixed aorists of both kinds occur in Homer, like ἤξευτο, ἤσεικα. No wonder therefore that uniformity gradually prevailed at the expense of the strong aorist in two ways, the disuse of the strong aorist (so ἤξα) and the putting of first aorist endings to the second aorist stems, as εἰπα, εσχα.

The κ aorists in the indicative (ἐσώκα, ἐθηκα, ἤκα) continued to hold their own and to be used usually in the plural also. An ex-

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 268.
3 Cf. Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 453 f.
5 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 298.
6 See interesting lists in Sterrett's II., N. 38 ff.
7 V. and D., Handb. etc., p. 79 f.
10 Sterrett, Hom. II., N. 42.
tension of this usage (after the analogy of the perfect) is seen in the Byzantine and modern Greek form ἐλύθηκα for ἐλύθην.

There is one more aorist form, the aorist passive. As already shown, the so-called second aorist passive ([--η]), like ἔφαντο, ἔχαρη, is merely the second aorist active. The so-called first aorist passive in --θην is a Greek creation after the analogy of the old Indo-Germanic. Homer makes little use of either of these passive aorists, but the second is the more frequent with him and the form in --θην is very rare.

If this emphasis upon the aorist forms seem unusual to modern students, they may be reminded that in English we have only two tenses (apart from the periphrastic conjugation) and that they are usually punctiliar, as "I sing," "I sang." One is a present aorist, the other a past aorist. We do not here enter into the Aktionsart of the aorist (whether ingressive, constative or effective). That belongs to syntax.

The inscriptions agree with the development shown above in the aorist and support the N. T. phenomena. Mayser gives a careful discussion of the papyri development. In brief it is in harmony with what has already been observed. The non-theematic strong aorist is confined to a few verbs like βῆκα, γνώκα, δοῦκα, δῶκα, θεῖκα, πρίσκα, στῆκα. The κ aorists are used exclusively in both singular and plural. The thematic strong aorist is disappearing before the weak sigmatic aorist.

In the N. T. the κ aorists ἐδώκα, ἐθηκα, ἀφηκα occur always except that Luke (1:2 in the literary introduction) has παρέδωκαν. Elsewhere ἐδωκατε (Mt. 25:35), ἐθηκαν (Mk. 6:29), ἀφηκατε (Mt. 23:23), etc., and quite frequently. The LXX also nearly always has κ with these aorists in the plural.

The non-theematic aorists in the N. T. are not numerous. The list is found in the discussion of –μι verbs and includes ἀνέβηκα, ἔγνωκα, ἔστηκα, ἔφηκα, ὠνάκα, and all the forms of δοῦκα, ἔνακα and θεῖκα save the indicative active.

---

1 V. and D. Handb., etc., p. 81, but in particular Thumb, Handb., p. 144.
3 Hirt, Handb., etc., p. 399 f.
4 Sterrett, Hom. IL, N. 42 f.
6 Munro, ib., p. 47.
9 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 119.
10 See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p.94 f., for similar exx. in the LXX, and Thack., Gr., p. 255.
The thematic strong aorist in the N. T. shows the two developments noted above. The use of –α instead of –ω with the strong aorist-stem is very common. See this chapter, vi, (h), for N. T. list like ἐβαλαν, etc. The MSS. vary much in the matter.1 The other change is the increased use of the sigmatic aorist. Here again Blass2 has a careful presentation of the facts. Ἐβίωσα (1 Pet. 4:2) is a case in point instead of the old Attic ἐβίων. So is ἐβλάστησα (Mt. 13:26; Heb. 9:4; Jas. 5:18) rather than ἐβλαστον.


Ἡξα occurs a few times instead of the common ἦγαγον, as ἐπάξας (2 Pet. 2:5), ἐπισυνάξαι (Lu. 13:34). Blass justifies it as appearing at least in dialects, LXX and late writers.3 It is part of the tendency towards the sigmatic aorist. Likewise ἀμαρτήσω is slipping in beside ἀμάρτω (Mt. 18:15; Ro. 5:14, 16, cf. verse 12). Blass finds it in Emped., LXX, Lob., Phryn., 732. W. H. accept ἐδωσεν (Mk. 1:32 on the authority of BD (X, etc., ἐδυ). Luke in Ac. 24:21 has the reduplicated aorist ἐκέκραξα like the LXX, but usually the N. T. has the late form ἐκραξα as in Mt. 8:29 (ἐκραξαν), though once the Attic ἄνεκραγον appears (Lu. 23:18). Once Luke (Ac. 6:2) has καταλεψατας, a form that Blass4 finds in Herm., Vis. VIII, 3. 5, and Mayser5 observes ἀντελήψατα in the papyri.

Ὑψηθε (Lu. 13:28) finds a parallel in an old Homeric aorist ωψάμην (Winer-Schmiedel, p. 109). In Rev. 18:14 the Text. Rec. (without any known authority) has an aorist form ἐὑρησα. So in Jas. 4:13 some MSS. have ἐμπορευσώμεθα. Indeed some verbs have dropped the strong aorist form entirely like βιῶ, βλαστάω, ἐγείρομαι, κτέω. See careful discussion of Winer-Schmiedel, p. 109 f. MSS. frequently read δώσῃ, δωσιμεν, etc., as if from an aorist ἐδωσα, as Jo. 17:2; Rev. 4:9. Cf. Winer-Schmiedel, p. 120. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 90 f., for LXX examples that further parallel these illustrations.

Conversely is to be noted a new strong aorist ἄνεθαλον (Ph. 4:10) which Blass6 takes in a causative sense (ἀνεθάλετε τὸ ὑπὲρ ἐμοῦ φρονέων).

Verbs in --ζω make the aorist both in σ and ζ. Most of these

---

1 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 45 f.
2 Ib., p. 43.
3 Ib. Mayser (Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 369) finds it in the pap. as well as ἀγαγήσατα.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 43. Cf. καταλεψη Mk. 12:19 X.
5 Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 370.
6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 43.
verbs have dental stems in Attic, but some have guttural. Hence the ι forms prevail till to-day. The LXX agrees with the N. T. (Thackeray, Gr., p. 222 f.). So ένωστοκαω (Mt. 25:5), έμπακεκαι, (Mt. 20:19), έπεστήμεσα (Ac. 15:32); but on the other hand έστήμεσα (Lu. 9:51), ήρπασεν (Ac. 8:39), ήμοσόμην, (2 Cor. 11:2), σκαλίσης (Mt. 6:2). The tendency in the papyri and the inscriptions on the whole is towards the use of ι and not ξ with the verbs in —ξω. Cf. βαπτίζω, λογίζομαι, νομίζω, etc.

Like καλέω and τελέω we have ε in έφορέσαμεν (1 Cor. 15:49) and έρρέθη (Mt. 5:21), but εφόρησα (Lu. 12:16), ρηθέν (Mt. 1:22) and έπετόθησα (1 Pet. 2:2). Cf. also ήνεσα, ήρκεσε, έμέσαι. Cf. έπείνασα (Mt. 4:2), but διψήσω, though D has —α— in Jo. 6:35 and Ν in Rev.

The liquid verbs in —αίνω and —άρω generally retain a even when not preceded by ε or ι as in Attic. So έβάσκανα (Gal. 3:1); once κερδανώ (1 Cor. 9:21), elsewhere —νυσα; έξεκάθαρα (1 Cor. 5:7); έλεύκανεν (Rev. 7:14); έστήμενα (Rev. 1:1); έπιφάναι (Lu. 1:79). In Rev. 8:12 and 18:23 note φάνη, not φανη. The κοινή begins to use —ανα and —αρα with all verbs, and it is well-nigh universal in modern Greek. The LXX agrees with the N. T. (Thackeray, Gr., p. 223). A few --νηα forms survive in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 140 f.).

The second aorist passive has a few late developments of its own. This substitution of the second aorist passive for the first is a favorite idiom in the N. T. The κοινή shows likewise fondness for the —ην formations. This is true of the inscriptions' and the papyri. This development is directly the opposite of that in the case of the second and first aorist active and middle. It has already been observed that in Homer the passive aorist is very rare. Perhaps the increase in the use of —ην forms is partly due to the general encroachment of aorist passive forms on the middle, and this is the simplest one. The Attic, of course, had many such forms also. Here are the chief N. T. examples: ήγγέλην (άπ—, ἃν—, δί—, κατ—, Lu. 8:20, etc.) is in the LXX and the papyri; ήνοϊγην (Mk. 7:35, etc.), but ήνοιξθησαν also (Rev. 20:12); ήρπάγην (2 Cor. 12:2, 4), but the Attic ήρπάσθη (Rev. 12:5); διαρρυγήσαί is read by some MSS. in Mt. 24:43; διετάγην (Gal. 3:19), ύπετάγην (Ro. 8:20, etc.), but the Attic διαταχθέντα (Lu. 17:9 f.);

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 105.
2 Cf. Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 360 ff., for careful discussion and references for further research.
3 So παύωνω and πορέωντος in the LXX. Cf. W.-Sch., p. 105.
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 43. 5 Cf. Schmid, Atticismus, IV, p. 594 f.
350 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

κατεκάτην (Rev. 8:7; 1 Cor. 3:15), but Attic ἐξεκαὐθήσαν (Ro. 1:27); κατενύγην (Ac. 2:37); ἐκρύβην (Jo. 8:59). So also ἐφύη instead of ἔφυσεν follows the analogy of ἔρρυσεν (Heb. 2:1) and ἔχάρην (Lu. 22:5). Thus we have ἐκφυή (Mk. 13:28) and συμφυεῖσαι (Lu. 8:6-8). Forms like ἐπλήγην (Rev. 8:12) and ἐφάνη (Mt. 1:20) are Attic. On the other hand the poetical ἐκλίθην (Mt. 14:19 ἀνακλίθηναι) has displaced the Attic ἐκλίθην. Απεκτάνθην occasionally appears (as in Mk. 8:31 and Rev, six times) where the Attic would have ἄπεθανον, and ἐτέχθην (Lu. 2:11) when the Attic would usually have ἐγενόμην. Both ἐγενήθην (Mt. 6:10 and often in 1 Th.) and ἐγενόμην (Mt. 7:28) are common, as ἡδύνηθην (Mt. 17:16) and ἡδυνάσθην (Mk. 7:24). The many aorist passives in the deponent sense have already been noticed under VI, (e).

(e) THE PRESENT TENSE (ὁ ἐνεστώς χρόνος). The present indicative, from the nature of the case, is the most frequent in actual use and hence shows the greatest diversity of development. Brugmann finds thirty-two distinct ways of forming the present tense in the Indo-Germanic tongues and thirty of them in the Greek. But some of these represent very few verbs and for practical purposes a much simpler classification is sufficient. Unfortunately the grammars by no means agree on the simplification. As samples see Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 425 f.; Hadley and Allen, p. 122 f.; Monro, Homeric Grammar, p. 9; Riemann and Goelzer, Phonetique, pp. 394 ff.; Kuhner-Blass, II, pp. 88 ff. In simple truth the facts are so varied that they lend themselves to many combinations more or less artificial. One of the most satisfactory is that of Monro, who has the historical instinct at least in his arrangement.

1. The Root Class. This is the simple non-thematic present like φημί. This is the logical one to put first, as with the aorist like ἔβην. This class is disappearing in the N. T. though δυνάμαι, εἰμί, εἶμι in composition (εἰσ-, ἔ-, καθ-ημαί, κεί-μαι, κρέμα-μαι appear.

2. The Non-Thematic Reduplicated Present. So δί-δω-μι, ἱ-η-μι, ἵ-στη-μι, κί-χρη-μι, ὁνύνη-μι, πίμ-πλη-μι, τίθ-θη-μι. It was never a very large class, but holds on in the N. T. And –ω forms are common with these verbs.

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 110, for exx. in Jos. and LXX. Cf. also Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 95 f. MSS. simply read –φυή.
3 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 423.
3. The Non-Thematic Present with —να— and —νν—. So in the N. T. ἀμφι-ε-ννυ-μι, ἀπ-ὁ-λ-νυ-μι, δεκ-νυ-μι, ζεὐγ-νυ-μι, κατ- ἀγ-νυ-μι, κερά-νυ-μι, κορέθυνυ-μι, κρε-μα-νυ-μι, μίγ-νυ-μι, ὦμ-νυ-μι, πήγ- νυ-μι, ὦηγ-νυ-μι, σβένυ-μι, στρώνυνυ-μι, but these all have more commonly the -ω forms.1

4. The Simple Thematic Present. So λέγω, λῦω. This was a constantly increasing class at the expense of the --μι verbs. It had several branches also including root-verbs like ἄγω, γράφω, a strengthened vowel like πειθ-ω (πίθω), λείπ-ω (λιπ), φεύγ-ω (φυγ), σήπω, τήκω, τρώγω, θλίβω, πυίγω, etc., Hadley and Allen's "strong vowel class,"2 and the many contract denominative verbs like τιμ-ω, φιλ-ω, δεξί-ω. But see the i. Class for these contract verbs. New verbs were added to this list from nouns and some also from verb-stems, γρηγορ-ω from the old perfect ἐγρηγορά (this tense never in the N. T.),3 στήκω (Mk. 11: 25) from ἐστήκα (modern Greek στέκω).4 In Lu. 1:24 περιεκρύβεν is probably imperfect, not aorist, from κρύβω (κρύπτω). Cf. ἐκρύβην.5 The LXX shows these new presents from perfect stems (Thackeray, Gr., p. 224 f.).


6. The Thematic Present with a Suffix. There are five (—ι, —ν, —οκ —τ, —θ). Each of these divisions furnishes a number of verbs.

(a) The i class. It is very large. This suffix is used to make verbs from roots and substantives. It is probable6 that originally the suffix was —γι. It is thought that contract verbs in --ωω, --εω, --ωω, etc., originally had this i as j or y which was dropped.7 It is thus the chief way of forming denominative verbs and is pre-eminently a secondary suffix.8 Some of these verbs are causative, some intensive, some desiderative.9 The special Greek desiderative in --σείω does not appear in the N. T., but forms like κοπιάω are found. In particular, forms in --ιζω become so common that they no longer have an intensive, iterative or causative force,10

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 48. 2 Gr., p. 122.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 40.
5 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 41.
7 Hirt, ib., p. 383 f. 8 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 440.
9 Jann., ib., p. 222.
10 Jann., ib., p. 222.
but are used side by side with the older form, as βάπτω, βαπτίζω; ἰάω, ἰατρίζω, etc. In all the --ω forms the ι has united with a palatal (guttural) or lingual (dental), a matter determined by the aorist or future. So φυλάσσω is from φυλάκ-ιω, φράζω from φράδ-ιω. Other familiar combinations are ι and ιω, as βάλ-ιω=βάλλω, ι with ν by transposition, as φάν-ιω=φάινω, ι with ρ likewise, as ἀρ-ιω=ἀφιω. In καίω and κλαίω the ι has dropped between α and ι. In the N. T. verbs in --ίνω, --ιρω have --ανα, --αρα in the first aorist active as already shown under the aorist tense (d). Ἀμφιάζω (Lu. 12:28) is an example of a new present for ἄφιέννυμι. Cf. also ἀπόκτεινων (Mt. 10:28) in some MSS. for the older ἀποκτείνω, -υνω, -υνω). See Blass for the variations in the MSS. at many places in the N. T. with this word. So ἐκχύνω (Mt. 26:28, etc.) in the best MSS. for ἐκχέω. Only in Mt. 9:17 we have ἐκχεῖται from ἐκχέω and in Rev. 16:1 ἐκχέσστε in some MSS.

(β) The ν class is also well represented in the N. T. with thematic stems. It takes various forms. There is the ν alone, as καμ-νω, --αν as ἀμαρτ-άνω, --υε as ἄφι-ικ-νεό-μαι. Sometimes the ν is repeated in the root, as λαμβάνω (λαβέ), μανθάνω (μαθέ), τυχάνω (τυχέ). In the koinh< (so LXX. and N. T.) this inserted ν (μ) is retained in the aorist and future of λαμβάνω (ἐλημφθην, λήμψομαι) contrary to literary Attic. So the papyri.

(γ) The σκ class. It is commonly called Inceptive, but Delbruck considers these verbs originally terminative in idea, while Monro calls attention to the iterative idea common in Homer with the suffix --σκε, --σκο. The verbs with σκ may be either without reduplication, as βό-σκω, θην-σκω, ἱλά-σκομαι, φά-σκω, or with reduplication as γι(γ)νω-σκω, δι-δα-σκω (for δι-δάχ-σκω), μι-μη-σκω, πα-σχω (for πάθ-σκω). Cf. ἀρέ-σκω, γαμ-ισκω, γηρά-σκω, εὑρ-ισκω, μεθό-σκω. Reduplication is thus a feature with root-verbs (non-thematic) like δι-δω-μι and thematic like γι(γ)νο-μαί as well as the σκ class. For reduplication in the aorist and the perfect see (h). The iterative idea of some of these σκ verbs suits well the reduplication.

(δ) The τ class. It is not a very numerous one (about 18 verbs), though some of the verbs are common. The verb has

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 41. The LXX has these new presents. Thack., p.225.
2 Blass, ib. The LXX MSS. illustrate most of these peculiarities of verbs in the present tense. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 82-84;
3 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 436.
5 Hom. Gr., p. 34.
always a labial stem like ἄτ-το, βάτ-το, τύτ-το. The root may end in β as in καλύτ-το, π as in τύτ-το, or φ as in βάτ-το. It is even possible that πτ may represent an original πή (cf. iota class).

(e) The θ class. Cf. ἄληθ-θω, ἔσθ-θω, κνήθ-θω, νήθ-θω in the present.

The modern Greek has developed many new presents on the basis of the aorist or the perfect (Thumb, Handb., p. 143).

(f) THE FUTURE TENSE (ὁ μέλλων χρόνος). The origin of this tense has given rise to much discussion and some confusion. Vincent and Dickson⁴ even say that the first aorist is derived from the σ future! Like the other tenses there has been a development along several lines. No general remark can be made that will cover all the facts. As already remarked, the future tense is fundamentally aoristic or punctiliar in idea and not dura-tive or linear. The linear idea can be accented by the periphrastic form, as ἔστησε θεός λαλούντες (1 Cor. 14: 9). Cf. also Mt. 24:9; Lu. 1:20; 5:10; Mk. 13:25. But as a rule no such distinction is drawn. The truth is that the future tense is a late development in language. In the Sanskrit it is practically confined to the indicative and the participle, as in the Greek to the indicative, infinitive and participle (optative only in indirect discourse, and rarely then, not at all in N. T.). And in the Rigveda the sya form occurs only some seventeen times. The Teutonic tongues have no future form at all apart from the periphrastic, which existed in the Sanskrit also. In the modern Greek again the future as a distinct form has practically vanished and instead there occurs θά and the subjunctive or θέλω and the remnant of the infinitive, like our English "shall" or "will." Giles⁵ thinks it uncertain how far the old Indo-Germanic peoples had developed a future.

Probably the earliest use of the future was one that still survives in most languages. It is just the present in a vivid, lively sense projected into the future. So we say "I go a-fishing" as Simon Peter did, ὑπάγω ἀλιεύω (Jo. 21:3). The other disciples respond ἔρχομαι καὶ ἔμεινε σῦν σοί. This usage belongs to the realm of syntax and yet it throws light on the origin of the future tense.

So Jesus used (Jo. 14:3) the present and future side by side (ἔρχο-
μαὶ καὶ παραλήμψομαι). We have seen already that a number of aorists and presents like φη-μι had identically the same root and with no original distinction. That is, the durative idea was not distinguished from the aoristic or punctiliar. It is not strange, therefore, to see a number of these roots with primary endings (cf. subj. and opt. aorists) used as futures without any tense-suffix at all. Some were originally either present or future in sense (cf. ἠρχομαι above), others came to be used only as future. These verbs appear in Homer naturally, as βίομαι, ἔδομαι, εἴμι, πέμαι, etc.¹ Cf. N. T. φάγομαι. It is possible that those with variable vowel like ἔδομαι may really be the same form as the Homeric subjunctive (like ἔομεν as opposed to ἔμεν).² Πέμαι is common in Attic. (N. T.) and is from aorist root (ἐ-πι-οῦν). The form φάγομαι (LXX and N. T.) is analogous (aorist, ἔφαγον). The Attic used χέω as future also, but LXX and N. T. have χεῖ (Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 42). Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 88, for LXX illustrations to the same effect. The LXX has the classic ἔδομαι; not in the N. T. (Thackeray, p. 231).

It used to be said that the a future was merely a variation of the Sanskrit sya, the y or j sound disappearing in the Greek. This gave a simple explanation of the σ futures. But a rival theory has been advanced which derives the σ future from the a aorist.³ The frequency of the aorist subjunctive in Homer with κε (ἄν) in principal clauses much like the future indicative in Attic, and the absence of a future passive, not to say future optative, in Homer give some colour to this contention.⁴ Thus δεῖξω and the Latin dixō would be identical in form and meaning.⁵ But Brugmann⁶ has perhaps solved the problem by the suggestion that both explanations are true. Thus γράψω he derives from the aorist subjunctive γράψω, a mixed tense with a double origin. The use of —στο/ε in the Doric lends weight to the derivation of these verbs at least from the sya (Sanskrit) type.⁷ Hirt⁸ regards σεο/ε (Doric) as a combination of the σ future and the ε future (liquid verbs, for instance) and considers it a new Greek formation. This Doric future therefore may be as old as any,

¹ Sterrett, Hom. Il., N. 38.
³ Ib., p. 446. Cf. also Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 401 f.
⁴ Sterrett, Hom. Il., N. 27.
⁵ Giles, Man., p. 446.
⁶ Griech. Gr., p. 320. This position is accepted by p. 105.
⁷ Ib., p. 105 f.
⁸ Handb. etc., p. 403 f.
if not the oldest suffix, in fact the really distinctively future suffix. In the N. T. this Doric form survives in πεσοῦμαι1 (Mt. 10:29). 'Ρεῦς has ῥεῦσσω (Jo. 7:38), κλαίω has κλαοῦσσω (Lu. 6:25), while φεῦγω has φεῦξομαι (Jo. 10:5). The other forms common in Attic have no future in the N. T. This mixed2 origin of the future (partly aorist subj., partly Indo-Germ. sio) shows itself in the Aktionsart of the tense. So Moulton notes προάξω (Mk. 14:28) as durative, but αξέεται (1 Th. 4:14) as aoristic. Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 123.

Thus we may gain further light3 on the Ionic-Attic future of verbs in –ιζω. It is like the Doric —σεω/ε. So we have —σέω, dropping σ we get —τεω——ιω. These verbs in are very common in the later Greek. In the N. T. the usage varies between this form of the future and the aoristic form in —σω/ε. The LXX, like the Ptolemaic papyri (Thackeray, p. 228), has usually —ιω in first singular and so μετοικισω (Ac. 7:43) and παροργιώ (Ro. 10:19), both quotations. Elsewhere W. H.4 prefer the forms in —ισω, and Blass5 thinks that in the original passages of the N. T. the —ισω forms are genuine. So the forms in —ισεω (like βαπτισεω) are uniform in the N. T. (Lu. 3:16) save καθαρισε (Heb. 9:14) and διακαθαρισει, (Mt. 3:12).6 MSS. vary between αφορισει and —ισει, φωτισει and —ισει, χροισει, and —ισει. Cf. Blass.7 So in Eph. 6:8; Col. 3:25, the MSS. vary between κομισειαται and κομισεται. Some MSS. read κομιομενοι in 2 Pet. 2:13.8 All editors9 accept κομισεσε in 1 Pet. 5:4. The active plural W. H.10 print as —ιοσαι always (as μακαριοσαιν, Lu. 1:48) save in γνωρισουσιν (Col. 4:9).

The syncopated futures11 from the dropping of σ do not survive in the N. T. in καλεσω, τελεσω which always retain the σ.12 So even απολεσω (Mt. 21:41), though απολω is common in the LXX and

1 And this πεσοῦμαι is possibly not from πετ-σοῦμαι, but a change of τ to σ.
Henry (Comp. Gr. of Gk. and Lat., p. 116) considers the Doric future to be the affix of the future twice over, as σεσω, σεω.
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 149.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 42.
6 Ib. But Blass (ib.) prefers ἐγγυτει (Jas. 4:8).
7 Ib. See Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 84 f., 87 f., for the LXX exx. of verbs in —ζω.
8 Ib.
9 Notes on Orth., p. 163.
10 Ib.
11 Giles, Man., p. 446 f.
is quoted once in the N. T. (1 Cor. 1:19). However, the middle ἀπολοῦμαι is the N. T. form (Lu. 5:37) like ἀποθανοῦμαι. Ἐλαύνω has no future in the N. T. The N. T., like the LXX, has a future form ἀφέλω (Rev. 22:19) from the aorist ἔλεος of ἀφέω.

The liquid verbs in λ, ν, ρ present few problems. They belong to the aorist subjunctive type of formation. Here again we have syncopation of the σ. Verbs like βάλλω (βαλῶ), μένω (μενῶ), αἱρῶ (ἀρῶ) form the future with the variable vowel o/ε added to the stem without a in the N. T. as in the earlier Greek.

Blass has shown that in the N. T. the future active has largely displaced the future middle with verbs that were defective in the active voice. These futures are as follows: ἀμαρτήσω (Mt. 18:21), ἀπαντήσω (Mk. 14:13), ἀρπάσω (Jo. 10:28), βλέψω (Ac. 28:26), γελάσω (Lu. 6:21), διώξω (Mt. 23:34), κλαύσω (Lu. 6:25), κράζω (Lu. 19:40 ΧΒΛ), παίξω (Mk. 10:34), ἰέσω (Jo. 7:38), σπουδάσω (2 Pet. 1:15), συναντήσω (Lu. 22:10). We see this tendency already in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 231 f.). On the other hand the future middle alone occurs with ἀποθανοῦμαι (Jo. 8:24), γνωσόμαι (1 Cor. 4:19), λήμψομαι (Mt. 10:41), ὀψομαι (Mt. 24:30), πεσοῦμαι (Doric, Mt. 10:29), πίμαι (Mk. 10:39), φαγόμαι (Lu. 14:15), φεύξομαι (Jo. 10:5). Χαρῆσομαι (Lu. 1:14) Blass regards as Attic future from the aorist (ἔχερην) as compared with the future χαρῆσω from the present. Both ἀκούσω (Jo. 5:25) and ἀκοῦσομαι, (Ac. 21:22, chiefly in the Acts) are found, and ζήσω (Jo. 5:25) and ζήσομαι (Jo. 11:25).

The so-called second future passive as seen in the case of χαρῆσομαι above is really just the middle ending with σ put to the aorist active stem. There is no difference in form or sense between βῆ-σο-μαι and σταλ-ῆ-σο-μαι save the –η– which was really a part of the active stem of these verbs. The point is that fundamentally these so-called second future passives are really future middles corresponding to active aorists like the future middles and presents above (λήμψομαι, for instance). This point is made clearer by the fact that the Doric used only active endings like ἀναγράφῃσε (not -ται). Homer, besides, only has one second future passive (μεγήσομαι, really middle) and none in -θησ-. Instead he uses the middle future as later Greek continued to do with verbs like τιμήσομαι. Cf. γενήσομαι from ἐ-γεν-όμην. Some verbs indeed used both this second future passive like φανήσομαι (Mt. 24:30) which

---

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 321.  
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 42.  
3 Ib., p. 43.  
4 Giles, Man., pp. 410, 427.  
5 Ib., p. 447.  
6 K.-B1., II, p. 111.
is punctiliar and φανοῦμαι (1 Pet. 4:18) which may be durative like the Attic as Moulton" argues. So παύομαι (1 Cor. 13:8) and ἐπαναπαύεται (Lu. 10:6). Cf. also ἀνοιγῆσομαι (Mt. 7:7), ἀρπαγῆσομαι (1 Th. 4:17), φαινῆσομαι (Mt. 24:30), ὀποταγῆσομαι (1 Cor. 15:28), ψυγῆσομαι (Mt. 24:12), χαρῆσομαι (Lu. 1:14, see above).

The first future passive so-called is built upon the distinctively Greek aorist in –ήσοντα. It is unknown to Homer, as stated above, and, like the second aorist passive, is aorist in origin and idea.

Here again the Doric used the active endings like συναχθησοῦντι. This later form in –οσο-- grew continually in usage over the merely middle form like τιμήσομαι. But the passive future did not always have the passive sense, as has been shown in the case of ἀνακτήσομαι (Mt. 8:11), ἀποκριθησομαι (Mt. 25:37), etc. Ἄνοιχθησομαι also appears in Lu. 11:9 f. in some MSS. As an example of the usual forms in the N. T. take γνωσθησομαι (1 Cor. 14:7). Only μνησθησομαι (not μεμνησομαι) and σταθησομαι (not ἑστηκω) appear in the N. T.

For a periphrastic future passive expressing continuance see ἐσεσθε μισούμενοι (Mt. 10:22). This naturally is not a very common idiom for this tense, though the active periphrastic future is less infrequent as already shown.

(g) THE PERFECT TENSES (τέλειοι χρόνοι).

1. The Name. It does fairly well if we do not think of time in connection with the tense, a mistake that Clyde makes. The completed state does not of itself have reference to present time. That comes later and by usage in the indicative alone in contrast to past and future. Originally the perfect was merely an intensive or iterative tense like the repetition of the aoristic present.

2. The Original Perfect. The Greek perfect is an inheritance from the Indo-Germanic original and in its oldest form had no reduplication, but merely a vowel-change in the singular. Indeed 191:6a (Sanskrit veda, Latin vidi, English wot) has never had reduplication. It illustrates also the ablaut from iδ-- to oιδ-- in the singular, seen in Sanskrit and Gothic also. Cf. Latin capio, cepi (a to e). Note also κεῖ-μαι in the sense of τέθει-μαι.

1 Prol., p. 150.
2 Giles, Man., pp. 420, 447.
3 Ib., p. 447.
4 See VI, (e), in this chapter.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 36.
6 Ib p. 204.
But the vowel-change characteristic of the original perfects is seen in other verbs which did use reduplication. Reduplication will receive separate treatment a little later, as it pertains to the present and aorist tenses also. It may be here remarked that the reduplicated form of some iterative presents doubtless had some influence in fastening reduplication upon the perfect tense. Note the English "mur-mur" (Greek γογ-γόςω, ἀρ-ἀρίσκω), where the syllable is doubled in the repetition. It was a natural process.

A number of these reduplicated forms with the mere change in the vowel appear in the N. T. This so-called second perfect, like the second aorist, is a misnomer and is the oldest form. In Homer indeed it is the usual form of the perfect. These old root-perfects, old inherited perfect forms according to Brugmann, persist in the κοινή and are reasonably common in the papyri, the inscriptions and the N. T. They are of two classes: (1) real μι perfects without any perfect suffix, like ἔστάναι (Ac. 12:14); (2) second perfects in —α, like γέγονα, λέλοιπα. As N. T. examples may be mentioned ἀκτίκα (Ac. 6:11), γέγονα (1 Cor. 13:1)), ἐιωθα (Lu. 4:16), γέγραθα (Jo. 19:22), οίδα (Jo. 10:4), ὀλωλα (ἀπ--, Mt. 10:6), etc. These forms are found in the LXX. Cf. Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., p. 103; Thackeray, Gr., p. 252 f. But the κοινή gave up the shorter (without —α) forms of the plural indicative active perfect of ἔστημι (ἔσταμεν, ἔστατε, ἔστάσιν). See this chapter, iv, (d), 3, for details.

3. The κ Perfect. This is a new type created by the Greek language of which no adequate explanation has yet been offered. The Attic inscriptions already had the κ form (Meisterhans, p. 189 f.). It is apparently at first in the singular, as in ἔστημα (pl. ἔσταμεν), etc. One might think that just as ἠκω has a perfect sense like κείμαι and finally had a few perfect forms (like ἠκασίων), so by analogy some κ verbs became the type and analogy did the rest. But Giles observes that the stems of the twelve or fourteen κ perfects in Homer all end in a vowel, a liquid or a nasal, not one in κ. And then the

---

1 Riem. and Goelzer, Phonet., p. 445.
2 Sterrett, Hom. II., N. 43. So γέγονα, εἰωθα, λέλοιπα, πέποιθα, etc.
3 Gk. Gr., p. 323.
5 Nachm., Magn. Inschr., p. 159 f.
6 Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 412 ff.
8 Man., p. 450.
three κ aorists (ἐδωκα, ἔθηκα, ἤκα) call for explanation. But per contra there are some perfects in Homer which have κ stems like δέ-δορκα, ἔοικα, τέτηκα, etc. So that after all analogy may be the true explanation of the κ perfects which came, after Homer's time, to be the dominant type in Greek. But the —κα perfects are rare in Homer. The examples are so common (δέωκα, etc.), in the κοινή as in the classic Greek, as to need no list. Note ἔστηκα intransitive and ἔστακα transitive.

4. The Aspirated Perfects. They are made from labials and palatals (φ, χ) and are absent from Homer. Even in the early classical period they are confined to πέπομφα and τέτροφα.1 Homer did use this aspirate in the peculiar middle form like τετρα-φαται.2 He has indeed τέτροφα from τρέφω3 and probably just here, we may see the explanation by analogy of τέτροφα from τρέψω and so of all the aspirated forms.4 An important factor was the fact that κ, γ, χ were not distinguished in the middle perfect forms. As a N. T. example of this later aspirated perfect take προσευνόχα (Heb. 11:17). Cf. also εἰληφα, πέπραχα, τέταχα.

5. Middle and Passive Forms. It is only in the active that the perfect used the κ or the aspirated form (φ, χ). We have seen already that in the κοινή some active perfect forms drop the distinctive endings and we find forms like ἐῳρακαν and ἐῳρακες. Helbing (Gr. d. Sept., pp. 101-103) gives LXX examples of root-perfects like ἐρρωγα, κ perfects like τέθεικα, ἔστηκα and transitive ἔστακα, aspirated perfects like ἔρρηχα. The middle and passive perfects did use the reduplication, but the endings were added directly to this reduplicated stem as in λέ-λυ-μαί. On the history of the ending —κα see Pfordten, Zur Geschichte des griechischen Perfectums, 1882, p. 29.

6. The Decay of the Perfect Forms. In the Sanskrit the perfect appears in half the roots of the language, but in the later Sanskrit it tends more and more to be confused with the mere past tenses of the indicative (aorist and imperf.) and grows less common also.5 In the Latin, as is well known, the perfect and the aorist tenses blended. In vidi and dedi we see preserved6 the old perfect and in dixi we see the old aorist. The Greek of the Byzantine period shows a great confusion between the perfect and the aorist, partly due to the Latin influence.7 Finally

---

2 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 325.
3 Sterrett, Hom. Il., N. 43.
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 142.
in the modern Greek vernacular the perfect form is lost save in the perfect passive participle like κεκλημένος. The perfect active is now made with εὐχω and the passive participle (ἐχω δεμένο) or with ἐχω and a root similar to the third singular aorist subjunctive (ἐχω δέσει or δέσῃ). Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 161. The only κ perfect in modern Greek is εὐρηκα, "the only certain remnant of the ancient perfect" (ib., p. 148). Cf. εἰρηκε με παρητημένου (Lu. 14:18). Cf. also πεπωρωμένην ἔχετε τὴν καρδίαν ὑμῶν (Mk. 8:17). This is much like the English perfect in reality, not like the Greek εὐχω and aorist participle (like εὐχω ἀκούσας). Cf. Sonnenschein, Greek Grammar, Syntax, 1894, p. 284. The perfect passive in modern Greek vernacular is formed like εὐχω λυθη (—εῖ) or λελυμένος ἐίμαι.  

1. The Perfect in the Subjunctive, Optative, Imperative. Hence the perfect is practically confined to the indicative. No example of the perfect optative occurs even in the periphrastic form. The subjunctive perfect, except the form εἰδό (εἰδήτε, 1 Jo. 5:13), appears only in the periphrastic conjugation, of which a few examples remain. So the active, as ἔν πεποιτκός (Jas. 5:15), πεποικότες ὁμν (2 Cor. 1:9), and the passive, as ὁσιν τετελειωμένοι (Jo. 17:23), ἐκεκλημένος (Lu. 14:8), ἕν πεπληρωμένη (Jo. 16:24). So also Jo. 17:19, 1 Cor. 1:10, etc. The imperative makes a little worse showing. We still have ἔστε (Jas. 1:19; Eph. 5:5; Heb. 12:17 all possible indicatives), πεφύμωσο (Mk. 4:39) and ἔφρωσθε (Ac. 15:29). The periphrastic imperative perfect is also found as ἔστωσαν περιεξωσμέναι (Lu. 12:35). In simple truth, as previously remarked (see proof in Prof. Harry's articles), the perfect subjunctive, optative and imperative never had any considerable vogue in Greek, not as much as in Sanskrit. In Homer the perfect subjunctive active is more common than in later Greek, but it is rare in Homer.

8. The Perfect Indicative. It is to the indicative that we turn

1 Thumb., Handb., p. 165. Certainly the aorists in -κα are very common in the mod. Gk. (Thumb, Handb., pp. 140, 146 ff.).

2 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 143 f.


4 Sterrett, Hom. II., N. 43.
for the real development of the perfect. Here the perfect was for
long very frequent indeed, and the time element comes in also.
The ancients did not agree in the names for the three tenses of per-
fect action in the indicative. The Stoics¹ called the present perfect
σωτελικός (or τέλειος) χρόνος ἑνεστῶς, the past perfect σωτελικός (τέ-
λειος) χρόνος παρωχημένος, the future perfect σωτελικός (τέλειος) χρόνος
μέλλων. Sometimes the present perfect was called merely ὁ παρα-
κείμενος χρόνος, the past perfect ὁ ὑπερσωτελικός χρόνος, and the future
perfect ὁ μετ’ ὀλίγων μέλλων χρόνος (futurum exactum). The name
plu-perfect is not a good one. The tense occurs in the N. T.
with 22 verbs and 15 have the augment (H. Scott). Thus τεθεμε-
λίωτο (Mt. 7:25) and ἐληλύθει (Jo. 6:17), but ἐβέβλητο (Lu. 16:20)
and περιεδέετο (Jo. 11:44). Cf. εἶχον ἀποκειμένην (Lu. 19:20) in the
light of modern Greek. In the N. T. the past perfect is not very
frequent, nor was it ever as abundant as in the Latin.² It goes
down as a distinct form with the present perfect in modern Greek.
Hirt³ calls attention to the fact that Homer knows the past per-
fect only in the dual and the plural, not the singular, and that the
singular ending is a new formation, a contraction of --εα into
-η. In the N. T., however, only --ειν is used. It is not certain
whether the past perfect is an original Indo-Germanic form. The
future perfect was always a very rare tense with only two ac-
tive forms of any frequency, ἐστήξω and τεθυνέω. The middle and
passive could make a better showing. In Heb. 8:11 εἰδησουσίν, is
probably future active (from LXX),³ and in Lu. 19:40 some
MSS., but not ΥBL (rejected by W. H.), give κεκράξονται (cf. LXX).
In Heb. 2:13 (another quotation from the LXX) we have the
periphrastic form ἔσομαι πεποιθόως. The future perfect passive occurs
in the N. T. only in the periphrastic form in such examples as
ἔσται δεδεμένον (Mt. 16:19), ἔσται λελιμένα (Mt. 18:18), ἔστηναι
(A.D. 84). In the nature of the case the future perfect would not
often be needed. This periphrastic future perfect is found as
early as Homer.⁵ The papyri likewise show some examples.⁶

¹ K.-B1., II, p. 2 f.
² Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 201. Brug. calls the past perf. a "neue Bildung."
³ Handb. etc., p. 415 f.
⁴ So Hirt follows Wackern. in seeing a new stem here εἰδησ-. Cf. ib., p. 416.
⁵ In Deut. 8:3 has ἐδίδησαν like the aorist ἔδιδησα from Arist. onwards. Cf.
Mayser, Gr., p. 370; Thack., Gr., p. 278.
and the fut. perf. are both absent.
The present perfect and the past perfect also have the periphrastic conjugation. So we find with comparative indifference εστίν γεγραμένα (Jo. 20:30) and in the next verse γέγραται. So also ἦν γεγραμένου (Jo. 19:19) and ἐπεγέγρατο (Ac. 17:23). Cf. also Lu. 2:26. The active has some examples also, though not so many, as ἐστώς εἰμί (Ac. 25:10), and ἤσαν προεσφρακότες (Ac. 21:29).

9. Σ in Perfect Middle and Passive and Aorist Passive. It may be due to a variety of causes. Some of these verbs had an original σ in the present stem, like τελέσω, ἀκοῦ(σ)ω. Hence τετέλεσμαι, ἢκουσμαι (ἡκοῦσθην) etc. Others are dental stems like πειθ-ω, πέπεισμαι. Others again are ν stems which in Attic (apparently analogical) changed to σ, as φαίνω, πέφασμαι, but in the N. T. this ν assimilates to the μ as in ἐξηγαμένος (Mk. 11:20) from ἔξηγαίνω, μεμιαμένος (Tit. 1:15) from μιαίνω. Then again some verbs take the σ by analogy merely, as in the case of ἐγνωσμαι, ἐγνώσθην (1 Cor. 13:12), κέκλεισμαι (Lu. 11:7), λέλουσμαι (Heb. 10:22).

(h) REDUPLICATION (διπλασιασμός or ἀναδιπλωσις).

1. Primitive. Now this primitive repetition of the root belongs to many languages and has a much wider range than merely the perfect tense. Hence it calls for separate treatment. It is older, this repetition or intensifying of a word, than either the inflection of nouns or the conjugation of verbs. Root reduplication existed in the parent language.

2. Both Nouns and Verbs. Among nouns note ἀγ-ωγός, βάρ-βαρος, βέ-βηλος, etc. But it was among verbs that reduplication found its chief development.

3. In Three Tenses in Verbs. It is in the aorist, the present and the perfect. This is precisely the case with the Sanskrit, where very many aorists, some presents and nearly all perfects have reduplication. In Homer the reduplication of the second

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 202 f.; Brug. (Griech. Gr., p. 330 f.) points out how in prehistoric times the periphrastic form alone existed in the subj. and opt. middle and passive, as indeed was practically true always for all the voices.
5 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 176. Fritzscbe (Ques. de redupl. graeca; Curtius, Stud. zu griech. and lat. Gr., pp. 279 ff.) considers the doubling of the syllable (iteration) the origin of all reduplication like ἄρ-αρ-ίσκω, βτ-βτ-ξω.
6 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 222.
7 Sterrett, Hom. II., N. 32.
aorist is much more frequent than in later Greek, but forms like ἤγαγον, ἤνεγκον, ἐπον, persist in N. T. Greek and the koinê generally. Cf. ἐκέκραξα in Ac. 24:21. The Greek present shows reduplication in three classes of presents, viz. the root class (like δι-δωμι, ἵ-η-μι, ἱ-στημι, etc.), the thematic presents (like γι-γνω-μαι, πι-πτω, etc.), inceptive verbs (like γι-γνω-σκω, etc.). The most common reduplication in Greek is, of course, that in the perfect tense, where it is not like augment, mode-sign or personal endings. It is an integral part of the tense in all modes, voices and persons, until we see its disappearance (p. 365) in the later Greek. In the vernacular the extinction is nearly complete.¹

Even presents² like γνωσκω occur in modern Greek. Dieterich³ gives numerous examples of dropped reduplication in inscriptions and papyri. It is absent in the modern Greek vernacular, even in the participle.⁴

4. Three Methods in Reduplication. Perhaps the oldest is the doubling of the whole syllable, chiefly in presents and aorists, like γογ-γοζω, ἄρ-αρίσκω, ἦγ-αγ-ουν, etc. This is the oldest form of reduplication⁵ and is more common in Greek than in Latin.⁶ The later grammarians called it Attic reduplication because it was less common in their day,⁷ though, as a matter of fact, Homer used it much more than did the Attic writers.⁸ But perfects have this form also, as ἄκ-ήκοα, ἐλ-ήλωθα, etc. But the reduplication by 1 is confined to presents like δι-δωμι, γι-γνομαι, γι-γνωσκω, etc. And most perfects form the reduplication with ε and the repetition of the first letter of the verb as λέ-κυκα. But Homer had πέπιθον and other such aorists. Ἐπον is really an example of such an aorist.

5. Reduplication in the Perfect. The history is probably as follows in the main. Originally there were some perfects without reduplication,⁹ a remnant of which we see in οἶδα. The doubling of the whole syllable was the next step like ἄκ-ήκοα, ἐ-γρη-γορ-α, ἐλ-ήλωθα, ἀπόλωλα, etc., like the present and aorist usage.¹⁰ Then comes the ε with repetition of the initial letter of a consonant-

¹ See Jann., Hist. Gr., p. 190 f., for exx. like έτακτο even in Polyb., and later γαμμένος, etc.
⁵ Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 369. ⁸ Sterrett, Hom. II., N. 32.
¹⁰ Ib., Helbing, Gr. d. Sept., pp. 70-82, treats together augment and reduplication, not a very satisfactory method.
stem like \(\lambda\varepsilon\-\lambda\omicron\iota\omicron\alpha\). But here some further modifications crept in. The aspirates did not repeat, but we have \(\tau\-\theta\eeta\iota\kappa\alpha\). Those with a did not repeat it, but instead used the rough breathing as \(\varepsilon\sigma\tau\eta\kappa\alpha\) or the smooth like \(\varepsilon\-\sigma\chi\eta\kappa\alpha\). This was all for euphony. But forms like \(\varepsilon\-\sigma\chi\eta\kappa\alpha, \varepsilon\-\sigma\pi\alpha\sigma\mu\alpha\) fall under another line also, for, if the verb begins with a double consonant, the consonant need not be used. So \(\varepsilon\-\gamma\nu\omega\kappa\alpha\), but \(\beta\-\beta\lambda\eta\kappa\alpha, \gamma\-\gamma\rho\alpha\phi\alpha\). The Cretan dialect has indeed \(\varepsilon\rho\rho\alpha\tau\tau\alpha\tau\gamma\alpha\varepsilon \gamma\rho\alpha\rho\alpha\tau\tau\alpha\).\(^1\) So far the N. T. phenomena are in harmony with the general Greek history, as indeed is the case with the papyri\(^2\) and the inscriptions.\(^3\) In Lu. 1:27 and 2:5, we have \(\varepsilon\-\mu\nu\eta\sigma\tau\epsilon\tau\epsilon\mu\epsilon\eta\nu\), not \(\mu\epsilon\eta\nu\). (cf. \(\mu\epsilon\mu\nu\eta\mu\eta\mu\iota\)). Just as \(\sigma\) verbs did not repeat, so with \(\rho\) verbs sometimes. So \(\varepsilon\rho\iota\mu\iota\iota\iota\nu\iota\iota\) (Mt. 9:36), \(\varepsilon\rho\rho\omega\\sigma\theta\eeta\) (Ac. 15:29), etc. But in Rev. 19:13 W. H. read \(\beta\rho\rho\alpha\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\iota\), though Hort\(^4\) advocates \(\beta\rho\alpha\mu\mu\iota\iota\nu\). D has \(\beta\rho\iota\mu\iota\iota\nu\iota\iota\) in Mt. 9:36 above. 

This reduplication of initial \(\rho\) is contrary to Attic rule. For the LXX see Thackeray, Gr., p. 204 f. This use of \(\varepsilon\) begins to spread in the \(\kappa\omega\nu\iota\eta\) and is seen in LXX MSS., as in A \(\varepsilon\pi\epsilon\gamma\rho\alpha\pi\tau\iota\o\) (Deut. 9:10). For similar forms in Ionic and late writers see Winer-Schmiede1.\(^5\) Once more several verbs that begin with a liquid have \(\varepsilon\iota\) as the reduplication in the Attic and Ionic, though not in all dialects. Perhaps euphony and analogy entered to some extent in the case of \(\varepsilon\iota\-\lambda\eta\phi\alpha\) (\(\lambda\alpha\mu\beta\alpha\iota\omega\)), \(\varepsilon\rho\kappa\alpha\) (cf. \(\varepsilon\rho\rho\theta\eta\theta\eta\)). Note also \(\varepsilon\iota\lambda\eta\chi\alpha\) and \(\varepsilon\iota\lo\chi\alpha\). With verbs beginning with a vowel there was sometimes the doubling of the syllable as \(\alpha\kappa\kappa\kappa\alpha\), or the mere lengthening of the vowel as \(\eta\kappa\omega\sigma\mu\alpha\), or the addition of \(\varepsilon\) alone with contraction as \(\varepsilon\iota\theta\sigma\mu\iota\iota\nu\iota\iota\), or uncontracted as \(\varepsilon\iota\kappa\iota\kappa\iota\iota\) (from \(\varepsilon\iota\kappa\omega\)). Cf. \(\varepsilon\iota\omega\theta\alpha\). In Jo. 3:21 (so 1 Pet. 4:3) we have \(\varepsilon\iota\rho\alpha\sigma\mu\iota\iota\iota\iota\) as in Attic and \(\varepsilon\iota\kappa\omega\mu\iota\iota\nu\iota\iota\iota\) in Lu. 16:20. In \(\omicron\rho\alpha\sigma\omega\) we have \(\varepsilon\omega\kappa\alpha\) in Paul's Epistles (1 Cor. 9:1) and sometimes a sort of double reduplication (like \(\varepsilon\iota\omega\theta\alpha\)) as \(\varepsilon\omega\kappa\alpha\) (Jo. 1:18). So Attic. See Additional Note. In Col. 2:1 the form \(\varepsilon\omega\kappa\alpha\) calls for notice both for its reduplication and its ending (cf. \(\varepsilon\omega\kappa\alpha\) Lu. 9:36).

So also \(\alpha\nu\varepsilon\omega\gamma\iota\varepsilon\nu\) (1 Cor. 16:9; \(\kappa\) \(\eta\nu\varepsilon\omega\gamma\iota\varepsilon\nu\), Jo. 1:51) and \(\alpha\nu\varepsilon\omega\gamma\iota\varepsilon\nu\iota\iota\) (2 Cor. 2:12). Indeed in this last verb the preposition may re-additional reduplication (treble therefore), as in \(\eta\nu\varepsilon\omega\gamma\iota\varepsilon\nu\) (Rev. five times). See also \(\eta\mu\phi\iota\iota\sigma\mu\iota\iota\nu\) (Mt. 11:8 = Lu. 7:25) from \(\alpha\mu\phi\iota\iota\nu\). But as a rule with compound verbs in the N. T. re-

\(^1\) Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 408.
\(^2\) Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 338
\(^3\) Nachm., p. 150 f.; Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 171.
\(^4\) Notes on Orth., p. 170.
duplication comes only between the prepositions and the verb. Sometimes the reduplication is not used, as in εὐθυραστσικέναι (Heb., 11:5), but ἴν DEP have εὐνρο-. We have ψικόκομιτο (Lu. 4:29), but ὀικοδομήσωσι (Lu. 6:48).\(^1\) Cf. ὀικοδομήθη (Jo. 2:20) for absence of augment. Reduplication in the perfect has disappeared from the modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 119) and is showing signs of decay in the κοινή. For suppression of reduplication in papyri see Maysor, p. 341.

(i) AUGMENT (αὐξησίς).

1. *The Origin of Augment.* It has never been explained. It is generally conceded to be an independent word, an adverb, added to the verb, which is an enclitic after the augment like ξ-λιπε.\(^2\) We have mere conjectures for the origin of the adverb, possibly a locative of the pronoun-stem. In Sanskrit it is a.

2. *Where Found.* It is found in Sanskrit, Iranian, Armenian and Greek, and only in the past tenses of the indicative. But in Mt. 12:20 we actually have κατεάξει (fut. ind. of κατάγυμι, and in Jo. 19:31 κατεαρωσίν) (aor. pass. subj.), probably to distinguish these forms from κατάγω). So Winer-Schmiedel, p. 98. This "false augment" is very common in later Greek (Hatzidakis, *Einl.*, p. 64). Augment persists in modern Greek (Thumb, p. 117).

3. *The Purpose of Augment.* It denotes past time. The secondary endings do that also and with sufficient clearness at first. More than half of the past tenses of the Sanskrit do not have the augment.\(^3\) In Homer some verbs like ὁράω never had augment, and often for metrical reasons the augment is not found in Homer. He used much freedom in the matter.\(^4\) Jannaris\(^5\) is probably right in the opinion that this freedom is due to the original fulness of the verb-endings. Augment won a firm foothold in prose before it did in poetry,\(^6\) but never was everywhere essential. It varied greatly in its history as will be shown.

4. *The Syllabic Augment* (αὐξησίς συλλαβική). Its use with the past tenses of the indicative was not exactly uniform, being less constant with the past perfect than with the aorist and imperfect. The syllabic augment occurs also with some initial vowel verbs due to original digamma Φ, Σ in the anlaut. So ἔνασεν (Ac. 28:4),

---

\(^1\) Moulton (Cl. Rev., Feb., 1901, p. 36) cites ἀπαίτησθαι, ἐτοιμάκαμεν from the pap.

\(^2\) Brug., Comp. Gr. (transl.), IV, p. 25. Jann. (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 185) thinks it is an archaic form of the imperf. of ιμί (ε, ευ).

\(^3\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 221.

\(^4\) Sterrett, Hom. Il., N. 30 f.

\(^5\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 185.

\(^6\) Brug., Comp. Gr. (transl.), IV, p. 32.
eiδομεν (Mt. 2:2), eiπεν (Mt. 2:8), eiλατο (2 Th. 2:13), etc.

Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 200 f. In the N. T. it is absent from the past perfect more frequently than it is present, as is true of the papyri and late Greek generally. So, for instance, τεθεμελίωτο (Mt. 7:25), πεποιήκεσαν (Mk. 15:7), παραδεδώκεσαν (Mk. 15:10), ἐλπιδόθεν (Jo. 6:17), etc. On the other hand the augment does appear in such examples as ἐπεποίθεν (Lu. 11:22), ἐβέβλητο (Lu. 16:20), ἐγεγόνεσθα (Jo. 6:17), συνετέθεμεν (Jo. 9:22), περιεδέβησε (Jo. 11:44), etc. It was only in the past perfect that both augment and reduplication appeared. The κοινή strove to destroy the distinction between reduplication and augment so that ultimately reduplication vanished (Thumb, Hellenismus, p. 170). But first the augment vanished in the past perfect. The Attic sometimes had ἐστήκειν (Winer-Schmiedel, p. 100). Hort (Notes on Orthography, p. 162) contends for Ἰστήκειν uniformly in the N. T. as more than mere itacism for εἰστήκειν, for even B has it five times in spite of its fondness for ei. So W. H. uniformly, as Rev. 7:11 and even in Jo. 1:35 and Lu. 23:49. Cf. similar itacism between εἰδον and ἔδον in the MSS. (Hort, Notes on Orthography, p. 162).

On augment in the LXX see Conybeare and Stock, Sel. from LXX, pp. 36 ff.; Swete, Intr. to 0. T., p. 305; Thackeray, Gr., pp. 195 ff. Syllabic augment was much more tenacious with the aorist and imperfect than the temporal.

5. The Temporal Augment (αὐξησίς χρονικῆ). The simplicity of the syllabic and the resulting confusion of the temporal had undoubtedly something to do with the non-use of the temporal augment in many cases. The κοινή shows this tendency. Even the Attic was not uniform in the use of the temporal augment. At bottom there is no real distinction between the temporal and syllabic augment. Both express time and both make use of the syllabic ε. The difference is more one of the eye and ear than of fact. What we call the temporal augment is the result of the contraction of this ε with the initial vowel of the verb. As remarked above, this very confusion of result, difficult to keep clear as the vowel-sounds tended to blend more and more, led to the disuse of this ε and contraction with initial vowel verbs, especially with diphthongs. Hence in the N. T. we meet such examples as the

---

1 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 333.
2 W.-Sch., p. 99.
3 See good discussion in Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 186.
6 Ib., p. 186. Hence in mod. Gk. temporal augment is nearly gone. Already in the LXX the movement toward the loss of the temporal augment is
following: of αι, ἔπαισχόνθη (2 Tim. 1:16); of ευ, εὐλόγησεν (Mt. 14:19), εὐδόκησα (Mt. 17:5), εὐνούχισαν (Mt. 19:12), εὐκαίρουν (Mk. 6:31), εὐφραίνοντο (Ac. 7:41), εὐπορεῖτο (Ac. 11:29), εὐθυ-δρομήσαμεν, (Ac. 16:11), εὐχαρίστησεν (Ac. 27:35). But on the other hand we have ηὐρίσκον (Mk. 14:55), προσηνέαντο (Ac. 8:15), ηὐχόμην (Ro. 9:3), ηὐδόκησαν (Ro. 15:26); of οἱ, οἰκοδομήθη (Jo. 2:20), etc., but φιλόδομησεν (Lu. 7:5), etc.; of εἰ, ἕξαμεν (Gal. 2:5) just like Attic; of ε, διειρμήσεσ (Lu. 24:27), διειρέτο (Jo. 6:18), ἀνέθη (Ac. 16:26), ἀφέθησαν (Ro. 4:7, Ps. 32:1); of οἱ, προ-ορώμην (Ac. 2:25; Ps. 16:8), and some MSS. in Lu. 13:13 (ἀνωθώθη) and Ro. 9:29 (ὀμοιώθημεν); of ι, ἵσχυσεν (Lu. 8:43), ἰκάνωσεν, (2 Cor. 3:6) and ἰάτο (Lu. 9:11); of ω, ὁνέμαι has no augment, ὠνήσατο (Ac. 7:16), and the same, thing is true of ὁθέω, as ἀπώ-σατο (Ac. 7:27), ἔξωσεν (Ac. 7:45). Ἐργάζομαι has η, not ει, as its augment according to W. H. So ήργάζοντο (Ac. 18:3), but always εἴχουν.

6. Compound Verbs (παρασύνθετα). The language varied in the way it regarded compound verbs, though usually a verb derived from a compound is treated as a unit. So ἐθηριομάχησα, ἐλθο-βόλησαν, ἐμοσχοποίησαν (Ac. 7:41), ἐναυάγγησα, ἐπροφήτευσεν (Mk. 7:6), ἐπαρρησίασατο (Ac. 9:27), ἐσυκοφάντησα, but εὐγγελίσατο (Ac. 8:35) in late Greek and προευγγελίσατο (Gal. 3:8). If the compound embraces a preposition, the augment as in Attic usually follows the preposition like ἀπήντησαν (Lu. 17:12). Some verbs derived from nouns already compounded are augmented like verbs compounded with a preposition, as διηκόνει (Mt. 8 : 15) unlike Attic. As further examples note ἀπεθήμησαν (Mt. 21:33), ἐπεθύμησαν (Mt. 13:17), κατηγρόουν (Mk. 15:3), ἐπεξείρησαν (Lu. 1:1), ἀπε-λογεῖτο (Ac. 26:1), συνήργητο (Jas. 2:22). Cf. Winer-Schmiedel, p. 102. But in Mt. 7:22 and 11:13 the Syrian class of MSS. have προεφήτευσαμεν and -σαν. Sometimes the preposition itself is treated as a part of the verb when put directly to the verb, as ἔφιεν (Mk. 1:34), ἔφοιτεν (Rev. 6:1), διήνοιγεν (Lu. 24:32), ἐκά-θευσον (Mt. 25:5), ἐκάθητο (Mt. 13:1), ἐκάθισεν (Jo. 19:13), ἐκα-θεζετο (Jo. 4:6). In Mt. 13:15 ἐκάμμισαν (from Is. 6:10) is assimilation of καταμώ. Verbs beginning with εὐ-- vary in augmented tenses between εὐ-- and ηὐ--, but when followed by a vowel, the verb is treated as a compound like εὐγγελίσατο above.

7. Double Augment. It is fairly common in the N. T. In the

seen (Thack., Gr., pp. 196, 199 f.). The pap. often have –ειρέθην for --ηρέθην (Mayser, pp. 127, 335).

1 See W.-Sch., p. 100 f. Cf. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 162 f.
case of Ἰγαγον and ἔπον the augment is added to the aoristic reduplication. But in ἐώρω (Jo. 6:2 in Tischendorf's text, W. H. ἔθεώρων) there is a clear case of double augment like the double reduplication in ἐώρακα. So also the N. T. regularly ἴδουν ἡθν (Mt. 17:16) and even ἴδου ἀσθή τη (Mk. 7:24). Both ἴδου ἀτο (Mk. 6:5) and ἴδου ἀτο (Mk. 14:5) appear and the MSS. vary much. This η (analogy to ἤθελον) first arises in the Attic in 300 B.C. With μέλλω, ἠμέλλον is the usual form (Jo. 4:47), though ἠμέλλον occurs also (Jo. 7:39). θελομαι in the N. T. never has η, though the Text. Rec. has it in 2 Jo. 12. On the other hand θέλω always has η (Gal. 4:20, ἤθελον) even after the initial ε was dropped. Ἀποκαθιστημι has always a double augment, one with each preposition. So ἀπεκατέστη (Mk. 8:25) and ἀπεκατεστάθη (Mk. 3:5). So LXX and later Greek. But in Heb. 12:4 ἀντικατέστηκε is the true text. Ἀνοίγω has a peculiar history. It now has single augment on the preposition, as ἤνοιξεν (Rev. 6:3), now double augment of the verb, as ἀνέκεσα (Jo. 9:14), now a triple augment on verb and preposition, as ἄνευχθσε (Mt. 9:30). Ἀνεχωμαι, on the other hand, has only one augment, as ἀνεσχομαι (Ac. 18:14) and ἀνεικήσθε (2 Cor. 11:1). For double augment in the LXX see Thackeray, Gr., pp. 202 ff.

VIII. The Infinitive (ἡ ἀπαρέμφατος ἐγκλιστις). The most striking development of the infinitive in the koinη belongs to syntax, and not accidence. Hence a brief discussion will here suffice. Blass, for instance, in his Grammar of N. T. Greek, has no discussion of the infinitive under "Accidence," nor has Moulton in his Prolegomena. But the infinitive has a very interesting history on its morphological side.

1. No Terminology at First. Originally it was a mere noun of action (nomen actionis). Not all nouns of action developed into infinitives. Brugmann quotes from Plato τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ δόσιν ὑμῖν where a noun of action (δόσις) is used with the dative. This is, of course, not an infinitive. The older Sanskrit shows quite a variety of nouns of action used in a "quasi-infinitive sense," governing cases like the verb, but having no tense nor voice.

2. Fixed Case-Forms. The first stage in the development was reached when these nouns of action were regarded as fixed ease-
forms. That stage was obtained in the Sanskrit. At first the dative was the most common case so used along with the accusative, genitive, ablative and sometimes the locative. In the later Sanskrit the accusative supplanted the rest (itum or itum). Cf. the Latin supine. But the Sanskrit infinitive, while governing cases, never developed tense nor voice, and so remained essentially a substantive.

3. With Voice and Tense. But the second stage appears in the Greek and Latin where it had its most characteristic development. The infinitive becomes a real verbal substantive. Here voice and tense are firmly established. But while, by analogy, the Greek infinitive comes to be formed on the various tense and voice stems, that is an after-thought and not an inherent part of the infinitive. There was originally no voice, so that it is even a debatable question if τιμή-σαι, for instance, and haberē are not formed exactly alike. The active and the passive ideas are both capable of development from δυνάτος θαυμάσαι, ‘capable for wondering.’ The passive infinitive had only sporadic development in single languages. The middle is explained in the same way as active and passive. The tense-development is more complete in Greek than in Latin, the future infinitive being peculiar to Greek. The Latin missed also the distinctive aorist infinitive. But here also analogy has played a large part and we are not to think of λῦ-σαι, for instance, as having at bottom more kinship with ἔλυσα than with λύσις. Indeed the perfect and future infinitives are both very rare in the N. T. as in the κοινή generally. This weakening of the future infinitive is general in the κοινή, even with μέλλω as well as in indirect discourse. In Jo. 21:25 late MSS. have χωρῆ-σαι instead of χωρήσειν. Indeed the papyri in the later κοινή show a hybrid infinitive form, a sort of mixture of aorist and

---

3 Hirt, Handb. etc., p. 433.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 203.
5 Hirt, Handb., p. 431.
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 204.
7 Votaw, Use of the Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 59.
8 Moulton, Prol., p. 204.
future like ἑπελευσθα (even in early papyri). In the LXX we find τεύξασθαι (2 Macc. 15:7) and ἐκφευξασθα in 2 Macc. 9:22. In other cases the two are used side by side. It is only in the state of the action that the infinitive has any true tense-action developed save in indirect discourse where the infinitive tense represents the time of the direct discourse. The infinitive thus is like a verb in that it expresses action, governs cases, has voice and tense.2

4. No Personal Endings. The infinitive never developed personal endings and remained undefined, unlimited. The infinitive and the participle are thus both infinitives in this sense, that they are the unlimited verb so far as personal endings are concerned. They are both participles in that they participate in both noun and verb. The terms have no inherent distinction, but serve merely as a convenience.3 In the nature of the case neither can have a subject in any literal sense. But it is to be admitted even here that the line between the finite and the infinite verb is not absolute.4 Cf. the forms φέρε and φέρειν, for instance. But the cases used with the infinitive will be discussed in Syntax.

5. Dative and Locative in Form. The infinitive continued a substantive after the voice and tense-development. At first the case-idea of the form was observed, but gradually that disappeared, though the form remained. The Greek infinitives are always either datives or locatives, "dead datives or locatives" usually.5 All infinitives in —αι are datives. Thus all those in —ναι, —σαι, —έναι, —μεναι (Homer), —θαι, (—θαι). Those in --σθαι alone give any trouble. It is probably a compound (σ, θαι), but its precise origin is not clear.6 The locative is seen in —ειν, and Homeric —ειν, but the origin of —ειν is again doubtful.7 But no distinction remains between the two cases in actual usage.8 In Homer9 the dative sense as well as form remain extremely common, as indeed is true of all Greek where the infinitive remains. The very common infinitive of purpose, like ἔλθον αγοράσαι, is a true dative. (Cf. Mt. 2:2.) But the very essence of the infinitive as a complete development is that this dative or locative form could be

---

3 K.-B1., II, p. 4.
4 Brug., Comp. Gr. (transl.), p.7.
5 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 90.
7 Hirt, Handb., p. 432; Giles, Man., p. 470.
used in any case like any other substantive without inflection, an indeclinable substantive in a fixed case-form.

6. The Presence of the Article. After Homer's day it was common and chiefly in the Attic, but this is a matter to be treated further in Syntax. The point to observe here is that the article did not make a substantive of the infinitive. It was that before voice and tense were used with it. But it is true that even in Homer the verbal aspect is more prominent than the substantival. In the vernacular the article was never much used with the infinitive; perhaps for convenience it was not so employed.

7. The Disappearance of the Infinitive. The old forms in —εἰν and —ναί remain longest (Thackey, Gr., pp. 210, 257). The causes for the, disappearance of the infinitive in later Greek till in the modern Greek vernacular it is (outside of the Pontic dialect) dead and gone, lie largely in the region of syntax. The infinitive as a whole disappears before ὅτι and ἐνα (modern Greek νά). Farrar calls attention to the absence of the infinitive in Arabic. It was always a matter of discretion with a Greek writer whether in certain clauses he would use the infinitive or an object-clause (ὅτι, ὅπως, ἔνα). Cf. Latin. The English infinitive has an interesting history also as the mutilated form of the dative of a gerund.

8. Some N. T. Forms. Not many N. T. forms call for special remark and those have been explained already, such as —οὖν (Mt. 13:32; Heb. 7:5), πείν and even πῦ for πειν (Jo. 4:9). In Lu. 1:79 ἐπιφάναι instead of the Attic ἐπιφηναί is noticeable. In Ph. 4:12 we have πεινάν, not —ν. The Coptic has the infinitive pa-stiggoi (cf. W. H. kataskhoi, Mt. 13:32 = Mk. 4:32, and ἀποδεκατο in Heb. 7:5). In 1 Cor. 11:6 we find both κείραςθαι and ξυράςθαι. In Mk. 14:71 ὁμοία is the regular —μι form. In Heb. 11:5 εὐραστήκεναι is without reduplication in AKL. In Lu. 9:18 (11:1) a periphrastic infinitive appears, ἐν τῷ εἶναι αὐτῶν προ-σευχόμενον. The augment occurs with ἄνευχθήναι. In Lu. 3:21. Cf. ἔσομα διδόναι in Tob. 5:15 B.

IX. The Participle (n metoxn).
1. The Name. This does not really distinguish this verbal adjective from the verbal substantive, the infinitive. Both are par-

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 213 f.
2 Gk. Synt., p. 164.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 221. Thumb (Handb. of Mod. Gk.) has no discussion of the infinitive.
ticiples and both are infinitives. Voss\(^1\) calls the participles "mules" because they partake of both noun and verb, but the infinitives are hybrid in exactly the same sense. Like the infinitive, the Greek participle has voice, tense, and governs cases, and may use the article. Unlike the infinitive the participle has regular inflection like other adjectives. Clyde\(^2\) would include participles in the infinitive. So Kuhner-Blass.\(^3\) Dionysius Thrax\(^4\) puts the participle right: \(\text{Μετοχὴ ἔστι λέξις μετέχουσα τῆς τῶν ῥημάτων καὶ τῆς τῶν ὄνομάτων ἰδιότητος}\).

2. **Verbal Adjectives.** As a matter of fact no absolutely clear line can be drawn between verbal adjectives and other adjectives.\(^5\) An adjective may not only be used with a case like \(κεφῶ\) with the ablative, but may even take on a verbal nature in certain connections.\(^6\) Some, like \(κλεφτό\), were always purely adverbal.\(^7\) Most of the forms in \(-τος\) in Greek are adjectival, but many of them have a verbal idea developed also, either that of completion, as \(ἀγαπητὸ\) (‘beloved,’ Mt. 3:17) or of possibility or capability, as \(παθητὸ\) (‘liable to suffering,’ Ac. 26:23). In Greek these verbals in \(-τος\) never became a part of the verb as in Latin perfect passive participle.\(^8\) Moulton\(^9\) shows how \(amatus\) and "he is loved" represent different tenses, but \(scriptum\) and "it is written" agree. But there was no reason why the \(-τος\) should not have had a further verbal development in Greek. For the structure of this verbal adjective see the chapter on Formation of Words, where a list of the chief examples is given. Moulton\(^10\) points out the wavering between the active and passive idea when the true verbal exists in the N. T., by the example of \(ἀδύνατο\), in Ro. 8:3. Is it ‘incapable’ as in Ro. 15:1 or ‘impossible’ as is usual? Blass\(^11\) indeed denies the verbal character of the \(-τος\) form in the N. T. to any examples except \(παθητὸ\) (Ac. 26:23). But this is too extreme, as Moulton\(^12\) clearly proves. \(Ἀσύνετο\) is active in Ro. 1:31 while \(ἀσὺνθετο\) is middle (\(συντίθεμαι\)). With the forms in \(-τος\) therefore two points have to be watched: first, if they are verbal at all, and then, if they are active, middle or passive. There is no doubt as to the verbal character of the form in \(-τέο\), which expresses the idea of necessity. This is in fact a ge-

\(^1\) Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 169.  
\(^2\) Gk. Synt., p. 94.  
\(^3\) II, p. 4.  
\(^4\) § 19.  
\(^5\) Brug., Comp. Gr., IV, p. 605.  
\(^6\) Ib., II, p. 456,  
\(^7\) Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 474.  
\(^8\) Ib.  
\(^9\) Prol., 221.  
\(^10\) Ib.  
\(^11\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 37.  
\(^12\) Prol., p. 222.
rundive and is closely allied to the –τος form. It has both a personal construction and the impersonal, and governs cases like the verb. It is not in Homer (though —τος is common), and the first example in Greek is in Hesiod. The N. T. shows only one example, βληθεύων (Lu. 5:38), impersonal and governing the accusative. It appears in a few MSS. in the parallel passage in Mk. 2:22. One further remark is to be made about the verbals, which is that some participles lose their verbal force and drop back to the purely adjectival function. So ἐκών, μέλλων in the sense of ‘future.’ Cf. eloquens and sapiens in Latin. In general, just as the infinitive and the gerind were surrounded by many other verbal substantives, so the participle and the gerundive come out of many other verbal adjectives. In the Sanskrit, as one would expect, the division-line between the participle and ordinary adjectives is less sharply drawn.

3. True Participles. These have tense and also voice. Brugmann indeed shows that the Greek participle endings go back to the proethnic participle. Already in the Sanskrit the present, perfect and future tenses (and in the Veda the aorist) have participles in two voices (active and middle), thus showing an earlier development than the infinitive. The endings of the Greek participles are practically the same as those of the Sanskrit. The Latin, unlike the Sanskrit and the Greek, had no aorist and no perfect active participle, and the future participle like acturus may have come from the infinitive. The Greek has, however, two endings for the active, —ντ for all tenses save the perfect, just like the Sanskrit. The perfect ending (wes, –wos, –us, Greek —ος, —οτ, –ω) is difficult of explanation, but is likewise parallel with the Sanskrit. The perfect participle is more common in Homer than any other form of the perfect (Sterrett, Homer's Iliad, N. 44). The middle ending —μενο is uniform and is like the Sanskrit. The Greek aorist passive participle ending (–οντ) is peculiar to the Greek and is made by analogy from the old active form like φαν-έντ-ς (φαν-είς),

1 Brug., Comp. Gr., IV, p. 605. 2 Sterrett, Hom. II., N. 28.
3 Hirt, Handb., p. 438. Moulton (Cl. Rev., Mar., 1904, p. 112) finds one ex. of —τός in the pap. and "the —τος participle is common in neg. forms." Note that he calls it a participle.
5 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 347.
8 Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 474.
9 Hirt, Handb., p. 436 f.
374 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

like Latin, *manens*. The participles survive in modern Greek, though the active, like the third declension, takes on the form *γράφουσα* (*γράφων*).

The modern Greek uses chiefly the present active, the past passive participle (Dieterich, *Unters.*, p. 206), and some middle or passive participles in *-ομένος* or *-έμενος* (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 167). The use of the aorist and perfect active participles gave Greek a great superiority over the Latin, which had such a usage only in deponent verbs like *sequor*, *secutus*. But Greek used the other participles far more than the Latin. English alone is a rival for the Greek in the use of the participle. One of the grammarians calls the Greeks *φιλομένοι* because they were a participle-loving people. The use of the tenses of the participle belongs to syntax. One may merely remark here that the future participle is very rare in the N. T. as in the papyri and *κοινή* generally (cf. Infinitive). The LXX has it seldom (Thackeray, *Gr.*, p. 194). It is found chiefly in Luke in the N. T., as Lu. 22:49; Ac. 8:27; 10:22; 22:5; 24:11, 17. The N. T. itself presents no special peculiarities as to the forms of the participle. In Rev. 19:13 *ἐραμένον* has been cited under the question of reduplication. *Εστώ* is more frequent than *ἐστικώς*. Other perfects like *ἀπολλών* call for no comment.

4. *In Periphrastic Use*. The participle is common in the N. T. in the periphrastic tenses. These have been given in detail under the various tenses, but a summary at this point is desirable. This use of the participle with various forms of the verb "to be" is so common in all languages, ancient and modern, as hardly to require justification. Modern English uses it largely in its verb-inflection, as does modern Greek. The use of the participle as the predicate is found all through the Indo-Germanic languages. It is very frequent in the Sanskrit, especially in the later language. Its oldest usage seems to be in the perfect tense, which exists as far back as we can go. In the N. T. the perfect optative does

---

5 Brug., *Comp. Gr.*, IV, p. 444.
7 Brug., *Comp. Gr.*, IV, p. 446.
not appear, though once a good chance for the periphrastic perfect optative arises as in Ac. 21:33, ἐπενθάνετο τίς ἔίθα καὶ τί ἔστιν πεποιηκὼς. The perfect subj. save εἰδὼ is seen in the N. T. only in the periphrastic form both in the active, as ἤ πεποιηκώς (Jas. 5:15), and the passive, as ἤ πεπληρωμένη (Jo. 16:24).\(^1\) So 2 Cor. 9:3. The periphrastic perfect imperative is illustrated by ἔστωσαν περιηγωσάμεναι (Lu. 12:35). No example of the periphrastic perfect infinitive appears in the N. T., so far as I have noticed, except κατεσταλμένους ὑπάρχειν (Ac. 19:36). A periphrastic perfect participle also is observed in ὄντας ἀπηλλοτριωμένους (Col. 1:21).

Colloquial Attic has it (Arist. Ran. 721) and the inscriptions (Syll. 928\(^{52}\) ii/B.C.) ἀποκεκριμένης σύστης (Moulton, Prol., p. 227). In the indicative the periphrastic form is the common one for the future perfect, both active, as ἔσομαι πεποιθῶς (Heb. 2:13), and passive, as ἔσται λελυμένα (Mt. 18:18). Cf. Lu. 12:52. Moulton (Prol., p. 227) finds three papyri with aorist participles in future perfect sense. With γίνομαι note γεγόνατε ἔχοντες (Heb. 5:12). Cf. Rev. 16:10, ἔγένετο ἐσκοτισμένη. Cf. 2 Cor. 6:14; Col. 1:18; Rev. 3:2. The past perfect is very common in the passive, as ἦν γεγραμμένον (Jo. 19:19), but less frequent in the active, as ἦσαν προσεωρικότες (Ac. 21:29). In Ac. 8:16 we not only have ἦν ἐπι-πεπτωκώς, but even βεβαπτισμένοι ὑπάρχον (cf. also 19:36). Cf. also ἦν κείμενος as equal to ἦν τεθειμένος (Lu. 23:53); ἦν ἐστῶς (Lu. 5:1); ἔχουν ἀποκεκλιμένη (Lu. 19:20), like ἔχε παρηγιμένον (Lu. 14:18), since κείμαι is perfect in sense. The present perfect is more common in the periphrastic form than in the active, as ἔστως εἰμί (Ac. 25:10), and especially in the passive, as γεγραμμένον ἔστιν (Jo. 6:31).

The periphrastic aorist appears only in ἦν βληθείς (Lu. 23:19) and only in the indicative.\(^2\) But note ἔγένετο στιλβοῦτα (Mk. 9:3).

The periphrastic future indicative is found several times in the active, as ἔσονται πιττοῦτες (Mk. 13:25), and the passive, as ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι (Lu. 21:17).

The present tense is written periphrastically in the imperative, as ἔσοθε εὑροῦν (Mt. 5:25; cf. Lu. 19:17), and even with γίνομαι, as μὴ γίνεσθε ἐτεροχυγοῦντες (2 Cor. 6:14). Cf. Rev. 3:2. In Col. 1:18 we find an aorist subjunctive with a present participle, ἵνα γενήσῃ πρωτεύων. The present infinitive occurs in ἐν τῷ ἐναὶ αὐτόν προσευχόμενον (Lu. 9:18; 11:1). As an example of the present indicative active take ἄ ἔστιν ἔχοντα (Col. 2:23), and of

---

1 Brug., Griech. Or., p. 331. Κεκτώμαι and κεκτήμην had no following in Gk.

2 Blass, Or. of N. T. Gk., p. 204. I am chiefly indebted to Blass for the facts in this summary.
the passive take ὃ ἐστὶν μεθερμηνευόμενον, (Jo. 1:42), though this last is not strictly an instance in point. Cf. also ἐστὶν προσαναιπληροῦσα (2 Cor. 9:12).

The periphrastic imperfect is the most common of all. It is not unknown to the old Greek, and is abundant in the papyri and the κοινὴ generally, but it is even more frequent in the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 195) and in the Aramaic. As Blass\(^1\) shows, not all the examples in the N. T. are strictly periphrastic, like ἔσαυν...ἀγραυλοῦντες (Lu. 2:8). But they are abundant enough, as one can see on almost any page of the Gospels. Take ἔσαυν ἀναβαίνοντες καὶ ἤν προάγον (Mk. 10:32). So Ac. 2:2, ἔσαυν καθῆμενοι, and Gal. 1:22, ἤμην ἀγνοούμενος.

For list of important verbs in the N. T. see Additional Notes and my *Short Grammar of the Greek N. T.* (third ed.), pp. 48-56, 241-244. For such verbs in the LXX see Thackeray, Gr., pp. 258-920 (Table of Verbs); Helbing, *Gr. d. LXX*, pp. 128-135. For list in the papyri see Mayser, Gr., pp. 387-415.

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 203.
PART III

SYNTAX
CHAPTER IX

THE MEANING OF SYNTAX (ΣΥΝΤΑΞΙΣ)

I. Backwardness in the Study of Syntax. What the Germans call *Laut- und Formenlehre* has received far more scientific treatment than has syntax. In 1874 Jolly\(^1\) lamented that so little work on syntax of a really valuable nature had been done. To a certain extent it was necessary that the study of the forms should precede that of syntax.\(^2\) The full survey of the words and their inflections was essential to adequate syntactical investigation. And yet one can but feel that syntax has lagged too far behind. It has been the favourite field for grammatical charlatans to operate in, men who from a few examples drew large inductions and filled their grammars with "exceptions" to their own hastily made rules. Appeal was made to logic rather than to the actual facts in the history of language. Thus we had grammar made to order for the consumption of the poor students.

Others perhaps became disgusted with the situation and hastily concluded that scientific syntax was impracticable, at least for the present, and so confined their researches either to etymology or to the forms. In 1891 Muller\(^3\) sees no hope of doing anything soon for modern Greek syntax except in the literary high style on which he adds a few remarks about prepositions. Thumb\(^4\) likewise has added a chapter on syntax to his *Handbuch*. If you turn to Whitney's *Sanskrit Grammar*, you will find no separate syntax, but merely some additional remarks on the "uses" of the aorist, the present, the subjunctive, etc. Monro in his *Homeric Grammar* follows somewhat the same plan, but with much more attention to the "uses" of cases and modes. Brugmann\(^5\) in his *Griechische Grammatik* devotes far more space to *Formenlehre*,

---

5. P. vii.
even in the third edition, which chiefly differs from the second in the increased attention to syntax. Giles in his *Manual of Comparative Philology*, even in the second edition (1900), kept his discussion of the uses of the noun and verb apart and did not group them as syntax. When he wrote his first edition (1895) nothing worthy of the name had been done on the comparative syntax of the moods and tenses, though Delbruck had written his great treatise on the syntax of the noun. When Brugmann planned his first volume of *Kurze vergleichende Grammatik* (1880), he had no hope of going on with the syntax either with the "Grundriss" or the "Kurze," for at that time comparative grammar of the Indo-Germanic tongues was confined to *Laut- und Formenlehre*. But in the revision of Kuhner the Syntax by B. Gerth has two volumes, as exhaustive a treatment as Blass' two volumes on the Accidence. In the Riemann and Goelzer volumes the one on Syntax is the larger. Gildersleeve (*Am. Jour. of Philol.*, 1908, p. 115) speaks of his convictions on "Greek syntax and all that Greek syntax implies." No man's views in this sphere are entitled to weightier consideration. May he soon complete his Syntax of Classical Greek.

As to the dialectical inscriptions the situation is still worse. Dr. Claflin as late as 1905 complains that the German monographs on the inscriptions confine themselves to *Laut- und Formenlehre* almost entirely. Meisterhans in Schwyzer's revision (1900) is nearly the sole exception. Thieme has a few syntactical remarks, but Nachmanson, Schweizer and Valaori have nothing about syntax, nor has Dieterich. The same thing is true of Thumb's *Hellenismus*, though this, of course, is not a formal grammar. A few additional essays have touched on the syntax of the Attic inscriptions and Schanz in his *Beiträge* has several writers who have noticed the subject. The inscriptions do indeed have limitations as to syntax, since much of the language is official and formal, but there is much to learn from them. Thackery has not yet published his *Syntax of the LXX*. nor has Helbing.

---

1. P. xi.
2. P. viii f.
5. Gr. der att. Inschr. But even he has very much more about the forms.
10. Unters. etc., 1898.
We are somewhat better off as to the papyri as a result chiefly of the work of Dr. James Hope Moulton, who has published his researches in that field as applied to the New Testament.¹ Cronert in his *Mem. Graeca Herculis* has a good many syntactical remarks especially on the cases,² but no formal treatment of the subject. Volker³ has not finished his good beginning. No syntax has come from Mayser yet who stopped with *Laut- und Formenlehre*, though he is at work on one. Moulton does not profess⁴ to cover all the syntactical points in the papyri, but only those that throw light on some special points in the N. T. usage.

**II. New Testament Limitations.** It is evident therefore that the N. T. grammarian is in a poorer plight when he approaches syntax. And yet, strange to say, the N. T. grammars have largely confined themselves to syntax. Winer-Moulton, out of 799 pages, has only 128 not syntax. Buttmann, out of 403 pages (Thayer's translation), has only 74 not syntax. In Winer-Schmiedel syntax is reached on p. 145. Blass begins syntax on p. 72, out of 305 pages. Moulton in his Prolegomena starts syntax on p. 57 (232 in all). The present book has given the discussion of the forms more space at any rate. It is at least interesting to note that N. T. grammarians have reversed the example of the comparative philologists. Is it a case of rushing in where angels fear to tread?

One may plead in defence that the demands of exegesis are great and urgent, not to say more congenial. The distinctive character of the N. T. teaching is more closely allied to lexicography and syntax than to mere forms. That is very true, but many a theologian's syntax has run away with him and far from the sense of the writer, because he was weak on the mere forms. Knowledge of the forms is the first great step toward syntax. Deissmann even complains of Blass for assuming too much in his Syntax and not making enough comments "to rouse up energetically this easy-going deference of the youthful reader" (*Expositor*, Jan., 1908, p. 65).

Blass⁶ urges, besides, that it is just in the sphere of syntax that

---

² Pp. 159
³ Synt. der griech. Pap., I, Der Art., 1903.
⁴ *Cl. Rev.*, Dec., 1901, p. 436. Debrunner (p. xi of his 4. Aufl. of Blass' Gramm. d. N. Griech., 1913, which he has kindly sent me as I reach this point in the galley proof) laments: "Par die Studien der hellenistischen (und der mittel- und neugriechischen) Syntax gilt leider noch das Wort πολύς μὲν ὁ θερισμός, οὗ δὲ ἐργάται ὀλίγοι."
⁵ *Gr. of N. T. Gk.*, p. 72.
the N. T. variations from the ancient Greek can be best observed, in this and the change in the meaning of words. This is true, but just as much so of the *koinē* in general. This is just the opposite of Winer's view, who held that the N. T. peculiarities of syntax were very few. The explanation of the difference lies partly in the undeveloped state of syntax when Winer wrote, though he wrote voluminously enough himself, and partly in the wider conception of syntax that Blass holds as being "the method of employing and combining the several word-forms and ‘form-words’ current in the language."

On the other hand attention must be called to the fact that the study of the forms is just the element, along with vocabulary, mainly relied on by Deissmann in his *Bible Studies* to show the practical identity of the vernacular *koinē* in the papyri and in the N. T. Greek. Burton puts it rightly when he says of the N. T. writers: "The divergence of their language from that of classical writers in respect to syntax is greater than in reference to forms of words, and less than in respect to the meaning of words, both the Jewish and the Christian influence affecting more deeply the meanings of words than either their form or their syntactical employment." Deissmann readily admits that Christianity has a set of ideas peculiar to itself, as has every system of teaching which leads to a characteristic terminology.

But one is not to think of the N. T. as jargon or a dialect of the *koinē* in syntax. It is not less systematic and orderly than the rest of the vernacular *koinē*, and the *koinē* is as much a real language with its own laws as the Greek of Athens. As remarked above, the *koinē* showed more development in syntax than in forms, but it was not a lawless development. It was the growth of life and use, not the artificial imitation of the old language of Athens by the Atticists. Blass properly insists on the antithesis here between the artificial Atticist and "the plain narrator of facts or the letter-writer" such as we meet in the N. T. Deissmann (*Expositor*, Jan., 1908, p. 75) holds that Christianity in its classical epoch "has very little connection with official culture." "It rejects — this is the second result of our inquiry — it rejects, in this

---

1 W.-M., p. 27.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 72; cf. p. 3 also.
3 Notes on N. T. Gr., 1904, p. 22.
4 B. S., p. 65.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 3.
7 Ib., p. 72.
epoch, all the outward devices of rhetoric. In grammar, vocabulary, syntax and style it occupies a place in the midst of the people and draws from the inexhaustible soil of the popular element to which it was native a good share of its youthful strength."

This is largely true. Men of passion charged with a great message do strike forth the best kind of rhetoric and style with simplicity, power, beauty. It is blind not to see charm in Luke, in John, in Paul, James and the writer of Hebrews, a charm that is the despair of mere "devices of rhetoric" or artificial rules of style and syntax.

It is not surprising to find variations in culture in the N. T. writers, men who had different antecedents (Jew or Greek), different environment (Palestine, Asia Minor and possibly Egypt), different natural gifts and educational advantages, as seen in Peter and Paul. These individual peculiarities show themselves easily and naturally in syntax and style. See chapter IV, The Place of the N. T. in the koine, for a larger discussion of this matter of the peculiarities of the N. T. writers. But even in 2 Peter and the Apocalypse one has no difficulty in understanding this simple vernacular koine, however far short these books come of the standard of Isocrates or Demosthenes. The study of N. T. syntax is a worthy subject and one entirely within the range of scientific historical treatment so far as that subject has advanced.

III. Recent Advance by Delbruck. Just as Brugmann is the great name in the accidence of comparative grammar, so Delbruck is the great name in syntax. Brugmann gladly recognises his own indebtedness to Delbruck. He has sought to follow Delbruck in the syntax of his Griechische Grammatik and in the Kurze vergleichende Grammatik. It is not necessary here to recount the story of how Delbruck was finally associated with Brugmann in the Grundriss, and the Syntax by Delbruck brought to completion in 1900. Brugmann tells the story well in Kurze vergl. Gr. (pp. v ff.) and Delbruck in the Grundriss itself. It is a great achievement and much led up to it. Delbruck has recounted the progress of comparative grammar in his Introduction to the Study of Language (1882). In 1872 he had published Die Resultate der vergleichenden Syntax. In 1879 he brought out Die Grundlagen der griechischen Syntax ("Syntaktische Forschungen,"

1 P. vii.
2 P. ix. He feels "als Schiller unseres Begrunders und Meisters der vergleichenden Syntax."
Bd. IV). That marked him as the man to do for syntax what Brugmann would do for forms. Delbruck does not claim all the credit. Bernhardy in 1829 had published *Wissenschaftliche Syntax der griechischen Sprache*, but Bopp, Schleicher and the rest had done much besides. The very progress in the knowledge of forms called for advance in syntax. In 1883 Hubner wrote *Grundriss zu Vorlesungenuaber die griechische Syntax*. It is not a treatment of syntax, but a systematized bibliography of the great works up to date on Greek syntax. It is still valuable for that purpose. One can follow Brugmann and Delbruck, *Vergl. Syntax*, Dritter Teil, pp. xvi–xx, for later bibliography. As the founders of syntax Hubner points back to Dionysius Thrax and Apollonius Dyscolus in the Alexandrian epoch. The older Greeks themselves felt little concern about syntax. They spoke correctly, but were not grammatical anatomists. They used the language instead of inspecting and dissecting it.

Delbruck (*Vergleichende Syntax*, Erster Teil, pp. 2-72) gives a lucid review of the history of syntactical study all the way from Dionysius Thrax to Paul's *Principles of the History of Language*. He makes many luminous remarks by the way also on the general subject of syntax. I cannot accent too strongly my own debt to Delbruck.

Syntax, especially that of the verb, has peculiar difficulties. Not all the problems have been solved yet. Indeed Schanz so fully appreciates the situation that he is publishing a series of excellent *Beitrage zur historischen Syntax der griechischen Sprache*. He is gathering fresh material. Many of the American and European universities issue monographs by the new doctors of philosophy on various points of syntax, especially points in individual writers. Thus we learn more about the facts. But meanwhile we are grateful to Delbruck for his monumental work and for all the rest.

IV. The Province of Syntax.

(a) THE WORD SYNTAX (σύνταξις). It is from συντάσσω and means 'arrangement' (*constructio*). It is the picture of the orderly marshalling of words to express ideas, not a mere medley of words. The word syntax is indeed too vague and general to express clearly all the uses in modern grammatical discussion, but it is

---

1 Griech. Gr., p. 363.  
3 Giles, Comp. Philol; pp. 404 f., 475.  
2 Grundr. zu Vorles., p. 3.  
4 Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 7.  
5 Farrar (Gk. Synt., p. 54) quotes Suetonius as saying that the first Gk. gr. brought to Rome was by Crates Mallotes after the Second Punic War.
too late to make a change now.\footnote{Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 364.} Gildersleeve (Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 269) says that some syntacticians treat "syntax as a rag-bag for holding odds and ends of linguistic observations."

(b) SCOPE OF SYNTAX. But the difficulty is not all with the term, for the thing itself is not an absolutely distinct province. What the Germans call \textit{Lautlehre} (‘teaching about sounds’) is indeed quite to itself. But when we come to define the exact line of demarcation between syntax or the relation of words on the one hand and single words on the other the task is not always so easy. Ries\footnote{Ib., p. 142 f. Ries calls it a "naive misuse of the word syntax" not to take it in this sense. But he is not himself wholly consistent.} indeed in his very able monograph makes the contrast between syntax (or construction) and single words. His scheme is this: Under \textit{Wortlehre} (‘science of words’) he puts \textit{Formenlehre} (‘theory of forms’) and \textit{Bedeutungslehre} (‘meaning of words’).\footnote{Ib., p. 142 f.} He also subdivides syntax in the same way. Syntax thus treats of the binding of words together in all relations. Brugmann\footnote{Griech. Gr., p. 363 f.; Kurze vergl. Gr., III, p. vii.} follows Delbruck\footnote{Grundr., V, pp. 1} in rejecting the special use of syntax by Ries. Brugmann\footnote{Kurze vergl. Gr., III, p. vii.} considers the breaking-up of the sentence by Ries into single words to be wilful and only conventional. It is indeed true that single words have a teaching both as to the word itself (form-word, as prepositions) and the form (inflection).\footnote{Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 363.} That is to say, two things call for consideration in the case of single words: the facts as to the words and the inflection on the one hand and the meaning of these facts on the other. Now Ries refuses to give the term syntax to the meaning of these facts (words, inflections, etc.), but confines syntax to the other field of word-relations. One is bound to go against Ries here and side with Delbruck and Brugmann.

(c) CONSTRUCTION OF WORDS AND CLAUSES. We use syntax, therefore, both for construction of the single word and for clauses. But one must admit the difficulty of the whole question and not conceive that the ancients ran a sharp line between the form and the meaning of the form. But, all in all, it is more scientific to gather the facts of usage first and then interpret these facts. This interpretation is scientific syntax, while the facts of usage are themselves syntax. Thus considered one may properly think of syntax in relation to the words themselves, the forms of the
words, the clauses and sentences, the general style. Clyde makes two divisions in his Greek Syntax, viz. Words (p. 126) and Sentences (p. 193). But this formal division is artificial. Here, as usual, Delbrück has perceived that syntax deals not only with words (both Wortarten and Wortformen), but also with the sentence as a whole and all its parts (Vergl. Syntax, Erster Teil, p. 83). How hard it is to keep syntactical remarks out of accident may be seen in Thackeray's vol. I and in "Morphology" in Thumb's Handbook as well as in Accidence of this book.

(d) HISTORICAL SYNTAX. But this is not to fall into the old pitfall of the Stoic grammarians and apply logic to the phenomena of grammar, using the phenomena of various grammatical categories previously laid down. Plato indeed first applied logic to grammar.1 The method of historical grammar and comparative grammar has had a long and a hard fight against the logical and philosophical method of syntax. But it has at last triumphed. "They sought among the facts of language for the illustration of theories," as Dr. Wheeler2 so well puts it. We still need logic and philosophy in syntax, but we call these two agents into service after we have gathered the facts, not before, and after the historical and comparative methods have both been applied to these facts. Thus alone is it possible to have a really scientific syntax, one "definitely oriented" "as a social science" dealing with the total life of man.3

(e) IRREGULARITIES. We shall not therefore be surprised to find many so-called "irregularities" in the use of syntactical principles in various Greek writers. This is a point of the utmost importance in any rational study of syntax. The personal equation of the writer must always be taken into consideration. A certain amount of elasticity and play must be given to each writer if one is to understand human speech, for speech is merely a reflection of the mind's activities. If a tense brings one to a turn, perhaps it was meant to do so. This is not to say that there are no barbarisms or solecisms. Far from it. But it is unnatural to expect all speakers or writers in Greek to conform slavishly to our modern grammatical rules, of most of which, besides, they were in blissful ignorance. The fact is that language is life and responds to the peculiarities of the individual temper, and it is to be remembered that the mind itself is not a perfect instrument. The

1 Sandys, Hist. of Cl. Scholarship, vol. I, p. 90.
2 The Whence and Whither of the Mod. Sci. of Lang., p. 97.
3 Ib., p. 107.
mind is not always clear nor logical. The ellipses, anacolutha, etc., of language represent\(^1\) partially the imperfections of the mind. "It often depends on the writer which of the two tenses he will use," Winer\(^2\) remarks about the aorist and the past perfect. It always depends on the writer which tense and which everything else he will use. Pray, on whom else can it depend? The writer happens to be doing the writing. He decides whether he will conform to the usual construction or will give added piquancy by a variation. This assumes, of course, that he is an educated writer. If he is not, he will often have the piquancy just the same without knowing it. "Syntactical irregularities are numerous in Greek," Clyde\(^3\) observes, and, he might have added, in all other living languages. Greek is not, like "Esperanto," made to order by any one man. In point of fact what we call idioms are the very peculiarities (\(\text{i} \dot{\text{d}}\text{iw} \text{m} \text{a} \text{t} \text{a}\)) which mark it off from other languages or at least characterize it. Some of these idioms spring out of the common intelligence of men and belong to many tongues, others mark the variations of certain minds which gain a following. Compare the rapid spread of "slang" to-day, if it happens to be a "taking phrase." Hence rules of syntax ought not to be arbitrary, though many of them are. Those that really express the life of language are in harmony with the facts. In general I would say that the fewer rules one gives the better for the student and for the facts.

V. The Method of this Grammar.

(a) PRINCIPLES, NOT RULES. As far as possible principles and not rules will be sought. The Greek grammarian is an interpreter of the facts, not a regulator of the facts. This point calls for special emphasis in syntax where the subjective element comes in so largely.

(b) THE ORIGINAL SIGNIFICANCE. The starting-point therefore in the explanation of any given idiom is to find the original significance. This is not always possible, but it generally is. Historical and comparative grammar lend strong help in this endeavour. Always the best place to begin is the beginning if you can find it.

(c) FORM AND FUNCTION. I would not insist that form and function always correspond. One does not know that the two did so correspond in the beginning in all instances. It is hard to prove a universal proposition. But certainly one is justified in beginning with one function for one form wherever he finds it to

\(^1\) Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 4 f. \(^2\) W.-Th., p. 276. \(^3\) Synt., p. 5.
be true. Burton\textsuperscript{1} says: "It is by no means the case that each form has but one function, and that each function can be discharged by but one form." Certainly the same function can come to be discharged by various forms, as is the case with the locative and dative infinitive forms (\(\lambda\alpha\beta\varepsilon\iota\nu\), \(\delta\kappa\omega\sigma\alpha\)). But that is not to say that originally the locative and dative verbal substantive were identical in idea. The Sanskrit completely disproves it. It may very well be true that each form had one function originally, whereas later the same function came to be expressed by various forms. As a starting-point, therefore, one may assume, till he learns otherwise, that form and function correspond. The necessity of getting at the ground-idea of an idiom is rightly emphasized by Delbruck (\textit{Grundlagen}, p. 1). It may indeed come to pass as in the English "but," that the one form may be used for most of the parts of speech (Giles, \textit{Man. of Comp. Philol.}, p. 237 f.). On the whole subject of the agreement of form and idea see Kuhner-Gerth, I, pp. 64-77.

(d) DEVELOPMENT. But the beginning is not the end. The actual development of a given idiom in the Greek language up to the N. T. time must be observed. Each idiom has a history. Now it cannot be expected that the space can be given to the actual working-out of each idiom in history as Jannaris has done in his \textit{Historical Grammar}, or minute comparison at every point by means of comparative grammar. What is essential is that the gram- marian shall have both these points in mind as he seeks to explain the development from the etymological basis. This is the only secure path to tread, if it can be found. Burton\textsuperscript{2} indeed distinguishes sharply between historical and exegetical grammar and conceives his task to be that of the exegetical grammarian. For myself I regard exegetical grammar as the last stage in the process and not to be dissociated from the historical. Indeed how a Greek idiom is to be represented in English is a matter of little concern to the Greek grammarian till the work of translation is reached. The Greek point of view is to be observed all through the process till translation comes. It is Greek syntax, not English.

(e) CONTEXT. There is one more stage in the interpretation of the Greek idiom. That is the actual context in any given instance. The variation in the total result is often due to the difference in the local colour of the context. The same idiom with a given etymology may not have varied greatly in the long course of history save as it responds to the context. In a word, etymol-

\textsuperscript{1} N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 1.  \textsuperscript{2} Ib., p. 3.
ogy, history, context are the factors that mark the processes in the evolution of a Greek idiom in a given case. These are the things to keep constantly in mind as we approach the idioms of Greek syntax. We may not always succeed in finding the solution of every idiom, but most of them will yield to this process. The result is to put syntax on a firmer scientific basis and take it out of the realm of the speculative subjective sciences.

(f) TRANSLATION. This is the translation of the total result, not of the exact Greek idiom. Translation crisply reproduces the result of all the processes in harmony with the language into which the translation is made, often into an utterly different idiom. It is folly to reason backwards from the translation to the Greek idiom, for the English or German idiom is often foreign to the Greek and usually varies greatly from the original Greek. English is English and Greek is Greek. Syntax is not translation, though it is the only safe way to reach a correct translation. Exegesis is not syntax, but syntax comes before real exegesis. The importance of syntax is rightly appreciated by Gildersleeve.¹

(g) LIMITS OF SYNTAX. After all is done, instances remain where syntax cannot say the last word, where theological bias will inevitably determine how one interprets the Greek idiom. Take ὑδάτι in Ac. 1:5, for instance. In itself the word can be either locative or instrumental with βαπτίζω. So in Ac. 2:38 εἰς does not of itself express design (see Mt. 10:41), but it may be so used. When the grammarian has finished, the theologian steps in, and sometimes before the grammarian is through.

¹ Synt. of Class. Gk., p. iv. C. and S., Sel. fr. the LXX, p. 22, observe that the life of a language lies in the syntax and that it is impossible to translate syntax completely. The more literal a translation is, like the LXX, the more it fails
CHAPTER X

THE SENTENCE

I. The Sentence and Syntax. In point of fact syntax deals with the sentence in its parts and as a whole. And yet it is not tautology to have a chapter on the sentence, a thing few grammars do. It is important, to get a clear conception of the sentence as well as of syntax before one proceeds to the work of detailed criticism. The sentence is the thing in all its parts that syntax treats, but the two things are not synonymous. At bottom grammar is teaching about the sentence.¹

II. The Sentence Defined.

(a) COMPLEX CONCEPTION. A sentence is the expression of the idea or ideas in the speaker's mind. It is an opinion (sententia) expressed (αὐτοτελῆς λόγος). This idea is in itself complex. It is this combination of "the small coin of language" into an intelligible whole that we call a sentence.² Just a mere word accidentally expressed is not a sentence. "The sentence is the symbol whereby the speaker denotes that two or more ideas have combined in his mind."³

(b) TWO ESSENTIAL PARTS. Only two parts are essential to this complex intelligible whole to form a sentence. These two parts are subject and predicate. A statement is made about something and thus an idea is expressed. These two parts are called substantive and verb, though the line of distinction between substantive and verb was originally very dim, as is now often seen in the English ("laugh," "touch," "work," etc.). Many modern linguists hold that the verb is nominal in origin,

² Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 235. Opposed to this idea of a sentence as due to synthesis is the modern psychological definition of Wundt who defines a sentence as "die Gliederung einer Gesamtvorstellung."
since some primitive languages know only nominal sentences. We do not know which is the oldest, subject or predicate.\(^1\) In the Greek verb indeed subject and predicate are united in the one form, the original sentence.\(^2\)

(c) ONE-MEMBERED SENTENCE. The sentence in form may be very brief, even one word in truth. Indeed the long sentence may not express as much as the short one. In moments of passion an exclamation may be charged with more meaning than a long rambling sentence.\(^3\) We have plenty of examples of one-word sentences in the N. T., like ἀπέχει (Mk. 14:41), προφήτευσον (Mk. 14:65), προεχέμεθα (Ro. 3:9), θέλω (Mt. 8:3), οὐχί (Lu. 1:60). Compare also προεύθητι, ἔρχου, ποίησον (Mt. 8:9).

(d) ELLIPTICAL SENTENCE. Indeed, as seen in the case of οὐχί (Lu. 1:60) the sentence does not absolutely require the expression of either subject or predicate, though both are implied by the word used. This shortening or condensation of speech is common to all the Indo-Germanic languages.\(^4\) Other examples of such condensation are the vocative, as κύριε (Mt. 8:2), with which compare ὑπαγε, Σατάνα (Mt. 4:10), the interjections like ἀγε (Jas. 5:1), έα (Lu. 4:34), ήδού (Rev. 14:14), ήδε (Jo. 1:29), οὐαί (Rev. 8:13). These interjections may be used alone, as έα (Lu. 4:34), or with other words, as οὐαί and ήδε above. Cf. Martha's Ναί, Κύριε (Jo. 11:27), two sentences. Jo. 11:35 (ἐδάκρυσεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς) is the shortest verse, but not the shortest sentence in the N. T.

(e) ONLY PREDICATE. The subject may be absent and the predicate will still constitute a sentence, i.e. express the complex idea intended. This follows naturally from the preceding paragraph. The predicate may imply the subject. The subject in Greek is involved in the verbal personal ending and often the context makes it clear what the subject really is. Indeed the Greek only expressed the personal subject as a rule where clearness, emphasis or contrast demanded it. The N. T., like the κοινὴ in general, uses the pronominal subject more frequently than the older Greek (cf. English). Often a glance at the context is

---

\(^1\) Thompson, Gk. Synt., 1883, p. xv. Delbruck (Vergl. Synt., I. I., p. 77) quotes Schleicher as saying that nouns either have or had case-forms, verbs either have or had pers. endings, and that all words were originally either nouns or verbs. But it is not quite so easy as that unless pronouns be included in nouns.

\(^2\) K.-G., I, p. 2.


all that is needed, as with καὶ παρεγίνοντο καὶ ἐβαπτίζοντο (Jo. 3: 23), ἔρχονται (Mk. 2:3), etc. Sometimes indeed close attention is required to notice a change of subject which is not indicated.

So καὶ ἔφαγον πάντες καὶ ἐχορτάσθησαν, καὶ ἤραν τὸ περισσεύον τῶν κλασμάτων (Mt. 14:20). For this change of subject with no indication see Lu. 8:29; Jo. 19:31; 2 Cor. 3:16; 1 Jo. 5:16. Sometimes the subject is drawn out of the verb itself, as in σαλπίζει (1 Cor. 15:52), ‘the trumpet shall trumpet.’ So in οὔτε γαμοῦσιν οὔτε γαμίζονται (Mt. 22:30) men have to be supplied with the first and women with the second verb. God is considered by some the unexpressed, but well-known subject, as with δρήσει (Mt. 5: 45), ἐβρήκεν (Ac. 13:34), λέγει (Eph. 4:8), φησίν (Heb. 8:5).

Often what is said is a matter of common remark or usage and the subject is designedly concealed, indefinite subject. So when Paul uses φησίν (2 Cor. 10:10) of his opponent unless we follow B and read φασί. The plural is very common in this sense as ἄνειδισσωσίν ὑμᾶς (Mt. 5:11), μήτι συλέγουσιν; (Mt. 7:16), ὶς λεγοῦσιν, (Rev. 2:24) like German man sagt, French on dit. Cf. also, not to pile up examples, Mt. 8:16; Mk. 10:13; Lu. 17:23; Jo. 15:6; 20:2; Ac. 3:2; Rev. 12:6. This general or rhetorical plural appears in προσφέρουσιν and δύνανται (Heb. 10:1) if the text is genuine. Moulton (Prol., p. 58) cites κλέπτουτες (Eurip. I. T., 1359). Sometimes the plural purposely conceals the identity of the person referred to, as when τεθνήκασιν (Mt. 2:20) is used of Herod the Great. The same principle applies to αἰτοῦσιν (Lu. 12:20). Then again the verb may imply the subject, as with ἔβρεξεν (Jas. 5:17), ἀπέχει (Mk. 14:41), ἔγει (Lu. 24:21), οὐ μέλει σοι (Mt. 22:16), εἰ τύχοι (1 Cor. 14:10). Cf. ὁψ ἐγένετο (Mk. 11:19). So the modern Greek still (Thumb, Handb., p. 179). Usually, then, such a verb in the N. T. is in the passive voice, so that the subject is involved in the action of the verb. Thus μετρηθῆσεται (Mk. 4:24), δοθῆσεται (Mk. 4:25), πιστεύεται and ὀμολογήται (Ro. 10:10), σπείρεται and ἐγείρεται (1 Cor. 15:42), etc. Sometimes indeed a verb appears to be without a subject, when really it is not. So ἔστω δέ (2 Cor. 12:16) has the previous sentence as the subject. In 1 Pet. 2:6 the subject of περιέχει is the following quotation. In Ac. 21:35 συνήβη has as its subject the infinitive βαστάζεσθαι. So in general whenever the infinitive is used as subject, the verb is not without a subject, as ἀνέβη ἐπισκέψασθαι. (Ac. 7:23). The examples are numerous, as ἔξεστιν ποιεῖν (Mt. 12:2), ἔδοξε γράψαι (Lu. 1:3), ἔδει

1 See Viteau, Et. sur le Grec du N. T., Sujet, Compl. et Attr., p. 55 f.
THE SENTENCE

die\(\varepsilon\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\sigma\)\(\theta\)\(\alpha\)i (Jo. 4:4), \(\pi\\rho\varepsilon\nu\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\sigma\)\(t\)\(\iota\)\(n\) \(\pi\\nu\lambda\rho\omega\sigma\)\(\alpha\)i (Mt. 3:15), \(\kappa\alpha\theta\)\(\eta\)\(\kappa\epsilon\nu\) \(\varsigma\)\(\eta\)\(\nu\) (Ac. 22:22), \(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\delta\varepsilon\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\tau\)\(\iota\)\(n\) \(\alpha\)\(\omicron\)\(\alpha\)\(\lambda\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\sigma\)\(\theta\)\(\alpha\)i (Lu. 13:33), and even \(\alpha\)\(\omicron\)\(\nu\)\(\nu\)\(\delta\varepsilon\)\(\kappa\tau\)\(\omicron\)\(n\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\sigma\)\(t\)\(\iota\)\(n\) \(\tau\)\(\omicron\) \(\mu\)\(\iota\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\lambda\)\(\theta\)\(\epsilon\)\(i\)\(n\) (Lu. 17:1) and \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\) \(\omicron\) \(\epsilon\)\(\iota\)\(s\)\(e\)\(l\)\(\theta\)\(e\)\(i\)\(n\) (Ac. 10:25) where the genitive infinitive form has become fixed. \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\) does indeed present a problem by itself. It may have the simple infinitive as subject, as \(\delta\iota\alpha\)\(s\)\(p\)\(r\)\(\omega\)\(s\)\(\alpha\)i (Jo. 6:1) and \(\epsilon\)\(i\sigma\)\(\lambda\)\(\theta\)\(e\)\(i\)\(n\) (Lu. 6:6). Cf. Mk. 2:15. But often \(k\alpha\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\) or \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\) \(\delta\)\(\epsilon\) is used with a finite verb as a practical, though not the technical, subject. So \(k\alpha\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\), \(\epsilon\)\(\lambda\)\(\alpha\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\) (Lu. 2:15), \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\) \(\delta\)\(\epsilon\), \(\sigma\)\(\nu\)\(\nu\)\(\eta\)\(\iota\)\(\tau\)\(s\)\(\sigma\)\(e\)\(n\) (Lu. 9:37). So also \(k\alpha\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\sigma\)\(\tau\)\(\alpha\)\(i\), \(\epsilon\)\(\chi\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\omega\) (Ac. 2:17). One is strongly reminded of the similar usage in the LXX, not to say the Hebrew יְהוָה. Moulton\(^1\) prefers to think that that was a development from the \(\kappa\)\(o\)\(i\)\(n\) (papyri) usage of the infinitive with \(\gamma\)\(i\)\(n\)\(o\)\(m\)\(a\)\(i\) as above, but I see no adequate reason for denying a Semitic influence on this point, especially as the LXX also parallels the other idiom, \(k\alpha\) \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\) \(\delta\)\(\nu\) \(\delta\iota\alpha\)\(s\)\(p\)\(r\)\(\omega\)\(s\)\(\alpha\) (Lu. 6:17, cf. 6:5, 12, etc.), a construction so un-Greek and so like the Hebrew וְ. Here \(k\alpha\) almost equals \(\delta\)\(\omicron\) and makes the second \(k\alpha\) clause practically the subject of \(\varepsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\varepsilon\)\(\nu\)\(\tau\)\(\omicron\). The use of a \(\delta\)\(\omicron\) or \(\omicron\)\(n\)\(a\) clause as subject is common either alone or in apposition with a pronoun. Cf. Mt. 10:25 \(\omicron\)\(n\)\(a\) (Jo. 5:9 \(\delta\)\(\omicron\)); Jo. 15:12 \(\omicron\)\(n\)\(a\). In a case like \(\delta\)\(\rho\)\(k\)\(e\)\(i\) (Jo. 14:8), \(\alpha\)\(\nu\)\(\kappa\)\(e\)\(n\) (Col. 3:18), \(\epsilon\)\(l\)\(o\)\(g\)\(i\)\(s\)\(\theta\)\(i\) (Ro. 4:3) the subject comes easily out of the context. So also the subject is really implied when the partitive genitive is used without the expression of \(t\)\(i\)\(v\)\(s\) \(\mathrm{or} \) \(\pi\)\(o\)\(l\)\(o\)\(i\)\(s\) \(\sigma\)\(\nu\)\(\nu\)\(\iota\)\(\lambda\)\(\theta\)\(o\)\(n\) \(\delta\)\(\epsilon\) \(k\)\(a\) \(t\)\(w\)\(n\) \(\mu\)\(a\)\(\theta\)\(t\)\(w\)\(n\) (Ac. 21:16) and \(\epsilon\)\(t\)\(p\)\(a\)\(v\) \(\sigma\)\(\nu\) \(\epsilon\)\(k\) \(t\)\(w\)\(n\) \(\mu\)\(a\)\(\theta\)\(t\)\(w\)\(n\) (Jo. 16:17), a clear case of the ablative with \(\epsilon\)\(k\). The conclusion of the whole matter is that the subject is either expressed or implied by various linguistic devices. The strictly impersonal verbs in the old Greek arose from the conception of \(\theta\)\(e\)\(o\)\(s\) as doing the thing.\(^2\)

(f) ONLY SUBJECT. Likewise the predicate may be absent and only implied in the subject. Yet naturally the examples of this nature are far fewer than those when the predicate implies the subject. Sometimes indeed the predicate merely has to be mentally supplied from the preceding clause, as with \(\theta\)\(l\)\(i\)\(b\)\(o\)\(m\)\(e\)\(\theta\)\(a\) (2 Cor. 1:6), \(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(a\)\(p\)\(\eta\)\(\sigma\)\(e\)\(i\) (Lu. 7:42), \(\epsilon\)\(\chi\)\(e\) (Lu. 20:24), \(\lambda\)\(m\)\(m\)\(b\)\(\alpha\)\(\varepsilon\)\(i\), (Heb. 5:4). Cf. Eph. 5:22. It may be that the verb would be

---

\(^1\) Prol., p. 17.

slightly changed in form, if expressed, as σκανδαλισθήσομαι (Mk. 14:29), ὑποτασσέσθωσάν (Eph. 5:24), τίθεμεν (2 Cor. 3:13), etc.

Sometimes again the affirmative is to be inferred from a negative as in 1 Cor. 7:19; 10:24. In Mk. 12:5 the principal verb has to be drawn from the idea of the two participles δέροντες and ἀποκτενώντες. In particular with εἰδὲ μή (or μή γε) the verb is always absent (as Mt. 6:1), so that the idiom becomes a set phrase (Lu. 10:6; 13:9). In Ro. 5:3 with οὐ μόνον δὲ, καυχώμεθα, is to be supplied, and in 5:11 σωθησόμεθα. In Ro. 9:10 the verb has to come from verse 9 or 12. In Ro. 4:9 probably λέγεται (cf. verse 6) is to be supplied. Often εἶπεν is not expressed, as in Ac. 25:22.

In Ro. 5:18 Winer\(^1\) supplies ἀπέβη in the first clause and ἀποβηστα in the second. In 2 Cor. 9:7 he likewise is right in suggesting δότω from the context, as in Gal. 2:9 after ἵνα, we must mentally insert ἐναγγελιζόμεθα, ἐναγγελιζομοῦντα. In epistolary salutations it is not difficult to supply λέγει or λέγει χαίρειν as in Jas. 1:1; Ph. 1:1; Rev. 1:4. These are all examples of very simple ellipsis, as in 2 Pet. 2:22 in the proverb. Cf. also 1 Cor. 4:21; 2 Cor. 5:13; Gal. 3:5.

(g) VERB NOT THE ONLY PREDICATE. But the predicate is not quite so simple a matter as the subject. The verb indeed is the usual way of expressing it, but not the only way. The verb εἰμί, especially ἐστί and εἰσίν, may be merely a "form-word" like a preposition and not be the predicate. Sometimes it does express existence as a predicate like any other verb, as in ἐγώ εἰμί (Jo. 8:58) and ἥ θάλασσα οὐκ ἔστιν ἔτι (Rev. 21:1). Cf. Mt. 23:30. But more commonly the real predicate is another word and εἰμί merely serves as a connective or copula. Thus the predicate may be complex. With this use of εἰμί as copula ("form-word") the predicate may be another substantive, as ὁ ἀγρός ἐστιν ὁ κόσμος (Mt. 13:38); an adjective, as τὸ φρέαρ ἐστὶ βαθύ (Jo. 4:11); a prepositional phrase, as ἐγγύς σου τὸ ῥῆμα ἐστιν (Ro. 10:8); and especially the participle, as ἕν διδάσκων (Mt. 7:29). Other verbs, besides εἰμί may be used as a mere copula, as γίνομαι (Jo. 1:14), καθισταμαι (Ro. 5:19), ἔστηκα (Jas. 5:9), and in particular φοίνομαι (2 Cor. 13:7), ὑπάρχω (Ac. 16:3).\(^2\) Predicative amplifica-

\(^{1}\) W.-Th., p. 587. Cf. also Gildersleeve, Gk. Synt., pp. 41-44, for class. exx. of the omission of the pred. The ellipsis of the pred. is common in the Attic inscr. Cf. Meisterh., p. 196.

\(^{2}\) Cf. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., 3. Tl., p. 12, for the origin of the copula, and pp. 15-22 for the adj., adv., subst. (oblique cases as well as nom. as pred.). Cf. also Gildersleeve, Gk. Synt., pp. 30-35.
tions belong to apposition and will be so treated as an expansion of the predicate. The subject also has amplifications.

(h) COPULA NOT NECESSARY. Naturally this copula is not always considered necessary. It can be readily dispensed with when both subject and the real predicate are present. This indeed is the most frequent ellipsis of all in all stages of the language, especially the form ἐστί. But strictly speaking, the absence of the copula is not ellipsis, but a remnant of a primitive idiom, since some primitive tongues could do without the copula. Still, as Blass\(^1\) observes, the ellipsis never became a fixed usage save in a few phrases like δῆλον ὅτι (1 Cor. 15:27) or ὅτι ... δῆλον (Gal. 3:11). In ἵνα τι (Mt. 9:4), γένηται has dropped out. There are many idiomatic uses of τι without the copula. So τι ἦμιν καὶ σοί (Mk. 1:24), τί πρῶς σέ (Jo. 21:22), οὗτος δὲ τι (Jo. 21:21), τί ὄφελος (Jas. 2:14), τί οὖν and τίς ὥφελεν (Ro. 3:1), τί γάρ (Ro. 3:3), etc. Exclamations, as well as questions, show the absence of the copula. Thus ὃς ὥραίοι (Ro. 10:15), ὃς ἀνεξεραύνησα (Ro. 11:33), μεγάλη ἡ Ἄρτεμις Ἑφεσίων (Ac. 19:28). As a matter of fact the copula may be absent from any kind of sentence which is free from ambiguity, as μακάριοι ὁ καθαρός (Mt. 5:8), Ἰησοῦς Χριστός ... ὁ αὐτός (Heb. 13:8), ἀξίος ὁ ἐργάτης (Mt. 10:10), ἔτι μικρόν (Jo. 14:19), ἔτι γάρ μικρὸν δόσων δόσων (Heb. 10:37), πᾶς ... ἀπειρός λόγου δικαιοσύνης (Heb. 5:13), ὃς ὁ ὑποκριταί (Mt. 6:16). Cf. Ro. 11:15 f. for several further examples, which could be easily multiplied not only for ἐστιν and εἴσε, but for other forms as well, though the examples for the absence of εἰμί and εἶ are not very numerous. Forms of the imp., fut., imper., subj., opt., inf. and part. (often) are absent also. For εἰμί see 2 Cor. 11:6. For εἶ see Jo. 17:21; Gal. 4:7 bis. Observe λογιζομαι and ἰδιώτης in 2 Cor. 11:5 f., but the participle ἀλλ’ ἐν παντὶ φανερώσαντες ἐν πᾶσιν εἰς ὑμᾶς goes over to the literary plural, about which see further in this chapter. Compare also 2 Cor. 8:23. In Mk. 12:26 εἰμί is absent, though ἐγὼ is used. For further examples of the absence of ἐσμὲν see Ro. 8:17; Ph. 3:15. For εἰ see Rev. 15:4 (ὅτι μόνος ὁ σωζός). In Jo. 14:11 both εἰμὶ and ἐστίν are absent, ὅτι ἐγὼ ἐν τῷ πατρὶ καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ἐν ἐμοί. The imperfect ἦν may also be absent as with ὃ ὤνομα (Lu. 2:25), ὄνομα αὐτῷ (Jo. 3:1), καὶ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτῆς (Lu. 1:5). In 1 Pet. 4:17 we find wanting ἐστίν ἔσται. Cf. also 1 Cor. 15:21 for ἦν and ἔσται. The other moods, besides indicative, show occasional lapses of this copula. Thus the subjunctive ἦ after ὅπως (2 Cor. 8:11) and after ἵνα (2 Cor. 8:13). The op-

---

\(^{1}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 73. Cf. Gildersleeve, Gk. Synt., pp. 41-43,
tative εἴη more frequently drops out in wishes, as χάρις ὑμῖν καὶ εἰρήνη (Ro. 1:7), ὁ δὲ θεὸς εἰρήνης μετὰ πάντων ὑμῶν (Ro. 15:33), Ἄλεως σοι (Mt. 16:22). As Blass\(^1\) observes, in the doxologies like εὐλογητὸς ὁ θεὸς (2 Cor. 1:3; Eph. 1:3) one may supply either ἔστιν or εἴη or even ἔστω, though Winer\(^2\) strongly insists that εἴη is necessary because of the LXX examples. But Blass very properly points to Ro. 1:25, ὁς ἔστιν εὐλογητὸς εἰς τοὺς αἱώνας. Cf. also 1 Pet. 4:11, where Α drops ἔστιν. The imperative shows a few examples of the dropping of ἔστε as with the participles in Ro. 12:9, though, of course, only the context can decide between the indicative and imperative. Winer\(^3\) is right against Meyer in refusing to supply ἔστε the second ἐν ᾧ (simply resumptive) in the Eph. 1:13. But some clear instances of the absence of ἔστω appear, as in Col. 4:6 ὁ λόγος ὑμῶν πάντοτε ἐν χάριτι, Mt. 27:19 μὴ δὲν σοί, 2 Cor. 8:16 χάρις τῷ θεῷ, Heb. 13:4 τίμιος ὁ γάμος.

The infinitive εὑραί is present in Ph. 3:8, but absent in Ph. 3:7. The participle shows a similar ellipsis as in Jo. 1:50 ἔδοξον σε ὑποκάτω τῆς συκῆς, Lu. 4:1 Ἰησοῦς δὲ πλήρης. The other verbs used as copula may also be absent if not needed, as with γίνομαι (Mt. 6:10; Ac. 10:15).

The absence of the copula with ἴδον is indeed like the construction after the Heb. τοιαύτης as Blass\(^4\) points out, but it is also in harmony with the κοινή as Moulton\(^5\) shows. But it is especially frequent in the parts of the N. T. most allied to the O. T. Like other interjections ἴδον does not need a verbal predicate, though it may have one. As examples see Mt. 17:5; Lu. 5:18; Rev. 4:1. In the last example both ἔδοξον, and ἴδον occur and the construction follows, now one now the other, as is seen in verse 4.

(i) THE TWO RADIATING FOCI OF THE SENTENCE. Thus, as we have seen, the subject and predicate are the two foci of the sentence regarded as an ellipse. Around these two foci all the other parts of the sentence radiate, if there are any other parts. The sentence may go all the way from one abrupt word to a period a couple of pages long, as in Demosthenes or Isocrates. Schoolboys will recall a sentence in Thucydides so long that he forgot to finish it. Giles\(^6\) speaks of the sentence as a kingdom with many provinces or a house with many stories. That is true potentially. But the sentence is elastic and may have only the two foci (subject and predicate) and indeed one of them may exist only by im-

---

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 74.
\(^2\) W.-Th., p. 586.
\(^3\) Ib,
\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 74.
\(^5\) Prol., p. 11.
\(^6\) Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 236.
plication. The context can generally be relied on to supply the other focus in the mind of the speaker or writer. Thus by the context, by look and by gesture, words can be filled to the full and even run over with meanings that of themselves they would not carry. Emotion can make itself understood with few words. The matters here outlined about the Greek sentence apply to Greek as a whole and so to the N. T. Greek.

(j) VARIETIES OF THE SIMPLE SENTENCE. It is immaterial whether the simple sentence, which is the oldest sentence, be declarative, interrogative or imperative. That affects in no way the essential idea. All three varieties occur in great abundance in the N. T. and need not be illustrated. So likewise the simple sentence may be affirmative or negative. That is beside the mark in getting at the foundation of the sentence. All these matters (and also abstract and concrete) are mere accidents that give colour and form, but do not alter the organic structure. For an extensive discussion of the various kinds of independent sentences in the N. T. (declarative, interrogative, hortatory, wish, command) see Viteau, Syntaxe des Propositions, pp. 17-40. The matter will be discussed at length in the chapter on Modes.

III. The Expansion of the Subject.

(a) IDEA-WORDS AND FORM-WORDS. There are indeed, as already seen, two sorts of words in general in the sentence, idea-words and form-words, as the comparative grammars teach us.\(^1\) The idea-words (called by Aristotle Φωναί σηματικαί have an inner content in themselves (word-stuff), while the form-words (Φωναί ἄγομαί) express rather relations\(^2\) between words. Substantive, verb, adjective, adverb are idea-words, and pronouns, prepositions, some adverbs (place, time, etc.), the copula are form-words. In reality the form-words may have been originally idea-words (cf. εἰμί, for instance, and the prepositions). The distinction is a real one, but more logical than practical. The form-words, when prepositions, really help out the meanings of the cases.

(b) CONCORD AND GOVERNMENT. Clyde\(^3\) offers another distinction, that between concord and government, which has something in it if it is not pushed too far. "In concord, the substantive is, as it were, a syntactical chief, and all his followers wear the same badge as himself; in government, the substantive appears, as it were, in various conditions of service, and is dressed each time according to the particular function he discharges."

---

He uses concord where the substantive is king and government where the verb rules. There is something in this distinction between the two parts of the sentence, only at bottom the verb has concord too as well as the substantive, as can be shown, and as Clyde really admits by the term congruity for the case-relations with the verb. This distinction is not one between subject and predicate, but between substantive and verb.

(c) THE GROUP AROUND THE SUBJECT. This may be formed in various ways, as, for instance, by another substantive, by an adjective, by the article, by a pronoun, by an adverb, by a prepositional phrase (adjunct), by subordinate clause. ¹ Each of these calls for illustration and discussion. They may be explained in inverse order for practical reasons.

1. For Subordinate Clause take Lu. 1:43.
2. With the Article. In Ro. 7:10 we have ἡ ἐντολή ἡ εἰς ζωήν.
Here the article shows that this prepositional phrase or adjunct is under the wing of the substantive ἐντολή. In the chapter on the Article this matter will call for more elaborate discussion. For the article and pronoun take οὗτος ὁ Ἰησοῦς (Ac. 1:11).
3. The Adverb. As examples of adverbs with substantives take τῇ νῦν Ἰερουσαλήμ (Gal. 4:25) and ή δὲ ἄνω Ἰερουσαλήμ (verse 26).
4. The Adjective. The origin of the adjective and its close relation to the substantive was discussed under Declensions (chapter VII) and will be further shown in the chapter on Adjectives in Syntax. Take as an example ὁ ποιμὴν ὁ καλὸς (Jo. 10: 11).
5. The Substantive. The earliest and always a common way of expanding the subject was by the addition of another substantive. It was done in either of two ways.
(a) By an oblique case, usually the genitive. Even the dative may occur. The ablative is seen in εἴναι τῶν διαθηκῶν (Eph. 2:12). But the genitive, the case of genus or kind, is the case usually employed to express this subordinate relation of one word to another. This whole matter will be discussed under the genitive case and here only one example will be mentioned, ὁ πατὴρ τῆς δόξης (Eph. 1:17), as illustrating the point.
(b) Apposition. This was the earliest method. Apposition is common to both subject and predicate. Sometimes indeed the

¹ As a matter of fact any substantive, whatever its place in the sentence, may be the nucleus of a similar grouping. But this is a further subdivision to be noticed later. On the grouping of words around the subst. see Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., 3. Tl., pp. 200-221. For various ways of grouping words around the subj. in a Gk. sentence see K.-G., I, p. 52.
genitive is used where really the substantive is in apposition, as περὶ τοῦ ναοῦ τοῦ σώματος αὐτοῦ (Jo. 2:21), a predicate example where "temple" and "body" are meant to be identical. So with ἡ οἰκία τοῦ σκήνους (2 Cor. 5:1) and many other examples. But in general the two substantives are in the same case, and with the subject, of course, in the nominative. As a matter of fact apposition can be employed with any case. The use of ἀνήρ, ἀνθρώπος, γυνή with words in apposition seems superfluous, though it is perfectly intelligible. The word in apposition conveys the main idea, as ἀνήρ προφήτης (Lu. 24:19), ἀνθρώπος οἰκοδεσπότης (Mt. 21:33). Cf. ἄνδρες ἀδελφοί (Ac. 1:16) and ἄνδρα φωνέα (Ac. 3:14). So also ἄνδρες Ἰσραηλεῖται (Ac. 2:22), ἄνδρες Ἀθωναίοι (Ac. 17:22), an idiom common in the Attic orators. Such apposition, of course, is not confined to the subject, but is used in any case in every sort of phrase. So πρὸς γυναίκα χήραν (Lu. 4:26), ἀνθρώπῳ οἰκοδεσπότῃ (Mt. 13:52, but note also 21:33), Σύμωνος Βυρσέως (Ac. 10:32). Sometimes the word in apposition precedes the other, though not usually. Thus ὁ κόσμος τῆς ἁλίκας, ἡ γλῶσσα (Jas. 3:6); καὶ γάρ τὸ πάσχα ἡμῶν ἐτύθη, Χριστός (1 Cor. 5:7). But this is largely a matter of definition. The pronoun, of course, may be the subject, as ἐγὼ Ἰησοῦς (Rev. 22:16). So ἐγὼ Παῦλος (Gal. 5:2). Cf. νῦν ὑμεῖς οἱ Φαρισαῖοι (Lu. 11:39). The word in apposition may vary greatly in the precise result of the apposition, a matter determined wholly by the word itself and the context. Thus in Ἄβραμ ὁ πατριάρχης (Heb. 7:4) a descriptive title is given. Cf. also εἰ ἐγὼ ἐνισχυστὶ ἡμῶν τοῦ πόδας, ὁ κύριος καὶ ὁ διδάσκαλος (Jo. 13:14). Partitive or distributive apposition is common, when the words in apposition do not correspond to the whole, as οἱ δὲ ἀμελήσαντες ἀπῆλθον, δὲ μὲν εἰς τὸν ὄρον ἄργον, δὲ δὲ ἐπὶ τὴν ἐμπορίαν αὐτοῦ (Mt. 22:5). Often the word in apposition is merely epexegetical, as ἡ ἐστὶ τῶν ᾿Ιουδαίων, ἡ σκηνοπηγία (Jo. 7:2). Ἀφτός is sometimes used in emphatic apposition, as ὁ Χριστός κεφαλὴ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, αὐτός σωτήρ τοῦ σώματος (Eph. 5:23). The phrase τοῦτ’ ἐστιν is used in epexegetical apposition with the subject, as ὅλον, τοῦτ’ ἐστιν ὅτι ἡ ψυχαί (1 Pet. 3:20). But the phrase is a mere expletive and has no effect on number (as seen above) or case. It can be used indifferently with any case as the locative (Ro. 7:18), the instrumental (Mk. 7:2), the accusative (Ac. 19:4; Heb. 13:15; Phil. 12), the genitive (Heb. 9:11; 11:16). Any number of words or phrases may be in apposition, as in ἐβλήθη ὁ δράκων ὁ μέγας, ὁ ὄμης, ὁ ἄρχων, ὁ καλοῦμενος Διάβολος καὶ ὁ Σατανᾶς, ὁ πλανῶν τὴν ὀικουμένην ὄλην (Rev. 12:9).
An infinitive may be in apposition with the subject, as οὐ γὰρ διὰ νόμου ἡ ἐπαγγελία, τῷ Ἀβραὰμ ἦ τῷ σπέρματι αὐτοῦ, τὸ κληρονόμον αὐτὸν εἶναι κόσμον (Jo. 4:13). Cf. 1 Th. 4:3; 1 Pet. 2:15. Once more, a clause with ὅτι or ἵνα may be in apposition with the subject (or predicate either), as αὕτη γὰρ ἔστιν ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ θεοῦ ἵνα τὰς θεῶς ἡμῖν (1 Hi, 5:11) and αὕτη γὰρ ἔστιν ἡ ἀγάπη τοῦ θεοῦ ἵνα τὰς ἐντολὰς αὐτοῦ πηρῶμεν (1 Jo. 5:3). Cf. Jo. 6:29, 39, 40. For many more or less interesting details of apposition in the N. T. and the LXX see Viteau, _Sujet, Complement et Attribut_ (1896), pp. 220-236. On apposition in John see Abbott, _Johannine Grammar_, pp. 36 ff. On the general subject of apposition see Delbruck, _Vergl. Syntax_, Dritter Teil, pp. 195-199; Kühner-Gerth, I, pp. 281-290.

**IV. The Expansion of the Predicate.**

(a) **PREDICATE IN WIDER SENSE.** Here predicate must be taken in its full sense and not merely the verb, but also the other ways of making a predicate with the copula. One cannot do better here than follow Brugmann, though he makes the verb, not the predicate, the centre of this group. It is simpler just to take the predicate as the other focus answering to the subject. The predicate can be expanded by other verbs, by substantives, by pronouns, by adjectives, by adverbs, by prepositions, by particles, by subordinate clauses.

(b) **THE INFINITIVE AND THE PARTICIPLE.** These are the common ways of supplementing a verb by another verb directly. They will both call for special treatment later and can only be mentioned here. Cf. ἡθελεν παρελθεῖν (Mk. 6:48) and ἔλαθον τινές ἐξενισαυτες (Heb. 13:2). But sometimes two verbs are used together directly without any connective, as ποῦ θέλεις ἔτοιμασωμεν (Mt. 26:17). See discussion of asyndeton in this chapter (xii, Connection in Sentences).

(c) **THE RELATION BETWEEN THE PREDICATE AND SUBSTANTIVES.** This matter receives full treatment under the head of Cases, and a word of illustration suffices here. It is not the accusative case alone that occurs, but any oblique case of the substantive or pronoun may be used to express this relation, as προσέχετε ἐξυποτις (Lu. 21:34). In the case of a copula this case will be the nominative and forms the predicate, as αὕτη ἔστιν ἡ ἐπαγγελία (1 Jo. 2:25).

(d) **THE PRONOUN.** It is sometimes the expanded object, as τοιούτως ζητεῖ τούς προσκυνοῦντας αὐτῶν (Jo. 4:23).

(e) **ADJECTIVES.** They are common with predicates and as predicates. So ἁπεκατεστάθη ὕγινης (Mt. 12:13). Cf. ἦλθεν πρῶτος (Jo. 20:4), ἀπαράβατον ἔχει τὴν ἰερωσύνην) (Heb. 7:24). The article and the participle often form the predicate, as Mt. 10:20.

(f) **THE ADVERB.** The use of the adverb with the predicate is so normal as to call for no remark. So ὁμολογομένους μέγα ἐστὶν τὸ τῆς εὐσεβείας μυστήριον (1 Tim. 3:16). Cf. οὗτως γὰρ πλουσίως ἐπιχορηγηθήσεται (2 Pet. 1:11).

(g) **PREPOSITIONS.** Let one example serve for prepositions: ἵνα πληρωθῆτε εἰς πᾶν τὸ πλήρωμα τοῦ θεοῦ (Eph. 3:19).

(h) **NEGATIVE PARTICLES** οὐ AND μη. These are not confined to the predicate, but there find their commonest illustrations. Cf. οὐ γὰρ τολμῶμεν (2 Cor. 10:12) and μὴ γένοιτο (Gal. 6:14).

(i) **SUBORDINATE CLAUSES.** Most commonly, though by no means always, they are expansions of the predicate. The adverbial clauses are mainly so, as ἔγραψα ὑμῖν ὑνα εἰδήτε (1 Jo. 5:13), and most object (substantival) clauses, as the ὅτι ζωὴν ἔχετε αἰώνιον in the same sentence. But adjective clauses likewise often link themselves on to a word in the predicate, as ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ διὸ προέθετο (Ro. 3:24).

(j) **APPOSITION WITH THE PREDICATE AND LOOSER AMPLIFICATIONS.** It is common also, but calls for little additional remark. Predicative amplifications, as Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 527) calls them, are common. So εἰς ὃ ἐγὼ ἐτέθην κήρυξ (1 Tim. 2:7), δὲν προέθετο ὁ θεὸς ἱλαστήριον (Ro. 3:25). The participle with ὃς is frequent, as ἡμᾶς ὃς κατὰ σάρκα περιπατοῦντας (2 Cor. 10:2). Cf. 1 Pet. 2:5. Note also εἰς as εἰς υἱόν (Ac. 7:21), a Greek idiom parallel to the Hebrew and very abundant in the LXX. A common construction is to have a clause in apposition with τοῦτο in an oblique case. So we see the accusative as τοῦτο γινώσκετε ὅτι ἠγγίξεν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ (Lu. 10:11), ablative as in μείζονα ταύτης ἀγάπην οὐδὲς ἔχει ἵνα τις τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτῶι θῇ ύπὲρ τῶν φίλων αὐτῶι (Jo. 15:13), locative ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκομεν ὅτι ἐν αὐτῷ μένομεν (1 Jo. 4:13). Cf. λέγω τοῦτο ὅτι ἐκαστος ὑμῶν λέγει (1 Cor. 1:12). Likewise the infinitive may be in apposition with τοῦτο, as ἐκρινα ἐμαυτῷ τοῦτο, τὸ μὴ πάλιν ἐν λύπῃ πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἔλθειν (2 Cor. 2:1). Cf. also Lu. 22:37 where τὸ καὶ μετὰ ἀνόμων ἔλογισθη ἐστὶν ἐν ἐμοί. For an extended predicate with numerous classes see Rev. 13:16, ποιεῖ πάντας, τοὺς μικροὺς καὶ τοὺς μεγάλους, καὶ τοὺς πλουσίους καὶ τοὺς πτωχοὺς, καὶ τοὺς ἐλευθέρους καὶ τοὺς δουλοὺς.
V. Subordinate Centres in the Sentence. Each of the words or phrases that the subject or predicate groups around itself may form a fresh nucleus for new combinations. Thus the long sentences with many subordinate clauses resemble the cell multiplication in life. The N. T. indeed does not show so many complications in the sentence as the more rhetorical writers of Athens. In Mt. 7:19 the subject δένδρον has the participle ποιουν, which in turn has its own clause with μη as negative and καρπον καλον as object. In Jo. 5:36 the predicate μείζων has μαρτυρίαν as object, which has the predicate adjective μείζων, which in turn is followed by the ablative του Ἰωάνου. This is all too simple to need further illustration. Even adverbs may have expansive appositives as in ὁδε ἐν τῇ πατρίδι σου (Lu. 4:23). Cf. Delbuick, Vergl. Syntax, pp. 222-227, for discussion of the adjective and its connection, and p. 228 for the adverb.

VI. Concord in Person. The concord between subject and predicate as to person is so uniform as to call for little remark. In Greek the person was originally expressed in the ending. In the later Greek the pronoun was increasingly used in addition (see chapter on Pronouns). But only ignorance would allow one to mix his persons in the use of the verb. The only problem occurs when the subject comprises two or even all three persons. Then, of course, the first prevails over both the second and the third. So ἔγω καὶ ὁ πατήρ ἐν ἔσμεν (Jo. 10:30). Cf. Mt. 9:14; Lu. 2:48; 1 Cor. 9:6. But in Gal. 1:8 (ἐὰν ἡμείς ἡ ἁγγελος ἔσ εὑρανοῦ εὐαγγελίση ται) the reverse is true either because Paul follows the nearest in both person and number or (Winer-Thayer, p. 518) because he acknowledges thus the superior exaltation of the angel. Then again in cases like Ac. 11:14 (σωθήση σοι καὶ πᾶς ὁ οἶκος σου) the speaker merely uses the person and number of the first and most important member of the group. Cf. Ac. 16:31. The subject of person thus easily runs into that of number, for the same ending expresses both. Sometimes indeed the first and second persons are used without any direct reference to the speaker or the person addressed. Paul in particular is fond of arguing with an imaginary antagonist. In Ro. 2:1 he calls him ὁ ἄνθρωπος πᾶς ὁ κρίνων. So also 2:3. In Ro. 9:20 Paul is very earnest, μενούνγε σοῦ τίς εἶ; cf. also 11:17; 14:4. In 1 Cor. 10:30 the first person may be used in this representative way. The same may be true of Gal. 2:18, but not of 2:19. Ro. 7:7-25 is not so clear. The vehemence of passion argues for Paul's own experience, but note σε in 8:2. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk.,
VII. Concord in Number. Here we have a double concord, that between subject and predicate (both verb and adjective if copula is used) and that between substantive and adjective in general. It is simpler, however, to follow another division.

(a) SUBJECT AND PREDICATE.

1. Two Conflicting Principles. One follows the grammatical number, the other the sense (κατὰ συνεστίν). The formal grammatical rule is, of course, usually observed, a singular subject having a singular verb, a plural subject having a plural verb. This is the obvious principle in all languages of the Indo-Germanic group. It was once true of the dual also, though never to the same extent. Moulton\(^1\) aptly says: "Many Greek dialects, Ionic conspicuously, had discarded this hoary luxury long before the common Greek was born." The Attic gave it a temporary lease of life, "but it never invaded Hellenistic, not even when a Hebrew dual might have been exactly rendered by its aid." I doubt, however, as previously shown (ch. VII, 1,3), Moulton's explanation that the dual probably arose in prehistoric days when men could count only two. That was indeed a prehistoric time! Probably the dual was rather the effort to accent the fact that only two were meant, not more, as in pairs, etc. Hence the dual verb even in Attic was not always used, and it was an extra burden to carry a special inflection for just this idea. No wonder that it vanished utterly in the κοινή.

2. Neuter Plural and Singular Verb. But the κοινή fails to respond to the Attic rule that a neuter plural inanimate subject takes a singular verb. Homer indeed was not so insistent and the "modern Greek has gone back completely and exclusively to the use of the plural verb in this instance as in others."\(^2\) The N. T., like the κοινή in general, has broken away from the Attic rule and responds more to the sense, and also more often regards a neuter plural as really plural. It never was a binding rule, though more so in Attic than in Homer. In the vernacular κοινή the people treated the neuter plural like other plurals. (Radermacher, *N. T. Gr.*, p. 96.) Usually a neuter plural in the N. T. that has a personal or collective meaning has a plural verb.\(^3\) 

---

1 Prol., p. 57.  
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 78.  
404 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

τὰ δαίμονια πιστεύουσιν (Jas. 2:19), ἐθνη ἐπιζητούσιν (Mt. 6:32), τὰ πνεύματα προσεπιπτον (Mk. 3:11). But the only rule on the matter that is true for N. T. Greek is the rule of liberty. The papyri show the same variety of usage.¹ So does the LXX. In the examples given above the MSS. often vary sharply and examples of the singular verb occur with all of them, δαίμονια more frequently with the singular verb, as εἰσήλθεν δαίμονια πολλά (Lu. 8:30), but παρεκάλουν in next verse. So in Lu. 4:41 we have δαίμονια ἐξήρ- χετο and a little further on οὐ δεισιαν. In Jo. 10:4 we see a similar change in the same sentence, τα πρόβατα αὐτῷ ἀκολουθεί ὃτι οἴδασιν. The same indifference to the Attic rule appears about things as about persons. Thus ἡμα φανερωθῇ τὰ ἔργα του θεου (Jo. 9:3) and ἐφάνησαν τὰ ρήματα (Lu. 24:11). In Rev. 1:19 we find ἀ εἰσίν καὶ ἀ μέλλει γενέσθαι. The predicate adjective will, of course, be plural, even if the verb is singular, as φανερά ἐστιν τὰ τέκνα (1 Jo. 3:10). Cf. Gal. 5:19. Winer² and (to some extent) Blass³ feel called on to explain in detail these variations, but one has to confess that the success is not brilliant. It is better to regard this indifference to congruity as chiefly an historical movement characteristic of the κοινή as shown above. Even the Attic did not insist on a singular verb with a neuter plural of animate objects when the number of individuals was in mind. The neuter plural was in origin a collective singular. In 1 Cor. 10:11 the MSS. differ much between συνέβαλεν and —ον.

3. Collective Substantives. These show a similar double usage. Thus we have ἐκασθησεν περὶ αὐτῶν ὁ χλος (Mk. 3:32) and so more commonly with these collective substantives like ὁ χλος, πλήθος, οἰκία, λαός. But plenty of examples of construction according to sense occur. So ὃ δε πλεῖστος ὁ χλος ἐστρωσαν (Mt. 21:8). Sometimes we have both together, as ἡκολουθεί αὐτῷ ὁ χλος πολύς, ὃτι ἔθεσαν (Jo. 6:2). Where there was such liberty each writer or speaker followed his bent or the humour of the moment. The same variation is to be noticed with the participle. Thus ὃ ὁ χλος ὃ μὴ γινώσκων τῶν νόμων ἐπάρατο εἰς (Jo. 7:49). Here the predicate is plural with the verb. Cf. also Lu. 23:1. But in Ac. 5:16 the participle φέροντες is plural, though the verb συνήρχετο is singular like πλήθος. Cf. also Ac. 21:36; 25:24; Lu. 2:13. It is not, of course, necessary that a predicate substantive should agree in number with the subject. So ἐστε ἐπιστολὴ Χριστοῦ (2 Cor. 3:3).

4. The Pindaric Construction. Another complication is possible

¹ Moulton, Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901, p. 436.
² W.-Th., p. 514 f.
³ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 78.
when several subjects are united. If the predicate follows this compound subject, it is put in the plural nearly always. But the "Pindaric construction" (σχήμα Πινδαρικόν) puts the verb in the singular. Blass says German cannot do this, and he ignores the N. T. examples. In Jas. 5:2 f. we have a striking example: 'Ο πλούτος ύμων σέφημεν, καὶ τὰ ἴματα ύμων σητόβρωτα γέγονεν, ὁ χρυσός ύμων καὶ ὁ ἄργυρος κατίωται. Here κατίωται is natural like the English translation, 'is cankered' (A.V.). Note also Mt. 6:19, ὅπου σις καὶ βρώσις ἀφανίζει ('where moth and rust doth corrupt,' A.V.). Other examples are Mk. 4:41, καὶ ὁ ἄργυρος καὶ ἡ θάλασσα ὑπακουὲι αὐτῷ; 1 Cor. 15:50, ὅτι σάρξ καὶ ἀσμα βασιλείαν θεοῦ κληρονομήσαι οὐ δύναται. Here the principle of anacoluthon suggested by Moulton will hardly apply. It is rather the totality that is emphasized by the singular verb as in the English examples. But when the predicate comes first and is followed by several subjects, anacoluthon may very well be the explanation, as in the Shakespearean examples given by Moulton. The simplest explanation (see under 5) is that the first subject is alone in mind. Thus in 1 Cor. 13:13 νυνὶ δὲ μένει πίστις, ἐλπὶς, ἀγάπη, τὰ τρία ταῦτα (cf. English 'and now abideth faith, hope, love, these three,' like the Greek). Cf. also 1 Tim. 6:6. However, in Mt. 5:18, ἐὼς ἀν παρέλθη ὁ οὐρανός καὶ ἡ γῆ it seems rather the totality that is emphasized as above. See Jo. 12:22. In Rev. 9:12, ἵδε ἔρχεται ἐτι δόρο οὐαὶ μετὰ ταῦτα, probably the neuter conception of the interjection prevails, though just before we have ἡ οὐαὶ ἡ μία. In Lu. 2: 33, ἢν ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡ μήτηρ θαμμάζουτες, the copula follows one plan and the participle another. So also ἢν καθήμεναι (Mt. 27:61). Just so ὡφθη Μωσῆς καὶ Ἡλέαις συνυλαλοῦντες (Mt. 17:3). Cf. Eph. 4:17 f. In Rev. 21:16, τὸ μήκος καὶ τὸ πλάτος καὶ τὸ ὄψις αὐτῆς ἵσα ἐστίν, the neuter plural adjective and singular copula are regular.

5. Singular Verb with First Subject. It is very common indeed for the verb to have the singular with the first of the subjects. Cf. Jo. 2:2, 12; 3:22; 18:15; Ac. 11:14. But on the other hand we have προσπορεύονται αὐτῷ ἰάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάννης οἱ υἱοὶ Ζεβεδαίου (Mk. 10:35). Cf. also Lu. 23:12; Jo. 21:2; Ac. 5:24. In Ac. 25:23 one participle is singular and the other plural. So in Ac. 5:29 we meet ἀποκριθεὶς δὲ Πέτρος καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι ἀπαν. With ἢ

1 Ib., p. 79.
2 Prol., p. 58. Sometimes Shakespeare used a singular verb for the sake of metre (Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 65), at other times more like our mod. Eng.: "It is now a hundred years since," etc. Cf. Gk. ἕστιν ὁι, etc. Cf. also Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 18; Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., pp. 263-268.
the verb is usually in the singular in the N. T. So Mt. 12:25
πάσα πόλις ἢ ὁικία μερισθείσα καθ’ ἑαυτῆς οὐ σταθήσεται. Cf. also
Mt. 5:18; 18:8; Eph. 5:5. In Gal. 1:8 Blass\textsuperscript{1} thinks it
would be impossible to have εὐαγγελιζομένα with ήμεις ἢ ἀγγέλος.
But the impossible happens in Jas. 2:15, ἐὰν ἄδελφος ἢ ἄδελφη
γυμνοὶ ὑπάρχωσιν. We have a similar difficulty in English in
the use of the disjunctive and other pronouns. One will
loosely say: "If any one has left their books, they can come and
get them."

6. The Literary Plural. We have already mentioned the use
of the plural in a kind of impersonal way to conceal one's identity,
as τεθνήκασιν (Mt. 2:20), αἰτοῦσιν (Lu. 12:20) and the general
indefinite plural like ὅς λέγουσιν, (Rev. 2:24). The critics disagree
sharply about it (the literary plural). Blass\textsuperscript{2} flatly denies that we
have any right to claim this literary plural in Paul's Epistles be-
cause he associates others with himself in his letters. Winer\textsuperscript{3}
in-
sists that Paul often speaks in his apostolic character when he
uses the plural and hence does not always include others. Moul-
ton\textsuperscript{4} considers the matter settled in favour of the epistolary plural
in the κοινὴ. He cites from the papyri several examples. So Tb.P.
26 (ii/B.C.) ὅτι μοι ἐν Πτολεμαίδει — προσέπεσεν ἡμῖν, B.U. 449
iii/A.D.) ἀκούσας ὅτι ὑπήρθεν ἀγωνιοῦμεν J.H.S. xix 92 (ii/A.D.) χαίρε
μοι, μήτερ γυμνυτάτη, καὶ φροντίζετε ἡμῶν. Dick\textsuperscript{5} has made an ex-
haustive study of the whole subject and produces parallels from
late Greek that show how easily ἐγώ and ἡμεῖς were exchanged.
The matter can be clarified, I think. To begin with, there is no
reason in the nature of things why Paul should not use the literary
plural if he wished to do so. He was a man of culture and used to
books even if he used the vernacular κοινὴ in the main. The late
Greek writers did; the papyri show examples of it. G. Milligan
(Thess., p. 132) cites Tb. P. 58 (ii/B.C.) εὐρήκαμεν — εὐρον — βεβου-
λεύμεθα; P. Hib. 44 (iii/B.c.) ἐγράψαμεν — ὁρῶντες — ὡμην; P. Heid.
6 (iv/A.D.) πιστεύομεν — γράφω καὶ φλυαρήσω; and an inscription,
possibly a rescript of Hadrian, 0. G. I. S 484, λούμεν — [μετεπεμ—]
ψάμην — βουληθεῖς — ἐδοξοῦν ἡμεῖν—ἐδοκιμάζομεν—ἐπιστέυον—ἡγησάμην
—νομίζω. Besides, Blass\textsuperscript{6} admits that we have it in 1 Jo. 1:4, where
γράφομεν does not differ in reality from γράφω of 2:1. But in Jo.
21:24 οἴδαμεν probably is in contrast to John, who uses οἴμαι just

\textsuperscript{1} Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 80. \textsuperscript{2} Ib., p. 166.
\textsuperscript{3} W.-Th., p. 517. \textsuperscript{4} Prol., p. 86.
\textsuperscript{5} Der schriftstell. Plu. bei Paulus (1900), p. 18.
\textsuperscript{6} Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 166.
below. In Jo. 1:14, as certainly in 1:16, others are associated with the writer. The author of Hebrews also uses the singular or plural according to the humour of the moment. Thus πειθόμεθα—ἐχομεν (13:18) and the next verse παρακαλῶ—ἀποκατασταθῶ. Cf. also 6:1, 3, 9, 11, with 13:22 f. Now as to Paul. In Ro. 1:5 he has δι' οὐ ἐλάβομεν χάριν καὶ ἀποστολὴν. Surely he is talking of no one else when he mentions ἀποστολὴν. Blass overlooks this word and calls attention to χάριν as applicable to all. Then again in Col. 4:3 ἡμῖν is followed in the same verse by δέδεμαι. It is clear also in 1 Th. 2:18, θελήσαμεν—ἐγὼ μὲν Παῦλος. But what really settles the whole matter is 2 Cor. 10:1-11:6. Paul is here defending his own apostolic authority where the whole point turns on his own personality. But he uses first the singular, then the plural. Thus παρακαλῶ (10:1), θαρρῶ, λογίζομαι (10:2), στρατευόμεθα (10:3), ἠμείς (10:7), καυχήσωμαι, αἰσχυνθήσομαι (10:8), δόξω (10:9), ἔσμεν (10:11), καυχησόμεθα (10:13), etc. It is not credible that here Paul has in mind any one else than himself. Cf. also 2 Cor. 2:14-7:16 for a similar change from singular to plural. The use of the literary plural by Paul sometimes does not, of course, mean that he always uses it when he has a plural. Each case rests on its own merits. Jesus seems to use it also in Jo. 3:11, ὁ οἴδαμεν λαλοῦμεν καὶ ὁ ἐωράκαμεν μαρτυροῦμεν. In Mk. 4:30 (πῶς ὁμοιώσωμεν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ;) Christ associates others with him in a very natural manner.

(b) SUBSTANTIVE AND ADJECTIVE. The concord between adjective and substantive is just as close as that between subject and verb. This applies to both predicate and attributive adjectives. Here again number is confined to the singular and the plural, for the dual is gone. Cf. in lieu of the dual the curious καίρον καὶ καιροῦς καὶ ἡμίσυ καιροῦ (Rev. 12:14). When adjectives and participles deviate from this accord in number or gender (Eph. 4:17 f.; 1 Cor. 12:2; Rev. 19:14), it is due to the sense instead of mere grammar, κατὰ σύνεσιν. Thus in Mk. 9:15 we have ὁ ὠχλος ἴδοντες, Ac. 3:11 συνεδραμεν πᾶς ὁ λαὸς ἐκθαμβοῖ, Lu. 2:13 στρατιὰς αἰνοῦντων, Mk. 8:1 ὥρθον ὄντος καὶ μὴ ἐχόντων, (note both), Ac. 21:36 πλήθος κράζοντες, etc. Cf. ὁ ὠχλος ἐπάρατοι (Jo. 7:49). In Ph. 2:6 τὸ ἐίναι ἵστα θεῶ the plural adjective differs little from ἵσταν in adverbial sense. Cf. ταῦτα τί ἐστιν εἰς τοσοῦτος (Jo. 6:9), τί ἀν εἶνε ταῦτα (Lu. 15:26).

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 166.
(C) REPRESENTATIVE SINGULAR. But other points come up also about the number of the substantives. One is the use of the singular with the article to signify the whole class. The examples are frequent, such as ὁ ἀγαθός ἀνθρωπός (Mt. 12:35), σημεία τοῦ ἀποστόλου (2 Cor. 12:12), ὁ ἐργάτης (Lu. 10:7), τοῦ Ἰουδαίου (Ro. 3:1), τῶν πτωχῶν (Jas. 2:6). This discussion about the number of nouns could more properly be treated under syntax of nouns, but I have no such chapter. Cf. Cases.

(d) IDIOMATIC PLURAL IN NOUNS. Abstract substantives occur in the plural in the N. T. as in the older Greek, an idiom foreign to English. Thus πλεονεξία (Mk. 7:22), προσωπολημψίας (Jas. 2:1). Cf. also φόνοι Mt. 15:19; πάς πορνείας 1 Cor. 7:2. In 2 Cor. 12:20 and 1 Pet. 2:1 both the singular and the plural occur in contrast. This use of the plural of abstract substantives does indeed lay stress on the separate acts. Some words were used almost exclusively in the plural, or at any rate the plural was felt to be more appropriate. So αἰώνες in the sense of ‘world’ (Heb. 1:2) or ‘eternity,’ as εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων (Gal. 1:5), or with singular and plural, as τοῦ αἰὼν τῶν αἰώνων (Eph. 3:21). Cf. also τὰ ἁγία for 'the sanctuary' (Heb. 8:2) and ἁγία ἁγίων for ‘the most Holy Place’ (Heb. 9:3). The word οὐρανός is used in the singular often enough, and always so in the Gospel of John, as 1:32, but the plural is common also. Cf. Paul's allusion to "third heaven" (2 Cor. 12:2), an apparent reflection of the Jewish idea of seven heavens. In English we use "the heavens" usually for the canopy of sky above us, but ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν uniformly in the N. T., as Mt. 3:2. The Hebrew בֵּיתֵי הוא is partly responsible for οὐρανοί. The so-called "plural of majesty" has an element of truth in it. For further details see Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 83. A number of other words have this idiomatic plural, such as ἐκ δεξιῶν, ἐκ ἀριστερῶν, ἐκ εὐωνύμων (Mt. 25:33), εἰς τὰ δεξιὰ μέρη (Jo. 21:6), ἐν τοῖς δεξιοῖς (Mk. 16:5), ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν (Mt. 2:1), ἀπὸ δυσμῶν (Mt. 8:11), θύρα (Ac. 5:19), πύλαι (Mt. 16:18), κόλποι (Lu. 16:23). But the singular of some of them is also found, as ἐν τῇ ἀνατολῇ (Mt. 2:9), ἐν δεξιᾷ (Eph. 1:20), πρὸ τῆς θύρας (Ac. 12:6). The plural of ἰμάτιον seems to mean only ἰμάτιον (not χιτῶν also) in Jo. 19:23 (cf. 19:2). For the plural αὕματα note Jo. 1:13. The names of feasts are often plural, such as τὰ ἑγκαίνια (Jo. 10:22), τὰ γενέσια (Mk. 6:21), τὰ ἀξιμα (Mk. 14:1), γάμοι (Mt. 22:2), σάββατα (Ac. 17:2). So also some cities have plural names, as Ἰεροσόλυμα (Mt. 2:1), Ἀθῆναι (Ac. 17:16), Κολοσσαί (Col. 1:2). Different are ἐπιστολαί (1 Cor.
(e) IDIOMATIC SINGULAR IN NOUNS. On the other hand the singular appears where one would naturally look for a plural. A neuter singular as an abstract expression may sum up the whole mass. Thus πᾶν ὄ in Jo. 6:37 refers to believers. Cf. also Jo. 17:2. The same collective, use of the neuter singular is found in τὸ ἔλαττον (Heb. 7:7). So not τὸ γεννώμενον (Lu. 1:35) but πᾶν τὸ γεγεννημένον (1 Jo. 5:4). The same concealment of the person is seen in τὸ κατέχον οἴδατε (2 Th. 2:6). The neuter plural indeed is very common in this sense, as τὰ μωρά, τὰ ἄσθενή, etc. (1 Cor. 1:27 f.). Then again the singular is used where the substantive belongs to more than one subject. So πανορμιόν ἔχετε τὴν καρδίαν (Mk. 8:17), ἔθεντο ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτῶν (Lu. 1:66), ἔπεσαν ἐκ πρόσωπων αὐτῶν (Mt. 17:6), περιζωσάμενοι τὴν ὀσφυν ὡμών (Eph. 6:14), ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς στολή λευκή (Rev. 6:11), ἀπὸ προσώπου τῶν πατέρων (Ac. 7:45), σιὰ στόματος πάντων (Ac. 3:18), ἐκ τῆς χειρὸς αὐτῶν (Jo. 10:39). In 1 Cor. 6:5, ἀνὰ μέσου τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ, the difficulty lies not in μέσου, but in the singular ἀδελφοῦ. The fuller form would have been the plural or the repetition of the word, ἀδελφοί καὶ ἀδελφοί. In all these variations in number the N. T. writers merely follow in the beaten track of Greek usage with proper freedom and individuality. For copious illustrations from the ancient Greek see Gildersleeve, Greek Syntax, pp. 17-59.1

(f) SPECIAL INSTANCES. TWO or three other passages of a more special nature call for comment. In Mt. 21:7 (ἐπεκάθισεν ἐπάνω αὐτῶν) it is probable that αὐτῶν refers to τὰ ἰμάτια, not to τὴν ὄνων καὶ τὸν πόλον. In Mt. 24:26 ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ and ἐν τοῖς ταμείοις are in contrast. In Mt. 27:44 οί λῃσται is not to be taken as plural for the singular. Probably both reproached Jesus at first and afterwards one grew sorry and turned on the other, as Lu. 23:39 has it. In Mt. 22:1 and Mk. 12:17 ἔπεσαν ἐν παραβολάζει is followed by only one parable, but there were doubtless others not recorded. In Mt. 9:8, ἐδώξασαν τοὺς θεοὺς τὸν δόντα, ἐξουσίαν τοιαύτην τοῖς ἀνθρώποις, we have a double sense in δόντα, for Jesus had the ἐξουσία in a sense not true of ἀνθρώποις who got the benefit of it. So in Ac. 13:40 τὸ εἰρημένον ἐν τοῖς προφήταις is merely equivalent to ἐν βίβλῳ τῶν προφητῶν (Ac. 7:42). On these special matters see Winer-Schmiedel, p. 251. Cf. χερουβεῖν (Aramaic dual) and καρασκιά-ξοντα (Heb. 9:5).

VIII. Concord in Gender. Here we deal only with nouns, for verbs have no gender. But gender plays an important part in the agreement of substantive and adjective.

(a) FLUCTUATIONS IN GENDER. The whole matter is difficult, for substantives have two sorts of gender, natural and grammatical. The two do not always agree. The apparent violations of the rules of gender can generally be explained by the conflict in these two points of view with the additional observation that the grammatical gender of some words changed or was never firmly settled. All the constructions according to sense are due to analogy (Middleton in *Syntax*, p. 39). For further general remarks on gender see chapter on Declensions. In Ac. 11:28 Luke has λιμόν μεγάλην, not μέγαν. In Rev. 14:19 two genders are found with the same word, ἔβαλεν εἰς τὴν λῃσὺν τοῦ θυμοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ τῶν μέγαν. Cf. Lu. 4:25 and 15:14. The papyri vary also in the gender of this word (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 60). The common gender of θεός (Ac. 19:37, cf. θεα. 19:27) and similar words is discussed in the chapter on Declensions. In Rev. 11:4 αἱ ἐστῶτες skips over λυχνία curiously1 and goes back (the participle, not the article) to οὕτωι (οὕτωι εἰσίν αἱ δύο ἐλαίαι καὶ αἱ δύο λυχνίαι αἱ ἐνώπιον τοῦ κυρίου τῆς γῆς ἐστῶτες). But more about the Apocalypse later. In Mk. 12:28, ποία ἐστὶν ἐντολὴ πρώτη πάντων, Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 178) thinks that πᾶσῶν would be beside the point as it is rather the general idea of omnium. Is it not just construction κατὰ σύνεσιν?

In Ph. 2:1 εἶ τις σπλάχνα is difficult after εἶ τι παραμύθιον and εἶ τις κοινωνία. Blass2 cuts the knot boldly by suggesting εἶ τι in all the examples here which Moulton3 accepts with the sense of si quid valet, but he cites papyri examples like ἐπὶ τί μίαν τῶν . . . οἰκίων, Par. P. 15 (ii/B.C.); εἶ δέ τι περισσότερον γράμματα B.U. 326 (ii/A.D.). See also ἐάν δέ τι ἀλλα ἀπαιτηθῶμεν, Amh. Pap. II, 85, 11, and ἐὰν δέ τι ἄβροχος γένηται, ib., 15. Cf. Radermacher, *N. T. Gr.*, p. 184.

Perhaps after all this correction may be right or the text may be corrupt. The scribe could easily have written τις for τινα because of the preceding examples. A nodding scribe may even have thought σπλάχνα feminine singular. But what is one to say of oval in Rev. 9:12; 11:14? Shall we think4 of θλίψις or ταλαιπωρία? In Mt. 21:42 (Mk. 12:11), παρὰ κυρίου ἐγένετο αὕτη καὶ ἔστιν'

---

1 But Moulton (Cl. Rev., Apr., 1904, p. 151) cites from the pap. numerous false gender concords like τὴν πεπτωκότα, etc. Cf. Reinhold, De Graec. etc., p. 57; Krumbacher, Prob. d. neugr. Schriftspr., p. 50.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 81.
3 Prol., p. 59.
4 W.-Sch., p. 255.
Θαμασθή, we may have a translation of the Hebrew נְתָל (Ps. (117) 118:23), for οὗτος is used just before in reference to λίθου.

Τόπος would be the Greek idiom for αὕτη. It is even possible that αὕτη may refer to κεφαλῆς γωνίας. So also τῇ βασιλείᾳ in Ro. 11:4 comes from the LXX (Jer. 2:8; 2:28; 7:9; Hos. 2:8). Cf. τῇ Βασιλείᾳ τῇ δαμάλει in Tobit 1:5 B. See Declensions for further remarks.

(b) THE NEUTER SINGULAR. This is not always to be regarded as a breach of gender. Often the neuter conveys a different conception. So in the question of Pilate, τί ἐστιν ἀλήθεια (Jo. 18:38).

Cf. also τί οὖν ὁ νόμος; (Gal. 3:19), τί ἐστιν ἀνθρωπός; (Heb. 2:6), τί ἀν εἴῃ ταῦτα; (Lu. 15:26), εἴ δοκεῖς τίς εἶναι τι μηδέν ὑν; (Gal. 6:3). But on the other handy note εἶναι τινα (Ac. 5:36), αὕτη ἐστιν ἡ μεγάλη ἐντολή (Mt. 22:3), τίς ἡ πρόσληψις; (Ro. 11:15), τίς ἐστίν ἡ ἐλπίς; (Eph. 1:18). In particular observe τί ὁ Πέτρος ἐγένετο (Ac. 12:18) and οὗτος δὲ τί (Jo. 21:21). Cf. also τοῦτο χάρις; (twice) in 1 Pet. 2:19 f., where τοῦτο is predicate and really refers to εἰ ὁποι-φέρει τις and εἰ ὑπομενεῖτε. Cf. also ἡ ψυχή πλείον ἐστιν τῆς τροφῆς (Lu. 12:23). Indeed ταῦτα may be the predicate with persons, as ταῦτα τινες ἦν (1 Cor. 6:11). The neuter adjective in the predicate is perfectly normal in cases like ἰκανὸν τῷ τοιούτῳ ἡ ἐπιτιμία αὕτη 2 Cor 2:6). So also ἄρκετον τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἡ κακία αὕτης (Mt. 6:34).

Cf. also the reading of D ἄρεστον in Ac. 12:3. Blass¹ treats ἄρκετον above and ἰκανὸν ἐστιν, in Lu. 22:38 as like the Latin satis.

The neuter singular in the collective or general sense to represent persons is not peculiar to the N. T. So τὸ κατέχουν (2 Th. 2:6), πᾶν ὁ (Jo. 17:2), τὸ ἀπολωλός (Lu. 19:10), etc. So the neuter plural also as τὰ μισρὰ τοῦ κόσμου, τὰ ἁσθενῆ (1 Cor. 1:27). The neuter article τὸ Ἄγαρ (Gal. 4:25) deals with the word Hagar, not the gender of the person. In Jas. 4:4 μοιχαλίδες in W. H. stands without μοιχαλοῖ καί, but none the less may be regarded as comprehensive.² Cf. γενεὰ μοιχαλίς (Mt. 12:39) and Hos. 2:4, 23. In 1 Cor. 15:10 note εἰμὶ ὁ εἰμὶ, not ὁς, a different idea.

(C) EXPLANATORY ὁ ἐστιν AND τοῦ ἐστιν. A special idiom is the relative ὁ as an explanation (ὁ ἐστιν) and the demonstrative τοῦτ’ ἐστι, which are both used without much regard to the gender (not to say number) of antecedent or predicate. Thus in Mk. 3:17 ὄνομα Βοανηργές, ὁ ἐστιν υἱὸς βροντῆς; 12:42 λεγέται δύο ὁ ἐστιν κοδράντης; 15:16 τῆς αὐλῆς, ὁ ἐστιν πραιτώριοι; 15:22 Γολγοθάν τόπου, ὁ ἐστιν κρανίον τόπος; (cf. Mt. 27:33); ῥαββεί, ὁ λέγεται (Jo. 1:38): 1:42 Μεσίαν ὁ ἐστιν; Col. 3:14 τῆς ἀγάπης, ὁ ἐστιν σύνδεσμος;

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 76. ² Cf. W.-Sch., p. 254.
Eph. 6:17 μάχαιραν, ὁ ἔστιν ῥήμα θεοῦ. Blass¹ observes that it is only in the Apocalypse that this explanatory relative is assimilated to the antecedent or predicate, as λαμπάδες, ὁ εἰσιν τὰ πνεῦματα (Rev. 4:5), but ὅφθαλμοὺς ἐπτά, οἱ εἰσιν τὰ πνεῦματα (5:6). But it is otherwise with the ordinary relative, as ὁ ναὸς τοῦ θεοῦ, οὕτως ἔστε ὑμεῖς (1 Cor. 3:17) Φιλίππους, ἥτις ἔστιν πρώτη πόλις (Ac. 16:12); ὑπὸ τῶν ἀντικειμένων, ἥτις ἔστιν αὐτοῖς ἐνδειξις ἀπωλείας (Ph. 1:28); ἐν ταῖς θλίψεις μου ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν, ἥτις ἔστιν δόξα ὑμῶν (Eph. 3:13). The use of τούτ’ ἔστιν is a common idiom in the later Greek (less so in the older) and is exactly equivalent to the Latin id est and has no regard to case, number or gender. So Ἐλώι--τούτ’ ἔστιν θεέ μου (Mt. 27:46); τούτ’ ἔστιν τοὺς ἀδελφοῦς (Heb. 7:5). Cf. Heb. 2:14; 9:11, etc. See further p. 399, and ch. XV, VII, (d), 10.

(d) THE PARTICIPLE. It often has the construction κατὰ σύνεσιν, as in Mk. 9:26, κράζας καὶ πολλὰ σπαρακές referring to τὸ πνεῦμα. Cf. Lu. 2:13 στρατιάς αἰνοῦτων; πλήθος κράζοντες (Ac. 21:36); βοῶντες (25:24). But on the other hand note ἀναστὰν πλήθος (Lu. 23:1). So also in 1 Cor. 12:2 ἐθνη ἀπαγόμενοι; Eph. 4:17 f. ἔθνη ἔσκοπον, τωμένοι; Rev. 4:8 χῶα, ἐν καθ’ ἐν ἔχων λέγοντες; 11:15 φωναὶ μεγάλαι λέγοντες (cf. φωνή λέγουτα, Rev. 9:14); 19:14 στρατεύματα ἐνδεδυμένοι. Cf. θερίον γέμουτα (Rev. 17:3). Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 526) takes ἐσκοτωμένοι in Eph. 4:18 with νῦν: Cf. also πλήθος φέροντες (Ac. 5:16). Cf. Lu. 19:37. So (αἱ ἐκκλησίαι) ἀκούοντες (Gal. 1:22 f.). But in Rev. 21:14 τὸ τείχος ἔχων, seems a mere slip. But ζῶον—ἔχων (Rev. 4:7) may be mere confusion in sound of ἔχον and ἔχων. See also φωνή—λέγον (4:1), φωναὶ—λέγοντες (11:15), λυχνίαι—ἐστῶτες (11:4). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 87) cites ζῶον—ἀστράπτων from Apocalypsis Anastasiae (pp. 6, 13).

(e) ADJECTIVES. The question of an adjective's using one form for more than one gender has been already discussed at length in the chapter on Declensions. Thus στρατιάς οὐρανίου (Lu. 2:13) is not a breach of concord, for οὐρανίου is feminine. If masculine and feminine are used together and the plural adjective or participle occurs, the masculine, of course, prevails over the feminine when persons are considered. Thus ἤν ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡ μῆτρα θαυμάζοντες (Lu. 2:33). So also Ἀγρίππας καὶ Βερνίκη ἀσπασμένοι (Ac. 25:13) and even with the disjunctive ἤ, as ἀδελφὸς ἥ αδελφή γυμνοὶ (Jas. 2:15). In Rev. 8:7 the neuter plural is used of two nouns (one feminine and one neuter), χάλαζα καὶ πῦρ μεμιγμένα. Cf. φθαρτοῖς, ἀργυρῷ ἢ χρυσίῳ (1 Pet. 1:18), same gender. So ποικίλαις νύσσαις καὶ βασάνοις (Mt. 4:24), πάσης ἀρχῆς καὶ

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 77.
εξουσίας (Eph. 1:21), etc. Thus we may note πόλις ή οίκία μερισθείσα (Mt. 12:25), the same gender. But when different genders occur, the adjective is usually repeated, as in ποταποὶ λίθοι καὶ ποταμοὶ οἶκοδομαὶ (Mk. 13:1), πᾶσα δόσις καὶ πάν δώρημα (Jas. 1:17), οὕρανὸν καινὸν καὶ γῆν καινήν (Rev. 21:1), etc. There is emphasis also in the repetition. But one adjective with the gender of one of the substantives is by no means uncommon. Thus in Heb. 9:9, δῶρα τε καὶ θυσίαι μὴ δυνάμεναι, the last substantive is followed, while in Heb. 3:6, ἄν τὴν παρρησίαν καὶ τὸ καύχημα μέχρι τέλους βεβαιάν κατάσχωμεν, the first rules in gender. Per contra note ύπὸν ἄρσεν Rev. 12:5. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 86) cites φίλε τέκνον from the Iliad, XXII, 84.

IX. Concord in Case. This is not the place for the syntax of the cases. That matter belongs to a special chapter.

(a) ADJECTIVES. They concur in the case of the substantive with which they are used. The variations are either indeclinable forms like πλήρης in Jo. 1:14 (agreeing with αὐτοῦ or δόξαν) or are due to anacoluthon, as Jas. 3:8 τὴν δὲ γλώσσαν οὗτε γλῶσσαι δύναται ἀνθρώπων ἀκατάστατον κακῶν, μεστὴ ἰου (so W. H. punctuate).

(b) PARTICIPLES. They lend themselves readily to anacoluthon in case. Thus ἔδοξε τοῖς ἀποστόλοις καὶ τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις, γράφαντες (Ac. 15:22 f.). See Mk. 7:19 καθαρίζων. Mk. 6:9 has ὑποδεδεμένους, whereas before we have αὐτοῖς and αἱρόμεν. But W. H. read ἐνδύσασθαι (Nestle, ἐνδύσασθε). In Mk. 12:40, ὁι κατέσθεντες καὶ προσευχόμενοι we have a nominative in apposition with the ablative ἀπὸ τῶν γραμματέων τῶν θελόντων. In Ph. 3:18 f. τοὺς ἐχ-ρούς is in agreement with the case of οὗς, while of οἱ φρονοῦντες below skips back to πολλοί. Sometimes, as in ἐπιστευθήσαν τὰ λόγια (Ro. 3:2), the substantive will make sense as subject or object of the verb. In Heb. 9:10 δικαιώματα ἐπικείμενα in apposition with θυσίαι skips over the parenthetical clause between. Cf. also ἀρξάμενοι (Lu. 24:47), ἀρξάμενος (Ac. 1:22. Cf. Lu. 23:5), ἀρξάμενος (Ac. 10:37). Note this idiom in Luke's writings.

(c) THE BOOK OF REVELATION. It is full of variations (solecisms) from case-concord, especially in appositional clauses. Thus in Rev. 7:9 after ἐδοξοῦν, καὶ ἵδοῦ we first have the nomina-

2 The exx. of this indecl. use of πλήρης are abundant in MSS. of the N. T., occurring in most passages of the N. T. See Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 81. The pap. confirm the N. T. MSS. See Moulton, Prol., p. 50. See ch. VII, 2, (f), of this book, for details.
tive with ἰδοὺ and then the accusative with εἶδον. Thus ὅ μάρτυς (Rev. 1:5) retains the nominative rather than the ablative ἀπὸ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, whereas in 11:18 τοὺς μικροὺς is in apposition with the dative τοῖς δούλοις, κτλ. Cf. 20:2 where ὅ ὅφις (text, marg. acc.) is in apposition with the accusative τὸν δράκοντα. The papyri show the idiom. Cf. τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ—ὁ διάτοχος — (=διαδ.) in Letr. 149 (ii/A.D.), 'Αντιφίλου Ἑλλῆς—ἱππάρχης in B.G.U. 1002 (i/B.C.). Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 60. The Apocalypse is thus by no means alone. See also παρὰ τῷ Προστούμοι τὸν εὐρύντα B.G.U. 846 (ii/A.D.), ἦκουσα Τοθής λέγων P. Par. 51 (B.C. 160), εἰμὲ λέλυκας πολλαῖς ἐχων, ib. In particular the participle is common in the nominative in the Apocalypse. In the case of ἀπὸ ὅ ὁμ γαῖ ὅ ἠν καὶ ὅ ἐρχόμενος the nominative is evidently intentional to accent the unchangeableness of God (1:4). Cf. this formula in 1:8; 4:8; 11:17; 16:5. Ὁ νικῶν occurs as a set phrase, the case being expressed by αὐτὸς which follows. So in 2:26 αὐτῶ (τηρῶν also); 3:12 αὐτόν, 21 αὐτῷ. But in τῷ νικῶντι δῶσῳ αὐτῷ 2:7, 17, the case is regularly in the dative without anacoluthon. The wrong case appears with ἔχων in 1:16 (almost separate sentence) if it is meant to refer to αὐτοῦ or gender if φωνῇ; 9:14 (ὁ ἔχων, in apposition with ἄγγέλῳ); 10:2 ἔχων (sort of parenthesis, cf. 1:16); 14:14 ἔχων (loosely appended); 19:12 (loose connection of ἔχων). In 5:6 and 17:3 ἔχων has wrong gender and case. This participle seems to be strung on loosely generally, but in 21:11 ff. the proper case and gender occur. Cf. also Ἡ λέγουσα (2:20) and λέγων (14:7). In 14:12 οἱ τηροῦντες is a loose addition like ἡ καταβαίνουσα (3:12). More difficult seems ἐν καμίνῳ πεπυρωμένης (1:15), margin πεπυρωμένου. In 19:20 τὴν λίμνην τοῦ πυρὸς τῆς καιομένης the participle agrees in gender with λίμνην and in case with πυρὸς. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 86) cites ἀπέχω παρ’ αὐτοῦ τῶν ὁμολογοῦτα (Amh. Pap. II, in to 113, where regularly the accusative of a participle is in apposition with a genitive or ablative). He gives also Oxy. P. I N 120, 25, οὗ δέδοκται γὰρ ἡμῖν ἔχειν τι δυστυχοῦσης; Flinders-Pet. Pap. III 42 C (3) 3, ἀδικοῦμεθα ὑπὸ Ἀπολλωνίου ἐμβάλλων. Dittenberger (Or. inscr. 611) gives Σεβαστοῦ and υἱὸς in apposition. But the point of difficulty in the Revelation of John is not any one isolated discord in case or gender. It is rather the great number of such violations of concord that attracts attention. As shown above, other books of the N. T. show such phenomena. Observe especially Luke, who is a careful writer of education. Note also Paul in Ph. 1:30 where ἔχοντες (cf. this word in Rev.) is used with ὅμιν,
and 2 Cor. 7:5 ἰμών—θαλάμενοι. Similar discords occur in the LXX, as in Jer. 14:13; Dan. 10:5-7; 1 Macc. 13:16; 1 Macc. 15:28; and indeed occasionally in the very best of Greek writers. The example in 1 Macc. 13:16 (λαὸν λέγοντες) is worth singling out for its bearing on both case and number. Nestle (Einf. in das griech. N. T., p. 90 f.) notes the indeclinable use of λέγων and λέ γοντες in the LXX, like τὰς ἀμύνες. Cf. Nestle, Phil. Sacra., p. 7. See also Thackeray, Gr., p. 23. One Must not be a slavish martinet in such matters at the expense of vigour and directness. The occasion of anacoluthon in a sentence is just the necessity of breaking off and making a new start. But the Apocalypse demands more than these general remarks. Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 534) calls attention to the fact that these irregularities occur chiefly in the description of the visions where there would naturally be some excitement. Moulton1 argues from the fact that the papyri of uneducated writers show frequent discord in case that John was somewhat backward in his Greek. He speaks of "the curious Greek of Revelation," "the imperfect Greek culture of this book." He notes the fact that most of the examples in both the papyri and Revelation are in apposition and the writer's "grammatical sense is satisfied when the governing word has affected the case of one object."2 Moulton3 cites in illustration Shakespeare's use of "between you and I." This point indeed justifies John. But one must observe the comparative absence of these syntactical discords in the Gospel of John and the Epistles of John. In Ac. 4:13 both Peter and John are called ἀγαρίμαιται καὶ ιδιώται. This need not be pushed too far, and yet it is noteworthy that 2 Peter and Revelation are just the two books of the N. T. whose Greek jars most upon the cultured mind and which show most kinship to the κοινή in somewhat illiterate papyri. One of the theories about the relation between 1 Peter and 2 Peter is that Silvanus (1 Pet. 5:12) was Peter's scribe in writing the first Epistle, and that thus the Greek is smooth and flowing, while in 2 Peter we have Peter's own somewhat uncouth, unrevised Greek. This theory rests on the assumption of the genuineness of 2 Peter, which is much disputed. So also in Acts Luke refines Peter's Greek in the reports

1 Exp., Jan., 1904, p. 71; Cl. Rev., Apr., 1904, p. 151; Prol., pp. 9, 60.
3 Ib. Merch. of Venice, iii, 2. Cf. also Harrison, Prol. to the Study of Gk. Rel., p. 168. In the Attic inscr. the noun is found in apposition with the abl., the loc. and in absolute expressions. Cf. Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 203 f.
of his addresses. Now in Jo. 21:24 we seem to have the comment of a brother (or several) on the Gospel of John which he has read and approved. Moulton\(^1\) naturally suggests the hypothesis that the Gospel and Epistles of John had the smoothing hand of this brother of culture (perhaps in Ephesus), while in the Apocalypse we have John's own rather uncultured Greek. One may add to this the idea of Winer about possible excitement and passion due to the great ideas of the book. In the Isle of Patmos John, if still there, would have little opportunity for scholarly help and the book may have gone out unrevised. There are other theories, but this matter of authorship is not the grammarians' task.

\(\text{(d) OTHER PECULIARITIES IN APPPOSITION. Further examples of apposition call for illustration. Thus in 1 Jo. 2:25, αὐτὴ ἐστὶν ἡ ἐπαγγελία, ἥν αὐτὸς ἐπηγγείλατο ἡμῖν, τὴν κωφὴν τὴν αἰώνιον we have τὴν κωφήν in the case of the relative (because nearer) and not in that of the antecedent. Then again in Jo. 1:38 ἔβαβειν is explained as διδάσκαλε, vocative in the predicate (cf. also 20:16), while in 1:41 Μεσσίαν is naturally interpreted as Χριστός. In Jo. 13:13 ὁ διδάσκαλος is in apposition with με where we would use quotation-marks. But this passage needs to be borne in mind in connection with Revelation. In 1 Cor. 16:21, τῇ ἔμη χειρὶ Παύλου, note the genitive in apposition with the possessive pronoun ἔμη according to the sense of the possessive, not its case. Once more the common use of the genitive of one substantive in practical apposition has already been noted in this chapter, III, (e), 5, Apposition. Thus ἡ ἐρωτή τῶν αξίων (Lu. 22:1). The use of τοῦ ἐστὶν with any case has already been alluded to under Gender. Note Mk. 7:2; Ac. 19:4; Ro. 7:18; Phil. 12; 1 Pet. 3:20; Heb. 9:11; 11:16, etc. In αὐτὸς σωτῆρ τοῦ σώματος (Eph. 5:23) αὐτός gives emphasis to the apposition. Inverse attraction of antecedent to case of the relative (see Pronouns) is really apposition.}

\(\text{(e) THE ABSOLUTE USE OF THE CASES (nominative, genitive, ablative and accusative). These will receive treatment in the chapter on Cases. Some of the peculiar nominatives noted in Revelation are the nominativus pendens, a common anacoluthon. Cf. τὰ ἐκ ναῶν and τὸ τηρῶν (Rev. 2:26). The parenthetical nominative is seen in Jo. 1:6, ὄνομα αὐτῷ ἰωάννης, where ἰωάννης might have been dative. But here merely the mention of the fact of the absolute use of the cases is all that is called for.}\)\(^2\)

\(^{1}\) Prol., p. 9. See also Zahn's Intr., § 74.

\(^{2}\) Cf. Gildersleeve, Gk. Spit., p. 3; Brag., Griech, Gr., pp. 373-376.
X. Position of Words in the Sentence.

(a) FREEDOM FROM RULES. The freedom of the Greek from artificial rules and its response to the play of the mind is never seen better than in the order of words in the sentence. In English, since it has lost its inflections, the order of the words in the sentence largely determines the sense. Whether a substantive is subject or object can usually be seen in English only thus, or whether a given word is verb or substantive, substantive or adjective. Even the Latin, which is an inflectional tongue, has much less liberty than the Greek. We are thinking, of course, of Greek prose, not of poetry, where metre so largely regulates the position of words. The N. T. indeed enjoys the same freedom that the older Greek did with perhaps some additional independence from the vernacular koινή as contrasted with the older literary language. The modern Greek vernacular has maintained the Greek freedom in this respect (Thumb, *Handb.* p. 200). The Semitic tongues also have much liberty in this matter. In English it is common to see words in the wrong place that make absurd bungles, as this, for instance: "The man rode a horse with a black hat." In Greek one may say φιλέι τὸν υἱὸν, ὁ πατήρ φιλέι τὸν υἱὸν, or φιλεῖ τὸν υἱὸν ὁ πατήρ, according to the stress in the mind of the speaker.2

(b) PREDICATE OFTEN FIRST. In Greek prose, where the rhetorical element has less play, the predicate very commonly comes first, simply because, as a rule, the predicate is the most important thing in the sentence. Thus μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεύματι (Mt. 5:3), εὐλογημένη σὺ ἐν γυναιξίν (Lu. 1:42), ἐγένετο δὲ (Lu. 2:1), καὶ ἐπορεύοντο (2:3), ἀνέβη δὲ (2:4), etc. But this is true so often, not because of any rule, but simply because the predicate is most frequently the main point in the clause. Blass3 even undertakes to suggest a tentative scheme thus: predicate, subject, object, complementary participle, etc. But Winer4 rightly remarks that he would be an empirical expositor who would insist on any unalterable rule in the Greek sentence save that of spontaneity.

(c) EMPHASIS. This is one of the ruling ideas in the order of words. This emphasis may be at the end as well as at the beginning of the sentence, or even in the middle in case of antithesis. The emphasis consists in removing a word from its usual position to an unusual one. So ἀλυκὸν γλυκὸ ποιήσαι ὕδωρ (Jas. 3:12). Thus

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 287.  
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 287.  
4 W.-Th., p. 551.
in Lu. 1:12 we have καὶ φόβος ἐπέπεσεν ἐπ’ αὐτόν, but in Ac. 19:17 καὶ ἐπέπεσεν φόβος ἐπὶ πάντας αὐτοὺς. Sometimes the words in contrast are brought sharply together, as in Jo. 17:4, ἐγώ σε ἔδοξαςα, and 17:5, νῦν δοξασόν με σύ. So ὑμῶν ἐμοὶ Lu. 10:16. Note also the intentional position of ὁ πατριάρχης in Heb. 7:4 ὁ δεκάτην Ἀβραάμ ἔδωκεν ἐκ τῶν ἄκροβην, ὁ πατριάρχης. So also in 1 Pet. 2:7, ὑμῖν οὖν ἡ τιμὴ τοῖς πιστεύουσιν, note the beginning and the end of the sentence. This rhetorical emphasis is more common in the Epistles (Paul's in particular) than in the Gospels and Acts for obvious reasons. Thus observe the position of au in Ro. 11:17 and of κάκειν in verse 23. In Heb. 6:19 ἀσφαλῆ τε καὶ βεβαιῶστε do not come in immediate contact with ἄγκυραν as adjectives usually do. Observe also the emphatic climax in τετελειμένου at the end of the sentence in Heb. 7:28. Cf. ἡ δῆ — κεῖται in Mt. 3:10. Note the sharpness given to οὗ in 1 Cor. 1:17 by putting it first. So 10:5. In 1 Cor. 2:7 θεοῦ σοφίαν throws proper emphasis upon θεοῦ. The position of the subordinate clause varies greatly. It often comes first, as in Lu. 1:1-4.

(d) THE MINOR WORDS IN A SENTENCE. In general they come close to the word to which they belong in sense. Thus the adj. is near the subst. and after it. So ὤδωρ ζῶν (Jo. 4:10), δι-δόσκαλε ἀγαθε (Mk. 10:17), ζωὴν αἰώνιον (ib.). But observe ὅλου ἀνθρώπου ὑγίῃ (Jo. 7:23), both adj. So also note δι’ ἀνύδρων τόπων, (Mt. 12:43), καλὸν σπέρμα (Mt. 13:27), ἔχος ἀνθρωπος (Mt. 13:28), where the adj. gives the main idea. With the repeated article the adj. has increased emphasis in ὁ ποιμὴν ὁ καλὸς (Jo. 10:11). With πνεῦμα ἁγίου this is the usual order (as Mt. 3:11), but also τὸ ἁγίου πνεῦμα (Ac. 1:8) or τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἁγίου (Jo. 14:26). In Ac. 1:5 the verb comes in between the substantive and adjective (ἐν πνεύματι βαπτισθῆσεθε ἁγίως) to give unity to the clause. So in Mt. 1:20, ἐκ πνεύματος ἐστιν ἁγίου. Cf. ζωὴν ἔχετε αἰώνιον (1 Jo. 5:13). In Ac. 26:24 note σε thus, τὰ πολλὰ σε γράμματα εἰς μανίαν περιτρέπει. So also in 1 Cor. 10:4 ἔπιον comes between τό and πόμα. The position of the genitive varies greatly, but the same general principle applies. The genitive follows as in τοῖς λόγοις τῆς χάριτος (Lu. 4:22), unless emphatic as in τῶν ἀλλοτρίων τήν φωνήν (Jo. 10:5). There is sharp emphasis in τῶν ὦποιων in Jas. 3:3. A genitive may be on each side of the substantive as in ἡμῶν οἰκία τοῦ σκήνους (2 Cor. 5:1). Sharp contrast may be expressed by proximity of two genitives, as in τῶν συνιστατέων μου, ὑμῶν δὲ ἀπόστολον (Ph. 2:25). There may be some contrast also in σύ μου νίπτεις τοὺς πόδας (Jo. 13:6). But the personal enclitic
pronouns have a tendency to come early in the sentence without emphasis, as πῶς ἦνεχθησάν σου οἱ ὄφθαλμοί (Jo. 9:10). Cf. ἢνα σου προσκυνήσω τὴν χέραν B.G.U. 423 (ii/A.D.). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 90) notes great freedom in the position of the genitive in the Attic authors and in the inscriptions. In the case of ὁ ἄνθρωπος οὗτος and οὗτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος one must not look for any fine-spun distinction, though the same general principle of emphasis exists.

In the matter of τὰ ταῦτα πάντα (Lu. 12:30) and πάντα ταῦτα (Mt. 6:32) the first word carries the emphasis just as in πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος and ὁ ὄχλος πᾶς. Cf. πάντα τὰ μέλη τοῦ σώματος (1 Cor. 12:12) and οἱ πατέρες ἡμῶν πάντες (1 Cor. 10:1) with ὁ πᾶς νόμος (Gal. 5:14).

Note the common Greek σὺ τίς εἶ (Jo. 8:25). The vocative is often at the beginning of the sentence, as πατήρ δίκαιε (Jo. 17:25), but not always, as in παρακλῶ δὲ ὑμᾶς, ἀδελφοί (1 Cor. 1:10). In Jo. 14:9 οὐκ ἐγνώκας με, Φίλιππε the vocative naturally comes after the pronoun. It comes within the sentence, as ὁ θεόφιλε (Ac. 1:1), or at either end according as occasion requires. Some set phrases come in formal order, as ἄνδρες ἀδελφοί καὶ πατέρες (Ac. 7:2), like our "brethren and sisters," "ladies and gentlemen," etc.

Other conventional phrases are ἄνδρες ἀδελφοί καὶ πατέρες (Ac. 8:3), χωρίς γυναικῶν καὶ παιδίων (Mt. 14:21), νῦκτα καὶ ἡμέραν (Ac. 20:31), σάρξ καὶ αἷμα (Mt. 16:17), βρώσις καὶ πόσις (Ro. 14:17), ζωτῶν καὶ νεκρῶν (Ac. 10:42); τὴν γην καὶ τὴν θάλασσαν (Ac. 4:24), ἡλίου καὶ λόγω (Lu. 21:25), τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ τῆς γῆς (Mt. 11:25), ἐργῳ καὶ λόγῳ (Lu. 24:19), Ἰουδαίους τε καὶ Ἐλλήνας (Ro. 3:9), δούλους οὐδὲ ἐλεύθερος (Gal. 3:28). The adverb generally has second place, as ὑψηλὸν λίαν (Mt. 4:8), but not always, as λίαν γὰρ ἀνέστη (2 Tim. 4:15). Blass¹ notes that Matthew often puts the adverb after imperatives, as καταβάτω νῦν (Mt. 27:42), but before indicatives, as ἐτι ὑστερῶ (Mt. 19:20), a refinement somewhat unconscious, one may suppose. In general the words go together that make sense, and the interpretation is sometimes left to the reader's insight.

In Eph. 2:3, ἡμεθα τέκνα φύσει ὄργης, note the position of φύσει between τέκνα and ὄργης. In Ro. 8:3, κατέκρινε τὴν ἀμαρτίαν ἐν τῇ σαρκί, the adjunct ἐν τῇ σαρκί goes in sense with κατέκρινε, not ἀμαρτίαν. But this matter comes up again under the Article. In Mt. 2:2, ἐδόμεν γὰρ αὐτοῦ τὸν ἀστέρα ἐν τῇ ἀνατολῇ, probably ἐν τῇ ἀνατολῇ belongs in sense to the subject (‘we being in the east,’ etc.).²

(c) EUPHONY AND RHYTHM. It will not do to say that em-

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 289.
² Porphyrios Logothetes as quoted by Agnes Lewis Smith in Exp. Times, Feb., 1908, p. 237.
phasis alone explains every unusual order of words in a Greek sentence. Take Jo. 9:6, for instance, ἐπέθηκεν αὐτοῦ τῷ πηλῶν ἐπὶ τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς. Here αὐτοῦ is entirely removed from ὀφθαλμοὺς and is without particular emphasis. It was probably felt that the genitive of the pronouns made a weak close of a sentence. Observe also Jo. 9:10, σου οἱ ὀφθαλμοί (cf. 9:11). Thus also 9:17, 26, 30. Note ἐπεσεν αὐτοῦ πρὸς τοὺς πόδας (Jo. 11:32) and οὐκ ἀν μου ἀπέθανεν ὁ ἄδελφος (ib.). So σοῦ μου νῦπτεις τοὺς πόδας (Jo. 13:6) where some emphasis by contrast may exist in spite of the enclitic form μου.

Cf. ὑμῖν ἐμοί in Ph. 3:1. But on the other hand we have ὁ ἄδελφος μου in Jo. 11:21 (cf. 11:23 σου) and τοῦ πατρὸς μου (Jo. 10:18). The tendency to draw the pronouns toward the first part of the sentence may account for some of this transposition, as in τὰ πολλὰ σε γράμματα εἰς μανίαν περιτρέπει (Ac. 26:24), but the matter goes much beyond the personal pronouns, as in ἐν πνεύματι βαπτισθῆσεσθε ἁγία (Ac. 1:5), μικρὰν ἔχεις δύναμιν (Rev. 3:8), etc. But a large amount of personal liberty was exercised in such transposition of words.1 Is there any such thing as ryhthm in the N. T.? Deissmann2 scours the idea. If one thinks of the carefully balanced sentences of the Attic orators like Isocrates, Lysias and Demosthenes, Deissmann is correct, for there is nothing that at all approaches such artificial rhythm in the N. T., not even in Luke, Paul or Hebrews. Blass3 insists that Paul shows rhythm in 1 Cor. and that the book is full of art. He compares4 Paul with Cicero, Seneca, Q. Curtius, Apuleius, and finds rhythm also in Hebrews which "not unfrequently has a really oratorical and choice order of words."5 He cites in Heb. 1:4 τοσοῦτω κρείττων γενόμενος τῶν ἄγγελων ὅσῳ διαφορώτερον παρ' αὐτοῦ κεκληρονομηκεν δύναμι; 1:5; 11:32; 12:1, 8, etc. In Greek in general he suggests that lively and animated discourse gives rise to dislocations of words. Now one would think Blass ought to know something of Greek style. But Deissmann will have none of it. He refers Blass to Schramm, who wrote in 1710 of De stupenda erudizione Pauli apostoli and thinks that Blass is wilful and arbitrary in his

---

use and proof of rhythm. On the other hand Sir W. M. Ramsay\(^1\) contends that Paul was a better Hellenist in point of culture than some suppose, and knew Greek philosophy and used it. It is after all partly a dispute about terms. If by rhythm one means grace and charm of diction that naturally belong to the expression of elevated ideas under the stress of chastened passion, surely one would be hypercritical to deny it to 1 Cor. 13 and 15, Ac. 17, Ro. 8 and 12, Eph. 3, Jo. 14-47, Heb. 2 and 11, not to mention many beautiful passages that seem perfect like pearls. At white heat nature often strikes off what is better than anything mere art can do even as to beauty of form and expression. Luke\(^2\) may even have known Thucydides, and yet one has no right to expect the "niceties of language\(^3\) in the vernacular which contribute so much to the charm of Plato." Intonation and gesture in spoken language take the place of these linguistic refinements to a very large extent. It is true that Paul's "Greek has to do with no school, with no model, but streams unhindered with overflowing bubbling direct out of the heart," but "yet is real Greek," as Wilamowitz-Mollendorff\(^4\) remarks. Wilamowitz-Mollendorff does indeed hold that Paul knew little Greek outside of the Greek Bible, but he thinks that his letters are unique in Greek literature. On Paul's Hellenism see chapter IV, and also G. Milligan, *Epistles to the Thess.*, p. lv. On p. lvi Milligan takes the writer's view that the "well-ordered passages" and "splendid outbursts" in Paul's writings are due to natural emotion and instinctive feeling rather than studied art. Bultmann (*Der Stil der Paulinischen Predigt and die Kynisch-stoische Diatribe*, 1910) finds that Paul had the essential elements of the Stoic Diatribe in his argumentative style (question and answer, antithesis, parallelism, etc.). Paul's art is indeed like that of the Cynic-Stoic Diatribe as described by Wendland,\(^5\) but he does not have their refinement or overpunctiliousness.\(^6\) It is not surprising to find that occasionally N. T. writers show unintentional metre, as is common with speakers and writets of any language. In the Textus Receptus of Heb. 12:13 there is a good hexameter, και τροχαί ας ὅροις ησατε τοις ποσιν

---

1. The Cities of Paul, 1908, pp. 6, 10, 34. Cf. Hicks, St. Paul and Hellen.
5. Beitr. zur Gesch. der Gk. Phil. and Rel., 1905, p. 3 f.
μμων, but the critical text spoils it all by reading ποιεῖτε. So also one may find two trimeters in Heb. 12:14 f. (οὐ—ἀπό) one in Jo. 4:35 (τετράμισσανος—ἐρχεται), one in Ac. 23:5 (ἀρχοντα—κακῶς). Green (Handbook to the Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 356) cites the accidental English anapaestic line "To preach the acceptable year of the Lord," the hexameter "Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them," and the iambic couplet "Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths are peace." But surely no one would call these writers poets because occasional metre is found in their writings. There is an unconscious harmony of soul between matter and form. Paul does indeed quote the Greek poets three times, once an iambic trimeter acataleptus from the comic poet Menander (1 Cor. 15:33) φθειρόν | σιν | θη | χρη | στα | ομι | λια | κακα, though one anapaest occurs (some MSS. have χρησθ'), once half an hexameter from Aratus (Ac. 17:28) τοῦ | γαρ | και | γενος | σμεν, and a full hexameter from Epimenides of Crete (Tit. 1:12) κρητες | α | ει | ψευ | στα | κακα | θηρια | γαστερε | αργα. How much more Paul knew of Greek poetry we do not know, but he was not ignorant of the philosophy of the Stoics and Epicureans in Athens. Blass1 indeed thinks that the author of Hebrews studied in the schools of rhetoric where prose rhythm was taught, such as the careful balancing of ending with ending, beginning with beginning, or ending with beginning. He thinks he sees proof of it in Heb. 1:1 f., 3, 4 f.; 12:14 f., 24. But here again one is inclined to think that we have rather the natural correspondence of form with thought than studied rhetorical imitation of the schools of Atticism or even of Asianism. We cannot now follow the lead of the old writers who saw many fanciful artistic turns of phrase.' Antitheses and parallelisms could be treated here as expressions of rhythm, but they can be handled better in the chapter on Figures of Speech. As a specimen of an early Christian hymn note 1 Tim. 3:16. Harnack (The Independent, Dec. 28, 1912) takes this as a Christmas hymn. Elizabeth (Lu. 1: 42-45), Mary (1:46-55) and Zacharias (1:67-79) break forth into poetic strains with something of Hebrew spirit and form. In Eph. 5:14 we have another possible fragment of a Christian hymn. The Lord's Prayer in Mt. 6: 9-13 is given in metrical arrangement by W. H. Cf. Hort, Intr. to N. T. in Gk., p. 319 f. In general on N. T. parallelism see Briggs, Messiah of the Gospels

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 297 f.
and Messiah of the Apostles. In 1 Cor. 13 one can see the beauty and melody of a harmonious arrangement of words. See also the latter part of 1 Cor. 15.

(f) PROLEPSIS is not uncommon where either the substantive is placed out of its right place before the conjunction in a subordinate clause like τὴν ἀγάπην ἵνα γνώτε (2 Cor. 2:4) and βιωτικὰ κριτήρια ἔδω ἔχητε (1 Cor. 6:4), or the subject of the subordinate clause even becomes the object of the previous verb like ἴδειν τὸν Ἰησοῦν τίς ἔστιν (Lu. 19:3). Cf. Ac. 13:32. But this betokens no studied art. Cf. Mk. 8:24; Lu. 10:26; Ro. 9:19, 20; 14: 10; 1 Cor. 15:36. So ἡμῖν in Ac. 3:12.

(g) HYSTERON PROTERON. We occasionally meet also an example of ὑστερον πρότερον like ἄγγέλους τοῦ θεού ἀναβαίνουτας καὶ καταβαίνουτος (Jo. 1:51), a natural inversion from our point of view. But Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 553) does not admit this figure in the N. T. Certainly not all the apparent examples are real. The order of πεπίστευκαμεν καὶ ἐγνώκαμεν (Jo. 6:69) is just as true as that of ἐγνώσαν καὶ ἐπίστευσαν (Jo. 17:8). Cf. also περιπατῶ καὶ ἀλλόμενος (Ac. 3:8) and ἥλατο καὶ περιεπάτει (Ac. 14:10) where each order suits the special case. Cf. 1 Tim. 2:4 and 2 Pet. 1:9 for alleged examples that disappear on close examination.

(h) HYPERBATON. Adverbs sometimes appear to be in the wrong place, a phenomenon common in all Greek prose writers. In 1 Cor. 14:7 ὄμως would come in more smoothly just before ετύ, but it is perfectly intelligible where it is. Cf. also Gal. 3:15 for similar use of ὄμως. Cf. distance of θηδη from κείται (Mt. 3:10). In Ro. 3:9 οὖ πάντως is our 'not at all,' while in 1 Cor. 16:12 πάντως ὦκ 'wholly not,' just as in 1 Cor. 15:51 πάντες οὓς κομηθησόμεθα means 'all of us shall not sleep,' not 'none of us shall sleep.' Cf. also οὖ πάντως in 1 Cor. 5:9 f., an explanation of the negative μή συναναμίγνυσθαι just before, 'not wholly.' In the case of οὖ μόνον in Ro. 4:12, 16, the words οὖ μόνον are separated and in 4:12 the repetition of the article τοῖς makes οὖ μόνον seem quite misplaced. Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 555) is certainly right in insisting that οὖχ ὦτι (2 Cor. 3:5) is not to be treated as ὦτι οὖκ. Cf. οὖχ ἵνα—ἀλλ´ ἵνα (2 Cor. 13:7). A more difficult passage is found in Heb. 11:3, εἰς τὸ μὴ ἐκ φαινομένων τὰ βλησίων γεγονέναι, where μὴ is the negative of the phrase ἐκ φαινομένων τὸ βλησίων γεγονέναι. In general the negative comes before the word or words that are negated. Hence οὐκ ἐγὼν (Ac.19:30), οὐκ ἔστιν (Gal. 3:20). But note μὴ πολλοὶ διδάσκαλοι γίνεσθε (Jas. 3:1). Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 257) notes the possible am-
biguity in Ac. 7:48 because of the use of οὐχ before ὁ ὑψιστος instead of before κατοικεῖ. Observe in strong contrasts how οτ; stands over against ἀλλά (Ro. 2:13). Blass¹ has little sympathy with the grammatical device of hyperbaton to help out exegesis. The construction, found in ὧς ἀπὸ σταδίων δεκαπέντε (Jo. 11:18) has been supposed to be a Latinism when compared with Lu. 24:13. So also with πρὸ ἐξ ἡμερῶν τοῦ πάσχα (Jo. 12:1) was formerly considered a Latinism. But Moulton² shows conclusively that it is Doric and Ionic before the possibility of Latin influence, and besides is common in the κοινή papyri, a mere coincidence with the Latin. See also ch. XIII, VII, (m), 5.

(i) POSTPOSITIVES. A number of words are always postpositive in Greek. In the N. T. ἀν, γάρ, γέ, δέ, μέν, μέντοι, οὖν, τε never begin a sentence, in harmony with ancient Greek usage. These words commonly in the N. T. come in the second place, always so with μέντοι (Jo. 4:27, etc.). In the case of μέν, the third place is occasionally found as 1 Pet. 2:4, the fourth as 2 Cor. 10:1, the fifth in Eph. 4:11; Jo. 16:22, or even the sixth in Jas. 3:17. It occupies the seventh place in Herm. Sim. viii, 5:1 (Mr. H. Scott has noted). In general these words vary in position according to the point to be made in relation to other words. So also οὖν is more commonly in the second, but varies to the third (Jo. 16:22) and fourth (1 Cor. 8:4). The same remark applies to γάρ, for which see Mk. 1:38; 2 Cor. 1:19. As to δέ, may not only go to the fourth place (Jo. 8:16), but even appears in the fifth (1 Jo. 2:2), οὖν περὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων δέ. It stands in the sixth place in Test. XII. Patr. Judah, 9:1 (Mr. H. Scott reports). In the case of γε it follows naturally the word with which it belongs as in Ro. 8:32 (ὦ γε), even in the case of ἀλλὰ γε (Lu. 24:21) which is always separated in the older Greek. Cf. also εἴ γε Eph. 3:2.

 analogous in the apodosis (not= ἐὰν) or with relatives or conjunctives, never begins a clause in Greek. It is usually the second word in the apodosis, either after the verb, as εἶπον ἂν (Jo. 14:2), or after οὐκ, as οὐκ ἂν (Mk. 13:20), or the interrogative, as τίς ἂν (Lu. 9:46). With the relative ἂν follows directly or as the third word, as ὦς ἂν and ὦς δ' ἂν (Mt. 23:16). Τε usually follows the word directly, as in πονηροῦς τε (Mt. 22:10), even after a preposition, as σῦν τε χιλίαρχοις (Ac. 25:23); but note τῶν ἔθνων τε (Ac. 14:5).

(j) FLUCTUATING WORDS. There is another group of words that vary in the matter, now postpositive, now not. Thus ἄρα

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 290.
² Prol., pp. 100 ff. Cf. also LXX, as Amos 1:1; 4:7, etc.
may be first in the clause (Mt. 12:28), contrary to older Greek custom. So also ἀραγε (Mt. 7:20) and ἀρα οὐ (Ro. 7:3). Except in a few instances like Ro. 8:1 the examples where ἀρα is post-positive in the N. T. are in questions after the interrogative or after a conjunction. Once (Ro. 10:18) μενοῦνγε begins the sentence. Τοιῶνου occurs only three times and twice begins the sentence (Lu. 20:25; Heb. 13:13) as τοιγαροῦν does (Heb. 12:1).

The indefinite τις sometimes comes first in the sentence, as τινὲς δέ (Lu. 6:2). Enclitics can therefore stand at the beginning, though not commonly so. In the case of ἤνεκεν its position is usually before the word except with the interrogative, as τίνος ἤνεκεν (Ac. 19:32), or a relative, as οὗ ἤνεκεν (Lu. 4:18). But χάριν follows its case save in χάριν τίνος (1 Jo. 3:12). Χωρίς precedes the word, but note οὗ χωρίς (Heb. 12:14). The N. T. therefore shows rather more freedom with these words.

(k) THE ORDER OF CLAUSES IN COMPOUND SENTENCES. Blass considers this a matter of style rather than of grammar. When the whole sentence is composed of a principal clause, with one or more subordinate clauses, the order of these clauses is largely dependent on the flow of thought in the speaker's mind. In the case of conditional as Mt. 17:4, final as in Mt. 17:27, and relative clauses as in Mt. 16:25, the dependent by rule precedes the principal clause. There is usually a logical basis for this order. But in Jo. 19:28 the final clause somewhat interrupts the flow of the sentence. Cf. also Ro. 9:11. In 2 Cor. 8:10, οὕτινες οὗ μόνον τὸ ποιήσαι ἄλλα καὶ τὸ θέλειν προευνήρξασθε ἀπὸ πέρυσι, there is no violent change of order. Logically the willing preceded the doing and makes the natural climax. Blass is undoubtedly right in refusing to take τίνι λόγῳ εὐθυγελισμὴν as dependent on εἰ κατέχετε (1 Cor. 15:2). In Jo. 10:36 we meet a somewhat tangled sentence because the antecedent of οὐ is not expressed. Here λέγετε is the principal verb, the apodosis of the condition, and has two objects (the relative clause and the ὅτι clause) with a causal clause added. So in Jo. 10:38 we have a good example of the complex sentence with two conditions, a final clause, an object-clause, besides the principal clause.

XI. Compound Sentences.

(a) TWO KINDS OF SENTENCES. The sentence is either simple or compound. The compound is nothing but two simple sentences.

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 291.  
2 Ib.  
3 On the whole subject of the position of words in the sentence see K.-G., Bd. II, pp. 592-604.
put together. All that is true of one part of this compound sentence may be true of the other as to subject and predicate. The same linguistic laws apply to both. But in actual usage each part of the compound sentence has its own special development. The two parts have a definite relation to each other. Originally men used only simple sentences. Cf. Brugmann, *Griech. Gr.*, p. 552.

(b) TWO KINDS OF COMPOUND SENTENCES (*Paratactic and Hypotactic*). In parataxis (παράταξις) we have co-ordination of two parallel clauses. Take Mk. 14:37 as an example, καὶ ἐρχέται καὶ εὐρίσκει αὐτοῦς καθεὑδοντας, καὶ λέγει τῷ Πέτρῳ. In hypotaxis (ὑπόταξις) one clause is subordinated to the other, as in οὐκ οἶδατε τί αἴτεῖσθε (Mk. 10:38) where τί αἴτεῖσθε is in the accusative case, the object of οἶδατε. Parataxis is the rule in the speech of children, primitive men, unlettered men and also of Homer. Cf. Sterrett, *Homer's Iliad*, N. 49.


(c) PARATACTIC SENTENCES. They are very common in the Sanskrit and in Homer (cf. Brugmann, *Griech. Gr.*, p. 555) and in the Hebrew. In truth in the vernacular generally and the earlier stages of language parataxis prevails. It is more common with some writers than with others, John, for instance, using it much more frequently than Paul or even Luke. In John καὶ sometimes is strained to mean 'and yet,' as in 3:19; 4:20, etc.¹ The κοινῇ shows a decided fondness for the paratactic construction which in the modern Greek is still stronger (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 184). As in the modern Greek, so in the N. T. καὶ, according to logical sequence of thought, carries the notion of 'but,' 'that,' besides 'and yet,' introducing quasi-subordinate clauses. For details concerning paratactic conjunctions see chapter on Particles. In the use of καὶ (cf. Heb.7) after ἐγένετο the paratactic καὶ borders very close on to the hypotactic ὅτι. Thus ἐγένετο δὲ καὶ ἀυτός τὸ πρόσωπον ἐστήρισεν (Lu. 9:51).

(d) HYPOTACTIC SENTENCES. They are introduced either by relative pronouns or conjunctions, many of which are relatives in origin and others adverbs. The subject of conjunctions will demand special and extended treatment later on (chapters on Modes and on Particles), and so will relative clauses. On the use of the relative thus see Brugmann, *Griech. Gr.*, p. 553. The propensity of the later Greek for parataxis led to an impoverishment of particles.

¹ Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 135,
Hypotactic sentences, once more, are either substantival, adjective or adverbial, in their relation to the principal or another subordinate clause. Thus in Lu. 22:2 τὸ πῶς ἀνέλωσιν is the substantive object of ἐξῆτον, as τὸ τίς ἐνι is of συνεζητεῖν in Lu. 22:23. As a sample of the subject-clause in the nominative take οὖ Μέλει σοι ᾧτι ἀπολλάμεθα (Mk. 4:38). In Mt. 7:12 ὅσα ἔδων θέλητε is an adjective sentence and describes πάντα. In Mt. 6:16 ὅταν νηστεύητε is an adverb in its relation to γίνεσθε.


**XII. Connection in Sentences.**

(a) **SINGLE WORDS.** These have connectives in a very natural way, as δύναμιν καὶ ἐξουσίαν—δαιμόνια καὶ υπόσους (Lu. 9:1). But common also is καὶ—καὶ (Jo. 2:14), τε—καί (2:15), and rarely τε—τε (Ac. 26:16). This tendency to break up into pairs is well shown in Ac. 2:9-11. For see Mt. 5:17, ἀλλά 2 Cor. 7:11, οὔδε Rev. 5:3. In enumerations the repetition of καὶ gives a kind of solemn dignity and is called polysyndeton. Cf. Rev. 7:12 ἡ εὐλογία καὶ ἡ δόξα καὶ ἡ σοφία καὶ ἡ εὐχαριστία καὶ ἡ τιμή καὶ ἡ δύναμις καὶ ἡ ἵσχυς τῷ θεῷ. Cf. also Rev. 4:11; 5:12; Ro. 9:4. Note also a similar repetition of οὔτε Ro. 8:38 f. For μήτε see Jas. 5:12. So with in Mk. 10:29. Perhaps, as Blass suggests, polysyndeton is sometimes necessary and devoid of any particular rhetorical effect, as in Lu. 14:21. But asyndeton is frequent also. It often gives emphasis. See Mt. 15:19; Jo. 5:3; 1 Cor. 14:24; 15:1 f. For a striking example of asyndeton see Ro. 1:29-31, where some variety is gained by change in construction (case) and the use of adjective instead of substantive, πεπληρωμένους πάση ἀδικία πονηρία πλεονεξία κακία, μεστοὺς φθόνου φόνου ἐρίδου δόλου κακοπθίας, ψυχριστάς, καταλάλους, θεσπυργείς, ὑβριστάς, ύπερηψάνους, ἀλαζόνας, ἐφευρετάς κακών, γονεύσιν ἀπειθεῖς ἀσυνέτους, ἀσυνθέτους, ἀστόργους, ἀνελήμονας. Cf. also 1 Cor. 3:12. Sometimes the connective is used with part of the list (pairs) and not with the rest, for the sake of variety, as in 1 Tim. 1:9 f. An example like εὐκαίρως ἀκαίρως is compared by Blass to *nolens volens*.

---


2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 277.

3 Ib.
(b) CLAUSES. But connection is by no means uniform between sentences. This remark applies to both the paratactic and the hypotactic sentences. Asyndeton in sentences and clauses is on the whole repugnant to the Greek language in the opinion of Blass. Hence compound sentences in the N. T. usually have connectives, but not always.

1. Paratactic Sentences. The co-ordinating conjunctions form the most frequent means of connecting clauses into one paratactic sentence. These conjunctions will receive special treatment in the chapter on Particles and here only some illustrations can be given. Καί, τε, δέ οὐδὲ μηδὲ, μέν and δέ, οὗτε, ἀλλὰ are the most frequent particles used for this purpose. They are more common indeed in historical writings, as in the Gospels and Acts. But in the Gospels the use of καί varies a good deal. Mark, for instance, has it more than 400 times, while John contains it only 100. Deissmann calls this use of καί primitive popular Greek. The presence of dialogue in John hardly explains all the difference, and even in John the first chapter uses it much more frequently than the last. As a good example of the use of καί turn to Mt. 4:23-25. Cf. Lu. 6:13--17 and Mk. 9:2. Τε is common chiefly in the Acts, as 14:11-13. Sometimes the use of καί between clauses amounted to polysyndeton, as in Jo. 10:3, 9, 12. Δε is perhaps less common in clauses (Jo. 4:6) except with μέν (Mt. 3:11). For δὲ καί see Jo. 2:2. Οὐδὲ is illustrated by Mt. 5:15, ἀλλὰ 5:17, are by Ac. 28:21. But asyndeton appears also, as in Lu. 6:27 f., ἀγαπάτε, ποιεῖτε, εὑρογείτε, προσέχεσθε, even if it be to a limited extent. Cf. Gal. 5:22. Blass points out that that is not a case of asyndeton where a demonstrative pronoun is used which reflects the connection. Cf. thus the use of τούτου, in Ac. 16:3; Jo. 5:6. Winer finds asyndeton frequent in cases of a climax in impassioned discourse, as in 1 Cor. 4:8, ἡδη κεκορεσμένοι ἐστέ· ἡδη ἐπλουτήστατε, χωρίς ἠμῶν ἐβασιλεύσατε. The absence of the connective gives life and movement, as in συνώπα, πεφίμωσο (Mk. 4:39). Observe also ὑπαγε πρῶτον διαλλάγηθι (Mt. 5:24), ὑπαγε ἐλεγξου (18:15), ἐγείρε ἀρων (Mk. 2:11), ἐγείρεσθε ἀγιωμεν (Mt. 26:46), ἀγε, κλαύσατε (Jas. 5:1). This use of ἀγε is common in the old Greek (Gildersleeve, Greek Syntax, p. 29). But in Jo. 1:46 we have ἔρχον και ἕδε. In 1 Tim. 3:16 the fragment of an early hymn is neatly balanced in Hebrew parallelism.

1 Gr. of N. T. Gr., p. 276.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 276.
4 W.-Th., p. 538.
Here the connective would be quite out of place.

In contrast the connective may also be absent, as in ὃμεῖς προσκυνεῖτε δ' σῶκ σίδατε, ὃμεῖς προσκυνοῦμεν δ' οἶδαμεν (Jo. 4:22). So Ac. 25:12. Cf. in particular 1 Cor. 15:42 ff., σπειρέται ἐν φθορᾷ, ἐγείρεται ἐν ἀφθαρσίᾳ. σπειρέται ἐν ἀτμιᾷ, ἐγείρεται ἐν δόξῃ. σπειρέται ἐν ἀσθενείᾳ, ἐγείρεται ἐν δυνάμει. σπειρέται σῶμα ψυχικόν, ἐγείρεται σῶμα πνευματικόν. Here the solemn repetition of the verbs is like the tolling of a bell. Cf. also Jas. 1:19, ταχύς εἰς τὸ ἀκοῦσαι, βραδύς εἰς τὸ λαλῆσαι, βραδύς εἰς ὅργην. John is rather fond of repetition with asyndeton in his report of Jesus' words, as ἐγώ εἰμι ἢ ὁδὸς καὶ ἡ ἀλήθεια καὶ ἡ ζωή· οὕτως ἐρχεῖται πρὸς τὸν παρέρα εἰ μὴ διὸ ἔμοι (14:6). Cf. 10:11; 15:13, etc. But this sort of asyndeton occurs elsewhere also, as in 1 Cor. 7:15, οὐ δεδούλωται ὁ ἀδελφός. Cf. also 7:23; Rev. 22:13. A common asyndeton in Luke occurs after καὶ ἐγένετο without another καί, as εἰπέν τις (11:1).

2. Hypotactic Sentences. In the nature of the case they usually have connectives. The subordinating conjunctions are more necessary to the expression of the exact shade of thought than in paratactic clauses. The closeness of connection varies greatly in various kinds of subordinate clauses and often in clauses of the same kind. The use of the correlative accents this point, as οἷος ὁ ἐπουράνιος, τοιοῦτοι καὶ οἱ ἐπουράνιοι (1 Cor. 15:48); ὦσπερ—οὕτως (Mt. 12:40). But real antithesis may exist without the correlative, as in Mt. 5:48; 6:2. In relative clauses the bond is very close and is sometimes made closer by agreement of the relative and antecedent not only in number and gender but even in case, as οἷς (Lu. 2:20) and τὸν ἄρτον ὃν (1 Cor. 10:16). There may be several relative clauses either co-ordinate (Ac. 3:2 f.) or subordinate to another (Ac. 13:31; 25:15 f.). So also the use of ἐπί τα, τότε, ἀρα, καί, ἀλλά, δέ in the apodosis accents the logical connection of thought. Cf. Mt. 12:28; Mk. 13:14; Jo. 7:10; 20:21; 1 Cor. 15:54; 2 Cor. 7:12, etc. But much closer than with temporal, comparative, conditional, or even some relative clauses is the tie between the principal clause and the subordinate objective, consecutive, final and causal clauses. These are directly de-
ependent on the leading clause. Interrogative sentences when in indirect discourse really become object-clauses, like τὸ τίς ἀρα ἐιθ (Lu. 22:23), object of σουκέτειν. The ὅτι, ἱνα, ὅπως (and ὅς rarely) clauses are closely knit to the principal clause as subject, object (direct or indirect) of the verb. There is a natural interblending between object and causal sentences, as shown by the use of ὅτι for both and διότι, in late Greek in the sense of 'that,' objective ὅτι. Cf. quod and quia in late Latin, and English the "reason that" and colloquial the "reason why." In Greek ὅτι even interchanges with εἰ (cf. English "wonder if" and "wonder that"). So ἐθαύμασεν εἰ ἤδη τέθυκεν (Mk. 15:44). Cf. Ac. 8:22; 26:8. Clauses with the consecutive idea usually have the infinitive in the N. T. Hypotactic sentences cannot be here discussed in detail, but only as illustrating the point of connection between sentences. Winer1 is hardly right in describing as asyndeton Jas. 5:13, κακοπαθεὶς τίς ἐν ὑμῖν' προσευχόμεθα, where εἰ is not used, and the structure is paratactic. He cites also δοῦλος ἐκλήθης; μή σοι μελέτω (1 Cor. 7:21). The questions in Jas. 2:19 f. are also paratactic. But more certain examples exist than these, where either a conjunction has dropped out or, as is more likely, we have original parataxis. Thus ἀφες ἐκβάλω (Mt. 7:4), ἀφες ὑδωμεν (Mt. 27:49) can be compared with δεῦτε Ἰδετε (Mt. 28:6), δεῦρο ἀποστείλω (Ac. 7:34), δεῦτε ἀποκτείνωμεν (Mk. 12:7) and the common Greek idiom with ἄγε, φέρε. Jas. 5:1. In Mk. 15:36 note ἀφετε ὑδωμεν. One verb really supplements the other much as the infinitive or participle. Cf. English "let us see." In the modern Greek as (abbreviation of ἀφες) is used uniformly as the English and almost like a particle. Of a similar nature is the asyndeton with θέλεις συλλέξωμεν (Mt. 13:28) and βούλεσθε ἀπολύσω (Jo. 18:39). Cf. θέλετε ποιήσω (Mk. 10:36). Cf. also ἔγειρεςθε ἄγωμεν (Mt. 26:46) above. These are all paratactic in origin, though hypotactic in logical sequence. But see chapter on Modes for further details. In the case of ὅρα, ὅρατε, βλέπετε, we can find examples of both the conjunctival use of μή and clear cases of asyndeton with some on the border line. Thus clearly conjunctival μή is found in βλεπέτω μή πέσῃ (1 Cor. 10:12), βλέπετε μή ἐπέλθῃ (Ac. 13:40), βλέπετε μή παραιτήσῃσθε (Heb. 12:25). Asyndeton is undoubtedly in ὅρα μη- δεν μηδεν έπιτῃς (Mk. 1:44) with which compare ὑπαγε δείξου in the same verse. Cf. also Mt. 8:4. Thus again ὅρατε μηδείς γινωσκέτω (Mt. 9:30) where note two imperatives as in ὅρατε, μή θροεισθε (Mt. 24:6). But in βλέπετε μή τίς ὑμᾶς πλανήσῃ (Mt. 24:4) and

1 W.-Th., p. 541.
3. The Infinitive and Participle as Connectives. A very common connection is made between clauses by means of the infinitive or the participle, sometimes with particles like ὁστε and πρὶν with the infinitive or ὤς, ὁσπερ, καίπερ, with the participle, but usually without a particle. The **infinitive** often is used with the article and a preposition, as ἐν τῷ εἰσελθεῖν (Lu. 9:34). Usually the infinitive is brought into the closest connection with the verb as subject (τὸ γὰρ θέλειν παράκειται μοι, Ro. 7:18) or object (βούλομαι προσεύχεσθαι ἀνδρας, 1 Tim. 2:8), or in a remoter relation, as ἔξηλθεν ὁ σκείρων τοῦ σκείροι (Mk. 4:3). The **participle** sometimes is an essential part of the predicate, as ἐπάυσατο λαλῶν (Lu. 5:4), or again it may be a mere addendum or preliminary or even an independent statement. Thus observe εἰσελθὼν, διαλεγόμενος καὶ πείθων in Ac. 19:8. As further examples of participles somewhat loosely strung together without a connective in more or less close relation to each other and the principal sentence see Ac. 12:25; 16:27; 23:27. The genitive absolute is common in such accessory participles. The only point to consider concerning the infinitive and participle here is the frequency with which they are used in the structure of the Greek sentence. Thus long sentences are easily constructed and sometimes the connection is not clear. Frequent examples of anacoluthon come from the free use of the participle, as will be shown later. See χειροτονηθεὶς and στελλόμενοι as instances in 2 Cor. 8:19 f. By means of the infinitive and participle the Greek enjoyed much elasticity and freedom which the modern Greek has lost. In modern Greek conjunctions and finite verbs have very largely displaced the infinitive and the participle. Even in the N. T. a tendency in that direction is discernible, as is seen in the use of ἕνα with θέλω (Mk. 6:25), ἄφιημι (Mk. 11:16). One is inclined to think that Viteau overstates it when he says that the N. T. writers have a natural and general inability to combine and subordinate the elements of thought and so express them separately and make an abnormal use of asyndeton. I would rather say that there is a great simplicity and directness due partly to the colloquial style and the earnestness of the writers. They are men with a message rather than philosophical ramblers. But part of this absence of subordination may be due to the Hebrew temper as in John, and part to the general spirit of the time as less concerned, save in the

---

1 Le Verbe, Synt. des Prop., p. 9.
case of the Atticists, with the niceties of style. Clearness and force were the main things with these N. T. writers. They use connectives or not as best suits their purposes. But the infinitive construction and the conjunction construction must not be regarded as identical even in the N. T. Note καλὸν αὐτῷ ἐὰν έγένυθη (Mk. 14:21), ἐν τούτῳ γινώσκομεν ὅτι (1 Jo. 5:2), βουλὴ ἐγένετο ἵνα (Ac. 27:42).

(c) TWO KINDS OF STYLE. There are indeed two kinds of style in this matter, the running (ἐίρομένη) and the periodic (ἐν περιόνοις) or compact (κατεστραμμένη), to use Aristotle's terminology. In the words of Blass the running or continuous style is characteristic of the oldest prose as well as unsophisticated, unconventional prose like the vernacular κοινή and hence is the usual form in the N. T. The periodic style, on the other hand, belongs to "artistically developed prose" like that of Demosthenes and Thucydides. As a matter of fact the O. T. narrative is also in the running style, while the prophets sometimes use the periodic. The longer N. T. sentences are usually connected by καὶ or use asyndeton as shown above. But occasionally something approaching a real period appears somewhat like that of the great Greek writers, but by no means so frequently. Interesting examples of some length may be found in Lu. 1:1-4; Ac. 15:24-26; 26:10-14, 16-18; Ro. 1:1-7; 1 Pet. 3:18-22; 2 Pet. 1:2-7; Heb. 2:2-4. In Lu. 1:1-4 Blass notes that the protasis has three clauses and the apodosis two, while in Heb. 1:1-3 he finds some ten divisions of the sentence which is not so neatly balanced as the passage in Luke. It is noticeable that Luke uses this classic idiom nowhere else in his Gospel, while the Epistle to the Hebrews has a fluent oratorical style of no little beauty. Chapter 11 finds a splendid peroration in 12:1 f., which should belong to chapter 11 as the closing period in the discussion about the promises. Cf. a similar peroration, though not in one sentence, in Ro. 11:33-36. So also Ro. 8:31-39, where verses 38 and 39 form a really eloquent period. Blass indeed gives a rather free interpretation to the term period and applies it to sentences of only two parts like a conditional sentence when the condition comes first, sentences with antithesis with μέν — δὲ, disjunctive clauses with ἤ or parallelisms with τε—καὶ. He even finds a period in a case of asyndeton like 1 Cor. 7:27. But this is to make nearly all complex sentences periods. Blass

1 Arist. Rhet., iii. 9. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 275, who amplifies this point.  
2 Ib.  
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 280.
opinion on this point is to be borne in mind when he argues for literary rhythm on a considerable scale in the N. T. Paul indeed has some noble periods like Eph. 1:3-14; 2:14-18; 3:14-19. He would show many more than he does but for the fact that he seems to grow impatient with the fetters of a long sentence and breaks away in anacoluthon which mars the fulness and symmetry of the sentence as a period. Cf. 2 Cor. 8:18-21; Ro. 12: 6-8; Col. 1:9-23. In Ro. 3:7 f. the καθὼς and ὡς clauses make a not very strong culmination. The ground element in Paul's speech is the short sentence. Only occasionally does he combine these into a period.¹ But Paul does use antithetic and comparative particles and apposition. One other reason for the absence of rhetorical periods is the avoidance of prolonged passages of indirect discourse. In truth none of that nature occurs at all, so that we do not have in the N. T. passages of much length in indirect discourse such as one meets in Xenophon or Thucydides (cf. Caesar). But the quotations are usually direct either with recitative ὡς (Mt. 9:18) or without (Mt. 9:22). Winer² well remarks that what the style thus loses in periodic compactness, it gains in animation and vividness. But the use of the participle in giving periodic compactness is to be noticed, as in Ac. 23:27. The attraction of the relative to the case of its antecedent, as already observed, adds another bond of union to the compactness of the relative sentence as in Lu. 5:9.

(d) THE PARENTHESIS (παρένθεσις). Such a clause, inserted in the midst of the sentence without proper syntactical connection, is quite common in the N. T.³ Once the editors used too many parentheses in the N. T., but the number is still considerable. The term is somewhat loosely applied to clauses that really do not interrupt the flow of the thought. Thus it is not necessary to find a parenthesis in Jo. 7:39. The γάρ clause is merely explanatory. The same thing is true of Jo. 9:30 and Ac. 13:8. Certainly not every explanatory remark is to be regarded as parenthetical. On the other hand even a relative clause may be regarded as parenthetical where it is purely by the way as the interpretation of Παρῇ (Jo. 1:38 ὅ λέγεται) and of Μεσσίαν (ὁ ἐστιν, etc., Jo. 1:41). But see Mk. 7:11. Editors indeed will

² W.-Th., p. 545.
differ as to what constitutes a parenthesis as in the case of Mk. 3:16 where W. H. use the marks of parenthesis while Nestle does not consider this a parenthesis. In Jo. 1:15 W. H. print a double parenthesis, using the dash inside the parenthetical marks. Here again Nestle has the colon instead of the clash and the full stop in lieu of the parenthetical marks. W. H. are not uniform in the indication of the parenthesis. They do it by the curved lines ( ) as in Mk. 3:16, or the dash as in Jo. 7:22; 10:12, or merely the comma as in the short phrases like φησίν (2 Cor. 10:10), or again with no punctuation at all as in the case of δοκεῖτε (Heb. 10:29). The insertion of one or two words in the midst of the sentence is the simplest form of the parenthesis, like πολλοί, λέγω ήμιν, και τοι δύναμιν, μαρτυρῶ, καί (2 Cor. 8:3). Cf. φησίν (Mt. 14:8), ἔφη (Ac. 23:35), οὗ ψεύδομαι (Ro. 9:1), ἐν ἀφροσύνῃ λέγω (2 Cor. 11:21), etc. But the insertion of φησίν and ἔφη between words is rare in the N. T. Cf. Simcox, Language of the N. T., p. 200. A very interesting parenthesis is the insertion in the speech of Jesus to the paralytic, of λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ (Mk. 2:10). Mt. (9:6) adds τότε. Lu. (5:24) has εἶπεν τῷ παραλυτικῷ. The Synoptists all had the same source here. These phrases, common also to the ancient Greek, do not need marks of parenthesis, and the comma is sufficient. A little more extended parenthesis is found in a clause like, ὄνομα αὕτῳ Ἰωάννης (Jo. 1:6), Νικόδημος ὄνομα αὐτῷ (Jo. 3:1), though this again may be considered merely a form of apposition. A more distinct parenthesis still is the insertion of a note of time like ήσαν δὲ ἡμέραι τῶν ἄξιμων (Ac. 12:3). Thackeray (Gr., p. 149 note) notes a tendency in the LXX to put numeral statements in parenthesis. Note also the explanatory parenthesis in Ac. 1:15 introduced by τε. Cf. also ὡσεὶ ἡμέραι ὀκτῶ in Lu. 9:28, which can be explained otherwise. In Mt. 24:15 the parenthetical command of Matthew or of Jesus, ὅ ἀναγινώσκως νοεῖτω, is indicated by W. H. only with the comma. In general the historical books have fewer parentheses than the Epistles, and naturally so. In Paul it is sometimes hard to draw the line between the mere parenthesis and anacoluthon. Cf. 1 Cor. 16:5; Ro. 5:12 (18); 9:11; 15:23-28. Οὐν may look back beyond the parenthesis as in Jo. 4:7 ff. (Abbott, Johannine Grammar, p. 470). See Jo. 10:35 καὶ οὗ δύναται λαθηναι ή γραφή. Cf. the sharp interruption in Jo. 4:1-3. In Gal. 2:5 f. we have two parentheses right together marked by the dash in W. H.'s text, besides anacoluthon. Cf. Lu. 23:51, Col. 1:21 f. for parenthesis of some length. But see 2 Pet. 2:8 for a still longer
one, not to mention 2 Cor. 9:12; Heb. 7:20 f.; Lu. 6:4. See Viteau, *Etude*, 1896, p. 11. As illustrating once more the wide difference of opinion concerning the parenthesis, Blass\(^1\) comments on the harshness of the parenthesis in Ac. 5:14, while W. H. do not consider that there is a parenthesis in the sentence at all. At bottom the parenthesis in the text is a matter of exegesis. Thus if in Jo. 13:1 ff. εἰς τέλος ἡ γάπησεν αὐτοῦς be regarded as a parenthesis and verses 1-5 be considered one sentence (note repetition of εἶδὼς) a much simpler construction is the result.\(^2\) Instead of a parenthesis a writer switches off to one aspect of a subject and then comes back in another sentence as Paul does in 1 Cor. 8:1-4. He resumes by the repetition of περὶ—εἰδωλοθύτων ὀἴδαμεν. Cf. also a similar resumption in Eph. 3:14 τούτου χάριν after the long digression in verses 1-13. This construction is not, however, a technical parenthesis.

(e) **ANACOLUTHON.** But a more violent break in the connection of sentences than the parenthesis is anacoluthon. This is merely the failure to complete a sentence as intended when it was begun (ἀνακόλουθον). The completion does not follow grammatically from the beginning. The N. T. writers are not peculiar in this matter, since even in an artistic orator like Isocrates such grammatical blemishes, if they be so considered, are found.\(^3\) And a careful historian like Thucydides will have ἔδοξεν αὐτοῖς—ἐπικαλοῦντες (iii. 36. 2). It is just in writers of the greatest mental activity and vehemence of spirit that we meet most instances of anacoluthon. Hence a man with the passion of Paul naturally breaks away from formal rules in the structure of the sentence when he is greatly stirred, as in Gal. and 2 Cor. Such violent changes in the sentence are common in conversation and public addresses. The dialogues of Plato have many examples. The anacoluthon may be therefore either intentional or unintentional. The writer may be led off by a fresh idea or by a parenthesis, or he may think of a better way of finishing his sentence, one that will be more effective. The very jolt that is given by the anacoluthon is often successful in making more emphasis. The attention is drawn anew to the sentence to see what is the matter. Some of the anacolutha belong to other languages with equal pertinence, others are peculiar to the Greek genius. The participle in particular is a very common occasion

---

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 279.  
\(^2\) S. M. Provence, Rev. and Exp., 1905, p. 96.  
for anacoluthon. The Apocalypse, as already shown, has many examples of anacoluthon. The more important N. T. illustrations of anacoluthon will now be given. It is difficult to make a clear grouping of the examples of anacoluthon in the N. T. on any scientific principle. But the following will answer.

1. The Suspended Subject. What Abbott\(^1\) calls the suspended subject finds illustration elsewhere than in John, though he does have his share. It may be looked at indeed as suspended object as well sometimes. The point is that the substantive, pronoun or participle is left by the wayside and the sentence is completed some other way. Thus in πᾶν ῥῆμα ἀργῶν ὁ λαλήσωσιν οἱ ἀνθρωποὶ ἀποδώσουσιν περὶ αὐτοῦ, (Mt. 12:36) observe how πᾶν ῥῆμα is dropped in the construction and περὶ αὐτοῦ used. In πᾶς οὖν ὡστὶς ὁμολογή-

σει—ὁμολογήσω καγὼ ἐν αὐτῷ (Mt. 10:32) the same principle holds in regard to πᾶς and ἐν αὐτῷ. But in the same verse the regular construction obtains in ὡστὶς ἀρνήσηται—ἀρνήσωμαι καγὼ αὐτόν. In Lu. 6:47 πᾶς ὁ ἐρχόμενος κτλ., ὑποδείξω ὤμιν τί νῦν ἐστὶν ὤμοιος we see a similar anacoluthon unless πᾶς ὁ ἐρχ. be regarded as a rather violent prolepsis of the subject, which is not so likely in this instance. In Lu. 11:11 the anacoluthon is not quite so simple, though τίνα is after all left to itself (τίνα δὲ ἔξ ὤμων τὸν πατέρα αἰτήσει ὁ νῦς ἰχθύων, μη ἀντὶ ἰχθύως ὤμιν αὐτῷ ἐπιδώσει). If instead of τίνα the sentence read εἰ or εάν, all would go smoothly except that ἔξ ὤμων would be slightly awkward. Observe that αἰτήσει has two accusatives without τίνα. The apodosis is introduced by and as an interrogative clause expects the answer "no." But in spite of the grammatical hopelessness of the sentence it has great power. In Lu. 12:48 the matter is simpler (παντὶ δὲ ὤ ἐδόθη πολύ, πολύ ζητηθή-

σεται παρ’ αὐτοῦ). Here two things are true. We not only have the stranded subject (cf. παρ’ αὐτοῦ), but it has been attracted into the case of the relative (inverse attraction), παντὶ, not πᾶς. With this compare πᾶς δς ἐρεί—ἀφεθήσεται αὐτῷ (Lu. 12:10). In 2 Cor. 12: 17 we merely have the anacoluthon without any attraction, τίνα expecting a verb governing the accusative (μή τίνα ὃν ἀπεσταλκά πρὸς ὦμᾶς, δι’ αὐτοῦ ἐπελευκέτησα ὦμᾶς). Here indeed ὃν is attracted into the case of τοῦς unexpressed. A simpler instance is ὁ Μω-

σῆς οὖτος—ἀδαμεν τί ἐγένετο αὐτῷ (Ac. 7:40; Ex. 32:1). Blass\(^2\) finds anacoluthon in Mk. 9:20 (ἰδὼν αὐτὸν τὸ πνεῦμα συνεστᾶ-

ραξεν αὐτόν), but surely this is merely treating πνεῦμα as masculine (natural gender). But in Ac. 19:34 (ἐπιγρώντες δὲ ὃτι Ἰουδαίος ἐστιν φωνῇ ἐγένετο μία ἐκ πάντων) there is a clear case of anacoluthon in

---

\(^1\) Joh. Gr., p. 32.  \(^2\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 283.
the change to ἐκ πάντων. The writings of John show similar illustrations. There is no anacoluthon in Jo. 6:22 in the text of W. H., which reads ἔδων ὧτι instead of ἰδον ὧτι—ὁτε (margin of W. H.). But in 6:39 there is real anacoluthon (πᾶν ὁ δέδωκεν μοι μὴ ἀπολέσω ἐξ αὐτοῦ) in the change from πᾶν to ἐξ αὐτοῦ. It is possible to regard πᾶν μή here¹ as equivalent to οὐδείς and not like πᾶς—μή in Jo. 3:16. In 7:38 another suspended subject is found in ὁ πιστεύων εἰς ἐμέ (cf. αὐτός further on). But 10:36 is hardly anacoluthon,² since one has merely to supply the demonstrative ἐκείνῳ or the personal pronoun αὐτῷ with λέγετε to make the sentence run smoothly. In 15:2 πᾶν κλήμα—αὐτό we have very slight anacoluthon, if any, since both may be in the same case (cf. resumptive use of οὖς). But in 15:5 the matter is complicated by the insertion of καγώ ἐν αὐτῷ (ὁ μένων ἐν ἐμοὶ καγώ ἐν αὐτῷ οὗτος φέρει). In 17:2 (πᾶν ὁ δέδωκας αὐτῷ δώσει αὐτοῖς) we have the more usual anacoluthon. In 1 Jo. 2:24 (ὑμεῖς ὁ ἡκούσατε ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς ἐν ἦμῖν μενέτω) ὑμεῖς may be merely prolepsis, but this seems less likely in verse 27 (ὑμεῖς τὸ χρίσμα ὁ ἐλάβετε ἀπ’ αὐτοῦ μένει ἐν ἦμῖν), where note the position of ὑμεῖς and ἦμῖν. In Rev. 2:26 the anacoluthon (ὁ νικῶν-δώσω αὐτῷ) does not differ from some of those above.³ So also as to Rev. 3:12, 21, but in 2:7, 17 (τῷ νικῶτα δώσῃ αὐτῷ) the case is the same and may be compared with Jo. 15:2, 5. Cf. the probable reading (W. H. bracket αὐτῷ) in Rev. 6:4 as well as Mt. 4:16 (LXX); 5: 40 (τῷ Θελούτα—αὐτῷ), where there is no real anacoluthon, but a resumptive use of αὐτῷ. Cf. also ὑμᾶς repeated after parenthesis in Col. 1:22. The LXX has other similar examples like Josh. 9:12; Ps. 103:15. A similar resumptive use of 4) occurs in the text (not marg. in W. H.) of Ro. 16:27. In a similar way a relative clause may be left as a suspended subject or object, as in Lu. 9:5, οὕτω ἐν μη δέχεσται ὑμᾶς—ἀποτινάσσετε ἐπ’ αὐτοῦς. Cf. Mt. 10:14; Lu. 10:8, 10. Cf. this with the very common use of resumptive oirros after the article and the participle, like ὁ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος οὗτος σωβηνετα, (Mt. 10:22).

2. Digression. A somewhat more complicated kind of anacoluthon is where a digression is caused by an intervening sentence or explanatory clause. Those naturally occur mainly in the Epistles of Paul where his energy of thought and passion of soul overlap all trammels. In Jo. 5:44 the participle is dropped for the indicative ζητείτε. In Jo. 21:12 (οὐδείς ἐτόλμα τῶν μαθητῶν ἐξετάσαι αὐτῶν Σῦ τίς ἐι; εἰδότες) the question breaks the smooth flow and εἰδότες

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 283.  
² Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 33.  
³ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 283, calls it "very awkward instance."
agrees in case with οὐδείς and number with μαθητῶν. With this compare the change from ἵνα μὴ αὕρωσιν in Mk. 6:8 to the infinitive μὴ ἐνδύσασθαι in verse 9. Nestle has, however, ἐνδύσησθε. In Mk. 7:19 (καθαρίζων πάντα τὰ βρώματα) the participle can be connected in thought, as Mark probably did, with λέγει in verse 18, but the intervening quotation makes Mark's explanatory addendum a real anacoluthon. The example in Jo. 1:15 Abbott¹ calls "impressionism" due to the writer's desire to make his impression first and then to add the explanatory correction. He compares 4:1 with 3:22. In 1:15 οὗτος ἦν δὲν εἶπον is taken by Abbott as a part of the Baptist's statement, but W. H. read οὗτος ἦν ὁ εἶπὼν as a parenthetical remark of the writer. So in Jo. 20:18 καὶ ταῦτα εἶπεν αὐτῇ does not fit in exactly after ὅτι ἐῳράκα τὸν κύριον. The added clause is the comment of John, not of Mary. The margin of Ac. 10:36 (W. H.) with δὲν is a case of anacoluthon, but the text itself is without δὲν. In Ac. 24:6 the repetition of δὲν καὶ leaves εὐρόντες cut off from ἐκρατήσαμεν. In Ac. 27:10 (Θεωρῶ ὅτι—μέλλειν) the ὅτι clause is changed to the infinitive, a phenomenon noted by Winer² in Plato, Gorg. 453 b. The anacoluthon in Gal. 2:6 (ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν δοκοῦντων εἴναι τι—ὅποιοι ποτε ἦσαν οὐδέν μοι διαφέρει—πρόσωπον ὁ θεὸς ἀνθρώπου οὐ λαμβάνει—ἐμοὶ γὰρ οἱ δοκοῦντες οὐδὲν προσανέθεντο) is noteworthy for the complete change of construction as shown by the repetition of the οἱ δοκοῦντες in the nominative and followed by the middle instead of the passive voice. Observe the two parentheses that led to the variation. It is easier in such a case to make a new start, as Paul does here. In Gal. 2:5 Blass³ follows D in omitting οἷς in order to get rid of the anacoluthon, as he does also in Ro. 16:27 (ὁ), but it is more than likely that the difficulty of the anacoluthon with οἷς led to the omission in D. One of the most striking anacolutha in Paul's Epistles is found at the end of Ro. 5:12 where the apodosis to the ὧςςερ clause is wanting. The next sentence (ἀρχή γὰρ) takes up the subordinate clause ἐφ’ ὃ ἡμαρτον and the comparison is never completed. In verse 18 a new comparison is drawn in complete form. The sentence in Ro. 9:22-24 is without the apodosis and verse 25 goes on with the comparative ὡς. 2 Pet. 1:17 shows a clear anacoluthon, for the participle λαβών is left stranded utterly in the change to καὶ ταῦτην τὴν φωνήν ἡμεῖς ήκουσάμεν. Winer⁴ seems to be wrong in finding an anacoluthon in the long sentence in 2 Pet. 2:4-10. The apodosis is really οἴδειν in verse 9 (verse 8 being a long parenthesis as W. H. rightly punc-

¹ Joh. Gr., p. 34. ² W.-Th., p. 573. ³ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 284. ⁴ W.-Th., p. 569.
However, Winer\(^1\) is justified in refusing to see anacoluthon in many passages formerly so regarded and that call for no discussion now. See further Mt. 7: 9; 12:36; Mk. 2:28; 7:3 f.; Lu. 11:11 f.; 12:8, 10; 21:6; Jo. 6:39; 17:18; Ac. 15:22 ff.; 19:34; 24:20; 26:3; Ro. 16:25-27; 1 Cor. 9:15; Col. 2:2; 4:6; Eph. 3: 8; 2 Cor. 7: 5; 1 Th. 4:1; Heb. 3:15; 10:15 f.; 1 Tim. 1:3-5; Ju. 16. It is very common in the Apocalypse as in 2 Corinthians and Galatians.

3. The Participle in Anacolutha. It calls for a word of its own in the matter of anacoluthon, although, as a matter of fact, it occurs in both the kinds of anacoluthon already noticed. The reason is, the free use of the participle in long sentences (cf. Paul) renders it peculiarly subject to anacoluthon. The point with the participle is not that it is a special kind of anacoluthon in any other sense. Gal. 6 1, καταρτίζετε, σκοπῶν σεαυτόν, μὴ καὶ σὺ πειρασθής may be regarded as anacoluthon in the change of number, but it is a natural singling-out of the individual in the application. In 2 Cor. 5:12 the ellipsis of γράφομεν ταύτα with διδόντες is so harsh as to amount to anacoluthon. Cf. also θλιβόμενοι in 2 Cor. 7:5. It is less certain about στελλόμενοι in 2 Cor. 8:20, for, skipping the long parenthesis, in verse 19, we have συνεπέμψαμεν. But in the parenthesis itself χειροτονηθεὶς is an example of anacoluthon, for regularly ἕξειροτονηθή would be the form. In 2 Cor. 9:11, 13, the participles πλουτιζόμενοι and δοξάζοντες have no formal connection with a principal verb and are separated by a long parenthesis in verse 12. But these participles may be after all tantamount to the indicative and not mere anacoluthon. Just as sequimini (sec. pl. mid. ind.) = ἐπόμενοι, so other Greek participles may correspond to the indicative or imperative.\(^2\) Moulton\(^3\) cites numerous examples from the papyri which make this possible for the κομή. But Moulton\(^4\) sees a sharp difference between the "hanging nominative" like ἔχων ὅ νόμος in Heb. 10:1 (if δύναται be accepted, W. H. δύναται marg.) and ἔχουσι in Ph. 1:30, where, however, W. H. make a long parenthesis and seek to connect ἔχουσι with στίκετε (verse 27). These are indeed mere anacolutha, but one wonders if the connection between these and Ro. 12:6 (ἤχουσι) is so very distant after all. Participles are scattered along in this chapter in an "unending series"\(^5\) mingled with infinitives and imperatives. Thus in 12:9-13 we have participles, verse 14 the

\(^{1}\) Ib., p. 571.  
\(^{2}\) Moulton, Prol., p. 223.  
\(^{3}\) Ib.  
\(^{4}\) Ib., p. 225.  
\(^{5}\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 285.
imperative, verse 15 infinitive, verse 16 a participles, 16b imperative, 17 participles. Here the participle does seem to be practically equivalent to the imperative (cf. inf. also). See Participle (Verbal Nouns) for discussion of this point. In 2 Cor. 6:3 the participles skip over verse 2 and carry on the construction of verse 1, and it is resumed in verse 9. For a group of participles with the imperative see Eph. 5:15-22. Cf. also Col. 3:16. The point is that these various gradations in the use of the participle are not always clearly defined. As regards the nominative participle rather than the genitive absolute, Winer\(^1\) remarks that thus the participle gains greater prominence in the sentence. In Eph. 4:2 ἀνεχόμενοι may not be anacoluthon, but may be in accord with ἦς ἐκλήθητε. Col. 1:26 is the case of the indicative rather than a participle (ἐφευρέωθη, not πεφανερωμένοι). See 1 Cor. 7:37 where ἔχειν is succeeded by ἔχει, but (W. H.) ἐγείρας καὶ καθίσας (Eph. 1:20). Cf. Rev. 2:2, 9. As to Heb. 8:10 (10:16) διδοὺς is explained by Winer\(^2\) as referring to διαθήσομαι without anacoluthon, while Moulton\(^3\) considers it equal to an indicative and parallel to ἐπιγράψω. I am inclined to agree with Winer on this point. In 2 Cor. 5:6 Paul, after using θαρροῦτες, repeats it in the form of θαρροῦμεν because of the intermediate clauses before he expresses εὐδοκοῦμεν the main verb.\(^4\) Finally compare ἐφ’ ὧν ἀν ὑδής τὸ πνεῦμα καταβαίνον καὶ μένον ἐπ’ αὐτόν (Jo. 1:33) with τὸ πνεῦμα καταβαίνον ὡς περισσεραν ἔξ οὕρανοῦ, καὶ ἐμείην ἐπ’ αὐτόν (verse 32), where the last clause is the comment of the Baptist to give special emphasis to that point, more than the participle would.

4. Asyndeton Due to Absence of δέ and ἄλλα. Winer\(^5\) considers the absence of δέ or ἄλλα to correspond with μέν as a species of anacoluthon, and Blass\(^6\) shares the same idea. As a matter of fact (see chapter on Particles) μέν does not require δέ either by etymology or usage. It is rather gratuitous to call such absence an instance of anacoluthon. The examples will be discussed later, such as Ac. 1:1; 13:4; Ro. 11:13, etc.

(f) ORATIO VARIATA.

1. Distinction from Anacoluthon. Sometimes indeed the line between anacoluthon and oratio variata is not very clearly drawn. Thus in Lu. 17:31 (ὁς ἐσταὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ δωματος καὶ τὰ σκεύη αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ οίκῃ) the second clause cannot repeat the relative ὁς, but has to use αὐτοῦ. Cf. 1 Cor. 8:6 (ἐξ οὗ—καὶ εἰς αὐτῶν), 2 Pet. 2:3 (ὁς—καὶ αὐτῶν). So also in 1 Cor. 7:13 αὐτὴς repeats ἡτίς. Cf. Rev.

\(^{1}\) W.-Th., p. 572.  \(^{2}\) Ib., p. 573.  \(^{3}\) Prol., p. 224.  \(^{4}\) W.-Th., p. 573.  \(^{5}\) Ib.  \(^{6}\) Op. cit., p. 286.
17:2. In Ro. 2:6 ff. after the relative clause ὃς ἀποδώσει there is a subdivision of the object, on the one hand (τοῖς μὲν –ζητοῦσιν ζωῆν αἰώνιον), on the other (τοῖς δὲ ἀδικίᾳ ὀργῇ καὶ θυμὸς) where the nominative changes the construction and ὃς cannot here be repeated. In Ro. 11:22 indeed both of the phrases that extend the accusatives χρηστότητα καὶ ἀποτομίαν Θεόῦ are put in the nominative (ἀποτομία, χρηστότης). In Gal. 4:6 f. Paul changes from ἐστέ to εἶ. This is all oratio variata in reality and is in accord with the ancient Greek idiom. Blass¹ considers Tit. 1:2 f. an instance of oratio variata, but τὸν λόγον in all probability is to be regarded as in apposition with which is the object both of ἐπηγγείλατο and ἐφανέρωσεν. Thus W. H., but Nestle agrees with Blass.

2. Heterogeneous Structure. That is what oratio variata really is and it can be illustrated by a number of passages other than the relative and with less element of obscurity about them. In Rev. 2:18 ὁ ἔχων is followed by καὶ αὐτοῦ just like the relative sentences above. Thus also 2 Jo. 2. In Rev. 7:9 after εἶδον καὶ ἱδοῦ we find a mixed construction, ὄχλος ἐστῶτες (constr. κατὰ σύνεσιν) with ἱδοῦ, περιβεβλημένους with εἶδον. Winer² rightly distinguishes the variation in case in Rev. 18:12 f. (gen., acc., gen., acc.) and the similar phenomenon in Rev. 2:17 where there is a real distinction between the use of the genitive and the accusative. The use of ὑποδεδεμένους in Mk. 6:8 is probably due to the ellipse of πορεύεσθαι, for the correct text has μὴ ἐνδύσασθαι just after. For similar ellipse and oratio variata see 2 Cor. 8:23. In Mk. 12:38 after θελόντων περιπατεῖν it looks like a sudden change to find ἀσπασμοῦς, but after all both are in the accusative with θελόντων. The irregularity in Mk. 3:16 is met in the text of W. H. by a parenthesis, but it could have been cleared up also by ὅς (referring to Πέτρον, instead of καί as Winer³ suggests). In Jo. 8:53 the continuity of the interrogative form of sentence is abruptly broken by the short clause καὶ οἱ προ-φήται ἀπέθανον, a very effective interruption, however. The case of 1 Jo. 2:2 is simple where instead of περὶ τῶν ὅλου τοῦ κόσμου (to be parallel with οὗ περὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων) John has merely περὶ ὅλου τοῦ κόσμου, a somewhat different conception. A similar example is found in Ac. 20:34 as between ταῖς χρείαις μου and τοῖς οὖσι μετ’ ἐμοῦ. Heb. 9:7 furnishes the same point in inverse order (ὑπὲρ εαυτοῦ καὶ τῶν τοῦ λαοῦ ἀγνοημάτων). A lack of parallel is shown also in Ph. 2:22 between πατρὶ τέκνου and σὺν ἐμοὶ where Paul purposely puts in σὺν to break a too literal carrying out of the figure. In Rev. 1:6 the correct text in the parenthesis has

¹ Gr. of N. T. p. 286.  
² W.-Th., p. 579.  
³ Ib.
See further Ac. 16:16 f.

3. Participles in Oratio Variata. These offer a frequent occasion for oratio variata, since they can so often be used parallel with subordinate clauses of various kinds. Thus in Jo. 5:44 λαμβάνοντες would naturally be followed by ζητούντες, but we have ζητέετε. So, on the other hand, in 1 Cor. 7:13 καὶ συνευδοκεῖ, does not fit in as smoothly with ἄπιστον as καὶ συνευδοκοῦντα would. The same lack of parallel in the use of the participle is seen in Jo. 15:5 (ὁ μένων καγώ) and in Lu. 17:31 where the relative and the participle are paired off. So also Ph. 1:23 and Jo. 3:24. Cf. the Participle in Anacolutha. In Ro. 12:6 f. participles and substantives are placed in antithesis, as in 2 Cor. 6:3 f. we have participles, in 4-7a ἔν, in 7b διά, in 9 f. adjectives and participles. Cf. 2 Cor. 11:23 ff. Where adverbs, adjuncts and verbs are in antithesis.

4. Exchange of Direct and Indirect Discourse. But the most striking instance of oratio variata is that between direct and indirect discourse. It is either from the indirect to the direct or from the direct to the indirect. As Blass¹ justly observes, the N. T. writers, like all popular narrators, deal very little in indirect discourse. The accusative and the infinitive is not common in the old sense nor is ὅτι always the sign of indirect quotation. Frequently it is merely recitative ὅτι and corresponds to our quotation-marks, as in Mk. 14:14, εἶπατε τῷ ὀικοδεσπότῃ ὅτι ὁ διδάσκαλος λέγει. So also ὑμεῖς λέγετε ὅτι βλασφημεῖς (Jo. 10:36). This reversion to one form of discourse from another is not unknown to the ancient Greek. But it is peculiarly in harmony with the N. T. vernacular and essentially vivid narrative style. In Lu. 5:14 we have a typical instance of the change from indirect to direct discourse (παρήγγειλεν αὐτῷ μηδενὶ εἶπεν, ἀλλ' ἀπελθὼν δείξον σεαυτῶν). Exactly parallel with this is Ac. 1:4 ἀλλ' περιμένειν τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ πατρὸς ἦν ἱκουσάτε μου where observe μου. Cf. also Ac. 17:3 where after διελέξατο ὅτι—ὁ Ἰησοῦς Luke concludes with the direct words of Paul ὃν ἐγὼ καταγγέλλω ὃμιν. In Jo. 13:29 we have the reverse process where the writer drops from the direct to the indirect statement (ἀγόρασον ὃν χρείαν ἔχομεν εἰς τὴν ἔορτήν, ἥ τῶν πτωχῶν ἵνα τι δῷ). So also we see the same thing in Ac. 23:23 f. (ἐτοιμάσατε—τῆς νυκτὸς, κτήμα τε παραστήσαι ἵνα—διασώσωσιν). But in Ac. 23:22 the other change occurs, as παραγγέλας μηδενὶ ἐκλαλήσαι ὅτι ταῦτα ἐνεφάνισας πρὸς ἐμὲ. In W. H.'s text of Ro. 12:

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 286.
1f. we have παρκαλω ὣμας παραστήσαοι καὶ μὴ συνυχματίζοντες (not —σθαί). In Mk. 11:32 the writer proceeds with his own remarks (ἐφοβοῦντο τῶν ὄχλων) after the question rather\' in the nature of anacoluthon, though in Mt. 21:26 φοβοῦμεθα is read as indeed a few MSS. do in Mark. So also Mt. 9:6, where the writer injects into the words of Jesus τότε λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ, we probably have anacoluthon rather than oratio variata (see (d), Parenthesis).

(g) CONNECTION BETWEEN SEPARATE SENTENCES. So far we have been considering the matter of connection between the various parts of the same sentence, whether simple or compound, and the various complications that arise. But this is not all. The Greeks, especially in the literary style, felt the propriety of indicating the inner relation of the various independent sentences that composed a paragraph. This was not merely an artistic device, but a logical expression of coherence of thought. Particles like καὶ, δὲ, ἀλλὰ, γὰρ, οὖν, δὴ, etc., were very common in this connection. Demonstrative pronouns, adverbs, and even relative pronouns were also used for this purpose. I happen to open at Mt. 24:32-51 a paragraph of some length. The first sentence begins with δὲ. The sentences in verses 33 and 34 have asyndeton and so are without a connective. In verse 36 δὲ reappears, while the two sentences in verses 37 and 38 both have γὰρ. Verse 40 begins with τότε, a common word in this usage in Matthew, as ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ὑπαγεία, is in Luke. Verse 42 begins with οὖν as its connective, while 43 drops back to δὲ. In 44 διὸ τοῦτο answers as a link of union while 45 uses ἀρα. Verses 46 f. have asyndeton while 48 has δὲ. This long sentence completes the paragraph save the short sentence in verse 51 introduced by ἐκεῖ. I think this paragraph a fair sample of the didactic portion of the Gospels. Asyndeton occurs, but it is not the rule. In the Gospel of John οὖν is a much more frequent connective between sentences than καὶ, as any chapter (11 for instance) will show. The Beatitudes (Mt. 5:3-12) have no connectives at all, and are all the more effective because of the asyndeton. Winer\(^1\) finds this didactic asyndeton common also in James, the Gospel of John (cf. 14-17) and 1 John. But asyndeton is sometimes noticeable also in the non-didactic portions of John, as 20:14-18. No formal rules on the subject can be made, as the individual speaker or writer follows his mood of the moment in the matter. The point is to observe that, while asyndeton often occurs, in general Greek writers even in the N. T. use connectives between separate sentences.

\(^1\) W.-Th., p. 536.
(h) CONNECTION BETWEEN PARAGRAPHS. It is only natural to carry the matter one step further and unite paragraph with paragraph. For a discussion of the origin of the paragraph see the chapter on Orthography and Phonetics. The paragraphs in our printed Greek texts are partly the work of the modern editors, yet not wholly so. But even in real or original paragraphs the connection varies greatly. In some there will be none at all, but an entirely new theme will be presented, whereas with others we merely have a new aspect of the same subject. I happen to turn to the sixth chapter of John. The chapter opens with μετά ταύτα, a real connective that refers to the incidents in chapter 5, which may have been a full year before. The next paragraph in W. H. begins at verse 14 and has οὖν. At verse 22 there is no connective except τά ἐπαύριον which may be compared with the τότε of Matthew. The paragraph at verse 41 has οὖν again, which is very common in John in this connection, as can be seen illustrated also in verses 52 and 60. At verse 66 the paragraph begins with –ἐκ τούτου a real connective. If we go into chapter 7 we find καί in verse 1, δέ in verse 10, δέ again in verse 14, οὖν in verse 25, no connective in verse 32, δέ in verse 37, οὖν in verse 45. Asyndeton on the whole is rather more frequent in the Gospel of John than in the Synoptic Gospels.\(^1\) Abbott\(^2\) gives a detailed discussion of the kinds of asyndeton in John. In Paul's Epistles one would expect little asyndeton between the paragraphs especially in the argumentative portions. In general this is true, and yet occasionally even in Ro. asyndeton is met as in 9:1; 13:1. But in chapter 8 every paragraph has its connective particle. Note also οὖν in 12:1 at the beginning of the hortatory portion after the long preceding argument. As between sentences, there is freedom in the individual expression on the subject. For Hort's theory of the paragraph see *Intr. to N. T. in Gr.*, p. 319. By means of spaces he has a system of sub-paragraphs, as is plain in, the text of W. H.

**XIII. Forecast.** There are other things to be considered in the construction of the sentence, but enough has been treated in this chapter. What remains in syntax is the minute examination of the relations of words (cases, prepositions, pronouns, verbs in mood and voice and tense, infinitives and participles), the relations of clause with clause in the use of subordinating conjunctions, the particles, figures of speech (aposiopesis, ellipsis, paronomasia, zeugma, etc.). There is a natural order in the development of these matters which will be followed as far as possible in the dis-

\(^1\) Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 70 f.  
\(^2\) Ib. Cf. W.-Th., p. 537.
cussion of syntax. The individual words come before the relation of sentences or clauses. In the discussion of words either nouns or verbs could be taken up first, but, as verbs are connected more closely with conjunctions than nouns they are best treated just before conjunctional clauses. Prepositions are properly discussed after cases. The article is a variation of the demonstrative pronoun. But at best no treatment of syntax can handle every aspect and phase of language. The most that can be achieved is a presentation of the essential principles of N. T. syntax so that the student will be able to interpret his Greek N. T. according to correct grammatical principles derived from living language of the time.
CHAPTER XI

THE CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ)

I. History of the Interpretation of the Greek Cases.

(a) CONFUSION. Perhaps nowhere has confusion been worse confounded than in the study of the Greek cases. The tendency has been usually to reason backwards and to explain past phenomena by present conditions. The merely logical method of syntax has turned the pyramid on its apex and has brought untold error into grammar. The Stoics took interest in grammar for philosophical purposes and gave the logical bent to it in lieu of the historical. Dionysius Thrax and Apollonius Dyscolus went off on the wrong trail in the matter of the Greek cases.

(b) BOPP’S CONTRIBUTION. Bopp brought daylight out of darkness by comparative grammar. Hubschmann gives an admirable history of the matter. He illustrates the eight cases copiously from the Sanskrit, Zend and Persian. Thanks now to such workers as Schleicher, Brugmann, Delbruck, the eight Indo-Germanic cases are well wrought out and generally acknowledged. Cf. brief discussion of the forms of the Greek cases in chapter VII (Declensions). Greek grammarians still differ, however, in the terminology applied to the cases. In 1911 the Oxford and Cambridge scholars issued a tract "On Terminology in Grammar," but confusion still reigns. See also W. Havers, Untersuchungen zur Kasussyntax der indog. Sprachen. When the Stoic grammarians wrote, the genitive and ablative had the same forms, and the locative, instrumental and dative likewise. There were occasional survivals of distinction like οἶκοι and οἶκω, Cypriot instrumental ὀπᾶ and dative ὀπα, etc. But in general the work of syncretism was complete in the respects just mentioned, though

---

1 Hubschmann, Zur Casuslehre, p. v.
2 Ib. Cf. Dewischeit, Zur Theorie der Casus (1857); Rumpel, Die Casuslehre (1875). Hadley (Essays Phil. and Crit., Gk. Gen. as Abl., p. 46) speaks of "the Beckerite tendency, too frequently apparent in Kühner, to impose a meaning on language rather than educe the meaning out of it."
in Arcadian the genitive and the locative took the same form\(^1\) (cf. Latin *Romae, domi*). But the grammarians, ignorant of the history of the language, sought to explain the genitive and ablative ideas from a common source. Thus Winer\(^2\) boldly calls the genitive the "whence-case" and undertakes to explain every usage of the genitive from that standpoint, a hopeless exercise in grammatical gymnastics. The same sinuosities have been resorted to in the effort to find the true dative idea in the locative and instrumental uses of the forms called dative by the grammars.

(c) MODERN USAGE. Some modern grammarians\(^3\) help matters a good deal by saying true genitive, ablative genitive, true dative, locative dative, instrumental dative. This custom recognizes the real case-distinctions and the historical outcome. But some confusion still remains because the locative and the dative never mean exactly the same thing and are not the same thing in fact. It partly depends on whether one is to apply the term "case" to the ending or to the relation expressed by the ending. As a matter of fact the term is used both ways. *Ονομα* is called indiscriminately nominative, vocative or accusative, according to the facts in the context, not nominatival accusative or accusatival nominative. So with βασιλείς or πόλεις. We are used to this in the grammars, but it seems a shock to say that πόλεως may be either genitive or ablative, that ἐμοί may be either locative, instrumental or dative. But why more of an absurdity than in the case of *Ονομα* and πόλεις? The only difference is that in the gen.-abl. the syncretism of form applies to all Greek words. For various examples of syncretism in the forms of the Greek cases with fragments of distinctive endings also see Brugmann, *Griech. Gr.*, p. 375 f.; Brugmann, *Kurze vergl. Gr.*, II, p. 420 f.; and chapter VII (Declensions).

(d) GREEN'S CLASSIFICATION. I agree with B. Green\(^4\) whom I shall here quote at some length: "I shall classify the uses of the cases under the heads of the Aryan Cases, as in every instance the true method of explanation of any particular idiom is to trace its connection to the general meaning of the original Aryan case, to which the case in Greek or Latin corresponds, and not arbitrarily to distinguish the uses of any case in Greek or Latin by terms which cannot be properly applied to that case; e. g., the term dative of manner is no explanation. Manner cannot be expressed

---

\(^1\) Hoffmann, Griech. Dial., Bd. I, p. 303.  
\(^2\) W.-Th., p. 184 f.  
\(^3\) Cf. Babbitt, A Gr. of Attic and Ionic Gk., 1902.  
\(^4\) Notes on Gk. and Lat. Synt., 1897, p. 11.
by the true dative case. The correct explanation is that the use is instrumental, but the instrumental case in Greek has coalesced in form with the dative. This method of explanation has the advantage of demanding fewer set terms, while at the same time it requires a logical connection to be made between the particular use in question and the fundamental meaning of the case involved. Such an explanation is the better the simpler the words used in it are." This is wonderfully well said and has the advantage of being true, which is not always said of grammatical comments. It is the method of history, of science, of life. It is the method pursued in the etymology and history of a word. It is the only way to get at the truth about the significance of the Greek cases.

(e) SYNCRETISM OF THE CASES. This method of interpretation does not ignore the syncretism of the cases. On the other hand it accents sharply the blending of the forms while insisting on the integrity of the case-ideas. There are indeed some instances where either of the blended cases will make sense, like τῇ δεξιᾷ τοῦ θεοῦ ὑψωθείς (Ac. 2:33), which may be locative 'exalted at,' instrumental 'exalted by,' or dative 'exalted to' (a rare idiom and in the older Greek), 'the right hand of God.' Cf. also ἐλπίδι ἐσώθημεν (Ro. 8:24). So in Heb. 12:11 χαρᾶς and λύπης may be explained either as genitive or ablative. But such occasional ambiguity is not surprising and these instances on the "border-line" made syncretism possible. In general the context makes it perfectly clear which of the syncretistic cases is meant, just as in English and French we have to depend on the order of the words to show the difference between nominative and accusative. Yet no one would say that nominative and accusative are the same in English and French.1

(f) FREEDOM IN USE OF CASE. As a matter of fact it was often immaterial whether a writer or speaker used one of several ways of expressing himself, for the Greek allows liberty and flexibility at many points. Thus τὸ γένος and τῷ γένει would either answer for the specifying idea, προσκυνεῖ, is used with either accusative or dative, μιμήσκομαι with accusative or genitive, etc.2 But this is not to say that one construction is used for another or is identical with the other. The difference may be "subtle, no doubt, but real" (Moulton, Prolegomena, p. 66). Moulton properly (ib.) cites the

---

1 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 75, illustrates the rapid disappearance of case-endings in the Irish tongue, which as late as i/A.D. had a full set of inflections, whereas by the fifth century only traces of the dat. plur. survive.

2 W.-Th., p. 180.
well-known distinction between the accusative and genitive with ἀκούω in Ac. 9:7 and 22:9 as disproof of apparent self-contradiction and a gentle hint not to be too ready to blur over case-distinctions in Luke or elsewhere in the N.T. He notes also genitive and accusative with γεύεσθαι in Heb. 6:4 f. and the common use of εἰς with accusative after verbs of rest and ἐν locative even after verbs of motion. But it is hazardous to insist always on a clear distinction between εἰς and ἐν, for they are really originally the same word. The point is that by different routes one may reach practically the same place, but the routes are different. Indeed one may take so many different standpoints that the border-lines of the cases come very close sometimes. So εἰς ἄριστεράς (abl.), ἐν ἄριστερά (loc.), εἰς ἄριστεράν (acc.) are all good Greek for 'on the left' (we have also in English 'at the left,' 'to the left').

II. The Purpose of the Cases.

(a) ARISTOTLE'S USAGE. He applied the term πτωσις to verb, noun, adverb, etc., but the later grammarians spoke only of the πτωσις ὁνόματος, though as a matter of fact adverbs and prepositions are in cases, and even conjunctions and other particles are usually in cases. But in ordinary parlance substantives, adjectives, pronouns, the article are in cases and have inflection. The cases originally had to do only with these. The adverbs were merely later modifications or fixed case-forms.

(b) WORD-RELATIONS. The cases were used to express word-relations, the endings serving to make it plain what the particular case was. The isolating languages, like the Chinese, show such relations by the order of the words and the tone in pronunciation. Modern English and French use prepositions chiefly besides the order of the words. These word-relations concern substantives in their relations with other substantives, with adjectives, with prepositions and with verbs. So adjectives and pronouns have all these relations. It is immaterial whether verb or substantive is the earliest in the use of a case with a substantive. In the old Sanskrit practically all the word-relations are expressed by the eight cases. This was a very simple plan, but as language became more complicated a great strain was bound to be put on each of these cases in order to convey clearly so many resultant ideas.

As a matter of fact the ground-meaning of the case-forms is not known. On Origin of Case-Forms see chapter VII, t, 2, (c).

1 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 67.
2 Cf. Steinthal, Gesch. der Sprachw., p. 259; Hubschm., Zur Casusl., p. 3.
3 Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 374.
III. The Encroachment of Prepositions on the Cases.

(a) THE REASON. The burden upon the cases was too great. Even in the later Sanskrit a number of set case-forms (adverbs) came to be used with some of the cases to make clearer the exact relations of words, whereas in the older Sanskrit no such helpers were felt to be needed. This was the beginning of prepositions. Prepositions have a wrong name. They do not come before anything essentially, and just as often in Homer came after the noun. Indeed ὁμμάτων ἀπὸ is not anastrophe, but the original type.¹ Nor was the preposition originally used with verbs. The preposition is merely an adverb that is used with nouns or in composition with verbs. But more about that hereafter (Prepositions). The point to note here is that when the burden upon the cases grew too great adverbs were called in to make clearer the meaning of the case in harmony with the analytic tendency of language.²

(b) NO "GOVERNING" OF CASES. These adverbs did not govern cases. They were merely the accidental concomitants, more or less constant, of certain cases. At best "the cases could express relationship only in a very general way. Hence arose the use of adverbs to go with cases in order to make the meaning more specific. These adverbs, which we now call prepositions, in time became the constant concomitants of some cases; and when this has happened there is an ever-increasing tendency to find the important part of the meaning in the preposition and not in the case-ending."³ This quotation from Giles puts the matter in a nutshell. In spite of the average grammarian's notion that prepositions govern cases, it is not true. The utmost is that the preposition in question is in harmony with the case in question.⁴

(c) NOT USED INDIFFERENTLY. These prepositions were not used indifferently with all the cases. They are, of course, impossible with the vocative. But the nominative may be used with such adverbs, not called prepositions by the grammarians because it seems difficult to explain a preposition "governing" the nominative. But Paul does not hesitate to say ὑπὲρ ἐγώ (2 Cor. 11:23) though ὑπὲρ is not construed with ἐγώ. Cf. also ἔλεγεν κατὰ ἔτος (Mk. 14:19), καθ' ἔτος (Ro. 12:5). It is not certain that any prepositions are [see XII, (f)] used with the true dative and few with

¹ Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 341.  ² Ib.
³ Ib., p. 272 f.
⁴ Cf. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 173. Farrar (Gk. Synt., p. 94 f.) puts the matter succinctly: "It is the case which borrows the aid of the preposition, not the preposition which requires the case."
the instrumental (άμα, σύν). Giles\(^1\) denies that the genitive is ever used with a preposition. Certainly what is called the genitive with prepositions is often the ablative. Probably ἐπὶ and ἀντί are used with the real genitive. Naturally the cases that are more local in idea like the locative (‘where’), the accusative (‘whither’) which is partly local, the instrumental (‘where-with’) and the ablative (‘whence’) are those that are most frequently supplemented by prepositions.\(^2\)

(d) ORIGINAL USE WITH LOCAL CASES. Originally most of the prepositions were used with either of these local cases (loc., instr., abl.). Some few of them continued to be so used even in the N. T. This matter will come up again under the head of Prepositions, but we may note here that ἐπὶ and παρά are the only prepositions that use three cases with any frequency\(^3\) in the N. T., and in the case of ἐπὶ it is probably the true genitive, not the ablative. Ἡπός has accusative 679 times, locative 6, and ablative 1 (Ac. 27:34, a literary example).\(^4\) The bulk of those that have two are narrowing down to one case\(^5\) while ἄνα, ἁντί, ἐν, ἐν, πρό have only one, and ἀμφί has disappeared save in composition. If this N. T. situation, which is amply supported by the papyri, is compared with the usage of Homer, the contrast will be very great.\(^6\) To carry the matter a step further one may note that in late Greek there is a constant tendency for all prepositions to be used with the accusative, so that in modern Greek vernacular all the "proper" prepositions are regularly employed with the accusative.\(^7\) The occasional LXX use of σύν + accusative, while a mere error, was in line with this tendency.

(e) INCREASING USE OF PREPOSITIONS. The constantly increasing use of prepositions is one of the main reasons for the blending of the case-forms. This was already partly apparent in the Sanskrit in the assimilation of genitive and ablative singular and in the plural of ablative and dative. So the Latin locative, dative, ablative, instrumental, in most words merged their forms. Moulton\(^8\) accents the fact that it was the local cases (loc., abl., instr.) in the Greek that first gave way in their endings. That is true with the exception of the accusative (not a purely local

---

\(^{1}\) Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 341.
\(^{2}\) Ib. But Monro, Hom Gr., p. 125, correctly admits the gen.
\(^{3}\) Moulton, Prol., p. 106 f.
\(^{4}\) Ib.
\(^{5}\) Ib., p. 105 f.
\(^{6}\) Cf. Monro, Hom. Gr., pp. 125
\(^{7}\) Thumb, Handb., p. 98; Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 366.
\(^{8}\) Prol., p. 60 f.
case), which has shown more persistence than any case save the

genitive. The genitive is a non-local case and has held on, though
the dative has disappeared in modern Greek vernacular before
\(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\) + accusative, the accusative without \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\), and the genitive. But
this break-down of the case-endings seen in Sanskrit, much more
apparent in Greek and Latin, has reached its climax in modern
English and French. In modern English the six Anglo-Saxon end-
ings, barring pronouns, have disappeared save one, the genitive (s),
and even that can be expressed by the prep. \textit{of}. In French the
process is complete except in prons. Modern Greek vernacular
shows the influence of this tendency very decidedly. The Greek
of the N. T. comes therefore in the middle of the stream of this
analytic tendency. In the old Sanskrit it was all case and no
preposition. In modern French it is all preposition and no case-
ending. The case-ideas have not disappeared. They are simply
expressed more minutely and exactly by means of prepositions.
By and by the case-endings were felt to be useless as the prepo-
sition was looked to entirely for the idea. The case without prep-
osition belongs to the early stage of language history.\(^1\) When
Delbruck\(^2\) speaks of a "living" case, he means the case-ending,
as does Moulton\(^3\) when he asserts that "we can detect a few
moribund traces of instrumental, locative and ablative." If he
means the case-meaning, the instances are abundant. And even
in case-ending it is not all one-sided, for the locative --\(\tau\) and the
instrumental --\(\otau\) both contributed to the common stock of forms.
Henry\(^4\) even suggests that in \(\delta\nu\omicron\alpha\-\tau\omicron\omicron\) we have the ablative \(\tau\) (\(\nu\)),
for the Latin word is \textit{nomen} (\textit{nominis}).

(f) DISTINCTION PRESERVED IN THE N. T. But the N. T. has
not lost distinctive use of the cases and prepositions. Special
causes explain some of the phenomena in the N. T. The excessive
use of \(\varepsilon\nu\) in the N. T. is parallel to that in the LXX (cf. Jer. 21:
5 f., 9 f.) and is doubtless due partly to the Hebrew which
it so commonly translates as Moulton\(^5\) observes. But the so-
called instrumental use of \(\varepsilon\nu\) like \(\varepsilon\nu\ \rho\omicron\mu\upsilon\phi\alpha\imath\alpha\), (Rev. 6:8; cf. Mt.
12:26 f.) is not due entirely to the Hebrew, for, while very com-
mon in the LXX, where it is in "the plenitude of its power,"\(^6\)
yet the papyri show undoubted examples of the same instrumental

\(^1\) See further Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 376; Brug., Kurze vergl. Gr., II, p. 419.
\(^3\) Prol., p. 60.
\(^4\) Comp. Gr. of Gk. and Lat., p. 217.
\(^5\) Prol., p. 61.
\(^6\) C. and S., Sel. from the LXX, p. 82.
usage.\(^1\) See further Locative Case and also Prepositions (b). Indeed in the N. T. \( \texttt{ἐν} \) outnumbers \( \texttt{εἰς} \) three to two.\(^2\) If these two prepositions are left out of consideration, the disappearance of the locative with prepositions is quite marked in the N. T., a decay already begun a good while before,\(^3\) only to be consummated in the modern Greek vernacular, where \( \texttt{εἰς} \) has displaced \( \texttt{ἐν} \) (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 100). When one recalls that dative and instrumental also have gone from the modern Greek vernacular and that \( \texttt{στὸ} \) with the accusative (\( \texttt{εἰς τὸν} \)) replaces all three cases in modern Greek and that originally \( \texttt{ἐν} \) and \( \texttt{εἰς} \) were the same preposition, he is not surprised to read \( \delta \; \texttt{εἰς τὸν} \; \texttt{ἀγρόν} \) (Mt. 13:16) where Mt. 24:18 has \( \delta \; \texttt{ἐν τῷ} \; \texttt{ἄγρῳ} \). So Mt. 12:41, \( \texttt{μετενόησαν} \; \texttt{εἰς} \; \texttt{τὸ} \; \texttt{κήρυγμα} \; \texttt{Ἰωνᾶ}. \) Moulton\(^4\) has a very suggestive study of \( \texttt{πιστεύω} \). He omits those examples where the verb means ‘entrust’ and finds about forty others with the simple dative. In the majority of these forty the verb means ‘believe.’ There are some debatable passages like Jo. 5:24, 38; 8:31; Ac. 5:14; 16:34; 18:8. He finds only one passage outside of Eph. 1:13 where \( \texttt{ἐν} \; \texttt{ὡ} \) is assimilated (cf. \( \texttt{ἐσφρα-γίσθητε} \)), viz. Mk. 1:15 (\( \texttt{πιστεύετε} \; \texttt{ἐν} \; \texttt{τῷ} \; \texttt{ἐνωμένῳ} \; \texttt{γελίῳ} \) and he follows Deissmann\(^5\) in taking \( \texttt{ἐν} \) as ‘in the sphere of.’ \( \texttt{Πιστεύω} \; \texttt{ἐπὶ} \) is found six times with the locative and seven with the accusative in the sense of ‘repose one's trust’ upon God or Christ. But \( \texttt{πιστεύω} \; \texttt{ἐπὶ} \; \texttt{εἰς} \) occurs 45 times (37 in Jo. and 1 Jo.) in the sense of ‘mystical union with Christ,’ like Paul’s \( \texttt{ἐν Χριστῷ} \).\(^6\)

**IV. The Distinctive Idea of Each of the Cases.**

(a) **FUNDAMENTAL IDEA.** The point is, if possible, to get at the fundamental idea of each of the eight original cases. To do this it is essential that one look at the Greek cases historically and from the Greek point of view. Foreigners may not appreciate all the niceties, but they can understand the respective import of the Greek cases.\(^7\) The N. T. writers, as we now know perfectly well, were not strangers to the vernacular \( \texttt{κοινή}, \) nor were the LXX translators for that matter, though they indeed were hampered by translating a Semitic tongue into Greek. The N. T. writers were in their element when they wrote vernacular

---

\(^1\) Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 61 f.\n
\(^3\) Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 62.\n
\(^4\) *Prol.*, p. 67 f.\n
\(^5\) In Christo, p. 46 f.\n
\(^6\) Cf. Heitmiiller, *Im Namen Jesu*, I, ch. 4.\n
κοινή. They knew the import of the Greek cases as used at that time by the people at large.

(b) CASES NOT USED FOR ONE ANOTHER. We have no right to assume in the N. T. that one case is used for another. That is to say, that you have a genitive, but it is to be understood as an accusative. Winer\(^1\) properly condemns such *enallage casuum*. Not even in 2 Cor. 6:4 (συνιστάνουτες ἑαυτοὺς ὑς θεοῦ διάκονοι) do we have an instance of it, for the nominative (lit. plural) means ‘as minister of God I commend myself,’ while the accusative (διακόνους) would be, ‘I commend myself as a minister of God.’ We are then to look for the distinctive idea of each case just as we find it. In the modern Greek, to be sure, the cases are in such confusion (dative, locative, instrumental gone) that one cannot look for the old distinctions.

(c) VITALITY OF CASE-IDEA. This independence of the case-idea is not out of harmony with the blending of case-forms (abl. and gen., loc. and instr. and dat.). This is a very different matter from the supposed substitution of cases alluded to above. The genitive continued to be a genitive, the ablative an ablative in spite of the fact that both had the same ending. There would be, of course, ambiguous examples, as such ambiguities occur in other parts of speech. The context is always to be appealed to in order to know the case.

(d) THE HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE CASES. This is always to be considered. The accusative is the oldest of the cases, may, in fact, be considered the original and normal case. Other cases are variations from it in course of linguistic development. With verbs in particular which were transitive the accusative was the obvious case to use unless there was some special reason to use some other. The other oblique cases with verbs (gen., abl., loc., instr., dat.) came to be used with one verb or the other rather than the accusative, because the idea of that verb and the case coalesced in a sense. Thus the dative with πείθω-μαι, the instrumental with χρῆ-μαι, etc. But with many of these verbs the accusative continued to be used in the vernacular (or even in the literary language with a difference of idea, as ἄκούω). In the vernacular κοινή the accusative is gradually reasserting itself by the side of the other cases with many verbs. This tendency kept up to the complete disappearance of the dative, locative and instrumental in modern Greek (cf. Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 31), and the

\(^1\) W.-Th., p. 180 f. The ancients developed no adequate theory of the cases since they were concerned little with syntax. Riem. and Goelzer, *Synt.*, p. 37.
The accusative was always the most popular case. Krebs has made a useful study of the cases in the literary koινή, and Moulton thinks that these tendencies of the literary koινή are really derived from the vernacular. But not all the verbs fall in with the decay of the dative-locative-instrumental. Thus προσκυνεῖν in the N. T. has the dative twice as often as the accusative, just the opposite of the inscriptions. But the papyri show little proof of the decay of the dative save in the illiterate examples. The accusative gains from the genitive and ablative in the N. T. also, as Krebs found in the later literary Greek. Moulton finds that out of 47 examples κρατεῖν has the genitive only 8 times, but διαφέρειν (‘surpass’) has the ablative. Ἐντρέπεσθαι takes only the accusative, and the accusative appears with verbs of filling (Rev. 17:3). Moulton concludes his résumé of Krebs by calling attention to the list of verbs that were once intransitive, but are transitive in the koινή. This is a matter that is always changing and the same verb may be used either way. A verb is transitive, by the way, whether it takes the accusative or not; if it has any oblique case it is transitive. As illustrations of this varied usage Moulton cites from the N. T. ἐνεργεῖν, συνεργεῖν, ἐπέρχεσθαι, καταβαρεῖν, καταλαλέιν, καταπονεῖν, κατισχύειν, πλεονεκτεῖν, προσφωνεῖν, ὑποτρέχειν, χορηγεῖν. He concludes his discussion of the matter with a needed caveat (p. 65 f.) against thinking that all distinctions of case are blurred in the N. T. "We should not assume, from the evidence just presented as to variation of case with verbs, that the old distinctions of case-meaning have vanished, or that we may treat as mere equivalents those constructions which are found in common with the same word." Analogy no doubt played its part in case-contamination as well as in the blending of the case-endings.

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 325.
3 Prol., p. 64.
6 Prol., p. 65.
7 Ib. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 102. Cf. Thumb, Theol. Lit., XXVIII, p. 422, for mod. Gk. usage. As a matter of fact the acc. was always more popular in the vernac. Gk., and no wonder that the pap. show it to be so even with verbs usually in the lit. lang. used with other cases. Cf. A. Volker, Pap. Graec. Synt., 1900, p. 5 f.
8 Middleton, Anal. in Synt., pp. 47-55. Farrar, Gk. Synt., overstates it when he says that the acc. alone has preserved its original (force. He means form alone.
(e) THE METHOD OF THIS GRAMMAR. In the study of each case the method of this grammar is to begin with the root-idea of the particular case in hand. Out of that by means of context and grammatical history the resultant meaning in the particular instance can be reached. This is not only more simple, but it is in harmony with the facts of the linguistic development and usage. Even in an instance like ἔν μαχαίρῃ (Lu. 22:49) the locative case is not out of place. The smiting (πατάξομεν) is conceived as located in the sword. Cf. ἔν ῥάβδῳ (1 Cor. 4:21). The papyri show the same usage, as indeed the older classical Greek did occasionally. In English we translate this resultant idea by ‘with,’ but we have no right to assume that the Greeks thought of ἔν as ‘with.’ The LXX shows that the Hebrew corresponded closely to the Greek ἔν in this resultant idea. In translation we often give not the real meaning of the word, but the total idea, though here the LXX follows closely the Hebrew. One of the chief difficulties in syntax is to distinguish between the Greek idiom and the English translation of the idiom plus the context. But enough of preliminary survey. Let us now examine each case in turn.

V. The Nominative (πτῶσις ὀρθή, εὐθεία, ὄνομαστική).

For the older books on the nominative case see Hubner, Grundriss etc., p. 36.

(a) NOT THE OLDEST CASE. The first thing to observe about the nominative is that it is not the oldest case. The accusative is treated first in some grammars and seems to be the oldest. That is the proper historical order, but it seems best on the whole to treat the so-called "oblique" cases together. The term "oblique cases" (πτῶσεις πλάγιαι) has a history. The nominative was not originally regarded as a case, but merely the noun (ὄνομα). So Aristotle.1 The vocative is not a real case, as we shall see directly. Hence a case (casus) was considered ὤς ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄνόματος πεπτωκύια, a real πτῶσις. All the true cases therefore were oblique. Indeclinable words are ἄπωτα. When the nominative was considered a case it was still called by the word for noun (ὄνομαστική, nominativus), the naming or noun case. The Hindu grammarians indeed call the nominative prathamā (‘first’) as the leading case, not in time, but in service. This is merely the logical arrangement followed by the Western scholars.2 There was once no need felt for a nominative, since the verb itself had its own subject in the personal endings.3 But originally one may suppose a word served

---

1 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 67.  
2 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 89.  
3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 113; Giles, Man., p. 301.
as subject of the verb and may have become an ending. Even
the impersonal verbs like καλῶς ἔχει have the subject in the same
way. The use of a special case for this purpose was an after-
thought,

(b) REASON FOR THE CASE. Why then was the nominative
used? Why was it ever originated? Its earliest use was in appos-
tion to the verbal subject alluded to above.\(^1\) Greater, precision in
the subject was desired, and so a substantive or pronoun was put
in apposition with the verbal ending.\(^2\) Sometimes both substan-
tive and pronoun are employed as in αὐτός δὲ ἐγὼ Παῦλος παρακαλῶ
(2 Cor. 10:1). Other languages can even use other cases for
such apposition in the predicate. Cf. English It’s me, French c’est
moi and Latin dedecori est. And the Greek itself shows abundant
evidence of lack of concord of case in apposition (cf. Rev. in the
N. T.).\(^3\) But the nominative is a constant resource in appositional
phrases, whatever case the other word may be in. The whole
subject of apposition was discussed in the chapter on the Sentence.
Cf. ὁ ἄνθρωπος ὁμοιός, where the same point applies.\(^4\) Cf. ἄνηρ τις
Ἀνανίας (Ac. 5:1). In the modern Greek this usage partly re-
places the explanatory genitive, as σπυρὶ σινάπι, ‘mustard seed’
(Thumb, Handb., p. 33).

(C) PREDICATE NOMINATIVE. The predicate nominative is in
line with the subject nominative. It is really apposition.\(^5\) The
double nominative belongs to Greek as to all languages which use
certain verbs as a copula like εἶναι, γίνεσθαι, καλεῖσθαι, etc. Cf.
σὺ ἐὰν Πέτρος (Mt. 16:18). The Latin is fond of the dative in such
eamples as id mihi honori est, and the Greek can use one dative, as
ὄνομα ἐστίν μοι.\(^6\) Thus in the N. T. ἐκλήθη τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦς (Lu.
2:21), ἄνηρ καλοῦμενος Ζακχαῖος (Lu. 19:2), ἤν ὄνομα τῷ δούλῳ Μάλχως
(Jo. 18:10), as well as\(^7\) Ἰωάννης ἐστίν ὄνομα αὐτοῦ (Lu. 1:63). The
use of the nominative in the predicate with the infinitive in indirect
discourse (φάσκωντες εἶναι σοφοί, Ro. 1:22) is proper when the sub-
ject of the principal verb is referred to. See Indirect Discourse
(Modes and Infinitive). But the N. T., especially in quotations
from the LXX and passages under Semitic influence, often uses

\(^1\) Ib., p. 302.
\(^2\) Cf. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 188.
\(^3\) Cf. Meisterh., Gr. d. att. Inschr., p. 203, for exx. of the free use of the
noun in app.
\(^4\) Monro, Homn. Gr., p. 117.
\(^6\) Cf. K.-G., I, p. 44.
\(^7\) Cf. W.-Scli., p. 256.
eiς and the accusative rather than the predicate nom. Moulton\(^1\) denies that it is a real Hebraism since the papyri show the idiom ἐσχον παρ’ ὑμῶν eiς δά(νειον) σπέρματα, K.P. 46 (ii/A.D.), where eiς means ‘as’ or ‘for,’ much like the N. T. usage. But the fact that it is so common in the translation passages and that the LXX is so full of it as a translation of י' justifies Blass\(^2\) in saying that it is formed on a Hebrew model though it is not un-Greek. Winer\(^3\) finds it in the late Greek writers, but the Hebrew is chiefly responsible for the LXX situation. The most frequent examples in the N. T. are with etym. ἐναι (ἐσονται eiς σάρκα μίαν, Mt. 19:5, which can be compared with Lu. 3:5; 2 Cor. 6:18; Ac. 8:23, etc.), γίνεσθαι (ἐγένηθη eiς κεφαλῆν γυνίας, Mt. 21:42, with which compare Lu. 13:19; Jo. 16:20; Rev. 8:11, etc.), ἐγείρειν eiς βασιλέα (Ac. 13:22), ἐλογίσθη eiς δικαιοσύνην (Ro. 4:3 ff.). Cf. also Jo. 16:20. Probably the following examples have rather some idea of purpose and are more in accord with the older Greek idiom. In 1 Cor. 4:3, ἐμοί eiς ἐλάχιστον ἐστιν, the point is not very different. Cf. also 1 Cor. 14:22 (eiς σημείον). But observe μὴ eiς κενὸν γένηται (1 Th. 3:5), eiς πάντοθς ἀνθρώπους eiς κατάκριμα (Ro. 5:18), ἐγένετο ἡ πόλις eiς τρία μέρη (Rev. 16:19).

(d) SOMETIMES UNALTERED. As the name-case the nominative is sometimes left unaltered in the sentence instead of being put in the case of the word with which it is in apposition. Cf. Rev. 1:5; Mk. 12:38-40; Lu. 20:27; Ac. 10:37. This is in accord with the ancient Greek idiom, though the Book of Rev. has rather more than the usual proportion of such examples. See chapter on the Sentence, pp. 413 ff. In Rev. 9:11 observe ὀνόμα ἐχει Ἀπολλών (cf. Ἀβαδδών also), where the nominative is retained much after the fashion of our quotation-marks. The same thing\(^4\) is noticeable in Jo. 13:13 ὑμεῖς φωνεῖτε με ὁ διδάσκαλος καὶ ὁ κύριος, for thus W. H. print it. This is a classic idiom. Cf. Xenoph., Oec. 6, 14 ἐσοντας, τὸ σεμνὸν τούτο τὸ καλὸς τε καγαθὸς. Cf. Lu. 19:29; 21:37, where W. H. print eiς τὸ ὄρος τὸ καλούμενον ἐλαιῶν. But we know from Ac. 1:12, (ἀπὸ ὄρος τὸ καλούμενον ἐλαιῶν. that ἐλαιῶν could be in Luke a nominative (abundantly confirmed

\(^1\) Prol., p. 71 f.
\(^3\) W.-Th., p. 184.
\(^4\) Moulton, Prol., p. 235, endorses Blast's view (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 85) that in Jo. 13:13 we have the voc. The nom. is hardly "incredible" (Blass). Cf. loose use of the nom. in lists in Boeot. inscr. in the midst of other cases (Claflin, Synt., etc., p. 46).
by the papyri). The most that can be said about the passages in Luke is that the nominative ἐλαῖων is entirely possible, perhaps probable.¹ In Rev. 1:4 (ἀπὸ ὄ ν καὶ ὃ ἦν καὶ ὃ ἐρχόμενος) the nominative is kept purposely, as has been shown, to accent the unchangeableness of God, not that John did not know how to use the ablative after ἀπὸ, for in the same sentence he has ἀπὸ τῶν πνευμάτων. Moulton² aptly describes the nominative as "residuary legatee of case-relations not obviously appropriated by other cases." But as a matter of fact the nominative as a rule is used normally and assimilation is general so that in Mt. 1:21 (cf. 1:25 also) we read καλέσεις τῷ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦν. Cf. Mk. 3:16 ὄνομα Πέτρου and Ac. 27:1 ἐκατοντάρχη ὄνοματι Ἰουλίῳ. Cf. Ac. 18:2. It is, of course, nothing strange to see the nominative form in apposition with a vocative, as οἱ φοβοῦμενοι (Rev. 19:5), πάτερ ἡμῶν ὦ τοῖς οὐρανοῖς (Mt. 6:9). This is only natural as the article and participles have no vocative form. Cf. ὁ ἀνθρωπός ὁ κρίνων (Ro. 2:3). Cf. even οὐαί ύμῖν, οἱ ἐμπεπλησμένοι (Lu. 6:25), where we have really the vocative, not apposition.

(e) THE NOMINATIVE ABSOLUTE. The nominative is sometimes used absolutely, nominatus pendens, just as the genitive (ablative) and accusative are. Cf. ablative absolute in Latin, locative in Anglo-Saxon, and nominative absolute in modern Greek and modern English. In titles the nominative is the natural case and is left suspended. Cf. Παῦλος κλητός ἀπόστολος (1 Cor. 1:1). The LXX has an abnormal number of suspended nominatives, due to a literal translation of the Hebrew.³ But the N. T. has some also which are due to change of structure, as ὁ νικῶν ποιήσω αὐτόν (Rev. 3:12), ὁ νικῶν δυσώς αὐτῶ (Rev. 3:21), ὁ γὰρ Μωσῆς οὗτος—οὐκ οἴδαμεν τί ἐγένετο αὐτῷ (Ac. 7:40), πᾶν ῥῆμα ἀργῶν—ἀποδώσουσι περὶ αὐτοῦ λόγου (Mt. 12:36), ταῦτα ἐπὶ θεωρεῖτε, ἐλεύσονται ἡμέραι (Lu. 21:6). In particular is the participle (cf. Jo. 7:38, ὁ πιστεύων εἰς ἐμὲ common in such a nominative, about which see the chapter on the Sentence (anacoluthon). Moulton⁴ considers this one of "the easiest of anacoluta." Cf. further ἡς ἔρει—ἀφεθῆσεται αὐτῷ, (Lu. 12:10; cf. verse 8). Cf. Jo. 18:11. Some of the examples, like τὸ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου, ἐν ὧν ἦσθενεί (Ro. 8:3), may be regarded as accusative as easily as nominative. The
papyri\(^1\) show plenty of examples of this suspended nominative. For classical instances see Riemann and Goelzer, *Syntaxe*, p. 41. For elliptical nominative see *Εὐδία* (Mt. 16:2). There was a constant tendency in the LXX to drift into the nominative in a long series of words in apposition (Thackeray, p. 23).

(f) THE PARENTHETIC NOMINATIVE is of a piece with what we have been considering. So in Jo. 1:6 we have ὄνομα αὐτῷ ἰωάννης all by itself. Cf. 3:1 (*Νικόδημος ὄνομα αὐτῶ*). Similarly the nominative in expressions of time rather than the accusative may be explained.\(^2\) For example in Mk. 8:2 we read ὅτι ἦδη ἦμεραι τρεῖς προσμένουσιν μοι and = Mt. 15:32. In Lu. 9:28 ὡσεὶ ἦμεραι ὀκτὼ the matter is simpler. Blass\(^3\) compares with this passage ὃς ὑρῶν τριῶν διάστημα (Ac. 5:7) and ἔδου δέκα καὶ ὀκτὼ ἐτη (Lu. 13:16). The use of ἔδου with the nominative is very common and may be a case of ellipsis. Cf. ἔδου φωνῇ ἐκ τῶν οὐρανῶν λέγουσα (Mt. 3:17). Cf. Heb. 2:13, etc. In Mk. 6:40 observe ἀνέπεσαν πρασιάι πρασιά. This leads one to suspect that συμπόσια συμπόσια in verse 39 may be nominative also. The repetition is not a mere Hebraism, since the papyri show examples of it. See Eccl. 2: 16 καθότι ἦδη αἱ ἦμεραι ἐρχόμεναι τὰ πάντα ἐπελήσθη. This use of the nominative is common in the papyri (cf. ἐτὶ ἦμεραι γὰρ ἦδη τρεῖς καὶ νύκτες τρεῖς θέκλα οὐκ ἐγῆγερται, *Acta Pauli et Theclae* in O.P. p. 9) and can be traced in the Attic vernacular back to the fifth century B.C.\(^4\)

Thumb finds it still in the modern Greek, and Hopkins (A.J.P. xxiv. 1) "cites a rare use from the Sanskrit: 'a year (nom.) almost, I have not gone out from the hermitage'" (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 235). See other papyri examples in *Cl. Rev.*, April, 1904, p. 152. Of a piece with this is the nominative with adverbs (prepositions) like εἰς κατὰ εἰς (Mk. 14:19) where the first εἰς is in partitive apposition and the second is kept rather than made accusative. Cf. καθ’ εἰς (Ro. 12:5), ἀνα εἰς (Rev. 21:21). Brugmann\(^5\) indeed considers the adverbs πρῶτον, δεύτερον, etc., in the nominative neuter rather than the accusative neuter singular. He cites ἀναμίξ as proof. Cf. the use of καὶ τοῦτο (and also καὶ ταῦτα), as καὶ τοῦτο ἐπὶ ἀπίστων (1 Cor. 6:6). But αὐτὸ τοῦτο (2 Pet. 1:5) is probably accusative. The prolepsis of the nominative as in 1 Cor. 14:16 (ὁ ἀναπηληρῶν τῶν τόπων τοῦ ἰδιώτου πῶς ἔρει) is natural. Cf. examples like χρόνος ὁ αὐτός in Boeotian inscriptions (Claflin, *Syntax*, etc., p. 47).

---

\(^1\) Moulton, *Cl. Rev.*, 1964, p. 151 f.
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 85.
\(^4\) Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 70; Meisterh., Gr., etc., p. 203.
\(^5\) Griech. Gr., p. 378,
(g) IN EXCLAMATIONS. The nominative is natural in exclamations, a sort of interjectional nominative. So Paul in Ro. 7:24, ταλαίπωρος ἐγὼ ἀνθρώπως, and 11:33, ὁ βασιλεὺς (a possible vocative) πλούτου. So. Ro. 7:24; 1 Cor. 15:57. Cf. χάρις τῷ θεῷ (Ro. 6:17). For parallel in papyri see Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 436. Cf. χάρις τοῖς θεοῖς, B.U. 843 (i/A.D.).

(h) USED AS VOCATIVE. It only remains to consider the nominative form which is used as a vocative. Cf. chapter VII, 7, (a), for details as to form. It all depends on what one means by the term "case" when he says that the nominative is used as a vocative. The form is undoubtedly the same as that of the vocative in a multitude of instances (all neuter nouns, for instance, singular and plural, plural of all nouns in truth). It is only in the singular that any distinction was made between the nominative and vocative in form, and by no means always here, as in the case of feminine nouns of the first declension, θεός (usually) in the second, liquid oxytones like ποιμήν in the third, etc. But if by the vocative one means the case of address, then the nominative form in address is really vocative, not nominative. Thus σὺ πατήρ (Jo. 17:21) is just as truly vocative as σοι, πάτερ (17:5). Indeed in Jo. 17:25 we have πατήρ δίκαιε, showing that πατήρ is here regarded as vocative. The article with the vocative in address was the usual Hebrew and Aramaic idiom, as indeed in Aristophanes we have ὁ παῖς ἀκολουθεί. It is good Greek and good Aramaic too when we have Ἀββά ὁ πατήρ (Mk. 14:36) whether Jesus said one or both. In Mt. 11:26 (ναί, ὁ πατήρ) we have the vocative. When the article is used, of course the nominative form must occur. Thus in Rev. 18:20 we have both together, οὐρανὲ καὶ οἱ ἁγιοί. Indeed the second member of the address is always in the nominative form. Thus Κύριε, ὁ θεός, ὁ παντοκράτωρ (Rev. 15:3). Cf. Jo. 20:28. I shall treat therefore this as really the vocative, not the nominative, whatever the form may be, and now pass on to the consideration of the Vocative Case.

VI. The Vocative (πτώσις κλητική).

(a) NATURE OF THE VOCATIVE. Dionysius Thrax called it also προσαγορευτική, but in reality it is not a case at all. Practically it has to be treated as a case, though technically it is not (Farrar, Greek Syntax, p. 69). It is wholly outside of syntax in that the word is isolated and has no word-relations. The isolation of the

---

1 Cf. Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 41; Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 115 f.
2 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 86; Moulton, Prol., p. 70.
3 Riem. and Goelzer, p. 42.
vocative may be compared to the absolute use of the nominative, genitive and accusative. The native Sanskrit grammarians do not name it in their list of cases, and Whitney merely treats it in the singular after the other cases. Indeed the vocative is sometimes as much a sentence as a case, since the word stands to itself and forms a complete idea. Thus Μαρίαμ and Ραββούνει (Jo. 20:16) tell the whole story of recognition between Jesus and Mary. When Thomas said Ο Κύριός μου καὶ ὁ Θεός μου (Jo. 20:28), he gave Christ full acceptance of his deity and of the fact of his resurrection.

(b) VARIOUS DEVICES. The vocative has no case-ending, but has to resort to various expedients. In general it is just like the nominative in form. This is true in all pronouns, participles and various special words like Θεός, besides the plurals, neuters and feminines mentioned under v, (h). Cf. the same practical situation in the Sanskrit. Farrar indeed conjectures that originally there was no difference in form at all between the nominative and vocative and that the variation which did come was due to rapid pronunciation in address. Thus πατήρ, but πέτερ. Cf. άγιος (1 Cor. 7:16). In most languages there is no distinction in form at all between nominative and vocative, and in Latin the distinction is rare. It need not be surprising, therefore, to find the nominative form of many singular words used as vocative as noted above under the discussion of the nominative. Moulton indeed remarks: "The anarthrous nominative should probably be regarded as a mere substitute for the vocative, which begins from the earliest times to be supplanted by the nominative." Even in the singular the distinction was only partial and not very stable at best, especially in the vernacular, and gradually broke down till "in modern Greek the forms in ε are practically the only separate vocatives surviving." Thus Blass observes: "From the earliest times (the practice is as old as Homer) the nominative has a tendency to usurp the place of the vocative," This nominative form in the singular is just as really vocative as in the plural when used in address. The N. T. therefore is merely in line with the oldest Greek idiom in such examples. So θυγάτηρ (Mk. 5:34; Lu. 8:48; Jo. 12:15, LXX), but see θύγατερ in Mt. 9:22. In Jo. 17:21, 24, 25, W. H. read πατήρ, but πάτερ in Jo. 12:28; 17: 1, 5, 11, etc. Moulton rightly refuses to follow Hort in writing πατηρ in voca-

1 Sans. Gr., p. 89.  
2 Whitney, p. 105.  
3 Gk. Synt., p. 70.  
4 Ib., p. 69.  
5 Prol., p. 71.  
6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 86.  
7 Prol., p. 71. Hort, Notes on Orth., p. 158.
In the margin of Mt. 9:27 W. H. read υἱὲ Δαυείδ rather than υἱὸς Δ. Mt. 1:20 has Ἰωσὴφ υἱὸς Δαυείδ, and 15:22 κύριε υἱὸς Δαυείδ, all examples of apposition. Cf. Mt. 20:30. But in Lu. 8:28 and 18:38 we have υἱέ. The adjective ἄφρων is vocative in Lu. 12:20 and 1 Cor. 15:36. Cf. also γενέα ἀπίστος in Lu. 9:41. In Acts 13:10 πλήρης is vocative. Cf. indeclinable use of this word. As is well known θεός was usually retained in the vocative in the older Greek, not θεέ. In the N. T. θεέ only appears in Mt. 27:46 in quotation from the LXX where it is rare.1 Jannaris2 indeed thinks that in the N. T. this idiom is rather frequent. Cf. λαὸς μου you in Baruch 4:5. In Ac. 7:42 ὁικὸς Ἰσραὴλ is vocative (from LXX). Cf. also βάθος πλούτου (Ro. 11:33), not address, but exclamation. When the vocative has a separate form in the singular it is usually merely the stem of the word, like πολίτα, δαίμον, λέον(τ), etc. But it is more than doubtful if this usage goes back to the original Indo-Germanic stock.3 Cf. βασιλεῖ in Ac. 26:7. In the second declension masculine nouns in the singular show a change in the stem-vowel, changing to ε. This usage has persisted in modern Greek vernacular in most words; but note θεός above and the variations about υἱός. But see ἄνθρωπος (Ro. 2:1) as usual. In γύναι (Mt. 15:28) κ has dropped from the stem, as in forms like λέον the τ vanishes for euphony. In θάγατερ and πάτερ the mere stem suffers recessive accent. In Ps. 51:6 (γλῶσσαν δολίαν) we actually have the accusative form used as a vocative.4 See further discussion in ch. VII (Declensions).

(c) USE OF ὦ WITH THE VOCATIVE. It is rare in the N. T., only 17 times, all but four of these in Luke and Paul. In Blass-Debrunner, p. 90, the rarity of ὦ is attributed to the Semitic influence. The common absence of it gives a sort of solemnity where it is found.5 Moulton6 observes that it is only in Luke's writings that it appears in the N. T. without emphasis after the classical fashion. Take as an instance of this literary usage θεόφιλε (Ac. 1:1), but κράτιστε θεόφιλε in Lu. 1:3. Moulton likewise notes the absence of ὦ in prayer in the N. T. (though sometimes in the LXX) and considers "the progressive omission of ὦ" in Greek not easy to explain. It came up from the vernacular and then gradually vanished from the vernacular much as

1 W.-Sch., p. 258 f.; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 86 f.
3 Delbruck, Syntakt. Forch., IV, p. 28.
4 C. and S., Sel. from the Sept., p. 56.
6 Prol., p. 71.
our 0 has done. 1 Blass 2 notes that in most of the N. T. examples it expresses emotion, as ω γύναι (Mt. 15:28), ω γενά ἄπιστος (Mk. 9:19), ω πλήρης (Ac. 13:10), etc. The tone may be one of censure as in Ro. 2:3; 9:20. But it is a mistake to think that the ancient Greeks always used ω in formal address. Simcox 3 notes that Demosthenes often said ἢνδρες ὁ Θεωρων just as Paul did in Ac. 17:22. Paul says ω ἢνδρες once (Ac. 27:21). But the addresses in the N. T. are usually without ω (cf. Ac. 7:2).

(d) ADJECTIVES USED WITH THE VOCATIVE naturally have the same form. Thus ω ἀνθρωπος κενε (Jas. 2:20), δοῦλε τονηρέ (Mt. 18:32), πατέρ ἄγιε (Jo. 17:11), κρατίστε θεόφιλε (Lu. 1:3). In Jo. 17:25 we read πατήρ δίκαιε, clearly showing that πατήρ was regarded as a true vocative form. In Lu. 9:41 ω γενᾶ ἄνδρος the substantive has the same form in nominative and vocative and the adjective here follows suit. Cf. also Ac. 13:10; Lu. 12:20 where the adjective alone in the vocative has nominative form.

(e) APPOSITION TO THE VOCATIVE. The nominative forms and distinctive vocative forms are freely used side by side, in apposition, etc., when the case is vocative. 4 In Mt. 1:20 we have ἰματιφ υίός Δαυείδ, and in 15:22 W. H. read in the text κύριε υίός Δαυείδ. Cf. also Mt. 20:30. So κύριε, ὁ θεός, ὁ παντακράτωρ (Rev. 15:3), and ω ἀνθρωπε, πάς ὁ κρίων (Ro. 2:1). In the last instance the participle and article naturally are unchanged. See again οὕρανε καὶ οὗ Γ'γιοι, etc. (Rev. 18:20). Cf. also πατέρ ἡμῶν ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς (Mt. 6:9). So κύριε μου πατήρ, B.U. 423 (ii/A.D.). But two vocative forms are put together also. So Ἰησοῦς ὕιε τοῦ υψίστου (Lu. 8:28), πατέρ κύριε τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (10:21), Ἰησοῦς ὕιε Δαυείδ (18:38). In Ac. 13:10 the nominative form is followed by two vocative forms, ω πλήρης παντός δόλου κτλ., υἱε διαβόλου, ἔχθρε πάσης δικαιοσύνης. But πλήρης may be here indeclinable. There is a distinct tendency among the less educated writers in the papyri to use the nominative as a convenient indeclinable (Moulton, Cl. Rev., April, 1904). So τῆς ἐπιτήρησις, N. P. 38 (iii/A.D.).

(f) VOCATIVE IN PREDICATE. The vocative is rarely found in the predicate, though not grammatical predicate. This was oc-

casionally the case in the older Greek by a sort of attraction to a
real vocative in the sentence. 1 But in the N. T. we only have a
few examples in the nature of quotation or translation. So in Jo.
1:38, ’Ραββεί, ὁ λέγεται μεθερμηνεύομενον Διδάσκαλε; 20:16 ’Ραβ-
βουνεί, ὁ λέγεται Διδάσκαλε.

(g) THE ARTICLE WITH THE VOCATIVE. This idiom is frequent
in the N. T., some 60 examples. 2 It is a good Greek idiom and not
infrequent. 3 Delbrück 4 finds it in harmony with the Indo-Germanic
languages. Moulton 5 denies that the coincident Hebrew and
Aramaic use of the article in address had any influence on the
N. T. But one must admit that the LXX translators would
be tempted to use this Greek idiom very frequently, since the He-
brew had the article in address. 6 Cf. 3 Ki. 17:20, 21, etc. In
Mk 5:41, the Aramaic Ταλειθά is translated τὸ κοράσιον. One is
therefore bound to allow some influence to the Hebrew and Ara-
maic. 7 Cf. also Ἄββα ὁ πατήρ in Mk. 14:36, Gal. 4:6, and Ro.
8:15. It is doubtless true that ἡ παίς ἔγειρε (Lu. 8:54) has a
touch of tenderness, and that τὸ μικρὸν ποίμνιον (Lu. 12:32)
means ‘you little flock.’ But one can hardly see such familiarity in
ὁ πατήρ (Mt. 11:26). But in Mk. 9:25 there may be a sort of
insistence in the article, like 'Thou dumb and deaf spirit' (τὸ
ἄλαλον καὶ κωφὸν πνεῦμα). Even here the Aramaic, if Jesus used
it, had the article. Moulton 8 considers that βασιλεὺς in Ac. 26:7
admits the royal prerogative in a way that would be inappropriate
in the mockery of Jesus in Jo. 19:3 (χαίρε, ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων).
But Mk. 15:18 does have βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων, due, according to
Moulton, to "the writer's imperfect sensibility to the more delicate
shades of Greek idiom." Possibly so, but may not the grammarian
be guilty of slight overrefinement just here? In Mt. 27:29 the
text of W. H. has βασιλεὺς while the margin reads ὁ βασιλεὺς. In
Rev. 15:3 we have ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν αἰώνων. In Heb. 1:8 it is not
certain whether ὁ θρόνος σου ὁ θεός is vocative or nominative.
But ὁ δεσπότης ὁ άγιος καὶ ἀληθινός (Rev. 6:10) is vocative. As
elements of participles in the vocative take ὁ καταλύων (Mt. 27:40)

p. 397 f.
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 70.
4 Vergl. Synt., p. 398 f.
5 Prol., p. 70.
6 C. and S., Sel., etc., p. 54.
7 Moulton in a note (p. 235) does concede some Aram. influence. In He-
brews it only occurs, as he notes, in 0. T. citations. Cf. also Dolman, Gr.,
p. 118.
and οἱ ἐμπεπλήσμενοι νῦν (Lu. 6:25). In Rev. 4:11 we have also the vocative case in ὁ κύριος καὶ ὁ θεός. In Jo. 20:28 Thomas addresses Jesus as ὁ κύριος μου καὶ ὁ θεός μου, the vocative like those above. Yet, strange to say, Winer\textsuperscript{1} calls this exclamation rather than address, apparently to avoid the conclusion that Thomas was satisfied as to the deity of Jesus by his appearance to him after the resurrection. Dr. E. A. Abbott\textsuperscript{2} follows suit also in an extended argument to show that κύριε ὁ θεός is the LXX way of addressing God, not ὁ κύριος καὶ ὁ θεός. But after he had written he appends a note to p. 95 to the effect that "this is not quite satisfactory. For xiii. 13, φωνεῖτε με ὁ διδάσκαλος καὶ ὁ κύριος, and Rev. 4:11 ἥσσος εἰ, ὁ κύριος καὶ ὁ θεός ἡμῶν, ought to have been mentioned above." This is a manly retraction, and he adds: "John may have used it here exceptionally." Leave out "exceptionally" and the conclusion is just. If Thomas used Aramaic he certainly used the article. It is no more exceptional in Jo. 20:28 than in Rev. 4:11.

VII. The Accusative (ἡ αἰτιατικὴ πτῶσις).

(a) THE NAME. It signifies little that is pertinent. Varro calls it accusandei casus from αἰτιάομαι, while Dionysius Thrax explains it as κατ' αἰτίαν (‘cause’), a more likely idea. Glycas calls it also τῷ αἰτίῳ. So Priscian terms it causativus. Gildersleeve ("A Syntactician among the Psychologists," Am. Jour. Philol., Jan., 1910, p. 76) remarks: "The Romans took the bad end of αἰτία, and translated αἰτιατική, accusativus — hopeless stupidity, from which grammar did not emerge till 1836, when Trendelenburg showed that αἰτιατικὴ πτῶσις means casus effectivus, or causativus . . . The object affected appears in Greek now as an accusative, now as a dative, now as a genitive. The object effected refuses to give its glory to another, and the object affected can be subsumed under the object effected." With this I agree. Cf. Farrar, Greek Syntax, p. 81. Old English "accuse" could mean ‘betray’ or ‘show,’ but the "showing" case does not mark it off from the rest. Originally, however, it was the only case and thus did show the relations of nouns with other words. On the small value of the case-names see Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 379. But at any rate accusativus is a false translation of αἰτιατική. Steinthal, Geschichte d. Spr., p. 295.

(b) AGE AND HISTORY. A more pertinent point is the age and history of the accusative, the oldest of all the cases. Farrar (Greek Syntax, p. 81) calls attention to the fact that ἐγὼ (old form of ἔγω), Sanskrit aham, tuam, Boeotian τοῦ, Latin idem, all have the

\textsuperscript{1} W.-Th., p. 183.  
\textsuperscript{2} Joh. Gr., pp. 93 ff.
accusative ending though in the nominative. If it is true that the accusative is the oldest case, perhaps we are to think of the other oblique cases as variations from it. In other words the accusative was the normal oblique case for a noun, (especially with verbs) unless there was some special reason for it to be in another case. The other oblique cases were developed apparently to express more exactly than the accusative the various word-relations. Indeed in the vernacular Greek the accusative retained its old frequency as the normal case with verbs that in the literary style used other cases. In the old Greek poets the same thing is noticeable. Pindar, for example, has "a multiplicity of accusatives." In the modern Greek vernacular the accusative has regained its original frequency to the corresponding disuse of the other oblique cases. Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 35. "When a find sense for language is failing, it is natural to use the direct accusative to express any object which verbal action affects, and so to efface the difference between 'transitive' and 'intransitive' verbs." There was therefore first a decrease in the use of the accusative as the literary language grew, then an increase in the κοινή vernacular, the later Greek, and especially the modern Greek vernacular. This gain or rather persistence of the accusative in the vernacular is manifest in the N. T. in various ways. But the literary κοινή shows it also, as Krebs has carefully worked out with many verbs.

(c) THE MEANING OF THE ACCUSATIVE. It is not so easy to determine this in the view of many scholars. Delbruck despairs of finding a single unifying idea, but only special types of the accusative. Brugmann also admits that the real ground-idea of the case is unknown, though the relation between noun and verb is expressed by it. The categories are not always sharply defined in the soul of the speaker. Hilbschmann treats the expansion

2 Giles, Man., p. 306.
3 Jebb, Vincent and Dickson's Handb. to Mod. Grk., p. 307.
6 Hatz., Einl., p. 221.
9 Kurz vergl. Gr., p. 441.
10 Griech. Gr., p. 379.
of the verb as the ground-idea of the accusative. "The relation of the accusative to its governing verb resembles the relation of the genitive to its governing substantive."¹ La Roche² considers it originally a local case and that the inner meaning came later. The usage of the accusative can indeed, for convenience, be divided into the outer (ὁικίαν, Mt. 7:24) and the inner (ἐφοβήθησαν φόβον μέγαν, Mk. 4:41) usage. But the whole case cannot be discussed on this artificial principle, as Monro³ rightly sees. He sees hope only in the direction of the wide adverbial use of the accusative. In the Sanskrit certainly "a host of adverbs are accusative cases in form."⁴ Green⁵ calls it "the limitative case," and he is not far out of the way. Farrar⁶ thinks that "motion towards" explains it all. Giles,⁷ while recognising all the difficulties, defines the accusative as the answer to the question "How far?" The word extension comes as near as any to expressing the broad general idea of the accusative as applied to its use with verbs, substantives, adjectives, prepositions. It is far more commonly used with verbs, to be sure, but at bottom the other uses have this same general idea. Being the first case it is naturally the most general in idea. If you ask a child (in English) "Who is it?" he will reply "It's me." This is, however, not a German idiom. The accusative measures an idea as to its content, scope, direction. But the accusative was used in so many special applications of this principle that various subdivisions became necessary for intelligent study.

(d) WITH VERBS OF MOTION. It is natural to begin with verbs of motion, whether we know that this was the earliest use or not, a matter impossible to decide. We still in English say "go home," and the Latin used domum in exactly that way. Extension over space is, of course, the idea here. One goes all the way to his home. It is found in Homer and occasionally in Greek writers.⁸ Modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 37, has a local accusative) πάμε σπίτι, ‘we are going home.’ Moulton (Prol., p. 61) notes that it is just the local cases that first lost their distinctive forms (ablative, locative, associative-instrumental; and the "terminal accusative" like ire Romam disappeared also. "The surviving Greek

¹ Strong, Logeman and Wheeler, Hist. of Lang., p. 128.
² Der Accus. in Hom., p. 1. ⁵ Notes on Gk. and Lat. Synt., p. 10.
cases thus represent purely grammatical relations, those of subject, object, possession, remoter object and instrument. The place-adverb does supply the place of the terminal accusative, but not entirely of the locative, ablative and instrumental.

Some MSS. in Ac. 27:2 read πλεῖν τοῦς κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν τόπους, but the best (W. H.) have εἰς after πλεῖν. In ὑπεπλευσάμεν τὴν Κύπρον and τὸ πέλαγος διαπλευσάμεντες (cf. English "sail the sea"), verses 4 f., the prepositions in composition help to explain the case. In Mt. 4:15 ὄδὸν θαλάσσης has no verb of motion and comes in the midst of vocatives in a way quite startling. Green1 refers to the LXX (Is. 9:1) for the explanation and quotes "Christ and Him Crucified." But the LXX gives little relief, for, while B does not have it, several MSS. do and without a verb. B however reads οἱ τὴν παραλίαν, which presents the same difficulty as to case. Winer2 suggests οἰκοῦντες, with οἱ, possibly correct. But even in Matthew the writer may have had in mind the general accusative notion of extension, ‘along the way of the sea.’

(e) EXTENT OF SPACE. The ordinary accusative for extent of space does not differ materially from that of motion above. Here the root-idea of the case is easily perceived apart from the force of the verb. The point is that this is not a special development of the accusative, but is the normal idea of the case, extension. The application to space is natural. The Greek continues all along to have this idiom as the Latin and English. The adverb μακρῶν (Ac. 22:21) is a good example. Take Jo. 6:19 ἔλησακότες ὡς σταθίσας έίκοσι πέντε ἡ τριάκοντα, Lu. 22:41 ἀπεσπάσθη ἀπ’ αὐτῶν ὡσί ύλίθου βολήν. The accusative tells "how far." Observe in Lu. 2:44 ἡλθον ἡμέρας ὀδόν. Ἑρροὲλθών μικρῶν (Mt. 26:39) is a good example of this use of the accusative. In Ac. 1:12 σαββάτῳ ἥξων ὀδόν varies the construction by the insertion of ἥξων. In Lu. 24:13 similarly we have ἀπέχουσαν σταθίσας ἦξηκοντα. Cf. Mt. 14:24. The use of ᾖπό, as ὡς ᾖπό σταθίσων δεκάπεντε (Jo. 11:18; cf. 21:8; Rev. 14:20), Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 95) calls a Latinism (cf. a millibus passuum duobus), but Moulton (Prol., p. 101 f.) cites Doric and papyri parallels for πρό and makes a mere Latinism unlikely. So O.P. 492 (ii/A.D.) μετ’ ἐνιαυτὸν ἐκα. Diodorus and Plutarch use the same idiom. It is clearly not a direct Latinism. In modern Greek the accusative is common for locality or place affected (Thumb, Handb., p. 35 f.).

(f) EXTENT OF TIME. It answers the question "how far?" in time, or "how long?" In the N. T. the examples of time are far

1 Handb., etc., p. 234. 2 W.-Th., p. 231.
more frequent than those of mere space. The locative, instrumental and genitive are also used to express time, but they bring out a different idea, as will be shown. The accusative is thus used for duration or extension in the Indo-Germanic languages generally. Cf. τὸ ὑδάτικος ὀληγὴν τὴν ἡμέραν ἀργοῖ (Mt. 20:6); τοσσαύτα ἐτη δουλεύω σοι (Lu. 15:29). A good example is ἔμειναν τὴν ἡμέραν ἑκείνην (Jo. 1:39). Cf. Jo. 2:12; 11:6. In Lu. 1:75 W. H. (text) read πᾶσας ταῖς ἡμέρας (instr.). Another good illustration is ἀπεδήμησεν χρόνους ἱκανοὺς (Lu. 20:9). Cf. ἐκ δημαρίου τὴν ἡμέραν (Mt. 20:2) where the accusative well brings out the agreement between the landlord and the labourers. In νύκτα καὶ ἡμέραν (Mk. 4:27) the sleeping and rising go on continually from day to day.

Cf. ἡμέρας ἐξ ἡμέρας (2 Pet. 2:8). The papyri examples are numerous, like τὸκους διδράχμους τῆς μνᾶς τὸν μήνα ἔκαστον, A.P. 50 (ii/B.C.). Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901. The plural is like, wise so used, as τὰς ἡμέρας—τὰς νύκτας (Lu. 21:37).

Perhaps little difficulty is felt in the accusative in Ac. 24:25, τὸ νῦν ἡχον πορεύον. So also as to τὸ λοιπὸν (or λοιπῶν) in Mk. 14:41, τὸ πλείστου (1 Cor. 14:27), and even ἐνεκοπτόμεν τὰ πολλά (Ro. 15:22). But there are uses of the accusative in expressions of time that do furnish trouble at first blush. In some of these the accusative seems to be merely adverbial (Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 94) with little stress on duration. Indeed a point of time may be indicated. Cf. τὸ πρῶτον (Jo. 6:62), πρῶτον (Heb. 10:32), πρῶτον (Mt. 5:24). It is not hard to see how the accusative of general reference came to be used here, although it is a point of time. Note the article (τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν, Lu. 19:47) in the accusative. We can now go on to τὸ τέλος (1 Pet. 3:8) and even τὴν ἁρχὴν (Jo. 8:25). But a more difficult example is found in Jo. 4:52, ἐχθές ὑραν ἐβδόμυν, where a point of time is indicated. See also ποίαν ὑρὰν in Rev. 3:3; πᾶσαν ὑρὰν (1 Cor. 15:30). One may conjecture that this use of ὑρὰν was not regarded as essentially different from the idea of extension. Either the action was regarded as going over the hour or the hour was looked at more as an adverbial accusative like τὸ λοιπὸν above. Cf. also τὴν ἡμέραν τῷς πεντηκοστῆς γενέσθαι εἰς Ἰεροσόλυμα (Ac. 20:16). In Blass-Debrunner, p. 98, examples are given from AESchylus, Euripides, Aristotle, Demosthenes, where ὑρὰν=εἰς ὑρὰν. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 63, for τὸ ἐκαπτὸν ἔτος (0.P. 477, ii/A.D.) ‘in the fifth year.’ Τὸ παρὸν B.U. 22 (ii/A.D.) means ‘at present’ (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 437). In the modern Greek vernacular the accusative is used freely to designate a point of time as well as extent of time.
(Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 37). So in the N. T. the accusative is widening its scope again. In Ac. 10:30 ἀπὸ τεταρτῆς ἡμέρας μέχρι ταύτης τῆς ὄρας ἡμῖν τὴν ἐνάτην προσευχόμενος we can see an interesting example where τὴν ἐνάτην is explanatory of the previous note of time, a point of time, and yet a whole hour is meant. In Ac. 10:3 (περὶ ὄραν ἐνάτην) observe περὶ, though some MSS. do not have the preposition. Cf. Mk. 13:35 μεσονυκτίου (acc.) ἡ ἀλεκτροφωνίας (gen.) ἡ πρωί (loc.) for points of time.\(^1\) The papyri have examples of a point of time in the accusative,\(^2\) as already seen. But the locative is still more frequent in the N. T. for a point of time, as ποίᾳ ὄρᾳ (Lu. 12:39). It is not difficult to see the appropriateness of the accusative in τεσσαρεσκαιδεκάτην σήμερον ἡμέραν προσδοκώτες ἁσίτοι διατελέστε (Ac. 27:33). It is good Greek with the ordinal.

(g) WITH TRANSITIVE VERBS. The most common accusative is when it is the object of a transitive verb. One cannot hope to pursue all the uses of the accusative in the order of historical development. For instance, no one knows whether cognate accusative (of inner content or objective result) preceded the ordinary objective use of the case. Does the adverbial accusative (so common in adjectives) precede the accusative with verbs? These points have to be left unsettled. In actual usage the accusative with transitive verbs calls for most attention. But the term "transitive" needs a word. It means a verb whose action passes over to a noun. This idea may be intransitive in another language, as, for instance, μὴ ὁμνύετε μήτε τὸν ὀμοιώμον άνθρωπον τὴν γῆν (Jas. 5:12). In English ὁμνύω is rendered by 'swear by.' Cf. ἐργάζεσθε μὴ τὴν βρωσίν (Jo. 6:27). English 'work for.' Not all Greek verbs are transitive, as ἔλθε, for example. The same verb may be used now transitively, now intransitively, as ἔμενον ἡμᾶς (Ac. 20:5) and ἔμενεν πάντες αὐτῶν (Ac. 18:3). So ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρυμματίῳ (Mt. 6:4) and τί δὲ βλέπως τὸ κάρφος (Mt. 7:3). Cf. English word "see."

As further illustration of the freedom of the Greek verb note βλέπετε τὸ ὀφθαλμόν (Mt. 4:24), βλέπετε τοὺς κύριας (Ph. 3:2), βλέπετε ἀπὸ τῆς ζύμης (Mt. 8:15).\(^3\) There is indeed a difference between the accusative and the use of a preposition as in φεύγετε τὴν πορνείαν (1 Cor. 6:18) and φεύγετε ἀπὸ τῆς εἰδωλολατρείας. (1 Cor. 10:14).

\(^1\) Blass, *Or. of N. T. Gk.*, p. 311.
\(^3\) Green, *Handb.*, etc., p. 230.
But for practical purposes many Greek verbs were used with liberty. In the case of φοβέομαι with accus. (Mt. 10:26, 28) or with ἀπό and ablative (Mt. 10:28) we have a Hebraism. Moulton (Prol., p. 102) admits that this use of ἀπό is a "translation-Hebraism" (Ŷp). It occurs in both Mt. (10:28) and Lu. (12:4) and represents probably the Aramaic original. Cf. ὄρατε καὶ φυλάσσεσθε ἀπό (Lu. 12:15) and ὄρατε καὶ προσέχετε ἀπό (Mt. 16:6). Xen. (Cyr., 11. 3, 9) uses ἀπό with φυλάσσω. This matter will call for further discussion directly.

But we have (pp. 330 f.) observed that transitive verbs in Greek do not always have the accusative. The transitiveness may be as clearly expressed by a dative as with ἀκολουθεῖσθαι, the genitive with ἐπιθυμεῖν, the ablative with ἀποστερεῖν, etc. The accusative is indeed the normal case with transitive verbs, but not the only one. Some verbs continued to use the accusative parallel with the other cases. Thus ἐπιλαυθάνομαι has τὰ μὲν ὁπίσω in Ph. 3:13, but φιλοξενίας in Heb. 13:2. Sometimes the point lies in the difference of case, as ἀκούοντες μὲν τῆς φωνῆς (Ac. 9:7), but τῆν δὲ φωνὴν ὦκ ἠκουσαν (Ac. 22:9). Then again verbs otherwise intransitive may be rendered transitive by the preposition in composition. Cf. διηρχεῖτο τὴν ἱρειχώ (Lu. 19:1), but ἐκεῖνης in 19:4. So παραπλεῦσαν τὴν Ἑφεσον (Ac. 20:16), etc. Another introductory remark about transitive verbs is that it is not a question of the voice of the verb. Many active verbs are intransitive like εἰμί; middle verbs may be either transitive or intransitive; even passive verbs may be transitive. Thus ἠκουσαν ταῦτα (Lu. 16:14), ἐκτῆσατο χωρίου (Ac. 1:18), and μὴ οὖν φοβηθῆτε αὐτοὺς (Mt. 10:26) are all transitive constructions. Cf. Mk. 8:38; Ro. 1:16; 2 Tim. 1:8 for ἐπαισχύνομαι (passive) with accusative.

One cannot, of course, mention all the N. T. transitive verbs that have the accusative. Here is a list of the most frequent verbs that are not always transitive, but sometimes have the accusative.1 Ἀδικεῖω indeed may be either transitive (Mt. 20:13) or intransitive (Ac. 25:11), in the one case meaning 'do wrong to,' in the other 'be guilty.' Βλάπτω (only twice in the N. T., Mk. 16:18; Lu. 4:35) is transitive both times. Βοηθεῖω has only dative (Mk. 9:22) and ἔφεξα ἐρέω only accusative (Mk. 8:36). In Lu. 17:2 we have λυστελεῖ αὐτῷ. Ἀπορεῖομαι is always intransitive in the N. T. (like διαφ.) except in Ac, 25:20 (so ancient Greek sometimes). Ἀποστρέφομαι as in Attic, is found with the accusative in Tit. 1:14 and Heb. 12:25. In 2 Tim. 1:15 the aorist passive

1 See Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 87-89. Cf. also W.-Th., pp. 221 ff.
(ἀπεστράφησάν με) is so used. For like use of the aorist or future passive with accusative see ἐντραπήσοντας τῶν ύιόν μου (Mt. 21:37), where the earlier writers generally had dative (ἐντρέπομαι); ἐπαισχύνθη με (Mk. 8:38) from ἐπαισχύνομαι, whereas ἀισχύνομαι is intransitive (ἀπό and abl. in 1 Jo. 2:28). So also οὐδὲν ἀπεκρίθη (Mk. 15:5) as οὐδὲν ἀπερίνατο (Mt. 27:12), but note ἀπερίθη πρὸς οὖδεν ὑμῖν (Mt. 27:14). Cf. τι ἀποκρίθη (Mk. 9:6). For φοβηθῆτε αὐτοὺς see Mt. 10:26 and note φοβηθῆτε ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποκτεινόντων (10:28) which happens to be in imitation of the Hebrew idiom (זָכַר) as of the English "be afraid of." (Cf. above.) See Jer. 1:8.

In Mt. 10:31 φοβεῖσθε is intransitive.

Βασκαίνω in Attic Greek was used with the dative in the sense of 'envy,' but in Gal. 3:1 the accusative in the sense of 'bewitch.' Βλασφημέω in the Attic had εἰς as in Lu. 12:10, but it also occurs as transitive with accusative (Mt. 27:39). In 2 Pet. 2:12 we find εὖ, not εἰς (cf. Jude 10). Ἑπηρεάζω has the accusative, not dative as Attic, in Lu. 6:28; 1 Pet. 3:16. So καταράματι has ὑμᾶς (some MSS. ὑμῖν like Attic) in Lu. 6:28. Cf. Mk. 11:21; Jas. 3:9. For λοιπὸν with accusative see Jo. 9:28; Ac. 23:4, and for λυμαίνομαι see Ac. 8:3. The MSS. vary in Heb. 8:8 between αὐτούς and αὐτοῖς (as in Attic) with μεμφομαι, but W. H. read αὐτοῖς. In Mt. 5:11 and 27:44 ὄψειδίζω has the accusative, though Attic used the dative. The accusative alone occurs with ὑβρίζω (Lu. 11:45). So also both εὐλογέω (Lu. 2:28) and κακολογέω (Ac. 19:9) have the accusative. In Ac. 23:5 oὐκ ἐρείς κακῶς is found with the accusative. In the margin of Jo. 1:15 W. H. give ὅν εἴπον. In Jo. 8:27 we have τῶν πατέρα αὐτοὺς ἔλεγεν, with which compare as αὕς ἔλεγον (Ph. 3:18), a construction common in the older Greek. A similar construction is found in Attic Greek with εὗ (καλῶς) ποιέων, κακῶς ποιέων, etc. In the N. T., however, note αὐτοῖς εὗ ποιεῖν (Mk. 14:7) and καλῶς ποιεῖτε τοῖς μισοῦσιν (Lu. 6:27).

The remaining verbs that call for discussion in this connection cannot be grouped very well. They will be treated simply in alphabetical order. In the LXX γεύομαι, is fairly common with the accusative, and some examples occur in other later writers instead of the usual genitive. In the N. T. the genitive is still the usual case (θανάτου, Lu. 9:27; Jo. 8:52; Heb. 2:9; δείπνου, Lu. 14:24; δωρεάς, Heb. 6:4; μηδενός, Ac. 23:14), but the accusative

---

1 Volker, Pap. Gr. Synt. Spec., pp. 6-8, gives the following verbs as having the acc. in the pap.: ἀλλάσσω, δουλεύω, ἐπιθυμεῖ, ἐπιθυμοῦχόν, ἐπιλαυνθάνομαι, ἐξερχομαι, εὐδοκεῖ, κατηγορεῖ, κρατῶ, κυριεύω, λυπεῖ, παρίσταμαι, ποιεῖμαι, πληρῶ, ὑπαιντῶ, χράομαι
is found in Jo. 2:9 \(\text{τὸ ὑδωρ} \) and Heb. 6:5 \(\text{καλὸν θεοῦ ῥήμα} \). In Rev. 17:3 we even have \(\gammaέμοντα ὄνοματα \) instead of \(\text{όνομάτων} \). The accusative appears with \(\gammaονυπετέω \) (Mk. 10:17), but absolutely in Mk. 1:40, and with \(\ξυπροσθεν \) in Mt. 27:29. In Rev. 2:14 \(\διδάσκω \) has the dative \(\text{(τῷ βαλάκ)} \), a construction which might \textit{a priori} seem natural with this verb, but not so used in Greek (cf. Latin and English).\(^1\) \(\Deltaιψάω \) and \(\πεινάω \) are intransitive in the N. T. save in Mt. 5:6 where the accusative is used, not the class. genitive. \(\Δράσσομαι \) appears only once \(\text{(1 Cor. 3:19)} \) in a quotation from the LXX and has the accusative. \(\Ελέεω \) is transitive \(\text{(Mt. 9:27, etc.) as is} \) \(\σκέτωρ \) \(\text{(Ro. 9:15, quotation from LXX)} \). \(\Εμπορεύομαι \) occurs only twice, once intransitive \(\text{(Jas. 4:13)} \), once with accusative \(\text{(2 Pet. 2:3)} \). \(\Ενέδρεύω \) likewise occurs only twice \(\text{(Lu. 11:54; Ac. 23:21)} \) and with accusative both times. Cf. O.P. 484 \(\text{(ii/A.D.) in sense of ‘defraud’ with accusative. (Moulton, \textit{Cl. Rev.}, Apr., 1904)} \). \(\Επίθεμέω \) is found with the genitive \(\text{(Ac. 20:33)} \) or with the accusative \(\text{(Mt. 5:28)} \) according to W. H. \(\text{(BD, etc.)}. \) \(\Εραγγελίζομαι \) is often transitive, but \(\text{τὴν θάλασσαν ἔργαζοντα, (Rev. 18:17)} \) is somewhat unusual, to say the least. \(\Εὐαγγελίζομαι \) \(\text{(active in Rev. 10:7; 14:6; passive Gal. 1:11; Heb. 4:6, etc.) has the Attic idiom of accusative of the thing and dative of the person (Lu. 4:43; Eph. 3:8, etc.), but examples occur of the accusative of the person addressed (Lu. 3:18; Ac. 8:25). In Ac. 13:32 Blass (\textit{Gr. of N. T. Gk.}, p. 90 note) denies two accusatives to \(\text{εὐαγγ.}, \) construing \(\text{τὴν ἐ-ἐπαγγελίαν} \) with \(\text{ότι ταύτην ὁ θεὸς ἐκπεπλήρωκεν} \). This is rather forced, but even so the \(\text{ότι clause would be in the accus.} \) \(\Εὐδοκέω \) is trans. in the LXX and so appears in the N. T. twice \(\text{(Mt. 12:18, quotation from the LXX; Heb. 10:6, 8, LXX also)} \). \(\Εὐχαριστέω \) in 2 Cor. 2:11 occurs in the passive \(\text{(τὸ χάρισμα εὐχαριστηθῆ)} \) in a construction that shows that the active would have had an accusative of the thing and a dative of the person. Cf., for instance, \(\πλεονεκτηθῶμεν \) in 2 Cor. 2:11 with \(\text{ἐπελεονέκτησα ύμᾶς} (2 \text{Cor. 12:17 f.)}, \) only \(\text{εὐχ. did not go so far as to have the accusative. On the other hand in the N. T.} \) \(\text{θαρρέω is not transitive (2 Cor. 10:2 instr.), though in the older Greek it was sometimes. It occurs absolutely (2 Cor. 5:6), with \(\text{ἐν (2 Cor. 7:16), with \(\epsilonἰ (2 \text{Cor. 10:1})}. \text{θαμμάζω has the accusative in Lu. 7:9, Ac. 7:31 and Ju. 16.} \text{θριαμβεύω has the accusative in 2 Cor 2:14 and Col. 2:15, though the verb has a different sense in each passage.} \) \(\text{Ἴρουργέω occurs only once (Ro. 15:16) and with the accusative. In Heb. 2:17 ἰλάσκομαι has accusative of the} \)

\(^1\) Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 80.
thing as in LXX, Philo and inscriptions (Blass, *Gr. of N. T.*, p. 88). Καυχάμαι has accusative in 2 Cor. 9:2 and 11:30. Κλαίω has accusative in Mt. 2:18 (O. T. quotation unlike LXX), but ἐπί in Lu. 23:28. However, D omits ἐπί. Κληρονομέω has only the accusative. Κόπτομαι has accusative in Lu. 8:52 (ἐπί Rev. 1:7). Κρατέω out of forty-seven instances in the N. T. has the genitive in eight, accusative in 37, one absolute, one τοῦ and int.¹ Μαθητεύω is a late word and has the accusative in Mt. 28:19 and Ac. 14:21. The other examples (Mt. 13:52; 27:57) are passive, but in Mt. 27:57 the active (intr.) is the marginal reading of W. H. Cf. old English verb "disciple." Μέμφομαι has the accusative, not dative, in Heb. 8:8, but the text is doubtful. Μένω is usually intransitive, but in Ac. 20:5, 23, the accusative occurs (sense of 'wait for'). Cf. also accusative with ἀναμένω (1 Th. 1:10), περιμένω (Ac. 1:4), ὑπομένω (Heb. 10:32) in sense of 'endure.' Νικάω is transitive with accusative usually, but in Rev. 15:2 it uses ἐκ with ablative. So ξενίζομαι is transitive with accusative in Heb. 13:2. Ὄμνυμι usually has ἐν (Mt. 23:16, etc., cf. Hebrew ה; sometimes κατά (Heb. 6:13), or occurs absolutely (Mt. 5:34), but the accusative (sense of 'swear by,' common in ancient Greek, cf. Hos. 4:15 for LXX) appears only in Jas. 5:12, except ὑποκουν δὲ ὑμοσεύν (Lu. 1:73), a cognate accusative. The papyri show it with the accusative, B.U. 543 (i/B.C.). Moulton, Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901. Ὄνειδίζω has the accusative, not the dative, in the N. T. Ὄρικζω has the accusative in both instances that occur in the N. T. (Mk. 5:7; Ac. 19:13), while ἐξορκίζω (Mt. 26:63) has the accusative and κατά also (σε κατά τοῦ θεοῦ). Ὅμολογέω is common with the accusative or absolutely, but in Mt. 10:32 (two examples) and Lu. 12:8 (two examples) ἐν is used as the translation of the Aramaic ה. Moulton² is unable to find any justification for this idiom in Greek and calls attention to the fact that both Matthew and Luke have it in a parallel passage as proof of the Aramaic original as the language of Jesus. One may note περιβαλεῖαι ἐν ἰματίοις (Rev. 3:5). The use of ἐν ἡμῖν ἐξελέξατο (Ac. 15:7) is not parallel as Winer³ observes. Here ἐν ἡμῖν means 'among us.' In Ac. 27:22 παραινέω (like παρακαλέω, Blass, *Gr. of N. T.*, p. 90) has the accusative instead of the dative of the person. In 2 Cor. 12:21 πενθέω has the accusative, but ἐπί in Rev. 18:11. Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 67 f.) has a very helpful discussion of πιστεύω

¹ Moulton (ib., p. 235) comments on Wellhausen's remark that D prefers uniformly ace. with ἀκοῦω, κατηγορέω and κρατέω.
² Prol., p. 104.
³ W.-Th., p. 226.
when not absolute and not meaning ‘entrust.’ Under the dative
his remarks will be pertinent. Πιστεύω is often absolute (Jo. 1:50)
and often means 'entrust' when it has the accusative (Jo. 2:24),
Προσκυνέω) in the ancient Greek uses the accusative regularly. In
the Ptolemaic inscriptions the accusative is still the more usual
case, but the N. T. uses the dative twice as often as the accusative.2
In Jo. 4:23 the accusative and the dative occur with little differ-
ence in result.3 Cf. also Rev. 13:4, 8. Abbott4 observes that the
dative is the regular usage in the LXX. As to ὑστερέω we find it
used absolutely (Mt. 19:20), with the ablative (Ro. 3:23) and
once with the accusative (ἐν σε ὑστερεῖ, Mk. 10:21) as in Ps. 22:1.
Some of the MSS. in Mark have σοι, as the LXX usually.5 Φεύγω
occurs absolutely (Mt. 2:13), with aro (Mt. 23:33), with ἐκ (Ac.
27:30) or with the accusative (Heb. 11:34; 1 Tim. 6:11). So ἐκφεύγω
is transitive (Lu. 21:36) with accusative while ἀποφεύγω
has accusative in 2 Pet. 2:20. Φυλάσσω has, of course, the accusa-
tive, but in Ac. 21:25 two accusatives occur with the sense of
'shun.' In Lu. 12:15 the middle is used with ἀπό and in 1 Jo.
5:21 φυλάξατε ἐαυτὰ ἀπό. Χράόμαι still uses the instrumental (cf.
utor in Latin), as Ac. 27:3, 17, etc., but in 1 Cor. 7:31 the ac-
cussative is found (χρώμενοι τὸν κόσμον) in response to the general
accusative tendency. Cf. καταχρώμενοι, in the same verse. The
accusative with χράομαι appears in later writers.6
It remains in this connection to call special attention to the in-
transitive verbs which have the accus. by reason of a preposition
in composition. This applies to intrans. verbs and trans. verbs
also which in simplex used some other case. Ἀνά furnishes one
example in ἀνα-θάλλω (Ph. 4:10) if τὸ φρονεῖν there is the object
of the verb after the transitive use in the LXX (Ezek. 17:24).
But most probably this is the accusative of general reference.
Ἀπελπίζω (Lu. 6:35) is indeed transitive with accusative, but so
is ἐλπίζω (1 Cor. 13:7; 2 Cor, 1:13, etc.) sometimes. Here are
some examples of διά: τὸ πέλαγος διαπλεύσατες (Ac. 27:5), διεπορεύ-
οντο τὰς πόλεις (Ac. 16:4), διελθὼν τὴν Μακεδονίαν (Ac. 19:21; cf.
acc. in Lu. 19:1 and gen. ἐκείνης in 19:4). In Heb. 11:29 (διεβη-
σαν τὴν θάλασσαν ὡς δια ἤπραξ γῆς) Blass7 notes both accusative
and genitive (with διά). Even ἐνερεγέω has the accusative in 1 Cor.
12:6, 11. As examples of κατά observe κατεβάρησα ὑμᾶς (2 Cor. 12:

1 Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 436.
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 64.
3 Simeox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 80.
4 Joh. Gr., p. 78.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 89.
6 Simeox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 78.
7 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 89.
THE CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ) 477

16), ὑμᾶς καταβραβεύετω (Col. 2:18), κατηγωνίσαντο βασιλείας (Heb. 11:33). Note also κατασοφισάμενος τὸ γένος (Ac. 7:19). Cf. κατα-
χρώμενοι in 1 Cor. 7:31, but instrumental in 1 Cor. 9:18. For
παρά note παραβαινεῖ τὴν ἐντολήν (Mt. 15:3) and παρέρχεσθε τὴν κρίσιν (Lu. 11:42; cf. 15:29 and Mk. Περί furnishes
several examples like ἀδελφῆς γυναῖκα περιάγειν (1 Cor. 9:5; cf.
Mt. 9:35, etc.), but intransitive in Mt. 4:23. This verb, ἵγω, however, is both transitive (Mt. 21:7) and intransitive (Mk. 1:
38) in the simple form. Περιερχόμεναι has the accusative in 1
Tim. 5:13, but elsewhere intransitive. So περιέστησαν αὐτὸν in Ac.
25:7, but intransitive (περιεστώτα) in Jo. 11:42. In Mk 6:55
we find περιεδραμον ὅτι τὴν χώραν. With πρό one notes προάγω
(Mt. 14:22, προάγειν αὐτῶν), προήρχετο αὐτούς (Lu. 22:47), with
which compare προελεύσεται ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ (Lu. 1:17). In Ac. 12:
10 both διέρχομαι and προέρχομαι are used with the accusative.
Προσφωνεῖ, like προσκυνεῖ, has either the accusative (Lu. 6:13)
or the dative (Mt. 11:16). If ὁ θεὸς be accepted in Ro. 8:28
(πάντα συνεργεῖ ὁ θεὸς), which is more than doubtful, then συνεργεῖ
would be transitive (cf. instr. in Jas. 2:22). For ὑπέρ observe
ὑπερεκτείνουμεν ἔαυτοὺς (2 Cor. 10:14) and ἡ ὑπερέχουσα πάντα νοῦν
(Ph. 4:7). With ὑπό we can mention ὑπομένω (1 Cor. 13:7, but
see μένω) ὑπεπλεύσαμεν τὴν Κρήτην (Ac. 27:27) and νησίον δέ τι
ὑποδραμόντες (Ac. 27:16). Thus it will be seen that in the N. T.
the accusative with transitive verbs, both simple and compound,
follows the increase in the use of the accusative in line with the
current vernacular.

Sometimes indeed the object of the verb is not expressed, but
really implied, and the verb is transitive. Thus προσέχετε ἔαυτοῖς
(Lu. 17:3) implies τῶν νοῶν. Cf. also προσέχετε ἀπὸ τῶν ψευδοπροφη-
tῶν (Mt. 7:15) and ἐπέχων πῶς (Lu. 14:7); κατὰ κεφαλῆς ἑχων (1
Cor. 11:4). In ἐπιθήσεται σοι (Ac. 18:10) χείρας must be supplied,
and with διέτριβον (Ac. 15:35) χρόνον is needed.

(h) THE COGNATE ACCUSATIVE. It may be either that of in-
er content, ἐχάρησαν χαράν (Mt. 2:10), objective result ἀμαρτά-
νοτα ἀμαρτίαν (1 Jo. 5:16), φυλάσσοντες φυλακάς (Lu. 2:8), or even
a kindred word in idea but a different root, as δαρήσεται ὀλίγας
(πληγάς, Lu. 12:48). Considerable freedom must thus be given
the term "cognate" as to both form and idea. The real cognate
accusative is a form of the Figura Etymologica as applied to either
internal or external object. The quasi-cognate is due to analogy
where the idea, not the form, is cognate.1 The cognate is not very

1 Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 304.
common in the papyri, but in the Hebrew the idiom is very frequent. It is perfectly good Greek to have this "playing with paronymous terms," as a passage from Plato's *Protagoras* 326 D illustrates, ὑπογράψαντες γραμμάς τῇ γραφίδι οὕτω τὸ γραμματεῖον. Cf. τίς παράπνευμα ποίμνην (1 Cor. 9:7). So also in Lu. 8:5, ἐξῆλθεν ὁ σπείρων τοῦ σπείραι τὸν σπόρον. Gildersleeve (Am. Jour. of Philol., xxxiii, 4, p. 488) objects properly to Cauer's crediting, in his *Grammatica Militans*, "the division of the accusative into the object affected and the object effected" to Kern, since Gildersleeve himself was using it as far back as 1867. In modern English this repetition of the same root condemned, but it was not so in Greek. Conybeare and Stock observe that the Hebrew and the Greek coincide on this point, and hence the excess of such accusatives in the LXX in various applications. And the N. T., here unlike the papyri, shows an abundance of the cognate accusatives.

The accusative of the inner content may be illustrated by τὴν δικαίαν κρίσιν κρίνετε (Jo. 7:24), τὸν φῶςαν αὐτῶν μὴ φοβηθῆτε (1 Pet. 3:14), αὔξει τὴν αὔξησιν τοῦ θεοῦ (Col. 2:19), ὑνα στρατηγό τὴν καλὴν στρατείαν (1 Tim. 1:18), ἄγωνίζου τὸν καλὸν ἄγωνα (1 Tim. 6:12), ύμιλογήσας τὴν καλὴν ὦμολογίαν (ib.), θαῦμασα ἰδὼν αὐτὴν θαῦμα μέγα (Rev. 17:6). Cf. Rev. 16:9. In Mk. 10:38, τὸ βάπτισμα ὁ ἐγὼ βαπτίζομαι, and Jo. 17:26, ἢ ἀγάπη ἢν ἡγάπησάς με (cf. Eph. 2:4), the relative shows this use of the accusative. In Jo. 17:26 and Eph. 2:4 (ὃν ἡγάπησεν ἡμᾶς) the cognate accusative of the inner content is used along with the accusative of the person also.

Indeed in Eph. 4:1, τῆς κληρεως ὃς ἐκλήθητε the relative has been attracted from the cognate accusative. The modern Greek keeps this use of the accusative.

Some neuter adjectives are used to express this accusative, but far less frequently than in the ancient Greek. Thus, πεποίθως αὐτὸ τοῦτο (Ph. 1:6), πάντα ἵσχὺς (Ph. 4:13), ὑπητεύουσιν πυκνά (Lu. 5:33), πάντα ἐγκρατεύεται (1 Cor. 9:25), perhaps even τῶν τοῦτο ἔρχομαι (2 Cor. 13:1), μὴδὲν διακρινόμενος (Jas. 1:6), οὐδὲν ύστερης (2 Cor. 12:11). Cf. the interrogative τί ύστερῶ (Mt. 19:20),

2 C. and S., Sel. from the Sept., p. 56.
3 Ib., p. 57.
4 Ib., p. 56.
5 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 76, finds no instance of such a construction with ἀγαπῶ in anc. Gk.
the relative ὁ γὰρ ἀπέθανεν and ὁ δὲ ζῇ (Ro. 6:10). Cf. also ὁ νῦν ζῇ ἐν σαρκὶ (Gal. 2:20) which may be equal to 'in that,' adverbial accusative. In 2 Cor. 12:13 the accusative relative follows the nominative interrogative τί ἔστιν ὁ ἡσυχητε. This neuter accusative of the adjective easily glides into the purely adverbial accusative, like πάντα πᾶσιν ἀρέσκω (1 Cor. 10:33), πάντα μου μέμνησθε (1 Cor. 11:2).

As a further example of the more objective result one may note ἡχυμαλωτευσεν αἰχμαλωσίαν (Eph. 4:8, LXX), but Winer rightly shows that this type is chiefly represented in the N. T. by the relative. So μαρτυρίᾳ ἔν μαρτυρεῖ (Jo. 5:32), διαθήκη ἔν διαθήσομαι (Heb. 8:10), βλασφημία ὃσα ἔαν βλασφημήσωσιν (Mk. 3:28), ἐπαγγελία ἔν ἐπηγγείλατο (1 Jo. 2:25).

The cognate accusative of the outword object (result also) calls for little discussion. Besides φυλάσσωντες φυλάκας (Lu. 2:8) observe ὕποδομήσεν τὴν οἰκίαν (Mt. 7:24), δῆσατε δεσμάς (Mt. 13:30, but ΧΒΔ have εἰς).

The analogous cognate accusative is seen in such constructions as μὴ φοβοῦμεν μηδεμίαν πτόησιν (1 Pet. 3:6), βιῶσαι χρόνου (1 Pet. 4:2), δαρῆσατε πολλάς (οἴγας) in Lu. 12:47 (48), ἡλθον ἡμέρας ὃδον (Lu. 2:44), ἐπορεύετο τὴν ὃδον αὐτοῦ (Ac. 8:39), and the relative also as in ἄρκου ὃν ὥμοσεν (Lu. 1:73). Cf. the instrumental ἄρκῳ ὥμοσεν (Ac. 2:30), etc.

(i) DOUBLE ACCUSATIVE. Some verbs may have two accusatives. Indeed, if one count space and time, three accusatives are possible. In Mk. 10:18 (τί με λέγεις ἀγαθῶν) we have three accusatives, one being predicate. In the Sanskrit it is very common to have two accusatives with one verb. When one recalls that the accusative is the old and normal case with transitive verbs, it is not surprising that some verbs use two accusatives, just as many transitive verbs have an accusative and a dative, an accusative and an ablative, an accusative and an instrumental, an accusative and a genitive. This double accusative is common in Homer and a "multiplicity of accusatives is a characteristic of Pindar's style." It is a common idiom in the papyri also.

is not unknown in Latin (cf. doceo) and English (teach). It is very common in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 36), going beyond the ancient idiom. Middleton\(^1\) holds that the double accusative is due to analogy, since, in a number of examples, alternative constructions occur like accusative and ablative with αἰτέω (Ac. 3:2) and ἀφαιρέομαι (Lu. 16:3). Cf. two accusatives with ὠνείδιζον in Mt, 27:44.

Perhaps the simplest kind of a double accusative is what is called the predicate accusative, really a sort of apposition. Thus οὐκέτι ὧμᾶς λέγω δούλους (Jo. 15:15). This appositional feature is seen also in the passive of those verbs where a double nominative occurs. For other examples with verbs of saying see λέγω (Mk. 10:18) and εἶπον in Jo. 10:35 (ἐκείνους ἐπε θεούς), etc. Similar to this is καλέω (καλέσεις τὸ άνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰωάνην Lu. 1:13; cf. Ἰησοῦν verse 31; ἐκάλουν αὐτὸ –Ζαχαρίαν, 1:50). We happen to have the passive of this very construction in Lu. 2:21 (ἐκλήθη τὸ άνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦς). Cf. further Mt. 22:43. Observe also δὲν καὶ ὠνόμασεν Πέτρον (Lu. 6:14). Ὀμολογέω appears with the double accusative in Jo. 9:22; 1 Jo. 4:2; 2 Jo. 7 and curiously nowhere else outside of John's writings. Ἡγέομαι likewise has two accusatives as in ταῦτα ἡγήμαι ζημίαν (Ph. 3:7). See 2 Pet. 3:15; Heb. 11:26. Blass\(^2\) observes that νομίζω and ὑπολαμβάνω do not have the double accusative in the N. T. Ποιοῦμαι in the same sense does occur, as ποιοῦμαι τὴν ψυχὴν τιμίαν (Ac. 20:24), and very frequently in the active, as ποιεῖσας σεαυτὸν θεόν (Jo. 10:33). Cf. further for ποιεῖσ Mt. 4:19; Lu. 19:46; Jo. 5:11; 6:15; 19:7; Eph. 2:14; Rev. 21:5. Closely allied to this use of ποιεῖς is ἔχω (ἐχον Ἰωάνην ἐπιρέτην, Ac. 13:5) and note Heb. 12:9; Ph. 2:29. Ἐχε με παρηκτήμενον (Lu. 14:18) is to be observed. also. Cf. also σεαυτον παρεχόμενος τύπον (Tit. 2:7). Λαμβάνω is so used in Jas. 5:10, ὑπόδειγμα λάβετε—τοὺς προφήτας. Τίθημι may be exemplified by ὑμᾶς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον ἔθετο ἐπισκόπους (A, 20:28). Cf. Heb. 1:2 (ἐθηκέν) and Ro. 3:25, ὅπως προέθετο ὁ θεὸς ἱλαστήριον. Καθίστημι shows several examples like τίς με κατέστησεν κριτήν (Lu. 12:14). Cf. also Ac. 7:10; Heb. 7:28. In Gal. 2:18 we have παραβάτην ἐμαυτοῦ συνυπότανος. Ἀποδικυμάι shows an example in 1 Cor. 4:9 and προορίζω in Ro. 8:29. For further verbs with two accusatives, not to weary one, see περιάγω (1 Cor. 9:5), ἴκανῶ (2 Cor. 3:6), ἐκλέγομαι (Jas. 2:5), ὑψῶ (Ac. 5:31).

This second accusative may be either substantive, adjective or participle. As specimens of the adjective take ὁ ποιήσας με ὕγιή}

---

\(^1\) Anal. in Synt., p. 25. \(^2\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 92.
THE CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ) 481

(Jo. 5:11), τοὺς τοιούτους ἐντύμους ἔχετε (Ph. 2:29). In 1 Cor. 4:9 indeed the adjective makes three accusatives and with ὦς four, ὥς τὴν ἡμᾶς τοὺς ἀποστόλους ἐσχάτους ἀπεδειξέν ὦς ἐπιθανατίους (so W. H.). As an example of the participle see κατέστησεν αὐτὸν ἠγούμενον (Ac. 7:10). Cf. 2 Tim. 2:8. Sometimes ὦς occurs with the second accusative, as in ὦς προφητήν αὐτὸν ἔιχον (Mt. 14:5). Cf. 21:26. In 2 Th. 3:15 note μη ὦς ἔχθρον ἤγεσίσθε, ἀλλὰ νοεθετείτε ὦς ἀδελ-φῶν. In 1 Cor. 4:1 observe also ἡμᾶς λογίζεσθω ἀνθρωπὸς ὦς ὑπηρέτας Χριστοῦ. In 2 Cor. 10:2 we have ὦς with the participle, τοὺς λογίζομένους ἡμᾶς ὦς κατὰ σάρκα περιπατοῦντας. In 2 Cor. 6:4 ὦς θεοῦ διάκονοι is not exactly what ὦς διακόνους would be. Cf. ὦς with the predicate nominative in Ro. 8:36 (LXX).

Sometimes εἶναι is used as the copula before such a predicate accusative where the sense is not greatly altered by its absence or presence. As a matter of fact with εἶναι we have indirect discourse with the accusative and infinitive. So ὑποκρινόμενος ἐαυτοῦ δικαίως εἶναι (Lu. 20:20); Mk. 1:17 = Mt. 4:19. Cf. συνετήσατε ἐαυτοῦ ἄγνοις εἶναι (2 Cor. 7:11), λογίζεσθε ἐαυτοῦς εἶναι νεκροὺς (Ro. 6:11), but ADEFG do not have εἶναι. In Ph. 3:7 we do not have εἶναι, while in verse 8 we do after ἠγούμαι.

The predicate accusative with εἰς used to be explained as an undoubted Hebraism. 1 But Moulton 2 is only willing to admit it is a secondary Hebraism since the papyri show a few examples like ἐσχάτον παρ' ἡμῶν εἰς δα(νειον) σπέρματα, K.P. 46 (ii/A.D.), "a recurrent formula," a probable vernacular "extension of εἰς expressing destination." Moulton pertinently remarks that "as a loan" (ὡς or just the accusative in apposition) and "for a loan" (εἰς) "do not differ except in grammar." But certainly the great frequency of εἰς in the LXX as compared with even the vernacular κοινή is due to the Hebrew ב which it so often translates. 3 Cf. δώσετε μοι τὴν παίδα ταύτην εἰς γυναῖκα (Gen. 34:12). Cf. the similar use of εἰς and the accusative instead of the predicate nominative (λογίζομαι εἰς Ro. 2:26, etc.). Winer 4 shows parallels for this predicate accusative from the late Greek writers. The N. T. exhibits this accusative in εἰς προφήτην αὐτῶν ἔιχον (Mt. 21:46), ἀνεβρεῖσατο αὐτῶν

2 Prol., p. 72.
3 C. and S., Sel. from the Sept., p. 81 f. Cf. also W.-Th., p. 228.
4 Ib. In the mod. Gk. the ace. of the thing to some extent takes the place of the dat. or abl. (Thumb, Handb., p. 37).
But there is another kind of double accusative besides the predicate accusative. It is usually described as the accusative of the person and of the thing. This in a general way is true of this group of double accusatives. Some of these were also cognate accusatives, as in κατακλίνατε αὐτοῦς κλισίας (Lu. 9:14) and, according to some MSS., δῆσατε αὐτὰ δεσμάς (Mt. 13:30), ἢν ἀγάπησάς με Jo. 17:26; cf. also Eph. 2:4), both of the outer and the inner object. Cf. the passive ὅ ἐγὼ βαπτίζομαι (Mk. 10:38) which really implies two accusatives in the active. Further examples of this cognate accusative of the outer object with the negative pronoun may be seen in οὐδέν με ἤδικησάτε (Gal. 4:12; cf. 5:2), μηδέν βλάψαν (Lu. 4:35). See also Ac. 25:10. In Mt. 27:44 the second accusative is likewise a pronoun, τὸ αὐτὸ ὑνείδιζον αὐτῶν, while in Mk. 6:34 it is an adjective, διδάσκειν αὐτοῦς πολλά.

Indeed δίδασκω is just one of the verbs that can easily have two accusatives (asking and teaching). Cf. also ὑμᾶς διδαξεί πάντα (Jo. 14:26. In Ac. 21:21 we have a normal example, ἀποστασίαν διδάσκεις ὧν Μωσεῖς τοὺς Ἰουδαίους. In Heb. 5:12 we note three accusatives, but one is the accusative of general reference with the infinitive, τὸ διδάσκειν ὑμᾶς τινὰ τὰ στοιχεῖα. Cf. Mt. 15:9 where one accusative is predicate. In Rev. 2:14 ἐδίδασκεν τῷ Βαλάκ we have the dative, a construction entirely possible in the abstract, but elsewhere absent in the concrete. The number of verbs like δίδασκω which may have two accusatives is considerable. They include verbs like αἰτέω in Mt. 7:9, ὅ ἀιτήσει ὁ υἱὸς αὐτοῦ ἄρτον, but not Mt. 6:8 where ὑμᾶς is merely accusative of general reference with the infinitive, though we do meet it with αἰτέω in Mk. 6:22 f.; Jo. 16:23; 1 Pet. 3:15. But instead of an accusative of the person we may have the ablative with ἀπό as in Mt. 20:20 BD (against παρά), αἰτοῦσά τι ἀπ’ αὐτοῦ, and in 1 Jo. 5:15, or the ablative with παρά as in Jo. 4:9, παρ’ ἐμοῦ πεῖν αἰτεῖς, and the middle ἠτῆσάτο in Ac. 9:2. Ἐρωτάω likewise has two accusatives in Mt. 21:24 (ἐρωτήσων ὑμᾶς καγώ λόγον ἑνα); Mk. 4:10; Jo. 16:23. Ἀναμμηνήσκω in both active and middle is used only with the accusative in the N. T. (μμηνήσκει as only with the genitive save adverbial accusative in 1 Cor. 11:2), and two accusa-

1 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 80.
tives occur in 1 Cor. 4:17, ὅς ὠμᾶς ἀναμνήσει τὰς ὀδοὺς μου, and in 2 Tim. 1:6 (σὲ ἀναζωπυρίν, both in the accusative). With ὑπομνήσκω the genitive occurs once in the passive (Lu. 22:61), the accusative elsewhere, and two accusatives in Jo. 14:26, ὑπομνήσει ὠμᾶς πάντα, and in Tit. 3:1 (αὑτοῦς ὑποτάσσεσθαι). In 1 Cor. 14:6 observe τι ὠμᾶς ὄψετο. In 2 Pet. 1:12 περὶ τοῦτων occurs rather than a second accusative. Εὐαγγελίζωμαι usually has accusative of the thing and dative of the person, as in Eph. 2:17; 3:8, etc. But in Ac. 13:32 the accusative of person1 and thing is found, and the same thing is true in Ac. 14:15 (ὦμᾶς—ἐπιστρέφειν), taking object-sentence as "thing." Indeed in Gal. 1: 9 (ἐς τις ὠμᾶς εὐαγγελίζεται παρ’ ὅ παρελάβετε) the same thing exists, for while the antecedent of ὅ would be παρὰ τοῦτο, τι is really implied also, τι παρὰ τοῦτο ὅ.

Another group of verbs in the ancient Greek with two accusatives is that of depriving, etc. Here indeed the ablative may take the place of one accusative, as in 1 Tim. 6:5 with the passive of ἀποστρέφω the ablative is retained (τῆς ἀληθείας). But in the N. T. neither ἀποστρέφω, nor ἀφαιρέω, nor κρύπτω has two accusatives. Either the ablative alone occurs or with ἀπό (Lu. 16:3; Lu. 19: 42; Rev. 6:16). With φυλάσσεσθαι (Ac. 21:25) αὐτοῦς is the accusative of general reference (so-called "subject") of the infinitive.

But verbs of clothing or unclothing, anointing, etc., do have two accusatives, though not always. Thus ἐκέδυσαν αὐτὸν τὴν χλαμύδα (Mt. 27:31; cf. Mk. 15:20; Lu. 15:22), ἐνέδυσαν αὐτὸν τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ (Mt. 27:31; cf. Mk. 15:20). But ἀμφιέννυμι does not have two accusatives nor περιτίθημι (Mt. 27:28). In Lu. 23:11 some MSS. give two accusatives with περιβαλῶν, but XBLT omit αὐτόν. In Jo. 19:2 the text is beyond dispute ἱμάτιον πορφυροῦν περιέβαλον αὐτόν. Cf. περιβαλεῖται ἐν (Rev. 3:5). Moreover χρίω has two accusatives in Heb. 1:9 (ἐκρίσεν σὲ θεὸς ἐλαῖον), a quotation from the LXX. In Rev. 3:18 κολλούριον is not the object of ἐγγράφα, but of ἀγοράσαι. Ἀλείφω is not used with two accusatives, but has the thing in the instrumental case (Mk. 6:13). Πληρῶ does not indeed have two accusatives in the N. T., but the passive with accusative in Ph. 1:11 and Col. 1:9 really involves the idiom.

The following causative verbs have two accusatives. Ὅρκίζω σὲ τὸν θεόν (Mk. 5:7) is a case in point (cf. ἐξορκέω in Herod.). See

1 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 78 f., argues unsuccessfully against the idea that εὐαγγελίζωμαι has two accs.
also Ac. 19:13 and one example of ἐνορίζω in 1 Th. 5:27. The idea is really to "cause to swear by." In Jas. 5:12 (ὁμνύετε μήτε τὸν οὐρανὸν μήτε τὴν γῆν μήτε ἄλλον τινὰ ὀρκοῦν) we have two constructions, one "swear by," the other the cognate accusative. So διαμαρτύρομαι in 2 Tim. 4:1 f. Cf. P.O. 79 (ii/A.D.) ὁμνύω Αὐτοκράτορα Καίσαρα Μάρκον Ἀυρήλιον—ἀληθή ἐιν[αί] τά πρό-. Ποτίζω is a good example of the causative sense. Thus δς ὅν ποτίζῃ άμαζ ποτήριον ἦδατος (Mk. 9:41). Cf. Mt. 10:42; 1 Cor. 3:2. In Ro. 12:20 ψωμίζω has the accusative of the person, in 1 Cor. 13:3 the accusative of the thing (cf. Jer. 23:15 for double accusative with both these verbs). In Lu. 11:46 we have φορτίζετε τοὺς ἀνθρώπους φορτία δυσβάστακτα. Cf. ἡλάττωσας αὐτὸν βραχύ τι, in Heb. 2:7 (LXX).

Finally some words of doing good or ill have two accusatives. Thus μηδὲν βλάψαν αὐτὸν (Lu. 4:35) where the pronoun is really a cognate accusative, as is the case with ὑμᾶς οὐδέν ωφελήσει (Gal. 5:2). Cf. Ac. 25:10 Ἰουδαίοις οὐδέν ἡδίκημα. In Mt. 27:22 we read τί οὖν ποιήσω Ἰσημών. Cf. also Mk. 15:12, though D has τῷ βασιλείᾳ, (Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 91). Elsewhere in the N. T. we meet the dative of the person as in Mt. 21:40; Ac. 9:13. See peri ὧν αὐτήν πεποίηκασιν, P. Grenf. ii, 73 (late iii/A.D.), where ὧν is attracted from ἀ= 'of what they have done to her.' Cf. μηδὲν πράξες σεαυτῷ κακῶν (Ac. 16:28). In Mk. 7:12 the dative of the person is in keeping with ancient Greek usage. In Mt. 17:12 ἐν αὐτῷ may be more exactly 'in his case' (KD do not have ἐν), but note its ὑμᾶς in Jo. 15:21 and the likeness of this to the modern Greek use of εἰς with accusative as the usual dative. Blass (ib., p. 92) compares also the use of ἐν ἑμοί (Mk. 14:6) and εἰς ἑμέ (Mt. 26:10) with ἐργάζομαι and observes that ἐργάζομαι in Attic had sometimes two accusatives. One may compare again the expression τι άρα ὁ Πέτρος ἐγένετο (Ac. 12:18). Λέγω and εἶπον indeed have two accusatives in the N. T., but in Jo. 1:15 the margin (W. H., R. V.) really has this idiom. Cf. also Ac. 23:5.

(j) WITH PASSIVE VERBS. Indeed the accusative may be found with verbs in the passive voice. Draeger1 calls the accusative with passive verbs in Latin "ein Gracismus." This accusative may be of several kinds. See cognate accusative in Mt. 2:10, ἔχαρησαν χαράν. It occurs with the so-called passive deponents like ἀπεκρίθην (οὐδὲν ἀπεκρίθη, Mk. 15:5). Cf. οὐδὲν ἀπεκρίνατο (Mt. 27:12), οὐκ ἀπεκρίθη λόγον (Mt. 15:23). As further instances note ἀπεστράφησαν με (2 Tim. 1:15), ἐντραπήσουται τῷ νιόν μου (Mt.

1 Hist. Synt., p. 362.
21:37), ἔπαινον με (Mk. 8:38), φοβηθήτε αὐτοῦ (Mt. 10:26).
Cf. Mt. 14:5; 2 Tim 1:16. To all intents and purposes these
"deponent" forms are not regarded as passives. This use of

But the *true passive* of many verbs retains the accusative of the
thing. This is true of verbs that have two accusatives in the ac-
tive. So ἤν κατηχήμενος τῇ ὄντων τοῦ Κυρίου (Ac. 18:25), ὃς ἐδιδάχ-
θητε (2 Th. 2:15), οὐκ ἔνδοξον ἐνδομά γάμου (Mt. 22:11 and
(Lu. 16:19), ἐκαματίσθησαν καθαμα μέγα (Rev. 16:9), διαρήσεται πολ-
λας (πληγάς, Lu. 12:47, ὀλίγας, 48), τὸ βάπτισμα ὁ βαπτίζομαι βαπ-
τισθήναι (Mk. 10:38, two examples), ἐν πνεύμα ἐποτίθημεν (1 Cor.
12:13), πεπεσμένος τὰ κρείσσονα (Heb. 6:9), πεπληρωμένοι καρπὸν
dικαιοσύνης (Ph. 1:11; Col. 1:9 ἢνα πληρωθῆτε τῇ ἐπίγνωσιν and
cf. Ex. 31:3, ἐνεπάγγέλησα αὐτὸν πνεῦμα σοφίας) and compare 2 Tim. 1:5
for genitive (ἵνα χαράς πληρωθῶ), ζημιωθῆναι τῇ ἐπίγνωσιν (Mk. 8:
36= Mt. 16:26). Cf. also Ph. 3:8; Heb. 10:22. See ὅ ἔδω ἐξ ἐμοῦ
ὡφεληθῆς (Mt. 15:5); τί ὡφεληθῆσεται (Mt. 16:26); βραχύ τι παρ'
ἀγγέλους ἦλαττωμένου (Heb. 2:9) with active (two accs.) in Heb.
The predicate accusative, it should be said, becomes the nominative
in the passive, as in αὐτοὶ υἱοὶ θεοῦ κληθήσονται (Mt. 5:9). Cf.
Heb. 5:10; 2 Tim. 1:11.

Some verbs which have *only one accusative* in the active or
middle yet retain the accusative of the thing in the passive with
the person in the nominative. This is a freedom not possessed by
the Latin. The person in the active was generally in the dative.
Thus Paul a number of times uses πιστεύωμαι (πιστεύθηναι τὸ εὐαγ-
γέλιον 1 Th. 2:4; ἐπιστεύθη τῷ μαρτύριον 2 Th. 1:10; cf. also 1
Cor. 9:17; Gal. 2:7; Ro. 3:2; 1 Tim. 1:11). Then again περι-
βάλλομαι is frequently so employed, as περιβεβλημένος σινδόνα (Mk.
14:51; cf. 16:5; and especially in Rev., as 7:9, 13; 10:1; 11:3;
12:1; 17:4; 18:16; 19:13). This is not the middle as Blass\(^1\)
has it, though the future middle does occur in Rev. 3:5 with ἐν,
and the aorist middle with the accusative in Rev. 19:8. In Rev.
4:4 we have περιβεβλημένους ἰματίους (loc.), and margin (W. H.) ἐν
ἴμ. Once more περίκειμαι is used as the passive of περίτιθημι with
the accusative of the thing, though the verb itself means to 'lie
around' instead of 'be encompassed with.' So τῇ ὀλοσιν περί-
κειμαι (Ac. 28:20). Cf. also Heb. 5:2, but in Lu. 17:2 we have
περί repeated.

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 93.
There are once more still *looser accusatives* with passive verbs, partly by analogy and partly merely an extension of the principle illustrated already. Thus κατηχούμενος τὸν λόγον (Gal. 6:6) does not really differ from as δὲς ἐδιδάχθησε above. In δεδεμένος τοὺς πόδας καὶ τὰς χεῖρας (Jo. 11:44) we see a close parallel to περιβεβλημένος above. Note active in Mt. 22:13. In διεφθαρμένων τὸν νοῦν (1 Tim. 6:5), ἰδεόντες τὰς καρδίας (Heb. 10:22), λευσμένοι τὸ σῶμα (10:22) the accusative seems to be rather remote and to come close to the accusative of general reference, but not quite, for the force of the verb is still felt. This is still true of τὴν αὐτὴν εἰκόνα μεταμορφούμεθα (2 Cor. 3:18) and perhaps even of τὴν αὐτὴν ἀντιμισθίαν πλατύνθητε (2 Cor. 6:13). In Ac. 21:3 ἀναφανάντες, not ἀναφανέντες, is the correct text, as Blass¹ observes.

The impersonal verbal in —τέον occurs only once in the N. T. (Lu. 5:38) and as in the ancient Greek it is used with the accusative, ὁνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοὺς καινοὺς βλητέον. This verbal is more usually transitive than the personal form in —τέος, which is not found in the N. T.

(k) THE ADVERBIAL ACCUSATIVE. It is not very common in the N. T. except in the case of pure adverbs. The adverbial accusative is really nothing more than a loose use of the accusative with intransitive verbs, with substantives or adjectives. It is rare in Homer² and increases steadily till it becomes very common, though perhaps never quite so abundant as in the Sanskrit, where a veritable host of such accusatives occur.³ It is a perfectly normal development of the case, for extension is its root-idea. This accusative is sometimes called the accusative of general reference. As an example of such an accusative with an intransitive verb note καθίσταται τὸ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν (Heb. 5:1). See also ἀνέπεσαν oi ἄνδρες τὸν ἀριθμὸν ὡς πεντακισχίλιοι (Jo. 6:10),⁴ τὸν τρόπον ἐκπορνεύσασαι (Jude 7), ὅν τρόπον ὄρνις ἐπισυνάγει (Mt. 23:37) and 2 Tim. 3:8 (ὅν τρόπον). Cf. ἀνείχεσθε μου μικρόν τι (2 Cor. 11:1). In Ro. 15:17 the whole verbal phrase is concerned with τὰ πρὸς θεὸν, but see Ro. 12:18, τὸ ἐξ ὑμῶν μετὰ πάντων ἀνθρώπων εἰρημεύοντες, where τὸ ἐξ ὑμῶν is acc. In Ro. 1:15 τὸ καὶ ἐμὲ may be nom. In Heb. 2:17 this adv. acc. occurs with the adj. as in πιστῶς ἄρχισε σῶμα τὸ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν. So also with a subst. as in ὁ Χριστὸς τὸ κατὰ σάρκα (Ro. 9:5). The Text. Recept. in Ac. 18:3 had σκηνοποιοὶ τὴν τέχνην, but W. H. read σκηνοποιοὶ τῇ τέχνη. Indeed the

instrumental is usual in the N. T. in such instances,¹ as the fol-
lowing examples: Συνοδοινύκσσα τῷ γένει (Mk. 7: 26), Κύριος τῷ
gένει, (Ac. 4:36), παντὶ τρόπω (Ph. 1:18), τῷ προσώπῳ (Gal. 1:22).
But, on the other hand, observe τούνομα Ἰωσήφ (Mt. 27:57),
but elsewhere in the N. T. we have ὄνοματι (Ac. 18:2). In Ro.
16:19 some MSS. have τὸ ἐφ’ ὑμῖν. The phrase τὸ καθ’ εἰς (Ro.
12:5) is accusative, even though εἰς itself is nominative in form.
In 1 Cor. 11:18 see also μέρος τι πιστεύω. Perhaps thus is to
be explained the accusative with the interjection in Rev. 8:13
οὐαὶ τούς κατακύντας. Cf. οὐαί and nominative (or vocative) in Is.
1:4. There is only one instance of an accusative with an adverb
of swearing in the N. T. and that is in 1 Cor. 15:31, νῃ τῆν ὑμε-
tέραν καύχησιν. In Mk. 6:39 συμόσια συμπόσια may be looked
at as nominative (cf. πρασιαί in verse 40) or accusative (cf. Lu. 9:
14). Brugmann² considers καὶ τοῦτο (1 Cor. 6:6, 8) nominative
rather than accusative, but that seems hardly possible with αὐτὸ
τοῦτο (2 Pet. 1:5), and καὶ τοῦτο may be accusative also (Ph. 1:
29, etc.). Cf. τοῦτο μέν—τοῦτο δέ (Heb. 10:33). In Ac. 15:
11; 27:25 we have καθ’ ὅν τρόπον. In Ph. 4:10 (ἀνεθάλετε τὸ ὑπὲρ
ἔμοι φρονεῖν) the infinitive is probably the accusative of general

There are indeed other expressions that come more closely to
the pure adverb. Such, for instance, are τὸ καθ’ ἡμέραν (Lu. 11:3;
19:47; Ac. 17:11), τῇν ἀρχήν (Jo. 8:25), τὸ λοιπόν (Mk. 14:41;
Ph. 3:1; Heb. 10:13, etc.), τὸ πρότερον (Jo. 6:62, etc.), τὸ πρῶτον
(Jo. 10:40; 12:16); τὸ πλείστον (1 Cor. 14:27), τὰ πολλά, (Ro.
15:22, MSS. πολλάκις), τὰ νῦν (Ac. 17:30), τὸ νῦν ἔχων (Ac. 24:25),
tὸ τέλος (1 Pet. 3:8). In the case of τὸ λοιπόν (1 Cor. 7:29)
it may be either accusative or nominative. In 2 Cor. 6:13 τῇν
ἀντιμισθίαν is considered adverbial accusative by some, as is πάντα
with ἀρέσκω (1 Cor. 10:33) and with μέμνησθε (11:2). Observe
also τὸ αὐτό (Ph. 2:18; Mt. 27:44). Cf. οὔδεν χρείαν ἔχω (Rev.
3:17), and the common use of τί in the sense of 'why' as in Mt.
17:10 (διὰ τί in verse 19). This phase of the adverbial accusa-
tive is common in the papyri.³

But the most numerous group of adverbial accusatives is found
in the adverbs themselves. The accusative is not the only case
used for adverbs, but it is a very common one. In Homer⁴ in-

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 117. Cf. Landgraf, Der Accus. der Beziehung
nach Adj., p. 376, Archiv für lat. Lex. and Gr., vol. X.
⁴ Giles, Man., etc., p. 309.
deed adverbial accusatives of substantives are almost absent. But the N. T. shows a few in harmony with the development of the language. Thus ἀκην (Mt. 15:16), δωρεάν (Mt. 10:8), χάριν as a preposition (Eph. 3:1, etc.). But adjectives in the accusative were numerous in Homer₁ both in the singular and the plural. They occur in the positive, comparative and occasionally the superlative. As examples of the positive singular may be taken πολύ (2 Cor. 8:22), ὀλίγου (Mk. 6:31), μέσου (Ph. 2:15), τάχυ (Mt. 5:25), λοιπόν (1 Cor. 1:16, etc. Cf. B.U., iv, 1079, 6). Indeed the participle τυχόν (1 Cor. 16:6) is used as an adv. acc. (see Acc. Absolute). As an example of the plural positive note πολλά in 1 Cor. 16:6, though this may be construed as cognate acc. with ἐκοπίασεν. Cf. Jas. 3:2; 1 Cor. 16:12, 19. For the comparative singular note μάλλον κρείσσου (Ph. 1:23), σπουδαιότερον (2 Cor. 8:22), δεύτερον (1 Cor. 12:28), περισσότερον (Mk. 7:36), βέλτιον (2 Tim. 1:18), ἔλαττον (1 Tim. 5:9) ύστερον (Mt. 22:27), τάχειον (Jo. 13:27), etc. Cf. πολύ σπουδαιότερον (2 Cor. 8:22) with πολλῷ μᾶλλον (Ph. 1:23), the instrumental and usual idiom in the N. T. In the superlative it is usually the plural form like ἡδίστα (2 Cor. 12:9), μάλιστα (Ac. 20:38), τάχιστα (Ac. 17:15), etc. But note πρῶτον (1 Cor. 12:28), τρίτον (ib.). The later Greek continued to exhibit a wealth of adverbs in the accusative.²

(1) THE ACCUSATIVE BY ANTIPTOSIS.³ It is not in reality a special use of the accusative, but merely a shifting of the noun or pronoun out of its usual order and into the government of the other preceding clause, and thus it becomes accusative whereas it would otherwise be nominative. So in Mk. 1:24, οἶδα σε τίς εἶ (cf. Lu. 4:34), Lu. 19:3, ἰδεῖν Ἰησοῦν τίς ἐστιν. But in Mt. 15:14 we have a kind of prolepsis (not the technical sort) without any change of case, τυφλὸς τυφλὸν ἔαν ὀδηγῇ. In the case of μῆ τινα ὄν ἀπέσταλκα πρός ὑμᾶς, δι’ αὐτοῦ ἐπλευνέκτησα ὑμᾶς (2 Cor. 12:17) the τινα is left to one side and anacoluthon takes place and the sentence is concluded by δι’ αὐτοῦ.

(m) THE ACCUSATIVE BY INVERSE ATTRACTION. Thus ὀρκόν ὃν ὄμοσεν (Lu. 1:73), τὸν ἄρτον ὃν κλώμεν (1 Cor. 10:16). Cf. τὸ ποτήριον (1 Cor. 10:15). In Mk. 3:16 but for the parenthesis (καὶ ἐπέθηκεν ὅνομα Σίμων) Πέτρου we should seem to have the dative and the accusative in apposition.

(n) THE ACCUSATIVE WITH THE INFINITIVE. The grammars generally speak of the accusative as the subject of the infinitive. I confess that to me this seems a grammatical misnomer. The infinitive clause in indirect discourse does correspond to a finite clause in English, and a clause with ὅτι and the indicative may often be used as well as the infinitive clause. But it is not technically scientific to read back into the Greek infinitive clause the syntax of English nor even of the ὅτι clause in Greek. Besides, not only is the infinitive a verbal substantive¹ and in a case like the verbal adjective (the participle), but being non-finite (in-finite) like the participle (partaking of both verb and noun), it can have no subject in the grammatical sense. No one thinks of calling the accusative the "subject" of the participle. Take ἔως ἀν ἱδωσιν τὸν ὦν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἔρχομενον (Mt. 16:28). Here the accusative is the object of ἱδωσιν and the participle is descriptive of ὦν. Now with the infinitive in indirect discourse it is as a rule the infinitive, not the substantive, that is the object of the verb. No further case is needed with the infinitive, if the pronoun or substantive be the same as the subject of the principal verb. Thus εἶ τις ἄγαγονεiv—νομιζει (1 Cor. 7:36). If such a word is used, it may be in the pred. nom. in apposition with the subject of the verb, as φάσκοντες εἶναι σοφοί (Ro. 1:22), or the accusative may be used. This accusative may be with a verb that can have two accusatives, as in ἐγὼ ἐμαυτὸν ὦ λογίζομαι κατειληφέναι (Ph. 3:13) or the accusative of general reference as in πεποιθάς τε σεαυτὸν ὅδηγον εἶναι τυφλῶν (Ro. 2:19). This latter usage is the explanation of the accusative with the infinitive in the instances where the word used with the infinitive is other than the subject of the principal verb. Typical examples are seen in ὁ λέγουσιν αὐτὸν ζήν (Lu. 24:23), νομιζοῦσις αὐτὸν τεθυκέναι (Ac. 14:19), βούλομαι προσεύξεσθαι τοῦς ἀνδρας (1 Tim. 2:8). In these examples the infinitive is the object of the verb and the affirmation is made as far as the word in the accusative. They affirm living as to him; considering having died or death as to him; and wish praying as to the men. This is the psychology of this accusative with the infinitive. The fact that later grammarians call it the "subject" of the infinitive cuts no figure in the matter of the origin of the usage. Clyde² has interpreted the matter correctly. He sees that "grammarians framed this rule in ignorance of the etymology

¹ For inf. as subject and as object. see ch. on Verbal Nouns.
of infinitives," and that "since the infinitive was originally a case, the accusative could not originally have been its subject." This descriptive accusative or accusative of definition (general reference) has a very wide range in Greek, as seen above, and is the true historical explanation of the accusative with the infinitive (other than the accusative which may be the object of the infinitive itself). When the infinitive is used with the accusative, it indicates the agent who has to do with the action by the accusative, since the infinitive can have no subject in the technical sense.

This use of the accusative with the infinitive is common also when the infinitive is in a prepositional clause like ἐν τῷ εἰσάγαγεν τούς γονεῖς τῷ παιδίῳ Ἰησοῦν (Lu. 2:27). Here the matter becomes clearer for the reason that the article τῷ cannot be slurred over and it becomes imperative to explain one of the accusatives as that of general reference. The context makes it clear that τῷ παιδίῳ, is the object of εἰσάγαγεν, while τούς γονεῖς is the accusative of general reference. Many examples of this sort occur. Cf. Mt. 13:4. In Mt. 26:32, μετὰ τὸ ἐγερθήματέ με, note the accusative με rather than nothing or αὐτός or ἐμαυτόν. Cf. also Ac. 23:15. The article may be so used without a preposition, and either the nominative appear, as δέομαι τὸ μὴ παρὼν θαρρήσω (2 Cor. 10:2), or the accusative, as τῷ μὴ ἐφέσω με Τίτου (2 Cor. 2:13). Then again the accusative may be used with the infinitive in such constructions as καλῶν ἔστιν ἡμᾶς ὥσε ἐίναι, (Mt. 17:4). Note here the infinitive as subject, as the infinitive as object occurs in 2 Cor. 10:2. There is one example of three accusatives with the infinitive in Heb. 5:12 (πάλιν χρείαν ἔχετε τοῦ διδάσκειν ὑμᾶς τινὰ τὰ στοιχεῖα). Here we have a verb that is used with two accusatives, and τινὰ is the accusative of general reference. Cf. the three accusatives in Lu. 11:11. This subject will call for further discussion in the chapters on Indirect Discourse and Verbal Nouns. There was a constant tendency in the later Greek to exchange this use of the infinitive and accusative for the ὅτι clause.¹

(o) THE ACCUSATIVE ABSOLUTE. The absolute use of the accusative is rare in the N. T. as compared with the earlier Greek.² Usually the genitive occurs with the participle and substantive when used absolutely. In 1 Cor. 16:6 τοῦχόν is really the accusative absolute though used as an adverb. The most certain example in the N. T. is in Ac. 26:3 γνώστην ὄντα σε. In 1 Tim. 2:6 τὸ μαρτύριον καὶροῖς ἰδίοις is in the accusative without any

¹ Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 484 f.
² It is rare also in the pap. Volker, Pap. Gr. Synt. Spec., p. 18.
immediate connection unless it is in apposition with the preceding clause\(^1\) (Ellicott *in loco*) or is loosely united with δοῦς. As to τὸ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου (Ro. 8:3) we have either the nominativus pendens, the accusative in apposition with the object of the sentence, the accusative of general reference or an instance of anacoluthon.\(^2\) In Lu. 24:47 the Text. Recept. reads ἀρχαίμενον, which would be anacoluthon, but W. H. rightly have --νοι. Twice ἔξον, occurs in the N. T., once with ὑμῖν (Mt. 12:4) and once alone, ὅ oύκ ἔξον (2 Cor. 12:4), but in both instances in the nominative. In Ph. 1: 7 ύμᾶς ὑμᾶς the ύμᾶς is repeated and is not accusative absolute. A subordinate sentence may also be in the accusative of general reference. Thus τὸ εἰ δύνη (Mk. 9:23), τὸ τίς ἄν ἐν μείζων αὐτῶν (Lu. 9:46). See further chapter on Verbal Nouns.

(p) THE ACCUSATIVE WITH PREPOSITIONS. Only a general remark is needed here, since each preposition will be discussed later in detail. In general one may note that the accusative is the most frequent case with prepositions.\(^3\) Indeed in modern Greek these all have the accusative. Ἡρός in the N. T. has ablative 1, locative 6, accusative 679 times.\(^4\) Here the preposition, like all prepositions, is merely an adverb that is used to express more exactly the idea of the case. The preposition does not technically govern a case. The accusative with the preposition has, of course, its usual force, extension. The following prepositions occur in the N. T. with the accusative, one example being given in each instance) Ἀνά μέσον (Mk. 7:31), διὰ τοῦ φόβου (Jo. 7:13), εἰς τὴν πόλιν (Mt 26:18), ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν (Mt. 15:35), κατὰ τὸν νόμον (Lu. 2:22), μετὰ ἧμερας τρεῖς (Lu. 2:46), παρὰ τὴν ὀδόν (Mt. 20:30), περὶ αὐτῶν, (Mt. 26:18), ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν (Mt. 3:5), ὑπὲρ δοῦλον (Phil. 16), ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον (Mt. 5:15). Of these εἰς is, of course, by far the most frequent and has only the accusative. Διὰ, μετὰ περί, ὑπέρ, ὑπὸ have the genitive-ablative more than the accusative, while ἐπὶ, κατὰ, ἱρός have the accusative more often. For exact figures see Moulton, *Prol.*, pp. 105-107. In the chapter on Prepositions there will be further discussion of the matter.

VIII. The Genitive (True) Case (ἡ γενικὴ πρῶστις).

(a) TWO CASES WITH ONE FORM. It is now generally accepted by the comparative grammars that in Greek two cases appear under the form of the genitive: the genitive proper and the

---

\(^1\) For acc. in apposition with sentence in pap. see Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 152, τὸ μῆ δὲν, T.P. 1 (ii/B.C.).

\(^2\) Green, *Handb.*, etc., p. 234.

\(^3\) Giles, *Man.*, etc., p. 311.

It is a syncretistic form. The matter has already had some discussion in this grammar under Declensions and calls for little remark here. Moulton is not too hard on Winer when he calls it "an utterly obsolete procedure" to speak of the genitive as "unquestionably the whence-case." Winer is followed by Green. Now the ablative is the whence-case, but the genitive is a different case. Delbruck gives an interesting sketch of the fate of the ablative case in the Indo-Germanic languages. In the Sanskrit singular the two cases (gen. and abl.) have the same form, except I.-G. –o (Sansk. –a) stems (Sansk. gen. –asya, abl. –ad). In the Balto-Slavic tongues ablative and genitive have the same endings. In the Italic languages, ablative, locative, instrumental (and partly dative) have the same form. Indeed in the Thessalian dialect as in the Latin some forms of the genitive and locative coincide (like domi). Dionysius Thrax had the idea that both cases flourished under one form in Greek, for he describes this case as ἡ γενικὴ κτητικὴ καὶ πατρικὴ. Thompson indeed recognises the two cases, but thinks it is not possible to group the uses of the form under these two divisions because some suit either case. There is a "debatable land" as Giles observes, but this applies to only a very small part of the examples and is very natural indeed. As a matter of fact it is not possible to give a really scientific explanation of the usage in Greek from any other standpoint. The ablative will therefore be treated as a separate case and the true genitive discussed now.

(b) NAME INCORRECT. The genitive case has the wrong name. The Latin genitivus is a translation of γενικη (more like the ablative in idea). It is ἡ γενικὴ πτώσις. The name γενικὴ comes from γένος (genus), 'kind,' and corresponds to the Latin generalis. Priscian so calls it (generalis casus). It is a pity that one still has to call it "genitive."

2 W.-Th., p. 184; Moulton, Prol., p. 72. But W.-Sch., p. 259, does not make this error.
3 Handb., etc., p. 207.
7 Man., p. 313.
(C) THE SPECIFYING CASE. It is this and no other. The idea of the genitive case is at bottom simple. The genitive shows διαίρεσιν and something εἴδικόν. It is the case of genus (γένος) or kind. For a very full discussion of the genitive see Delbruck, Veryl. Synt., III, pp. 307-360. The genitive does indeed resemble the adjective, but it is not adjectival in origin, though the source of the genitive ending is unknown. The adjectival possessive pronoun (like ἔμοι) is a mere variation of the genitive case (ἐμοῦ) and the two may be in apposition with one another, as τῇ ἔμη χειρὶ Παῦλου (2 Th. 3:17). But the function of the case is largely adjectival as in ἡμέρα παρασκευής (Lu. 23:54), though the adjective and the genitive are not exactly parallel, for with two substantives each idea stands out with more sharpness, as in ἐν καυνότητι κατη (Ro. 6:4) and ἐπὶ πλούτου ἀδηλότητι (1 Tim. 6:17). It is the specifying case, then, the case of appurtenance. In the Sanskrit Whitney finds the genitive adjectival in idea and defining the noun more nearly. So also Kuhner-Gerth, who find it qualitative with nouns or verbs. But Delbruck, followed by Brugmann, makes the verb the starting-point for explaining the genitive. One hesitates to part company with Delbruck and Brugmann, but the older view that it was first used with nouns seems here to have the best of it. It may be remarked that the genitive is the most persistent of all the cases in retaining its forms, as is seen in the English s. Indeed in the modern Greek the form shares with the accusative the result of the loss of the dative, so that we often meet a construction like αὐτοῦ τὸ Ἐιπα (‘I told him so’). One other remark is called for concerning the meaning of the genitive in Greek. It is that the case does not of itself mean all that one finds in translation. The case adheres to its technical root-idea. The resultant idea will naturally vary greatly according as the root-conception of the case is applied to different words and different contexts. But the varying element is not the case, but the words and the context. The error must not be made of mistaking the translation of the resultant whole

---

1 Giles, Man., etc., p. 311. 3 Hadley, Ess. Philol. and Crit., p. 48.
2 Cf. W.-Th., p. 236. 4 Sans. Gr., p. 98 f.
7 Griech. Gr., p. 3851.
9 In late Gk. the true gen. survives while the abl. fades further away.
for the case itself. Thus in Mt. 1:12 we have μετοικεσίαν Βαβυλώνος. It is translated 'removal to Babylon.' Now the genitive does not mean 'to,' but that is the correct translation of the total idea obtained by knowledge of the O. T. What the genitive says is that it is a 'Babylon-removal.' That is all. So in Mt. 12:31, ἡ τοῦ πνεύματος βλασφημία, it is the 'Spirit-blasphemy.' From the context we know that it is blasphemy against the Spirit, though the genitive does not mean 'against.' When a case has so many possible combinations in detail it is difficult to make a satisfactory grouping of the various resultant usages. A very simple and obvious one is here followed. But one must always bear in mind that these divisions are merely our modern conveniences and were not needed by the Greeks themselves. At every stage one needs to recall the root-idea of the case (genus or kind) and find in that and the environment and history the explanation.

(d) THE LOCAL USE. This is normally the first to begin with. In Greek literature it appears mainly in poetry and in adverbs of place like αὐτῶν, οὗ, ποι, ὅπου, ὅμου, πανταχόο. But it is possible that these are locatives like ἀλλαθεῖν in a shortened form. But on the other hand in Homer the genitive undoubtedly appears in local relations with the archaic genitive in —οιο, though even in Homer the examples are chiefly stereotyped ones. There are in the N. T. only these examples in Luke and Acts. In Lu. 5:19 μὴ εὑρότες ποίας εἰς ἑγκωσιν αὐτόν and 19:4 ἑκείνης ἢμελλεν διέρχεσθαι we have two undoubted examples. Blass indeed calls these "incorrect" on the ground that "classical Greek" would not have used the genitive thus. But it is sufficient reply to say that Luke was not writing classical Greek. Certainly Xenophon might have used ποιά ἑκείνη (as D has in Lu. 19:4). Moulton finds often in the papyri νότου, λιβός, though in Rev. 21:13 we have the ablatives απὸ νότου. In Ac. 19:26 we have a very striking example that the commentators have failed to notice as Moulton observes. It is οὐ μόνον Ἠφέσου ἀλλὰ σχεδὸν πάσης τῆς Ἀσιάς ὁ Παύλος πείσας μετέστησεν ἵκανον ὅχλον. Moulton on the whole agrees with Hackett that the genitive here is dependent on ὅχλον. In Homer one has a parallel like οὐκ Ἀργεος ἦν but Moulton finds none in the vernacular κουνη. Still, since Luke did use ἑκείνης and ποίας, it does

---

2 Delbruck, Vergl. Gr., I, p. 359.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 109.
5 Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 437.
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 73.
7 Ib.
not seem difficult to believe that he was ready to employ the genitive of place in Acts.

There is another passage in Luke also (Lu. 16:24) where the genitive of place occurs, ἵνα βασίν τὸ ἄκρον τοῦ δακτύλου αὐτοῦ ὑδατος. Here ὑδατος emphasizes the kind of material which the speaker clearly has in mind. Χ has ὑδατιν. One may note in this connection the Homeric idiom λουέσσαι ποταμίῳ ‘to bathe in the river.’ Cf. also the classic ποῦ γῆς. Somewhat similar also is ἡ διασπορὰ τῶν Ἑλλήνων (Jo. 7:35) and ὁδὸς ἐθνῶν (Mt. 10:5), which are objective genitives but of place also. Cf. ἐν Ταρσῷ τῆς Κυβερνῆς (Acts 22:3) which is described by Blass-Debrunner, p. 101, as partitive genitive.

(e) THE TEMPORAL USE. It is common enough. This is a very old use of the genitive.1 This is the true genitive.2 The accusative when used of time expresses duration over the period, the locative regards the period as a point even if it is of some length (cf. καιροῖς ἰδίοις, 1 Tim. 6:15), while the genitive implies nothing3 as to duration. In Mt. 24:20 this distinction can be seen in χειμῶνος καὶ σαββάτῳ, one the case of genus, the other a point of time. Brugmann4 indeed regards the genitive of time as a development of the partitive genitive, but this seems hardly necessary. Moulton,5 on the other hand, connects it with the genitive of possession and finds it very frequently in the papyri, like ἐτοὺς, ‘in the second year.’ So τοῦ ὄντος μηνός, F.P. 124 (ii/A.D.). On the difference between the genitive and the accusative of time see ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτός (Lu. 18:7) and νύκτα καὶ ἡμέραν (Lu. 2:37), the genitive the time within which (kind of time), the accusative the time during which (all through). Cf. also νυκτὸς τὸ πρῶτον (Jo. 19:39). See also τοῦ λοιποῦ (Gal. 6:17) and τὸ λοιπόν (Heb. 10:13). Once more observe μεσονύκτιον ἡ ἀλεκτονοφωνίας (Mk. 13:35) where some MSS. have μεσονυκτίου. The accusative here is more like the adverb ὄψε just preceding. Further examples of the genitive may be seen in μέσης νυκτὸς (Mt. 25:6), ὁρθίου βαθέος (Lu. 24:1). For adverbs in expressions of time, see viii, (h).

(f) WITH SUBSTANTIVES. This is the chief use of the case. The accusative indeed is chiefly connected with the verb, while the genitive is mainly related to substantives.6

1. The Possessive7 Genitive. In simple point of fact it is not

---

2 Delbruck, Grundl., etc., IV, p. 45.
5 Prol., p. 73.
6 Giles, Man., etc., p. 311.
7 Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 344.
necessary to see any particular inner connection between the
many uses of the genitive with substantives other than the com-
mon root-idea of the case. For convenience it suits us to group
these usages, but one must think that the Greeks themselves
looked at the whole matter much more simply. After all it is the
context that varies rather than the genitive.1 The resultant idea
is therefore a matter of exegesis rather than due to any particular
label to be attached.2 The most obvious illustrations like πατάξας
tόν δούλου τοῦ ἀρχερέως αφείλεν αὐτοῦ τῷ ὦτίῳ (Mt. 26:51) call for
little remark. It is the high-priest's servant, not another's, and
it is the servant's ear, not another's. The possessive pronouns,
especially ἐμῶς in John's Gospel, were used to some extent in the
N. T., but usually the genitive of the personal pronoun is found.
In Jo. 7:16 they occur side by side. Cf. τῇ ἐμῆ χειρὶ Παύλου
(1 Cor. 16 : 21).

2. **Attributive Genitive.** Like an adjective the genitive may
be either attributive or predicate. This is sometimes called the
genitive of quality. But the name helps little, as all genitives
have this idea. The sense of attribute is indeed the usual
one with the genitive, as Παύλος δούλος Ἰησοῦν Χριστοῦ (Ro.
1:1). Thus observe the descriptive genitive in Mt. 18:9 εἰς
τῇ γένους τοῦ πυρός, Ro. 6:6 τῷ σώμα τῆς ἀμαρτίας, τῷ σώμα τῆς
tαπεινώσεως (and τῷ δόξῃ, Ph. 3:21), τῷ σώμα τῆς σαρκός (Col. 1:
22), βαπτίσμα μετανοίας (Mk. 1:4), ἡμέρας ὀδόν (Lu. 2:44), ὁ ὦν κο
μός τῆς ἀδικίας (Lu. 16:8). And even expressions like υἱὸς ἰωτός
(1 Th. 5:5) are shown by the inscriptions and coins (Deissmann,
*Bib. Stud.*, p. 165) to be not mere Hebraisms, though far more fre-
cquent in the LXX than in the N. T. because of the Hebrew.
Other examples are λόγοι τῆς χάριτος (Lu. 4:22), σκέδως ἐκλογῆς
(Ac. 9:15), σκεύη ὀργῆς (Ro. 9:22), κριτής τῆς ἀδικίας (Lu. 18:6),
pάθη ἀτιμίας (Ro. 1:26), υἱὸς τῆς ἡγάτης (Col. 1:13), νόμον τῆς
ἐλευθερίας and ἀκροατής ἐπιθυμησμοῦ (Jas. 1:25), ἀπαύγασμα τῆς δόξης
(Heb. 1:3), καρδία ἀπίστιας (Heb. 3:12), ρίζα πικρίας (Heb. 12:15),
ἡ πληγὴ τοῦ θανάτου (Rev. 13:3), where the descriptive attribu-
tive genitive expresses quality like an adjective indeed, but with
more sharpness and distinctness. Cf. again ἐν καινότητι ζωῆς (Ro.
6:4) and ἐπὶ πλοῦτου ἀδηλότητι (1 Tim. 6:17). In Heb. 1:3, τῷ
ῥήματι τῆς δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ, the second genitive is technically de-

---

1 Giles, Man., etc., p. 312.
2 Moulton, ProL., p. 72. Blass, also (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 95) thinks that
the exact shade of the gen. idea is often a matter of theological, not gram-
matical interpretation.
dependent on δυνάμεως. Cf. 2 Th. 1:7. One may note Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 237) who says that in τὰ ἰδία τῆς ᾧς ταύτης (Ac. 5:20) the demonstrative goes in sense with ἰδία. This point (cf. p. 706) applies to ὁ λόγος τῆς σωτηρίας ταύτης (Ac. 13:26) and ἐκ τοῦ σώματος τοῦ θανάτου τοῦτου (Ro. 7:24). Besides ὦ ἰδία φωτός above observe a similar idiom in τέκνα φωτός (Eph. 5:8), τέκνα ὄργης (Eph. 2:3), τέκνα ὑπακοῆς (1 Pet. 1:14), τέκνα κατάρας (2 Pet. 2:14), ὦ ἰδία ἀπεθανοῦσα (Eph. 2:2), ὦ ἰδία τῆς ἀπωλείας (2 Th. 2:3). Cf. also ὦ ἰδία τοῦ νυμφώνως (Mt. 9:15); ὦ ἰδία τῆς ἀγάπης ἀυτοῦ (Col. 1:3), ὦ ἀνθρωπὸς τῆς ἀνομίας (2 Th. 2:3).

One may instance further the use of ἡμέρα ὄργης (Ro. 2:5), ἡμέρα στωρηρίας 2 Cor. 6:2 quot. from 0. T.), ἡμέρα ἐπισκοπῆς (1 Pet. 2:12), ἡμέρα ἀναδείξεως (Lu. 1:80) where the LXX may be appealed to for abundant illustration.

The genitive of place or country is descriptive also. Thus Ναζαρὲτ τῆς Γαλιλαίας (Mk. 1:9), Ταρσῶ τῆς Κυκλίας (Ac. 22:3), ἦτος ἐστὶν πρῶτη μερίδος τῆς Μακεδονίας πόλις (Ac. 16:12), etc. This genitive of quality or descriptive genitive is largely extended in the LXX by reason of translation (Thackeray, p. 23).

3. The Predicate Genitive. While having the copula ἐίναι, γίνεσθαι, etc., in reality it is to be explained as a genitive with substantives. It is not the copula that affects the case of the genitive at all. It is just the possessive genitive in the predicate instead of being an attribute. Often the substantive or pronoun is repeated in sense before the predicate genitive. Thus οὐκ ἐστὶν ἀκαταστασίας ὁ θεὸς (1 Cor. 14:33). Cf. ἡμείς οὐκ ἐσμὲν ὑποστολῆς—ἀλλὰ πίστεως (Heb. 10:39), πᾶσα παιδεία οὐ δοκεῖ χαράς ἐίναι (Heb. 12:11). So ἦν γὰρ ἐτῶν δώδεκα (Mk. 5:42). So Lu. 2:42. Cf. also ἦν τινας εὐρή τῆς ὀδοῦ ὄντας (Ac. 9:2), and indeed ἐγένετο γνώμης (Ac. 20:3 is to be explained the same way. There is as much latitude in the predicate genitive as in the attributive possessive genitive. We have ὦ ἰδία φωτός ἐστε καὶ ὦ ἰδία ἡμέρας (1 Th. 5:5) and οὐκ ἐσμὲν νυκτὸς οὔθε σκότους (1 Th. 5:6) and ἡμέρας ὄντες (verse 8). We may continue the illustrations like ἐγὼ εἰμί Πιστόν (1 Cor. 1:12), οὐκ ἐστε ἐαυτῶν (1 Cor. 6:19), τοῦ θεοῦ οὐ εἰμί (Ac. 27:23), πάντα ὑμῶν ἐστίν (1 Cor. 3:21), οὐχ ὑμῶν ἐστίν γνωρισθαί, (Ac. 1:7), ἵνα ἦμων γένηται ἡ κληρονομία (Lu. 20:14), τίνος αὐτῶν ἐσται γυνή (Mk. 12:23), τελείως ἐστίν ἡ στερεα τροφή (Heb. 5:14), Χριστὸν ἐίναι (2 Cor. 10:7), ὦν ἐστίν Φύγελος καὶ Ἑρμογένης (2 Tim. 1:15), ἵνα ἡ ὑπερβολὴ τῆς δυνάμεως ἢ τοῦ (2 Cor. 4:7), and finally,
though by no means all that can be adduced, ὅν ἔστω ὦ χῶρος (1 Pet. 3:3). These passages not only illustrate the variety of the predicate genitive, but show that this is essentially a substantival genitive (cf. predicate nominative) and not a verbal genitive. As an example of the objective genitive in the predicate take σκλάδαλόν εἴ έμοῦ (Mt. 16:23). In the modern Greek the predicate genitive has been still further extended (Thumb, Handb., p. 35).

4. Apposition or Definition. This is a very simple use of the case, but is not an extremely common idiom in the N. T., since the two substantives can easily be put in the same case. In the modern Greek mere apposition rules (Thumb, Handb., p. 33).

But some interesting examples occur. It is a well-known idiom in Homer and certainly needs no appeal to the Hebrew for justification. Kuhner-Gerth may also be consulted for other poetical examples. In the N. T. we note πόλεις Σοδόμων καὶ Γομώρρας (2 Pet. 2:6) which Blass compares with Ἰλίου πόλιν of Homer and observes that πόλεως θυατείρων (Ac. 16:14) is merely the genitive of πόλεως θυατείρα (cf. πόλεις Ἰσπαπή in Ac. 11:5). In 2 Cor. 11:32 the adjective is used as τὴν πόλιν Δαμασκηνῶν, while in Rev. 18:10 we have true apposition. One may note further τοῦ ναοῦ τοῦ σώματος αὐτοῦ (Jo. 2:21), τὸν ἄρραβώνα τοῦ πνεύματος (2 Cor. 5:5), σημείων περιτομῆς (Ro. 4:11, AC σημείων), τὸ σημείον τῆς ιάσεως (Ac. 4:22), ἡ κοίμησις τοῦ ὑπνοῦ (Jo. 11:13), θώρακα πίστεως καὶ ἀγάπης (1 Th. 5:8), τὸ ἔργον τῆς πίστεως (1 Th. 1:3), ἐν τῷ λόγῳ τῆς ἀληθείας τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Col. 1:5), ἡ αὐτοπόδοσις τῆς κηρυκονομίας (Col. 3:24), ἐν ζυμῇ κακίας (1 Cor. 5:8), ἡ ὀσμή τῆς γνώσεως αὐτοῦ (2 Cor. 2:14), ἡ προσφορά τῶν ἑθῶν (Ro. 15:16), τὸ μεσότοιχον τοῦ φραγμοῦ (Eph. 2:14), ὁ θεμέλιος τῶν ἀποστόλων (Eph. 2:20), θεμέλιος μετανοίας (Heb. 6:1), τὸ ἀπόκριμα τοῦ θανάτου (2 Cor. 1:9), ὁ ἐμπλοκὴς τριχῶν –κόσμος (1 Pet. 3:3), ὁ στέφανος τῆς ζωῆς (Rev. 2:10), ὁ στέφανος τῆς δόξης (1 Pet. 5:4), ὁ τῆς δικαιοσύνης στέφανος (2 Tim. 4:8), ἡ ἐορτή τῶν αὐτῶν (Lu. 22:1), ἡ ἐορτή τοῦ πάσχα (Jo. 13:1), ἡ οἰκία τοῦ σκύλους (2 Cor. 5:1), ἡ ἀπαρχή τοῦ πνεύματος (Ro. 8:23), τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ πνεύματος (Ac. 2:33), νόμος πίστεως (Ro. 3:27). These are by no means all, but they illustrate at least the freedom of the N. T. in the use of the genitive of definition or of apposition. It is, of course, possible, as Moulton (Prol., 74) suggests, that the vernacular has preserved the poetical

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 73 f.
3 II, p. 264.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 98. Cf. also W.-Sch., p. 266 f.
idiom in this as in so many other matters. Poetry often expresses better than prose the language of the people. In Eph. 4:9 εἰς τὰ κατώτερα μέρη τῆς γῆς we probably have not this usage, but the ablative after the comparative. Cf. Ellicott in loco. In Jo. 21: 8 τὸ δίκτυον τῶν ἰχθύων the genitive merely gives the content (cf. material and quantity as opposed to quality). Cf. also ἀλάβαστρον μύρου (Mk. 14:3) and κεράμιον ὕδατος (Mk. 14:13), ἀγέλη χοίρων (Mt. 8:30) and ἔκατον βάτος ἡλαίου (Lu. 16:6).

5. The Subjective Genitive. It can be distinguished from the objective use only by the context. Sometimes the matter is not clear. This genitive is the common possessive genitive looked at from another angle. In itself the genitive is neither subjective nor objective, but lends itself readily to either point of view. The subjective genitive can indeed be applied to the merely possessive genitive noted above.1 Take Ro. 1:17 where δικαιοσύνη θεοῦ means the righteousness which God has and wishes to bestow on us. A typical example is found in 2 Cor. 5:14, ἡ γὰρ ἀγάπη τοῦ Χριστοῦ συνέχει ἡμᾶς. Mere it is unquestionably the love that Christ has for sinners and so for Paul that is the constraining influence in his life. In Ro. 8:39 the matter is explained indeed by the phrase ἀπὸ τῆς ἀγάπης τοῦ θεοῦ τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ. Abbott2 is apparently right in finding only a couple of passages in the N. T. where ἀγάπη is used with the objective genitive (2 Th. 2:10, ἡ ἀγ. τῆς ἀληθείας; Lu. 11:42, παρέρχεσθε τὴν κρίσιν καὶ τὴν ἀγάπην τοῦ θεοῦ. Jo. 5:42 τὴν ἀγάπην τοῦ θεοῦ οὐκ ἔχετε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς might be either subjective or objective, but see Ro. 5:5. In Ph. 4:7 ἡ ἐρήμη τοῦ θεοῦ is probably subjective and, so ‘the peace that God has and gives,’ but the meaning is richer than any phrase, as Simcox3 well observes. Cf. Col. 3:15. In Ro. 15:8, ὑπὲρ ἀληθείας θεοῦ, we seem to have the subjective genitive. Note also δικαιοσύνη πίστεως (Ro. 4:13), which is explained as subjective by Paul in the phrase ή δικαιοσύνη ἐκ πίστεως (Ro. 10:6). In 1 Tim. 4:1, διδασκαλίας δαιμονίων, we have again the subjective genitive. Some passages are open to doubt, as εὐαγγέλιον τῆς χάριτος τοῦ θεοῦ (Ac. 20:24), εὐαγγέλιον τῆς βασιλείας (Mt. 4:23).

6. The Objective Genitive. It is quite frequent in the N. T.,4 especially when it is vanishing in the later Greek.5 The adnominal genitive preserves a remnant of the old objective genitive in mod-

---

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 333.
2 Joh. Gr., pp. 84 ff; Abbott gives a very just discussion of the matter.
3 Lang. of the N. T., p. 87.
4 Green, Handb.1, etc., p. 219.
ern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 34). Here again we must appeal to the root-idea of the genitive as the case of genus or kind. The resultant idea is due to the context and one must not suppose that the Greek genitive means all the different English prepositions used to translate the resultant idea. Thus in Mk. 11:22 ἔχετε πίστιν Θεοῦ we rightly translate 'have faith in God,' though the genitive does not mean 'in,' but only the God kind of faith. Cf. Ro. 3:22. Take Mt. 12:31, ἢ δὲ τοῦ πνεύματος βλασφημία, where the context makes it clear that it is blasphemy 'against' the Holy Spirit. Another striking example is Ac. 4:9, ἐπὶ εὐεργεσία ἄνθρωποι ἁγίους, where the good deed is done 'to' a sick man. In Jo. 7:13, διὰ τὸν φόβον τῶν Ἰουδαίων, it is fear 'towards' or 'in reference to' the Jews, while Jo. 17:2, ἐξουσία πάσης σαρκός, means authority 'over' all flesh (cf. ἐξουσίαν πνευμάτων ἀκαθάρτων, Mt. 10:1, and τῆς ὑμῶν ἐξουσίας, 1 Cor. 9:12). In 1 Cor. 10:6, τύποι ἡμῶν, we have types 'for' us. In Jo. 18:29 we have accusation 'against' this man, καταγγέλλων τοῦ ἄνθρωπον, etc. Each example calls for separate treatment. So τὸ σημεῖον Ἰωνᾶ (Lu. 11:29) may be the sign shown in Jonah, while νόμος τοῦ ἄνδρος (Ro. 7:2) is the law 'about' the husband (cf. ὁ νόμος τοῦ λεπροῦ, Lev. 14:2). In 1 Pet. 2:19, διὰ συνείδησιν Θεοῦ, it is a good conscience 'toward' God, while εἰς τὴν ὑπακοὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ (Lu. 6:12) we have prayer 'to' God. Ὅ ζηλος τοῦ οἴκου σου (Jo. 2:17) is zeal 'concerning' thy house. See Ro. 10:2; cf. also Heb. 11:26, τὸν ὅνειδισμὸν τοῦ Χριστοῦ. In Col. 2:18, θησαυρίζω τῶν ἁγγέλων, it is worship 'paid to' angels, while εἰς τὴν ὑπακοὴν τοῦ Χριστοῦ (2 Cor. 10:5) is obedience 'to' Christ. But see per contra ὑπακοὴ πίστεως (Ro. 1:5) which is subjective genitive. In 1 Cor. 1:6, μαρτύριον τοῦ Χριστοῦ we have again witness 'concerning' Christ. Cf. also ὁ λόγος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ (1 Cor. 1:18) and ἀκοαὶ πολέμων (Mt. 24:6). So in 1 Cor. 8:7 ἡ συνείδησις τοῦ εἰδώλου is consciousness 'about' the idol, not the idol's consciousness. See also the two objective uses of ἁγάπη in 2 Th. 2:10 and Lu. 11:42 and possibly also Jo. 5:42; 2 Th. 3:5; 1 Jo. 2:5. In Ro. 5:5 either will make good sense. The phrase φόβος Θεοῦ (Ro. 3:18) is objective, and note also 2 Cor. 5:11 (τὸν φόβον τοῦ κυρίου). Eph. 5:21 is objective. See also καθ ὑπομονήν ἔργου ἁγάθου (Ro. 2:7), 'in' a good work, and εἰς δικαιώσειν ζωῆς (Ro. 5:18), 'to' life. Cf. ἀνάστασιν ζωῆς—κρίσεως (Jo. 5:29). Indeed one may go on and include those genitives of "looser relation" usually set off to themselves. They are really just the objective genitive. So as to ὁ δῶς ἐθνῶν (Mt. 10:5), way 'to' the Gentiles; ὁ δῶν θαλάσσης (Mt. 4:15), way
'by' the sea; τὴν διασποράν τῶν Ἑλλήνων (Jo. 7:35), dispersion 'among' the Greeks; πρόβατα σφαγῆς (Ro. 8:36), 'doomed to' slaughter; θέρα τῶν προβάτων (Jo. 10:7), door 'to' the sheep; μετοικεῖσθαι Βαβυλῶνος (Mt. 1:11 f.), and even ἀπολύτρωσις τῶν παραβάσεων (Heb. 9:15), though this last may be regarded as an ablative. But βαπτισμῶν διδάσχη (Heb. 6:2) is objective genitive. Note also τροπής ἀποσκίασμα (Jas. 1:17), a shadow 'cast by' turning, and πίστει ἀληθείας (2 Th. 2:13), faith in the truth. In Heb. 10:24, παροξυσμὸν ἀγάπης καὶ καλῶν ἔργων there is little cause for comment. The same remark applies to κίνδυνοι ποταμῶν, λήστῶν (2 Cor. 11:26). In Jo. 19:14 ἡ παρσκευὴ τοῦ πάσχα probably already means the day 'before' the Sabbath (Friday).1 Cf. ἡ παραβολὴ τοῦ σπείρουτος (Mt. 13:18). Cf. also the genitive of price, χυώνει σίτου δημαρίου (Rev. 6:6), 'for' a penny; ἀντάλλαγμα τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ (Mt. 16:26), exchange 'for' his soul. Cf. Lu. 10:36. Enough has been said to show how carefully the genitive must be interpreted and what great latitude was used in connection with it. Deissmann (St. Paul, pp. 140 f.) thinks that Paul's use of the genitive is "very peculiar" and transcends all rules about subjective and objective. He even suggests "mystic genitive" for Paul.

7. Genitive of Relationship. For lack of a better name this use of the genitives is called "genitive of membership"2 or "of relationship."3 In reality it is merely the possessive genitive of a special applications The substantive is not used because the context makes it clear. Thus Μαρία ἡ Ἰακώβου (Lu. 24:10) is James' Mary; whether mother, wife, daughter or sister, the context must decide. In this instance it is James' mother. Cf. Mk. 16:1. Mk. 15:47 gives us Μαρία ἡ Ἰωσήφος, while in 15:40 we have both James and Joses. In Mt. 27:56 as in Mk. 15:40 we have the full construction μητήρ. But in Jo. 19:25 Μαρία ἡ τοῦ Κλωπᾶ it is the wife (γυνὴ) that is meant. So in Mt. 1:6 ἐκ τῆς τοῦ Ὀδρίου. In Lu. 6:16 and Ac. 1:13 we have Ἰουδας Ἰακώβου, which probably means the brother (ἀδελφός) of Jude in view of Jude 1 (ἀδελφός Ἰακώβου) rather than son. But ιοῖς is the word usually to be supplied, as in Ἰακώβου τοῦ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου (Mt. 4:21), τοῦ Ἰουδαν Σίμωνος (Jo. 6:71), Σίμων Ἰωάνου (Jo. 21:15 ff.), Δαυεὶδ τοῦ τοῦ Ἰεσαί (Ac. 13:22). See also Ac. 20:4, Σώπατρος Πόρρου. Cf. Lu. 3:2 where ιοῖς is used, as ιοί generally is for 'sons of Zebedee' (Mk. 10:35). In Jo. 21:2 we have οἱ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου so used.

1 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 92.
2 Blass, Gr. of, N. T. Gk., p. 95. 3 W.-Th., p. 190.
But sometimes the article refers to the family in general as in ὑπὸ τῶν Χλόης (1 Cor. 1:11). Cf. οἷς περὶ αὐτόν (Lu. 22:49).
In Mk. 5:35, ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀρχισυναγώγου, it is possible that ἀῖκος is to be supplied, since the man himself (verse 22) has already come. In Ac. 2:27, 31, W. H. read εἰς ἡδην, while some MSS. have εἰς ἡδον (cf. Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 395) and the MSS. vary also in Ps. 16:10 (LXX). Cf. ἐν τῷ ἡδη in Lu. 16:23. It is more likely that in Lu. 2:49, ἐν τοῖς τοῦ πατρὸς, we have the idea of 'house' rather than that of 'business.' Cf. εἰς τὰ ᾨδα (Jo. 19:27) and εἰς τὰ ᾨδα and οἱ Ἠδοι in Jo. 1:11. See ἐν τοῖς Κλαυδίου, P.O. 523 (ii/A.D.), for 'house' of. It is a classic idiom.
Cf. Lysias εἰς τὰ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ. These constructions are all in harmony with the ancient Greek idiom. In an example like τὸ τῆς ἀληθοὺς παροιμίας (2 Pet. 2:22) it is not the genitive that calls for remark so much as the article without any substantive. The discussion belongs to the chapter on the Article.

8. Partitive Genitive. Here a part of the whole is given. See ἐν τοῦτων (Mt. 6:29), τὸ δέκατον τῆς πόλεως (Rev. 11:13), ἡ ὁμίσος τῆς βασιλείας (Mt. 6:23), ἡ ὁμισύ καιροῦ (Rev. 12:14), τὰ ἡμίσια μου τῶν ὑπαρχόντων (Lu. 19:18), τὸ περισσεύον τῶν κλασμάτων (Mt. 15:37), τὸ τρίτον τῆς γῆς (Rev. 8:7). See further ἐν τῶν μελῶν σου (Mt. 5:29), τίνα τῶν προφητῶν (Acts 7:52), τοὺς πτωχοὺς τῶν ἁγίων (Rom. 15:26), οἱ λοιποὶ τῶν ἄνθρωπων (Lu. 18:11), μυριάδες μυριάδων καὶ χιλιάδες χιλιάδων (Rev. 5:11), τὰ ἡμίσια μου τῶν ὑπαρχόντων (Lu. 19:18) and the curious τὰ αὐτὰ τῶν παθημάτων (1 Pet. 5: 9). For the blending of the partitive genitive with the ablative and ἐκ and for further discussion see ix, (c). In the N. T. the partitive relation is usually more sharply defined by prepositions (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 102). Cf. Ac. 21:16, συνῆλθον τῶν μαθητῶν, where the partitive genitive is alone.

9. The Position of the Genitive. In general one may note that the genitive usually comes after the limiting substantive, as τὴν γεένναν τοῦ πυρός (Mt. 5:22), but the genitive comes first if it is emphatic like Ἑλληνῶν πολὺ πλήθος (Ac. 14:1) or if there is sharp contrast like τὸν συστρατιώτην μου, ὑμῶν δὲ ἀπόστολον (Ph.. 2:25). In Eph. 6:9 both genitives precede, καὶ αὐτῶν καὶ ὑμῶν ὁ κύριος. If the article is used with both words we may have the usual order, as τὴν πανοπλίαν τοῦ θεοῦ, (Eph. 6:11), or less often the classic idiom, as τῶν τῆς πίστεως ἀρχηγόν (Heb. 12:2). Sometimes indeed the article may be repeated, as ὁ λόγος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ (1 Cor.

1 Green, Handb., etc., p. 213.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 95 f.
1:18). 1 Αὐτοῦ usually comes after the noun in the Synoptics, as τήν ἁλώνα αὐτοῦ (Lu. 3:17), but John sometimes puts αὐτοῦ first 2 (1:27; 9:6; cf. σου in 9:10, σου οἱ ὀφθαλμοί). Sometimes a word intervenes between; the substantive and the genitive as in Ἡμεθα τέκνα φύσει ὁργῆς (Eph. 2:3). Cf. also Ph. 2:10; Ro. 9:21, etc.

But note εἰς ἀλεύρου σάτα τρία (Mt. 13:33).

10. Concatenation of Genitives. Two or more genitives may be used together. This is, of course, common in the earlier Greek. Paul in particular is fond of piling up genitives. Take 1 Th. 1:3 as a typical example, μνημονεύοντες ὑμῶν τού ἐργου τῆς πίστεως καὶ τοῦ κόπου τῆς ἀγάπης καὶ τῆς ὑπομονῆς τῆς ἐλπίδος τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. Here we have practically all the points, viz., two simple genitives, two in apposition, three together, one of the person and the other of the thing. A very simple case is found in Ro. 8:21, τὴν ἐλευθερίαν τῆς δόξης τῶν τέκνων τοῦ Θεοῦ, and in verse 23 τὴν ἀπολύτρωσιν τοῦ σώματος ἡμῶν. Cf. also Jo. 6:1; 2 Cor. 4:4; Eph. 1:6; 4:13; Col. 1:13, etc. In Rev. 16:19 we have four genitives, τὸ ποτήριον τοῦ ὀίνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τῆς ὁργῆς αὐτοῦ, and five occur in Rev. 19:15, counting the appositives, τὴν λήψιν τοῦ ὀίνου τοῦ θυμοῦ τῆς ὁργῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ παντοκράτορος. Blass 3 calls this "a really burdensome accumulation of words," but surely the sense is clear enough. The governing genitive comes before the dependent genitive in irregular order here. But in 2 Pet. 3:2 this smooth order is not observed, yet all five can be readily understood: ὑπὸ τῶν ἄγίων προφητῶν καὶ τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ὑμῶν ἐντολῆς τοῦ κυρίου. Cf. Ph. 2:30 also. In 2 Cor. 3:18, ἀπὸ κυρίου πνεύματος, it is not clear whether κυρίου is genitive or is the ablative in apposition with πνεύματος. In Jas. 2:1 it is difficult to put into brief compass the Greek idiom, τὴν πίστιν τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τῆς δόξης. Here Ἰη. Χρ. is in apposition with κυρίου. Κυρίου has ἡμῶν and is itself the objective genitive with πίστιν, while τῆς δόξης is probably in apposition with Ἰη. Χρ. (see Mayor in loco).

(g) THE GENITIVE WITH ADJECTIVES. Giles 4 observes how natural it is for adjectives to take the genitive, since many of them are developed from substantivatives in apposition. Adjectives of fulness can logically take either the genitive or the instrumental. Giles 5 explains how with they Latin plenus, by analogy to vacuus, the ablative is used and also because the ablative and instrumental forms

---

1 Cf. Green, Handy., etc., p. 215.
2 Abbott, Joh. Gr., 1p. 90.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 99.
5 1b.
we have the genitive when the participle is regarded no longer as are the same in Latin. Indeed even in the case of the participle an adjective, but as a substantive, as τὰ ὑπάρχοντά μου (1 Cor. 13:3). Cf. Lu. 12:33; Lu. 2:27, τὸ εἴθισμένον τοῦ νόμου; and Ph. 3:8, τὸ ὑπερέχον τῆς γνώσεως. The adjective itself is so used in 1 Cor. 10:33, τὸ ἐμαυτοῦ σύμφωνον. Cf. 1 Cor. 7:35. But different is συμμόρφος τῆς εἰκόνος τοῦ υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ (Ro. 8:29). Here we have the true adjective, but the genitive is due to the principle just stated. In συνεργός, Ro. 16:21, we have the substantive also. The case with verbals in –τος may be considered genitive, but see the ablative also. Thus of οἱ ἁγαπητοὶ θεοῦ (Ro. 1:7), γεννητοὶ γυναικῶν (Lu. 7:28), ἐκλεκτοὶ θεοῦ (Ro. 8:33), κλητοὶ ᾨσοῦ (Ro. 1:6). In διδακτοὶ θεοῦ (Jo. 6:45), οὐκ εὖ διδακτοῖς ἀνθρωπίνης σοφίας λόγοις (1 Cor. 2:13) one may question if we do not have the ablative. But in εὐλογημένοι τοῦ πατρὸς (Mt. 25:34) the genitive is likely the case.

There is only one adjective in –ικός in the N. T. which has the genitive, κριτικός ἐνθυμήσεων (Heb. 4:12). Ἄξιος is very common with the genitive in the N. T., as ἄξιον τῆς μετανοίας (Mt. 3:8). But ἀνάξιος probably has abl. because of α– privative, as ἀνάξιοι ἐστε κριτηρίων ἐλαχίστων (1 Cor. 6:2). Delbruck\(^1\) confesses his inability to explain this genitive, though Blass\(^2\) considers it genitive of price.

The figure of weighing or scales seems to be involved in the word.

In 1 Cor. 9:21 (Ἔννομος Χριστοῦ) we have a very "bold use" of the genitive\(^3\) due to the substantive idea involved (νόμος). But probably in Heb. 3:12, καρδία παντρα ἀπίστίας, the genitive is dependent on καρδία, not παντρα. Ἐνοχός brings up an unusual genitive in Mt. 26:66 Ἐνοχός θανάτου, and Mk. 3:29 (correct text) Ἐνοχός ἐστιν αἰωνίου ἀμαρτήματος. Moulton\(^4\) considers this genitive "aberrant" and still more Ἐνοχός κρίσεως in Syrian class of MSS. in Mk. 3:29.

In 1 Cor. 11:27, Ἐνοχός ἐσται τοῦ σώματος, we have the usage of the pre-Syrian classes in Mk. 3:29 and not the idiom in Mt. 26:66. The usual construction appears also as in Ἐνοχός ἐσται τῇ κρίσει (Mt. 5:21 f.) and even Ἐνοχός εἰς τὴν γένναν (ib.). In the instance of κοινωνός the construction is also interesting. In 2 Cor. 1:7 we have κοινωνοὶ ἐστε τῶν παρθένατων, but it is debatable if the adjective has not here become a substantive as with κοινωνός ἐμός (2 Cor. 8:23; cf. συνεργός in same verse). Κοινωνός has also the dative, as κοινωνοὶ τῷ Σίμωνι (Lu. 5:10). See συνκοινωνός αὐτοῦ (1 Cor. 9:23) and in Ph. 1:7 two genitives, συνκοινωνοῦς μου τῆς χάριτος. But in Rev. 1:9 we have ἐν with locative. Note also μεστοὶ ὑποκρίσεως

\(^{1}\) Vergl. Synt., I, p. 254.
\(^{2}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 106.
\(^{3}\) Ib.
\(^{4}\) Cl. Rev., Apr., 1904, p. 152.
(Mt. 23:28) and πλήρης χάριτος (Jo. 1:14). The case of μέτοχος in Heb. 3:1 (κλήσεως ἑποροφίου μέτοχοι) is similar to that of κοινω-νός above, though more decidedly adjectival. Cf. μέσος ύμων (Jo. 1:26). In Jo.18:55 W. H. read ομοιος ύμιν, though κλεονX have ύμων, a construction sometimes found in ancient Greek. One may note also in 1 Pet. 5: 9, τὰ αὐτὰ τῶν παθημάτων, which is perhaps to be understood as the same "kinds" of suffering, rather than the same sufferings.

(h) THE GENITIVE WITH ADVERBS AND PREPOSITIONS. At bottom there is little difference between the adverb and the genitive and the preposition and the genitive. The preposition is an adverb that is used with a case for clearer expression. The adverb is still an adverb when used with a case and called a preposition. Some adverbs indeed are only used as prepositions, but this is in the later stages of the language. 

1 Αξίως, like the adjective αξιός, occurs with the genitive, as ἀξίως τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Ph. 1:27; cf. Ro. 16:2). The genitive is not persistent with some of the adverbs and prepositions in late Greek. It is more especially with adverbs of time that the genitive is found. Thus ἀπαξ τοῦ ἐνιαυ-τοῦ (Heb. 9:7) δις τοῦ σαββάτου (Lu. 18:12), ἐπτάκις τῆς ἡμέρας (Lu. 17:4). Gies indeed observes that it is only the genitive of place that uses prepositions. Here only specimens without discussion can be given. Thus ἄντικρος Χίου (Ac. 20:15), ἀπέναντι τοῦ τάφου (Mt. 7:61), ἀντι χάριτος (Jo. 1:16), ἀχρι καρφοῦ (Lu. 4:13), διὰ παραβολῆς (Lu. 8:4), ἐγγὺς σου (Ro. 10:8), ἐνατί τοῦ θεοῦ (Lu. 1:8), ἐναντίον τοῦ θεοῦ (Lu. 1:6), ἐνεκεν ἐμοῦ (Mt. 5:11), ἐντὸς ύμων (Lu. 17:21), ἐνώπιον κυρίου (Lu. 1:15), ἐπάνω ὄρους (Mt. 5:14), ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Rev. 6:10), ἔσω τῆς αὐλῆς (Mk. 15:16), ἐς ώς τήμων (Ac. 9:38), κατὰ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ (Mt. 26:59), κατέναντι ύμων (Mk. 11:2), κατενώπιον τῆς δέξιας (Ju. 24), κύκλῳ τοῦ θρόνου (Rev. 4:6), μέσον γενεᾶς σκολιᾶς (Ph. 2:15), μεθ ἡμῶν (Mt. 1:23), μεταξὸς σοῦ (Mt. 18:15), μέχρι τῆς σήμερον (Mt. 11:23), παραπλήσιον θανάτου (Ph. 2:27), πλησίον τοῦ χωρίου (Jo. 4:5), περὶ τοῦ φωτός (Jo. 1:8), τούτου χάριν (Eph. 3:1). Ἐμπροσθεν, ὁπισθεν πρό, πρός, ὑπέρ, etc., all have the ablative. Cf. τὸ ἔσωθεν ύμων (Lu. 11:39) where ἔσωθεν may be looked at more as a noun. Ἐν μέσῳ has almost the force of a preposition with the genitive (ὑμῶν, for instance, 1 Th. 2:7).

(1) THE GENITIVE WITH VERBS. As already remarked, Del-
bruck begins his discussion of the genitive with the verb. In Lu. 5:19, *ποιάς εἴσενέγκωσίν*, the genitive is not due to the verb and is a rather loose almost adverbial phrase.

1. **Very Common.** In Greek the genitive with verbs cuts a larger figure than in Latin. Broadus used to say that the genitive with verbs means 'this and no other,' while the accusative with verbs means 'this and no more.' Probably therefore the genitive with verbs is a variation from the accusative with verbs, the original and normal case with verbs. This point may be illustrated by *ἀκούετε αὐτῷ* (Mk. 9:7) and *ἐκουσεν τὸν ἀσπασμόν* (Lu. 1:41). Some verbs yield themselves naturally to the idea of the genitive, while others use the accusative. Others again use now one, now the other. The predicate genitive is passed by here, having been discussed under Substantives.

2. **Fading Distinction from Accusative.** But it must not be assumed that it is wholly a matter of indifference whether the accusative or the genitive is used with a verb, though the accusative in the later Greek constantly made inroads on the genitive. Even in the old Greek much freedom existed. In the modern Greek the genitive with verbs occurs only in some dialects (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 35). Cf. *μνημονεύετε τῆς γυναικὸς Λώτ* (Lu. 17:32), but *μνημονεύετε τοῦ πέντε ἀρτοῦ* (Mt. 16:9). In *πάντα μου μέμνησθε* (1 Cor. 11:2) both cases occur. This is all in accord with classical usage. So also *ἐπιλαθέσθαι τοῦ ἔργου ἡμῶν* (Heb. 6:10), but *τὰ μὲν ὀπίσω ἐπιλανθανόμενος* (Ph. 3:13); *γεύσεται μου τοῦ δείπνου* (Lu. 14:24), but *ἐγεύσατο τὸ ὕδωρ* (Jo. 2:9); *γέμουσιν ὀστέων* (Mt. 23:27), but even *γέμοντα ὀνόματα βλασφημίας* (Rev. 17:3). But it is perfectly proper to appeal to the distinction in the cases in the apparent contradiction between *ἀκούοντες μὲν τῆς φωνῆς* (Ac. 9:7) and *τὴν δὲ φωνὴν οὐκ ἤκουσαν* (22:9). The accusative (case of extent) accentuates the intellectual apprehension of the sound, while the genitive (specifying case) calls attention to the sound of the voice without accenting the sense. The word *ἀκούω* itself has two senses which fall in well with this case-distinction, one 'to hear,' the other 'to understand.' Cf. *οὐ οὐκ ἤκουσαν* (Ro. 10:14) and *μὴ οὐκ ἤκουσαν* (Ro. 10:18). And yet the genitive can be used where the sense is meant, though not stressed, as *ἐκουσα φωνῆς* (Ac. 22:7), but *ἐκουσεν φωνῆν* (Ac. 9:4; and 26:14). But see further under 3.

1 Vergl. Synt., I, p. 308. 2 Giles, Man., p. 315. 3 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., pp. 87 ff., has an extensive discussion of the gen. and acc. with *ἀκούω*, but seems to miss the point after all. They heard the sound but not the words. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 103, admits this classic distinction sometimes in the N. T.
3. *Verbs of Sensation.* One of the chief classes of verbs that may be used with the genitive is verbs of sensation. One seems compelled to make some division in the verbs used with the genitive for the sake of intelligible discussion. Yet as a matter of fact each class and each verb indeed relates itself to the root-idea of the genitive. That is the thing to keep in mind and not a mere artificial grouping of the verbs. Analogy was at work, of course, but the verbs after all were separate units and had independent development. These groupings of the grammarians are mere matters of convenience. And it is a delicate matter that varies somewhat with the writer, this use of the genitive. By sensation we refer to verbs that mean to hear, smell, taste, touch, though verbs of seeing have the accusative. The most common verb of hearing is ἀκούω, about which some remarks have already been made. It is not necessary to give an exhaustive list of the instances of ἀκούω.

A typical one is ἔκοισεν συμφωνίας καὶ χορῶν, (Lu. 15:25). The genitive is used either with things, as in this illustration, or with persons, as in αὐτοῦ ἀκούετε (Lu. 9:35). For accusative with persons see Eph. 4:21. Besides the use of the accusative with this verb, both with the classic distinction as above and without, there may also be the accusative and the ablative as in Ac. 1:4 ἢν ἀκούσατε μου. Then again the verb itself is used in the sense of hear, to understand, and even to obey (hearken). The sense of hearken is often in John's Gospel with the genitive, as οὐκ ἔκοισαν αὐτῶν τὰ πρόβατα (Jo. 10:8). Cf. Rev. 3:20, etc. The apparent double genitive in the last passage τῆς φωνῆς μου is not to be attributed to the verb, for μου is merely possessive. Cf. Ac. 22:1. Blass¹ makes careful distinction between the usages in the various N. T. writers, but that is not to be pushed too far. In 2 Cor. 6:2 (LXX, Is. 49:8) we have ἐπήκουσά σου, but ὑπακούω uses the dative (Mt. 8:27). But we have ἐπηκορόντο αὐτῶν οἱ δέομαι (Ac. 16:25) in the sense of hearken. No verb of smelling is used with the genitive in the N. T., but ἐμπνεύσων ἀπειλής καὶ φόνου (Ac. 9:1) is certainly analogous as Blass² observes, who refers to the LXX for parallels (Josh. 10:40, πᾶν ἐμπνέων ζωῆς), for both genitive and accusative. Cf. Johannessen, *Der Gebr.*, p. 36. Thus οὐ μὴ γευσηται θανάτου (Jo. 8:52), but in Heb. 6:4 f. we have the genitive and accusative right together, a matter hardly accidental.²³ γευσάμενος τῆς δωρεᾶς, γευσάμενος θεοῦ ῥήμα. But Blass⁴ considers the accusative here, as in Jo. 2:9, merely a colloquialism in harmony with the general

---

1 Or. of N. T. Gk., p. 103.  
2 Ib.  
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 66.  
tendency to retain the accusative (see 2 above). Other verbs of
tasting are κορεσθέντες τροφῆς (Ac. 27:38) and τούτως χορτάσατε ἄρτων
(Mk. 8:4). Cf. also μετελάμβανον τροφῆς (Ac. 2:46) and προσελάβωστο
τροφῆς (Ac. 27:36). Διψάω and πεινάω use only the accusative
(Matt. 5:6). The verbs of touching can be briefly disposed of.
Thus ἡγαστο τῶν ἰματίων (Mk. 5:30) and often in the Gospels. So
καὶ θηρίον θίγῃ τοῦ ὄρους (Heb. 12:20), but ψηλαφάω has only the
accusative (Ac. 17:27). Perhaps the other verbs of taking hold
of and seizing may as well be mentioned, for it is less than a step
from the idea of touch. Thus ἐνὸς ἀνθέξεται (Lu. 16:13); τὰ ἐξόμενα
τῆς σωτηρίας (Heb. 6:9); ἀντελάβετο Ἰσραήλ παιδὸς αὐτοῦ (Lu. 1:54)
and οἱ τῆς εὐεργεσίας ἀντιλαμβάνομενοι (1 Tim. 6:2); ἐπελάβετο αὐτοῦ
(Mt. 14:31), and ἐπιλαμβάνομεν τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ τυφλοῦ (Mk. 8:23),
where the part taken hold of is indicated; ἐκράτησεν τῆς χειρὸς
αὕτης (Mt. 9:25), where the part is again in genitive, but the whole
is in the accusative in κρατήσας τὸν Ἰωάνην (Mt. 14:3); πιάσας αὐ-
tὸν τῆς χειρὸς (Ac. 3:7), where the whole is in the accusative and
the part in the genitive. Blass notes that this last (πιάζω) is a
"vulgar" word. But here, as usual, the N. T. is in harmony with
the vernacular. The papyri show ἔχωμαι with the genitive as
well as ἀντιλαμβάνομαι. So ἔχομενός μου, P. Par. 51 (B.C. 160). Besides
Mk. 8:23 (above) the double genitive (whole and part) may be
seen in Lu. 20:20, ἵνα ἐπιλαβώνται αὐτοῦ λόγου (cf. also verse 26),
though here αὐτοῦ is probably dependent on λόγου.

4. Verbs of Emotion. These naturally have the genitive, such
as to desire, care for, neglect, have compassion, spare, bear with,
aim after, obtain, remember, forget, enjoy, etc. Ἐπιθυμέω has
the genitive in Ac. 20:33, ἀργυρίου ἡ χρυσίου ἡ ἱματισμοῦ
οὐδενός but the accusative probably in Mt. 5:28 (text uncertain, but
LXX has accusative, Ex. 20:17). Ὀρέγομαι also has the genitive,
as in Heb. 11:16, κρείττονος ὀρέγουνται. Cf. 1 Tim. 3:1, where both
ὁρέγομαι and ἐπιθυμεῖ are used with the genitive. Cf. also ὁμοιό-
μενοί ὑμῶν (1 Th. 2:8). The verbs of concern are fairly numerous
and uniform. Thus ἀνεχόμενοι ἀλλήλων (Col. 3:13) in the N. T.
as in the older Greek. So μὴ ἀμέλει τοῦ ἐν σοὶ χαρίσματος (1 Tim.
4:14), μὴ ὀλιγώρῃ παιδείας κυρίου (Heb. 12:5). But these three
verbs may have the ablative. Ἀνέχομαι here is 'hold oneself back
from.' Like the earlier Greek also is ἐπεμελήθη αὐτοῦ (Lu. 10:34)
and μὴ τῶν βωμῶν μέλει τῷ θεῷ (1 Cor. 9:9). Blass considers οὐδέν
τούτων τῷ Γαλλίωνι ἐμέλειν (Ac. 18:17) the personal construction,

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 101. 0-6
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 104.
as often in the classical Greek. But already in the Attic inscrip-
tions (Meisterhans, p. 211) we have ἐπιμελέομαι with the dative. 
So, too, περί appears with the genitive in Jo. 10:13, etc. Consider 
further τῶν ἰδίων καὶ μᾶλλστα ὀικείων οὐ προνοεῖ (1 Tim. 5:8) and ἵνα 
φροντίζωσιν καλῶν ἔργων (Tit. 3:8). In Mt. 6:34 we have μερι-
μήσει αὐτῆς, though some MSS. read τα ἐαυτῆς. Once again take 
τοῦ ἱδίου οὐκ ἐφείσατο (Ro. 8:32). These all are in regular order. 
In Mt. 18:27 τοῦ δοῦλου is more likely dependent on ὁ κύριος rather 
than on σπλαγχνισθεῖς. Verbs of obtaining are illustrated by 
ἐλαχε τοῦ θυμιάσαι (Lu. 1:9), not mere "appearance,"1 though the 
accusative is elsewhere found in the N. T. as in Ac. 1:17 (cf. 
classic frequency of the accusative). On the other hand τυγχάνω 
always has the genitive in the N. T., as τοῦ αἰῶνος ἐκείνου τυχεῖν (Lu. 
20:35). But with ἐπιτυγχάνω we have ἐπέτυχον ἑπαγγελίων (Heb. 
11:33) and τούτῳ οὐκ ἐπέτυχεν (Ro. 11:7). Moulton (Cl. Rev., 
p. 437, Dec., 1901) notes genitive and accusative with ἑπιτυχόντες— 
tῆς Ῥωμαίων πολιτείας καὶ ἐπιγαμίαν, B.U. 113 (ii/A.D.). In general 
the papyri confirm the N. T. use of these verbs. Verbs of remem-
bering and forgetting call for little remark. Thus μνησθήναι διαθήκης 
(Lu. 1:72), μνημονεύετε τοῦ λόγου (Jo. 15:20). Μιμήσκομαι always 
haves the genitive and μνημονεύω usually. But ἀναμιμήσκω (act., 
mid. and pass.) always has the accusative in the N. T. Cf. 
ἀνεμιμήσθη τῷ ῥήμα (Mk. 14:72), whereas ancient Greek usually had 
the genitive. With ὑπομιμήσκω the usage is divided again, as the 
accusative is alone used in the active (Jo. 14:26), but the genitive 
in the passive deponent, as ὑπεμιμήσθη τοῦ ῥήματος (Lu. 22:61; 
cf. Mk. 14:72 above). Ἑπιλαυθάνομαι again has usually the gen-
itive, as φιλοξενίας μὴ ἐπιλαυθάνεσθε (Heb. 13:2), but the accusative 
vertex (Ph. 3:13) and Κ in Heb. 13:2 according to classic idiom. 
Cf. Oxy. P. IV, 744, 11 and 12 (i/A.9.). We once also have ἐκλέξησθε 
tῆς παρακλήσεως Heb. 12:5). Of verbs of enjoying we have only 
ἐγὼ σου ὑνάσμη (Phil. 20). Ἀπολαύω does not occur in the N. T., 
and neither ἀγαλλιάω, nor χαίρω is used with the genitive, but only 
absolutely, with the instrumental, or with prepositions. Αἰσθάνομαι 
appears only once (Lu. 9:45) and with accusative. 
5. Verbs of Sharing, Partaking and Filling. Indeed, verbs of 
sharing can be looked at as taking the partitive genitive. Thus 
with μετέχειν we have τραπέζης. (1 Cor. 10:21), ἐκ τοῦ ἐνὸς ἀρτου 
(verse 17; clearly ablative) and χάριτι (verse 30, associative in-
strumental by analogy of συνκοινωνεῖν. Cf. κεκουρώνηκεν αἴματος καὶ 
σαρκός (Heb. 2:14), though elsewhere in the N. T. the associative

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 102.
instrumental occurs with persons. \textit{Metaδίδωμι} has only the accusative and instrumental. As to \textit{μεταλαμβάνω} and \textit{προσλαμβάνω} it is more doubtful if it is not ablative rather than genitive.

Cf. ix, (f), 7, for discussion. The partitive idea is divided between the genitive and the ablative.\footnote{Cf. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 340.} In the N. T. prepositions are chiefly used and with the ablative. Radermacher (\textit{N. T. Gr.}, p. 102) finds in the partitive idea the explanation of the local and temporal use of the genitive, but not rightly. The true genitive is found with verbs of filling like \textit{ἐπλήσθη} ἡ πόλις τῆς συμχύσεως (Ac. 19:29), \textit{πεπληρώκατε} τὴν Ἰερουσαλὴμ τῆς διδαχῆς ὑμῶν (Ac. 5:28), γεμίσατε τὰς ὕδριας ὑδατος (Jo. 2:7), περισσεύουνται ἀρτων (Lu. 15:17), ἐνέπλησαν ἀγαθῶν (Lu. 1:53). In Latin words of filling (\textit{plenus}, etc.) use the ablative or instrumental, as the Greek has the ablative with words of lacking (ὑπερεύθυνα τῆς δόξης (Ro. 3:23). By analogy therefore we find ἐκ and the ablative with \textit{πληρῶθη} ἐκ τῆς ὀσμῆς (Jo. 12:3) and γεμίζω, as ἐγέμισεν αὐτῶν ἐκ τοῦ πυρὸς (Rev. 8:5). For the instrumental with the passive see Ro. 1:29, etc. Indeed the accusative is seen in Ph. 1:11 and Rev. 17:3 and some MSS. in Ac. 2:28.

6. \textit{Verbs of Ruling}. These probably have the true genitive, though verbs of exceding use the ablative. Thus in Mk. 10:42 we have three such verbs in one sentence, οἱ δοκούντες ἀρχειν τῶν ἐθνῶν κατακυριεύοντι αὐτῶν καὶ οἱ μεγάλοι αὐτῶν κατεξουσιάζουσιν αὐτῶν. Other examples are ἀνθυπατεύοντος according to some MSS. in Ac. 18:12, αὐθεντεῖν ἀνδρός (1 Tim. 2:12), βασιλεύει τῆς Ἰουδαίας (Mt. 2:22 ἘΒ; elsewhere ἐπί), ἡγεμονεύοντος τῆς Συρίας (Lu. 2:2), κυριεύομεν ὑμῶν τῆς πίστεως (2 Cor. 1:24), καταδυναστεύουσιν ὑμῶν (Jas. 2:6), τετρααρχούντος τῆς Ἰτούραίας (Lu. 3:1). These verbs all have a distinct substantive-affinity like 'be ruler of,' etc. See further Lu. 22:25 for κυριεύω and ἐξουσιάζω, Mt. 16:18 for κατισχύω.

7. \textit{Verbs of Buying, Selling, Being Worthy of}. It is not perfectly clear what the origin of this usage is. The use of ἐκ δημαρίου with συμφωννήσας (Mt. 20:2) may be noted, but in verse 13 δημαρίου συνεφώνησας. Cf. also ἡγοράσαν ἐξ αὐτῶν (Mt. 27:7 with πραθύνω πολλοῦ (Mt. 26:9). Ἀγοράζω is used also with ἐν (Rev. 5:9). So again one may note ἐκτίσατο χωρίου ἐκ μισθοῦ τῆς ἀδικίας (Ac. 1:18. Cf. Lu. 16:9, ἐκ τοῦ μαμωνᾶ) with μισθοῦ ἐξευθύνθησαν(Ju. 11). Cf. διά with περιποιέομαι (Ac. 20:28). These, examples show that it was easy to go from the genitive to and the ablative. Consider also ὄνοματο τιμῆς ἀργυρίου (Ac. 7:16), ἀσσαρίου πωλεῖται (Mt. 10:29), τοσούτου ἄπεδοσθε (Ac. 5:8), ἡγο-
In Mk. 14:5, πραθήκαι ἐπάνω δηναρίων τριακοσίων, the a verb ἐπάνω has no effect on the case as is shown by ὕφθη ἐπάνω πεντακοσίων ἀδελφοίς (1 Cor. 15:6). Blass\(^1\) compares the use of ἐκ in the Attic inscriptions with πραθήκαι. And Monro (Homeric Grammar, p. 109) considers this the ablative, which is certainly possible. But on the other hand the undoubted genitive with ἀξίων suggests the idea of exchange or barter as the true origin and thus a real genitive. Ἀλλάσσω is not so used itself, but buying and selling easily fall in with the notion of worth. Thus ἵνα ἔμας ἄξιότης τῆς κλήσεως (2 Th. 1:11), καταξιώθηναι τῆς βασιλείας (2 Th. 1:5). Cf. also 1 Tim. 5:17; Heb. 3:3; 10:29. On the whole one is inclined to this explanation of the usage and to treat it as a true genitive. Cf. Rev. 6:6 for the genitive of price without a verb. But the use of ἀπό with verbs of buying and selling goes back in single instances to the Attic time (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 91). So στέφανον διδόντες ἀπὸ πεντήκοντα χρυσῶν, Inscr. of Magn., 16, 29.

8. Verbs of Accusing and Condemning. Blass\(^2\) observes that the old Greek usage of the genitive of the thing has well-nigh vanished in the N. T. We do have ἐγκαλεῖσθαι στέσσεσθαι (Ac. 19:40), but περί, with the genitive is the usual construction in the N. T. both with ἐγκαλέω (Ac. 23:29), κρίνω (Ac. 23:6), and even κατηγορέω (Ac. 24:13). However, in the case of κατηγόρεω we do find ὃν in Lu. 23:14 and Ac. 25:11, but in each instance the genitive seems to be due to attraction to the case of the suppressed antecedent τούτων. Ac. 24:13 for περί. Still the point is not absolutely certain and ὧν could be due to κατηγορέω. At any rate κατηγορέω is also used with the genitive of the person as ἵνα κατηγορήσωσιν αὐτοῦ (Mt. 12:10). Cf. also Mk. 15:3 where we have genitive and accusative, κατηγόρουν αὐτοῦ πολλά. Moulton (Prol., p. 235) notes that D often has accusative with κατηγορέω as with ἀκούω, κρατέω.

9. Genitive Due to Prepositions in Composition. Some verbs have the genitive because of the preposition in composition which gives a distinct change in idea to the verb. The preposition is often repeated with the noun. As a matter of fact the only\(^3\) preposition that seems to figure thus in the N. T. is κατά which is used with a number of verbs with the genitive.\(^4\) Not all the κατά com-

---

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 105. He cites Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 173.  
\(^2\) Ibf., p. 104.  
\(^3\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 106.  
\(^4\) Jann. (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 341) comments on the blending of meaning between prep. and verb in the later Gk.
pounds use the genitive. Cf. the accusative case and note as illustrations of the accusative in the N. T. καταγωνιζομαι, καταβραβευω, καταδικαζω, κατακρινω, κατασοφιζομαι. It may be that some of the verbs already instanced as using the genitive may owe it to κατα in composition, like κατηγορεω (Mt. 12:10). But the point seems to be reasonably plain as to κατεγελων αυτου (Mt. 9:24), ἔαν καταγινωσκῃ ήμῶν ή καρδία (1 Jo. 3:20, and note verse 21), though ήμων might go with καρδία, κατακαυχάται ἔλεος κρίσεως (Jas. 2:13), καταλαλείπει ἀλλήλων (Jas. 4:11), σου καταμαρτυροῦσιν (Mt. 27:13), κατενάρκησα ήμων (2 Cor. 12:13), καταστηνιάσωσιν του Χριστου (1 Tim. 5:11), αἰσχρον καταφρονήσας (Heb. 12:2), κατέχεεν αυτου τῆς κεφαλῆς (Mt. 14:3); but in Mt. 26:7 the text of W. H. has ἐπὶ with genitive as some MSS. in Mk.

10. Attraction of the Relative. A word only is needed about the attraction of the relative, a matter treated properly in the chapter on Pronouns, which see. Here it may only be noted that the genitive (as of other oblique cases) of the relative sometimes appears with a verb when the case is due, not to the verb, but to the antecedent. Thus we note περὶ πάντων ὅν ἐποίησε (Lu. 3:19), an idiom common in Luke, but rare elsewhere, as ἀστέρων οὗς ἐΐδες (Rev. 1:20).

(j) THE GENITIVE OF THE INFINITIVE. This is more properly an instance of the genitive of substantives as it is the substantival aspect of the infinitive that is in the case. The full discussion of the matter belongs to the chapter on Verbal Nouns. Here it may simply be remarked that the infinitive with του is not unknown to ancient Greek, though nothing like so common as in the LXX as the translation of the Hebrew infinitive construct. But the Hebrew infinitive is not an exact analogy as it does not have the article. But Thucydides had already shown a fondness for this idiom which is thoroughly Greek. As an example from the LXX take του ἐξελέσθαι (Dan. 6:14). For the N. T. note ἐξῆλθεν ὁ σπείρων του σπείρειν (Mt. 13:3). The substantival nature of this infinitive with του is well shown in καταράς του ἀρξασθαι (1 Pet. 4:17). But in general του with the infinitive has as wide an extension of meaning in the vernacular κοινή as the genitive absolute. The details come later.

(k) THE GENITIVE ABSOLUTE. It may indeed be ablative absolute as Farrar holds, following the analogy of the Latin. But, as Giles observes, the Latin absolute is very likely instru-

---

1 C. and S., Sel. from the LXX, p. 59.  
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 216.  
3 Gk. Synt., p. 76.  
4 Man., etc., p. 339 f.
mental or locative. The various languages differ greatly, however, in the use of the absolute cases, nearly all having a turn in one language or another. Cf. dative in Anglo-Saxon. Since the Sanskrit uses genitive as well as instrumental and locative (usual construction), Giles considers the Greek genitive absolute a true genitive. In this he is perhaps correct. But Brugmann (Griech. Gr., p. 523) discusses the genitive absolute separately from both genitive and ablative. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p.437. Mullach\(^1\) observes that the genitive absolute is a mark of the higher style and was not much used in the vernacular. Jebb\(^2\) remarks that in the modern Greek the genitive absolute is more commonly paraphrased in harmony with the general disuse of the participle. However, in the vernacular κοινή "the rapid extension of the genitive absolute is very obvious feature,"\(^3\) and the N. T. is in line with the papyri on this point also as in most other matters of grammar. Moulton observes further that "in the papyri it may often be seen forming a string of statements, without a finite verb for several lines," which is rather more than can be said of the N. T. It naturally occurs in the N. T. chiefly in the historical books. Abbott\(^4\) has felt that Mark uses the genitive absolute "somewhat monotonously to introduce the circumstances of a new narrative," and he finds it common in Matthew in temporal clauses. John, he observes, has the construction nowhere in recording Christ's words, though he elsewhere\(^5\) "employs it with more elasticity of meaning than is found in the Triple Tradition." The LXX show many examples of the genitive absolute and with abundant freedom also.\(^6\) The normal usage in the older Greek is to have a genitive absolute when a participle occurs with a noun that is disconnected from the rest of the sentence as in ἀναχωρησάντων αὐτῶν (Mt. 2:13). Cf. 2 Cor. 2:12. But the older Greek did not always conform to this norm, and variations appear also in the N. T. Thus sometimes the participle is found alone as in ἐλθόντων (Mt. 17:14) and εἰπόντος (17:26), a very frequent idiom in the papyri.\(^7\) Cf. ἀναγνωσθέων B.U. 925 (iii/A.D.?), δηλωθέων B.U. 970 (ii/A.D.). The papyri also show ἔξοντος instead of the old ἔξον.\(^8\) Cf. οὐκ ἔξοντος P.O. 275 (A.D. 66). Then again the genitive absolute occurs when as a matter of fact the noun or pronoun is not absolute and the participle might have merely

---

\(^1\) Gr., p. 357.  
\(^2\) V. and D., Handb., p. 334.  
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol. p. 74.  
\(^4\) Joh. Gr., p. 83.  
\(^5\) Ib., p. 84.  
\(^6\) C. and S., p. 58; Thack., p. 24.  
\(^7\) Moulton, Prol., p. 74.  
\(^8\) Ib.
agreed in case with the word in question. The simplest example is the repetition of the pronoun in the same case as ἐπίθεμεν τοῖς αὐτοῖς ἐν ἐκλεισεν αὐτοῦ (Mk. 9:28). But more noticeable is an example like μὴ ἔχειν εἰς εἰς οἱ ἐμοὶ οἱ μαθηταί αὐτοῦ (Mt. 18:25), or ταύτα δὲ αὐτοῦ ἐνθυμηθεῖνας ἐφάνη αὐτῷ (Mt. 1:20), a usage more common apparently in the N. T. than in the papyri. 

But note μου κινδυνεύσαντος εἰς θαλάσσαν ἔσωσε, B. U. 423 (ii/A.D.), where με is implied with ἐσώσε. One even notes the genitive absolute when the nominative is present as in μην θεοῦς τῆς μητρός αὐτοῦ Μαρίας — ἔφρεθ (Mt. 1:18). Moulton notes "a violent use" of the genitive absolute in Heb. 8: 9 from the LXX, where we have ἐν ἡμέρα ἐπιλαβομένου μου. Here the participle is treated almost like the infinitive (as a substantive). Moulton regards it as due to the original Hebrew, and Westcott (in loco) cites ἐν ἡμέρᾳ ἐντειλαμένου σου αὐτῶ (Baruch 2:28). See further under Participles.

IX. The Ablative ("Ablatival Genitive") Case (ἡ ἀφαιρετικὴ πτῶσις). The treatment of this case will be briefer, for it never had the, manifold development of the Greek genitive. In the original speech the genitive and ablative had no distinctive endings save in the o stems in the singular.2 See chapter VII, (a), for discussion of form.

(a) THE NAME. But the name ablativus is credited to Julius Caesar.3 Besides ἀφαιρετικὴ it is also called πατρική. The name is quite appropriate.

(b) THE MEANING. The ablative is then the 'whence' case, the ease of origin, source, separation or departure. Some of the grammars use the expression " ablatival genitive." That implies that the case is after all a kind of genitive. That is only true as to form, not as to sense, and causes some confusion. In Greek the ablative is not a live case in form, but in sense it is.

(C) RARE WITH SUBSTANTIVES. It is possible (though not probably correct) to regard διακρίσιμον τοῦ Θεοῦ (Ro. 1:17) as ablative, Θεοῦ being the source of the righteousness. More likely are the following examples: τὴν ἐκβάσαι τῆς ἀναστροφῆς (Heb. 13:7), διάστολή Ἰουδαίου τε καὶ Ἑλλήνως (Ro. 10:12), διάκρισις καλοῦ καὶ κακοῦ (Heb. 5:14). See Monro, Homeric Grammar, p. 146. In 2 Pet. 1: 20 we have a clear case of the ablative in the predicate after the copula γίνεται. Here ἐπιλόγισθαι (‘disclosure’) is in the ablative. Cf. also τοῦ Θεοῦ in 2 Cor. 4:7. One may note also ἐγένετο γνώμης (Ac. 20:

1 Prol., p. 74. 
3) as probably parallel. In Heb. 12:11 χαρᾶς and λύπης may be considered either true genitives or ablatives. Doubtful also are ὑποστολής and πίστεως in Heb. 10:39. But we have a clear ablative in Ac. 20:37 ἵκας δὲ κλαυθμὸς ἐγένετο πάντων. Moulton¹ notes the obvious fact that ἀπό and ἐκ (with abl.) are freely used for the old "partitive enitive." Delbruck² thinks the genitive of material originally abl. Cf. viii, (f), 8, for the true genitives in the partitive sense. This partitive gen. may be illustrated by ἐν τούτων (Mt. 6:29) which is to be compared with ἐν ἔξι αὐτῶν (Mt. 10:29).

In Jo. 3:25 the use of ἐκ makes clear the ablative, ἐγένετο ζήτησις ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν. Blass³ rather needlessly explains this usage by appeal to the Hebrew ḫ.³. Note also πᾶς ἐξ ἡμῶν (Lu. 14:33). The matter may be further illustrated by τίς αὐτῶν (Lu. 7:42) and τίς ἐξ ἡμῶν (Mt 6:27). Indeed with τίς, as Blass⁴ observes, the N. T. nearly always uses ἐξ in such examples. He finds the opposite true of τίς save in John. Thus τινὲς τῶν γραμματέων (Mt. 12:38), but τινὲς ἐξ αὐτῶν (Lu. 11:15. Cf. Jo. 6:64). But ἀπό is also found with τίς (Mt. 27:21). One may note also τίς ἐν ἡμῖν (Jas. 5:13). A classical but curious use of this idiom, like the partitive genitive (already noted), is as the subject or object. The explanation lies, of course, in the ellipsis. Thus συνῆξαν καὶ τῶν μαθητῶν, (Ac. 21:16) may be compared with ἐπαν ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν (Jo. 16:17), ἐκ τοῦ ὀχλοῦ συνεβιβάσαν (Ac. 19:33). Cf. Rev. 11:9. Take Mt. 23:34 as an example of the use as object, ἐξ αὐτῶν ἀποκτενεῖτε, ἐξ αὐτῶν μαστιγώσετε. Cf. especially ἐκ τῶν τέκνων σου περιπατοῦντας (2 Jo. 4). In Ac. 15:2 we have the full expression τινὰς ἄλλους ἐξ αὐτῶν. Brugmann (Griech. Gr., p. 397) notes the syncretism between the ablative and the genitive with the superlative. See a like confusion in the predicate (Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 148). W. Havers (Indog. Forsch., XXXI, Bd. 1, Heft 3, 1912) "on the splitting of the genitive in Greek" suggests that the partitive genitive was originally independent and adverbial.

(d) THE ABLATIVE WITH ADJECTIVES. The number is not large (cf. the Genitive with Adjectives). In Plato we have, for instance, ἐπιστήμης κενός, ἐλευθερος αἰδώς, but see Kuhnher-Gerth⁵ for a full list in the ancient writers. Thus in the N. T. we find with proposition καθαρός ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος (Ac. 20:26), a clear ablative. Cf. also ἐλευθέρα ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου (Ro. 7:3) and ἐλευθερος ἐκ πάντων (1

Cor. 9:19). But the ablative occurs without prepositions. So
εἴποι τῶν διαθήκων, (Eph. 2:12). It is probably best to regard the
verbal adjectives as having the ablative in these examples: ἀγαπητοὶ
θεοῦ (Ro. 1:7), γευσητοὶ γυναῖκῶν (Mt. 11:11), διδακτοὶ θεοῦ (Jo.
16:45), διδακτοὶ πνεύματος (1 Cor. 2:13), κλητοὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ (Ro.
1:6). One may also suggest here εὐλογημένοι τοῦ πατρὸς (Mt.
25:34), but on the whole it is to be regarded as a true genitive.
The ablative with adjectives with a—privative have "plentiful
Illustrations from papyri."¹ For instance; ἀκίνδυνος παυτὸς κινδύνου
Tb. P. 105 (iii/B.C.), τῆς εἰς ἀπαντας ἑυεργεσίας—ἀβοήθητος B.U. 970
(ii/A.D.). In Mt. 27:24 we find ἀθωός εἰμι ἀπὸ τοῦ αἵματος with
ἀπό. Cf. also ἄνοιον ἀπὸ τοῦ κόσμου (Jas. 1:27). Thus we easily
See the ablative in ἀκαταπάστους ἀμαρτίας (2 Pet. 2:14), ἀνάξιος κρί-
τηριών (1 Cor. 6:2), ἄνομας θεοῦ (1 Cor. 9:21), ἄπειρος λόγου (Heb.
5:13), ἀπείραστος κακῶν (Jas. 1:13).
Moreover, the ablative after the comparative is very common
the N. T., apparently more so than in the papyri. Let a few
examples suffice: ἵσχυρότερός μου (Mt. 3:11), μικρότερον ὅν πάτων
τῶν σπερμάτων (Mk. 4:31), πλείονας τῶν πρῶτων (Mt. 21:36),
πλέον τῆς τροφῆς (Lu. 12:23), πονηρότερα ἑαυτοῦ (Mt. 12:45),
μείζων τοῦ κυρίου (Jo. 13:16). Cf. Jo. 21:15; 1 Cor. 10:22;
1 Tim. 5:8. Here the ablative idea of difference or distinction
is very plain. The Latin also uses the ablative in this sense.
Cf. χήρα μὴ ἔλαττον ἔτος ἔζηκοντα (1 Tim. 5:9). In Jo. 5:36,
μαρτυρίαν μείζων τοῦ Ἰωάνου, it is not clear whether it is the witness
borne by John or to him. In Ac. 4:19 θεοῦ after ἡ is genitive,
not ablative, due to ἀκούειν. The superlative may likewise have
tie ablative as in πρῶτος μου (Jo. 1:15), a usage found in the
papyri.² Abbott³ rather needlessly endeavours to explain πρῶτος
as a substantive meaning ‘chief,’ like τῷ πρῶτῳ τῆς νήσου (Ac. 28:
7). Note also ποιὰ ἐστὶν ἐνυτολὴ πρώτῃ πάντων (Mk. 12:28) where
πάντων is neuter plural (a possible partitive genitive). Cf. ἔσχατον
πάντων (1 Cor. 15:8). The positive περισσότερος may even have the
ablative, as τὸ περισσότερον τούτων, (Mt. 5:37). Cf. πλείον with the
verb περισσέων and the ablative πλείον τῶν –Φαρισαίων (Mt. 5:
20). In Eph. 3:8, ἔμοι τῷ ἐλαχιστοτέρῳ πάντων ἀγίῳν the com-
parative and the superlative are combined.
(e) THE ABLATIVE WITH PREPOSITIONS. It IS very common
in the N. T. Thus ἄνευ λόγου (1 Pet. 3:1), ἀπέναντι πάντων (Ac.

¹ Moulton, Prol., pp. 74, 235; Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 152 f.
³ Joh. Gr., p. 90.
THE CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ) 517

3:16), ἀπὸ τῆς ὄρας (Mt. 9:22), ἀπερ ὅχλου (Lu. 22:6), ἐκ τοῦ ὄσιατος (Mk. 11:10), ἐκτός αὐτοῦ (Mt. 23:26; cf. ἑντός in same verse), ἐμπροσθεν πάντων (Mt. 26:70), ἐπέκεινα Βαβυλώνου (Ac. 7:43), ἐξω τῆς οἰκίας (Mt. 10:14); ἐξωθεν τῆς πόλεως (Rev. 14:20), ὅπισθεν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ (Lu. 23:26), ὅπισώ μου (Mt. 4:19), possibly ὅψε σαββάτων (Mt. 28:1), παρῷ αὐτῶν (Mt. 2:4), παρεκτός λόγου πορινίας (Mt. 5:32), πέραν τοῦ Ἰορδάνου (Mk. 19:1), πλῆν τοῦ πλοίου (Ac. 27:22), πρὸ τοῦ πάσχα (Jo. 11:55), πρὸς τῆς ὑμετέρας σωτηρίας (Ac. 27:34), ὑπὲρ πάντων, (2 Cor. 5:15, true genitive according to some), ὑπεράνω αὐτῆς (Heb. 9:5), ὑπερέκεινα ὑμῶν (2 Cor. 10:16) ὑπερεκπερίσσων ὦν (Eph. 3:20), ὑπὸ κυρίου (Mt. 1:22), ὑποκάτω τῶν ποδῶν (Mk. 6:11), χωρίς παραβολῆς (Mt. 13:34). In the case of ὅψε σαββάτων (Mt. 28:1) ὅψε means 'late from' (Moulton, Prol., p. 72). Cf. ὅψε τῆς ὄρας, Par. P. 35, 37 (ii/B.C.), ὅψιτερον τῆς ὄρας Tb. P. 230 (ii/B.C.) and ὅψε τοῦτων in Philostratus (Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 312). Cf. Blass-Debrunner, p. 101, for still other examples in late Greek. See also μετ’ ὅλιγον τοῦτων in Xen., Hellen., I, 1, 2.

The list of such adverbs was growing constantly. This is a considerable list, but the ablative idea is patent in all with the notion of separation. An interesting example of the ablative is τὴν ἀπὸ σοῦ ἐπαγγελιάν (Ac. 23:21). In ὑπὲρ, πρὸ, πρὸς it is the comparative idea that is involved and that implies separation. Hence it seems likely that ὑπὸ is to be construed also with the ablative rather than the genitive, though this point is debatable. "In both Greek and Latin the ablative expresses the agent as the source of the action, almost invariably with prepositions" (Buckland Green, Notes on Greek and Latin Syntax, p. 32). There is some truth here. For the ablative with prepositions in Cypriotic see Meister, Bd. II, p. 295. See chapter on Prepositions. A number of adverbs are themselves in the ablative case, like καλῶς, οὔτως (all adverbs in --ως), ἄνω, etc.

(f) THE ABLATIVE WITH VERBS. The ablative is not used so frequently with verbs as the accusative, genitive or dative, and yet it is by no means uncommon. Of course, wherever ἀπὸ (cf. Ac. 5:2), ἐκ (cf. Mk. 1:10) and παρὰ (Mt. 2:4) are used with the ablative after a verb, these examples1 are not considered, but they throw light on the use of the same case without the preposition. Ἀπὸ and ἐκ have only the ablative. The ablative is so common with compound verbs like ἀφίστημι, ἀποστέρω, etc., that no effort is made to separate the simple from the compound verbs. There

1 Indeed, as Winer (W.-Th., p. 197) remarks, the prep. is most frequently employed.
are examples where the ablative seems to be due purely to the preposition, as τοις χάριτος ἐξεπέσατε (Gal. 5:4); cf. same word in 2 Pet. 3:17). But in many other instances the ablative idea in the verb is clue to the effect of the preposition.

1. Verbs of Departure and Removal. This is the simplest ablative with verbs. Take, for instance, οὐκ ἀφιέστατο τοῦ ἱεροῦ (Lu. 2:37) where the ablative idea is perfectly plain. So also ἀποστῆσον τινες τῆς πίστεως (1 Tim. 4:1). The predicate ablative of source in 2 Pet. 1:20 (ἐπιλύσεως) was noticed under the discussion of substantives. As a rule ἀπό, ἐκ or παρά will be found with the mere idea of departure. So χωρίζω ἀπό (1 Cor. 7:10). In Lu. 7:6 ἀπέχω has ἀπό, but KD have merely the ablative.

Naturally verbs meaning to free from, to separate, to deprive of, to hinder from, etc., use the ablative. Ἐλευθερών always has ἀπό (Ro. 6:18), as καθαρίζω ἀπό (1 Jo. 1:7), κώπω ἀπό (Lu. 13:16), λούω ἀπό (Ac. 16:33), λυτρώ ἀπό (Tit. 2:14), ρύμοι ἀπό (Mt. 6:13), σώζω ἀπό (Ro. 5:9) and ἐκ (Ro. 7:24). Cf. also μεθίστημι ἐκ in Lu. 6:4. But we have the ablative alone in ἀπελλυτριμένοι τῆς ζωῆς (Eph. 4:18), ἀπεστηρίμενων τῆς ἀληθείας (1 Tim. 6:5), ἀπολέυσαι τῆς ἀσθενείας σου (Lu. 13:12), καθιέρωσαι τῆς μεγαλειότητος αὐτῆς (Ac. 19:27),1 ἐκρατοῦντο τοῦ μη ἐπιγνώναι (Lu. 24:16), ἐκώλυσεν αὐτοὺς τοῦ βουλήματος (Ac. 27:43). Cf. Lu. 10:42, αὐτῆς. This use of the mere ablative was not unknown to good prose in the ancient Greek. Moulton2 finds it also in the papyri. Thus τοῦτων ἀφέλε Λ.Πb. (ii/B.C.), ἀφελέσθαι ὡς ἔδωκαν Ο.Ρ. 237 (ii /A.D.). One may note here again ἐκπίπτω with the ablative in Gal. 5:4 and 2 Pet. 3:17. Cf. κωλύω ἀπό (Lu. 6:29).

2. Verbs of Ceasing, Abstaining. So one may interpret οὐ βραδύνει κύριος τῆς ἐπαγγελίας (2 Pet. 3:9), the marginal reading in W. H. (1 Pet. 4:1) πέπαινα ἄμαρτιας, and ἀπέχεσθαι εἰδωλοθύτων (Ac. 15:28 cf. also 15:20; 1 Tim. 4:3; 1 Pet. 2:11), though ἀπό also is used with ἀπέχομαι (1 Th. 4:3; 5:22). One can only repeat that these divisions are purely arbitrary and merely for convenience. For ἐκ with ἄναπαύομαι, ἀπό with καταπαύω see Rev. 14:13; Heb. 4:4, 10.

3. Verbs of Missing, Lacking, Despairing. Thus we note ὡς τίνες ἀστοχήσαντες (1 Tim. 1:6), λείπεται σοφίας (Jas. 1:5), ὑστεροῦνται τῆς δόξης (Ro. 3:23), ὡς χάζει (Lu. 11:8), προσδεόμενός τινος (Ac. 17:25), ἐξαπαρθήκην ἡμᾶς καὶ τοῦ ζῆν (2 Cor. 1:8). Cf. τῶν ἀναγκαίων ὑστερεῖν Λ.Πb. (ii/B.C.), τῶν δεόντων ἐγχιστέαν (ib.). Moulton Cl. Rev., p. 437, Dec., 1901.

1 An "impossible". reading to Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 106.
4. **Verbs of Differing, Excelling.** Here the comparative idea is dominant. We (observe πολλῶν στροφών διαφέρετε ὑμεῖς (Mt. 10:31), τήν ὑπερβάλλουσαν τῆς γνώσεως ἀγάπην (Eph. 3:19), ὑπερέχοντας ἑαυτῶν (Ph. 2:3), ὑστερηκέναι τῶν ὑπερλικάν ἀποστόλων (2 Cor. 11:5; cf. use of ὑστερέω in sense of lack above. Here the comparative idea of ὑστέρος is uppermost.

5. **Verbs of Asking and Hearing.** These may also use the ablative. This is the usual construction with δέομαι, especially in Luke, as δέομαι σου (Lu. 8:28). The person is in the ablative, but the thing will be in the accusative, as δέομαι δὲ τὸ μὴ παρὼν θαρρήσαι (2 Cor. 10:2). So also note ἣν ἡκούσατε μου (Ac. 1:4), but both ἀπό (Lu. 22:71) and παρά (Jo. 1:40), and ἐκ (2 Cor. 12:6) occur.

6. **Verbs with the Partitive Idea.** Here a sharp difference exists between the accusative which presents the whole and the genitive or the ablative which accents a part. Thus in Rev. 2:17 we have δῶσω αὐτῷ τοῦ μάννα where the point lies in the idea of "some" of the manna, but B reads τὸ and ἐκ τοῦ. In the same verse note the accusative δῶσω αὐτῷ ψήφου λευκὴν. When the whole is expressed in the N. T. the accusative is used. Thus φαγεῖν εἶδωλόθητα (Rev. 2:14), but ἐσθιεῖ από τῶν ψιχίων (Mt. 15:27) and ἐκ τοῦ ἄρτου ἔσθιέτω (1 Co 11:28). Thus also πίνων οἶνου (Lu. 7:33), but πίετε ἐκ αὐτοῦ (Mt. 26:27), δς ἀν πίη ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος (Jo. 4:14). Cf. also ἐνέγκατε ἀπό τῶν ὑψαρίων (Jo. 21:10). Phrynichus says: ἐπιον οἶνον Ἄττικοι, οἶνον Ἕλληνες—ἐφαγον κρέας Ἄττικοι, κρέας Ἕλληνες. Cf. ἀπό τοῦ καρποῦ δώσουσιν (Lu. 20:10), ἵνα λάβῃ ἀπό τῶν καρπῶν (Mk. 12:2). Cf. also 1 Jo. 4:13. Cf. Mt. 28:1; Ac. 21:16.

See Moulton, *Introduction to the Study of N. T. Gk.*, p. 72, where the "partitive gen." is shown to be often ablative in idea. In modern Greek ἀπό is the regular construction for the partitive sense, as δῶσε μου ἀπό τοῦτο, 'give me some of that' (Moulton, Prol., p. 245). Prepositions ἀπό and ἐκ are thus uniformly used in the N. T. with (this construction of the part (clearly ablative therefore) save in Rev. 2:17 above and in προσελάβοντο τροφῆς (Ac. 27:36). In this last example the MSS. vary a good deal. Μεταλαμβάνω (see (i), 3) may be abl. or gen. in μεταλαμβανον τροφῆς (Ac. 2:46). Blass' notes that only Luke, Paul and the author of Hebrews, the more literary writers in the N. T., use the ablative (gen.) with μεταλαμβάνω and προσλαμβάνω. Examples like Ro. 9:16; Heb. 12:11 may be regarded as either ablative or genitive.

7. **Attraction cif the Relative.** Thus ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος οὗ ἐγὼ δῶσω

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 100.
X. The Locative ("Locativial Dative") Case (ἡ τοπικὴ πτώσις).

(a) THE NAME LOCATIVE. It is derived from the Latin locus¹ land is a "grammatical neologism," but is modelled after vocative. Still Delbruck² prefers "local" to locative and uses it. It is indeed a local case. It is worth noticing that in the Thessalian dialect the old genitive had this locative ending³ as did the Arkadian⁴ also, though this -oι may have come from -oιο. The Latin grammarians took this /io for the dative.⁵ We have remnants of the ending in English here, there, where. The modern grammars generally recognise the distinction in the three cases (locative, instrumental and dative), which have usually identical endings, though Blass⁶ is correct in saying that it is not always possible to decide the case. However that uncertainty exists but seldom. Jannaris⁷ makes four cases, counting the associative as a separate case. Compare the blending in the Latin.

(b) THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE LOCATIVE. It is indeed the simplest of cases in its etymological idea. It is the in case as Whitney⁸ finds it in the Sanskrit. It is location, a point within limits, the limits determined by the context, not by the case itself. The word itself is the main determining factor in the resultant sense, and each example has its own atmosphere. There is indeed variation in the resultant idea. Hence, besides in, we come to the ideas of on, at, amid, among, by, with. This development was not only in the early Greek⁹ but in the still earlier Sanskrit. The use of the locative without εν is much more common in Homer than in the later Greek. In the modern Greek vernacular indeed the locative disappears along with the instrumental and dative before εις and the accusative. As to εν it adds so little to the locative case that it is not surprising to find it so frequently used, especially as 'the locative, instrumental and dative all used the same endings. Thus we may compare τῷ πλοιαρίῳ ἡλθον (Jo. 21:8) with εν πλοίῳ (Mt. 14:13), ὕδατι βαπτίζω (Lu. 3:16) with βαπτίζω εν ὕδατι (Mt. 3:11), τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ημέρᾳ (Jo. 6:40) with εν τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ημέρᾳ (Jo. 6:44). The tendency in the older Greek was constantly towards the use of εν, though the mere locative survived, es-

---

² Vergl. Synt., I, p.182 f., following Gaedicke.
⁵ Riem. et Goelzer, Synt., p. 197.
⁶ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 109.
⁷ Hist. of Gk. Gr., p. 342.
⁹ Giles, Man., etc., p. 329 f.
especially in some constructions. In Mt. 13:52 MSS. vary between the mere locative ἡ βασιλείᾳ, and ἐν with locative and εἰς with accusative.

(c) PLACE. His was probably the original locative. Place of rest was put in the locative without a preposition. As already indicated, this usage abounds in Homer. Some of these distinctively locative forms persisted in the Greek as in the Latin. Thus οἶκος, Ἰσθμος, Μαραθών, Ἀθήνας, θύρας, humi, Corinti, Romae (ai). Brugmann (Griech. Gr., p. 226) thinks that χαμαι is dative. Indeed the locative forms and the dative forms used as locative, after the blending of the three case-forms into one, still occur in Pindar side by side. The orators up to the time of Demosthenes use the mere locative frequently. The AEolic has μέσοι = ἐν μέσῳ (cf. οἴκοι and οἶκω). But the rule in Attic literary prose is to use a preposition with the locative of place. Thus ἐν Ἀθήναις (1 Th. 3:1), ἐν οἴκῳ (1 Cor. 11:34)= ‘at home’ and usually ἐν τῷ οίκῳ (Jo. 11:20). But observe λησταί περίπεςαν (Lu. 10:30), where the resultant idea is "among" and περί is used with the verb in composition, but none the less it is the locative. Blass indeed remarks that the "local dative" does not occur in the N. T. He means the pure locative of place without a preposition, not considering the adverb κύκλῳ (Mk. 3:34), and possibly χαμαι (Jo. 18:6). We have indeed ἐτέρα οἶδο ἐκβάλεσα (Jas. 2:25), possibly instrumental. Cf. the figurative usage in 2 Pet. 2:15, etc. It is indeed a very short step to the figurative usage, πορεύομαι τοῖς ὀδοῖς αὐτῶν (Ac. 14:16), μηδὲ τοῖς έθεσιν περιπατεῖν (Ac. 21:21), στοιχοῦσιν τοῖς ἄνδρεςιν (Ro. 4:12). I think that we have the pure locative also in τῷ πλοῖον ἠλθοὺς (Jo. 21:8); ὤδατι βαπτίζω (Lu. 3:16), καθαρίσας τῷ λουτρῷ τοῦ ὤδατος (Eph. 5:26), τῷ θυσιαστήρῳ παρεδρεύοντες (1 Cor. 9:13). Cf. also ἐπέθηκαν αὐτοῦ τῇ κεφαλῇ (Jo. 19:2), ἀδύνατο τοῖς ποσίν (Ac. 14:8). Hence it is overstating it to assert that the locative of place without prepositions has entirely disappeared from the N. T. The scarcity of this usage in comparison with Homer is in perfect harmony with the linguistic development. Moulton indeed finds the locative of place

2 Giles, Man., ec., p. 330.
3 Main, Loc. Ex r. in the Attic Orators (1892), p. 231.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 119.
in inscriptions as late as the sixth century A.D., *B.C.H.*, 1903, p. 335, τῷ τῷ βῆ.

(d) **TIME.** It is expressed much more persistently with the mere locative. It has outlived the usage as to place and is "fairly frequent"\(^1\) in the N. T. Cf. Sanskrit, Latin, older Greek, Anglo-Saxon. Here, of course, time is regarded from the point of view of a point, not of duration (accusative). But the accusative is making inroads on the locative and is already used occasionally for a point of time. See Accusative. For papyri examples take τοῖς παλαιοῖς χρόνοις B.U. 903 (ii/A.D.) and γενεσίοις, γάμοις B.U. 1 (iii/A.D.), Moulton, *Cl. Rev.*, April, 1904, and Dec., 1901. See also τῇ ἀνάβασει, O.P. 742 (ii/B.C.). Observe the difference between the accusative (τὸ σάββατον ἡσύχασαν) and the locative (τῇ δὲ μιᾷ τῶν σάββατων ἦθαν) and the genitive (ὁρθοῦ βαθέως) all in the same sentence (Lu. 24:1). The accusative is easily differentiated from both the locative and the genitive. As between the locative and the genitive the matter is not quite so clear. Brugmann\(^2\) indeed thinks that originally there was little difference. The difference lies in the essential meaning of the two cases. The locative is a point and the genitive is the case of genus. Thus in Mt. 24:20 we have ἔνα μὴ γενηται ἡ φυγὴ ὑμῶν χειμῶνος μηδὲ σάββατῳ. It is not mere hair-splitting to note that winter is here set over against summer (time within which) and that Sabbath is the point of time. In practical result the difference is very slight, but it is hardly just to regard the two usages as without difference. Cf. ψυκτός (Mt. 25:6), ψυκτί (Mk. 14:30), νῦκτα (Ac. 26:7). Καίρῳ (Lu. 20:10) for ‘in due time’ may be illustrated by, τῷ δέοντι καιρῷ O.P. IV, 729, 5, and τῷ τῇ ὁπώρᾳ καιρῷ ib., 11. As further examples of the mere locative we may note the various instances of ἡμέρα. So τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Mt. 20:19), τῇ μιᾷ σάββατων (Jo. 20:1), τῇ πτώτῃ ἡμέρᾳ τῶν ἀζύμων (Mk. 14:12), τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ ὁγdoch (Ac. 7:8), τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Jo. 6:40), ποῖα ἡμέρα (Mt. 24:42), ἡ ἡμέρα (Lu. 17:29 f.), τατῇ ἡμέρᾳ (Ac. 12:21), τῇ ἐχομένῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Jo. 20:19), τῇ ἐπιούσῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Ac. 7:26), τῇ ἐχομένῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Ac. 21:26), and even ἡμέρα καὶ ἡμέρα (2 Cor. 4:16). The substantive is not expressed in τῇ ἐπιφωσκούσῃ (Mt. 28:1) and τῇ ἐξῆς (Ac. 21:1).\(^3\) Cf. also σήμερον ταύτῃ τῇ νυκτί (Mk. 14:30), where the adverb is accusative, but the substantive locative. With some of these phrases ἐν is also

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 119.
found as with \(\tau\alpha\upsilon\theta\eta\) (Lu. 19:42), \(\dot{\epsilon}\kappa\epsilon\iota\nu\eta\); (Lu. 6:23), \(\dot{\omicron}\gamma\delta\omicron\eta\) (Lu. 1:59), \(\mu\omicron\alpha\) (Lu. 20:1), \(\dot{\epsilon}\sigma\chi\acute{\alpha}\tau\eta\) (Jo. 6:44), with \(\dot{\eta}\mu\acute{\epsilon}\rho\alpha\) and \(\sigma\alpha\beta\beta\acute{\alpha}\tau\omicron\nu\) (Lu. 4:16), \(\dot{\eta}\mu\acute{\epsilon}\rho\alpha\), and genitive (Lu. 4:25), with \(\dot{\epsilon}\xi\acute{\eta}\zeta\) (Lu. 7:11), where W. H. read in text \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu \tau\omega\) rather than \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu \tau\eta\). The MSS., especially D, vary a good deal. \(\text{Νυκτί, occurs without } \dot{\epsilon}\nu (\text{Lu.} 12:20) \text{ and with } \dot{\epsilon}\nu (\text{Mt.} 26:31). \) So also we find \(\sigma\alpha\beta\beta\acute{\alpha}\tau\omicron\nu\) (Mt. 24:20), \(\sigma\acute{\alpha}β\beta\alpha\sigma\iota\nu\) (Mk. 2:24), but also \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu\) with each (Mt. 12:2; Mk. 2:23). With \(\dot{\omega}\rho\alpha\) we have both \(\dot{\omega}\rho\alpha\) (Lu. 2:38) and \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu\) (Lu. 12:1). Once more \(\phi\upsilon\lambda\alpha\kappa\dot{\iota}\) occurs without \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu\) (Mt. 14:25) and with (Lu. 12:38). With \(\acute{\epsilon}τ\acute{o}\zeta\) we have \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu\) once (as Lu. 3:1) and without \(\dot{\epsilon}\nu\) twice (Jo. 2:20; Ac. 13:20), but these two examples \((\acute{\epsilon}τ\acute{e}\sigma\iota\nu \tau\epsilon\sigma\sigma\acute{r}\acute{a}\kappa\omicron\omega\nu\tau\alpha\zeta\alpha\tau\eta\alpha, \acute{\omicron} \acute{\epsilon}τ\acute{e}\sigma\iota\nu \tau\epsilon\tau\acute{r}ακ\eta\omicron\iota\omicron\iota\zeta\omicron\iota\omicro
τοῖς ἔθεσιν περιπατεῖν (Ac. 21:21), πορευομένη τῷ φόβῳ (Ac. 9:31), ὅταν πειρασμός περιπέπεσε ποικίλος (Jas. 1:2), λησταίς περιπέπεσεν (Lu. 10:30), ἔστερεοῦντο τῇ πίστει καὶ ἐπερίσσευον τῷ ἀριθμῷ (Ac. 16:5), κάμπτε ταῖς ψυχαῖς (Heb. 12:3), ἐμένειν τῇ πίστει (Ac. 14:22), ἐπιμένωσιν τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ (Ro. 11:23; cf. 22), ἐνκεντρισθῆσονται τῇ ἴδιᾳ ἕλαίρῳ (Ro. 11:24), τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι ἐπροφητεύσαμεν (Mt. 7:22; cf. ἔξεβάλομεν also), ζέων τῷ πνεύματι (Ac. 18:25; cf. Lu. 10:21 and Mk. 5:29), τῇ θαλάσσῃ ὑπομένουτες (Ro. 12:12), and perhaps even βαπτίσει ὑμῶν πνεύματι ἀγίῳ (Mk. 1:8). See Ac. 16:5. For the so-called instrumental use of ἐν (like ἐν μαχαίρῃ, Mt. 26:52) see the chapter on Prepositions (cf. also Instrumental Case). As a matter of fact ἐν always has the locative, and this use of ἐν has he locative also. The activity of the verb is conceived as finding expression in the object mentioned. It is not a mere Hebraism, for the papyri have it as indeed the earlier Greek occasionally. But as a practical matter this use of ἐν with the locative was nearly equivalent to the instrumental case. The use ὀμολογέω (Mt. 10:32 = Lu. 12:8) Moulton (Prol., p. 104) considers a Semiticism due to the common Aramaic original. Cf. the usual dative (Heb. 13:15).

(g) THE LOCATIVE WITH SUBSTANTIVES. Cf. Heb. 11:12, καθὼς τὰ ἀστρα τοῦ οὐρανοῦ τῷ πλήθει. So in Col. 2:14, τὸ καθ’ ἡμῶν χειρόγραφον τοῖς δόγμασιν, the adjective is used as a substantive. In 1 Cor. 14:20 we have the locative with substantive, verb and adjective, μὴ παιδία γίνεσθε ταῖς φρεσίν, ἀλλὰ τῇ κακίᾳ νηπιάζετε, ταῖς δὲ φρεσίν τέλειοι γίνεσθε.

(h) THE LOCATIVE WITH PREPOSITIONS. Just because the prepositions that were used with the locative were only "adverbal elements strengthening and directing its meaning"1 they were very numerous. Originally nearly all the prepositions occurred with the locative. Thus in Homer and epic and lyric poetry generally, we meet with the locative with ἄμφι, ἀνά, μετά. (Buck, Class. Phil. II, 264), and when the so-called dative is found in Greek with ἐν, ἐπί, παρά, περί, πρός, ὑπό, it is really the locative case.2 But with a compound verb the case may not always be locative, as instance προκειμένων ἡμῶν (Heb. 12:1). A number of the prepositions like ἄμφι, ἀντί ἐν (ἐνί), ἐπί, περί, πρός (προτὶ) are themselves in the locative case. Cf. the locative adverbs of time already mentioned and Ἐβραιστὶ (Jo. 5:2), Ἑλληνιστὶ (Jo. 19:20), κύκλῳ (Mk. 3:34), the conjunction καί, etc. There are only four prepositions in the N. T. that use the locative. As examples note ἐν τῷ

THE CASES (ΠΙΤΩΣΕΙΣ) 525

Iordanē (Mt. 3:6), ἐπὶ Θύραις (Mt. 24:33), παρὰ τῷ σταυρῷ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ (Jo. 19:25), πρὸς τῷ μνημείῳ (Jo. 20:11). But of these πρὸς has the locative only 6 times, παρὰ, 50, while ἐπὶ has it 176 times. Ἐν, of course, having only the locative, is very common. One may note, here ἐν πρώτοις (1 Cor. 15:3) almost like an adverb.

(1) THE PREGNANT CONSTRUCTION OF THE LOCATIVE. It is common in the N. T. with ἐν, as the accusative with ἐίς after verbs of motion or rest. This matter comes up for discussion again under the head of Prepositions, but a few words are perhaps needed here. The identity of ἐν and ἐίς in origin and early usage must be borne in mind when one approaches these two prepositions. Cf. ὁ ἐίς τὸν ἀγρόν in Mk. 13:16. On the other hand note ὁ ἐμβάψας μετ᾽ ἐμοῦ τῆν χείρα ἐν τῷ τρυφλίῳ (Mt. 26:23). Here Mark (14:20) has ἐίς τὸ τρυφλίον. This interchange of ἐν and ἐίς is a feature of the LXX (Moulton, Prol., p. 245). Originally there was no difference, and finally ἐν vanishes before ἐίς in modern Greek. Each writer looks at the matter in his own way. Cf. English vernacular, "come in the house," "jump in the river," etc. So also Mt. (3:6) has ἐβαπτίζοντο ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ ποταμῷ, while Mk. (1:9) reads ἐβαπτίσθη ἐίς τὸν Ἰορδάνην. Cf. ἐν οἴκῳ ἐστίν, text of Mk. 2:1 and marg. ἐίς οἰκόν ἐστίν. This same pregnant idiom appears with παρὰ as στάσα ὀπίσω παρὰ τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ (Lu. 7:38). See also Mk. 4:1. Cf. again ἐμβάντι ἐίς τὸ πλοῖον (Mt. 8:23). But observe the locative with ἐν in composition (Ro. 11:24). With ὄνομα we have the mere locative (Mt. 7:22), ἐν and the locative (Mt. 21:9), ἐπὶ and locative (Mt. 18:5), ἐίς and accusative (Mt. 10:41; 28:19). Cf. also Mt. 12:41.

XI. The Instrumental ("Instrumental Dative") Case (ἡ χρηστικὴ πτῶσις).

(a) THE TERM INSTRUMENTAL. As applied to case it is modern and the adjective itself appears first in the fourteenth century. The Hindu grammarians, however, recognised this case. There are not wanting signs indeed that it survived in the Greek as a separate case-form. Meister concludes that in the Cyprian dialect the instrumental was still a separate case-form (a "living" case). He cites ἄρα, ἐςχῶλα, besides σὺν τῷ, and in Kuhner-Gerth we find οἴκοι locative, οἶκω instrumental, and οἶκω dative. Other examples are ἁμα, δίχα, τάχα in later Greek, not to mention the many ad-

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 106.  4 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 89.
3 Elem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 207.  6 I, p. 405.
verbs in –α and –η (–α, –η) like κρυφή, λάθρα, σιγή βία, etc. This corresponds with the Sanskrit singular ending, and the plural bhis may be compared with the Homeric φι (φιν), as θεόφι, θεόφιν. But in Homer one must note that these endings for singular and plural are used for the locative, ablative, and possibly for the dative also. It is not always easy to draw the line of distinction between the locative and instrumental in Greek after the forms blended. Sometimes indeed a word will make good sense, though not the same sense, either as locative, dative or instrumental, as τα δεξιά τοῦ θεοῦ ὑψωθείς (Ac. 2:33; cf. also 5:31). The grammars have no Greek term for the instrumental case, but I have ventured to call it χρηστική πτωσίς. The increasing use of prepositions (ἐν, διά, μετά) makes the mere instrumental a disappearing case in the N. T. as compared with the earlier Greek, but still it is far from dead.

(b) SYNCRETISTIC? It is a matter of dispute as to whether this instrumental case is not itself a mixed case combining an old associative or comitative case with the later instrumental. Both of these ideas are present in the Sanskrit case (Whitney, Sanskrit Grammar, p. 93). On the whole, however, one is constrained to doubt the existence of this so-called comitative case. Most of the difference is due to the distinction between persons (association, accompaniment) and things (means, implement, instrument). Cf. Delbrück, Vergl. Syntax, I, p. 231. Hence neither term covers exactly the whole situation. We have a similar combination in our English "with" which is used in both senses. So also the Greek σύν (cf. Latin cum) and even μετά (ἐξήλθατε μετά μαχαίρών καὶ ἔλειων, Mk. 14:48). In Mk. 14:43, μετὰ αὐτοῦ—μετὰ μαχαίρών, both senses occur together. But we may agree that the associative was the original usage out of which the instrumental idea was easily and logically developed. The comitative usage, for instance, is very common in Homer and Herodotus.

(c) PLACE. There is no example of this usage in the N. T. except πανταχῆ (W. H. text, Ac. 21:28). In Jas. 2:25, ἐτέρα ὀδῶ

4 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 116. The mod. Gk., of course, does not use the instr. case at all, but only με (μετά). Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 103.
The cases (πτωσείς)

εκβαλοόμε, we probably have the locative, though the instr. is possible.

(d) Time. But we do find examples of the associative-instrumental used with expressions of time. This is indeed a very old use of the instrumental, as Brugmann\(^1\) and Delbruck\(^2\) show. The Sanskrit had it also as the time "by the lapse of which anything is brought about."\(^3\) The singular, like χρόνῳ ἵκανῳ (Lu. 8:27; Ac. 8:11), finds parallel in the papyri,\(^4\) as is seen also in Pindar, Euripides, Aristophanes, Thucydides.\(^5\) For the papyri note πολλοίς χρόνοις N.P. 50 (iii/A.D.), χρόνῳ A.P. 77 (ii/A.D.). Cf. Polybius xxxii, 12, πολλοίς χρόνοις (Moulton, Prol., p. 76). There is no doubt about the plural instrumental in Ro. 16:25, χρόνοις αἰώνιοις, a parallel to which Moulton\(^6\) finds in the epistolary formula in the papyri, ἔρρωσθαι σε εὑρομαι πολλοίς χρόνοις. He rightly doubts the necessity of appealing to the Latin as W. Schulze\(^7\) does for the explanation of the use of the plural, since the classical τῷ χρόνῳ could easily give the impulse.

In Jo. 2:20, τεσσεράκοντα καὶ έξ έτεσιν οἰκοδομήθη, we have the instrumental also, though, of course, this might be looked at as a locative, the whole period regarded as a point of time. In an example like πολλοίς χρόνοις συνηρπάκει αὐτοῦ (Lu. 8:29) we probably have the instrumental also, though here the locative would give a good idea, 'on many occasions' ('oftentimes' Rev. V.), whereas the marg. ('of a long time') gives the instrumental idea. For the instrumental idea Moulton\(^8\) cites from Letronne (p. 220, fourth century A.D.) πολλοίς ὑστερον χρόνοις. See also ώς έτεσει τετρακοσίοις καὶ πεντηκόσιοι (Ac. 13:20). Cf. also πάσαις ταῖς ἡμέραις (Lu. 1:75), but marg. of W. H. has accusative. As Moulton\(^9\) observes, only the context can decide which is locative and which instrumental in such examples and he suggests that this uncertainty had something to do with the increasing use of ἐν to make the locative clear and distinct from instrumental or dative. "Speakers of Greek were certainly beginning to feel that they could not trust the dative out alone, and we an understand the occasional employment of nursemaid ἐν in places where she would have been better left at

\(^{1}\) Griech. Gr., p. 410h
\(^{2}\) Vergl. Synt., I, p. 246.
\(^{3}\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 94.
\(^{4}\) Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 438; 1904, p. 153; Prol., p. 75.
\(^{5}\) Delbruck, Vergl. Snt., I, p. 246.
\(^{6}\) Prol., p. 75.
\(^{7}\) Gr. Lat., p. 14. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 121, calls this "duration of time" "unclassical," but incorrectly as is already shown.
\(^{8}\) Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 438.
\(^{9}\) Ib.
home, or replaced by \( \sigma \acute{u}n \)." Blass\(^1\) comments on the frequency of the instrumental with expressions of time in Josephus with no perceptible difference between it and the accusative. One can hardly agree to. Blass\(^2\) explanation of the instrumental of time that it is due to the disinclination of the writer to put another accusative beside the direct object of the verb. Certainly the accusative is the most frequent idiom in the N. T. for the idea of extension of time, as can be seen in Mk. 2:19; Lu. 13:8; Ac. 13:18; Rev. 20:3, etc. In Jo. 14:9 W. H. have \( \tau o\sigma o\acute{u}tov \chi \rho o\nu \) in the text and put \( \tau o\sigma o\acute{u}tov \chi \rho o\nu \) in the marg. In Lu. 8:27 some MSS. have instead of the instrumental \( \chi \rho o\nu \varsigma \iota k\alpha n\) \( \iota k\alpha n\) the ablative \( \acute{e}k \) (\( \alpha p\delta \)) \( \chi \rho o\nu \varsigma \iota k\alpha n\).

(c) THE ASSOCIATIVE IDEA. The idea of association alone is responsible for a good many examples, chiefly with verbs, though adjectives are not wanting. Substantives cut no figure at all according to Blass,\(^3\) for \( \tau i\acute{e} s \kappa o\iota w\nu i\acute{a} \varphi w\acute{t} i \varrho o\acute{s} \varsigma k\acute{o}t\acute{os} \) (2 Cor. 6:14) is an example of the pure dative (cf. also Lu. 5:10; 2 Cor. 6:16), and in Ro. 15:26 we have \( \epsilon i\acute{e} s \tau o\acute{u}c\varsigma \pi t\omega x\chi o\acute{u}c\varsigma \) and in 1 Jo. 1:3, 6, 7 \( \mu e\theta \) \( \eta m\acute{w}n \). But another example in 2 Cor. 6:14, \( \tau i\acute{e} s \mu e\acute{t}o\chi \acute{h} \delta i\kappa a i o\sigma \acute{u}n\nu \) \( \kappa a i \) \( \acute{a}n\nu o\mu \acute{i}\varsigma \), comes much closer to the substantive use of the associative-instrumental. But an undoubted example of a substantive followed by the associative-instrumental appears in \( \epsilon i\acute{e} s \upsilon\acute{p}a\acute{n}t\sigma\varsigma i\nu \) \( \tau \acute{o} \) \( \acute{I}n\sigma o\delta \) (Mt. 8:34). So \( \epsilon i\acute{e} s \acute{a}p\acute{a}\acute{n}t\sigma\varsigma i\nu \) \( \eta m\acute{w}n \) (Ac. 28:15). Cf. also Jo. 12:13 (\( \alpha u\acute{t}w \)) and 1 Macc. 3:11 \( \epsilon i\acute{e} s \) \( \sigma \sigma u\acute{n}t\sigma\varsigma i\nu \) \( \alpha u\acute{t}w \). There is nothing in this construction out of harmony with the Greek idiom. The verb has the associative-instrumental. The genitive with this substantive occurs in Mt. 27:32 (\( \delta \) text) and 1 Th. 4:17 (but 5 text has associative-instrumental). Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 14. There is no doubt as to the adjectives \( \sigma \acute{u}m\mu o\acute{r}f\acute{o}c \) and \( \sigma \acute{u}m\mu f\acute{u}t\acute{o}c \). Thus \( \tau o \) \( \sigma \acute{w}m\acute{a} \) \( \sigma \acute{u}m\mu o\acute{r}f\acute{o}c \) \( \tau \acute{o} \) \( \sigma \acute{w}m\acute{a}t\acute{i} \) (Ph. 3:21) and \( \sigma \acute{u}m\mu f\acute{u}t\acute{o}c \) \( \tau \acute{o} \) \( \) \( \) \( \delta \acute{o}m\acute{i}\acute{w}m\acute{a}t\acute{i} \) (Ro. 6:5), but \( \sigma \acute{u}m\mu o\acute{r}f\acute{o}c \) has the genitive \( \tau \acute{h}s \) \( \epsilon i\acute{k}\acute{\acute{e}}\acute{n}o\nu \) in Ro. 8:29 like a substantive. The other compounds in \( \sigma \acute{u}n \) are treated as substantives\(^4\) with the genitive, like \( \sigma \nu n\acute{a}i\chi \acute{m}\acute{a}\acute{\lambda}w\acute{t}o\varsigma \), \( \sigma \nu \gamma \gamma e\varsigma \varsigma \), \( \sigma \nu \nu e\acute{r}\acute{g}o\varsigma \), \( \sigma \nu \nu r\acute{t}\acute{o}f\acute{o}c \), \( \mu e\acute{t}o\chi \varsigma \) (Heb. 1:9). But note \( \epsilon n\acute{a}v\acute{\acute{t}}i\acute{\acute{t}}o\varsigma \) \( \acute{a}v\acute{\acute{t}}i\varsigma \) (Mk. 6:48), \( \acute{\ups}n\nu e\acute{a}v\acute{\acute{t}}i\varsigma \) \( \eta m\acute{w}n \) (Col. 2:14). With verbs the associative-instrumental is very common in the N. T. as in the older Gk. The most important examples will be given in illustration. \( \acute{A}k\acute{\kappa o}l\acute{\alpha}u\acute{t}h\acute{e}c \) is a common instance, as \( \eta k\kappa o\lambda o\acute{\alpha}u\kappa \varsigma a n \) \( \alpha u\acute{t}w \) (Mk. 1:18). Cf. also \( \sigma \nu n\mu \) (Mk. 5:37). Rather oddly \( \acute{\acute{e}}p\acute{\alpha}m\acute{a}i \) is not so used, but once we find \( \sigma \nu n\acute{\acute{e}}\acute{i}p\acute{\acute{e}}t\acute{t}o \) \( \alpha u\acute{t}w \) (Ac. 20:4). So

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 121. Cf. Schmidt, de Jos. elocut., p. 382 f.
\(^2\) Ib
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 115.
\(^4\) Ib.
διελέγετο αὐτοῖς (Ac. 20:7), though πρὸς (Mk. 9:34) also is used. Other compounds of διά with this case are διαλλάγηθι τῷ ἀδελφῷ (Mt. 5:24), διεβλήθη αὐτῷ (Lu. 16:1), τῷ διαβόλῳ διακρινόμενος (Ju. 9), τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις διακατηλέγετο (Ac. 18:28). But closely allied to these words are κατηλλάγημεν τῷ θεῷ (Ro. 5:10), σοι κριθήσαι (Mt. 5:40), ὥμιλει αὐτῷ (Ac. 24:26), which last may have πρὸς and accusative (Lu. 24:14). Then again note ἐτεροζυγοῦντες (2 Cor. 6:14), τοῖς πνευματικοῖς ἐκουσώσαν (Roo. 15:27), κολλάσθαι αὐτοῖς (Ac. 5:13), ἐντυγχάνει τῷ θεῷ (Ro. 11:2). Cf. further ἀνδρὶ δέδεται (Ro. 7:2) and μεμιγμένην πυρί. (Rev. 15:2). In Rev. 8:4 we may (R. V. dative) have the associative-instrumental 1 ταῖς προσευχαῖς with ἀνέβη. Moulton cites ἀποδώσῃ σοι τῷ ἐννιστα δοθησομένῳ ὑψιστώ, B.U. 69 (ii/A.D.) 'with your next wages' (Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901). Cf. the old Greek αὐτοῖς ἀνδράσιν and the "military dative" (Moulton, Prol., p. 61). The compounds with σῷν that use this case are numerous. Thus συλλαβέσθαι (Lu. 5:7), συμβουλεύσας τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις (Jo. 18:14), though this might be a dative (cf. συμβαίνω and συμφέρει), συνεφώνησε βῆ (Ac. 5:9; cf. 15:15), 2 μᾶς ψυχῆ συναθλοῦντες τῇ πίστει (Ph. 1:27, two examples probably of the instrumental, the first of manner), συνηκολούθει αὐτῷ (Mk. 14:51), αἱ συναναβᾶσαι αὐτῷ (Mk. 15:41), συνανέκειντο τῷ Ἰησοῦ (Mt. 9:10), μὴ συναναμίγνυσαι αὐτῷ (2 Th. 3:14), συναναπαύσωμαι ὑμῖν (Ro. 15:32), συνήτησεν αὐτῷ (Lu. 9:37), μοι συναντιλάβθηται (Lu. 10:40; cf. Ro. 8:26), συναποθανεῖν σοι (Mk. 14:31), τῷ συναπώλετο τοῖς ἀπειθήσασιν (Heb. 11:31), συνέβαλλον αὐτῷ (Ac. 17:18), ὑμῖν συνβασιλεύσωμεν (1 Cor. 4:8), συνηγέρθητε τῷ Χριστῷ (Col. 3:1), συνεισήλθεν τῷ Ἰησοῦ (Jo. 18:15), συνείπεσε αὐτῷ (Ac. 20:4), συνήργη τῷ ἔργῳ (Jas. 2:22), συνήλθεν αὐτοῖς (Ac. 9:39), συνεσθεία αὐτοῖς (Lu. 15:2), συνεπακόμητε τοῖς ἔργοις (Lu. 11:48), συνεπωκύμενοι ὑμῖν (2 Pet. 2:13), συνείχε τῷ λόγῳ (Ac. 18:5), συνεζήσουμεν αὐτῶ (Ro. 6:8), συνυπάκουσιν αὐτῷ (Mk. 8:11), συνεξωποίησε τῷ Χριστῷ (Eph. 2:5), συνήδομαι τῷ νόμῳ (Ro. 7:22), συνταφέντες αὐτῶ (Col. 2:12), συνεστάτος αὐτῷ (Lu. 9:32), συγκαθήμενοι αὐτοῖς (Ac. 26:30), συνκακοπάθησον τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ (2 Tim. 1:8), συνκακοχείσθαι τῷ λαῷ (Heb. 11:25), συνκατατεθείμενος τῇ βουλή (Lu. 23:51), μὴ συνκεκρατείμενος τῇ πίστει τοῖς ἀκούσασιν (Heb. 4:2, two examples of the instrumental), συνκοινωνεῖτε τοῖς ἔργοις (Eph. 5:11), συνκρίνοντες ἑαυτοὺς ἑαυτοῖς (2 Cor. 10:12), συνκαλοῦντες τῷ Ἰησοῦ (Mk. 9:4), συμμαρτυρεῖ τῷ πνεύματί (Ro. 8:16), συνοδεύοντες αὐτῷ (Ac. 9:7), συνομορόδσα τῇ συναγωγῇ (Ac. 18:7), συνπαθήσαι

1 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 75.
2 Considered peculiar by Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 114.
ταὶς ἀσθενείας (Heb. 4:15), συνπαρόντες ἡμῖν (Ac. 25:24), συνεπέμψαμεν αὐτοῖς (2 Cor. 8:22), συνεπορεύοντο αὐτῷ (Lu. 7:11), συνσταυρωθέντος αὐτῷ (Jo. 19:32), συνστάσεος τῇ νῦν Ἰερουσαλήμ (Gal. 4:25), μὴ συνσχηματίζεσθε τῷ αἰῶνι τούτῳ (Ro. 12:2), συντυχεῖν αὐτῷ (Lu. 8:19), συνυπεκρίθησαν αὐτῷ (Gal. 2:13), συνέχαρον αὐτῇ (Lu. 1:58), συνχρώνωται Σαμαρείταις (Jo. 4:9), though χράομαι uses the strict instrumental usually; a rather long list surely, but one not in vain, if one gets a just idea of the N. T. usage. Some of these verbs occur frequently and some have πρὸς or μετά.

(f) WITH WORDS OF LIKENESS AND IDENTITY. We find this usage with several adjectives. Thus ὑμοιος ἀνθρώπῳ (Lu. 6:48) and always, save the accusative in Rev. 14:14 and in 1:13 (true text). In Jo. 8:55 some MSS. actually have ὑμοιος ὑμῶν instead of ἡμῖν. Cf. our vulgar "the likes of you." So also ἵσους ἡμῖν (Mt. 20:12) and ἴσοτιμον ἡμῖν πίστιν (2 Pet. 1:1). Ὁ αὐτὸς with the instrumental is found once only, ἐν καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ τῇ ἐξουσιασμῇ (1 Cor. 11:5). In 1 Th. 2:14 we find τὰ αὐτὰ καθός, and in Ph. 1:30 τὸν αὐτὸν ἄγων ὦν. Several verbs are used the same way. So ἤεικεν ἄνδρι (Jas. 1:23), τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς ὑμισθῆται, (Heb. 2:17), παρομοιαζέτε τάφοις (Mt. 23:27), ἔπρεπεν αὐτῷ (Heb. 2:10). Some MSS, have ὑμοίως αὐτῇ in Mt. 22:39. In Rev. 4:3 ὑμοιος ὤρασει λίθων live have two instrumental examples.

(g) MANNER. It is expressed by the instrumental case. This, like the other uses of the case in the N. T., is in harmony with ancient usage,1 not to say that of the κοινή. Some N. T. adverbs illustrate this usage well, like δημοσίῃ (Ac. 16:37), εἰκῇ (1 Cor. 15:2), ἔνα (1 Cor. 12:11), κρυφῇ (Eph. 5:12), λαβρᾶ (Mt. 2:7), πανοικεῖ (Ac. 16:34), πανυπληθεῖ (Lu. 23:18), πάντῃ (Ac. 24:3), πεζῇ (Mk. 6:33), τάχα (Ro. 5:7). But the usage is abundant outside of adverbs, chiefly with verbs, but also with adjectives and even with substantives. Thus we find τέκνα φύσει ὄργης (Eph. 2:3) and Κύπριος τῷ γένει (Ac. 4:36; cf. also 18:2, ὄνοματι Ἀκύλαν, Πουτικὸν τῷ γένει). See also the participle τῷ ὄντι (Ro. 7:23). Cf. also φύσει in Gal. 2:15 and τῷ προσώπῳ in Gal. 1:22. Here are some of the chief examples with verbs: χάριτι μετέχω (1 Cor. 10:30), προσευχομένων ἀκατακαλύπτω τῇ κεφαλῇ (1 Cor. 11:5), περιτμήθητε τῷ ἐθεί (Ac. 15:1), τῇ προβέβουσαν προσμένειν (Ac. 11:23), ὅτι παντὶ πρόσωπῳ, εἴτε προφάσει εἴτε ἁλθεῖα, Χριστὸς καταγγέλλεται (Ph. 1:18, all three examples), ἀνακαλυμμένως προσώπῳ κατοπτριζόμενοι (2 Cor. 3:18). Blass notes also ῥαπτίσμασιν αὐτῶν ἐλαβον (Mk. 14:65) as a vulgarism which finds a parallel in a papyrus2 of the first century

---

1 K.-G., I, p. 435.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 118.
THE CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ) 531

A.D., κονδύλοις ἔλαβεν. Cf. τῇ βίᾳ. B.U. 45 (iii/A.D.). But often μετά and the genitive (μετά βίας, Ac. 5:26), ἐν and the locative (ἐν δέκα χιλιάσιν, Lu. 14:31), κατά and the accusative (Ac. 15:11) or the mere accusative (Mt. 23:37) occur rather than the instrumental. There is one usage in the N. T. that has caused some trouble. It is called1 "Hebraic" by some of the grammarians. The instances are rather numerous in the N. T., though nothing like so common as in the LXX.2 Conybeare and Stock quote Plato to show that it is, however, an idiom in accordance with the genius of the Greek language. Thus λόγῳ λέγειν, φεύγων φυγῆ, φύσει πεφυκών, etc. They call it the "cognate dative." That will do if instrumental is inserted in the place of dative. Moulton3 admits that this idiom, like βλέπουτες βλέψετε (Mt. 13:14), is an example of "translation Greek," but thinks that a phrase like ἐξολεθρεύσαι οὐκ ἐξωλέθρευσαν (Josh. 17:13) is much more like the Hebrew infinitive absolute which is reproduced by this Greek instrumental or participle. Blass4 insists that the classical parallels γάμῳ γαμεῖν, φυγῇ φεύγειν are not true illustrations, but merely accidentally similar, an overrefinement in the great grammarian, I conceive. The Latin has the idiom also, like curro curriculo.

Here are some of the important N. T. instances: ἀκοῇ ἀκοῦσετε (Mt. 13:14), ἀναθέματι ἀνεθεματίσαμεν (Ac. 23:14), ἐνυπνίοις ἐνυπνιασθή-σονται (Ac. 2:17), ἐπίθυμία ἐπεθύμησα (Lu. 22:15), θανάτῳ τελευτάτῳ (Mt. 15:4); ὅρκῳ ὡμοσεν (Ac. 2:30), ἐξέστησαν ἐκστάσει μεγάλῃ (Mk. 5:42), παραγγελία παρηγγείλαμεν, (Ac. 5:28), προσευχῇ προσηύξατο (Jas. 5:17), χαρᾷ χαίρει (Jo. 3:29; cf. 1 Pet. 1:8). Cf. also σημαίνων ποίῳ θανάτῳ ἦμελλεν ἀποθνῄσκειν (Jo. 18:32) and σημείων ποίῳ θανάτῳ δοξάσει τὸν θεόν (Jo. 21:19), where the idiom seems more normal. Blass5 observes that this usage "intensifies the verb in so far as it indicates that the action is to be understood as taking place in the fullest sense." In Ro. 8:24 we more likely

1 Moulton, prol., p. 75.
2 C. and S., p. 60 f.
3 Prol., p. 75 f. Cf. θάνον θανάτω in Homer.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 119.
5 Ib. Thack. (Jour. of Theol. Stu., July, 1908, p. 598 f.) shows that in the Pentateuch the Hebrew infinitive absolute was more frequently rendered by the instr. case, while in the Books of Samuel and Kings the participle is the more usual. In the LXX as a whole the two methods are about equal. On p. 601 he observes that the N. T. has no ex. of the part. so used except in O. T. quotations, while several instances of the instr. occur apart from quotations, as in 22:15; Jo. 3:29; Ac. 4:17; 5:28; 23:14; Jas. 5:17. See also Thack., Gr., p. 48.
have the means than the manner. Cf. ἄρκεισθε τοῖς ὑψωνίσοις in Lu.13:14.

(h) DEGREE OF DIFFERENCE (Measure kin to idea of manner). The accusative is sometimes used here also with the comparative, as πολύ μᾶλλον (Heb. 12:9). But in Lu. 18:39 we have πολλῷ μᾶλλον (cf. Mt. 6:30). Cf. πολλῷ μᾶλλον, P. Par. 26 (ii/B.C.). In Ph. 1:23 we find the instrumental with the double comparative πολλῷ μᾶλλον κρεῖσσον. In particular observe τοσοῦτῳ μᾶλλον δῶς βλέπετε (Heb. 10:25) which corresponds to the English idiom "the more, the less" in "the more one learns, the humbler he grows." As a matter of fact the English "the" here is instrumental also, as is seen in the Anglo-Saxon dy. Cf. also τοσοῦτῳ κρεῖττων (Heb. 1:4).

(i) CAUSE. The instrumental may be used also to express the idea of cause, motive or occasion. This notion of ground wavers between the idea of association and means. Here are some illustrations: ἔγω δὲ λιμῷ ὥδε ἀπόλλυμαι (Lu. 15:17), ἡνα σταυρῷ τοῦ Χριστοῦ μὴ διώκωσαι. (Gal. 6:12), λύπη καταποθῆ (2 Cor. 2:7), τινὲς δὲ τῇ συνηθείᾳ ἐσθίοντων (1 Cor. 8:7), οὐ διεκρίθη τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ ἀλλ' ἐνεδύναμος τῇ πίστει (Ro. 4:20), τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ ἐξεκλάθησαν (Ro. 11:20), ἤλεησθε τῇ τούτων ἀπεθανοῦσιν (Rom. 11:30), τῷ ὑμετέρῳ ἐλεεῖ ὡνα καὶ αὐτοὶ νῦν ἐλεηθῶσιν (11:31), μὴ ἐξενίσεσθε τῇ ἐν ὑμῖν πυρῶσει (1 Pet. 4:12), τοιαύταις γὰρ θυσίαις εὑραστέεται (Heb. 13:16), τῷ μὴ εὐρείν μὲ Τίτου (2 Cor. 2:13), εὐδοκήσαντες τῇ ἄδικίᾳ (2 Th. 2:12). In 1 Cor. 9:7 we have τίς στρατεύεται ἴδιοις ὑψωνίοις ποτέ; cf. τῇ ὑπερβολῇ (2 Cor. 12:7). But some verbs in the N. T. prefer a preposition for this idea, but not with the instrumental case. Thus ἡγάλλασεν ἐπὶ τῷ θεῷ (Lu. 1:47), ἐξεπλήσσοντο ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ (Mt. 7:28), ἐν σοὶ εὐδόκησα (Mk. 1:11), εὐφραίνωντο ἐν τοῖς ἔργοις (Ac. 7:41). With θαυμάζεω we find ἐν (Lu. 1:21), ἐπί, (Lu. 4:22), περί (Lu. 2:18), διά (Rev. 17:7), not to mention ἐι (1 Jo. 3:13), ἵτι (Lu. 11:38).¹

(j) MEANS. But no usage of this case is more common than that of means. With things sometimes we call it means, with personk agent, though more often the agent is expressed by ὑπὸ with genitive-ablative (cf. ab with the ablative in Latin). There is no essential difference in the root-idea. Donaldson (New Cratylus, p. 439) calls it the "implementive case." This is, of course, an idiom found with verbs. Note especially χράομαι (cf. Latin autor with instrumental, not ablative), τῷ Παῦλῳ χρησάμενος (Ac. 27:3), πολλῇ παρρησίᾳ χρώμεθα (2 Cor. 3:12), ἐὰν τις αὐτῷ...

THE CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ) 533

νομίμως χρήσται (1 Tim. 1:8), in which examples we have both thing and person. Cf. 1 Cor. 9:12, 15, etc. But see accusative in 1 Cor. 7:31. Among the many examples we can only select the most striking. Thus μή ποτε ἰδώσω τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς (Mt. 13:15), ἐξέβαλεν τα πνεῦματα λόγω (Mt. 8:16), πέδαις καὶ ἀλύσει δεδέσθαι (Mk. 5:4), ψώχνουτε ταῖς χερσίν (Lu. 6:1), ταῖς θρεῖν ἐξέμασεν (Lu. 7:38), ἦλειφεν τῷ μύρῳ (ib.), (Lu. 9:32), φιλήματι παραδίδωσι (Lu. 22:48), ταῖς μαγιάς ἐξεστακέναι αὐτοῦς (Ac. 8:11), ἔχρισεν αὐτὸν πνεῦματι καὶ δυνάμει (Ac. 10:38), ἀνείλεν Ἱάκωβου μαχαίρῃ (Ac. 12:2) δεδάμασται τῇ φύσει (Jas. 3:7), συναπήχθη αὐτῶν τῇ ὑποκρίσει (Gal. 2:13), πεπληρωμένους πάση ἀδικία, πονηρία κτλ. (Ro. 1:29), χάριτι ἐστε σεσωσμένοι (Eph. 2:5, 8), μὴ μεθύσκεσθε ὀνψ (Eph. 5:18), βεβαιωμένου αὖματι (Rev. 19:13), πνεῦματι (Ro. 8:14), οὐ φθαρτοῖς, ἀργυρὶς ἡ χυρσίν ἐλυτρώθητε, ἀλλὰ τιμίως αὖματι (1 Pet. 1:18 f.) ω τις ἥττηται (2 Pet. 2:19), ἐσφαγήσθητε τῷ πνεῦματι (Eph. 1:13), πηλίκοις ὑμῖν γραμμασιν ἐγραψά τῇ ἐμῇ χειρί (Gal. 6:11, one dative and two instrumental cases). Cf. κατακρυνοῦσιν αὐτῶν θανάτω (Mk. 10:33, but θανάτου in D, and in Mt. 20:18 Χ has εἰς θανάτου). See the frequent use of πίστει in Heb. 11, which is more than mere manner, though in verse 13 we have κατά πίστιν. Moulton (Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901) cites δήλωσον ἦ πλοῖω ἐξέρχεις ἢ ὄνω. O.P. 112 (iii/iv A.D.). Cf. Jo. 19:40, ὁ ἰησοῦς μετὰ τῶν ἀρμάτων for proximity of μετὰ to the instrumental. Moulton (Prol., p. 76) notes "the remarkable instrumental in Ep. Diogn. 7, ὁ τοῦς ὀφθαλμοὺς ἐκτίσεων." Besides some examples are open to doubt. Thus κατακαύσειν πυρὶ ἄσβεστω (Mt. 3:12) may be either locative or instrumental. The same might be true of τῷ πλοιαρίῳ ἦ θεν (Jo. 21:8) and ἐβάπτισεν ὕδατι (Ac. 1:5), though the locative is pretty clearly right here. Then again in Ac. 22:25, προέτευαν τοῖς ἴμασιν, we have either the instrumental or the dative. But in 2 Pet, 1:3 ἰδία δόξῃ καὶ ἀρετῇ (marg. in W. H.) are clearly instrumental, not dative. In Ro. 8:24, τῇ ἐλπίδι ἐσώθημεν, we have either the modal instrumental or the instrumental of means. Cf. also 1 Cor. 14:15. Blass perhaps over-emphasizes the influence of the Heb ξ; on the N. T. Greek in what is called the instrumental use of ἐν (the case with ἐν is always locative, historically considered). This is a classic idiom and the papyri give numerous illustrations of it, though the Heb.

Some doubt remains as to whether the instrumental case is used for the agent. In the Sanskrit the instrumental is a common idiom with a perfect passive verb or participle. But the Latin uses the dative in such an example as is seen by *mihi*, not *me*. Most of the grammarians take the Greek passive perfect and verbal as the Latin with the dative. But Delbruck recognizes the doubt in the matter. The one example in the N. T. is in Lu. 23:15, *οὐδὲν ἀξίων θανάτου ἐστὶν πεπραγμένον αὐτῷ*. D here reads ἐν αὐτῷ and Blass suggests that the right reading is without πεπραγμένον as in Ac. 25:5. It is possible also that in 2 Pet. 2:19, ὃς τις ἡττηται, we have person, not thing, of whom (Am. St. V), not of what. Cf. also Jas. 3:7. One may mention here also as a possible instrumental καγὼ εὑρέθω ὑμῖν (2 Cor. 12:20), ὃς ἐγνώσθη αὐτοῖς (Lu. 24:35), ὑφήτη ἀγγέλοις (1 Tim. 3:16), but these are most probably true datives. The usual way of expressing the agent in the N. T. is ὑπό for the direct agent and δια, for the intermediate agent, as in Mt. 1:22. But other prepositions are also used, like ἀπό (Ac. 2:22), ἐκ (Jo. 1:13), ἐν (Col. 1:17), παρά (Jo. 1:6), etc. See a real distinction between ὑπό and ἐν in Ro. 12:21.

**k** WITH PREPOSITIONS. The Greek uses the instrumental with only two prepositions ἀμα and σύν, both with the comitative idea. In the Cypriot Greek we have σύν τύχα, the distinctive instrumental ending. Cf. the Sanskrit *sam* with the instrumental and the Latin *cum*. There is only one instance of ἀμα in the N. T. with the instrumental, ἀμα αὐτοῖς (Mt. 13:29), but note ἀμα σύν αὐτοῖς (1 Th. 4:17; cf. also 5:10). Σύν appears chiefly in Luke's

---

1 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 95.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 112.
writings, as \( \sigma \nu \alpha \upsilon \tau \eta \) (Lu. 1:56). But in composition \( \sigma \nu \nu \) is very common, as has already been shown. So \( \sigma \nu \nu \chi \alpha \iota \rho \varepsilon \tau \varepsilon \mu o \) (Ph. 2:18).

XII. The Dative (True) Case (ι δοτική πτώσις).

(a) SYNCRETISM. That of the locative, instrumental and dative cases has not advanced so far in Greek as has that between the genitive and the ablative. Monro\(^1\) thinks that "distinct forms for these three cases survived down to a comparatively late period in Greek itself." He rightly conceives that it is not difficult, as a rule, to distinguish the three cases in usage. Brugmann\(^2\) gives various examples of how the three cases made contribution to the common endings for the final blending.

(b) THE DECAY OF THE DATIVE. But in modern Greek this syncretistic combination has vanished in the vernacular. Moulton\(^3\) can properly speak of the "decay of the dative," a decay that applies for the modern Greek to the locative and instrumental also. In the Sanskrit (Lanman) the dative, after the ablative, was the most infrequent case. The modern Greek simply uses \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) and accusative for the usual dative (and locative) ideas and \( \mu \varepsilon \) (\( \mu \varepsilon \tau \alpha \)) with accusative for the instrumental. We see an approach to this use of \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) in the N. T., \( \epsilon λειμονπόνας \pi ρο\iota \varsigma \varepsilon \iota \tau \sigma \varepsilon \mu o \) (Ac. 24:17), \( \tau \eta \nu \beta ουλη\nu \tau \varepsilon \theta \varepsilon \theta \varepsilon \tau \varsigma \alpha \nu \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \varepsilon \alpha \varetau\nu\) (Lu. 7:30). So \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) \( \upmu \alpha \varsigma \) (1 Pet. 1:4). Winery (Winer-Thayer, p. 213) is correct in refusing to consider \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) with \( \kappa \rho \upsigma \sigma \omega \) or \( \varepsilon \upsilon \alpha \gamma \varepsilon \lambda \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \omega \mu \) (Mk. 13:10; Lu. 24:47; 1 Pet. 1:25) as at all out of the way. The pregnant idea is in Mk. 8:19 and Ro. 8:18. \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) is found also with \( \varepsilon \nu \omega \chi \omega \) (Mt. 5:22), \( \varepsilon \theta \varetheta \varsigma \) (Lu 14:35), \( \varepsilon \chi \rho \tau \varetheta \tau \varsigma \) (2 Tim. 4:11), but \( \omega \varphi \varephi \varetheta \mu \) with \( \pi \rho \varsigma \) (1 Tim. 4:8). Only in the most illiterate papyri is the decay of the dative seen, as in \( \tau \iota \nu \nu \lambda \o \gamma \nu \) N.P. 47 (iii/A.D.), and in the late inscrs. like \( \circ \beta \theta \nu \omega \nu \) \( \upmu \omega \nu \), J. H. S., XIX, 14. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., Apr., 1904. Per contra note \( \varepsilon \pi \mu \varetheta \varetheta \tau [\varetheta \tau ] \tau \nu \vareomicr \), P. Oxy. 744 (i/B.C.). Leaving out the locative, instrumental and dative show a contraction in the N. T. as compared with the earlier Greek.\(^4\) But even in the N. T. "\( \varepsilon \nu \) is considerably more than a match for \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \)," yet the vernacular revived and intensified the old identity of \( \varepsilon \nu \) and \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) seen in the early dialects.\(^5\) Hatzidakis\(^6\) shows how this tendency increased in the later Greek till \( \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \) triumphed over \( \varepsilon \nu \) in the modern Greek. But even in the N. T. it is often impossible to insist on the idea of motion or extension in

---

\(^1\) Hom. Gr., p. 97 f.
\(^2\) Griech. Gr., pp. 226
\(^3\) Prol., p. 62.
\(^4\) Ib.
\(^5\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 122.
\(^6\) Einl., p. 210 f.
ei\ς, as δ ὦν ei\ς τὸν κόλπον (Jo. 1:18), δ ei\ς τὸν ἀγρόν (Mk. 13:16). Cf. τοίς ei\ς τὸν οἶκον (Lu. 9:61). Moulton\(^1\) cites from D ἐυ as equivalent to ei\ς in Acts 7:12; 8:23. One may compare the disappearance of the locative with ὑπό and the use of the accusative for both motion and rest,\(^2\) whereas in Appian and Herodian (Atticists) the locative is in the lead.\(^3\) Cf. the disappearance of the dative forms in English save in the pronouns him, whom, etc. Even Wyclif had "believe ye to the gospel" (Mk. 1:15).

(c) THE IDEA OF THE DATIVE. It is that of personal interest. It is sometimes used of things, but of things personified.\(^4\) Apollonios Dyscolos calls the dative the case of περιποίησις. The accusative, genitive and dative are all cases of inner relations,\(^5\) but the dative has a distinctive personal touch not true of the others. The dative is not a local case. There was originally no idea of place in it.\(^6\) It is thus a purely grammatical ease (rein grammatisch). Even ἔρχομαι σοι (Rev. 2:16) is used of a person, not place. Cf. ἔρχεται σοι, (Mt. 21:5, from the LXX) and ἐλθε μοι, P. Par. 51 (B.C. 160). But in physical relations the dative approaches the accusative in idea.\(^7\) Thus we find the dative of place in Heb. 12: 22, προσελθήσατε Σιων ὅρει καὶ πόλει θεοῦ ζώντος (cf. 12:18) and ἐγνίζοντι τῇ Δαμασκῷ (Ac. 22:6). Cf. ἤγγισεν τῇ πύλῃ (Lu. 7:12). It is not used for the notion of time.

(d) THE DATIVE WITH SUBSTANTIVES. I am not here insisting that the dative was used first with substantives rather than with verbs,\(^8\) but only that the dative has often a looser relation to the verb than the accusative or the genitive.\(^9\) It is more common to have the verb without the dative than without the accusative or genitive (Brug., ib.). This is seen also in the common use of the dative as the indirect object of verbs that have other cases and in the use of the dative with substantives somewhat after the manner of the genitive. Not all substantives admit of this idiom, it is true, but only, those that convey distinctly personal relations. But some of these substantives are allied to verbs that use the dative. So εὐχαριστῶν τῷ θεῷ (2 Cor. 9:12), θλίψιν τῇ σαρκί (1 Cor. 7:28), ἀνεσιν τῷ πνεύματι μου (2 Cor. 2:13), σκόλοψ τῇ σαρκί (2 Cor.

\(^1\) Prol., p. 235.
\(^2\) Ib., p. 63.
\(^4\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 98.
\(^7\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 95.
\(^8\) Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 277.
\(^9\) Brug., Griech Gr., p. 399.
12:7, ἀνάπαυσιν ταῖς ψυχαῖς ὑμῶν (Mt. 11:29), εὑρόντα εἰς υἱόν χαίρει (2 Cor. 2:15), εἰς ταφὴν τοῦ εὗρος (Mt. 27:7), τοῖς ἀπολλυμένοις μισταί (1 Cor. 1:18). Cf. Lu. 5:14. With some of these examples verbs occur, but the dative is not here due to the verb. Some of them are in the predicate also, as χαίρει τῷ θεῷ (Ro. 7:25), with which compare marg. εὐχαριστοῦ. See Lu. 10:5. Cf. τοῖς ἀσθένεσιν (1 Cor. 8:9). So in 1 Cor. 9:2, εἰ ἄλλοις οὐκ εἰμὶ ἀπόστολος, ἀλλὰ γε ύμῖν εἰμί, the dative is not due to εἰμί. Cf. in next verse ἡ ἐμὴ ἀπολογία τοῖς ἐμὲ ἀνακρίνονσιν. Cf. also αὐτοῖς in Ph. 1:28. So νόμος ἐαυτοῖς (Ro. 2:14), ἐμοὶ θάνατος (Ro. 7:13), and, not to multiply examples, τούτῳ μοι καρπὸς ἔργου (Ph. 1:22), ἡ ἐπίστασις μοι (2 Cor. 11:28). Cf. Ro. 1:14; 8:12. In 1 Cor. 4:3 both the dative and εἰς and accusative occur, but properly so, εἰμὶ δὲ εἰς ἐλαχίστον ἔστιν. Cf. 1 Cor. 14:22 for the same thing. The dative due to attraction of the relative is seen in ὁ ἑαυτῷ Lu. 9:43.

(e) WITH ADJECTIVES. This dative occurs naturally. These adjective and verbals, like the substantives, have a distinctly personal flavour. Here are the most striking examples: ἀπειθής τῇ οὐρανίῳ ὑπαστίᾳ (Ac. 26:19), ἀρεστά αὐτῷ (Ro. 8:29), ἀρκετὸν τῷ μαθητῇ (Mt. 10:25), ἀσπιλοὶ καὶ ἀμώμητοι αὐτῷ (2 Pet. 3:14), ἀστειος τῷ θεῷ (Ac. 7:20), γνωστὸς τῷ ἀρχιερεῖ (Jo. 18:15), δούλα τῇ ἁκαθαρσίᾳ (Ro. 6:19), δυνατὰ τῷ θεῷ (2 Cor. 10:4), σωτήριος πάσιν (Tit. 2:11), ἐμφανὶ—ἡμῖν (Ac. 10:40), ἕνοχος ἐσται τῷ σωματίῳ (Mt. 5:22), τῷ εὐσχήμον καὶ εὐπάρεδρον τῷ κυρίῳ (1 Cor. 7:35), ἱκλαυνὸν τῷ τοιούτῳ (2 Cor. 2:6), καλὸν σοὶ ἔστιν (Mt. 18:8), μονογενής τῇ μητρί (Lu. 7:12), νεκροὺς τῇ ἁμαρτίᾳ (Ro. 6:11), πιστοὺς τῷ κυρίῳ (Ac. 16:15), πτωχοὺς τῷ κόσμῳ (Jas. 2:5), σωτήριος πάσιν (Tit. 2:11), ὃ... ὑπέκοιμο (7:39), φανερῶς ἐγένετο τῷ Φαραώ (Ac. 7:13), ὄντες αὐτῷ φίλοι (Ac. 19:31), ὡφέλιμα τοῖς ἀνθρώποις (Tit. 3:8). Wellhausen (Einl., p. 33 f.) calls ἕνοχος τῷ "ungrieisch." But note ἕνοχος ἔστω τοῖς ὅσιοι ἐπιτηθίοις Π. Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66). The participle in Lu. 4:16 (Ac. 17:2) almost deserves to be classed with the adjectives in this connection, τὸ εἰσθής αὐτῷ.

(f) WITH ADVERBS AND PREPOSITIONS. The dative is found a few times with adverbs. Thus ὅσις καὶ δικαίως καὶ ἀμέμπτως ύμῖν τῷ πιστεῦσαι ἐγενήθησαν (1 Th. 2:10), οὐαί τῷ κόσμῳ (Mt. 18:7) and so frequently (but accusative in Rev. 8:13; 12:12). Blass\(^1\) compares Latin vae mihi and vae me. Brugmann\(^2\) indeed considers καταί, παραί πάλαι, χαμαί all to be dative forms. But, while this is true, the dative is not used with prepositions in the

---

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 112. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 153, finds ἀκολουθῶς with dat. in pap. 

\(^2\) Griech. Gr., pp. 226, 228.
Sanskrit1 and not certainly in the Greek.2 The locative is very common with prepositions, and the instrumental appears with two, but the dative is doubtful. In reality this statement must be modified a bit, for ἐγγύς has the dative twice in the N. T. (Ac. 9:38), τῇ Ἰουπτη; ὦ ἐγγύς (Ac. 27:8), though the genitive is the usual case employed. Cf. ἐγγύς with dative, Ac. 9:3; 10:9; Jas. 4:8. Brugmann3 admits the dative with αὐτόν, ἐναυτίον, πλησίον in the older Greek, though no N. T. examples occur. Delbruck (Grundl., p. 130) finds the dative with ἐπί.

(g) WITH VERBS. Here the dative finds its most extensive use.

1. Indirect Object. Perhaps the earliest use. Certainly it remains the one most commonly met. Indeed there are few transitive verbs that may not use this dative of the indirect object. In the passive of these verbs the dative is retained. Some representative illustrations are here given. Ἀφες αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ ἱμάτιον (Mt. 5:40), Ἀφες ἡμῖν τὰ ὀφειλήματα ἡμῶν (Mt. 6:12), ἀνεῴχθησαν αὐτῷ (marg.) οἱ οὐρανοὶ (Mt. 3:16), δωτὲ τὸ ἄγιον τοῖς κυσῖν (Mt. 7:6), δοθῆναι τοῖς πτωχοῖς (Mk. 14:5), ὑμῖν πρῶτον ἀπέστειλεν (Ac. 3:26), ἀπειληθήσεθα αὐτοῖς μηκέτι λαλεῖν (Ac. 4:17), ὁ δὲ γράφων ὑμῖν (Gal. 1:20), ἐπέβαλον αὐτοῖς τὰς χειρὰς (Ac. 4:3), λέγει αὐτοῖς ὅτι (Mk. 14:27), ὑμῖν δείξει ἄναγαινον (Mk. 14:15), ἐρρέθη τοῖς ἀρχαίοις (Mt. 5:21), προσέβερον αὐτῷ παιδία (Mk. 10:13), εἰςαγγελίζομαι ὑμῖν χαρὰν μεγάλην (Lu. 2:10), ὠφειλέσαι αὐτῷ ἑκατόν δηνάρια (Mt. 18:28), πάντα ἀποδώσω σοι (Mt. 18:26), θηλύσαι ἐγείρει τοῖς δεσμοῖς μου (Ph. 1:17), ποιήσω ὥστε τρεῖς σκηνῶς, σοι μίαν κτλ. (Mt. 17:4), ἦν αὐτῶς ἐπηγγείλατο ἡμῖν (1 Jo. 2:25). An example like ἐπέσεην αὐτοῖς (Ac. 3:5) is really the indirect object. Cf. Ac. 26:27. In 2 Cor. 12:7, ἐδόθη μοι σκόλοψ τῇ σάρκι, the μοι is indirect object and σάρκι may be either dative of advantage or locative.

2. Dativus Commodity vel Incommodi. The so-called dative of advantage or disadvantage does not differ very greatly from the indirect object. A good example is ἔρχομαι σοι (Rev. 2:5, 16). Moulton (Prol., p. 245) cites Aeschylus (P. V. 358), ἄλλη ἡθευν αὐτῷ ἔρχομαι ἐπερπνον βέλος. It is indeed rather more loosely connected at times and varies more in the resultant idea. Thus in μαρτυρεῖτε ἐαυτοῖς ὅτι (Mt. 23:31) we have to translate ‘against yourselves,’ though, of course, the dative does not mean ‘against’ any more than it means ‘for’ or ‘in behalf of.’ The personal relation is expressed by the case and it may be favourable or unfavourable.

1 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 96.
2 Giles, Man., etc., p. 329, but see Prepositions (ch. XIII).
3 Griech. Gr., p. 455.
Indeed, nowhere does the personal aspect of the dative come out more clearly than in this usage. Thus πάντα τὰ γεγραμμένα—ὡς υἱῶ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Lu. 18:31), γραμματεὺς ματθητεύεις τῇ βασιλείᾳ (Mt. 13:52), νῦν ἡ κεκοσμημένην τῷ ἀνδρί (Rev. 21:2), ἀναπληροῦται αὐτοῖς (Mt. 13:14), δικαίω νομος οὐ κεῖται (1 Tim. 1:9; note long list of datives), ἀνασταυροῦται ἑαυτοῖς τῶν υἱῶν (Heb. 6:6), ὑπὸ μεμαρτύρηκας (Jo. 3:26) ἐκρινά ἐμαυτῷ τούτῳ (2 Cor. 2:1), μὴ μεριμνᾶτε τῷ ψυχῇ (Mt. 6:25) ἀδεξεῖσθεν τεθεικας (2 Pet. 2:6), εἰτε ἐξεστηκεν, θεῷ εἰτε σωφρονοῦμεν, ὑμῖν (2 Cor. 5:13), ἐνείχεν αὐτῷ (Mk. 6:19).

Blass notes how frequent this idiom is in Paul's Epistles, especially in the vehement passages. Thus μηκετί ἑαυτοῖς ζωσίν (2 Cor. 5:15), ἵνα θεῷ ζήσω (Gal. 2:19), ἀπεθάνομεν τῇ ἀμαρτίᾳ (Ro. 6:2; cf. 6:10 f.), ἐθανατώθητε τῷ νόμῳ—εἰς τὸ γενέσθαι ὑμᾶς ἔτέρω (Ro. 7:4), εὑρέθη μοι (Ro. 7:10), τῷ ἱδίῳ κυρίῳ στήκει ἡ πίπτει (Ro. 14:4), imply ἐσθίει (Ro. 14:6), ἑαυτῷ ζῇ—ἑαυτῷ ἀποθνήσκει (verse 7). Cf. ἐμοί in Ro. 7:21, ὑμῖν in 12 Cor. 12:20 and μοι with ἐγένετο in Ac. 22:6.

A good example is ἀπομασσόμεθα ὑμῖν, Lu. 10:11. See ἐμαυτῷ in 2 Cor. 2:1 and τῷ πνεύματι (2:13). Cf. βαστάζων αὐτῷ τὸν σταυρόν (Jo. 19:17). In Mk. 10:33 note also the other datives, either the indirect object or the direct object like ἐμπαίζουσιν αὐτῷ. Cf. also πᾶσιν and ποῖς Ἰουδαίοις in 1 Cor. 9:19 f. In this connection one may note also τί μοι τὸ δῖφελος (1 Cor. 15:32), τί ἡμῖν καὶ σοί (Lu. 4:34). The intense personal relation is also manifest in the examples in 1 Cor. 1:23 f. Cf. also 1:18, 30.

Prof. Burkitt (Jour. of Theol. Stud., July, 1912) interprets τί ἐμοί καὶ σοί (Jo. 2:4) to mean "What is it to me and thee?" That is, 'What have we to do with that?' In a word, 'Never mind!' like the modern Egyptian ma 'alesh in colloquial language. The so-called ethical dative (cf. σοί in Mt. 18:17) belongs here. A very simple example is ἔρχομαι σοι (Mt. 5:29). Moulton cites a papyrus example for ἔρχομαι σοι (Rev. 2:5, 16), though from an illiterate document. For μέλει see Ac. 18:17; 1 Pet. 5:7.

3. Direct Object. Then again the dative is often the direct object of transitive verbs. These verbs may be simple or compound, but they all emphasize the close personal relation like trust, distrust, envy, please, satisfy, serve, etc. Some of them vary in construction, taking now the dative, now the accusative, now.

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 111.
2 Prol., p. 75. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 113, calls this the ethical dative. The so-called dative of "majesty" Blass considers a Hebraism. He compares ἁττείας τῷ θεῷ with πόλεις μεγάλη τῷ θεῷ (Jonah, 3:3), 'a very great city.' But it is doubtful if the N. T. follows the LXX here.
a preposition. But this is all natural enough. Thus καὶ ἡπιστοῦν
ἀῦταῖς (Lu. 24:11), ἀπειθῶν τῷ υἱῷ (Jo. 3:36), ἐπείθουτο αὐτῷ (Ac.
5:36), ὑπακούουσιν αὐτῷ (Mk. 1:27). Once we find the dative with
πέποιθα (Ph. 1:14), but elsewhere prepositions, as ἐν (2 Th. 3:4),
εἰς (Gal. 5:10), ἐπὶ (Lu. 18:9). In particular πιστεύω calls for a
word. Deissmann¹ has made an exhaustive study of the subject,
and Moulton² has given a clear summary of results. This verb
may be used absolutely (Jo. 20:31) or with an object clause (ib.)
in the sense of believe. Moreover, it often means entrust (Gal.
2:7). Leaving out these uses Moulton finds that πιστεύω occurs
with the dative 39 times and always in the sense of believe or trust
(especially in John, as Jo. 5:46, εἰ γὰρ πιστεύετε Μουσεί ἐπιστεύετε
δὲν ἐμοί. It is rather remarkable that ἐν occurs only once (Mk.
1:15, πιστεύετε ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ) explained by Deissmann³ as meaning
'in the sphere of,' to which Moulton agrees. In Eph. 1:13
ἐν more properly belongs to ἐσφραγίσθη. The LXX uses ἐν rarely
with πιστεύω and no other preposition. But in the N. T. εἰς
occurs 45 times (37 times in John's Gospel and 1 Jo.) while ἐπί
appears 6 times with the locative and 7 with the accusative. Moul-
ton objects to overrefining here between εἰς and ἐπί (at most like
believe in and believe on). So also as to accusative and locative
with ἐπί. What he does properly accent is the use of these two
prepositions by the Christian writers to show the difference be-
tween mere belief (dative with πιστεύω) and personal trust (εἰς and
ἐπί). This mystic union received a further development in Paul's
frequent ἐν Χριστῷ. The relation between ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι and ἐπὶ
tῷ ὄνοματι is parallel.⁴

We must note other groups with the dative, like verbs of serving.
Thus διηκόνουν αὐτῷ (Mt. 4:11), τῷ νοῖ δουλεύω νόμῳ θεοῦ (Ro.
7:25, both instrumental and dative here), λατρεύειν αὐτῷ (Lu. 1:
74), ὑπηρετεῖν αὐτῷ (Ac. 24:23). But in Ph. 3:3 we have the
instrumental with λατρεύω, and προσκυνέω uses either the dative
(Mt. 2:2) or the accusative (Jo. 4:23), not to mention ἐνώπιον
(Lu. 4:7). The dative with δουλώ in 1 Cor. 9:19 is merely the
indirect object.

Another convenient group is verbs to please, to suffice, to be
envious, angry, etc. Thus θεω δρέσαί (Ro. 8:8), ἐνεβριμώντο αὐτῇ

¹ In Christo, p. 46 f. My friend, Prof. Walter Petersen, of Lindsborg,
Kan., does not believe that the dative is ever the direct object of a verb, and
Dr. W. O. Carver agrees with him.
² Prol., p. 67 f. ³ In Christo, p. 46 f.
⁴ Moulton, Prol., p. 68; Heitmuller, Im Namen Jesu, I, ch. i.
Once more, we may note verbs meaning to thank, to blame, to enjoin, etc. So εὐχαριστῶ σοι (Jo. 11:41), ἐγκαλεῖσαν ἀλλήλοις (Ac. 19:38), ἐπετύμησεν αὐτοῖς (Mt. 12:16), τοῖς ἀνέμοις ἐπιτάσσει (Lu. 8:25). So also προσέταξεν αὐτῷ (Mt. 1:24), διεστέλλετο αὐτοῖς (Mk. 8:15); ἐμοὶ χολάτε (Jo. 7:23). But κελεύω has accusative, though the dative occurs in the papyri.

There remain verbs meaning to confess, to lie, to help, to shine, etc. Thus we find ὁμολογοῦντων τῷ ὀνόματι (Heb. 13:15)1 and ἀνθρωπολογεῖτο τῷ θεῷ (Lu. 2:38), οὐκ ἐψεύσω αὐθοῦ (Ac. 5:4), βοήθει μοι (Mt. 15:25, but ὑφελέω has accusative), ἵνα φαινωσίν αὐτῇ (Rev. 21:23). In the later κοινή we find βοήθεω with accusative or genitive (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 110). Cf. also τῷ θεῷ προσεύχεσθαι (1 Cor. 11:13), ὁ ἀντίστητε (1 Pet. 5:9). Cf. two datives in Lu. 11:4.

4. The Dative with Intransitive Verbs. However, this is not a point that it is always easy to decide, for in ἀρκεῖ σοι (2 Cor. 12:9) one is not sure where to place it. See above. Cf. Lu. 3:14. We are so prone to read the English into the Greek. The same remark applies in a way to τί ὑμῖν δοκεῖ (Mt. 18:12), πρέπει ἄγιοις (Eph. 5:3). But there is no doubt about τί ἐγένετο αὐτῷ (Ac. 7:40), αὐτῶ συμβαίνειν (Mk. 10:32), and the passive constructions like ἀπολείπεται σαββατισμός τῷ λαῷ (perhaps dativus commodi, Heb. 4:9), ἐφάνη αὐτῶ (Mt. 1:20), ἔφρηθη τοῖς ἀρχαίοις (perhaps indirect object; Mt. 5:21). The same thing is true of a number of the examples of "advantage or disadvantage" already given, like, Ro. 6:10; 14:4, etc. Cf. also μέλει τῷ θεῷ (1 Cor. 9:9). See ἐν σοι λέιπει (Lu. 18:22), but ἐν σε ὑστερεῖ (Mk. 10:21).

5. Possession. The Greek, like the Latin, may use the dative for the idea of possession. Thus οὐκ ἦν αὐτοῖς τόπος (Lu. 2:7), ὦκ ἔστιν σοι μερίς (Ac. 8:21), ὑμῖν ἔστιν ἡ ἐπαγγελία (Ac. 2:39), τίνι ἔσται (Lu. 12:20), εἰσίν ἡμῖν τέσσαρες ἀνδρεῖς (Ac. 21:23), ἔστιν συνήθεια ὑμῖν (Jo. 18:39), ἔαν γενήθη τινι ἄνθρωπω ἐκατὸν πρόβατα (Mt. 18:12). The idiom is extended even to examples like οὐ μή ἔσται σοι τοῦτο (Mt. 16:22), ἔσται χαρά σοι (Lu. 1:14). Cf. Ac. 2:43; Lu. 9:38. This is a frequent idiom in the ancient Greek and a perfectly natural one. This predicative dative at bottom is just like the usual dative.

6. Infinitive as Final Dative. Giles2 calls attention to the in-

1 But note Mt.10:32 ἐν, and ὁμολογῶ ἐν αὐτῷ in Lu. 12 : 8. 2 Man., p. 327.
finitive as a final dative. This was the original use of the dative in –αι, the expression of purpose. So ἑλθομεν προσκυνήσαι αὐτῷ (Mt. 2:2). Here we have the dative form and the dative of purpose. Cf. the old English "for to worship." This dative form continued, however, when the case of the infinitive was no longer dative.

7. The Dative of the Agent. It was discussed under the instrumental and there is nothing new to be said here. The one clear example is found in Lu. 23:15. But not very different is the idiom in Mt. 6:1 (πρὸς τὸ θεαθῆναι αὐτῶι) and 23:5. Cf. also 2 Pet. 3:14.

8. The Dative because of the Preposition. We have already had examples of this. Compound verbs often have the dative where the simplex verb does not. The case is due to the total idea of the compound verb. The dative occurs with ἀνατιθημα in Ac. 25:14; Gal. 2:2. So1 with ἄντι, as Ὠ ἀντίστητε (1 Pet. 5:9), ἀντιλήγει τῷ Καίσαρι (Jo. 19:12), ἀντικεῖμενοι αὐτῷ (Lu. 13:17), τῷ ἀγίῳ ἀντιπίπτετε (Ac. 7:51). Ἀπό in ἀποτάσσομαι goes with the dative (Mk. 6:46). The same thing is sometimes true of ἐν, as ἐνέπαιξαν αὐτῷ (Mk. 15:20), ἐμβλέψας αὐτῶις (Mk. 10:27). Sometimes with ἄντι— we have πρὸς, as with ἐν we find ἐν or πρὸς after the verb. With ἐνείχεν αὐτῷ (Mk. 6:19) we must supply θημὸν or some such word. Εἰς and ἐνί usually have a preposition after the compound verb, except that compounds of ἐνί often have the indirect object in the dative (especially ἐπιτίθημι). But compare ἐπιτάσσω and ἐπιτιμῶ above. Cf. ἐπέστη αὐτῶις (Lu. 2:9), but ἐνί repeated (Lu. 21:34). With παρά we note παρέχω and παρίστημι with indirect object. In παρέστηκαν αὐτῷ (Ac. 9:39) we can see either the dative or the locative. Cf. παρέδρευεν (1 Cor. 9:13). In 2 Pet. 1:9 we may have the possessive dative with πάρεστιν. With περί again there is doubt as between the locative and dative in περίκειμαι (Heb. 12:1), περιπείρειν (1 Tim. 6:10), περιπίπτω (Lu. 10:30). Πρός with προστίθημι has the indirect object in the dative (Mt. 6:33), but with προσέρχομαι the dative directly as with ὅρει (Heb. 12:18, 22). With προσέχετε ἐαυτοῖς (Lu. 17:3) the object νοῦν has to be supplied, but this is not the case with προσκαρτεροῦντες τῇ διδαχῇ (Ac. 2:42), nor with ὅ προσεκλίθη (Ac. 5:36), nor with προσέπεσεν αὐτῷ (Mk. 5:33) nor with προσεφώνει αὐτοῖς (Ac. 22:2). With προσκυλίω (Mt. 27:60) the dative is merely the indirect object, but note ἐνί in Mk. 15:46. Compounds of ὑπό likewise generally have the dative, as

(h) AMBIGUOUS EXAMPLES. Sometimes it is not easy to decide whether the case is locative, instrumental or dative. The example in Ac. 2:33, ἐγὼ δεξίᾳ, ἐκατέρῳ, has already been cited. This may mean 'to lift up to the right hand,' 'at the right hand' or 'by the right hand.' Cf. also Ro. 8:24; Jo. 21:8. But it is not often that there is any serious difficulty in the matter. In 2 Cor. 11:1, ἀνέγραψαν μου μικρόν τι ἀρχοντήσες, note ablative, accusative, genitive.
And, if some cases remain, as with the genitive and ablative, that cannot be finally settled, the matter must simply remain in abeyance. It so happens that in Lu. 8:29f. we have all eight cases used if πολλῷς χρόνοις be here locative and not instrumental. It may serve as a good exercise to discriminate in this passage each of the cases and explain the distinctive meaning and the result in this special context. The cases have kept us for a good while, but the subject is second to none in importance in Greek syntax. Nowhere has, comparative philology shed more light than in the explanation according to historical science of the growth and meaning of the Greek cases.
CHAPTER XII

ADVERBS (ἙΙΠΠΗΜΑΤΑ)

I. Special Difficulties. See chapter VII (Declensions) for discussion of the origin, formation and history of adverbs. The matter will come up again in chapter XIII (Prepositions) where the so-called "improper" prepositions are treated. Brugmann\(^1\) has no syntactical handling of the subject, though Delbruck\(^2\) gives an exhaustive presentation of the matter. But even Delbruck gives less than a page to the purely syntactical phases of the adverb (p. 643), whereas Winer\(^3\) treats the adverb only under syntax.

(a) NATURE OF THE ADVERB. The first difficulty is in deciding what is an adverb. As shown in chapter VII, the adverb not only has great variety in its origin, but also wide expansion in its use. In simple truth a large portion of the "parts of speech" are adverbs. Brugmann\(^4\) pointedly says that it is not possible to draw a sharp line between adverb, particle and preposition. The development of adverb into preposition, conjunction, intensive particle and even interjection was illustrated in chapter VII with perhaps sufficient fulness. To this list may be added the negative particles which are really adverbs. In particular in the Sanskrit is there difficulty in the treatment of preposition and conjunction as distinct from adverb, since the indeclinable words were less distinctly divided.\(^5\) But this vagueness applies to other members of the Indo-Germanic group.\(^6\) In Greek and Latin no distinct line can be drawn between adverbs and prepositions.\(^7\)

(b) THE NARROWER SENSE OF ADVERB. These wider and more specialized forms of the adverb must be dropped out of view

\(^1\) Griech. Gr., pp. 250-257.
\(^3\) W.-Th., pp. 462-473.
\(^4\) Griech. Gr., p. 250. On final s in adv. see Fraser, Cl. Quarterly, 1908, p. 265.
\(^6\) Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 536.
\(^7\) Giles, Man., p. 341.
before we can do anything with the mere adverb which is not preposition, conjunction, particle nor interjection. There is a good deal that needs to be said concerning the syntax of the mere adverb, for, in spite of its being a fixed case-form, it has a varied and interesting usage in the Greek sentence. The adverb has been treated by the grammars as a sort of printer's devil in the sentence. It has been given the bone that was left for the dog, if it was left.

II. Adverbs with Verbs.

(a) COMMONEST USE. This is indeed the etymology of the word and the most frequent use of the pure adverb. But one cannot say that this was the original use, as the name ἐπιρρήματα might suggest. The truth is that the adverb has such a varied origin that it is difficult to make a general remark on the subject that will be true. Only this may be said, that some adverbs began to be used with verbs, some with adjectives, some absolutely, etc. At first they were not regarded as strictly adverbs, but were used progressively so (cf. χάριν) until with most the earlier non-adverbial uses ceased.

(b) N. T. USAGE. Winer1 suspects that the N. T. writers did not understand the finer shades of meaning in the Greek adverbs, but this is true only from the point of view of the Attic literary style and applies to the vernacular κοινή in general. But he is wholly right in insisting on the necessity of adverbs for precise definition in language. The grammarians find offence2 in the adverbs of the κοινή as in other portions of the vocabulary. Some of the "poetic" adverbs in Winer's list are at home in the papyri as in the N. T., like εὐαρέστως. A few examples will suffice for the normal usage in the N. T. See the majestic roll of the adverbs in.

Heb. 1:1, πολυμερῶς καὶ πολυτρόπως πάλαι. Cf. σπουδαιοτέρως (Ph. 2:28), περισσοτέρως and τάχειον (Heb. 13:19), περαιτέρω (Ac. 19:39) as examples of comparison.

(c) PREDICATIVE USES WITH γίνομαι AND εἰμί. There is nothing out of the way in the adverb with γίνομαι in 1 Th. 2:10, ὃς ὄσίως καὶ δικαίως καὶ ἀμέμπτως ὕμιν τοῖς πιστεύωσιν ἐγενήθημεν. Here the verb is not a mere copula. Indeed εἰμί appears with the adverb also when it has verbal force. Thus καθὼς ἀληθῶς ἐστίν (1 Th. 2:13) is not equivalent to καθὼς ἀληθεία ἐστίν. Cf. καθὼς ἐστίν ἀληθεία ἐν τῷ Ἰησοῦ (Eph. 4:21). So also ἡ γένεσις οὕτως ἦν (Mt. 1:18), εἰ οὕτως ἐστίν ἡ αἰτία τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Mt. 19:10), τοῦ οὕτως εἶναι (1 Cor. 7:26). Cf. 1 Cor. 7:7. The adverb in all these instances is different from the adjective. Cf. τί με ἐποίησας οὕτως (Ro. 9:20) for

---

1 W.-Th., p. 462.
2 Ib., p. 463.
a similar predicate use of the adverb. Cf. also οὕτως πεσών and
οὕτως ὁ θεὸς ἐν ὑμῖν ἐστίν (1 Cor. 14:25) and ἀληθῶς in Mt. 14:33.
In Ph. 4:5, 6 ὁ κύριος ἐγγύς, the copula ἐστίν is to be supplied and
here the adverb is not far from the adjective idea. Cf. also
πάρρω δύνας (Lu. 14:32), μακράν (Mk. 12:34), ἢσα (Ph. 2:6).

(d) WITH Ἐχω. It has some idiomatic constructions with the
adverb that are difficult from the English point of view. Thus
τό χακώς ἐχουτας (Mt. 14:35), and with the instrumental case
in Mk. 1:34. Cf. Lu. 7:2. In English we prefer the predicate
adjective with have (He has it bad), whereas the Greek likes the
adverb with ἔχω. So ἔσχάτως ἔχει (Mk. 5:23) and in Jo. 4:52
κομψότερον ἔσχεν the comparative adverb. One must be willing for
the Greek to have his standpoint. Cf. οὗτως ἔχει in Ac. 7:1 and
πάρρω ἀπέχει (Mk. 7:6). Πώς ἔχουσιν (Ac. 15:36) needs no com-
ment. It is a common enough Greek idiom. Cf. βαρέως ἔχουσα,
P.Br.M. 42 (B.C. 168).

(e) WITH PARTICIPLES. ᾽Αμα ἐλίζων (Ac. 24:26) belongs to
the discussion of participles. But one may note here ἢδη τεθνηκότα
(Jo. 19:33) and ὡς μελλοντας (Ac. 23:15). Cf. also the use of
ἥδη with παρῆλθεν (Mt. 14:15), a matter that concerns the aorist
tense. But note both νῦν and ἢδη with ἐστίν in 1 Jo. 4:3.

(f) LOOSE RELATION TO THE VERB or any other part of the
sentence. So ἀκμῆν (cf. ἔτι) in Mt. 15:16 and τὴν ἄρχῃν in Jo.
8:25, for this accusative is really adverbial. Cf. also τῷ λοιπόν
(Ph. 3:1), τούματι (Gal. 2:7).

III. Adverbs Used with Other Adverbs. There is, to be sure,
nothing unusual about this either in Greek or any other tongue.
So πολύ μᾶλλον (Heb. 12:9), μᾶλλον κρείσσον (Ph. 1:23), μᾶλλον
περισσότερον (Mk. 7:36) are merely normal uses barring the double
comparative in the two examples which, however, have their own
explanation. The compound adverbs, which are common in the
N. T. (as ὑπερπερισσόως, Mk. 7:37; cf. πολυτρόπως in Heb. 1:1),
call for no more explanation than other compound words. Cf.
καθόκου (Ac. 4:18). The Greek, like the German, easily makes
compound words, and the tendency to long compound words
grows with the history of language. See ἀπερισκάστως in 1 Cor.
7:35. For compound adverbs see chapter VII, (c) . For the
comparison of adverbs see ib., (e).

IV. Adverbs with Adjectives. A typical illustration is found
in 1 Tim. 3:16, ὁμολογουμένως μέγα. So οὕτω μέγας in Rev. 16:18.
The instances are not very numerous in the N. T., since indeed,
especially in the Gospels, the adjective is not excessively abundant.
In Ac. 24:25, τὸ νῦν ἔχον, the participle being both verb and adjective, causes no difficulty. In Ac. 23:20, ὡς μέλλων τι ἀκριβε- στερον πυνθάνεσθαι περὶ αὐτοῦ, we have the adverbial use of τι as well as ἀκριβεστερον. Cf. ἀπερισπάστως with εὐπάρεδρον in 1 Cor. 7:35.

V. Adverbs with Substantives. Here indeed one may recall that the substantive as well as the adjective gives a basis for this idiom (cf. Jordan River). Νῦν is a typical example in the N. T. Thus we find ἐν τῷ νῦν καιρῷ (Ro. 3:26), τῇ νῦν Ἱερουσαλήμ (Gal. 4:25), ξωῆς τῆς νῦν (1 Tim. 4:8), τὸν νῦν αἰώνα (2 Tim. 4:10). Here indeed the adverb has virtually the force of the adjective, just as the substantive in this descriptive sense gave rise to the adjective. The English can use the same idiom as "the now time," though this particular phrase is awkward. The Greek has so much elasticity in the matter because of the article which gives it a great advantage over the Latin.1 Cf. also ἡ δὲ ἄνωτρος χήρα (1 Tim. 5:5), ἡ δὲ ἄνω Ἱερουσαλήμ (Gal. 4:26), τῆς ἄνω κλήσεως (Phi 3:14), ὁ τότε κόσμος (2 Pet. 3:6).

VI. Adverbs Treated as Substantives.2 The very adverbs named above may be here appealed to. It is especially true of words of place and time. Thus ἐκ τῶν ἄνω εἰμί (Jo. 8:23), τὸ ναῖ (2 Cor. 1:17), τὰ ἄνω (Col. 3:1 f.), τὰ νῦν (Ac. 5:38), ἔως τοῦ νῦν (Mk. 13:19), ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν (Lu. 1:48) and often. Cf. τοῖς ἐκεί, (Mt. 26:71), τὰ ὑδε (Col. 4:9). So πλησίου always in the N. T. save once as preposition with genitive (Jo. 4:5). It usually has the article (Mt. 5:43), but may be used without it in the nominative case (Lu. 10:29). A striking instance of the adverb treated as substantive appears in χωρὶς τῶν παρεκτός (2 Cor. 11:28). Other examples of the adverb with the article are ἄχρι τοῦ δεύτερο (Ro. 1:13), ἐκ τῶν κατώ (Jo. 8:23), εἰς τὰ ὀπίσω (Mk. 13:16), τοῖς ἐξω (1 Cor. 5:12), τὸ ἐξωθεν καὶ τὸ ἐσωθεν (Lu. 11:40), εἰς τὸ ἐμπροσθεν (Lu. 19:4). In τοῖς μακράν and τοῖς ἐγγύς (Eph. 2:17) the adverb is rather adjectival in idea. In τῇ ἐξῆς (Ac. 21:1) we have to supply, of course, ἡμέρα, though the text of Lu. 7:11 reads ἐν τῷ ἐξῆς. Here the adverb is treated rather as an adjective, but the point of distinction between the use as substantive and adjective is not always clear. Cf. also ἡ αὕριον (Mt. 6:34), περὶ τῆς σήμερον (Ac. 19:40). But it is not merely when the adverb has the article that it is treated as a substantive. Prepositions are used with adverbs without any article. Then it is not always clear whether we have two words or one. Thus editors print ὑπὲρ ἐκείνα as well as ὑπερέκεινα (2 Cor. 10:16), ὑπὲρ ἐκ περίσσου as well as ὑπερεκ-
perissou? (Eph. 3:20), ὑπὲρ λίαν as well as ὑπερλίαν (2 Cor. 11:5). Cf. ἔπειτα, ἔπαυν, ἐφάπαξ, and ἔστω ἄρτι in 1 Cor. 15:6. Thus ἀπὸ πέρυσι (2 Cor. 9:2), ἀπ᾿ ἀνωθεν ἔστω κάτω (Mk. 15:38), ἀπ᾿ ἁρτι (Mt. 23:39), ἀπὸ μακρόθεν (Mt. 27:55), ἀπὸ πρώ (Ac. 28:23), ἀμα πρώ (Mt. 20:1), ἔστω ἄρτι (Mt. 11:12), ἔστω τρίς (Lu. 22:34), ἔστω ἐπτάκις (Mt. 18:21), ἔστω ἔκε (Ac. 21:5), ἔστω ἐσω (Mc. 14:54), ἔστω πότε (Mt. 17:17), ἔστω ὦδε (Lu. 23:5), etc. For this doubling of adverbs see ἐκτῶς εἰ μή (1 Cor. 14:5) in the realm of conjunctions. Moulton (Prol., p. 99) finds in the papyri ἐκ τότε, O.P. 486 (ii/A.D.), and note ἀπὸ πέρυσι, (Deissmann, B. S., p. 221).

VII. The Pregnant Use of Adverbs. Just as the prepositions ἐν and εἰς are used each with verbs of rest and motion (and παρά, with locative or accusative), so adverbs show the same absence of minute uniformity. ἤποι, for instance, is absent from both the LXX and the N. T., as is ὅποι. Instead we find ποὺ ὑπάγει (Jo. 3:8) and ὅπου ἐγὼ ὑπάγω (Jo. 13:33), but πόθεν ἔρχεται (Jo. 3:8) and ὅθεν ἔξηλθον (Mt. 12:44). So also ἔρχεται ἐκεί (Jo. 18:3) like our "come here." But on the other hand in Ac. 22:5, ἐξων καὶ τοὺς ἐκεῖσε ὄντας, the usual word would be ἐκεῖ. But ἐκεῖσε is regular in Ac. 21:3. Winer1 calls this an "abuse" of language, which putting it rather too strongly, since it is found in the best Greek. It is largely a matter of usage, for with ὦδε and ἐνθαδέ the ideas of hic and hoc had long coalesced, while ἐξωθέν, ἐσωθέν, κάτω mean both 'without' (Mt. 23:27) and 'from without' (Mk. 7:18), 'within' (Mt. 7:15) and 'from within' (Mk. 7:23), 'below' (Mt. 4:6) and 'from below' (Jo. 8:23). Cf. μετάβα ἐνθέν ἐκεί. (Mt. 17:20) and ἐνθέν-ἐκείθεν (Lu. 16:26). In Mt. 25:24, 26, συνάγων ἔδεν οὐ διεσκόρπισας, we have ἐκείθεν οὐ merged into ἐθέν by attraction. In οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἡταλίας (Heb. 13:24) it is uncertain what standpoint the writer takes. With ἐκ we have not only the normal idiom like τοὺς ἐκ περιτομῆς (Ro. 4:12) and οἱ ἐκ τῆς Καίσαρος οἰκίας (Ph. 4:22), but the pregnant use where Ev could have occurred. Thus ἀραὶ τὰ ἐκ τῆς οἰκίας (Mt. 24:17) with which compare ὁ εἰς τὸν ἄγρυν (Mk. 13:16, ἔν in Mt. 24:18). Cf. ὁ πατὴρ ὁ ἐξ οὐρανοῦ in Lu. 11:13, though some MSS.2 do not have the second ὁ. The correlation of adverbs belongs to the chapter on Pronouns.

VIII. Adverbs as Marks of Style. Thus ἄρτι is not found in Mark, Luke, James, Jude nor Hebrews, though fairly often in Matthew, John and Paul. ὅν, on the other hand, is frequent throughout the N. T. as a whole. Abbott3 has an interesting dis-

---

1 W.-Th., p. 472.  
2 Blass, Cr. of N. T. Gk., p. 258.  
3 Joh. Cr., pp. 22 ff.
eussion of καὶ νῦν, in John and Luke. Νῦν is found only in Acts, Paul and Hebrews, the most literary portions of the N. T. Then again Mark has abundant use of εὐθύς, but not εὐθέως, while Matthew employs both. John uses each only three times. Abbott\(^1\) notes that wherever Matthew uses εὐθύς it is found in the parallel part of Mark. Εὐθέως prevails in Luke (Gospel and Acts). Abbott insists on difference in idea in the two words, εὐθέως (‘immediately’), εὐθύς (‘straightway’). So in Matthew τότε is exceedingly common, while in 1 Cor. ἔπειτα is rather frequent, though the two words have different ideas. Then again ἐγγύς is more common in John than all the Synoptists together.\(^2\) The context must often decide the exact idea of an adverb, as with ἐκαθέζετο οὐτῶς (Jo. 4:6). Cf. ὥς ἦν ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ (Mk. 4:36).

**IX. The Adverb Distinguished from the Adjective.**

(a) **DIFFERENT MEANING.** The adjective and the adverb often mean radically different things. Thus in Jo. 8:29, ὅτι ἀφίηκεν με μόνον, the adjective μόνον means that 'he did not leave me alone.' As an adverb; if the position allowed it, it would be 'not only did he leave, but' etc., just the opposite. In 2 Tim. 4:11 μόνος means that Luke is *alone* with Paul. So in Lu. 24:18 σὺ μόνος may be contrasted with μόνον πιστεύσων, (Lu. 8:50). The point is specially clear with πρῶτος and πρῶτον. Thus in Ac. 3:26 we have ὑμῖν πρῶτον ἀναστήσας, not ὑμῖν πρῶτοις. It is not 'you as chief,' but 'the thing is done first for you.' So also Ro. 2:9 (Ἰουδαίου τε πρῶτος καὶ Ἑλληνος). But in 1 Jo. 4:19 note ἡμεῖς ἀγαπῶμεν, ὅτι αὐτὸς πρῶτος ἡγάπησεν ἡμᾶς. 'God is the first one who loves.' Cf. also ἴδαν πρῶτος εἰς τὸ μνημεῖον (Jo. 20:4) where John is the first one to come to the tomb. In Jo. 1:41 the MSS. vary between πρῶτος and πρῶτον (W. H.). One can but wonder here if after all πρῶτος is not the correct text with the implication that John also found his brother James. The delicate implication may have been easily overlooked by a scribe. Cf. also the difference between ἐλάλει ὄρθως (Mk. 7:35) and ἀνάστησθι ἐπί τοὺς πόδας σου ὄρθός (Ac. 14:10). The English has a similar distinction in "feel bad" and "feel badly," "look bad" and "look badly." We use "well" in both senses. Cf. ἐδράοις in 1 Cor. 7:37.

(b) **DIFFERENCE IN GREEK AND ENGLISH IDIOM.** But the Greek uses the adjective often where the English has the adverb. That is, the Greek prefers the personal connection of the adjective with the subject to the adverbial connection with the verb. So we have αὐτομάτη ἡ γῆ καρποφορεῖ, (Mk. 4:28) and αὐτομάτη ἡνοίγη

\(^1\) Ib., p. 20.  
\(^2\) Ib., p. 19.
(Ac. 12:10). In Lu. 21:34 the same construction is found with ἐφυνίδιος ἡ ἡμέρα ἐκεῖνη. The ancient Greek idiom of the adjective rather than the locative of time appears in Ac. 28:13, δευτεράδιον ἡ θεομεν. So ὁ θρηνιν. (Lu. 24:22). The same use of the adjective rather than the adverb meets us in 1 Cor. 9:17, εἰ γὰρ ἐκών τούτῳ πράσσω—εἰ δὲ ἄκων, just as we see it in the ancient Greek. Cf. the Latin. nolens volens. See Ro. 8:20. In μέσος the Greek has an adjective that we have to use a phrase for. Thus μέσος ὑμῶν στῆκει (Jo. 1:26), there stands in the midst of you.' Cf. a very different idea in ἡμέρας μέσης (Ac. 26:13), 'middle of the day.'

X. Adverbial Phrases.

(a) INCipient adverbs. Some of these are practically adverbs, though they retain the case-inflection and may even have the article. Thus τὴν ἀρχήν, (Jo. 8:25), τὸ λοιπὸν (Ph. 3:1), τουναυτίου (Gal. 2:7), τὸ πρῶτον (Jo. 12:16), τὸ πρότερον (Jo. 6:62), τὸ πλείστου (1 Cor. 14:27), τὸ καθ’ ἡμέραν (Lu. 19:47), τὸδ λοιπὸν (Eph. 6:10), etc. These expressions are not technically adverbs, though adverbial in force. Cf. also the cognate instrumental like χαρὰ χαίρει (Jo. 3:29). So O.P. 1162, 5 (iv/A.D.).

(b)-prepositional phrases. These adjuncts have the substantial force of adverbs. Indeed there is little practical difference in structure between ἀπὸ πέρπατο (2 Cor. 9:2) and ὑπερβλάστων (2 Cor. 11:5), ὑπερβάλατω (Eph. 4:10) and ἕως κάτω (Mk. 15:38). Since the uncial MSS. had no division between words, we have to depend on the judgment of the modern editor and on our own for the distinction between an adverb like παραχρῆμα (Lu. 1:64) and an adverbial phrase like παρὰ τούτῳ (1 Cor. 12:15). Cf. also ἐπειδήκειν (Ac. 7:43), ὑπερέκεινα (2 Cor. 10:16), καθόλου (Ac. 4:18). In Ro. 7:13 καθ’ ὑπερβολήν is used with an adjective. Other examples are κατὰ ἓδιαν (Mt. 14:13), κατὰ μόνας (Mk. 4:10), κατὰ ἐκουσίου (Phil. 14), κατὰ ἐνιαυτόν (Heb. 10:1), ἐκ δευτέρου (Mk. 14:72), ἐκ ψυχῆς (Col. 3:23), ἐξ ἀρχῆς (Jo. 6:64), ἀπὸ ἀρχῆς (2 Th. 2:13), εἰς κενὸν, (Ph. 2:16), ἐν ἀληθείᾳ (Mt. 22:16), ἐν πρώτω (1 Cor. 15:3), ἐν δικαιοσύνη (Ac. 17:31), ἐπὶ ἀληθείᾳ (Lu. 22:59), καθ’ ἡμέραν (Mk. 14:49), ἐν νυκτί, (1 Th. 5:2), ἐν ἐκτενείᾳ, (Ac. 26:7), ἀπὸ μέρους (Ro. 11:25), ἐκ μέρους (1 Cor. 12:27). Cf. μέρος τι, 11:18), κατὰ μέρος (Heb. 9:5), ἀπὸ μιᾶς (Lu. 14:18), εἰς τὸ παντελῆ (Heb. 7:25). With μέσον we have quite a list, like ἀνὰ μέσον (Mt. 13:25), ἐκ μέσου (Mt. 13:49), εἰς τὸ μέσον (Mk. 6:47), διὰ μέσου (Lu. 4:30), διὰ μέσου (Lu. 17:11), εἰς τὸ μέσον (Lu. 5:19), εἰς μέσον (Mk. 14:60), κατὰ μέσου (Ac. 27:27), μέσον, (Ph. 2:15). In Mk. 14:30 adverb and phrase occur together, στῆμεν ταύτῃ τῇ νυκτί. This is not a
complete list by any means, but it will suffice to illustrate the point under discussion. A striking example is found in 1 Cor. 12:31, καθ' ὑπεβολὴν ὁδὸν ὑμῖν δείκνυμι, where the adverbial phrase has practically the force of an adjective with ὁδὸν. Clearly, then, many of the adverbs grew out of these prepositional phrases like παραιτικά (2 Cor. 11:17), ἐκπαλαι (2 Pet. 2:3), etc. Cf. even νουν- εχώς (Mk. 12:34).

(c) PARTICIPLES. Some participles come to be used adverbially. This is not merely true of adverbs made from participles, like οὖνως (Mk. 11:32), ὑμολογουμένως (1 Tim. 3:16), ὑπερβαλλόντως (2 Cor. 11:23), but it also applies to τῷ ὑμῖν (Ro. 7:23), τῷ νῦν ἔχου (Ac. 24:25), τυχόν (1 Cor. 16:6) and verbs like ἀναγκαστῶς (1 Pet. 5:2). Besides, the intensive use of the participle is adverbial in effect like ἐυλογῶν ἐυλογήσω σε (Heb. 6:14). Then again a case like ψευδόμενοι (Mt. 5:11) is in point. Cf. θέλων in Col. 2:18. See also προσθείς ἔπευ (Lu. 19:11) which Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 258) compares with προσθείσα ἐτέκευ (Gen. 38:5). See chapter on Verbal Nouns.

(d) THE VERB USED ADVERBIALLY. This is, Of course, not true technically, but only in the result. The old Greek idiom with λαμψάω and φθάσω, where the participle expressed the chief idea and the verb was subordinate, occurs twice in the N. T. So ἔλασθον τινες ἐξενισαντες (Heb. 13:2) and προέφθασεν λέγων (Mt. 17:25). But it must be borne in mind that the Greek idiom is perfectly consistent in this construction, as 'they escaped notice in entertaining,' 'he got the start in saying.' Cf. λάβροι elsewhere in N. T. It is not necessary Ac. 12:16, ἐπέμενεν κρούων, to take the verb as an adverb in sense. It is simply, 'he continued knocking.' The infinitive may likewise present the chief idea as in προέλαβεν μυρίσαι (Mk. 14:8), προσέβεται ρέμψαι (Lu. 20:11 f.), like the Heb. יְרִיבָּה נַעַשָׁה. But in Mk. 12:4 we have the regular Greek idiom1 πάλιν ἀπέστειλεν. Cf. Ac. 12:3 προσέβετο συλλαβεῖν. This idiom is exceedingly common in the LXX.2 In Lu. 6:48, ἔσκαψεν καὶ ἔβαθυνεν ('he dug and went deep'), we have an idiom somewhat like our English vernacular "he went and dug," "he has gone and done it," etc. Cf. Ro. 10:20 ἀποτομῶν καὶ λέγει, Mt. 18:3 ἔαν μὴ στρα- φήτε καὶ γέννησθέ. But I doubt if θέλω with the infinitive is to be taken in the N. T. either adverbially or as the mere expletive for the future tense. In Jo. 7:17 θέλη ποιεῖν means 'is willing to do.' So in Jo. 8:44, etc. The text is obscure in Col. 2:18 and

1 W.-Th., p. 468.
2 C. and S., Sel. from the LXX, p. 97.
there \( \Theta \ell \omega \nu \) may have an adverbial force. Blass\(^1\) conceives that in Mt. 6:5, \( \phi \iota \lambda \omicron \theta \sigma \iota \upsilon \ldots \pi \rho \sigma \epsilon \nu \chi \varepsilon \sigma \theta \alpha \), we may translate ‘gladly pray.’ But what advantage has this over 'love to pray,' 'are fond of praying'?

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 258. Cf. W.-Th., p. 467.
CHAPTER XIII

PREPOSITIONS (ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ)

I. The Name. As is often the case, so here the name describes a later development, not the original, nor the essential, idea.

(a) SOME POSTPOSITIVE. Prepositions may indeed be postpositive like the Latin mecum, the Greek τούτου χάριν, τέκυσιν πέρι (anastrophe). In the Turkish tongue\(^1\) they are all postpositive. And Giles \((\text{Manual}, \, \text{p. 341})\) thinks that ὅμοιοι ἀπὸ is earlier than ἀπό ὅμοιοι.

(b) NOT ORIGINALLY USED WITH VERBS. Moreover, the name implies that they properly belong with verbs \((\text{praev-verbia}, \piροθέσεις)\). But we now know that the use with verbs was a much later development. There are indeed in Greek no "inseparable" prepositions, which are used only in composition with verbs. In the Attic, outside of Xenophon, σύν, was used mainly in composition.\(^2\) In the N. T. ἀμφι is found only with compound words like ἀμφιβάλλω, ἀμφιέννυμι. In the Sanskrit most of the verbal prefixes can be traced to adverbs with cases.\(^3\)

(c) EXPLANATION. Hence the name must be explained. The later grammarians used the term for those adverbs which were used in composition with verbs and in connection with the cases of nouns. Both things had to be true according to this definition. But it will be seen at once that this definition is arbitrary. The use with verbs in composition was the last step, not the first, in the development. Besides, what is to be said about those adverbs that are used, not with verbs, but with cases, and no longer appear as mere adverbs? Take ἄνευ, for instance, with the ablative. It is not found in composition with verbs nor by itself

\(^1\) Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 95.
\(^2\) Monro, Hom. Gr., pp. 123, 147. Courtoz (Les Prefixes en Grec, en Lat. et en Francais, 1894, p. 51) says: "Outre les dix-huit prepositions que nous venons de passer en revue, il y a encore, en grec, quelques particules inseparables, qui s'emploient comme prefixes dans les mots composés. Ces particules sont ἃ, ἄρι ou ἕρι, δυς, κα et νη." But these are not the "prepositions" under discussion.
\(^3\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 414.
apart from a noun. It is, of course, a preposition. The grammars call it an "improper" or adverbial preposition. It is only "improper" from the standpoint of the definition, not from that of the Greek language. The truth seems to be that by preposition one must mean a word used with cases of nouns and many of which came to be used in composition with verbs. The facts do not square with the other definition.

II. The Origin of Prepositions.

(a) ORIGINALLY ADVERBS. This is now so well recognised that it seems strange to read in Winer\(^1\) that "prepositions e.g. often assume the nature of adverbs, and vice versa," even though he adds "that the prepositions are adverbs originally." Giles\(^2\) puts the matter simply and clearly when he says: "Between adverbs and prepositions no distinct line can be drawn." Thus even in Homer \(\alpha\mu\nu\mu\acute{f}\acute{i}\ \pi\epsilon\rho\acute{i}\), etc., appear still as adverbs.\(^3\) Delbruck\(^4\) goes a bit further and says that originally the prepositions were place-adverbs. Brugmann\(^5\) qualifies that to "mostly," and he adds that we cannot draw a sharp line between the use as adverb and the use as pre-verb or preposition.\(^6\)

(b) REASON FOR USE OF PREPOSITIONS. "The preposition is, therefore, only an adverb specialized to define a case-usage."\(^7\) This definition gives the reason also. The case alone was enough at first to express the relation between words, but, as language developed, the burden on the cases grew heavier. The analytic tendency in language is responsible for the growth of prepositions.\(^8\) The prepositions come in to help out the meaning of the case in a given context. The notion, therefore, that prepositions "govern" cases must be discarded definitely. Farrar\(^9\) clearly perceived this point. "It is the case which indicates the meaning of the preposition, and not the preposition which gives the meaning to the case." This conception explains the use and the non-use of a preposition like \(\acute{e}\nu\), for instance, with the locative, \(\acute{e}\pi\omicron\) or \(\pi\epsilon\rho\acute{a}\) with the ablative, etc. In the Sanskrit the prepositions do not exist as a separate class of words, though a good many adverbs are coming to be used with the oblique cases (except the dative) to make clearer the case-idea.\(^10\)

---

1 W.-Th., p. 356.  
2 Man., etc., p. 341.  
5 Griech. Gr., p. 429.  
6 Ib., p. 430.  
7 Giles, Man., etc., p. 341.  
8 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 94.  
9 Ib.  
(c) VARYING HISTORY. The adverbs that come to be used with the cases vary greatly in their history. Some cease to be used as adverbs, as σὺν, for instance. Others continue (besides the use with cases and with verbs) to be employed occasionally as adverbs (ἀνά ἑκ, Rev. 21:21; κατὰ ἑκ, Mk. 14:19; ὑπὲρ ἐγὼ, 2 Cor. 11:2). Some are used both with nouns, and in composition with Verbs, like ἐν, περί and the other seventeen "proper" classical prepositions. Ἀμφί occurs only in composition. Others are not used in composition with verbs, but are no longer mere adverbs like ἄνευ. Others are employed both as adverb and with cases of noun's, like ἀμφα, εἴω, etc. Some occur both as preposition and conjunction, like ἄχρι, μέχρι, ἔως, πλῆν. Some figure as substantive, adverb and preposition with case, like χάριν.

III. Growth in the Use of Prepositions.

(a) ONCE NO PREPOSITIONS. As already noted, in the Sanskrit there is no separate class of prepositions, though a number of adverbs are already coming to be used as prepositions, and verbs have some prefixes. Some adverbs in Greek are occasionally used with cases, like ἀξίως and the genitive, but are not prepositions. Here we see the use of prepositions started, tentatively at any rate. We may suppose a time further back in the history of the Judo-Germanic tongues when no adverbs were used with cases, when the cases stood All alone.

(b) THE PREPOSITIONS STILL USED AS ADVERBS IN HOMER. Not only do the "adverbial" prepositions have their usual freedom, but a considerable number of adverbs are found in composition with verbs. Homer marks a distinct advance over the Sanskrit in the increase of prepositions. There is in Homer a real class of prepositions. But in Homer the limitation of the preposition to cases of nouns aid composition with verbs is far from being established. Ἀμφί, ἐν, etc., may be simply adverbs, ‘on both sides,’ 'inside.'1 So common is the separation of the preposition from the verb that the term tmesis is used for it, but no strict line can be drawn between this usage and the ordinary adverb.2

(c) DECREASING USE AS ADVERBS AFTER HOMER. It is not common thereafter for the eighteen classical prepositions, those used in composition with verbs as well as with cases of nouns, to occur separately as adverbs. It is not common, but still possible. This list comprises ἀμφί, ἄνα, ἀντί, ἀπό, διά, εἰς, εἴ, ἐν, ἐπί, κατά, μετά, παρά, περί, πρό, πρός, σὺν ὑπέρ, ὑπό. Now these words were used with steady increase so that one of the marks of later

---

1 Monro, Hom., Cr., p. 123.  
2 Ib., p. 124.
Greek is the abundance of compound verbs as well as the more extensive use of these prepositions with the various cases. Not only is this true, but continually new adverbs joined the already large list of adverbial prepositions employed with cases. In a word, as Blass remarks, the use of a preposition with nouns was "a practice which in the course of the history of the language became more and more adopted in opposition to the employment of the simple case." The Emperor Augustus was noted for his excessive use of prepositions in his effort to speak more clearly (quod quo facilius exprimeret, Suetonius). Other Latin writers show the same tendency.

(d) SEMITIC INFLUENCE IN N. T. The N. T. writers were once supposed to make such free use of prepositions because of the Hebrew and Aramaic. But the N. T. does not make abundant use of all the prepositions. ἀμφί has dropped out entirely save in composition, and ἀνά, is nearly confined to the distributive use and ἀνά μέγερον, a sort of compound preposition. It occurs only 12 times, omitting the adverbial use in Rev. 21:21. ἀντί appears 22 times, but as Moulton explains, five of these are due to ἀνά ω. But ἀπό is very abundant in the N. T., as are διά, εἰς, ἐκ, ἐν, ἐπί, κατά, μετά, ἐπός. But παρά, περί, πρό, σύν, ὑπέρ, ὑπό are, like ἀνά already going the way of ἀμφί. Krebs has made a careful study of the prepositions in Polybius, as Helbing has done for Herodotus and Johannesson for the LXX. They show the same general tendency towards the increased use of some prepositions to the disuse of others. For the N. T., Moulton has made a careful calculation which is worth reproducing. Εν and εἰς far outnumber any of the other prepositions in the N. T. And ἐν leads εἰς by a good margin. Moulton takes ἐν as unity and finds the other N. T. prepositions ranging as follows: ἀνά .0045, ἀντί .008, ἀπό .24, διά .24, εἰς .64, ἐκ .34, ἐπί .32, κατά .17, μετά .17, παρά .07, περί .12, πρό .018, πρός .25, σύν .048, ὑπέρ .054, ὑπό .08.

The three commonest prepositions in Herodotus 10 are εἰς, ἐν and ἐπί in this order. In Thucydides and Xenophon the order is ἐν,

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 121.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 100.
4 Ib.
5 Die Prap. bei Polyb., 1882; cf. p. 3.
6 Die Prap. bei Herod. und andern Hist., 1904.
7 Johannesson, Der Gebr. der Casus und der Prap. in der Sept., T1. I, 1910.
8 Prol., p. 98.
9 Ib., p. 62.
10 See Helbing, Prap. bei Herod., p. 8 f., for the facts here used.
\(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\) and \(\varepsilon\pi\iota\). But Xenophon varies the order of frequency in his various books. In Polybius the three chief prepositions are \(\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\), \(\pi\rho\omicron\zeta\), \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\); in Diodorus; \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\ \kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\), \(\pi\rho\omicron\zeta\); in Dionysius \(\varepsilon\nu\ \varepsilon\pi\iota\), \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\); in Josephus (\(\text{War}\)) \(\pi\rho\omicron\zeta\), \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\ \kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\), (\(\text{Ant.}\)) \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\), \(\varepsilon\pi\iota\), \(\pi\rho\omicron\zeta\); in Plutarch \(\varepsilon\nu\), \(\pi\rho\omicron\zeta\), \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\). In the N. T. the three main ones, as seen above, are \(\varepsilon\nu\), \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\), \(\varepsilon\kappa\), though \(\varepsilon\pi\iota\) is not far behind \(\varepsilon\kappa\).

In the literary \(\kappa\omicron\nu\nu\eta\) it will be seen that the use of \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\) is nearly double that of \(\varepsilon\nu\), whereas in the N. T. its is ahead of \(\varepsilon\nu\) only in Mark and Hebrews.\(^1\) In the vernacular \(\kappa\omicron\nu\nu\eta\), \(\varepsilon\nu\) makes a rather better showing. The large increase of the adverbial prepositions in the N. T., as in the \(\kappa\omicron\nu\nu\eta\), calls for special treatment a little later. It may be here remarked that they number 42, counting varying forms of the same word like \(\delta\pi\iota\sigma\theta\epsilon\upsilon\nu\), \(\delta\pi\iota\sigma\varsigma\omega\).

(c) **IN MODERN GREEK.** The varying history of the eighteen prepositions goes still further.\(^2\) Thus \(\acute{\alpha}v\tilde{\iota}(\varsigma)\) survives in the vernacular as well as \(\acute{\alpha}v\circ\ (\acute{\alpha}\varrho\acute{\epsilon}\), \(\delta\iota\alpha\ (\gammai\alpha\), \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\ (\acute{\epsilon}\zeta\ , \varsigma\), \(\mu\epsilon\tau\alpha\ (\mu\epsilon\), \(\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\ (\kappa\alpha\) and \(\omega\varsigma\). Cf. Thumb, *Handb.*, pp. 100 ff. The bulk of the old prepositions drop out in the mediaeval period. Their place is supplied largely by the later prepositional adverbs, as \(\acute{\alpha}v\acute{\alpha}\) by \(\acute{\alpha}v\omega\), \(\acute{\epsilon}\zeta\) by \(\acute{\epsilon}\zeta\omega\), but partly also by a wider use of the remaining prepositions, as \(\varepsilon\iota\varsigma\) for \(\varepsilon\nu\) and \(\pi\rho\omicron\zeta\), \(\mu\epsilon\) for \(\sigma\upsilon\nu\). Then again all prepositions in the modern Greek use the accusative case as do other adverbs, and sometimes even with the nominative (\(\gammai\alpha\ \sigmao\rho\omicron\phi\omicron\zeta\), 'as a sage').

In a sense then the Greek prepositions mark a cycle. They show the return of the accusative to its original frequency. They have lost the fine distinctions that the old Greek prepositions once possessed when they were used to help out the ideas of the cases. They drop out before the rise of other prepositions which more clearly exhibit the adverbial side of the preposition. The so-called improper prepositions are more sharply defined in modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, pp. 107 ff.). But in the N. T. the prepositions have not gone so far in their history.

**IV. Prepositions in Composition with Verbs.**

(a) **NOT THE MAIN FUNCTION.** As has already been shown, this was not the original use of what we call prepositions, though this usage has given the name to this group of words. Besides it debar one technically from calling those numerous adverbs prepositions which are used with cases, but not used in composition with verbs. But no "inseparable" prepositions were developed

---

\(^1\) Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 62.

in Greek, apart from the similar use of ἀμφί already mentioned. In most dialects ἀμφί was obsolete (Buck, *Gk. Dialects*, p. 102). In modern Greek ἀνά--, παρά-- and ἕκ—(ἐκ) are used chiefly in composition (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 99), but ὁχεί occurs with accusative.

(b) PREPOSITION ALONE. Sometimes indeed the preposition is used alone (ellipsis) and the verb has to be supplied, as in οὐκ ἔνι (Gal. 3:28) for οὐκ ἔνεστι. So ὑπερ ἐγὼ in 2 Cor. 11:23. Cf. ἀλλ’ ἀνα (‘but up!’) in Homer. This ellipsis does not differ greatly from the common use of *imises* in Homer, where the preposition is regarded more as an adverb.

(c) INCREASING USE. The use of prepositions in composition increased with the history of the Greek language. One characteristic of the later Greek is the number of compound verbs employed. This is a matter partly of impression and will remain so till one “χαλκέντερος grammarian” arrives "who will toil right through the papyri and the koine literature." No one is anxious for that task, but Krebs is able to say that verbs compounded with prepositions play a noteworthy role in the later Greek. This is not simply true of new compounds like ἔν-κακέω, etc., but there is a growing tendency to use the compounds, especially those with διά, κατά and σύν, to express what in the oldest Greek could be sufficiently indicated by the simplex. The N. T. does not indeed show as lavish a use of compound verbs as does Polybius, the chief representative of the literary koine of his time. But these διπλα belonged to the language of the people in Aristotle's time and the papyri show a common use of compound verbs. As compared with Polybius the N. T. makes less use of certain verbs, but the matter varies with different verbs and different Writers.

---

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 123.
2 The LXX in particular shows a great variety of uses of the prep. with verbs, partly clue to transl. from the Heb., partly to the koine. Cf. C. and S., p.88, for list. Cf. Johannesohn, Der Gebr. d. Casus and der Prap. in der LXX.
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 115.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 70.
7 Mayser, Gr. d. griech. Pap., pp. 486 ff. Kuhring (de praepositionum Graecarum in chartis Aegyptiis usu quaestiones selectae, 1906) and Rossberg (de praep. Grace. in chartis Aegypt. Ptol. aetatis usu, 1909) have both attacked the problems in the pap., as Geyer (Observationes epigraphicae de praep. Graec. forma et usu, 1880) has done for the inser.
8 Moulton, Prol., p. 116 f. The great work on prepositions is Tycho Mommsen's Beitr. zu der Lehre von den griech. Prap., 1895.
(d) REPETITION AFTER VERB. Sometimes the preposition is repeated after verb, as in the older Greek. The prepositions most frequently repeated are ἀπό, ἐξ, εἰς, ἐν, ἐπί. This is partly because these prepositions are so common in the N. T. and partly because they emphasize the local notions of 'from,' 'in,' or 'upon,' and 'to' or 'into.' Perhaps also the preposition in composition is, a bit worn down. The papyri and inscriptions show the same repetition of the preposition, though hardly so frequently, if one may judge by his impressions. See ἀπήλθεν ἀπό αὐτοῦ (Mk. 1:42). With ἀπό indeed Winer finds that for the most part the preposition is repeated in the N. T. Thus we note also ἀπαρθη ἀπὸ αὐτῶν (Mt. 9:15), ἀφαιρέται ἀπό ἐμοῦ (Lu. 16:3, but not so in 10:42), ἀπηλλάχθη ἀπό αὐτοῦ (Lu. 12:58), ἀπεθάνετε ἀπὸ τῶν στοιχείων (Col. 2:20), ἀπό αὐτῶν ἀποβάντες (Lu. 5:2), ἀπέπεσαν ἀπὸ τῶν ὀφθαλμῶν (Ac. 9:18), ἀπορφανισθέντες ἀφ’ ὑμῶν (1 Th. 2:17), ἀφορίσει ἀπό ἀλλήλων (Mt. 25:32), ἀπεσπάσθη ἀπό αὐτῶν (Lu. 22:41), ἀποστρέψει ἀπὸ Ἰακώβ (Ro. 11:26), ἀποχωρείτε ἀπό ἐμοῦ (Mt. 7:23), ἀπόστητε ἀπό ἐμοῦ (Lu. 13:27, but not 2:37).

Likewise ἐκ may be repeated as with ἐκβάλλει ἐκ τοῦ θεσαυροῦ (Mt. 13:52), ἐκ σοῦ ἑξελεύσεται (Mt. 2:6), ἐξαιρούμενος ἐκ τοῦ λαοῦ (Ac. 26:17), ἑξελεξάμην ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου (Jo. 15:19), ἐκ τῆς κατὰ φύσιν ἑξεκόπης (Ro. 11:24), ἐξεπεσαν ἐκ τῶν χειρῶν (Ac. 12:7), ἐκπορευόμενον ἐκ τοῦ στόματος (Mt. 15:11), ἐκφυγεῖν ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου (Ac. 19:16).

Verbs compounded with εἰς "uniformly repeat εἰς" (Winer-Thayer, p. 430). So, for instance, εἰσήγαγον (Lu. 22:54), εἰσίνεια (Ac. 3:3), εἰσῆλθεν (Mt. 2:21), εἰσπορεύονται (Mt. 1:21), εἰσφέρεις (Ac. 17:20), but see Ac. 28:30 (εἰσ—πρός).

With ἐν we observe the repetition in some verbs appears, though often εἰς occurs instead both where motion is implied and where the idea is simply that of rest (pregnant construction). As is well known, ἐν and εἰς are really the same word. Hence the rigid distinction between the two prepositions cannot be insisted on. There are two extremes about εἰς and ἐν, one to blend them entirely because of alleged Hebraism, the other to insist on complete distinction always. As a rule they are distinct, but εἰς frequently encroached on ἐν, where one has to admit the practical identity, like εἰς οἶκον ἐστιν (Mk. 2:1, marg. in W. H.), ὁ ὦν εἰς τοῦ κόλπου τοῦ πτρός (Jo. 1:18), etc. For the frequent LXX examples see Conybeare and Stock, p. 81. Still, for the sake of uniformity, only examples of ἐν are here given, like ἐμβάψας ἐν τῷ τρυβλίῳ (Mt. 26:23), ἐμβριμώμενος ἐν ἑαυτῷ (Jo. 11:38), ἐνεγραμμένη ἐν τοῖς

¹ W.-Th., p. 427.
καρδίας (2 Cor. 3:2), ἐνδήμοιητες ἐν τῷ σώματι (2 Cor. 5:6), ἐνεργῶν ἐν ὑμῖν (Ph. 2:13), ἐνέμειναν ἐν τῇ διαθήκῃ (Heb. 8:9), ἐνοικεῖτω ἐν ὑμῖν (Col. 3:16), ἐντυφωνεῖτε ἐν ταῖς ἀπάταις (2 Pet. 2:13).

A number of verbs have ἐπὶ repeated, such as ἐπιβεβηκὼς ἐπὶ with accusative (Mt. 21:5), ἐπιβάλλει ἐπὶ with accusative (Lu. 5:36), ἐπηρέων ἐπὶ ἐμέ (Jo. 13:18), ἐφαλάμενος ἐπὶ αὐτοῦς (Ac. 19:16), ἐπεκείνηται ἐπὶ σε (Lu. 1:35), ἐπίδει ἐπὶ τὰς κτλ. (Ac. 4:29) ἐπέκειτο ἐπὶ αὐτῷ (Jo. 11:38), ἐπέβλεψεν ἐπὶ τὴν κτλ. (Lu. 1:48), ἐπέσεν ἐπὶ αὐτῶν (Lu. 1:12), ἐπὶ οὐδενὶ αὐτῶν ἐπιπεπτωκός (Ac. 8:16), ἐπιρίψαντες ἐπὶ αὐτῶν (1 Pet. 5:7), ἐπιθέασιν ἐπὶ τοὺς κτλ. (Mt. 23:4), ἐποικόδομεν ἐπὶ τῶν κτλ. (1 Cor. 3:12), ἐποικοδομήθεντες ἐπὶ τῶν κτλ. (Eph. 2:20).

As to διά not many verbs have it repeated, but note διαπορεύονται αὐτῶν διὰ σπορίμων (Lu. 6:1), διεσώθησαν δι' ὕδατος (1 Pet. 3:20), διέρχεται δι' ἀνύδρων (Mt. 12:43), διήρχετο διὰ μέσων (Lu. 1:11).

A similar rarity as to repetition exists in the case of κατά, but we note κατηγορεῖτε κατ' αὐτοῦ (Lu. 23:14), κατακαυχάσθηκε κατὰ τῆς ἀληθείας (Jas. 3:14).

Very seldom is παρά repeated as in παρελάβετε παρ' ἡμῶν (1 Th. 4:1), cf. 1 Th. 2:13; 2 Th. 3:6).

Περί is repeated with more verbs than παρά. Thus περιαστράψαι περὶ ἐμέ (Ac. 22:6), περιεζωσεμένοι περὶ τὰ κτλ. (Rev. 15:6), περικείται περὶ τὸν κτλ. (Lu. 17:2), περιεσπάτο περὶ πολλὰν (Lu. 10:40).

Πρό, like μετά, shows no example of repetition in the critical text, though some MSS. read προπορεύσῃ πρὸ προσώπου (for ἐνώπιον) in Lu. 1:76.

As examples of πρός repeated take προσκολληθῆσαι πρὸς τὴν κτλ. (Eph. 5:31), προσέπεσεν πρὸς τοὺς κτλ. (Mk. 7:25), προσετέθη πρὸς τοὺς κτλ. (Ac. 13:36). It is seldom repeated.

As a lonely example of σὺν repeated see συνεξωσοποίησεν σὺν αὐτῷ (Col. 2:13).

We have no example of ὑπό repeated and but one of ὑπὲρ in some MSS. (not the critical text) for Ro. 8:26 (ὑπερενευχαίνει-ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν).

(c) DIFFERENT PREPOSITION AFTER VERB. Once more, a different preposition may be used other than the one in composition. This is, of course, true where the meaning differs radically, as in συνακολουθοῦσαι ἀπὸ (Lu. 23:49), but even when the prepositions do not differ very greatly. Thus εἰς frequently follows compounds of ἐν as ἐμβάντεις πλοῖον (Mt. 8:23), ἐμβαλεῖν εἰς τὴν γένναν (Lu. 12:5), ἐμβαπτόμενος εἰς τὸ κτλ. (Mk. 14:20), ἐμβλέψατε εἰς τὸ κτλ.
In general the varying of the preposition is pertinent and is to be noted. So, for instance, ἀπό, ἐκ, παρά. Here παρά calls attention to the fact that one is beside the place or person whence he starts; ἀπό merely notes the point of departure, while ἐκ distinctly asserts that one had been within the place or circle before departing. Cf. therefore Mt. 3:16 ἀνέβη ἀπὸ τοῦ ὕδατος and Mk. 1:10 ἀναβαίνων ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος. Thus ἀπό follows παραβαίνω in Ac. 1:25, παραλαμβάνω in 1 Cor. 11:23, παραφέρω in Mk. 14:36, and παρέρχομαι in Mt. 5:18. Verbs compounded with ἐκ (besides ἐκ) may have ἀπό as ἐκκλίνω in 1 Pet. 3:11, or παρά as ἔξερχομαι, in Lu. 2:1, while ἐκπορεύομαι shows either ἐκ (Mt. 15:18), ἀπό (Mt. 20:29) or παρά (Jo. 15:26). So compounds of κατά use either ἀπό as καταβαίνω (Lu. 9:54) or ἐκ as ἐκβαίνω (Jo. 6:41). See further discussion under separate prepositions.

Compounds of ἀνά likewise are followed by εἰς as with ἀναβαίνω (Mt. 5:1), ἀνάγω (Lu. 2:22), ἀναβλέπω (Lu. 9:16), ἀναλαμβάνωμαι (Mk. 16:19), ἀναπίπτω (Lu. 14:10), ἀναφέρω (Lu. 24:51), ἀνέρχομαι (Gal. 1:18); or by ἐπί as ἀναβαίνω (Lu. 5:19), ἀναβιβάζω (Mt. 13:48), ἀνακάμπτω (Lu. 10:6), ἀνακλίνομαι (Mt. 14:19), ἀναπίπτω with accusative (Mt. 15:35) or genitive (Mk. 8:6), ἀναφέρω (1 Pet. 2:24); or by πρός as ἀναβαίνω (Jo. 20:17), ἀνακάμπτω (Mt. 2:12), ἀναπέμπω (Lu. 23:7). As a rule πρός refers to personal relations while εἰς and ἐπί differ in that ἐπί more distinctly marks the terminus. But the line cannot be drawn hard and fast between these prepositions, because ἐπί and πρός show a variation. Thus verbs compounded with ἐπί may be followed by εἰς as in ἐπιβάλλω (Mk. 4:37), ἐπιβαίνω (Ac. 20:18), ἑραίρω (Lu. 18:13), ἐφικνέομαι (2 Cor. 10:14). ἐπιγράφω is even followed by ἐν in Ac. 17:23. On the other hand, πρός may be followed by ἐπί as in προστίθημι (Mt. 6:27) or ἐν as in προσμένω (1 Tim. 1:3). And even εἰσείμι has πρός in Ac. 21:18 and εἰσφέρω has ἐπί (Lu. 12:11). Διά, in composition may be followed by εἰς as in διαβαίνω (Ac. 16:9), πρός (Lu. 16:26) or ἀνά (1 Cor. 6:5), etc.

Compounds with μετά usually have εἰς, like μεταβαίνω (Lu. 10:7 both ἐκ and εἰς), μεταλλάσσω (Ro. 1:26), μετανοέω (Mt. 12:41), μεταπέμπομαι (Ac. 10:22), μεταστρέψω (Ac. 2:20), μετασχηματίζω (1 Cor. 4:6), μετατίθημι (Ac. 7:16), μετατρέπω (Jas. 4:9), μετοικίζω (Ac. 7:4). But μεταδίδωμι (Ro. 12:8) and μεταλλάσσω (Ro. 1:25) have ἐν.
Περιάγω is followed by ἐν in Mt. 4:23. As to πρό in Lu. 1:17 we have προελεύσεται followed by ἐνώπιον.

Verbs compounded with σύν may have μετά (cf. the displacing of σύν by μετά, in modern Greek) as in συναίρω (Mt. 25:19), συναφεῖς (Mt. 17:3), συγκατεστήσατε μετά τῶν ἔνδεκα ἀποστόλων (Ac. 1:26). But note συνάγω εἰς (Mt. 3:12), ἐπὶ (27:27) and πρός (Mk. 7:1), ἐπί (1 Cor. 11:20) and εἰς (11:33 f.).

For ὑπερφορμεῖν παρά see Ro. 12:3. Cf. ὑπορβάλλω ἐπὶ in 2 Cor. 9:14 and ὑπεραίρομαι ἐπί in 2 Th. 2:4.

With ὑπό we find a number of prepositions especially with ὑπάγω, as μετά (Mt. 5:41), εἰς (9:6), ἀπό (13:44), πρὸς (Jo. 13:3), ἐν (Jas. 2:16), with which compare ὁπίσω (Mt. 16:23) and μεταξὺ (18:15). Cf. also ὑποστρέφω with εἰς (Lu. 1:56) and ἐπί (Ac. 8:28). Delicate shades of meaning will be found in all these prepositions without undue refinement. See Conybeare and Stock, p. 88, for different prepositions with verbs in the LXX.

(f) SECOND PREPOSITION NOT NECESSARY. But it is not always necessary for any preposition to follow the compound verb. Often the preposition with the verb may be followed by the case that is usual with the preposition without much regard to the verb itself. That is to say, the preposition in composition may be tantamount in result to the simple verb followed by that preposition. This is not always true, but it sometimes happens so. It is not necessary to give an exhaustive list. As examples we may note the following: Ἐπιπίπτειν αὐτῷ (Mk. 3:10) with the dative may be compared with τὴς χάριτος ἐξεπέσατε (Gal. 5:4) with the ablative. Here the two prepositions and the cases correspond exactly. The instrumental case is illustrated by συνχάρητε μοι (Lu. 15:6). Cf. also the ablative in Lu. 10:42 with ἀφαιρεθήσεται. As an example of the locative take ἐμμένειν τῇ πίστει (Ac. 14:22). An example of the genitive is seen in σου καταμαρτυροῦσιν (Mt. 26:62). Cf. also Mt. 16:18) and of the accusative in τὴν ἀλυσίν ταύτην περικείμαι (Ac. 28:20) where a change of standpoint takes place, since the chain is around Paul. Cf. Heb. 12:1. In a case like διεπορεύοντο τὰς πόλεις (Ac. 16:4) one may either regard the accusative as loosely associated with the preposition (cf. διὰ μέσου in Lu. 17:11) or consider that the preposition has made an intransitive verb transitive (see next point). See ch. XI for further exx.

(g) EFFECT OF PREPOSITION ON MEANING OF THE VERB. Sometimes there is no effect at all. The preposition is merely local as in ἐξέρχομαι, 'go out.' The preposition may be "perfactive" and
merely intensify the meaning of the verb, as in κατεσθίω ('eat up'), καταδιώκω ('hunt down'). The preposition is sometimes weakened in idea as in ἀποδέχομαι, ἀποκρίνομαι. Prepositions in composition sometimes change the meaning of the verb and blend with it. A resultant meaning arises with a new construction. The use of διά alluded to above may be a case in point. Thus take διαβαίνω with accusative (Heb. 11:29), διέρχομαι (Lu. 19:1). The use of διαπλέω with the accusative in Ac. 27:5 is probably the result of the preposition in composition. See also προαίρεω ὑμᾶς in sense of 'go before' (Mt. 26:32). Cf. further ἀποδεκατοῦν, μεταδίδωμι συνκλείειν. These examples will suffice, though they could be multiplied easily.

(h) DROPPING THE PREPOSITION WITH SECOND VERB. Winer¹ denies that we have in the N. T. an instance of the old Greek idiom of using the preposition with the first verb and dropping it with the repeated verb though really retained in sense. But Moulton² seems to show that the N. T. does offer some examples of this construction, like the κατήγοιν, ἢγοιν, ἢγοιν, of Euripides' Bacchides, 1065 (English 'pulled down, down, down,' Moulton).³ He cites παρέλαβοι, ἐλαβοι (Jo. 1:11 f.); προσεγράφη, ἐγράφη (Ro. 15:4); ἔξεσαν, ἐραυνώντες (1 Pet. 1:10 f.); ἐπενδυσασθαί, ἐνδυσάμενοι (2 Cor. 5:3); ἀντιστήναι, στήναι (Eph. 6:13); κατέγαροι, ἔφαγοι (Rev. 10:10). These are certainly possible illustrations, though I have doubts about 2 Cor. 5:3 and Eph. 6:13. In Eph. 6:13 especially στήναι, is stronger alone than with ἀντί. I do not agree that in 1 Cor. 12:2 we have an illustration in ἢγεσθε ἀπαγόμενοι.

(i) INTENSIVE OR PERFECTIVE. There is still another very common use of the preposition in composition. It is that of mere adverb and intensifies or completes the idea of the verb. Sometimes the frequent use of the compound form tends to obscure this adverbial idea. Thus in ἀποκρίνομαι the force of ἀπό has largely faded and in ἀποθνῄσκω it is quite obscure. Doubtless 'die off' was the original idea for the one, as 'answer back' for the other. The appeal to the original usage will explain the force of the preposition. But in most instances the idea is very clear, as in συνκαλεῖ τοὺς φίλους (Lu. 15:6), 'calls his friends together.' This common function of the preposition in all the Indo-Germanic tongues was probably the original use with verbs. At any rate it is common enough in English, though we usually separate verb and preposition. We say "up-set" as well as "setup," but they

¹ W.-Th., p. 433. ² Prol., p. 115, ³ Ib.
mean different things. We all see the adverbial force in "come home," "come back," "come away," etc., but it is the adverb just as truly in "fore-close," "pre-clude," etc. Indeed, prepositions when compounded are etymologically pure adverbs. The English may be compared with the Homeric Greek in the separateness of the adverb from the verb.\(^1\) In German the compound use of the preposition is very extensive, but later Greek and Latin illustrate it abundantly.\(^2\) The German prepositions are either inseparable or detachable. As applied to the meaning of the verb the term "perfective" is used for the force of the preposition, but it is not a very happy designation, since one is at once reminded of the perfect tense with which it has nothing to do.\(^3\) Moulton gives a number of luminous examples such as θυήσκω 'to be dying,' ἀποθανεῖν, 'to die (off)'; φεύγειν 'to flee,' διαφυγεῖν 'to escape (flee clean through)'; διώκω 'to pursue,' καταδιώκω 'to hunt down'; τηρεῖν 'to watch,' συντηρεῖν 'to keep safe'; 'to work,' ἔργαζεσθαι 'to work,' κατεργάζεσθαι 'to work out (down to the end),' etc. The preposition in this "perfective" sense does have a bearing on the present and aorist tenses of any given verb, but that phase of the matter belongs to the discussion of the tenses. Indeed, not all of the N. T. verbs by any means show examples of this "perfective" use of the preposition. Moulton\(^4\) notes this absence, as compared with Polybius, in the case of ἀρχομαι, θεάμαι, θεωρέω, λογίζομαι, κυνδυνεύω, μέλλω, ὁργίζομαι, πράσσω. He finds that the papyri support this "perfective" use of the preposition as between simplex and compound. N. T. illustrations are interesting. Thus σπάομαι (Mk. 14:47) is used of Peter's drawing his sword (note voice), but διασπασθῇ (Ac. 23:10) expresses the fear that Paul may be drawn in two. So ἔργαζομαι is a common verb for doing work (as Mk. 14:6), but κατεργάζομαι accent the carrying of the work through as in Ph. 2:12, and in verse 13 ἐνεργεῖν is used for the idea of in-working as contrasted with the out-working or development taught by κατεργάζεσθαι. Cf. also μηδὲν ἐργαζομένους ἀλλὰ περιεργαζομένους (2 Th. 3:11) where the whole idea turns on περί, 'doing nothing but doing about' is a free rendering. The same distinction is seen between ἔσθις 'to eat' (Mt. 15:2) and κατεσθίω 'to eat up (down)' in Lu. 20:47. Cf. also ἐφαγον (Mt. 6:25) and κατέφαγον (Mt. 13:4). As one further illustration note ἀρτί γινώσκω ἐκ μέρους (1 Cor. 13:12) and τότε δὲ ἐπιγνώσομαι καθώς καὶ ἐπιγνώσθην (ib.). In general, on the whole subject of prepositions in composition see Delbruck, Ver-

\(^1\) Moulton, Prol., p. 112.  
\(^2\) Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 815.  
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol., p. 111.  
\(^4\) Prol., p. 116.

(j) DOUBLE COMPOUNDS. It is always interesting to note the significance of both prepositions. As noted in chapter V, Word Formation, iv, (c), these double compounds are frequent in the κοινή and so in the N. T. The point to emphasize here is that each preposition as a rule adds something to the picture. There are pictures in prepositions if one has eyes to see them. For instance, note ἀντι-παρ-ήλθεν (Lu. 10:31 f.), συν-ἀντι-λάβηται (10:40. Cf. Ro. 8:26. First known in LXX, but now found in papyrus and inscriptions third century B.C. Cf. Deissmann, *Light.*, p. 83), ὑπερ-ἐν-τυγχάνει, (Ro. 8:26), ἀντι-ἀνα-πληρώ (Col. 1:24), συν-παρα-λα-βεῖν (Ac. 15:37), προσ-ἀνα-πληρώ, (2 Cor. 9:12), ἀντι-δια-τίθεμαι, (2 Tim. 2 : 25), etc.

V. Repetition and Variation of Prepositions. A few words are needed in general on this subject before we take up the prepositions in detail.

(a) SAME PREPOSITION WITH DIFFERENT CASES. Sometimes the same preposition is used with different cases and so with a different resultant idea. Take διά, for instance. In 1 Cor. 11:9 we have: οὐκ ἐκτίσθη ἀνὴρ διὰ τὴν γυναικέα, while in verse 12 we read ἀνήρ διὰ τῆς γυναικὸς. In Heb. 2:10 the whole point turns on the difference in case, δι’ ὑπὸ τὰ πάντα καὶ δι’ οὗ τὰ πάντα. In Heb. 11:29 the verb with διὰ in composition has the accusative while διά alone has the genitive, διέβησαν τὴν Ἑρυθρὰν θάλασσαν ὃς διὰ ξηρᾶς γῆς. Cf. διὰ μέσου (Lu. 4:30) and διὰ μέσου (Lu. 17:11). But the resultant idea is here the same. Ἔπι is a pertinent illustration.

In Rev. 5:1 we find ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν and ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου, while in Rev. 11:10 observe ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς and ἐπὶ αὐτοῖς. Cf. also Rev. 14:6. So again in Mt. 19:28 note ἐπὶ θρόνου and ἐπὶ θρόνοις and in Mt. 24:2 ἐπὶ λίθων, but λίθος ἐπὶ λίθῳ in Lu. 21:6. Cf. ἐπὶ τοῦ and ἐπὶ τὴν in Rev. 14:9. So ἐλπίζω ἐπὶ with dative in 1 Tim. 4:10 and accusative in 5:5. This is all in harmony with the ancient Greek idiom.

For an interesting comparison between the Synoptic and the Johannine use of prepositions and the varying cases see Abbott, *Johannine Vocabulary*, pp. 357-361. The variation is especially noticeable in διά, ἐπὶ and παρά. The LXX shows abundant use of the preposition after verbs. Cf. Conybeare and Stock, *Selections from the LXX*, p. 87 f., and Johannessohn, *Der Gebrauch* etc.

In some stereotyped formulm one notes even in modern Greek ἀπὸ καραδίας, μετὰ βίας, κατὰ διαβόλου (Thumb, *Handb.*, pp. 103 ff.).
(b) REPETITION WITH SEVERAL NOUNS. When several nouns are used with the same preposition the preposition is repeated rather more frequently than in the earlier Greek.\(^1\) Winer\(^2\) thinks that the repetition occurs only when the two or more substantives do not come easily under the same category. Within limits this is true (cf. repetition of the article), but there is rather more freedom in the later Greek on this point. In Jo. 4:23 we do have a similar idea in the phrase ἐν πνεύματι καὶ ἀληθείᾳ as in ἀπὸ φίλου καὶ προσδοκίας in Lu. 21:26 Cf. ἐν Λύστροις καὶ Ἰκονίῳ (Ac. 16:2), but in verse 1 observe καὶ εἰς Δέρβην καὶ εἰς Λύστραν, where perhaps the double conjunction plays some part. Indeed with καὶ — καὶ or τε — καὶ the preposition is commonly repeated. Thus καὶ ὀλίγω καὶ ἐν μεγάλω (Ac. 26:29), ἐν τε τοῖς δεσμοῖς μου καὶ ἐν τῇ ἀπολογίᾳ (Ph. 1:7). With disjunctive conjunctions the repetition is usual also, as ἀπὸ ἀκαθόρου ἢ ἀπὸ τριβόλων (Mt. 7:16). With antithesis the repetition is the rule, as μὴ ἐν σοφίᾳ ἄλλο ἐν δυνάμει (1 Cor. 2:5. Cf. also verse 4). But one cannot properly insist on any ironclad rule when he considers a case like ἀπὸ Μωυσέως καὶ ἀπὸ πάντων τῶν προφητῶν (Lu. 24:27), πρὸς Σίμωνα Πέτρου καὶ πρὸς τὸν Ἀλλόν (Jo. 20:2), ἐν δυνάμει καὶ ἐν πνεύματι ἀγίῳ καὶ ἐν πληροφορίᾳ (1 Th. 1:5). In a comparison again the preposition is repeated, as ἐπὶ αὐτοῦς—ὡσπερ καὶ ἐφ’ ἡμᾶς (Ac. 11:15). But even with disjunctive conjunctions the preposition is not always repeated, as ἐπὶ δυσὶν ἢ τρισὶν (Heb. 10:28). In Ac. 26:18 ἀπὸ is not repeated, though εἰς occurs in one member of the sentence and ἐπὶ in the other. In Jo. 16:8 περὶ is repeated for rhetorical reasons, περὶ ἀμαρτίας καὶ περὶ δικαιοσύνης καὶ περὶ κρίσεως. Cf. Eph. 6:12 where the repetition occurs without a conjunction, πρὸς τάς ἁρχὰς, πρὸς τᾶς ἐξουσίας, πρὸς τοὺς κοσμοκράτορας, etc. Cf. also Jo. 17:9.

(c) REPETITION WITH THE RELATIVE. The preposition is not always repeated with the relative. Usually the classic authors did not repeat the preposition with the relative when the antecedent had it.\(^3\) So the N. T. shows similar examples, as ἐν ἡμέρας αὐς ἐπέιδεν (Lu. 1:25), εἰς τὸ ἔργον ὁ προσκέκλημα (Ac. 13:2), ἀπὸ πάντων ὥν (Ac. 13:39), etc. But the repetition is seen in such examples as εἰς τὴν γῆν τάφυν, εἰς τὴν (Ac. 7:4); ἀπὸ πρῶτης ἡμέρας, ἡφ’ ἥς (Ac. 20:18). In Jo. 4:53, ἐκείνη τῇ ὕρα ἐν ἥ the preposition occurs with the relative, but not with the antecedent. However, there is very little difference between the mere locative case and ἐν added. Especially noticeable\(^4\) is a case where the antecedent is

---

1 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 158.  
2 W.-Th., p. 420.  
3 W.-Th., p. 422.  
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 174.
not expressed and the relative has the preposition of the antecedent. So περὶ ὄν (ii, in Jo. 17:9 is equal to περὶ τούτων οὕς δέδωκάς μοι. Cf. εἰς ὄν (Jo. 6:29).

(d) CONDENSATION BY VARIATION. Once more, the variation of the preposition is a skilful way of condensing thought, each preposition adding a new idea. Paul is especially fond of this idiom. Thus in Ro. 3:22 we note δικαιοσύνη δὲ θεοῦ διὰ πίστεως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰς πάντας. Cf. verses 25 f. A particularly striking example is ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ δ' αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν τὰ πάντα (Ro. 11:36). Cf. also Col. 1:16 ἐν αὐτῷ ἐκτίσθη τὰ πάντα – δ' αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν ἐκτίσταται. Cf. ἐπί, διά, ἐν, in Eph. 4:6. In Gal. 1:1 Paul covers source and agency in his denial of man's control of his apostleship by the use of ἀπὸ and διὰ. See Winer-Thayer, p. 418 f. Cf. also ὑπὸ Κυρίου διὰ τοῦ προφήτου (Mt. 1:22) for mediate and intermediate agent. One should not make the prepositions mere synonyms. Cf. ὑπὲρ (Ro. 5:6), ἀντί (Mt. 20:28), and περί (Mt. 26:28) all used in connection with the death of Christ. They approach the subject from different angles.

VI. The Functions of Prepositions with Cases.

(a) THE CASE BEFORE PREPOSITIONS. Both in time and at first in order. In the Indo-Germanic tongues at first the substantive was followed by the preposition as is still seen in the Greek ἐνεκεν, χάριν, etc. The Greek, however, generally came to put the preposition before the substantive as with compound verbs.

(b) NOTION OF DIMENSION. The prepositions especially help express the idea of dimension and all the relations growing out of that, but they come to be used in various abstract relations also. Indeed it was just the purely "local" cases (ablative, locative and instrumental) that came to lose their independent forms (Moulton, Prol., p. 60 f.), due partly to the increase in the use of prepositions.

(C) ORIGINAL FORCE OF THE CASE. The case retains its original force with the preposition and this fundamental case-idea must be observed. The same preposition will be used with different cases where the one difference lies in the variation in case as already noted. Take παρά, for instance, with the ablative, the locative or the accusative. The preposition is the same, but the case varies and the resultant idea differs radically.

4 K.-G., I, p. 450.
(d) THE GROUND-MEANING OF THE PREPOSITION. This must always be taken into consideration. It is quite erroneous to say that παρά, for instance, means now 'from,' now 'beside,' now 'to.' This is to confuse the resultant meaning of the preposition, case and context with the preposition itself. It is the common vice in the study of the prepositions to make this crucial error. The scientific method of studying the Greek preposition is to begin with the case-idea, add the meaning of the preposition itself, then consider the context. The result of this combination will be what one translates into English, for instance, but he translates the total idea, not the mere preposition. It is puerile to explain the Greek prepositions merely by the English or German rendering of the whole. Unfortunately the Greeks did not have the benefit of our English and German. Kuhner-Gerth well observe that it is often impossible to make any translation that at all corresponds to the Greek idiom.

(e) THE OBLIQUE CASES ALONE WITH PREPOSITIONS. See also ch. XI. The vocative was obviously out of the question, and the nominative only appeared with pure adverbs like ἄνα ἔτις (Rev. 21:21). Cf. Mk. 14:19; Ro. 12:5, καθ' ἔτις. But not all the six oblique cases were used with equal freedom with prepositions. Certainly in the original Indo-Germanic tongues the dative was not used with prepositions. The dative is not originally a "local" case and expresses purely personal relations. Delbruck thinks that the Greek dative did come to be used sometimes with ἐπί in Homer, ἐπὶ ἑρῶς ὁ μάχας ἰσαί (Met. 2:14), ἐπὶ ἥρως ἰσαί (14:14), μακρὸς ἴσα (18:26). But usually even with ἐπί the case is locative, not dative. We do not have two examples of ἐγγύς with the dative, as Ac. 9:38; 27:8. Originally again the genitive was not used with prepositions, but the Greek undoubtedly uses the genitive, though not a "local" case, with some prepositions like ἀντί, διά, ἐπί.

(f) ORIGINAL FREEDOM. That is to say, most of the prepositions could be used with ablative, locative, accusative and some with the genitive or instrumental. But the three first mentioned ('whence,' 'where,' 'whither' cases) called upon most of the prepositions. The dialect inscriptions give many proofs of this matter. Thus ἁπό and ἔξι both appear in the Arcadian and Cyprian dialects

with the locative as well as the ablative. 1 'Αμφί originally occurred with locative, accusative and genitive. The same thing was true of ἐπί, μετά περί and ὑπό (possibly with ablative, not genitive). Indeed περί once used the ablative also. Παρά and πρός were used with locative, accusative or ablative. It is possible indeed that πρός may have been used with five cases, adding true dative and true genitive to the above. 2 In the case of four cases occur (Delbruck) since it apparently used the dative also. Other prepositions once were used with two cases, as ἀνά and ἐν with locative and accusative (even the gen. with ἐν and εἰς like εἰς (ζου), whereas κατά seems to use accusative, genitive, ablative. Πρό originally had locative as well as ablative, while ὑπέρ had ablative (genitive?) and accusative and διά, accusative and genitive. Ἀντί has only genitive, while σύν has only instrumental. 'Αμφί still occasionally occurs in the papyri as a free preposition.

(g) NO ADEQUATE DIVISION BY CASES. It is very difficult, therefore, to make any adequate division of the prepositions by the cases. There were indeed in early Greek two with only one case, eight with two, and eight with three cases. But the point to observe is that the usage varies greatly in the course of the centuries and in different regions, not to say in the vernacular and in the literary style. Besides, each preposition had its own history and every writer his own idiosyncrasies. For the detailed comparison of the prepositions see Helbing, 3 and for the history of the cases with the prepositions see Krebs. 4 But in the Ptolemaic times prepositions are more and more used with the accusative to the corresponding disappearance of the other oblique cases. 5 In particular one must note (cf. ch. XI) the disappearance of the locative, instrumental and dative before the accusative and the genitive, until in the modern Greek εἰς and the accusative have superseded ἐν and the locative and the dative proper also. Even σύν and the instrumental disappear in the modern Greek vernacular before μέ (μετά) and the accusative. 6

(h) SITUATION IN THE N. T. But in the N. T. the matter has not developed that far and the cases are not so much blurred,

4 Die Prap. bei Polyb., p. 6 f.
though the range of the prepositions in the matter of cases is
greatly limited. The seventeen "proper" prepositions (ἀμφί, drops
out) in the N. T. use the cases as will be now shown.

1. Those with One Case. Ἀνά, ἀντί, ἀπό, εἰς, ἐκ, ἐν, πρό, σύν use
only one case, eight as opposed to two in the early Greek (ἀντί
and σύν). The cases used are not the same (accusative with ἀνά
and εἰς; genitive with ἀντί; ablative with ἀπό, ἐκ and πρό; locative
with ἐν instrumental with σύν), but nearly half of the prepositions
have come to one case in the N. T. In the modern Greek all the
prepositions occur usually with the accusative (or even the nom.).
The use of the genitive (abl.) is due to literary influence. The com-
mon proper prepositions in modern Greek are εἰς, ἀπό, μέ, γιά,
and less commonly κατά, παρά, ἀντίς, and in dialects πρός (Thumb,
Handb., p. 98). This tendency towards case simplification is well
illustrated by the so-called improper prepositions which use only
one case (abl., gen. or dat.), though they do not feel the movement
towards the accusative.

2. Those with Two Cases. Five (as opposed to eight) use two
cases: διά, μετά, περί, ὑπέρ, ὑπό. The cases used are genitive and
accusative each with διά, μετά, περί; ablative and accusative with
ὑπέρ and ὑπό. In the case of περί some of the examples can be
explained as ablative (from around), while ὑπό seems, like ὑπέρ, to
use the ablative (cf. Latin sub) and possibly the genitive also.

3. Those with Three Cases. Only four prepositions (as against
eight) retain three cases: ἐπί, κατά παρά, πρός, unless περί, ὑπέρ and
ὑπό have both ablative and genitive. Κατά in Mt. 8:32, ὧρμησεν
κατά τοῦ κρημνοῦ, is used with the ablative. Πρός indeed only has
the ablative once (Ac. 27:34) and that is due to the literary influ-
ence on the N. T.¹ If πρός drops out, only three prepositions
still use three cases, barring περί, ὑπέρ and ὑπό. Of these παρά is
not very common (gen. 78, acc. 60, loc. 50), still less κατά, while
ἐπί is still frequent (acc. 464, gen. 216, loc. 176).

4. Possibly Four with ἐπί. In the case of ἐπί indeed we may
have to admit four cases, if there are examples of the pure dative
like Mt. 18:26, μακροθύμησον ἐπί ἐμοί. But at any rate ἐπί and παρά
alone show the old freedom in the use of the cases.

(i) EACH PREPOSITION IN A CASE. Like other adverbs the
prepositions are fixed case-forms, some of which are still apparent.
Thus ἀντί, is in the locative case, like ἐν, ἐπί, περί. Cf. also προτί
(πρός). The forms διά and ὑπάι occur also (datives). The old dative
παρά occurs, while παρά is instrumental. So ἀνά, διά, κατά, μετά are

¹ Moulton, Prol., p. 106.
in the instrumental case. What ὑπό is we do not know. But the case in which the preposition may be itself has no necessary bearing on the case with, which it is used. It is just a part of the word's own history, but still it is always worth observing.

VII. Proper Prepositions in the N. T.

(a) Ἀνά. The case of ἀνά is not clear. Originally it was ἀνά and may be the same as the Lesbian, Thessalian and Cyprian ὄν. Cf. English "on." It may be compared with the Old Persian and Gothic ana, the Latin and German an. One may compare the Greek ἄνα and Sanskrit ana. The fundamental idea seems to be "on," "upon," "along," like German auf, and this grows easily to "up" like ἄνω in contrast with κατά (κάτω). Homer uses the adverb ἄνα as an ellipsis to mean "up." The locative was once used with ἀνά, but in the N. T. only the accusative occurs. The distributive use may be up and down a line or series, and MSS. give κατά in several of these instances (a common use of κατά also). While ἀνά is very common in composition with verbs in the N. T. (over ten pages of examples in Moulton and Geden's Concordance), only thirteen examples of the preposition alone occur in the N. T. One of these (Lu. 9:3) is absent from W. H. (Nestle retains it), while in Rev. 21:21 (ἀνά ἐς) the word is merely adverb (cf. Homer), not preposition. Of the remaining eleven instances, four are examples of ἀνά μέσον with the genitive, a sort of compound prepositional phrase with the idea of "between" (like Mt. 13:25), similar to the modern Greek ἁνάμεσα, and found in the LXX, Polybius, etc. One (1 Cor. 14:27, ἀνά μέρος, means 'in turn,' while the remaining six are all examples of the distributive use, like ἀνά δύο (Lu. 10:1). The distributive use is in Xenophon. For examples in papyri and inscriptions see Radermacher, p. 15. Cf. our "analogy." In Ac. 8:30, γινώσκεις ἀναγινώσκεις, the point turns on ἀνά—, but it is not clear how ἀνά— turns "know" to "read." See Ac. 10:20 ἀναστὰς κατά-βηθι for contrast between ἀνά, and κατά. Abbott, Johannine Gr., pp. 222 ff., argues at length to show that the one example in John (2:6) is distributive. Ἀνά does not survive in modern Greek vernacular (Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 366). In the papyri ἀνά shows some new compounds not in the N. T., like ἀναπορεύομαι (Mayser,

---

3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 122, cites Polyb.
(b) This preposition is in the locative case of ἀντα. Cf. Sanskrit anti, Latin ante, Lithuanian ant, Gothic ant (-ent), Anglo-Saxon andlang, and-swerian (‘answer’). The root-idea is really the very word "end." Brugmann (Griech. Gr., p. 437) thinks it may mean "front." If so, "in front of" would be the idea of the word in the locative. Cf. ante-room, ἀντίος, ἀντῶ (ἀπ-, ὑπ--), ἐναντίος, 'at the end' (ἀντί). Suppose two men at each end of a log facing each other. That gives the etymological picture, "face to face." The case used with it was originally the genitive and naturally so, though in modern Greek the accusative has displaced it. It is obviously the real adnominal genitive and not ablative (cf. Sanskrit adverb anti) that we have with ἀντί and is like the genitive with the adverbs ἀντα, ἀντίον, ἀντία, and the adjective ἀντίος, etc. In Homer indeed ἀντί has just begun to be used in composition with verbs so that it barely escapes the list of the "improper" prepositions. Blass calls it "one of the prepositions that are dying out," but as a matter of fact it survives in modern Greek. In the N. T. it is used in composition with twenty-two verbs (single compounds) and occurs twenty-two times also with nouns and pronouns. It is not therefore very flourishing in the N. T. It does not occur often in the indices to the papyri volumes, and Mayser gives papyri support for some of the N. T. compounds like ἀνθρώπου ὁμολογέω, ἀντικείμαι, ἀντιλαμβάνομαι. It is absent from the inscriptions of Magnesia and Pergamon (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 115). In some of the compounds the original idea of the preposition comes out finely. Thus in ἀντι-προθεσμίν τῷ ἀνέμῳ (Ac. 27:15) the preposition merely carries on the idea of the ὀφθαλμός. The boat could not look at (‘eye, face to face’) or face the wind. This root-idea is always present in ἀντί and is the basis from which to discuss every example. It is equally plain in a word like ἀντι-προ-ἡλθεν (Lu. 10:31 f.). The priest and Levite passed along on the other side of the road, facing (ἀντί) the wounded traveller. Note ἀντι-βάλλετε in Lu. 24:17, where the two dis-

---

3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 150.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gr., p. 124.
5 Gr. d. griech. Pap., p. 487.
ciples were exchanging words (casting them from one to the other as they faced each other, ἀντί) with one another, an intimate and vivid picture of conversation. Cf. also the contrast between ἀντί and κατά ἑνὸς ἀνθέξεται, (‘cleave to,’ ‘cling to,’ ‘hold one's self face to face with’) καὶ τοῦ ἑτέρου καταφρονήσει (Mt. 6:24). In the double compound συν-ἀντι-λαμβάνεται τῇ ἁπαθείᾳ ἡμῶν (Rom. 8:26; cf. Lu. 10:40) the fundamental meaning is obvious. The Holy Spirit lays hold of our weakness along with (σύν) us and carries his part of the burden facing us (ἀντί) as if two men were carrying a log, one at each end. Cf. ἀντι-λαμβάνεσθαι in Ac. 20:35. The English word "antithesis" preserves the idea also. Note κατηντήσαμεν ἀντικρος Χίου (Ac. 20:15) where in both verb and preposition the idea of face-to-face appears. So ἀπ-ἀντήσει (Mk. 14:13), ἀντί-περα (Lu. 8:26), ἐν-ἀντί-ον (20:26). Now the various resultant ideas grow out of this root-idea because of different contexts. Take the notion of opposition (against). The word does not mean that in itself. The two disciples were talking in a friendly mood (ἀντι-βαλλει), but if a man makes himself king he ἀντι-λέγει τῷ Καισαρι (Jo. 19:12) in a hostile sense. It is the atmosphere of rivalry that gives the colour of hostility. We see it also in the word ἀντί-χριστος (1 Jo. 2:18) ἀντι-πίπετε τῷ πνεύματι (Ac. 7:51). In Lu. 21:15 three instances occur: ἀντι-στηναι, ἀντι-εἰπείν, ἀντι-κείμενοι. Cf. ἀντί-δικος (Mt. 5:25). There is no instance of the uncompounded preposition in this sense. The idea of "in the place of" or "instead" comes where two substantives placed opposite to each other are equivalent and so may be exchanged. The majority of the N. T. examples belong here. In δοθαλμὸν ἀντὶ δοθαλμοῦ, (Mt. 5:38; cf. also ἀντὶ δοθόντος) there is exact equivalence like "tit for tat." So also κακῶ ἀντὶ κακοῦ (Ro. 12:17; 1 Th. 5:15; 1 Pet. 3:9), λοιδορίαν ἀντὶ λοιδορίας (1 Pet. 3:9). None the less does the idea of exchange (cf. ἀντ-ἀλλαγμα, Mk. 8:37) result when a fish and a snake are placed opposite each other, ἀντὶ ἰχθύος ὄφιν (Lu. 11:11) or one's birthright and a mess of pottage (Heb. 12:16). In Mt. 17:27, ἀντὶ ἐμοὶ καὶ σοῦ, there is a compression of statement where the stater strictly corresponds to the tax due by Christ and Peter rather than to Christ and Peter themselves. But in λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν (Mt. 20:28; Mk. 10:45) the parallel is more exact. These important doctrinal passages teach the substitutionary conception of Christ's death, not because ἀντὶ of itself means "instead," which is not true, but because the context renders any other resultant idea out of the question. Compare also ἀντίλυτρον ὑπὲρ πάντων by Paul (1 Tim. 2:6) where both ἀντὶ and ὑπέρ combine with λύτρον
in expressing this idea. Cf. ἀντί-τυπος (Heb. 9:24). In Mt. 2:22 ἀντί τοῦ πατρὸς the substitution takes the form of succession as son succeeds father on the throne. Cf. ἀνθ-ὑπατος (Ac. 13:7). In Jas. 4:15 ἀντί τοῦ λέγειν the result is also substitution, the points of view being contrasted. In Heb. 12:2 the cross and the joy face each other in the mind of Jesus and he takes both, the cross in order to get the joy. The idea of exchange appears also in 1 Cor. 11:15 ή κόμη ἄντι περιβολαίου. Blass considers χάριν ἄντι χάριτος (Jo. 1:16) as "peculiar," but Winer rightly sees the original import of the preposition. Simcox cites from Philo χάριτας νέας ἄντι παλαιοτέρων ἐπιδίδωσιν as clearly explaining this "remarkable" passage. But really has not too much difficulty been made of it? As the days come and go a new supply takes the place of the grace already bestowed as wave follows wave upon the shore. Grace answers (ἄντι) to grace. The remaining examples are five of ἀνθ' ὠν in the sense of 'because' ('therefore'), when two clauses or sentences correspond to each other, one the reason for the other. This is indeed classical enough (LXX also). Similar is ἄντι τοῦ του, (Eph. 5:31) where the LXX (Gen. 2:24), which Paul does not quote, has ἑκεν τοῦ του (cf. Mk. 10:7; Mt. 19:4). There is yet another idea that comes out in composition like ἄντι-ἀπο-δίδωμι (Lu. 14:14) where ἀπό has the meaning of 'back' and ἄντι of 'in return' (cf. "in turn"). Cf. ἄντι-ἀπο-κρίνουμαι (Lu. 14:6) and ἄνθο-ομολογέω (Lu. 2:38). In Col. 1:24, ἄντι-ανα-πληρόω, Paul uses ἄντι in the sense of 'in his turn' (answering over to Christ). As Christ, so Paul fills up the measure of suffering. One may remark that prepositions in composition often best show their original import.

(c) Ἀπό. The etymology of this preposition is very simple. We note the Sanskrit apa, Latin ab, Gothic af, English of, off. Some of the older dialects used the form ἀπό, (Arcad., Cypr., Thess.) and the ἀπαί is to be noted. We may compare ἄψ (ἀπ-ς) with Latin aps (ab: cf. ek, εξ). The case of ἀπό cannot be determined, but observe ἀπαί, above. In the Arcadian and Cyprian eoni is found with the locative, but in the literary Greek only the ablative is used with ἀπό, a case in perfect harmony with the meaning of the word. The nominative ἀπό ὁ ὠν in Rev. 1:4 is,

---

of course, for a theological purpose, to accent the unchangeableness of God. It is one of the most tenacious of the prepositions, being extremely frequent in the N. T. both with nouns and in composition with verbs. Jannaris\(^1\) gives an interesting sketch of the history of \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}\) in the later Greek. In the modern Greek it is used with the accusative (the ablative only in set phrases). This accusative usage is found as early as Hermas.\(^2\) \(\dot{e}k\) finally vanished before \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}\) (cf. \(\dot{e}n\) before \(\dot{e}i\zeta\)), but in the modern Greek \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}\) also supplants to some extent \(\dot{a}v\zeta, \pi\rho\zeta\), and \(\dot{u}\pi\dot{o}\). The explanation of \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}\) is somewhat complicated therefore\(^3\) since the increase of its use is due partly to the general tendency regarding prepositions (cf. \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}\) with ablative instead of the "partitive genitive") and partly to its supplanting other prepositions like \(\dot{e}k, \pi\varphi\dot{a}r\dot{a}, \dot{u}\pi\dot{o}\).

1. **Original Significance.** It can be easily perceived in the N. T. It is clear enough in \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-k\acute{o}pt\dot{w}\), for instance, 'to cut off,' as \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-\dot{e}k\acute{\omega}\varph\nu\) \(\Pi\acute{e}\tau\rho\varsigma\ \tau\omicron\ \omega\tau\iota\nu\omega\) (Jo. 18:26). Cf. \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-\kappa\alpha\lambda\upsilon\tau\omega\), 'to take the veil off,' 'unveil' (cf. Mt. 10:26 for contrast between \(\kappa\alpha\lambda\upsilon\tau\omega\) and \(\dot{a}p\kappa\alpha\lambda\upsilon\)).

So \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-\theta\dot{e}k\acute{k}tikh\), 'a treasure-house for putting things away' (Mt. 3:12). Cf. \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-e\varphi\dot{h}m\iota\tau\acute{e}\nu\) (Mt. 21:33) for 'a man off from home.'

So \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-\dot{e}b\lambda\epsilon\sigma\epsilon\nu\) in Heb. 11:26 and \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-\dot{e}r\omega\nu\tau\epsilon\tau\varsigma\) in 12:2. It is needless to multiply examples from the compound words\(^4\) like \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}-\chi\omega\varph\dot{e}\acute{\omega}\)w. Moulton\(^5\) seems right against Blass\(^6\) in considering \(\dot{w}\zeta\ \dot{a}p\dot{o}\ \sigma\tau\dot{a}d\acute{i}w\nu\) \(\delta\epsilon\kappa\alpha\pi\epsilon\tau\dot{e}nt\epsilon\) (Jo. 11:18) not a real Latinism, but a mere accidental parallel to a *millibus passuum duobus*. The same idiom occurs in Joel 21:8 and also in Rev. 14:20. It is indeed rather late Greek (Strabo, Diodorus and Plutarch), but it is not such a manifest Latinism as Jannaris\(^7\) supposes. It is not the meaning of airs that is unusual here, but merely the position. We say ten miles off, not off ten miles. Cf. \(\dot{a}p\dot{o}\ \dot{w}\acute{r}a\zeta\ \theta\dot{e}\), 'at 9 o'clock,' P. Oxy. 523 (ii/A.D.). The idea of "off" or "away from" is enough to explain the bulk of the N. T. passages. The context as a rule does not alter this simple idea. Thus \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \tau\acute{h}s \Gamma\alpha\lambda\iota\lambda\alpha\iota\varsigma\varsigma\) (Mt. 3:13), \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \tau\omicron\ \dot{u}\dot{d}\alpha\tau\dot{o}\varsigma\) (3:16), \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \dot{a}n\acute{a}t\o\lambda\lambda\acute{\omega}\) (2:1), \(\beta\acute{\alpha}l\epsilon\ \dot{a}p\dot{o} \sigma\omicron\upsilon\) (5:29), \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \tau\omicron\ \dot{p}\nu\eta\rho\rho\upsilon\) (6:13), \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \tau\omicron\ \mu\mu\mu\mu\epsilon\iota\omega\) (Lu. 24:2), \(\dot{a}p\dot{t} \acute{\epsilon}\mu\omicron\upsilon\) (Mt. 7:23), \(k\alpha\tau\acute{e}p\alpha\alpha\upsilon\sigma\epsilon\nu\) \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \pi\acute{\alpha}t\upsilon\nu\omega\) (Heb. 4:4), \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \tau\acute{h}s \dot{w}\acute{r}a\zeta\ \epsilon\kappa\epsilon\iota\nupsilon\varsigma\) (Mt. 9:22), \(\dot{a}p\dot{o} \tau\omicron\ \dot{a}m\alpha\tau\imath\iota\nu\omega\) (Mt. 1:21), \(\dot{a}f\acute{a}\nu\tau\sigma\acute{t} \acute{e}g\epsilon\nu\epsilon\tau\upsilon\dot{e} \dot{a}p\dot{t} \dot{a}t\upsilon\nu\) (Lu. 24:31), \(\acute{a}n\acute{a}\theta\epsilon\mu\alpha\ \dot{a}p\dot{t} \tau\omicron\ \Xr\i\sigma\tau\upsilon\upsilon\) (Rom. 9:3). Here the ablative case and

---

\(^1\) Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 369 ff.

\(^2\) Ib., p. 373.


\(^5\) Prol., p. 102.

\(^6\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 95. Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 227, also sees Lat. influence here.

\(^7\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 371.
the root-idea of the preposition make all clear. The question of place, time, person or abstract relations cuts very little figure in the matter. Wherever the ablative case is natural in Greek, there ἀπό may appear to make clearer the case-idea of source or separation. Conybeare and Stock (p. 84) consider the idiom ἀπό Ἄβραάμ ἐως Δαυείδ (Mt. 1:17) a Hebraism. The construction is in the LXX, but there is nothing un-Greek about it. For ἀπό in expressions of time take ἐφ' ἦς ἡμέρας (Col. 1:9). In Mt. 7:16, ἀπό τῶν καρπῶν ἐπιγυνώσεσθε, the notion of source is the real idea. Cf. διελέξατο αὐτοῖς ἀπό τῶν γραφῶν, (Ac. 17:2). In Ac. 16:33, ἐλούσεν ἀπὸ τῶν πληγῶν, it seems at first as if the stripes were washed from Paul and Silas and not, as here, Paul and Silas washed from the stripes. Winer¹ suggests the addition in thought of "and cleansed." Cf. καθρίσωμεν ἐαυτούς ἀπό παντὸς μολυσμοῦ, (2 Cor. 7:1), which idiom Deissmann (Bible Studies, p. 216) illustrates from the inscriptions, and on p. 227 he further cites from the inscriptions three examples of λούομαι ἀπό in illustration of Ac. 16:33. Cf. ἀπε-ἐνψάτο τὰς χείρας (Mt. 27:24). In Ac. 15:38, τὸν ἀποστάντα ἀπ' αὐτῶν ἀπό Παμφυλίας, no difficulty should be found in the threefold use of ἀπό, since the Greek, unlike the English, loves to repeat words in varying relations. Here we have ἀπό in composition, with persons, with place. See 'Ἀθώς ἀπό τοῦ αἵματος (Mt. 27:24). Certainly there was never any reason for thinking καθαρὸς ἀπό τοῦ αἵματος (Ac. 20:26) a Hebraism, since it is the pure ablative idea, and the usage is continuous from Demosthenes to late Greek writers and papyri.² We even find πλατύς ἀπό τῶν ὠμῶν, Pap. Par. 10, 20 (Radermacher, p. 116). The Pastor Hermae shows ἀπό after ἔγκαρατεύομαι, καθαρίζομαι, παύομαι, φυλάσσομαι, (Radermacher, p. 113). Many similar examples of this simple use of ἀπό occur in the N. T. Cf. the mere ablative with ἀφίστατο (Lu. 2:37) and then with ἀπό (4:13). Cf. ἀπεθάνετε ἀπό (170 (Col. 2:20), μετανοήσαν ἀπό (Ac. 8:22), etc. Like other prepositions ἀπό may occur with adverbs, like ἀπό τότε (Mt. 4:17).

2. Meaning 'Back.' We see it clearly in ἀπο-δίδωμι, 'give back' (Mt. 16:27). But even here the point of view is simply changed. The giver gives from himself to the recipient. In the case of a debt or reward from the recipient's point of view he is getting back what was his due. This idea appears in ἀπολαμβάνω as in Lu. 6:34. A particularly good example is found in ar-

¹ W.-Th., p. 372.
This notion of receipt in full is common ("in countless instances," Deissmann) for ἀπέχω in the ostraca, papyri and inscriptions. Cf. Deissmann, *Light Fr. the Anc. East.*, pp. 110 ff. Cf. τὰν τειμὰν ἀπέχω πᾶςαν (i/A.D., Delphi Inser., Bull. de Corr. Hell., 22, p. 58), ‘I have received the whole price’ for the slave’s manumission. Cf. ἀπέλαβεν τὰ τροφεία, P. Oxy. 37 (A.D. 49). Cf. ἐξεδόμην τὴν ἀποδοχήν, P. Oxy. 1133,16 (A.D. 396). This idiom seems to be confined to composition (cf. ἀπό-κρόμα, 2 Cor. 1:9) and ἀπ-ἀρχή (Ro. 8:23).

3. "Translation-Hebraism" in φοβεῖσθαι ἀπό. Cf. Lu. 12:4.1 In Mt. 10:28, φοβεῖσθε τὸν διων., we have the usual accusative, and in verse 26 we even see φοβηθῆτε αὐτούς; but verse 28 again shows φοβεῖσθε ἀπό. In Lu. 12:1, προσέχετε ἑαυτοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς ζυμῆς, we have the usual ablative as above. Cf. βλέπω ἀπό in Mk. 8:15. Ἀπό in the LXX was used to translate the Hebrew 但这 but not all the examples in the LXX are necessarily pure Hebraisms, as Conybeare and Stock imply.3 Besides, the papyri show βελέπε σατοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν Ἱουδαίων, B.G.U. 1079 (A.D. 41), the first reference to the Jews as money-lenders. Some of the N. T. examples are merely for the so-called "partitive genitive." Thus ἐκλεξάμενος ἀπ’ αὐτῶν δώδεκα (Lu. 6:13), ἐνέγκατε ἀπὸ τῶν ὑπαρχόν (Jo. 21:10), ἐκχεῖ ἀπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος (Ac. 2:17), ἐστίει ἀπὸ τῶν ψυχήν (Mt. 15:27), πίω ἀπὸ τοῦ γενήματος (Lu. 22:18), τίνα ἀπὸ τῶν δύο (Mt. 27:21), etc.

The point is not that all these phrases occur in the older Greek, but that they are in perfect harmony with the Greek genius in the use of the ablative and in the use of ἀπό to help the ablative. Moulton (Prol., p. 246) cites ὁ ἀπὸ τῶν Χριστιανῶν, Pelagia (Usener, p. 28) as fairly parallel with οὖαι — ἀπὸ τῶν σκανδάλων (Mt. 18:7). The partitive use of the ablative with ἀπό does come nearer to the realm of the genitive (cf. English of and the genitive), but the ablative idea is still present. One may note τὸν ἀπὸ Κελτῶν φόβον in Polybius XVII, 11, 2 (Radermacher, *N. T. Gr.*, p. 116). Cf. ἐνδύμα ἀπὸ τριχῶν (Mt. 3:4) with the old genitive of material.

4. Comparison with ἐκ. But ἀπό needs to be compared more particularly with ἐκ which it finally displaced save4 in the Epirot ἀχ or ὁχ. But the two are never exactly equivalent. Ἐκ means ‘from within’ while ἀπό is merely the general starting-point. Ἀπό does not deny the "within-ness"; it simply does not assert it as ἐκ does. Thus in Mk. 1:10 we read ἀναβαίνων ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος when

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 102.  
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 126.  
3 Sel., etc., p. 83.  
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 102.
the assertion is made by ἐκ that Jesus had been in the water (cf. 
κατὰ — εἰς, ἀνα — ἐκ in Ac. 8:38 f.). But in Mt. 3:16 we merely 
read ἀνεβη ἀπὸ τοῦ ὑδάτος, a form of expression that does not deny 
the ἐκ of Mark. The two prepositions are sometimes combined, as 
ἐξελθείν ἀπ’ αὐτῆς (Ac. 16:18) and ἀφοριοῦσιν ἐκ μέσου (Mt. 13:49). 
Even with the growth in the use of ἀπό it still falls behind ἐκ in the 
N. T. Both ἀπό and ἐκ are used of domicile or birthplace, but not 
in exactly the same sense. Thus in Jo. 1:44 see ἦν δὲ ὁ Φιλιππος  ἀπὸ Βηθσαϊδα, ἐκ τῆς πόλεως Ἀνδρέου, where ἀπό corresponds closely 
with the German von and French de which came to be marks 
of nobility. So in verse 45, Ἰωσήφ τὸν ἀπὸ Ναζαρέτ, where (in 
both verses) no effort is made to express the idea that they 
came from within Nazareth. That idea does appear in verse 46, ἐκ Ναζαρέτ. In Lu. 2:4 both ἀπό and ἐκ are used for one's 
home (ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλιλαίας ἐκ πόλεως Ναζαρέτ). Indeed ἐκ in this sense 
in the N. T. seems confined to πολίς.3 Both appear again in Jo. 
11:1. Cf. also Jo. 7:41 f., ἐκ τῆς Γαλιλαίας, ἀπό Βηθλεέμ, where the 
two prepositions are reversed. The Latin versions render both 
ἀπό and ἐκ here by a.4 Cf. ἀπό Ἁριμαθαίας (Jo. 19:38). Abbott5 
is clear that John does not mean to confuse the two prepositions, 
but uses each in its own sense, though situ is not found in the older 
writers for domicile. The sense of variety, as in English, may have 
led to the use of now one, now the other, since at bottom either 
answers. So Luke in Ac. 23:34 has ἐκ ποιας ἐπαρχείας, but ἀπό 
Κιλικίας. Cf. Ac. 1:4. Blass6 notes that outside of John the N. T. 
writers use ἀπό for one's country. So even Luke in Ac. 24:18, 
ἀπὸ τῆς 'Ἀσίας. The MSS. indeed vary in some instances between 
ἀπό and ἐκ as in Ac. 16:39 with τῆς πόλεως. Cf. MS. variation be-
tween ἀπό and παρὰ in Mk. 16:9. Cf. also Ac. 13:50 for ἐκ—ἀπό. 
In a case like of οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰταλίας (Heb. 13:24) the preposition does 
not determine whether the persons are still in Italy or are outside 
of Italy. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 237. But Deissmann (Light, etc., 
p. 186) thinks that ἀπό here means 'in,' like ἀπο Φιλοῦ in an ostra-
con from Thebes, A.D. 192. Cf. τῶν ἀπ’, ὁ ἐξωρυγχων πόλεως, P. Oxy. 
38, A.D. 49. Ἀπό is also, like ἐκ (Ac. 10:45, etc.), used for mem-
bers of a party in Ac. 12:1, τινας τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, an un-Attic 
usage. But on the whole the two prepositions can be readily dis-
tinguished in the N. T.

5. Comparison with παρά. As to παρά, it suggests that one has

---

been by the side of the one from whom he comes. In relation to God we find ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐξήλθον, (Jo. 8:42), παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς ἐξήλθον (16:27), ἀπὸ θεοῦ ἐξήλθες (16:30). Cf. πρὸς τὸν θεόν (Jo. 1:1). It would he overrefinement to insist on a wide and radical difference here between ἀπὸ, ἐκ and παρὰ; and yet they are not exactly synonymous. In the older Greek παρὰ was the common preposition for the conscious personal departure.1 But in N. T. ἀπὸ occurs also with persons. So ἀκτηκόμεν ἀπὸ οὐτοῦ (1 Jo. 1:5), μαθεῖν ἀπὸ ὑμῶν (Gal. 3:2), παρέλαβον ἀπὸ τοῦ κυρίου (1 Cor. 11:23). One must not, however, read too much into ἀπὸ, as in Gal. 2:12, where τινὰς ἀπὸ Ἰσκώβου does not mean ‘with the, authority of James,’ though they doubtless claimed it. Cf. Mk. 15:45; 1 Th. 3:6. One doubts if we are justified in insisting on a radical distinction between παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς (Jo. 10:18) and ἀπὸ τοῦ κυρίου (1 Cor. 11:23) save as etymology throws light on the matter.2

6. Compared with ὑπὸ. The MSS. of ancient writers,3 as of the N. T., varied often between ἀπὸ and ὑπό. As instances of this variation in the N. T. take Mk. 8:31; Ac. 4:36; 10:17; Ro. 13:1. The MSS. often vary where ἀπὸ is the correct text. The use of ἀπὸ with the agent is not precisely like though one has only to compare ἀπὸ with Latin ab and English of to see how natural it is for ἀπὸ to acquire this idiom. Observe κατενεχθεῖς ἀπὸ τοῦ ὑπνου (Ac. 20:9). So in Jas. 1:13, ἀπὸ θεοῦ πειράζομαι, we translate ‘tempted of God.’ The temptation, to be sure, is presented as coming from God. Cf. also ὁ μισθὸς ὁ ἀφυστερημένος ἀπὸ ὑμῶν, (Jas. 5:4), where the keeping back of the reward is conceived as coming from you. Cf. Ac. 4:36. In Mt. 16:21, παθεῖν ἀπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων, 'at the hands of,' is a free rendering of the idea of agency or source. In Lu. 16:18, ἀπολελυμένην ἀπὸ ἀνδρός, note the repetition of ἀπὸ. This idea of removal is present in ἰαθῆναι ἀπὸ (Lu. 6:17) and in ἐνοχλοῦμενοι ἀπὸ (6:18) it is agency. There may be a zeugma in the last clause. In Lu. 9:22, ἀποδοκιμασθῆναι ἀπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων, we have the same construction as in 16:18 above (cf. 17:25). Cf. ἡτοιμασμένον ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ (Rev. 12:6) and Ac. 2:22 ἀποδεειγμένον ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ. The use of ἀπὸ after substantives throws some light on this matter. Thus τὴν ἀπὸ σοῦ ἐπαγγελίαν (Ac. 23:21), ἀπὸ σοῦ σημεῖον, (Mt. 12:38). This use of ἀπὸ after passive verbs came to be the rule in the later writers. Cf. Wilhelm, 1. G. XII. 5. 29.

But it is not alone a form of agency that ἀπὸ comes to express.

---

2 Cf. W.-Th., p. 370.
3 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 138.
It may also be used for the idea of cause, an old usage of ἀπὸ.

For instance, take ἀπὸ τῆς χαρᾶς αυτοῦ ὑπάγει (Mt. 13:44), ἀπὸ τοῦ φῶς ἐκραξάει (14:26), οὐάι τῷ κόσμῳ ἀπὸ τῶν σκανδάλων (18:7), κοιμημένους ἀπὸ τῆς λύπης (Lu. 22:45), οὐκέτι ἱσχύουν ἀπὸ τοῦ πλήθους (Jo. 21:6), οὐκ ἐνέβλεπον ἀπὸ τῆς δόξης (Ac. 22:11). Cf. further Lu. 19:3; 24:41; Ac. 12:14; 20:9; Heb. 5:7, etc. The LXX gives abundant illustration of the same idiom, the causal use of ἀπὸ. As a matter of sound see ἐφ᾽ ὄν and ἀφ᾽ ὃς in Heb. 7:13.

(d) Διά. Delbruck says: "Of the origin of διά I know nothing to say." One hesitates to proceed after that remark by the master in syntax. Still we do know something of the history of the word both in the Greek and in other Indo-Germanic tongues. The form διά may be in the instrumental case, but one must note διαί (dative) in the lyric passages of AEschylus, not to say the Thessalian δίε. But there is no doubt about διά being kin to δύο, δίς. Sanskrit dva, dvi (cf. trayas, tri), dvis; Latin duo, bis (cf. Sanskrit dvis, Greek δίς, b= v or u); German zwei; English two (fem. and neut.), twain (masc.), twi-ce, twi-light, be-tween, two-fold, etc.

1. The Root-Idea. It is manifest in δια-κόσιοι, δισ-χίλιοι, δι-δραχμα, δι-πλοῦς (cf. ἀ-πλοῦς). The etymology of the word is 'two,' δύο, as shown in these three words as well as in δίς, δι-πλώ, all of which occur in the N. T. Thus it will be seen how persistent is the etymological force in the word. Cf. Mk. 6:37; Rev. 18:6; Mk. 5:13. See also δίς μυριάδες (Text. Rec., δύο μ. Rev. 9:16), δι-λογος (1 Tim. 3:8), δι-στομος (Heb. 4:12), δι-ψυχος (Jas. 1:8), δι-δραχμον (Mt. 17:24), Δι-δύμος (Jo. 11:16). Cf. ἐσχίσθη εἰς δύο (Mt. 27:51).

2. 'By Twos' or 'Between.' But the preposition has advanced a step further than merely "two" to the idea of by-twain, be-tween, in two, in twain. This is the ground-meaning in actual usage. The word δι-θάλασσασσος originally meant 'resembling two seas' (cf. Euxine Sea, Strabo 2, 5, 22), but in the N. T. (Ac. 27:41) it apparently means lying between two seas (Thayer). The notion of interval (be-tween) is frequent in the N. T. both in composition and apart from composition. Thus in ἡμερῶν δια-γενομένων τινῶν (Ac. 25:13), 'some days came in between' (διά). Cf. δια-γνῶσμαι τὰ καθ᾽ ὑμᾶς (Ac. 24:22) with Latin di-gnosco, dis-cerno and Greek-English dia-gnosis (διά-γνωσίν, Ac. 25:21). Δια-θήκη is an arrangement or covenant between two (Gal. 3:17). See δι-αἵροῦν (1 Cor. 12:11); δι-δίδωμι, (Lu. 11:22) 'divide'; οὐθὲν δι-ἐκρίνεν μεταξὺ ἡμῶν τε καὶ αὐτῶν (Ac. 15:9) where μεσατ’ explains διά. Cf. διά-κρισις (Heb. 5:14), dis-
crimation'; δια-λείπω (Lu. 7:45), 'intervals of delay'; δια-λύω (Ac. 5:36), 'disolve'; δια-μερίζω (Ac. 2:45), 'dis-tribute'; δια-ρήγμαμι (Lu. 8:29), 'rend asunder'; δια-σκορπίζω (Jo. 11:52), opposed to συνάγω, 'di-sperse'; δια-σπασμός (Ac. 5:4), 'rend in two'; δια-σπέρω (Ac. 8:1)— 'scatter abroad'; δια-σφορά (Jo. 7:35), 'dispersion'; δια-στέλλω (Heb. 12:20), 'divide'; δια-στήμα (Ac. 5:7), 'distance' or 'interval'; δια-στολή (1 Cor. 14:7), 'distinction'; δια-τίθεμαι (Lu. 22:29), 'dis- pose'; δια-φέρω (Ac. 27:27, Mt. 6:26), 'bear apart,' 'differ'; δια-φορος (Ro. 12:6), 'different'; δια-χάζω (Mt. 10:35), 'set at variance' ('cleave asunder'). These numerous examples ought to be sufficient to show what the real meaning of the word in itself is. A particularly noticeable instance appears in Lu. 24:51, where we have δια-έστη αὐτῶν.

The N. T. preserves this notion of interval in expressions of time and so it is hardly "peculiar only to literary style." Thus in Mk. 2:1 δια ἡμερῶν, means 'interval of days,' 'days between,' 'after some days,' though surely no one would think that δια really means 'after.' Cf. Mt. 26:61, δια τριών ἡμερῶν (cf. ἐν 27:40); δια έτών πλειόνων, Ac. 24:17; Gal. 2:1, δια δεκατεσσάρων ετῶν, Cf. Ac. 5:7. In Ac. 1:3, δια ἡμερῶν τεσσαράκοντα ὀπτανόμενος, the appearance of Jesus was at intervals within the forty days. But see opposition to this idea in Abbott, Johannine Grammar, p. 255 f. In the phrase δια νυκτός (Ac. 5:19; 16:9, etc.), 'by night,' δια adds little to the genitive itself. It is the real adnominal genitive. The preposition is very common in the N. T., especially with the genitive (gen. 382, acc. 279), though the accusative becomes dominant later.

3. 'Passing Between' or 'Through.' The idea of interval between leads naturally to that of passing between two objects or parts of objects. 'Through' is thus not the original meaning of δια, but is a very common one. The case is usually the genitive, though in Homer the accusative is common also, as we find it once in the N. T. (Lu. 17:11), δια μέσου σαμαρίας (cf. δια μέσου, 4:30), and even here note the genitive after μέσου. Some MSS. in Jo. 8:59 read also δια μέσου. Blass wrongly calls the accusative an "inadmissible reading" in view of Homer and the growing use of the accusative in the vernacular with all prepositions (cf. modern Greek). This use of 'through' or 'thorough' is common in composition and sometimes has a "perfective" idea ('clear through') as in δια-καθαιρεῖ τήν ἀλώνα (Mt. 3:12), 'will thoroughly cleanse.' Cf. also δια-βαίνω

---

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 105.  
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 132.
This sense of διά is used with words of place, time, agent or abstract word. In all of these relations the root-idea of the preposition is easily perceived. Thus in Mt. 12:43, διά χρήματα διά πότεν, διά ξηρᾶς (Heb. 11:29), διά τῆς Σαμαρίας (Jo. 4:4), διά πυρός (1 Cor. 3:15), διά ἀσόπτου (1 Cor. 13:12). Cf. Ac. 13:49; 2 Cor. 8:18. In Ro. 15:28, ἀποστέλλομαι διά ὑμῶν εἰς Σπανίαν, Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 378) takes διά ὑμῶν to be 'through you,' i.e. 'through your city,' 'through the midst of you.' In all these examples the idiom runs just as in the older Greek. The use of διά with expressions of time was never very common and gradually was transferred to εἰς. But some examples occur in the N. T. like διά δας νυκτὸς (Lu. 5:5), which may be compared with διά παντὸς τοῦ ζῆν (Heb. 2:15) and the common phrase διά παντὸς (Mk. 5:5).

Here the idea of through is applied to time. Rouffiac (Recherches, p. 29) cites διά τοῦ χειμῶνος ὄλου from inscriptions of Priene 112, 98 and 99 (i/s.c.). The agent may also be expressed by διά. This function was also performed in the ancient Greek, though, when means or instrument was meant, the instrumental case was commonly employed. ΙΔΙΑ is thus used with inanimate and animate objects. Here, of course, the agent is conceived as coming in between the non-attainment and the attainment of the object in view. One may compare γράψας διά χειρὸς αὐτῶν (Ac. 15:23) with δύο ἔπιστολας, διά Νηδύμου μίαν, διά Κρονίου μαχαίριφόρου μίαν, B.U. 1079, A.D. 41 (Milligan, Greek Pap., p. 39). So οὐ θέλω διά μέλανος καὶ καλάμου σοι γράφειν (3 Jo. 13), διά γλώσσης (1 Cor. 14:9), τὰ διά τοῦ σώματος (2 Cor. 5:10), διὰ τῶν ὀπλῶν (2 Cor. 6:7), μήτε διὰ πνεῦματος μήτε διὰ λόγου μήτε διὰ ἐπιστολῆς (2 Th. 2:2). In 2 Pet. 3:5 note the difference between ἐξ ὑδάτος and διὰ ὑδάτος. Abstract ideas are frequently so expressed, as σεσωσμένοι διὰ πίστεως (Eph. 2:8), διά θελήματος θεοῦ (Eph. 1:1), διὰ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (1 Cor. 4:15), διὰ νόμου (Ro. 3:27), διὰ ἀποκαλύψεως (Gal. 1:12). Cf. 1 Cor. 6:14.

When διὰ occurs with the personal agent, he is regarded as the intermediate agent. Sometimes the immediate agent is also expressed by ὑπὸ. So ὑπὸ Κυρίου διὰ τοῦ προφήτου (Mt. 1:22, etc.). Cf. also διὰ τῆς γυναικός – ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ (1 Cor. 11:12), where source and mediate agent are distinguished. In Gal. 1:1, ἀπ’ ἀνθρώπων

2 Ib., p. 375.
Di' ἀνθρώπου, Paul takes pains to deny both ideas. In 1 Cor. 8:6, ἐξ οὐ—δι' οὖ, the first refers to God the Father as the source of all things and the second refers to Jesus as the mediate agent by whom all things come into existence. Cf. Col. 1:16. Indeed God himself may be regarded as source, mediate agent, and ultimate object or end, as Paul does in his noble doxology in Ro. 11:36, ὅτι ἐξ αὐτοῦ καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς αὐτοῦ τὰ πάντα. There are other instances also where God is looked upon as the intervening cause or agent. So δι' οὖ (Heb. 2:10; 1 Cor. 1:9). But δι' is often used with Christ in regard to our relation to God (cf. Paul's use of ἐν). Thus Ro. 1:8; 5:1, etc. Cf. δι' ἐμοῦ in Jo. 14:6, διὰ πολλῶν μαρτύρων (2 Tim. 2:2), δι' ἀγγέλων (Heb. 2:2). The intermediate idea of δι' appears well in 1 Cor. 3:5 διὰκονοι δι' ἥν ἐπιστεύσατε, Heb. 3:16 διὰ Μουσέως, Ro. 5:5 διὰ πνεύματος. In 1 Th. 4:2, τίνος παραγγελίας ἐδώκαμεν ὑμῖν διὰ τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ the matter seems turned round, but, as Paul was the speaker, he conceives Jesus as also making the commands. Abbott, *Johannine Grammar*, p. 236, rightly argues in favour of 'through him' (not 'it') in Jo. 1:7. It is important to note διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ (Eph. 1:5), pregnant with meaning. Cf. Schettler, *Die paulinische Formel "Durch Christus,"* pp. 28 ff. This use of δια' occurs in the papyri (Wenger, *Die Stellvertretung im Rechte der Papyri, 1906*, p. 9 f.). Christ is conceived as our representative (Deissmann, *Light*, etc., p. 340). It is not far from the notion of means like διὰ πίστεως to that of manner like διὰ παραβολῆς (Lu. 8:4). Indeed the two shade off into one another as διὰ ὀράματος (Ac. 18:9). Note also δι' ἀγάπης (Gal. 5:6), δι' ἐπαγγελίας (Gal. 3:18), διὰ βραχέων (Heb. 13:22), δι' ὀλίγων (1 Pet. 5:12), δι' ὑβατος καὶ ἀμάτος (1 Jo. 5:6), διὰ γράμματος καὶ περίτομῆς (Ro. 2:27), διὰ προσκόμματος (14:20), διὰ δόξης (2 Cor. 3:11), δι' ὑπομονῆς (Heb. 12:1), διὰ πολλῶν δακρύων (2 Cor. 2:4). Cf. Rom. 2:27. But here also the notion of between is always present. This is true even in a case like διὰ τῶν οἰκτιρμῶν τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 12:1). Cf. also διὰ τῆς χάριτος in Ro. 12:3 with διὰ τῆς χάριν in 15:15.

4. *Because of.* With the accusative διὰ comes to be used with the idea of 'because of,' 'for the sake of,' 'on account of.' The notion of between is still present. Take Mt. 27:18, διὰ φθόνον παράδωκαν αὐτοῦ. Envy is the reason that prompted the betrayal and so came in between and caused the act. The accusative (extension) is natural and helps also to distinguish this idiom from the others. For instance, in Heb. 2:10, δι' ὃν τὰ πάντα καὶ δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα, the two ideas are distinguished entirely by means of the
cases. One may note also διὰ τὴν γυναῖκα and διὰ τῆς γυναικὸς (1 Cor. 11:9, 12). Cf. διὰ τὴν χάριν above. In Ro. 8:11 the MSS. vary between διὰ τὸ ἐνοικοῦν and διὰ τοῦ ἐνοικοῦτος (MT. H., Nestle). Note also the difference between διὰ τὴν πάρεσιν in Ro. 3:25. Cf. also the common διὰ τὸ ὄνομα (Mt. 10:22), διὰ τὴν πολλὴν ἀγάπην (Eph. 2:4), διὰ τὸν λόγον (Jo. 15:3), διὰ τὸν χρόνον (Heb. 5:12). Cf. Heb. 5:14; Rev. 12:11. The personal ground is common also as in ἐνώ γὼ διὰ τὸν πατέρα (Jo. 6:57), δι’ οὐς (Heb. 6:7), etc. Cf. 1 Jo. 4:9 ζήσωμεν δι’ αὐτοῦ. The aim (usually expressed by ἐνεκα) may be set forth by διὰ also. So τὸ σάββατον διὰ τὸν ἀνθρωπον ἐγένετο καὶ οὗς ὁ ἀνθρωπος διὰ τὸ σάββατον in Mk. 2:27. Cf. also δι’ ἑμέ and δι’ ὑμᾶς in Jo. 12:30. Cf. Mk. 13:20; Ph. 3:7. Moulton (Prol., p. 105) cites ἵνα διὰ σὲ βασιλεῦ τοῦ δικαίου τύχων and 20 (iii/B.c.), in illustration of Jo. 6:57. The Pauline phrase διὰ Θεου (2 Cor. 4:5) is illustrated by διὰ τὸν Κύριον in a Berlin Museum papyrus letter (ii/A. D.) which Deissmann (Light, pp. 176 ff.) thinks curiously illumines the story of the Prodigal Son in Lu. 15. In the modern Greek γιὰ (διὰ) this notion of aim or purpose with the accusative is the usual one.¹ A common idiom in the Graeco-Roman and Byzantine Greek² is the use of διὰ τὸ and the infinitive in the sense of ἵνα. It is practically equivalent in the N. T. to ὅτι and the indicative and is frequent. In Jo. 2:24 f. we have both constructions parallel, διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν γινώσκειν πᾶντας, καὶ ὅτι οὗ χρείαν εἶχεν. In the modern Greek we actually have γιὰ νά (διὰ ἵνα) with the subjunctive. Cf. English "for that." The use of διὰ τί does not differ practically from τί alone.

(e) Ἔν. Inasmuch as εἰς (ἐν-ς) is merely a later variation of ἐν it will be treated after ἐν. There is an older form ἐνί (locative case), gill, and in Homer εἰνί or εἰν for metrical reasons. But some of the dialects (Arcadian, Cretan) wrote iv like the Latin in. But compare Latin en-do, Umbrian en, (Latin inter), German in (ein), English in (en–).

1. Old Use of ἐν with Accusative or Locative. Originally ἐν was used with either locative or accusative, not to say genitive in a case like εῖν Αἴδαο which Brugmann³ does not consider mere ellipsis. He cites also ἐπισταῖν as being really ἐν ποδῶν. But there is no manner of doubt as to the accusative and the locative. The inscriptions of many of the dialects show abundant illustrations of ἐν

with the accusative such as the Thessalian, Boeotian, Northwest Greek, Arcadian, etc.\(^1\) Cf. \(\epsilonν\) τά γυμα, \(\epsilonν\) ὑπόλιτας, etc.\(^2\) So \(ιν\) τὰ ἔργα,\(^3\) etc. Indeed in Cypriote Greek \(\epsilonν\) usually has the accusative.\(^4\) In North Arcadian \(\epsilonν\) alone appears (not \(\epsilonν-\zeta, \epsilonις\)) and with either locative or accusative like Latin \(in\).\(^5\) Besides in Homer we have \(\epsilonν-\omegaσα\), not to mention the common compound verbs like \(\epsilonμ-βαλλω, \epsilonμ-βαινω\), where one might look for \(\epsilonις\). Cf. \(\epsilonμβαντι \epsilonις \πλοιον\) (Mt. 8:23), \(ο\) \(\epsilonμβαψας \epsilonν \tauω \τρυβλιω\) (Mt. 26:23). This so-called pregnant use of \(\epsilonν\) seems very natural after all. It is only in composition that the old usage is preserved in the N. T. or a case like \(\epsilonν \tauω \τρυβλιω\) above after a verb of motion where \(\epsilonις\) might at first seem more natural. Cf. Lu. 9:46; 1 Cor. 11:18; Ro. 1:25. In Ro. 1:24 \(\epsilonν\) occurs with \(παρέδωκεν\), but \(\epsilonις\) in verse 26. Indeed (Blass, *Gr. of N. T. Gk.*, p. 130) we find \(\epsilonν\) with \(διδωμι, ίστημι\) and \(τιθημι\). Remnants of this early usage survive in the N. T., as \(διδόντι \epsilonν \τη καρδια\) (2 Cor. 8:16), \(διδωκεν \epsilonν \τη χειρι\) (Jo. 3:35), \(απέθετο \epsilonν \φυλακη\) (Mt. 14:3). Cf. the spurious verse Jo. 5:4 \(κατέβαινεν \epsilonν \τη κολυμβηθρα\); Par. P. 10, 2 (iii/A.D.) \(\alphaνακεχωρηκεν \epsilonν \'Αλεξανδρε\); Epict. (I, 11, 32) \(\ανερχη \epsilonν \'Ρωμη\); Tob. 5:5 \(πορευ-\thetaηναι \epsilonν \'Ραγοι\). Cf. Blass-Debrunner, p. 131. The LXX shows similar examples. Cf. Conybeare and Stock, p. 83. But it was only by degrees that \(\epsilonν\) came to be associated exclusively with the locative case and \(\epsilonις\) with the accusative as a result of the triumph of the Ionic-Attic Greek.\(^6\) In Homer indeed \(\epsilonν\) appears as an adverb.\(^7\) In origin therefore we are not to associate \(\epsilonν\) primarily with the locative any more than in Latin, though ultimately that came to be true. Other examples of \(\epsilonν\) in composition in the N. T. with verbs of motion are \(\epsilonμβατεω\) (Col. 2:18), \(\epsilonμβιβασω\) (Ac. 27:6), \(\epsilonμπιπτω\) (Lu. 10:36 followed by \(\epsilonις\)). The word therefore evidently expresses the idea of 'within,' whether of rest or of motion depending on the context. Compare vernacular English, "Come in the house." Note in Ac. 26:20 that \(\epsilonν\) is not repeated with \(\εροσολυμουι\).

2. \(\epsilonν\) *Older than \(\epsilonις\).* It seems certain that originally \(\epsilonν\) stood alone without its, whereas in the modern Greek vernacular \(\epsilonν\) alone.

---

1 Ib., p. 438.  
has entirely disappeared before eἰς which uses only the accusative.⁠¹ There is once more unity, but not exactly on the same terms. In the Greek N. T. this process of absorption is going steadily on as in the κοινή generally. There is rarely much doubt as to the significance of ἐν, whereas eἰς has already begun to resume its old identity with ἐν, if indeed in the vernacular it ever gave, it up.²


In the N. T. ἐν is so frequent (2698 instances) that it is still the most common preposition. Indeed Moulton⁢³ thinks that its ultimate disappearance is due to the fact that it had become too vague as "a maid of all work."

3. Place. The simplest use is with expressions of place, like ἐν τῇ ἁγορᾷ (Mt. 20:3), ἐν δὲ εἰς (Heb. 1:3), ἐν τῷ θρόνῳ (Rev. 3:21), ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ (Mt. 4:21), ἐν τῇ πόλει (Lu. 7:37), ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ ποταμῷ (Mt. 3:6), ἐν ὦδαι (3:11), ἐν τῇ ἀμέλῳ (Jo. 15:4). Cf. also ἐξῆλθεν ὁ λόγος ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ (Lu. 7:17) and ἐν τῷ γαζοφυλακίῳ (Jo. 8:20). For the "pregnant" construction of ἐν after verbs of motion cf. chapter XI, x, (i). Cf. examples given under 1. In these and like examples ἐν indeed adds little to the idea of the locative case which it is used to explain. See also ἐν τοῖς Ἀπολλωνίου, R.L. 38 2 (iii/B.C.). The preposition in itself merely states that the location is within the bounds marked by the word with which it occurs. It does not mean 'near,' but 'in,' that is 'inside.' The translation of the resultant idea may be indeed in, on, at, according to the context, but the preposition itself retains its own idea. There is nothing strange about the metaphorical use of ἐν in expressions like ἐν βασάνοις (Lu. 16:23), ἐν τῷ θνάτῳ (1 Jo. 3:14), ἐν δόξῃ (Ph. 4:19), ἐν μυστηρίῳ (1 Cor. 2:7), etc.

4. Expressions of Time. Ἐν may appear rather oftener than the mere locative. Cf. ἐν τῷ ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέρᾳ in Jo. 6:44, but τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέρᾳ in 6:54, while in 6:40 the MSS. vary. By ἐν τρισὶν ἡμέραις (Jo. 2:19) it is clear that Jesus meant the resurrection

⁠¹ V. and D., Mod. Gk., p. 109 f. ⁡² Sirncox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 142. ⁢³ Prol., p. 103. In the Ptol., papyri, Rossberg (Prap., p. 8) finds 2245 examples of ἐν and it is the most common preposition. ⁴ Prol., p. 103. On the retreat of ἐν before eἰς see Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 380.
will take place *within* the period of three days. Cf. τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ (never with ἐν in the N. T.) in Mt. 16:21. More common expressions are ἐν σαββάτῳ (Mt. 12:2), ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ (Jo. 11:9), ἐν τῇ νυκτί (11:10), ἐν τῷ δευτέρῳ (Ac. 7:13), ἐν τῷ καθεξής (Lu. 8:1), ἐν τῷ μεταξὺ (Jo. 4:31), ἐν τοῖς ἡμέραις ἐκείναις (Mt. 3:1), ἐν τῇ παρουσίᾳ, (1 Th. 2:19), ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει (Mk. 12:23), ἐν ἡμέρᾳ κρίσεως (Mt. 10:15), ἐν τῇ ἐσχάτῃ σάλπιγγι (1 Cor. 15:52), etc. Cf. Lu. 1:7. Another temporal use of ἐν is ἐν ὑπόστρέφειν, in the sense of 'while' (Mk. 2:19). Cf. also ἐν οἷς in Lu. 12:1. The frequent use, especially in Luke (cf. ἐν τῷ ὑποστρέφειν, 8:40), of ἐν τῷ with the infinitive calls for a word. Examples of this idiom occur in the ancient Greek (16 in Xenophon, 6 in Thucydides, 26 in Plato) and the papyri show it occasionally. Cf. ἐν τῷ λογίζεσθαι Par. P. 63 (ii/B.C.). But in the LXX it is a constant translation of θ and is much more abundant in the N. T. as a result of the LXX profusion.

5. 'Among.' With plural nouns ἐν may have the resultant idea of 'among,' though, of course, in itself it is still 'in,' 'within.' Thus we note ἐν γεννητοῖς γυναικῶν (Mt. 11:11), ἐστὶν ἐν ἡμῖν (Ac. 2:29), ἢ ἐν αὐτοῖς (4:34), ἐν ὑμῖν (1 Pet. 5:1), ἐν τοῖς ἡγεμόσιν Ἰούδα (Mt. 2:6). This is a common idiom in the ancient Greek.

Not very different from this idea (cf. Latin *apud*) is the use ἐν ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν (Mt. 21:42), like Latin *coram.* One may note also ἐν ὑμῖν in 1 Cor. 6:2. Cf. ἐν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν, (Gal. 1:16). See also 2 Cor. 4:3; 8:1.

6. 'In the Case of,' 'in the Person of' or simply 'in.' A frequent use is where a single case is selected as a specimen or striking illustration. Here the resultant notion is 'in the case of,' which does not differ greatly from the metaphorical use of with soul, mind, etc. Cf. Lu. 24:38. Thus with ἀποκαλύπτω note ἐν ἐμοί (Gal. 1:16), ἐίδως ἐν ἐαυτῷ (Jo. 6:61), γένηται ἐν ἐμοί (1 Cor. 9:15), ἐν τῷ ξηρῷ τί γένηται (Lu. 23:31), ἐν ἡμῖν μάθητε (1 Cor. 4:6), ἐν τῇ κλάσει (Lu. 24:35). One may note also ἐν τῷ Ἀδάμ πάντως ἀποθνῄσκουσιν (1 Cor. 15:22), ἐν τῷ Ἰησοῦ καταγέλλειν (Ac. 4:2), ἡγιασμένη ἐν πνεύματι ἀγίω (Ro. 15:16), ἡγιασται ἐν τῇ γυναικί (1 Cor. 7:14), etc. Paul's frequent mystical use of ἐν κυρίῳ (1 Cor. 9:1), ἐν Χριστῷ (Ro. 6:11, 23, etc.) may be compared with Jesus' own words, μείνατε ἐν ἐμοί, καὶ γώ ἐν ὑμῖν (Jo. 15:4). Cf. also ἐν τῷ

---

1 See especially Field's valuable note on this verse showing how impossible it is for the resurrection to have occurred on the fourth day. Cf. also Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 255 f.

The LXX usage is not quite on a par with this profound meaning in the mouth of Jesus and Paul, even if "extremely indefinite" to the non-Christian. But Moulton agrees with Sanday and Headlam (Ro. 6:11) that the mystic indwelling is Christ's own idea adopted by Paul. The classic discussion of the matter is, of course, Deissmann's Die Neutestamentliche Formel "in Christo Jesu" (1892), in which by careful study of the LXX and the N. T. he shows the depth and originality of Paul's idea in the use of ἐν Χριστῷ. Moulton doubts if even here the N.T. writers make an innovation, but the fulness of the Christian content would amply justify them if they did have to do so.

See ἐν αὐτῷ ἐκτίσθη τὰ πάντα (Col. 1:16). As further examples cf. Ro. 9:1; 14:14; Ph. 3:9; Eph. 4:21.

7. As a Dative? One may hesitate to say dogmatically that in 1 Cor. 14:11, ὁ λαλῶν ἐν ἐμοὶ βαρβαρός, we have ἐν used merely as the dative (cf. ἐπὶ in modern Greek). But τῷ λαλοῦντι βαρβαρός in the same verse looks that way, and Moulton cites τοὺς ἐν θεῷ πατρὶ ήγασμένοις (Ju. 1) and reminds us of the common ground between the locative and dative in Sanskrit where the locative appears with verbs of speaking. Cf. also ἐν ἐμοί in Ph. 1:26.

Note also ἐν ἐμοὶ κύριε in late LXX books (Thackeray, Gr., p. 14). One may compare ἐποίησαν ἐν αὐτῷ (Mt. 17:12). There seems no doubt that ὀμολογέω ἐν (Mt. 10:32= Lu. 12:8) is due to literal translation of the Aramaic. The use of ἐν with ὑμώνιμοι (Mt. 5:34) is similar to the Hebrew ז.

8. Accompanying Circumstance. It is needless to multiply unduly the various uses of ἐν, which are "innumerable" in the LXX, where its chief extension is due to the imitation of the Hebrew ז. But by no means all these uses are Hebraic. Thus ἐν for the idea of accompanying circumstance is classical enough (cf. ἐν ὀπλοῖς ἔιναι, Xen. Anab. 5. 9, like English "The people are up in arms"), though the LXX abounds with it. It occurs also in the papyri. Cf. Tb.P. 41 (119 B.C.). Here ἐν draws close to μετὰ and σὺν in

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 131. Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 144, considers this an "extra-grammatical" point.
2 Prol., p. 103. With this cf. ποιῶν ἐν (Mt. 17:12; Lu. 23:31), an idiom paralleled in the LXX. Cf. ἐξελέξατε ἐν ἐμοί (1 Chron. 28:4), ἡρέτικα ἐν αὐτῷ (1 Chron. 28:6).
3 Prol., p. 103.
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 131.
5 Prol., p. 103.
6 Ib., p. 104.
7 C. and S., Sel., etc., p. 82. Cf. Thack., Gr., p. 47, for the frequent use of ἐν of accompanying circumstance in the LXX.
8 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 130.
usage. Note, for instance, ἐν δέκα χιλιάσιν ὑπαντήσαι (Lu. 14:31), ἢθεν ἐν ἀγίαις μυριάσιν αὐτοῦ (Ju. 14), ἐν πάσιν ἀναλαβόντες (Eph. 6:16), ἐν στολαῖς περιπατεῖν (Mk. 12:38), ἔρχονται ἐν ἐνδύμασιν προβάτων (Mt. 7:15), ἐν λευκοῖς καθεξομένους (Jo. 20:12), μετεκαλέσατο—ἐν ψυχαίς (Ac. 7:14), εἰσέρχεται ἐν αἴματι (Heb. 9:25), ἐν τῷ ὕδατι καὶ ἐν τῷ αἵματι (1 Jo. 5:6), ἐν ράβδῳ ἠλθὼν (1 Cor. 4:21), ἐν πληρώματι (Ro. 15:29), ἐν κελεύσματι (1 Th. 4:16), περιβαλεῖται ἐν ἵματοις (Rev. 3:5; cf. Mt. 11:8). Note also ἐν μυστηρίῳ λαλοῦμεν (1 Cor. 2:7) where 'in the form of' is the idea. These examples show the freedom of the preposition in this direction. Somewhat more complicated is a passage like ἀναρρωπὸς ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθάρτῳ (Mk. 1:23), which Blass¹ properly compares with πνεῦμα ἀκαθάρτον ἔχει. (Mk. 3:30), and the double use in Ro. 8:9, ὑμείς δὲ οὐκ ἔστε ἐν σαρκὶ ἀλλὰ ἐν πνεύματι, εἰπερ πνεῦμα θεοῦ οἴκει ἐν ὑμῖν (followed by πνεῦμα Χριστὸν οὐκ ἔχει). The notion of manner is closely allied to this idiom as we see it in ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ (Ac. 17:31), ἐν παρρησίᾳ (Col. 2:15), ἐν τάξει (Lu. 18:8, cf. ταχύ and ταχέως). Cf. Mt. 6:18 and Jo. 18:20.

9. 'Amounting to,' 'Occasion,' 'Sphere.' Moulton² considers Mk. 4:8, ἔθερεν εἰς τριάκοντα καὶ ἐν ἐξήκοντα καὶ ἐν ἐκατόν (note similarity here between εἰς and ἐν), as showing that ἐν sometimes is used in the sense of 'amounting to.' Cf. also Ac. 7:14 (LXX). The idiom is present in the papyri. Moulton cites προίκα ἐν δραχμαῖς ἐννακοσίαις, B.U. 970 (ii/A.D.), τὴν πρώτην δόσιν ἐν δραχμαίς τεσσαράκοντα, O.P. 724 (ii/B.C.). He (Prol., p. 76) quotes Hb. P. 42 (iii/B.C.), δύσωμεν ἐν ὀφειλήματι, as "predicative" use of ἐν. He compares Eph. 2:15, ἐν δόγμασιν, 'consisting in decrees.' Certain it is that in Rev. 5:9 ἡγόρασας ἐν τῷ αἵματι σου we have price³ indicated by ἐν. Cf. Ro. 3:25; Ac. 20:28. In a few examples ἐν gives the occasion, as ἐφυγεν ἐν τῷ λόγῳ τοῦτῳ (Ac. 7:29), ἐν τῇ πολυλογίᾳ αὐτῶν εἰσακουσθήσονται (Mt. 6:7), ἐν τούτῳ (Jo. 16:30). Note also λατρεύω ἐν τῷ πνεύματι μου ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ (Ro. 1:9) where the second ἐν suggests 'in the sphere of.' Cf. ἐν μέτρῳ (Eph. 4:16), ἐν τούτῳ ἵσθι (1 Tim. 4:15), ἐν νόμῳ ἡμαρτον (Ro. 2:12). In simple truth the only way to know the resultant meaning of ἐν is to note carefully the context. It is so simple in idea that it appears in every variety of connection.

10. Instrumental Use of ἐν. See previous discussion under Cases. Blass⁴ considers it due to Hebrew influence as does Jan-

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 131. ² Prol., p. 103. ³ Rare and possibly Hebraistic. Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 380. ⁴ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 130.
The ancient Greek writers did use ἐν with certain verbs, as the N. T. καὶ ἐν πυρὶ (Rev. 17:16, some MSS.), ἀποκαλύπτω ἐν πυρὶ (1 Cor. 3:13), ἄληξ ἐν τίνι (Mt. 5:13), μετέρω ἐν ὦ μέτρῳ (Mt. 7:2). The construction in itself is as old as Homer. Cf. ἐν ὄφθαλμος Φίδεσθαι (II. i. 587), ἐν πυρὶ καὶ ἐν (II. xxiv. 38). It is abnormally frequent in the LXX under the influence of the Hebrew ב, but it is not so common in the N. T. Besides, the papyri show undoubted examples of it. Moulton finds Ptolemaic examples of ἐν μαχαίρῃ, Tb.P. 16 al.; διαλυόμεναι ἐν τῷ λίμῷ Par. P. 28 (ii/B.C.), while 22 has τῷ λίμῳ διαλυόμεναι and note τοὺς ἐνεσχημένους ἐν τίς ἀγνοημασίν, Par. P. 63 (ii/B.C.). We can only say, therefore, that the LXX accelerated the vernacular idiom in this matter. The Aramaic probably helped it on also. The blending of the instrumental with the locative in form facilitated this usage beyond a doubt, and the tendency to use prepositions abundantly helped also. But even so one must observe that all the N. T. examples of ἐν can be explained from the point of view of the locative. The possibility of this point of view is the reason why ἐν was so used in the beginning. I pass by examples like βαπτίζω ἐν ὧδατι, βαπτίσει ἐν πνεύματι ἄγιῳ καὶ πυρί (Mt. 3:11) as probably not being instances of the instrumental usage at all. But there are real instances enough. Take Lu. 22:49 εἰ πατέξομεν ἐν μαχαίρῃ; Here the smiting can be regarded as located in the sword. To be sure, in English, we translate the resultant idea by 'with,' but ἐν in itself does not mean 'with.' That resultant idea can only come in the proper context. So ἐν τῷ Βεεξεβοῦλ ἀξροῦτι τῶν διαμομίων ἐκβάλλει (Mt. 12:24). Here the casting out is located in the prince of demons. Cf. κρίνω ἐν ἄνδρί (Ac. 17:31), ἐν βραχίονι (Lu. 1:51), ἐν δόλῳ (Mk. 14:1), ἐν φόνῳ μαχαίρῃς (Heb. 11:37). The Apocalypse has several examples, like πολεμήσω ἐν τῷ ῥόμφαία (2:16), ἀποκτείναι ἐν ῥόμφαίᾳ καὶ ἐν λίμῳ καὶ ἐν θανάτῳ (6:8), ἐν μαχαίρῃ ἀποκτενεί (13:10). In Rev. 14:15, κράζων ἐν φωνῇ, we do not necessarily have to explain it in this manner. Cf. Ro. 2:16; 2:28; 1 Jo. 2:3; Jas. 3:9. On the whole there is little that is out of harmony with the vernacular κοινή in the N. T. use of ἐν, though Abbott thinks that the ex-

---

2 W.-Th., p. 388.
3 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 144.
4 C. and S., p. 82; Thack., p. 47.
5 Moulton, Prol., pp. 12, 61, 104, 234 f.
6 Ib., p. 61.
8 Joh. Gr., p. 256.
amples of Deissmann and Moulton do not exactly parallel the mental use. For repetition of ἐν see 2 Cor. 6:4 ff.

(f) ἐἰς. There is nothing to add to the etymology of ἐἰς as compare that of ἐν save that ἐἰς is known to be really as we find it in the inscriptions of Argos, Crete, etc. So ἐν Ἀθαναίον. This σ seems to have been added to ἐν by analogy to ἐς. Usually with the disappearance of ὦ the form was ἐἰς, but Thucydides, like the Ionic and Doric writers and the poets, preferred ἐς which was current in the inscriptions before 334 B.C. So is appears in a Phrygian Christian inscription. But the AEolic ἐἰς gradually drove out all the other forms. Originally, therefore, ἐν alone existed with either locative or accusative, and ἐἰς appears nowhere else save in the Greek. The classic use of ἐἰς Ἀἰδοῦ (some MSS. in Ac. 2:27, 31 and reading in Is. 14:15) is the true genitive, according to Brugmann (Griech Gr., p. 439), 'in the sphere of Hades.'

1. Original Static Use. In Homer ἐἰσ-κεῖσθαι means merely to lie within. But, though ἐἰς really means the same thing as ἐν, it was early used only with the accusative, and gradually specialized thus one of the usages of ἐν. The locative with ἐν, however, continued to be used sometimes in the same sense as the accusative with ἐἰς. The accusative indeed normally suggests motion (extension), and that did come to be the common usage of ἐἰς plus the accusative. The resultant idea would often be 'into,' but this was by no means always true. ἐἰς is not used much in composition in the N. T. and always where motion is involved save in the case of ἐἰσ-ἀκούω where there seems little difference between ἐἰς and ἐν (cf. 1 Cor. 14:21; Mt. 6:7). In itself ἐἰς expresses the same dimension relation as ἐν, viz. in. It does not of itself mean into, unto, or to. That is the resultant idea of the accusative case with verbs of motion. It is true that in the later Greek this static use of ἐἰς with the idea of rest (in) is far more common than in the earlier Greek. This was naturally so, since in the vernacular ἐἰς finally drove ἐν out entirely and did duty for both, just as originally ἐν did. The only difference is that ἐἰς used the one case (accusative), whereas ἐν used either ac-

1 Solmsen, Inscr. Graecae, p. 46.
5 Cf. H. W. Smyth, p. 80, Transactions of Am. Philol. Assoc. for 1887. J. Fraser (Cl. Quarterly, 1908, p. 270) shows that in Cretan we have ἐν ὅρθαν (before vowel), but ἐς τὸν (before consonant).
cusative or locative. But then the accusative was once the only case and must be allowed large liberty. And even, in the classic writers there are not wanting examples. These are usually explained as instances of "pregnant" construction, but it is possible to think of them as survivals of the etymological idea of $\epsiloni\zeta$ ($\epsilon\nu\varsigma$) with only the general notion of the accusative case. Certainly the vernacular laid less stress on the distinction between $\epsiloni\zeta$ and $\epsilon\nu$ than the literary language did. Though $\epsiloni\zeta$ falls behind $\epsilon\nu$ in the N. T. in the proportion of 2 to 3, still, as in the papyri and the inscriptions and the LXX, a number of examples of static $\epsiloni\zeta$ occur. Some of these were referred to under $\epsilon\nu$, where the "pregnant" use of $\epsilon\nu$ for $\epsiloni\zeta$ occurs. Hatzidakis gives abundant examples of $\epsilon\nu$ as $\epsiloni\zeta$ and $\epsiloni\zeta$ as $\epsilon\nu$. Cf. $\epsiloni\zeta$ Ἀλεξείνδρειαν ἔστι, B. U. ii. 385; $\epsiloni\zeta$ τύνβον κέιμα, Kaibel Epigr. 134; κινδυνεύσαντος $\epsiloni\zeta$ θάλασσαν, B. U. 423 (ii/ A.D.). Deissmann (Light, p. 169) notes Paul's κινδύνοις $\epsilon\nu$ θαλάσση and that the Roman soldier in the last example writes "more vulgarly than St. Paul." In these examples it is not necessary nor pertinent to bring in the idea of 'into.' Blass comments on the fact that Matthew (but see below) has no such examples and John but few, while Luke has most of them. I cannot, however, follow Blass in citing Mk. 1:9 ἐβαπτισθη $\epsiloni\zeta$ τῶν Ἰορδάνην as an example. The idea of motion in βαπτιζω suits $\epsiloni\zeta$ as well as $\epsilon\nu$ in Mk. 1:5. Cf. νίψαι $\epsiloni\zeta$ (Jo. 9:7). But in Mt. 28:19, βαπτίζοντες $\epsiloni\zeta$ τὸ ὄνομα, and Ro. 6:3 f., $\epsiloni\zeta$ Χριστόν and $\epsiloni\zeta$ τῶν θάνατον, the notion of sphere is the true one. The same thing may be true of βαπτισθήτω $\epsiloni\zeta$ ἁφεσίν τῶν ἁμαρτίων (Ac. 2:38), where only the context and the tenor of N. T. teaching can determine whether 'into,' 'unto' or merely 'in' or 'on' ('upon') is the right translation, a task for the interpreter, not for the grammarian. One does not need here to appeal to the Hebrew דְּסַךְ לְבָּךְ as Tholuck does (Beitrage zur Spracherkleirung des N. T., p. 47 f.). Indeed the use of ὄνομα for person is common in the papyri (Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 196 f.). Deissmann gives examples of its $\epsiloni\zeta$ ὄνομα, ἐπ' ὄνοματος, and the mere locative ὄνόματι, from the papyri. The static use of $\epsiloni\zeta$ is seen in its distributive use like $\epsilon\nu$ in Mk. 4:8, $\epsiloni\zeta$ τριάκοντα καὶ $\epsilon\nu$ ἔξηκοντα καὶ $\epsilon\nu$ ἐκατόν. But there are undoubted examples where only 'in,' 'on' or 'at' can be the idea. Thus

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 376.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 62 f.
4 C. and S., Sel., p. 81.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 122.
κηρύσσων εἰς τὰς συναγωγὰς (Mk. 1:39) where there is some excuse for the "pregnant" explanation because of ἡλθεν. So ἐλθὼν κατώκησεν εἰς πόλιν (Mt. 2:23; 4:13), but note only παρώκησεν εἰς γῆν (Heb. 11:9) and εὑρέθη εἰς Ἀζωτοῦ (Ac. 8:40). Cf. καθημένου εἰς τὸ ὅρος (Mk. 13:3), οἱ εἰς τὸν ἄγραν (Mk. 13:16), τοῖς εἰς τὸν οἶκον (Lu. 9:61), εἰς τὴν κόπτην εἰσὶν (Lu. 11:7), ἐγκοιταλείπεσε εἰς ἐδήν (Ac. 2:27; cf. verse 31), τοῖς εἰς μακρὰν (2:39), εἰς χολὴν ὄντα (Ac. 8:23), ἐπέσχεν χρόνον εἰς τὴν Ἀσίαν (Ac. 19:22), ἀποθανεῖν εἰς Ἰερουσαλήμ, (Ac. 21:13), εἰς Ῥώμην μαρτυρῆσαι (Ac. 23:11), τηρεῖσθαι εἰς Καισαρίαν (Ac. 25:4), ὥν εἰς τὸν κόλπον (Jo. 1:18), οἱ τρεῖς εἰς τὸ ἐν εἴσιν (1 Jo. 5:8), εἰς ἥν στήτε (1 Pet. 5:12). Nor is this quite all. In some MSS. in Mk. 2:1 we have εἰς οἰκόν ἔστων (KBDL ἐν οἴκῳ). In Ac. 2:5 the MSS. vary between εἰς and ἐν as in Mk. 10:10. Another instance is found in Eph. 3:16, κραταῖον ἐκεῖ εἰς τὸν ἐσω ἄνθρωπον. Cf. Jo. 20:7; Mk. 13:9. But in ἔστη εἰς τὸ μέσον (Jo. 20:19, 26) we have motion, though ἔστη εἰς τὸν αἰγιαλὸν (Jo. 21:4) is an example of rest. Jo. 17:23 is normal. In Mt. 10:41 f., εἰς ὠνόμα προφήτου (μοιθητοῦ, δικαιοῦ) one can see little difference between εἰς and ἐν. Certainly this is true of Mt. 12:41, μετένοησαν εἰς κήρυγμα Ἰωνᾶ, where it is absurd to take εἰς as 'into' or 'unto' or even 'to.' See also συνηγμένοι εἰς τὸ ἐμὸν ὄνομα (Mt. 18:20).

2. With Verbs of Motion. But the usual idiom with εἰς was undoubtedly with verbs of motion when the motion and the accusative case combined with εἰς (‘in’) to give the resultant meaning of ‘into,’ ‘unto,’ ‘among,’ to,’ ‘towards’ or ‘on,’ ‘upon,’ according to the context. This is so common as to call for little illustration. As with ἐν so with εἰς, the noun itself gives the boundary or limit. So εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν (Mt. 2:11), as εἰς τὸ ὄρος (5:1), εἰς τὸ πρατήριον (27:27), εἰς θάλασσαν (17:27), εἰς τὸν νῦμον (Rev. 10:5), εἰς ἔθνη (Ac. 22:21), εἰς πειρασμὸν (Mt. 6:13), εἰς τὸ μνημεῖον (Jo. 11:38), εἰς τὴν ὠδόν (Mk. 11:8), εἰς τοὺς μαθητὰς (Lu. 6:20), εἰς τοὺς λῃστῶς (Lu. 10:36), εἰς κλίνην (Rev. 2:22), εἰς τὸ δεξιά (Jo. 21:6), εἰς τὴν κεφαλὴν (Mt. 27:30), εἰς τὰς ἀγκάλας (Lu. 2:28), εἰς ὠλον τὸν κόσμον (Mk. 14:9), εἰς ὠμᾶς (1 Th. 2:9). These examples fairly illustrate the variety in the use of εἰς with verbs of motion. For idea of ‘among’ see Jo. 21:23. It will be seen at once, if one consults the context in these passages, that the preposition does not of itself mean 'into' even with verbs of motion. That is indeed one of the resultant meanings among many others. The metaphorical uses do not differ in principle, such as εἰς θλήνων (Mt. 24:9), συνάγειν εἰς ἐν, (Jo. 11:52), εἰς τὴν ζωὴν (Mt. 18:8), εἰς κρίσιν (Jo. 5:24), εἰς ὑπακοῆν (2 Cor. 1:3).
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

10:5), εἰς χείρας (Mt. 17:22), etc. For many interesting examples of ἐν and εἰς see Theimer, Die Prapositionen εἰς, ἐν, ἐκ im N. T., Beiträge zur Kenntnis des Sprachgebrauches im N. T 1896.

3. With Expressions of Time. Here εἰς marks either the limit or accents the duration expressed by the accusative. Thus in 2 Tim. 1:12 we find φυλάσσαι εἰς ἐκεῖνην τὴν ἡμέραν where 'until' suits as a translation (cf. 'against'). Cf. Ph. 1:10, εἰς ἡμέραν Χριστοῦ. Not quite so sharp a limit is εἰς τὸ αὐριον (Mt. 6:34).

Cf. 1 Pet. 1:11. There is little that is added by the preposition to the accusative in such examples as as εἰς τὸ μέλλον (Lu. 13:9), εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα (Mt. 21:19), εἰς γενεάς καὶ γενεάς (Lu. 1:50), εἰς τὸ διημερέσ (Heb. 7:3), etc. Cf. Lu. 12:19. But a more definite period is set in cases like εἰς τὸν καιρὸν (Lu. 1:20), εἰς τὸ μεταξὺ σαββάτων (Ac. 13:42).

4. Like a Dative. It is not strange to see εἰς used where disposition or attitude of mind is set forth. Indeed already εἰς and the accusative occur where the dative alone would be sufficient. This is especially true in the LXX, but the papyri show examples also. Cf. οἱ εἰς Χριστόν (Mart. Pauli, II). Moulton (Prol., p. 246) cites Tb. P. 16, οὗ λήγοντες τῇ [εἰς] αὐτοῦς αὐθαδίᾳ, "where as actually stands for the possessive genitive." One must remember the complete disappearance of the dative in modern Greek vernacular. Note τῆς λογίας τῆς εἰς τοὺς ἀγίους (1 Cor. 16:1), πλοῦτῳ εἰς πάντας (Ro. 10:12), πλεονάκω εἰς (Ph. 4:17), ἐλεημοσύνας ποιῆσων εἰς τὸ ἔθνος (Ac. 24:17), λειτουργὸν εἰς τὸ ἐθνη (Ro. 15:16), ἀποβλέπω εἰς (Heb. 11:26), λέγει εἰς (Ac. 2:25), ὀμηνός εἰς (Mt. 5:34 f.), τὸ αὐτὸ εἰς ἀλλήλους (Ro. 12:16), πιστεύειν εἰς (Mt. 18:6), χρηστός εἰς (Eph. 4:32), ἀγάπην εἰς (Ro. 5:8), etc. If one entertains hostile feelings the resultant idea with εἰς will be 'against,' though the word does not of itself mean that. So in Lu. 12:10 εἰς τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (cf. κατὰ in Mt. 12:32) and εἰς τὸ ἀγίον πνεῦμα βλασφημη-μὴσαντι, βλασφημον εἰς (Ac. 6:11), ἐπιβουλὴ εἰς (Ac. 23:30), ἀμαρτάνειν εἰς (Lu. 15:18), etc. As a matter of fact all that εἰς really accentuates here is the accusative case (with reference to) which happens to be in a hostile atmosphere. But that is not true of such examples as ἡθέτησαν εἰς ἑαυτοὺς (Lu. 7:30), εἰς τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 4:20), etc. For ὧγονται εἰς in Jo. 19:37 see Abbott, Johannine Grammar, p. 245. In the modern Greek εἰς has displaced the dative in the vernacular.

5. Aim or Purpose. Sometimes indeed εἰς appears in an atmosphere where aim or purpose is manifestly the resultant idea.

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 63; C. and S., p. 82; W.-Th., p. 396 f.
Thus we may note έλθών εἰς τὴν Τρωάδα εἰς τὸ εὐαγγέλιον (2 Cor. 2:12). Here the second εἰς suggests the purpose of his coming. Cf. also τοῦτο ποιεῖτε εἰς τὴν ἐμὴν ἀνάμνησιν (1 Cor. 11:24), where εἰς does not mean 'for,' though that is clearly the resultant idea. So with εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτῶν (Mt. 8:4). Take Ro. 11:36, for instance, where εἰς αὐτῶν is set over against εἰς αὐτού. Cf. again εἰς δόξαν θεοῦ in Ph. 1:11, εἰς φόβον in Ro. 8:15, εἰς ἐνδείξιν in Ro. 3:25, εἰς ἐκκλησίαν αἰώνιον in Jo. 6:27. One may not doubt also that this is the idea in Mt. 26:28, τὸ περὶ πολλῶν ἐκχυσάμενον εἰς ἀφεσίν ἀμαρτίων. But it by no means follows that the same idea is expressed by εἰς ἀφεσίν in Mk. 1:4 and Ac. 2:38 (cf. Mt. 10:41), though that may in the abstract be true. It remains a matter for the interpreter to decide. One must not omit here also the frequent use of εἰς τό and the infinitive to express design. Cf. εἰς τό ἐμπαίλεια in Mt. 20:19, εἰς τό σταυρωθῆναι in 26:2. See chapter on Verbal Nouns for further discussion. Cf. also εἰς τοῦτο (Mt. 1:38), εἰς αὐτὸ τοῦτο (2 Cor. 5:5), ἀγοράζω εἰς (Jo. 13:29), εἰς ἀπάντησιν (Mt. 25:6), εἰς ὑπάντησιν αὐτῷ (Jo. 12:13).1 Cf. έξίων εἰς ἔλαιωνας μου (Fay. P., 50 A.D.), 'sticks for my olive-gardens' (Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 157), εἰς ὑπὸν ἐνοχλούμενον (P. Fl.-Pet., xxv, 226 B.C.), 'for a sick horse' (Deissmann, B. S., p. 118). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 112) cites ψυκόδομησεν—εἰς ἕαυτόν (83 N. Chr. Wadd. Inscr., 2614).

6. Predicative Use. But there remains one more use of εἰς which, though good κοινή, was greatly accelerated by the influence of the LXX.2 This is where εἰς occurs in the predicate with εἰμί or γίνομαι, κτλ. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 16 f.) quotes ίνα μη’ εἰς ψωμίου γένηται, P. Fay. 119, 276 (100 A.D.); Heliod., AETHIOPI. VI, 14, τὴν πῆραν εἰς καθέδραν ποιησάμενη, and even the Attic author ΑΕneas 114, γυναίκας ὀπλίσαντες μὲ εἰς ἄνδρας. Thus in Lu. 3:5, ἔσται τα σκολία εἰς εὐθείας (Is. 40:4). So ἐσταθεῖ μοι εἰς υἱοῦς καὶ θυγατέρας (2 Cor. 6:18, LXX); ἐστοικοὶ οἱ δύο εἰς σάρκα μίαν (Mt. 19:5; cf. Gen. 2:24); ἡ λύπη ὑμῶν εἰς χαρὰν γενήσεται (Jo. 16:20). Cf. Lu. 13:19. As already remarked, this predicate use of εἰς appears in the papyri3 and in the Apostolic Fathers,4 but not with

the frequency that we find it in the LXX. Cf. pp. 481 f. Blass\(^1\) credits ἐἰς in ὑπάγει εἰς εἰρήμην (Mk. 5:34) to the Hebrew through the LXX (cf. 1 Sam. 1:17). Cf. also ἐἰς διαταγὰς ἀγγέλων (Ac. 7:53) where ἐἰς is much like ἐν. In general therefore, as with ἐν so with ἐἰς we must hark back to first principles and work out to the resultant idea by means of the context and the history.

7. Compared with ἐπί, παρά and πρός. The growth in the use of ἐἰς is shown by its appearance where ἐπί or πρός would be expected in the older Greek. Cf. ἔρχεται εἰς πόλιν (Jo. 4:5), where the point is not 'into,' but 'to.' So 11:31, ὑπάγει εἰς τὸ μηνμέειον. In 11:38 D has ἐπί, not ἐἰς. So in Mk. 3:7, ἀνεχώρησεν πρός τὴν θάλασσαν, DHP have εἰς. Cf. Mk. 2:13, Ἰ has ἐἰς for παρά and in 7:31 Β海棠 have ἐἰς, not πρός.

(g) ἐκ (ἐξ). The etymology of this word is simple. Cf. Latin ex (e), Galliç ex, Old Irish ess, Cymric eh. In the Greek the form varies thus ἐκ before vowels), ἐγ (assimilation), ἐ (Locrian, cf. Latin e), ἐξ or ἐστι like Old Irish (Arcadian, Boeotian, Thessalian). The original form was ἐξ, then ἐκ like Latin ex, e. Cf. Brugmaim,

_Griech Gr._, p. 147.

1. Meaning. The word means 'out of,' 'from within,' not like ἀπὸ or παρά. It stands in contrast to ἐν (ἐν-ς).\(^2\) In the modern Greek vernacular ἀπὸ has displaced ἐκ except in the Epirot ἀφι or ἠχ. But in the N. T. ἐκ is still ahead of ἀπὸ. The indifference of the scribes\(^4\) as to which they used is shown in the MS. variations between ἐκ and ἀπὸ as in Mt. 7:4; 17:9; Mk. 16:3. The writings of John (Gospel, Epistles, Revelation) use ἐκ more frequently than any other N. T. books.\(^5\) In the late Greek (eighth century A.D.) we find the accusative with ἐκ, and this was the last usage to survive.\(^6\) Brugmann\(^7\) indeed thinks that ἐκ may even rarely use the genuine genitive besides the ablative, but I doubt this. But it is certain that ἐκ used the locative in Arcadian, Cypriot and Pamphylian dialects after analogy of ἐν (Buck, _Greek Dialects_, p. 101f).\(^8\)

2. In Composition. It is very common and sometimes with the "perfective" idea. So we note ἐκ-ἀποροῦμενοι contrasted with ἀποροῦμενοι in 2 Cor. 4:8.\(^9\) Cf. also ἐκ-δαπανάω (2 Cor. 12:15),

\(^1\)Gr. of N. T. Gk.  \(^2\) Brug., _Griech. Gr._, p. 440.
\(^3\) Moulton, _Prol._, p. 102. On p. 246 he cites Psichari as saying that ἐκ τῶν is still 'une forme vivante.'
\(^9\) Moulton, _Prol._, P. 237.
3. Place. The preposition naturally is common with expressions of place. The strict idea of from within is common, as in ἐκ τῶν οὐρανῶν (Mt. 3:17), ἐκ τοῦ ὄθραλμοῦ (Lu. 6:42), ἐκ τῶν μνημείων (Mt. 8:28), etc. Often it appears in contrast with εἰς as in ἐκ τῆς Ἰουδαίας εἰς τὴν Γαλικαίαν (Jo. 4:47), τοῦ ἐκ σκότους ὑμᾶς καλέσαντος εἰς τὸ φῶς (1 Pet. 2:9), where the metaphorical follows the literal usage. In Lu. 6:42 ἐκ τοῦ ὄθραλμοῦ is set in opposition to ἐν τῷ ὄθραλμῷ. In Ac. 8:38 f. we have both εἰς τὸ ὕδωρ and ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος. So in Mk. 1:10 ἀναβαίνων ἐκ τοῦ ὕδατος a previous presence ἐν τῷ ὕδατι is implied. In a case like καταβαίνοντων ἐκ τοῦ ὄρους (Mt. 17:9); parallels in Mk. and Lu. 6. ἀπό we are not to suppose that they had been in a cave, but merely up in the mountain (cf. English idiom), the term "mountain" including more than the earth and rock. Cf. εἰς τὸ ὄρος in Mt. 5:1. But in Mt. 8:1 we merely have ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄρους. Note likewise θρίς ἐκ τῆς κεφαλῆς (Lu. 21:18), ἐκ τῶν χειρῶν (Ac. 12:7). Thus we explain also κρεμαμένον τὸ θηρίον ἐκ τῆς χειρὸς αὐτοῦ (Ac. 28:4), ἐκ δεξιῶν (Mt. 20:21), εἰς ἑναυτίας (Mk. 15:39), etc. It is not necessary to record all the verbs with which ἐκ occurs. In Lu. 5:3 ἐδίδασκεν ἐκ τοῦ πλοίου the teaching is represented as proceeding out of the boat (Jesus was in the boat). One may compare with this ἐγείρεσαι ἐκ τοῦ δείπου (Jo. 13:4), ἀναλύσῃ ἐκ τῶν γάμων (Lu. 12:36), ἀπολυλείειν τὸν λίθον ἐκ τῆς θύρας (Mk. 16:3), διασωθεύετα ἐκ τῆς θαλάσσης (Ac. 28:4).

4. Time. With expressions of time ἐκ gives the point of departure, like ἐκ νεότητος (Mk. 10:20), εἰς ἄρχῆς (Jo. 6:64), εἰς ἱκανῶν χρόνων (Lu. 23:8), ἐκ τοῦ αἰώνος (Jo. 9:32), ἐκ πολλῶν ἐτῶν (Ac. 24:10), ἐκ τοῦτου (Jo. 6:66). In cases where succession is involved the point of departure is really present. Thus with ἐκ δευτέρου, (Jo. 9:24), ἐκ τρίτου (Mt. 26:44), ἡμέραν εἰς ἡμέρας (2 Pet. 2:8). Other adverbial phrases have a similar origin as with ἐκ μέρους (1 Cor. 12:27), ἐκ μέτρου (Jo. 3:34), εἰς ἀνάγκης (2 Cor. 9:7), συμφώνου (1 Cor. 7:5). Cf. ἐκ πάλαι.

5. Separation. The use of ἐκ for the idea of separation is merely the fuller expansion of the ablative. Thus with ἐλεύθερος ἐκ πάντων (1 Cor. 9:19), αὐτοπαίκησον ἐκ τῶν κόσμων, (Rev. 14:13), ὑψωθοῦ ἐκ τῆς γῆς (Jo. 12:32), ὑποστρέψαι ἐκ τῆς ἐντολῆς (2 Pet. 2:21), ἀρης ἐκ
τού κόσμου (Jo. 17:15). Cf. Jo. 17:6. Abbott¹ doubts if in the LXX and John ἐκ always implies previous existence in the evils from which one is delivered when used with σωζω and τηρέω. Certainly in Jo. 17 ἐκ occurs rather frequently, but τηρήσης ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ (17:15) may still imply that the evil one once had power over them (cf. Jesus' prayer for Peter). Certainly in Jo. 12:27, σωζόν με ἐκ τῆς ὀρας ταύτης, Jesus had already entered into the hour. Cf. δυνάμενον σώζειν ἐκ θανάτου (Heb. 5:7) where ἐκ may accentuate the power of God (δυνάμενον), though he had not yet entered into death. In Rev. 3:10 τηρήσω ἐκ τῆς ὀρας τοῦ πειρασμοῦ we seem to have the picture of general temptation with the preservation of the saints. Cf. ἐκβασίς in 1 Cor. 10:13. So in Mt. 13:41 συλλέξουσιν ἐκ τῆς βασιλείας the idea is 'out from among,' just as cheat or cockle grows in among the wheat in the same field. The two kingdoms coexist in the same sphere (the world). The notion of separation is common with a number of verbs like ἐξολεθρευθῆσεται ἐκ τοῦ λαοῦ (Ac. 3:23), ἡγείρεν ἐκ νεκρῶν (Jo. 12:1), ἡ ἀνάστασις ἐκ νεκρῶν (Lu. 20:35); ἐξελεξάμην ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου (Jo. 15:19), etc. This all seems simple and clear. Not quite so apparent is νικῶντας ἐκ τοῦ θηρίου (Rev. 15:2). Thayer and Blass both take it like τηρέω ἐκ, 'victorious over' (by separation). Cf. μετενόησαν ἐκ τῶν νέργων (Rev. 16:11) and Jo. 3:25, ζήτησις ἐκ.

6. Origin or Source. Equally obvious seems the use of ἐκ for the idea of origin or source. Thus ἐξηλθοῦν ἐκ τοῦ πατρός (Jo. 16:28), οὐκ εἰμὶ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου (17:14, 16), ἐκ τῶν λίθων τούτων ἐγείραι τέκνα (Mt. 3:9). Naturally this usage has a wide range. Cf. ἐκ Ναζαρέτ (Jo. 1:46 f.), ἐκ πόλεως (Jo. 1:44), ἐκ τῆς Σαμαιρίας (Jo. 4:7), Ἐβραίος ἐξ Ἐβραίων (Ph. 3:5), ἐκ τῆς γῆς (Jo. 3:31), ἐκ θεοῦ (Ph. 3:9), ἐξ ἑονύμων (Gal. 2:15), ἐκ πλαιμής (1 Th. 2:3), ἐκ πολλῆς θλίψεως (2 Cor. 2:4), τῇ ἐξ ἡμῶν ἐν ὑμῖν ἀγάπη (2 Cor. 8:7). Cf. Lu. 12:15. This list is by no means exhaustive, but it is at least suggestive. One may note here στέφανον ἐξ ἀκανθῶν (Mt. 27:29), where the material is expressed by ἐκ.

7. Cause or Occasion. Closely allied to the above is the notion of cause or occasion which may also be conveyed by ἐκ. Thus note τὸ ἐξ ὑμῶν in Ro. 12:18, ἐμασχύνω ἐκ τοῦ πόνου (Rev. 16:10), δικαιώσεσα ἐκ πίστεως (Ro. 5:1), ἐξ ἔργων (Gal. 3:10), ἐκ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου ζῆν (1 Cor. 9:14), ἐξ αὐθεντείας (2 Cor. 13:4), ἐκ τοῦ μαμωνᾶ (Lu. 16:9). Cf. also ἀπέθανον ἐκ τῶν ὑδατῶν (Rev. 8:11). Perhaps here belongs ἐπληρώθη ἐκ τῆς ὅσμης (Jo. 12:3). Cf. γεμίζω ἐκ in Jo. 6:13 (Abbott, Johannine Gr., p. 253). At any rate a

¹ Joh. Gr., p. 251 f.
number of verbs use ἐκ in this general sense like ὑφελέω (Mk. 7:11), κοιμοῦσαι (2 Cor. 7:9), ἀδικεῖσθαι (Rev. 2:11), πλουτέω (Rev. 18:3), χαρτάζεσθαι (Rev. 19:21), καοπιάζω (Jo. 4:6), ζάω (Ro. 1:17), etc. Cf. ἐβλασφήμησαν τὸν θεόν ἐκ τῆς πληγῆς (Rev. 16:21). Indeed ἐκ with the notion of price does not differ radically from this idiom. Thus ἠγόρασαν ἐξ αὐτῶν τὸν ἀγρόν (Mt. 27:7), ἐτήσατο ἐκ μισθοῦ (Ac. 1:18), συμψωνήσας ἐκ διηναρίου (Mt. 20:2). Ἐκ διαταγῆς, ‘by order,’ was a regular formula in the papyri (Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 87). Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 248, finds the idiom ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων ἀνέμων (Mk. 13:27) in the papyri as well as in Zech. 11:6.

8. The Partitive Use of ἐκ. It is not infrequent, marking an increase over the earlier idiom. Thus in Jo. 16:17 ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν is even used as the subject of εἶπαν. Cf. Ac. 21:16 without ἐκ. See also Jo. 7:40. John is specially fond of the partitive use of ἐκ (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 115) and the inscriptions and papyri have it also. Cf. ἄνηρ ἐκ τῶν πρωτευόντων, Petersen-Luschan, Reisen, p. 113, xviii. A. 5. Further examples are ἄνθρωπος ἐκ τῶν Φαρισαίων (Jo. 3:1), μὴ τίς ἐκ τῶν ἀρχόντων (Jo. 7:48), ἐκ τοῦ ἄχλου ἀκούσαντες (Jo. 7:40), θανατώσεσθαι ἐξ ἦμῶν (Lu. 21:16), ἐξ αὐτῶν ἀποκτενεῖτε (Mt. 23:34), βλέπουσιν ἐκ τῶν λαῶν (Rev. 11:9), διηκόνουν ἐκ τῶν ὑπαρχόντων (Lu. 8:3), ἐξ αὐτοῦ φάγη (Jo. 6:50), ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος δέδωκεν (1 Jo. 4:13), πίνυν ἐκ τοῦ ὠδατος (Jo. 4:13), οὐδεὶς ἐξ αὐτῶν (Jo. 17:12), etc. In Heb. 13:10 it is what is on the altar that is eaten. The use of ἐκ with a class or for a side or position may as well be mentioned here also. Thus ὁ ὦν ἐκ τῆς αληθείας (Jo. 18:37), οἱ ἐκ νόμου (Ro. 4:14), ὁ ἐκ πίστεως (Ro. 3:26), οἱ ἐκ περιτομῆς (Ac. 11:2), οἱ ἐκ ἐρήμων (Ro. 2:8), etc. The partisan use is allied closely to the partitive. Cf. Ph. 4:22 οἱ ἐκ τῆς Καίσαρος οἰκίας. See further ch. XI, Cases.

9. Ἐκ and ἐν. A word in conclusion is needed about the so-called blending of ἐκ with ἐν. Blass doubts if this classic idiom appears in the N. T. The passages that seem to have it are μὴ καταβάτω ἄραι τὰ ἐκ τῆς οἰκίας αὐτοῦ (Mt. 24:17) where ἐν might indeed have been employed, but ἐκ coincides in idea with ἄραι. . . . Cf. Mk. 13:15, where ἐκ does not have τα before it. In Lu. 11:13 ο πατήρ ὥς ἐξ οὐρανοῦ δώσει πνεῦμα ἄγιον W. H. bracket ὥς before ἐξ, and with ὥς the sending of the Holy Spirit by the Father has

1 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 145.
2 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 100.
3 Ib., p. 258. Cf. also Field, Ot. Norv., Pars III, Mk. 5:30, on τὴν ἐξ αὐτοῦ δύναμιν.
caused ἐξ to displace ἐν which would otherwise have been regular. In Jo. 3:13 some MSS. add ὁ ὅν ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ to ὁ οἶκος ἄνθρωπου, thus making Jesus in heaven at that moment when he was speaking to Nicodemus. In Col. 4:16, τὴν ἐκ Λαοδικίας, the ἐκ assumes, of course, that an Epistle had been sent to Laodicea, and suggests that the Colossians get it from (ἐκ) them. Cf. Ro. 3:25 f. for examples of διά, ἐν, εἰς, πρὸς, ὕπο. See ἀπό and παρά.

(h) ἐπί. See Sanskrit api (locative case), Zend aipi, Latin ob, Lithuanian pi.

1. Ground-Meaning. It is 'upon' as opposed to ὑπό. It differs from ὑπέρ in that ἐπί implies a real resting upon, not merely over.\(^1\)

But the very simplicity of this idea gives it a manifoldness of resultant uses true of no other preposition. Sometimes indeed in the causal and ethical usages the root-idea seems dim,\(^2\) but none the less it is there. The only safety consists in holding on to the root-idea and working out from that in each special context. It marks a delicate shade of difference from ἐν is seen in ὦς ἐν οὐρανῷ καὶ ἐπὶ γῆς (Mt. 6:10). For ἐν cf. Lu. 8:15.

2. In Composition in the N. T. It is very common, always retaining the root-idea (cf. ἐπ-ἐν-δύω, 2 Cor. 5:2), though sometimes the perfective idea is clear. Thus with ἐπ-αἰτέω in Lu. 16:3, ἐπί-γινώσκω in 1 Cor. 13:12,\(^3\) ἐπὶ-γινώσκω in Col. 1:9, ἐπι-τελέω in 2 Cor. 8:11.

3. Frequency in N. T. In the N. T. ἐπί is still in constant use, though it ultimately dropped out of the vernacular\(^4\) before ἐπάνω. Note ἔως ἐπὶ διαλο[γισμός] μόζ. P. Oxy. 294 (A.D. 22) like ἀνὰ εἰς, etc. But in the N. T. it is the one preposition still used freely with more than two cases (acc. 464, gen. 216, dat. and loc. 176)\(^5\). Most of the examples called dative in the lexicons and grammars are really locatives, but some of them are possibly true datives.\(^6\) So then ἐπί really has four cases still in the N. T. In Homer ἐπί often stands alone for ἐπ-εςτιν. Farrar\(^7\) quoting Donaldson, finds in the locative with ἐπί the idea of absolute superposition, while the genitive expresses only partial superposition and the accusative implies motion with a view to superposition and the dative would be superposition for the interest of one. There is some truth in this distinction and the case-idea must always be observed. But

---

\(^1\) K.-G., I, p. 495. \(^2\) Ib. \(^3\) Cf. Moulton, Progl., p. 113. 
\(^5\) Moulton, Progl., p. 107. 
\(^6\) K.-G., I, p. 495; Delbruck, Grundl., p. 130; Vergl. Synt., I, p. 676 f. 
\(^7\) Greek Synt., p. 102.
the growth of the accusative in the later language at the expense of the other cases caused some confusion in the usage according to the standard of the earlier Greek. Simcox considers it "almost a matter of indifference" whether in the N. T. one uses locative, genitive or accusative. This is somewhat true, but even so it does not follow that there was no difference in the cases. The locative accentuated mere location, the genitive brought out rather the kind or genus, while the accusative would present the general idea of extension modified by the fact that the accusative tended to absorb the other cases without insisting on the distinct case-idea. Thus sometimes either case with ἐπὶ would give substantially the same idea, though technical differences did exist. For instance, in Ac. 5:9 note ἐπὶ τῇ θύρᾳ, while in verse 23 we have ἐπὶ τῶν θυρών. So compare ἐγγὺς ἐστὶν ἐπὶ θύραις (Mk. 13:29) with ἔστηκα ἐπὶ τὴν θύραν (Rev. 3:20). Here the notion of rest exists with all three cases, though in Rev. 3:20 καὶ κρούω may have some effect on the presence of the accusative. Once more observe καθίσῃ ἐπὶ θρόνου and καθήμενος ἐπὶ δώδεκα θρόνους in Mt. 19:28. Rev. 4:2 gives us ἐπὶ τῶν θρόνων καθήμενος, verse 9 (margin of W. H., text of Nestle) τῷ καθήμενῳ ἐπὶ τῷ θρόνῳ, while verse 10 has ἐπὶ τοῦ θρόνου, three cases with the same verb. It would be over-refinement to insist on too much distinction here. But the cases afford variety of construction at any rate. In Rev. 14:9 the single verb λαμβάνει has ἐπὶ τοῦ μετώπου αὐτοῦ ἢ ἐπὶ τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ (cf. Ac. 27:44). Compare also λίθος ἐπὶ λίθου in Mt. 24:2 with λίθως ἐπὶ λίθῳ in Lu. 21:6. In Ph. 2:27 the MSS. vary between λύπην ἐπὶ λύπην and λύπην ἐπὶ λύπη. Cf. also ἐπὶ ὀλίγα and ἐπὶ πολλάν in Mt. 25:21. The use of πιστεύω ἐπὶ with locative or accusative has already been discussed. The accusative suggests more the initial act of faith (intrust) while the locative implies that of state (trust). We find εἰς also used with this verb as well as dative (both common in John). Once we have πιστεύω ἐν (Mk. 1:15). See Moulton, Prol., p. 68. But, after all is said, the only practical way to study ἐπὶ is from the point of view of the cases which it supplements.

4. With the Accusative. As already noted, it is far in excess of the other, cases combined. It is hardly necessary to make minute subdivision of the accusative usage, though the preposition with this case follows the familiar lines. With expressions of place it is very common and very easy to understand. So ἐλθεῖν ἐπὶ τα ὕδατα (Mt 14:28), περιεπάτησεν ἐπὶ τὰ ὕδατα (14:29), ἀναπεσεῖν ἐπὶ

1 Lang. of the N. T., p. 146.
A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

602

5. With the Genitive. The genitive with ἐπί has likewise a wide range of usages. Usually the simple meaning 'upon' sat-

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 136. For LXX ex. of rest see C. and S., p. 85.
2 Joh. Gr., p. 259.
3 A postclassical usage, Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 147.
isfies all requirements, as in ἐπὶ κλίνης (Mt. 9:2), ἐφ’ οὗ φωκόδομτο (Lu. 4:29), κηρύξετε ἐπὶ τῶν δωμάτων (Mt. 10:27), ἐρχόμενον ἐπὶ νεφελών (Mt. 24:30), ἔθηκεν ἐπὶ τοῦ σταυροῦ (Jo. 19:19), καθίσας ἐπὶ τοῦ βήματός (Ac. 12:21), ἔπι τῆς κεφαλῆς (Jo. 20:7), ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης (Rev. 5:13) ἐπὶ ξύλου (Ac. 5:30). In Mk. 12:26, ἐπὶ τοῦ βάτου
an ellipsis in thought occurs "in the passage about the bush."

Sometimes, indeed, as with the accusative, so with the genitive, ἐπὶ, has the idea of vicinity, where the word itself with which it is used has a wide meaning. Thus in Jo. 21:1 ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης seems to mean ‘on the sea-shore,’ and so 'by the sea.' So with ἐπὶ τῆς ὁδοῦ, (Mt. 21:19), the fig-tree being not on the path, but on the edge of the road. Abbott¹ notes how Matthew (14:25 f.) has ἐπὶ τὴν θάλασσαν which is not ambiguous like the genitive in Jo. 6:19. Cf. Ac. 5:23 ἐπὶ τῶν θυρῶν. The classic idiom with ἐπὶ and the genitive in the sense of ‘towards’ is not so common in the N. T., though it has not quite disappeared as Simcox² thinks. Cf. ἐγένετο τὸ πλοῖον ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Jo. 6:21), καθίσμενον ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Ac. 10:11), βαλοῦσα τὸ μύρον ἐπὶ τοῦ σώματος (Mt. 26:12), ἐπιπτεῖν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Mk. 14:35), γενομένος ἐπὶ τοῦ τόπου (Lu. 22:40), πῶς ἐπὶ αὐτῆς ἐρχόμενος (Heb. 6:7), πεσὼν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Mk. 9:20). In these examples we see just the opposite tendency to the use of the accusative with verbs of rest. Cf. πεσεῖται ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν (Mt. 10:29) with Mk. 9:20 above and βαλεῖν ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν (Mt. 10:34) with Mk. 4:26. With persons ἐπὶ and the genitive may yield the resultant meaning of ‘before’ or ‘in the presence of.’ Thus ἐπὶ ἡγεμόνων (Mk. 13:9), κρινεῖσθαι ἐπὶ τῶν ἀδικῶν (1 Cor. 6:1), ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ ἐπὶ δύο ἡ τριών μαρτύρων (1 Tim. 5:19), ἐπὶ Ποντίου Πιλάτου (1 Tim. 6:13), ἐπὶ σοῦ (Ac. 23:30), ἐπ’ ἐμοῦ (25:9). Blass³ observes how in Ac. 25:10 ἐστώς ἐπὶ τοῦ βήματος Καίσαρος the meaning is 'before,' while in verse 17 the usual idea 'upon' is alone present (καθίσας ἐπὶ τοῦ βήματος). Cf. ἐπὶ Τίτου in 2 Cor. 7:14. With expressions of time the result is much the same. Thus ἐπὶ ἐσχάτου τῶν χρονῶν (1 Pet. 1:20) where ἐπὶ naturally occurs (cf. Ju. 18). With ἐπὶ τῶν προσευχῶν μου (Ro. 1:10) we have period of prayer denoted simply by ἐπὶ. Cf. ἐπεύχομαι ἐπί, (Magical papyrus, Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 252). There is no difficulty about ἐπὶ τῆς μετοχεσίας (Mt. 1:11). With persons a fuller exposition is required, since ἐπὶ Κλαύδιου (Ac. 11:28) is tantamount to ‘in the time of Claudius' or 'during the reign of Claudius.' Cf. also ἐπὶ ἀρχιερέως Ἀννα (Lu. 3:2), ἐπὶ Ἐλιασαίου (4:27), ἐπὶ Ἀβιάθαρ ἀρχιερέως (Mk.

¹ Joh. Gr., p. 261.
² Lang of the N. T., p. 147.
³ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 137.
2:26). Cf. ἐπὶ αὐτῆς in Heb. 7:11. The idea of basis is a natural metaphor as in ἐπὶ αὐθείας (Lu. 4:25), ἐπὶ τῶν ἀσθενοῦντων (Jo. 6:2), ὡς ἐπὶ πολλῶν (Gal. 3:16), ἐπὶ στόματος (Mt. 18:16).

One of the metaphorical uses is with the resultant idea of ‘over,’ growing naturally out of ‘upon.’ Thus καταστήσει ἐπὶ τῆς θεραπείας (Lu. 12:42), though in Mt. 25:21, 23 both genitive and accusative occur. Cf. also βασιλείαν ἐπὶ τῶν βασιλέων (Rev. 17:18), ὁ ὡν ἐπὶ πάντων, (Ro. 9:5), etc.

6. With the Locative. Here ἐπὶ is more simple, though still with a variety of resultant ideas. Blass\(^2\) observes that with the purely local sense the genitive and accusative uses outnumber the locative with ἐπὶ. But still some occur like ἐπὶ πάνω (Mt. 14:8), ἐπὶ τῇ πηγῇ (Jo. 4:6), ἐπὶ ἰματίων παλαιῶν (Mt. 9:16), ἐπὶ ταύτη τῇ πέτρᾳ οἰκοδομήσων (Mt. 16:18; cf. some MSS. in Mk. 2:4, ἐφ᾽ ὦ κατέκειτο), ἐπὶ τοῖς κραβέστοις (Mk. 6:55), ἐπὶ τῷ χόρτῳ (Mk. 6:39), ἐπὶ ἐρήμων τόποις (Mk. 1:45), ἐπέκειτο ἐπὶ αὐτῷ (Jo. 11:38), ἐπὶ σανίσιν (Ac. 27:44; cf. also ἐπὶ τινων). In Lu. 23:38, ἐπιγραφή ἐπὶ αὐτῷ, the resultant idea is rather that of ‘over,’ Mt. 27:37 having ἐπάνω τῆς κεφαλῆς αὐτοῦ. As with the accusative and genitive, so with the locative the idea of contiguity sometimes appears, as in ἐπὶ θύρας (Mt. 24:33), ἐπὶ τῇ προβατικῇ (Jo. 5:2), ἐπὶ τῇ στοᾷ (Ac. 3:11). Here the wider meaning of the substantive makes this result possible. Cf. also ἐπὶ τῷ ποταμῷ (Rev. 9:14). Ἐπὶ is used very sparingly with the locative in expressions of time. Cf. ἐπὶ συντελεία τῶν αἰώνων (Heb. 9:26). The use of ἐπὶ πάση τῇ μνείᾳ ὑμῶν (Ph. 1:3), οὐ συνήκαν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀρτοῖς (Mk. 6:52), θερίζειν ἐπὶ εὐλογίαις (2 Cor. 9:6) wavers between occasion and time. Cf. also ἐπὶ τῇ πρώτῃ διαθήκῃ (Heb. 9:15). The notion of ἐπὶ τρισὶν μάρτυσιν (Heb. 10:28) is rather ‘before,’ ‘in the presence of.’ Cf. ἐπὶ νεκροῖς (Heb. 9:17). All these developments admit of satisfactory explanation from the root-idea of ἐπὶ, the locative case and the context. There are still other metaphorical applications of ἐπὶ. Thus in Mt. 24 47, ἐπὶ πάσιν, ‘over’ is the resultant meaning. So in Lu. 12:44 ἐπὶ πάσιν τοῖς ὑπάρχουσι. The notion of basis is involved in ἐπὶ ἀρτῳ μονῳ in Mt. 4:4, ἐπὶ τῷ ῥήματι σου in Lu. 5:5, ἐλεύσονται ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματι μου in Mt. 24:5, ἐπὶ ἐλπίδι in Ac. 2:26, etc. Ground or occasion likewise may be conveyed by ἐπὶ. Thus note ἐπὶ τούτῳ in Jo. 4:27 and in particular ἐφ᾽ ὦ, like ἐπὶ τούτῳ ὅτι, in Ro. 5:12 and 2 Cor. 5:4. Cf. ἐφ᾽ ὦ ἐφροινεῖτε (Ph. 4:10) where ‘whereon’ is the simple idea. See

\(^1\) For ἐπὶ τοῦ Εὐεργέτου in Prol. to Sirach see Deiss., B. S., p. 339 f.

\(^2\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 137.
also ἐπὶ παροργίσμω ύμων (Eph. 4:26), cf. 2 Cor. 9:15. The idea of aim or purpose seems to come in cases like ἐπὶ ἔργοις ἀγαθοῖς (Eph. 2:10), ἔφι λοι καὶ κατελήμφθην (Ph. 3:12). Note also Gal. 5:13, ἐπὶ ἐλευθερίᾳ; 1 Th. 4:7, οὐκ ἐπὶ ἀκαθαρσία, (cf. ἐν ἀγίασμῳ), ἐπὶ καταστροφὴ (2 Tim. 2:14). Cf. ἐπὶ ἐλευθερία παρεγράφει Incr. at Delphi ii/B.C. (Deissm., Light, p. 327). The notion of model is involved in ἐκάλουν ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματι (Lu. 1:59) and ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματι (Ro. 5:14). Many verbs of emotion use ἐπὶ with the locative, as ἔχαιρεν ἐπὶ πάσι (Lu. 13:17), θαυμαζόντες ἐπὶ (Lu. 2:33), etc. But some of the examples with these verbs may be real datives, as is possibly the case with the notion of addition to, like προσέθηκεν καὶ τούτῳ ἐπὶ πάσιν (Lu. 3:20).

7. The True Dative. As we have seen, it was probably sometimes used with ἐπὶ. The N. T. examples do not seem to be very numerous, and yet some occur. So I would explain διὰ τὴν ὑπερβάλλουσαν χάριν τοῦ θεοῦ ἐφ’ ὑμῖν (2 Cor. 9:14). This seems a clear case of the dative with ἐπὶ supplementing it. The same thing may be true of ἐφ’ ὑμῖν in 1 Th. 3:7 and Ro. 16:19. Cf. also πεποίθητος ἐφ’ ἐαυτὸς in Lu. 18:9 and μακροθύμησον ἐπὶ ἐμοί in Mt. 18:26 f. So Lu. 1:47 ἐπὶ τῷ θεῷ. In Lu. 12:52 f., τρεῖς ἐπὶ δυσίν, δύο ἐπὶ τρισίν, υἱὸς ἐπὶ πατρί (cf. also ἐπὶ θυγατέρα), the resultant sense is 'against.' Cf. also προφητεύσατι ἐπὶ λαοῖς in Rev. 10:11. In Jo. 12:16, ἦν ἐπὶ αὐτῷ γεγραμμένα, and Ac. 5:35, ἐπὶ τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τούτοις the idea is rather 'about' or 'in the case of.' Cf. also τῆς γενομένης ἐπὶ Στεφάνω (Ac. 11:19). Here the personal relation seems to suit the dative conception better than the locative. The notion of addition to may also be dative. Cf. Lu. 3:20 above and Col. 3:14, ἐπὶ πάσιν δὲ τούτοις; Heb. 8:1, ἐπὶ τοῖς λεγομένοις. In Eph. 6:16 the best MSS. have ἐν. It is possible also to regard the use of ἐπὶ for aim or purpose as having the true dative as in 1 Th. 4:7.

(i) Κατά. There is doubt about the etymology of this preposition. In tmesis it appears as κατά, and in Arcadian and Cypriote Greek it has the form κατά. It is probably in the instrumental case, but an apparently dative form καταί survives a few times. Brugmann compares it with Old Irish cet, Cymric cant, Latin com—, though this is not absolutely certain.

1. Root-Meaning. Brugmann thinks that the root-meaning of the preposition is not perfectly clear, though 'down' (cf. ὁνά) seems to be the idea. The difficulty arises from the fact that we

sometimes find the ablative case used when the result is down from, then the genitive down upon, and the accusative down along. But 'down' (cf. κατ'ω) seems always to be the only idea of the preposition in itself. In the N. T. three cases occur with κατά.

2. Distributive Sense. Κατά came to be used in the distributive sense with the nominative, like ἀνά and σύν, but chiefly as adverb and not as preposition.² Hence this usage is not to be credited to the real prepositional idiom. Late Greek writers have it. So εἷς κατά εἷς in Mk. 14:19 (and the spurious Jo. 8:9), τὸ καθ' ἑς in Ro. 12:5. The modern Greek uses καθεῖς or καθένας as a distributive pronoun.² Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 138 f., considers also εἷς καθ' ἐκαστος (A Lev. 25:10) merely the adverbial use of κατά. But see καθ' ἑνα in 1 Cor. 14:31, σκατά δὲ ἔορτήν (Mt. 27:15).

3. κατά in Composition. It is true to the root-idea of 'down,' like κατέβη in Mt. 7:25, καταγαγέω in Ro. 10:6. But the various metaphorical uses occur also in composition. Often κατά occurs with "perfective" force.³ So, for instance, observe καταρτίσει (1 Pet. 5:10), κατηγωνίσαντο (Heb. 11:33), κατεδώξεν (Mk. 1:36), καταδοὐλοί (2 Cor. 11:20), κατακαύσει (Mt. 3:12), καταμάθετε (Mt. 6:28), κατανοήσατε (Lu. 12:24), κατέπαυσαν (Ac. 14:18), καταπίνοντες (Mt. 23:24), κατασκευάσει (Mk. 1:2), κατεργάζεσσε (Ph. 2:12), κατέθαγεν (Mt. 13:4), καθοράται (Ro. 1:20). This preposition vies with διά and σύν in the perfective sense. Κατέχω in Ro. 1:18 is well illustrated by ὁ κατέχων τὸν θυμόν from an ostracon (Deissmann, Light, p. 308). In the magical texts it means to 'cripple' or to 'bind,' 'hold fast.' But in Mk. 14:45, κατεφίλησε the preposition seems to be weakened, though the A. S. V. puts "kissed him much" in the margin. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., Nov., 1907, p. 220.

4. With the Ablative. This construction is recognised by Brugmann,⁴ Monro,⁵ Kuhner-Gerth,⁶ ck.7 There are some examples of the ablative in the N. T., where 'down' and 'from' combine to make 'down from.' Thus, for instance, is to be explained ἐβάλεν κερ' αὐτῆς ἀνεμος τυφώνικος (Ac. 27:14), where αὐτῆς refers to Κρήτην, and the meaning (cf. American Standard Revision) is manifestly 'down from' Crete. In 1 Cor. 11:4, προφητεύων κατὰ κεφαλῆς ἔχων, we have 'down from' again, the veil hanging

---

down from the head. In Mk. 5:13 we find ὄρμησεν ἡ ἀγέλη κατὰ τοῦ κρήμνου (Mt. 8:32= Lu. 8:33) where 'down from the cliff' is again the idea.

5. With the Genitive. It is more usual with κατά than the ablative in the N. T. as in the earlier Greek. The idea is 'down upon,' the genitive merely accenting the person or thing affected. A good example of this sense in composition followed by the genitive appears in κατακυριεύσας σώματέρων (Ac. 19:16). Some MSS. in Mk. 14:3 have κατά with τῆς κεφαλῆς, but without it κατέχεευ means 'pour down on' the head. In 2 Cor. 8:2, ἡ κατά βάθους πτωχεία, the idea is 'down to' depth. But with the genitive the other examples in the N. T. have as resultant meanings either 'against, throughout' or 'by.' These notions come from the original 'down.' Luke alone uses 'throughout' with the genitive and always with ὀλος. The earlier Greek had καθ’ ὀλοῦ (also alone in Luke in the N. T., Ac. 4:18), though Polybius employed κατά in this sense. Cf. in Lu. 4:14 καθ’ ὀλης τῆς περι-χώρου; Ac. 9:31 καθ’ ὀλης τῆς Ἰουδαίας (so 9:42; 10:37). The older Greek would have used the accusative in such cases. But cf. Polyb. iii, 19, 7, κατά τῆς γῆς διεσπαρθήσαν. The notion of 'against' is also more common in the κοινή. But in the modern Greek vernacular κατά (κά) is confined to the notions of 'toward' and 'according to,' having lost the old ideas of 'down' and 'against.' (Thumb, Handb., p. 105 f.). Certainly the preposition does not mean 'against.' That comes out of the context when two hostile parties are brought together. Cf. English vernacular "down on" one. This κατά then is 'down upon' rather literally where the Attic usually had and accusative. Among many examples note κατά τοῦ Ἰησοῦ μαρτύριαν (Mk. 14:55), νύμφην κατά πενθερᾶς (Mt. 10:35), κατά τοῦ πνεύματος (Mt. 12:32), κατά τοῦ Παῦλου (Ac. 24:1), etc. Cf. no. 8:33. Sometimes μετά and κατά are contrasted (Mt. 12:30) or κατά and ὑπέρ (Lu. 9:50; 1 Cor. 4:6). The other use of κατά and the genitive is with verbs of swearing. The idea is perhaps that the hand is placed down on the thing by which the oath is taken. But in the N. T. God himself is used in the solemn oath. So Mt. 26:63, ἔξορκίζω σε κατά τοῦ θεοῦ. Cf. Heb. 6:13, 16. In 1 Cor. 15:15 ἐμαρτυρήσαμεν κατά τοῦ θεοῦ, may be taken in this sense or as meaning 'against.'

6. With the Accusative. But the great majority of examples

---

1 Delbruck, ib., p. 761.
2 Jebb, in V. and D., Handb., etc., p. 313.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 133.
in the N. T. use the accusative. Radermacher (*N. T. Gr.*, p. 116) notes the frequency of the accusative in the papyri where περί would appear in the older Greek. Farrar suggests that κατά with the genitive (or ablative) is perpendicular (‘down on’ or ‘down from’) while with the accusative it is horizontal (‘down along’). Curiously enough John has only some ten instances of κατά and several of them are doubtful. On the whole, the N. T. use of the accusative with κατά corresponds pretty closely to the classic idiom. With a general horizontal plane to work from a number of metaphorical usages occur. But it appears freely in local expressions like ἀπήλθε καθ’ ὀλην τὴν πόλιν κηρύσσων (Lu. 8:39), διήρχοντο κατὰ τὸς κύμας (Lu. 9:6), κατὰ τὴν ὄδον (Lu. 10:4), ἐγένετο λιμὸς κατὰ τὴν χώραν (Lu. 15:14), κατὰ τὴν Κιλικίαν (Ac. 27:5), βλέποντα κατὰ λίβα (Ac. 27:12), κατὰ μεσημβρίαν (Ac. 8:26), κατὰ πρόσωπαν (Gal. 2:11), κατ’ ὀφθαλμοὺς (Gal. 3:1), κατὰ σκοπόν (Ph. 3:14). The notion of rest may also have this construction as κατ’ οἶκον (Ac. 2:46). Cf. τὴν κατ’ οἶκον αὐτῆς ἐκκλησίαν (Col. 4:15). Cf. Ac. 11:1. In Ac. 13:1 a rather ambiguous usage occurs, κατὰ τὴν οὐσίαν ἐκκλησίαν προφήται. But this example may be compared with τῶν κατὰ Ιουδαίον ἔθων (Ac. 26:3), οἱ καθ’ ὑμᾶς ποιηταί (Ac. 17:28, some MSS. καθ’ ἡμᾶς), νόμοι τοῦ καθ’ ὑμᾶς (Ac. 18:15). This idiom is common in the literary κοινὴ and is one of the marks of Luke’s literary style. But this is merely a natural development, and κατά with the accusative always expressed direction towards in the vernacular. Schmidt (*de eloc. Joseph.*, p. 21 f.) calls κατά a sort of periphrasis for the genitive in late Greek. Cf. τὰ κατ’ ἐμέ (Ph. 1:12). It is more than a mere circumlocution for the genitive in the examples above and such as τὴν καθ’ ὑμᾶς πίστιν (Eph. 1:15), τὸ κατ’ ἐμέ (Ro. 1:15), τὸ κατὰ σάρκα (Ro. 9:5), τὰ κατ’ ἐμέ (Eph. 6:21; cf. Ac. 25:14), ἀνδρᾶσιν τοῖς κατ’ ἐξοχήν (Ac. 25:23; cf. par excellence). Κατά is used with expressions of time like κατ’ ἐκείνου τῶν καιρῶν (Ac. 12:1), κατὰ τὸ μεσονύκτιον (Ac. 16:25), καθ’ ἐκάστην ἡμέραν (Heb. 3:13), κατὰ πᾶν σάββατον (Ac. 13:27). The notion of distribution comes easily with κατὰ, as in κατὰ πόλιν (Lu. 8:1), κατὰ τὸς συναγωγᾶς (Ac. 22:19), κατ’ ἐτος (Lu. 2:41), καθ’ ἡμέραν (Ac. 2:46), καθ’ ἔνα πάντες (1 Cor. 14:31), καθ’ ἄνωμα (Jo. 10:3), etc. See Mt. 27:15 = Mk. 15:6. Cf. κατὰ δύο, P. Oxy. 886 (iii/A.D.). As a standard or rule of measure κατὰ is very common.

---

1 Gk. Synt., p. 100.  
2 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 266.  
3 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 149; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 133.  
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 133.
and also simple. So κατά τὸ εὐαγγέλιον (Ro. 16:25) with which compare the headings1 to the Gospels like κατὰ Μαθθαίον, though with a different sense of εὐαγγέλιον. Here the examples multiply like κατὰ νόμον (Lu. 2:22), κατὰ φύσιν (Ro. 11:21), κατὰ χάριν (Ro. 4:4), κατὰ θεόν (Ro. 8:27), κατὰ τὴν πίστιν (Mt. 9:29), κατὰ δύναμιν (2 Cor. 8:3), καθ᾽ ὑπερβολή (Ro. 7:13), κατὰ συνγνώμην (1 Cor. 7:6), etc. Various resultant ideas come out of different connections. There is no reason to call κατὰ πᾶσαν αἰτίαν, (Mt. 19:3) and κατὰ ἀγνοιαν (Ac. 3:17) had Greek. If there is the idea of cause here, so in 1 Tim. 6:3, κατ᾽ εὐσέβειαν, the notion of tendency or aim appears. We must not try to square every detail in the development of κατά or any Greek preposition with our translation of the context nor with classic usage, for the N. T. is written in the κοινή. This preposition is specially common in Acts and Hebrews. Κατ᾽ ἰδίαν (Mt. 14:13) is adverbial. But κατὰ πρόσωπου is not a mere Hebraism, since the papyri have it (Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 140). As a sample of the doubling up of prepositions note συνεπεστη κατ᾽ αὐτῶν (Ac. 16:22).

(j) Μετά. Most probably μετά has the same root as μέσος, Latin medius, German mit (midi), Gothic mils, English mid (cf. a-mid). Some scholars indeed connect it with ἁμα and German samt. But the other view is reasonably certain. The modern Greek uses a shortened form μέ, which was indeed in early vernacular use.2 Some of the Greek dialects use πέδα. So the Lesbian, Boeotian, Arcadian, etc. μετά seems to be in the instrumental case.3

1. The Root-Meaning. It is ('mid') 'midst.' This simple idea lies behind the later developments. Cf. μεταξύ and ἀνάμεσα. We see the root-idea plainly in μεταφησίζω (from μετ-έφησεν, in 'mid-air'). In the N. T. we have a metaphorical example (Lu. 12:29) which is intelligible now in the day of aeroplanes and dirigible balloons. The root-idea is manifest also in μέτ-ωπον (Rev. 7:3), 'the space between the eyes.'

2. In Composition. The later resultant meanings predominate in composition such as "with" in μεταδίδωμι (Ro. 12:8), μεταλαμβάνω (Ac. 2:46), μετέχω (1 Cor. 10:30); "after" in μεταπέμπω (Ac. 10:5); or, as is usually the case, the notion of change or transfer is the result as with μεθίστημι (1 Cor. 13:2), μεταβαίνω (Mt. 8:34), μεταμορφόω (Ro. 12:2), μεταμέλομαι (Mt. 27:3), μετανοεώ (Mt. 3:2).

3. Compared with σύν. Μετά is less frequent in composition than

σύν, though far more common as a preposition. Simcox\(^1\) thinks that it is useless to elaborate any distinction in meaning between μετά, and σύν. The older grammars held that σύν expressed a more intimate fellowship than μετά. But in the N. T. μετά has nearly driven σύν out.

4. Loss of the Locative Use. Μετά was originally used with the locative. It is common in Homer, but even with him the genitive has begun to displace it.\(^2\) Homer uses the locative with collective singulars and plurals.\(^3\) Mommsen\(^4\) indeed considers that in Hesiod ἀμα, μετά and σύν, all use the instrumental case and with about equal frequency, while μετά with the genitive was rare. But in the N. T. μετά, along with περί and ὑπό, has been confined to the genitive and accusative, and the genitive use greatly predominates (361 to 100).\(^5\) The idea with the locative was simply between.\(^6\) With several persons the notion of 'among' was present also.\(^7\)

5. With the Genitive. In Homer it occurs only five times and with the resultant idea of 'among.' So once (Iliad, 13. 700, μετά Βοιωτῶν ἑμὰρχοντο), where indeed the idea is that of alliance with the Boeotians. In Rev. 2:16, etc., μετά occurs with πολεμέω in a hostile sense, a usage not occurring in the older Greek, which Simcox\(^8\) considers a Hebraism. But the papyri may give us examples of this usage any day. And Thumb (Hellenismus, p. 125; cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 106) has already called attention to the modern Greek use of with οἰκέω. Deissmann (Light, p. 191) finds μετά στρατιώτων with οἰκέω in an ostraca (not in hostile sense) and possibly with ἀντιλογέω, 'elsewhere.' In Jo. 6:43 μετά occurs in a hostile sense with γογγύζω and probably so with ζήτησις in Jo. 3:25, though Abbott\(^9\) argues for the idea of alliance here between the Baptist's disciples and the Jews to incite rivalry between the Baptist and Jesus. In 1 Cor. 6:6 f. we have the hostile sense also in legal trials, ἀδελφός μετά ἀδελφοῦ κρίνεται. Cf. Jo. 16:19. This notion gives no difficulty to English students, since our "with" is so used. But Moulton\(^10\) admits a translation Hebraism in Lu. 1:58, ἐμεγάλυνεν Κύριος τὸ ἔλεος αὐτοῦ μετ' αὐτῆς. But what about ὅσα ἐποίησεν ὁ θεὸς μετ' αὐτῶν

\(^{1}\) Lang. of the N. T., p. 149. Cf. Thayer, under σύν.
\(^{2}\) Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 444.
\(^{3}\) K.-G.; I, p. 505.
\(^{5}\) Moulton, Prol., p. 105.
\(^{6}\) Delbrück, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 741 f.
\(^{7}\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 136.
\(^{8}\) Lang. of the N. T., p. 150.
\(^{9}\) Joh. Gr., p. 267.
\(^{10}\) Prol., p. 106.
PREPOSITIONS (ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΙΣ)

(Ac. 14:27) and τετελείσθη ἡ ἀγάπη μεθ’ ἡμῶν (1 Jo. 4:17)? Simcox¹ again finds a Hebraism in "the religious sense" which appears in Mt. 1:23; Lu. 1:28; Jo. 3:2, etc. But the notion of fellowship is certainly not a Hebraism. Μετά has plenty of examples of the simple meaning of the preposition. Thus τῶν ζώντα μετά τῶν νεκρῶν (Lu. 24:5), ἥν μετά τῶν θηρίων (Mk. 1:13), μετά τῶν τελωνίων (Lu. 5:30), μετά ἀνώμων ἔλογισθη (Lu. 22:37), an idiom not common to σύν and found in the classical poets.² Cf. also σκηνή τοῦ θεοῦ μετά τῶν ἀνθρώπων (Rev. 21:3), μετά διωγμῶν (Mk. 10:30), ἐμίξεις μετά τῶν θυσιῶν (Lu. 13:1), οἶνον μετά χολής (Mt. 27:34). It is not far from this idea to that of conversation as in μετά γυναικὸς ἔλαλει (Jo. 4:27), and general fellowship as with εἰρηνεύω (Ro. 12:18), συμφωνεῖ θεόν (Mt. 20:2), κοινωνίαν ἔχω (1 Jo. 1:3), συναίρω λόγον (Mt. 18:23), etc. Perhaps the most frequent use of is with the idea of accompaniment. So with ἀκολουθεῖ (Lu. 9:49), λαμβάνω (Mt. 25:3), παραλαμβάνω (Mt. 12:45), ἔρχομαι (Mk. 1:29), ἀναχωρέω (Mk. 3:7), etc. Cf. Mt. 27:66. So with εἰμί (Mk. 3:14), but sometimes the notion of help or aid is added as in Jo. 3:2; 8:29, etc. Cf. also ἡ χάρις μεθ’ ὑμῶν (Ro. 16:20) and often. The notion of fellowship may develop into that of followers or partisans as in Mt. 12:30. Sometimes the phrase of ὁ μετ’ αὐτοῦ with the participle (Jo. 9:40) or without (Mt. 12:4) means one's attendants or followers (companions). The idea of accompaniment also occurs with things as in ἐξήλθατε μετά μαχαιρῶν (Lu. 22:52), μετά τῶν λαμπάδων (Mt. 25:4), μετά σάλπιγγος (Mt. 24:31), μετά βραχίων ὑψηλοῦ (Ac. 13:17), some of which approach the instrumental idea. Cf. μετά ἐπιθέσεως τῶν χειρῶν (1 Tim. 4:14), where the idea is rather 'simultaneous with,' but see μετά ὄρκου (Mt. 14:7), μετα φωνῆς μεγάλης (Lu. 17:15). Still in all these cases accompaniment is the dominant note. See also μηδέν(α) ἀπολελύθαι τῶν μετά σίτου ("in the corn service"), B.U. 27 (ii/A.D.). Certainly it is not a Hebraism in Lu. 1:58, for Moulton (Prol., p. 246) can cite A.P. 135 (ii/A.D.) τὶ δὲ ἢμεῖν συνέβη μετὰ τῶν ἀρχόντων; In later Greek the instrumental use comes to be common with μετά (cf. English "with").³ In Lu. 10:37 ὁ ποιήσας τὸ ἔλεος μετὰ αὐτοῦ Debrunner (Blass-Deb., p. 134) sees a Hebraism. But see Herm. S. V. 1, 1, ἐποίησε μετ’ ἐμοῦ. The metaphorical use for the idea of accompaniment occurs also like μετὰ δυνάμεως καὶ δόξης (Mt. 24:30), μετὰ σπουδῆς (Mk. 6:25), μετὰ δακρύων (Heb. 12:17), μετὰ

612 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

\( \text{φόβου καὶ τρόμου} \) (2 Cor. 7:15), \( \text{παρρησίας} \) (Ac. 2:29), \( \text{θορύβου} \) (Ac. 24:18), etc. Deissmann (Bible Studies, pp. 64, 265) finds in the papyri examples of \( \text{μετὰ καὶ} \) like that in Ph. 4:3. Cf. Schmid, Der Atticismus, III, p. 338. In the modern Greek vernacular \( \text{μέ} \) is confined to accompaniment, means or instrument and manner. Time has dropped out (Thumb, Handb., p. 103. f.).

6. With the Accusative. At first it seems to present more difficulty. But the accusative-idea added to the root-idea ("midst") with verbs of motion would mean "into the midst" or "among." But this idiom does not appear in the N. T. In the late Greek vernacular \( \text{μετὰ} \) with the accusative occurs in all the senses of \( \text{μετὰ} \) and the genitive,1 but that is not true of the N. T. Indeed, with one exception (and that of place), \( \text{μετὰ τὸ δεύτερον καταπέτασμα} \) (Heb. 9:3), in the N. T. \( \text{μετὰ} \) with the accusative is used with expressions of time. This example in Hebrews is helpful, however. The resultant notion is that of behind or beyond the veil obtained.

by going through the midst of the veil. All the other examples have the resultant notion of "after" which has added to the root-meaning, as applied to time, the notion of succession. You pass through the midst of this and that event and come to the point where you look back upon the whole. This idea is "after." Cf. \( \text{μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας} \) (Mt. 26:2). In the historical books of the LXX \( \text{μετὰ ταῦτα} \) (cf. Lu. 5:27) is very common.2 Simcox3 treats \( \text{οὐ μετὰ πολλάς ταύτας ἡμέρας} \) (Ac. 1:5) as a Latinism, but, if that is not true of \( \text{πρό}, \) it is hardly necessary to posit it of \( \text{μετὰ}. \) Cf. \( \text{μετὰ ἡμέρας ἐκοσὶ} \) Herm. Vis. IV, 1, 1. The litotes is common. Jannaris4 comments on the frequency of \( \text{μετὰ τὸ} \) with the infinitive in the LXX and N. T. So \( \text{μετὰ τὸ ἀναστήναι} \) (Acts 10:41). Cf. 1 Cor. 11:25; Heb. 10:26, etc. This comes to be one of the common ways of expressing a temporal clause (cf. \( \text{ἐπεί} \) or \( \text{ὅτε} \)). Cf. \( \text{μετὰ βραχὺ} \) (Lu. 22:58), \( \text{μετὰ μικρὸν} \) (Mk. 14:70), adverbial phrases.

(k) \( \text{Παρά}. \)

1. Significance. Delbruck5 does not find the etymology of \( \text{παρά} \) clear and thinks it probably is not to be connected with \( \text{parea} \) (Sanskrit), which means 'distant.' Brugmann6 connects it with the old word \( \text{pura} \) like Latin \text{por}—, Gothic \text{faura}, Anglo-Saxon \text{fore} (cf. German \text{vor}). Giles7 thinks the same root furnishes \( \text{παρός} \) (gen.),

---

2 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 266.
3 Lang. of the N. T., p. 151.
4 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 386.
7 Comp. Philol., p. 342.
παρά (instr.), παράϊ (dat.), περί (loc.). He also sees a kinship in these to πέραν, πέρα, πρός.

2. Compared with πρός. In meaning παρά, and πρός do not differ essentially save that παρά merely means 'beside,' 'alongside' (cf. our "parallel"), while πρός rather suggests 'facing one another,' an additional idea of contrast. This oldest meaning explains all the later developments.² Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 116) thinks that the N. T. shows confusion in the use of παρά (διελογίζοντο παρά [marg. of W. H. and Nestle, εν in text] ἑαυτοῖς, Mt. 21:25) and διελογίζοντο πρός ἑαυτοῖς (Mk. 11:31). But is it not diversity the rather?

3. In Composition. The preposition is exceedingly common in composition, though with nouns it falls behind some of the others a good deal. Παρά does not survive in modern Greek vernacular save in composition (like ανά and εκ) and some of its functions go to ἀπό and εἰς.³ All the various developments of παρά appear in composition, and the simplest use is very common. Thus παραβολή (Mk. 13:28) is a 'placing of one thing beside another.' So παρα-θαλάσσιος (Mt. 4:13) is merely 'beside the sea.' Cf. also παρα-θήκη (2 Tim. 1:14), παρα-καθεσθείσ (Lu. 10:39), παρα-λακέω (Ac. 28:20), παρα-κλήτος (Jo. 14:16), παρα-λέγομαι (Ac. 27:8), παρα-άλιος (Lu. 6:17), παρα-μένω (Heb. 7:23; cf. μενών καὶ παρα-μενώ Ph. 1:25), παρα-πλέω (Ac. 20:16), παρα-βρέω (Heb. 2:1), παρατίθημι (Mk. 6:41), πάρειμι (Lu. 13:1), etc. A specially noticeable word is πάροινος (1 Tim. 3:3). Cf. also ἀντί-παρ-ήλθεν in Lu. 10:31 f. Sometimes παρά suggests a notion of stealth as in παρεἰσ-άγω (2 Pet. 2:1), παρεἰσ-δῶ (Ju. 4), παρεἰσ-ακτος (Gal. 2:4), but in παρεἰσ-έρχομαι at in Ro. 5:20 this notion is not present. Cf. Mt. 14:15, ή ώρα ἤδη παρῆλθεν, 'the hour is already far spent' ('gone by'). Note also the Scotch "far in" like modern Greek παραμέσα (Moulton, Prol., p. 247). A few examples of the "perfective" use occur as in παροξύνω (Ac. 17:16), παρα-πικραίνω (Heb. 3:16), παρά-σημος (Ac. 28:11), παρα-ηπρέω (Gal. 4:10), but in Lu. 14:1 the idea of envious watching comes out). With παρα-φρονέω the notion is rather 'to be beside one's self,' 'out of mind.' Cf. also παρά-σημος in Heb. 6:6, found in the ostraca (Wilcken, i. 78 f.) as a commercial word 'to fall below par.' For παρενοχλείν, (Ac. 15:19) see παρενοχλείν ἡμᾶς, P. Tb. 36 (ii/B.o.). Παρά occurs in the N. T. with three cases. The locative has 50 examples, the accusative 60, the ablative 78.⁴

---

4. With the Locative. Παρά with the locative is nearly confined to persons. Only one other example appears, ἵστήκεισαν παρά τῷ σταυρῷ (Jo. 19:25). This confining of παρά to persons is like the usual Greek idiom, though Homer used it freely with both. Homer used it also as an adverb and in the shortened form πάρ. The only instance in the N. T. of the locative with παρά, after a verb of motion is in Lu. 9:47, ἔστησεν αὐτὸ παρά ἑαυτῷ, though here D reads ἑαυτόν. The locative with παρά leaves the etymological idea unchanged so that we see the preposition in its simplest usage. Cf. δὲ ἀπέλειπτον παρά Κάρπῳ (2 Tim. 4:13) as a typical example of the use with persons which is much like apud in Latin, 'at one's house' (Jo. 1:40), 'in his society,' etc. So καταλύσαι παρά (Lu. 19:7), μένω παρά, (Jo. 14:17), ἔνειζω παρά (Ac. 21:16). Cf. Ac. 21:8. In Rev. 2:13; Mt. 28:15, παρά has the idea of 'among.' The phrase παρά τῷ θεῷ (Lu. 1:30) is common. The word is used in ethical relations, also like παρ᾽ ἐμοί (2 Cor. 1:17). Cf. τι ἄριστον κρίνεται ἀρ ῥήμιν (Ac. 26:26) and φρόνιμοι παρ᾽ ἑαυτοῖς (Ro. 12:16). Παρά with the locative does not occur in Hebrews.

5. With the Ablative. But it occurs only with persons (like the older Greek). The distinction between παρά and ἀπό and ἐκ has already been made. In Mk. 8:11 both παρά and ἀπό occur, ζητοῦντες παρά αὐτοῦ σημεῖον ἀπὸ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (cf. 12:2), and in Jo. 1:40 we have both παρά and ἐκ, εἰς ἐκ τῶν δύο τῶν ἀκούσαντων παρά ἰωάνου. In a case like Jo. 8:38 the locative is followed by the ablative, ἐσώρακα παρά τῷ πατρί — ἥκουσατε παρά τοῦ πατρός, though some MSS. have locative in the latter clause also. But the ablative here is in strict accordance with Greek usage as in a case like ἀκούσαι παρά σοῦ (Ac. 10:22). On the other hand in Jo. 6:45 f. we find the ablative in both instances, ὃ ἀκούσας ἀρά τοῦ πατρός — ὃ ὤν παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ (cf. ὃ ὤν εἰς τῶν κόλπων τοῦ πατρός in Jo. 1:18). But this last παρά implies the coming of Christ from the Father, like παρά τοῦ πατρός ἐξελθοῦν, (Jo. 16:27). Παρά with the ablative means ‘from the side of’ as with the accusative it means 'to the side of.' The phrase οἱ παῖδες αὐτοῦ therefore describes one's family or kinsmen (Mark 3:21). In the papyri the phrase is very common for one's agents, and Moulton has found one or two like οἱ παῖδες ἡμῶν Πάντως parallel to of οἱ παῖδες αὐτοῦ in Mk. 3:21. Cf. also τὰ παρά

---

2 Simcox, Lang. of N. T., p. 151.

αὐτῶν (Lu. 10:7) for one's resources or property. Rouffiac (Recherches, etc., p. 30) cites ἐδαπάνησεν παρ' ἐαυτοῦ from inscription from Priene (1,11, 117). Note also ἤ παρ' ἐμοῦ διαθήκη (Ro. 11:27) with notion of authorship. With passive verbs the agent is sometimes expressed by παρά as in ἀπεσταλμένος παρὰ θεοῦ (Jo. 1:6), τοῖς λελαμβάνονσι παρὰ Κυρίου (Lu. 1:45). Cf. Text. Rec. in Ac. 22:30 with κατηγορεῖται παρὰ τῶν Ἰουδαίων, where W. H. have ὑπό. Παρά, occurs with the middle in Mt. 21:42, παρά Κυρίου ἐγένετο. In the later Greek vernacular παρά with the ablative helped supplant ὑπό along with ἀπό, and both παρά and ὑπό (and ἐκ) vanished1 "before the victorious ἀπό."

6. With the Accusative. It is not found in John's writings at all2 as it is also wanting in the other Catholic Epistles. The accusative is common in the local sense both with verbs of motion and of rest. The increase in the use of the accusative with verbs of rest explains in part the disuse of the locative.3 One naturally compares the encroachments of εἰς upon ἐν. We see the idiom in the papyri as in οἱ παρὰ σὲ θεοί, P. Par. 47 (B.C. 153). The use of παρά with the accusative with verbs of rest was common in Northwest Greek (Buck, Greek Dialects, p. 101). Thus in Mt. 4:18 we find περιπατῶν παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν logically enough, but in 13:1 we meet ἐκάθητο παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν, and note καθήμενοι παρὰ τὴν ὅδαν (Mt. 20:30), ἐστῶς παρὰ τὴν λίμνην (Lu. 5:1), ἔστιν οἰκία παρὰ θάλασσαν (Ac. 10:6), διδάσκειν παρὰ θάλασσαν (Mk. 4:1), ἀναιθραμμένος παρὰ τοὺς πόδας (Ac. 22:3). Cf. Ac. 4:35. So no difficulty arises from ἔριψαν παρὰ τοὺς πόδας (Mt. 15:30). There is no example in the N. T. of παρά in the sense of 'beyond,' like Homer, but one where the idea is 'near to,' alongside of,' as ἤλθεν παρά τὴν θάλασσαν (Mt. 15:29). But figuratively παρά does occur often in the sense of 'beside the mark' or 'beyond.' Once4 indeed we meet the notion of 'minus,' as in τεσσάρακοντα παρὰ μίαν (2 Cor. 11:24). Cf. παρὰ τάλαντον σοι πέρπακα, B.U. 1079 (A.D. 41), where παρά means 'except.' The modern Greek vernacular keeps παρά τρίχα, 'within a hair's breadth' (Thumb, Handb., p. 98). The notion of 'beyond' is common enough in classic writers and is most frequent in Hebrews in the N. T. It occurs with comparative forms like διαφορώτερον (Heb. 1:4), πλείονος (3:3), κρεῖττοσι (9:23; cf. 12:24),

3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 138.
4 W.-Th., p. 404. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 138, less naturally explains παρά here as meaning 'by virtue of,' but not Debrunner.
with implied comparison like ἡλάττωσας βραχύ τι (2:7), or with merely the positive like ἀμαρτωλοί (Lu. 13: 2; cf. 13:4). Indeed no adjective or participle at all may appear, as in ὁφειλέται ἐγένοντο παρὰ πάντας (Lu. 13:4; cf. 13:2). The use of the positive with παρά is like the Aramaic (cf. Wellhausen, Einl., p. 28). Here the notion of 'beyond' or 'above' is simple enough. Cf. παρά after ἀλλος in 1 Cor. 3:11 and ἡμέραν in Ro. 14:5; Heb. 11:11. The older Greek was not without this natural use of παρά for comparison and the LXX is full of it.1 In the later Greek vernacular the ablative and both retreat before παρά and the accusative.2 In the modern Greek vernacular we find παρά and the accusative and even with the nominative after comparison (Thumb, Handb., p. 75). The notion of comparison may glide over into that of opposition very easily. Thus in Ro. 1:25, ἐλατρευσαν τῇ κτίσει παρὰ τῶν κτίσαντα, where 'rather than' is the idea (cf. "instead of"). Cf. Ro. 4:18, παρ’ ἐλατρευταὶ ἐπ’ ἐλπίδα, where both prepositions answer over to each other, ‘beyond,’ ‘upon.’ So in 2 Cor. 8:3 κατὰ δύναμιν and παρὰ δύναμιν are in sharp contrast. Cf. Ac. 23:3. In Gal. 1:8 f. παρ’ ὅ has the idea of 'beyond' and so ‘contrary to.’ Cf. Ro. 11:24; 12:3; 16:17. To exceed instructions is often to go contrary to them. In a case like παρὰ νόμου (Ac. 18:13), to go beyond is to go against. Cf. English transgression, παρὰ-πτωμα. Once more παρά, with the accusative strangely enough may actually mean 'because of,' like propter. So in 1 Cor. 12:15 f. παρὰ τούτο. Cf. D in Lu. 5:7. The Attic writers used παρά thus, but it disappears in the later vernacular.3 The notion of cause grows out of the idea of nearness and the nature of the context. Farrar4 suggests the English colloquial: "It's all along of his own neglect."

(1) Περί. There is some dispute about the etymology of περί. Some scholars, like Sonne,5 connect it in etymology and meaning with ὑπέρ. But the point is not yet clear, as Brugmann6 contends. Whatever may be true about the remote Indo-Germanic root, περί belongs to the same stem as παρά and is in the locative case like pari in the Sanskrit.7 Cf. also Old Persian pari, Zend pairi, Latin per, Lithuanian per, Gothic fair–, Old High German far–, fer, German ver–. The Greek uses περί as an adverb (Homer)

---

1 C. and S., p. 85 f.; Thack., Gr., p. 23. 3 Ib., p. 390.
5 Kurze vergl. Gr., II, p. 475.
and the AEolic dialect even uses πέρ instead of περί. The intensive particle πέρ is this same word.

1. The Root-Meaning. It is 'round' ('around'), 'on all sides' (cf. ἀμφί, 'on both sides'). Cf. περί (Ac. 5:16), where the root-idea is manifest. Cf. Latin circum, circa. The preposition has indeed a manifold development, but after all the root-idea is plainer always than with some of the other prepositions. The N. T. examples chiefly (but cf. Ac. 28:7) concern persons and things, though even in the metaphorical uses the notion of 'around' is present.

2. In Composition. The idea of 'around' in the literal local sense is abundant. Cf. περιήγεν (Mt. 4:23), περισσοτράψαι (Ac. 22:6), περιεστῶτα (Jn. 11:42), περιεδραμον (Mk. 6:55), περιφέρειν (Mk. 6:55), περι-έρχομαι (Ac. 19:13), φραγμὸν αὐτῷ περιέθηκεν (Mt. 21:33). In περι-πατέω (Mt. 9:5) περι has nearly lost its special force, while in περιεργαζόμενος (2 Th. 3:11) the whole point lies in the preposition. Note in Mk. 3:34, περι-βλεψάμενος τούς περὶ αὐτὸν κύκλῳ καθημένος, where κύκλῳ explains περι already twice expressed. Cf. also περι-κυκλῳσσώσιν σε (Lu. 19:43). The perfective idea of περί in composition is manifest in περι-ελείν ἀμαρτίας (Heb. 10:11), 'to take away altogether.' Cf. περι-αψάντων πῦρ ἐν μέσῳ τῆς αὐλῆς (Lu. 22:55), where note the addition of περί to ἐν μέσῳ. In Mk. 14:65 περι-καλύπτω means 'to cover all round,' 'to cover up,' like περι-κρύπτωσιν Lu. 1:24. This is the "perfective" sense. Cf. περί-λυπος in Mt. 26:38. Per contra note περίεργος (1 Tim. 5:13) for 'busybody,' busy about trifles and not about important matters. In 1 Tim. 6:10 note περιεπείραν in the sense of 'pierced through.' But in 2 Cor. 3:16, περιαιρέται, 'the veil is removed from around the head.'

3. Originally Four Cases Used. These were the locative, accusative, genitive, ablative. The locative was never common in prose and died out in the late Greek, not appearing in the N. T. Delbruck is very positive about the ablative in some examples in Homer and the earlier Greek. Indeed he thinks that the true genitive is a later development after the ablative with περί. I think it probable that some of these ablative examples survive in the N. T., though I do not stress the point.

4. With the Ablative. There is some doubt as to how to explain

1 K.-G., I, p. 491.
4 Cf. also Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 447.
the ablative with \( \text{peri} \). In Homer\(^1\) it is usually explained as like ablative of comparison. Cf. \( \upsi \). Thus \( \text{peri} \) is taken in the sense of 'beyond' or 'over,' and is allied to \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) and \( \uppsi \), according to the original sense.\(^2\) Brugmann\(^3\) cites also \( \text{peri} \) and \( \text{peri} \) where the notion of superiority comes in. With this compare \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) (Ac. 27:16), which would thus have the ablative in \( \text{peri} \). But Monro\(^4\) admits that the origin of this notion with \( \text{peri} \) is not quite clear. On the other hand, the use of \( \text{peri} \) in composition may throw light on the subject. In 2 Cor. 3:16, \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)), 'the veil is taken from around.' Cf. also Ac. 27:20. The same notion occurs in \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) (1 Cor. 4:13) and \( \text{peri} \) (ib.), 'off-scouring' and 'off-scraping.' The same idea of \( \text{from around} \) occurs in \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) (Ac. 16:22; cf. 2 Macc. 4:38). In Lu. 10:40 this idea appears in a metaphorical sense with \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)), 'drawn away' or 'from around,' 'distracted.' See \( \text{peri} \), P. Brit. M. 42 (B.C. 168) for 'occupy.' Cf. also the notion of beyond in \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) (1 Tim. 5:13), \( \text{peri} \) (1 Th. 4:15), \( \text{peri} \) (Ac. 1:4), \( \text{peri} \) (Tit. 2:14), \( \text{peri} \) (Jo. 6:12), \( \text{peri} \) (Mt. 5:37). In the last example, \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)), note the ablative. There remains a group of passages of a metaphorical nature where the idea is that of taking something away. These may be explained as ablatives rather than genitives. So in Ro. 8:3, \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)), the idea is that we may be freed from sin, from around sin. Thayer (under \( \text{peri} \)) explains this usage as "purpose for removing something or taking it away." This, of course, is an ablative idea, but even so we get it rather indirectly with \( \text{peri} \). See \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) \( \text{peri} \) in 1 Pet. 3:18. It is worth observing that in Gal. 1:4 W. H. read \( \uppsi \) rather than \( \text{peri} \), while in Heb. 5:3 W. H. have \( \text{peri} \) rather than \( \uppsi \). Cf. Mk. 14:24.

In Eph. 6:18 f. we have \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)) \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)), \( \text{peri} \) (\( \text{peri} \)), where the two prepositions differ very little. But in 1 Pet. 3:18 (see above), \( \uppsi \) (\( \text{peri} \)), the distinction is clearer. Cf. Jo. 16:26; 17:9. See Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 152 f. D has \( \uppsi \) with \( \text{peri} \) in Mt. 26:28 rather than \( \text{peri} \). Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 134. Cf. \( \text{peri} \) with \( \text{peri} \) in 1 Jo. 2:2. The ablative with \( \uppsi \) renders more probable this ablative use of \( \text{peri} \).

5. **With the Genitive.** This is the common case with \( \text{peri} \) in the

---

1. Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 133; Sterrett, The Dial. of Hom. in Hom. II., N 47.
N. T. If the genitive and ablative examples are counted together (the real ablatives are certainly few) they number 291 as against 38 accusatives. But in the later Greek the accusative gradually drives out the genitive (with the help of διά also). The genitive was always rare with περί in the local or temporal sense. The N. T. shows no example of this usage outside of composition (Ac. 25:7), unless in Ac. 25:18 περί οὗ a be taken with σταθέντες, which is doubtful. Curiously enough the Gospel of John has the genitive with περί almost as often as all the Synoptic writers and the accusative not at all in the critical text, Jo. 11:19 reading πρὸς τὴν Μάρθαν. This frequency in John is due largely to the abundant use of μαρτυρεῖ, λέγω, ἀλέω, γράφω, etc. Cf. Jo. 1:7, 22:7, 13, 17, etc. Περί may occur with almost any verb where the notion of "about," "concerning" is natural, like ἐπιλαλαγχύνίσθη (Mt. 9:36), ἠγανάκτησαν (20:24), μέλει (22:16), ἐκεγχόμενος (Lu. 3:19), ἔθαμβασαν (Lu. 2:18), etc. The list includes verbs like ἀκούω, γινώσκω, διαλογίζομαι ἐνθυμόμαι, ἐπιζητέω, etc. The usage includes both persons, like προσεύχεσθε περί ἡμῶν (1 Th. 5:25), and things, like περί ἐνθύματος τί μεριμνᾷτε (Mt. 6:28). One neat Greek idiom is τὰ περὶ. Cf. τὰ περὶ τῆς ὀδοῦ, (Ac. 24:22), τὰ περὶ Ἡσυχοῦ (18:25; Mk. 5:27), τὰ περὶ ἐμαυτοῦ (Ac. 24:10). Blass considers ποιεῖν περὶ αὐτοῦ (Lu. 2:27) "an incorrect phrase," which is putting it too strongly. Cf. λαγχάνω περὶ in Jo. 19:24, like classical μάχομαι περὶ. Sometimes περὶ appears rather loosely at the beginning of the sentence, περὶ τῆς λογίας (1 Cor. 16:1), περὶ Ἄπωλλω (16:12). Sometimes περὶ is used with the relative when it would be repeated if the antecedent were expressed, as in περὶ ὧν ἐγνάφατε (1 Cor. 7:1) or where περὶ properly belongs only with the antecedent, as in περὶ ὧν δέδωκάς μοι (Jo. 17:9). In Lu. 19:37, περὶ πασῶν ὧν ἔδωκα διυνᾶμεν, the preposition strictly belongs only to the antecedent which is incorporated. In a case like περὶ πάντων εὐχομαι (3 Jo. 2) the subject-matter of the prayer is implied in περὶ as cause is involved in περὶ τοῦ καθαρισμοῦ (Mk. 1:44) and as advantage is expressed in περὶ αὐτῆς (Lu. 4:38). But this is merely due to the context.

6. With the Accusative. This construction in reality occurs with much the same sense as the genitive. The accusative, of course, suggests a placing around. It is rare in the N. T., but in later Greek displaced the genitive as already remarked. But it does not survive in the modern Greek vernacular. With the accusative

περί is used of place, as in σκάψω περί αὐτήν (Lu. 13:8), περί τὸν τόπον ἐκείνου (Ac. 28:7). Cf. Mk. 3:8. So with expressions of time, as in περί τρίτην ὀραν (Mt. 20:3). Note the use of περί with the different parts of the body, as περί τὴν ὀσφύν (Mt. 3:4), περί τὸν τράχηλον (18:6). Cf. Rev. 15:6. Περί is used of persons as in περί-αστράψαοι περί ἐμέ (Ac. 22:6), ἔδαυν περί αὐτοὺς (Mk. 9:14). An ancient Greek idiom occurs in οἱ περί Παῦλου (Ac. 13:13), like of περί Χενοφῶντα (Xen. Anab. 7, 4, 16), where the idea is 'Paul and his companions.' But in a case like οἱ περί αὐτόν (Lu. 22:49) the phrase has only its natural significance, 'those about him.' The still further development of this phrase for the person or persons named alone, like the vernacular "you all" in the Southern States for a single person, appears in some MSS. for Jo. 11:19, πρὸς τὰς περὶ Μαρθᾶν καὶ Μαρίαν, where only Martha and Mary are meant, the critical text being πρὸς τὴν Μαρθᾶν. Blass notes that only with the Philippian Epistle (2:23, τὰ περὶ ἐμέ) did Paul begin the lase of the accusative with περί (cf. genitive) in the sense of 'concerning,' like Plato. Cf. in the Pastoral Epistles, περὶ τὴν πίστιν (1 Tim. 1:19), περὶ τὴν ἀλήθειαν (2 Tim. 2:18). But Luke (10:40 f.) has it already. Cf. περὶ τὰ τοιαύτα (Ac. 19:25). But κύκλῳ in the LXX, as in the κοινή, is also taking the place of περί (Thackeray, Gr., p. 25). Ἀμφί could not stand before ὑπέρ, and finally περί itself went down. The entrance of ὑπέρ into the field of περί will call for notice later.

(m) Πρό. Cf. the Sanskrit pra and the Zend fra, Gothic fra, Lithuanian pra, Latin pro, German fur, vor, English for (for-ward), fore (fore-front). The case of πρό is not known, though it occurs a few times in Homer as an adverb. Cf. ἀπό and ὕπο. The Latin prod is probably remodelled from an old *pro like an ablative, as praes is dative (or locative).

1. The Original Meaning. It is therefore plain enough. It is simply 'fore,' 'before.' It is rather more general in idea than Cori and has a more varied development. In πρὸ τῆς θύρας (Ac. 12:6) the simple idea is clear.

2. In Composition. It is common also in composition, as in προ-άνλιον (Mk. 14:68), 'fore-court.' Other uses in composition grow out of this idea of 'fore,' as προ-βαίνω (Mt. 4:21), 'to go on' ('for-wards'), προ-κοπτω (Gal. 1:14), προ-άγω (Mk. 11:9; cf. ἀκολούθεω in contrast), πρό-δηλος (1 Tim. 5:24), 'openly manifest,

'before all' (cf. Ga1.3:1, προ-εγράφη; προ-έχω (Ro. 3:9), ‘to sur-pass’; προ-αμαχράω (2 Cor. 12:21), ‘to sin before,’ ‘previously’; προ-ορίζω (Ro. 8:29), 'to pre-ordain.' Cf. πρό-κριμα (1 Tim. 5:21), 'pre-judgment.' In these respects the N. T. merely follows in the wake of the older Greek. One may illustrate πρό still further by the comparative προ-τερός and the superlative πρώ-τος (cf. Doric πρά-τος). Cf. also πρό-σω, προ-πέρευσι.

3. The Cases Used with πρό. These call for little comment. It is barely possible that οὐρανόθι πρό in Homer may be a remnant of a locative use. Brugmann thinks that a true genitive is seen in πρό ὀδοῦ, but this is not certain. But the ablative is probably the case. In very late Greek πρό even appears with the accusative. It is not in the modern Greek vernacular. The ablative is due to the idea of comparison and is found also with the Latin pro. πρό occurs only 48 times in the N. T. and is almost confined to Matthew's and John's Gospels, Luke's writings and Paul's Epistles (12 times).

4. Place. Thus it occurs only in four instances, πρό τῆς θύρας (Ac. 12:6), πρό τῶν θυρών (Jas. 5:9), πρό τοῦ πυλώνος (Ac. 12:14), πρό τῆς πόλεως (14:13). Cf. ἔμπορεσθεν, (Mt. 5:24), which is more common in this sense in the N. T. Some MSS. have πρό in Ac. 5:23. In Cyprus (borrowing from the literary language) to-day we still have πρό κεφαλῆς, 'at the head of the table' (Thumb, Handb., p. 98).

5. Time. This is the more common idea with πρό in the N. T. Thus we find such expressions as τοῦς πρό ύμων (Mt. 5:12), πρό καιροῦ (8:29), πρό τοῦ κατακλυσμοῦ (Mt. 24:38), πρό τοῦ αἰώνα (Jo. 11:55), πρό τῶν αἰώνων (1 Cor. 2:7), πρό χειμῶνος (2 Tim. 4:21). This is all plain sailing. Nor need one stumble much at the compound preposition (translation Hebraism) πρό προσώπου σου (Mk. 1:2 and parallels). Cf. Ac. 13:24; Lu. 9:52. Nine times we have πρό τοῦ with the infinitive, as in Lu. 2:21; 22:15; Jo. 1:48. Here this phrase neatly expresses a subordinate clause of time (antecedent). Cf. ante quam. A real difficulty appears in πρό ἔξ ἡμερῶν τοῦ πάσχα (Jo. 12:1), which does look like the Latin idiom in ante diem tertium Kalendas.

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 449.
3 Griech. Gr., p. 449.
Jannaris' attributes this common idiom in the late Greek writers to the prevalence of the Roman system of dating. This has been the common explanation. But Moulton throws doubt on this "plausible Latinism" by showing that this idiom appears in a Doric inscription of the first century B.C. (Michel, 694), πρὸ δὲμερῶν δὲκα τῶν μυστηρίων. The idiom occurs also in the inscriptions, πρὸ ἑ Καλαυνὸν Αὐγροῦστων, I.M.A. iii. 325 (ii/A.D.), and the papyri, πρῶ δύο ἦμερῶν F.P. 118 (ii/A.D.). So Moulton proves his point that it is a parallel growth like the Latin. Rouffiac (Recherches, p. 29) re-enforces it by three citations from the Priene inscriptions. Cf. also πρὸ πολλὰ ὁπτῶν ἦμερῶν Acta S.-Theogn., p. 102. Moulton thinks that it is a natural development from the ablative case with πρό, 'starting from,' and refers to ὄψε σαββάτων in Mt. 28:1 as parallel. May it not be genuine Greek and yet have responded somewhat to the Latin influence as to the frequency (cf. LXX and the N. T.)? Similarly πρὸ ἔτῶν δὲκατεστάρων (2 Cor. 12:2), 'fourteen years before (ago).' Abbott considers it a transposing of πρό, but it is doubtful if the Greek came at it in that way. Simcox calls attention to the double genitive with πρό in Jo. 12:1, really an ablative and a genitive.

6. Superiority. Πρῶ occurs in the sense of superiority also, as in πρὸ πάντων (Jas. 5:12; 1 Pet. 4:8). In Col. 1:17 πρὸ πάντων is probably time, as in πρὸ ἕμον (Jo. 10:8; Rom. 16:7). Cf. πρὸ ὁπτῶν πάντων in Lu. 21:12.

(n) Πρῶς. The etymology of πρῶς is not perfectly clear. It seems to be itself a phonetic variation of προτί which is found in Homer as well as the form ποτί (Arcad. πός, πότ in Boeotian, etc.). What the relation is between ποτί and προτί is not certain. The Sanskrit prati is in the locative case. The connection, if any, between πρῶς and πρό is not made out, except that προ-τι and pra-ti both correspond to πρό and pra. Thayer considers –τι an adverbial suffix.

1. The Meaning. It is the same as προτί and ποτί. The root-idea is 'near,' 'near by,' according to Delbruck, though Brugmann inclines to towards.' In Homer πρῶς has an adverbial

2 Prol., pp. 100. He refers also to the numerous ex. in W. Schulze, Graec. Lat., pp. 14-19.
4 Lang. of the N. T., p. 153 f.
5 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 449.
6 Ib.
8 Die Grundl., p. 132.
9 Griech. Gr., p. 449.
use, \( \pi\rho\varsigma \) δὲ with the notion of 'besides.' The idea seems to be 'facing,' German gegen. Cf. \( \pi\rho\sigma\varsigma\upsilon\nu\nu \).

1. In Composition. Probably one sees the original notion in \( \pi\rho\sigma\epsilon\delta\epsilon\nu\omega \), 'to sit near' (cf. Eurip., etc.). Some MSS. read this verb in 1 Cor. 9:13, though the best MSS. have \( \pi\alpha\epsilon\delta\epsilon\nu\omega \). But we do have \( \pi\rho\sigma\kappa\epsilon\phi\alpha\lambda\alpha\iota\nu \) (Mk. 4:38) and \( \pi\rho\sigma\mu\epsilon\nu \) (Mt. 15:32; 1 Tim. 5:5). Cf. also \( \pi\rho\sigma\varphi\alpha\gamma\iota\nu\nu \) (Jo. 21:5), and \( \pi\rho\sigma\or\mu\iota\zeta\omega \) (Mk. 6:53). The other resultant meanings appear in composition also as 'towards' in \( \pi\rho\sigma\alpha\gamma\omega \) (Lu. 9:41), 'to' in \( \pi\rho\sigma\kappa\omega\lambda\lambda\alpha\omega \) (Eph. 5:31), 'besides' in \( \pi\rho\sigma\omega\phi\epsilon\iota\lambda\omega \) (Phil. 19), 'for' in \( \pi\rho\sigma\kappa\alpha\imath\rho\o\zeta \) (Mt. 13:21). This preposition is common in composition and sometimes the idea is simply "perfective," as in \( \pi\rho\sigma\kappa\alpha\tau\tau\tau\epsilon\rho\epsilon\omega \) (Ac. 1:14), \( \pi\rho\sigma\pi\epsilon\iota\nu\omicron\omicron\zeta \) (Ac. 10:10).

2. Originally with Five Cases. The cases used with \( \pi\rho\varsigma \) were probably originally five according to Brugmann, viz. locative, dative, ablative, genitive, accusative. The only doubt is as to the true dative and the true genitive. Delbruck also thinks that a few genuine datives and genitives occur. Green (cf. \( \pi\rho\delta \)) speaks of "the true genitive" with \( \pi\rho\varsigma \); it is only rarely true of \( \pi\rho\varsigma \) and \( \upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\). The genitive with \( \pi\rho\varsigma \) is wanting in the papyri and the Pergamon inscriptions (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 117). And in the N. T. no example of the genitive or dative appears. In Lu. 19:37 \( \pi\rho\varsigma \tau\iota\kappa\alpha\tau\beta\alpha\acute{\alpha} \epsilon \) might possibly be regarded as dative with \( \epsilon\gamma\gamma\iota\varsigma\omicron\tau\omicron\omicron\varsigma \); but it is better with the Revised Version to supply "even" and regard it as a locative. In composition (\( \pi\rho\sigma\epsilon\chi\epsilon\tau\epsilon \epsilon \alpha\alpha\omicron\tau\omicron\omicron\iota\omicron\varsigma \), Lu. 12:1) the dative is common. Maccabees shows the literary use of \( \pi\rho\varsigma \) with dative of numbers (Thackeray, Gr., p. 188).

3. The Ablative. There is only one example of the ablative in the N. T. and this occurs in Ac. 27:34, \( \tau\omicron\delta\omicron\tau\omicron\pi\rho\varsigma \tau\iota\varsigma \upsilon\mu\epsilon\tau\epsilon\varrho\alpha\varsigma \sigma\omega\tau\pi\acute{\iota}\alpha\zeta \upsilon\pi\acute{\alpha} \rho\chi\epsilon \). This metaphorical usage means 'from the point of view of your advantage.' It is possible also to explain it as true genitive, 'on the side of.' This is a classical idiom. So then \( \pi\rho\varsigma \) in the N. T. is nearly confined to two cases. Moulton agrees

---

1 Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., I, p. 728. \( \Pi\rho\varsigma \), as well as \( \mu\epsilon\tau\acute{\alpha} \), still appears as adv. in Polyb. Cf. Kaelker, Quest. de Eloc. Polyb., p. 283.
2 Griech. Gr., p. 448 f.
4 Notes on Gk. and Lat. Synt., p. 163.
5 Prol., p. 106.
with Blass\(^1\) that this is a remnant of the literary style in Luke. Moulton finds the genitive (ablative) 23 times in the LXX. The true genitive appeared in examples like Πρός τοῦ ποταμοῦ, 'by the river' or 'towards the river.' In the modern Greek vernacular Πρός fades\(^2\) before εἰς and ὀπό as the ablative use is going in the N. T. It is rarely used of place and time, and even so the usage is due to the literary language (Thumb, *Handbook*, p. 106).

5. *With the Locative.* Πρός indeed occurs in the N. T. with the locative only seven times, so that it is already pretty nearly a one-case preposition. These seven examples are all of place and call for little remark. Cf. Πρός τῷ ὄρει (Mk. 5:11), Πρός τῷ μνημεῖῳ (Jo. 20:11). They are all with verbs of rest save the use with ἐγγίζοντος in Lu. 19:37. See under 3. The correct text gives the locative in Mk. 5:11 and Jo. 20:11, else we should have only five, and D reads the accusative in Lu. 19:37. These seven examples illustrate well the etymological meaning of Πρός as 'near' or 'facing.' Moulton counts 104 examples of Πρός and the dative (locative) in the LXX. Four of these seven examples are in John's writings. Cf. especially Jo. 20:12. Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 106) notes "P. Fi. 5 Πρός τῷ πυλῶν, as late as 245 A.D."

6. *With the Accusative.* It was exceedingly common in Homer and always in the literal local sense.\(^3\) The metaphorical usage with the accusative developed later. How common the accusative is with Πρός in the N. T. is seen when one notes that the number is 679.\(^4\) This was the classic idiom\(^5\) with Πρός both literally and metaphorically. It is not necessary to say that Πρός with the accusative means 'towards.' The accusative case implies extension and with verbs of motion Πρός ('near') naturally blends with the rest into the resultant idea of 'towards.' This is in truth a very natural use of Πρός with the accusative, as in δυναχώρησεν Πρός τὴν θάλασσαν (Mk. 3:7). In Mk. 11:1 note both εἰς (ὢ Ιεροσόλυμα) and Πρός (τῷ ὄρῳ) with ἐγγίζοντος. In Phil. 5 (W. H.) the margin has both with persons. Here Lightfoot (*in loco*) sees a propriety in the faith which is towards (Πρός) Christ and the love exerted upon (εἰς) men. But that distinction hardly\(^6\) applies in Ro. 3:25 f.; Eph. 4:12. Cf. Mk. 5:19. In Mk. 9:17 W. H. and Nestle accent Πρός σὲ. There seems to be something almost intimate, as well as personal, in some of the examples of Πρός. The examples of Πρός with persons are very numerous, as in ἐξεπορεύετο Πρός αὐτὸν (Mt. 3:5),

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 140.  
2 Jann., Gk. Gr., p. 366.  
3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 142.  
deute proz me (Mt. 11:28), etc. But one must not think that the notion of motion is essential to the use of proz and the accusative (cf. eis and en). Thus in Mk. 4:1, para o ocho proz tih thalassasan eti tih ghis hiasan, note both eti and proz and the obvious distinction. Cf. also theraivnoo pro to phos (Mk. 14:54). It is not strange, therefore, to find proz hymas eisin (Mt. 13:56), proz se poiw to pasoche (26:18). Cf. also ta proz tih thuraan in Mk. 2:2. The accusative with proz is not indeed exactly what the locative would be, especially with persons. In Mk. 14:49 we find kathymeiran hymen proo umas ev tih ierw didaskan. Abbott1 properly illustrates Jo. 1:1, o logos h proz ton theon with this passage in Mk. and with 2 Cor. 5:8, evdhamhsai proz ton kuriou. It is the face-to-face converse with the Lord that Paul has in mind. So John thus conceives the fellowship between the Logos and God. Cf. stoma proz stoma in 2 Jo. 12, 3 Jo. 14 and prousovon proz prousovon in 1 Cor. 13:12. But, while this use of proz with words of rest is in perfect harmony with the root-idea of the preposition itself, it does not occur in the older Greek writers nor in the LXX.2 Jannaris3 is only able to find it in Malalas. Certainly the more common Greek idiom would have been parado, while meta and suv might have been employed. Abbott,4 however, rightly calls attention to the frequent use of proz with verbs of speaking like legw, lalew, etc., and Demosthenes has it with zao. So then it is a natural step to find proz employed for living relationship, intimate converse. Two very interesting examples of this personal intercourse occur in Lu. 24:14, wimilo proz allhalous, and verse 17, auvitallaste proz allhalous. Cf. also proz with periaptew (Col. 4:5), koinwnia (2 Cor. 6:14), diaithke (Ac. 3:25 as in ancient Greek), logos (Heb. 4:13), etc. Certainly nothing anomalous exists in pitei proz touz podas (Mk. 5:22) and proskophs pro litheron (Mt. 4:6). Proz is not used often with expressions of time, and the notion of extension is in harmony with the accusative case. Cf. proz kairoin in Lu. 8:13, proz uroan in Jo. 5:35, proz oliga hymeras in Heb. 12:10. In proz esperoran (Lu. 24:29) the resultant notion is 'toward,' rather than 'for.' Blass5 points out that proz to paron (Heb. 12:11) is classical. The metaphorical uses of proz are naturally numerous. Disposition towards one is often expressed by proz, whether it be friendly as in makrothetaite proz pantas (1 Th. 5:14) or hostile as in ev eixhra ountes proz autous (Lu. 23:12).

1 Joh. Gr., p. 273 f.
2 Ib.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 139.
Cf. *μετ’ ἀλλήλων* (*ib*.). Ἡρός does not of itself mean 'against,' though that may be the resultant idea as in γογγυσμός—πρός τοὺς Ἔβραίους (Ac. 6:1). Cf. also πρός πλησμονήν τῆς σαρκός (Col. 2:23) and πρός τοὺς κτλ. (2 Cor. 5:12). Sometimes πρός adds nothing to the vague notion of extension in the accusative case and the idea is simply 'with reference to.' Thus πρός τοὺς ἀγγέλους λέγει (Heb. 1:7). Cf. also Lu. 20:19. Ηρός in the κοινή shares with εἰς and περί, the task of supplanting the disappearing dative (Radermacher, *N. T. Gr.*, p. 112). In particular πρός αὐτόν, (−ούς) takes the place of αὐτῷ (−οίς) after λέγω, εἶπον ἀποκρίνομαι, as shown by parallel passages in the Synoptic Gospels, as in Lu. 3:14, where MSS. vary between αὐτοῖς and πρός αὐτοῖς. Adjectives may have πρός in this general sense of fitness, like ἀγαθός (Eph. 4:29), δυνατά (2 Cor. 10:4), ἰκανός (2 Cor. 2:16), λεικάζων πρός θερισμόν (Jo. 4:35), etc. Cf. also τὰ πρὸς τὸν θεόν (Ro. 15:17). The phrase τί πρός ἡμᾶς; (Mt. 27:4) has ancient Greek support.1 The notion of aim or end naturally develops also as in ἐγράφη πρὸς νουθεσίαν ἡμῶν (1 Cor. 10:11), πρὸς τί έἴπεν (Jo. 13:28), ὁ πρὸς τὴν ἐλεημοσύνην καθήμενος (Ac. 3:10). Cf. 1 Cor. 14:26; 15:34. Some examples of the infinitive occur also in this connection, like πρὸς τὸ θεαθήναι αὐτοῖς (Mt. 6:1), πρὸς τὸ κατακαύσαι αὐτὰ (13:30), etc. In πρὸς τὸ δεῖν προσεύχεσθαι (Lu. 18:1) the notion is hardly so strong as 'purpose.' But see Infinitive. Then again cause may be the result in certain contexts as in Μωσῆς πρὸς τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν ἡμῶν ἐπέτρεψεν (Mt. 19:8). There is no difficulty about the notion of comparison. It may be merely general accord as in πρὸς τὸ θέλημα αὐτοῦ (Lu. 12:47), πρὸς τὴν ἀλήθειαν (Gal. 2:14), or more technical comparison as in οὐκ ἄρ’ τὰ παθήματα τοῦ νῦν καιροῦ πρὸς τὴν μέλλουσαν δόξαν ἀποκαλυφθῆναι (Ro. 8:18). With this may be compared πρὸς φθόνον, in Jas. 4:5, where the phrase has an adverbial force.

(o) Σύν. The older form ξύν (old Attic) appears in some MSS. in 1 Pet. 4:12 (Beza put it in his text here). This form ξύν is seen in ξυνός. In μετα-ξύ both μετά and ξύν are combined.2 Delbruck3 is indeed in doubt as to the origin of σύν, but see Mommesen,4 and some (Giles, *Comp. Philol.*, p. 343) consider ξύν and σύν, different.

1. *The Meaning.* This is in little dispute. It is 'together with.'5

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 139.
2 Brug., Griech. Cr., p. 454:
5 Drug., Griech. Or., p. 454.
Cf. Latin *cum* and English *con*-comitant. The associative instrumental is the case used with *σοῦ* as with ἀμα and it is just that idea that it was used to express originally. It never departed from this idea, for when the notion of help is present it grows naturally out of that of association. The Attic, according to Blass, confines *σοῦ*, to the notion of 'including,' but the Ionic kept it along with μετά, for 'with.'

2. *History.* It is not without interest. In Homer it is sometimes an adverb (tmesis). Indeed it never made headway outside of poetry save in Xenophon, strange to say. The Attic prose writers use μετά rather than *σοῦ*. Thus in 600 pages of Thucydidse we find μετά 400 times and ξοῦ 37, while Xenophon has *σοῦ* more than μετά. In Demosthenes the figures run 346 of μετά and 15 of *σοῦ*, while Aristotle has 300 and 8 respectively. Monro thinks that μετά displaced *σοῦ* in the vernacular while *σοῦ* held on in the poets as the result of Homer's influence and finally became a sort of inseparable preposition like *dis*— in Latin (cf. ἀμφι— in N. T.). In the modern Greek vernacular *σοῦ* is displaced by μέ (μετά) and sometimes by ἀμα. The rarity of *σοῦ* in the N. T. therefore is in harmony with the history of the language. Its use in the N. T. is largely confined to Luke's Gospel and Acts and is entirely absent from John's Epistles and the Apocalypse as it is also from Hebrews and 1 Peter, not to mention 2 Thessalonians, Philemon and the Pastoral Epistles. It is scarce in the rest of Paul's writings and in Mark and Matthew, and John's Gospel has it only three times (12:2; 18:1; 21:3). It occurs in the N. T. about 130 times (over two-thirds in Luke and Acts), the MSS. varying in a few instances.

3. *In Composition.* Here *σοῦ* is extremely common. See list of these verbs in chapter on Cases (Instrumental). Cf. Thayer's Lexicon under *σοῦ*. The use in composition illustrates the associative idea mainly as in *σοῦν-ἀγω* (Mt. 2:4), *σοῦν-έρχομαι* (Mk. 3:20), though the notion of help is present also, as in *σοῦν-αντι-λαμβάνομαι* (Lu. 10:40), *σοῦν-εργέω* (1 Cor. 16:16). Cf. χαίρω καὶ συγχαίρω (Ph. 2:17 f.). The "perfective" use of *σοῦ* is seen in *σοῦν-καλύπτω* (Lu. 12:2), *σοῦν-κλείω* (Ro. 11:32), *σοῦν-κύπτω* (Lu. 13:11). Cf. σωστελεώ, σωστηρέω, etc. In σοῦνια the knowing may be either with another, as possibly Ac. 5:2, or with one's self, as in 1 Cor. 4:4.

---

1 Delbruck, Die Grundl., p. 133.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 132. 4 Hom. Gr., p. 147.
6 Cf. on the whole subject Mommsen, Entw., p. 395.
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

The verb δυνέω (Lu. 22:63; Ac. 18:5) is found in the papyri (Deissmann, Bible Studies, p. 160. Cf. Moulton and Milligan, Expositor, 1911, p. 278). As already explained, the case used is the associative-instrumental. In the very late Greek the accusative begins to appear with σῶν, (as indeed already in the LXX!) and both σῶν and ἃμα show 1 examples of the genitive like μετά.

4. N. T. Usage. There is very little comment needed on the N.T. usage of the preposition beyond what has already been given. 2 The bulk of the passages have the notion of accompaniment, like σῶν σοι ἀποθανεῖν (Mt. 26:35). So it occurs with μένειν (Lu. 1:56), καθίσας (Ac. 8:31), etc. Cf. also σῶν ὡς τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ (Ac. 15:22), where the use of σῶν may subordinate the church a bit to the Apostles (Thayer). 3 Cf. also Ac. 14:5; Lu. 23:11, where καί rather than σῶν might have occurred. As applied to Christ, σῶν, like ἐν, may express the intimate mystic union, as in κέκρυφται σῶν τῷ Χριστῷ ἐν τῷ θεῷ (Col. 3:3). The phrase οἱ σῶν is used much like οἱ παρά, οἱ περί, οἱ μετά. Thus Πέτρος καὶ οἱ σῶν αὐτῶ (Lu. 9:32). Cf. Lu. 5:9 and Mk. 2:26. Once σῶν occurs in a context where the idea is 'besides,' ἀλλὰ γε καὶ σῶν πᾶσιν τούτοις (Lu. 24:21).

Cf. Neh. 5:18. So probably also Ph. 1:1. It appears in the papyri in this sense also. Cf. Moulton and Milligan, "Lexical Notes on the Papyri," The Expositor, 1911, p. 276. In Mt. 8:34 Text. Rec. reads εἰς συνάντησιν τῷ Ἰησοῦ, where critical text has The case of Ἰησοῦ is associative-instrumental in either instance. MSS. give σὺν—in other passages. The use of σῶν τῇ δυνάμει τοῦ κυρίου (1 Cor. 5:4) has a technical sense ('together with') seen in the magical papyri and in an Attic cursing tablet (iii/B.C.). Cf. Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 304 f. See also Deissmann's Die neut. Formel "in Christo Jesu" for discussion of σῶν Χριστῷ, the notion of fellowship in Ph. 1:23. He now cites a graffito with these words to a deceased person, εὐχόμαι καγώ ἐν τάχυ σῶν σοι εἶναι (Light, p. 305). Cf. Col. 3:3. In 1 Th. 4:17 note ἃμα σῶν αὐτῶς and in 5:10 ἃμα σῶν αὐτῶ like our "together with," which shows also the retreat of σῶν before ἃμα. For σὺν-ἐπι and κατά see Ac. 16:22.

(p) Ἄγερ. In Homer, by anastrophe, sometimes we have ὑπερ. Cf. Sanskrit upari (locative case of upar), Zend upairi, Latin super, Gothic ufar, German uber, Anglo-Saxon ofer, English over. The

---

2 Cf. Westcott on Jo. 1:2 for discussion of distinction between σῶν and μετά.
3 Cf. the use of σῶν καί in the pap. Deiss., B. S., p. 265 f.
oldest Indo-Eur. locative\(^1\) was without \(i\). A longer comparative occurs in \(\text{ὑπέρτερος}\), and a superlative \(\text{ὑπέρτατος}\) shortened into \(\text{ὑπατος}\). Cf. Latin \textit{superus}, \textit{summus}, and English \textit{up}, \textit{upper}, \textit{uppermost}.

1. \textit{The Meaning}. It is therefore clear enough. It is the very English word 'over' or 'upper.' Chaucer uses 'over' in the sense of 'upper.' As an adverb it does not occur in Homer, though Euripides (\textit{Medea}, 627) has \(\text{ὑπέρ ἄγαν}\). Jannaris\(^2\) calls \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) (Blass \(\text{ὑπὲρ}\) \(\epsilon\gamma\omega\) (2 Cor. 11:23) "the monstrous construction," which is rather overdoing the matter. The use of the preposition is not remarkably abundant in the N. T.

2. \textit{In Composition}. The N.T. has also the compound prepositions \(\text{bream.}\) (Eph. 1:21), \(\text{ὑπερεκπερισσοῦ}\) (Eph. 3:20), \(\text{ὑπερέκεινα}\) (2 Cor. 10:16) and the adverbs \(\text{ὑπερλίκω}\) (2 Cor. 11:5), \(\text{ὑπερβαλλόντως}\) (2 Cor. 11:23). The literal meaning of \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) (‘over’) appears in \(\text{ὑπερ-άνω}\) (Heb. 9:5), \(\text{ὑπέρ αὐτή}\) (ib. D), \(\text{ὑπερ-φων}‘(‘upper room,’ Ac. 1:13). The notion of ‘excess,’ ‘more than’ (comparison), appears in \(\text{ὑπερ-αιρω}\) (2 Cor. 12:7) \(\text{ὑπερ-εκπερισσοῦ}\) (1 Th. 3:10), \(\text{ὑπερ-έχω}\) (Ph. 4:7), \(\text{ὑπερ-νικάω}\) (Ro. 8:37), \(\text{ὑπερ-ψώ\,}\) (Ph. 2:9), \(\text{ὑπέρ-φρονέω}\) (Ro. 12:3). 'Beyond' is rather common also, as in \(\text{ὑπερ-ακμός}\) (1 Cor. 7:36), \(\text{ὑπερ-αυξάνω}\) (2 Th. 1:3), \(\text{ὑπερ-βαίνω}\) (1 Th. 4:6), \(\text{ὑπερ-εκτείνω}\) in 2 Cor. 10:14, \(\text{ὑπερ-έκεινα}\) (10:16), and this grows into the "perfective" idea as in \(\text{ὑπερ-ήφανος}\) (Ro. 1:30), \(\text{ὑπερ-ψωσεν}\) (Ph. 2:9), \(\text{ὑπερ-οχή}\) (1 Tim. 2:2), \(\text{ὑπερ-πλεονάζω}\) (1 Tim. 1:14). Cf. English "over-zealous," "over-anxious," etc. The negative notion of 'overlook' appears in \(\text{ὑπερ-εἴδων}\) (Ac. 17:30). The idea of ‘defence,’ ‘in behalf of,’ ‘bending over to protect,’ occurs in \(\text{ὑπερ-εντυγχάνω}\) (Ro. 8:26). In the late Greek vernacular \(\text{ὑπέρ} \) fades\(^3\) before \(\text{ὑπεράνω}\) and \(\deltaι\) and already in the N. T. the distinction between \(\text{περί}\) and \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) is not very marked in some usages, partly due to the affinity in sound and sense.\(^4\) Passages where the MSS. vary between \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) and \(\text{περί}\) are Mk. 14:24; Jo. 1:30; Ac. 12:5; Ro. 1:8; Gal. 1:4; etc.

3. \textit{With Genitive}? A word is needed about the cases used with \(\text{ὑπέρ}\). There is no trouble as to the accusative, but it is a mooted question whether we have the true genitive or the ablative. Brugmann\(^5\) views the misuse as genitive without hesitation and cites the Sanskrit use of \textit{upari} in support of his position. But

---

\(^{1}\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 146; Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 228.


\(^{3}\) Jann., ib., p. 366.

\(^{4}\) Ib., p. 398.

on the side of the ablative we note Kuhner-Gerth\(^1\) and Monro,\(^2\) while Delbruck\(^3\) admits that either is possible, though leaning to the genitive. Where such doctors disagree, who shall decide? The Sanskrit can be quoted for both sides. The main argument for the ablative is the comparative idea in \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) which naturally goes with the ablative. On the whole, therefore, it seems to me that the ablative has the best of it with

4. *With Ablative.* Certainly as between the ablative and the accusative, the ablative is far in the lead. The figures\(^4\) are, ablative 126, accusative 19. On the whole, therefore, \(\text{ὑπέρ}\), drops back along with \(\text{ὑπό}\). There is no example of the strictly local use of \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) in the N. T. unless ὧν βαπτίζομενοι ὑπέρ τῶν νεκρῶν (1 Cor. 15:29) be so understood, which is quite unlikely.\(^5\) This obscure passage still remains a puzzle to the interpreter, though no difficulty arises on the grammatical side to this or the other senses of \(\text{ὑπέρ}\). The N. T. examples are thus metaphorical. These uses fall into four divisions.

The most common is the general notion of 'in behalf of,' 'for one's benefit.' This grows easily out of the root-idea of 'over' in the sense of protection or defence. Thus in general with προσ-\(\text{εύχομαι}\) (Mt. 5:44), \(\text{δέομαι}\) (Ac. 8:24), ἀγωνίζομαι (Col. 4:12), καθίσταμαι (Heb. 5:1), προσφέρω (ib.), etc. The point comes out with special force in instances where κατά is contrasted with \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) as in ἐὰς ὑπέρ τοῦ ἐνὸς φυσιοῦσθε κατά τοῦ ἐτέρου (1 Cor. 4:6). Cf. also Mk. 9:40; Ro. 8:31. We must not, however, make the mistake of thinking that \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) of itself literally means 'in behalf of.' It means 'over.'

It is sometimes said that ἀντί means literally 'instead' and \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) 'in behalf of.'\(^6\) But Winer\(^7\) sees more clearly when he says: "In most cases one who acts in behalf of another takes his place." Whether he does or not depends on the nature of the action, not on ἀντί or \(\text{ὑπέρ}\). In the *Gorgias* of Plato (515 C.) we have \(\text{ὑπέρ σοῦ}\) for the notion of 'instead.' Neither does πρό (nor Latin *pro*) in itself mean 'instead.' In the *Alcestis* of Euripides, where the point turns on the substitutionary death of Alcestis for her hus-

\(^1\) I, p. 486.
\(^2\) Hom. Gr., p. 147.
\(^3\) Vergl. Synt., I, p. 749.
\(^4\) Moulton, Prol., p. 105.
\(^5\) Cf. W.-Th., p. 382.
\(^6\) Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 156. Winer (W.-Th., p. 38) implies the same thing.
\(^7\) Ib. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 135, has nothing on this use of Moulton, Prol., p. 105, merely calls \(\text{ὑπέρ}\) "the more colourless" as compared with ἀντί.
band, ὑπέρ occurs seven times, more than ἀντί and πρὸ together. Cf. Thucydides I, 141 and Xenophon Anab. 7:4, 9 for the substitutionary use of ὑπέρ. In the Epistle to Diognetus (p. 84) we note λύτρον ὑπέρ ἡμῶν, and a few lines further the expression is ἀνταλλαγή. Paul’s combination in 1 Tim. 2:6 is worth noting, ἀντιλυτρον ὑπέρ πάντων, where the notion of substitution is manifest. There are a few other passages where ὑπέρ has the resultant notion of ‘instead’ and only violence to the context can get rid of it. One of these is Gal. 3:13. In verse 10 Paul has said that those under the law were under a curse (ὑπὸ κατάραν). In verse 13 he carries on the same image. Christ bought us “out from under” the curse (ἐκ τῆς κατάρας τοῦ νόμου) of the law by becoming a curse "over" us (γενόμενος ὑπέρ ἡμῶν κατάρα). In a word, we were under the curse; Christ took the curse on himself and thus over us (between the suspended curse and us) and thus rescued us out from under the curse. We went free while he was considered accursed (verse 13). It is not a point here as to whether one agrees with Paul’s theology or not, but what is his meaning. In this passage ὑπέρ has the resultant meaning of ‘instead.’ The matter calls for this much of discussion because of the central nature of the teaching involved.

In Jo. 11:50 we find another passage where ὑπέρ is explained as meaning substitution, ἵνα εἰς ἀνθρωπὸς ἀποθάνῃ ὑπέρ τοῦ λαοῦ καὶ μὴ ὅλων τὸ ἔθνος ἀπόληται. Indeed Abbott¹ thinks that "in almost all the Johannine instances it refers to the death of one for the many." In Philemon 13, ὑπέρ σοῦ μοι διακονή, the more obvious notion is ‘instead.’ One may note ἔγραψα ὑπέρ αὐτοῦ μη ἱδότος γράμματα, P. Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66), where the meaning is obviously ‘instead of him since he does not know letters.’ Deissmann (Light, p. 152 f.) finds it thus (ἔγραψεν ὑπέρ αὐτοῦ) in an ostracon from Thebes, as in many others, and takes ὑπέρ to mean ‘for’ or ‘as representative of,’ and adds that it "is not without bearing on the question of ὑπέρ in the N. T." Cf. ἔγραψα ὑ[πὲρ αὐτ[ω]ν ἀγραμμάτου, B.U. 664 (i/A.D.). In the papyri and the ostraca ὑπέρ often bore the sense of ‘instead of.’ In 2 Cor. 5:15 the notion of substitution must be understood because of Paul’s use of ἄρα οἱ πάντες ἀπέθανον as the conclusion² from εἰς ὑπέρ πάντων ἀπέθανεν. There remain a

¹ Joh. Gr., p. 276.
² Cf. Thayer, p. 3, under ὑπέρ. In Pausanias (Ruger, Die Prap. bei Paus., 1889, p. 12) ὑπέρ occurs about twice as often as ἀντί. A. Theimer (Beitr. zur Kenntn. des Sprachgeb. im N. T., 1901, p. 25), speaking of Jo. 11:50, says: "Der Zusatz μη ὅλων τὸ ἔθνος ἀπόληται die Bedeutung an Stelle anstatt."
number of passages where the notion of substitution is perfectly natural from the nature of the case. But in these passages one may stop in translation with 'in behalf of' if he wishes. But there is no inherent objection in ὑπέρ itself to its conveying the notion of 'instead' as a resultant idea. In fact it is per se as natural as with αὐτί. In the light of the above one finds little difficulty with passages like Ro. 5:6 f.; 8:32; Gal. 2:20; Jo. 10:11, 15; Heb. 2:9; Tit. 2:14, etc. In Mk. 10:45 we have λύτρον αὐτὶ πολλῶν and in 14:24 τὸ ἄμμα μου—τὸ ἐκχυσόμενον ὑπέρ πολλῶν. But one may argue from 1 Jo. 3:16 that ὑπέρ in case of death does not necessarily involve substitution. Surely the very object of such death is to save life.

The two other uses of ὑπέρ may be briefly treated. Sometimes the resultant notion may be merely 'for the sake of,' as in ὑπέρ τῆς δόξης τοῦ θεοῦ (Jo. 11:4), ὑπέρ ἀληθείας θεοῦ (Ro. 15:8), ὑπέρ τοῦ ὄνόματος (Ac. 5:41), ὑπέρ Χριστοῦ (Ph. 1:29), etc. This is natural in relations of intimate love.

A more general idea is that of 'about' or 'concerning.' Here ὑπέρ encroaches on the province of περί. Cf. 2 Cor. 8:23, ὑπέρ Τίτου, 2 Th. 2:1, ὑπέρ της παρουσίας τοῦ κυρίου. Perhaps 1 Cor. 15:29 comes in here also. Moulton1 finds commercial accounts in the papyri, scores of them, with ὑπέρ in the sense of 'to.' We see the free use ('concerning') with verbs like καυχάομαι (2 Cor. 7:14), φρονεώ (Ph. 1:7), κράζω (Ro. 9:27), ἐρωτάω (2 Th. 2:1), etc. The Latin super is in line with this idiom also. Cf. Jo. 1:30, ὑπέρ οὗ ἐγὼ εἰπὼν. In 1 Cor. 10:30, τί βλασφημοῦμαι ὑπέρ οὗ ἐγὼ εὐχαριστῶ, the preposition suits antecedent as well as relative. In 2 Cor. 1:6 and Ph. 2:13 ὑπέρ suggests the object at which one is aiming. Cf. ὑπέρ ὧν Ἑβούλομεθα ἀπεστάλκαμεν, P. Goodspeed 4 (ii/B.c.); ὑπέρ οὗ λέγωι, P. Oxy. 37 (A.D. 49); ὑπέρ ἀραβίωνος, P. Grenf. ii. 67 (A.D. 237), 'by way of earnest-money.'

5. The Accusative with ὑπέρ calls for little remark. The literal local use of ὑπέρ, occurs in D in Heb. 9:5, ὑπέρ δ' αὐτήν, "an unparalleled use,"2 in the sense of 'above,' the other MSS. having ὑπερὰνω. The accusative with ὑπέρ has the metaphorical sense of 'above' or 'over,' as in οὓς ἐστὶν μαθητὴς ὑπέρ δοῦλον (Mt. 10:24). Cf. also τὸ ὄνομα τὸ ὑπέρ πάν ὄνομα (Ph. 2:9), κεφαλὴ ὑπέρ πάντα (Eph. 1:22), οὐκετί ως δοῦλον ἀλλα ὑπέρ δοῦλον (Phil. 16). This notion easily gets into that of 'beyond' in harmony with the accusative case. Thus ὑπέρ ἃ γέγραπται (1 Cor. 4:6), πειρασθήμαι ὑπέρ ὑ δύνασθε (1 Cor. 10:13). Cf. ὑπέρ δύναμιν (2 Cor. 1:8),

1 Prol., p. 105. 2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 313.


\[ \text{UPER pollou} (\text{Gal. 1:14}), \text{UPER tʰn λαμπρότηta} (\text{Ac. 26:13}). \]

Classical Greek only shows the beginning of the use of \text{UPER} with comparatives,\(^1\) but the N. T. has several instances. Thus the LXX often uses it with comparatives, partly because the Hebrew had no special form for the comparative degree.\(^2\) But the κοινή shows the idiom. So we find φρονιμώτεροι \text{UPER τούς ύιούς} (Lu. 16:8), τομώτερος \text{UPER πᾶσαν μάχαραν} (Heb. 4:12). In Jo. 12:43 W. H. read \text{ηπερ} in text and \text{UPER} in margin after \text{μᾶλλον}. But \text{UPER} has the comparative sense of 'more than' after verbs, as \text{ὁ φιλῶν πατέρα \kappa κυνέρα \text{UPER} ἐμὲ} (Mt. 10:37). In the LXX the positive adjective occurs with \text{UPER} as ἐνδοξος \text{UPER τούς ἀδελφούς} (1 Chron. 4:9). In Ro. 12:3, \text{μὴ \UPERphroneiv παρ’ ὅ δεὶ φρονεῖν}, note the conjunction of \text{UPER} and \text{parά}. Moulton (\text{Prol.}, p. 237) cites \text{UPER ἐαυτὸν φρονεῖν}, T.P. 8 (ii/B.C.). Blass\(^3\) doubts whether \text{UPERλίαν, \UPERreκπερισσοῦ} can be properly regarded as compounds. He would separate \text{UPER} as an adverb, \text{UPER λίαν}. But the modern editors are against him. It has disappeared in modern Greek vernacular before \text{γία} (Thumb, \text{Handb.}, p. 105).

\[ \text{(q) ὕπό.} \] Little is called for by way of etymology since \text{ὑπό} is the positive of \text{UPER}. Cf. the Sanskrit \text{upa}, Latin \text{sub}, Gothic \text{uf}, possibly also German \text{auf}, English \text{up}, ab-ove. The form \text{ὑπό} is of unknown case, but the Elean dialect\(^4\) has \text{ὑπα}—, and Homer\(^5\) has also \text{ὑπαί (dative.)}

1. \text{The Original Meaning.}\(^6\) This was probably 'upwards' or 'from under.' Unlike κατά, \text{ὑπό} never means 'downwards.' As a matter of fact, 'up' and 'under' are merely relative terms. The very English word up is probably \text{ὑπό}. Cf. \text{ὑψὶ 'aloft,' ὕπ-τιος 'facing upwards,' ὕπ-ατος 'uppermost,' ὕψιστος}. The meaning of under or beneath is common in the N. T., as \text{ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον} (Mt. 5:15).

2. \text{In Composition.} Here \text{ὑπό} appears simply with the notion of 'under' as in \text{ὑπο-κάτω} (Mk. 7:28), \text{ὑπο-ωπιάξω} (1 Cor. 9:27), \text{ὑπο-γραμμός} (1 Pet. 2:21), \text{ὑπο-πάδιον} (Mt. 5:35), \text{ὑπο-δέω} (Mk. 6:9). Cf. also \text{ὑπό-δειγμα} (Jo. 13:15), \text{ὑπο-ζύγιον} (Mt. 21:5). In \text{ὑπό-κρισις} (Mt. 23:28), \text{ὑπο-κριτής} (Mt. 6:2) the notion of an actor under a mask lies behind the resultant idea. The idea of hospitality (under one's roof) is natural with \text{ὑπο-δέχομαι}, (Lu. 10: 38), \text{ὑπο-λαμβάνω} (3 Jo. 8). In Ro. 16:4 \text{ὑπο-τίθημι} has the idea of 'put under,' as \text{ὑπο-ζώνυμι} (Ac. 27:17), 'undergird.' In \text{ὑπο-}

\[ \text{\textsuperscript{1} Ib., p. 108.} \]
\[ \text{\textsuperscript{2} C. and S., Sel. from LXX, p. 84.} \]
\[ \text{\textsuperscript{3} Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 135.} \]
\[ \text{\textsuperscript{4} Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 452.} \]
\[ \text{\textsuperscript{5} Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 139.} \]
\[ \text{\textsuperscript{6} Ib. Cf. Brug., ib.} \]
λαβῶν εἰπεν, (Lu. 10:30) the notion of interrupting or following a speech comes from the idea of 'up' in ὑπό, taking up the talk, etc. The "perfective" idea appears in ὑπο-λείπω (Ro. 11:3), 'leave behind or over.' So with ὑπο-τρέχω (Ac. 27:16), 'run under or past.' Cf. ὑπο-πλέω (Ac. 27: 4, 7), 'sail close by.' But in ὑπο-πνέω (Ac. 27:13) the preposition minimizes the force of the verb, blow softly.' Cf. our suspicion, the French soupcon. So with underestimate. In ὑπο-βάλλω (Ac. 6:11) the notion of suggestion has an evil turn, but in ὑπο-μιμνήσκω (Jo. 14:26) there is no such colour. The idea of subjection (note how these ideas appear in English usage all along) occurs in ὑπ-ακούω (Ph. 2:12), ὑπ-εἰκω (Heb. 13:17), etc. In ὑπ-αντάω (Mt. 8:28) the special force of ὑπό has rather disappeared. Cf. our vulgar "meet up" with one. So ὑπ-ἐναντίος (Col. 2:14).

3. The Cases Once Used with ὑπό. The locative was originally very common with ὑπό, as in Homer, even with verbs of motion.1 As a matter of fact, however, in the historical writers the locative and accusative with ὑπό are very rare as compared with the ablative,2 though Appian and Herodian use the locative more than the accusative.3 But the locative retreated4 before the accusative with ὑπό till in the N. T. and the modern Greek it has disappeared. In the N. T.5 the accusative shows 50 examples and the ablative 165, but in the vernacular of the Byzantine Greek the accusative with ὑπό disappears before ἀποκάτω and ὑποκάτω.6 In the modern Greek vernacular ἀπό has displaced ὑπό (Thumb, Handb., p. 102). Brugmann7 even thinks that ὑπό once occurred with the instrumental case, and he is clear that the ablative, as well as the genitive, was found with it. Delbruck8 agrees to both ablative and genitive. Thus originally ὑπό occurred with five cases (loc., instr., acc., abl., gen.). In the N. T. we meet only the accusative and ablative. No example of the pure genitive with ὑπό occurs in the N. T. In Jo. 1:50 we find εἶδον σε ὑποκάτω τῆς συκῆς, but not ὑπό. So also in some other N. T. passages where a genitive with ὑπό might have been used. Cf. Mk. 7:28; Lu. 8:16, etc. The accusative with ὑπό, as in ὄντα ὑπὸ τῆς συκῆν (Jo. 1:48), supplants...

---

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 140.  
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 63.  
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 105.  
7 Griech. Gr., p. 452 f.  
the genitive also in the N. T. The use of ὑπό for agency and cause is ablative like the Latin usage with ab (a).

4. With the Accusative. It is considered by Winer\(^1\) to be the original use of ὑπό. This indeed would accord with the notion of ‘upwards,’ ‘up from under.’ But in the N. T., as in the later Greek, the accusative occurs with the notion of rest (cf. εἰς).\(^2\) The accusative in the N. T. takes the place of the local use of ὑπό with locative and genitive.\(^3\) Thus we find (motion) τιθέασιν αὐτὸν ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον (Mt. 5:15), but also (rest) ὄντα ὑπὸ τὴν συκῆν (Jo. 1:48). Other examples with verbs of rest are ὑπὸ τὴν σικιὰν κατασκηνοῖν (Mk. 4:32), ὑπὸ τὸν ὄφον (Ac. 4:12), with εἰμί, we have ὑπὸ τὰ χείλη (Ro. 3:13), ὑπὸ νόμον (Ro. 6:14 f.), ὑπὸ παιδαγωγῶν (Gal. 3:25); etc. These examples are as freely used as those like ἵνα μοῦ ὑπὸ τὴν στέγην εἰσέλθῃς (Mt. 8:8). The examples are both local as with ἐπισυνάγω (Lu. 13:34) and figurative as with ταπεινῶν (1 Pet. 5:6). Cf. Ac. 4:12 ὑπὸ τὸν ὄφον ὑπὸ Δία Γῆν Ἡλιον ἐπὶ λύτροις P. Oxy. 48, 49, 722 (A.D. 86, 100, 91). Cf. Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 332. Only one instance of the use of ὑπό with time appears in the N. T., ὑπὸ τὸν ὄρθρον (Ac. 5:21), where it has the notion of ‘about’ (or ‘close upon’) dawn. John uses ὑπό with the accusative only once\(^4\) (Jo. 1:48) and with the ablative only five times (Jo. 14:21; 3 Jo. 12 bis; Rev. 6:8, 13), an incidental argument, for unity of authorship.

5. With the Ablative. In the sense of efficient cause or agent it was the commonest classical usage and it continues so in the N. T.\(^5\) The local and temporal uses do not occur, but only the metaphorical. These occur after passive or neuter verbs. Abbott\(^6\) thinks that John preferred to represent the agent as performing the act and so avoided ὑπό. The ancient Greek indeed used ὑπό chiefly in this sense of agent. The use of ᾠποθνήσκω ὑπό as the correlative of ἀποκτεῖναι τις is well known.\(^7\) In the N. T. once (Rev. 6:8) ὑπό actually occurs with the active of ἀποτείνω (ἀποκτεῖναι ἐν ῥομφαίᾳ καὶ ὑπὸ τῶν θηρίων. This is probably due to the desire to distinguish between the living agent and the lifeless causes preceding.\(^8\) But the N. T. has neuter verbs with ὑπό, like ἀπόλλυμαι (1 Cor. 10:9), λαμβάνω (2 Cor. 11:24), πάσχω (Mk. 5:26), ὑπομένων (Heb. 12:3). In the case of passive verbs the usage follows the traditional lines. Cf. Mt. 4:1 for two examples, ἀνήχθη ὑπὸ τοῦ πνεύ-

---

1 W.-Th., p. 407.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 135.
4 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 278.
6 Joh. Gr., p. 279.
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 156.
8 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 157.
ματος, πειρασθήματι ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου. It is to be noted that in Lu. 9:8 ὑπὸ is not repeated with ἀλλων. The bulk of the N. T. instances of ὑπὸ occur of personal agency like ἐβαπτίζοντο ὑπὸ αὐτοῦ, (Mt. 3:6), διεσπάρθαι ὑπὸ αὐτοῦ (Mk. 5:4), etc. Sometimes, when διά is added to ὑπὸ, a distinction is made between the intermediate and the mediate agent, as in τῷ ῥήθεν ὑπὸ κυρίου διὰ τοῦ προφήτου (Mt. 1:22). Cf. 2:15. There is nothing peculiar about the use of ὑπὸ in 2 Pet. 1:17, φωνῆς ἐνεχθεῖσις ὑπὸ τῆς μεγαλοπρεποῦς δόξης. But ὑπὸ is not the only way of expressing the agent. Besides διά for the indirect agent ἀπό is the most common substitute for ὑπὸ, though and παρά both are found for the notion of agency. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 116) speaks of ἀρό as "die eigentlich pradestinierte Partikel." The instrumental case and ἐν and the locative must also be recalled. But διά, with the accusative (motive or cause) must not be confounded with this idea. Cf. Lu. 21:17 for ὑπὸ with ablative and διά with the accusative. The prepositions will richly repay one's study, and often the whole point of a sentence turns on the prepositions. In Lu. 5:19 eight prepositions occur, counting ἐμπροσθεν, and many such passages are found as Gal. 2:1, 2. Cf. Joy, On the Syntax of Some Prepositions in the Greek Dialects (1904).

VIII. The "Adverbial" Prepositions. The list in the N. T. of those prepositions which do not occur in composition with verbs is considerable. As already remarked in the beginning of this chapter, what are called "proper" prepositions were originally adverbs, fixed case-forms which came to be used with nouns and in composition with verbs. We have followed the varied history of this most interesting group of words. Homer in particular used most of them at times merely adverbially. In Homer the "regular" prepositions often retain this adverbial force, as παρὰ δὲ, and this separation from a verb is no longer considered a surgical operation" (tmesis). Cf. Seymour, Homeric Language and Verse, 25, 78. Some of these prepositions gradually disappeared, but the total use of prepositions greatly increased. This increase was due to the wider use of the remaining prepositions and the increasing use of so-called "improper" prepositions, adverbs with cases that never came to be used in composition with verbs. The Sanskrit had no proper class of prepositions, but a number of

1 W.-Th., p. 369.
adverbs which were sometimes used with cases. These adverbial prepositions varied constantly in the history of the Greek. Some of them, like ἀνευ, ἐγγύς, ἐνέκα, come right on down from Homer. Others drop by the way while each age sees a new crop coming on. But in the late vernacular a number of these prepositional adverbs are followed by the preposition before the case, like ἀποκάτω ἀπό.

In the modern Greek the improper prepositions are used either with the genitive (only with enclitic pronoun) or by the addition of ἀπό, ἀπό, μὲ with the accusative. They are quite new formations, but made from ancient Greek material (Thumb, Handb., p. 107).

From our point of view any adverb that occurs with a case may be regarded as a prepositional adverb, like ἀποκάτω τοῦ εὐαγγέλιον (Ph. 1:27). Some of these prepositional adverbs, as already shown, occur both as adverbs, as ἁμα καὶ ἐλειπίζων (Ac. 24:26), and as prepositions, as ἃμα αὐτός (Mt. 13:29), while others appear only as prepositions with cases, as ἀνευ τοῦ πατρός (Mt. 10:29). But it is not necessary to make a separate list on this basis. Blass, who treats these words very scantily, is right in saying that no hard and fast line can be drawn between adverb and preposition here. The LXX shows some adverbial prepositions which do not occur in the N. T. Thus ἀπάνωθεν, (Judges 16:20) may be compared with ἐπάνωθεν (classical also), and ὑποκάτωθεν (Dent. 9:14), which in ancient Greek is only an adverb. Simcox carefully explains ἐνώπιον, so common in the LXX, as a translation and imitation of יְנִיָּן, but even Conybeare and Stock surrender this word as not a Hebraism before Deissmann's proof. The N. T., like the κοινή in general, makes free use of these prepositional adverbs. I have given the list in my Short Grammar of the Greek Testament (3 ed., 1912, p. 116 f.), forty-two in all, more than twice as many as the "regular" prepositions.

This list by Krebs shows the freedom in the κοινή development of adv. prep.
It will pay us to take up briefly these adverbial prepositions. All of them use the genitive or the ablative case except ἀμα (instrumental) and εὐγυς (dative).

1. ἀμα. It is probably in the instrumental case itself. Brugmann connects the word with the root of εἰς, μέα, ἕν as seen in ἀπαξ, ἀποθυ, Latin semel, Sanskrit sama, English same. Cf. also ὁμοῦ, ἐ-κατόν. It occurs in Homer with the associative-instrumental case. The word occurs in the N.T. only ten times and usually as adverb, either merely with the verb as in Ro. 3:12, LX X, or with δὲ καί (1 Tim. 5:13; Phil. 22). Cf. καί in Col. 4:3. Three of the examples are with participles (Col. 4:3 above and Ac. 24:26; 27:40). Twice we find ἀμα σύν with the instrumental, a sort of double preposition after the manner of the later Greek (1 Th. 4:17; 5:10) and once ἀμα πρῶι with adverb (Mt. 20:1). The use of ἀμα σύν Thayer explains by taking ἀμα as an adverb with the verb. Only once does it occur as a simple preposition with the instrumental, ἀμα αὐτοῖς (Mt. 13:29). For the later revival of ἀμα and use like μετά see Jannaris. In 2 Esdr. 17:3 ὅ is translated by ἀμα. In the Acta Nerei ἀμα is used only with the genitive (Radermacher, N. T. Or., p. 1.19).

2. ἀπευ. It is of uncertain etymology. Homer has another form, ἀπευευ, the Eleatic ἀπευ-ς, the Epidaurian ἀπευ-ν, the Megarian ἀνι. There is, however, no doubt as to the meaning, ‘without’ or ‘besides,’ and the case used is the ablative. There are only three examples in the N.T., not counting Mk. 13:2, where W. H. and Nestle reject ἀπευ χειρών. Two of these (1 Pet. 3:1; 4:9) occur with abstract words, and one (Mt. 10:29) with τοῦ πατρός. The word is rare in the late Greek, especially with a case.

3. ἀντικρυς (some editors ἀντικρύ). It is a compound form that originally meant 'straight on,' but in later Greek occurs in the Sense of ‘opposite,’ ‘face to face.’ It was common in the ancient Greek as adverb of place or as preposition. In the N.T. we find it only once (Ac. 20:15) and the case used is the genitive. ἀντικρυς Χίου. It occurs in modern Greek vernacular (Thumb, Handb., p. 109).

4. ἀντιπερα (ἀντι-πέραν, Polybius, etc.). It is just ἀντί and πέραν, combined. Thucydides uses ἀντιπέρας as adverbial preposition. Only one example occurs in the N.T. (Lu. 8:26), ἀντιπερα τῆς

---

3 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 397.
The case is open to dispute, since ἀντί comes with the genitive and πέραν with the ablative. 'Over against' would be genitive, 'on the other side of' would be ablative. Either will make sense in Lu. 8:26. Probably genitive is the case here.

5. Ἄπέναντι. It is a triple compound of ἀπό, ἐν, ἀντί. A number of adverbial prepositions were formed on ἀντί as a base. In the N. T. we find also ἐναντίον, ἐναντίου, κατέναντι. These are late, except ἐναντίου (from Homer on. Cf. ἀντε, ἐν-ἀντα). Polybius uses ἀπέναντι with the genitive, and it is common with this case in the LXX
(cf. Gen. 3:24). In the N. T. it occurs only six times, and in two of these (Mt. 27:24; Mk. 12:41) W. H. put κατέναντι in the text and ἀπέναντι in the marg. Of the remaining four examples two (Ac. 3:16; Ro. 3:18) have the sense merely of 'before,' 'in the sight or presence of.' One (Mt. 27:61) has the notion of 'opposite' or 'over against,' while the fourth (Ac. 17:7) takes on a hostile idea; 'against.' These resultant ideas all come naturally out of the threefold combination. The other compounds with ἀντί will be noted later.

6. Ἄτερ. This word is of unknown origin, but compare Old Saxon sundir, Old High German suntar, Sanskrit sanular. It is common in Homer and the poets generally. Later prose uses it. But it occurs only once in the LXX (2 Macc. 12:15) and twice in the N. T. (Lu. 22:6, 35). The case is clearly the ablative, and the meaning is 'without.' One example, ἄτερ ὁχλοῦ, is with persons and the other, ἄτερ βαλλαντίου, is with a thing.

7. Ἀχρις. It is related to μέχρις whatever its origin. Cf. usque in Latin and ἄχρι εἰς like usque ad. As a mere adverb it no longer occurs in the N. T., but it is common both as a preposition and as a conjunction. In the form ἄχρι οὗ (Ac. 7:18) and ἄχρι ἡς ἡμέρας (Mt. 24:38) it is both preposition and conjunction (resultant temporal phrase). Leaving out these examples, ἄχρι, is found 30 times in the N. T. (W. H. text) and some MSS. read ἄχρι in Ac. 1:22 and 20:4, while in Mt. 13:30 the MSS. vary between ἄχρι, μέχρι and ἐως (W. H.). The meaning is 'up to' and the case used is the genitive. It occurs with place (Ac. 13:6), persons (Ac. 11:5), time (Ac. 13:11) and abstract ideas (Ac. 22:4, 22). It occurs mainly in Acts, Paul's writings and Revelation. Cf. its use with the adverb ἄχρι τοῦ νόου (Ro. 8:22).

8. Ἐγγύς. It is a mere adverb (see comp. ἐγγὺς εἶπεν, superl. ἐγγυστα) possibly related to ἐγγύς. It is common in Homer both as adverb and with the genitive. The late Greek added the true

---

1 C. and S., Sel. from the LXX, p. 86.
dative and all three uses (adverb, gen., dat.) occur in the N. T. There are nineteen examples of the pure adverb in the N. T. (cf. Mt. 24:32), one the comparative (Ro. 13:11) and the superlative in some MSS. in Mk. 6:36. There are eight examples of the genitive with ἐγγύς (cf. Jo. 11:54). Only four times does ἐγγύς have the dative (Ac. 9:38; 27:8), counting the indeclinable Ἰεροσολυμία (Lu. 19:11; Ac. 1:12), in which case Luke (4) would have the dative uniformly and John (6) and Heb. (2) the genitive (H. Scott). Once (Heb. 6 : 8) it is postpositive.

9. Ἑκτός. It is a combination of ἐκ and the adverbial ending -τος with which may be compared Latin coelitus.¹ The case used with it is, of course, the ablative and it is just a fuller expression of ἐκ, meaning ‘without.’ In the N. T. we find it only eight times, four of these with the ablative, as in 1 Cor. 6:18 (cf. with the relative in Ac. 26:22). Note position of Ἑκτός λέγων ὤν in Ac. 26:22. Three times we have Ἑκτός εἰ μή (1 Cor. 14:5; 15:2; 1 Tim. 5:19), which is a pleonasm due first to the use of Ἑκτός εἰ.

Deissmann (Bible Studies, p. 118) cites an inscription of Mopsuestia for “this jumbled phrase,” peculiarly apropos since Paul was Cilician, Ἑκτός εἰ μή ἐὰν Μάγνα μόνη θε[λή]ση. Once (Mt. 23:26) Ἑκτός is probably mere adverb used as a substantive, though even here it may be regarded as a preposition.

10. Ἑμπροσθεν. This is merely ἐν and πρόσθεν which adverb used the ablative² when it had a case. In the N. T. it is still four times a mere adverb of place, as in Rev. 4:6, but it is usually a preposition with the ablative. It occurs with words of place, as in Mt. 5:24, with persons (Mt. 5:16), and sometimes with the notion of rank (Jo. 1:15). As a preposition it appears 44 times in the N. T.

11. Ἐναντι. (Cf. Ἐναντια in Homer.) It is one of the ἄντι compounds and is found" with the genitive case when it has a case. It is very common in the LXX even after Swete³ has properly replaced it often by Ἐναντιον. The old Greek did not use it. In the N. T., W. H. accept it in Lu. 1:8 and Ac. 8:21 (though some MSS. in both places read Ἐναντιόω) and reject it in Ac. 7:10. It is not found in the N. T. as a mere adverb.

12. Ἐναντιόν. This is, of course, merely the neuter singular of Ἐναντιος (cf. Mk. 6:48), and is common in the older Greek as in the LXX. For the papyri see Ἐναντιον ἀνδρῶν τριῶν P. Eleph. 1

(B.C. 311). In the N. T. it does not occur as a mere adverb, but we find it five times as a preposition with the genitive (cf. Lu. 1:6), all with persons (cf. Latin coram).

13. ἐνεκα. It occurs in three forms in the N. T., either ἐνεκα. (Lu. 6:22), ἐνεκεν (9:24) or ἐνεκεν (18:29), but always as a preposition (‘for the sake of’), never as mere adverb. These variations existed in the earlier Greek also. In the κοινή, ἐνεκεν is the more usual (Schweizer, Perg. Inschr., p. 35). Only twice, however, is it postpositive in the N. T., and this after the interrogative (Ac. 19:32) or the relative (Lu. 4:18, LXX). The case used is the genitive. The etymology is quite uncertain, but the form ἐνεκεν is Ionic and partially in the κοινή supersedes the Attic.¹ The preposition occurs 26 times in the N. T. Once (2 Cor. 7:12) we find it used with τοῦ and the infinitive. Cf. ἐνεκεν and διά. Lu. 21:12, 17.

14. ἐντός. It is like the Latin in-tus (opposite of ἐκτός) and has the same ending —τός. It means ‘within’ and as a preposition is used with the genitive. The word occurs only twice in the N. T., once as an adverb with the article (Mt. 23:26), though even this may be regarded as a preposition with the article and the genitive (cf. ἐκτός, Mt. 23:26), and once as a preposition (Lu. 17:21) with the genitive. Thayer cites two passages from Xenophon where ἐντός may have the idea of ‘among’ and claims that this is the idea in Lu. 17:21, because of the context. But the meaning in Xenophon is disputed and Liddell and Scott give only ‘within’ for ἐντός. Besides, in one of the new Logia² of Jesus we have a similar saying in a context that makes ‘within’ necessary and would seem to settle the point about the passage in. Luke: ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν ἐντός ἕμων ἐστίν.

15. ἐνώπιον. This is the neuter singular of the adjective ἐνώπιος which (Thayer) is from the phrase ἐν ὁπί (ὁ ἐν ὁπί ὑπὸ) Homer uses τὰ ἐνώπια, but no example of the adverb or preposition ἐνώπιον occurs before the time of the LXX. Deissmann³ thinks it possible, but not probable, that it was first used in this sense as a translation of the Hebrew יִפְיו. A papyrus of the Thebaid from the second or third century B.C. has it also. As a preposition it is very common⁴ in the LXX and in the N. T. also. Curiously enough it does not occur in Matthew and Mark, though very

¹ Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 457.
³ B. S., p. 213.
⁴ C. and S., p. 87.
common in Luke's writings and Revelation. The Gospel of John has only one example and the Johannine Epistles two. Cf. also κατευπώπιον. In the N. T., ἐνώπιον is always a preposition with the genitive and it occurs 92 times. It appears sometimes with place (Rev. 4:10), but usually with persons (Lu. 5:25; 12:9 bis), and especially of God (1:15). Sometimes the notion is that of judgment, as in 1 Tim. 2:3. See Wikenhauser, Οὐνώπιος ἐνώπιον κατευπώπιον (Bibl. Z., 1910, pp. 263-270).

16. Ἐξ. It is an adverb from ἔξ (cf. ἔσω, ἔς) and is probably in the ablative case like οὔτως. As adverb and preposition it is common in the N. T. (16 times) as in the older Greek. It is found as preposition only with the ablative and that 19 times. It means 'outside' or 'without' and is used in the N. T. only with places, like Ἐξω τῆς οἰκίας (Mt. 10:14). John's Gospel has it 13 times, first Ep. 1, Rev. 2; Paul has it 5, and only as adverb.

17. Ἐξωθεν. It is the same word plus the suffix ---θεν, 'from without,' and was common in the poets (cf. ἔσωθεν). The case used is the ablative. In the N. T. it is much less frequent (13 times) both as adverb and preposition than Ἐξ. Indeed, if τὸ Ἐξωθεν τοῦ ποτηρίου (Mt. 23:25; Lu. 11:39) be not considered the prepositional usage, there would be only three left (Mk. 7:15; Rev. 11:2; 14:20). There is the same ambiguity in the two passages above that was noted about ἐκτός and ἐντός (Mt. 23:26 = Lu. 11:40). Cf. 547 vi.

18. Ἐπ-ἀνω. This is just the preposition ἐπί and the adverb ἄνω. It occurs in Attic Greek both as adverb and as preposition. As an adverb it is rare in the N. T. (4 times), once with the relative adverb ὅ (Mt. 2:9), once with a numeral with no effect on the case (1 Cor. 15:6; cf. Mk. 14:5 where the case may arise from παραθηνείον), once where a pronoun is really implied (Lu. 11:44). As a preposition we find it fifteen times in the N. T. Cf. Ἐπάνω ὁροῦ (Mt. 5:14) where it has the somewhat weakened sense of 'upon' rather than 'above.' The case used is the genitive. Modern Greek vernacular uses it as (ἀ) πάνω ἡ (Thumb, Handbook, p. 109).

19. Ἐπέκεινα. It is merely ἐπί and ἐκείνα. Thayer suggests the ellipsis of μέρη. It occurs in the Attic Greek both as adverb and as preposition. In the N. T. it appears only once in a quotation from Amos 5:27 and as a preposition with the ablative in the sense of 'beyond' (Ac. 7:43. Cf. ὑπερέκεινα).

20. Ἐσω. It is the adverb of ἔς (cf. Ἐξω) and is in the ablative

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 129.
case. The form εἰσω (εἰς) does not occur in the N. T. nor in the LXX. Indeed the word εἰσω is found only nine times in the N. T. and only one, ἐσω τῆς αὐτλῆς (Mk. 15:16), is the prepositional use. The case used with it is the genitive. This, however, is a genuine example, while ἐσωθεν (12 times) is never a preposition in the N. T., unless in Lu. 11:39, τὸ ἐσωθεν ὑμῶν, (see p. 642). Cf. ἐσώτερον τῆς κολύμβηθρας (Is. 22:11).

21. Ἡως. In Homer it is both demonstrative and relative adverb (from εἰς, εἰως). Cf. ὐς and ὢς. The use of Ἡως as a preposition appears in Demosthenes, Aristotle, Polybius, etc. In Northern England and Scotland "while" is used as "till" (Liddell and Scott) and illustrates how Ἡως as conjunction is used in the N. T. It is more common in the N. T. as preposition than conjunction, if the phrases Ἡως οὖ· Ἡως ὄτου be treated as conjunctions, as indeed they are, though technically composed of the preposition ἗ως with the genitive of the relative. It is in the later Greek mainly, therefore, that it appears as a preposition (cf. LXX and papyri). The case used with it is the genitive (but very late Greek shows accusative sometimes), and it is found 86 times in the N. T. and 51 of the examples are in the Synoptic Gospels. The preposition is used with places, like Ἡως θέου (Mt. 11:23), Ἡως οὐρανοῦ (Lu. 10:15), Ἡως Ἀντιοχείας (Ac. 11:22); with persons, like Ἡως αὐτοῦ (Lu. 4:42); with expressions of time, like Ἡως τῆς σήμερον (Mt. 27:8), Ἡως ὥρας ἐνατῆς (27:45); with abstract expressions, like Ἡως θανάτου (Mt. 26:38); with notion of measure, like Ἡως ἠμίσους (Mt. 6:23). Cf. ἀπό· Ἡως in Mt. 1:17; 20:8; 27:51. Seventeen of the examples are uses of Ἡως with an adverb, like Ἡως κάτω (Mt. 27:51), Ἡως ἄρτο (Jo. 2:10), while seven instances of Ἡως πότε occur, like Mt. 17:17. Four times Ἡως occurs with another preposition, like Ἡως πρός (Lu. 24:50), Ἡως ἐπί (Ac. 17:14), Ἡως ἔξω (21:5). In Mk. 14:54 note Ἡως ἔσω εἰς. Once (cf. Demosthenes, Aristotle, LXX) we find it with the article and the infinitive Ἡως τοῦ ἐλθεῖν (Ac. 8: 40). In Ἡως τέλους (2 Cor. 1:13), the phrase is almost adverbial. In D (Ac. 19:26), Ἡως Ὁθέσου, Blass finds the notion of 'within.' In the LXX 2 [Heb.] Esdr. 6:20, Ἡως εἰς πάντες, and 1 Chron. 5: 10 A, Ἡως πάντες, Deissmann (B. S p. 139) sees a Hebraism.

22. Κατέναντι. It is not found in the older Greek, but appears in the LXX and the N. T. It is especially frequent in the Book of Sirach. But in poetry we find κατένανται and the word is merely

---

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 127.
the threefold preposition κατά, ἐν, ἀντί. The MSS. in the N. T. often vary between κατέναυτι and ἀπέναυτι as in Mt. 21:2; 27:24; Ac. 3:16, etc. In Mt. 27:24 and Mk. 12:41 W. H. put ἀπέναυτι in the margin. Κατεναυτίον, found in Hesiod and Herodotus, does not occur in the N. T. There are only nine examples of κατέναυτι, in the N. T. One of these (Lu. 19:30) is merely adverbial, while the rest are prepositional. The idea is ‘before,’ ‘over against,’ ‘in the presence of,’ and the case used with it is the genitive. It occurs with place (Mk. 13:3) and persons (Mt. 27:24). Cf. κατέναυτι θεοῦ ἐν Χριστῷ (2 Cor. 2:17; 12:19) and the attraction of relative (ψ) in the dative to the genitive case of θεοῦ, the incorporated antecedent (Ro. 4:17).

23. Κατενωπίον. It is just ἐνωπίον (see above) and κατά. Homer uses κατένωπα with the genitive, but κατενωπίον appears in the LXX. The N. T. shows only three examples (cf. the frequency of ἐνωπίον), two with persons (Eph. 1:4; Col. 1:22), one with abstract word (Ju. 24). The case used is the genitive and the word means 'in the presence of.'

24. Κύκλωθεν. It is an old adverb in ἐθεν, that occasionally occurs in the LXX (Jer. 17:26) as a preposition. In the N. T. it appears as a preposition twice with the genitive θρόνου (Rev. 4:3 f.) and once as an adverb (4:8).

25. Κύκλω is, of course, merely an adverb in the instrumental case and is common from Homer down. In the LXX it is extremely frequent and occasionally as a preposition with the genitive (Is. 6:2). In the N. T. it is merely an adverb except with τοῦ θρόνου (Rev. 4:6; 5:11; 7:11). Cf. κύκλω μέχρι (Ro. 15:19).

26. Μέσον. As a preposition it occurs in Herodotus 7, 170, but was not common. It appears in the late Greek writers and the papyri. Many adverbial phrases were made from μέσον which were used as prepositions, some of which survive in the N. T., like διά μέσου, διά μέσον (-ον), εἰς μέσον (and as εἰς τὸ μέσον), ἐν μέσῳ (and ἐν τῷ μέσῳ), ἐκ μέσου, κατὰ μέσον. But these will be discussed later. The adjective μέσος occurs with the genitive (Lu. 22:55; Jo. 1:26), so that it is not strange to find the adverb with the genitive as in Ph. 2:15, μέσον γενεὰς. In Mt. 14:24 W. H. put μέσον in the margin and D reads μέσον in Lu. 8:7; 10:3. See Hatzidakis, Einl., p. 214, for examples. Cf. Homeric μεσοσηγυς. The modern Greek vernacular uses μέσα, μέσο, ἀπό (Thumb, Handbook, p. 108).

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 128.
27. Μεταξύ. Like so many of the adverbial prepositions, it is a compound (μετα-, ξύν). As a mere adverb, we meet it only twice in the N. T., once in the sense of 'meanwhile' (Jo. 4:31), once in the sense of 'afterwards' (Ac. 13:42), as commonly in the later Greek. Cf. twofold use of μετά. As a preposition it occurs seven times in the N. T., with places (Mt. 23:35), persons (Mt. 18:15) and in abstract relations (Ro. 2:15). A good example occurs in Ac. 15:9 where both διά and μεταξύ appear.

28. Μέχρι. Like ἀχρί and ἐως, it is both preposition and conjunction as well as originally adverb. No example of the mere adverb is found in the N. T., as it was rare in the older Greek. The form is akin to ἀχρί and the sense is the same. If μέχρις οὖ be treated as a conjunction (cf. ἀχρίς οὖς ἐως οὖς), the preposition with the genitive appears fifteen times with another doubtful reading in Mt. 13:30. It is used with places (Ro. 15:19), persons (Lu. 16:16), time (Ac. 10:30), abstract expressions (Ph. 2:8). Like ἀχρί, the notion of 'measure' or 'degree' is sometimes present (Heb. 12:4).

29. Ὄπισθεν. It is of uncertain etymology, perhaps related to ὀπίσω. This word seems to be another variation of ὀπίς and occurs in the ancient Greek, both as an adverb and as a preposition. In the N. T. we find it five times as adverb and twice as preposition, and some MSS. have it in Rev. 1:10. The case used with it is the ablative. So ὀπίσθεν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ (Lu. 23:26). It means 'from behind' and so 'after' (Mt. 15:23). It is the opposite of ἐμπρόσθεν.

30. Ὄπισω. It is the opposite of πρόσω (cf. πόρρω) and is an ablative adverb from ὀπίς (as above). It is very common in the older Greek as an adverb, but it is extremely common in the LXX as a preposition. In the N. T. ὀπίσω occurs alone as an adverb only twice (Mt. 24:18; Lu. 7:38), though we meet τά ὀπίσω seven times as in Mk. 13:16. But as a preposition we find it 26 times, mostly with persons, as in the common ὀπίσω μου (Mt. 3:11). It is used with the ablative, 'behind.' Cf. δεῦτε ὀπίσω μου in Mt. 4:19.

31. Ὄψε. This word seems to be another variation of ὀπίς and occurs in the ancient Greek, both as an adverb and as a preposition with the genitive (Thuc. 4, 93) with the sense of 'late on.' But Philostratus shows examples where ὀψε with the ablative has the sense of 'after,' like ὀψε τούτων ὀψε 'after these things.' Philostratus uses it also in the sense of 'late on.' The papyri use it in the sense of 'late on' with the genitive. So ὀψε της ὁμοίας Π. Par.

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 129.  
2 C. and S., p. 87.  
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 312.  
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 72 f.
37 (ii/B.C.). Hence in Mt. 28:1, ὁψὲ σαββάτων may be either late on the Sabbath or after the Sabbath. Either has good support. Moulton\(^1\) is uncertain, while Blass\(^2\) prefers 'after.' It is a point for exegesis, not for grammar, to decide. If Matthew has in mind just before sunset, 'late on' would be his idea; if he means after sunset, then 'after' is correct. Cf. δὲ τοῦ σαββάτου (Lu. 18:12).

32. Παρα-πλήσιον. It is merely the neuter of the adjective παραπλήσιος. This adjective usually had the associative-instrumental, seldom the genitive. But the one example of the adverbial preposition in the N. T. (Ph. 2:27), θανάτου, has the genitive. See πλησίον.

33. Παρ-εκτός. It is a late compound for the earlier παρέκ. It appears in the N. T. only three times, save in the margin of Mt. 19:9 of W. H.'s text. Once it is a mere adverb (2 Cor. 11:28), and twice it is a preposition with the ablative (Mt. 5:32; Ac. 26:29) meaning 'without.'

34. Πέραν. It comes from the root πέρ (cf. περάω, 'fare,' 'ferry,' etc.). Ionic πέρην. It is an adverb (cf. adv. πέρα), probably accusative case. Both as adverb and as preposition with ablative (sometimes with accusative), it survives from Homer. In the N. T. it occurs ten times as an adverb in the phrase εἰς τὸ πέραν (Mt. 8:18). It is found 13 times as a preposition with the ablative, chiefly in the expression πέραν τοῦ Ἰωρδάνου (Mt. 4:15).

35. Πλήν, Doric πλάν. It is probably from πλέον, 'more,' and so is used with the ablative. In the N. T. it occurs only four times as a preposition with the ablative and in one of these we find πλέον —πλήν τοῦτων (Ac. 15:28). Twice it is a mere adverb, πλήν ὅτι (Ac. 20:23; Ph. 1:18), unless indeed the ὅτι clause is in the ablative. Cf. English "except that." In all the other rather numerous instances πλήν is an adversative conjunction at the beginning of a clause (cf. δὲ) as in Mt. 11:22. These three usages come on clown from the older Greek.

36. Πλησίον, Doric πλασίον. The word is allied to πέλας and is neuter adj. from πλησίος. In the older Greek the adverb occurs absolutely or with the art. ὁ πλησίον, 'neighbour,' as in the N. T. (Mt. 5:43). As a preposition it appears with the associative-instrumental or with the genitive. But in the N. T., it is found only once and with the genitive in Jo. 4:5. In Lu. 10:29, 36, the genitive is also found with πλησίον, but the word here has more of - the substantive idea ('neighbour') than the prepositional usage.

37. Ὄπερ-άνω. It is a simple compound that in the late Greek

\(^1\) Moulton, Pro1., p. 72 f.  
\(^2\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 97.
gradually displaced\(^1\) \(\upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\). It occurs in writers from Aristotle on both as adverb and as preposition and is common in the LXX.\(^2\)

In the N. T. we find it only three times and with the ablative each time. Twice it occurs literally of place (Heb. 9:5; Eph. 4:10) and once of rank (Eph. 1:21).

38. \(\Upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\-\epsilon\kappa\epsilon\iota\nu\alpha\). It is merely \(\upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\) and the pronoun \(\epsilon\kappa\epsilon\iota\nu\alpha\) (cf. \(\epsilon\pi\-\epsilon\kappa\epsilon\iota\nu\alpha\) in Ac. 7:43) which appears in the Byzantine Greek. It occurs only once in the N. T. (2 Cor. 10:16), \(\epsilon\iota\zeta\ \tau\alpha\ \Upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\epsilon\kappa\epsilon\iota\nu\alpha\ \upsilon\mu\omega\nu\) with the ablative in the sense of 'beyond,' 'into the (regions) beyond you.'

39. \(\Upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\-\epsilon\kappa\-\pi\rho\iota\sigma\sigma\omega\). It is written separately in Liddell and Scott and some N. T. editors print it \(\upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\ \epsilon\kappa\pi\rho\iota\sigma\sigma\omega\). It is found in Dan. 3:22 (Ald., Compl.). W. H. read it three times (Eph. 3:20; 1 Th. 3:10; 5:13), though in the last passage \(\Upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\epsilon\kappa\-\pi\rho\iota\sigma\sigma\\omega\) is put in the margin by W. H. As a preposition with the ablative, we find it only in Eph. 3:20 (\(\upsilon\omega\nu\), attracted to case of omitted antecedent).

40. \(\Upsilon\pi\omicron\-\kappa\acute{\alpha}tw\). It is another compound word which in the ancient Greek was used both as adverb and as preposition and especially in the \(\kappa\omega\nu\iota\) writers (Polybius, Diodorus, Plutarch). In the late Greek it gradually\(^3\) displaced \(\upsilon\pi\omicron\). In the LXX both \(\Upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\-\alpha\nu\omega\beta\epsilon\nu\) and \(\Upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\kappa\acute{\alpha}t\omega\beta\epsilon\nu\) occur as prepositions as well as \(\kappa\alpha\tau\omicron\pi\omicron\iota\sigma\beta\epsilon\nu\).\(^4\)

In the N. T. it is no longer adverb, but appears as preposition eleven times with, the ablative, five of them with \(\tau\omega\nu\ \pi\alpha\delta\omega\nu\) (as Mk. 6:11). The examples are all literal, not metaphorical. Cf. \(\upsilon\pi\omicron\kappa\acute{\alpha}tw\ \tau\iota\zeta\ \tau\rho\alpha\pi\acute{e}\zeta\zeta\iota\) (Mk. 7:28).

41. \(X\acute{a}riv\). This word is just the accusative of \(\chi\acute{a}riv\) and it is still common as the substantive in the accusative (Lu. 1:30).

The ancients used it freely with the genitive and with the possessive pronoun, \(\epsilon\mu\eta\nu\ \chi\acute{a}riv\). The idea of 'for the sake of' (cf. Latin \(\text{gratia}\)) may be due to apposition originally. The usage continues in the late Greek.\(^5\) Among the ancients it was generally postpositive, but in the LXX it is now one way, now the other. In the N. T. it occurs nine times, and is postpositive (as Gal. 3:19) always except 1 Jo. 3:12 with interrogative. It is only once in the Gospels (Lu. 7:47).

42. \(X\omega\pi\iota\zeta\). It is of doubtful etymology (cf. \(\chi\acute{a}w\), \(\chi\eta\rho\alpha\)), but ap-
pears in Homer freely as an adverb and in Pindar as a preposition. It holds on steadily in both senses. In the N. T. we have only one pure adverbial use (Jo. 20:7), while as a preposition with the ablative we find it 40 times. The usage is chiefly with persons (Mt. 14:21) or abstract relations (Mt. 13:34), though it may be used with place (Lu. 6:49). In Ro. 10:14 note χωρίς κηρύσσοντος without the article. It is postpositive once, οὖ χωρίς (Heb. 12:14).

Ramsay, C. and B., II, 391 (No. 254), cites from the inscriptions χωρίς εἰ μή τι πάθη (Moulton, Prol., p. 239).

Of these 42 words in the N. T. the following are only used as prepositions: ἄνευ, ἀντίπερα, ἀπέναντι, ἀτερ, ἐς, ἐν, ἐνῶπιον, ἐπέκεινα, κατενώπιον, παραπλήσιον, ὑπερέκεινα, ὑπεράνω, ὑποκάτω. Of the rest μέσον is also adjective; χάρις substantive; πλησίον substantive and adjective; ἄχρι, ἕως, μέχρι, πλην, conjunctions; and the rest are also adverbs.

IX. Compound Prepositions. A considerable number of these adverbial prepositions are compound words. So are ἀντι-κρύς, ἀντί-περα, ἀπ-ἐν-αντι, ἔμ-προς θεν, ἐν-αντι, ἐν-αντιόν, ἐν-ώπιον, ἐπ-άνω, ἐπ-έκεινα, μετα-ξύ, παρα-πλήσιον, παρ-εκτός, ὑπερ-άνω, ὑπερ-εκ-περισσόν, ὑπο-κάτω. The modern Greek vernacular shows similar forms in ἀποκάτω ἀπό, ἀποπίσω ἀπό, ἀπέξω ἀπό (Thumb, Handb., p. 110).

X. Prepositional Circumlocutions. Blass calls these Hebraisms and it is true that the frequency of these phrases in the LXX and the N. T. is due to the influence of the Hebrew idiom. But the construction itself is good Greek, though not so common, as the papyri show.¹

(a) Μέσον. This word furnishes a number, one of which, ἀνά μέσον, "has turned up abundantly in the papyri."² In the N. T. we find this compound preposition only four times. Moulton thinks that in 1 Cor. 6:5, διακρίναται ἀνά μέσον τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ, the text is corrupt, but probably the phrase is not to be taken too literally and etymologically (cf. διά here). Διά μέσον is read once (Lu. 17:11) and διά μέσου once in W. H. (Lu. 4:30). Εἰς μέσον (Mk. 14:60) appears once, but εἰς τὸ μέσον (Lu. 4:35) six times. Ἐκ μέσου, like all the circumlocutions with μέσον, is followed by the genitive (Mt. 13:49) and it occurs 7 times. Κατὰ μέσον is found once (Ac. 27:27). The commonest (27 times) of these circumlocutions is ἐν μέσῳ (ἐμμέσῳ some MSS.) as in Mt. 10:16. Ἐν τῷ μέσῳ (Mt. 14:6; Ac. 4:7) is not a prepositional phrase. Cf. ἐκ τοῦ μέσου (Col. 2:14). See also chapter XII, x, (b).

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 129 f. ² Moulton, Prol., p. 99 f.
(b) ὄνομα. It is sometimes adduced as an example of a prepositional circumlocution and as a pure Hebraism. Deissmann has given abundant illustrations from the papyri to show that the use of εἰς τὸ ὄνομα, ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι is common enough in the vernacular koinê where, as in the LXX and the N. T., ὄνομα represents the person. It is more than doubtful if we are justified in considering these phrases as mere prepositional circumlocutions with the genitive. The examples that come nearest to it are εἰς ὄνομα προφήτου, εἰς ὄνομα δικαίου, εἰς ὄνομα μαθητοῦ (Mt. 10:41 f.); but even here ὄνομα brings out the notion that one has the name or character of prophet, righteous man, disciple. In Mt. 28:19, ὄνομα has the idea of ‘the authority of.’

(c) Πρόσωπον. This word also furnishes a number of such phrases which in the LXX seem to be based on Hebrew originals (translation Hebraisms). Thus ἀπὸ προσώπου τοῦ κυρίου (Ac. 3:19) is like יְפָנִים while πρὸ προσώπου σου is like יְפָנִים, and κατὰ πρόσωπον Πειλάτου (Ac. 3:13) Blass finds like יְפָנִים. Cf. πρόσωπον πρὸς πρόσωπον (1 Cor. 13:12).

(d) Στόμα. This again is a Hebraism in the LXX due to translation. In Mt. 4:4 we have διὰ στόματος θεοῦ, a quotation from Deut. 8:3. In Mt. 18:16, ἔπι στόματος δύο μαρτύρων is likewise from Deut. 19:15. So in Mt. 21:16, ἐκ στόματος νηπίων is from Ps. 8:3. Cf. also ἀπὸ τοῦ στόματος αὐτοῦ (Lu. 22:71), ἐν τῷ στόματι σου (Ro. 10:8 from Deut. 30:14). But this picturesque phraseology belongs to all language as a matter of fact.

(e) Χεῖρ. It shows several similar examples. Thus διὰ χειρὸς αὐτῶν (Ac. 15:23), διὰ τῶν χειρῶν αὐτῶν (Ac. 14:3), εἰς χειρὰς (Lu. 24:7), εἰς τὴν χειρὰ αὐτοῦ (Lu. 15:22), ἐκ χειρὸς πάντων (Lu. 1:71), ἐν τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ (Jo. 3:35), σὺν χειρὶ ἄγγέλου (Ac. 7:35). Here again the Greek idiom follows the Hebrew particularity, but with perfect ease. The classical Greek is not without examples of this use of χεῖρ and one may note the English idiom also. See 2 Sam. 15:2, ἀνὰ χειρὰ τῆς ὀδοῦ τῆς πύλης. See also ἐξ ἐναυτίας αὐτοῦ (Mk. 15:39) and παρεκτὸς λόγου πορνείας in the margin (W. H.) of Mt. 19:9.

1 B. S., pp. 146 f., 197. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 100. See also Heitmuller's proof, Im Namen Jesu, pp. 100
2 Moulton, Prol., pp. 81, 99; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 129 f.
3 Ib.
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 130.
5 Cf. for the LXX, Swete, Intr. to O. T. in Gk., p. 308.
CHAPTER XIV

ADJECTIVES (ΕΠΙΘΗΤΑ)

I. Origin of Adjectives. This matter was touched upon in the chapter on Declensions, but calls for a further word here. There is no absolute line of cleavage between substantive and adjective either in form or sense.\(^1\) The Alexandrian grammarians had no special treatment of the adjective. "The division line between substantive and adjective, always an uncertain one in early Indo-European language, is even more wavering in Sanskrit than elsewhere."\(^2\) Indeed it is not difficult to conceive the time when there was no distinct adjective. The substantive would be used in apposition as in English, brother man, church member. Cf. the common use of titles also like doctor, president, governor, etc. This attributive use of the substantive is not a peculiarity of any language, but belongs to Hebrew, Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, English, etc. It is out of this use of the substantive that the adjective as a separate part of speech developed.\(^3\) The adjective is not therefore a mere variation of the genitive, though, like the genitive, it is descriptive. The term noun (ὄνομα) is used to cover both substantive and adjective, but many substantives continue to be used in a descriptive or adjectival sense and many adjectives in a substantival sense.\(^4\) The term adjective covers words of one, two or three genders, and indeed includes numerals and some of the pronouns also. But the pronouns require treatment in a separate chapter. Participles are verbal adjectives. See later. The close relation between adjective and substantive is well illustrated by δοῦλα (Ro. 6:19). Cf. δοῦλοι.

\(^1\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 117.
\(^3\) "It is this change from subst. in apposition to adj. which according to Delbruck is the explanation of the numerous Gk. adjectives in o." Giles, Man., etc., p. 239.
\(^4\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 117. Cf. Schoemann, Die Lehre von den Redet. nach den Alten, 1862, p. 15, where he makes the quality of the thing essential to the idea of noun.
II. The Adjectival or Appositional Use of the Substantive.
Examples have already been given in the chapter on the Sentence. Let one suffice here: ἦν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ ποταμῷ (Mt. 3:6). 1 Cf. further Lu. 24:19; Ac. 1:16; 3:14. This idiom is common enough in the N. T. I must demur, however, at this point to Winer's idea (Winer-Thayer, p. 236) that "a notion which should naturally be expressed by an adjective as an epithet, is sometimes, by a change of construction, brought out by a substantive." What I object to is the word "should." He is right in saying that "the N. T. is by no means poor 2 in adjectives," but wrong in urging that the N. T. ought to use more. As already observed, substantives continued to be used in a descriptive sense not only in apposition, but also in the genitive. This original use of the substantive never ceased. Hence it is useless to talk of "this substitution of a substantive for an adjective" and to explain it as "a Hebraistic mode of expression" due to "the want of adjectives in Hebrew" and to "the peculiar vividness of the Oriental languages" (p. 237). He admits, however, that the matter is not arbitrary, but the principal word stands in the genitive. There is this difference between the adjective as an epithet and the genitive. The two substantives do not merge into one idea quite so completely. Winer's examples illustrate this point well: μηδὲ ἡλπικέναι ἐπὶ πλοῦτου ἀδηλότητι (1 Tim. 6:17), ἕνα υμείς ἐν καινότητι ζωῆς περιπατήσωμεν (Ro. 6:4), βλέπων τὸ στερέωμα τῆς πίστεως (Col. 2:5), λόγοις τῆς χάριτος (Lu. 4:22), οἰκονόμοι τῆς αἰεικίας (16:8), κριτὴς τῆς αἰεικίας (18:6), πάθη ἀτιμίας (Ro. 1:26), τῷ ῥήματι τῆς δυνάμεως (Heb. 1:3), etc. It was just the shade of difference between the substantive in the genitive and the adjective that led to the expressions above. Phrases like τὰ πνευματικὰ τῆς ποιησίας (Eph. 6:12) are analogous to the use of the adjective as substantive to be discussed directly. The use of ὦς or τέκνον, with the genitive is exactly like the Hebrew idiom with יָּבְּשׁ and is extremely common in the LXX and fairly so in the N. T. Thus ὦς ἀπειθίας (Eph. 2:2), πέκνα φωτός (Eph. 5:8), etc. But this "Hebraistic circumlocution" turns up in inscriptions and on coins, 3 so that it is clearly not un-Greek. Deissmann, however, since the idiom is so common and many of the N. T.

2 But his notion of adj. "formed by the apostles themselves" vanishes sadly in the light of the papyri.
3 Deiss., B. S., p. 165 f. So ὦς τῆς γερουσίας, ὦς τῆς πόλεως, etc,
examples are quotations from the LXX or translations from the Aramaic, admits that the majority in the N. T. are clue to "translation Hebraisms" and the rest to analogical formation.

III. The Adjective as Substantive. Simcox\(^1\) thinks that the N. T. shows a more frequent use of this idiom than the earlier Greek. But the earlier Greek shows abundant evidence of the use of the adjective without the substantive as a practical substantive, usually with the article, but not always.\(^2\)

(a) ANY GENDER. Such adjectives may be of any gender, according to the gender of substantive. So δ
calóς, ἡ ἔρημος, τὸ χρηστόν. This is no peculiarity of Greek alone, though it has its own development in the substantival use of the adjective. Indeed the participle was often used as a substantive. Thus ὁ σπείρων (Mt. 13:3), ἡγούμενος (Mt. 2:6). In Ph. 3:8 we have the participle used as a substantive with the genitive, τὸ ὑπερέχου τῆς γνώσεως. Cf. Lu. 16:1, τὰ ὑπάρχοντα αὐτοῦ. So τὸ ἐμαυτοῦ σύμφορον (1 Cor. 10:33) where the adjective, like a substantive, has the genitive.

(b) WITH MASCULINE ADJECTIVES. With masculine adjectives the substantives naturally suggest themselves out of the context or the nature of the case.\(^3\) Thus in Mt. 11:5, τυφλοὶ ἀναβέλτοισιν καὶ χωλοὶ περιπατοῦσιν, κτλ. Cf. οἱ ἄγιοι (1 Cor. 6:2), ἀμαρτωλοῦσι (1 Tim. 1:15), δικαίοι καὶ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ (Ro. 5:7), ἐκλεκτῶν θεοῦ (8:33), τῶν ἀληθινῶν (1 Jo. 5:20), ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ (Jo. 6:69) and probably τοῦ πονηροῦ (Mt. 6:13). In Jas. 5:8, πρόιμον καὶ ὑψίμον, supply ὑπότων. Sometimes only the context can determine the gender, as in Eph. 6:16; 1 Jo. 3:12).

(c) WITH FEMININE ADJECTIVES. These are usually examples of the ellipsis of ὀδός, χείρ, γῆ, γυνὴ, ἡμέρα, γλῶσσα. I follow Blass\(^4\) mainly in these examples. Thus γῆ is responsible for the feminine gender in τὴν ἔθραν (Mt. 23:15; Heb. 11:29), ἡ περι-χωρος (Mt. 3:5), τὴν ὅρειν (Lu. 1:39), τῇ ἐρήμῳ (Mt. 3:2), τῆς οἰκουμένης (Ro. 10:18), etc. In ἐκ τῆς ὑπὸ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (Lu. 17:24) Blass prefers μερίδος to γῆς and urges that we do not refine too sharply over ἐκ ἐναντίας (Mk. 15:39; Tit. 2:8). As examples of the influence of ὀδός note ἐθείος (Lu. 3:5), ποίας (5:19), ἐκεῖνης (19:4). For χείρ observe ἡ ἀριστερά and ἡ δεξιά (Mt. 6:3), ἐν δεξιᾷ (Ro. 8:34), τῇ δεξιᾷ (Ac. 2:33). But ἐκ δεξιῶν (2:34) may be compared with εἰς τὰ δεξιὰ μέρη (Jo. 21:6). The ellipsis of ἡμέρα is noticed by Blass in τῇ ἐχομένῃ (Lu. 13:33), τῇ ἐπιούσῃ (Ac. 16:11),

1 Lang. of the N. T., p. 91.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 140,
4 Ib., p. 140 f.
ADJECTIVES (ΕΠΙΘΕΤΑ) 653

τῇ ἐτέρᾳ (20:15), τῇ ἐπαιριοῦν (Mt. 27:62), τῇ τρίτῃ (Lu. 13:32), τῆς ἐφδομῆς (Heb. 4:4), τῇ μιᾷ τῶν σαββατῶν (Ac. 20:7), μέχρι τῆς στήμερον (Mt. 11:23), ἄφες (2 Pet. 3:4), τῇ ἐξῆς (Ac. 21:1). But Blass rightly supplies ὥρα with ἄφες ἡς in Lu. 7:45, as with ὄλιγας (Mt. 8:16), πρωτίας (Mt. 27:1). To conclude the list of feminine examples with τῇ πυεούσῃ (Ac. 27:40) supply άφρα, with ἐν τῇ Ἐλληνικῇ (Rev. 9:11) supply γλώσσῃ (but cf. τῇ Ἐβραΐδι διαλέκτῳ, Ac. 22:2), with πολλάς and ὀλίγας (Lu. 12:47 f.) supply πληγάς, with ἀπὸ μιᾶς (Lu. 14:18) insert φωνῆς. But κατ' ἰδίαν (Mk. 6:31) and ἰδίᾳ, (1 Cor. 12:11), though stereotyped, may refer to ὅδω. Cf. also κατὰ μόνας (Mk. 4:10) as an instance of ὁδὸς. So δημοσία (Ac. 16:37). Words like σωτήριος (Tit. 2:11), αἱωνίου (Jo. 6:47), εὐπρεπίστατον (Heb. 12:1) are, of course, feminine, not masculine. See chapter on Declensions.

(d) WITH THE NEUTER. The neuter furnishes a number of interesting examples. Thus ποτήριον ψυχροῦ (Mt. 10:42), where ὅδατος is referred to. So ὅδωρ is meant by τὸ γλυκὺ καὶ τὸ πικρόν (Jas. 3:11). With ἐν λευκοῖς (Jo. 20:12), one must insert ἰματίας as with ἐν μαλακοῖς (Mt. 11:8). Cf. πορφυροῦν in Rev. 18:16. With τὸ δισεκατόν (Ac. 19:35) Blass1 suggests ἀγάλματος, and with τὸ τρίτον τῆς γῆς (Rev. 8:7) we must supply μέρος ("not classical," Blass). Cf. εἰς τὸ ἱερὸν (Mt. 21:23). In Mt. 6:13, ἀπὸ τοῦ πονηροῦ, most likely διάβολος is meant,2 not mere evil. In Mt. 19:17 we have περὶ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ, explained by ὁ ἀγαθὸς, though the American Standard Version gives it 'that which is good.' But cf. Ro. 5:7. The number of these neuter adjectives used substantively in the N. T. is large and varied, but the older Greek shows abundant illustrations3 of the same thing, especially in philosophical discussions. With prepositions in particular we meet with this use of the neuter. Thus εἰς τὸ μέσον (Jo. 20:19) ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ (Mt. 6:4), εἰς φανερόν (Mk. 4:22), μετὰ μικρὸν (Mt. 26:73), ἐν μέσῳ (Mt. 10:16), ἐν ὀλίγῳ (Ac. 26:28), ἐν μεγάλῳ (26:29), μετὰ βραχύ (Lu. 22:58), etc. Cf. εἰς ἀγαθὸς (Jer. 24:6). Very common is the adverbial usage of this neuter like βραχῦ (Ac. 5:34), μικρόν (Mt. 26:39), μόνον (Mt. 8:8), τὸ πρῶτον (Jo. 12:16), but the adjective's relation to the adverb will receive special treatment. See XI. Cf. τῷ ὄντι. Sometimes the neuter singular was used in a collective sense for the sum total (cf. English "the all"). Thus, in Jo. 6:37, 39, πᾶν ὁ (5, 17:24 ὁ, where persons are meant. The neuter plural is

1 Ib., p. 141.
3 W.-Th., p. 235.
common in this sense like τὰ πάντα (Col. 1:16) where the universe is thus described. Cf. τὰ ὄντα and τὰ μὴ ὄντα (1 Cor. 1:28). B in the LXX (Helbing, p. 51) frequently has πᾶν – πάντα (acc. sing. masc.). (Cf. also Ps. of Sol. 3:10; 8:23 V; Test. xii, Pat. Reub. 1:10 πᾶν ἄρτον, Gad 3:1 πᾶν νόμον.) See also the common collective neuter in the LXX (Thackeray, Grammar, p. 174 f.). Usually the neuter plural is concrete, however, as in τὰ ὀρατὰ καὶ ὀφθαλμοὶ (Col. 1:16), where πάντα is thus explained. Cf. τὰ βαθεῖα (Rev. 2:24), ἀρχαία (2 Cor. 5:17). In Ro. 1:20, as Winer¹ points out, τὰ ὀφθαλμοὶ makes more concrete ἢ τε ἄδιδος δύναμις καὶ θειότης. But one must confess that in Eph. 3:10, ἐν τοῖς ἐπουρανίοις, it is not clear what the idea is, whether places, things or relations.

In Ro. 1:20, as Winer¹ points out, τὰ ὀφθαλμοὶ makes more concrete ἢ τε ἄδιδος δύναμις καὶ θειότης. But one must confess that in Eph. 3:10, ἐν τοῖς ἐπουρανίοις, it is not clear what the idea is, whether places, things or relations. In Jo. 3:12 ἐπίγεια and ἐπουράνια seem to refer to truths. In 1 Cor. 2:13, πνευματικῶς πνευματικὰ συνεργοῦντες, a like ambiguity exists, but the presence of λόγοι inclines one to the notion that Paul is here combining spiritual ideas with spiritual words. The neuter singular with the article is very common for the expression of an abstract idea. One does not have to say that the adjective is here used instead of the abstract substantive, but merely as an abstract substantive. Cf. English "the beautiful and the good" with "beauty and goodness." This is good ancient Greek. Cf. also in the papyri τὸ δίκαιον Tb.P. 40 (B.C. 117) and (ib.) καθήκοντα. Winer² was troubled over τὸ δοκίμιον τῆς πίστεως (1 Pet. 1:7) and said that no such adjective existed and therefore this was a mere substantive. There was none in the lexica, but Deissmann³ has found a number of instances of the adjective in the papyri. So χρυσὸς δοκιμίου P.E.R. xii. 6 f. (93 A.D.), 'good gold.' One need not be troubled over τὸ γνωστόν (Ro. 1:19) any more than over the other neuter adjectives. Cf. τὸ χρηστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 2:4), τὸ μωρὸν τοῦ θεοῦ and τὸ ἀσθενὲς τοῦ θεοῦ (1 Cor. 1:25), τὸ ἀμέτακτον τῆς βουλῆς (Heb. 6:17), τὸ ἐλαφρὸν τῆς θελήψεως (2 Cor. 4:17), τὸ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου (Ro. 8:3), τὸ δυνατὸν αὐτοῦ (9:22). It is thus frequent with the genitive. Cf. also τὸ κατ' ἐμὲ πρό-θυμον (Ro. 1:15). See Heb. 7:7. In Lu. 12:23, ἢ ψυχὴ πλείον ἐστιν τῆς τροφῆς, we have πλείον because the abstract idea of thing is expressed. This also is a frequent Greek idiom. Cf. οὐδέν, (1 Cor. 7:19), ὁ (1 Cor. 15:10), τάξιν (1 Cor. 6:11).

IV. Agreement of Adjectives with Substantives.

(a) IN NUMBER. It is not necessary to repeat what has been

¹ W.-Th., p. 235. Cf. lateness of the forms in —ικός (only two in Hom.). Hoffmann, Über die Entw. des Begr. des Griech. bei den Alten, p. 2. In 1 Tim. 5:17 note διπλῆς (from —δος).

² Ib.

³ B. S., p. 259 f.
said on this subject in chapter X, vii, (b), on concord between
adjective and substantive in number. The normal thing is for
adjective and substantive to agree in number. But one must not
get the idea that "construction according to sense" of the gram-
marians is an anomaly. "The term is unobjectionable, provided
we remember that constructions according to the meaning are
generally older than those 'in which meaning is overridden by
idiom or grammatical analogy." Thus there is no cause for as-
tonishment in seeing ἐκθαμβόω with ὁ λαός in Ac. 3:11, nor πλὴθος
κράζοντες in Ac. 21:36.
(b) IN GENDER. For concord in gender see chapter X, viii.
Here again the construction according to sense is normal like στρα-
tiάς οὐρανίου αἰνοῦντων (Lu. 2:13), but οὐρανίου in the same phrase
is the feminine (cf. αἰώνιος, etc.). The N. T. does not have the
Attic idiom with ἡμῖνος of agreement with the gender of the gen-
tive substantive, though it is still in the LXX. Cf. τὰς ἡμίσεις
tῶν ἀμαρτιῶν (Ezek. 16:51). Instead see ἐως ἡμῖνος τῆς ἁπατείας
mou (Mk. 6:23). But αὐτή and θαυμαστή in Mt. 21:42 (Mk. 12:11)
are probably clue to the Hebrew נַשְׁתָה, the Hebrew using the fem-
ine for abstract ideas, since it had no neuter. But even here in
Ps. 117:23 the context has כָּפָת הַנַּשְׁתָה גָּנִיָּה. One other remark is
to be made which is that when an adjective occurs with more than
one substantive it may agree with the gender of the nearest, as in
πᾶσαν πόλιν καὶ τόπον (Lu. 10:1), be repeated with each, as in πᾶσα
dόσις αὖχαθή καὶ πᾶν δύρημα τέλειον (Jas. 1:17) and ἐν ποίῳ δυνάμει ἡ
ἐν ποίῳ ὅνοματι (Ac. 4:7), or agree with the masculine rather than
the feminine or neuter, as in γυμνοί (Jas. 2:15). With the same
gender there may be repetition (Mt. 4:23; 9:35) or not (Mt.
12:31).
(c) IN CASE. For concord in case see chapter X, ix. The main
instances of variation here belong to the participle as in Ac. 15:
22 f.), and in particular the Book of Revelation furnishes illustra-
tions (Rev. 3:12, etc.), as already shown.
(d) Two on MORE ADJECTIVES. When two or more adjectives
occur together the conjunction may be used as in πολλὰ καὶ βαρέα
αἰτιώματα (Ac. 25:7) and even πολλὰ καὶ ἄλλα σημεῖα (Jo. 20:30),
as in Latin.3 But see ἐτέρων πολλῶν (Ac. 15:35) and the repetition
of the adjective with the article (Rev. 2:12).
V. The Attributive Adjective. The adjective (from adjaceo)
is a word joined on to another (ἐπίθετον). The adjective is by no

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 118.
2 Cf. W.-Th., p. 238; Moulton, ProL., p. 59.
3 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 87.
means the only attribute used with substantives. Thus the attribute may be substantive in apposition with another substantive, like ἀνθρωπός ὁ ἐκδησπότης (Mt. 13:52), or a substantive, like ἡ τοῦ θεοῦ μακροθυμία (1 Pet. 3:20), or an adverb, like τῆς ἀνω κλήσεως (Ph. 3:14), or an adverb, like ἡ κατ' ἐκλογὴν πρόθεσις (Ro. 9:11), or a pronoun, like τὸ ἐμὸν ὄνομα (Mt. 18:20).¹ When the article is used before the adjective or participle it is, of course, attributive, as in ὁ καλὸς (Jo. 10:11), ἐν τῇ παρούσῃ ἀληθείᾳ (2 Pet. 1:12). But adjectives and participles may be attributive when no article is used. Thus with στρατιάς οὐρανίου (Lu. 2:13), ὄδωρ ζών (Jo. 4:10). Cf. τὸ ὄδωρ τὸ ζῶν (in verse 11), μονογενής θεός (Jo. 1:18). The unusual position of the attributive adjective, like ὁ ὀχλος πολὺς (Jo. 12:9), where the substantive and adjective form "a composite idea" (Jebb, Soph. 0. T., pp. 1199 ff.), may be illustrated from the papyri, 0.P.99, τῆς ὑπαρχούσης αὐτῷ μητρικῆς οἰκίας τριστέγου (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154). Cf. also ἐκ τῆς ματαίας ὑμῶν ἀναστροφῆς πατροπαραδότου (1 Pet. 1:18), where, however, πατροπαραδότου may very well be predicate (see vi). Cf. French La République Française.

VI. The Predicate Adjective. The adjective (like the participle) is common as a predicate, as is the substantive. Monro² considers the substantive in the predicate adjectival. Cf. pronoun, adverb, etc. As examples note πολλοί (Mk. 5:9), ὁμοία (Mt. 13:31), σωτήριος (Tit. 2:11), ἔτοιμα (Lu. 14:17), βαθὺ (Jo. 4:11), out of many. But adjectives are predicate without a copula, as in Τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν (Mk. 10:18), ὁ ποιήσας με ύγιή (Jo. 5:11; cf. 7:23), ἀδάπανον θήσω τὸ εὖαγγέλιον (1 Cor. 9:18), μεγάλη τῇ φωνῇ (Ac. 26:24), ἀπαράβατον ἐχει τὴν ἰερωσύνην (Heb. 7:24). Cf. Mk. 8:17; Jo. 5:35; 1 Cor. 11:5. As examples of the verbal in -τος take παθητός (Ac. 26:23) and γνωστόν (Ac. 4:10) with which last compare the attributive use in Ac. 4:16 γνωστόν σημείου. Cf. Mk. 3:1. As further interesting examples of the predicate adjective, note ὅλος (Jo. 9:34), δόκιμοι, φανάρις (2 Cor. 13:7), ὕγιης (Mt. 12:13), πρῶτος (Jo. 20:4), ἐδραίος (1 Cor. 7:37), ὄρθος (Ac. 14:10), μόνος (Lu. 24:18; cf. Mt. 14:23), etc. Cf. ὄλος in Lu. 13:21. The distinction between the attributive adjective and the predicate adjective lies in just this, that the predicate presents an additional statement, is indeed the main point, while the attributive is an incidental description of the substantive about which the statement is made. Cf. Ac. 4:10 and 16 above for both uses of γνωστόν. Cf. ταύτας in Ac. 1:5.

This distinct predication\(^1\) with the adjective in an oblique case is seen in τότῳ ἄληθες εἴρηκας (Jo. 4:18) and is a classical idiom.\(^2\) Note the use of πάντα as predicate for ὁ θεός in 1 Cor. 15:28 as with Χριστός in Col. 3:11 for the totality of things.

**VII. Adjective Rather than Adverb.** See ch. XII, ix, for discussion of this subject. A few items are added here. Cf. πρῶτος Μωυσῆς λέγει (Ro. 10:19), 'Moses is the first who says,' with πρῶτον διαλαγηθεί τῷ ἀδελφῷ σου (Mt. 5:24), 'Be reconciled with thy brother as the first thing that you do.' In Mt. 10:2 πρῶτος Σίμων means that first in the list is Simon, whereas πρῶτον, in Jo. 1:41, means that Andrew finds his brother Simon as the first thing which he does. Πρῶτον ἰχθύν (Mt. 17:27) means the first fish that came up. Cf. ἐν ἐμοὶ πρῶτῳ (1 Tim. 1:16), 'me as chief.'

The exact idea of πρῶτη in Lu. 2:2 is not certain, but most probably Luke's idea is that there were two enrolments under Cyrenius. Cf. Ramsay, *Was Christ Born at Bethlehem?* With μόνος and μόνον a like distinction is to be observed. Take ἀνεχώρησεν πάλιν εἰς τὸ ὄρος αὐτῶς μόνος (Jo. 6:15) and σὺ μόνος παροικεῖς Ἰερουσαλήμ (Lu. 24:18). The difference is much like that between the English "alone" and "only." So in Lu. 9:36, εὑρέθη Ἰησοῦς μόνος, 'Jesus was found alone,' and in Mt. 17:8 (cf. Mk. 9:8), οὐδένα ἔδωκεν εἰ μὴ αὐτῶν Ἰησοῦν μόνον, it is adjective, not adverb. Cf. οὐκ εἶμι μόνος (Jo. 16:32) with οὐ μόνον in Ac. 21:13. Cf. 2 Jo.

1. Contrast μόνον in Mt. 8:8 with μόνος in Mt. 14:23. There are some examples where either adverb or adjective would make good sense,\(^3\) as in Mk. 6:8, μηδὲν εἰ μὴ ὁδηγῶν μόνον, where D reads μόνην; Ac. 11:19, μηδενὶ εἰ μὴ μόνον Ἰουδαίοις, where D has μόνος; and 1 Jo. 5:6, οὐκ ἐν τῷ ἔδατι μόνον, where B reads μόνω. But this is not all. The Greek often uses an adjective where other languages prefer adverbs or prepositional phrases. Latin and English have similar expressions for other ideas.\(^4\) Naturally this idiom is common in Homer.\(^5\) For time note δευτεραῖοι ἥλθομεν (Ac. 28:13), 'we came second-day men' ('on the second day'). Cf. τεταρτάιος Jo. 11:39. D has likewise πεμπταῖοι in Ac. 20:6. So γενόμεναι ὄρθριναὶ ἐπὶ τὸ μνημεῖον (Lu. 24:22), ἐπιστῆ ἐφυνίδιος (Lu. 21:34), ἀὐθίρετος (2 Cor. 8:17), ὀκταήμερος (Ph. 3:5).

**VIII. The Personal Construction.** This matter belongs more properly to indirect discourse and the participle, but it calls for

---

\(^1\) Monro, ib., p. 119.  
\(^2\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 141.  
\(^3\) Ib.  
\(^4\) Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 89.  
just a word here. The Greeks were more fond of the personal construction than we English are. Farrar\textsuperscript{1} indeed doubts if Greek has a true impersonal verb. But \textit{ἐγένετο} in a passage like Lu. 1:8 comes close to it. Cf. Lu. 1:23. We have fewer examples in the N. T. of the personal construction, none in truth with either \textit{δήλος} (1 Cor. 15:27 is impersonal construction) or with \textit{φανερός}. But we do have \textit{φανερούμενοι ὦτὶ ἐστὲ ἐπιστολὴ Ἑρῴτου} (2 Cor. 3:3). Cf. \textit{Χριστὸς κηρύσσεται ὦτι}, in 1 Cor. 15:12. Note also \textit{ἀξίος ἵνα λύσσω} (Jo. 1:27), but the impersonal construction is found with \textit{δίκαιον} in Ph. 1:7. See also \textit{ἰκανός ἵνα} in Mt. 8:8. \textit{Δυνατός} occurs with the infinitive (2 Tim. 1:12). This personal construction is probably due to assimilation of gender by analogy.\textsuperscript{2} Cf. \textit{δοκεῖ σοφὸς εἶναι} (1 Cor. 3:18), perfectly regular predicate nominative. See good example in 1 Cor. 15:9.

\textbf{IX. Adjectives Used with Cases.} Examples were given under the various oblique cases of adjectives that were construed with the several cases. A mere mention of the matter is all that is required here. Thus the genitive appears with \textit{ἐνοχὸς θανάτου} (Mt. 26:66), the ablative with \textit{ξένοι τῶν διαθηκῶν} (Eph. 2:12), the dative (Mt. 20:1) and accusative with \textit{δύμως υἱὸν ἀνθρώπου} (Rev. 14:14), the acc. with \textit{πιστὸς τὰ πρὸς τῶν θεῶν} (Heb. 2:17), the dative with \textit{ἐνοχὸς τῇ κρίσει} (Mt. 5:21) and \textit{καλὸν σοί ἐστιν} (Mt. 18:8), the instrumental with \textit{ἥσους ἥμιν} (Mt. 20:12), the locative with \textit{βραδεῖς τῇ καρδίᾳ} (Lu. 24:25). Cf. locative in Col. 2:13 f. The adjective is, of course, used with various prepositions, as \textit{τὸ ἀγαθὸν πρὸς πάντας} (Gal. 6:10), \textit{πιστὸς ἐν ἐλαχίστῳ} (Lu. 16:10), \textit{βραδὺς εἰς ὀργήν} (Jas. 1:19).

\textbf{X. Adjectives with the Infinitive and Clauses.} If cases can occur with adjectives, it is natural that the verbal substantive known as the infinitive should come within that idiom anti be in a case. The case of the infinitive will vary with the adjective. Thus in \textit{ἀξίος κληθήναι} (Lu. 15:19) the infinitive is probably in the genitive case. Cf. also \textit{ἀξίος ἵνα λύσω} (Jo. 1:27). With \textit{δυνατὸς κωλὺσαι} (Ac. 11:17) we have the accusative of general reference. In the case of \textit{ἰκανὸς βαστάσαι} (Mt. 3:11) we may see either the accusative of general reference, as above, or the dative, according to the original idea of the form and the common case with \textit{ἰκανός}. Cf. also \textit{ἰκανὸς ἵνα εἰσέλθῃς} (Mt. 8:8). The instances of both infinitive and ἵνα are numerous in the N. T. As specimens of the infinitive anti preposition after the adjective, take \textit{ταχὺς εἰς τὸ ἀκούσαι, βραδὺς εἰς τὸ λαλῆσαι} (Jas. 1:19). Indeed the genitive

\textsuperscript{1} Gk. Synt., p. 89. \textsuperscript{2} Middleton, Anal. in Synt., p. 15.
article τοῦ with the infinitive occurs with adjectives where it would not naturally be looked for, as in ἔτοιμοί ἔσμεν τοῦ ἀνελείν (Ac. 23:15). Cf. ἔτοιμος εἰμί πορεύεσθαι (Lu. 22:33). But see further (βραδεῖς τοῦ πιστεύειν (Lu. 24:25).

XI. The Adjective as Adverb. This subject has been treated in the chapter on the Cases as well as in the one on Adverbs. Hence a few words will suffice here. The border line between adjective in the nominative and adverb gets very dim sometimes. Thus in English we say "I am well," "He spoke well." Farrar¹ even says that it is "more correct" to use an adverb than an adjective in a phrase like ἄσημοι ὑμᾶς ἔδωκα. But that is going too far even if we call it antimeria. He quotes Milton (Par. Lost, vii, 161), "Meanwhile inhabit lax," and Shakespeare (Taming of Shrew; I, i, 89), "Thou didst it excellent." We can see the difference between ἀνάστησις ὑπὸς (Ac. 14:10) and ὑπὸς ἐκρίνας (Lu. 7:43). But, as already observed, the difference between μόνον and μόνω grows faint in 1 Jo. 5:6 and similar examples. Hence it becomes very easy for the adjective form in the accusative to be used indiscriminately as adverb where the adjective idea disappears. Thus only the context can tell whether μόνον is adjective (Jo. 8:29) or adverb (Gal. 1:23). So as to μικρόν (Jo. 7:33 and 16:19), πολύ (Lu. 12:48 and Ro. 3:2), ὀλίγον (Mk. 1:19), etc. Πρῶτον, for instance, is very common as an adverb (cf. Mt. 7:5, and even τὸ πρῶτον is found, Jo. 10:40), but πρῶτως occurs only once (Ac. 11:26). It is needless to multiply here examples like these. Other cases are used besides the accusative to make adverbs from adjectives, as the ablative in πρῶτως above, the genitive as ὑμᾶς (Jo. 4:36), the associative-instrumental as δημοσίᾳ (Ac. 16:37). Cf. πολλῷ (Ro. 5:9). All degrees of comparison furnish adverbs, thus πολύ (Ro. 3:2; 2 Cor. 8:22), πλέον (Jo. 21:15), μαλακτικος (Ac. 20:38). The accusative singular of the comparative is the common adverb of that degree as περισσότερον (Heb. 7:15), but see περισσότερον (2 Cor. 1:12). In the superlative both the singular as πρῶτον (Lu. 6:42) and the plural as μάλιστα (above). These examples sufficiently illustrate the principles involved.

XII. The Positive Adjective.

(a) RELATIVE CONTRAST. In discussing the positive adjective first one must not get the idea that the positive was originally the absolute idea of the adjective as distinct from the comparative or superlative. This notion of absolute goodness or great-

¹ Gk. Synt., p. 90.
ness, etc., is itself later than the notion of comparison. Indeed the adjective itself has a relative sense and suggests the opposite, as light implies darkness. And then many of the oldest comparative forms have no positive at all and never did have, like ἀμφότερος, ὀριστερός, βέλτερος, δεύτερος, etc. More of this under the comparative. The point to get hold of just here is that the adjective _per se_ (like many other words) implies contrast, and that originally this is what the comparative form meant. Thus in Homer some comparatives in –τερος have no notion of greater or less degree, the idea of duality, but merely contrast, like ὑπερτερά as opposed to male, ὑπερτερός as opposed to valley, ὀρειστερός opposed to right, δεξιότερος opposed to left, ἴμπετερος opposed to ὑμπετερος and _vice versa._

(b) USED AS COMPARATIVE OR SUPERLATIVE. With this notion of the relative contrast in the adjective and the first use of the comparative one is not surprised to find the positive still used alongside of the comparative. In Lu. 1:42, εὐλογημένη σὺ ἐν γυναιξίν, we do not have a mere Hebraism, though a very natural one in this translation from the Aramaic talk of Elizabeth. The Hebrew has no degrees of comparison at all and has to resort to circumlocutions. But Homer and other early Greek writers show a similar idiom, like διὰ θεάων, διὰ γυναικῶν (Eurip., Alc., 471).

Other examples occur in the N. T., like ἁγία ἁγίων (Heb. 9:2 f., frequent in the LXX), ποία ἐντολή μεγάλη ἐν τῷ νόμῳ (Mt. 22:36). Cf. βασιλεὺς βασιλέων, (Rev. 19:16), κύριος τῶν κυριευόντων (1 Tim. 6:15), τῶν αἰῶνων τῶν αἰώνων (Eph. 3:21). The vernacular _koinē_ uses repetition of the adjective, as in μεγάλοι μεγάλοι, B.U. I, 229, μεγάλων καὶ μεγάλων ἁγαθῶν, Inscription of Thera (Herm. 1901, p. 445), θερμα θερμά, Herondas IV, 61. Cf. Radermacher, _N. T. Gr.,_ p. 57. The positive suggests contrast clearly in τῶν πολλῶν (Mt. 24:12). Cf. of οἱ πολλοί in Ro. 5:15, 19; 1 Cor. 10:33. Here the majority is the idea, a comparative notion. Cf. Paul's use of τοὺς πλείονας (1 Cor. 9:19) and Matthew's ὁ πλείστος ὁχλος (21:8). See also Mk. 12:37 ὁ πολὺς ὁχλος and Lu. 7:11 ὁχλος πολὺς, and in 2 Cor. 8:15 τὸ πολύ and τὸ ὀλίγον. Hence it is not surprising in Lu. 16:10 to see ἐν ἐλαχίστῳ καὶ ἐν μεγάλῳ in Ac. 26:29, as in Mt. 5:19 also ἐλάχιστος and

---

3 C. and S., Sel. from LXX, p. 64.
mégas are set against each other. Cf. also Mt. 22:38. In Ac. 26:24, τα πολλα γράμματα, we have an implied comparison.¹

(c) WITH PREPOSITIONS. The positive may be used with prepositions also where comparison is implied. Thus ἀμαρτωλοί παρά πάντας τούς Γαλιλαίους (Lu. 13:2). Winer² properly compares this idiom with the use of ὤς in Heb. 3:2, for in the next verse the author uses πλείους δόξης as the sense of verse 2. But in the LXX this is a very common idiom³ and it is found in the classical Greek. The correct text in Lu. 18:14 (XBL) has also δεδικαιωμένος παρ' ἐκείνου. Cf. ἁξία προς in Ro. 8:18.

(d) COMPARISON IMPLIED BY ἡ. Once more the positive may occur with It is not necessary, in view of the preceding discussion, to suggest the "omission" of μᾶλλον.⁴ It is true that we have only one such example in the N. T. καλόν σοί ἐστίν εἰςελθεῖν ἡ βληθήσαι (Mt. 18:8). Cf. Mk. 9:43, 45. But the LXX again furnishes many illustrations⁵ like λευκοὶ ἡ (Gen. 49:12). The ancient Greek also is not without parallels. And there are N. T. examples, as in LXX, of verbs so employed like θέλω ἡ (1 Cor. 14:19) and λυσιτελεῖ ἡ (Lu. 17:2) and substantives as χαρά ἔσται ἡ (Lu. 15:7). Older Greek writers show this idiom with substantives and verbs.⁶ In Mt. 18:8 we have the positive adjective both before and after ἡ as κυλλόν ἡ χυλόν. But cf. 2 Tim. 3:4 for comparative before and positive after.

(e) IN ABSOLUTE SENSE. After the three grades of comparison were once established, analogy worked to form and use positive, comparative and superlative. And sometimes the positive occurs in the absolute sense. So we find Christ discussing the absolute meaning of the positive ἁγαθός in Mt. 19:17 (Mk. 10:18). Thus it comes to pass that sometimes the positive is more absolute than comparative or superlative which are relative of necessity. God is alone ἁγαθός in this sense, while others are βέλτιωτες and βέλτιστοι. Our God, ὁ ἁγαθός θεός, is higher in ideal and fact than Jupiter Maximus or Ζεὺς ἀριστος ἢ δὲ μέγιστος.⁷ Of καλὸς the opposite is οὐ καλὸς and this is not the positive attribute αἰσχρός. In Mt. 17:4 we find Peter saying fervently καλὸν ἐστίν ἡμᾶς ὥδε ἐνα. "The positive represents the highest absolute idea of a quality and cannot therefore be increased."⁸

¹ Blass, Gr. of -N. T. Gk., p. 143.
² W.-Th., p. 240.       ³ C. and S., p. 64.
⁴ Though Blass does, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 143.
⁵ C. and S., p. 64; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 143; W.-Th., p. 241.
⁸ Ib., p. 19-
XIII. The Comparative Adjective (συγκριτικόν ὄνομα).

(a) CONTRAST OR DUALITY. On the forms see chapter VII, 3. As already observed, the first use of the comparative form was to express contrast or duality.\(^1\) This is clear in ἡ ἄριστη ἁ (Mt. 6:3), though ἡ δέξια occurs in the same verse. But Homer uses δεξιός as comparative. Cf. also ἀμφότερος, ἡ μέτερος, ὁ μέτερος, ἐπιτερος, ἐκάτερος, ὁ πότερος, πότερος, where the notion of two is accentuated. Contrast between two or duality, therefore, is clear in these pronouns. They will receive separate treatment later. Here they are merely used to illustrate the origin of the comparative form. Ἀλλος (Latin alius) is also comparative,\(^2\) *ἀλ-ιος. So is δεξ-ιος\(^3\) which explains the disappearance of δεξιός. One of the comparative endings is –ioς. This leads one to remark that the oldest comparative forms are not formed from positives as such, but from their own roots. Thus δεύτερος, which is obviously comparative and expresses duality, has no positive form. Cf. ἀμφότερος and the examples just mentioned.\(^4\) This original comparative need not be formed from an adjective at all, but from a substantive like, βασιλεύτερος, κύντερος, etc., in Homer where the comparative expresses the possession of the quality "in contradistinction to objects which are without it" (Monro, Homeric Gr., p. 82). So πρότερος (from the adverb πρῶτος) is not 'more forward,' but 'forward' in opposition to ὑστερος, 'backward.' Cf. Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 415. Cf. ἐλεύθερος, 'free to come.' So ἔξωτερος is 'outside,' not 'more outside.' These oldest forms represent the original meaning which was not the comparison of greater or less, not a matter of degree, but a question of contrast or duality.\(^5\) So βέλτερος, δέμεινων have no positive forms. There is indeed a distinct weakening of this original duality in adjectives as in pronouns.\(^6\) Cf. the dropping of the dual endings. Thus in the N. T. πρότερος an adjective occurs only once, κατὰ τὴν προτέραν ἀναστροφήν (Eph. 4:22). It is rare in the papyri (Moulton, Prol., p. 79). Elsewhere πρῶτος holds the field when only two objects or persons are in view, like πρῶτος μου (Jo. 1:15), πρῶτος and ἀλλος (20:4), etc. Cf. our 'first story' when only two stories are contemplated, 'first volume,' etc. And as an adverb πρότερον survives only ten times (cf. 2 Cor. 1:15), while πρῶτον is very com-

---

1 Moulton, Prol., pp. 77  
3 Ib. Transl. (Comp. Gr.), vol. TI, p. 132.  
5 Ib., pp. 4 ff.  
mon. Luke does not use πρότερος (adjective or adverb) so that πρῶτος in Ac. 1:1 with λόγος does not imply τρίτος. Moulton finds πρότερος only once in the Grenfell-Hunt volumes of papyri so that this dual form vanishes before the superlative πρῶτος. Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 244) sees this matter rightly and calls it a Latin point of view to insist on "former" and "latter" in Greek, a thing that the ancients did not do.

(b) DEGREE. The next step was for the notion of degree to come into the comparative. The notion of "two-ness" remained, but it had the added idea of more in degree. They run along then parallel with each other. The comparative form, therefore, has two ideas, that of contrast or duality (Gegensatz) and of the relative comparative (Steigerung), though the first was the original. Relative comparison is, of course, the dominant idea in most of the N. T. examples, though, as already remarked, the notion of duality always lies in the background. Thus διεκτότερον έσται (Mt. 10:15), βεβαιότερον (2 Pet. 1:19), είς τὸ κρείσσον (1 Cor. 11:17), σοφώτερον and ἵσχυρότερον (1 Cor. 1:25).

(c) WITHOUT SUFFIXES. But the comparative did not always use the comparative suffixes, though this was usual. Sometimes μᾶλλον was employed with the positive, though this idiom is not very frequent in the N. T. Thus we find μᾶλλον with καλός (Mk. 9:42), with μακάριον (Ac. 20:35), with ἀναγκαῖα (1 Cor. 12:22), with πολλά (Gal. 4:27). Once indeed (2 Tim. 3:4) μᾶλλον occurs with one adjective before ἦ and not with the other after ἦ. The Greeks preferred to put both qualities in the comparative degree when two adjectives were compared. But here we have φιλήδονι μᾶλλον ἦ φιλόθεοι. "In Jo. 3:19 μᾶλλον — ἦ is used with two substantives" (H. Scott). In Phil. 16 we have a distinction drawn between μάλιστα and μᾶλλον with ἀδελφον ἀγαπητῶν. No example occurs in the N. T. of two comparatives with but in Ro. 9:12 we have ὁ μείζων δουλεύει τῷ ἐλάσσονι and in Heb. 1:4, τοσοῦτω κρείττων γενόμενος ὡς διαφορώτερον.

(d) DOUBLE COMPARISON. Sometimes indeed μᾶλλον, occurs with the comparative form itself. This applies to adjectives and adverbs. Thus μᾶλλον περισσότερον (Mk. 7:36), περισσοτέρως μᾶλλον (2 Cor. 7:13). Cf. ἔτι μᾶλλον καὶ μᾶλλον (Ph. 1:9), περισσότερον ἔτι κατάδηλον (Heb. 7:15). Recall also the double comparative form like vernacular English "lesser," μειζοτέραν (3 Jo. 4), and the comparative on the superlative ἐλαχιστότερος (Eph. 3:8). It oc-

1 Prol., p. 79.
2 Schwab, Hist. Synt. etc., Heft i, p. 21 f.
3 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 42.

Other means of strengthening the comparative were the accusative adverb πολύ, as in Heb. 12:9, 25 (cf. 2 Cor. 8:22), and in particular the instrumental πολλῷ, as in Lu. 18:39. In 1 Cor. 12:22 we have πολλῷ μᾶλλον over against ἄσθενέστερα. But in Ph. 1:23 note πολλῷ μᾶλλον κρείσσον where all this emphasis is due to Paul’s struggling emotion. The ancient Greek used all these devices very often. Cf. Schwab, Hist. Syntax, etc., Heft iii, pp. 59 ff. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 143) rightly observes that in 2 Cor. 12:9 ἡδιστα μᾶλλον are not to be taken together. The older Greek used also μέγα and μακρῷ to strengthen the comparison. Cf. Mayer, Verstärkung, Umschreibung and Entwertung der Comparationsgrade in der alteren Gracitait, 1891, p. 16 f.

(c) WITHOUT OBJECT OF COMPARISON. Sometimes the comparative form is used absolutely. It is beside the mark to say with Clyde₁ that this idiom occurs "through politeness for the positive." It is not used for the positive. It is true that no object of comparison is expressed, but that is because the context makes the point perfectly clear. In rapid familiar conversation this would often be true. Blass² also thinks that sometimes the comparative is no more than a positive. Winer³ more justly holds that the point of comparison may "ordinarily be gathered from the context." The point is always in the context. Thus ὁ ποιεῖς ποίησον τάχειον (Jo. 13:27) may mean more quickly than Judas would have done but for the exposure. Note that this is a conversation and Judas would understand. In Heb. 13:19 περισσοτέρως and τάχειον correspond easily, and in verse 23, ἐὰν τάχειον ἑρχηται, perhaps it means ‘if he come before I leave.’ None of the examples of Blass are convincing, for πρεσβύτερος, though used of an official, is one who is older (elder) as compared with νεώτερος, and the bishop is not to be a neophyte (1 Tim. 3:6). The point, of course, lies

₁ Gk. Synt., p. 41.
₂ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 142.
₃ W.-Th., p. 242.
more in length of experience than of age. Deissmann (B. S., p. 154 f.) finds in the papyri ὁ πρεσβύτερος ὁ κώμης, an official title. Pap. Lugd. A, 35 f. (Ptol. Per.). In Ac. 17:21 καινότερον means, of course, something newer than what they had recently heard. Socrates said to Hippocrates when he came in (Plato, Protagoras 309 C): μὴ τι νεώτερον ἀγγέλλεις; Then again, in Ac. 17:22, δείσι-δαιμονεστέρους is more religious (or superstitious, as the case may be, a matter for exegesis. I prefer religious) than ordinary or than I had supposed. One does not need to deny the "elative" comparative sense of "very" here and elsewhere. The elative comparative is still comparative. But Blass denies even the elative comparative in a number of these examples. This is to a certain extent to surrender to translation the true interpretation of the Greek idiom. In Ac. 18:26 ἀκριβέστερον ἐξέθεντο teaches that Apollos received more accurate information than he had previously had. Cf. ἐξετασθήσεται περὶ τούτου ἀκριβέστερον, B.U. 388 (ii/A.D.).

Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 439. So in Ac. 24:22 ἀκριβεστερον εἴδως means that Felix more accurately than one would suppose, and in verse 26 πυκνότερον shows that he sent for Paul more frequently than he had been doing before. Ac. 25:10 καλλιον ἐπιγρ-γινώσκεις is an interesting example. Paul hints that Festus knows his innocence better than he is willing to admit. Cf. βέλτιον σὺ γινώσκεις (2 Tim. 1:18), 'better- than I.' Βελτίων occurs in the papyri as adjective, though not in the N. T. Thus one could go through all the rather numerous examples of elative comparative adjectives and adverbs in the N. T. and show that with proper attention to the context the point of comparison appears plainly enough. The comparative even without the expressed object of comparison is not just the positive. So in Ac. 27:13 ἄσσου παρελέγοντο clearly means 'nearer than they could do before' (cf. παραλεγόμενοι in verse 8). Again in Jo. 4:52 κομψότερον ἔσχεν (note the construction) is 'better than before the word of Christ was spoken.' As further illustrations, not to overdo the point, note μᾶλλον in 2 Cor. 7:7 (cf. Ph. 1:12), σπουδαιότερος in 2 Cor. 8:17 (cf. 2 Tim. 1:17) and σπουδαιότερος in Ph. 2:28 (cf. 1 Th. 2:17), τολμηρότερος (Ro. 15:15), μείζονες (2 Pet. 2:11), κατώτερα in Eph. 4:9. The common expression οἱ πλείους (Ac. 19:32), and τοὺς πλέιους (1 Cor. 9:19) for 'the majority' should occasion no difficulty. In free translation one may sometimes use 'very' or 'rather,' but this is

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 236. He notes some "elative comparatives" in D, in Ac. 4:16 φανερότερον, 10:28 βέλτιον.

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 142.
merely the resultant idea. Cf. ἐτέροις λόγοις πλείοσιν (Ac. 2:40). The older Greek shows this idiom.¹

(f) FOLLOWED BY ή. This ή is merely the disjunctive conjunction. But ή is not common in the N. T. in this connection. Indeed Blass² considers that it does not occur where any other construction would be perfectly clear. As is well known in the ancient Greek, ή is not common after πλείων and ἐλάττων with numerals. This use of the comparative as a mere parenthesis is in the papyri. Cf. Moulton. Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 438. O.P. 274 (i/A.D.) πλείων πίστεις ἐννέα. Cf. Schwab, Hist. Syntax, Heft ii, pp. 84 ff. Cf. also ἐπάνω in Mk. 14:5 and 1 Cor. 15:6, where it has no effect on the construction. In Mt. 5:20 there is an ellipsis (πλείον τῶν Φαρ.), 'than that of the Pharisees.' So in Mt. 26:53 πλείων δώδεκα λεγιώνας occurs with no change in the case of λεγιώνας. In Ac. 4:22; 23:13; 24:11 likewise ή is absent without change of case. So in Ac. 25:6 οὐ πλείονος ὀκτὼ ή δέκα, for ή here does not go with πλείους. But in Lu. 9:13 we do find οὐκ εἰσίν ἡμῖν πλείον ή ἀρτοὶ πέντε.

And in 1 Tim. 5:9 the ablative construction occurs. In justification of Blass' point³ above, he points out that with two adjectives we have ή (2 Tim. 3:4); with a conjunction, as ἐγγύτερον ή ὅτε (Ro. 13:11); with an infinitive, εὐκοπώτερον εἰσελθεῖν ή (εἰσελθεῖν to be repeated, Mt. 19:24. Cf. Ac. 20:35); with a genitive (same form as the ablative would be if ή were absent), like ὑμῶν ἀκουέιν μᾶλλον ή τοῦ θεοῦ (Ac. 4:19); with a dative, like ἀνεκτότερον γῆ Σοδόμων ή τῇ πόλει ἐκείνη (Mt. 10:15). These are all pertinent and striking examples. There remain others (against Blass' view) which are not so justified, like πλείονας μαθητὰς ποιεῖ ή Ἰωάνης (Jo. 4:1), ἥγαπησαν μᾶλλον τὸ σκότος ή τὸ φῶς (Jo. 3:19), etc. But it remains true that ή is becoming rare in this usage in the N. T.

(g) FOLLOWED BY THE ABLATIVE. The ablative is the most common means of expressing the standard of the comparison: so we must take the case, and not as genitive. As remarked in the chapter on the cases, this ablative construction seems rather more common in the N. T. than in the papyri. It is found in Homer.⁴ In the old Sanskrit the ablative was found with comparatives,⁵ though occasionally the locative or the instrumental appeared.

¹ Schwab, Hist. Synt. etc., Heft ii, p. 178; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 143.
² Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 107 ff.
⁴ Monro, Hom., dr., p. 109.
⁵ Ziemer, Vergi. der Indoger. Comp., 1884, pp. 29 ff.
Indeed the various constructions after the comparative (particle like ἃ, case, preposition) occur in the other Indo-Germanic languages.\(^1\) Schwab\(^2\) estimates that in Attic prose the ablative after the comparative stands in relation to ἃ as 5.5 to 1 and in poetry 18 to 1. Blass\(^3\) thinks that in the κοινή the ablative is three times as common in this idiom as in Attic prose. So in the N. T. this is the usual construction after the comparative. As further examples observe μείζων τούτων (Mk. 12:31), μείζων τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν (Jo. 4:12), πλέον τούτων (Jo. 21:15), σοφίστερον τῶν ἀνθρώπων (1 Cor. 1:25), etc. Cf. 1 Jo. 3:20; Heb. 7:26. Sometimes the comparison is a little complicated, as in Mt. 5:20, ὑμῖν ἡ δικαιοσύνη πλέον τῶν γραμματέων, where ‘righteousness’ is dropped in the second member. Note πλέον as a fixed or stereotyped form.\(^4\) Cf. also Jo. 5:36. In Mt. 21:36, ἀλλοὺς δούλους πλείονας τῶν πρώτων, note the use of comparative and superlative side by side.

(h) FOLLOWED BY PREPOSITIONS. Prepositions occur not infrequently after the comparative. We have already seen the positive so used with παρά, and πρὸς. Wellhausen\(^5\) considers this positive use like the Aramaic. In the classical Greek we see beginnings of this usage.\(^6\) In the modern Greek, the normal way of expressing comparison is to use αφρό with the accusative and occasionally παρά with the nominative. The examples of the use of παρά chiefly in Luke and Hebrews. Thus Lu. 3:13, μηδὲν πλέον παρά τὸ διατεταγμένον ὑμῖν; Heb. 1:4, διαφορώτερον παρ’ αὐτοῦ 3:3, πλέονος δόξας παρά Μωσῆν; 9:23, κρείττοσι θυσίαις παρὰ ταύτας. So Heb. 11:4; 12:24. Examples of ὑπὲρ in this sense occur likewise in Lu. 16:8, φρονιμώτεροι ὑπὲρ τοῦ υἱοῦ; Heb. 4:12, τομώτερος ὑπὲρ πάσαν μάχαιραν. In the LXX\(^8\) comparison was usually completed by means of παρά or ὑπὲρ.

(i) THE COMPARATIVE DISPLACING THE SUPERLATIVE. This increase of the comparative in contrast to the corresponding decrease of the superlative is one of the most striking peculiarities of the adjective in the κοινή. Indeed one may broadly say with Blass\(^9\), that in the κοινή vernacular the comparative with the article takes

---

1 Ib., p. 1.  
2 Hist. Synt. etc., Heft ii, p. 92.  
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 329. The abl. is sometimes used with personal pronouns after the comp. in mod. Gk. (Thumb, p. 76).  
4 Blass, ib., p. 108.  
5 Einl. in die drei ersten Evang., p. 28. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 236.  
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 108.  
7 Thumb, Handb., p. 75 f.  
8 C. and S., Sel., pp. 84 ff. For various prepositions so used in older Gk. see Schwab., Hist. Synt., Heft i, pp. 45 ff.  
9 Hermeneutik and Kritik, p. 199.
over the peculiar functions of the superlative. In the modern Greek vernacular the comparative with the definite article is the only idiom employed for the true superlative. The form in —τάτος in modern Greek is rare and always elative. Moulton finds the papyri supporting this disappearance of the superlative form before the comparative to a certain extent. "It seems fair to conclude that (1) the superlative, apart from its elative use, was dying, though not dead; (2) the comparative had only sporadically begun to be used in its place." He reminds us that the literary use had as much weight as the vulgar idiom. As a matter of fact the superlative form is not essentially necessary. The Armenian has no superlative and is like the vernacular modern Greek. The root-difference between the comparative and the superlative is that between "twoness" and "moreness." As the notion of duality vanished or was no longer stressed, the need for a distinction between the comparative and superlative vanished also. Both are in reality comparative in relation to the positive. In the N. T. therefore we see this blurring of distinction between comparative and superlative. Cf. 1 Cor. 13:13 μείζων δὲ τούτων ἡ ἀγάπη where three things are compared. In English we say "greatest of these." Sir W. M. Ramsay gives πάντων μείζον in a Christian inscription.

In Mt. 18:1 we have τίς ἄρα μείζων, etc. Cf. Mk. 9:34. So in Mt. 11:11 (cf. Lk. 9:48) note ὅ δὲ μικρότερος (but note also μείζων αὐτοῦ). In Lk. 7:42 f., πλέιον and τὸ πλέιον do indeed refer to the two debtors (verse 41), though it is questionable if that fine point is here insisted on. But in 1 Cor. 12:23 the comparatives have their usual force. Moulton cites from O.P. 716 (ii/A.D.) τὴν ἀμείβουσα ἀἵρεσιν διδόμεν, 'to the highest bidder.' Winer indeed finds similar examples in Demosthenes and Athenagoras. Note the adverb ὑστερον πάντων (Mt. 22:27), obviously as superlative. So in 1 Tim. 4:1, ἐν ὑστέροις καὶ ὁριστικῶς. In Eph. 4:9, τὰ κατωτέρα μέρη is likewise in the superlative sense. The Epistle of Barnabas shows similar examples. Blass reminds us that the Italian does not distinguish between the comparative and the superlative. The modern Greek- to-day says ὁ σοφότερος ἀπὸ ὅλους 'the wisest of all.'

Moulton¹ notes the fact that, while κρείττων and χείρων in the N. T. are strictly comparative, they have no superlative, but he notes (p. 236) that the papyri show χείριστος, as Tb.P. 72 (ii/B.c).

XIV. The Superlative Adjective (ὑπερθετικοῦ ὄνομα). For the forms see chapter VII, II, 3, (c). As already set forth, the superlative is moreness rather than twoness.

(a) THE SUPERLATIVE VANISHING. As already remarked, the superlative forms are vanishing in the N. T. as in the κοινὴ generally. Blass² observes that ἐσχάτος and πρῶτος are the only exceptions to this disappearing tendency. Under the weakening of dualism πρότερος goes down. Usually ἐσχάτος refers to more than two, the last of a series or last of all, like ἐν ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέρα. (Jo. 11:24), ἐσχατον³ πάντων (1 Cor. 15:8). Sometimes first and last are contrasted, like ἡ ἐσχάτῃ πλάνη χείρων τῆς πρώτης (Mt. 27:64). Note comparative also. Cf. Mt. 19:30. So ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἐσχάτος about Jesus (Rev. 1:17). In the LXX ἐσχάτος occurs as comparative (cf. in Deut. 24:3), and even as an adverb meaning 'after' in Deut. 31:29. Cf. Thackeray, p. 184. Even more common than ἐσχάτος is πρῶτος. It is used in the usual sense often (Mk. 12:20), but is also common where only two are concerned (1 Cor. 15:45; Jo. 20:4) as already shown. Sometimes πρῶτος expresses mere rank as in Ac. 17:4. In Mt. 22:38 note ἡ μεγάλη καὶ πρώτη ἐντολή. Cf. πρώτη πάντων in Mk. 12:28 (note gender also).⁴ These are true superlatives. Sir W. M. Ramsay (Expositor, Nov., 1912) shows that πρώτη in Lu. 2:2 is not in sense of πρότερος. It is first of a series of enrolments as we now know. But this proves nothing as to Ac. 1:1. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 60) quotes I Gr. XII, 5, 590, ἐφθασας ὃλαχου πρῶτος, where two are compared.

(b) A FEW TRUE SUPERLATIVES IN THE N. T. But a few other true superlatives survive in the N. T. Thus ὁ ἑλάχιστος in 1 Cor. 15:9 is a true superlative, 'the least.' But it is dative in Lu. 12:26. Cf. Mt. 2:6; 5:19. Moulton⁵ finds ἑλάχιστος as a true superlative in a papyrus of second century B.C. Tb.P. 24. But there are very few true superlatives in the papyri.⁶ In Ac. 17:15 ὡς τάχιστα is a true superlative. ὁ ὑψίστος is a true super-

---

lative both when applied to God, τοῦ ὑψίστου (Mk. 5:7), and the abode of God, ἐν τοῖς ὑψίστοις (Mt. 21:9). Some MSS. (D, etc., W. H. marg.) have ἐγγιστα in Mk. 6:36, which is a true superlative. In Ac. 20:38 μάλιστα, 'most of all,' is probably a true superlative. In 1 Cor. 14:27 τὸ πλείστον, 'at the most,' is a true superlative. In Mt. 11:20 αἱ πλείστον δυνάμεις we probably have the true superlative. Cf. τῇ ἀγιωτάτῃ ὑμῶν πίστει (Ju. 20) and τῇ ἀκριβεστάτῃ αἴρεσιν (Ac. 26:5), true superlatives in --τάτος. In Rev. 18:12; 21:11 τιμώτατος is probably elative. Cf. μονώτατος, 1 Ki. 8:39. The list is indeed very small.

(c) THE ELATIVE SUPERLATIVE. In the sense of 'very' or 'exceedingly' it comprises the great majority of the superlative forms that survive in the N. T. In the papyri the immense majority of superlative forms are dative. Cf. Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 439. Κράτιστος is dative always in the N. T. and is indeed merely a sort of title. So κράτιστε in Lu. 1:3. So ἡδιστα is only elative (2 Cor. 12:9, 15). Μέγιστος occurs only once (2 Pet. 1:4) and is dative, τὰ τίμια καὶ μέγιστα ἡμῖν ἐπαγγέλματα (permagnus, Blass). In Lu. 12:26 ἐλάχιστον is elative as also in 1 Cor. 4:3; 6:2, while in Eph. 3:8 the comparative superlative ἐλαχιστότερος is doubtful. Πλείστος, generally dative in the papyri, is so in Mk. 4:1, ὄχλος πλείστος. Μάλιστα occurs some 12 times and is usually elative, as in Ph. 4:22.

(d) No DOUBLE SUPERLATIVES. The scarcity of the superlative in the N. T. removes any ground for surprise that no double superlatives occur. In Eph. 3:8 ἐλαχιστοτέρω is indeed a superlative strengthened by the comparative. In Gal. 6:10 the elative superlative μάλιστα occurs by way of repetition with τὸ ἀγαθόν, as in Phil. 16 it does with ἀγαπητῶν. Schwab gives a considerable list of double or strengthened superlatives from classic writers, like πλείστον ἡδιστος (Eurip., Alc.), μέγιστον ἔχθιστος (Eurip., Med.), μάλιστα φιλτατος (Eurip., Hippol.), μάλιστα δεινότατος (Thuc.), etc. Cf. Latin minimissimus and English "most straitest sect," "most unkindest cut of all," etc.

(e) FOLLOWED BY ABLATIVE. The superlative, like the comparative, may be followed by the ablative. Thus with πρῶτον (Jo. 15:18), πρῶτος μου (Jo. 1:15), and possibly in ἐπʼ ἐσχάτου

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 33. Blass considers τῇ ἀγιωτάτῃ (Ju. 20) elative.
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 78.
3 Ib., p. 236.
4 Ib., p. 79.
5 Schwab, Hist. Synt. etc., Heft iii, pp. 70 ff.
ADJECTIVES (’ΕΠΙΘΕΤΑ) 671

twōn ἡμερῶν τούτων (Heb. 1:2), though this passage may be merely the genitive.

(f) No “HEBRAISTIC” SUPERLATIVE. It is gratuitous to consider ἀστέιος τῷ θεῷ (Ac. 7:20) and similar passages superlatives.

XV. Numerals. For the general discussion of the forms see chapter VII, III. The ordinals are indeed adjectives, as are the first four cardinals and all 'after two hundred. The syntactical peculiarities of the numerals are not many.

(a) Ἐις AND Πρῶτος. The use of Ἐις rather than πρῶτος is one of the most striking points to observe. Before we can agree with Blass1 that this is "undoubtedly a Hebrew idiom," who follows Winer,2 we must at least hear what Moulton3 has to say in reply.

To begin with, in modern Greek "the cardinals beyond 4 have ousted the ordinals entirely."4 Then we learn from the inscriptions that this usage of cardinals as ordinals is as old as the Byzantine Greek.5 Moulton6 also quotes from papyri of the second and third centuries A.D. τῇ μία καὶ ἐκάκη, B.U. 623 (ii/iii A.D.), a construction like μία καὶ ἐκάκη τοῦ μηνός in Haggai 2:1.7 The Germans, like the English, can say "page forty,"8 In the N. T. we only find this substitution of the cardinal in the case of Ἐις, while in the modern Greek the matter has gone much further. In the classic Greek no real analogy exists, though Ἐις stands in enumerations when δεύτερος or ἄλλος follows, and in compound numerals a closer parallel is found, like Ἐις καὶ τριακοστός, though even here the case is essentially different.9 Cf. Latin unus et vicesimus, "a case of the formation of the ordinal being imperfectly carried out."9 Certainly then it was possible for this development to have gone on apart from the Hebrew, especially when one considers that πρῶτος is not derived from Ἐις, though Moulton10 admits that the Hebrew has the same peculiarity. Moulton11 further objects that if Semitic influence had been at work we should have had τῇ πέντε in the modern Greek, since the Hebrew used the later days of the month in cardinal numbers.12 Still, the striking fact remains that in the LXX (cf. Numb. 1:1) and in the N. T. the first day of the month is expressed by μία, not by πρῶτη. This was obviously in harmony with the κοινή of a later time, but the first evidence of its actual

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 144.   7 C. and S., Sel., p. 31.
2 W.-Th., p. 248 f.   8 W.-Th., p. 249.
3 Prol., p. 95 f.   9 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 144.
4 Ib. Cf. Thumb, Handb., etc., p. 82.10 Prol., p. 96.
5 Dieterich, -linters. etc., p. 18711. 11 Ib.
6 Prol., p. 96.     12 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 144.
(d) THE DISTRIBUTIVES. There is no trouble over the classic use of ἀνά (Mt. 20:9) and κατά (Mk. 6:40) in this sense. We have already (chapter XIII, ἀνά and κατά) discussed ἀνά ἐς (Rev. 21:21) and καθ’ ἐς (Ro. 12:5). The point here that calls for comment is whether δύο δύο in Mk. 6:7 is a Hebraism. Cf. ἀνά δύο [δύο] in Lu. 10:1. Winer\(^1\) termed it "properly Hebraistic," while Blass (\textit{Gr. of N. T. Gk.}, p. 145) more guardedly described it as "after the Semitic and more colloquial manner." The repetition of the numeral is a Hebrew way of expressing the distributive idea. Cf. in the N. T. also συμπρόσια συμπόσια (Mk. 6:39), πρασιαὶ πρασιαὶ (verse 40). Moulton\(^2\) cites also δεσμάς δεσμάς, as the reading of Epiphanius for Mt. 13:30. But Winer\(^3\) had himself cited AESchylus, \textit{Persae}, 981, μυρία μυρία, and Blass\(^4\) compares in \textit{Eris}, the lost drama of Sophocles, μίαν μίαν. The Atticists had censured this as "colloquial," but at any rate "it was not merely a creation of Jewish Greek." Deissmann\(^5\) besides quotes τρία τρία from the Oxy. Papyri. W. F. Moulton\(^6\) had already called attention to the fact that modern Greek shows the same usage. Hence we must conclude, with Moulton\(^7\) and Thumb\(^8\) that the κοινή development was independent of the Hebrew. Moulton\(^9\) comments also on the reading of B in Lu. 10:1, ἀνά δύο δύο, and notes how in the papyri μεγάλου μεγάλου = the elative superlative μεγίστου. See also κατά δύο δύο in P. Oxy. 886 (iii/A.D.).

For the proportionals the N. T. has only –πλασίων, not the classic –πλάσιος. Cf. ἐκατονταπλασίων, Mk. 10:30 and Mt. 19:29 ΧCDX; πολλαπλασίων, Lu. 18:30 and Mt. 19:29 BL. Cf. Blass-Debrunner, p. 38.

(e) THE CARDINAL Επτά. With ἐβδομηκοντάκις ἐπτά (Mt. 18:22) rather than ἐπτάκις D the rendering 'until seventy times seven' is certainly possible in itself and follows literally the Greek words. The identical expression (ἐβδομηκοντάκις ἐπτά) occurs in Gen. 4:24 (where the Revised Version renders it 'seventy and seven fold') and in Test. xii, Pat. Ben. 7:4. The margin of the Revised Version for Mt. 18:22 gives "seventy times and seven" which

---

\(^1\) W.-M., p. 312.  
\(^2\) Prol., p. 97.  
\(^3\) W.-Th., p. 249; W.-M., p. 312.  
\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 330.  
\(^6\) W.-M., p. 312 note. Cf. Jebb in V. and D.'s Handb., p. 310. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 57) cites σφόδρα σφόδρα from the LXX and εὐθύς εὐθύς from the Byz. Gk.\(^1\)  
\(^7\) Prol., p. 97.  
\(^8\) Hellen., p. 128.  
Winer\textsuperscript{1} interprets as "seventy-seven times." Moulton\textsuperscript{2} considers rightly that the passage in Genesis settles the usage in Matthew to which an allusion may be made. He cites a possible parallel from the Iliad, xxii, 349, \textit{δεκάκις [τε] καὶ Φείκσι}.

(f) **SUBSTANTIVE NOT EXPRESSED.** Sometimes with numerals the substantive for money is not expressed. Thus \textit{ἀργυρίου μυριάδας πέντε} (Ac. 19:19), but in Mt. 26:16 note \textit{ἀργύρια}. The use of \textit{τρίτον τούτο} (2 Cor. 13:1) is merely an instance of the adjective used absolutely without a substantive. Cf. the neuter \textit{τὸ δεύτερον} (2 Cor. 13:2).

(g) **ADVERBS WITH NUMERALS.** They have no effect on the construction. Thus \textit{πραθήναι ἐπάνω τριακοσίων δημαρίων} (Mk. 14:5), \textit{ὡρθὴ ἐπάνω πεντακόσιοις ἀδελφοῖς} (1 Cor. 15:6), \textit{ὡς δισχίλιοι} (Mk. 5:13), \textit{ὡσεὶ πεντικισχίλιοι} (Mt. 14:21), \textit{ἐκατονταετής που} (Ro. 4:19). In the case of \textit{ὡς} and \textit{ὡσεὶ} we really have conjunctions.\textsuperscript{3} In \textit{ἐώς ἐπτάκις} (Mt. 18:21) we have, of course, the preposition. Cf. Winer-Moulton, p. 313, for classical parallels with \textit{ἐλαττὸν, πλέον ἕις, ἐν, περὶ, ὑπέρ, μέχρι}.

(h) **Εἰς AS INDEFINITE ARTICLE.** The Greek, as a rule, had no indefinite article. The older Greek did occasionally use \textit{τίς} with no more apparent force than an indefinite article, but usually nothing was used for that idea in Greek. Still in Aristophanes (Av. 1292) Moulton\textsuperscript{4} rightly sees \textit{εἰς κάπηλος}, as an example of the later \textit{koinή} idiom. Aristophanes indeed preserves much of the colloquial speech. In the modern Greek \textit{ἐνας} may be used.\textsuperscript{5} \textit{Εἰς} became naturally more popular than \textit{ἐνας} since it has all three genders.\textsuperscript{6} Moulton\textsuperscript{7} finds numerous papyri illustrations. The modern languages have followed the Greek model here, for the English \textit{an} (Scottish \textit{ane}) is really \textit{one}, like the German \textit{ein} and the French \textit{un}. It is therefore hardly necessary to fall back on the Hebrew precedents in the use of \textit{ποικī}, though it here coincided with the \textit{koinή} idiom. Hence N. T. usage on this point is in full accord with the development of the Greek. Cf. \textit{εἰς γραμματεύς} (Mt. 8:19), \textit{μία παιδίσκη} (26:69), \textit{μία χήρα πτωχή} (Mk. 12:42), \textit{εἰς ὁφειλέτης} (Mt. 18:24), etc. In Jo. 6:9 some MSS. have \textit{ἐν} with \textit{παιδίδριων}, but the sense is not materially altered either way. Cf. \textit{ἥκουσα ἐνὸς ἄετοῦ} (Rev. 8:13), \textit{ἰδὼν συκῆν μίαν} (Mt. 21:19), etc.

\textsuperscript{1} W.-Th., p. 251.  
\textsuperscript{3} Cf. Green, Handb., etc., p. 276.  
\textsuperscript{4} Prol., p. 97.  
\textsuperscript{5} Thumb, Handb., p. 81.  
\textsuperscript{6} Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 170.  
\textsuperscript{7} Prol., p. 97. Cf. Wellhausen, End., p. 27.  
\textsuperscript{8} Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 144.
Moulton¹ properly criticizes Meyer on Mt. 8:19 for his "exegetical subtleties" in denying this idiom for εἰς in the N. T.

(i) Εἰς = Τίς. Sometimes indeed εἰς stands alone with practically the same sense as τίς, as in Mt. 19:16; Mk. 10:17, though in the parallel passage (Lu.18:18) τίς ἄρχων occurs. The use of εἰς with genitive (or ablativ), like ἐν τῷ πολιτῶν (Lu. 15:15), ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν (Lu. 8:22), or the ablative, like εἰς εὖ μιῷν (Jo. 13:21), is, of course, merely the same idiom expanded. Cf. εἰς τίς Lu. 22:50; Jo. 11:49. In Mk. 14:10, ὁ εἰς τῶν δώδεκα, the article at first looks incongruous, 'the one of the twelve,' but the early papyri give illustrations of this usage also.² It is as a pronoun that εἰς is to be construed here and in the rather frequent alternative expressions εἰς — εἰς (Mt. 24:40), μία—μία (verse 41), τὸν ένα —τὸν ἑτέρου (Mt. 6:24), ἐνος —τοῦ ἑτέρου (ib.), εἰς—τοῦ ἐνός. (1 Cor. 4:6). Cf. εἰς καὶ εἰς (Mt. 27:38) and the reciprocal use in 1 Th. 5:11. Cf. εἰς ἐκαστος, Mt. 26:22.

(j) THE DISTRIBUTIVE USE OF Εἰς. So ἐν καθετεν in Rev. 4:8 and the "barbaric" (Winer-Schmiedel, p. 247) εἰς κατά εἰς (Mk. 14:19), τὸ καθετεν (Ro. 12:5), ἀνά εἰς ἐκαστος (Rev. 21:21). This "barbaric" idiom came to be very common in the later Greek. Cf. modern Greek καθετεν, καθενας=ἐκαστος. The free adverbial use of prepositions like ἐν, ἀνά, παρά, κατά is copiously illustrated in Winer-Schmiedel, p. 247, from the LXX and the late Greek writers. For the use of οὐδείς, οὐδείς, μηδείς, μηδείς see next chapter on Pronouns. Cf. also there οὐ—πᾶς and πᾶς—οὐ.

¹ Prol., p. 95. ² Ib.
CHAPTER XV

PRONOUNS (ἈΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΑΙ)

For the antiquity and history of pronouns see iv in chapter VII ( Declensions). We are here concerned, not with the form, but with the use of pronouns. As a matter of fact all pronouns fall into two classes, Deictic (δεικτικαί) and Anaphoric (ἀναφορικαί). They either "point out" or they "refer to" a substantive. So we get the modern terms, demonstrative and relative (cf. Monro, Homeric Gr., p. i 168 f.). But some pronouns may be demonstrative or relative according to the context. The demonstrative or deictic was the original usage. For practical purposes we have to follow a more minute division.

I. Personal Pronouns (πρωτότυποι ἡ προσωπικαὶ ἀντώνυμαί). The personal pronouns (first and second persons) are deictic (I, thou). The reason for the use of pronouns, as already explained, was to avoid the repetition of the substantive. In Jo. 11:22 note the repetition of θεός. Cf. also Lu. 6:45.

(a) THE NOMINATIVE. As already explained, the verb uses the personal pronoun as personal suffixes, so that as a rule no need was felt for the separate expression of the pronoun in the nominative. All verbs had the personal endings like εἰ-μί, ἔσ-σί, ἔσ-τί. The use of the personal pronoun in addition to the personal ending of the verb was due to desire for emphasis. Then the separate expression of the pronoun led to the gradual sloughing off of the personal ending. In modern English this process is nearly complete. In Greek this process was arrested, though in modern Greek all verbs εἶναι are --ω verbs. In most cases, therefore, in Greek the existence of the personal pronoun in the nominative implies some emphasis or contrast. But this is not quite true of all examples. "The emphasis of the first and second persons is not to be insisted on too much in poetry or in familiar prose.

1 Cf. Schoemann, Die Lehre von den Redet. nach den Alten, p. 95: "Die Nomina benenrien die Dinge nach ihren Qualitaten, die Pronomina bezeichnen sie nach ihren Verhältnissen."
Notice the frequency of ἐγὼ δα, ἐγὼ μαι.

In conversation it was particularly common to have the personal pronoun in the nominative. In the later Greek generally the personal pronouns show a weakening of force, but never to the actual obliteration of emphasis, not even in the Modern Greek. Moulton agrees with Ebeling that there was "no necessary emphasis in the Platonic ἃν δ ἐγώ, ἐφην ἐγώ, ὥς σὺ φής." Clearly then the frequency of the pronoun in the N. T. is not to be attributed to the Semitic influence. Even Conybeare and Stock see that it is not necessary to appeal to the well-known Hebrew fondness for pronouns for this usage. But Blass thinks that some of the MS. variations may be due to Semitic influence. We are free therefore to approach the N. T. examples on their merits.

1. The First Person, ἐγώ and ἡμεῖς. It is easy to find in the N.T. numerous examples where ἐγώ shows contrast. So ἐγώ χρείαιν ἐκά υπὸ σοῦ βαπτισθήναι (Mt. 3:14), ἐγώ δὲ λέγω (5:22), ἐγώ σε ἐδόξασα (Jo. 17:4). Cf. ἐγώ and σύ in Jo. 17:23. The amount of emphasis will vary very greatly according to circumstances and may sometimes vanish entirely so far as we can determine. Different shades of meaning appear also as in ὑπὲρ οὐ ἐγώ εἰπον (Jo. 1:30), ‘I, myself.’ Cf. καὶ γώ οὐκ ἢ δειν αὐτόν (Jo. 1:33) and καὶ γώ ἐώρακα καὶ μεμαρτύρηκα (verse 34) and note absence with second verb. Cf. Jo. 6:48; 16:33; 1 Cor. 2:1, 3. Note absence of ἐγώ in Mt. 5:18, 20, λέγω ὑμῖν. Cf. also τίς ἀσθενεὶ καὶ οὐκ ἀσθενῶ; (2 Cor. 11:29) with τίς σκανδαλίζεται καὶ οὐκ ἐγώ πυροῦμαι; (ib.) as proof that the point must not be pressed too far in either direction. Further examples of ἐγώ may be seen in Ro. 7:17; Jo. 5:31, 34; 10:30; Eph. 5:32; Ph. 4:11. For the plural ἡμεῖς see ἡμεῖς προσκυνοῦμεν (Jo. 4:22) in opposition to ἦμεῖς, but then follows merely ὁ οἴδαμεν. So in Ac. 4:20 note οὐ δυσάμεθα ἡμεῖς ὁ ἐίδαμεν and τί καὶ ἡμεῖς κινδυνεῦομεν; (1 Cor. 15:30). Cf. Mt. 6:12. The "editorial" ‘we’ has already received discussion (cf. The Sentence) and may be merely illustrated here. Blass considers it a "wide-spread tendency among Greek writers, when they speak of themselves to say ἡμεῖς instead

1 Gildersleeve, Synt. of Cl. Gk., part i, p. 35.
3 Thumb, Handb., etc., p. 59 f.
4 Prol., p. 85.
5 Gildersleeve Studies, p. 240.
6 Sel. from the LXX, p. 65.
7 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 316.
8 In general the N. T. follows the classic idiom. W.-Sch., p. 194.
9 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 194.
10 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 166. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 86 f., who leaves the matter to the exegete.
of ἐγὼ." This is not always true in Paul's Epistles (Ro. 1:5), for sometimes he associates others with him in the address at the beginning. There are undoubted examples in the N. T. like ὦι ἐσμέν (2 Cor. 10:11), πειθόμεθα (Heb. 13:18), γράφομεν (1 Jo. 1:4). But sometimes the plural merely associates the readers or hearers with the writer or speaker. So ἐφορέσαμεν (1 Cor. 15:49), ὁμοίωσομεν, (Mk. 4:30). Sometimes the first person singular is used in a representative manner as one of a class (cf. the representative article like ὁ ἀγαθός). Blass does not find this idiom so common in Greek as in other languages, but it occurs in Demosthenes and certainly in Paul. So τί ἔτι κἀγὼ ὃς ἀπιστευόμενος κρίνομαι; (Ro. 3:7). Cf. in next verse βλασφημοῦμενα. See 1 Cor. 10:30; Gal. 2:18.

In Ro. 7:7-25 special difficulties occur.

2. The Second Person, σὺ and ὑμεῖς. Thus in Jo. 17:5 note the contrast in με σὺ. Cf. Jo. 1:42 σὺ εἶ Σίμων--σὺ κληθήσῃ, 2:10 σὺ τετήρηκας, 4:9 πῶς σὺ Ἰουδαίος, 4:10 σὺ διν ἢτησας, Ro. 2:3 ὅτι σὺ ἐκφεύξῃ, Lu. 1:76 καὶ σὺ δέ etc. Cf. also Mt. 27:11. Sometimes σὺ has a very emphatic position, as in σὺ τίς εἰ (Ro. 9:20; 14:4). In 1 Cor. 15:36, ἀφρων, σὺ δ σπείρεις, it is possible, though not necessary, to take σὺ with ἀφρων (cf. Ac. 1:24). In καὶ σὺ ἔξει αὐτῶν εἶ (Lu. 22:58) one is reminded of the Latin Et tu, Brute. See Lu. 10:15; Ac. 23:3; ἢ καὶ σὺ τί ἐξουθενεῖς (Ro. 14:10). As examples of the plural take ἐσεθε σὺμεῖς (Mt. 5:48), δότε αὐτοῖς ὑμεῖς φαγεῖν (Mk. 6:37). See ἐκείνος and ὑμεῖς contrasted in Jo. 5:38; ὑμεῖς in verse 39 and also in 44 f. Cf. Ac. 4:7; Lu. 10:24; and in particular ὑμεῖς ὑψεθε (Mt. 27:24). For ὑμεῖς and ἡμεῖς contrasted see Jo. 4:22. In Jo. 4:35, οὐχ ὑμεῖς λέγετε, we have the same inclusive use of the second person that we noticed in the first. In Ro. 2:3, 17, the second person singular occurs in the same representative sense that the first has also. Cf. also Ro. 9:20; 11:17, etc.

In Jo. 3:10, σὺ ἐὰν ὁ διδάσκαλος, we have a case of distributed emphasis. Cf. also Mt. 16:16; Jo. 9:34; 2 Cor. 1:23, as examples of this sustained emphasis, where the emphasis of the pronoun passes on to the remainder of the sentence and contributes point and force to the whole. On the whole the Greek language has freedom in the construction of the pronouns. Moulton raises the question if in σὺ ἔπας (Mt. 26:64), σὺ λέγεις (27:11), ὑμεῖς λέγετε (Lu. 22:70), we do not have the equivalent of 'That is right,'

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 316 f. 2 W.-Sch., p. 195.
5 Prol., p. 86.
but πλήν (Thayer) is against it in Mt. 26:64. Σύ occurs in John more frequently than in all the Synoptics put together (Abbott, *Johannine Gr.*, p. 297).

3. *The Third Person.* It has had a more radical development or lack of development. As a matter of fact the Greek had and has no definite third personal pronoun for the nominative like ἐγὼ and σύ. No nominative was as used for οὗ, οὗ, etc., and this pronoun was originally reflexive. Besides it is not used in the N. T., though literary κοινή writers like Aristides, Arrian, Lucian, Polybius use it.1 Where another pronoun was desired for the third person besides that in the personal ending, various devices were used. The Attic writers usually employed a demonstrative (ὁ δέ, ὁ μέν, οὗτος, ἐκεῖνος, ὅς δέ, ὅδε, etc.). The N. T. shows examples of all these constructions which will be illustrated in the discussion of the demonstrative pronouns. But the N. T. uses also αὐτός as the subject, an idiom foreign to Attic writers, but found already in Homer2 and common in the modern Greek, where indeed it has come to be itself a demonstrative.3 Simcox4 rightly remarks that the main point to observe is not whether it has emphasis, but its appearance at all as the mere subject. All the personal pronouns in the nominative have more or less emphasis. The use of αὐτός in contrast with other persons is natural like αὐτός καὶ οί μετ´ αὐτοῦ (Mk. 2:25). We are not here considering the intensive use of αὐτός as "self" nor the use of ὁ αὐτός "the same." There is no dispute as to use of αὐτός as emphatic 'he' in the N. T. like the Pythagorean5 (Doric) αὐτός ἔφα. So Ac. 20:35 αὐτός εἶπεν, as much as to say 'The Master said.' Cf. the way in which some wives refer systematically to their husbands as "He." Other undoubted examples are αὐτός γὰρ σώσει τὸν λαόν (Mt. 1:21). Here the emphasis is so clear that the Revised Version renders: "For he it is that shall save." In Mt. 12:50 αὐτός μου ἀδελφός is resumptive, gathering up ὅστις, and is distinctly emphatic. Cf. likewise αὐτός βαπτίζει, referring to ὁ ἐρχόμενος in Mt. 3:11; ὁ ηρωῦ—καὶ αὐτός, 1 Jo. 3:24; ὁν ἀν ψυχήσω αὐτός ἐστιν, Mk. 14:44. Strong emphasis also appears in examples like; καὶ αὐτός ἐστιν πρὸ πάντων (Col. 1:17). In Mt. 8:24 αὐτός δέ and Mk. 4:38 καὶ αὐτός Jesus is the chief person in the story and the pronoun has emphasis. Cf. likewise Lu. 1:16, 17; 24:21; Mt. 16:20. In Lu. 19:2 W. H. and Nestle

---

1 W.-Sch., p. 191.  
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 164.  
3 Thumb, Handb., p. 90.  
5 Prol., p. 86.
follow B in reading καὶ αὐτός twice. Some emphasis is present both times. In Ac. 7:21 (Rec.) the pronoun αὐτόν appears three times. As regards καὶ αὐτή, the editors differ between this accent and καὶ αὐτή in Lu. 7:12; 8:42; 1 Cor. 7:12; Ro. 7:10. In Lu. 2:37; Ro. 16:2, Nestle agrees with W. H. in καὶ αὐτή. But in Lu. 2:37 αὐτή χήρα may be a 'widow by herself.' There is no real reason for objecting to the feminine use of this idiom. The plural αὐτοῖ, appears in Mk. 7:36; Lu. 2:50; 9:36. The only remaining question is whether αὐτός occurs in the nominative free from any emphasis just like the personal ending in a word. It is in Luke's Gospel and the Apocalypse that such instances occur. It is not a question whether αὐτός is so used in ancient Greek. Winer denies that any decisive passages have been adduced in the N. T. of such unemphatic use. Certainly the matter is one of tone and subjective impression to a large extent. And yet some examples do occur where emphasis is not easily discernible and even where emphasis would throw the sentence out of relation with the context. What emphasis exists must be very slight. Cf. Lu. 1:22; 2:50; 6:8; 8:1, 22; 15:14; 24:14, 25, 31; Rev. 14:10; 19:15. Thus we see all grades of emphasis. Abbott holds that in John αὐτός never means 'he,' either emphatic or unemphatic, but always 'himself.' But in Jo. 2:12 (αὐτός καὶ ἡ μητήρ αὐτοῦ) there is little difference between the emphatic 'he' and 'himself.' Cf. also 18:1. But the intensive idea is clear in Jo. 4:2, 12. In 4:53 it might be either way. In the LXX we find αὐτός sometimes unemphatic. Cf. Gen. 3:15 f.; 1 Sam. 17:42; 18:16.

(b) THE OBLIQUE CASES OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. Originally Reflexive. In pre-Homeric times the pronominal stem was reflexive. The reflexive form, as distinct from the personal pronoun, was a later development. The personal pronouns may be reflexive in Hesiod, the Homeric Hymns, Pindar and the other Lyric poets. Indeed, the early Attic inscriptions show the same thing, not to mention the Dramatic poets and Herodotus. It was only gradually that the distinctively reflexive form came into common use in the Attic prose, first for the third person, and

1 W.-Sch., p. 195; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 164.
2 Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 61.
4 Joh. Gr., p. 279.
6 Ib., pp. 68, 75, 80 f.
then for the first and second persons.\textsuperscript{1} The use of the personal pronoun in the reflexive sense survived longest in the vernacular. It is not "abnormal" therefore to find in the N. T. (vernacular \textit{koinhē}) the personal pronouns where a reflexive form might have been used. The N. T. does not here exactly represent Attic literary prose. Cf. \textit{ἀφέσθω σὺν σταυρῷ αὑτῷ} (Lu. 9:23), \textit{μετὰ τὸ ἐγερθῆναι με προάξω} (Mk. 14:28; cf. Lu. 10:35), \textit{βάλε ἀπὸ σοῦ}, (Mt. 5:29). See Ro. 15:16, 19. It is not necessary to split hairs here as to whether the reflexive idea is present. It is in perfect harmony with the Greek history. Indeed English does not differ here from the Greek.  

2. \textit{Αὐτός.} The use of \textit{αὐτός} rather than \textit{οὖ} and \textit{σφῶν} is noticeable. As a matter of fact, however, \textit{αὐτός} had long been the main pronoun for the oblique cases of the third person. In archaic and poetic forms the early use of \textit{οὖ} and \textit{σφῶν} survived.\textsuperscript{2} In the N. T. \textit{αὐτός}, is the only form found, as in \textit{αὐτῶς, αὐτοῖς, αὐτόν} (Mt. 17:22 f.), \textit{κτλ.}  

3. \textit{Genitive for Possession.} The genitive of the personal pronoun is very common as a possessive rather than the possessive pronoun or the mere article. In Jo. 2:12 \textit{αὐτός} occurs twice, but once (οἱ ἀδελφοί) we do not have it. These examples are so common as to call for mere mention, as ὁ \textit{πατήρ} \textit{μου} (Jo. 5:17), \textit{τὸν κράβαττόν} \textit{σου} (5:8), \textit{τὸν κράβαττόν} \textit{αὐτόν} (5:9). The presence of the personal pronoun in the genitive is not always emphatic. Thus no undue emphasis is to be put upon \textit{αὐτός} even in its unusual position in Jo. 9:6, nor upon \textit{σου} in 9:10, nor upon \textit{μου} in 9:15. See chapter on The Sentence. See also ἐπάρας \textit{τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς} \textit{αὐτός} \textit{εἰς} \textit{τοὺς μαθητὰς} \textit{αὐτοῦ} (Lu. 6:20), ἐν τῇ ὑπομονῇ ὑμῶν κτήσεσθε τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν (Lu. 21:19). See also position of you in Mt. 8:8 and Jo. 11:32. As a matter of fact the genitive of personal pronouns, as is common in the \textit{koinhē} (Moulton, \textit{Prol.}, p. 40 f.), has nearly driven the possessive pronoun out. The use of the article with this genitive will be discussed in that chapter (The Article). Cf. \textit{τὸν πατέρα} \textit{μου} (Mt. 26:53) and \textit{φίλοι} \textit{μου} (Jo. 15:14). Both \textit{ὑμῶν} in Paul (1 Cor. 9:12) and \textit{αὐτοῦ}, (Tit. 3:5) may be in the attributive position. The position of \textit{αὐτός} is emphatic in Eph. 2:10 as is that of \textit{ὑμῶν}, in 1 Cor. 9:11 and \textit{ἡμῶν} in Jo. 11:48. The attributive position of \textit{ἡμῶν} (2 Cor. 4:16) and \textit{αὐτοῦ} with other attributes (Mt. 27:60) is not unusual.  

4. \textit{Enclitic Forms.} The first and second persons singular have enclitic and unenclitic forms which serve to mark distinctions of emphasis in a general way. We may be sure that when the long

\textsuperscript{1} Ib., 2. Abt., pp. 69, 89.  
\textsuperscript{2} Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 152.
form ἐμοῦ occurs some slight emphasis is meant, as in ὑμῶν τε καὶ ἐμοῦ
(Rom. 1:12). But we cannot feel sure that all emphasis is absent
when the short form is used. Thus οἴκοδομήσω μου τὴν ἐκκλησίαν (Mt.
16:18), πάντα μοι παρεδόθη ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς μου (11:27). With pre-
positions (the "true" ones) the long form is used as in ancient
Greek except with πρός, which uniformly has με even where em-
phasis is obvious.1 Thus δεῦτε πρός με (Mt. 11:28), καὶ σὺ ἐρχῆ πρός
με (3:14). Some editors here and in the LXX print πρός μέ. But
in Jo. 6:37 πρός ἐμέ is the true text. Cf. πρός ἐμέ also in P.Tb.
421 (iii/A.D.). With σοῦ the only difference is one of accent and
we have to depend on the judgment of the editor. It is difficult,
if not impossible, to lay down any fundamental distinction on this
point. On σοῦ and σοῦ see chapter VII, iv, 4, (a). See also
ἐξομολογομαί σοι (Mt. 11:25) and καγὼ δέ σοι λέγω (16:18). Cf.
ἐγὼ σε (Jo. 17:4) and με σύ (17:5); Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p.
168) says that ἐμοῦ and σοῦ, the emphatic forms, occur only with
other genitives like αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐμοῦ (Ro. 16:13). Simcox (Language
of the N. T., p. 55) argues that the enclitic form occurs always
except when there is emphasis. But the trouble is that the en-
clitic form seems to occur even where there is emphasis. The
genitive of the third person can be used with emphasis. Cf.

(c) THE FREQUENCY OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS. It is at
bottom a differentiation from the substantive, though the roots
are independent of verb and substantive and antedate historical
evidence.2 This pronoun came into play where the sense required
it. Thus καὶ ἐπιθέντες τὰς χείρας αὐτοῖς ἀπέλυσαν (Ac. 13:3). Cf. Mk.
6:5. There is no doubt of the fact that the N. T. uses the pro-
noun in the oblique cases more frequently than is true of the older
Greek.3 What is the explanation of this fact? The Hebrew pro-
nominal suffixes at once occur to one as the explanation of the
situation and Blass accepts it.4 The LXX shows a similar "lavish
use of pronouns."5 But a glance at the modern Greek reveals the
same fondness for pronouns, and the papyri abundantly prove
that the usage belongs to the vernacular κοινή.6 Cf. ἀνύγω τοὺς
ὄφθαλμοὺς μου Par.P. 51 (ii/B.C.), Λάμπωνι μιμητῇ ἔδωκα αὐτῷ
O.P. 299 (i/A.D.). Thumb7 suggests that this abundance of pro-

1 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 165.
3 Cf. W.-Th., p. 143; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 164.
4 Cf. also Simcox, Lang., etc., p. 53.
5 C. and S., Sel., etc., p. 65.
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 84 f.
7 Hellen., p. 108 f.
nouns is natural in the vernacular. Blass\(^1\) finds "a quite peculiar and tiresome frequency" of the pronoun in the N. T. This is only true in comparison with literary Attic. The N. T. is here a natural expression of the vernacular. Thus in Lu. 6:20 note \(αυτού\) twice, \(υμων\) twice in Lu. 21:19, \(σου\) in Mt. 6:17 as the reflexive twice (\(άλειψαί \ σου τὴν κεφαλὴν καὶ \ τὸ \ πρόσωπόν \ σου υψαί\)). It is not necessary to go as far as Moulton does and deny that there is any Semitic influence in the N. T. on this point. It was here in harmony with the current Greek. Cf. Lu. 24:50 for three examples of \(αυτού\) (-\(ου\)). Cf. \(σε—σε\) in Jo. 1:48. For \(αυτό= \text{‘} it \text{’} \) see Ro. 7:20. In Lu. 1:62 \(αυτό\) and \(αυτού\) both refer to \(παιδίου\).

(d) REDUNDANT. The pronoun, was sometimes redundant. This was also a Hebrew idiom, but the vernacular \(κοινή\) shows similar examples. The two streams flow together as above. With participles note \(τῷ \ θέλουτι—ἀφετε \ αὐτῷ\) (Mt. 5:40), \(καταβάντος \ αὐτοῦ—ηκολούθησαν \ αὐτῷ\) (8:1), \(ἐμβάντι \ αὐτῷ εἰς \ πλοῖον \ ηκολούθησαν \ αὐτῷ\) (8:23). There are besides the anacolutha like \(ὁ \ νικῶν καὶ \ ὁ \ τηρῶν—δωσῶ \ αὐτῷ\) (Rev. 2:26). Cf. also \(τὸ \ ποτήριον—οὖ \ μή \ πίω \ αὐτό\) (Jo. 18:11) which does not differ radically from the other examples.\(^2\) Cf. also the redundant personal pronoun with the relative like the Hebrew idiom with the indeclinable \(τῷ \ αὐτοῦ\) (Mt. 3:12), \(ἡς—αὐτής\) (Mk 7:25), \(οὔς—αὐτούς\) (Ac. 15:17), \(οἷς—αὐτοῖς\) (Rev. 7:2). But this idiom appeared also in the older Greek and is not merely Semitic.\(^3\) It occurs in Xenophon and Sophocles. Indeed in Rev. 17:9; \(ἔπτα \ ὅρη \ ὀποῦ \ ἡ \ γυνὴ \ κάθεται \ ἐπ' \ αὐτῶν\), we have \(ὀποῦ\) in sense of relative pronoun much like modern Greek \(ποῦ\). For the redundant antecedent see further under Relative.

(e) ACCORDING TO SENSE. See also chapter X, VII, VIII, The personal pronouns are sometimes used freely according to the sense. In Ac. 26:24, \(τὰ \ πολλὰ \ σε \ γράμματα \ εἰς \ μανίαν \ περιτρέπει\), the position of \(σε\) is probably a matter of euphony and a case in point. Sometimes there is no immediate reference in the context for the pronoun. The narrative is compressed and one must supply the meaning. So with \(αὐτοῦ\) (Lu. 1:17), \(αὐτοῖς\) (Mt. 8:4), \(αὐτῶν\) (12:9), \(αὐτῶν\) (Mt. 11:1), \(αὐτοῦ\) (Jo. 20:15), \(αὐτῶν\) (1 Pet. 3:14).

But this is no peculiarity of N. T. Greek or of the \(κοινή\). It is common at all times. In Jo. 8:44, \(ψεύστης \ ἐστίν \ καὶ \ ὁ \ πατὴρ \ αὐτοῦ\), the \(αὐτοῦ\) refers to \(ψεύδος\) suggested by \(ψεύστης\). In 2 Cor. 5:19 \(αὐτοῖς\) refers to \(κόσμου\), as in Ro. 2:26 \(αὐτοῦ\) has in mind \(ἀκρόβυστος\).

suggested by ἀκροβυστία. So in Ac. 8:5 ἀυτός refers to πόλις. In Mk. 5:4 ἀυτὴ follows the natural gender of παιδίου rather than the grammatical. But in Jo. 6:39 ἀυτό agrees grammatically with the abstract collective πᾶν ὄ. In Lu. 6:6 we find a usage much like the original Homeric absence of the pure relative.¹
We have καὶ ἀυτοῦ used with ἀνθρώπος much as ὁ was. In Mt. 28:19 ἀυτοὺς refers to ἔθνη. In Mk. 6:46 ἀυτοῖς points to ὄχλον.

(f) REPETITION OF THE SUBSTANTIVE. Sometimes indeed the substantive is merely repeated instead of using the pronoun. Thus in Jo. 11:22 we have τὸν θεόν—ὁ θεός. This is usually due to the fact that the mere pronoun would be ambiguous as in the use of Ἰησοῦς in Jo. 4:1. Sometimes it may be for the sake of emphasis as in ὁ ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Lu. 12:8) rather than ἔγώ. Sometimes antithesis is better sustained by the repetition of the substantive. Thus with κόσμῳ—κόσμου (Jo. 9:5), ἀμαρτία—ἀμαρτίας (Ro. 5:12). But this is no peculiarity of Greek.

II. The Possessive Pronouns (κτητικαὶ ἀντωνυμίαι).

(a) JUST THE ARTICLE. It is not merely the possessive relation that is here under discussion, but the possessive pronoun. Often the article alone is sufficient for that relation. Thus in ἐκτείνας τὴν χειρὰ (Mt. 8:3) the article alone makes the relation clear. Cf. also τὰς χειρὰς (Mk. 14:46), τὴν μάχαιραν (14:47), τὸν ἀδελφόν (2 Cor. 12:18). The common use of the genitive of the personal pronoun is not under consideration nor the real reflexive pronoun like ἐαυτοῦ.

(b) ONLY FOR FIRST AND SECOND PERSONS. There is in the N. T. no possessive form for the third person. The other expedients mentioned above (usually the genitive αὐτοῦ, αὐτῶν) are used. The personal pronouns are substantival, while the possessive forms are adjectival. In modern Greek no adjectival possessive exists. Just the genitive occurs (Thumb, Handbook, p. 89). The possessive ἐμὸς and σὸς are disappearing in the papyri (Radermacher, N. T. Gk., p. 61). Originally the accent² of ἐμὸς was *ἐμοῖς. The forms ἡμεῖς-τερός and ὑμεῖς-τερός are both comparative and imply emphasis and contrast, the original meaning of the comparative.³

(c) EMPHASIS, WHEN USED. When these possessive forms occur in the N. T. there is emphasis. But it is not true, as Blass⁴

¹ Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 35.  
² Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 250.  
⁴ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 168. Brugmann (Vergl. Gr., ii. 283) derives the poss. from the gen., while Delbruck (V, i. 213) obtains the gen. from the poss. Who can tell?
affirms, that there is no emphasis when the genitive forms are used. See I, (b), 4. The possessives do not occur often in the N. T. For details see chapter VII, iv, 4, (d).

(d) WITH THE ARTICLE. The possessives in the N. T. usually have the article save when predicate.¹ Thus ἡ ἐμὴ (Jo. 5:30), τῆς ἐμῆς (Ro. 10:1), τὸ ἐμὸν, (Mt. 18:20), τῷ ἱσῷ (Mt. 7:3), etc. When the article is absent the possessive is usually predicate as in τὰ ἐμὰ πάντα σὰ ἐστίν, καὶ τὰ σὰ ἐμά (Jo. 17:10; Lu. 15:31). In μὴ ἔχων ἐμὴν δικαιοσύνην τὴν ἐκ νόμου (Ph. 3:9) the possessive is attributive, a righteousness of my own, though the article comes later. In Jo. 4:34 we have ἐμὸν βρῶμα ἐστιν ἱνα where the attributive use also occurs. But see Mt. 20:23. One may note ὑμῶν in predicate (1 Cor. 3:21).

(e) POSSESSIVE AND GENITIVE TOGETHER. Paul's free use of the possessive and genitive together as attributives is well illustrated by τὸ ἐμὸν πνεῦμα καὶ τὸ ὑμῶν (1 Cor. 16:18). In 1 Cor. 16:17 the MSS. vary between τὸ ὑμῶν ὑστέρημα and τὸ ὑμέτερον (BCD) ὡς. So in 1 Jo. 2:2 we have both περὶ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἡμῶν and also περὶ τῶν ἁμαρτίων. Indeed the genitive may be in apposition with the genitive idea in the possessive pronoun. Thus τῇ ἐμῇ χειρὶ Παῦλου, (1 Cor. 16:21). Cf. 2 Th. 3:17; Col. 4:18; Jo. 14:24.

(f) OBJECTIVE USE. The possessive pronoun may be objective just like the genitive. This is in full accord with the ancient idiom. So τὴν ἐμὴν ἀνάμνησιν (Lu. 22:19; 1 Cor. 11:24), τὴν ὑμετέραν καθήσιν (15:31), τῷ ὑμετέρῳ ἐλέει (Ro. 11:31), τὴν ἱμετέραν διδασκαλίαν (15:4). Cf. τῆς ὑμῶν παρακλήσεως (2 Cor. 1:6).

(g) INSTEAD OF REFLEXIVE. The possessive, like the personal pronoun, occurs where a reflexive might have been used. Thus τῷ σῷ with κατανοεῖς in Mt. 7:3, ἄκουὼν τὰ ἐμὰ τέκνα (3 Jo. 4), ἔγραψα τῇ ἐμῇ χειρὶ (Phil. 19). The pronoun ὑδίος is possessive, but is best treated as a reflexive.

III. The Intensive and Identical Pronoun (σύντονος ᾧτωνυμία). The use of αὐτός was originally "purely anaphoric."² As the third personal pronoun it was, of course, anaphoric. The intensive use is more emphatic.

(a) THE NOMINATIVE USE OF ΑὐΤÓΣ. As already remarked, it is not always clear whether we have the emphatic 'he' or the intensive 'self' with αὐτός the nominative. Cf. αὐτός καὶ ἡ μήτηρ

¹ Simcox, Lang., etc., p. 54.
αὐτοῦ (Jo. 2:12). The intensive ἄυτός appears in all persons, genders and numbers. Thus ἄυτός ἔγω (Ro. 7:25; cf. ἔγω ἄυτός Ac. 10:26), ἄυτοι ἀκηκόαμεν (Jo. 4:42), δύνασαι—ἀυτός (Lu. 6:42), ἄυτοι ὑμεῖς (1 Th. 4:9; cf. Ac. 18:15), ἄυτος ὁ Ἰωάννης (Mt. 3:4), ἄυτοι προφήται (Ac. 15:32), ἄυτο τὸ βιβλίον (Heb. 9:19), ἄυτά τὰ ἐπομοδάνια (9:23), ἄυτα τὰ ἔργα (Jo. 5:36). The article is not always used. Cf. ἄυτός Δαυείδ (Lu. 20:42), ἄυτη Σάρρα (Heb. 11:11), ἄυτοι προφήται, (Ac. 15:32). Cf. ἔγω δὲ ἄυτός P.Oxy. 294 (A.D. 22). In 2 Cor. 10:1 note ἄυτός ἔγω Παῦλος. There is nothing particularly essential in the order whether ἄυτός ἔγω or ἔγω ἄυτός (see above). Ἐγώ χε is not in the N. T.

(b) VARYING DEGREES OF EMPHASIS. For a list of the various shades of meaning possible with ἄυτός see Thompson, Syntax of Attic Greek, p. 59 f. In Ro. 15:14 ἄυτός occurs with the first person and ἄυτοι with the second in sharp contrast. In Shakespeare we have "myself" as subject: "Myself have letters" (Julius Caesar, iv. 3). Cf. Latin ipse. In Jo. 2:24, ἄυτός δὲ Ἰσσοῦς, we have Jesus himself in distinction from those who believed on him. In 1 Cor. 11:14 ἡ φύσις ἄυτή is 'nature of itself.' Note ἄυτοι οἴδατε (1 Th. 3:3), 'ye for yourselves.' In Ac. 18:15, ἡφεσθε ἄυτοι, we find 'ye by yourselves.' Each instance will vary slightly owing to the context. Cf. ἄυτοι, (Ac. 16:37); ἄυτος μόνος (Mk. 6:47). On ἄυτοι μὲν οὖν see Ac. 13:4. See αὐτός ἐκατόν (Lu. 12:57), not ἄυτοι.

(c) Ἅυτος WITH Οὖτος. In Ac. 24:15, 20, the classical idiom ἄυτοι οὖτοι occurs. Cf. εἰς ἄυτο τοῦτο (Ro. 9:17), πεποίθως ἄυτο τοῦτο (Ph. 1:6), ἄυτο τοῦτο (2 Pet. 1:5, accusative of gen. reference). Cf. 2 Cor. 7:11. The other order is found in ἔγω χαι τοῦτο ἄυτό (2 Cor. 2:3).

(d) Ἅυτος ALMOST DEMONSTRATIVE. In Luke ἄυτος ὁ is sometimes almost a pure demonstrative as it comes to be in later Greek. The sense of 'very' or 'self' is strengthened to 'that very.' Thus ἄυτή τῇ ὑρα, (Lu. 2:38), ἐν ἄυτῳ τῷ καιρῷ (13:1), ἐν ἄυτῇ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ (23:12). The modern Greek freely employs this demonstrative sense. Cf. Thumb, p. 90. Moulton (Prol., p. 91) finds this demonstrative use of ἄυτος ὁ in the papyri. So ἄυτον τὸν Ἀββάν, O.P. 745 (i/A.D.). Moulton thinks that ἄυτος is demonstrative also in Mt. 3:4. See VI, (h), for further discussion.

(e) IN THE OBLIQUE CASES. It is not so common as the nominative. So ἄυτος τοὺς κλητοὺς (1 Cor. 1:24). Cf. καὶ ἄυτος in Ac. 15:27 (cf. 15:32). But examples occur even in the first and

1 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 35.
second persons. Thus ἐμοῦ αὐτοῦ (Ro. 16:2), σοῦ αὐτῆς (Lu. 2:35), αὐτοῦς ἡμᾶς (2 Th. 1:4), ἐξ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν (Ac. 20:30, probable text). Here the use is intensive, not reflexive. The same thing is possible with ὑμῶν αὐτῶν in 1 Cor. 7:35 (cf. 11:13). But I think this reflexive. This intensive use of αὐτῶς with ἐμοῦ and σοῦ is found in Attic. In αὐτῶν ἡμᾶς and ὑμῶν only the context can decide which is intensive and which reflexive. Cf. Thompson, A Syntax of Attic Greek, p. 64. Cf. ἐὰν αὐτῶν τῶν νεκροτάφων, 'from the grave-diggers themselves,' P. Grenf. ii, 73 (iii/A.D.).

(f) Αὐτῶς SIDE BY SIDE WITH THE REFLEXIVE. So αὐτῶς ἑαυτῷ (Eph. 5:27), αὐτοὶ ἐν ἑαυτοῖς (Ro. 8:23). Cf. 2 Cor. 1:9; 10:12. The distinctively reflexive pronouns are, of course, compounded of the personal pronouns and αὐτῶς. They will be treated directly. The N. T. does not have αὐτότατος (cf. Latin ipsissimus). Some N. T. compounds of αὐτῶς are αὐτάρκης (Ph. 4:11), αὐτοκατάκριτος (Tit. 3:11), αὐτόματος (Mk. 4:28), αὐτόπτης (Lu. 1:2).

(g) Ὁ Αὐτῶς. The use of ὁ αὐτὸς for identity ('the same,' the very') is close kin to the original 'self' idea. Cf. ipse and idem. The idiom is frequent in the N. T. Thus ὁ αὐτὸς κύριος (Ro. 10:12), ἡ αὐτὴ σάρξ (1 Cor. 15:39), τὰ αὐτὰς θυσίας (Heb. 10:11), and with substantive understood τὸ αὐτὸ (Mt. 5:47), τῶν αὐτῶν (Heb. 2:14), τὰ αὐτὰ (Lu. 6:23). In 1 Cor. 11:5 we have the associative instrumental case with it, τὸ αὐτὸ τῇ ἐξυρημένῃ. But in 1 Pet. 5:9 we actually have the genitive ('the same sort of'), τὰ αὐτὰ τῶν παθημάτων.

IV. The Reflexive Pronoun (᾿Αντωνακλαστικὴ ἀντωνυμία).

a) DISTINCTIVE USE. As already explained in this chapter under Personal Pronouns, the originals of the personal pronouns in oblique cases were also reflexive. Only gradually the distinction between personal and reflexive arose. But even so the personal pronouns continued to be used as reflexive. Hence I cannot agree with Blass that ἐμαυτοῦ, σεαυτοῦ, ἐαυτοῦ "have in the N. T. been to some extent displaced by the simple personal pronoun." It is rather a survival of the original (particularly colloquial) usage. Thus we have in Mt. 6:19 f. θησαυρίζετε ὑμῖν θησαυροὺς, 5:29 f. and 18:8 f. βάλε ἀπὸ σοῦ, 6:2 μὴ σαλπίσης ἐμφοροσθέν σου, 11:29 ἄρατε τοῦ ζυγόν μου ἐφʼ ὑμᾶς, 17:27 δὸς ἀντὶ ἐμοῦ καὶ σοῦ, 18:15 ἐλεγξοῦ... μεταξὺ σοῦ καὶ αὐτοῦ. Matthew has rather more of these survivals. But see ἀφίδω τὰ περὶ ἐμέ (Ph. 2:23), τὸ κατ᾽ ἐμὲ πρόθυμος (Ro. 1:15). For this idiom in Attic see Thompson, Syn-

2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 166 f.
tax of Attic Greek, p. 64. This is not indeed the classic Attic idiom, but the vernacular Attic (as in the κοινὴ) is not so free from it. In particular the third person presents peculiar problems, since the ancient MSS. had no accents or breathings. The abbreviated reflexive αὐτὸν and αὐτῷ would look just alike. It is a matter with the editors. See chapter VI, iv, (f), for details. Thus W. H. give ἄρατω τὸν σταυρὸν αὐτῷ (Lu. 9:23), but οὐκ ἔπιστευεν αὐτὸν αὐτῶς (Jo. 2:24). In Lu. 9:24 we have τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ, but in 14:26 τὴν ψυχὴν ἐαυτοῦ. In the last passage ἐαυτοῦ occurs with πατέρα and ψυχήν, but not with the other words. Cf. αὐτῷ, Ac. 4:32. In the light of the history of the personal pronouns the point is not very material, since αὐτῷ, can be reflexive also. The Attic Greek used to have δοκῶ μου. But Luke in Ac. 26:9 has ἔδοξα ἐμαυτῷ as Paul in 1 Cor. 4:4 says ἐμαυτῷ σύνοιδα. Old English likewise used the personal pronouns as reflexive. Thus "I will lay me down and sleep," "He sat him down at a pillar's base," etc. Cf. ἀμφὲ, ἀυτὸν, Jo. 11:51, where αὐτὸς could have been employed.

(b) THE ABSENCE OF THE REFLEXIVE FROM THE NOMINATIVE. It is impossible to have a reflexive in the nominative. The intensive pronoun does occur as αὐτὸς ἔγω (2 Cor. 10:1). The English likewise, as already shown, early lost the old idiom of "myself," "himselves" as mere nominatives. Cf. ἄφι, ἐμαυτῷ, Jo. 11:51, where αὐτὸς could have been employed.

(c) THE INDIRECT REFLEXIVE. It is less common in the N. T. It does indeed occur, as in the ancient Greek. So θέλω πάντας ἀνθρώπους εἶναι ώς καὶ ἐμαυτόν (1 Cor. 7:7), συνείδησιν δὲ λέγω οὐχὶ τὴν ἐμαυτὸν ἀλλὰ τὴν τοῦ ἐτέρου (10:29). But on, the other hand, note ἔγων ἐν τῷ ἐπανέρχεσθαι με ἀποδύσω σοι (Lu. 10:35), παρακαλῶ— συναγωνίσασθαι μοι (Ro. 15:30). Cf. 2 Cor. 2:13. This on the whole is far commoner and it is not surprising since the personal pronoun occurs in the direct reflexive sense. Cf. ἦν ἴκουσατέ μου (Ac. 1:4). In Thucydides the reflexive form is generally used for the indirect reflexive idea.

(d) IN THE SINGULAR. Here the three persons kept their separate forms very well. Hence we find regularly ἐμαυτόν (Jo. 14:21), σεαυτῷ (Ac. 16:28), ἐαυτῷ (Lu. 18:4). Indeed ἐαυτῷ never stands for ἐμαυτόν. For σεαυτοῦ or σεαυτόν some MSS. read ἐαυτοῦ in Mk. 12:31; Jo. 18:34; Gal. 5:14; Ro. 13:9. In 1 Cor. 10:29 ἐαυτοῦ = 'one's own' (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 441; Prol., p. 87). There was some tendency towards this usage in the an-

---

1 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 33.
2 Ib.
3 Dyroff, Gesch. etc., Bd. I, 1892, p. 19.
4 W.-Sch., p. 205.
cient Greek, though the explanation is not perfectly clear. But the usage is clearly found in the Atticists, Dio Chrys., Lucian and Philost. II. In Rev. 18:24 ἐν αὐτῇ is a sudden change from ἐν σοί of the preceding verses, but is hardly to be printed αὐτῇ, for it is not strictly reflexive. The same use of αὐτήν rather than σέ appears in Mt. 23:37 and parallel Lu. 13:34. Cf. also Lu. 1:45. But Moulton (Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901, p. 441, April, 1904, p. 154) finds in the papyri several examples of this "un-educated use of ἐαυτόν" for first and second persons singular, συνγχωρῶ μετὰ τῆν ἐαυτοῦ τελευτήν, B.U. 86 (ii/A.D.). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 61) cites ἐπέγραψα ἐαυτῷ (Petersen-Luschan, Reisen etc., p. 26, n. 32). Thucydides has a few possible examples and certainly the Latin is in point (Draeger, Historische Synt. d. Lat. Spr., p. 84). In early Greek Delbruck finds the reflexive referring indifferently to either person. The recurrence is not surprising. In the modern Greek the singular ἐαυτός occurs constantly for first and second persons and even τοῦ ἐαυτοῦ μου, τοῦ ἐαυτοῦ σου for emphasis. Cf. "myself," "thyself," "herself" and vulgar " hisself."

In translation from Semitic originals we sometimes find ψυχήν rather than ἐαυτόν as in Lu. 9:24 (cf. Mk. 8:36). Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 87; Robinson, Study of the Gospels, p. 114. The form αὐτόν (Jo. 2:24), αὐτῷ (Lu. 12:21) is preserved in some 20 passages by W. H. and Nestle.

(e) IN THE PLURAL. Here the matter is not in any doubt. It is rather too much to say with Simcox that ἐαυτῶν is the only form for the reflexive plural. This is indeed true for the first and third persons as ἀνεθεματίσαμεν ἐαυτοῦς (Ac. 23:14). In 2 Th. 1:4 αὐτοὺς ἡμᾶς is intensive, as already shown (chapter VII). In the third person also only ἐαυτῶν occurs as in Mt. 18:31. In the second person plural a few examples of the reflexive ἡμῶν αὐτῶν apparently survive, as in Ac. 20:30; 1 Cor. 5:13 and probably so in 1 Cor. 7:35; ἡμῖν αὐτῶις in 1 Cor. 11:13. But the common idiom for the second person plural is undoubtedly ἐαυτῶν, as προσέχετε ἐαυτοῖς (Lu. 17:3). Cf. Mt. 25:9; Ro. 6:13; 1 Jo. 5:21, etc. There are some seventy examples of ἐαυτῶν for first and second persons plural in the N. T. (Moulton, Prol., p. 87), as is the custom in the papyri, chiefly in illiterate documents. Cf. ἵνα γεινώμεθα πρός τοὺς καθ᾽ ἐαυτοῦς, Tb.P. 6 (ii/B.C.); ἵνα κομισώμεθα τὰ ἐαυτῶν, Tb.P. 47.

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 167.
3 W.-Sch., p.205.
4 Ib.
The LXX (Conybeare and Stock, Sel., p. 30) has this use of ἐαυτῶν for first and second persons plural. We even find reflexive and personal together like ὑμῖν ἐαυτοῖς (Ex. 20:23).

(f) ARTICLE WITH. The reflexive is used with or without the article and in any position with the article. But curiously enough σεαυτοῦ is never so found and ἐμαυτοῦ only once in sharp contrast, μὴ ἔχοντι τὸ ἐμαυτοῦ σύμφορον ἄλλα τὸ τῶν πλῆθων (1 Cor. 10:33). Instead of this reflexive genitive (possessive) we have the genitive of the personal pronoun. Cf. τιμῶ τὸν πατέρα μου (Jo. 8:49), ἂφες τὸ δῶρόν σου (Mt. 5:24). The examples of ἐαυτοῦ are, of course, abundant as in τὴν ἐαυτοῦ αὐλήν (Lu. 11:21), the common idiom in the older Greek. But note also the order τὸ ἔργον ἐαυτοῦ (Gal. 6:4), ἐαυτοῦ τοὺς πόδας (Ac. 21:11), δούλους ἐαυτοῦ (Lu. 19:13), κῆπον ἐαυτοῦ (Lu. 13:19). These are all attributive, but the sense is not quite the same in the two last. The use of αὐτοῦ in such examples has already been noted as in Mt. 16:24. Sometimes the MSS. vary between ἐαυτοῦ and αὐτοῦ as in Lu. 4:24. The plural ἐαυτῶν is likewise found thus, τοὺς ἐαυτῶν νεκροὺς (Mt. 8:22), τῷ κυρίῳ ἐαυτῶν (Mt. 18:31), ἐαυτῶν τὰ ἰματία (Mt. 21:8). See further chapter XVI. The Article.

(g) REFLEXIVE IN THE RECIPROCAL SENSE. This use of ἐαυτῶν does not really differ in idea from ἀλλήλων. This is in harmony with the ancient Greek idiom. The papyri show this same blending of ἐαυτῶν with ἀλλήλων.1 Cf. P.P. 8 (ii/B.C.) three times, O.P. 260 (i/A.D.), C.P.R. 11 (ii/A.D.) twice. Thus we may note ὅτι κρίματα ἔχετε μεθ’ ἐαυτῶν (1 Cor. 6:7), λαλοῦντες ἐαυτοῖς (Eph. 5:19), νουθετοῦντες ἐαυτοῦς (Col. 3:16), etc. Sometimes it occurs side by side with ἀλλήλων as if by way of variety, as in ἀνεχόμενοι ἀλλήλων καὶ χαρίζομενοι ἐαυτοῖς (Col. 3:13). Cf. also ἀλλήλων and αὐτοῦς in Lu. 23:12. In Ph. 2:3 ἀλλήλους ἡγούμενοι ὑπερέχοντας ἐαυτῶν, each word retains its own idea.

(h) REFLEXIVE WITH MIDDLE VOICE. Sometimes indeed the reflexive occurs with the middle voice where it is really superfluous, as in διεμερίσαμέντο ἐαυτοῖς (Jo. 19:24, LXX), where2 Mt. 27:35 (free paraphrase of LXX) has only διεμερίσαμενος. So also σεαυτόν παρεχόμενος (Tit. 2:7). But usually such examples occur where the force of the middle is practically lost, as in ἦγαθμαι ἐμαυτῶν (Ac. 26:2), ἄρνησάσθω ἐμαυτόν (Lu. 9:23). On the use of the reflexive in Anglo-Saxon see Penny, A History of the Reflexive Pronoun in the English Language, p. 8. Cf. παραλήψομαι πρὸς ἐμαυτόν (Jo. 14:3). Moulton (Prol., p. 87) admits that sometimes

1 Moulton, ProL., p. 87. 2 W.-Th., p. 257.
occurs without great emphasis. This use of the reflexive with the middle may be compared with the reflexive and the personal pronoun in the LXX. So λήψαναι ἐμαυτῷ ὑμᾶς λαὸν ἐμοί (Ex. 6:7), οὐ ποιήσετε ὑμῖν ἐμαυτοῖς (20:23). So English "me myself," "you yourselves." Cf. Thackeray, p. 191. See further chapter XVII, Voice.

(i) THE USE OF ἰδιος. This adjective is frequent in the N. T. It is usually treated as a possessive, opposed to κοινὸς or δημοσίος. In the N. T. we find it, especially (17 times) in κατ’ ἰδιαν (cf. Lu. 9:10), in the sense of 'private.' So this sense occurs also in Ac. 4:32 and Heb. 7:27. Cf. ἰδιώται in Ac. 4:13 (1 Cor. 14:16).

Sometimes also the word implies what is peculiar to one, his particularity or idiosyncrasy, as 1 Cor. 3:8; 7:7 (cf. the classic idiom). Cf. our "idiot." But in general ὁ ἰδιος or ἰδιος without the article (cf. ἐμαυτοῦ) means simply 'one's own,' a strong possessive, a real reflexive. To all intents and purposes it is interchangeable in sense with ἐμαυτοῦ. The examples of this reflexive idea are many. Thus in Mt. 9:1; Lu. 6:41; 10:34; Jo. 1:41; 4:44, etc. The use of ό ἰδιοι for 'one's own people' (cf. also of οἰκέοι, 1 Tim. 5:8, classic idiom) is not strange. Cf. Jo. 1:11; 13:1, etc. Moulton2 finds the singular in the papyri as a term of endearment. The use of τὰ ἰδία for 'one's home' (Jo. 1:11; 19:27; Ac. 21:6) is seen also in the papyri. Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 440) cites τὰ ἰδία, B.U. 86 (ii/A.D.), 183 (i/A.D.), 168 (ii/iii A.D.) bis, etc. The papyri also illustrate Jo. 1:11, οἱ ἰδιοι, for 'one's relations.' So πρὸς τῶν ἰδίους, B.U. 341 (ii/A.D.). Examples without the article are δεσπόταις ἰδίοις (Tit. 2:9), κατῳρίς ἰδίοις (1 Tim. 6:15). Cf. ὁ ἰδιος λόγος, B.U. 16 (i/A.D.). Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 440. In Jo. 1:41 Moulton3 rightly agrees with Westcott in seeing in τὸν ἰδιον an implication that some one else went after his brother also. The only other point that here calls for remark is the question whether ὁ ἰδιος is used in an "exhausted" or unemphatic sense. Blass4 finds it so in εἶς τῶν ἰδιον ἀργρόν (Mt. 22:5). Meisterhans (p. 235) finds a few examples in the Attic inscriptions and Deissmann finds the weakened use of ἰδιος in the literary κοινή. Deissmann5 argues further that this exhausted sense may be assumed in the N. T. because some examples in the LXX (Job 24:12; Prov. 27:15), etc., seem to occur. Moulton6

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 169.  
2 Prol., p. 90.  
3 Ib.  
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 169.  
5 B. S., p. 123 f.  
finds that the papyri do not support this contention. Emphasis is beyond dispute in most of the N. T. instances like Mt. 9:1; Lu. 6:41; Jo. 1:41; Ac. 1:25; Gal. 6:5, etc. Moulton (Prol., p. 89) refers with point to Ro. 14:5, ἐν τῷ ἰδίῳ νοῇ, as showing ἰδιός the equivalent of ἐαυτοῦ. The N. T. passages may be assumed to show emphasis in spite of the later Byzantine ἰδιός μου (cf. ἐαυτοῦ you in modern Greek). Moulton¹ agrees with the Revisers in using ‘own’ in Mt. 22:5 as a "counter-attraction." The only difficult passage is Ac. 24:24 where B may be wrong. But is it not possible that ἰδία may have a covert hint at the character of Drusilla? For the present she was with Felix. In Tit. 1:12 note ἰδίος αὐτῶν προφήτης. Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154) cites ἡμῶν ἰδίου, Ch. P. 4 (ii/A.D.), ἰδίου αὐτοῦ N. P. 25 (ii/A. D.), and εἰς ἰδίαν μου χρείαν, B.U. 363 (Byz., Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 440). In modern Greek ὁ ἰδιός= ὁ αὐτός (Thumb, Handb., p. 97) or ‘self,’ ἐνω ὁ ἰδιός, ‘I myself.’ Cf. τῇ αὐτῇ in the papyrus of Eudoxus (ii/B.C.), but Moulton (Prol., p. 91) observes that it does not occur in the N. T. in this sense.

V. The Reciprocal Pronoun (ἡ ἀμοιβαία ἄντωμημία). The use of the reflexive in the reciprocal sense has just been discussed (cf. personal pronouns as reflexive). From one point of view it might seem hardly necessary to give a separate discussion of reciprocal pronouns. But, after all, the idea is not exactly that of the mere reflexive. Ἀλλήλων is, of course, reduplicated from ἄλλος, one of the alternative pronouns. Cf. the Latin alias and alter alters. The Latin idiom is common in the classic Greek and is found in Ac. 2:12, ἄλλος πρός ἄλλον λέγοντες; 19:32, ἄλλοι ἄλλο τι ἔκραζον; 21:34, ἄλλοι ἄλλο τι ἐπεφύσων. Cf. in the papyrus ἄλλο ἐγώ, ἄλλο πάντες, B.U. 1079 (A.D. 41). But the true reciprocal ἄλληλων has no nominative and is necessarily plural or dual (in older Greek). It occurs 100 times in the N. T. (W. H.) and is fairly well distributed. We have examples of the genitive (Ro. 12:5 ἄλληλων μέλη), the ablative (Col. 3:13 ἀνεχόμενοι ἄλληλων), the accusative (1 Cor. 16:20 ἀσπάσασθε ἄλληλους, 1 Jo. 4:7 ἐγαπώμεν ἄλληλος), the locative (Ro. 15:5 ἐν ἄλληλοις), the dative (Gal. 5:13 δούλεύετε ἄλληλοις). The prepositions are used 48 times with ἄλληλων. This pronoun brings out the mutual relations involved. In 1 Th. 5:11, παρακαλεῖτε ἄλληλους καὶ οἰκοδομεῖτε εἰς τῶν ἑνα, note the distributive explaining the reciprocal. Moulton (Prol., p. 246) compares the modern Greek ὁ ἑνας τῶν ἄλλων. In Ph. 2:3 note both ἄλληλος and ἐαυτών. In 1 Th. 5:15 we have εἰς ἄλληλος καὶ εἰς πάντας.

In 2 Th. 1 : 3 note ἐνὸς ἐκάστου and εἰς ἀλλὰ ἦλθον. The N. T. does not, like the LXX (Ex. 10:23), use ἐδέλφης as a reciprocal pronoun. The middle voice is also used in a reciprocal sense as in. συνεβουλεύσαντο (Mt. 26:4). Cf. chapter XVII, Voice.

VI. Demonstrative Pronouns (δεικτικαὶ ἀντωνυμίαι).

(a) NATURE. Curiously enough the demonstrative pronoun, like all pronouns, has given the grammarians a deal of trouble to define. For a discussion of the various theories during the ages see Riemann and Goelzer.¹ Originally all pronouns were "deictic," "pointing." The "anaphoric" use came gradually.² Indeed the same pronoun often continued to be now deictic, now anaphoric, as ὅς, for instance, originally demonstrative, but later usually relative. Indeed the anaphoric use blends with the relative. Monro³ marks out three uses of pronouns, not three kinds of pronouns. The "deictic" "marks an object by its position in respect to the speaker." Thus ἐγὼ, σὺ, ὅς, οὗτος, ἐκείνος all fall under this head. The "anaphoric" pronoun "is one that denotes an object already mentioned or otherwise known." Thus the resumptive use of ὅς, οὗτος, ἐκείνος, ὅς, ὅστις. The "relative" in the modern sense would be only ὅς, ὅστις, ὅσος, ὅσος, etc. As a matter of fact, for practical purposes the two Greek terms "deictic" and "anaphoric" may be placed beside the Latin "demonstrative" and "relative." See further chapter VII, iv, 4, (e).

(b) DIFFERENT SHADES OF MEANING. The demonstrative pronouns do not indeed always have the same shade of meaning. They may point out, as far or near (ὅς, οὗτος, ἐκείνος), as in apposition (ἐκείνος), as well known (ἐκείνος), as already mentioned (resumptive οὗτος, ὅς).⁴ These uses belong to the various demonstratives and will come out in the context. I do not care to press the parallel with the personal pronouns (first, second, third person demonstratives) as applied to ὅς, οὗτος, ἐκείνος. The pronouns had best be treated separately, not according to the special uses.

(c) Ὅ, ἦ, τό. This was the simplest demonstrative.⁵ The grammarians⁶ call this word ἄρθρον προτακτικόν as distinct from ὅς which is ἄρθρον ὑποτακτικόν. As a matter of fact Ὅ, ἦ, τό is the same word as the Sanskrit sa (sas), sa, tad.⁷ The Lithuanian nominative sing-

¹ Synt., p. 763 f.
² Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 168 f.
³ lb.
⁴ Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 779.
⁵ K.-BL, I, p. 603.
ular was *ta-s, ta*, and the Greek nominative plural *ōi, αi* came "instead of *τοί, ταί, \(* (\text{Brugmann, } \textit{Comp. Gr.}, \text{vol. III, p. 327}). This form, like der in German and this in English, was used either as demonstrative, article or relative. See Kühner-Gerth, I, p. 575.

One is not to trace actual historical connection between *ō* and der (cf. Brugmann, \textit{Griech. Gr.}, p. 559). Its old use was a sort of personal demonstrative (cf. *συ δέ* in Lu. 1:76).\(^1\) Cf. also *συ δὲ τί* and it *η καὶ συ τί* (Ro. 14:10) and *συ τίς* (14:4). Cf. Brugmann, \textit{Griech. Gr.}, p. 428. This substantival use is the main one in Homer.\(^2\) Indeed, as a demonstrative it means rather contrast than far or near like *ὅδε, οὔτος, ἐκεῖνος*, but after all *ὅδε* is nothing but *ὅ* with the ending –*δέ*. The demonstrative use of *ὅ* is seen in *τοὺς ὅσοι* in Agathias\(^3\) and *τῶν ὅσα* in Maximus of Tyre.\(^4\) This demonstrative as antecedent to the relative (*τοὺς ὅι*) appears in Justin Martyr\(^5\) and Tatian's \textit{Oration to the Greeks}.\(^6\) Plato shows a good many examples\(^7\) (like *τῶν ὅς, τῶν ὅσος*). We meet in Xenophon and Demosthenes\(^8\) καὶ τὸν as demonstrative, especially *τὸν καὶ τὸν, τὸ καὶ τό, τὰ καὶ τὰ*. The modern Greek uses *τοῦ, τῆς, τῶν*, etc., as short forms of *αὔτοῦ*, etc., and Jebb\(^9\) pertinently asks if this is not "a return to the earliest use of *ὅ, ἦ, τό* as a pronoun." The demonstrative *ὅ* is frequent in the comic writers. Cf. Fuller, \textit{De Articuli in Antiquis Graecis Comoedus Usu}, p. 9. Volker (Syntax, p. 5) gives papyri illustrations of demonstrative *ὅ (ὅ δέ, τοῦ δέ πρὸς τοῦ, πρὸ τοῦ, τὰ μέν, τὰ δὲ etc.)." The oblique cases have only two examples in the N. T., one a quotation from Aratus, *τοῦ καί* (Ac. 17:28), the other *τοὺς μέν, τοὺς δέ* (Eph. 4:11), where contrast exists. It is possible indeed that *τὸν* in Ph. 1:11 is demonstrative. Cf. also *τὸν ἀπ᾽ ἀρχῆς* in 1 Jo. 2:13 and *την* in 1 Cor. 10:29. In Mt. 14:2 (Mk. 6:14) *αἱ* is nearly equivalent to ‘these.’ In Mk. 12:5 the correct text is *οὗς μέν*, etc. But in the nominative the examples of this demonstrative in the N. T. are quite numerous. There are three uses of the nominative in the N. T. (1) One is the demonstrative pure and simple without any expressed contrast. So *οἳ δὲ ἑρᾶπισαυ* (Mt. 26:67), *οἳ δὲ ἑδί- στασαυ* (Mt. 28:17). In Mt. 26:57 *οἳ δὲ κρατήσαντες* we may have

\(^{1}\) Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 67.  
\(^{2}\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 176.  
\(^{3}\) Reffel, Über den Sprachgebrau. des Agathias, 1894, p. 5.  
\(^{4}\) Darr, Sprachl. 1899, p. 27.  
\(^{5}\) Cf. Gildersleeve's ed. of First Apol., ch. 5 and note to p. 116.  
\(^{6}\) Otto's ed., pp. 24, 90.  
\(^{7}\) Cf. Gildersleeve, Justin Martyr, p. 116, for others.  
\(^{8}\) Hadley and Allen, Gk. Gr., p. 216.  
\(^{9}\) V. and D.'s Handb., etc., p. 297.  
\(^{10}\) Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 81.
this usage or merely the article. In Acts we often have οἱ μὲν οὖν in this sense, usually with the participle (Ac. 1:6; 8:4, 25). But even in these examples there is apparently an implied contrast. In Mt. 16:14 and Lu. 9:19 the use of οἱ δὲ (3, below) refers to those already mentioned in an oblique case. (2) The use of ὁ μὲν, ὁ δὲ, etc. This is no longer very frequent in the N. T. So ὁ μὲν οὔτως, ὁ δὲ οὔτως (1 Cor. 7:7); οἱ μὲν, ὁ δὲ (Heb. 7:20, 23); οἱ μὲν, ὁ δὲ (Ac. 14:4); οἱ μὲν, ἀλλοι δὲ, ἕτεροι δὲ (Mt. 16:14 f.). In Mt. 13:23 we most likely have ὁ μὲν, ὁ δὲ, not ὁ μὲν, ὁ δέ. Cf. ὁ μὲν (Lu. 8:5). In Ac. 17:18 note πίνεις, ὁ δὲ and in Ro. 14:2 ὁς μὲν, ὁ δὲ. (3) The most common use of the demonstrative is where ὁ δὲ, ἦ δὲ, οἱ δὲ refer to persons already mentioned in an oblique case. Thus in Mt. 2:5 οἱ δὲ refers to παρ' αὐτῶν. So in of οἱ δὲ (Lu. 23:21) the reference is to αὐτοῖς, while ὁ δὲ in the next verse points to αὐτόν. In Mk. 14:61 ὁ δὲ refers to Ἰησοῦν, as in Ac. 12:15, ἦ δὲ to αὐτήν. In Lu. 22:70 ὁ δὲ has no antecedent expressed, but it is implied in the ἔπαινον πάντες before.

(d) Ὅς. The grammarians call it ἄρθρον ὑποτακτικὸν or relative. It did come to be chiefly relative, as already the Sanskrit yas, ya, yad has lost its original demonstrative force. But in the Lithuanian j-i-s Brugmann (Comp. Gr., III, p. 332) finds proof that the pro-ethnic i-o was demonstrative as well as relative. Cf. also ἰ-να in Homer— both 'there' and 'where' and then 'that.' In Homer ὁς, like ὦς (ὦς), is now demonstrative, now relative, and was originally demonstrative. This original demonstrative sense continues in Attic prose, as in the Platonic ἦ δ' ὁς; καὶ ὁς; ὤν μὲν, ὤν δὲ etc. However, it is not certain that the demonstrative use of ὁς (καὶ ὁς, ἦ δ' ὁς) is the same word as the relative. Brugmann indeed finds it from an original root, *so-s like Sanskrit sa-s. The examples of this demonstrative in the nominative are few in the N. T. Thus note in Jo. 5:11 (correct text) ὁς δὲ ἀπεκρίθη, and also ὁς δὲ οὔκ ἔλαβεν, in Mk. 15:23. Indeed ὁς δὴ in Mt. 13:23 is close to the same idea. But this verse furnishes a good example of this demonstrative in contrast, ὁ μὲν ἐκατόν ὁ δὲ ἐξήκοτα ὁ δὲ τριάκοντα. This example happens to be in the accusative case (cf. Ro. 9:21), but the nominative appears also as in ὁ μὲν ἔπεσεν (Mt. 13:4), ὁς μὲν εἰς τὸν ὤδιον ἀγρόν, ὁς δὲ ἐπὶ τὴν ἐμπορίαν (Mt. 22:5), ὁς μὲν πιστεύει (Ro. 14:2), ὁς μὲν γὰρ κρίνει—ὁς δὲ κρίνει, (14:5). So 1 Cor. 11: 21.
Instances of other cases occur also. I see no adequate reason for refusing to consider ὃν μὲν ἐδειπναν, ὡς δὲ ἀπέτειναν, ὅν ὅς ἐλίθοβόλησαν (Mt. 21:35) examples of the demonstrative ὃς. Cf. Lu. 23:33.

In the accusative plural note ὅς μὲν, ὅς δέ, Mk. 12:5; Ac. 27:44; Ju. 22 f. For the dative singular, ὁ μὲν, ὁ δέ, note Mt. 25:15. In 1 Cor. 12:8 we have ὁ μὲν, ἀλλὰς δέ, κτλ. For the dative plural see ὅς μὲν, ὅς δέ, 2 Cor. 2:16. In 1 Cor. 12:28 we have ὅς μὲν as demonstrative without any corresponding as ὅς δέ. Cf. οἱ μὲν ὅν in Ac. 8:4, 25; 11:19; 15:3, 30, and ὁ μὲν ὅν in Ac. 23:18 as above in (c). The relative at the beginning of sentences or paragraphs, like ἐν ὅς in Lu. 12:1 (cf. ἐνθῇ ὁ ὅν verse 3), may indeed at bottom be a reminiscence of the old demonstrative. Cf. Latin and English usage. The demonstrative is often used to connect sentences, as in Mt. 11:25; 12:1; Mk. 8:1, etc. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 276. In Mt. 26:50, ἐφ’ ὁ πάρει, we may also have an instance of the demonstrative. But we do not have in the N. T. καὶ ὅς, καὶ τὸν, τὸν καὶ τὸν, πρὸ τοῦ. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 62) finds demonstrative ὅσος ὃς in an inscription in Heberdey-Wilhelm, Reisen. N. 170.

(c) ὅς. Brugmann finds the enclitic –δέ the same that we have in δε-ὁρο, δή, ἰ-δέ, (?), Latin quan-de. It corresponds to the Latin hic, German der hier, English this here. It refers to what is "immediately near" in space or time, and is of relatively more importance than οὐτος. As a matter of fact ὅς occurs only ten times in the N. T. In the LXX "ὅς is much commoner than in the N. T." (Thackeray, Gr. of the 0. T. in Gk., vol. I, p. 191), especially in the more literary parts. For its rarity in papyri and inscriptions see Mayser, Gr., etc., p. 308. It is already failing in the first century B.C. (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 62). For τᾶς δέ see chapter VII, iv, 4, (c). In Lu. 16:25 ὅς is the correct text. In Ac. 15:23 τᾶς δέ is not well supported and in 2 Cor. 12:19 τᾶ δέ is right. In one of the remaining examples, τῇς ἦν ὅδελφη (Lu. 10:39), Blass bluntly calls it "not even used correctly," a rather curt judgment. But he cites the LXX (Gen. 25:24; 38:27). In Winer-Schmiedel this example is not considered as ὅδε used for οὐτος but rather; like the classic ὅδε ἐγὼ, ὅδε ἡμεῖς (cf. Ex. 8:25; Gen. 50:18). In Jas. 4:13, πορευσόμεθα εἰς τῇς δέ τῇ θλίψιν, it is hardly necessary to take τῇς δέ as like the classical τῇ δείνα or τῇ καὶ τῇ (cf. Plato), though that is a possible construction. Cf.

1 So Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 68, n. 3.
2 Griech. Or., p. 242.
3 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 65.
4 Or. of N. T. Gk., p. 170.
5 P. 216.
ποιήσομεν τὸύτο ἡ ἑκένω in verse 15. Plutarch¹ seems to use τῇνδε in this sense. More likely in James τῇνδε merely means ‘this’ city which the enterprising Jew exploits for a year before he passes on to the next.

(f) Οὖτος. Of doubtful etymology, possibly an original root $u.² With this combine ὅ, ἡ, τὸ=ου, αὖ, τοῦ. Then add το-ς, τα(ν), το.

In reality, therefore, οὖτος is a doubled demonstrative (combination of so and to, Giles, p. 296). It is like the Latin is-te (double also). Οὖτος is more often anaphoric than deictic.³ In Homer⁴ it (deictic) expresses an object present to the speaker, but not near him. The word is limited in use in Homer and usually refers to what is previously mentioned (anaphoric).⁵ It is very common in the N. T. and on the whole the usage accords with that of the older Greek. Naturally there is much diversity in the context.

1. The Purely Deictic. This use is not wanting. Thus in Mt. 3:17, οὖτος ἐστίν ὃ υἱὸς μου, the demonstrative identifies the one present as the Son of God. For further examples of the purely deictic use see Mt. 12:23; 17:5; 21:10 f. (a particularly good illustration); 21:38; 27:37, 47, 54; Mk. 6:3; 15:39; Lu. 4:22; 8:25, etc. But a still plainer example is in Jo. 21:21, when Simon pointed to John as οὖτος δὲ τί.

2. The Contemptuous Use of οὖτος. It is merely one variation of the purely deictic idiom due to the relation of the persons in question. It is rather common in the N. T. So in Mt. 26:61 οὖτος ἔφη we find a "fling" of reproach as the witnesses testify against Jesus. Cf. Mt. 26:71 (parallel Lu. 22:56 καὶ οὐτος), the maid about Peter; Mk. 2:7, the Pharisees about Jesus; Lu. 15:2; Jo. 6:42; 9:24; 12:34; Ac. 7:40, Jews about Moses; 19:26; 28:4, about Paul; Lu. 15:30, the elder son at the younger; 18:11, the Pharisee at the publican, etc. A striking example occurs in Ac. 5:28.

3. The Anaphoric Use. The pronoun here refers to one previously mentioned, as in Mt. 27:58 where οὖτος alludes to Ἰωσήφ in verse 57, where note the anacoluthon. So in Heb. 7:1 οὐτος points to the mention of Melchizedek in the preceding verse. There are many variations in the anaphoric idiom. The simplest is the one already mentioned, where the subject of discussion is merely continued by οὖτος, as in Mt. 3:3 (cf. the Baptist in verse 1). In particular observe καὶ οὖτος, as in Lu. 8:41; 16:1. In Lu. 22:59

¹ Quest. conviv. 1. 6. 1, τῇνδε τῇν ἡμέραν.
³ Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 65.
⁵ Ib.
καὶ ὁ ὁστος is rather deictic. A striking example of the continuative ὁστος occurs in Ac. 7:35, 36, 37, 38, 40. Here the pronoun is repeated as often as is desired. So Jo. 6:42. Cf. the use of the pronoun because of prolepsis (Ac. 9:20). The more frequent use is the resumptive or epexegetical use which is rather more abundant in the N. T.\(^1\) Here ὁστος is really in apposition. In Ro. 7:10, ἡ ἐντολὴ ἡ ἔις ζωῆν αὐτή ἔις θάνατον, we seem to have the resumptive use with a substantive. But a clear example (different in number and gender)\(^2\) occurs in Mt. 13:38, τὸ δὲ καλὸν σπέρμα, ὁστοὶ εἰσιν. One may note a similar use of ἐκεῖνος (Jo. 12:48; 16:13) and of αὐτός (Jo. 12:49). Another plain instance is in Ac. 2:23, where τοῦτον refers to Ἰησοῦν (verse 22). Cf. also τοῦτον (2d) in Ac. 7:35. In Ac. 4:10 ἐν τοῦτῳ is resumptive referring to the preceding substantive followed by two relative clauses, while ὁστος is deictic. In verse 11 again ὁστος is continuative. In Ro. 9:6, ὅ ὁστος Ἰσραὴλ, ὁστοι (cf. Gal. 3:7), the resumptive use is plain. The participle before ὁστος is a very common idiom, as ὅ δὲ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος ὁστος (Mt. 10:22; 24:13); ὅ ἐμβάψας μετ᾽ ἐμοῦ ὁστος (26:23). Cf. 1 Cor. 6:4; Lu. 9:48; Jo. 7:18, etc. The participle, of course, often follows ὁστος, not resumptive, as in Jo. 11:37. The relative is followed by resumptive ὁστος as in ὅς ὅ ὁπλέσθη—ὁστος (Lu. 9:24), ὅ θέλω τοῦτο πράσσωσι (Ro. 7:15 f., 20). So Mt. 5: 19; Mk. 6:16; Ac. 3:6; Gal. 5:17; 6:7; 2 Tim. 2:2. The plural is seen in Jo. 8:26, ἀ—ταὐτα; also in Ph. 4:9. For ἀτινα —ταὐτα see Ph. 3:7, and ὅσοι—ὁστοι Ro. 8:14; Gal. 6:12; Ph. 4:8. Cf. Winer-Schmiedel, p. 218. See ὅταν—τότε, καθὼς—ταὐτα (Jo. 8:28). In Ph. 1:22 τοῦτο resumes τὸ ζην. In 2 Th. 3:14 τοῦτον is resumptive with εἱ τις as in Jas. 1:23. Cf. also 1 Cor. 8:3; Ro. 8:9; Jas. 3:2.\(^3\) For ἐὰν τις see Jo. 9:31. Sometimes only the context can clear up the exact reference of the anaphoric ὁστος. So in Ac. 8:26 αὐτη points to ἥ ὁδὸς.

4. In Apposition. See also chapter X, ix. ὁστος itself may be expanded or explained by apposition. The simplest form of this construction is where a substantive\(^4\) is in apposition as in 2 Cor. 13:9, τοῦτο καὶ εὐχόμεθα, τὴν ύμῶν κατάρτισιν, where agreement in gender does not occur. Cf. the nominative ἥ πίστις in 1 Jo. 5:4. Cf. 1 Th. 4:3. ὁστος is, of course, the antecedent of the relative ὅς, as in Mt. 11:10; Jo. 7:25; τοῦτο ὅ in Jo. 16:17. In

---

\(^1\) Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 65 f.
\(^2\) Ib.
\(^3\) Ib., p. 66.
\(^4\) Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 171.
Ph. 2:5 note τούτο—οἱ καὶ. Sometimes a clause is in apposition with οὗτος which may be either nominative or in an oblique case. Thus with οὗτος, we have the nominative (with feminine predicate noun), as in αὕτη ἐστίν ἡ κρίσις οὗτος (Jo. 3:19). Cf. 1 Jo. 1:5; 5:9, 11, 14. In Mk. 4:41, τίς ἄρα οὗτός ἐστίν οὗτος, the οὗτος is almost equal to ὅστε. The accusative with οὗτος, we have in τούτο οὗτος (Ro. 2:3; 6:6; Lu. 10:11; Ac. 24:14; 1 Cor. 1:12; 15:50; 2 Cor. 5:14; 10:7, 11; 2 Th. 3:10; Ph. 1:6 (αὕτον τούτον), 25; 1 Tim. 1:9; 2 Tim. 3:1; 2 Pet. 1:20; 3:3, 8. Cf. also διὰ τούτο οὗτος in Jo. 12:39. In Gal. 3:17, after τούτο λέγω, we have the direct discourse without recitative οὗτος, but the quotation is really in the accusative in apposition with τούτο. Cf. also Lu. 12:18, τούτο ποιήσω καθελῶ μου τὰς ἀποθήκες, and Jo. 4:17. The genitive with οὗτος appears in περί τούτου οὗτος (Jo. 16:19). The locative appears in ἐν τούτῳ οὗτος, 1 Jo. 4:9, 10, 13. Cf. ἐν τούτῳ οὗτος (Jo. 16:30; 1 Jo. 3:19, 24) in a slightly different sense where οὗτος is really the accusative. But in general these substantive clauses have the same case as τούτῳ. Closely allied to this use of οὗτος is that of ίνα. Thus the nominative, πόθεν μοι τούτον ίνα ἔλθῃ, occurs in Lu. 1:43. In Jo. 17:3, αὕτη δὲ ἐστίν ἡ αἰώνιος ζωή ίνα, the pronoun is feminine because of the predicate substantive. Cf. Jo. 15:12; 1 Jo. 3:11, 23; 5:3; 2 Jo. 6. The accusative as the direct object of the verb is seen in τούτῳ προσεύχομαι ίνα in Ph. 1:9. Cf. also ταῦτα—ίνα, Jo. 15:11, 17; 1 Jo. 5:13. The feminine substantive occurs in the accusative also, as in ταῦτα πρὸς ἐννοεῖ έχομαι αὕτον ίνα, 1 Jo. 4:21. The accusative is found also with prepositions. So εἰς τούτον ίνα, Ac. 9:21; Ro. 14:9; 2 Cor. 2:9; 1 Pet. 3:9; 4:6; 1 Jo. 3:8. In Eph. 6:22 we have εἰς αὐτὸ τούτον ίνα. Cf. Col. 4:8. Likewise note διὰ τούτων ίνα in 2 Cor. 13:10; 1 Tim. 1:16; Phil. 15. In 2 Cor. 2:3, ἐγραψά τούτῳ τοῦτον αὐτὸν ίνα, we probably have the direct accusative, though τούτῳ αὐτό could be adverbial accusative, 'for this very reason.' The locative appears in ἐν τούτῳ ἐδοξάσθη ίνα, Jo. 15:8. Cf. 1 Jo. 4:17. The ablative case appears in Jo. 15:13, μείζονα ταύτης αὐτὸς ὑδεῖς ἐχει, ίνα. In 3 Jo. 4 the ablative plural is found, μειζότεραν τούτων—ίνα. The apposition in these various constructions varies in degree of directness. An example of ὅπως with εἰς αὐτό τούτῳ occurs in Ro. 9:17 quoted from the LXX (Ex. 9:16). Cf. also στελλόμενοι τούτῳ μὴ in 2 Cor. 8:20.

In 1 Pet. 2:19 note also the use of εἰ with τούτῳ (though χάρις

---

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 217, where it is observed that elsewhere often διὰ τούτῳ points to what goes before.
is predicate), τούτο γὰρ χάρις εἰ. Here the εἰ clause is in the same case as τούτο, nominative. So in 1 Jo. 2:3 we have ἔδω in apposition with ἐν τούτῳ (locative).

In 1 Jo. 5:2 the correct text has ὅταν in similar apposition with ἐν τούτῳ. The infinitive also occurs in apposition with τούτο. In Heb. 9:8 the perfect infinitive in indirect discourse with the accusative is in apposition to τούτο which is itself accusative, τούτου δηλούντος τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου, μήπω πεφανερώσθαι τὴν κτλ. In Eph. 4:17 likewise μηκέτι περιπατεῖν, in apposition to τούτο (after λέγω, is in indirect discourse, though here it is indirect command, not indirect assertion. But in 1 Cor. 7:37 τηρεῖν τὴν έαυτοῦ παρθένου is merely explanatory of τούτο κεκρικέν. The same thing is true in 2 Cor. 2:1, where the article is added to the infinitive which is also in the accusative, ἐκρίνα ἐμαυτῷ τούτο, τὸ μὴ ἐλθεῖν. In Ac. 26:16 the infinitive προχειρίσασθαι is in the accusative like εἰς τούτο. Cf. οὕτως, 1 Pet. 2:15. The nominative infinitive in Jas. 1:27 is in apposition with αὕτη (θησαυραὶ καθαρὰ —αὕτη, ἐπισκέπτω). So also note οὕτως ἐστὶν τὸ θέλημα τοῦ θεοῦ —φιμοῖν in 1 Pet. 2:15.1 Cf. Ro. 1:12 where τούτο —σωματικὴ ἡμᾶς, are merely subject and predicate. In 2 Cor. 7:11 the nominative infinitive, τὸ λαμπάθημα, occurs with αὕτῳ τούτῳ. Indeed in Mk. 12:24 the causal participle is really explanatory of τούτῳ (διά τούτῳ πλανάσθε, μὴ εἰδότες. It is possible to see a similar example2 in Lu. 8:21, ὄδελφοι μου οὕτοι εἰσίν οἱ —ἀκούοντες. Here in truth οὕτοι seems unnecessary.

5. Use of the Article. The article commonly occurs with the noun when the noun is used with οὕτως. The noun is by no means always necessary with οὕτως. See 6. Indeed the resumptive dem. alone is often sufficient, as in Jo. 1:2, 7, etc. So αὕτοι οὕτωι (Ac. 24:15, 20). In a sense a double demonstrative thus occurs, since the article was originally demonstrative. This is in exact accord with classic usage and calls for no special comment, except that it is an idiom foreign to Latin and English. The modern Greek preserves this idiom with the demonstrative. So τούτῃ ἡ γυναῖκα, αὕτος ὁ άνδρας (Thumb, Handb., p. 92). It is immaterial whether οὕτως comes first, as οὕτως ὁ τελώνης (Lu. 18:11), or last, as ὁ ἀνθρώπος οὕτως οὕτως (Lu. 23:47). Cf. Jo. 9:24. When an adjective is used with the substantive, then the article may be repeated with the adjective, as ἡ χήρα αὕτη ἡ πτωχή (Mk. 12:43), or οὕτως may, like the adjective, be brought within the rule of the article. So τίς ἡ

1 For exx. in earlier Gk. and literary koινή, see W.-Sch., p. 217.
2 W.-Sch., p. 218.
καίνη αὐτή [ἡ] ὑπὸ σοῦ λαλομένη διδαχὴ (Ac. 17:19). ¹ Even if the second article be admitted here, the point made still applies. The position of οὗτος with the article, οὗτος ὁ rather than ὁ οὗτος, does not mean simply the predicate idea, though the position is predicate. But not so τὴν ἐξουσίαν ταύτην ἀπασαν in Lu. 4:6. Here the real predicate notion appears. In Kuhner-Gerth (I, p. 628) the explanation is given that it is either apposition (οὗτος ὁ ἀνήρ= ‘this, the man’) or predicative sense (ὁ ἀνήρ οὗτος= ‘the man here’). Probably so, but in actual usage the connection is much closer than that. See Lu. 15:24, οὗτος ὁ υἱός μου. Cf. the French idiom La Republique Francaise. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 324) takes the predicate explanation. See also chapter XVI, The Article.

6. Article Absent. The article does not always occur with substantives when οὗτος is used. When οὗτος occurs with proper names in the N. T., the article is present. So Ac. 1:11 οὗτος ὁ Ἰησοῦς, 19:26 ὁ Ἰακώβους οὗτος, 7:40 ὁ γὰρ Μωϋσῆς οὗτος, 2:32 τούτων τῶν Ἰησοῦν, Heb. 7:1 οὗτος γὰρ ὁ Μελεχισδέκ, except in Ac. 6:14 Ἰησοῦς ὁ Ναζωραῖος οὗτος, where the article is used with the adjective, not with Ἰησοῦς. So uniform indeed in the Greek is the presence of the article with the noun and οὗτος, that the absence of the article causes something of a jolt. In Ro. 9:8 the conjunction of the words ταύτα τέκνα must not deceive us. The copula ἐστίν must be supplied between. The American Revision indeed calls in the English relative to render the idiom οὗ τα τέκνα τῆς σαρκὸς ταύτα τέκνα τοῦ θεοῦ. Cf. the simple predicate use in 1 Cor. 6:11, καὶ ταύτα τινὲς ἦτε. In Lu. 1:36, οὗτος μὴν ἕκτος ἐστίν, the substantive is predicate. The same thing is clearly true of Lu. 2:2, αὕτη ἀπογραφὴ πρώτη ἐγένετο. Cf. also τὸ ὕμνιν σημεῖον in Lu. 2:12. Some MSS. have τὸ, but in either case the copula is supplied. The remaining examples are not so simple, but ultimately resolve themselves into the predicate usage unless one has to except Ac. 24:21 (see below). In Lu. 7:44, ταύτην τῆν γυναῖκα, the article does not occur in L ⁴⁷ε. Winer² considers the reading without the article "unexceptionable," since the woman was present. In Lu. 24:21 the predicate accusative really is found, τρίτην ταύτην ἡμέραν ἅγει ἅψ᾽ ὦ ταύτα ἐγένετο, a common Greek idiom difficult to put into English. It is not ‘this third day,’ but ‘this a third day.’ Cf. also 2 Pet. 3:1, ταύτην δευτέραν γράφων ἐπιστολήν. In this instance the English translation resorts to the relative ‘that’ to bring out the predicate relation, ‘this is the second epistle that I write.’ In Jo. 2:11,

¹ See Gildersleeve, Synt., p. 331, for this "pseudo-attributive position."
² W.-Th., p. 110.
ταύτην ἐποίησεν ἀρχὴν τῶν σημείων even the American Revision has a wrong translation, ‘this beginning of miracles.’ It is rather ‘this Jesus did as a beginning of miracles.’ But Ν and Chrys. here have τὴν. In Jo. 4:18, τοῦτο ἀληθές εἴρηκας, the English relative is again necessary, ‘this is a true thing that thou didst say’ or ‘thou didst speak this as a true thing.’ The translation ‘truly’ rather obscures the idea. In Ac. 1:5, οὗ μετὰ πολλὰς ταύτας ἡμέρας, several difficulties appear. The litotes, οὗ μετὰ πολλὰς, does not have the usual order.1 Cf. Ac. 27:14 for μετ’ οὗ πολὺ. There is besides a use of μετά somewhat akin to that of πρὸ in πρὸ ἐξ ἡμέρων τοῦ πᾶσαχα (Jo. 12:1).2 The order would more naturally be a οὗ πολλὰς ἡμέρας μετὰ ταύτας or οὗ πολλῶν ἡμερῶν μετὰ ταύτας. However, the predicate use of ταύτας without the article permits the condensation. The free translation ‘not many days hence’ is essentially correct. It is literally ‘after not many days these’ as a starting-point (from these). In Jo. 21:14, τοῦτο ἦδη τρίτων ἐφανερώθη ἵσηνος, the matter is very simple, ‘this already a third time,’ or to use the English relative, ‘this is now the third time that.’ So also in 2 Cor. 12:14 and 13:1, τρίτων τοῦτο. The most difficult instance to understand is in Ac. 24:21, περὶ μιᾶς ταύτης φωνῆς ἧς ἔκεκραξα. Here ‘concerning this one voice which I cried’ makes perfectly obvious sense. The trouble is that it is the only N. T. example of such an attributive usage without the article. Blass3 takes it to be equivalent to ἣ φωνῆ ἣ ἐγένετο ἦν μία αὐτη. This is, of course, the normal Greek idiom and is possibly correct. But one wonders if a lapse from the uniform idiom may not occur here. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 92) cites τοῦτον πράγματος, ταύτα οδικήματα, τοῦτο κτήμα from inscriptions in Magnesia (Petersen-Luschan, Reisen in Lykien, p. 35, n. 54) and ἐστησαν τόδε μνήμα from a Bithynian inscription (Perrot, Exploration arch. de la Galatie, p. 24, N. 34). Hence one had best not be too dogmatic as to Luke's idiom in Ac. 24:21. After all, the predicate use may be the original use, as with ἐκείνος. Cf. Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 426 f.; Thompson, Syntax of Attic Greek, p. 67. See also chapter XVI.

7. Οὗτος in Contrast with ἐκείνος. The distinction between ὁδὲ for what follows and οὗτος for what precedes4 (not strictly observed in the ancient Greek) amounts to little in the N. T., since ὁδὲ is so rare. But οὗτος does, as a rule, refer to what is near or last mentioned and ἐκείνος to what is remote. See αὐτὴ and οὗτος in

1 W.-Sch., p. 221.
2 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 126, 133.
3 Ib., p. 172.
4 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 66.
2 Jo. 6 f. and τούτο in 2 Cor. 13: 9. This idiomatic use of οὗτος is plain in Ac. 7:19. In 1 Jo. 5:20 οὗτος really refers to αὐτῷ (ἐν τῷ υἱῷ αὐτοῦ) and so no difficulty exists. In Ac. 4:11 οὗτος is resumptive and takes up the main thread of the story again (cf. οὗτος in verse 9). In Ac. 8:26 αὕτη may refer to Γάζαν, but more probably (see 3, end) refers to ὁδός, a more remote substantive, indeed. In Lu. 16:1 again only the sense makes it clear (ἄνθρωπός τις ἦν πλούσιος ὃς εἶχεν οἰκονόμον, καὶ οὗτος) that οὗτος refers to οἰκονόμον. In Lu. 18:14, κατέβη οὗτος δεδικαιωμένος εἰς τὸν οἶκον αὐτοῦ παρ' ἐκείνων the two pronouns occur in sharp contrast, one pointing out the publican, the other the Pharisee. In such contrasts οὗτος refers to the last mentioned. This is clearly one example (besides 2 Jo. 6 f.) in the N. T., which curiously enough Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 171) does not recognise. Cf. also Jo. 13:24; ἐκεῖνος τούτῳ in Jo. 5:38, and τοῦτα ἐκεῖνοις in 1 Cor. 10:11. In Jo. 1:7 f. both οὗτος and ἐκεῖνος are used of John and in proper idiom. Instead of ἐκεῖνος we might have had οὗτος properly enough because of αὐτῷ, but ἐκεῖνος calls us back pointedly to ᾿Ιωάννης. Cf. Abbott, Johannine Grammar, p. 236.

Note οὗτος ὁ λόγος—ὁ μαθητής ἐκεῖνος in Jo. 21:23. In 1 Cor. 6:13, ὁ δὲ θεὸς καὶ ταύτην καὶ ταύτα καταργήσει, we find οὗτος used for both the near and the remote. The number and gender make it clear. In 1 Cor. 9:3 αὕτη points to what follows. In a case like ἐν τούτῳ χαίρω (Ph. 1:18), the main thought is meant by the demonstrative. So with ἐν τούτῳ δίδωμι· τοῦτο γὰρ ὑμῖν συμφέρει (2 Cor. 8:10). Cf. τούτο Ac. 24:14, etc.

8. As Antecedent of the Relative Pronoun. The absence of the demonstrative pronoun before the relative pronoun will be discussed later. This absence is in the case of a possible pronoun before the relative and after it also. The resumptive use of the demonstrative pronoun after the relative sentence has been already treated. But it is "the normal correlative" οὗτος—ὁς. So οὗτος περὶ οὗ (Mt. 11:10) οὗτος ὁν, (Jo. 7:25), οὗτος ὁς (Ac. 7:40), τούτο—ὁ (Ph. 2:5). See interrogative demonstrative and relative in τίς ἐστιν οὗτος ὁς (Lu. 5:21; 7:49); τί τοῦτο ὁ (Jo. 16:17 f.). Cf. Lu. 24:17. On the whole, however, the demonstrative before the relative is not common in the N. T. In Gal. 2:10 both αὐτό and τούτο are incorporated into the relative clause, ὁ καὶ ἐσπούδασα αὐτὸ τοῦτο ποιήσαι.

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 171.
2 Blass, ib., p. 172, explains ἐκεῖνος as showing that the discourse passes from John to Jesus. But ἐκεῖνος refers to John.
3 Thomp., Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 66.
9. **Gender and Number of οὗτος.** See chapter X. In general, like other adjectives, οὗτος agrees with its substantive in gender and number, whether predicate or attributive. Cf. Jo. 2:11. In 1 Cor. 6:13, καὶ ταύτην καὶ ταύτα, note the number and gender. But sometimes the construction according to sense prevails. So the masculine, not feminine, in Ac. 8:10, οὗτος ἐστιν ἡ Δύναμις τοῦ θεοῦ. So σκεῦος ἐκλογής ἐστίν μοι οὗτος (Ac. 9:15), οὗτοι and ἔθη (Ro. 2:14). Cf. also Ju. 12, οὗτοι—νεφέλαι, δένδρα, κύματα, ἄστερες; 2 Pet. 2:17, οὗτοι εἰσίν πηγαί and οὗτοι — ἐλαιαί (Rev. 11:4). In these examples assimilation to the gender of the predicate does not occur. Cf. ταύτα τί, Jo. 6:9. In Mt. 21:42 (Mk. 12:11), παρὰ κυρίου ἐγένετο αὕτη the feminine occurs where the neuter would be natural in Greek. This is a piece of "translation" Greek (Ps. 118:23). In Hebrew the feminine is the case for abstract words, the Hebrew having no neuter gender. In Eph. 2:8, τῇ γὰρ χάριτί ἐστε σεσωσµένοι διὰ πίστεως καὶ τοῦτο οὐκ ἔξ ὑµῶν, there is no reference to πίστεως in τοῦτο, but rather to the idea of salvation in the clause before. But in 1 Pet. 2:19 f. we have two examples of the neuter (τοῦτο) on purpose to present a more separate and abstract notion than αὕτη would have done, an ancient Greek idiom, τοῦτο γὰρ χάρις εἰ—τοῦτο χάρις παρὰ θεῷ. In 1 Cor. 10:6 the same principle applies, ταύτα δὲ τύποι ἡµῶν ἐγενήθησαν. A striking example is found in 1 Cor. 6:11, καὶ ταύτα τίνες ἦτε. Here ταύτα is much like τοιοῦτοι, but more definite and emphatic. For this use of οὗτος see also Jo. 12:34. In Ph. 3:7, ἄτινα ἦν μοι κέρδη, ταῦτα ἤγγυµαι—ζηµίαν, assimilation to the gender of the predicate is also absent.

Sometimes the plural ταύτα occurs where a single object is really in mind. The adverbial phrase μετὰ ταύτα (Lu. 12:4) can refer either to one or more incidents. It is not necessary to consider ταύτα as singular in idea in Jo. 19:36 and 1 Cor. 9:15. But the usage does appear in 3 Jo. 4, μεικτότερον τούτων οὐκ ἐχω χάριν (or χαράν), and the adverbial accusative καὶ ταύτα in Heb. 11:12. Some MSS. have καὶ ταύτα instead of καὶ τοῦτο in 1 Cor. 6:8.

But assimilation to the predicate both in gender and number occurs. So in Lu. 8:14 f. τὸ ... πεσόν, οὗτοι εἰσίν οἱ ἀκούσαντες. The same thing appears in Gal. 4:24, ἄτινα ἐστίν ἀλληγορούµενα· αὕται γὰρ εἰσίν δύο διαθήκαι. Note the assimilation of αὕτη in Lu. 2:2; 8:11; 22:53; Jo. 1:19; Ro. 11:27; 1 Cor. 9:3; 1 Jo. 2:25; 5:3, 4, 9, 11, etc., and οὗτος in Mt. 7:12.

10. **The Adverbial Uses of τοῦτο and ταύτα.** See chapter XII.

---

1 W.-Sch., p. 219.
Here we have καὶ τὸῦτο (adverbial accusative or nominative absolute) like Latin idque (English ‘and that too’) in 1 Cor. 6:6 (CDB ταῦτα), 8 (L ταῦτα); Ro. 13:11; Eph. 2:8 (this last could be otherwise explained). Καὶ ταῦτα, the usual classical idiom, appears in Heb. 11:12 with a concessive participle. In τὸῦτο μέν, τὸῦτο δὲ (Heb. 10:33) Blass sees a literary usage. In 2 Cor. 2:3 Paul has τὸῦτο αὐτό in the adverbial sense, while Peter (2 Pet. 1:5) turns the phrase around καὶ αὐτὸ τὸῦτο δὲ. Cf. the adverbial use of κεφὰλαίον in Heb. 8:1. The case of οὗτος in Jo. 21:21 is noteworthy.

11. The Phrase τὸῦτ’ ἐστὶν. See also chapter X, viii, (c). It is used without any regard to the number, gender or case of the word in apposition with it, exactly like the Latin id est. There are eighteen examples of it given in Moulton and Geden's Concordance, all but three of them from the Acts, Romans, Philo and Hebrews. It is a mark of the more formal literary style. In Mt. 27:46 the case explained is the vocative, in Mk. 7:2 the instrumental, in Ro. 7:18 the locative, in Heb. 2:14 the accusative, in Heb. 9:11 the genitive, in Heb. 7:5 the plural, in 1 Pet. 3:20 the plural. In Ro. 1:12 the uncontracted form occurs with In 1 Macc. 4:52 οὗτος ὃ μὴν Χασελεὺ is in apposition with the genitive. Here οὗτος performs the function of τὸῦτ’ ἐστὶν. Cf. the case-irregularities in the Apocalypse.

12. In Combination with Other Pronouns. Mention may be made of ἐν τῷ τῷ οὗτος (Ac. 4:10) and other instances of the double use of οὗτος. Cf. Mk. 6:2. Cf. οὗτος ὁ τῷ in Mk. 2:7, ταῦτα οὕτως (Ac. 24:9), οὕτως τὸῦτο; (1 Cor. 5:3), and in 2 Pet. 3:11 τοῦτων οὕτως πάντων. Examples of αὐτὸ τὸῦτο are common in Paul (Ro. 9:17; 13:6; 2 Cor. 7:11; Ph. 1:6. Cf. 2 Pet. 1:5). For τὸῦτο αὐτό see 2 Cor. 2:3, αὐτὸ τὸῦτο Ro. 13:6. For αὐτοὶ οἱ οἵτινες see Ac. 24:15, 20. For τὸῦτο ὃλον cf. Mt. 1:22; 26:56. There is no doubt some difference between ταῦτα πάντα (Mt. 4:9; Lu. 12:30; 16:14) and πάντα ταῦτα (Mt. 6:32). "In the first expression, πάντα is a closer specification of ταῦτα; in the second, πάντα is pointed out demonstratively by means of ταῦτα."

13. Ellipsis of οὗτος. The demonstrative is by no means always used before the relative. Often the relative clause is simply the object of the principal verb, as in ὁ λέγων ὃμιλε ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ ἔπατε (Mt. 10:27). Sometimes the implied demonstrative must be expressed in the English translation. The simplest form of this

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 171.  
2 W.-Sch., p. 219.  
3 Ib.  
4 W.-Th., p. 548.
idiom is where the case of the demonstrative would have been
the same as that of the relative. Thus οὐδὲν οὗ ἀπέκοψεν
Πέτρος τῷ ὦτίον (Jo. 18:26). Cf. οὗ in Ac. 1:24. In Ac. 8:24 ὦν
is for τούτων ὄ by attraction. But the ellipsis occurs also when a
different case would have been found.1 So in Mt. 19:11 οἷς δέδοται
would have been οὗτοι οἷς δέδ. In Jo. 13:29 ὦν would have been
preceded by ταῦτα. Cf. also Ac. 8:19; 13:37, etc. In Ro. 10:14,
πῶς πιστεύσωσιν οὗ ήκουσαν, the antecedent of οὗ would be either
tούτῳ (or ἐπὶ τούτῳ) or more probably εἰς τοῦτον (preposition also
dropped). When a preposition is used, it may belong to the rela-
tive clause, as in πῶς ἐπικάλεσωνται εἰς ὄν ἐπίστευσαν (Ro. 10:14;
cf. Jo. 19:37), or to the implied demonstrative, as in ἓνα πιστεύσητε
εἰς ὄν ἀπέστειλεν (Jo. 6:29). In Ro. 14:21 ἓν ὁσται illustrates the pre-
position with the relative, while in the next verse it illustrates the
preposition with the antecedent. In Jo. 11:6 ἓν ὁ τόπῳ is an
example where ἓν would have been used with both antecedent and
relative. So as to ἄφοι ὦν in 2 Cor. 2:3, etc.2 The same principle
of suppressed antecedent applies to relative adverbs, as in ἦλθεν
ὅπου ἦν (Jo. 11:32), strictly ἐκεῖσε ὅπου.

14. Shift in Reference. It is possible that in Ac. 5:20, λαλέτε
Ἴν τῷ ἱερῷ τῷ λαῷ πάντα τὰ ῥήματα τῆς ζωῆς ταύτης, a slight change in
sense has occurred, ταύτης more naturally going with ῥήματα. Cf.
ἐκ τοῦ σώματος τοῦ θανάτου τοῦτον (Ro. 7:24). But the point is not
very material.

(g) Ἐκεῖνος. Cf. Latin ille. The old form (Epic, Pindar, Tragic
poets) was κεῖνος or κήνος (Doric and Lesbian).3 Brugmann4 indeed
connects it with the old Indo-Germanic root ko. The locative
adverb ἐ-κεί (cf. κεῖ-θι, κεῖ-θεν, Doric, Lesbian) is the immediate
source of the pronoun κεῖ-νος, ἐ-κεί-νος. Cf. English hi-ther. The
original usage was therefore predicate.5 Thus in Thuc. i, 52. 2,
νῆς ἐκείναι ἐπιπλέουσιν (‘ships yonder are sailing ahead’), we must
not confuse it with αἱ νῆς ἐκείναι (‘those ships’). Cf. the "adver-
bial" use of οὗτος. By a strange coincidence, while at work on
this paragraph (Nov., 1908), I received a letter from Rev. R. H.
Graves, D.D., of Canton, China, concerning Chinese pronouns,
suggested by the chapter on Pronouns in my Short Grammar of
the Greek N. T. He says: "The ordinary pronoun for the third
person is k'ei. In Canton we also use k'ni. Compare
He mentions other accidental similarities, but I dare not venture
into Chinese etymology.

1 W.-Th., p. 158. 3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 242 f. 5 Ib., p. 426 f.
2 Cf. ib., p. 159. 4 Ib.
1. **The Purely Deictic.** We have a few examples in the N. T. So in Jo. 13:26, ἐκείνος ἔστιν ὁ ἐγὼ βασίλευς τὸ ψυμίου καὶ δῶσω αὐτῷ for Judas was present at the table. In Mt. 26:23 we have οὗτος. A gesture may also have accompanied the remark of the Pharisees in Jo. 9:28, σὺ μαθητής εἰ ἐκείνου. Cf. also Jo. 19:21. If ἐκείνος in Jo. 19:35 be taken as an appeal to God as a witness to the truth of what the writer is saying (possible, though by no means certain), the usage would be deictic. Blass\(^1\) considers that "everything is doubtful" as to this verse, a doubt shared by Abbott.\(^2\) For myself I think that ἐκείνος is here anaphoric and refers to αὐτοῦ (cf. the similar reference of οὗτος to αὐτοῦ in 1 Jo. 5:20; but see Remote Object). Another possible deictic example is in Jo. 7:11. Jesus was not present, but in the minds of the people a subject of discussion. Cf. also 9:12.

2. **The Contemptuous Use** (cf. οὗτος). It appears unmistakably (see 1) in Jo. 9:28, σὺ μαθητής εἰ ἐκείνου. It may also exist\(^3\) in Jo. 19:21. Cf. the solemn repetition of ἐκείνος with ὁ ἀνθρώπος in Mt. 26:24, as well as the change from οὗτος in verse 23.

3. **The Anaphoric.** This is the more frequent use of this pronoun. Thus in Jo. 1:8 ἐκείνος takes up οὗτος of verse 7 (Ἰωάννης of verse 6). In Jo. 18:5 ὁ δὲ μαθητής ἐκείνος resumes the story of ἄλλος μαθητής immediately preceding. Cf. ἄλλος and ἐκείνος in Jo. 5:43. In Jo. 13:25 ἐκείνος refers indeed to the preceding τοῦτο (cf. ἐκείνος οὗτος). In Jo. 5:19 the reference is to πατέρα just before. Cf. Jo. 4:25. Ἐκείνος δὲ (3 Jo. 2:21) is continuative like οὗτος. The articular participle may be followed by the resumptive ἐκείνος. So ὁ πέμψας με—ἐκείνος Jo. 1:33). Cf. Jo. 5:11; 2 Cor. 10:18. So in Jo. 1:18 the pronoun refers to θεὸς followed by ὁ ὁ. Cf. Mk. 7:20 ἐκείνο. See Jo. 14:21. For distinction between ἐκείνος and αὐτοῦ see 2 Tim. 2:26; 3:9.

4. **The Remote Object (Contrast).** This is not always true, as is shown by Jo. 18:15. Cf. Tit. 3:7. It is common thus to refer to persons who are absent. So in Jo. 3:28.(cf. Jo. 7:11) John speaks of Christ in contrast to himself, ἀπεσταλμένος εἰμὶ ἐμποσθεῖν ἐκείνου. So in verse 30, ἐκείνοις—ήμων. In 1 Cor. 9:25 note ἐκείνοι μὲν—ἡμεῖς δὲ. So in 10:11 ἐκείνοις—ήμων, 15:11 εἴτε ἐγὼ εἴτε ἐκείνοις. In Ac. 3:13 the contrast is sharp between ἡμεῖς—ἐκείνου, and in 2 Cor. 8:14 between ἡμῶν—ἐκείνων (cf. ἐκείνων—ἡμῶν in same verse). Cf. ἡμῖν — ἐκείνοις in Mt. 13:11. In Jo. 5:39 ἐκείναι

---

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 172.  
\(^3\) Abbott, ib., p. 568. He cites Mt. 27: 19, 63 as exx. of the good and the bad sense of ἐκείνος. Cf. Lat. *ille*. 

is in opposition to ὑμεῖς, as ἐκείνος to ὑμεῖς in the preceding verse. Cf. 2 Cor. 8:9. For a contrast between those present in the same narrative see οὗτος in Lu. 18:14. Cf. ἐκείνος and αὐτός in 1 Jo. 2:6 and τοῦτο ἢ ἐκένω in Jas. 4:15. It is common in expressions of place, like διὰ τῆς ὀδοῦ ἐκείνης (Mt. 8:28), εἰς ὄλην τὸν γῆν ἐκείνην (9:26; cf. ἐν 9:31), etc. It is frequent also with general phrases of time, like ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ἐκείναις (Mt. 3:1). Cf. Mk. 8:1; Lu. 2:1. It usually occurs at a transition in the narrative and refers to something previously mentioned. Blass notes that Lu. (1:39) uses also ταῦταίς in this phrase and that in 6:12 D has ἐκεῖναις rather than ταῦταίς. In particular observe the phrase ἐκεῖνη ἡ ἡμέρα for the Last Day (Mt. 7:22; Mk. 14:25; Lu. 21:34; 17:31; Jo. 16:23, etc. Cf. Jo. 6:40, etc.)

5. Emphasis. Sometimes ἐκείνος is quite emphatic. Abbott notes that in John's Gospel, outside of dialogue, ἐκείνος usually has considerable emphasis. Instance Jo. 1:8, 18, 33; 2:21; 3:30; 4:25; 5:19, 38; 6:29; 8:42; 14:26; 15:26, etc. In the First Epistle of John he observes that it occurs only seven times and all but one refer to Christ. He is the important one in John's mind. Cf. αὐτός in Ac. 20:35. But ἐκείνος is not always so emphatic even in John. Cf. Jo. 9:11, 25; 10:6; 14:21; 18:17; Mk. 16:10 ff; 2 Tim. 3:9.

6. With Apposition. It is not common with words in apposition. But note Jo. 16:13, ἐκείνος, τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς ἀληθείας (cf. Jo. 14:26). Note also ἐκείνο γινώσκετε, ὅτι (Mt. 24:43) after the fashion of οὗτος with ὅτι. Cf. also the resumptive uses with participles (Jo. 1:18, etc.).

7. Article with Nouns except when Predicate. When the noun is used with ἐκείνος in the N. T., the article always appears, except when predicate. In Jo. 10:1, ἐκείνος κλέπτης ἐστίν the substantive is predicate, as in 10:35, ἐκείνοις εἶπεν θεοῦς. With adjectives we may note the repetition of the article in Jo. 20:19 and the ambiguous position of ἐκεῖνη in Heb. 8:7 due to the absence of διαθήκη. With ὅλος we find this order, εἰς ὄλην τὴν γῆν ἐκεῖνην (Mt. 9:26, etc.) and πᾶς the same, πᾶσαν τὴν ὀφειλήν ἐκεῖνην (Mt. 18:32, etc.).

8. As Antecedent to Relative. So ἐκείνος ἔστιν ὁ (Jo. 13:26), ἐκείνου ὑπὲρ οὗ (Ro. 14:15) ἐκείνους δι’ οὗς (Heb. 6:7). Note also ἐκείνος ἐστιν ὁ ἀγάπων (Jo. 14:21) where the articular participle is the practical equivalent of a relative clause.

9. Gender and Number. Little remains to be said about variations in gender and number. Two passages in John call for re-
mark, inasmuch as they bear on the personality of the Holy Spirit. In 14:26, ὁ δὲ παράκλητος, τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἀγιόν ὁ πέμψει ὁ πατὴρ ἐν τῷ ὅνοματί μου, ἐκείνος ὑμᾶς διδάξει, the relative ὁ follows the grammatical gender of πνεῦμα. Ἐκείνος, however, skips over πνεῦμα and reverts to the gender of παράκλητος. In 16:13 a more striking example occurs, ὅταν δὲ ἔλθῃ ἐκείνος, τὸ πνεῦμα τῆς ἀληθείας. Here one has to go back six lines to ἐκείνος again and seven to παράκλητος. It is more evident therefore in this passage that John is insisting on the personality of the Holy Spirit, when the grammatical gender so easily called for ἐκείνος. Cf. ὁ in Jo. 14:17, 26 and αὐτό in 14:17. The feminine ἐκείνης in Lu. 19:4 evidently refers to ὁδὸ unexpressed.

10. Independent Use. The frequency of ἐκείνος in John's Gospel may be noticed, but the Synoptics and Acts are not far behind. More curious, however, is the fact that in the Synoptics ἐκείνος is nearly always used with a substantive (adjectival) while the independent pronominal use of the singular is almost confined to the Gospel of John (and First Epistle).¹ All the uses in the First Epistle and nearly all in the Gospel are independent. As exceptions note Jo. 4:39, 53; 11:51, 53; 16:23, 26, etc. On the other hand only two instances appear in the Apocalypse (9:6; 11:13) and both with substantives.

(h) Αὐτός. It has undoubtedly developed in the κοινη a demonstrative force as already shown on p. 686, and as is plain in the modern Greek. Moulton² quotes plain examples from the papyri (see above). In the N. T. it is practically confined to Luke (and Mt. 3:4 perhaps), where it is fairly common, especially in the Gospel. So ἐν αὐτῷ τῇ οἰκίᾳ (Lu. 10:7), 'in that house.' Moulton³ notes that in Mt. 11:25 (parallel to Lu. 10:21) we have ἐν ἐκείνῳ τῷ καιρῷ and in Mk. 13:11 ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ὠρᾳ (parallel to Lu. 12:12 ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ὠρᾳ). The tendency was not foreign to the ancient Greek and it is common enough in the modern vernacular⁴ to find αὐτός ὁ = 'this.'

(i) THE CORRELATIVE DEMONSTRATIVES. Only four occur in the N. T. One of them appears only once and without the article, φωνῆς ἐνεχθείσης αὐτῷ τοιῶσδε (2 Pet. 1:17). It has died in the vernacular (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 63) like ὁδε, τηλικόσδε and τοσόσδε. Τηλικοῦτος appears once as predicate, τηλικαύτα ὄντα (Jas.

² Prol., p. 91.
³ Ib.
3:4), elsewhere attributive. The article is not used. This cor-
relative of age always refers to size in the N. T. (2 Cor. 1:10;
Heb. 2:3). Once indeed it is in connection with οὗτως μέγας
(Rev. 16:18) and so redundant. The other two are τοιούτος and
tοσούτως. Τοιούτος is the demonstrative of quality (Latin talis)
and it is used with a good deal of freedom. It is, of course, merely
tόσος and οὕτως combined. The compound form alone occurs in the
N. T. and became more frequent generally.¹ Toioútòs without a
substantive is used either without the article (Lu. 9:9) or more
usually with the article in the attributive position (Mt. 19:
14; Ac. 19:25; Ro. 1:32; 1 Cor. 7:28; 2 Cor. 10:11, etc.). In
Jo. 4:23, τοιούτους ζητεῖ τοὺς προσκυνόντας, the articular parti-
ciple is in the predicate accusative. When used with substan-
tives τοιούτος may be anarthrous, as in Mt. 9:8; 18:5; Mk. 4:
33; Heb. 7:26; 8:1; Jas. 4:16, etc., but the article occurs also
(Mk. 6:2; 9:37; 2 Cor. 12:3). In Mk. 6:2 we have the order
αἱ δυνάμεις τοιαύται (cf. οὕτως, ἐκείνος). It comes before the substan-
tive (Jo. 9:16) or after (Ac. 16:24). It is used as the anteced-
ent of οὗς (Mk. 13:19; 1 Cor. 15:48; 2 Cor. 10:11) following
οὗς. But note also τοιούτους ὁπάιος in Ac. 26:29, τοιούτος ὃς in
Heb. 7:26 f.; 8:1, and in 1 Cor. 5:1 τοιαύτη ἡτίς. We even have
τοιούτος ὃς in Phil. 9. Cf. ποιος—τοιούτος in a Logion of Jesus,
P.Oxy. IV, p. 3, 1. τοσοῦτος (τόσος, οὕτως) is the pronoun of degree
(Latin taurus), both size, τοσαύτην πίστιν (Mt. 8:10), and quantity,
ἀρτοὶ τοσοῦτοι (Mt. 15:33). It occurs with the article only once,
ὁ τοσούτος πλαῦτος (Rev. 18:16). Sometimes it appears without a
substantive, as in Ac. 5:8; Gal. 3:4; Heb. 1:4, etc. It is the
accurate with ὅσος in Heb. 1:4 τοσοῦτῳ ὅσω. 7:20-22 καθ᾿ ὅσον—κατὰ τοσοῦτο, and in 10:25 τοσοῦτῳ ὅσῳ. It is worth
while at this point to note the correlative adverbs, οὗτως ὅστε
(Ac. 14:1), οὕτως ὃς (1 Cor. 4:1), οὕτως—ὅπως (Mt. 5:16). Cf.
ὁστε—οὕτως δέ (Ro. 15:20).

VII. Relative Pronouns ἀναφορικαὶ ἀντικυμίαι.

(a) LIST IN THE N. T. The only relatives in the N. T. (not
counting adverbs) are ὃς, ὅστις, ὃς, ὅποιος, ὅσος, ἡλικός, and ὅ in
the Apocalypse. The others have fallen by the way. Some MSS.
read ὅνπερ in Mk. 15:6, while ὅσδήπερ in Jo. 5:4 is not in the
critical text. The LXX has ὅπερ (ἀπερ) five times,² but ἡλικός not
at all. These relative pronouns do not occur with uniform fre-
quency as will be seen. ¹Ος is the only one very common.

¹ Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 162.
(b) THE NAME "RELATIVE." It is not very distinctive. The idea of relation (anaphoric use) belongs to the demonstrative and to the personal pronouns also. The anaphoric demonstrative use is indeed the origin of the relative. The transition from demonstrative to relative is apparent in Homer in the case of both ὁ and ὅς. Sometimes it is difficult in Homer to tell the demonstrative and the relative apart. Cf. English that, German der. Homer often used τε and τις with ὁ and ὅς to distinguish the relative from the demonstrative. Gradually the relative use, as distinct from the anaphoric demonstrative, won its way.

(c) A BOND BETWEEN CLAUSES. The relative becomes then the chief bond of connection between clauses. Indeed many of the conjunctions are merely relative adverbs, such as ὅς, ὅτε, ὅπως, etc. The relative plays a very important part in the structure of the subordinate sentence in Greek. That matter will receive due treatment in chapter XIX, Mode. The agreement of the relative with antecedent in person, number, gender, and sometimes case, is just the natural effort to relate more exactly the two clauses with each other. These points will receive discussion under ὅς which best exemplifies them. The assimilation is at bottom the same that we see in other adjectives (cf. demonstrative pronouns). The assimilation of the relative in person, gender, number, and even case of the antecedent may be compared to assimilation in the adjective and even verbs (compound verbs especially) and prepositions. Cf. Josef Liljeblad, De Assimilatione Syntactica aped Thuc. Questiones, 1900, p. 1).

(d) ὅς.

1. In Homer. See discussion of the demonstrative ὅς for origin.

2. But already in Homer the relative sense, ἀρθροῦ ὑποτακτικόν, is the main one, and the demonstrative is on the decline.

(c) Comparison with Other Relatives. Though ὅς in the N. T. far outnumbers all the other relatives, yet the distinction between

1. Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 81.
and the other relatives is breaking down. Indeed in the vernacular it may be questioned if it was ever preserved. One may compare the unchangeable Hebrew \textit{תַּחַי}. Moulton\textsuperscript{1} observes that in Polybius the distinction between \textit{אל} and \textit{אַלִּית} has "worn rather thin." In the LXX \textit{אל} is frequent,\textsuperscript{2} but in the modern Greek \textit{אל} "is used rarely even in writing."\textsuperscript{3} It is wholly absent in the vernacular. The modern Greek vernacular uses \textit{ποῦ} or \textit{ὅπου}. In the oblique cases the conjunctive pronoun \textit{τοῦ}, \textit{τῆς} is added to \textit{ποῦ} (cf. the Hebrew idiom). See Thumb, \textit{Handb.}, p. 93. Jebb (Vincent and Dickson's \textit{Handb.}, etc., p. 303) calls it "a curious example of false analogy" and finds an instance in Aristophanes (\textit{Birds}, 1300), \textit{μέλη ὁποῦ}. Here \textit{ὅπου} = \textit{ἐν ὁλί}. The vernacular carried it further. He cites modern English vernacular, "The men as he met." Indeed in Rev. 2:13 \textit{ὅπου} really points to an unexpressed \textit{παρ' ὑμῖν}. In Col. 3:11 \textit{ὅπου} is almost personal. The occasional apparent confusion between \textit{ὅς} and interrogative pronouns will be discussed directly. On the whole, \textit{ὅς} in the N. T., as in the \textit{koinē} generally, is still used in accord with the classic idiom.

3. \textit{With Any Person.} In itself, of course, \textit{ὅς}, like all relatives, has no person. So the first person in 1 Cor. 15:10, the second person in Ro. 2:23, the third person in Mt. 5:19; Lu. 6:48 f.; 1 Cor. 4:17. These examples may suffice.

4. \textit{Gender.} This is not so simple. The normal thing is for the relative to agree with the antecedent in gender, as in 1 Cor. 4:17, \textit{Τιμόθεου, ὁ ἐστίν μου κέντον}. So in Col. 1:24 \textit{ὑπὲρ τοῦ σῶματος αὐτοῦ, ὃ ἐστιν ἡ ἐκκλησία}; Col. 2:10 \textit{ἐν αὐτῷ, ὃς ἐστιν ἡ κεφαλὴ (cf. Eph. 4:15) Col. 2:17 σαββάτων, ὃ (some MSS. \textit{ὁ} ἐστιν σκιᾶ τῶν μελλόντων); Rev. 5:6 ὁφθαλμοὺς ἐπτά, \ Passive εἰσίν τὰ [ἐπτά] πνεύματα. In Rev. 21:8, \textit{τὸ μέρος αὐτῶν ἐν τῇ λίμνῃ τῇ καιομένῃ πυρί καὶ θείῳ ὁ ἐστιν ὁ θάνατος ὁ δεύτερος}, the agreement is regular, but the idea of \textit{ὁ} may be more inclusive than merely\textsuperscript{4} \textit{μέρος}. Cf. 1 Pet. 3:4.

On the other hand the relative is assimilated in gender to the predicate substantive. This is also a perfectly natural agreement. Winer\textsuperscript{5} considers that this is true particularly when the predicate presents the main idea. See Mk. 15:16, \textit{τῆς αὐλῆς, ὃ ἐστιν πραίτώριον}; Gal. 3:16, \textit{τῷ σπέρματι σου, ὃς ἐστιν Χριστός}; Eph. 6:17, \textit{τὴν μάχαιραν

\textsuperscript{1} Prol., p. 92.  
\textsuperscript{2} Thack., Gr., vol. I, p. 192.  
\textsuperscript{3} V. and D., Handb., etc., p. 56. "The disuse of \textit{ὅς} in common speech is characteristic; so simple a form ceased to satisfy the desire of emphasis." Jebb in V. and D., p. 302.  
\textsuperscript{4} Cf. W.-Sch., p. 231 f.  
\textsuperscript{5} W.-M., p. 207.
PRONOUNS (ANTÓNYMIAI) 713

tou pneúmatos, ó èstiv rèma theou; Rev. 4:5, λαμπάδες—á eiśin tā èptà pneúmatα (but some MSS. aí). Cf. 2 Th. 3:17. The MSS. vary in a number of instances between agreement with antecedent and predicate. So Col. 1:27, tou μυστηρίου τούτου—óς (or ó) èstiv Χριστός. Cf. also 1 Tim. 3:16, where the true text òς is changed in the Western class of documents to ó to agree with μυστηρίου.

See also Eph. 1:13 f., τω πνευματι—ó (MSS. òς) èstiv ἀρραβών. So aí or ó in Rev. 5:8. In Mt. 13:31 f. κόκκῳ is followed first by ón and then by ó (cf. σπερμάτων).

In another group of passages the change is made according to the real gender rather than the grammatical. Thus in Ac. 15:17 tà ἔθνη ἐφ' οὖς (cf. 26:17), Jo. 6:9 παιδάριον òς ἔχει, Ro. 9:23 f. σκεύη ἐλέους—óς, Col. 2:19 κεφαλῆν ἐξ οὖ, Phil. 10 τέκνου ὄν, Rev. 13:14 θηρίω òς. In Gal. 4:19 as is preceded by both ὑμᾶς and τεκνία. In 2 Jo. 1, ἐκλετή κυρία καὶ τοῖς τέκνοις αὐτῆς, οὖς the grammatical gender (feminine and neuter followed by masculine) is ignored entirely. Cf. Ph. 2:15.

In a passage like 1 Cor. 15:10, εἰμὶ ó εἰμὶ, there is no mistake. See òς above in verse 9. It is not 'who I am,' but 'what I am,' not exactly ὁ οὖς either, but a more abstract idea than that. Cf. ó in Jo. 4:22, used twice for the object of worship, God. So in 1 Jo. 1:1 observe ó ἥν—ó ἀκηκόαμεν, ó ἐωράκαμεν (cf. verse 3) for Jesus. One may recall here that the collective abstract neuter, πᾶν ó (Jo. 6:37, 39; 17:2), is used for the disciples. Cf. ó—κακείνοι (Jo. 17:24).

Sometimes also the relative agrees neither with the antecedent nor with a predicate substantive, but gathers the general notion of 'thing.' A good example occurs in 1 Jo. 2:8, ἐντολήν καὶ ἡν ὑμᾶς, ó èstiv ἀληθεὺς, 'which thing is true.' So Eph. 5:5, πλεονέκτης, ó (Western and Syrian classes read òς) èstiv εἰδω- λολάτρης, 'which thing is being an idolater.' A particularly good example is Col. 3:14 where ó comes in between a feminine and a masculine, την ἀγάπην, ó èstiv σύνδεσμοι. In Mk. 12:42 we have a similar example, λεπτὰ δύο, ó èstiv κοδράντης.

Indeed ó èstiv comes to be used as a set expression, like τοῦτ' èstiv, without any regard to the antecedent or the predicate, as ó èstiv υἱοὶ βροντῆς, Mk. 3:17. Three phrases go together in this matter, ó èstiv, ó ἐρμηνεύεται, ó λέγεται. The two latter occur in the periphrastic form also. Indeed the examples just noted above may very well be explained from this point of view. So Mt. 1:23, Ἔμμανουήλ ὁ èstiv μεθερμήνευόμενον μεθ' ἡμῶν ὁ θεός, where ob-

serve the neuter participle like ὁ. Cf. Ac. 4:36. In Mt. 27:33, Γολγοθα ὁ ἐστιν κρανίον τόπος λεγόμενος, the participle is masculine like τόπος (cf. Mk. 15:22). In Jo. 1:39 ὁ λέγεται μεθερμηνεύωμενου connects two v vocatives. Cf. 20:16. In Jo. 1:41 note the accusative and nominative connected with neuter participle, Μεσσίαν ὁ ἐστιν μεθερμηνευόμενον Χριστός, occurs between verb-forms, as in Mk. 5:41; 7:34; or genitives as in Heb. 7:2; Rev. 20:12; 21:17; or whole clauses, as in Mk. 15:34. But see Jo. 9:7; Rev. 20:2. In Ac. 9:36, however, the personal construction occurs, Ταβειθά, ἦ διερμηνευόμενη λέγεται Δορκάς. See also chapter X, VIII, (c).

Once more, ὁ is used to refer to a verbal idea or to the whole sentence. Instance Mt. 12:4, τοὺς ἄρτος τῆς προθέσεως ἔθαγον ὁ ὁμ ἐξον ἣν αὐτῷ φαγεῖν. Here probably τὸ φαγεῖν is the idea referred to,1 though in Mk. 2:26 and Lu. 6:4 we have ὁ. The neuter gender is only natural here. In Ac. 2:32 ὁ is most likely 'where-of,' though 'of whom,' referring to Ἰησοῦν, is possible. So as to 3:15. But there is no doubt as to Ac. 11:30, ὁ καὶ ἐποίησαι; 26:10, ὁ καὶ ἐποίησα; Gal. 2:10, ὁ καὶ ἠποκύπτα σά αὐτό τοῦτο ποιήσαι (note here the use of αὐτὸ τοῦτο in the relative clause); Col. 2:29 εἰς ὁ καὶ κοπιῶ (cf. εἰς ὁ in 2 Th. 1:11; 2:14; 1 Pet. 2:8). Cf. also ὁ καὶ ὑμᾶς ἀντίτυπον νῦν σῶσει βάπτισμα (1 Pet. 3:21). Per contra see in the papyri ὁ used like ὁ after analogy of τοιούτο (v).2 Note in passing ὁ in Lu. 2:15, like ἦ ἦ τε in Heb. 9:2.

5. Number. Here again, as a rule, the relative concurs with the antecedent in number, as in ἀστήρ ὦν (Mt. 2:9), θεός ὁς (Ro. 2:6). The construction according to sense is not infrequent, as in πάντες ὡς (Lu. 6:17 f.), κατὰ πόλιν πᾶσαν ἐν αἷς (Ac. 15:36, note distributive idea), μωρολογία ἡ εὐθυαπελιὰ ᾧ (Eph. 5:4, where feminine singular could have occurred because of ἦ), γενεάς—ἐν ὀἷς (Ph. 2:15), δευτέραν ὑμίν γράφω ἐπιστολὴν, ἐν αἷς (2 Pet. 3:1, referring to both, probably). Cf. ὁ — λέγοντας (Rev. 5:13). On the other hand note the change from the plural to the singular in ἡμέρα δωδέκα ἡμὰς ἦς (Ac. 24:11), and ἐν οὐρανοῖς — ἐξ ὶν (Ph. 3:20). For the neuter plural in the relative (cf. ταῦτα) to cover a vague general idea see ὠν, in 1 Tim. 1:6, ᾧθ' ὠν Lu. 1:20, ἐν ὀἷς Lu. 12:1 (cf. Ac. 26:12), ἧφ' ὀἷς Ro. 6:21, etc. Cf. Col. 2:22.

6. Case.
(a) Absence of attraction normal. The obvious way is for the case of the relative to be due to the construction in which it is used or to follow the same law as other nouns and pronouns (so

1 W.-Sch., p. 233. 2 Maysgr, Gr., p. 310.
with prepositions). That is to say, assimilation of case is not a necessity. It was indeed in a sense an after-refinement. One must not get the notion that assimilation of case had to be. Thucydides,\(^1\) for instance, did not use it so extensively in his rather complicated sentences, where the relative clauses stand to themselves. Indeed the absence of it is common enough in the N. T., outside of Luke. Cf. Mt. 13:31 κόκκων ὧν, Mk. 13:19 κτίσεως ἡν Jo. 2:22 λόγω ὧν, (cf. 4:50), Jo. 4:5 χωρίου ὧν (CD ὧν), Tit. 3:5 ἐφημων ὧν, Mt. 27:60 μνημείων ὧν, Ac. 8:32 γραφής ἡν. Not to be exhaustive, one may refer to the rather long list in Winer-Schmiedel\(^2\) (Mt. 13:44, 48; 23:35; Lu. 13:19, 21; Ac. 1:4; 4:10; 1 Tim. 6:21; Heb. 6:19; 8:2; 9:7; 1 Pet. 1:8; Rev. 1:20, etc.). The absence of assimilation in case is not only common in the old Greek, but also in the LXX, the Apocrypha and the papyri. In Aristotle attraction is nearly confined to the more recondite essays (Schindler, *De Attractionis Pronominum Rel. Usu Aristotelico*, p. 94).

\((\beta)\) Cognate accusative. The accusative in Ro. 6:10, ὁ ἀπέθανεν, ὁ ἤψυ, and Gal. 2:20, ὁ ἤψυ, may be called adverbial. In reality it reproduces the idea of the verb (cognate acc.). Cf. Mk. 10:38 f.

\((\gamma)\) Attraction to the case of the antecedent. This is very common in the N. T., especially in the writings of Luke. The papyri, even "the most illiterate of them,"\(^3\) show numerous examples of attraction, "a construction at least as popular in late as in classical Greek." This applies to the LXX also. The MSS. naturally vary sometimes, some having attraction, others not. Indeed Blass\(^4\) finds this "always" in the passages in W. H. without attraction save in Heb. 8:2. Cf. ἡν (ἡς) in Mk. 13:19, ὡν (ὡ) in Jo. 2:22, 4:50, etc. On the whole attraction seems the more common. But this "idiomatic attraction of the relative" "occurs only twice in Matthew (18:19; 24:50) and once in Mark (7:13)," whereas it "is very common in Luke" (Plummer, *Comm.*, p. li). The effect of "this peculiar construction" was to give "a sentence more internal unity and a certain periodic compactness."\(^5\) No instance of attraction of a nominative to an oblique case occurs in the N. T., though this idiom is found in the ancient Greek.\(^6\)

\(^1\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 173.  
\(^2\) P. 226.  
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol., p. 93.  
\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 173.  
\(^5\) W.-Th., p. 163.  
\(^6\) Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 71; W.-Sch., p. 227.
It is usually the accusative case that is assimilated into another oblique case. Thus the accusative may be attracted into the genitive, as πρᾶγματος οὗ (Mt. 18:19), λόγου οὗ (Jo. 15:20), πάντων ὄν (Ac. 1:1; 3:21; 22:10), διαθήκης ἡς (Ac. 3:25), ἐπαγγελίας ἡς (7:17), θυών ὄν (7:45), πνεύματος ἁγίου οὗ (Tit. 3:6). Cf. also Ac. 9:36; 22:10; 1 Cor. 6:19; 2 Cor. 10:8, 13; Eph. 1:8; Heb. 6:10; 9:20; Jas. 2:5. In several instances it is the accusative of the inner object that is attracted. Cf. Eph. 1:19 f. So παρακλήσεως ἡς παρακαλούμεθα (2 Cor. 1:4), χάριτος ἡς ἐχαρίτωσεν (Eph. 1:6), κλήσεως ἡς ἐκλήθησε (4:1), φωνῆς ἡς ἐκέκραξε (Ac. 24:21), ἔργων ἁσεβείας ὄν ἁσέβησαν (Ju. 15).¹ There are examples also of the accusative attracted to the ablative. So ἐκ τῶν κερατίων ὄν (Lu. 15:16), ἐκ τοῦ ὑδάτος οὗ (Jo. 4:14), ἀπὸ τῶν ὑψαρίων ὄν (21:10), ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος οὗ (1 Jo. 3:24). Cf. Jo. 7:31. Then again the assimilation of the accusative to the pure dative might have been expected, but curiously enough I find so far no example of it in the N. T. In 1 Cor. 7:39 there is an instance of the relative attracted from the accusative to the dative of an omitted antecedent, ἐλευθέρα ἐστιν ὃ θέλει γαμηθῆναι, unless γαμηθῆναι be repeated, when ὃ is the necessary case. However, several examples occur where the accusative is attracted to the locative or the instrumental. Instances of the locative are found in ἐν ἡμέρᾳ ἦ—ἐν ὑπάρχῃ ἦ (Mt. 24:50. This is not an instance of one preposition for antecedent and relative), ἐπὶ πάσιν ὃς (Lu. 2:20; 9:43; 24:25), ἐν τῶν ὄνοματι σου ὃ (Jo. 17:11 f.), ἐν—θλίψεων ὃς (Ac. 7:16), ἐν ἀνδρὶ ὃ (17:31), ἐπὶ τῶν λόγων ὃ (20:38), ἐπὶ τῇ ἀκαθαρσίᾳ ἦ (2 Cor. 12:21), ἐπὶ ἐργοῖς ἁγαθοῖς ὃς (Eph. 2:10),² ἐν τῷ μνήματι ὃ (2 Th. 1:4), ἐν τῷ ποτηρίῳ ὃ (Rev. 18:6). This is probably true also of 1 Cor. 7:20, ἐν τῇ κλῆσει ἦ ἐκλήθη, where ἦν would have been the cognate accusative.³ For attraction to the instrumental see παραδόσει ἦ (Mk. 7:13), δόξῃ ἦ (Jo. 17:5, but W. H. have ἦν in margin), σημείοις ὃς (Ac. 2:22), θυσίαις ὃς (Heb. 10:1, but W. H. as). In a few instances it is an open question whether we have attraction or not. Thus in Jo. 13:5, τῷ λευτίῳ ἦ ἄν διεξαγόμενος, either the instrumental ὃ or the accusative ὃ (cf. Jo. 21:7) is correct. In Ac. 9:17, ἐν τῇ ὀδῷ ἦ ἠρχοὐ, the cognate accusative ἦν is possible, though the locative originally is more likely. In 1 Th. 3:9, ἐπὶ πάσῃ τῇ χαρᾷ ἦ ἤμνημεν, a cognate accusative was possible (ἣν) attracted

¹ Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 174; Moulton, Prol., p. 93.
² But in W.-Sch. (p. 225) ois is held to be essential to the structure. For attraction in John see Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 298,
³ But see per contra W.-Sch., p. 223.
to the locative or an original instrumental. In Col. 1:23, τοῦ εὐ-
αγγελίου οὗ ἡκοῦσατε, either the accusative or the genitive might
occur with ἀκοῦω. But in 2 Tim. 1:13, λόγων ὑν παρ ἐμοῦ ἡκοῦσας,
the accusative was almost certainly the original form.\(^1\) Cf. Ac.
1:4 ἤν ἡκοῦσατε μου. Plummer (On Luke, p. li) notes that this
attraction in Luke is particularly frequent after πᾶς (Lu. 2:20;
3:19; 9:43, etc.). In Lu. 5:9, ἐπὶ τῇ ἄγρα τῶν Ἰχθύων ὑν (ἡ)
συνέκαβον, the attraction in some MSS. is to the locative, in others
to the genitive.

A few instances are found in the N. T. where the attraction is
from some other case than the accusative. A clear case of a loca-
tive assimilated to a genitive appears in Ac. 1:22, ἐς τῆς ἡμέρας ἦς
ἀνελήμφησε. This is in accord with the ancient Greek idiom. The
very same construction appears in the LXX (Lev. 23:15. Cf.
Bar. 1:19). In 1 Tim. 4:6 A reads διδασκαλίας ἦ παρηκολούθηκας,
but the rest have ἦ. A dative has been attracted into the geni-
tive along with incorporation and the preposition in Ro. 4:17,
κατέναυτι ὑμῖν ἐπιστευσεν θεοῦ= κατέναυτι τοῦ θεοῦ ἦ ἐπιστευσεν.
So the phrase ἀφ᾽ ἦς (Ac. 24:11; 2 Pet. 3:4, but Lu. 7:45 ὡρας) is an ab-
breviation of etc, ἀφ᾽ ἡμέρας ἦ (locative attracted to ablative). In
Ac. 20:18 we actually have ἀπὸ πρώτης ἡμέρας ἦ ἐπέβην, but
as a point of departure (ablative) rather than a point of location
(locative). Cf. also ἀφ᾽ ἦς ἡμέρας (Col. 1:6, 9) where the incorpo-
ration resolves itself into ἀφ᾽ ἡμέρας ἦ. So likewise ἄρι ἦς ἡμέρας
(Mt. 24:38; Lu. 1:20; 17:27; Ac. 1:2) really comes from ἄρι
ἡμέρας ἦ (locative to genitive). In Heb. 3:9 a can be regarded as
adverb 'where' or as relative 'wherewith' (marg. of the Ameri-
can Revision). If it is relative, ὡ was probably the unattracted
form (instrumental to genitive like πειρασμόν). In Mk. 10:38 f.,
tὸ βάπτισμα δο βαπτίζομαι, the relative is in the cognate accusa-
tive retained with the passive verb.\(^2\) See further chapter on Cases.

(5) Inverse attraction. What is called inverse attraction is due
to the same tendency to identify antecedent and relative, only the
assimilation is that of the antecedent to the relative. In itself this
phenomenon is no more peculiar than the other. Plato., who
uses the ordinary attraction very often, seldom has inverse attrac-
tion (Cleef, De Attractionis in Enunciationibus Rel. Vsv Platonico,
pp. 44-46). No inverse attraction is found in Pisidian Greek
(Compernass, De Serm. Gr., p. 13). The examples are not very
numerous in the N. T., but the ancient Greek amply supports the

\(^1\) W.-Sch., p. 225. Hort in note to text says: "ὁν probably a primitive
error for ὅν."

\(^2\) Cf. W.-Sch., p. 226 f.
idiom. One example, λίθου δὲ ἀπεδοκίμασαν, occurs in Mt. 21:42; Mk. 12:10= Lu. 20:17. It is from the LXX (Ps. 118:22). In 1 Pet. 2:7 W. H. read Mos. Cf. also Lu. 1:73, ὅρκον δὲ ὡμῖσεν, which might have been ὅρκον οὗ after μνησθήναι. See also 1 Cor. 10:16, τὸν ἄρτον δὲ κλώμεν. Hence also τὸ ποτήριον δὲ εὐλογοῦμεν, of verse 16. If ὅν is a part of the text (not W. H.) in Ac. 10:36, we have τὸν λόγον ὅν. Sometimes anacoluthon occurs also as in πᾶν ῥῆμα ἀργὸν δὲ—περὶ αὐτοῦ, Mt. 12:36; πάς ὃς ἔρει—ἀφεθῆσεται αὐτῷ, Lu. 12:10; παντὶ ὃ ἔδοθη—ζητηθῆσεται παρ' αὐτοῦ, 12:48; πάν ὃ δέδωκεν—ἐξ αὐτοῦ, Jo. 6:39; πάν ὃ δέδωκας αὐτῷ δώσει αὐτοῖς, 17:2.

In 2 Cor. 12:17, μὴ τινα ἥν—δι' αὐτοῦ, we have anacoluthon, but not attraction. In Mt. 25:24, συνάγεις ὃθεν οὐ διεσκόρπισας, we have ἐκεῖθεν ὅπου shortened to ὅθεν. There is not inverse attraction in οὐδεὶς ὃς (1 Cor. 6:5) since ἐν precedes οὐδεὶς.

(e) Incorporation. But the most striking instance of this close unity between antecedent and relative is the incorporation of the antecedent into the relative clause with identity of case. I count 54 such examples in Moulton and Geden. They are fairly well distributed through the different portions of the New Testament.

1) The simplest form of such incorporation is where no change of case is required. Thus Lu. 24:1, φέρουσαι ᾧ ἡτοίμασαν ἀρώματα; Jo. 6:14, ἵδοντες ᾧ ἐποίησεν σημεία (W. H.); Mt. 7:2, ἐν ὃ γὰρ κρίματι κρίνετε κριθῆσεσθε, καὶ ἐν ὃ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε μετρηθῆσεται ὡμῖν= Mk. 4:24 = Lu. 6:38; Mt. 24:44, ὃ οὖ δοκεῖτε ὣρα=Lu. 12:40 (not Mt. 24:50). For further examples of this simple incorporation see Mt. 23:37 = Lu. 13:34 (the set phrase, adverbial accusative, δὲ τρόπον), so also Ac. 1:11; 7:28; 15:11; 27:25; Mk. 2:19 (ὁσον χρόνον; but not Lu. 12:46= Mt. 24:50); Lu. 17:29 f.; Jo. 9:14; 11:6; 17:3; Ac. 7:20; 25:18; probably 26:7; Ro. 2:16; 7:19; 9:24 (οὗς—Ημᾶς note); 16:2; Ph. 3:18 (but probably only predicate accusative like Mk. 15:12); 2 Tim. 1:6 (ὅτι ἦν). In 1 Jo. 2:25 there is not exactly incorporation, but apposition to the relative. In Lu. 8:47; Ac. 22:24 and Heb. 2:11 the case is the same also, but the preposition would have been needed only with the relative. Cf. Phil. 10; 2 Tim. 1:12; Heb. 13:11. See ὥν—πονηρῶν, Ac. 25:18, where there is incorporation and attraction to the case of the antecedent. The same thing is true

1 Cf. Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 71.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175.
4 This is more than "occasional," as Blass says (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 174). He rightly notes the absence of the article.
of Rev. 17:8, where βλεπόντων agrees with ὅν. In Heb. 13:11, ὅν ζῶν—τοῦτων, the substantive is incorporated, but the demonstrative is repeated afterwards. Cf. also ὅ—αὑτό τοῦτο (Gal. 2:10). It is possible that Ro. 4:17 belongs here, the preposition κατέναντι, being understood twice. The same thing may be true of Lu. 1:4, περὶ ὅν κατηχήθης λόγων τὴν ἀσφαλείαν (either λόγων [or περὶ λόγων] περὶ ὅν or περὶ λόγων ὅν).

2) But sometimes besides incorporation there has resulted a change of case also. The antecedent may be drawn into the case of the relative (cf. inverse attraction) as in Mk. 6:16, ὅν ἔγω ἀπεκφάλισα Ἰωάννην οὕτως ἠγέρθη. Here the demonstrative pronoun is resumptive. The change is made from nominative to accusative. The same thing is true of the spurious passage in Jo. 5:4, 4.) δὴποτε κατείχετο νοσήματι (change from genitive to instrumental). This is probably true of Ac. 21:16, ἄγουτες παρ’ ὧν ξενισθώμεν Μνᾶσσωνί τινι Κυπρίῳ. The resolution of this passage is not certain, but it may be ἄγουτες Μνᾶσσωνα παρ’ ὧ (change from accusative to locative).¹ But πρὸς Μνᾶσσωνα may be correct.

In Ro. 6:17, ὑπηκοοῦσατε εἰς ὅν παρεδόθη τύπον διδαχῆς, the resolved form would probably be τύπῳ διδαχῆς εἰς ὅν παρεδόθητε. In Heb. 7:14, εἰς ἧν φυλῆν, the substantive would have been in apposition with ἐς Ἰουδα (the ablative). In Heb. 10:10 ἐν ὧ̄ θελήματι the accusative τοῦ θέλημα is present in the preceding sentence. The same thing is true of 1 Pet. 1:10, περὶ ἦς σωτηρίας (σωτηρίαν just before). In 2 Cor. 10:13 we have in the same sentence the substantive repeated (once incorporated and attracted to the case of the relative, but the relative itself attracted to the case of κανόνος), κατὰ τὸ μέτρου τοῦ κανόνους ὃ ἐμερίσθην ἦμῖν ὁ θεὸς μέτρου.

3) In a few instances the attraction has been that of the relative to the case of the antecedent, transferred to the relative clause. See Ac. 25:18, ὃν ἔγω ὑπενόουν πονηρῶν. For examples with prepositions (see chapter on Prepositions) note: περὶ πάντων ὃν ἐποίησεν πονηρῶν (Lu. 3:19), περὶ παῶν ὃν ἐδού δυσάμεσων (19:37), where the incorporation is only partial. It is clear therefore that in the great majority of instances there is no change of case required. Very many also are set phrases like ὃν τρόπον, ἦ ὃρα, ἦ ἡμέρα, δι’ ἦν αἰτίαν, etc. For presence of the antecedent see Jo. 16:17 f.

7. Absence of Antecedent. It so often happens that the relative has no antecedent that it calls for special consideration.

¹ Thompson (Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 71 f.) finds this change only in the acc. But this is not Attic.
The clause indeed often becomes a substantive rather than an adjective clause. "Ος thus occurs in general statements as in Mt. 10:14; 23:16, 18 (cf. also πᾶς ὁς, Lu. 12:48; 14:33; Ac. 2:21; Gal. 3:10). Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 173) gives a large number of such instances of the general or indefinite use of ὁς. So as ὁς ἥχει ὡτα ἀκουεῖν ἀκουέτω (Mk. 4:9), where the relative clause is the subject of ἀκουέτω. This is the indefinite relative. Cf. Mk. 4:25. Here the relative and the antecedent (if expressed) are in the same case (nominative). Cf. 1 Cor. 15:10, εἰμί ὃ εἰμι; Lu. 9:50, etc. Both may be in the accusative as in δὲ ὑμῖν λέγω πᾶσιν λέγω (Mk. 13:37), μὴ εἰδὼς ὃ λέγει (Lu. 9:33). Cf. Mk. 15:12; Lu. 11:6; Jo. 1:45; 6:29; 19:37, etc. But the relative may be in the accusative when the antecedent would have been in the nominative. So δὲ λαλεῖ γίνεται (Mk. 11:23). Cf. Jo. 1:26; 4:18, etc.

So both may be examples of the genitive, as συγγενής ὃν ὁ ἀπέκοψεν Πέτρος τῷ ωτίον (Jo. 18:26) where ὁν = τούτου ὅν. So in 1 Cor. 7:1 περὶ ὃν = περὶ τούτων (or πραγμάτων) περὶ ὃν. But in ἄχρι ὃν (Rev. 2:25) we really have ἄχρι κατοῦ ὃν (or ἐν ὃν). In Lu. 23:41, ἄξια ὃν ἐπραξαμεν, the resolution is τούτων ἃ (gen. and acc.). So in Jo. 17:9 περὶ ὃν δέδωκας = περὶ τούτων ὅνς. In Ac. 21:24 χρηστά περὶ σοῦ ὃδεύ = τούτων ἃ, etc. Exactly so ὃν in Lu. 9:36; 23: 14; Ac. 8:24; 22:15; 25:11; Ro. 15:18; 2 Cor. 12:17. In Ac. 26:16, μάρτυρα ὃν τε εἴδες με ὃν τε ὁμοθησόμαι σοι, it is the second ὃν that gives trouble. The antecedent would be τούτων and the relative before attraction either a (ace. of general reference) or ὃς (locative or instrumental). In Ro. 4:7 ὃν has as its unexpressed antecedent ὁτοι. CF. also Ac. 13:25. In Mt. 6:8 (so Jo. 13:29), ὃν χρείαν, the antecedent would be in the accusative. So also περὶ ὃν. Ac. 24:13. In Lu. 17:1 δι’ ὃν is resolved into τοῦτῳ δι’ ὃν (dative). In Ro. 10:14, πῶς πιστεύσωσιν ὃν ὥσ γνοσσαν, we probably have ὃν = εἰς τούτον (or τούτῳ) ὅν.

The examples of the ablative are not many. See Jo. 7:31 where ὃν after πλείονα σημεία is to he resolved into τούτων ἃ (abl. and acc.). So in Ac. 26:22 ἐκτὸς ὃν = ἐκτὸς τούτων ἃ. In Heb. 5:8 ἀφ’ ὃν = ἀπὸ τούτων ἃ, while in 2 Cor. 2:3 ἀφ’ ὃν = ἀπὸ τούτων ἃφ’ ὃν. Cf. Lu. 6:34, παρ’ ὃν; 1 Cor. 10:30. In Ac. 13:39, ἀπὸ πάντων ὃν, the one preposition covers both ablatives.

For the dative I note οὗς δέδοσαι (Mt. 19:11), where the antecedent like πάντες would have been in the nominative. Cf. Lu. 7:43, 47 ὃς; Ro. 15:21 οὗς and 2 Pet. 1:9 ὃς. In 1 Cor. 7:39, ὃς θέλει γαμήθηναι, the antecedent would have been in the dative also. So also 2 Cor. 2 : 10 ὃς; Ro. 6:16 ὃς twice. In 2 Tim. 1.12, οἴδα ὃς
πεπίστευκα, it is the accusative rather followed by dative, αὐτον ὦ. In Mt. 20:23 (Mk. 10:40) the antecedent of οὗ is probably τούτων. In Ro. 10:14 the antecedent of οὗ would be τούτω.

Some few examples of the locative appear also. Cf. ἐφʼ οἷς, Ro. 6:21, where the antecedent would have been ἐπὶ τούτων. So Ro. 2:1 and 14:22 ἐν ὦ implies ἐν τούτῳ (cf. also 1 Pet. 2:12; 3:16), but not so verse 21 where ἐν ὦ refers to an involved τι or μηδεν. In Ro. 7:6 ἐν ὦ may involve τούτῳ ἐν ὦ. In Heb. 2:18 ἐν ὦ (=ἐν τούτῳ ἐν ὦ) really has a causal force. In Ph. 4:11 ἐν οἷς = ἐν τούτοις ἐν οἷς, but in 2 Tim. 3:14 ἐν οἷς = ἐν τούτοις ἐν. Cf. 2 Pet. 2:12 (but ταῦτα ἐν οἷς may be correct).

I have noticed no examples of the instrumental. But great freedom and variety are manifest.

8. Prepositions with the Antecedent and Relative. The preposition may be used twice1 "in the case of a, sharper division of the relative clause." So οἷς τῇ γῆν ταύτην, οἷς ἃν, Ac. 7:4; ἀπὸ πρωτῆς ἡμέρας ἄφι ἡς 20:18. Then again the preposition may occur with the antecedent, but not with the relative, though implied, as in ἐν παντὶ χρόνῳ ὦ εἰσινθεν Ac. 1:21. So the margin in Ro. 2:16 ἐν τιμέρα ἃ. Cf. Lu. 1:25. It is possible also so to understand ἐν τῇ ὕδω ἃ ἡρχον Ac. 9:17. But it is clearly true of ἀπὸ πάντων ὦν, Ac. 13:39.

On the other hand the preposition may occur with the relative, but not with the antecedent. Thus ἐκείνῃ τῇ ὑπὲρ ἃ ἐν ἃ, Jo. 4:53. When the antecedent is absent, the preposition may be the one common to both, as in ἀφʼ ὕν (2 Cor. 2:3), or which belongs to only one. Cf. παρὸ ὅν (Lu. 6:34), ἐφʼ οἷς (Ro. 6:21), ἐν οἷς (Ph. 4:11), ὑπὲρ οὗ (1 Cor. 10:30), ἐν ὦ (Ro. 14:22), as εἰς ὅν (Ro. 10:14), περὶ ὅν (1 Cor. 7:1), etc. This "one" may be the antecedent, as in the following examples, εἰς ὅν (Jo. 6:29) = εἰς τούτον ὅν, περὶ ὅν (Jo. 17:9) = περὶ τούτων ὅν, ὑπὲρ ὃ (1 Cor. 4:6) = ὑπὲρ ταῦτα ὃ, ἀφʼ ὅν, (Heb. 5:8) = ἀπὸ τούτων ὃ, εἰς ὅν (Jo. 19:37) = εἰς τούτον ὅν, etc. Or the "one" may be the relative, as διʼ ὅν (Lu. 17:1) = τούτῳ διʼ ὅν, ἐφʼ ὅν (Heb. 7:13) = οὕτως ἐφʼ ὅν, etc. The use of prepositions is common in the same way with the relative and its incorporated antecedent. See ἐν ὦ κρίματι (Mt. 7:2), ἀχρι ἡς ἡμέρας (Lu. 1:20), διʼ ἅν αἰτίαν (Lu. 8:47), παρʼ ὦ—Μνάσσωνι (Ac. 21:16), εἰς ὅν—τύπον (Ro. 6:17), ἀφʼ ἡς ἡμέρας (Col. 1:9), περὶ ἡς σωτηρίας (1 Pet. 1:10), etc. Cf. Ro. 16:2.

9. Relative Phrases. Some of the abbreviated prepositional clauses come to be used at the beginning of principal sentences

---
1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 174.
like the free use of conjunctions and relatives. Cf. Latin use of *qui*. Cf. Draeger, *Hist. Syntax*, Bd. II, p. 512. So ἄνθρωπον ὢν (Lu. 12:3), ἐν οἷς (12:1), διὰ (Heb. 3:7), περὶ ὢν (1 Cor. 7:1), οὖν χάριν (Lu. 7:47), δι’ ἡμῶν αἰτίαν (2 Tim. 1:6). Cf. θεόν (Heb. 3:1). Indeed (Winer-Schmiedel, p. 228) ἐν ὥσπερ may be here equal to τούτων ὃτι, ἄνθρωπον ὢν ἀπὸ τούτων ὃτι, ἐφ’ ὥσπερ ἐπὶ τούτων ὃτι (2 Cor. 5:4), διότι (1 Th. 2:8) = διὰ τοῦτο ὃτι, ἐφ’ ὥσπερ (Ro. 6:21), etc. The temporal and causal use of the relative phrases is common. Cf. ἐν ὥσπερ (Heb. 2:18). Indeed καθότι (Ro. 8:26) is καθ’ ὃς καθότι (Ac. 2:45) is καθ’ ὃτι, καθάπερ (Ro. 4:6) is καθ’ ὃπερ. Cf. ἐφ’ ὃσον (Mt. 9:15), καθ’ ὃσον (Heb. 3:3).

Adverbs show the same phenomena as other relative forms. Thus in Ro. 5:20 ὁς has no antecedent. In 1 Cor. 16:6 ὁς = ἕκεισε σοῦ. So ὁποῖον in Jo. 11:12 = ἕκεισε ὁποῖον and in Jo. 20:19 ἐν τῷ θόθα ὁποῖον. In 2 Sam. 14:15 ὁς = conjunction.

10. Pleonastic Antecedent. The redundant antecedent incorporated into the relative clause has attracted considerable attention. In Herodotus 4, 44 ὃς—οὗτος occurs,1 and Blass2 cites Hyper. Eux. § 3, ὃς—τούτως. But in ancient Greek it was a very rare usage. In Winer-Schmiedel3 examples of pleonastic οὗτος are cited from Xenophon, Diodorus Siculus, Pausanias, Sophocles. Pleonastic αὐτός appears in Aristophanes, *Birds*, 1237, ὃς θυτέου αὐτοῖς. Reference also is made to Sophocles and Lucian. In the LXX the idiom is extremely common, manifestly under the influence of the Hebrew יִלְּךָ רָשִׁKeyPressed (cf. Aramaic יְךָ). It "is found in all parts of the LXX and undoubtedly owes its frequency to the Hebrew original. But the fact that it is found in an original Greek work, such as 2 Macc. (xii, 27 ἐν ἦ θεόν ... ἐν αὐτοῖς) and a paraphrase such as 1 Esdras (iii, 5, 9; iv, 54, 63; vi, 32), is sufficient to warrant its presence in the κοινὴ."4 For numerous examples of the idiom in the LXX see Winer-Schmiedel, p. 200, and Winer-Moulton, p. 185. Cf. also Conybeare and Stock, *Selections*, pp. 65 ff. As a matter of fact the examples are not very numerous in the N. T. It occurs several times in Rev. (3:8 ἡμῖν—αὐτήν, 7:2 ὡς ἐδόθη αὐτοῖς, 7:9 ὡς—αὐτόν, 13:8 ὃς—αὐτόυ, 20:8 ὡς—αὐτῶν). Outside of the Apocalypse, which so strongly bears the influence of the LXX, the usage is infrequent. See Mt. 3:12, ὢς τῷ πνεύμῳ ἐν τῇ χειρὶ αὐτοῦ, an example hardly parallel as a matter of fact. But a clearer instance is Mk. 1:7 (= Lu. 3:16 f.), ὢς—αὐτοῦ, and still more so 7:25, ὡς ἔδει τῷ θυγάτριον αὐτῆς. Cf. also ὁια—τοιαῦτη (Mk. 13:19), ὁις—

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175.
3 P. 201. Cf. also W.-M., p. 185.
4 Mack., Gr. of 0. T. in Gk., p. 46.
PRONOUNS (ἈΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΑΙ) 723

In Arc. 15:17, ἐφ' οὖς—ἐπ' αὐτοῦς, we have a quotation from the LXX (Amos 9:12). "The N. T. examples are all from places where Aramaic sources are certain or suspected" (Moulton, Prol., p. 95). One almost wonders, after this admission, why Moulton, p. 94, seems so anxious to prove that the idiom in the N. T. is not a Hebraism. By his own admission it seems a practical Hebraism there, though the idiom had an independent development in the Greek. The early sporadic examples in the ancient Greek2 blossom out in the later Greek again and in the modern Greek become very common. Psichari3 considers it rather far-fetched in Moulton to appeal to the modern Greek vernacular, ὁ γιατρὸς ποῦ τὸν ἐστείλα, ‘the doctor whom I sent for,’ since the modern Greek vernacular just as readily uses ποῦ without αὐτόν. Psichari complains that Thumb4 also has not explained clearly this idiom. But Psichari, believes that the idiom existed in the vernacular κοινή (and so fell in readily with the Hebrew usage) and has persisted to the present day. He considers5 the example from a papyrus of the third century A.D. (P.Oxy. I, 117,15) decisive, ἔξ ὅν — ἔξ αὐτῶν. See also P. Amh. II, 11, 26, ὅπερ φανερὸν τοῦτο ἐγένετο. Moulton6 has given abundant examples from Old English. So in Chaucer (Knights Tale, 1851 f.):

"Namely oon,
That with a spore was thirled his brest-boon."

He compares also the German der du bist. Simcox7 cites vernacular English "a thing which I don't like it." Evidently therefore the idiom has had independent development in various languages in the vernacular. According to Jannaris (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 353) the relative is in such cases regarded as "a mere, connective."

In Gal. 3:1, ὁς—ἐν ὑμῖν, W. H. reject ἐν ὑμῖν. In Gal. 2:10, ὅ—αὐτὸ τοῦτο, we have the intensive use of αὐτό, but τοῦτο is pleonastic. In 1 Pet. 2:24, ὅς—αὐτός, we have again intensive αὐτός.

11. The Repetition of ὁς. Winer8 rightly remarks that it is a misapprehension of the Greek genius to expect the relative rather than αὐτός or οὗτος in a case like Jo. 1:7; Lu. 2:36; 19:2; Ac.

---

1 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175; Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 59.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175, cites οὗ η̣ πνοή αὐτοῦ, from Clem. Cor. 21. 9.
3 Essai sur le grec de la Sept., p. 182.
4 Hellen., p. 128.
5 Cf. also Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 353.
6 Prol., p. 94.
8 W.-M., p. 186.
10:36. The old Greek could, and commonly did, use οὗτος or more usually ἀυτός with καί to continue the narrative. Blass rather curiously calls it "negligent usage." Cf. Lu. 13:4, ἐφ' οὗ ἔπεσεν ὁ πάργος καὶ ἀπέκτεινεν ἀυτοῦς; 1 Cor. 8:6, ἐς οὐ καὶ εἴς αὐτόν and δι' οὖ — καὶ δι' ἀυτοῦ (cf. Heb. 11:4); 2 Pet. 2:3, οἷς — καὶ ἀυτῶν; Rev. 17:2, μεθ' ἦς — καὶ ἀυτής. In Lu. 17:31 καὶ ὁ occurs rather than καὶ ἀυτός. Cf. Jo. 13:24. In Jo. 1:33, ἐφ' οὖν — καὶ ἐπ' ἀὐτόν, the repetition of the relative would have been impracticable. But in 1 Cor. 7:13 Paul might very well have written ἡτίς — καὶ ὃς rather than καὶ ὀὗτος (a sort of parenthesis). It is common, also, to have neither the relative repeated nor the demonstrative. So ὃς γε τοῦ ἱδίου υἱόν οὐκ ἐφείσατο, ἀλλὰ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν πάντων παρέδωκεν αὐτόν, (Ro. 8:32). Cf. Ph. 4:9.

But the relative may be repeated. A good many such examples occur in the N. T. Καὶ may be used, as ὠν καὶ ὠν (Ro. 4:7). Cf. also οὗ — ὁ καὶ (Ac. 27:23) and ὠν τε ὀν τε — (Ac. 26:16). Cf. 1 Cor. 15:1 f., δὲ— δὲ καὶ — ἐν ὁ καὶ — δι' οὗ καὶ. See Jo. 21:20. But examples occur also of the repetition of the relative without any conjunction, as in ὃς — ὁν — παρ' οὗ (Ac. 24:6). See 1 Cor. 4:17. Cf. ὧν ρα α — Ὠν α, etc. (Ph. 4:8). This repetition of ὃς is specially frequent in Paul. Cf. Col. 1:24, 28 f.; Eph. 3:11 f.; 1 Cor. 2:7 f., though it is not exactly "peculiar" to him (Winer-Moult., p. 209). In 1 Jo. 1:1 ο createState is repeated without conjunction three times, while in verse 3 ο createState is not repeated with the second verb. In 1 Pet. 1:6-12 four sentences begin with a relative. In Ro. 9:4 f. we have ὃτινες — ὲν — ὠν — καὶ ἐξ ὠν.

The use of ἄνθρωπος ὀν ὢν ὤν together (Lu. 12:3) finds abundant parallel in the LXX, easily falling in with the Hebrew construction4 with יְָֽוָֽו. Thus a double relative occurs.

In Ro. 4:21 the conjunction of ὃτι ο createState is merely accidental; but that is not true of ο createState in 1 Jo. 4:3. Cf. also ὃν ὁτι in Ro. 9:6.

12. A Consecutive Idea. This may be implied in ὃς. Thus in Lu. 7:4, ἔξιος ἐστίν ὁ παρεξήτο αὐτός. One is reminded of qui in Latin.5 Cf. also τίς ἐστίν οὗτος ο createState καὶ ἀμαρτίας ἀφίησιν; (Lu. 7:49). A particularly good example is 1 Cor. 2:16, τίς γὰρ ἐγνώ νοσώ κυρίου, ὃς συνβιβάζει αὐτόν; See chapter XIX, Mode.

13. Causal. ὃς may also introduce a causal sentence. So ὃς

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175.
3 "Normal" indeed. Thompson, Synt., p. 70.
4 Thack., Gr. of O. T. in Gk., p. 25.
5 Cf. Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 369.
γε in Ro. 8:32. Cf. Latin *quippe qui*. This is perfectly regular in ancient Attic. Cf. Thompson, *Syntax of Attic Greek*, p. 374. See also chapter XIX, Mode.

14. *In Direct Questions.* The passage in Mt. 26:50, ἔταμψε, ἦφ' ὀ πάσει, is the only one in the N. T. where such a construction is possible. There is no doubt as to the occasional use of ὁστις (see (c), 9), ὅποσος, ὅποτερος, ὅπως in direct questions in the ancient Greek. For examples see Jannaris, *Hist. Gr. Gr.*, p. 473 f. See further chapter XIX, Mode. This double use of relative pronouns is on a par with the double use of interrogative stems (cf. indefinite) so common in the Indo-Germanic tongues.¹ The Latin *qui* and *quis* are kin in root and usage. Moulton² rightly considers it "superfluous to say that this usage cannot possibly be extended to direct question." Winer³ explained the "misuse" as belonging to late Greek. A few examples⁴ of ὡς in a direct question do occur. So in Euseb., P. E. vi, 7: 257 d, Gaisford edition, ὅν ἤλεκα; Just., *Cohort*. 5 (p. 253 A), δι' ἥν αἰτιαν — προσέχεις ὁμήρῳ; *Apophth.*, 105 C, Ἀρσένε, δι' ὁ ἐξήλθες. Certainly the idiom was chiefly in the vernacular and rare even there. Blass⁵ conjectures a slip in the text, ἀπε having been changed to ἔταμπε, and Chrysostom had an imperative in his text. We may suppose "a rather harsh ellipsis" of the principal verb and treat it as an ordinary relative.⁶ ὡς may indeed here be demonstrative as suggested by Noah K. Davis.⁷ There was undoubtedly in the later Greek considerable confusion in the use of the relatives and the interrogatives. It is not impossible for ὡς here to be interrogative. That is as much as one can at present say. Blass thought it "quite incredible."

15. *In Indirect Questions.* Here the matter is much clearer. Even Blass⁸ admits that "relatives and interrogatives become confused in Greek as in other languages." In the classical language ὡς (still more ὁστις) is "frequently" so employed. This use comes from Homer on down and occurs in Aristophanes, Sophocles, Herodotus, Xenophon, Plato, Lysias. Thucydides⁹ uses it side by side with ὁστις. The papyri have it as Moulton has shown.¹⁰

Cf. φράζοντες ἐν ἦι κώμη οἰκοῦσιν, R. L. 29 (iii/B.C.); φροντίσας δὲ ὅν δὲ ταῦτα ἑργασθήμαι, P.P. ii. 37 (ii/B.C.). It is a little surprising, however, to find Blass\(^1\) saying that this usage "is wanting in the N. T." W. F. Moulton\(^2\) in his footnote gives undoubted examples of ὅς in indirect questions after verbs of knowing, declaring, etc. So οἶδεν—ὡν χρείαν ἔχετε, Mt. 6:81; ἀπαγγείλατε ὧν ἀκούστε, 11:4; εἰδίναι ὃ γέγονεν, Mk. 5:33; ἀνέγνωστε ὧν ἐποίησεν, Lu. 6:3 (cf. Mt. 12:3 τί); μὴ εἰδῶς ὃ λέγει, 9:33; δι' ὧν αἰτίαν ἦσαν αὐτοῦ ἀπήγγειλεν, 8:47 (cf. Ac. 22:24); διδάξει ὃμαξα ὧν εἰπεῖν, 12:12. But not 2 Tim. 1:12. And then in 1 Tim. 1:7 we find ὧν λέγουσιν and περὶ τίνων διοβεβαιοῦνται used side by side after μὴ νοοῦτες. Cf. also Jo. 18:21. One may compare\(^3\) also Lu. 11:6, οὐκ ἔχω ὧν παραθήκως αὐτῷ, with Mk. 8:2 (Mt. 15:32), οὐκ ἔχουσιν τί φάγωσιν. See also ὧς ἰάθη in Lu. 8:47, and note ὧς in Lu. 23:55; 24:35, not to mention ὧσος, ὧποιος.

16. The Idiom οὐδεὶς ἐστὶν ὅς. It occurs in the N. T., as Mk. 9:39; 10:29; Lu. 1:61; 18:29; 1 Cor. 6:5. For οὐδεὶς ἐστὶν ὅς οὗ see Mt. 10:26 (cf. Lu. 8:17). Here one is reminded of the old idiom οὐδεὶς ὅστις. Mayser (Grammatik, p. 310) calls attention to the papyri use of ὃν=ὅ after analogy of τοσοῦτον. Cf. τίς—ὅς οὗ in Ac. 19:35. The N. T. does not use\(^4\) ἐστὶν ὅς, εἰσὶν οἷς=τίς, τινὲς. (e) ὅστις.

1. Varied Uses. The form is, of course, merely ὅς and τις. But we have seen a variety of uses of ὅς, and τις likewise is not entirely uniform. Hence the combination cannot be expected to be so.

2. The Distinction between ὅς and ὅστις. It was not ironclad in the ancient language, as may be seen by reference to the Epic, Ionic, Attic poets, and to Herodotus (once Thucydides).\(^5\) Blass\(^6\) finds that the distinction between them is no longer regularly preserved in the N. T., least, of all in Luke, best of all in Paul. Moulton\(^7\) finds some examples in the papyri of ὅστις in the sense of ὅς, but doubts if the two relatives are ever absolutely convertible and thinks that on the whole the classical distinction remains undisturbed, though sometimes during the κοινὴ period it had worn rather thin.\(^8\) But Jannaris\(^9\) holds that ὅστις, having a wider scope

---

\(^{1}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p.1175.  
\(^{2}\) W.-M., p. 207 f.  
\(^{3}\) W.-Sch., p. 237.  
\(^{4}\) Ib., p. 236.  
\(^{5}\) Cf. Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 69, for the exx.  
\(^{6}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 172 f.  
\(^{7}\) Prol., p. 91.  
\(^{8}\) Ib.; Cl. Rev., Dec., 1901, p. 441 f.  
\(^{9}\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 352.
than ὁς, in postclassical times was used indiscriminately for ὁς. He is supported by Kaelker about Polybius.\(^1\) But in the vernacular modern Greek ὅτι is alone common, other forms of ὅστις being rare, though ὅτινος and ὅτινων are found (Thumb Handb., p. 93 f.). Kruger\(^2\) calls ὅστις "objective" and ὅστις "qualitative and generic." W. F. Moulton\(^3\) defines ὅστις as properly indicating the class or kind to which an object belongs. But no exact parallel can be drawn nor uniform distinction preserved. Each has its own history. Jebb\(^4\) takes ὅστις to refer to class in ancient Greek and hence is either indefinite or causal. In the modern Greek it is still indefinite, but has also in the vernacular displaced ὁς in the masculine and feminine nominative. In the LXX ὅστις is less frequent than ὁς and is almost confined to the nominative and accusative.\(^5\) In the papyri\(^6\) it is less frequent than ὁς and is usually in the nominative as in the N. T. (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154).

3. The Indefinite Use. This is, as a matter of fact, still the least frequent in the N. T. There are about 27 of the indefinite and 120 of the definite use (Scott). Cf. ὅστις σὲ βασίλειν εἰς τὴν δεξιὰν σιαγώνα (Mt. 5:39), ὅστις ἀρνησθαί με (10:33), ὅτι ἂν αἰτήσητε (Jo. 14:13), ὅστις ἐὰν ἂ (Gal. 5:10). Thus it is used with indicative or subjunctive, with or without ἂν (ἔαν). Cf. Mt. 13:12.

In Mk. 8:34 ἕ τις does not differ very greatly from ὅστις. Cf. also ἔαν μή. Mk. 10:30. Πᾶς ὅστις is, of course, indefinite also. Thus Mt. 7:24; πᾶν ὃ τι ἐὰν ποιήση (Col. 3:17), etc. For πᾶσα ψυχή ἢτις ἂν see Ac. 3:23 (LXX). In P. Par. 574 (iii/A.D.) note ὅστις ποτ' οὖν εἰ.

4. The Definite Examples. These are partly causal clauses. Some indeed seem merely descriptive. Thus Mt. 7:15, τῶν ψευδοπροφητῶν ὅτινες ἔρχονται. Cf. also Mt. 7:26; 13:52; 21:33, etc. The value of the pronoun sometimes does not differ greatly from ὁς and expresses quality. Thus ἐνυόνοχοι ὅτινες, Mt. 19:12; ἄλλοις γεωργῶν ὅτινες, 21:41; παρθένοις ὅτινες, 25:1, etc. Once indeed we actually have τοιαύτη ἢτις (1 Cor. 5:1). Cf. also ποταπὴ ἢ γυνὴ ἢτις (Lu. 7:39). See also Gal. 4:24, 26. Then again it may be merely explanatory as in γυναῖκες πολλαὶ—ἀἵτινες ἤκολούθησαν τῷ Ἰησοῦ (Mt. 27:55). Cf. Mk. 15:7; Lu. 12:1; Col. 3:5; Rev. 11:8, etc. This use of ὅστις is particularly frequent with proper names.

---

\(^{1}\) Quest., p. 245 f.
\(^{2}\) Gr., p. 139. For the confusion between ὁς and ὅστις see also Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 558 f.
\(^{3}\) W.-M., p 209, n. 3, where a very helpful discussion occurs.
\(^{4}\) V. and D., Handb. to Mod. Gk., p. 302.
\(^{5}\) Thack., Gr., p. 192.
\(^{6}\) Mayser, Gr., p. 310.
So Lu. 2:4, εἶς πόλιν Δαυείδ ἡτίς καλεῖται Βήθλεέμ. Cf. also Lu. 8:26; Ac. 16:12, etc. Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 303, takes the explanatory or illustrative examples= 'now he,' one that.' Moulton⁠¹ points out that ὅστις at the beginning of a parable (cf. Mt. 20:1) is really a type and so appropriate. In an example like Lu. 1:20, τοῖς λόγοις μου φήμες πληρωθήσονται, Moulton takes it to be 'which for all that' (almost adversative), while in Lu. 10:42 ἡτίς οὐκ ἀφαιρεθήσεται αὐτής= 'and it shall not be taken away from her.' There is no doubt about the causal use of ὅστις (cf. qui and quippe qui). See Jo. 8:53, Ἄβρααμ ὅστις ἀπέθανεν ('seeing that he died'); Ac. 10:47, φήμες τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον ἐλαβον ('since they received the Holy Spirit'). Cf. also Ac. 7:53; Ro. 2:15; 6:2; Heb. 8:6; 10:35; Eph. 3:13; Ph. 4:3; Col. 3:5; Jas. 4:14; 1 Pet. 2:11, etc.

5. Value of ὅς? It is a matter of dispute whether in the N. T., as usually in modern Greek, ὅστις has come already to have merely the force of ὅς. There are undoubted examples where it is equal to ὅσπερ (‘which very’). So Ac. 11:28, ἡτίς ἐγένετο, ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου. Cf. also Ac. 13:31; 16:16; 1 Cor. 3:17, etc. Blass² goes further and finds ὅστις in Luke purely in the sense of ὅς. He is supported by Jebb³ who says that "no natural interpretation can make it more in Lu. 2:4." In Acts at any rate a fairly good case can be made out for this weakened sense of ὅστις. Cf. 8:14 f. Πέτρον καὶ Ἰωάννην φήμες. 12:10 τὴν πύλην ἡτίς, 17:10. See also Rev. 12:13. Moulton⁴ gives an exact parallel from the papyri for Mt. 27:62, τῇ ἐπαύριον ἡτίς ἐστὶν μετὰ τὴν παρασκευὴν (αὐριον ἡτίς ἐστὶν ιε). He quotes Hort also (Comm., 1 Pet. 2:11) in favour of the position that in some places in the N. T. no distinction can be drawn between ὅς and ὅστις. Blass⁵ denies that Paul uses ὅστις as the equivalent of ὅς. I confess that I fail to see a great deal of difference between φήμες and ὅς in Ro. 16:4, φήμες and ὅς in 16:7. Cf. also ὅς and ἡτίς in verses 5 f.

6. Case. There is little here that calls for comment. We do not have attraction or incorporation. As a matter of fact only three cases occur (nom., gen., ace.).⁶ The stereotyped phrase

---

² Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 173.
³ V. and D., Handb., p. 302.
⁴ Prol., p. 91.
⁵ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 173.
⁶ The pap. show the same situation. Moulton, Cl. Rev., April, 1904, p. 154. Thus ἡμίνα BM 77 (viii/A.D.), ὅτανα inscr. J.H.S., 1902, p. 349, εἶς ὅτου BM 190 (iii/?) ἔως ὅτου NP. 56 (iii/A.D.).
with ἐσ and the genitive, ἐσ ὅτου, occurs five times. Cf. Mt. 5:25; Lu. 12:50 (Luke three times, Matthew and John once each). This is the only form of the shortened inflection. The LXX once1 (2 Macc. 5:10) has ἡστινος, elsewhere ὅτου. The accusative is found in the N. T. only in the neuter singular ὅτι (absent from modern Greek). But see (note 6, p. 728) occasional ὅντια and ἔμνια in the papyri. So Lu. 10:35, ὅτι ἀν προσδαπανήσῃς. Cf. ὅτι ἄν, Jo. 2:5; 14:13; 15:16; ὅτι ἐὰν, Mk. 6:23; 1 Cor. 16:2 f.; Col. 3:17; ὅτι alone, Jo. 8:25; Ac. 9:6. The other examples are all in the nominative. In Ac. 9:6 the clause is nominative.

7. **Number.** In general the number of ὅτις agrees with that of the antecedent. But in a few instances ὅτις agrees with the predicate. So with 1 Cor. 3:17, ναὸς ὅτινες—ὑμεῖς, Eph. 3:13, θλίψεσιν ἤτις—δόξα. Cf. Ac. 16:12.

8. **Gender.** Likewise ὅτις in general agrees with the antecedent in gender. So Eph. 1:22 f. ἐκκλησία ἤτις—τὸ σῶμα, Gal. 4:24 μία ἤτις—Ἀγαθ. Cf. Rev. 11:8. But the gender of the predicate may be followed as in Ac. 16:12, Φιλίππους (fem., H. Scott says, but Thayer has οἱ) ἤτις—πόλις; 1 Tim. 3:15, οἶκος—ὦ θεός—ἤτις—ἐκκλησία. In Ph. 1:28, ἤτις—ἐνδειξις, the antecedent is the general idea of the preceding clause. One example of ὅτι is neuter singular (2 Cor. 3:14, ὅτι ἐν Χριστῷ καταργεῖται), and several times the neuter plural (Jo. 21:25, ἄτινα ἐὰν γράφη-ται). So Gal. 4:24; 5:19. Cf. the absence of the neuter in the modern Greek. The masculine and feminine, both singular and plural, are very frequent. Cf. Mt. 2:6; 7:15; Lu. 2:4; 23:55. See further for number, gender and case, chapter X, VII, VIII, IX.

9. **Direct Questions.** Examples of ὅτις in direct questions are found in Aristophanes and Plato as quoted by Jannaris.2 An example of it occurs also in 1 Chron. 17:6, ὅτι οὐκ ὕκοδομήσατε μοι οἰκον κέδρινον; Here the Hebrew has הָדוֹ. Cf. also 2 Ki. 8:14 in AB, ὅτι where other MSS. have τί. In Barn. Ep. c. 10 we have ὅτι δὲ Μωϋσῆς ἐξηκμεν; Vulgate has quare.3 Jannaris4 gives a number of instances for the later Greek. And yet Blass5 calls it "quite incredible," a remark impossible to justify in the light of the facts. It is, indeed, unusual, but there is no a priori reason

---

1 Thack., Gr., p. 192.  
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 176.
why the N. T. writers could not occasionally use ὅστις as a direct interrogative. One may note also the use of ἐν in a direct question.¹ The N. T. examples are all confined to ὅ τι. In Mt. 7:14 ὅτι is certainly merely causal, not exclamatory nor interrogative. In Mk. 2:16 ὅτι (sec.) read by BL 33, is accepted by W. H. and Nestle as interrogative. AC al. read τί ὅτι, while ΧΔ have διὰ τί. It is possible, to be sure, that ὅτι may be an "abbreviation"² or "ellipsis"³ for τί ὅτι. But it is more probable that it is here regarded as tantamount to an interrogative (τί ὅτι or διὰ τί). Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154) quotes ὅτι τί in B.U. 607 (ii/A.D.) γράψον μοι ὅτι τί ἐπραξάξας. But in Mk. 9:11 the Greek uncials all give the first ὅτι. This is all the more remarkable since the second ὅτι is clearly a conjunction. The Latin MSS. give variously quare, quia, quid, etc., and some Greek cursives πῶς οὐν. 'Why' is the natural and obvious idea.⁴ So in Mk. 9:28 ὅτι is read by the great mass of MSS. (including ΧΒCL), though AD and a number of others have διὰ τί, some even have ὅτι διὰ τί (conflate reading), a few τί ὅτι. In John 8:25 both W. H. and Nestle print as a question, Τὴν ἀρχὴν ὅτι καὶ λαλῶ ὑμῖν; The Latin versions have quod or quia. It is a very difficult passage at best. Τὴν ἀρχὴν ὅτι may be taken to mean 'Why do I speak to you at all?' (Τὴν ἀρχὴν = ὅλως). But there may be ellipsis,⁵ 'Why do you reproach me that (ὅτι) I speak to you at all?' If necessary to the sense, ὅτι may be taken here as interrogative.⁶ Moulton⁷ admits the N. T. use of ὅστις in a direct question. Recitative ὅτι is even suggested in Winer-Schmiedel,⁸ but the occasional interrogative use of ὅτι is sufficient explanation. But the passage in Jo. 8:25 is more than doubtful. Chrysostom takes ὅτι there as relative, Cyril as causal.⁹

10. Indirect Questions. In ancient Greek ὅστις is exceedingly common in indirect questions, sharing the honours with τίς.¹⁰ The astonishing thing about this use of ὅστις is its almost entire absence from the N. T. (cf. modern) Greek, where it is not used in this sense). No example has yet been shown from the papyri. Indeed the relative forms, the se-called indirect interrogatives, are not common in the N. T. in that sense. The direct interrogat-

---

¹ Lachmann, Praef., p. 43. ⁵ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 176. ⁶ Simcox, Lang. of N. T., p. 68. ⁷ Prol., p. 94.
² Blass, Gr. of N. T., p. 176. ³ W.-M., p. 208. ⁴ Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 68. ⁸ P. 238. The use of ὅτι τί lends colour to the notion of recitative ὅτι.
tives are the rule in the N. T. in indirect questions. Only one instance of ὅτι in an indirect question is found in the N. T., Ac. 9:6, λαληθήσεται σοι ὅτι σε δεί ποιεῖν. Even this reading, though supported by ἩABC, Blass rejects "in view of the general practice elsewhere," a needless conclusion. Why not call it a "literary" mark in Luke? Ὅπως is so used once (Lu. 24:20), ὅποια not at all (not even Jo. 14:4), ὅσος in 1 Th. 1:5, and ὅσιός only in 1 Cor. 3:13; Gal. 2:6; 1 Th. 1:9; Jas. 1:24. See further chapter XIX.

(f) ὅσος.

1. Relation to ὃς. This correlative form is related to ὃς as qualis is to qui. The antecedent τοιούτος is not, of course, always expressed. But it is qualitative, and not a mere relative like ὃς or even ὅστις. In the modern Greek the word has disappeared except the form ὅγιος (ὁ ὅσος) in the dialects and is rare (14 times) in the N. T. Mayser merely mentions it in his Grammatik d. griech. Papyri. It is in the N. T. usually without τοιούτος, as in Mt. 24:21, but it is several times followed by τοιούτος, as in 1 Cor. 15:48; 2 Cor. 10:11. A rather unusual instance is ὅσος—τηλικούτος σεισμός ὁπόω μέγας (Rev. 16:18). In 2 Cor. 12:20 ὅσον is, of course, first person. So ὅσοι 1 Th. 1:5.

2. Incorporation. No instance of attraction occurs, but an example of incorporation is found in 2 Tim. 3:11, ὅσοις διωγμοίς ὑπήνεγκα. In Rev. 16:18 the addition of τηλικούτος ὁπόω μέγας after ὅσος is by way of explanatory apposition. But in Mk. 13:19, ἀι ὅ γέγονεν τοιαῦτη, the incorporation is redundant after the fashion of ὅν — αὐτόν.

3. Indirect Question. Like ὃς we have ὅσοι so used. Cf. 1 Th. 1:5, ὅδατε ὅσοι ἐγενήθημεν. In 2 Tim. 3:11 we may have an indirect question also. The Textus Receptus for Lu. 9:55 (D has ποίου) has another instance of the use of ὅσος in an indirect question, ὅκω ὅδατε ὅσου πνεύματός ἐστε ὑμεῖς.

4. Number. ὅσος may agree in number with the predicate rather than the antecedent. So 1 Cor. 15:48, ὅσοι — τοιούτοι. Note the difference in the position of the negative in of ὅχι ὅσος and ὅσον ὅ, 2 Cor. 12:20. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 179, calls τοῦν αὐτόν — ὅσον (Ph. 1:30) peculiar.

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175.
3 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 87, 168; Thumb, Handb., p. 94.
4 P. 311.
5 Cf. K.-G., II, p. 439, for exx. in the older Gk.
5. Οἱὸν τὲ ἐστίν. The only example in the N. T. is in Ro. 9:6, οὐχ οἱὸν δὲ ὄτι, where note the absence of τὲ. It does not occur in exclamations.

(g) Ὄποιος.

I. Qualitative. It corresponds to the interrogative ποίος. It is very rare in the N. T. (see Declensions), but occurs in modern Greek vernacular for 'whoever' (Thumb, p. 93). In the literary modern Greek ὁ Ὄποιος, Jannaris² thinks that the use of the article was due to the Italian il quale and the French lequel (cf. Old English the which), since educated scribes objected to the vernacular ὁπο ου and πο ου.³

2. Double Office. Like οἱὸς, Ὅσος and ἡλίκος it has the double office of relative and indirect interrogative.⁴ Four of the N. T. instances are indirect questions (1 Cor. 3:13; Gal. 2:6; 1 Th. 1:9; Jas. 1:24). In Gal. 2:6, Ὅποιοι ποτε, we have the indefinite form ('whatever kind').⁵ Note here the use of τὶ and Ὅποιοι. In 1 Cor. 3:13 the antecedent is expressed and repeated by redundant αὐτὸ.

3. Correlative. Only one instance is correlative, Ac. 26:29, τοιούτους Ὅποιος. Cf. qualiscumque. Note here the difference in number.

(h) Ὅσος.

1. Quantitative. It is found in the LXX like οἱὸς and Ὅσοιος and survives in the modern Greek.⁷ There are a hundred and eight instances in the N. T. (W. H. text) which display great variety of usage. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 63) notes that in Philo Ὅσος is often equal to αὐ.

2. Antecedent. The presence of the antecedent is not common outside of πάντες Ὅσι (Ac. 5:36, 37), πάντα Ὅσα (very common, as Mt. 7:12; 13:46; 18:25; Mk. 11:24, etc.), Ὅσοι—οὐτοι (also frequent, as Ro. 8:14; Gal. 6:12, etc.). Cf. Ὅσοι—αὐτοῖς in Jo. 1:12. But in Mk. 3:28 Ὅσα has ἀμαρτήματα and βλασφημίαι as antecedents and naturally is neuter. Cf. Ac. 3:24; 9:39; Rev. 21:16. It is common without antecedent both in the masculine (ὁ Ὅσι Mt. 14:36) and the neuter (ὁ Ὅσα Mk. 9:13).

3. Attraction. This was possible in Jo. 6:11, ἐκ τῶν ὄψαρίων

---

¹ For a different explanation =οὐ δὴ ποὺ ἐκπέπτ. see Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 179.
² Gk. Gr., p. 167.
³ V. and D., Handb., p. 303.
⁴ Moulton, Prol., p. 93.
⁶ Thack., Gr., p. 192.
In Lu. 11:8, δώσει αὐτῷ ὃς σων χρήζει, the regular construction occurs. In Winer-Schmiedel it is stated that attraction is found in the N. T. with ὃς σας. I find no real examples outside of the few cases of incorporation now to be mentioned.

4. Incorporation. In Ac. 9:13 ὃς αν κακά is an instance. Mk. 2:19 has ὃς οὐν χρόνον. The other examples (Ro. 7:1; 1 Cor. 7:39; Gal. 4:1) are all instances of ἐφ’ ὃς οὖν χρόνον.

5. Repetition. In Mk. 6:30 we have in W. H. ὃς αν καὶ ὃς αν (not Tisch.). But in Ph. 4:8 ὃς αν is repeated six times without καί. In Heb. 10:37 ὃς οὐν ὃς οὐν (LXX) is in imitation of the Hebrew in Hab. 2:3. Cf. also Is. 26:20 and D on Lu. 5:3 where ὃς οὐν ὃς οὐν=οἶνον of the other MSS. But that this is not an essential Hebraism, but a vernacular idiom in harmony with the Hebrew, is now clear.

6. With ἄν. Note the use as an indefinite relative (Mk. 6:56; Lu. 9:5; Jo. 11:22; Ac. 2:39; 3:22, etc.) and with ἔάν (Mt. 7:12; 18:18; 23:3; Mk. 3:28, etc.).

7. Indirect Questions. The instances are fairly numerous. So ἄκοιντες ὃς αν ποιεῖ (Mk. 3:8); ἀπάγγειλον ὃς—πεποίηκεν (5:19). Cf. 5:20; Lu. 8:39; 9:10; Ac. 4:23; 2 Tim. 1:18, etc.

8. In Comparison. ὁς οὐ (ὁς ω) is used in comparative sentences usually with τοσοῦτο (τοσοῦτῳ). Cf. Mk. 7:36; Heb. 1:4; 8:6; 10:25.

9. Adverbial. ἐφ’ ὃς οὖν (Mt. 9:15; 25:40; Ro. 7:1, etc.) and καθ’ ὃς οὖν (Heb. 3:3; 7:20; 9:27) partake of the nature of conjunctions.

(i) Ἡλίκος. This form was used to express both age and size. Hence the corresponding ambiguity of ἡλικία. Cf. for age Jo. 9:21, for stature Mt. 6:27. The pronoun is absent from the LXX, never very common, but survives in the literary modern Greek. It appears also in the papyri. Like the other relatives it might have had a double use in the N. T. (relative and indirect interrogative). But the few examples are all indirect interrogatives:

Col. 2:1 ἐιδέναι ἡλίκον ἀγώνα ἔχω, Jas. 3:5 ἴδου ἡλίκον πῦρ ἡλικην

1 P. 224.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 179. Blass also cites Aristoph., Vesp., 213.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 97; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., 330.
5 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 168. 6 Mayser, Gr., p. 311.
The examples in James may be regarded as exclamatory. Note also that ἥλικον refers to smallness and ἥλικην to greatness of the size. In Gal. 6:11 W. and Nestle read πηλικοῖς in the text and πηλικοῖς in the margin. This again is indirect question after ἰδέτε.

(j) Ο AS RELATIVE. The use of the τ forms of ὁ, ἡ, τό as relative is very old in Greek. It appears in Homer and is common in Herodotus. In Arkadian ο appears as demonstrative, as article and as relative (Meister, Die griech. Dialekten, Bd. II, p. 116). Cf. also South Ach. (Hoffmann, Griech. Dial., pp. 257, 292-300). Jannaris gives examples of it from Ionic (where very common), Doric and Attic (inscriptions), and sporadically in the later Greek. In modern Greek it survives only in sententious sayings with and in Crete and Southeast Greek (Thumb, p. 94). Mayser finds a few doubtful instances in the papyri. Wilcken (Archiv, I) gives some examples from B. M. as τό μοι δέδωκες (p. 292), τήν αγάπην τήν ποιεῖς (p. 301), and Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 155) quotes πρὸς τὸ δόνουμε from B.U. 948 (iv/v A.D.) "very illiterate." Mayser (op. cit.) gives numerous examples of ὁ καί which "first in Roman time" appears in the nominative. He compares this with the relative use ὃς καί and is inclined to regard ὁ καί as relative. The analogy of the Latin qui et favours the relative idea, but the article alone is sufficient in Greek. I would not insist on the relative for Σαῦλος ὁ καί Παῦλος (Ac. 13:9), though admitting the possibility of it. It means (Deissmann), not 'Saul who is henceforth Paul,' but 'also Paul.' Cf. also Hatch, Jour. of Bibl. Lit., Pt. II, p. 141 f., 1908.

In truth this use of ὁ καί with double names was very common in N. T. times. Dieterich sees no instance of ὁ as relative in the N. T. But in Rev. 1:4, 8; 11:17, we have ὁ ἢν. One either has to say that here ὁ is used as a relative or that it is a relative. It all comes to the same in the end. It may be a bit artificial, ὁ ὦν καὶ ὁ ἢν καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος, but the antique and vernacular relative ὁ came in as a resource when John did not wish to use γενόμενος of God, and since there is no aorist participle for εἰμί. Psychologically

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., pp. 182 ff. For hist. of the matter see K.-B1., I, pp. 608
3 Gr., pp. 310 IL
4 See Schmid, Der Atticismus, p. 338; Volker, Synt. d. griech. Pap., p. 6; Ramsay, Cities and Bish. of Phrygia, XIX, 429; Deiss., B. S., pp. 313 ff.; Moulton, Prol., p. 83.
5 Unters., p. 199. Winer (W.-Th., p. 107) rejects ὁ καί as relative.
the article is called for here between two articles, but grammar
can do nothing with it. If η is treated as a substantive, that
would call for τό as in τό δέ ἀνέβη (Eph. 4:9). Moulton finds
several examples in late papyri of o as relative (for o as demonstrative see pp. 693 ff.), like ην χύρα ην δέδωκεν (p. 304). The only
real difficulty in Rev. 1:4, 8, etc., is the nominative use, and
that was not insuperable when the exigencies of the sentence de-
demanded it. It is possible that this phrase had come to be a set
phrase among the Christians for the eternity and unchangeable-
ness of God. For the possible use of τίς as relative see under
VIII.

VIII. Interrogative Pronouns (ἀντωνυμίαι ἐρωτητικαί)
(a) Τίς. The root of the interrogative τίς (Thess. κίς. Cf. Ionic
κως, κότερος), indefinite τίς (cf. τε), is at bottom the same as the
Indo-Germanic root quis and Latin quis (aliquis, que). Curiously
enough some of the grammars, Monro's Homeric Grammar, for
example, give no separate or adequate discussion of the inter-
rogative pronouns.

1. Substantival or Adjectival. Τίς is either adjectival as τίνα
μισθοῦ ἐχετε; (Mt. 5:46), or, as more commonly, substantival like
τίς ὑπεδείειεν; (Mt. 3:7).

2. The Absence of Gender. That it appears only in the nom-
inative and accusative is noteworthy. This fact probably had
something to do with the gradual retreat of τίς before ποιός. The
neuter in the N. T. occurs with adjectives only, as τί ἀγαθόν in
Mt. 19:16.

3. Τίς=ποιός. An opposite tendency is seen in the use of τίς=
ποιός. Hatzidakis has shown examples of this idiom as early as
Euripides. As New Testament illustrations one may note τίς
οὕτως ἔστιν ὃς (Lu. 7:49), τίνες οἱ λόγοι οὕτων οὐς ἀντιβάλλετε (Lu.
24:17; cf. ποιά 24:19), τίς ἐστιν οὕτος ὁ νῦς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Jo. 12:34).
Cf. Lu. 4:36. Only once is ποιός used with the article (Jas.
4:14, and here B omits η), while we find τίς ἡ σοφία (Mk. 6:2),
tίς ἡ αἰτία (Ac. 10:21); etc. Sometimes τίς and ποιόν are used to-
gether. It might seem at first as if the distinction were here
insisted on, as in εἰς τίνα ἡ ποιόν καίρον (1 Pet. 1:11) and ποιόν
οἶκον — ἡ τίς τόπος (Ac. 7:49). But, tautology seems plain in the
last example and may be true of 1 Pet. 1:11, but not certainly

1 Cl. Rev., April, 1904, p. 155.
2 Cf. Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 194; Brug., Griech. Gr., pp. 117, 244.
3 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 163.
4 lb., p. 164.
5 Einl., p. 207 f.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 176.
so. In Mk. 4:30 W. H. read ἐν τίνι, but some MSS. have ἐν ποίᾳ.
Cf. also τίς καὶ ποταπός in Lu. 7:39, which is not tautological.

4. Indeclinable τί. In Jo. 18:38, τί ἐστιν ἀλήθεια, the neuter in the predicate calls for no special remark. So Gal. 3:19. Cf. Latin quid and English what in such a sentence. This idiom belongs to the ancient Greek and distinguishes between the essence of a thing (τίς) and the classification of a thing (τίς), as Gildersleeve puts it (Syntax of Cl. Gk., p. 59). Cf. ὑμεῖς τίνες ἐστέ; (Ac. 19:15) and τί ἐστιν ἀνθρώπος (Heb. 2:6). But this explanation will not hold for 1 Jo. 3:2, τί ἐσμέθα, nor Ac. 13:25, τί ἐμὲ ὑπονοεῖτε. The text in Acts is not certain. The κοινή shows this development outside of the N. T. In the modern Greek "the neuter τί, is used with all genders and cases both in the singular and plural" (Vincent and Dickson, Handb., p. 55). Cf. τί ὥρα ἐίναι 'what o'clock is it?' Τί γυναίκα; 'which woman?' Thumb, Handb., p. 94. It is not unusual in classical Greek to have τί as predicate to ταῦτα, as in Lu. 15:26 τί ἀν ἐν ταῦτα, Jo. 6:9 ταῦτα τί ἐστιν. So probably τί ταῦτα ποιεῖτε; (Ac. 14:15), though τί here may be 'why' and not predicative. The usual construction appears in Ac. 17:20 τίνα θέλει ταῦτα ἐίναι (cf. Jo. 10:6), 11:17 ἐγὼ τίς ἥμιν; cf. Lu. 8:9. In Ac. 21:33 τίς and τί are sharply distinguished. The use of τί with γίνομαι is hardly in point here (Ac. 5:24; 12:18) as it is found in the Attic τί γένωμαι. In Jo. 21:21 οὗτος δὲ τί; we must supply γενήσεται.

5. Predicate Use of τί with τοῦτο. In Ac. 23:19, τί ἐστιν ὁ ἔχεις, we find the full expression. In Lu. 16:2, τί τοῦτο ἄκουσ περί σου, we meet the abbreviated idiom. Cf. Ac. 14:15 τί ταῦτα (see also 9). Cf. Lu. 1:66; Ac. 5:24. The phrase τί πρὸς ἡμᾶς (Mt. 27:4), τί πρὸς σε (Jo. 21:22) is matched by the Attic τί ταῦτα ἐμοί (Kuhner-Gerth, II, 417; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 177). Cf. οὗτος τί, (Jo. 21:21). Blass (ib.) also ellipeses τί γαρ μοι τοὺς ἔξω κρίνειν, (1 Cor. 5:12) with the infinitive in Arrian, Diss. Epict., ii, 17. 14. Τί ἐμοί καὶ σοί (Jo.12:4, etc.) is in the LXX (2 Ki. 3:13), but it is also a Greek idiom (ellipsis, Kuhner-Gerth, ib.).

6. In Alternative Questions. Quality in general is nearly gone from the κοινή. Τίς when πότερος might have been used is not unknown in ancient Greek. Indeed even in Latin quis occurs sometimes instead of the more usual uter. In the LXX πότερος

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T., p. 176.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 177.
4 Ib.
5 Jelf, 874, obs. 4.
6 Draeger, Hist. Synt., p. 103.
is supplanted by τίς and the particle πότερον occurs only once, and that in Job (literary).\footnote{Thack., Gr., p. 192.} Moulton\footnote{Prol., p. 77.} finds only one example of πότερος in the papyri, and that unintelligible. So in the N. T. πότερος does not occur as an adjective. So in Mt. 9:5 τί γὰρ ἐστίν εὐκο-
πώτερον εἰπεῖν—ἡ εἰπεῖν, 21:31 τίς ἐκ τῶν δύο ἐποίησεν, 27:21 τίνα
θέλετε ἀπὸ τῶν δύο. Cf. also 23:17, 19; 27:17; Mk. 2:9; Lu. 7:42;
22:27; 1 Cor. 4:21; Ph. 1:22. Moulton\footnote{Ib.} notes that "whether,
adjectively, is as archaic as πότερος." and predicts that "the best
of the two" will be the English of the future.

It is common in other Indo-Germanic languages.\footnote{Thompson, Synt., p. 74.} Cf. τίς τίνος
Some MSS. have τίς τί also in Lu. 19:15, but not \textit{XBDL} (W. H.
and Nestle read τί). Cf. ἥλικον—ἥλικην in Jas. 3:5.

8. As Relative. Just as ὁς and ὅστις came to be used as inter-
rogatives, so τίς drifted occasionally to a mere relative. We have
seen (1 Tim. 1: 7) how the relative and the interrogative come to
be used side by side. "In English, the originally interrogative
pronouns 'who' and 'which' have encroached largely on the use
of the primitive relative 'that.'"\footnote{Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 67.} Moulton's sketch of the facts\footnote{Prol., p. 93 f.; Cl. Rev., Apr., 1904, p. 154 f.}
makes it clear that in the N. T. τίς may be relative if the exigencies
call for it. Moulton finds it only in the illiterate papyri, but the
usage is supported by inscriptions\footnote{Dieterich, Unters., p. 200.} and by the Pontic dialect to-
day.\footnote{Thumb, Theol. Literaturzeit., xxviii, p. 423, (quoted in Moulton, Prol., p. 94).} Moulton\footnote{Thick.} gives from the papyri, ἐβρὸν γεοργὸν τίς αὐτὰ
ἐλκύσῃ, B.U. 822 (iii/A.D.); τίνος ἐὰν χρίαιν ἔχης. B. M. 239 (iv/A.D.).
From the inscriptions see τίς ἀν κακῶς ποιῆσει. J.H.S., XIX, 299.
Moulton\footnote{Prol., p. 93} also quotes Jebb on Soph., 0. T. 1141: "Τίς in clas-
sical Greek can replace ὅστις only where there is an indirect ques-
tion." The plainest New Testament example of τίς as ὁς appears
to be Mk. 14:36 οὐ τί ἐγὼ θέλω ἀλλὰ τί σὺ. Cf. Mt. 26:39 οὐχ ὡς
ἐγὼ θέλω, ἀλλὰ ὡς σὺ. But it is not much more so than Mt. 15:32
οὐκ ἔχουσιν τί φάγωσιν (cf. Mk. 8:1 f.) and Mk. 6:36 ἓνα—ἀγο-
rάσωσιν ἐστωτίς τί φάγωσιν. Cf. οὐκ ἔχει ποὺ—κλίνῃ (Mt. 8:20),
but ὅπου—φάγω (Mk. 14:14). See in the papyri, οὐδέν ἔχω τί ποι-
ήσω σοι, B.U. 948 (iv/v A.D.), as quoted by Moulton (\textit{Cl. Rev.}, 1904,
p.155). But even so Xenophon has this idiom, and Sophocles, \textit{Oed}.
Col. 317, has ὅκ ἔχω τί φῶ, which looks like an indirect question. Cf. Winer-Moulton, p. 211; Winer-Schmiedel, p. 240. It is not necessary to bring1 under this construction ὅκ γὰρ ἧδει τί ἀποκριθῆ (Mk. 9:6) nor Mk. 13:11. Here the idiom is really that of indirect question (deliberative question). Cf. the direct question in Mt. 6:31 with the indirect in 6:25. So in Mt. 10:19 (first example) and see 9. But the second example in Mt. 10:19 (δοθήσε ταί—τί λαλήσητε) may be the relative use. Cf. also Lu. 17:8.

In Ac. 13:25 the punctuation can (so Nestle, but not W. H.) be made so that τί is relative, τί ἐμὲ ὑπονοεῖτε εἰναι, ὅκ εἰμὶ ἐγὼ. It is possible also thus to construe Lu. 19:3, ἵδεῖν Ἰησοῦν τίς ἐστίν, instead of taking τίς ἐστιν as an accusative of general reference. Cf. Mk. 1:24, ὅδε σε τίς εἶ (Lu. 4:34 also). Cf. the prolepsis σὺ τίς εἶ in Jo. 8:25. So Ro. 14:4, 10. The rhetorical questions in Lu. 11:5; 15:4, 8; Jas. 3:13 are not, of course, instances of this usage.2 Perhaps the anacoluthon in Lu. 11:11 (τίνα δὲ εξ ὑμῶν τῶν πατέρα αἰτῆσαι—ἐπιδίωσει) may have arisen because of this idiom. The distinction between τίς and ὦς is, of course, usually maintained (Jo. 16:18; Ac. 23:19; Heb. 12:7). It is at least noteworthy that in 1 Cor. 15:2 Paul changes from ὦς (used four times) to τίνι λόγῳ. An indirect question comes with a jolt and makes one wonder if here also the relative use of τίς does not occur. In Mt. 26:62 (οὐδὲν ἀποκρίθη τί οὐτοὶ σου καταμαρτυροῦσιν) we may have an indirect question (cf. Mk. 14:60), though πρῶς would be usual (cf. Mt. 27:14). It is better to follow W. H. with two separate questions3 and even so τί= τί ἐστιν ὦ. The use of τίς as relative Blass4 calls "Alexandrian and dialectical." The LXX (Lev. 21:17 ἀνθρωπός τίνι ἐὰν ἤ, Deut. 29:18 ἀνήρ—τίνος, Ps. 40:6 ὅκ ἐστιν τίς) does show examples of it, but it is not confined to Egypt, as has been already shown.5 Brugmann (Griech. Gr., p. 561) finds τίς as relative in Boeotian and even rarely in the older Attic.

9. Adverbial Use. The neuter accusative τί is frequently used in the sense of 'why' in the N. T. This is classical and common and calls for little comment. It still appears in modern Greek (Thumb, p. 94). See Mt. 7:3 (τί βλέπεις τό κάρφος) 8:26 (τί δειλοί ἐστε) 19:17; 20:6, etc. In Ac. 14:15 τί ταῦτα ποιεῖτε we probably have τί= 'why.' Cf. Mk. 11:3. In Mk. 2:24 τί ποιοῦσιν τοῖς σάββασιν ὃ ὅκ ἔστιν; note 'why,' though τί is followed by ὦ. It

1 As Simcox does, Lang. of the N. T., p. 69 f.
2 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 241; Moulton, Prol., p. 93.
3 W.-Sch., p. 241; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 331.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 175.
is interesting to note πώς ἢ τί, Mt. 10:19 Lu. 12:11. In Jo. 14:22 τί γέγονεν ὅτι we see the full form of the idiom τί ὅτι (Lu. 2:49; Ac. 5:4, 9). Here τί still = 'why.' But in ἰνα τί (1 Cor. 10:29 and Mt. 9:4; 27:46; Lu. 13:7; Ac. 4:25; 7:26) τί is really the subject of γενναί (ellipsis). It is not unknown in Attic Greek. 1 W. H. never print ἰνατί (cf. Mt. 9:4; Lu. 13:7). It is common in LXX.

10. With Prepositions. There is very little difference between τί= 'why' and διά τί= 'because of what' (Mt. 15:2, 3; 17:19; Lu. 24:38, etc.). Κατά τί ('according to what') is practically 'how.' Cf. Lu. 1:18. For ἐν τίνι see Mt. 5:13. But πρῶς τί (Jo. 13:28) = 'for what purpose.' In Jo. 13:22 περί τίνος λέγει there is no such idea. But purpose again is expressed by εἰς τί (Mt. 14:31; 26:8; Mk. 14:4; Ac. 19:3).


12. As Exclamation. In Mt. 7:14 W. H. read ὅτι (causal), not τί στενὴ ἡ πύλη. But in Lu. 12:49 καὶ τί θέλω εἰ ἡδη ἀνήψθη there is no doubt of the text. W. H. punctuate as a question, but Nestle as an exclamation. Examples of exclamatory τί—'how' are found in 2 Sam. 6:20; Song of Sol. 7:6 and in the modern Greek, τί καλὸς ἀνθρωπος! Cf. Mullach, Vulg., pp. 210, 321; Winer-Moulton, p. 562. Blass2 compares the Hebrew נ. On the whole it is best to take τί in Lu. 12:49 = 'how.'

13. Indirect Questions. It is, of course, the ancient idiom3 to have τίς in an indirect question. But in the N. T. the indirect interrogative ὅστις has disappeared in this idiom save in Ac. 9:6 (MSS. divided here). A good example of τίς occurs in Ac. 10: 29 πυθάνομαι τίνι λόγῳ μετεπέμψασθέ με. In Luke we meet the neuter article rather frequently before the indirect question. So τὸ τί ὅν θέλεις (1:62), τὸ τίς ὅν εἶνα (9:46). Cf. 22:23, 24, etc. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 158) sees no special point in the article (cf. English " the which"). Paul sometimes uses it also (Ro. 8:26; 1 Th. 4:1 τὸ πώς). The question is brought out rather more sharply by the article. The Attic use of τὸ τί, τὸ ποίον) (Thompson, Synt., p. 74) in reference to something previously mentioned is like our "The what?" Cf. Herm., Sim., VIII, i, 4, Clem., Hom., i, 6.

14. Τίς or τίς. Sometimes it is difficult to decide whether τίς

or τις is right. So 1 Pet. 5:8 W. H. have ζητῶν καταπιέων with τινά in the margin. But Nestle actually prints ζητῶν τίνα καταπιέων. In Heb. 5:12 W. H. read τινά and Nestle τίνα (both indefinite). In Jas. 5:13 the reading is, of course, τις, not τίς. So 1 Cor. 7:18.

(b) Ποίος.

1. **Qualitative.** It occurs sixteen times in direct questions. It is still used in its original qualitative sense. Clearly this is true in Jo. 12:33, σημαίνειν ποιώς θεωνάτω ἡμελλεν ἀποθνησκευν (cf. 18:32), Ro. 3:27 (δια ποίου νόμου; τῶν ἔργων;). The same thing is true of 1 Cor. 15:35 (ποίως σώματι ἔρχονται), cf. also 1 Pet. 2:20. In 1 Pet. 1:11 we find both τίνα and ποίου in apparent contrast. Other possible instances are Jo. 10:32; Ac. 7:49 (LXX); Jas. 4:14. The common ἐν ποίᾳ ἐξουσίᾳ. (Mt. 21:23; Mk. 11:28; Ac. 4:7, LXX, etc.) seems also to retain the qualitative force. Cf. also Lu. 24:19. The qualitative sense is clear in ποίου πνεύματος ἐστε (Lu. 9:55), a spurious passage, however.

2. **Non-qualitative.** But some examples clearly have lost the qualitative sense. In the modern Greek ποίος is used regularly¹ = τίς, and is the usual interrogative. Note the accent ποίος. Indeed examples of this weakened sense of ποίος Jannaris² finds as early as AEschylus and Euripides. See (a), 3. In Mt. 24:42 οὐκ οἴδατε ποίᾳ ἡμέρᾳ ὁ κύριος ὑμῶν ἔρχεται there seems to be merely the force of τίς, not quality. Cf. also 24:43 ποίᾳ φυλακῇ, Lu. 12:39 ποίᾳ ὕρᾳ, Ac. 23:34 ποίας ἐπαρχείας, Rev. 3:3 ποίαν ὑπαν. This is probably true also of Mt. 22:36 ποία ἐντολή (Mk. 12:28). In Lu. 5:19 ποίας and 6:32 f. ποίᾳ χάρις either point of view will answer.

3. **In Indirect Questions.** It occurs sixteen times (not counting Lu. 9:55) in this construction against four for ὅποιος. Cf. indicative in Mt. 21:24; 24:42; Jo 12:33; 21:19, and the subjunctive in Lu. 5:19 μὴ ποίας ἐπενέγκωσιν. Ποίος is found in the LXX and in the papyri.

(c) Πόσος.

1. **Less Frequent than ποίος.** It occurs chiefly in the Synoptic Gospels (twenty-seven times in W. H. text).

2. **Meaning.** It is used in the sense of 'how much' (πόσῳ Mt. 12:12), 'how great' (πόσου Mt. 6:23), and of 'how many' (πόσους ἄρτους ἔχετε; Mt. 15:34). Eleven examples of πόσῳ occur almost like an adverb (Mt. 7:11; 10:25, etc.). The use of πόσος χρόνος — ὡς (Mk. 9:21) is noteworthy.

¹ Thumb, Handb., p. 94.
3. In Indirect Questions. See οὐκ ἀκούεις πόσα σου καταμαρτυροῦσιν; (Mt. 27:13). Cf. Ac. 21:20, etc.

4. The Exclamatory Use. This is found in Lu. 15:17 πόσοι μίσθωτει τοῖς πατρός μου, and in 2 Cor. 7:11 πόσην κατεργάσατο ύμιν σπουδήν. The exclamatory use of τῶς may be mentioned (Mk. 10:23 f.; Jo. 11:36). Cf. ὦς in Ro. 10:15 and 11:33. Cf. πόσος—ὡς in Mk. 9:21.

(d) Πηλίκος.

1. Rare. It is found only twice in the N. T. (Gal. 6:11; Heb. 7:4) and W. H. put ἦλικοις in the margin of Gal. 6:11. It is rare also in the LXX (cf. Zech. 2:2), and has disappeared from the modern Greek vernacular.

2. Indirect Questions. Both of the N. T. examples are indirect questions. The example in Heb. 7:4 describes greatness of Melchizedek (how great), the one in Gal. 6:11 presents the size of the letters (how large).

(e) Ποταπός.

It is the late form for ποδαπός. It no longer in the N. T. means ‘from what country,’ but merely ‘of what sort’= ποῖος. It is found only once in LXX (Susanna 0 54, "where it keeps something of its original local meaning"). It exists in the late Greek vernacular. It occurs once in a direct question (Mt. 8:27) and once probably in an exclamation (2 Pet. 3:11). Four times we find it in indirect questions (Mk. 13:1; Lu. 1:29; 7:39; 1 Jo. 3:1). In Lu. 7:39 it is contrasted with τίς.

(f) Πότερος.

As a pronoun it has vanished from the LXX (Thackeray, Gr., p. 192) and from the papyri (Moulton, Prol., p. 77). The only example in the N. T. (cf. LXX, Thackeray, p. 192) is in an alternative indirect question as the conjunction πότερον (Jo. 7:17). Cf. Latin utrum—an. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 176) cites Herm., Sim., ix, 28. 4.

IX. Indefinite Pronouns (ἀντωνυμίαι ἄριστοι).

(a) Τίς.

1. The Accent. Jannaris calls it "irrational" to accent the nominative τίς rather than τίς. But then the nominative singular never has an accent unless at the beginning of a sentence or in philosophical writings (Thompson, Syntax, p. 76) and cannot otherwise be distinguished in looks from τίς the interrogative.

2. Relation to τίς. The same connection is seen in the Latin

1 Thackeray, Gr., p. 192.  2 Moulton, Prol., p. 95.  3 Moulton, Prol., p. 95.  4 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 163.
quis, ali-quis and quis-quis (cf. τίς τίς in Argive dialect). Brugmann considers —κί— in οὐ-κί, πολλάκι-ς the same word as τι and cites κίς in the Thessalian dialect. Just as in modern Greek τίς disappears before ποιός, so τίς vanishes before κανείς (Thumb, Handb., p. 95). But in the N. T. τίς is still very common, especially in Luke and Acts. In general the usage is in harmony with that of ancient Greek. We do not have ἐνιόι in the N. T. In Ac. 25:26 note τί γράψαι and τί γράψω. Cf. Lu. 7:40. See τίς τί, Ro. 8:24, in margin of W. H.

3. Τίς as Substantive. As a substantive τίς may be equal to ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’ or 'anything,’ as in οὐδὲ τὸν πατέρα τίς ἐπιγινώσκει, Mt. 11:27; πῶς δύναται τίς, 12:29; εἰ τίς θέλει, 16:24; ἐὰν τίς ὑμῖν ἐίπη τί (note both examples like τινός τι Lu. 19:8; cf. Mk. 11:25; Col. 3:13), Mt. 21:3. For several instances of τί 'anything' see Ac. 25:5, 8, 11. But the substantive use of τίς may be = ‘somebody’ or 'something,' as ἔρχεται τίς Lu. 8:49, δραμὼν δὲ τίς Mk. 15:36, ὑπὸ τινος Heb. 3:4. Cf. Lu. 8:46. Often the partitive genitive (or ablativ) occurs with τίς as substantive. So τινὲς τῶν γραμματέων Mt. 12:38, τίς τῶν μαθητῶν Lu. 11:1, τίς ἐκ τοῦ ὄχλου 12:13. The plural is usually = 'some,' as Mk. 9:1; 1 Cor. 9:22. In Homer τίς was sometimes "public opinion, the man in the street" (Gladstone, quoted in Thompson's Syntax, p. 75). This idiom is very nearly represented by εἶπεν δὲ τίς ἐκ τοῦ ὄχλου, Lu. 12:13 (cf. 11:1; 7:36). In Heb. 2:6, διεμαρτύρατο ποὺ τίς, the τίς is really quite definite in the writer's mind, though he writes thus.

4. With Numerals = 'About.' With numerals τίς sometimes in classical Greek gives an approximate idea rather than exact reckoning, like our "about." No certain instances of this idiom appear in the N. T. Certainly not Ac. 19:14, where τινος, not τινὲς, is the correct text. In Lu. 7:19, προσκαλεσάμενος δύο τινὰς τῶν μαθητῶν, the meaning may be 'about two,' but it could mean 'certain two' just as well. The same thing is true of Ac. 23:23, προσκαλεσάμενος τινας δύο, where it is even less likely that the idea is 'about two.' Classical also is ἔις τίς (Lu. 22:50; Jo. 11:49, and probably Mk. 14:47). The adjectival uses of τίς are quite varied.

5. With Substantives. Here τίς may = a kind of,’ as ἀπαρχήν τινα, Jas. 1:18. Cf. Ac. 17:20, though this is not true of Col.

---

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 244.
2 Ib. Interrogative and indefinite is at bottom the same word. Cf. Hartung, Uber die Casus in der griech. and Sprache, p. 279.
2:23 because of the negative.\(^1\) But the commonest use of τις with substantives is ‘certain’ (really rather uncertain!). Thus ἰερεύς τις, Lu. 1:5; ὑπηρετός τις, Lu. 14:2, 16; 15:11, etc. Cf. τι ὠδωρ, Ac. 8:36. Sometimes it is difficult to give more force to τις than the English indefinite article. Cf. νομικός τις, Lu. 10:25; κριτής τις ἐν τινι πόλει, Lu. 18:2. Indeed it is nearly always true that our "certain" is too emphatic.

6. With Adjectives. The effect is rhetorical.\(^2\) There is "a double adjectival sense."\(^3\) Thus Ac. 8:9, τινα μέγαν, = 'a very great man' ('some great man'), in his own estimation. Blass\(^4\) needlessly considers this passage an interpolation. Cf. also Heb. 10:27, φοβερά τις ἐκδοχῇ, where τις rather intensifies φοβερά. The tone may tend to soften the matter as in Heb. 2:7, 9, βραχύ τι. But in Lu. 24:41 τι βρώσιμον, Jo. 1:46 τι ἀγαθόν, Ac. 25:26 ἀσφαλές τι, Ro. 14:14 τι κουῦν, 2 Cor. 11:16 μικρόν τι, we have rather the substantive use of τι. But in τυφλός τι, Lu. 18:35, both are adjectives. Cf. ἄλλος τις (Lu. 22:59) and ἔτερος τις (Ac. 27:1).

7. As Predicate. Here τις may be emphatic = 'somebody in particular,' as Ac. 5:36, λέγων εἶναι τινα ἐαυτόν (cf. 8:9). See also Gal. 2:6, ἀπὸ τῶν δοκοῦντων εἶναι τι, where note difference between τι and τινες. In Gal. 6:3 note in εἰ δοκεῖ τις εἶναι τι μηδὲν ὢν, both senses of τις. But the predicate may have the other meaning of τι ('anyone,' ‘anything’). So 1 Cor. 3:7; 10:19; Gal. 6:15. In Gal. 2:6 compare τι and ὅποιοι.

8. The Position of τις. It is not material. It naturally follows the substantive or adjective as in εἰς κόμην τινα, Lu. 10:38, but we often have the other order as in τινα χήραν Lu. 21:2. Τινες may indeed begin a sentence (Ph. 1:15; 1 Cor. 8:7).

9. As Antecedent. In Mt. 16:28 τινες is the antecedent of οὖν τινες, but here οὖν τινες is more definite than of would have been. Cf. Lu. 9:27. In 2 Cor. 10:2 note τινας τοὺς λ.

10. Alternative. It is used to express alternative ideas, as τινες μέν—τινες δὲ in Ph. 1:15. Cf. ὑπὸ τινῶν — ὑπὸ τινῶν—ἄλλων δὲ in Lu. 9:7 f. and τις — ἔτερος in 1 Cor. 3:4.

11. The Negative Forms οὐ τις, μή τις. These are not printed as single words by W. H., except μήτι as an interrogative particle expecting the answer No, as in Mt. 26:22, μήτι ἐγὼ εἰμι, κύριε; cf. Jo. 4:33. It is all a matter with the editor whether in ἵνα μή τις

---

\(^1\) W.-Sch., p. 242.  
\(^2\) W.-M., p. 212 f; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 178.  
\(^3\) Moulton in W.-M., p. 213.  
\(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 178.
ei̱p̱η, 1 Cor. 1:15 (cf. Eph. 2:9), we may not really have μήτις. The separation in Heb. 3:13; 4:11 is against it. Cf., for instance, μή τινα (2 Cor. 12:17) and μήτι in the next verse. The anacoluthon with τινα here is noticeable.

12. Indeclinable τι. The use of τις with σπλάγχνα καὶ ὀικτιρμοί, (Ph. 2:1) may be compared with indeclinable τι. Indeclinable τι itself survives in modern Greek κάτι (Moulton, Prol., p. 244),

(b) Ἐις = Τις.

This is merely one usage of Ἐις, the cardinal numeral. The idiom is common after Plutarch, but traces of it occur earlier. Moulton sees no difference between Ἐις and τις in Aristophanes, Av., 1292. The papyri furnish similar examples. "The fact that Ἐις progressively ousted τις in popular speech, and that even in classical Greek there was a use which only needed a little diluting to make it essentially the same, is surely enough to prove that the development lay entirely within the Greek language, and only by accident agrees with Semitic." This use of Ἐις alone, with genitives, with substantives, was treated at the close of the chapter on Adjectives. For Ἐις τις see τις. For Ἐις — Ἐις as alternative pronoun see later, and for Ἐις — οὗ and οὐδείς (μηδείς) see Negative Pronouns under ξι.

(c) Πᾶς = ‘any one’ no matter who, ‘anything’ no matter what. Cf. quidvis. We see this construction in Ac. 2:21 (LXX), πᾶς δς ἐὰν ἐπικαλέσῃται. So Gal. 3:10 (LXX); Lu. 14:33. Πᾶς with a participle may have the same force, like παντὸς ἄκουοντος τὸν λόγον, Mt. 13:19 (cf. Lu. 11:4), and πᾶς ὁ ὁργιζόμενος, Mt. 5:22, etc. For πᾶς — οὗ ‘no one’ see negative pronouns. For the adjectival uses of πᾶς, see chapter on Adjectives and chapter on Article.

(d) Ο Ἐδίνα. This rare pronoun was current chiefly in colloquial speech (Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 166). It survives in the modern Greek (Thumb, p. 98). It means "Mr. So-and-So." It occurs only once in the N. T., πρὸς τὸν δέινα, Mt. 26:18.

X. Alternative or Distributive Pronouns (ἀντωνυμίαι διατη-ρίαι).

I apply a term from AEschylus in lieu of a better one. The reciprocal pronoun ἀλλήλων has been already treated.

(a) Ἀμφοτέροι. Ἀμφω has vanished from the κοινή. Ἀμφοτέροι has taken its place. It continues in the later Greek, but Thumb

1 Hatz., Einl., p. 207; W.-Sch., p. 243.
2 Prol., p. 97.
3 Ib. 4 Thompson, Synt., p. 77.
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 57.
PRONOUNS (’ANTΩNYMIAI) 745

does not give it for modern Greek. It is frequent in the LXX, but is found only fourteen times in the N. T. It occurs without the article in all but five instances. So Mt. 9:17. Once the article is used with the substantive, ἀμφότερα τὰ πλοῖα, Lu. 5:7.

The other four examples have the article before the pronoun, like οἱ ἀμφότεροι, Eph. 2:18. It is possible, even probable, that in two instances duality has disappeared from the word. It seems certain that three items are referred to in Ac. 23:8 and in Ac. 19:16 the seven sons of Sceva are alluded to. A corruption of the text is possible (cf. the Bezan text for 19:16), but it is hardly necessary to postulate that in view of "the undeniable Byzantine use" of ἀμφότεροι for more than two (cf. "both" in old English). The papyri show undoubted examples also and "the Sahidic and some later versions took ἀμφοτέρων, as all." But Moulton hesitates to admit in Luke "a colloquialism of which early examples are so rare," a rather surprising objection from Dr. Moulton. On the whole one is safe in the two passages in Acts here quoted to admit the free use of ἀμφότεροι. The papyri examples bearing on this usage include N.P. 67, 69 (iv/A.D.) "where it is used of four men" (Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154), probably also B.M. 336 (ii/A.D.). See Bury, Cl. Rev., XI, p. 393, for the opposite view. Nestle (Berl. Phil. Woch., 1900, N. 47) shows that German also uses "beide" for three and more persons.

(b) Ἐκάστος. In the LXX Ἐκάστος is still used to a limited extent (Gen. 40:5) and occasionally as Ἐκάστος, without dual idea (cf. ἀμφότεροι), as often in the papyri. In O.P. 256 (i/A.D.) and B.M. 333 (ii/A.D.) Ἐκάστος is used of three and of four in G. H. 23a (ii/B.C.). See Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 440, and proper use of Ἐκάστος in P.Oxy. 905 (A.D. 170), πρός τὸ Ἐκάστορν μέρος. But in the N. T. Ἐκάστος does not appear. Ἐκάστος is common in the N. T., but comes to be replaced in modern Greek by κάθε, καθεῖς and καθένας (cf. καθ’ ἔνας in the N. T.).

1. Without Substantive. This is indeed the usual idiom, as in Mt. 16:27; Jo. 6:7.

2. With Substantive. Never with the article. So Eph. 4:16; Heb. 3:13; Rev. 22:2. Thus very rare.

1 Thack., Gr., p. 192.
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 80.
3 Ib.
4 Ib.
5 Ib., p. 79. Cf. Thack., Gr., p. 192.
3. With ἐκαστος. This is very frequent. So ἐκαστος Mt. 26:22, etc. We even have ἀνδρὶ ἐκαστος Rev. 21:21. But in Ac. 21:19, ἐξηγεῖτο καθ’ ἐν ἐκαστον ὃν ἐποίησεν we must not connect ἐκαστον with ἐν.

4. With Genitive. It is common also with the genitive, as in Lu. 13:15; Eph. 4:7.

5. Partitive Apposition. This is frequent also. Thus ἀφήνετε ἐκαστος Mt. 18:35, ἐπορεύουσαν πάντες—ἐκαστος Lu. 2:3, etc. The same thing is true in Eph. 5:33 ὡμεῖς καθ’ ἕνα ἐκαστος. This is a classical construction.

6. Rare in Plural. So ἐκαστοι. Ph. 2:4, but even here W. H. have ἐκαστος in the margin.

7. Repetition. Note the repetition of ἐκαστος in Heb. 8:11 (from Jer. 31:34). This translation of ὅικος, by ἐκαστος rather than ἀνηρ is an instance of independence of Hebrew literalism. Cf. Mt. 18:35 with Gen. 13:11; Ro. 15:2 and Eph. 4:25 with Is. 3:5 (Winier-Schmiedel, p. 246). For ἀνηρ—ἐκαστος in the LXX (literal books) see Thackeray, Gr., p. 192.

(c) ἄλλος. Cf. Latin alius, English else.

1. Used absolutely = ‘An-other,’ ‘One Other.’ This is the commonest use of the pronoun. Cf. 1 Cor. 12:8-10 where ἄλλῳ occurs six times. So Mt. 13:5-8 where ἄλλα appears three times. But it is found alone also, as ἄλλους, Mt. 27:42. For ἄλλος τις see Lu. 22:59. Cf. οὐδέν ἄλλο (Gal. 5:10) nothing else. It occurs in modern Greek vernacular.

2. For Two. But ἄλλος occurs where the idea of two is present (pair). Here ἐτέρῳ might have been used, but even in Euripides, I. T. 962 f., Blass finds θάτερον—τὸ δ’ ἄλλο, though he considers it a "most striking encroachment" for ἄλλος to supplant ἐτέρῳ in this fashion. Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 440) cites ἔτη μὲν μιᾶς—τῆς δ’ ἄλλης G. H. 23a (ii/B.c.); δύο, τὸν μὲν ἐνα—καὶ τὸν ἄλλον B.U. 456 (iv/A.D.). Moulton explains the existence of καὶ τὴν ἄλλην (σιαγόνα) in Lu. 6:29 as a failure on Luke's part to correct his source, a like failure appearing in Mt. 5:39, unless that was his source. But the matter goes much further than that. In Mt. 12:13 ἥ ἄλλη refers to the other hand (χείρ). In Jo. 19:32 note τοῦ πρώτου—καὶ τοῦ ἄλλου. Cf. also Jo. 18:16; 20:3 f. In Jo. 5:32 ἐγὼ and ἄλλος are contrasted. So Mt. 25:16, τὰ πέντε τάλαντα—ἄλλα πέντε, for which Blass finds "complete illustration in classi-
cal authors." There are other N. T. examples such as ἀλλην in Mt. 19:9, τὰ δύο—ἀλλα δύο Mt. 25:17, ἀλην Mk. 10:11, ἄλλον 10:12, ἄλλον παράκλητον Jo. 14:16.

3. As Adjective. Common. Cf. Mt. 2:12; 4:21; and in particular Rev. 14:6, 8, 15, 17, 18 and 1 Cor. 15:39, 41.

4. With the Article. It is not frequent. The article sharply refers to a preceding example. Cf. Mt. 5:39; Mt. 27:61. John alludes to himself in his Gospel as ὁ ἄλλος μαθητής (18:16; 20:2, 3, 4). The article may be repeated, as in Jo. 18:16; 19:32.

5. The Use of ἄλλος ἄλλο = 'One One Thing, One Another.' This is classical and is illustrated in Ac. 19:32; 21:34. In Ac. 2:12, ἄλλος πρὸ ἄλλου, the idiom is almost reciprocal like ἄλληλων.

6. In Contrast for 'Some — Others.' We have ἄλλη μέν—ἄλλη δὲ, 1 Cor. 15:39 and 41; ὁ μέν—ἄλλα δέ, Mt. 13:4 f. (cf. καὶ ἄλλο, Mk. 4:5); οἱ μέν—ἄλλοι δὲ—ἐτέροι δέ, Mt. 16:14; καὶ ἄλλοι—ἄλλοι δέ, Mk. 8:28; ὑπὸ τινῶν—ἄλλων, Lu. 9:8; ὁ ἐἰς—ὁ ἄλλος, Rev. 17:10.

7. Ellipsis of ἄλλος is possible in Ac. 5:29, Πέτρος καὶ οἱ (sc. ἄλλοι) ἄπόστολοι. Blass cites also Ac. 2:14, Πέτρος σὺν τοῖς (sc. λοιποῖς) ἐνδεκά. But psychologically this explanation is open to doubt.

8. The Use of ἄλλος and ἐτέρος Together. Blass finds this "probably only for the sake of variety." Certainly in 1 Cor. 12:9 f. no real distinction can be found between ἄλλος and ἐτέρος, which are here freely intermingled. But I am bound to insist on a real difference in Gal. 1:6 f. The change is made from ἐτέρον to ἄλλο for the very reason that Paul is not willing to admit that it is a gospel on the same plane (ἄλλο) as that preached by him. He admits ἐτέρον, but refuses ἄλλο. The use of εἰ μή by Paul does not disturb this interpretation. The same thing would seem to be true of 2 Cor. 11:4, ἄλλον Ἰησοῦν—πνεῦμα ἐτέρον—ἐναγγέλιον ἐτέρον. It may be that variety (as in 1 Cor. 12:9 f.) is all that induces the change here. But it is also possible that Paul stigmatizes the gospel of the Judaizers as ὁμοίον (cf. Gal. 1:6) and the Spirit preached by them, while he is unwilling to admit another (ἄλλον) Jesus even of the same type as the one preached by him.

9. = 'Different.' Besides, it is not to be forgotten that in ancient Greek ἄλλος itself was used for 'different kind.' Thompson (Syntax, p. 76) cites ἄλλα τῶν δικαίων from Xen., Mem., IV, 4. 25. Cf. also ἄλλα in the sense of 'but.' Cf. ἄλλα ἄλλη in 1 Cor. 15:39.

1 lb. 2 lb., p. 318.
Indeed in 1 Cor. 15:39, 41, ἀλλη μὲν—ἀλλη δὲ it is expressly stated that the glory is not ἡ αὐτή. In verse 40 ἐτέρα occurs. Here ἀλλος seems to be used in the sense of 'different,' like ἐτερος. In Latin alius was often used where earlier Latin would have used alter. Cf. Draeger, Hist. Synt., p. 105.

10. Ἀλλότριος. This variation of ἀλλος has the same relation to it that alienus has to alius. It means 'belonging to another,' and occurs fourteen times in the N. T. Cf. Ro. 15:20. The contrast with αὐτῶν is seen in Mt. 17:25. In Heb. 11:34 it has the notion of alienus.

(d) Ἐτερος.

1. Absolutely. So often as in Lu. 14:19 f., but it is also used more frequently with substantives than is ἀλλος. Cf. Lu. 4:43; Ac. 7:18 (LXX), etc. For ἐτερός τις see Ac. 8:34; Ro. 13:9. For the genitive with ἐτερος cf. Mt. 8:21; Gal. 1:19.

2. With Article. The article is also more common with ἐτερος than with ἀλλος. Cf. Mt. 10:23; 11:16, etc.

3. Second of Pair. A common, probably the original, use of ἕμπος is for the second of a pair. Cf. Latin alter. It is the only surviving dual pronominal word in the N. T. (except ἀμφότεροι), and is common in the LXX and the papyri. For σὺν ἐτέρα μιᾷ, see P.Tb. 421 (iii/A.D.). The examples are rather abundant in the N. T. of this dual (comparative) sense (ἐ-τερος). So τὸν ἑνα—τὸν ἐτερον, Mt. 6:24; σῦ—ἡ ἐτερον, 11:3; ἐν τῷ ἐτέρῳ πλοίῳ, Lu. 5:7. Cf. also Lu. 7:19 f.; 14:31; 16:13; 17:34 f.; 18:10; 20:11. Not radically different from this conception is the use of it for 'next,' as in Lu. 6:6, ἐν ἐτέρῳ σαββάτῳ, 9:56 εἰς ἐτέραν κώμην Ac. 20:15 τῇ ἐτέρᾳ. Cf. also Mt. 10:23. See also, τὸν ἐτερον in Ro. 2:1; 13:8 = 'neighbour.'

4. = 'Different.' The sense of 'different' grows naturally out of the notion of duality. The two things happen just to be different. Cf. Latin alius and alienus. The word itself does not mean 'different,' but merely 'one other,' a second of two. It does not necessarily involve "the secondary idea of difference of kind" (Thayer). That is only true where the context demands it. But note how Latin alter lends itself to the notion of change. Thompson suggests that this sense may be "an euphemism for κακός." The N. T. examples are rather numerous. So ἐγένετο—τὸ ἐδοξ τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ ἐτερον, Lu. 9:29. Cf. also Ac. 2:4; Ro. 7:23; 1 Cor. 14:21; 2 Cor. 11:4; Gal. 1:6; Heb. 7:11, 13, 15; Ju. 7.

1 Thack., Gr. p. 192.  
2 Mayser, Gr. p. 312.  
3 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 244.  
4 Synt., p. 77.
Cf. also ἐτέρως in Ph. 3:15 and ἐν ἐτέρᾳ μορφῇ Mk. 16:12 (disputed part of Mark.)

Cf. Ac. 17:21. We have already seen that ἄλλος may be equal to 'different' (1 Cor. 15:39). Ἐτερός occurs in verse 40 in the sense of 'different.' Ramsay (on Gal. 1:6) argues that, when Ἐτερός occurs in contrast with ἄλλος, it means not 'different' (as Lightfoot in loco), but 'another of the same kind.' Moulton (Prol., p. 246) stands by Lightfoot in spite of Ramsay's examples.

5. = 'Another' of Three or More. But Ἐτερός comes also to be employed merely for 'another' with more than two and with no idea of difference. This usage probably grew out of the use with two groups. So Lu. 10:1, ἀνεδείξεν Ἐτέρους ἐβδομήκοννα δύο. In Mt. 12:45, ἐπά Ἐτέρα πνεύματα ποιητήματα ἀμυνοῦ, the notion of difference is present. This difference may also be implied by Luke in 23:32, καὶ Ἐτεροι κακουργοὶ δύο. Cf. Lu. 8:3. But this is hardly true of Ac. 2:13. In Ac. 4:12 the point of Ἐτεροῦ is rather that no other name at all than that of Jesus, not that of difference in kind. In Lu. 19:16-20 we have this order, ὁ πρῶτος, ὁ δεύτερος, ὁ Ἐτερός. So in 1 Cor. 4:6, ἐν ὑπὸ τοῦ ἐνὸς φυσιώσθε κατὰ τοῦ Ἐτεροῦ, the third is again presented by Ἐτερός. Then, again, Ἐτεροὶ occupies third place in Mt. 16:14 and Heb. 11:36. In Mt. 15:30 it comes in the fifth place. Blass admits that this use of grepoc "at the close of enumerations may be paralleled from Attic writers." See further Lu. 3:18; Ro. 8:39; 1 Tim. 1:10. But in 1 Cor. 12:8-10 Ἐτέρῳ occurs in the third and the eighth places. We are not surprised then to learn that the papyri furnish plenty of examples where Ἐτερος refers to more than two. Blass indeed considers this extension not correct, and Moulton seems surprised that Luke should change the correct ἄλλος (Mk. 4:5-8 Mt. 13:5-8) to Ἐτεροῦ in Lu. 8:6-8. But Luke is reinforced by Paul in this laxity as to Ἐτερος. Cf. πάλαι καὶ Ἐτέρα in Lu. 3:18. Moulton (Cl. Rev., 1904, p. 154) calls this "incorrect Ἐτερος" and finds it in the papyri, as in O.P. 494 (ii/A.D.). But we do not need to hold grepos in leading strings. The "subtlety" (Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 440) is only called for in that case.

6. In Contrast. Ἐτερός may also be used in contrast for 'the one,' 'the other.' So 1 Cor. 15:40, Ἐτέρα μέν—ἐτέρα δέ. It is common in contrasts with other pronouns. Thus with εἰς in Mt. 6:24; ὁ εἰς in Lu. 7:41; Lu. 17:34 ff.; with τις, Lu. 11:15 f.; with ὁ μέν, Lu. 8:5 f.; with οἱ μέν and ἄλλοι, Mt. 16:14. But

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 245.  
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 79.

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 179.
neither οὐδέτερος (μηθ--) nor οὐδέτερος (μηθ--) occurs in the N. T., though μηθέτερος is read in Prov. 24:21. In Clem. Hom. XIX, 12 we have οὐδέτερος.

(e) OTHER ANTITHETIC PRONOUNS. For εἰς—ἐἰς (Mk. 10:37), θεῖς—ὁ δὲ (Gal. 4:24 f.), ἐν ὁ εἰς—ὁ ἄλλος (Rev. 17:10) see εἰς under Numeral Adjectives. So likewise τις may be contrasted with τις (Ph. 1:15), with ἄλλος (Lu. 9:7 f.), with ἄλλος (1 Cor. 3:4).

For the very common ὁ μὲν—ὁ δὲ, ὁς μὲν—ὁς δὲ see Demonstrative Pronouns. The repetition of the substantive is to be noted also.

So οἶκος ἐπὶ οἶκον πίπτει, Lu. 11:17; ὁ σατανᾶς τὸν σατανᾶν ἐκβάλλει, Mt. 12:26 (= Lu. 11:18). This notion of repetition is seen in ἡμέρα καὶ ἡμέρα (2 Cor. 4:16; cf. Heb. הָלָל הָלָל). Cf. also ἐις καὶ εἰς (Mt. 20:21; 24:40 f.; 27:38, etc.); ἐν ὁ εἰς—ὁ ἄλλος, Lu. 7:41.

For εἰς—καὶ εἰς—καὶ εἰς see Mk. 9:5 = Mt. 17:4 = Lu. 9:33.

This threefold repetition of εἰς is rhetorical. The distributive use of εἰς with κατά and ἀνά (ἐν καθ' ἐν, εἰς καθ' εἰς, ἀνά εἰς) was treated under Numeral Adjectives.

XI. Negative Pronouns (ἀντωνυμία ἀρνητικά).

(a) Οὐδείς.


2. Οὐθείς. This is made from are οὐτε εἰς. (sometimes also from οὐδὲ εἰς, 'not even,' Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 146) and occurs sometimes in the best N. T. MSS. Cf. W. H.'s text for Lu. 22: 35; 23:14; Ac. 15:9; 19:27; 26:26; 1 Cor. 13:2; 2 Cor. 11:9.

Jannaris finds it a peculiarity of the Alexandrian school. Meisterhans has shown from the inscriptions how οὐθείς and μηθείς came to be practically universal during the third century and the first half of the second century B.C. Thackeray has reinforced this position from the uncials for the LXX. The papyri are in full accord. In the fourth and fifth centuries A.D., the date of the great uncials, οὐθείς and μηθείς had disappeared from current speech, and yet a number of instances survive in the MSS. of the O. T. and the N. T., though others were probably replaced by οὐδείς and μηθείς.

---

1 W.-Sch., p. 246.
2 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 170. But see Schwyzer, Perg. Inschr., p. 114, for idea that the change is due to τ and δ being pronounced alike.
3 Att. Inschr., p. 259.
4 Gr., pp. 551f.
5 Thumb, Hellen., p. 14; Mayser, Gr., p. 150 f.
6 Thack., Gr., p. 60,
deed οὐθείς was a sort of fashion (Moulton, *Cl. Rev.*, Mar., 1910, p. 53) that came in iv/B.C. and vanished ii/A.D. It was nearly extinct in N. T. times. See further chapters VI, III (g), and VII, III 2.

3. *Gender*. The feminine form is less frequent in the N. T. than the masculine and neuter. The word occurs with substantives (Mk. 6:5), with other pronouns (ἄλλος, Ac. 4:12; ἄτερος, 17:21), but usually alone, as in Mt. 5:13; 6:24. It is common with the genitive (Lu. 18:34). The adverbial use of οὐδέν is seen in Gal. 4:1 οὐδέν διαφέρει δούλου, but the cognate accusative is a possible explanation (Gal. 2:6). Cf. οὐδεν in 1 Cor. 7:19. In Rev. 3:17, οὐδέν χρείαν ἔχω, the neuter is not to be construed with χρείαν.

4. Οὐδὲ εἶ. This is, of course, more emphatic than οὐθείς. The usage appears often in Xenophon, Demosthenes and other classic writers, the LXX and the Atticists.¹ For examples in the N. T. see Mt. 27:14; Jo. 1:3; Ac. 4:32; Ro. 3:10. The same principle appears in οὐκ ἐστὶν ἔως ἐνός, Ro. 3:12 (Ps. 14:1, 3). Cf. also the separation of οὐ—ποτὲ in 2 Pet. 1:21.²

5. Εἴς—οὐ. It is after the analogy of πᾶς—οὖ and distinctly emphatic, and is found in Demosthenes.³ Cf. Lu. 12:6, ἐν ἐξ ἀυτῶν οὐκ ἐστίν. So likewise Mt. 10:29, ἐν ἐξ ἀυτῶν οὐ πεσεῖται. In Mt. 5:18 we have ἐν—οὐ μή. For οὐθείς ὀστίς see ὀστις.

(b) Μηθείς. In general the history of μηθείς is parallel to that of οὐθείς. It is naturally much less frequent and its use instead of οὐθείς belongs to the discussion of Modes and Negative Particles. It follows in that matter the fate of μή. Μηθείς appears only once in the text of the N. T., Ac. 27:33. The use of μηθέν ὡς, Gal. 6:3, may be compared with οὐθέν εἰμι, 1 Cor. 13:2. In 1 Th. 4:12 note μηθενός χρείαν ἔχειτε.

(c) Οὔτις AND Μήτις. These were treated under τίς. Following the editors in the separation of these forms, it is to be observed that μήτι as mere particle occurs not merely in questions like μήτι οὔτός ἐστιν ὁ Χριστός; Jo. 4:29, but also with εἰ. So εἰ μήτι in 1 Cor. 7:5; 2 Cor. 13:5. But in Lu. 9:13, εἰ μήτι πορευθέντες ἡμεῖς ἀγοράσωμεν, it is possible to take μήτι as the object of ἀγοράσωμεν. Cf. Jo. 6:12, ἵνα μή τι ἀπόληται. But note μήτιγε 1 Cor. 6:3. The use of τίς with the conjunction μή is not infrequent (Mk. 13:5) and with the negative adverb μή also (Jo. 3:3, 5, etc.). So we have, contrary to the usual classic idiom, οὖ—τίς, μή—τίς.⁴ The

¹ W.-Sch., p. 248; Schmid, Atticismus, II, p. 137 f.
² Cf. W.-Sch., p. 249.
³ Ib., p. 178.
⁴ Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 256.
undoubted separation of \textit{où} and \textit{μή} from \textit{τίς} in such examples as Mt. 11:27; 12:19; Lu. 8:51; 12:4; Jo. 7:4; 10:28; Ac. 28:21; of 1 Cor. 4:5, etc., argues for the same thing where \textit{μή} \textit{τίς} and \textit{μή} \textit{τί} happen to come together. The \textit{kouvē} (Moulton, \textit{Prol.}, p. 246) supports the use of \textit{τίς} with the negative: Tb. P. 1 (ii/B.C.) \textit{μηδεμίας κρατήσεως μηδὲ κυριείας τινὸς ἐγγαίου περιγινομένης}.

(d) \textbf{WITH \Piᾶς.}

1. \textit{Où πᾶς}. Used together the words call for little in the way of explanation. \textit{Où} merely negatives \textit{πᾶς} as in classic Greek and= 'not every one.' Thus in Mt. 7:21, \textit{où πᾶς ὁ λέγων—εἰς ελεύθερόν τι} Jesus did not mean to say that 'no one' who thus addressed him could enter the kingdom of heaven. He merely said that 'not every one' would. Cf. also \textit{où πᾶσα σάρκ} 1 Cor. 15:39. The same principle applies to the plural \textit{où πάντες χωροῦσι τὸν λόγον}, Mt. 19:11. Cf. Ac. 10:41; Ro. 9:6; 10:16. But my friend, Mr. H. Scott, notes that in Ro. 10:16 and 1 Cor. 15:39 \textit{où πᾶς} can well mean 'no,' and that in Mt. 7:21 and the other clauses where \textit{αλλὰ}, occurs the \textit{αλλὰ} negatives the whole of the preceding clause. This is certainly worth considering. Cf. Mt. 7:21 \textit{où πᾶς ὁ λέγων}, with \textit{πᾶς ὁ ἀκούων}, in 7:26.

2. \textit{Où—πᾶς}. Here we have a different situation. The negative goes with the verb. A negative statement is made as to \textit{πᾶς}. The result is the same as if \textit{οὐδείς} had been used with an affirmative verb. So Mt. 24:22 (Mk. 13:20) \textit{οὐκ ἀν ἐσώθη πᾶσα σάρξ}, the idea is 'no flesh,' not 'not all flesh,' i.e. 'some flesh,' would have been lost. Cf. Lu. 1:37 \textit{οὐκ ἀδυνατησει—πᾶν ρήμα}, Ro. 3:20 (Gal. 2:16) \textit{οὐκ αἰωναίων ἐστεῖ πᾶσα σάρξ}. See also Ac. 10:14 \textit{οὐδὲποτε—πᾶν}. Cf. \textit{οὐδὲ πᾶν} Rev. 7:16; 9:4. It is true that this idiom is very common in the LXX\textsuperscript{1} as a translation of \textit{ことができ—κῦ}. Cf. Ex. 12:16, 43; 20:10, etc. But it is not without analogy also 'in the papyri use of \textit{πᾶς} "with prepositions and adjectives of negative meaning. Thus \textit{ἄνευ} or \textit{χωρὶς πᾶσης ὑπερθέσεως}, a recurrent formula, \textit{ἀνυπεθέθενοι παντὸς ἑπίμου}, Tb. P. 105 (ii/B.C.); \textit{δίχα πᾶσης ἐξουσίας}, Plutarch, \textit{Cons. ad Uxor.}, 1 (cf. Heb. 7:7).\textsuperscript{2} Clearly the construction was in harmony with the \textit{kouvē}.

3. \textit{Μή}—\textit{πᾶς}. The same principle applies. Cf. 1 Cor. 1:29, \textit{ὅπως μὴ καυχήσηται πᾶσα σάρξ}. Here it is 'no flesh' as above with \textit{où—πᾶς}. See also Rev. 7:1. On the other hand \textit{μὴ πᾶς} (1 Jo. 4:1)= 'not every' like \textit{où πᾶς}.

\textsuperscript{1} W.-M., p. 215.
4. **Où** μη—πᾶς in Rev. 21:27 does not differ at all from the **ou**—πᾶς and μη—πᾶς is in construction.

5. **Πᾶς**—**ou**). Here the ancient Greek idiom to a certain extent comes to one’s relief. But the **xh** — **h** lies behind the LXX translation. It is less harsh than **ou**—πᾶς. Cf. Blass, *Gr. of N. T. Gk.*, p. 178. The denial about πᾶς is complete as with **ou**—πᾶς. See 1 Jo. 2:21, πᾶς ψευδος ἐκ τῆς ἀληθείας οὐκ ἐστιν. Cf. 1 Jo. 3:15; Eph. 5:5; Rev. 22:3.

6. **Πᾶς**—μὴ falls into the same category. Cf. Jo. 3:16; 6:39; 12:46; Eph. 4:29; 5:3. Here also the denial is universal. But most probably μηδεις would have pleased an older Greek more.

7. **Πᾶς**—**ou** μη. In Rev. 18:22 the same explanation holds.

8. **Où**—πάντες. With the plural οὐκ εἰσίν πάντες ἐκ ἡμῶν, 1 Jo. 2:19, the matter is not so clear. Two translations are possible, as is seen in the American Revision. The text there is: "they all are not of us." The margin has: "not all are of us." The analogy of **ou**—πᾶς in the singular favours the first.

9. **Πάντες** οὐ. With πάντες οὐ κοιμηθησόμεθα, 1 Cor. 15:51, the μη goes with the verb. The effect is the same as πᾶς—**ou**, above. ‘We all shall not sleep’ means that 'none' of us shall sleep. ‘We shall all be changed.’ *Per contra*, see οthenReturn Πάντες **ou** Ρο. 10:16= ‘not all.’

---

CHAPTER XVI

THE ARTICLE (TO ἌΡΩΡΩΝ)

I. Other Uses of ὁ, ἦ τό. For the demonstrative ὁ and the relative ἦ see chapter on Syntax of Pronouns. It is confusing to say with Seyffart: "Der Artikel hat die ursprüngliche demonstrative Bedeutung." It is then just the demonstrative, not the article at all. Why call the demonstrative the article? Great confusion of idea has resulted from this terminology. It is important to keep distinct the demonstrative, the article and the relative.

II. Origin and Development of the Article.

(a) A GREEK CONTRIBUTION. The development of the Greek article is one of the most interesting things in human speech. Among the Indo-Germanic languages it is "a new Greek departure." It is not found in Sanskrit nor in Latin. It does not appear to be pro-ethnic and first shows itself in Homer. Indeed, the existence of the genuine article in Homer is denied by some. But it seems an overrefinement to refuse to see the article in such Homeric phrases as οἱ πλέονες, οἱ ἀριστοι, etc. And it is beyond dispute that it is in the Attic prose, particularly in Plato, that the Greek article reaches its perfection. The article has shown remarkable persistency and survives with very little modification in modern Greek. In the N. T. the usage is in all essentials in harmony with Attic, more so than is true of the papyri. But Volker finds the papyri in practical accord at most points with Attic. Simcox points out that even the Hebrew article does not differ radically in use from the Greek article.

1 Hauptr. der griech. Synt., p. 1.
2 Cf. Schneider, Vorles. über griech. Gr.
3 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 41.
5 Delbruck, op. cit. Cf. also Thompson, Synt., p. 41 f.
7 Thompson, Synt., p. 41 f.
9 Moulton, Prol., p. 80 f.
11 Lang. of the N. T., p. 45.
(b) DERIVED FROM THE DEMONSTRATIVE. The Greek article is the same form as the demonstrative ὁ, ἡ, τά. Indeed the German der is used as demonstrative, article, relative. So English the is related to the demonstrative that (also relative). Clyde (Greek Syntax, p. 6) calls the article a "mere enfeeblement" of the demonstrative. So the French le, the Italian il, the Spanish el, all come from the Latin demonstrative ille. But while this is true, the demonstrative, relative and article should not be confused in idea. The Greek grammarians applied ἀρθρόν to all three in truth, but distinguished them as ἀρθρόν πρωτακτικόν (dem.), ἀρθρόν ύποτακτικόν (rel.), ἀρθρόν ὀριστικόν (art.). Some, however, did not distinguish sharply between the demonstrative and the article. The article always retained something of the demonstrative force (Gildersleeve, Syntax, Part II, p. 215). It is an utter reversal of the facts to speak of the demonstrative use of the article. It is only of recent years that a really scientific study of the article has been made. Even Brugmann gives no separate treatment for the article. But Part II of Gildersleeve's Syntax (1911, pp. 215-332) has a really scientific treatment of the article. Professor Miller collected material for it. But even here I must demur against "the substantive use of the article" (p. 216) instead of plain substantival demonstrative. Gildersleeve uses "article" in two senses (form and idea). The Latin word articulus has the same root as the Greek ἀρθρόν (ἀρ– as seen in ἀρ-αρίσκω, ‘to fit,’ ‘join’). The origin of the article from the demonstrative can probably be seen in Homer. Monro think it due to apposition of a substantive with the demonstrative ὁ. So Iliad, 4. 501, ἡ δ' ἔτερον διὰ κροτάφοιο πέρησεν αἰχμᾶ χαλκεῖ. Here αἰχμη explains ἡ and ἡ wavers between demonstrative and article and illustrates the transition. So with new proper names ὁ anticipates the name which is loosely added later. "In Attic the article shows that a particular known person is spoken of; in Homer it marks the turning of attention to a person."

III. Significance of the Article. The article, unlike the demonstrative, does not point out the object as far or near. It is not deictic. There is either contrast in the distinction drawn or allusion (anaphoric) to what is already mentioned or assumed as well.

1 Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 794.  
2 Griech. Gr.  
3 Hom. Gr., p. 178.  
4 Ib.
known. The article is therefore τὸ ὁριστικὸν ἄρθρον, the definite article. The article is associated with gesture and aids in pointing out like an index finger. It is a pointer. It is not essential to language, but certainly very convenient and useful and not "otio- sum loquacissimae gentis instrumentum," as Scaliger¹ called it. The Greek article is not the only means of making words definite. Many words are definite from the nature of the case.² The word itself may be definite, like γῆ, οὐρανός, Ἰησοῦς. The use of a preposition with definite anarthrous nouns is old, as ἐν οἴκῳ. Possessive pronouns also make definite, as do genitives. The context itself often is clear enough. The demonstrative may be used besides the article. Whenever the Greek article occurs, the object is certainly definite. When it is not used, the object may or may not be. The article is never meaningless in Greek, though it often fails to correspond with the English idiom, as in ἡ σοφίας, ὁ Παύλος. It is not a matter of translation. The older language and higher poetry are more anarthrous than Attic prose. Dialects vary in the use of the article, as do authors. Plato is richer in the article than any one. Its free use leads to exactness and finesse (Gildersleeve, Syntax, Part II, p. 215 f.).

IV. The Method Employed by the Article. The Greek article points out in one of three ways.³ It distinguishes:

(a) INDIVIDUALS FROM INDIVIDUALS. The article does not give the reason for the distinction drawn between individuals. That is usually apparent in the context. The translators of the King James Version, under the influence of the Vulgate, handle the Greek article loosely and inaccurately.⁴ A goodly list of such sins is given in "The Revision of the New Testament,"⁵ such as 'a pinnacle' for τὸ πτερύγιον (Mt. 4:5). Here the whole point lies in the article, the wing of the Temple overlooking the abyss. So in Mt. 5:1 τὸ ὄρος was the mountain right at hand, not 'a mountain.' On the other hand, the King James translators missed the point of μετὰ γυναικὸς (Jo. 4:27) when they said 'the woman.' It was 'a woman,' any woman, not the particular woman in question. But the Canterbury Revisers cannot be absolved from all blame, for they ignore the article in Lu. 18:13, τῷ ἀμαρτωλῷ. The vital thing is to see the matter from the Greek point of view and

¹ Quoted by Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 57.
² The old idea that the article was necessary to make a word definite is seen in Madvig, Synt. of the Gk. Lang., p. 8.
³ Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 70.
⁴ Ib.
⁵ Lightfoot, Trench, Ellicott, p. xxx f.
find the reason for the use of the article. In Mt. 13:55, ὁ τοῦ
tέκτονος υἱὸς, it is the son of the (well known to us) carpenter. In
1 Cor. 4:5 ὁ ἐπαίνος means the praise due to each one. Cf. ὁ
μισθὸς in Ro. 4:4. In 1 Cor. 5:9, ἐν τῇ ἐπίστολῇ, Paul refers to a
previous letter which the Corinthians had received. In 15:8, τῷ
ἐκτρώματι, Paul speaks thus of himself because he alone of the
Apostles saw Jesus after His Ascension. The examples of this
use are very numerous in the N. T. Thus in Mt. 5:15, τὸν
μόδιον, τὴν λυχνίαν, the article singles out the bushel, the lamp-
stand present in the room. In 15:26, τοῖς κυναριόις, Jesus points
to the little dogs by the table. In Lu. 4:20, τὸ βιβλίον ἀποδοὺς τῷ
ἐπηρέτῃ, the roll was the usual one and the attendant was there at
his place. So in Jo. 13:5, βάλλει ὑδώρ εἰς τὸν νιπτῆρα, the basin was
there in the room. The article in Jo. 7:17, γνωστεῖται περὶ τῆς
dιδαχῆς, means the teaching concerning which they were puzzled.

(b) CLASSES FROM OTHER CLASSES. The (generic) article is
not always necessary here any more than under (a). See πνημονές
cαὶ ἀγαθοῦς (Mt. 5:45); δίκαιος ὑπὲρ ἀδίκων (1 Pet. 3:18). Cf. in
particular 1 Cor. 12:13 ἐίτε Ἰουδαίοι ἐίτε Ἁλληνες, 12:29. So also
ποῦ σοφός; ποῦ γραμματεύς; (1 Cor. 1:20). But it is quite common
to use the article with different classes. So in Mt. 8:20 note οἱ
ἄλωπεκες, τὰ πετεινά. So αἱ γυναικεῖς (Eph. 5:22), οἱ ἄνδρες (5:25),
tὰ τέκνα (6:1), οἱ πατέρες (6:4), οἱ δούλοι (6:5). In these ex-
amples the vocative often has the article. Cf. Col. 3:18 ff. A
good example of the use with classes is found in Mt. 5:3-10
(the Beatitudes), οἱ πτωχοί, etc. Cf. τοὺς σοφούς, τὰ ἀσθενή, etc.,
in 1 Cor. 1:27. So οἱ ἄκροαταί and οἱ ποιηταί in Ro. 2:13. Cf.
Rev. 11:18; 22:14. It is very common to find the singular used
with the article in a representative sense for the whole class.
So in οὐς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Mt. 8:20, and often) Jesus calls himself
the Son of Mankind. Cf. Lu. 10:7, ἐργάτης, where the labourer
represents all labourers. In Mt. 18:17 note ὁ ἐθνικὸς καὶ ὁ τελῶνης.
The Gospel of John is especially rich in examples of this kind
(both ideals and types). Other examples are Mt. 12:35 ὁ ἀγαθὸς
ἀνθρώπως, 12:29 τοῦ Ἰσχυροῦ, Jas. 5:6 τοῦ δίκαιου, 2 Cor. 12:12
τοῦ ἀποστόλου, Gal. 4:1 ὁ κηρυκόμος, Mt. 13:3 ὁ σπείρων. But
even here the article is not always needed. So Ἰουδαίοι τε πρῶτον
καὶ Ἡλληνες (Ro. 2:9). Cf. καλὸν τε καὶ κακὸν, Heb. 5:14. In
examples like ὁ ὀφραντὸς καὶ ἡ γῆ (Mt. 24:35), where there is only
one of the kind, the explanation is not far from the class from class

---

1 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 47. On literature upon the article see E. Schwartz
in the Index to Eusebius, p. 209.
idea. So θεός, like proper names, may use the article where we do not need it in English (Jo. 3:16). Volker (Syntax, p. 19) notes in the papyri examples like γυνή καὶ υἱός, ἡ γυνή καὶ οἱ υἱοί, γυνη καὶ οἱ υἱοί, ὁ ἄντρο καὶ τέκαυ. For the generic article see further Gildersleeve, Syntax, pp. 255 ff.

(c) QUALITIES FROM OTHER QUALITIES. The English does not use the article with abstract qualities unless they have been previously mentioned. But French and German are like the Greek in the use of the article here. It is not necessary to have the article with qualities. So in 1 Cor. 12:9-11 the gifts mentioned have no article. So in chapter 13, αγάπη in verses 1-3, but ἡ αγάπη in 4, 8; but πίστις, ἐλπίς αγάπη (verse 13). In 1 Jo. 4:18 φόβος is first without the article, then is repeated with the article, while ἡ αγάπη each time. There is much of the same freedom as to the use or non-use of the article here as elsewhere. Cf. Ro. 12:7, 9; 13:9 f.; Col. 3:5. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 150) from the standpoint of the German sees more difficulty in the absence than in the presence of such articles. But he is correct in saying that the relative in Col. 3:5 explains the use of the article. It is interesting to observe that in the list of attributes of God in the songs in Rev. 4:11; 5:13; 7:12, the article is expressed with each quality, while in 5:12 one article (τήν) is used with the whole list. In Ro. 13:7 the article is used with each thing and quality. It is possible that τῷ here is the article also for which the participle has to be supplied. But for the absence of μὲν and δὲ one might suspect τῷ to be the demonstrative. In Ro. 16:17, σκοπεῖν τοὺς τὰς διχοστασίας κα τὰ σκάνδαλα παρὰ τήν διδαχήν ἦν ὡμεῖς ἐμάθητε ποιοῦντας, note how neatly τοὺς, τὰς, τὰ τήν come in and illustrate the three uses of the article. Note also the neat classic idiom τοὺς—ποιοῦντας. For the article with abstract nouns see further Gildersleeve, Syntax, pp. 257 ff.

V. Varied Usages of the Article.
(a) WITH SUBSTANTIVES.

1. Context. Whether the substantivite is pointed out as an individual, class or quality, the context makes clear. The English may or may not have need of the article in translation. But that point cuts no figure in the Greek idiom. Thus in Ac. 27:23, τοῦ θεοῦ ὁ ἐμί, the article points out the special God whose Paul is and is to be preserved in English. In the very next verse, ὁ θεός, we in English do not need the article, even if, as is unlikely, the angel has the notion of "the special God.". Cf. also Jo. 1:1. In Mt. 23:2, οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ Φαρισαίοι, the two classes are
distinguished as in English. In Ro. 11:36, ἡ δόξα, it is the glory due to God. See ὁ μισθὸς, 1 Cor. 9:18 (cf. Ro. 4:4).

2. Gender of the Article. It will, of course, be that of the substantive. Cf. τήν — τὸν — τὸ in Lu. 2:16. But sometimes the construction is according to the sense. So in Mt. 4:13, τήν Ναζαρέτ, because of the implied πόλιν. Cf. also Καφαρναοῦμ τήν. But in Gal. 4:25, τὸ δὲ Ἄγαρ, Paul purposely uses the grammatical gender of the word rather than the natural feminine. Cf. also ὁ ἀμήν (Rev. 3:14), where Jesus is meant. But note the usual τὸ ἀμήν in 1 Cor. 14:16. The N. T. does not have the neuter article with the plural of a Hebrew word, as we occasionally see in the LXX (Thackeray, p. 34). Cf. τὸ βεβελεῖμ (Ezek. 27:4).

3. With Proper Names. This seems rather odd to us in English, since the proper name itself is supposed to be definite enough. But at bottom the idiom is the same as with other substantives. We do not use the article with home, husband, wife, church, unless there is special reason to do so. The word itself is usually sufficient. We must rid ourselves of the notion that any substantive requires the article. But, just because proper names are so obviously definite, the article was frequently used where we in English cannot handle it. But this is very far from saying that the article meant nothing to the Greek. It meant definiteness to him. We often have the same difficulty with the article with classes and qualities. Sometimes we can see the reason for the use of the article with proper names. So τὸν Ἰησοῦν ὃν Παῦλος ἱκρύσσει, Ac. 19:13. But in most instances the matter seems quite capricious to us. The writer may have in mind a previous mention of the name or the fact of the person being well known. In 2 Tim. 4:9-21 the proper names are all anarthrous. The same thing is true of Ro. 16, even when the adjective is not anarthrous, as in Ἄπελλάν τὸν δόκιμον ἐν Χριστῷ (verse 10). So in the ancient Greek for the most part the article was not used with proper names (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 229). Its use with persons is a mark of familiar style, but Plato uses it for anaphora or for contrast. In some sections it is common to use the article with titles, as The Reverend Doctor So-and-So. In South Germany der is used with the name alone.1

It seems needless to make extended observations about the presence or absence of the Greek article with names of countries, cities, rivers, persons. The usage among Greek writers greatly varies about rivers, mountains, etc. Cf. Kallenberg, Stu. über den

1 W.-Th., p. 113.
griech. Art., 1891). See exhaustive treatment by Gildersleeve (Syntax, pp. 236-253) and his paper in American Journal of Philol., XI, pp. 483-487. Different words vary. "Names of cities most rarely have the article when connected with prepositions,"¹ but that is true of other words also. 'Ἰεροσολυμα does not have the article save when an adjective is used (so Gal. 4:25 f.; Rev. 3:12) except in one instance (Ac. 5:28). Curiously 'Ἱεροσόλυμα has the article (in the oblique cases) only² in Jo. 2:23; 5:2; 10:22; 11:18. As instances of the article used with a city mentioned the second time (anaphoric) see Ac. 17:10, εἰς Βεροίαν, and 17:13, εν τῇ Βεροίᾳ; 17:15, ἔως Ἀθηνῶν; and 17:16, εν ταῖς Ἀθήναις.

For further details see Winer-Schmiedel, p. 152 f.

Substantives in apposition with proper names may have the article, as in Ἠρώδης ὁ βασιλεὺς, Mt. 2:1; and ὁ βασιλεὺς Ἡρώδης, Mt. 2:3; or not, as Ἡρώδου βασιλεύως, Lu. 1:5. In βασιλεὺ Ἀγρίππα, Ac. 25:26, it is like our 'King George.' So in Xenophon, when the King of Persia is meant we find βασιλεύς. In Mt. 3:6, ὁ Ἰορδάνης ποταμός, we have the usual order, but see the order reversed and the article repeated in Rev. 9:14; 16:12. Cf. τοῦ ὄρους Σινά (Ac. 7:30) and ὄρους Σινά (Gal. 4:24), τὸ ὄρος Σιών (Rev. 14:1) and Σιών ὄρει (Heb. 12:22). For the article with appositive proper names see Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 231. Cf. Ἰωάννης ὁ Ἱσκαριώτης, Mt. 10:4; Ἡρώδης ὁ τετραάρξης and Ἰωάννης ὁ βαπτιστής, 14:1 f.; Ἰσημούς ὁ Ναζαρηνός, Mk. 10:47; Ac. 1:13, Σίμων ὁ ζηλωτής, etc. Here the word in apposition has the article, but not the proper name.³ Cf. 1 Cor. 1:1.

In the Gospels as a rule Ἰησοῦς has the article. Χριστός in the Gospels usually has the article= the Anointed One, the Messiah. In the Epistles it usually is like a proper name and commonly without the article,⁴ illustrating the development of Christology in the N. T. Indeclinable proper names usually have the article if the case would not otherwise be clear. Cf. the list in Mt. 1:2-16, where the nominative has no article, but the accusative does have it. So Ἰσραήλ in Ro. 10:19, but τὸν Ἰσραήλ in 1 Cor. 10:18. See also Mt. 22:42; Mk. 15:45; Lu. 2:16; Ac. 7:8; 15:1 f.; Ro. 9:13; Heb. 11:17. The use of τὸν Βαραββᾶν in Lu. 23:18 is not abrupt. In Xenophon's Anabasis the article is not often used with proper names unless the person is previously

¹ W.-Th., p. 112.
³ See further W.-Sch., p. 153.
⁴ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 152.
THE ARTICLE (TO ἌΡΩΠΟΝ) 761

mentioned. In Homer the article appears only occasionally with a proper name when a new person is introduced, and "marks the turning of attention to a person," rather than pointing to a particular person as in Attic. "In short the Homeric article contrasts, the Attic article defines." But, as a matter of fact, no satisfactory principle can be laid down for the use or non-use of the article with proper names. For good discussion of the matter see Gildersleeve, *Am. Jour. of Philol.*, XI, pp. 483 ff. In modern Greek the article occurs with all kinds of proper names (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 41). Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 83) admits the inability of scholars to solve "completely the problem of the article with proper names." Abbott (*Joh. Gr.*, p. 57 f.) notes that John generally introduces a proper name without the article and then uses it. The papyri also follow this classical idiom of using the article with proper names when mentioned a second time. So when a man's father or mother is given in the genitive, we usually have the article. Cf. Deissmann, *Phil. Wochenschrift*, 1902, p. 1467; Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 83. The papyri throw no great light on the subject. Radermacher (*N. T. Gr.*, p. 95), claims that the papyri confirm the N. T. usage. In the papyri slaves regularly have the article, even when the master does not (Volker, *Syntax*, p. 9).

For Σαῦλος ὁ καὶ Παῦλος (Ac. 13:9) the papyri show numerous parallels. Cf. Deissmann, *Bible Studies*, pp. 313 ff. Mayser (*Gr. d. griech. Pap.*, p. 310 f.), as already shown, takes ὁ here as relative. See also Hatch, *Journal of Bibl. Lit.*, Part II, 1908, p. 141 f. In Luke's list (Lu. 3:23-38) Ἰωσήφ has no article, while all the long line of genitives have τοῦ including τοῦ θεοῦ. Among the ancient writers ὁ θεός was used of the god of absolute religion in distinction from the mythological gods. Gildersleeve (*Syntax*, pp. 232-236) gives a full discussion of the subject. In the N. T., however, while we have πρὸς τὸν θεόν (Jo. 1:1, 2), it is far more common to find simply θεός, especially in the Epistles. But the word is treated like a proper name and may have it (Ro. 3:5) or not have it (8:9). The same thing holds true about πνεῦμα and πνεῦμα ἁγίου, κύριος, Χριστός. These words will come up for further discussion later.

4. Second Mention (Anaphoric). The use of the article with the second mention of a word is very frequent. Thus in Jo. 6:9, ἀρτοὺς καὶ ὀψάρια, but in verse 11 τοὺς ἀρτοὺς· καὶ ἐκ τῶν ὀψαρίων. See Lu. 9:13, 16. Cf. ὕδωρ in Jo. 4:10 and τὸ ὕδωρ in verse 11. So μάγοι in Mt. 2:1, but τοὺς μάγους in verse 7; ζιζάνια in 13:25, but τὰ ζιζάνια in verse 26. Cf. Ac. 9:4, 7; 9:11, 17; Jas. 2:2, 3; Rev. 15:1, 6. In Jo. 4:43, τὰς δύο ἡμέρας, the article refers to verse 40. Cf. Jo. 20:1 with 19:41; 12:12 with 12:1; Heb. 5:4 with 5:1; 2 Cor. 5:4 with 5:1. In Ac. 19:13 we have Παῦλος, but ὁ Παῦλος in 19:15. Volker (Syntax, p. 21 f.) finds the anaphoric use of the article common enough in the papyri.

(b) WITH ADJECTIVES. The discussion of the adjective as attributive or predicate comes up later. Thus καλὸς ὁ νόμος (1 Tim. 1:8) is a different construction from τῶν ἀγίων προφητῶν (Jo. 10:11).

1. The Resumptive Article. The use of the article and the adjective is perfectly normal in τῶν ἀγίων προφητῶν. (2 Pet. 3:2). Cf. τῇ ἔσχατῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Jo. 6:40). See also Lu. 1:70; Jas. 2:7. This repetition of the article with the adjective as in ὁ ποιμὴν ὁ καλὸς above is quite common also. Abbott¹ thinks that this reduplication of the article "adds weight and emphasis to the article." Cf. τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Lu. 9:22) with τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ τρίτῃ (18:33). Abbott² considers that as a rule John reduplicates the article with the adjective only in utterances of the Lord or in weighty sayings about him. Cf. Jo. 1: 9, 41; 2:1; 3:16; 5:43; 7:18; 10:11, 14. But this is hardly true of Jo. 6:13; 18:10. He notes also that in John the possessive adjective, when articular, nearly always has the reduplicated article. Cf. τὰ πρόβατα τὰ ἐμά, (10:27). So τὸν ἀδελφὸν τὸν ἴδιον in Jo. 1:41. In Homer the substantive usually comes before the article and the adjective. The resumptive article "repeats the noun in order to add the qualifying word."³ Cf. Rev. 1:17; 3:7; 22:16, where the article is repeated, twice. Cf. also Ac. 12:10. So τῶν δύο τῶν ἀκουσάντων (Jo. 1:40). In Lu. 6:45 both the article and adjective are repeated after the form of the first part of the sentence, ὁ πονηρὸς ἐκ τοῦ πονηροῦ προφέρει τὸ πονηρόν. See in the papyri τὸ κιτὼν αὐτῆς τὸ λευκὸν τὸ παρὰ σοί P.Tb. 421 (iii/A.D.).

2. With the Adjective Alone. It appears so with all genders and both numbers. Cf. ὁ ἄγιος (Mk. 1:24), τῇ ἐρήμῳ (Mt. 3:2), τὰ ἁγαθάν (Gal. 6:10), οἱ πτωχοῖ (Mt. 5:3), τὰ νέας (Tit. 2:4), τὸ ὀφρατά (Col. 1:16), τὰ πολλά in Ho. 15:22, οἱ σοφοὶ in 1 Cor. 1:

¹ Joh. Gr., P. 63.
² Ib., p. 64.
27, αἱ ἑτοιμοί, in Mt. 25:10, etc. All these examples are obvious enough. The ellipsis is simple and usually supplied from the context. The three uses of the article occur with the adjective alone. The individual use appears in such examples as ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ (Jo. 6:69), ὁ δίκαιος (Ac. 22:14), ὁ ἀληθινός (1 Jo. 5:20), ὁ πονηρός (1 Jo. 5:18), τὸ πολύν and τὸ ὀλίγον (2 Cor. 8:15), τὸ ἀγαθὸν σου (Phil. 14), τὸ ἀδύνατον τοῦ ὀλίγον (Ro. 8:3), τὴν ἔτραν (Mt. 23:15), τοῖς ἀγίοις (Ph. 1:1), ἐν τοῖς ἐπουρανίοις (Eph. 1:3). The generic or representative (class from class) is very common also, more frequent indeed. So ὁ δίκαιος (1 Pet. 4:18), τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ (Ro. 5:7), τὸν πτωχῶν (Jas. 2:6), τοὺς πτωχούς (2:5), οἱ πλοῦσιοι (5:1).

So τὰ κακά and τὰ ἀγαθά (Ro. 3:8), τὸ ἀγαθὸν (Lu. 6:45). Cf. in particular Ro. 12:21 ὑπὸ τοῦ κακοῦ, ἐν τῷ ἀγαθῷ τὸ κακόν. Cf. also Ro. 13:3 f., τὸ ἀγαθὸν (Gal. 6:10), τὸ ἱκανὸν (Ac. 17:9), τὸ καλὸν (2 Cor. 13:17), τὸ ἄγιον (Mt. 7:6), τὰ ὅρια (Mt. 19:1), τῶν σπορίμων (Mk. 2:23). The use of the neuter singular with the article as the equivalent of an abstract substantive Blass notes as "a peculiar usage of Paul (and Hebrews)" and considers that "this is the most classical idiom in the language of the N. T., and may be paralleled from the old heathen literature, from Thucydides in particular." But he cautions us against thinking that Paul imitated Thucydides, since Strabo and all other writers of the koine, not to mention the papyri, show the same construction. Deissmann has made it plain from the papyri that τὸ δοκίμων ὑμῶν τῆς πίστεως in Jas. 1:3 (cf. 1 Pet. 1:7) belongs here. See also τὸ μωρὸν τοῦ θεοῦ (1 Cor. 1:25), τὸ ὑμῖν αὐτῶν σύμφωνον (7:35), τὸ ἐλαφρόν τῆς θλίψεως (2 Cor. 4:17), τὸ τῆς ὑμετέρας ἀγάπης γνήσιον (8:8), τὸ γνωστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 1:19), τὸ χρηστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ, (2:4), τὸ περισσὸν (3:1), τὸ δυνατὸν αὐτοῦ (9:22), τὸ ἐπιεικὲς ὑμῖν (Ph. 4:5), τὸ ἀμετάθετον τῆς βουλῆς (Heb. 6:17), τὸ αὐτῆς ἀσθενεῖς (7:18). Examples of the plural in this abstract sense occur in τὰ πνευματικά (Eph. 6:12), τὰ ἀόρατα (Ro. 1:20), τὰ κρυπτὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων (2:16), τὰ κρυπτὰ τοῦ σκότους (1 Cor. 4:5), τὰ πάντα (Col. 1:16), τὰ ὀρατὰ καὶ τὰ ἀόρατα (ib.). The neuter adjective with the article sometimes appears in the collective sense for persons. So τὸ ἐλαττὸν (Heb. 7:7), τὸ δωδεκάφυλον ὑμῶν (Ac. 26:7), τὰ μωρὰ τοῦ κόσμου—τὰ ἀσθενῆ τοῦ κόσμου (1 Cor. 1:27 f.). See further Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 262.

3. The Article not Necessary with the Adjective. Blass, who

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 155.
3 Deiss., B. S., p. 259.
4 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 156.
has the best discussion of the use of the article with adjectives, notes that it is not accidental that, while we have ἐν τῷ φανερῷ (Text. Rec., Mt. 6:4), yet εἴς φανερὸν ἐλθεῖν prevails (Mk. 4:22; Lu. 8:17), since the thing is not yet in existence. But it is a rather fine point, since both ἐν κρυπτῷ (Jo. 7:4, 10) and εἰς κρύπτην (a subst. Lu. 11:33) occur as well as ἐν τῷ φανερῷ (Mt. 6:4, Text. Rec.). In Ro. 2:28 ἐν τῷ φανερῷ is genuine. In Jas. 4:17 note καλὸν ποιεῖν. The adjective alone may express class as in Mt. 5:45; Lu. 10:21; Ro. 1:14; 1 Cor. 1:20.

4. With Numerals. The article with numbers is more common in Greek than in English and is a classic idiom (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 228). Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 315) notes that with numerals the article points out a certain number now brought forward. So ἐπτὰ —οἱ πέντε —ὁ ἕν —ὁ ἄλλος (Rev. 17:10).

(c) WITH PARTICIPLES. In all essential respects the article is used with the participle exactly as with the adjective. The article is not necessary to the participle when used as an attribute (Jas. 4:17), though it is most commonly found (Heb. 12:1, 2). For the predicate use see Jo. 10:12. The participle with the article is common without the substantive, as of οἱ πενθούντες (Mt. 5:4). The neuter for a person appears in τὸ γεννώμενον (Lu. 1:35). In τὸ ἀπολωλός (Lu. 10:10) we have the collective neuter singular. The abstract singular is seen in τὸ ὑπερέχου τῆς γνώσεως (Ph. 3:8) and the abstract plural in τὰ διαφέροντα (Ro. 2:18). Cf. τὰ ὑπάρχοντα μου (‘my belongings’) in 1 Cor. 13:3, for the more individual use. The representative or generic sense is found in ὁ σπείρων (Mt. 13:3). The article with the participle is very common as the equivalent of a relative clause. In Mt. 5:32 πᾶς ὁ ἀπολύων and ὑπὸ εἰν —γαμήσῃ are parallel. See also Col. 1:8. So οἱ πεπιστευκότες (Tit. 3:8), ὁ ἐπιτύχων (2 Cor. 4:6). Cf. Mt. 7:21. The article is repeated with participles if they refer to different persons (Rev. 1:3) or even if the same person is meant where different aspects are presented (Rev. 1:4, where ὁ ἦν comes in between). But note τῷ ἀγαπώντι ἡμᾶς καὶ λύσαντι ἡμᾶς (1:5).

Winer makes a special point of the use of a definite participle with an indefinite pronoun like τινές εἴσιν οἱ παράσυντες ὑμᾶς (Gal. 1:7), μὴ τις ὑμᾶς ἐσται ὁ συλαγωγῶν (Col. 2:8), ἄλλος ἐστιν ὁ μαρτυρῶν (Jo. 5:32). He also notes the definite subject where the German would have an indefinite one as in οὐκ ἔστιν ὁ συνών (Ro. 3:11). Cf. also the article and the future participle in ὁ κατακρινῶν (Ro.

8:34, Ac. 20:22 τὰ συναντησόντα. Cf. Is. 1:31, οὐκ ἔσται ὁ σβέσων. More of this when the Participle is reached (ch. XX). For the repeated article see τῇ χάριτι τῇ δοθείση (1 Cor. 1:4). See further VI, Position with Attributives.

(d) WITH THE INFINITIVE. This idiom is so common that it must be merely touched upon here and the discussion of it reserved for the Articular Infinitive. In general it may be said that in the Attic and the κοινή the article is used with the infinitive in any case (save vocative) and very much as with any abstract substantive. The Iliad does not have the article and the infinitive, but it occurs once in the Odyssey and is in Pindar. Examples of the articular infinitive may be seen in the nominative τὸ καθίσας (Mt. 20:23), the accusative τὸ λαλεῖν (1 Cor. 14:39; cf. Ac. 25:11), the genitive ἐλπὶς πᾶσα τοῦ σωζεσθαι (Ac. 27:20; cf. Lu. 24:29), the ablative ἐκρατοῦντο τοῦ μὴ ἐπιγνώσαι (Lu. 24:16; cf. 2 Cor. 1:8), the locative ἐν τῷ σπείρειν (Mt. 13:4), the instrumental τῷ μὴ εὑρεῖν (2 Cor. 2:13). The dative does not occur in the N. T. with the article, but see θεᾶσασθαί (Mt. 11:7). For the articular infinitive with prepositions see pp. 1068-1075. The article is frequently missing with εἰς πεῖν rely in the vernacular κοινή (papyri), as Herodotus three times has ἄντι εἶναι. Cf. Clyde, *Greek Syntax*, p. 13 f. But enough for the present. The articular infinitive is curiously rare in the Gospel of John, "almost non-existent." It occurs only four times and only with prepositions (Jo. 1:48; 2:24; 13:19; 17:5).

(e) WITH ADVERBS. This is no peculiarity of the κοινή not to say of the N. T. It is common in the older Greek with adverbs of place, time, quality, rank, manner. It is not necessary to repeat what is said under Cases and Adverbs concerning the adverbial expressions (really adjectives), like τὸ πρῶτον (Jo. 12:16), τὸ λοιπόν (Ph. 4:8), τὰ πολλά (Ro. 15:22). The point to note is that the article is used somewhat freely with adverbs as with substantives and adjectives. As examples observe τὰ ἄνω and τὰ κάτω (Jo. 8:23), ἦ τὰῦριον (Mt. 6:34, ellipsis of ἡμέρα), ἦ ἐπαύριον (27:62), ἦ σήμερον (Ac. 20:26), ὁ ἀμὴν (Rev. 3:14), τὸ ἀμὴν (1 Cor. 14:16), τὸ νῦν (Lu. 5:10), τὰ νῦν (Ac. 4:29), ὁ πλησίον (Lu. 10:27) and note πλησίον alone 'neighbour' in Lu. 10:29 and 36, τὸ ναί and τὸ οὐ (2 Cor. 1:17), τὸ ἐξωθεῖν (Mt. 23:25), οἱ ἐξωθεῖν (1 Tim. 3:7), οἱ ἐξω (Mk. 4:11, W. H. text), τὸ ἑντὸς (Mt. 23:26), τὰ ἐμπροσθεν and τὰ ὑπίσω (Ph. 3:13 f.), etc. Note two adverbs in Heb.

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 179.  
2 Moulton, Prol., pp. 81, 216.  
3 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 69.  
4 K.-G., I, p. 594 f.
12:27, τὸ Ἐτί ἀπάξ (quotation). In some of these examples there is the ellipsis of a word (note different genders), but not always. There are besides the adjectival uses of the adverb, like ὁ ἔσω ἀνθρωπός (Eph. 3:16), ὁ ἔσω ἀνθρωπός (2 Cor. 4:16), ὁ νῦν καιρός (Ro. 3:26). Clyde¹ compares τὸ νῦν with Scotch "the noo."

(f) WITH PREPOSITIONAL PHRASES.² Cf. of οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἑταλίας (Heb. 13:24), οἱ ἐκ νόμου (Ro. 4:14), οἱ ἐκ περιτομῆς (Ac. 11:2), οἱ καθ’ ἑνα (Eph. 5:33), τὸ ἐκ μέρους (1 Cor. 13:10), τὰ περὶ ὑμῶν (Ph. 1:27), οἱ σὺν αὐτῷ (Lu. 9:32), τὸ καθ’ ἡμέραν (Lu. 11:3), τὸ κατ’ ἐμὲ (Ph. 1:12; cf. Ro. 1:15), τὸ κατὰ σάρκα (Ro. 9:5), τὸ ἐξ ὑμῶν (12:18), τὸ ἄνα δημάριον (Mt. 20:10, W. H. text); οἱ περὶ Παύλου (Ac. 13:13, classic idiom), οἱ μετ’ αὐτοῦ (Mk. 1:36), τοῖς ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ (Mt. 5:15), τὰ κατὰ τῶν νόμων (Lu. 2:39), τὰ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς καὶ τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Eph. 1:10), τὴν εἰς πάντας τοὺς ἁγίους (1:15), τὸ καθ’ εἰς (Ro. 12:5), ὁ ἐν τῷ φανερῷ (2:28 f.), etc. In Ac. 18:15 note νόμου τοῦ καθ’ ὑμῶν, where the article occurs with the prepositional phrase, but not with the substantive. On οἱ περὶ = a man and his followers see Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 264.

(g) WITH SINGLE WORDS OR WHOLE SENTENCES. Here the word is used verbatim, as τὸ ἐγὼ (Plato, Crat., 405 d).³ Cf. τὸ Ἐτί ἀπάξ δηλοῖ above (Heb. 12:27) and τὸ Ἀγαρ (the name Hagar, Gal. 4:25). So τὸ δὲ Ἀνέβη (Eph. 4:9). With sentences the article sometimes marks the quotation as in τὸ Ἐι δύνη (Mk. 9:23), τὸ ὁ ἄνωθεν ὑπὸ τοὺς σεαυτούν (Mt. 19:18 f.), ἐν τῷ Ἀγαπητεῖς τῶν πλησίου ὑπὸ τοὺς σεαυτούν (Gal. 5:14), τὸ γὰρ ὁ ὠμοιούσεις καὶ ἐν τῷ Ἀγαπητεῖς κτλ. (Ro. 13:9), τὸ Καὶ μετὰ ἀνόμων έλογίσθη (Lu. 22:37). In particular the article is fairly common in Luke and occurs a few times in Paul with indirect questions. The modern Greek shows this essentially classical idiom.⁴ Blass⁵ remarks that the article makes no essential difference to the meaning of the question. It does this at least: it makes clearer the substantival idea of the indirect question and its relation to the principal clause. See 1 Th. 4:1 παρασελάβητε παρ’ ἕμων τὸ πῶς δεῖ ὑμᾶς. Ro. 8:26 τὸ γὰρ τί προσευξύμεθα, Lu. 1:62 ἐνένευσαν τὸ τί ἀν θέλω καλείσθαι, 9:46 εἰσῆλθεν διαλογισμὸς τοῖς ἄν ἐν μείζων, 19:48 οὐχ ἡρίσκον τό τί ποιήσωσιν, 22:2 εἰς ἄνω τὸ πῶς ἁνέλωσιν, 22:4 συνελάσθην τὸ πῶς παραδώ 22:23 συνεζήτειν τό τίς ἐπι, 22:24 ἐγένετο φιλονεικία τό τίς δοκεῖ, Ac. 4:21 μὴ δὲν εὑρίσκοντες τὸ πῶς κολάσσωται, 22:30 γνῶναι τό τί κατηγορεῖται.

(h) WITH GENITIVE ALONE. This is also a common idiom in the ancient Greek. The koinē uses this idiom very often (Radermacher, *N. T. Gk.*, p. 94), as seen both in the inscriptions and the papyri. The article stands alone, but the ellipsis is usually very plain, as is shown by the gender and number as well as the context. So Ἰάκωβος ὁ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου (Mt. 10:2), where υἱός is implied; Μαρία ἡ τοῦ Κλωτᾶ, (Jo. 19:25), where γυνὴ is to be supplied; Μαρία ἡ Ἰακώβου (Lu. 24:10), where μητηρ is meant; τὸ τῆς δόξης (1 Pet. 4:14), where πνεῦμα is to be understood; οἱ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου (Jo. 21:2), where υἱοί is meant, etc. In 1 Cor. 15:23 μαθηταί is probably to be supplied (cf. Gal. 5:24), and ἀδελφός in Lu. 6:16 (cf. Ju. 1). The neuter plural is common for the notion of "affairs" or "things." So τὰ ἑαυτῶν and τὰ Χριστοῦ Ἰησοῦ (Ph. 2:21), τὰ Καίσαρος and τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ (Lu. 20:25), τὰ τῆς αὐριον (marg. W. H., Jas. 4:14), τὰ τοῦ κόσμου (1 Cor. 7:33), τὰ τῆς σαρκός and τὰ τοῦ πνεῦματος (Ro. 8:5), τὰ τῆς εἰρήνης (14:19), etc. One may note also here ἐν τοῖς τοῦ πατρὸς μου (Lu. 2:49) for 'house of my Father.' Cf. ἐν τοῖς Κλαυδίου, P.Oxy. 523 (ii/A.D.). See εἰς τὰ Ἵδια and οἱ Ἵδιοι (Jo. 1:11). The neuter singular has an abstract use like τὸ τῆς ἀληθοῦς παροιμίας (2 Pet. 2:22), τὸ τῆς σκηνῆς (Mt. 21:21).

(i) NOUNS IN THE PREDICATE. These may have the article also. As already explained, the article is not essential to speech. It is, however, "invaluable as a means of gaining precision, e.g. θεὸς ἢν ὁ λόγος." As a rule the predicate is without the article, even when the subject uses it. Cf. Mk. 9:50; Lu. 7:8. This is in strict accord with the ancient idiom. Gildersleeve (Syllax, p. 324) notes that the predicate is usually something new and therefore the article is not much used except in convertible propositions. Winer, indeed, denies that the subject may be known from the predicate by its having the article. But the rule holds wherever the subject has the article and the predicate does not. The subject is then definite and distributed, the predicate indefinite and undistributed. The word with the article is then the subject, whatever the order may be. So in Jo. 1:1, θεὸς ἢν ὁ λόγος, the subject is perfectly clear. Cf. ὁ λόγος σαρκὶ ἐγένετο (Jo. 1:14). It is true also that ὁ θεὸς ἢν ὁ λόγος (convertible terms) would have


2 Milden, The Limitations of the Pred. Position in Gk., p. 9 f.

3 Cf. Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 46; Gildersleeve, Synt., p. 325.

4 Winer-Moulton, p. 142.
been Sabellianism. See also Θεός ἀγάπη ἐστίν (1 Jo. 4:16). "God" and "love" are not convertible terms any more than "God" and "Logos" or "Logos" and "flesh." Cf. also οἱ θερισταὶ ἀγγελοὶ ἐστιν (Mt. 13:39), ὁ λόγος ὁ σῶς ἀληθεία ἐστίν (Jo. 17:17), ὁ νόμος ἁμαρτία; (Ro. 7:7). The absence of the article here is on purpose and essential to the true idea. Cf. also ἄνθρωπος and ἀφύστης (Jo. 8:44). In Eph. 5:23, ἀνήρ ἐστιν κεφαλή, the context makes it clear (W. H. marg. ἀνήρ κεφαλὴ ἐστιν) that ἀνήρ is subject even without the article. In Jo. 9:34, ἐν ἁμαρτίαις σὺ ἐγεννήθης ὄλος, the article with ὄλος is not needed, a neat use of the predicate adjective. But the article is quite frequent with the predicate in the N. T. and in strict accord with old usage. It is not mere haphazard, however, as Winer rather implied. Hence W. F. Moulton,2 in his note to Winer, properly corrects this error. He finds that when the article is used in the predicate the article is due to a previous mention of the noun (as well known or prominent) or to the fact that subject and predicate are identical.3 The words that are identical are convertible as in the older idiom.4 If he had added what is in Winer-Schmiedel,5 that the article also occurs when it is the only one of its kind, he would have said all that is to be said on the subject. But even here Moulton's rule of identity and convertibility apply. The overrefinement of Winer-Schmiedel's many subdivisions here is hardly commendable. In a word, then, when the article occurs with subject (or the subject is a personal pronoun or proper name) and predicate, both are definite, treated as identical, one and the same, and interchangeable. The usage applies to substantives, adjectives and participles indifferently. Cf. ὁ λύχνος τοῦ σώματός ἐστιν ὁ ὀφθαλμός (Mt. 6:22), ὑμεῖς ἐστε τὸ ἄλας τῆς γῆς (Mt. 5:13), ὁ δὲ ἀργός ἐστιν ὁ κόσμος (13:38), σὺ εἶ ὁ Χριστός (16:16), εἶς ἐστιν ὁ ἄγαθός (19:17), τίς ἄρα ἐστιν ὁ πιστὸς δούλος (24:45), τοῦτο ἐστιν τὸ σώμα μου, τοὐτό ἐστιν τὸ αἷμα μου (26:26, 28), σὺ εἶ ὁ βασιλεὺς (27:11), σὺ εἶ ὁ υἱός μου ( Mk. 1:11), οὐχ οὔτός ἐστιν τὸ τέκτων (6:3), οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ κληρονόμος (12:7), οὐ γάρ ἐστε ὑμεῖς οἱ λαλοῦντες (13:11), ἡ ζωὴ ἂν τὸ φῶς (Jo. 1:4), ὁ προφήτης εἶ σὺ (1:21), σὺ εἶ ὁ διδάσκαλος (3:10), οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ προφήτης (6:14), οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ ἄρτος (6:50; cf. 51), τὸ πνεῦμα ἐστιν τὸ ξωοποιοῦν (6:63), ἐγὼ εἰμί τὸ φῶς (8:12), οὐχ οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ καθήμενος (9:8; cf. 19 f.), ἐγὼ εἰμί ἡ θύρα (10:7), ἐγὼ εἰμί ὁ ποιμὴν (10:11), ἐγὼ εἰμὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις καὶ ἡ ζωή (11:25, note both articles), ἐγὼ εἰμί ἡ ὁδὸς καὶ ἡ ἀλήθεια καὶ

1 See per contra, Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 48.  
2 W.-M., p. 142.  
3 Cf. Donaldson, New Crat., p. 522; Middleton, Gk. Art., p. 54.  
4 Thompson, Synt., p. 46.  
5 P. 159.
THE ARTICLE (TO ΑΡΩΠΟΝ) 769

ή ζωή (14:6, note three separate articles), ἐκεῖνός ἐστιν ὁ ἀγαπῶν με (14:21), οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ λίθος (Ac. 4:11), οὔτος ἐστιν ἡ δύναμις (8:10), οὔχ οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ πορθῆσας (9:21), οὔτος ἐστιν ὁ ἄνθρωπος (21:28), οὐκ ἄρα σὺ έι ὁ Αἰγύπτιος (21:38), ἡ κεφαλὴ ὁ Χριστὸς ἐστιν (1 Cor. 11:3), οὗ δέ κύριος τὸ πνευμά ἐστιν (2 Cor. 3:17), αὐτός ἐστιν ἡ εἰρήνη ἡμῶν (Eph. 2:14), ἡμεῖς ἡ περιτομή (Ph. 3:3), ἡμεῖς γὰρ ἐσμὲν ἡ περιτομή (3:3), ἡ ἀμαρτία ἐστιν ἡ ἄνομία (1 Jo. 3:4), ἐγὼ εἰμι τὸ Ἀλφα καὶ τὸ Ω (Rev. 1:8), ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἐσχάτος (1:17, note both articles), σὺ έι ὁ ταλαίπωρος (3:17), etc.

This list is not exhaustive, but it is sufficient to illustrate the points involved. Note ὁ βασιλεὺς (Mt. 27:11) and βασιλεύω (Jo. 1:49). Even the superlative adjective may have the article as in Rev. 1:17 above. But see οἱ ἐσχάτοι πρῶτοι καὶ οἱ πρῶτοι ἐσχάτοι (Mt. 20:16) for the usual construction. Cf. ἐσχάτη ὥρα (1 Jo. 2:18). See further ἐσχάτας ἡμέρας, Jas. 5:3; 2 Tim. 3:1, ἐν καρπῷ ἐσχάτῳ, 1 Pet. 1:5, and τῇ ἐσχάτῃ ἡμέρᾳ, Jo. 6:39. For the common predicate accusative see chapter XI (Cases), vii, (i). In the N. T. most examples are anarthrous (Jo. 5:11; 15:15), and note 1 Cor. 4:9 ἡμᾶς τοὺς ἀποστόλους ἐστάτους ἀπέδειξεν. Cf. Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 326.

(j) DISTRIBUTIVE. Cf. έκ δημαρίου τὴν ἡμέραν (Mt. 20:2), ἀπαξ τοῦ ἐνιαυτοῦ (Heb. 9:7), διῆς τοῦ σαββάτου (Lu. 18:12), ἐπτάκις τῆς ἡμέρας (Lu. 17:4). This is, to be sure, an ancient idiom familiar also to the English (cf. our "by the yard," "by the pound," etc.). It is found in the papyri.1 But ἕκαστος is not used in the N. T. with the article. Cf. οἱ καθ’ ἐνα ἕκαστος (Eph. 5:33). We have once ἀμφότερα τὰ πλοία (Lu. 5:7), and several times οἱ ἀμφότεροι (Eph. 2:18), τὰ ἀμφότερα (2:14). Cf. τοὺς δύο in Eph. 2:15. Cf. Thompson, Syntax of Attic Gk., p. 51.

(k) NOMINATIVE WITH THE ARTICLE = VOCATIVE. This matter was sufficiently discussed in the chapter on Cases. It is an occasional Greek idiom repeated in the Hebrew and Aramaic regularly and frequent in N. T. As examples see ναί, ὁ πατήρ (Mt. 11:26) τὸ ἀλαλοῦν καὶ κωφὸν πνεῦμα (Mk. 9:25), ἡ παῖς (Lu. 8:54), ὁ βασιλεὺς (Jo. 19:3).

(1) As THE EQUIVALENT OF A POSSESSIVE PRONOUN. The article does not indeed mean possession. The nature of the case makes it plain that the word in question belongs to the person mentioned. The French can say j’ai mal a la tete, ἀλγῶ τὴν κεφαλὴν.2 The examples in the N. T. are rather numerous. See,

---

1 Volker, Synt. d. griech. Pap., p. 8. Volker notes also the presence of ἐκαστος or of ἀνά, κατά, ἐκ, πρῶς.

for instance, ἀπενέψατο τὰς χεῖρας (Mt. 27:24; cf. Lu. 13:13). In Mt. 4:20 we have τὰ δίκτυα, while in verse 21 we find τὰ δίκτυα αὐτῶν. Cf. κατέσεισε τῇ χειρί. (Ac. 21:40; cf. Mk. 7:32), τὸν ὑιόν τὸν μονογενῆ (Jo. 3:16), τῷ νοῦ δουλεύω (Ro. 7:25), τοῦ πατρὸς (1 Cor. 5:1). Τίτου καὶ τὸν ἀφελφόν, (2 Cor. 12:18; cf. also 8:18).1 Cf. Mt. 8:3; Jo. 1:41.

(m) WITH POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS. The article is always used in the N. T. with these pronouns unless the pronoun is predicate. So τὰ ἐμὰ πάντα σά ἐστιν καὶ τὰ σά ἐμὰ (Jo. 17:10) ἡμέτερος (Ac. 2:11) and ὡμέτερος (Jo. 7:6; cf. Lu. 6:20). The article is frequently repeated as in ὁ καιρὸς ὦ ἐμὸς (Jo. 7:6). It was usual with possessives in the ancient Greek.2 The Gospel of John shows ὦ ἐμὸς very frequently. Cf. Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 65 f. With ἰδιὸς the article is customary, as in ἐς τὴν ἰδίαν πόλιν (Mt. 9:1). This construction is very common in the N. T. A few times we meet ἰδίος without the article, as in ἰδίοις ὄψωνίοις (1 Cor. 9:7), καιροῖς ἰδίοις (1 Tim. 2:6). The anarthrous examples may be only members of a class, not the particular individual in the case. See further ch. XV, Pronouns.

(n) WITH Αὐτός. It is only necessary to mention the order Αὐτή ἦ κτίσις (Ro. 8:21), and ἡ Αὐτή σάρξ (1 Cor. 15:39), to set forth the distinction in the position of the article with Αὐτός. So αὐτὸ τὸ πνεῦμα (Ro. 8:26), but τὸ αὐτὸ πνεῦμα (1 Cor. 12:8). See Pronouns.

(o) WITH DEMONSTRATIVES. The essential facts have been already stated in the chapter on Pronouns. Here a bare summary is sufficient. Ὁδε occurs in the N. T. once with the article, ἐς τὴν πόλιν (Jas. 4:13). The usual position of the demonstrative with the article has already been discussed also. It may be repeated here that we must not confuse this predicate (appositional) position of ὁδοτος, ἐκείνος with the ordinary predicate position of adjectives. The construction may be paralleled to some extent by the French la republique francaise. Still in Homer3 τοῦτον τὸν ἄναλτον—'this man,' ἄναλτος, 'that he is.' Here we probably see the origin of the idiom ὁδοτος ὄ. So fixed did the usage become that in the Attic inscriptions the construction is uniform.4 The Boeotian inscriptions reveal the same thing.5 The order is immaterial, whether ὁ ἄνθρωπος ὁδοτος (Lu. 2:25) or ὁδοτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος (14:30).

2 Thompson, Gk. Synt., p. 51.
4 Meisterh., Att. Inschr., p. 231.
5 Claflin, Synt. of B.D. Inscr., p. 42.
In general it may be noted that the absence of the article with the noun means that οὕτος is a real predicate, as in Jo. 2:11, ταύτην ἐποίησεν ἀρχήν τῶν σημείων. Cf. Lu. 24:21; Ac. 1:5. Even with proper names the article occurs, as in ὁ Ἰησοῦς (Ac. 1:11). For further details see chapter on Pronouns. It may be remarked that the rigidity apparent in the use of the article in connection with οὕτος and ἐκεῖνος does not exist in the case of the correlative demonstratives. The article is wanting in the N. T. in connection with τοιόσοδε and τηλικοῦτος. Τοιοῦτος occurs once only with the article, a true attributive, ὁ τοιοῦτος πλοῦτος (Rev. 18:16). Τοιοῦτος, on the other hand, usually appears with the article and in the attributive position, as in τῶν τοιούτων παιδίων (Mk. 9:37), though once the predicate position is found, αἱ δυνάμεις τοιοῦτοι (Mk. 6:2). Most of the examples have no substantive, like οἱ τοιοῦτοι (Ro. 16:18), τὰ τοιοῦτα (Gal. 5:21).

(p) WITH Ὁλος, Πᾶς ('Ἀπας). Ἀπας is found chiefly in Luke and Acts. The MSS. vary greatly between ἀπας and πᾶς. The text of W. H. now has πᾶς in the margin (Lu. 9:15), now ἀπας (15:13). Blass1 fails to find any satisfactory rule for the use of ἀπας, the Attic distinction of ἀπας after a consonant and πᾶς after a vowel not holding (cf. Lu. 1:3), though in general ἀπας does occur (when used at all) after a consonant (cf. Mt. 6:32). Ἀπας, when used with a substantive in the N. T., is always with the article. Once only does it appear in the attributive position, τὴν ἀπασαν μακροθυμίαν (1 Tim. 1:16), 'the total sum of his long-suffering.' Elsewe have either the order ὁ λαὸς ἀπας (Lu. 19:48) or ἀπαντα τὸν λαὸν (Lu. 3:21). If οὕτος also is used, we have τὴν ἐξουσίαν ταύτην ἀπασαν (Lu. 4:6). Cf. οἱ αὐτοῦ ἀπαντες (Ac. 16:33).

The construction of πᾶς is varied and interesting. It is an exceedingly common adjective in all parts of the N. T. In general it may be said that the idiom of the N. T. is in harmony with the ancient Greek in the use of ἐπας and the article.2 In the singular πᾶς may be used without the article in the sense of 'every.' So πάντα πειρασμόν (Lu. 4:13), πᾶν στόμα (Ro. 3:19), πᾶσαν συνείδησιν ἀνθρώπων (2 Con 4:2), πᾶν στόμα (Mt. 3:10), etc. Blass3 distinguishes between ἐκαστὸς= 'each individual' and πᾶς = 'any one you please.'

Πᾶς ὁ = 'all.' So πᾶσα ἡ πόλις (Mt. 8:34) = 'all the city' (die ganze Stadt).4 This is the order and it is very common. Cf. πᾶσαν τὴν

---

3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 161.
4 W.-Sch., p. 187.
γὴν (Mt. 27:45), παντὶ τῷ ὄλκῳ (Ac. 10:2). Even without the article πᾶς may be 'all,' if it is a proper noun, like πᾶσα Ἱεροσόλυμα (Mt. 2:3), πᾶς Ἰσραήλ (Ro. 11:26). In Ac. 2:36, πᾶς ὄικος Ἰσραήλ, there is only one "house of Israel," so that 'all' is the idea. Winer\(^1\) says that it is treated as a proper name. Abstract substantives also may be used with or without the article. There is very little difference in idea between πάση γνώσει (1 Cor. 1:5) and πάσαν τὴν γνώσιν (1 Cor. 13:2). With the abstract word "every" and "all" amount practically to the same thing. There is an element of freedom in the matter. So πάσαν τὴν πίστιν (1 Cor. 13:2), but πάση σοφία (Ac. 7:22). There may indeed be occasionally the difference between a specific instance like πάση τῇ θλίψει ἡμᾶς (2 Cor. 1:4) and a general situation like πάση θλίψει (ib.).\(^2\) But see πάση ὑπομονή (2 Cor. 12:12), πάση ἀγνία (1 Tim. 5:2), μετὰ παρρησίας πάσης (Ac. 4:29), etc. See also πᾶσα σάρξ = ἦλπὶ (Lu. 3:6), usually with οὐ (Mt. 24:22). But note again πληρώσαι πᾶσαν δικαιοσύνην (Mt. 3:15) and πάσης τῆς προσοδοκίας (Ac. 12:11). See πᾶσα ἑξουσία (Mt. 28:18), πάσης πλεονεξίας (Lu. 12:15). Cf. 2 Tim. 1:15. In Ph. 1:3, πάση τῇ μνείᾳ, the article is pertinent as in πᾶσα ἡ κτίσις (Ro. 8:22). But in Col. 1:15, 23; 1 Pet. 2:13 πᾶσα κτίσις has its true idea of 'every created thing.' But what about πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως (Col. 1:15)? See also Col. 1:9 ff. and πᾶσαν χαράν (Jas. 1:2). Other examples somewhat open to doubt are πᾶσα ὀικοδομή (Eph. 2:21) which is most probably 'every building' because of εἰς ναόν. So in Eph. 3:15 πᾶσα πατρία is 'every family,' though 'all the family' is possible. In 2 Tim. 3:16 πᾶσα γραφὴ is 'every Scripture,' if separate portions are referred to. Cf. Jo. 19:37, ἑτέρα γραφὴ. Usually in the singular in the N. T. we have ἡ γραφή, but twice γραφὴ occurs alone as definite without the article, once in 1 Pet. 2:6, ἐν γραφῇ, once in 2 Pet. 1:20, γραφὴς. Twice in the plural (Ro. 1:2; 16:26) the article is absent. In Col. 4:12 ἐν παντὶ θεληματί τοῦ θεοῦ it is 'every,' 'whatever be the will of God for you' (Moffatt). In Jas. 1:17, πᾶσα δόσις, we have 'every,' as in παντὸς προσώπου (Ac. 17:26).

Πᾶς ὁ and the participle is a very common construction in the N. T. Here the idea is 'every,' and οὗ and the participle are in apposition. Thus πᾶς ὁ ἀκούων (Mt. 7:26) is practically equivalent to πᾶς ὁ δόσις ἀκούει (7:24). Cf. πᾶς ὁ ὀργιζόμενος (Mt. 5:22), πᾶς ὁ

\(^1\) W.-Th., p. 111. Cf. 1 Sam. 7:2 f. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 162) calls this imitation of Hebrew.

\(^2\) Blass. Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 162.

\(^3\) Cf. W.-Sch., p. 187.
βλέπων (5:28), παός ὁ ἀπολύων (5:32), παός ὁ αἰτῶν (7:8), ἐτς. But sometimes we find παός without the article as in παῦτός ἀκούοντος (Mt. 13:19), παῦτι ὁφείλοντι (Lu. 11:4), where some MSS. read τῷ. See παῦτι τῷ πιστεύοντι (Ro. 1:16). The abstract neuter πάν τό is regular. So πάν τό εἰσπρεπούμενον (Mt. 15:17), πάν τό ὁφειλόμενον (18:34). Cf. πάν ὁ in Jo. 6:37, 39.

The idiom ὁ παός = 'the whole,' 'the totality,' is not frequent in the singular. It occurs twice.1 See τοῦ πάντα χρόνου (Ac. 20:18), ὁ παός νόμος (Gal. 5:14), das gesamte Gesetz.2 Cf. also Barn. 4:9, 6 πάς χρονος. Here the whole is contrasted with a part. Ὁ παός νόμος = 'the entire law,' 'the whole law.' It was never so common a construction in the ancient Greek3 as παός ὁ.

In the plural πάντες is used sometimes without the article. The article is not necessary with proper names, like πάντες Ἄθηναίοι (Ac. 17:21). Cf. πάντες Ἰουδαίοι (26:4). But the article is absent elsewhere also, as in πάντες ἐργάται ἀδικίας (Lu. 13:27), πάντας ἀνθρώπους (Ac. 22:15; cf. Ro. 5:12, 18), πασίν ἀγαθόν (Gal. 6:6; cf. πας ἐν τις in 3:10), πάντων ἄγιων (Eph. 3:8), πάντες ἀγγέλοι (Heb. 1:6). These examples are not numerous, however. Cf. 1 Pet. 2:1; 2 Pet. 3:16. Blass4 considers it a violation of classical usage not to have the article in Eph. 3:8 and 2 Pet. 3:16, because of the adjectives, and in Lu. 4:20, πάντων ἐν τῇ συναγωγῇ, because of the adjunct. But that objection applies chiefly to the literary style. See of ὁ ἄγιοι πάντες (2 Cor. 13:12). The usual construction is πάσαι αἱ γενεαί (Mt. 1:17), πάντας τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς (2:4), etc. Sometimes we have the other order like τὰς πόλεις πάσας (Mt. 9:35). Cf. 2 Cor. 13:12. Πᾶς may be repeated with separate words (Mt. 3:5). For the use with the participle see Mt. 8:16. A few examples of the attributive position are found, like ὁ πάντες ἀνδρὲς (Ac. 19:7) = 'the total number of the men,' as in the ancient idiom. See, also, αἱ πάσαι ψυχαί (Ac. 27:37), τοὺς σὺν αὐτοῖς πάντας ἁγίους (Ro. 16:15), οἱ σὺν ἔμοι πάντας ἀδελφοί (Gal. 1:2), τοὺς πάντας ἡμᾶς (2 Cor. 5:10). The last example = 'we the whole number of us.' Cf. Ac. 21:21.

But we also find ὁ πάντες without a substantive, as in 2 Cor. 5:15; 1 Cor. 9:22; Ro. 11:32; Eph. 4:13; Ph. 2:21. In 1 Cor. 10:17, ὁ πάντες ἐκ τοῦ ἐνός ἄρτου μετέχομεν, note the contrast with τοῦ ἐνός. Still more common is τὰ πάντα for 'the sum of things,' the all.' Cf. Ro. 8:32; 11:36; 1 Cor. 11:12; 12:6, 19 (cf. here τὰ πάντα.

---

2 W.-Sch., p. 189.
3 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 52 f. 4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 161.
and έν); 2 Cor. 5:18; Col. 1:17, etc. The use of πάντες alone (1 Cor. 12:29), or of πάντα (1 Cor. 13:7), calls for no comment.

The story of ὅλος is brief. It is never attributive in position in the N. T. It has also an indefinite meaning which πᾶς does not have. Thus ἐνιαυτὸν ὅλου (Ac. 11:26)= 'a whole year.' Πᾶς does not have this idea apart from the article. So Jo. 7:23, ὅλου ᾿ἀνθρωπον ὑγιῆ, 'a whole man sound.' Cf. Lu. 5:5; Ac. 28:30. In Mk. 12:30 compare ἐξ ὃλης καρδίας (ἐν ὃλῃ καρδίᾳ Mt. 22:37) with ἐξ ὃλης τῆς ψυχῆς. In this sense the plural also is found as in ὅλους οἴκους (Tit. 1:11). One may compare ὅλη ῾Ιεροσόλυμα (Mt. 21:31), with πᾶσα ῾Ιεροσόλυμα (Mt. 2:3). We usually have in the N. T. the order ὅλη ἡ πόλις (Mk. 1:33), but sometimes ἡ πόλις ὅλη (Ac. 21:30). Sometimes we have ὅλος and πᾶς in the same sentence as in 2 Cor. 1:1; 1 Th. 4:10. The word may be repeated several times (Mt. 22:37; Mk. 12:30, 33). It occurs alone also as a predicate (Jo. 9:34), or with τοῦτο (Mt. 1:22).

(q) WITH Πολύς. There is a peculiar use of the article with πολύς that calls for a word. The regular construction with the article (attributive) like τὸ πολύ αὐτοῦ ἔλεος (1 Pet. 1:3) occurs in the singular (cf. ὃ τὸ πολύ, 2 Cor. 8:15) and much more frequently in the plural. So οἱ πολλοὶ alone (Ro. 5:15; 12:5; Heb. 12:15; 1 Cor. 10:17), τὰ πολλά (Ro. 15:22). With the substantive added note οὐδάτων πολλῶν (Rev. 17:1), αἱ ἀμαρτίαι αἱ πολλαί (Lu. 7:47), τὰ πολλὰ γράμματα (Ac. 26:24). This is all in harmony with classic idiom2 as well as the frequent use of πολύς without the article in an indefinite sense. But in ὃ ὀχλος πολύς (Jo. 12:9, 12) Moulton3 finds "a curious misplacement of the article." Moulton cites a piece of careless Greek from Par.P. 60, ἀπὸ τῶν πληρωμάτων ἄρχειν. It is possible that ὀχλος πολύς came to be regarded as one idea. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 284) cites a few rare attributive examples of the type ὃ ἀνήρ ἀγαθός from Homer and AESchylus where the adjective is appositive rather than predicative. The Homeric examples may be demonstrative. One may note also ἐκ τῆς ματαίας ύμών ἀναστροφῆς πατροπαραδότου (1 Pet. 1:18) and ὑπὸ τῆς λεγομένης περιτομῆς εἰς σαρκὶ χειροποιήτου (Eph. 2:11). See VI, (c), 5. We do find the usual order ὃ πολύς ὀχλος in Mk. 12:37. But it is a fact that ὀχλος πολύς is the usual order in the N. T. (Mt. 26:47 Mk. 5:24; Lu. 7:11; 9:37; Jo. 6:2, 5). The analogy of πᾶς, ὅλος, οὖτος may have played some part in the matter. For ὀχλοι πολλοὶ see Mt. 19:2; Lu. 14:25. In Mt. 21:8 (parallel

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 190.
2 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 53.
3 Prol., p. 84.
with Mk. 12:37, ὁ πολύς ὁχλος we have ὁ πλείστος ὁχλος, but it is difficult to lay much stress on this point of variation. One is reminded of the constant French idiom, but that is merely an independent parallel. The idiom οἱ πλείονες may be seen in 1 Cor. 9:19. See further ch. XIV.

(r) ἀκρος, ἡμισυς, ἔσχατος, μέσος. As to ἀκρος, it does not appear as an adjective in the N. T. In Lu. 16:24 and Heb. 11:21 τὸ ἀκρον is a substantive. The same thing is probably true of ἀκρον and ἀκρων in Mk. 13:27 and Mt. 24:31. This is in harmony with the Septuagint (Ex. 29:20; Is. 5: 26).1 The same situation is repeated in the case of ἡμισυς. Cf. ἐς ἡμισυς τῆς βασιλείας (Mk. 6:23). ἡμισυ καιροῦ (Rev. 12:14). Cf. ἡμισυ alone (Rev. 11:9, 11).

But ἐσχάτη is used attributively as in ἡ ἔσχατη πλάνη (Mt. 27:64), τῇ ἔσχατῃ ἡμέρᾳ (Jo. 6:39, etc.), τὸ ἔσχατον λεπτὸν (Lu. 12:59), etc. The construction ἐς ἔσχατος alone (Rev. 2:8) and τὰ ἔσχατα τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Lu. 11:26) is classical.2 So is indeed also πάντων ἔσχατος (Mk. 9:35), ἐν καιρῷ ἔσχατῳ (1 Pet. 1:5). ἐπ᾽ ἔσχατῳ τῶν ἡμερῶν (Heb. 1:2) is probably a substantive use. But in 2 Pet. 3:3 ἐπ᾽ ἔσχατων τῶν ἡμερῶν we may have the partitive construction in the predicate position. There is no doubt of it as to μέσος. Here also we find usually τὸ μέσον (like τὸ ἀκρον above) absolutely (Mk. 3:3), or the various prepositional phrases like εἰς μέσον (Mk. 14:60), ἐν μέσῳ (Mk. 6:47), διὰ μέσου (Lu. 4:30), αὐνά μέσον (Mk. 7:31), κατὰ μέσον (Ac. 27:27), ἐκ μέσου (Mt. 13:49) or μέσον as preposition (Ph. 2:15). But the old partitive construction occurs in μέσης νυκτὸς (Mt. 25:6), ἡμέρας μέσης (Ac. 26:13) without the article. The true predicate is found in τὸ καταπέτασμα τοῦ ναοῦ μέσου (Lu. 23:45). So μέσος in Ac. 1:18. Cf. also τὸ πλάσματος τῆς θαλάσσης (Mt. 14:24, marg. W. H.), where μέσον is probably a preposition. In Jo. 19:18, μέσον τῶν Ἰησοῦν, we have ‘Jesus in the midst.’ There is, however, no example in the N. T. like the old classic idiom which is seen in the LXX. Cf. ἐκ μέσης τῆς πόλεως (Ezek. 11:23).3 See also ch. XIV.

(s) WITH ἀλλος AND ἐτερος. The article is frequent with ἀλλος but never in the sense of ‘the rest of,’ like ancient Greek. But οἱ ἀλλοι. (1 Cor. 14:29) is close to it. It is used where only two are meant, as in ὁ Πέτρος καὶ ὁ ἀλλος μαθητής (Jo. 20:3), ἡ ἀλλη Μαρία (Mt. 28:1). The order ὁ μαθητής ὁ ἀλλος occurs (Jo. 18:16). Cf. also τοῦ ἀλλοῦ τοῦ συνσταφλωθήντος (Jo. 19:32) where the article is repeated, like τοῖς λοιποῖς τοῖς, etc. (Rev. 2:24). Blass4

---

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 190.  
3 Ib.; Thompson, Synt., p. 53.  
2 Ib.  
says that no Attic writer would have said ταὶς ἐτέραις πόλεσιν = ‘the remaining cities’ (Lu. 4:43). He considers εἰς τὴν ἐτέραν (Mt. 10:23 KB) "incorrect" for 'the next' city, as well as ὁ ἑτέρος = ‘the third’ in Lu. 19:20. But it is not the use of the article here that displeases Blass, but the free interchange of ἄλλος and ἑτέρος in the κοινή. See ch. XV, Pronouns.

(t) Μόνος. This need detain us but a moment. The essential facts are succinctly given by Winer-Schmiedel. Without the article μόνος occurs usually even with proper names, as Ἰησοῦς μόνος (Lu. 9:36). So μόνῳ θεῷ (Ro. 16:27; 1 Tim. 1:17). But the predicate use occurs also. So Mt. 12:4 τοῖς ἱερεῦσι μόνοις; (24:36) πατήρ μόνος (KBD); μόνοι οἱ μαθηταί (Jo. 6:22); μόνος ὁ ἀρχιερεύς (Heb. 9:7). The articular attributive use is found a few times, as in τοῦ μόνου θεοῦ (Jo. 5:44). Cf. Jo. 17:3; 1 Tim. 6:15 f.; Ju. 4. See ch. XIV.

VI. Position with Attributives. The article does not make a word or phrase attributive. It may be attributive without the article. It is necessary to go over much of the same ground again (Adjectives and Participles, Genitives, Adverbs and Adjuncts) in order to get the subject clearly before us.

(a) WITH ADJECTIVES. So ἔργον ἀγαθὸν (Ph. 1:6) is attributive = 'a good work,' though it is anarthrous. Cf. also ἔργοις ἀγαθοῖς (Eph. 2:10). Cf. μικρά ζύμη (1 Cor. 5:6). But when the article is used before a word or phrase there is no doubt about its being attributive.

1. The Normal Position of the Adjective. It is between the article and the substantive, as in τῷ καλὸν ὄνομα (Jas. 2:7), ὁ ἀγαθὸς ἀνθρωπος (Mt. 12:35), τῷ ἐμὸν ὄνομα (18:20). In this normal attributive type the adjective receives greater emphasis than the substantive. Cf. correct text Lu. 12:12; 1 Cor. 10:3 (correct text); 1 Jo. 5:20. So τοῦ μακαρίου θεοῦ (1 Tim. 1:11). There must be a special reason for the other construction.

2. The Other Construction (Repetition of the Article). In the order ὁ ποιμήν ὁ καλὸς (Jo. 10:11) both substantive and adjective receive emphasis and the adjective is added as a sort of climax in apposition with a separate article. Cf. ὁ υἱὸς μου ὁ ἀγαπητὸς (Mt.

1 P. 190.  
2 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 158. 
3 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 47. 
4 For copious classical exx. of both positions see Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 281 f. 
5 In Jas. 3:7, τῇ φύσει τῇ ἀνθρωπίνῃ, the repeated article makes for greater clearness.
17:5), τὴν γῆν τὴν ἀγαθήν (Lu. 8:8), τὸ φῶς τὸ ἀληθινὸν. (Jo. 1:9), τὸ ὑδωρ τὸ ζῶν (4:11), ὁ καιρὸς ὁ ἐμός (7:6), ὁ ἄμπελος ἡ ἀληθινή (15:1), τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ πονηρόν (Ac. 19:15). Cf. also Mt. 6:6; Lu. 7:47; Jo. 6:13; 1 Cor. 12:31; 2 Cor. 6:7; Eph. 6:13; Col. 1:21; Heb. 13:20; 1 Jo. 1:2; 2:25; 4:9. There is an apparent difficulty in Heb. 9:1, τὸ τέ αἵγιον κοσμικὸν, which may be compared with ὁ ὅχλος πολύς, p. 774 (Jo. 12:9).\(^1\) Perhaps both αἵγιον and κοσμικὸν were felt to be adjectives.

3. **Article Repeated Several Times.** So in Ac. 12:10, τὴν πύλην τὴν σιδηράν τὴν φέρουσαν. Cf. τὸ πῦρ τὸ αἰώνιον τὸ ἡπομασμένον (Mt. 25:41), ὁ μαθητής ὁ ἄλλος ὁ γνωστός (Jo. 18:16), τὴν ρομφαίαν τὴν δίστομον τὴν ὄξειαν (Rev. 2:12). In particular note the repetition of the article in Heb. 11:12; Rev. 3:14; 17:1; 21:9. In Rev. 1:5 note four articles, ὁ μάρτυς ὁ πιστός, ὁ πρωτότοκος — καὶ ὁ ὄρχων. Cf. Rev. 12:9; 1 Pet. 4:14. For this common classic idiom see Gildersleeve, Syntax, pp. 328 ff. In Ph. 1:29, ὑμῖν ἐχαρίσθη τὸ ὑπὲρ Χριστοῦ, the two infinitives following, each with τὸ explain the first τὸ.

4. **One Article with Several Adjectives.** When several adjectives are used we find an article with each adjective if the adjectives accent different aspects sharply. So ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἐσχάτος καὶ ὁ ζῶν (Rev. 1:17; cf. 22:13). Cf. also ὁ ὅν — καὶ ὁ ἐρχόμενος (1:4, 8). But ordinarily the one article is sufficient for any number of adjectives referring to the same substantive. So ὁ ταλαίπωρος καὶ ἔλεινός καὶ πτωχός καὶ τυφλός καὶ γυμνός (Rev. 3:17). In Mt. 24:45, ὁ πιστός δοθλός καὶ φρόνιμος, the καὶ carries over the force of the article.\(^2\) So likewise the presence of another attribute may explain the probable predicate position πατροπαραδότου (1 Pet. 1:18) and χειροποιήτου (Eph. 2:11).\(^3\) See further (c), 5.

5. **With Anarthrous Substantives.** There is still another order.\(^4\) It is εἰρήνην τὴν ἐμήν (Jo. 14:27). Here the substantive is indefinite and general, while the attribute makes a particular application. Cf. νόμος ὁ δυνάμενος (Gal. 3:21). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 93) finds this idiom frequent in κοινῆ. So γυναίκα τὴν εὐγενεστάτην (I. G., XII, 7 N. 240, 13).

6. **With Participles.** The participle may come between the article and the substantive like the attributive adjective, as in τὴν ἡπομασμένην ὑμῖν βασιλείαν (Mt. 25:34). Cf. 1 Tim. 1:10; Ro. 8:18; 1 Cor. 12:22; 1 Pet. 1:13. On the other hand (cf. 5),

\(^1\) Cf. W.-Sch., p. 177.  
\(^2\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 160.  
\(^3\) Cf. W.-Sch., p. 181.  
\(^4\) It is common enough in classic Gk. Cf. Gildersleeve, Synt., p. 283.
all else may come between the article and the participle, as in 1 Pet. 1:10, οἱ — ἀρπαγάσατε. A long clause (including a relative clause) may come between the article and the participle, as in Ro. 16:17, τοὺς — παρακαθίστασι. Once more, the participle may come in the midst of the attributive phrases, as in 1 Pet. 1:3, ὁ — ἀναγεννήσας, or immediately after the article, as in 2 Pet. 1:3. Either the participle or the modifier may occur outside of the attributive complex (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 289 f.). Gildersleeve gives copious illustrations of the various constructions of the attributive participle. The article may be repeated after the substantive, like τὸ ὑδρό νῦν above (Jo. 4:11), οἱ γραμματεῖς οἱ — καταβάντες (Mk. 3:22). Cf. Jo. 5:12; 1 Cor. 15:54; 1 Pet. 1:25; 5:10; Ac. 7:37; Heb. 13:20. The article may occur with the participle when not with the substantive. This supplementary addition of the article is more common with the participle than with other adjectives.1 Cf. παιδίων τοῖς ἐν ἀγορᾷ καθημένων (Lu. 7:32), γυναίκες αἱ συνακολουθοῦσαι αὐτῷ (23:49), ἀγγέλου τοῦ ὁμοθέτου αὐτῷ (Ac. 7:35), χρυσίου τοῦ ἀπολλόμενου (1 Pet. 1:7), and in particular οὐδὲ γὰρ ὄνομα ἐστὶν ἔτερον τὸ δεδομένον (Ac. 4:12). Cf. also Ac. 1:12; Gal. 3:21; Ro. 2:14 (ἐκνητή τὰ μὴ νόμου ἔχοντα). But in θεοῦ τοῦ ἔγειραντος (Gal. 1:1), Χριστοῦ τοῦ δόντος (1:4), the proper names are definite without the article. So Ἰησοῦν τὸν ῥυόμενον (1 Th. 1:10), etc. Participles in apposition with personal pronouns may also have the article. Cf. ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ λαλῶν σοι (Jo. 4:26), τῷ θελοντὶ ἐμοί (Ro. 7:21), σὺ ὁ κρίνων (Jas. 4:12), ήμῖν τοῖς περιπατοῦσιν (Ro. 8:4), ἡμᾶς τοὺς πιστεύοντας (Eph. 1:19), αὐτοῖς τοῖς πιστεύουσιν (Jo. 1:12), etc. Note two articles in 1 Th. 4:15, 17, ήμείς οἱ ζῶντες οἱ περιπετεύομενοι. Cf. Eph. 1:12; 1 Jo. 5:13 (ἐμῖν — τοῖς π.); 1 Cor. 8:10. The artic. part. may be in appos. with the verb, as in ἐξώμεν οἱ καταφυγόντες (Heb. 6:18; cf. 4:3). Cf., on the other hand, ήμεῖς, ἀπορφασισθέντες (1 Th. 2:17). The article and participle may follow τινῶς, as in τινὰς τοὺς πεποιθότας (Lu. 18:9), τινῶς εἰσίν οἱ παράσποντες (Gal. 1:7). If the substantive has the article and the participle is anarthrous, the participle may be (cf. above) predicate. So τὴν φωνὴν ἔνεχθείσαν (2 Pet. 1:18), τοῖς πνεύμασιν—ἀπειθήσασιν (1 Pet. 3:19 f.), ἀρπαγάντα τὸν τοιοῦτον (2 Cor. 12:2), τὸν ἄνδρα τούτου συλλαμβάνοντα (Ac. 23:27). Cf. Lu. 16:14; Jo. 4:6; Ro. 2:27; 1 Cor. 14:7; 2 Cor. 3:2; 11:9; Heb. 10:2; 1 Pet. 1:12.

The presence of the article with the participle here would radically change the sense. The same article may be used with several par-

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 243.
ticiples, as in τού ἀγαπήσαντός με καὶ παραδόντος (Gal. 2:20), τῷ ἀγαπώσατι καὶ ἄμαντι (Rev. 1:5). The use of the article with the participle in the predicate is illustrated by θεὸς ὁ δικαιῶν· τίς ὁ κα-

τακριβῶν; (Ro. 8:33; cf. Jo. 5:45). In questions the pronoun, though coming first, may sometimes be really predicate. Then again the article may be absent from both substantive and participle (predicate or attributive), as in γυνὴ οὖσα (Mk. 5:25), θεῷ ζῶτι (1 Th. 1:9), ἀνθρώπῳ οἰκοδομοῦντι (Lu. 6:48).

(b) WITH GENITIVES. From the nature of the case the genitive as the genus-case is usually attributive. In general the construction in the N. T. follows the ancient idiom.¹

1. The Position between the Article and the Substantive. This is common enough, and especially so in 1 and 2 Peter. So ἡ τού θεοῦ μακροθυμία (1 Pet. 3:20); 1:17; 2:15, 3:1. See in particular demonstrative pronouns like τῇ ἐκείνου χάριτι (Tit. 3:7).

Plato (Soph., 254a) has τὰ τῆς τῶν πολλῶν ψυχῆς ὄνοματα. For a series of such genitives in this position see ὁ — κόσμος (1 Pet. 3:3). For adjective and genitive see 3:4, ὁ κρυπτὸς τῆς καρδίας ἀνθρώπως. Cf. Mt. 12:31; 1 Pet. 5:1. In 1 Pet. 4:14 the article is repeated, τῷ τῆς δόξης καὶ τῷ τοῦ θεοῦ πνεῦμα. See also Jo. 1:40, τῶν δύω τῶν ἀκουσάντων.

2. Genitive after the Substantive without Repetition of the Article.² This is even more common. Thus τῶν φόβων τῶν Ἰουδαίων (Jo. 20:19), τῆς ἀγάπης τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 8:39). Cf. 2 Cor. 4:4; Ro. 8:2; 1 Th. 1:3. Sometimes the two types are combined, thus ἡ ἐπίγειος ἡμῶν οἰκία τοῦ σκήνους (2 Cor. 5:1), τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἡμῶν ἐντολῆς τοῦ κυρίου καὶ σωτῆρος (2 Pet. 3:2). The personal pronouns illustrate either order except that you is nearly always outside (but see τῶν πατρικῶν μου παραδόσεων, Gal. 1:14, and ἐν τῇ πρωτῆς μου ἁπλογία, 2 Tim. 4:16); either, as is usual, ὁ κύριός μου (Jo. 20:28) or μου τοὺς ὄφθαλμοὺς (Jo. 9:11). We find τῇ αὐτοῦ χάριτι (Ro. 3:24) and τὸν λαόν αὐτοῦ (Mt. 1:21) and αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ ἁγάπῃ (Jo. 15:10. Cf. 9:6; 11:32), τῇν ἐαυτοῦ αὐλήν (Lu. 11: 21) and τῇν σάρκα ἐαυτοῦ (Gal. 6:8), τῇν γενεὰν τῇν ἐαυτοῦ (Lu. 16: 8) and ἐαυτῶν τὰ ἰμάτια (Mt. 21:8). Cf. also τὸ ὄνομά σου (Mt. 6:9), ἡ δεξιά σου χείρ (Mt. 5:30; but not 5:29). Cf. also 1 Tim. 5:23), σου τῇν κεφαλήν (Mt. 6:17), τῶν ἄρτων ἡμῶν (6:11), ὑμῶν τοῦ ἔργου (1 Th. 1:3), τῇν ὑμῶν ἁγάπην (Col. 1:8), etc. With the partitive the usual (but see Jo. 6:70; 9:16, 40) position is this: τὸ τρίτον τῆς γῆς (Rev. 8:7). Cf. 1 Cor. 15:9.

¹ Cf. K.-G., I, p. 597; Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 49,
² Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 159,
3. Repetition of Article with Genitive. The genitive may follow the other substantive with a repeated article. Here the article closely resembles the original demonstrative. So ὁ λόγος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ (1 Cor. 1:18), τῷ ἔθει τῷ Μωυσέως (Ac. 15:1), τὴν δίδασκαλίαν τὴν τοῦ σωτήρος ἡμῶν (Tit. 2:10). This construction is not very common.¹

4. The Article Only with Genitive. Cf. ἐξουσίας καὶ ἐπιτροπῆς τῆς τῶν ἀρχιερέων (Ac. 26:12). Cf. Ac. 1:12, ὄρους τοῦ, with Lu. 19:29, τὸ ὄρος τό. Here again the article is almost pure demonstrative as in Jas. 1:25, νόμον τέλειον τὸν τῆς ἐλευθερίας = 'perfect law, that of liberty.' Volker (Syntax, p. 16) finds abundant illustrations of these positions in the papyri. So with proper names like Μαρία ἡ Ἰακώβου (Mk. 15:40), Δαυεὶδ τὸν τοῦ Ἰεσσαῖ (Ac. 13:22), etc. Cf. Mt. 4:21.

5. Article Absent with Both. The genitive may still be attributive and both substantives definite. Cf. πῦλαι ἢδου (Mt. 16:18), σημείου περιτομῆς (Ro. 4:11), νόμου πίστεως (3:27), etc. The context must decide whether the phrase is definite or not. Cf. θεοῦ υἱὸς (Mt. 27:54), εὐφρενεσία ἀνθρώπου (Ac. 4:9).

6. The Correlation of the Article. In such cases, according to Middleton,² if two substantives are united by the genitive, the article occurs with both or is absent from both.³ But note (H. Scott) that (1) the genitive may be anarthrous if it is a proper name, (2) the governing noun may be anarthrous if it depends on a preposition. The normal type may be well illustrated by τῷ νόμῳ τῆς ἁμαρτίας (Ro. 7:23) and νόμῳ ἁμαρτίας (7:25). The genitive ἁμαρτίας is an abstract noun which may or may not have the article. But νόμῳ is definite in either instance in ‘the law of sin.’ See again τῷ νόμῳ τοῦ θεοῦ (7:22) and νόμῳ θεοῦ (7:25). Θεὸς can be definite with or without the article. So, again, τὸ φρονημα τοῦ πνεύματος (8:6) and πνεῦμα θεοῦ, πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ (8:9), ὠμοίωματι σαρκός (8:3) and τὸ φρονημα τῆς σαρκός (8:6). Cf. also ὁ νομὸς τοῦ πνεύματος τῆς ζωῆς (8:2), τὴν ἐλευθερίαν τῆς δόξης τῶν τέκνων τοῦ θεοῦ (8:21), τὴν δωρεάν τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύματος (Ac. 2:38), βιβλίος γενέσεως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ (Mt. 1:1). Cf. 1 Th. 1:3; Rev. 1:1. These examples could be multiplied indefinitely. If one member of the group is a proper name, the article does not always appear. So τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ θεσπαλουκέων (1 Th. 1:1), but τὰς ἐκκλησίας τῆς Γαλατίας (Gal. 1:2). Note also θεοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν (Eph. 1:2) and ὁ θεὸς

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 159.
καὶ πατὴρ τοῦ κυρίου ἦμων (1:3). Cf. also τὸ ἔργον Κυρίου (Ph. 2:30), τὸ πνεῦμα Ἱριστοῦ (1 Pet. 1:11; cf. Ac. 16:7). Such examples as these with proper names are after all "very rare."\(^1\) See Mt. 1:12; 16:13; Ac. 2:38; Rev. 12:17. Then again other phrases otherwise definite do not require the article. So the prepositional phrase ἐν δεξιᾷ τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 8:34; cf. Heb. 1:3), but note τῇ δεξιᾷ τοῦ θεοῦ (Ac. 2:33). In general, where the word without the article is not otherwise definite, it is indefinite even when the other one has the article. One is indefinite, the other definite. So ἀρχὴν τῶν σμαίνων (Jo. 2:11)—'a beginning of miracles.' In Mk. 1:1, ἀρχὴ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, the notion may be the same, though here ἀρχὴ is more absolute as the title of the book. In Ro. 3:25 it is possible to take εἰς ἐνδειξία τῆς δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ= 'for a showing of his righteousness,' while in 3:26 πρὸς τὴν ἐνδειξία τῆς δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ may refer to the previous mention of it as a more definite conception. Compare also τήν τοῦ θεοῦ δικαιοσύνην (Ro. 10:3) and δικαιοσύνην θεοῦ (3:21), where, however, as in 1:17, the idea may be, probably is, 'a righteousness of God,' not 'the righteousness of God.' In examples like this (cf. θεοῦ υἱός, Mt. 27:54) only the context can decide. Sometimes the matter is wholly doubtful. Cf. υἱὸς ἀνθρώπου (Heb. 2:6) and τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Mt. 16:13). In an example like διάκονος τοῦ Χριστοῦ (Col. 1:7), therefore, the idea is a minister of the Christ, not the minister of Christ. So σφραγίδα τῆς δικαιοσύνης (Ro. 4:11), ἀπλότητι τῆς κοινωνίας (2 Cor. 9:13). Hence υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ (Mt. 4:3, 6; Lu. 4:3) and ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ (Jo. 1:49; Mt. 16:16; Jo. 11:27) do not mean the same thing. The devil is represented as admitting that Jesus is a son of God, not the Son of God. In Jo. 5:25 Jesus claims ὅτι οἱ νεκροὶ ἀκουστοῦσιν τῷ φωνῆς τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ. In Jo. 10:36 Jesus uses argumentum ad hominem and only claims to be υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ. Cf. the sneer of the passers-by in Mt. 27:40 (W. H.), υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ, and the demand of Caiaphas in 26:63, ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ. In Jo. 5:27 υἱὸς ἀνθρώπου may be either 'the son of man' or 'a son of man.' Cf. a similar ambiguity in the Aramaic barnasha. The point may become very fine indeed. Cf. παρτός ἄνδρος ἡ κεφαλὴ ὁ Χριστὸς καὶ κεφαλὴ γυναικὸς ὁ ἄνδρος (1 Cor. 11:3). At any rate man is not affirmed to be woman's head in quite the same sense that Christ is man's head. But see also κεφαλὴ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ὁ θεός. In these examples the anarthrous substantive is predicate as is the case with ἄνθρωπος ἐστιν κεφαλὴ τῇ γυναικῇ ὡς ὁ Χριστὸς κεφαλὴ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ (Eph. 5:23). Hence the matter is not to be stressed here, as another

\(^1\) W.-M., footnote, p. 146.
principle comes into play. It is possible also that the qualita-
tive force of anarthrous nouns comes in here (Eph. 5:23, κεφαλὴ
tῆς γυναικὸς, κεφαλὴ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, σωτὴρ τοῦ σώματος). See VIII, (j).
Cf. ἔξοι ὅ τῶν διαθήκων τῆς ἐπαγγελίας (Eph. 2:12). So ἐστὶ ὅ τῶν
Ἰουδαίων (Jo. 5:1) = 'a feast of the Jews,' ἄρχων τῶν Ἰουδαίων (3:
1:4) and εἰς ἀφέσιν τῶν ἀμαρτίων ὑμῶν (Ac. 2:38), εἰς κοινωνίαν τοῦ
ὑιόν (1 Cor. 1:9), prepositional phrase. But enough of a some-
what thorny subject.1

(c) WITH ADJUNCTS OR ADVERBS. In general the same usage
applies to adjuncts as to adjectives.

1. Between the Article and the Noun. Thus ἡ ἐννω κλῆσις (Ph.
3:14), ἡ κατ᾿ ἐκλογὴν πρόθεσις (Ro. 9:11), ἡ παρ᾿ ἐμοῖ διαθήκη (11:27),
ὁ ἐν ἐλαχίστῳ ἄδικος (Lu. 16:10), τὴν ἐν τῷ σῷ ὄφθαλμῳ ὄκον (Mt.
7:3), οἱ ἐκ περιτομῆς πιστοὶ (Ac. 10:45), ταῖς πρότερον ἐν τῇ ἀγνοίᾳ

2. Article Repeated.2 Thus πάντων τῶν σπερμάτων τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς
γῆς (Mk. 4:31), αἱ δυνάμεις αἱ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς (13:25), τῆς ἀπολυ-
τρώσεως τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ (Ro. 3:24), τὰ παθήματα τὰ διὰ τοῦ
νόμου (7:5), ἡ ἐντολὴ ἡ εἰς ζωήν (7:10). See further Mt. 5:16;
Lu. 20:35; Jo. 1:45; Ac. 8:1; 24:5; 26:4; Ro. 4:11; 8:39;
15:26; 16:1; 1 Cor. 2:11 f.; 4:17; 2 Cor. 2:6; 9:1; 11:3;
Ph. 3:9; 1 Th. 1:8; 1 Tim. 1:14; Rev. 5:5; 11:2, 19, etc. In
Eph. 1:15 we find both constructions τῇ καθ᾿ υπμᾶς πίστιν καὶ τῇ
εἰς πάντας τοὺς ἀγίους. In Rev. 8:3 (9:13), τὸ θυσιαστήριον τὸ χρυ-
σοῦν τὸ ἐνώπιον τοῦ θρόνου, the article is repeated with both adject-
ative and adjunct.

3. Only with Adjunct. So οἰκονομίαν θεοῦ τῇ ἐν πίστει (1 Tim.
1:4), δικαιοσύνην τῇ ἐκ πίστεως (Ro. 9:30), ἐν ἀγάπῃ τῇ ἐν Χριστῷ
Ἰησοῦ (2 Tim. 1:13). For numerous classic illustrations of these
three positions see Gildersleeve, Syntax, pp. 285 ff.

4. Only with the Noun. In such cases the adjunct may be either
attributive or predicate. Only the context can decide. In conver-
sation the tone of voice, the manner, the inflection make clear
what in written speech is ambiguous. Still in most instances in
the N. T. the point is plain.3 The cases here dealt with are those
that occur without other defining phrases. In Eph. 6:5 some
MSS. read τοῖς κυρίοις κατὰ σάρκα. So in Lu. 16:10 we find both ὁ
ἐν ἐλαχίστῳ ἄδικος and ὁ πιστὸς ἐν ἐλαχίστῳ. I see no point in Blass'

2 Cf. W.-Th., p. 133, for long list of exx.
3 Ib., pp. 135 ff.; p. 179 f.; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 159 f.
remark\(^1\) that "the closely connected predicative clause could not be severed by the insertion of the article." The article could easily have been repeated or the same order preserved in both clauses. It is much simpler and truer to say that the need of another article was not felt. The same remark applies to τοῖς πλουσίοις ἐν τῷ νῦν αἰῶνι (1 Tim. 6:17), τῶν ἀπειθοῦντων ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ (Ro. 15:31), τοὺς Ἰσραήλ κατά σάρκα (1 Cor. 10:18), τὰ ἔθνη ἐν σακρί (Eph. 2:11), τῶν ἑντολῶν ἐν δόγμασιν (2:15), ὁ δεσμῖος ἐν κυρίῳ (4:1), οἱ νεκροὶ ἐν Χριστῷ (1 Th. 4:16), τῆς κοινωνίας ἐς αὐτοῖς (2 Cor. 9:13), τοῦ δόκιμου ἐν Χριστῷ (Ro. 16:10), οἱ κοιμηθέντες ἐν Χριστῷ (1 Cor. 15:18). Cf. Ph. 1:1. In Col. 1:4, τὴν πίστιν ὑμῶν ἐν Χριστῷ, and Ph. 4:19, τὸ πλοῦτος αὐτοῦ ἐν δόξῃ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ more than one adjunct occurs outside the article. Cf. Eph. 3:4, 13. Blass\(^2\) considers this idiom peculiar to the N. T., but pertinent examples are cited\(^3\) from Herodotus V, 108, ἡ ἀγγελία περὶ τῶν Σαρδίων, Thucydides, II, 52.1, etc. The vernacular character of the N. T. diction renders it more frequent. It is not common in classic Greek.\(^4\)

5. When Several Adjuncts Occur. "It often becomes inconvenient and clumsy to insert all of these between the article and the substantive."\(^5\) Even so, but at bottom the matter does not differ in principle from the examples above. We have seen the same freedom with a second attributive adjective (cf. Mt. 24:45).

See a good example of two adjuncts in Eph. 1:15, τὴν καθ’ ὑμᾶς πίστιν ἐν τῷ κυρίῳ Ἰησοῦ. The first attribute may be adjective, genitive, adverb or adjunct. So τὸ καθ’ ὑμῶν χειρόγραφον τοῖς δόγμασιν (Col. 2:14), τῆς ἐμῆς παρουσίας πάλιν πρὸς ὑμᾶς (Ph. 1:26), τὴν ἐκ θεοῦ δικαιοσύνην ἐπὶ τῇ πίστει (3:9), τὴν ἐμὴν ἀναστροφὴν ποτε ἐν τῷ Ἰουδαίσμῳ (Gal. 1:13). Cf. Ph. 1:5. The article and the participle readily yield examples like ὁ κατὰ πολὺ ἀναγεννήσας εἰς ἐλπίδα (1 Pet. 1:3), τοὺς ἐν δυνάμει θεοῦ φρονουμένους διὰ πίστεως (1:5). But sometimes the several adjuncts (cf. adjectives and genitives) are inserted between the article and the substantive. So τῆς ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ἐν ἐπιθυμίᾳ φθορᾶς (2 Pet. 1:4). Cf. Ac. 21:28. For similar position of several genitives and adjuncts see 2 Pet. 2:7; Lu. 1:70. In particular note Ro. 16:17 for the various phrases between τοὺς and ποιοῦντας. Note the many adjuncts in Ro. 3:25 f. See further VI, (a), 6.

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 160.
\(^2\) p. 159.
\(^3\) W.-Sch., p. 180.
\(^4\) The three regular positions are common. Cf. Gildersleeve, Synt., p. 286.
\(^5\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 160.
6. Phrases of Verbal Origin. Phrases that are consciously verbal in origin readily do without the repeated article. So in Ro. 6:3 we have εἰς τὸν θάνατον αὐτοῦ ἐβαπτίσθητεν and in the next verse we read συνετάφθης αὐτῷ διὰ τοῦ βαπτίσματος εἰς τὸν θάνατον. It is plain, therefore, that here εἰς τὸν θάνατον is to be construed with βαπτίσματος, not with συνετάφθης. In other examples the verbal construction appears in other contexts. It is, however, possible that the usage with the verb renders the anarthrous construction more frequent. So Ph. 1:26, τῆς ἐμῆς παρουσίας πάλιν πρὸς ὕμᾶς, may be compared with παρείναι πρὸς ὕμᾶς (Gal. 4:20). Cf. also παθήματα ὑπέρ (Col. 1:24) with πάσχειν ὑπέρ (1 Pet. 2:21), θλίψειν ὑπέρ (Eph. 3:13) with θλιβόμεθα ὑπέρ (2 Cor. 1:6). The classic idiom shows similar examples.

7. Exegetical Questions. Sometimes it is quite important for doctrinal reasons to be careful to note whether the adjunct is attributive or predicate. Thus in Ro. 8:3, κατέκρινε τὴν ἁμαρτίαν ἐν τῇ σαρκί, if ἐν τῇ σαρκί is attributive with ἁμαρτίαν, there is a definite assertion of sin in the flesh of Jesus. But if the phrase is predicate and is to be construed with κατέκρινε, no such statement is made. Here the grammarian is helpless to decide the point. The interpreter must step in and appeal to the context or other passages for light. One conversant with Paul's theology will feel sure that ἐν σαρκί is here meant to be taken as predicate. The same ambiguity arises in verse 2, ὁ νόμος τοῦ πνεύματος τῆς ζωῆς ἐν Χριστῷ ἠλευθέρωσέν σε ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου τῆς ἁμαρτίας καὶ τοῦ θανάτου. Here it is reasonably clear that ἐν Χριστῷ is predicate with ἠλευθέρωσέν. So in Ro. 3:25 probably ἐν τῷ αὐτοῦ αἵματι, as well as εἰς ἐνδείξειν is predicate with προέθετο. Another example from Romans is found in 5:8, where εἰς ἤμας belongs to συνιστήσει, not ἄγαπην. So in Jo. 15:11 ἐν ὑμῖν is construed with ἡ not ἡ ἐμή. For further illustration see Ac. 22:18; 1 Cor. 2:7; 9:18; Eph. 2:7; 3:12; 5:26; Ph. 1:14; 3:9; Col. 1:9; Phil. 20; Heb. 13:20.

8. Anarthrous Attributives. Examples occur also of attributives when the article is absent from both substantive and adjunct. Thus ἀνθρωπον τυφλόν ἐκ γενετῆς (Jo. 9:1), ἀνθρωπος ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθάρτῳ (Mk. 1:23), χαρά ἐν πνεύματι ἀγίῳ (Ro. 14:17), ἐπὶ καθ' ὑπερβολὴν ὅδον (1 Cor. 12:31), etc. Note in particular 2 Cor. 11:23, 27. The older Greek furnishes illustration of this idiom.

1 W.-Th., p. 136; W.-Sch., p. 180.
2 W.-Sch., p. 180.
3 Ib. But Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 159) doubts it.
(d) SEVERAL ATTRIBUTIVES WITH Καί.

1. Several Epithets Applied to the Same Person or Thing. See already under VI, (a), 4. Usually only one article is then used. For classic examples see Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 330. So, for instance, ὁ ταλαιπωρος καὶ ἔλεινος καὶ πτωχός καὶ τυφλός καὶ γυμνός (Rev. 3:17). This is the normal idiom in accord with ancient usage. So Mk. 6:3 ὁ υἱός τῆς Μαρίας καὶ ᾠδελφός Ἰακώβου, Lu. 6:49 ὁ δὲ ἀκούσας καὶ μὴ ποιήσας, Ac. 3:14 τὸν ἀγίον καὶ δίκαιον, Jas. 3:9 τὸν κύριον καὶ πατέρα, 2 Pet. 2:20 (3:2) τὸν κυρίου καὶ σωτῆρος, 1 Tim. 4:3 τοῖς πιστοῖς καὶ ἐπεγνωκόσι. also Gal. 1:7; Eph. 6:21; 1 Tim. 6:15; Heb. 3:1; Rev. 1:9 (both ὁ and τῇ). When a second article does occur, it accents sharply a different aspect of the person or phase of the subject. So in Rev. 1:17 ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἐσχάτος, καὶ ὁ ζῶν, one article would have been sufficient, but would have obscured the separate affirmations here made. Cf. also τὸ Αλφα καὶ τὸ Ω in 1:8; 21:6. In Jo. 21:24 W. H. read ὁ μάρτυρῶν περί τούτων καὶ ὁ γράφας ταῦτα, but they bracket καὶ ὁ. The second article is very doubtful. A similar superfluity of the second article appears in the second ἦ (brackets W. H.) in Ac. 17:19, and in the second τὸ in 1 Pet. 4:14, τὸ τῆς δόξης καὶ τὸ τοῦ θεοῦ πνεῦμα (due probably to the second genitive to emphasize each). So Jo. 1:40. See pp. 762, 782. Outside of special cases like these only one article is found when several epithets are applied to the same person. The presence of a genitive with the group of words does not materially alter the construction. The genitive may occur with either substantive and apply to both. So ὁ θεὸς καὶ πατήρ ἡμῶν (1 Th. 3:11) and τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ σωτῆρος (2 Pet. 1:11).

As a matter of fact such genitives (see above) occur either inside or outside of the regimen of the article. Cf. τῷ θεῷ καὶ πατρὶ ἡμῶν (Ph. 4:20), ὁ θεὸς καὶ πατήρ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν (1 Pet. 1:3; 2 Cor. 1:3; Eph. 1:3). The presence of ἡμῶν, with κυρίου does not affect the construction any more than the use of κυρίου itself or ἡμῶν above. In Ph. 3:3 one adjunct comes before one participle, the other after the other participle, but only one article occurs. A most important passage is 2 Pet. 1:1, τοῦ θεοῦ ἡμῶν καὶ σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. Curiously enough Winer endeavours to draw a distinction between this passage, "where there is not even a pronoun with σωτήρος" and the identical construction in 2 Pet. 1:11, τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ σωτῆρος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, which he cites as an example of "merely predicates of the same person." Stranger

---

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 155.
2 W.-Th., p. 130.
3 Ib., p. 126.
still, he bases his objection on doctrinal grounds, a matter that does not per se concern the grammarians. The matter is handled in Winer-Schmiedel, where it is frankly admitted that the construction in 2 Pet. 1:1 is the same as that in 1:11 and also in 2:20; 3:2, 18. Schmiedel says also that "grammar demands that one person be meant." In Ju. 4, τὸν μονὸν δεσπότην καὶ Κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, the same point holds, but the fact that Κύριος is so often anarthrous like a proper name slightly weakens it. The same remark applies also to 2 Th. 1:12, τὸ θεοῦ Ἰμών καὶ Κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, and Eph. 5:5, ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ θεοῦ; (since θεοῦ often occurs without the article). One person may be described in these three examples, but they are not so clear as the type τοῦ Κυρίου Ἰμών καὶ σωτήρος (2 Pet. 1:1, 11). In Tit. 2:13, τὸ μεγάλου θεοῦ καὶ σωτήρος Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦ, it is almost certain that one person is again described. Cf. also τὴν μακαρίαν ἐλπίδα καὶ ἑπιφάνειαν τῆς δόξης where the one article unites closely the two substantives. Moulton quotes most pertinently papyrus examples of vii/A.D., which show that among Greek-speaking Christians "our great God and Saviour" was a current form of speech as well as the Ptolemaic formula, τὸ μεγάλου θεοῦ εὐρέγετον καὶ σωτήρος (G. H. 15, ii/B.C.). He cites also Wendland's argument that the rival rendering in Titus is as great an "exegetical mistake" as to make two persons in 2 Pet. 1:1. Moulton's conclusion is clear enough to close the matter: "Familiarity with the everlasting apotheosis that flaunts itself in the papyri and inscriptions of Ptolemaic and Imperial times lends strong support to Wendland's contention that Christians, from the latter part of i/A.D. onward, deliberately annexed for their divine Master the phraseology that was impiously arrogated to themselves by some of the worst of men."

2. When to be Distinguished. Then the article is repeated. So
Mt. 23:2 οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, Mk. 2:18 οἱ μαθηταὶ Ἰωάνου καὶ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, 6:21 τοὺς μεγαστάσιν αὐτοῦ καὶ τοὺς χιλιάρχους καὶ τοὺς πρώτους 11: 9 οἱ προάγοντες καὶ οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες 11:18 (cf. 14:43) οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς, Mk. 12:13 τῶν Φαρισαίων καὶ τῶν Ἑρωδιανῶν, 11: 39 τοῦ ποτηρίου καὶ τοῦ πίνακος, 15:6 στοὺς φίλους καὶ τοὺς γείτονας, 23:4 τοὺς ἀρχιερείς καὶ τοὺς ὄχλους, Jo. 4:37 ὁ σπείρων καὶ ὁ θερίζων, 1 Cor. 3:8 ὁ φυτεύων καὶ ὁ ποτίζων, Jas. 3:11 τὸ γλυκὸ καὶ τὸ πικρόν, Ac. 26:30 ὁ βασιλεὺς καὶ ὁ ἡγεμόν, Rev. 18:20 οἱ ἄγιοι καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι καὶ οἱ προφῆται. Cf. Rev. 11: 4;

1 P. 158.  
3 On Σωτήρ in ZNTW, v. 335 f.  
4 Prol., p. 84.
13:16; 2 Th. 1:8. The list can be extended almost indefinitely. But these are examples of the same number, gender and case. Not have I referred to abstract words of quality like the list in Rev. 7:12, or examples like τὰς συναγωγὰς καὶ τὰς ἄρχας καὶ τὰς ἔξωσίας (Lu. 12:11). It is not contended that these groups are all absolutely distinct (cf. οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ Φαρισσαῖοι), but that they are treated as separate. Even with the scribes and Pharisees they did not quite coincide. Cf. Mt. 21:45; Ac. 11:6. The use of another attributive may sometimes be partly responsible for two articles. So Lu. 8:24 τῶν ἀνέμων καὶ τῶν κλώδων τοῦ ὑδατος, Mk. 2:18 οἱ μαθηταὶ Ἰωάνου καὶ οἱ Φαρισσαῖοι, 11:15 τὰς τραπεζὰς τῶν κολλυβιστῶν καὶ τὰς καθέδρας τῶν πωλούντων. Cf. also Lu. 20:20; Ac. 25:15; 1 Cor. 11:27; Rev. 13:10.

3. Groups Treated as One. Sometimes groups more or less distinct are treated as one for the purpose in hand, and hence use only one article. Cf τᾶς φίλας καὶ γείτονας (Lu. 15:9), τοὺς νομικοὺς καὶ Φαρισσαίους (14:3), τὰ πλατεῖα καὶ ῥύμας (14:21), τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ γραμματέων (Mk. 15:1), τῶν Ἑπικουρίων καὶ Στρωκ (Ac. 17:18), τῶν Φαρισσαίων καὶ Σαδδουκαίων (Ac. 23:7), τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ προφητῶν (Eph. 2:20), τῇ ἀπολογίᾳ καὶ βεβαιώσει τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Ph. 1:7), τὸ πλάτος καὶ μήκος καὶ βάθος καὶ ύψος (Eph. 3:18), τὴν κλήσιν καὶ ἐκλογὴν (2 Pet. 1:10). Cf. τὴν in Tit. 2:13. So in Mt. 17:1 (W. H. text) we have τὸν Πέτρον καὶ Ἰάκωβον καὶ Ἰωάνην, where the three are one group. This is probably more frequent in examples where a genitive occurs also, or some other attribute. So Ph. 1:20 τὴν ἀποκαραδοκίαν καὶ ἑλπίδα μου, 1:19 τῆς ὑμῶν δεήσεως καὶ ἐπιχορηγίας τοῦ πνεύματος, 2:17 τῇ θυσίᾳ καὶ λειτουργίᾳ τῆς πίστεως. Cf. also 1 Th. 2:12; 3:7; Mt. 24:3; Ro. 1:20; Col. 2:8; Eph. 3:5; 2 Cor. 1:6; 1 Pet. 2:25; Ph. 1:25. These are all the simplest and clearest illustrations.

4. Point of View. Obviously, therefore, whether one or more articles are to be used depends on the point of view of the speaker or writer. In geographical terms the matter of freedom is well illustrated. Thus in 1 Th. 1:7 we have ἐν τῇ Μακεδονίᾳ καὶ ἐν τῇ Ἀχαϊᾳ, while in the very next verse we meet ἐν τῇ Μακεδονίᾳ καὶ Ἀχαϊᾳ, as in Ac. 19:21. These two Roman provinces are distinct, but adjacent. Cf. also τῆς Ἰουδαίας καὶ Σαμαρίας (Ac. 8:1; cf. 1:8), τῆς Ἰουδαίας καὶ Φαλιλαίας καὶ Σαμαρίαν (9:31), where these sections of Palestine are treated together. Cf. Ac. 27:5. In Ac. 15:3 note τὴν τῶν Φοινίκην καὶ Σαμαρίαν, the two sections treated together are not even contiguous. In Ac. 15:23, κατὰ τὴν Ἀντιό-
χείαν καὶ Συρίαν καὶ Κιλίκίαν, we have a city grouped with two countries (as in Lu. 5:17; Mt. 4:25), while in 15:41 we meet τῆν 
Συρίαν καὶ τῆν Κιλίκίαν (W. H. text). Hence no absolute conclusions can be drawn from the one article in Ac. 16:6, τῆν Φρυγίαν 
καὶ Γαλαλτικῆν χώραν (cf. reverse order in 18:23) as to the separate-
ness of the terms "Phrygia" and "Galactic region." Cf. also 
Lu. 3:1, τῆς Ἰουραίας καὶ Τραχυνύτιδος χώρας. But the matter is 
not wholly whimsical. In Ac. 2:9 f. note the τῆν with Μεσο-
ποταμίαν, which stands alone, while we have also Πότον καὶ τῆν 
Ἀσιάν, probably because the province of Asia (not Asia Minor as 
a whole) is meant. Then again we meet τὰ μέρη τῆς Λιβύης τῆς κατὰ 
Κυρήνην, because of the details stated. In Ac. 6:9 the use of τῶν 
twice divides the synagogues into two groups (men from Cilicia 
and Asia on the one hand, men from Alexandria, Cyrene and 
Libertines (?) on the other). The matter is simple geography but 
for Λιβερτίνων, and may be after all if we only knew what that 
term means. See Winer-Schmiedel, p. 158. Cf. also Rev. 14:7, 
where two words have articles and two do not, and Ac. 15:20, 
where three words in the list have articles and one, πνικτοῦ, does 
not. So in Ac. 13:50 we have τῶν Παύλου καὶ Β., while in 15:2 
we find τῶν Π. καὶ τῶν Β. Then (cf. 4) in Mt. 17:1 observe the one 
article with Peter, James and John, while in Heb. 11:20 we see 
εὐλόγησεν Ἰσαὰκ τῶν Ἰακώβ καὶ τῶν Ἡσαῦ. The articles here empha-
size the distinction between subject and object as in Mt. 1:2-16.
Cf. also τῶν ἀρχ. καὶ τῶν πρ. (Ac. 15:4) and οἱ ἀρχ. καὶ οἱ πρ. (15:6) 
with τῶν ἀρχ. καὶ πρ. τῶν (16:4).

5. Difference in Number. If the words combined differ in 
number, usually each one has its own article. The reason is that 
they generally fall into separate classes. So ὁ ἀναγινώσκων καὶ οἱ 
ἀκούοντες (Rev. 1:3), τῆς σαρκὸς καὶ τῶν διανοιῶν (Eph. 2:3), τῆν 
ἀσέβειαν καὶ τὰς κοσμικὰς ἐπιθυμίας (Tit. 2:12). But one article may 
also be found, as in τῶν κόσμοι και ἀγγέλων καὶ ἀνθρώπων (1 Cor. 4:9). 
Here, however, the anarthrous words "particularize the τῶν κόσμων."2 
Yet in 1 Jo. 2:16 πᾶν τὸ ἐν τῶν κόσμων is "particularized" by three 
words each with the article.

6. Difference in Gender. So, if the gender is different, there is 
likewise usually the repetition of the article. Cf. Ac. 17:18 τῶν 
Ἰσραήλ καὶ τῆς ἀνάστασιν, Mt. 22:4 οἱ ταῦτα μου καὶ τὰ σιτίστα, Lu. 
10:21 τοῦ ὀφρανοῦ καὶ τῆς γῆς, Ac. 13:50 τὰς εὐσχήμονας καὶ τοὺς 
πρώτους, Ro. 8:2 τῆς ἁμαρτίας καὶ τοῦ θανάτου, Col. 4:17 τὸ δίκαιον

---

1 Cf. W. M. Ramsay, Expos., 1895, July, pp. 29-40,
2 W.-Th., p. 127.
καὶ τὴν ἱσότητα, Eph. 2:1 τοῖς παραπτώμασιν καὶ τοῖς ἁμαρτίαις, Heb. 3:6 τὴν παρρησίαν καὶ τὸ καύχημα. Though usual, the repeated article is not necessary.¹ See τὰς ὁδοὺς καὶ φραγμοὺς (Lu. 14:23), τῶν ὁλοκαυτωμάτων καὶ θυσίων (Mk. 12:33), τὰ ἐντάλματα καὶ διδασκαλίας (Col. 2:22).

If indeed the words differ in both gender and number, in that case it is still more customary to have separate articles. Cf., for instance, Lu. 14:26, τὸν πατέρα ἑαυτοῦ καὶ τὴν μητέρα καὶ τὴν γυναῖκα καὶ τὰ τέκνα καὶ τοὺς ἀδελφοὺς καὶ τὰς ἀδελφὰς. So also Ac. 15:4, 20; 26:30; Col. 2:13; 1 Tim. 5:23; Rev. 2:19. The papyri illustrate the N. T. usage of the article with several substantives (cf. Volker, Syntax, p. 20). So ὁ ἡλίους καὶ σελήνη, Pap. L, Dieterich, Abraxas, p. 195. 9.

7. With Disjunctive Particle. If a disjunctive preposition be used, there will naturally be separate articles (even when καὶ is the connective), whatever be true about number and gender. So μεταξὺ τοῦ ναοῦ καὶ τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου (Mt. 23:35 = Lu. 11:51). So when the conjunction occurs as in τὸν νόμον ἡ τοὺς προφήτας (Mt. 5:17), τῷ πατρί ἢ τῇ μητρί (15:5), τὸ σκότος ἢ τὸ φῶς (Jo. 3:19), ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον ἢ ὑπὸ τὴν κλίψιν. (Mk. 4:21), τῷ λαῷ ἢ τοῖς ἐθεσὶ (Ac. 28:17). Blass² makes the point that outside of Ac. 14:5, τῶν ἔθνων τε καὶ Ἰουδαίων, we generally find the repeated article with τε καί. Even here Ἰουδαίων as a proper name does not need the article. Cf. Ἰουδαίων τε καὶ Ἑλλήνων in 14:1, but ὁ τε στρατηγὸς καὶ οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς (5:24) with difference in number also.

VII. Position with Predicates. It is not the use of the article with the predicate noun, like οὗτος ἐστιν ὁ κληρονόμος (Mk. 12:7), that is here before us. That point has already been discussed under ν, (i). When the article occurs with the substantive, but not with the adjective, the result is the equivalent of a relative clause. Cf. μεγάλῃ φωνῇ (Ac. 14:10) and φωνῇ μεγάλῃ (7:57) = ‘with a loud voice,’ with μεγάλῃ τῇ φωνῇ (26:24) = ‘with the voice elevated.’ See also ἄνακεκαλυμμένω προσώπῳ (2 Cor. 3:18)— ‘with unveiled face’ and ἄκατακαλύπτῳ τῇ κεφαλῇ (1 Cor. 11:5) = ‘with the head unveiled.’ Cf. Mk. 3:1, ἐξηραμμένην ἔχων τὴν χείρα. Other examples are πεπωρωμένη τῇ καρδίᾳ (Mk. 8:17), τὴν μαρτυρίαν μείζων (Jo. 5:36), τὴν ἀγάπην ἐκτενὴ (1 Pet. 4:8), τὴν ἀναστροφὴν καλὴν (2:12), ἀπαράβατω τὴν ἱερωσυνή (Heb. 7:24), τὰ αἰσθητήρια γεγυμνασμένα (5:14). In all these and similar examples the point is quite different from that of the attributive position of the article. Most of the instances occur with ἔχω. Note the absence of the

¹ Ib. ² Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 163.
article with ἀπογραφὴ πρῶτη (Lu. 2:2) because it is in the pred-
icate. Cf. τόυτο ἀληθές ἐγρηγκας (Jo. 4:18). The position of αὐτὴ τῇ καλομένῃ (Lu. 1:36) may be noted. D in Mk. 7:5 reads κοι-
ναῖς ταῖς χερσίν.1 Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 292) considers this
use of the predicate position "a gnomon of artificial style" out-
side of the more simple combinations. See also Milden, The
Limitations of the Predicative Position in Greek (1900, p. 43). It
is noticeable in prepositional phrases, as in Xen., Anab., 1, 3, 14,
διὰ φιλίας τῆς χώρας.

VIII. The Absence of the Article. I do not care to use the
term "omission" in connection with the article. That word im-
plies that the article ought to be present. As has been already
shown, the article is not the only means of showing that a word is
definite. This luxury in language did not become indispensable.
The servant never became master. There remained in the classic
period many parallel phrases which were intelligible without the
article. Indeed, new phrases came into use by analogy without
the article. I do not think it is necessary to devote so much space
to this phase of the subject as is done in most grammars. Most
of the cases have already come up for discussion in one way or
another. It is sufficient here to give a résumé of the chief idioms
in the N. T. which are without the article and are still definite.
Much of the modern difficulty about the absence of the Greek
article is due to the effort to interpret it by the standard of the
English or German article. So Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 119)
speaks of "appellatives, which as expressing definite objects should
have the article"! Even Gildersleeve, in discussing the "Absence
of the Article" (note the phrase, Syntax, p. 259), says that "pre-
positional phrases and other formulae may dispense with the ar-
ticle as in the earlier language," and he adds "but anaphora or
contrast may bring back the article at any time and there is no
pedantical uniformity." Admirably said, except "dispense with"
and "bring back," dim ghosts of the old grammar. Moulton2
cites Jo. 6:68, ἡμισινα της ζωῆς αἰωνίου, which should be translated
'words of eternal life' (as marg. of R. V.). There are indeed "few
of the finer points of Greek which need more constant attention"
than the absence of the article. The word may be either definite
or indefinite when the article is absent. The context and history
of the phrase in question must decide. The translation of the
expression into English or German is not determined by the mere

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 315.
2 Prol., p. 83. Ib.
absence of the Greek article. If the word is indefinite, as in Jo. 4:27; 6:68, no article, of course, occurs. But the article is absent in a good many definite phrases also. It is about these that a few words further are needed. A brief summary of the various types of anarthrous definite phrases is given. A sane treatment of the subject occurs in Winer-Schmiedel.

(a) WITH PROPER NAMES. Here the article is used or not at the will of the writer. So τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἃν Παῦλος κηρύσσει (Ac. 19:13), but τὸν Παῦλον in verse 15. The reason is apparent in these three examples. Words in apposition with proper names are usually anarthrous. Cf. Mt. 3:6 = Mk. 1:5. See further v, (a), 3.

(b) WITH GENITIVES. We have seen that the substantive may still be definite if anarthrous, though not necessarily so. Cf. πύλαι ἄδων (Mt. 16:18), ἀνάστασις νεκρῶν (Ac. 23:6), χάριτι θεοῦ (1 Cor. 15:10), λόγου θεοῦ (1 Th. 2:13), ποτήριου κυρίου (1 Cor. 10:21), υἱὲ διαβόλου (Ac. 13:10), etc. In particular, personal pronouns in the genitive were not always felt to need the article. Cf. κῆπον ἑαυτοῦ (Lu. 13:19). See further v, (h). The LXX uses this idiom freely (Blass-Debrunner, p. 151). English can show the same construction.

"Eye of newt and toe of frog,
Wool of bat and tongue of dog,
Adder's fork and blind worm's sting,
Lizard's leg and hornet's wing." — Macbeth.

(c) PREPOSITIONAL PHRASES. These were also often considered definite enough without the article. So ἐν οἶκῳ (1 Cor. 11:34). Cf. ἐν τῷ οἴκῳ, 'in the house,' Jo. 11:20 = 'at home.' So we say "go to bed," etc. Moulton pertinently cites English "down town," "on change," "in bed," "from start to finish." This idiom is not therefore peculiar to Greek. It is hardly necessary to mention all the N. T. examples, so common is the matter.

Thus with ἀνά observe ἀνά μέρος (1 Cor. 14:27). With ἀπὸ note ἀπ' ἀγροῦ (Mk. 15:21), ἀπ' ἀγορᾶς (Mk. 7:4), ἀπ' οὐρανοῦ (Lu. 17:29), ἀπ' οὐρανῶν (Heb. 12:25), ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆς (Rev. 21:13), ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆν (Mt. 2:1), ἀπ' ἡρῴς (1 Jo. 1:1), ἀπὸ καταβολῆς (Mt. 13:35), ἀπὸ μέρους (Ro. 11:25), ἀπὸ νεκρῶν (Lu. 16:30). Cf. Rev. 21:13, ἀπὸ βορρᾶ, ἀπὸ νότου, ἀπὸ δυσμῶν. So ἄχρι καιροῦ (Lu. 4:13).

For διὰ note διὰ νυκτός (Ac. 5:19), διὰ μέσου (Lu. 4:30), διὰ μέσου (17:11).

---

1 See on the whole subject K.-G., I, pp. 598
2 Pp. 162 ff.
3 See extensive list in W.-Sch., p. 166 f.
4 Prol., p. 82.
For εἰς see εἰς ἄδην (Ac. 2:27), εἰς οὐρανὸν (1 Pet. 3:22), εἰς ᾁγρῷ (Mk. 16:12), εἰς θάλασσαν (Mt. 17:27), εἰς οἶκον (Mk. 3:20), εἰς πρόσωπον (Mk. 12:14), εἰς μέσον (Mk. 14:60), εἰς οἶκίαν (2 Jo. 10), εἰς τέλος (Mt. 10:22).

For ἐν may be noticed ἐν οὐρανῷ (Mt. 6:20), ἐν οὐρανοῖς (Heb. 12:23), ἐν ὑψιστοίς (Lu. 2:14), ἐν δεξιᾷ (Heb. 1:3), ἐν κόσμῳ (Col. 2:20), ἐν ἀγρῷ (Lu. 15:25), ἐν ἁγορᾷ (Lu. 7:32), ἐν οἴκῳ (1 Cor. 14:35), ἐν ἔκκλησίᾳ = 'at church' (1 Cor. 14:19), ἐν προσώπῳ (2 Cor. 5:12), ἐν ἡμέρᾳ (Ro. 13:13), ἐν καιρῷ (Mt. 24:45), ἐν ἁρχῇ (Jo. 1:1), ἐν σαρκί (2 Cor. 10:3), ἐν ἀνθρώποις (Lu. 1:25), ἐν νυκτί (Ac. 18:9).

Examples of ἐκ are ἐκ μέρους (1 Cor. 12:27), ἐκ ψυχῆς (Eph. 6:6), ἐκ νεότητος (Ac. 26:4), ἐκ ἁρχῆς (Jo. 6:64), ἐκ δεξιῶν (Mt. 27:38), ἐκ εὐωνύμων (Mt. 25:41), ἐκ ἁριστερῶν (Lu. 23:33), ἐκ μέσου (2 Th. 2:7), ἐκ καρδίας (Ro. 6:17), ἐκ νεκρῶν (Lu. 9:7), ἐκ οὐρανοῦ (Jo. 1:32).

For ἐῳς observe ἐῳς ἄδου (Mt. 11:23), ἐῳς οὐρανοῦ (Mt. 11:23), ἐῳς δυσμῶν (Mt. 24:27), ἐῳς ἐσπέρας (Ac. 28:23), ἐὦς τέλους (1 Cor. 1:8).

Examples of ἐπί are ἐπί γῆς (Lu. 2:14), ἐπί θύρας (Mt. 24:33), ἐπί πρόσωπου (Lu. 5:12).

For κατά see κατ᾽ ὀφθαλμοῦς (Gal. 3:1), κατά λίβα καὶ κατὰ χώρον (Ac. 27:12), κατὰ μεσθμβρίαν (Ac. 8:26), κατ᾽ ἁρχάς (Heb. 1:10), κατὰ πρόσωπον (Ac. 25:16), κατὰ μέρος (Heb. 9:5), κατὰ σάρκα (2 Cor. 10:3), κατὰ ἀνθρώπου (1 Pet. 4:6).

For μέχρι observe μέχρι μεσονυκτίου (Ac. 20:7), μέχρι τέλους (Heb. 3:6).

For παρά note παρὰ θάλασσαν (Ac. 10:32), παρὰ ποταμῶν (Ac. 16:13).

For περί see περί μεσθμβρίαν (Ac. 22:6).

For πρὸ see πρὸ καιροῦ (Mt. 8:29).

For πρὸς observe πρόσωπον πρὸς πρόσωπον (1 Cor. 13:12), πρὸς ἐσπέραν (Lu. 24:29).

For ὑπό see ὑπ᾽ οὐρανόν (Lu. 17:24).

It will be noted that this usage after all is confined to a rather narrow range of words, some of which, like οὐρανός and γῆ, represent single objects. More of this a little later. Most of these examples have articular parallels. See also v, (f). For classic examples see Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 259 f. The papyri furnish abundant parallels (Volker, Syntax, pp. 15-17) as do the inscriptions (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 92).

(d) WITH BOTH PREPOSITION AND GENITIVE. It is not surprising to find no article with phrases which use both preposition
and genitive like εἰς εὐαγγέλιον θεοῦ (Ro. 1:1), ἀπὸ ὀφθαλμῶν σου (Lu. 19:42), ἐκ δεξιῶν μου (Mt. 20:23), ἀπὸ ἀρχῆς κόσμου (Mt. 24:21), παρὰ καιρὸν ἡλικίας (Heb. 11:11), ἐν καιρῷ πειρασμοῦ (Lu. 8:13), ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου (Mt. 25:34), ἐν βραχίονι αὐτοῦ (Lu. 1:51), etc.

(e) TITLES OF BOOKS OR SECTIONS. These may be without the article, being already specific enough. So Εὐαγγέλιον κατὰ Μάρκου before the Gospel in many MSS., ἁρχὴ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Mk. 1:1), βιβλίος γενέσεως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ (Mt. 1:1), Ἀποκάλυψις Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ (Rev. 1:1). A good example of anarthrous headings may be seen in 1 Pet. 1 f. (cf. Hort, 1 Peter, p. 15), where no article occurs in the whole opening sentence of five lines. The article is used quite idiomatically in 1 Peter.

(f) WORDS IN PAIRS. These often do without the article. Very often, of course, the article is used. Words for day and night (as in English) frequently occur together. Cf. νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας (Mk. 5:5), ἡμέρας καὶ νυκτὸς (Rev. 4:8). They occur singly also without the article, as νυκτὸς (Jo. 3:2), ἡμέρας (Rev. 21:25), μέσης νυκτὸς (Mt. 25:6). See also other pairs like ἐν οὐρανῷ ἐντεύκτη γῆς (1 Cor. 8:5; cf. 2 Pet. 3:5), πατέρα ἡ μητέρα (Mk. 7:10), ζωτὸς καὶ νεκρούς (1 Pet. 4:5). Indeed the anarthrous construction is common in contrast with ἡ, εἰτε, οὔτε, μήτε, οὐ—ἀλλά (cf. Ro. 6:14). For long lists of anarthrous words (definite and indefinite together) see Ro. 8:35; 1 Cor. 3:22; 12:13, 28; 2 Cor. 11:25 f.; 1 Pet. 1, 2; Heb. 12:18, 23; 1 Tim. 3:16. Cf. also ἀνήρ ἐκ γυναικὸς (1 Cor. 11:8). Some of these usages belong to proverbs, formulae and enumerations. See Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 260. The κοινὴ (inscriptions and papyri) shows the idiom (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 94).

(g) ORDINAL NUMERALS. The article is usually absent in expressions of time. The ancient idiom is here followed. The ordinal was often felt to be definite enough alone. This was true of the predicate. Cf. ἀπογραφὴ πρώτη (Lu. 2:2), ἥν ὦρα τρίτη (Mk. 15:25), ἥν ως ἐκτῆ (Jo. 19:14). Cf. Eph. 6:2; Ac. 2:15. But it was not confined to the predicate by any means, nor even to prepositional phrases like ἀπὸ πρώτης ἡμέρας (Ac. 20:18), ἐως τρίτου οὐρανοῦ (2 Cor. 12:2), ἀπὸ τετάρτης ἡμέρας (Ac. 10:30), περὶ ὦραν ἐκτῆν, (Ac. 10:9), ἐν ἐτει πεντεκαίδεκατῳ (Lu. 3:1), ἐως ωρὰς ἐνάτης (Mk. 15:33), etc. Cf. Ac. 23:23. The same construction occurs also

---

1 Cf. W.-Sch., p. 168; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 149.
2 Thompson, Synt., etc., p. 54; W.-Th., p. 126. See further J. Thompson, Cl. Rev., 1906, p. 304; Gildersleeve, Synt., p. 261.
in διελθόντες πρώτην φυλακὴν καὶ δευτέραν (Ac. 12:10). Cf. Mk. 15:33, γενομένης ὄρας ἔκτης. Examples with the article are not wanting. Cf. Mt. 27:64; Lu. 12:38; Ac. 10:40.

(h) IN THE PREDICATE. As already shown in v, (i), in the predicate the article is often absent. See v, (i). Cf. θεός ἦν ὁ λόγος (Jo. 1:1), θεός ἀγάπη ἐστίν (1 Jo. 4:8), etc. This is the rule unless the terms be convertible or the predicate is singled out as prominent. For the superlative without the article see also 1 Jo. 2:18. Cf. 1 Pet. 1:5, ἐν ἑσχάτῳ καιρῷ.

(i) ABSTRACT WORDS. In English the presence, not the absence, of the article with abstract words needs explanation. Hence the anarthrous lists in Gal. 5:20 f., 22 f., seem to us much more in harmony with our idiom than the lists with the article in Rev. 5:12, 13; 7:12. In German, however, the opposite is often true. The article is often absent in the Greek, where the German would have it. Cf. Ro. 1:29. See iv, (c), for discussion of article with abstract nouns. No vital difference was felt between articualr and anarthrous abstract nouns (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 259).

(j) QUALITATIVE FORCE. This is best brought out in anarthrous nouns. So εἰ ἔξεστιν ἄνδρὶ γυναῖκα ἀπολύσαι (Mk. 10:2; cf. 1 Cor. 7:10), παραδώσει ἀδελφός ἀδελφόν εἰς θάνατον καὶ πατήρ τέκνου—τέκνα ἐπὶ γυνεῖς (13:12), ὡς μονογονοῦσι παρὰ πατρός (Jo. 1:14), γονεύσιν ἀπειθεῖς (Ro. 1:30). Cf. also Eph. 5:23, ἀνήρ ἐστιν κεφαλή τῆς γυναικὸς, ὁ Χριστὸς κεφαλὴ τῆς ἐκκλησίας καὶ αὐτὸς σωτῆρ τοῦ σώματος. In αἱ γυναῖκες τοῖς ἀνδράσιν (verse 24) note the generic article, class and class. See υἱὸς—πατήρ (Heb. 12:7).2

(k) ONLY OBJECT OF KIND. These partake of the nature of proper names and often occur without the article. They also often have the article. Some of these anarthrous examples appear in prepositional phrases like εἰς ἀριστερῶν (Lu. 23:33), ἐκ δεξιῶν (ib.), etc. These may be passed by (already discussed). The point is best illustrated by such words as εἰς ἀριστερῶν (2 Pet. 3:5). Cf. English "heaven and earth." Cf. (f), Words in Pairs. θαλάσσας, we find sometimes anarthrous with prepositions (Ac. 7:36; 10:32) and in Lu. 21:25 ἡχοὺς θαλάσσης καὶ σάλου. But it has the article in contrast with γῆ.3 See also Lu. 21:25 ἐν ἡλίῳ καὶ σελήνῃ καὶ ἄστροις, Mt. 13:6 ἡλίου ἀνατελλοντος, 1 Cor. 15:41 δύσα ἡλίου. So we can say "sun, moon and stars," etc. θάνατος should also be noted. Cf. 1 Cor. 15:21; Mt. 16:28; 20:18; Lu. 23:15; Ph. 1:20, etc. It is anarthrous as subject, object, with adjectives and with preposi-
THE ARTICLE (ΤΟ ὝΑΡΩΠΟΝ) 795

tions. Many of these examples occur with prepositions like Lu. 21: 25 above, or with a genitive like ὦ ἔ διοβόλου (Ac. 13:10). 1 Cf. 1 Pet. 5:8. The word θεός, like a proper name, is freely used with and without the article. But it is "beyond comparison the most frequently in the Epistles without the article." 2 I doubt that. As subject ὥ θεός, but as a predicate, ὥ θεός ἢν ὥ λόγος (Jo. 1:1); as genitive, γνώσεως θεοῦ (Ro. 11:33); with prepositions, ἐν θεῷ (Jo. 3:21); with adjectives, θεός εὐλογητός (Ro. 9:5); with participles also, θεῷ ζωτίτι καὶ ἀληθινῷ (1 Th. 1:9); in conjunction with πατήρ (Gal. 1:1). These illustrations can be greatly multiplied. So also πνεῦμα and πνεῦμα ἄγιον may occur with and without the article. Garvie 3 quotes Bartlet on Acts as saying that when πνεῦμα ἄγιον is anarthrous it describes the human condition, not the divine agency. But it may be questioned if this is not a purely artificial rule, as there are evident exceptions to it. The use of πνεῦμα with a genitive like πνεῦμα Χριστοῦ (Ro. 8:9) and with a preposition, ἐκ πνευμάτος (Jo. 3:5), accounts for some examples. An example like of οὐσίων ἢν πνεῦμα (Jo. 7:39) merely illustrates the use of πνεῦμα like θεός as substantially a proper name. As for Middleton's rule that the article is present when the personality of the Holy Spirit is taught, 4 that is illustrated by Jo. 14:26, τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον, where the Holy Spirit is spoken of in distinction from the Father and the Son. Cf. also 15:26. See also τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον (Lu. 3:22), at the baptism of Jesus. Κύριος, like θεός and πνεῦμα, is often practically a proper name in the N. T. In the Gospels it usually refers to God, like the 0. T. Lord, while in the Epistles of Paul in particular it nearly always means the Lord Jesus. 5 It is not merely in a prepositional phrase like the common ἐν κυρίῳ (1 Cor. 7:22), or the genitive like τὸ ἔργον κυρίου (1 Cor. 16:10), but especially κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστός (Ph. 1:2; 2:11, etc.). In the Gospels ὁ Χριστός is usually a verbal adjective= 'the Anointed One,' the Messiah (Mt. 2:4; Jo. 1:41). In Mt. 1:1; Mk. 1:1, we have Χριστός as a proper name and even in the words of Jesus as reported in Mk. 9:41, Χριστοῦ, and in the address of Peter in Ac. 2: 38, Ἰησοῦ Ἰησοῦς Χριστοῦ. It was a natural growth. In Paul's Epistles Χριστός is more frequent than ὁ Χριστός. 6 There is even a development in Paul's use of Ἰησοῦς Χριστός and Χριστός Ἰησοῦς.

In his earlier Epistles the former is the rule (cf. 1 Th. 1:1), while in the later Epistles he prefers Χριστὸς Ἰησοῦς (2 Tim. 1:1).

Other examples of this idiom are seen in κόσμος, which even in the nominative is anarthrous, ἐμοὶ κόσμος ἔσταυρωταί (Gal. 6:14). Cf. Ro. 4:13. See also ἐν κόσμῳ (Ro. 5:13) and ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου (Lu. 11:50), etc. Νόμος is a word that is used with a deal of freedom by Paul. In general when νόμος is anarthrous in Paul it refers to the Mosaic law, as in ἐπαναπαύῃ νομῷ (Ro. 2:17). So ἐὰν νόμου πράσσῃς (2:25), etc. It occurs so with prepositions, as ἐν νόμῳ (2:23), and in the genitive, like ἐξ ἐρων νόμῳ (Gal. 2:16). Cf. ἐγὼ διὰ νόμου νόμῳ ἀπέθανον (2:19), ὑπὸ νόμου ἀλλὰ ὑπὸ χάριν (Ro. 6:14). In ἐτερον νόμου (7:23) νόμος = 'principle,' and is here indeterminate. In 2:14, ἔθνη τὰ μὴ νόμον ἐχοντα, the Mosaic law is meant, but not in ἐαυτοῖς εἰσὶν νόμος. It is at least problematical whether νόμος in 2:13, of οἱ ἀκροαταί νόμου, and οἱ ποιηταί νόμου (note the article with the other words) means the Mosaic law and so really definite or law as law (the hearers of law, the doers of law).¹

IX. The Indefinite Article. The Greek had no indefinite article. It would have been very easy if the absence of the article in Greek always meant that the noun was indefinite, but we have seen that this is not the case. The anarthrous noun may per se be either definite or indefinite. But the Greek made an approach to the modern indefinite article in the use of ἐἰς and τις. The later writers show an increasing use of these words as the practical equivalent of the present indefinite article. This matter has already been discussed under these two words (ch. XV). An example of τις is seen in νομικὸς τις (Lu. 10:25). The tendency was constantly for ἐἰς to displace τις, so that "in modern Greek the process is complete,"² i.e. ἐἰς drives out τις in this sense. This use of ἐἰς is seen in the papyri and need not be denied in the N. T.³ As a N. T. example of ἐἰς = 'a' see ἐἰς γραμματεύς (Mt. 8:19).⁴ The indefinite article does not appear with predicates in the modern Greek.⁵ Unus in the sense of the indefinite article is one of the peculiarities of the Latin Vulgate (Jacquier, Le N. T. dans l’Egl. Chr., Tome II, p. 122).

¹ For a full and detailed discussion of the whole matter see W.-Sch., pp. 174 ff.
² Moulton, Prol., p. 96. See Thumb, Handb., p. 41.
⁴ Cf. for LXX use, C. and S., Sel., p. 25.
⁵ Thumb., Handb., p. 42.
CHAPTER XVII

VOICE (ΔΙΑΘΕΣΙΣ, Genus)

1. Point of View. For a discussion of the nature of the verb see chapter VIII, Conjugation of the Verb, I and II.

(a) DISTINCTION BETWEEN VOICE AND TRANSITIVENESS. See (b), and chapter VIII, for a discussion of this point. The matter might have been well reserved for syntax, but it seemed worth while to set forth at once the fundamental facts about voice. It is here assumed, therefore, that one understands that voice per se does not deal with the question of transitive or intransitive action. That point concerns the verb itself, not the voice. Active and middle verbs may be either transitive or intransitive. Passive verbs may even be transitive, though usually intransitive, in one sense of "transitive." But Gildersleeve\(^1\) holds that "a transitive verb is a verb that passes over to a passive rather than one that passes over to an object." That is truer of Latin than of Greek, which, "with a lordliness that reminds one of English;" makes a passive out of any kind of an active. Terminology in syntax is open to dispute at many points, but I see only hopeless confusion here unless voice is kept to its real meaning. In Kuhner-Gerth\(^2\) it is held that "the active has a double meaning," either intransitive or transitive. My point is that the voice per se has nothing to do with that question. Some verbs are intransitive, some are transitive, some are used either way. This freedom in the use of verbs increased till in the later Greek verbs that were once intransitive become transitive.\(^3\) Brugmann\(^4\) properly separates the question of transitive and intransitive verbs from that of voice (cf. iterative, intensive, inchoative, desiderative verbs). Some of the intransitive uses of verbs were due to the absence of the reflexive pronoun, as in περιήγε (Mk. 6: 6), ἀπορρίπτεντας (Ac. 27:43).\(^5\) The modern Greek preserves the same

---

\(^{1}\) Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 279.  
\(^{2}\) Bd. I, p. 89.  
\(^{3}\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 357.  
\(^{4}\) Griech. Gr., p. 467.  
\(^{5}\) Jebb., V. and D.'s Handb., p. 318.
freedom in the use of transitive and intransitive verbs and has peculiarities of its own.\(^1\)

(b) MEANING OF VOICE. Voice relates the action to the subject. The use of voice then is to direct attention to the subject, not to the object. That concerns transitive and intransitive verbs. Stahl\(^2\) puts it crisply: "The voice of the verb describes a relation of the verb-idea to the subject."

(c) NAMES OF THE VOICES. Cf. chapter VIII, VI, (b). The names come from Dionysius Thrax (about B.C. 30), but "he has no inkling of a middle sense,"\(^3\) showing that already the middle is disappearing before the passive. The terminology is very poor. Gildersleeve\(^4\) calls the fashion of the Germans "a positively indecent nomenclature," since they call the voices \(\text{genera (γένη)}\), "based on a fancied resemblance to the genders." We in English follow the French \(\text{voix (Latin vox)}\), found first in this sense in the \(\text{Grammatica graeca nova of J. Weller (A.D. 1635).}\)^5

(d) HISTORY OF THE VOICES. See chapter VIII, vi, (c), (d), (e). Cf. also Jannaris, \(\text{Historical Gr.}, p. 362 f.; Moulton, Prol., p. 152.\) In the pro-ethnic language there were probably both active and middle. Cf. Delbruck, \(\text{Vergl. Syntax, Bd. II, p. 413.}\) There was no passive as there was none in the Sanskrit, save in the present system.\(^6\) The rise of the passive meaning with the use of middle and active endings was sure to bring confusion and a tendency towards simplification. It was inevitable that the three voices should go back to two. In the actual outcome, the passive, though an interloper, ousts the middle of its forms and of most of its uses.\(^7\) In the modern Greek vernacular, therefore, we find only two voices as to form, for the passive has taken over the meaning of the middle also (Thumb, \(\text{Handb.}, p. 111 f.\)). In the beginning there were only active and middle. In the end we find only active and passive.

(e) HELP FROM THE SANSKRIT. The verb development in the Indo-Germanic languages has been more independent than that of nouns. Latin, for instance, has recast its verb-system, and it is quite difficult to compare the Greek and Latin voices. Sanskrit

---

\(^1\) Thumb., \(\text{Handb.}, p. 112 f.\)
\(^3\) Thompson, Synt., p. 158.
\(^5\) Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 233.
\(^6\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 201.
\(^7\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 362.
and Greek have preserved the voices best of all. Hence the Sanskrit can throw a good deal of light on the Greek voices.\(^1\)

(f) DEFECTIVE VERBS. Not all verbs were used in all the voices. Some were used only in one, some in two, some in all three. Then again, some verbs had one voice in one tense, another voice in another tense. This is just like the Sanskrit,\(^2\) and just what one would expect from a living language in contrast with an artificial one. Brugmann,\(^3\) indeed, divides verbs, as to voices, according to this principle (those with active only, middle only, with both, etc.). In the N. T. Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 180) finds the same general use of the voices as in the older Greek, the same difficulty in differentiating the voices, and the same "arbitrariness" in the use of individual verbs. But much of this difficulty is due to coming at the matter with preconceived rules. Blass' treatment of the voices is quite unsatisfactory. Cf. further for this matter, chapter VIII, VI, (d).

II. The Active Voice (διάθεσις ἐνεργετική). The Stoics called the active ὁρθή also.

(a) MEANING OF THE ACTIVE VOICE. In this voice the subject is merely represented as acting or existing, for state (cf. εἰμί) must be included as well as action. It is not certain whether the active or the middle is the older; but the active is far the more common.

(b) EITHER TRANSITIVE OR INTRANSITIVE. There is nothing peculiar in the N. T. about this. Each verb has its own history. One originally transitive may become intransitive and vice versa.\(^4\) Cf. ἀγω which may be intransitive ἀγωμεν (Mt. 26:46; cf. the interjectional ἄγε, Jas. 4:13) or transitive ἡγαγον αὐτὸν (Lu. 19:35). In ἀραυτες (Ac. 27:13, 17) the object is probably understood (τὴν ναυτιν). Cf. also ἀπέξω in Mt. 6:28 and 2 Cor. 9:10. Βάλλω is usually transitive, even in Jo. 13:2 (cf. Ac. 22:23), but it is intransitive in Ac. 27:14 (ἐβάλεν, 'rushed'). Cf. βλαστάνω in Jas. 5:18 (tr.) and in Mt. 13:26 (intr.). So βρέχω is transitive in Lu. 7:38, but intransitive in Mt. 5:45. Ἐγείρω is usually transitive (Mt. 10:8), but see Mt. 26:46. ἕδαγγελιζω, is transitive in Rev. 10:7, but intransitive in 14:6. ἔκχω is transitive except when used with adverbs, when, as in ancient Greek, it may be intransitive. Cf. τοὺς κακῶς ἔχουτας (Mt. 4:24), ἐσχάτως ἔχει (Mk.

\(^1\) Giles, Comp. Philol., p. 404 f.
5:23), ἥδη ἔχοντα (Jo. 11:17), οὕτως ἔχει (Ac. 7:1), τὸ νῦν ἔχον (Ac. 24:25). Κλίνω is transitive in Mt. 8:20, but intransitive in Lu. 9:12. In Ac. 7:42 στρέφω is intransitive, though also transitive elsewhere. In the N. T. θριαμβεύω is transitive and the same is true of μαθητεύω. But in Text. Rec. ἔμαθενς is intransitive in Mt. 27:57. Cf. δύνω intransitive in Lu. 4:40 and φύω in Heb. 12:15. Let these serve as specimens of many such verbs in the N. T. Modern Greek is specially rich in intransitive active verbs (Thumb, Handb., p. 112) and verbs that oscillate from one use to the other.

(c) EFFECT OF PREPOSITIONS IN COMPOSITION. These may make the verb transitive or the result may be just the opposite. As examples of transitive compounds from an intransitive simplex take διὰβαίνω (Heb. 11:29), but intransitive in Lu. 16:26. So διήρχετο τὴν Ἱερείχω (Lu. 19:1), παρέχεσθε τὴν κρίσιν (11:42). On the other hand, intransitive compounds abound. The compounds of ἔγω (simplex either tr. or intr.) which are often intransitive are ἀπάγω (Mt. 7:13), παράγω (Mt. 9:9), περιάγω (Ac. 13:11), προάγω (Lu. 18:39), ὑπάγω (Jo. 3:8); but not ἀνάγω. Cf. also παραδίδωμι in Mk. 4:29. With βάλλω note ἐπιβάλλω in Mk. 4:37 and the peculiar ἐπιβαλῶν, in 14:72. Examples of several intransitive compounds of ἔχω occur in the N. T. Thus ἀπέχω (Mk. 14:41), ἐνέχω (Mk. 6:19), ἐπέχω (Lu. 14:7; Ac. 19:22), περιέχω (1 Pet. 2:6), προσέχω (Mt. 7:15), ὑπερέχω (Ph. 4:7). Here the substantive has dropped out in most cases and the verb comes to stand alone (cf. προσέχω νοῦν). Cf. ἀνακάμπτω (Mt. 2:12), ἐκλίνω (Ro. 16:17) and προσκόπτω (Jo. 11:9). Κατασκαύω is transitive in Ac. 14:18, but intransitive in Heb. 4:4, 10. Cf. ἀπορρίπτω in Ac. 27:43. Στρέφω shows intransitive compounds with ἀνα— (Ac. 5:22), ἀπο— (Ac. 3:26), ἐπι— (Lu. 2:39). The modern Greek surpasses even the koinh. in its facility for making all sorts of compound verbs (tr. and intr.) and in particular verbs compounded, with nouns, like ἐτεκνοτρόφησεν and ἐξευνόδοχησεν (1 Tim. 5:10). Cf. Thumb, Handb., p. 112.

(d) DIFFERENT TENSES VARY. Thus where both second and first aorists occur, the second is intransitive and the first transitive. Cf. ἔστη (Lu. 6:8), but ἔστησεν αὐτό (Mk. 9:36). This distinction applies to all the compounds of ἔστημι. Acts 27:28 (διαστήςαντες) is no exception, as τὴν υἱόν is to be supplied. Some of the "strong" or primitive perfect actives are intransitive when the present is transitive. Thus ἄνευγα (1 Con 16:9) from ἀνοίγω, ἀπόλυω (Mt. 10:6) from ἀπόλλυμι, ἔστάναι (Lu. 13:25) from ἔστημι, πέποιθα
(Ro. 2:19) from πείθω, σέσηπα (Jas. 5:2) from σήπω. Moulton\(^1\) seems to confuse "transitive" with "active," and "intransitive" with "middle" in his discussion of these perfects: "We have a number of cases in which the 'strong' perfect active attaches itself in meaning to the middle." The middle is not in itself intransitive, nor is the active in itself transitive. "The conjecture that the perfect originally had no distinction of active and middle, its person-endings being peculiar throughout, affords the most probable explanation of the facts: when the much later —κα perfect arose, the distinction had become universal." It is doubtless true that in the primitive —α perfect there was no distinctive middle form. But why seek for a middle sense in the primitive perfect active because it happens in many cases to be intransitive? It does happen that γέγονα (Jo. 1:4) is found with γίνομαι and ἐλήλυθα (Jo. 17:1) from ἐρχόμαι, two intransitive middles. It is also true that future middles are the rule with a few verbs which have this primitive, but not always intransitive, perfect. So it is with ἀκήκοα (trans., Ac. 6:11), ἐληλυφα (trans., Rev. 11:17), πέπνουθα (intr. as the verb itself is, Lu. 13:2), τέτυχα (trans., Heb. 8:6).

So with κέκραγεν (Jo. 1:15, intr. like the verb itself), though κεκράξομαι (some MSS. in Lu. 19:40) is future perfect middle. Ὄδια (Jo. 10:4) is transitive, though defective, while ἔοικα (Jas. 1:6), like ἔωθα (Mk. 10:1), is intransitive. But γέγραφα (Jo. 19:22) is transitive.

\[(e) \text{THE ACTIVE AS CAUSATIVE. But this usage is not due to the voice, and is, besides, common to all languages.}\]^2 Cf. the Hebrew Hiphil conjugation. Viteau ("Essai sur la Syntaxe des Voix dans le Grec du N. T.," Revue de Philologie, 1894, p. 2) says that the Greek voices would not be strange to a Jew who was used to the seven conjugations of the Hebrew verb. But the point is not strictly parallel. In one sense this idiom is due to the fact that what one does through another he does himself.\(^3\) Cf. τοῦ ἠλιοῦ αὐτοῦ ἀνατέλλει (Mt. 5:45), strictly causative. But in Jo. 19:1, ἔλαβεν ὁ Πιλάτος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ καὶ ἐμαστίγωσεν, the other kind of causative occurs. So also with περιέτημεν (Ac. 16:3). There was indeed a remarkable increase in the LXX in the number of verbs used in the causative sense, many of which had been usually intransitive. Cf. βασιλεύω, which occurs 36 times in the causative sense in the LXX (cf. Judg. 9:6).\(^4\) The Hebrew Hiphil is partly

\(^1\) Prol., p. 154.
\(^3\) Gildersleeve, Synt. of Cl. Gk., p. 63.
\(^4\) C. and S., Sel., p. 76.
responsible for this increase. See further verbs in –ω, like καταδουλώ (Gal. 2:4).

(f) ACTIVE WITH REFLEXIVES. Certainly there is nothing unusual in this construction. Cf. σώσον σεαυτόν (Mk. 15:30), ἔβαλεν εαυτόν (Jo. 21:8), προσέχετε εαυτοῖς (Lu. 17:3). Cf. Jo. 21:18. Blass indeed says that the "active for middle" occurs. One hesitates to subscribe to that dictum. It is indeed true that the use of the reflexive pronoun with the active brings out much more sharply the reflexive relation than the mere middle. It is not necessary to say that καταδουλός (2 Cor. 11:20) is used "for" the middle. It is true that πειράζω in the κοινή supplants the Attic πειράμα, but this is not due to a confusion of voice. With ποιέω the N. T. does show a number of examples of the active where the middle was more common in the Attic, though the N. T. generally has ποιεῖσθαι ἀναβολήν, λόγον, πορείαν, σπουδήν. And the MSS. vary greatly between active and middle of ποιέω with words like μονήν (Jo. 14:23), κοπετόν (Ac. 8:2), συσωμοσίαν (23:13), but not with συμβουλίων (Mk. 15:1), ἐκδίκησιν, (Lu.18:7 f.), συστροφήν (Ac. 23:12), πόλεμον (Rev.11:7). But this is precisely what we find in the (inscriptions and papyri). Cf. Rader- macher, N. T. Gr., p. 120. So even βιάζω and ἐπιλανθάνω (Mayser, Gr., p. 386). The same tendency appears in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 114). Cf. διέρρηξεν τα ἰμάτια αὐτοῦ (Mt. 26:65). In these examples Blass has in my judgment read too much into the active voice. But it is certain that in προσέχετε εαυτοῖς (Lu. 12:1) there is more emphasis on the reflexive idea than in φυλάσσεσθε (12:15). Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 157.

(g) IMPERSONAL ACTIVE. Some impersonal verbs occur in the active. Cf. περιέχει ἐν τῇ γραφῇ (1 Pet. 2:6), and ἐβρέξεν (Jas. 5:17).

(h) INFINITIVES. These do not always reflect the force of the voice, especially in the "epexegetic" use, like our English "fair to see," "good to eat." Cf. κρίθησαι and λαβεῖν, Mt. 5:40. The infinitive has no voice in Sanskrit. See further under Infinitive (ch. XX, Verbal Nouns).

(i) ACTIVE VERBS AS PASSIVES OF OTHER VERBS. Thus ἀποθνήσκω is more common than the passive of ἀποκτεῖν (–κτένω) though examples of this passive occur in the N. T. (Rev. 6:11, etc.). W. H. read κακῶς ἔχει in Mt. 17:15 rather than κακῶς πᾶσχει (cf. ποιῶ καλῶς, etc.). So ἐκκίπτω (Ac. 27:17, 26, 29) occurs

---

1 Thack., Gr. of the O. T. in Gk., p. 24.  
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 183.  
3 Cf. Gildersleeve, Synt., p. 63.  
4 Thompson, Synt., p. 172.
as passive of ἐκβάλλω, but note ἐκβάλλεσθαι in Mt. 8:12. Cf. Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 75. In 1 Cor. 11:18 ἀκούω has the classic turn I am told.’ But in 5:11 ἀκούεσθαι the passive itself occurs in the sense ‘It is reported.’ But in all such cases the distinction between the voices is not really lost.

III. The Middle Voice (διάθεσις μέση)

(a) ORIGIN OF THE MIDDLE. See chapter VIII, vi, (c), for the uncertainty as to the priority of active and middle. That question is an open one and must be left open. Both active and middle appear in Sanskrit and in Homer. The prehistoric situation is purely speculative. Logically the active would seem to come first, though the difference in form may be due to variation in sound (ablaut).1 Probably at first there was neither active nor middle, the distinction being a development. In the Sanskrit2 we meet a full system of both active and middle forms for all the tenses (not all the modes), the participle, however, having only a partial system and the infinitive no voice at all. But each verb has its own development and that was by no means uniform. Some had a very limited use as to voice, tense and mode. In Homer indeed the middle is rather more common than in later Greek.3 It is only in the Sanskrit, Zend (Old Persian), Greek and Gothic that the middle is kept as a distinct voice.4 In the Gothic only remnants of the middle are found,5 while in Latin the middle as a separate voice disappears.6 It is very difficult to run a parallel between the Latin and Greek voices. But there is a considerable remnant of Latin middles like miror, sequor, utor (cf. Draeger, Hist. Syntax, pp. 145 ff.). The final disappearance of the Greek future and aorist middle before the passive is well sketched by Jannaris.7 But at first we are not to think of the passive at all, that interloper that finally drove the middle out of use.

(b) MEANING OF THE MIDDLE. It is urged that the term "middle" is good because the voice in meaning stands between the active and the passive.8 But, unfortunately for that idea, the middle is older than the passive. It is true that the passive arose out of the middle and that the middle marks a step towards

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 152.
4 Cf. 0. Hoffmann, Das Prasens der indoger. Grundspr., 1889, p. 25. In the Bantu language Mr. Dan Crawford finds 16 voices (reflexive, reciprocal, intensive, etc., all having special forms).
6 Ib p. 405.
8 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 57.
the passive. The passive idea existed before there was a separate passive form, a thing never true of all tenses and all verbs. The Hebrew Hithpael conjugation is somewhat parallel, but not wholly so. The only difference between the active and middle voices is that the middle calls especial attention to the subject. In the active voice the subject is merely acting; in the middle the subject is acting in relation to himself somehow. What this precise relation is the middle voice does not say. That must come out of the context or from the significance of the verb itself. Gildersleeve is clearly right in holding that the interpretation of the difference between active and middle is in many cases more lexical than grammatical. "The middle adds a subjective element." Sometimes the variation from the active is too minute for translation into English. This "word for one's self" is often very difficult of translation, and we must not fall into the error of explaining the force of the middle by the English translation.

(c) OFTEN DIFFERENCE FROM ACTIVE ACUTE. As examples note: αἰρέω, 'I take'; αἰρέομαι, 'I take to myself' ('choose'); ἀναμιμησκω, 'I remind'; ἀναμιμήσκομαι, 'I remind myself' ('remember'); ἀπέχω, 'I hold off'; ἀπέχομαι, 'I hold myself off' ('abstain'); ἀποδίδωμι, 'I give back'; ἀποδίδομαι, 'I give back of my own' ('sell'); ἀπόλλυμι, 'I destroy'; ἀπόλλυμι, 'I perish'; ἀπτω, 'I fasten'; ἀπτομαι, 'I touch'; ἀρχομαι, 'I rule'; ἀρχομαι, 'I begin'; βουλεύω, 'I counsel'; βουλεύομαι, 'I take counsel' ('deliberate'); γαμέω, 'I marry' ('bridegroom'), γαμέομαι ('bride'); γεύω 'I give to taste'; γεύομαι, 'I taste'; γράφω, 'I enrol'; γράφομαι, 'I indict' (but 'enrol one's self' in Lu. 2:5); δανείζω, 'I lend'; δανείζομαι, 'I borrow'; διδάσκω, 'I teach'; διδάσκομαι, 'I get taught'; ἵστημι 'I place'; ἵστομαι, 'I stand'; λανθάνω, 'I escape notice'; λανθάνομαι, 'I forget'; μισθόω, 'I let,' μισθόομαι, 'I hire'; παύω, 'I make to cease'; παύομαι, 'I cease'; πείθω, 'I persuade'; πείθομαι, 'I obey'; φαίνω, 'I show'; φαίνομαι, 'I appear'; φοβέω, 'I frighten'; φοβεόμαι, 'I fear.' These examples in the N. T. illustrate the difference between the two voices.

(d) THE USE OF THE MIDDLE NOT OBLIGATORY. This remark may sound like a truism, but it is justified when one can read this: "As the active is used in place of the middle, so the middle

5 Gildersleeve, Synt. of Class. Gk., p. 66.
often stands for the active which would naturally be expected."\(^1\) Winer\(^2\) also speaks of the two voices being used "interchangeably." But Winer loses one of his examples, for W. H. have \(\sigma\nu\gamma\kappa\alpha\lambda\varepsilon\iota\) in Lu. 15:9, as in verse 6. Winer correctly says that "it depended on the writer" which he would use. Of course, but that is not to say that no distinction existed. In Jas. 4:2 f., \(\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\iota\epsilon\kappa\alpha\iota\kappa\iota\iota\zeta\iota\) \(\kappa\alpha\iota\ \omega\lambda\mu\beta\alpha\nu\epsilon\tau\eta\), the middle seems rather on purpose ('ye ask for yourselves amiss,' Farrar, \textit{Gk. Syntax}, p. 118). Blass\(^3\) calls this "an arbitrary interchange," though he admits in general the N. T. use of \(\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\omega\) for ordinary requests (as from God), but \(\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\omicron\omicron\mu\omicron\) in business transactions (its usual use in he N. T., Mt. 27:20; Lu. 23:23). This may be the very point in Jas. 4:2 f. and 1 Jo. 5:14. Moulton\(^4\) agrees with Mayor (James \textit{in loco}) on the correctness of the distinction. Mayor (\textit{in loco}) says: "When \(\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\iota\epsilon\kappa\alpha\iota\kappa\iota\iota\zeta\iota\) is thus opposed to \(\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\iota\sigma\theta\epsilon\), it implies using the words, without the spirit of prayer." See the same distinction drawn in Mk. 6:22-25; 10:35, 38 (Mt. 20:20, 22); 1 Jo. 5:15. Blass (\textit{Gr. of N. T. Gk.}, p. 186 note) observes that Herod's offer to Salome gave her business relations to him justifying her use of the middle (Mk. 6:24 f.). When the active and the middle occur side by side the attention is drawn to the distinction. It is to be recalled again that the same verb varied in different stages of the language in the voice used. Hence it is hardly pertinent to bring an indictment against the N. T. writers, because the middle is not used with all verbs just as it was in the Attic Greek. As a matter of fact, Homer differs from the Attic. Blass (\textit{Gr. of N. T. Gk.}, p. 186) succinctly says that "the New Testament writers were perfectly capable of preserving the distinction between the active and the middle." So in Mk. 14:47 note \(\sigma\pi\alpha\sigma\alpha\mu\epsilon\nu\zeta\ \tau\iota\nu\ \mu\acute{a}x\alpha\iota\rho\alpha\nu\), while in Mt. 26:51 we have \(\acute{a}\pi\epsilon\sigma\pi\alpha\sigma\epsilon\nu\ \tau\iota\nu\ \mu\acute{a}x\alpha\iota\rho\alpha\nu\ \acute{a}\tau\omicron\omicron\). In Matthew we have the pronoun \(\acute{a}\tau\omicron\omicron\) and \(\acute{a}\pi\omicron\) supplanting the middle in Mark (cf. Radermacher, \textit{N. T. Gr.}, p. 120 f.). Radermacher (op. cit., p. 119), however, as a result of his researches, finds in the \textit{kouvi} "\textit{Unsicherheit im Gebrauch des Mediums.}" The point of the middle is not the same always. So in Ac. 7:24 \(\acute{a}\mu\acute{y}v\omicron\sigma\theta\alpha\omicron\omicron\) = ‘assist,’ not 'ward off from one's self,' but the force of the middle is present. So in Col. 2:15, \(\acute{a}\pe\kappa\delta\omicron\sigma\alpha\mu\epsilon\nu\zeta\ \tau\acute{a}\zeta\ \acute{a}\rho\chi\acute{a}\zeta\), it is not ‘undress,’ but ‘throw off from one's self.’ Cf. also \(\pi\lambda\eta\rho\omicron\omicron\sigma\theta\alpha\omicron\omicron\) in

\(^1\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 185.
\(^2\) W.-Th., p. 256.
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 186.
\(^4\) Prol., p. 160.
Eph. 1:23 and πληροῦν in 4:10. Moulton\(^1\) shows that there is as much freedom in the papyri in the use of active and middle as in the N. T. Thus ἐὰν αὑρήτε and ἐὰν αὑρήσθε (G. H. 36, B.C. 95) occur side by side. So γαμεῖσθαι = nubere fell out of use. See also it, (f).

(c) EITHER TRANSITIVE OR INTRANSITIVE. Thus ἐὰν μὴ νῷψωσμαι τὰς χεῖρας (Mk 7:3) and ἤψαυτο αὐτοῦ (6:56), but ἤξισταυτο (6:52) and ἔσωρεύσαυτο (6:56) are intransitive. The middle is not, therefore, intransitive in itself: That is a matter that belongs to the verb-stem. As to the future middles, like βῆσομαι, see discussion a little later. Some verbs, indeed, are transitive in the active, but intransitive in the middle (ἀπόλλυμι, ἀπόλλυμαι, φαίνω, φαίνομαι). Cf. Hatzidakis, Einl., pp. 201 ff.; Thompson, Syntax, p. 161.

(f) DIRECT MIDDLE. It is necessary to discuss the various uses of the middle, but the divisions made by the grammarians are more or less arbitrary and unsatisfactory. They are followed here merely for convenience. The middle voice is very broad in its scope and no one word, not even reflexive, covers all the ground. It is essentially the voice of personal interest somewhat like the dative case. Grosse (Beiträge zur Syntax des griechischen Mediums and Passivums, 1891, p. 4) denies that the reflexive is the original use of the middle. But Rutherford (First Gk. Syntax, 1890, p. 74), derives both passive and middle out of the reflexive use. For the various uses of the middle in Homer, who is specially fond of this voice, see Monro, Homeric Gr., p. 7. But, curiously, Monro mentions "the Intransitive use" as one of the separate idioms of the middle. Nearly every grammarian\(^2\) has his own division of these "uses" of the middle, none of which the Greeks themselves had.

Gildersleeve\(^3\) is justly impatient with this overrefinement and observes that "one must needs fall back on the way of the language," which "is capricious in such matters." It is needless to take up philosophical abstractions like "subjective" and "objective." It is not possible to tell whether the direct middle (reflexive middle) was the original use of the voice or not. The direct middle is comparatively rare in Homer and in the early Greek generally.\(^4\) It began in the κοινή to disappear, before the active and the reflexive pronoun (cf. N. T.), but the direct middle

---

1 Prol., p. 158 f. He cites also συνάραι λέγειν, B.U. 775 (ii/A.D.). But the pap. use the middle also.
3 Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 278.
revived again as the indirect middle disappeared before the passive because of "its subtle meaning." Hence in Neo-Hellenic "almost every transitive verb, if active, admits of a direct middle." In modern Greek this direct reflexive is nearly the sole use of the middle. The modern Greek has no distinction in forms between middle and passive, but the middle signification survives. Thus λούζομαι means 'I bathe myself' (Thumb, Handb., pp. 111, 114).

Thumb finds the direct reflexive use common. Moulton practically confines this idiom in the N. T. to ἀπῆγαγο (Mt. 27:5), 'he hanged himself,' and even here Moulton suggests 'choked' as a truer English translation. This is indeed "a survival from classical Greek," but there seem to be other N. T. examples also. The example cited by Winer from Jo. 8:59 (cf. also 12:36), ἔκρυμβη, is passive, as Moulton points out. But in ζ λουσαμένη (2 Pet. 2:22) the direct middle is evident, as Moulton admits in the Appendix (p. 238). Cf. λούσασθε (Is. 1:16), 'wash you.' Note also ἀπελούσασθε, 'washed yourselves' (1 Cor. 6:11, correct translation in margin of Rev. V.). A good example also is θερμαίνομενός (Mk. 14:54), 'warming himself' (Rev. V.). It is rather gratuitous to doubt the direct middle παρακατασταται, 'prepare himself' (1 Cor. 14:8). But Moulton adds μὴ σκύλλου (Lu. 7:6) to Winer's list and illustrates by "the illiterate contemporary papyrus O.P. 295, μὴ σκληλαξε ἐατή" (active and reflexive pronoun). So also ῥαντίσσωται, (W. H., Mk. 7:4) and βαπτίσσωνται (marg.) are both direct middles. Ζωσαί (Ac. 12:8), 'gird yourself,' is also direct middle. Ἀπτομαι (Col. 2:20) is probably direct middle, subject yourselves to ordinances. And ὑποτάσσεσθε (Col. 3:18) may be also. Ἀπτομαι ('fasten myself to,' 'touch') is really the direct middle (Mk. 8:22). Ἐπεκτείνομενος (Ph. 3:13) is 'stretching myself forward.' Cf. also ὑπεστειλάμην (Ac. 20:27), 'withdraw myself'; ἀντιπαραστάτος (Ro. 13:2), 'line one's self up against.' In the case of περιβαλλωμαι it is probable that we have the direct middle 'clothe one's self' (Mt. 6:29). The accusative of the thing is added in Rev. 3:18. It is possible to regard ἀναπαύσεσθε (Mt. 26:45) as direct middle. Ἀπογράψασθαι, (Lu. 2:5) may be merely the direct middle, 'enrol himself,' though the causative idea is possible. In Lu. 12:15 Ἀνεχόμενοι ἀλλήλων ('guard yourselves from') follows the classic idiom. Ἀπογράψασθαι (Eph. 4:2) is also the direct middle, 'holding yourselves back from one an-

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 360..
2 Ib.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 156.
other.' The same thing is true of Δπέχεσθαι εἰδωλοθύτων (Ac. 15:29). In 1 Pet. 5:5 ταπεινοφροσύνην ἐγκουβώσασθε, 'gird yourselves with humility,' we may have the same idiom. In Ac. 18:5, συνείχετο τῷ λόγῳ, we may have the direct middle, 'held himself to the word.' There are to be added, besides, some of the causative middles, like βάπτισαι. (Ac. 22:16), 'get yourself baptized' (cf. ἐβαπτίσασθο, 1 Cor. 10:2). It is true that the list is not a large one, but the idiom is clearly not obsolete in the N. T.

The causative middle has a wider use also, as will be shown directly.

(g) CAUSATIVE OR PERMISSIVE MIDDLE. Cf. the German sich, lassen. This occasional use of the middle does not distinguish it from the active and occurs both with the direct and the indirect use of the middle. It is just so in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 114 f.). It is, like transitive and intransitive, more the notion of the word than a phase of the middle voice. In later Greek the causative sense occurs only with the direct middle.

It is not to be forgotten that originally there was no passive form at all. The verb-idea and the context then alone decided the voice as between middle and passive. Even in the aorist and future, where the passive later has a distinct form, the line was not always sharply drawn, especially in the future. More about this a little later. But in the aorist in particular one hesitates to find a passive voice in the middle form, though it sometimes happens. Some few of these causative middles could be explained as passives, but by no means all. Certainly ἐκλέκαμενος (Ac. 15:22) is a true middle. A considerable residuum remains. "In Tb.P. 35 (ii/B.C.) ἑαυτὸν αἰτιάσεται, 'will get himself accused,' is a middle." In Ac. 22:16, βάπτισαι καὶ ἀπόλουσαι τὰς ἁμαρτίας σου, we have the causative middle, one a direct, the other an indirect, middle, 'get yourself baptized and get your sins washed away.' So then ἐβαπτίσατο (W. H. text in 1 Cor. 10:2) is causative, though many MSS. read ἐβαπτίσασθα. Blass has eccentric notions of textual criticism, for he rejects the middle here and contends for it in Lu. 11:38 on the authority of one minuscule! Blass also argues that the sense of 'let' or 'allow' belongs to the passive rather than to the middle, but this is by no means certain. Thus δικεῖσθε and ἀποστερεῖσθε (1 Cor. 6:7) may be middles (cf. actives in next verse), 'let yourselves be wronged and robbed.'

1 Gildersleeve, Synt. of Class. Gr., p. 67. 4 Moulton, Prol., p. 162.
2 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 162. 5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 187.
3 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 361. 6 Ib., p. 185.
This permissive sense of the middle is closely allied to the causative and approaches the passive.¹ In Lu. 2:5 ἀπογράψασθαι may be (see (f) above) causative, ‘have himself enrolled,’ though ἀπογραφέσθαι (2:1) is passive. In Mt. 5:42 δανίσασθαι is to have money lent ‘to borrow’. Μισθωσάσθαι (Mt. 20:1) is to let out for wages ‘to hire’. In 1 Cor. 11:6, κειράσθω, κείρασθαι ἢ ξυράσθαι, (or ξύρασθαι), we find the permissive middle. Cf. ξυρήσονται τῷ κεφαλήν (Ac. 21:24). But ἀποκόψονται (Gal. 5:12) is causative, ‘have themselves castrated’ (cf. Deut. 23:1). So ἀπολαύσασθε, according to text of Rev. V. (1 Cor. 6:11). In Rev. 3:5 περιβάλεσθαι comes rather close to the passive sense. See (f) above. In Lu. 14:18, 19, ἔχε με παρητημένον, we have a construction more like modern English. The causative idea in ἀνακεφαλαιώσασθαι τὰ πάντα ἐν τῷ Χριστῷ (Eph. 1:10) is not due to the voice, but to the verb itself (-όω).

(h) INDIRECT MIDDLE. In the flourishing period of the language this was by far the most frequent use, but it finally faded before the active and the intensive (reflexive) pronoun or the passive.² In 1 Cor. 15:28, ὑποτάγησται, the passive may bear the middle force (Findlay, Expos. Gr. T., in loco). But in general the indirect middle is abundant and free in the N. T. In the modern Greek Thumb gives no instances of the indirect middle. The precise shade of the resultant meaning varies very greatly. The subject is represented as doing something for, to or by himself. Often the mere pronoun is sufficient translation. Each word and its context must determine the result. Thus in Heb. 9:12, αἰώνιαν λύτρωσιν εὐράμενος, Jesus is represented as having found eternal redemption by himself. He found the way. In Mt. 16:22, προσλαβόμενος αὐτῶν, ‘Peter takes Jesus to himself.’ In Mk. 9:8, περιβλεψάμενοι, ‘the disciples themselves suddenly looking round.’ In Lu. 8:27, ὅπε ἐνεδύσατο ἵματιον, ‘did not put a garment on himself.’ In 8:52, ἐκόπτωντο αὐτὴν, the word has really changed meaning, ‘they beat themselves for grief as to her’ (‘bewailed her’), actually a direct middle. "We have, in fact, to vary the exact relation of the reflexive perpetually if we are to represent the middle in the form appropriate to the particular example."³ That is precisely the case. So προσκαλεσάμενος (Mt. 10:1) represents Jesus as calling the disciples to himself. Cf. εἰσκαλοῦμαι (Ac. 10:23). So προσλαμβάνεσθε (Ro. 15:7; cf. also προσελάβετο) is ‘take to yourselves.’ Καίσαρα ἐπικαλοῦμαι (Ac. 25:11) is ‘I call upon Caesar in my behalf.’ Αἱρήσο-

¹ Thompson, Synt., p. 162.
μαι (Ph. 1:22) is 'I take for myself' ('choose'), while κτήσησθε (Mt. 10:9), though only in the middle, means 'provide for yourselves' ('procure'). In σπασάμενος τὴν μάχαιραν (Mk. 14:47), the possessive is probably sufficient, 'drawing his own sword' (cf. ἀπέσπασεν—αὑτὸν in Mt. 26:51). Ἐκτιναξάμενος τὰ ἱμάτια (Ac. 18:6) is rather 'shaking out his clothes from himself,' while ἀπενύσατο τὸς χέιρας (Mt. 27:24) is probably 'he himself washed his hands.' In ἀπωθείσθε αὑτὸν (Ac. 13:46; cf. Ro. 11:1) the idea is 'ye push it away from yourselves' ('reject'). Ἀπέδοσθε (Ac. 5:8) is 'ye gave away for your own interest' ('sold'). Ἐνοσφίσατο (Ac. 5:2) means 'kept back for himself.' In ἐπιδεικνύειναι χιτώνας (Ac. 9:39) the women were 'showing garments belonging to themselves.' Note the fulness of meaning in περιεποιήσατο (Ac. 20:28). Cf. παρατηρείσθε (Gal. 4:10), ἀπειπάμην, (2 Cor. 4:2), ἐκτρέπομαι (1 Tim. 6:20). In διείσωσατο (Jo. 21:7) we have 'he girded round himself.' Παρατήρησθε (Heb. 12:25) is 'beg off from yourselves' ('reject'). In Col. 4:5, τὸν καιρὸν ἐξαγοραζόμενοι, we have 'buying the opportunity for yourselves out of the open market.' Ἀποθέμενοι. (Heb. 12:1) is 'laying aside from yourselves every weight.' In ἐξελέξατο (Lu. 10:42) we have 'she selected for herself' ('chose'). Ἐνεδιόδσκετο (Lu. 16:19) is 'he put clothes on himself,' though this may be direct middle with accusative of thing added. Κατοπτριζόμενοι (2 Cor. 3:18) is probably 'beholding for ourselves in a mirror.' In Ro. 3:25, δὲν προέθετο ὁ θεὸς, note that it was God's own Son whom he set forth. This free indirect reflexive use came to be the typical middle in the flourishing period of the Greek language. No fixed rule can be laid down for the translation of this or any other use of the middle. Even "deponents" like χράομαι may be indirect middles. This word from χρή ('necessity') means 'I make for myself what is necessary with something' (Moulton, Prol., p. 158). An interesting group of middles occurs in Ac. 24: 22-25, ἀνεβάλετο, διαγνώσμαι, διαταξάμενος, παραγενόμενος, μετεπέμψατο, διαλεγόμενο, πορεύον, μετακαλέσμαι. These are not all "indirect" middles, as is obvious. Cf. also ἐκβαλλόμενοι. (Ac. 27:38) and προσελάβετο (Ro. 14:3). It is interesting to note the difference between παρείχε in Ac. 16:16 (the damsel who furnished gain for her masters) and παρείχετο in Ac. 19:24 (Demetrius who furnished gain for his craftsmen and himself). So πείθω is 'to exercise suasion,' and πείθομαι 'to admit suasion to one's self' (Moulton, Prol., p. 158).

(i) RECIPROCAL MIDDLE. Since ἐαυτῶν was used in the reciprocal sense, it was natural for the middle to fall in with this idiom.
Thus **συνεβουλεύσαντο** (Mt. 26:4), 'they counselled with one another,' does not differ radically from **ἐξελέγοντο** (Lu. 14:7), 'they selected the first seats for themselves.'\(^1\) So also **ἐβουλεύσαντο** (Jo. 12:10), **συνετεθείντο** (9:22), **συναναίρεσθαι** (1 Cor. 5:9), **κρι-**

**σθαί** (6:1), **ἐμάχοντο** (Jo. 6:52), **διαλεγόμενος** (Ac. 19:8. In Mk. 9:34, **πρὸς ἀλλήλους διελέχθησαν**, we have passive deponent with reciprocal pronoun).\(^2\) The reciprocal middle survives in modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 114). For classic examples see Gildersleeve, *Syntax*, p. 66.

(j) **REDUNDANT MIDDLE.** Here the pronoun and the middle both occur. This idiom is found as early as Homer and indicates a dimness in the force of the middle on the part of the speaker. "The effect is artificial" according to Thompson.\(^3\) Gildersleeve (*Syntax*, p. 68) sees in this idiom the effort to bring out more clearly the reflexive force of the middle. Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 162) cites from the papyri **ἐκατον ἀιτίασεται.** Tb.P. 35 (ii/B.C.). This redundancy probably began very naturally. Thus in Ac. 7:58, **ἀλέθεντο τὰ ἰμάτια αὐτῶν**, the personal pronoun is added, not the reflexive. So in ὑπόδησαι τὰ σαυράλια σου and περιβαλοῦ τὸ ἰματίου σου (12:8) and ἀλειψαί σου τὴν κεφαλήν (Mt. 6:17). Cf. νιπτοῦται τὰς χεῖρας (Mt. 15:2) without the pronoun. So in Lu. 14:1, καὶ αὐτοὶ ἦσαν παρατηροῦμενοι, the αὐτοὶ wavers between mere personal and intensive. Cf. the active in Eph. 5:27, **παραστήσῃ αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ.** But in Jo. 19:24 the LXX quotation is given as **διεμερίσατο—**

**ἐαυτοῖς**, while in Mt. 27:35 it is merely **διεμερίσατο.** Note also **σ ε αυτὸν παρεχόμενος** (Tit. 2:7) and ποιοῦμαι — **ἐμαυτῷ** (Ac. 20:24). See also **ἀνεκρέψατο αὐτὸν ἑαυτῆ eἰς υἱόν,** (Ac. 7:21) and 1 Tim. 3:13 **ἐαυτῶς περιποιοῦνται.** Most of the examples, however, in the N. T. occur with verbs which are not found in the active. Cf. Lu. 9:23 ἀρνησάθω ἐαυτόν, Ac. 24:10 τὸ perὶ ἐμαυτοῦ ἀπολογοῦμαι, 26: 2 ἠγγυμαι ἐμαυτῶν, Ph. 3:12 ἐμαυτῶν οὕτως λογίζομαι.

(k) **DYNAMIC (DEPONENT) MIDDLE.** "I would fain call the drip-pan middle, the πανδέκτης middle, the middle that is put at the bottom to catch the drippings of the other uses."\(^4\) And this is the most difficult use of the middle to explain. Some writers distinguish between the dynamic and the deponent. Others, like Thompson,\(^5\) make the dynamic include the deponent. The name "deponent" is very unsatisfactory. It is used to mean the laying

---

3 Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 166.
aside of the active form in the case of verbs that have no active voice. But these verbs in most cases never had an active voice. Moulton\(^1\) is clearly right in his contention that the term in reality applies as well to active verbs that have no middle as to middle verbs that have no active. The term is usually applied to both middles and passives that have no active (Clyde, *Gk. Syntax*, p. 61). Others\(^2\) use the term for middle verbs that have no longer a reflexive idea. But "deponent" is a very poor definition. Nor is the word "dynamic" much better. Winer's remark\(^3\) is not very lucid: "From Middle verbs are to be carefully distinguished Deponents." They are indeed either transitive or intransitive, but some are in the middle voice, others passive. But the point about all the "dynamic" middles is that it is hard to see the distinctive force of the voice. The question is raised whether these verbs have lost the middle idea or never had it. "Like the rest of us, Stahl has to go into bankruptcy," Gildersleeve\(^4\) remarks on Stahl's attempt to explain this use of the middle. Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 158) thinks that in these verbs "it is useless to exercise our ingenuity on interpreting the middle, for the development never progressed beyond the rudimentary stage." But these verbs persist in the modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 113). It is possible that the Greeks were more sensitive to the exact force of this middle than we are, just as they used the intensive particles so freely. Where guessing is all that we can do, is it not clear that these "dynamic" middles represent the original verb before the distinction was drawn between active and middle? The French says *je m'aperçois*, 'I perceive.' The intensive force of this middle is partially seen in verbs of mental action which are so common in Greek, like ἀναθέναι (Lu. 9:45), ἀνεύομαι (Lu. 12:9), προαιτιάομαι (Ro. 3:9), ἀπαύγαμαι (Ac. 25:13), διαβεβαιούμαι (Tit. 3:8), καταλαμβάνομαι (Ac. 4:13, but note καταλαμβάνω in the same sense in Ph. 3:12), ἔντελομαι (Heb. 11:22), ἐπιλαμβάνομαι (Mt. 16:5), εὐχόμαι (Ro. 9:3), ἰγνόμαι (Ph. 3:8), λογίζομαι (Ph. 4:8), μαίνομαι (Ac. 26:25), μεμφόμαι (Ro. 9:19), φείδομαι (Ro. 8:32). I imagine that the personal interest of the subject is not so difficult to recognize in such verbs, especially since in a word like καταλαμβάνομαι it is not "deponent," but occurs also in the active. The papyri vary,\(^5\) as does the N. T. in the use of ποιεῖμαι and ποιῶ with nouns. Thus we have συμβούλιον ποιήσαντες (Mk. 15:1), but μνείαν ποιεῖν—

---

1 Prol., p. 153.  
2 Thompson, Synt., p. 161.  
3 W.-Th., p. 258.  
4 Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 278.  
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 159.
μὲνος (Eph. 1:16). There is the utmost freedom in the matter in
the N. T. Not all the "deponents" of mental action are middles
in the aorist. Cf. βούλομαι, ἐνθυμέομαι, ἐπιμελέομαι, εὐλαβέομαι. These
are commonly called passive deponents in the present as well as
in the aorist and future, but the matter is not clear by any means.
At any rate there are middle verbs which are very hard to explain,
like γίνομαι. (Mt. 8:26), ἀλλομαι (Jo. 4:14), ἀφικνέομαι (Ro. 16:19),
διαμαρτύρομαι (Ac. 2:40), ἔρχομαι, (Jo. 1:39), ἐργάζομαι (Mt. 25:
16), καθέζομαι (Mt. 26:55), κάθημαι (Mt. 13:1), συνέπομαι. (Ac. 20:
4; cf. sequor). Κέιμαι is probably passive. It is not hard to see
the reflexive idea in δέχομαι. (Mt. 10:14). Περιβέλομαι is always
middle in the N. T. (cf. Mk. 3:5), accenting the movement of the
eyes or concern expressed in the look. There are also passive
deponents that correspond to this list that really do not seem to
be passive in idea, like βούλομαι, δύναμαι, φοβέομαι. Some of these
verbs have both middle and passive forms, like γίνομαι (ἐγένετο,
ἐγενήθην), δέχομαι (ἐδέχετο, ἐδέχθην). Not all of these middle "de-
ponents" have middle forms in all tenses. Cf. γέγονα, Ἡλθον,
ἐλήμυθα, ἐλαθον. Then, again, some verbs have the deponent or
dynamic middle only in the future, like ὁψομαι, though Homer is
fond of the middle forms of this verb. But the aorist and future
middle call for special treatment.

(I) MIDDLE FUTURE, THOUGH ACTIVE PRESENT. Some verbs,
active in the other tenses, have the future only in the middle.
No real explanation of this phenomenon is known. For a list see
chapter VIII, VI, (d). Some of them are really separate verb-
roots, as ὤραω, ὁψομαι; ἐσθίω, φάγομαι. Others represent a special
variation of the future form, like ἀποθηνοῦμαι, πεσοῦμαι, πίομαι, but
both κομίσομαι and κομιοῦμαι. Others are regular enough, like
ἀκούομαι. — βήσομαι, γνῶσομαι, ἔσομαι, θαυμάσομαι, τέξομαι,
φεύξομαι. In other instances the old classic middle has vanished in the
N. T. before the active future, as in ἀμαρτήσω, ἀπαντήσω, ἀπράσω,
γελάσω, κλαύσω, κράξω, παῖξω, ἰσθω, etc. Some verbs, like ἄκοὐω,
ξάω, use either voice in the future. Some of these middle futures
create no difficulty. Thompson calls them all "strict middles,"
but most of them are as "deponent" as the verbs in the previous
section. Clyde quotes Curtius' explanation that an act in the
future lies mainly in the mind of the speaker. But on the whole
the matter remains unexplained, though the number has greatly
decreased in the N. T. as in the κοινὴ generally. See also Dieterich,
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

Untersuch., p. 205; Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 120. Moulton\(^1\) justly takes "the existence of this large class of futures as additional evidence of a close connection between the middle flexion and the stressing of the agent's interest in the action of the verb." The use of the middle future (and occasionally aorist) as passive comes under the passive voice, for it is really passive. See under IV.

(m) THE MIDDLE RETREATING IN THE N. T. This is happening because of the active (cf. \(\dot{\alpha}μαρτήσω\) above) as well as the passive. This is true of the \(κοινῆ\) in general.\(^2\) There was a considerable amount of variation and even of confusion among writers in the later period.\(^3\) Different words had different histories in the matter. But we have just seen from the list of "dynamic-deponent" middles plenty of evidence that from the day of Homer on the function of the middle voice was indistinct in many verbs.\(^4\) "The accuracy with which the middle was used would naturally vary with the writer's Greek culture."\(^5\) And, it may be added, with the author's feelings at the moment. The judgment of Simcox\(^6\) is right, that the middle "is one of the refinements in Greek idiom which is perhaps beginning to be blurred in some of the N. T. writers, but is preserved to a greater or less extent in most." But it is no more "blurred" than in other writers of the \(κοινῆ\). It is simply that all the distinctions of earlier times did not survive with all the verbs. On the whole, in the N. T., \(αἰτῶ\) is used colloquially and \(αἰτοῦμαι\) for the more elevated style, but usage varies with different writers as in the LXX. Cf. Abbott, Johannine Gr., p. 389. So \(\dot{\upsilon}στερέω\) in Heb. 4:1, but \(\dot{\upsilon}στεροῦμαι\) in Ro. 3:23. But the change in the N. T. is mainly in the disuse of the middle, not in a new use of it. From Homer to modern Greek plenty of middles are hard to define, and the N. T. is no more erratic than the rest of Greek, not to say of the \(κοινῆ\) (Moulton, Prol., p. 159). But the delicate distinctions between the active and the dynamic middle are lost in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 112), if indeed they ever really existed.

IV. The Passive Voice (\(διάθεσις παθητική\)).

(a) ORIGIN OF THE PASSIVE. See chapter VIII, VI, (e), for a discussion of the rise of the passive voice.\(^7\) In Sanskrit the middle

\(^ 4\) Moulton, Prol., p. 158 f.
\(^ 5\) Ib., p. 159.
\(^ 6\) Lang. of the N. T., p. 95.
\(^ 7\) Cf. K.-G., Bd. I, pp. 121 ff.
was liable to be used in the passive sense. As is well known in Homer, the future passive forms do not occur except two, μηνεσθαί and δαμεσθαί (Stahl, Syntax, p. 66), and the distinction between aorist middle and aorist passive is indistinct. Indeed, strictly speaking, there was no passive voice as to form in Greek, as there was none in the original Indo-Germanic speech. The passive sense was developed in various languages in different ways. This sense may be due to verbs of state, but Greek fell upon various devices like the active of some verbs (κακώς ἔχω, πάσχω), the mere use of the middle, the development of two special tenses by the use of active endings (aorist) and middle (future) with a special suffix. In Homer ἔβλημην, ἐκτάμην, ἐσχόμην occur as passives just like ἐσχέθην, ἔχομαι. "Even in Attic ἐσχόμην appears as a passive, ἔσχεθην being late." In Homer also the distinctive aorist passive form sometimes has practically the active or middle signification. This much of repetition is necessary to get the position of the passive clearly before us. It is really no voice at all in form as compared with the active and middle. Cf. French je me trouve and the use of reflexive pronouns in English.

(b) SIGNIFICANCE OF THE PASSIVE. The subject is represented as the recipient of the action. He is acted upon. The name "passive" comes from patior (cf. πάσχω ὑπὸ in Mt. 17:12). Ἀποκτανθήσανται (Mk. 9:31) occurs as well as ἀποθησκέαν. The use of περίκειμαι as the transitive passive (Ac. 28:20) of περιτίθημι is somewhat different. The idea of having an experience is very vague and allows wide liberty. The point to note is that at first this idea had no distinctive form for its expression. Only the context and the force of the verb itself could make it clear. The future passive, being built upon the earlier aorist passive, reflects the Aktionsart of the aorist.

(C) WITH INTRANSITIVE OR TRANSITIVE VERBS. "Theoretically the passive ought to be formed from transitive verbs only with an accusative object." But Greek follows no such narrow rule. That is an artificial rule of the Latin which Greek knows nothing about. Cf. κατηγορεῖται ὑπὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων (Ac. 22:30). Other N. T. examples are διακονηθήσαντι (Mk. 10:45), ἐγκαλεῖσθαι (Ac. 10:26).

4 Gildersleeve, Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 278.
7 Gildersleeve, Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 279.
(d) THE PASSIVE USUALLY INTRANSITIVE. But it is not necessarily so. Διδάσκω, for instance, is transitive in the passive, as ἐδιδάχθη ἦ τοῦ θεοῦ (2 Th. 2:15), and note κατηχημένος τὴν ὅδον (Ac. 18:25).

See also 1 Cor. 9:17; Lu. 7:25; 9:25; Gal. 2:7. Transitive passives are usually verbs that in the active have two accusatives or an accusative of the thing with the person in the dative or ablative. This accusative of the thing is retained in the passive. Cf. ἐπιστευθήσαν τὰ λόγια τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 3:2), περιβέβλημένους στολάς λευκάς (Rev. 7:9). For full list see "Accusative" in chapter XI, Cases. Cf. also τὴν ἀληθείαν ταύτην περίκειμαι (Ac. 28:20).

The transitive passive " deponents," like μὴ φοβηθῆτε αὐτοὺς (Mt. 10:26), call for special discussion a little later. Certainly there is no "passive" sense in πορευθήτω. The vernacular\(^1\) in later times preferred the active to passive. Cf. αἰτοῦσιν (Lu. 12:20) as a N. T. illustration. In ἀγνίσθητι, (Ac. 21:24) the passive apparently has the force of 'let' or 'get' (cf. the causative middle).

Cf. also περιτέμνεσθε (Gal. 5:2).\(^2\) It is possible so to regard ἀδικεῖσθε and ἀποστείρεσθε (1 Cor. 6:6 f.). Sometimes, indeed, it is difficult to tell whether a verb is middle or passive. Cf. πτωχοὶ εὐάγγελίζονται (Mt. 11:5), προεχόμεθα (Ro. 3:9), ἐνυδυναμώσθε (Eph. 6:10). Indeed, as already said, in all the Greek tenses save the aorist and the future it is always an open question whether we have middle or passive. "The dividing-line is a fine one at best" (Moulton, Prol., p. 162). Only the context and the verb-idea can decide. So with ἐγείρομαι (Mt. 27:63), περισπᾶτο (Lu. 10:40) and θορυβάζῃ (10:41), βιάζεται (Mt. 11:12). Cf. perfects in Ac. 13:2; 25:12; Ro. 4:21; 1 Pet. 4:1; Jo. 9:22.

(e) AORIST PASSIVE. This tense calls for special comment. As already stated, in Homer the aorist middle form, like the other middle forms, was sometimes used as passive.\(^3\) In itself there is no reason why this should not be so. The distinctive passive aorist (second and first) grew up side by side with this use of the aorist middle. Ἠφάνην and ἔβην are really the same form at

---

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 359.
2 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 185.
Out of this intransitive aorist active (cf. ἀπόλλωλα) grew the so-called second aorist passive forms (–ην) with active endings. We have ἐκύβην (Jo. 8:59) from the transitive κρύπτω (cf. ἐστάλην from στέλλω, etc.) and ἐχάρην (Jo. 14:28) from the intransitive χαίρω. It is probable that ἡγέρθη sometimes (as in Mk. 16:6) is merely intransitive, not passive, in idea. Moulton (Prol., p. 163) says "often." In 1 Cor. 15:15 f., etc., the true passive "emphasizes the action of God." But ὑπετάγγεσαν (Ro. 10:3) is more likely passive in sense, like ἐκοιμήθην (1 Th. 4:14), 'was put to sleep' (Moulton, Prol., p. 162). Moulton quotes from the papyri "a purely middle use of κοιμήθηναι, 'fell asleep,' ἡνίκα ἡμελλον κοιμήθηναι ἔγραψα, Ch.P. 3 (iii/B.C.). He finds a "clear passive" in ἰνα τα' πρόβατα ἐκεῖ κοιμήθη, F.P. 110 (i/A.D.), but ἐκολλήθη (Lu. 15:15) can be explained as passive or middle in sense. In a few verbs (ἔστην ἐστάθην) a distinction was developed. W. F. Moulton thinks (Winer-M., p. 315, n. 5) that "a faint passive force" may be observed in στάθηναι in the N. T., but hardly in Mk. 3:24. Cf. also intransitive σταθήσομαι in Mt. 12:25, 26. Ἐστάθηκα in modern Greek is aorist passive for στέκω, 'stand,' and ἔστήθηκα for στήνω, 'place' (Thumb, Handb., p. 145). The correct text (W. H.) in Ac. 21:3 is ἀναφάναντες τὴν Κύριον (active), not ἀναφανέντες (passive). But still some MSS. do have this transitive second aorist passive participle. If one keeps in mind the origin of this aorist passive form (from the active), he may be the less surprised to find it also transitive like the active. Already in Homer this was true.

The so-called passive "deponents," verbs which had no active, formed the aorist with the passive form. But they were not always intransitive. Some of them were so, like πορεύομαι (Mt. 8:9), μεταμέλομαι, (Mt. 27:3), δύναμαι (Mt. 17:16), but most of them are really transitive. They probably represent a survival of the old active origin of the aorist passive forms. As examples of the transitive passive deponents note ἐβολήθη (Mt. 1:19), ἐδεήθη (Lu. 5:12), ἐνθυμηθέντος (Mt. 1:20), ἐπεμελήθη (Lu. 10:34), ἐφοβήθη (Mt. 14:5). These passive aorists have precisely the construction that the middle or active would have so far as case is concerned. The distinctive passive sense is absent. Some of the "deponents" have both a middle and a passive aorist with a distinct passive sense. Thus note the middle and passive voices side

2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 181.
3 See ch. VIII, vt, (e), for list of these N. T. passive aorists.
by side in ἀρνησάμενος and ἀπαρνηθήσεται (Lu. 12:9). It so happens that this context is full of passive forms. Some of them in the strict passive sense, like ἐπισυναχθείσων (12:1), συγκεκαλυμμένον ἔστιν ὁ οὐκ ἀποκαλυφθήσεται (12:2), γνωθήσεται (12:2), ἀκουσθήσεται and κηρυχθήσεται (12:3), πωλοῦνται and οὐκ ἔστιν ἐπιλελησμένον (12:6), ἠρίθμηται (12:7), ἀφεθήσεται (12:10). But note also the passive deponents φοβηθητε (12:4 f.), φοβηθητε (12:5), φοβείσθε (12:7). Cf. also ἀποδέξασθαι (Ac. 18:27) and παρεδέχθησαν (15:4), where the voices are distinguished, θεάσασθαι τοὺς ἀνακειμένους (Mt. 22:11) and πρὸς τὸ θεαθήναι αὐτῶς (Mt. 6:1), λογισάμενος (Heb. 11:19) and ἐλογίσθη (Lu. 22:37), ἴδασα (Lu. 9:42) and ἴάθη (Mt. 8:13), ἔρυσατο (Col. 1:13) and ἔρυσθην (2 Tim. 4:17), ἐχαρίσατο (Lu. 7:21) and χαρισθήσαν (Ac. 3:14). One may note also παρητήριατο (Heb. 12:19) and ἔχε με παρητημένον (Lu. 14:19, perfect passive); ἔξελέσατο (Mk. 13:20), but ὁ ἐκλεγμένος (Lu. 9:35); κορεσθέντες τροφῆς (Ac. 27:38) and ἡ κορεσμένοι ἐστε (1 Cor. 4:8). It is possible to see a difference also between ἐγένετο (Jo. 1:14) and γενήθησα (Mt. 6:10). Ἀπεκρίθην (Mt. 25:9) steadily drove out ἀπεκρίνατο (Ac. 3:12), though both are used transitively with no difference in sense. The papyri more frequently have ἀπεκρίναμην, though both forms continue in the κοινή. Cf. also ἀπολογηθήσαν (Lu. 21:14), διεκελέχθησαν (Mk. 9:34), ἐθαυμάσθη (Rev. 13:3), though with passive sense in 2 Th. 1:10. As a result of this inroad of the comparatively new passive forms the aorist middle forms vanished. In modern Greek the passive aorist form is almost invariably used for both the middle and the passive ideas. This tendency seen in the N. T. (and the rest of the κοινή) has triumphed over the aorist middle.2 In Ro. 10:3, τῇ δικαιοσύνῃ τοῦ θεοῦ οὐχ ὑπετάγνασαν, the Rev. V. translates `they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God.'

(f) FUTURE PASSIVE. As has been mentioned several times already, Homer has only two future passive forms (second futures). The passive voice indeed occurs but rarely in the Boeotian dialect.3 The future in –Θῆσομαι is comparatively late. At first, certainly, the distinction between passive and middle (and active also, –ςμαι, –Θημ) was "a distinction of function, not of form."4 It is not surprising to find the middle future form in Homer used with the passive sense (cf. all the other tenses save aorist), where the forms

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 161.
3 Claflin, Synt. of the Boeot. p. 67.
4 Gildersleeve, Synt. of Class. Gk., p. 61.
for the two voices are identical. In later prose the future middle form continued to be used in the passive sense even in the great prose writers (Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, Plato, Demosthenes). 1 In the LXX Conybeare and Stock (Selections, p. 75 f.) find the same idiom. Cf. Ex. 12:10, οὐκ ἀπολείψεται ἀπ' αὐτοῦ ἔως πρώτη, καὶ ὅστοιν οὐ συναίστησεται ἀπ' αὐτοῦ. It is quite within bounds, therefore, to speak of "medio-passives" in the future as in the aorist. 2 The idiom appears in the papyri. 3 So narrow is the dividing-line between middle and passive. Is περιβάλεται (Rev. 3:5) middle or passive in sense? The same ambiguity exists as to ἀποκύψονται (Gal. 5:12). Considering the rather large list of verbs 4 that once used the middle future as passive in sense the idiom is rare in the N. T. In general, therefore, the future passive form has made its place secure by the time of the κοινή. Even verbs that have no active form have the future passive as well as the future middle. Thus ἀπαρνήσΟμαι. (Lu. 12:9); ἴσομαι (Ac. 28:27), but ἰαθήσεται (Mt. 8:8); and in Ro. 2:26 λογισθήσεται is passive in sense. But the future passive form was destined, like the other futures, to disappear as a distinct form. Only the compound tense occurs in the modern Greek. 5 But, meanwhile, the future passive form took over the uses of the vanishing future middle forms. 6 It is possible to find a passive sense in ἐπαναπάθησεται. (Lu. 10:6), μεταμεληθήσεται (Heb. 7:21), ἀνακλιθήσονται (Mt. 8:11), κοιμηθήσομεθα (1 Cor. 15:51), κολληθήσεται. (Mt. 19:5). Cf. also θαμασθήσονται (Rev. 17:8), πεισθήσονται (Lu. 16:31), φαινήσεται (Mt. 24:30), ὑποταγήσεται (1 Cor. 15:28). 7 In 1 Cor. 15:28 note also ὑποταγῇ, which reinforces the argument for the true passive. But the future passive may also be devoid of the passive idea and even transitive just like the aorist passive. Cf. ἀποκριθήσομαι (Mt. 25:37), ἐντραπήσονται τῶν υἱῶν (Mt. 21:37), φοβηθήσομαι (Heb. 13:6). The passive ἀφαιρεθήσεται (Lu. 10:42) has the usual sense, but one wonders if in ὅπδε τ' ὄφθησομαι σοι (Ac. 26:16) the passive voice is transitive and even causative (cf. Is. 1:12). Cf. the examples of reflexive passives in the LXX (Conybeare and Stock, Sel., p. 76), like ὄφθητί = 'show thyself' (1

4 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 61; Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 171.
5 Cf. Thumb, Handb., pp. 115, 125.
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 163. Cf., for the LXX, Helbing, Gr., p. 98.
It is possible, of course, for ὁ to be attracted to the case of τοῦτων from ὧν (‘in which,’ ‘wherein’). Then ὁφθήσομαι σοι would be ‘I will appear to thee.’ Note the new present ὁπτάνομαι (Ac. 1:3). But the future middle persisted in γενήσομαι, ὄνυνήσομαι, ἐπιμελήσομαι, πορεύσομαι.

(g) THE AGENT WITH THE PASSIVE VOICE. As already noted, the Greek has no difficulty in using a verb in the passive which was not used with the accusative in the active. Thus note ἐγκαλεῖσθαι (Ac. 19:40), κατηγορεῖται ὑπὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων (Ac. 22:30), ἐπιστευματίζει τὸ ἑυάγγελιον (Gal. 2:7).1 A few verbs idiomatically use the dative with the passive. Thus ἔγνωσθη τῷ Σαύλῳ (Ac. 9:24), ἐυρέθη (Ro. 10:20), ἔφαυν (Mt. 1:20), ὁφθη (1 Cor. 15:7 f.), θεαθήναι (Mt. 6:1).2 The direct agent is most commonly expressed by ὑπό (Mt. 4:1), the intermediate by διά (Mt. 1:22). The agent (see chapter on Prepositions) is also expressed by ἀπό (2 Cor. 3:18), ἐκ (Gal. 4:4), παρά (Jo. 17:7). See also discussion under Instrumental Case (chapter XI, Cases) for discussion of αὐτῷ with ἐστίν πεπραγμένον (Lu. 23:15), whether dative or instrumental. In the N. T., as in ancient Greek (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 72), the instrument is sometimes personified and treated as an agent. Cf. κάλαμον ὑπὸ ἀνέμου σαλεύομον; (Mt. 11:7).2

(h) IMPERSONAL CONSTRUCTION. This is the usual idiom in the Coptic in lieu of the absence of the passive. But it is often rather rhetorical than syntactical as Moulton shows.3 He compares also the French on, the German man, the English one. Wellhausen4 shows how in the Aramaic this impersonal plural was common. One notes αἰτοῦσιν (Lu. 12:20), where a passive would be possible. Cf. συνάγουσιν καὶ βάλλουσιν καὶ καίεται (Jo. 15:6) where the passive occurs in καίεται. Note in particular ἐξηράνθη καὶ συνάγουσιν αὐτά (Jo. 15:6). Cf. also τρέφωσιν αὐτήν (Rev. 12:6). The use of the impersonal passive like πιστεύεται and ὀμολογεῖται (Ro. 10:10) is another matter and calls for no comment. It is rare in Greek as compared with Latin (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 77). Cf. the plural in 10:14 f. See also the personal construction in 1 Cor. 15:12 εἰ δὲ Χριστὸς κηρύσσεται ὅτι.

1 Cf. Gildersleeve, Synt., etc., p. 77.
2 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 185.
3 Prol., p. 58 f.
4 Einl., p. 25 f.
CHAPTER XVIII

TENSE (ΧΡΟΝΟΣ)

I. Complexity of the Subject.
Probably nothing connected with syntax is so imperfectly understood by the average student as tense. This is due to various causes.

1. THE DIFFICULTY OF COMPARING GREEK TENSES WITH GERMANIC TENSES. "The translators of our English version have failed more frequently from their partial knowledge of the force of the tenses than from any other cause." Ignorance, one may add, both of English and Greek still stands in the way of proper rendering of the Greek. The English, like the other Germanic tongues, has only two simple verb-forms. We have a great wealth of tenses in English by means of auxiliary verbs, but they do not correspond with any of the Greek tenses. It is the commonest grammatical vice for one to make a conjectural translation into English and then to discuss the syntactical propriety of the Greek tense on the basis of this translation. Burton indeed justifies this method for the benefit of the English student of Greek. But I submit that the practice brings more confusion than help. "The Aorist for the English Perfect, and the Aorist for the English Pluperfect" Burton urges as "a pertinent illustration." But that method keeps the student at the English standpoint, just the thing to be avoided. The Greek point of view affords the only sure basis of operation. Winer laments that "N. T. grammarians and expositors have been guilty of the greatest mistakes" here, though it cannot be said that Winer himself always lives up to his just ideal. Translation into English or German is the least point to note in judging a tense.

2. BAD INFLUENCE OF THE LATIN ON GREEK GRAMMARIANS. Most of the older Greek grammars were made by men who knew Latin better than Greek. Even to-day\(^1\) the study of the Greek tenses is hampered by the standpoint of Latin idioms which developed under very different conditions. This is true of school grammars\(^2\) in particular, whereas Latin has had no influence on the Greek tenses themselves by the time of the \(\kappaοινὴ\). The perfect and the aorist blend in Latin, while that is not true in Greek till a very late date (1000 A.D.).\(^3\) The separate Greek development (cf. the Sanskrit) was due to the genius and spirit of the Greek people and has continued throughout the history of the language,\(^4\) though in modern times the Greek tenses have suffered serious modification. The Latin tenses must be left to one side. The time element is more prominent in the Latin.

3. ABSENCE OF HEBREW INFLUENCE. There is no time element at all in the Hebrew tenses. Hence it is not strange that the LXX translators had much trouble in rendering the two Hebrew tenses (perfect and imperfect) into the Greek with its richness of tense. A similar difficulty exists for the English translators. Curious devices (possibly slips) sometimes occur, like \(\varepsilon\gamma\nu\varepsilon\iota\mu\iota\). \(\kappaαθ\iota\sigma\omicron\upsilon\alpha\iota\) (B in Ju. 6:18), \(\varepsilon\sigma\omicron\mu\alpha\iota\Delta\theta\omicron\upsilon\alpha\iota\) (BA in Tob. 5: 15).\(^5\) But such translation Greek left no lasting impress on the Greek of the N. T. save in \(\pi\rho\omicron\sigma\epsilon\theta\epsilon\omicron\tau\omicron\pi\epsilon\mu\omicron\psi\alpha\iota\) (Lu. 20:12; cf. Ex. 25:21). The problems of the Greek tenses are not to be solved by an appeal to the Semitic influence.

4. GRADUAL GROWTH OF THE GREEK TENSES. There is no future optative in Homer and no future passive. The aorist passive is also rare.\(^6\) The past perfect is rare in Homer,\(^7\) and it does not occur with the idea of relative time. "In the examination of tense usages, we must be careful to observe that tenses, in the sense in which the word is now used, are of comparatively late development."\(^8\) In the beginning the verb-root was used with personal suffixes. At first this was enough. Some verbs developed some tenses, others other tenses, some few all the tenses.

---

\(^1\) Mutzbauer, Die Grundl. d. greich. Tempusl., 1893, p. i.
\(^2\) K. Roth, Die erzalldenen Zeitformen bei Dion. von Hal., p. 5.
\(^5\) Cf. Swete, Intr. to 0. T. in Gk., p. 308.
\(^6\) Sterrett, Dial. of Hom., N. 42.
\(^7\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 44.
\(^8\) Giles, Man. of Comp. Philol., p. 482.
5. "AKTIONSART" OF THE VERB-STEM. Aktionsart ("kind of action") must be clearly understood. The verb-root plays a large part in the history of the verb. This essential meaning of the word itself antedates the tense development and continues afterwards. There is thus a double development to keep in mind. There were originally two verb-types, the one denoting durative or linear action, the other momentary or punctiliar action. Hence some verbs have two roots, one linear (durative), like φέρω (fero), the other punctiliar (momentary), like ἡγεῖκος (tuli). So ὅραω, οἶδον; τολμᾶω, ἔτην. With other verbs the distinction was not drawn sharply, the root could be used either way (cf. φη-μί, ε-φη-ν; λέγω, ἔλεγο-ν). All this was before there was any idea of the later tense. Ε-φαγ-ν, is punctiliar, while Ε-σθιω is linear or durative. Moulton rightly observes that this is the explanation of "defective" verbs. Moulton notes ἓχω as a word that can be used either for durative, as in Ro. 5:1, or punctiliar, like aorist ἐσχοῦ (cf. ἐσχες and ἐσχεσ in Jo. 4:18). The regular idiom for a papyrus receipt is ἐσχοῦ παρὰ σοῦ. This matter of the kind of action in the verb-root (Aktionsart) applies to all verbs. It has long been clear that the "tense" has been overworked and made to mean much that it did not mean. The verb itself is the beginning of all. But scholars are not agreed in the terminology to be used. Instead of "punctiliar" (punktuelle Aktion, Brugmann), others use "perfective" (Giles, Manual, p. 478). But this brings inevitable confusion with the perfect tense. All verbs may be described as "punctiliar" (punktuell) and "non-punctiliar" (nicht-punktuell). But the "non-punctiliar" divides into the indefinite linear (durative) and the definite linear (completed or perfect). The notion of perfect action as distinct from point action came later. The three essential kinds of action are thus momentary or punctiliar when the action is regarded as a whole and may be represented by a dot (.), linear or durative action which may be represented by a continuous line ----, the continuance of perfected or completed action which may be represented by this graph *------. The distinction between punctiliar and perfected action is not clearly drawn in the verb-root itself. That is a later refinement of tense. Brugmann credits this "perfected" idea to the perfect stem. "Iterative" action belongs to certain

---

1 Giles, Man., etc., p. 477 f.
2 Prol., p. 110 f.
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 469.
5 Griech. Gr., p. 472.
stems (reduplicated, like γίγνομαι), but it is not a fundamental kind of action.

6. THE THREE KINDS OF ACTION EXPRESSED IN TERMS OF TENSE. These ideas (punctiliar, durative, perfected state) lie behind the three tenses (aorist, present, perfect) that run through all the moods. The forms of these tenses are meant to accentuate these ideas.\(^1\) The aorist stem presents action in its simplest form (ἀ-οριστος, ‘undefined’). This action is simply presented as a point by this tense. This action is timeless. The present is also timeless in itself as is the perfect.\(^2\) It is confusing to apply the expression "relations of time" to this fundamental aspect of tense, as is done by some grammars.\(^3\) Radermacher (\textit{N. T. Gr.}, p. 121) uses \textit{Zeitart} and \textit{Zeitstufe}, but why \textit{Zeitart} instead of \textit{Aktionsart}? It is better to keep "time" for its natural use of past, present and future, and to speak of "kind of action" rather than "kind of time."\(^4\) These three tenses (aorist, present, perfect) were first developed irrespective of time. Dionysius Thrax erred in explaining the Greek tenses from the notion of time, and he has been followed by a host of imitators. The study of Homer ought to have prevented this error. The poets generally do not bring the time relations to the fore.\(^5\) Even Paul (\textit{Principles of the History of Language}, p. 300) falls into this error. It is doubtless easier\(^6\) to trace the history of the verb than of the noun, but as many mistakes lie along the way.

7. TIME ELEMENT IN TENSE. But for the indicative the Greek tenses would have had a simple history. There are no past tenses in the subjunctive. The future subjunctive is an anomaly of very late Greek. The future optative occurs only in indirect discourse and is not found in the N. T. The time element in the infinitive is confined to indirect discourse and μέλλω. Time in the participle is only relative to the principal verb. It is thus kind of action, not the time of the action, that is expressed in these forms.\(^7\) But in the indicative the three grades of time had tenses of their own. The Greeks evidently felt that there was no need for time in the other modes except in a relative sense. As a matter of fact, the real time of subjunctive, optative, and imperative is future.

\(^1\) K.-G., Bd. I, p. 130.  
\(^2\) Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 469.  
\(^3\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 433; Gildersleeve, Synt. of Class. Gk., p. 79.  
\(^4\) Cf. Benard, Formes Verb. en Grec, 1890, p. 279.  
\(^5\) Mutzb., Die Grundl. d. griech. Tempusl., 1890.  
\(^7\) Cf. Spyridis, Lang. grec. actuelle ou mod., 1894, p. 287.
in relation to speaker or writer. It was evidently with difficulty (cf. absence of time in Hebrew) that time was expressed in a positive (non-relative) sense even in the indicative. It is only by the augment (probably an adverb) that past time is clearly expressed. "Homer and later Greek writers often use the present with an adverb of time instead of a past tense, a construction which has an exact parallel in Sanskrit and which is therefore supposed to be Indo-Germanic." There is no really distinctive form for the present indicative. The future was a later development out of both the present and aorist. See chapter VIII, Conjugation of Verb. The augment was not always used. Homer used it only when it suited him. But past time was objective and the three kinds of action (punctiliar, durative, perfected) were regularly expressed with the tenses (aorist, imperfect, past perfect). There is Aktionsart also in the present and future time, but the tense development did not go on to the full extent here. There are only two tense-forms in the present and practically only one in the future. But both punctiliar and linear action are expressed, but not differentiated, in the present time by the same tense, as is true also of the future. The kinds of action exist, but separate tense-forms unfortunately do not occur. There might thus have been nine tenses in the indicative: three punctiliar (past, present, future), three linear (past, present, future), three perfect (past, present, future). Because of this difference between the indicative and the other moods in the matter of time some grammars give a separate treatment to the indicative tenses. It is not an easy matter to handle, but to separate the indicative perhaps accents the element of time unduly. Even in the indicative the time element is subordinate to the kind of action expressed. A double idea thus runs through tense in the indicative (kind of action, time of the action).

8. FAULTY NOMENCLATURE OF THE TENSES. There is no consistency in the names given the tenses, as has already been explained. Cf. chapter VIII, (b). The terms aorist, imperfect and perfect (past, present, future) are properly named from the point of view of the state of the action, but present and future are named from the standpoint of the time element. There is

1 Goodwin, Gk. Moods and Tenses, 1890, pp. 23, 27.
3 Giles, Man., etc., p. 487.
5 Cf. Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 120 f.
6 Cf. Goodwin, Gk. Moods and Tenses, pp. 8, 22.
no time element in the present subjunctive, for instance. But the names cannot now be changed, though very unsatisfactory.

9. THE ANALYTIC TENDENCY (Periphrasis). This is the Common way of expressing tense in the Germanic tongues. It was not unknown to the older Greek and was very frequent in the LXX under the Hebrew influence. See an extended list in Conybeare and Stock, Selections from the LXX, pp. 68-71 The tendency is strong in the N. T. See the summary already given (pp. 374-376). In the modern Greek the periphrastic form has displaced the usual inflected forms in all the tenses but the present, imperfect and aorist. These are "simple." The rest are "compound" (Thumb, Handb., p. 115).1 This analytic tendency affected the durative and perfect kinds of action. It did not suit the purely punctiliar idea.

10. THE EFFECT OF PREPOSITIONS ON THE VERB. This is another aspect of Aktionsart. This subject has already been briefly discussed from the standpoint of the prepositions.2 Delbruck3 has worked the matter out with thoroughness and he is followed by Brugmann.4 Moulton5 has applied the principle to N. T. verbs. The point is that often where the simple verb is durative it is rendered "perfective" by the preposition in composition. This peculiarity is common to all the Indo-Germanic tongues and reaches its highest development in the Germanic (cf. English and German) and the Balto-Slavic languages.6 Thus we in English say bring and bring up, burn and burn up, carry and carry off, come and come on, drive and drive away (home, in, off, out), drink and drink up, eat and eat up, follow and follow up, go and go away, grow and grow up, knock and knock down, make and make over, pluck and pluck out, run and run away, speak and speak out, stand and stand up, take and take up, wake and wake up, work and work out.7 The "imperfective" simplex becomes "perfective" in the compound. Prof. A. Thumb8 has a paper "Zur Aktionsart der mit Prapositionen zusammengesetzten Verba im Griechischen," in which he compares some tables of Schlachter for Thucydides with some by Prof. S. Dickey for the N. T. Thucydides shows for the present tense 260 simplicia verbs to 83 compound, for the aorist 158 to 199. Dickey has investigated about thirty N. T. verbs

1 Jebb in V. and D.'s Handb., pp. 323, 326.
2 Cf. ch. XIII, iv, (i).
5 Prol., pp. 111-115.
6 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 482.
7 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 112.
8 Indoger. Forsch., XXVII.
like ἀπέχω, etc. He reports for the present tense a proportion of 1160 simplicia to 83 compound, for the aorist 885 to 226. It is unfortunate that the term "perfective" is used for this idea, since it inevitably suggests the perfect tense. Some writers use "perfective" also for the aorist or punctiliar action, a means of still further confusion. Brugmann uses "Perfektive Aktion" for the effect of the preposition in composition and "Perfektische Aktion" for the perfect tense, a distinction hard to draw in English. Latin and Greek both show abundant illustrations of this use of prepositions. Cf. sequor and consequor, facio and efficio, teneo and sustineo. Moulton thinks that the freedom in the position of the preposition in Homer helped the adverb to retain its force longer than in later Greek and Latin. The point of the preposition here is best seen in the prepositions ἀπο-, δια-, κατα-, συν-. But even in these the actual majority of examples preserve the original local meaning and so are not perfective. But in Lu. 8:29, πολλάκις χρόνοις συνηρτάκει αὐτόν, the perfective sense of συν combines with the past perfect tense and the locative (or instrumental) πολλάκις χρόνοις to denote "not the temporary paroxysm, but the establishment of a permanent hold" (Moulton, Prol., p. 113). So γνωσκω is durative (‘gaining knowledge,’ as in Mk. 13:28), ἔγνων is effective (‘grasping the point,’ as in Lu. 16:4, ἔγνων τί ποιήσω), ἐπιγνώσκω is perfective (‘knowing my lesson,’ as in 1 Cor. 13:12), and ἐπιγνώναι also (‘recognising,’ as in Mt. 14:35). Moulton (ib., p. 114) calls particular attention to a οἱ ἀπολλύμενοι. (1 Cor. 1:18), ‘the perishing,’ where the destiny is accepted by ἀπό, and the process is depicted by the tense. In Heb. 6:18, οἱ καταφυγόντες, the perfective sense of κατά, coincides with the effective aorist. So even when the tense is durative, the notion of completion is expressed in the preposition as contemplated or certain. In τέθυκεν (Lu. 8:49) the perfect tense of the simplex is sufficient, but not so in ἀπέθανεν, (Lu. 8:53). θυόσκω as simplex became obsolete outside of the perfect, so that ἀπεθνήσκεν (Lu. 8:42; cf. 2 Cor. 6:9; Heb. 11:21) occurs for the notion of ‘dying.’ "The linear perfective expressed its meaning sufficiently, denoting as it does the whole process leading up to an attained goal." Moulton notes also the iterative use of ἀπεθνήσκω in 1 Cor. 15:31, and the frequentative in 1 Cor. 15:22. See also the "perfective" use of ἀποκτείνω, the active of ἀποθνήσκω. In ἀπόλλυμι and ἀπόλλυμαι (ἀπόλωλα) the sim-
plex is obsolete. Even in the present tense the force of ἀπο— is obvious. Cf. τοῖς ἀπολλυμένοις (1 Cor. 1:18), ἀπόλλυμαι (Lu. 15:17), ἀπολύμεθα (Mt. 8:25), where Moulton\(^1\) explains ἀπο- as suggesting "the sense of an inevitable doom." Cf. also ἐκφεύγω (Mt. 2:13), ‘to flee,’ with διαφεύγω (Ac. 27:42), and ἐκφεύγω (Heb. 2:3), ‘to escape,’ καταφεύγω (Heb. 6:18), ‘to find refuge ’; θηρέω (Ac. 24:23), ‘to watch,’ with διατηρέω, ‘to keep continually’ (Lu. 2:51), and συντηρέω (Lu. 2:19), ‘to keep together (safely)’; σάω (Mk. 14:47), 'to draw,’ with διασάω (Mk. 5:4), 'to draw in two'; καίω (Jo. 15:6), ‘to burn,’ with κατακρίνω (Ac. 19:19), ‘to burn up’; κρίνω (Jo. 5:30), ‘to judge,’ with κατακρίνω (Mt. 12:41), ‘to condemn’; ἔλω 3:16), 'to loosen,’ with καταλύω (Mt. 24:2), 'to destroy'; ἔχω (Ac. 13:5; Rev. 10:2), 'to have' or 'hold,' with ἐπέχω (Ac. 3:5), ‘to hold on to,’ and συνέχω (Lu. 8:45), ‘to hold together’ or ‘press,’ and ἀπέχω (Mt. 6:5), ‘to have in full,’ etc. As to ἀπέχω for ‘receipt in full,’ see Deissmann, Light, p. 110 f. The papyri and ostraca, give numerous illustrations. It is not necessary to make an exhaustive list to prove the point. Cf. μενῶ καὶ παραμενῶ (Ph. 1:25), χάρω καὶ συνχάρω (2:17), where the point lies in the preposition, though not "perfective" here. So γινωσκομένη καὶ ἀναγινωσκόμενη (2 Cor. 3:2), ἀναγινώσκετε ἡ καὶ ἑπιγινώσκετε (1:13), μετρεῖτε ἀντιμετρηθήσεται (Lu. 6:38), ἔχουσες—κατέχουσες (2 Cor. 6:10). Cf. ἔκβαλε (Mt. 22:13). In some verbs\(^2\) the preposition has so far lost its original force that the "perfective" idea is the only one that survives. Dr. Eleanor Purdie (Indog. Forsch., IX, pp. 63-153, 1898) argues that the usage of Polybius as compared with Homer shows that the aorist simplex was increasingly confined to the constative sense, while the ingressive and effective simplex gave way to the "perfective" compounds. Moulton\(^3\) is inclined to agree in the main with her contention as supported by the papyri (and Thumb thinks that modern Greek supports the same view). At any rate there is a decided increase in the number of compound verbs. The ingressive and effective uses of the aorist would naturally blend with the "perfective" compounds. But it remains true that the Aktionsart of the verb-root is often modified by the preposition in composition.

11. “AKTIONSART” WITH EACH TENSE. It is not merely true that three separate kinds of action are developed (punctiliar, durative, perfected), that are represented broadly by three tenses in all the modes, though imperfectly in the present and future tenses of the indicative. The individual verb-root modifies greatly the

---

\(^1\) Moulton, Prol., p. 114.  \(^2\) Ib., p. 112.  \(^3\) Ib., pp. 115-118.
resultant idea in each tense. This matter can only be hinted at here, but must be worked out more carefully in the discussion of each tense. The aorist, for instance, though always in itself merely point-action, "punctiliar," yet may be used with verbs that accent the beginning of the action or the end of the action. Thus three distinctions arise: the unmodified point-action called "constative," the point-action with the accent on the beginning (inceptive) called "ingressive," the point-action with the accent on the conclusion called "effective." The names are not particularly happy, but they will answer. "Constative" is especially awkward. In reality it is just the normal aorist without any specific modification by the verb-meaning. Hirt does not use the term, but divides the aorist into "ingressive" and "effective" when there is this special Aktionsart. But the use of these demands another term for the normal aorist. As an example of the "constative" aorist for the whole action take ἐσκήνωσεν (Jo. 1:14), for the earthly life of Jesus. So also ἔγενσα (1:18), while ἐγένετο (1:14) is "ingressive," and accents the entrance of the Logos upon his life on earth (Incar-nation). Ἐθεασάμεθα (1:14) is probably "effective " as is ἐλάβομεν (1:16), accenting the result ("resultative," Brugmann, Griech. Gr., p. 475). So likewise in the so-called "present" tense various ideas exist as set forth by the various "classes" of verbs or "conjugations." The perfect and the future likewise have many variations in resultant idea, growing out of the varying verb-idea in connection with the tense-idea. These must be borne in mind and will be indicated in the proper place in discussing each tense.

12. INTERCHANGE OF TENSES. The point here is not whether the Greeks used an aorist where we in English would use a perfect, but whether the Greeks themselves drew no distinction between an aorist and a perfect, a present and a future. It is not possible to give a categorical answer to this question when one recalls the slow development of the Greek tenses and the long history of the language. There was a time long after the N. T. period when the line between the aorist and the perfect became very indistinct, as it had been largely obliterated in Latin. It is a question for discussion whether that was true in the N. T. or not. The subject will receive discussion under those tenses. The future grew out of the present and the aorist. The present continued to be used sometimes as vivid future, as is true of all languages. But it is a very crude way of speaking to say that one tense is used

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 109.  
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 475.  
"for" another in Greek. That would only be true of ignorant men. In general one may say that in normal Greek when a certain tense occurs, that tense was used rather than some other because it best expressed the idea of the speaker or writer. Each tense, therefore, has its specific idea. That idea is normal and can be readily understood. Various modifications arise, due to the verb itself, the context, the imagination of the user of the tense. The result is a complex one, for which the tense is not wholly responsible. The tenses, therefore, are not loosely interchangeable. Each tense has a separate history and presents a distinct idea. That is the starting-point. Winer (Winer-Thayer, p. 264) is entirely correct in saying: "No one of these tenses strictly and properly taken can stand for another." Writers vary greatly in the way that the tenses are used. A vivid writer like Mark, for instance, shows his lively imagination by swift changes in the tenses. The reader must change with him. It is mere commonplace to smooth the tenses into a dead level in translation and miss the writer's point of view. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 124) is doubtful whether in the N. T. we are justified in making "sharp distinctions between the imperfect, aorist or perfect; a subjunctive, imperative, or infinitive of the aorist or present." But for my part I see no more real ground in the papyri and inscriptions for such hesitation than we find in the ancient Attic Greek. Thumb (Handb., p. 116) notes that modern Greek, in spite of heavy losses, has preserved the distinction between linear and punctiliar action even in the imperative and subjunctive. I shall discuss the tenses according to the three ideas designed by them rather than by the names accidentally given.

II. Punctiliar Action.

This is the kind of action to begin with. It is probably not possible always to tell which is the older stem, the punctiliar or the linear. They come into view side by side, though the punctiliar action is logically first. The aorist tense, though at first confined to verbs of punctiliar sense, was gradually made on verbs of durative sense. So also verbs of durative action came to have the tenses of punctiliar action.1 Thus the tenses came to be used for the expression of the ideas that once belonged only to the root. The Stoic grammarians, who gave us much of our terminology, did not fully appreciate the aorist tense. They grouped the tenses around the present stem, while as a matter of fact in many verbs that is impossible, the root appearing in the aorist,

not in the present. Cf. ε-στην (ι'-στημι), ε-λαβ-ο-ν (λαμβάνω), etc. This error vitiated the entire theory of the Stoic grammarians. Grammatical forms cannot express the exact concord between the logical and the grammatical categories, but the aorist tense came very near doing it. By Homer's time (and Pindar's) the distinction between the aorist and imperfect tenses is fairly well drawn, though some verbs like ε-φην remain in doubt. So we start with the aorist tense. In modern Greek the ancient aorist is the base-form on which a number of new presents are formed (Thumb, Handb., p. 143). J. C. Lawson (Journ. of Th. St., Oct., 1912, p. 142) says that Thumb would have smoothed the path of the student if he had "dealt with the aorist before proceeding to the present."

1. THE AORIST (ἀόριστος). The aorist, as will be shown, is not the only way of expressing indefinite (undefined) action, but it is the normal method of doing so. The Greek in truth is "an aorist-loving language" (Broadus). In the koine the aorist is even more frequent than in the classic Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 120), especially is this true of the N. T.

Gildersleeve does not like the name and prefers "apobatic," but that term suits only the "effective" aorist. The same thing is true of "culminative." The name aorist does very well on the whole. I doubt if the aorist is a sort of "residuary legatee," taking what is left of the other tenses. The rather, as I see it, the aorist preserved the simple action and the other tenses grew up around it. It is true that in the expression of past time in the indicative and with all the other moods, the aorist is the tense used as a matter of course, unless there was special reason for using some other tense. It gives the action "an and fur sich." The common use of the "imperfect" with verbs of speaking (εφη, ελεγε) may be aorist in fact.

(a) Aktionsart in the Aorist.

(a) Constative Aorist. There is still a good deal of confusion in the use of terms. Gildersleeve (Syntax of Attic Gr., p. 105) prefers "complexive" to "constative." Moulton comments on Miss Purdie's use of "perfective" in the sense of "punctiliar."

---

4. Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 137.
So Giles uses "perfective or momentary" for the aoristic action, but he also (p. 478 note) uses constative. But Moulton also makes a distinction between "constative" and "punctiliiar," using "punctiliiar" for real point-action and "constative" for what is merely treated as point-action. That is a true distinction for the verb-root, but the growing number of constative aorists was in harmony with the simple idea of the tense. Brugmann rests constative, ingressive and effective aorists, all three on the punktiell idea and draws no sharp distinction between "punctiliiar" and "constative." Delbruck divides the punktiell or aorist into Anlangspunkt or Ingressive, Mittelpunkt or Constative and Schlusspunkt or Effective. The constative accents the "middle point." The idea of Delbrick and Brugmann is that punktiell action is "action focused in a point." "The aorist describes an event as a single whole, without the time taken in its accomplishment." It seems best, therefore, to regard "constative" as merely the normal aorist which is not "ingressive" nor "effective." The root-difference between the aorist and the imperfect is just this, that the aorist is "constative" while the imperfect "describes." The "constative" aorist just treats the act as a single whole entirely irrespective of the parts or time involved. If the act is a point in itself, well and good. But the aorist can be used also of an act which is not a point. This is the advance that the tense makes on the verb-root. All aorists are punctiliar in statement (cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 109). The "constative" aorist treats an act as punctiliar which is not in itself point-action. That is the only difference. The distinction is not enough to make a separate class like ingressive and effective over against the purely punctiliar action. Thumb (Handb., p. 122) passes by "constative" as merely the regular aorist "to portray simply an action or occurrence of the past," whether in reality punctiliar or not. He finds both ingressive and effective aorists in modern Greek. But Thumb uses "terminative" for both "ends" (initial and final), a somewhat confusing word in this connection. The papyri show the same Aktionsart of the aorist. So note constative

---

6 Moulton, Intr. to the Stu. of N. T. Gk., 1895, p. 190,
8 Moulton, Prol., p. 109, prefers "summary" to "constative."
Thus in Jo. 2:20, Τεσσεράκοντα καὶ ἤξις ἔτεσιν οἰκοδομήθη ὁ ναὸς οὗτος, we have a good example of the constative aorist. The whole period of forty-six years is treated as a point. In Mt. 5:17, ἢλθον, we have a very simple constative aorist, just punctiliar and nothing more, describing the purpose of Christ's mission. It is true that the constative aorist in this sense is far more frequent than the ingressive and the effective uses of the tense. This has always been so from the nature of the case. The increasing number of "perfective" compounds, as already shown, increased the proportion of constative aorists. When the action is in itself momentary or instantaneous no difficulty is involved. These examples are very numerous on almost any page of the N. T. Cf. in Ac. 10:22 f., ἐχρηματίσθη, μεταπέμψασθαι, ἀκοῦσαι, ἔξενισεν, συνῆλθον. See the aorists in Ac. 10:41 f. Cf. Mt. 8:3; Ac. 5:5. This is the normal aorist in all the moods. But verbs that are naturally durative may have the aorist. In ἐκαρτέρησεν (Heb. 11:27) we have a verb naturally "durative" in idea, but with the "constative" aorist. Cf. also ἐκρύβη τρίμηνον (Heb. 11:23), where a period of time is summed up by the constative aorist. Cf. ἐβασίλευσεν ὁ θάνατος ἀπὸ Ἄδαμ μέχρι (Ro. 5:14). A good example is ἔζησαν καὶ ἐβασίλευσαν μετὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ χίλια ἡμέρα (Rev. 20:4). Here ἔζησαν is probably ingressive, though ζήσωμεν is constative in 1 Th. 5:10, but ἐβασίλευσαν is clearly constative. The period of a thousand years is merely regarded as a point. Cf. also Jo. 7:9 ἐμείνεν ἐν τῷ Γαλιλαίῳ, 10:40 ἐμείνεν ἦκεν. See also Ac. 11:26 ἐγένετο αὐτοὶς ἐνιαυτὸν ἰὸν συναχθῆναι ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, 14:3 ἰκανὴν χρόνον διετριψαν, 18:11 ἐκάθισεν ἐνιαυτὸν καὶ μήνας ἔξις 28:30 ἐνέμεινεν διετίαν Ἰὸν. Cf. Eph. 2:4. See ἀεὶ--διετέλεσα in B.G.U. 287 (A.D. 250). Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 105) calls this "aorist of long duration" (constative).

For a striking example of the constative (summary) use of the aorist, note ἐφ’ ὑπὸ πάντες ἦμαρτον (Rom. 5:12). Note in particular the summary statements in Heb. 11, as ἀπέθανον οὗτοι πάντες (13), οὗτοι πάντες—οὗ ἐκμίσατο (39). Gildersleeve's "aorist of total negation" (Syntax, p. 106) is nothing more than this. Repeated or separate actions are thus grouped together, as in Mt. 22:28, πάντες ἔχουν αὐτὴν. So τρίς ἔραβδισθην, τρίς ἐναυάγησα (2 Cor. 11:20). In Mk. 12:44, πάντες—ἔβαλον, αὕτη δὲ—ἔβαλεν, the two actions are contrasted sharply by the aorist. There is no difficulty in ἔξις ὑπὲρ πάντων ἀπέθανεν· ἀρα οἱ πάντες ἀπέθανον (2 Cor. 5:14). The same verb may sometimes be used either as constative (like ἐβασίλευσαν—

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 115.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 193.
λευσαν, 'reigned,' Rev. 20:4 above) or ingressive (καὶ ἐβασίλευσας, 'assumed rule,' Rev. 11:17, though true here of God only in a dramatic sense). Thus ἐσίγνησεν (Ac. 15:12) is 'kept silence' (constative), but σιγῆσαι (verse 13) is ingressive as is ἐσίγνησαν (Lu. 9:36). Cf. Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 21. In Gal. 5:16, οὐ μὴ τελέστητε, we have the constative aorist, while πληρώσας is effective in Mt. 5:17. In line with what has already been said, βαλέω may mean 'throw' (constative), 'let fly' (ingressive) or 'hit' (effective). Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 130. Illustrations occur in the N. T. in ἐβαλεν αὐτὸν εἰς φυλακήν (Mt. 18:30, constative, 'cast' or 'threw'), βάλε σεαυτὸν ἐντεύθεν κάτω (Lu. 4:9, ingressive, 'hurl.' Note ἐντεύθεν, as well as "perfective" force of κάτω. Cf. Mt. 5:29), ἐβαλεν κατ' αὐτής (effective, 'beat,' Ac. 27:14).

(0) Ingressive Aorist. This is the inceptive or inchoative aorist. It is not, however, like the "constative" idea, a tense-notion at all. It is purely a matter with the individual verb. Thus ἔπτωχευσεν, 2 Cor. 8:9, is 'became poor'; Ro. 14:9, is 'became alive' (cf. ἄπεθανεν just before). Perhaps in Jo. 16:3, οὐκ ἐγνωσαν, the meaning is 'did not recognise.' But this could be constative. But it is clear in Jo. 1:10. So in ὅσοι ἐλαβον αὐτόν (Jo. 1:12) the ingressive idea occurs, as in οὐ παρέλαβον in verse 11. Cf. ἐκλαυσεν (Lu. 19:41) = 'burst into tears' and ἐγνώς (vs. 42) = 'camest to know.' So ἐδάκρυσεν (Jo. 11:35). In Mt. 22:7 ὄργισθη = 'became angry.' Cf. also μὴ δόξητε (Mt. 3:9), ἀφύνωσεν (Lu. 8:23), ἐθυμώθη (Mt. 2:16). In Lu. 15:32 ἐξησεν is ingressive, as is ἐκοίμηθα (Ac. 7:60), ἰσχύσαμεν μόλις (Ac. 27:16), μισήσωσιν (Lu. 6:22), ἥγαπησεν (Mk. 10:21), ἐλυπήθητε (2 Cor. 7:9), πλοιοτήσητε (2 Cor. 8:9). The notion is common with verbs expressing state or condition (Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 16). Moulton quotes βασιλεύσας ἀναπαύσεται, 'having come to his throne he shall rest,' Agraphon, O.P. 654. See also ἐλαβα βιατικόν παρά Καίσαρος, B.G.U. 423 (ii/A.D.). Moulton (Prol., p. 248) cites Jo. 4:52, κομψότερον ἐσχεν, 'got better,' and compares it with ἐὰν κομψῶς σχῶ, Tb.P. 414 (ii/A.D.). Another instance is ἦγγισαν Mt. 21:1. Cf. ἐκτήσατο (Ac. 1:18).

(γ) Effective Aorist. The name is not particularly good and "resultant aorist" is suggested by some scholars. Gildersleeve

2 Ib.
4 These ingressive aorists are often denominative verbs. Cf. Gildersl., Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 104.
5 Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 104.
suggests "upshot aorist." Giles\(^1\) calls it aorist of the "culminating point," following Monro.\(^2\) But the idea is that emphasis is laid on the end of the action as opposed to the beginning (ingressive). This is done (if done) by the verb itself (Aktionsart). The following examples will make the matter clear: ποιήσατε καρπόν (Mt. 3:8), κλείσας (6:6), ἐτέλεσεν (7:28), ὑμοιώθη (13:24), ἐνέπρησεν (22:7), ἐκέρδησα (25:20), ἔπεισαν, (27:20), ἐλύθη (Mk. 7:35), ἐστάθησαν (Lu. 24:17), ἐκρύβη (19:42), ἤγαγεν (Jo. 1:42) ἀπεστησε (Ac. 5:37), πληρώσαντες (12:25), ἔπεσεν (20:9), ἐπαύσαντο (21:32), ἐκώλυσεν (27:43), ἔμαθον (Ph. 4:11), ἐνίκησεν (Rev. 5:5). A good example of the effective aorist in the papyri is ἔσωσε, B.G.U. 423 (ii/A.D.). So then in the case of each aorist the point to note is whether it is merely punctiliar (constative) or whether the verb-idea has deflected it to the one side or the other (ingressive or effective). It needs to be repeated that there is at bottom only one kind of aorist (punctiliar in fact or statement). The tense of itself always means point-action. The tense, like the mode, has nothing to do with the fact of the action, but only with the way it is stated. Sometimes it will not be clear from the context what the Aktionsart is. The "perfective" force of prepositions applies to all the tenses. It must be said also that the Aktionsart in the aorist (ingressive, effective) applies to all the modes. Indeed, because of the time-element in the indicative (expressed by the augment and secondary endings) the real character of the aorist tense is best seen in the other modes where we do not have notes of time.\(^3\) It is merely a matter of convenience, therefore, to note the aorist in the different modes, not because of any essential difference (outside of the indicative). One is in constant danger of overrefinement here. Gildersleeve\(^4\) criticises Stahl\(^5\) for "characteristic prolixity" in his treatment of the tenses. A few striking examples are sufficient here.

(b) Aorist Indicative. The caution must be once more repeated that in these subdivisions of the aorist indicative we have only one tense and one root-idea (punctiliar action). The variations noted are incidental and do not change at all this fundamental idea.

(a) The Narrative or Historical Tense.\(^6\) It is the tense in which

---

\(^1\) Man., p. 498.
\(^2\) Hom. Gr., p. 48.
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol., p. 129.
\(^4\) Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 400.
a verb in ordinary narrative is put unless there is reason for using some other tense. Hence it is enormously frequent, in the Greek historians. Writers vary greatly, of course, in the use of the tenses as of words, but in the large view the point holds. The aorist holds its place in the papyri and in the modern Greek as the usual tense in narrative (Thumb, Handb., p. 122). Almost any page in the Gospels and Acts will show an abundance of aorist indicatives that illustrate this point. Cf., for instance, the eight aorists in Ac. 13: 13 f. (no other tense), the eight aorists in 21:1 f. (no other tense), the three aorists in 25:1 f. (no other tense). In these instances the tenses are not all in indicative mood, though predominantly so. See again the fifteen aorists in Ac. 28:11-15 (one perfect). The aorist was used in narrative as a matter of course. Note the many aorists in Heb. 11.

The redundant use of the verb as in λαβὼν ἐσπείρεν (Mt. 13:31) = took and sowed' is not a peculiarity of the aorist tense. Cf. ἀπῆλθεν καὶ ἐπεν (Jo. 5:15) = 'went and told.' Nor is it a peculiarity of Greek. It belongs to the vernacular of most languages. But we no longer find the iterative use of ἄν with the aorist according to the classic idiom (Moulton, Prol., p. 167).

(β) The Gnomic Aorist. Jannaris1 calls this also "empiric aorist," while Gildersleeve2 uses "empirical" for the aorist with a negative or temporal adverb, a rather needless distinction. The real "gnomic" aorist is a universal or timeless aorist and probably represents the original timelessness of the aorist indicative.3 This aorist is common in Homer4 in comparisons and general sayings. The difference between the gnomic aorist and the present is that the present may be durative.5 But general truths may be expressed by the aoristic present. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 109) compares this use of the aorist to the generic article. Winer6 denies that this idiom occurs in the N. T., but on insufficient grounds. Abbott7 rather needlessly appeals to the "Hebrew influence on Johannine tense-construction" to explain ἐβλήθη καὶ ἐξηράνθη (Jo. 15:6) after ἐδὸν μὴ τις μένῃ ἐν ἐμοί. It is a general construction here and is followed by three presents (aoristic). This is a mixed condition certainly, the protasis being future

---

1 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 436.  
2 Synt., p. 112.  
4 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 48 f.  
5 Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 54.  
6 W.-Th., p. 277.  
7 Joh. Gr., p. 327.
(third class, undetermined with some likelihood of determination).

But ἐποίησεν θλῆς, ἐξῆλθες, in Epictetus, IV, 10, 27. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 124) so thinks and adds, what I do not admit: "The genuine gnomic aorist appears to be foreign to the Hellenistic vernacular." It survives in modern Greek, according to Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 436. Moulton (Prol., pp. 135, 139) admits it in N. T., but (p. 134) considers Jo. 15:6 the "timeless" aorist, like ἀνετεύλην ἔμελεψεις in Eur., Alc., 386. There are other examples, like ἐκρυφὺς (Mt. 13:44) which is followed by presents ὑπάγει, πωλεῖ, ἡγόρασεν (13:46), συνελέξαν—ἐβαλον (13:48), ὑμισῶθη (18:23), ἐκάθισαν (23:2), εὐδόκησα (Lu. 3:22), ἐδικαίωθη (7:35), ἐδίδαξεν (Jo. 8:28), ἀνέτειλεν and the other aorists in Jas. 1:11, ἐκάλεσε—ἐδόξασε (Ro. 8:30), ἐξηράνθη—ἐξέπεσεν (1 Pet. 1:24; LXX, Is. 40:7). It is true that the timeless Hebrew perfect is much like this gnomic aorist, but it is a common enough Greek idiom also. Cf. further Lu. 1:51-53. It is not certain that εὐδόκησα (Mt. 3:17; 17:5; Mk. 1:11; Lu. 3:22) belongs here. It may be merely an example of the timeless aorist used in the present, but not gnomic. See under (ε). Burton (N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 29) finds it difficult and thinks it originally "inceptive" (ingressive).

(γ) Relation to the Imperfect. The aorist is not used "instead of" the imperfect. But the aorist is often used in the midst of imperfects. The Old Bulgarian does not distinguish between the aorist and the imperfect. In modern Greek, aorists and imperfects have the same endings (Thumb, Handb., p. 119), but the two tenses are distinct in meaning. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 122) thinks that in the κοινη he finds the imperfect used as aorist, as in ἐκ τῶν ἰδίων ἐποίη (ἐποίει) τῶν βωμῶν (Inscr. de la Syrie 2413a), and διεσάφεις for διεσάφησας (P. Lond., XLII, Kenyon 30). But I venture to be sceptical. In both passages the imperfects make perfectly good sense. Radermacher urges the common use of ἔτελευτα, but that may be merely descriptive imperfect. I grant that it is "willkürlich" in Herodotus (in 1214) to say διεφθάρη καὶ τελεύτα, as in Strabo (C 828) to have ἔτελευτα—διαδεδεκταί. It is "rein stilistisch," but each writer exercises his own whim. Winer properly remarks that it "often

1 Monro, Hom Gr., p. 46; Leo Meyer, Griech. Aoriste, p. 97; Gildersl., Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 243; Moulton, Prol., p. 128. Ἡν may be either aorist or imperfect.

2 W.-Th., p. 276.
depends on the writer" which tense he will use. Why "often"? Why not "always"? The presence of aorist, imperfect and past perfect side by side show how keen the distinction was felt to be.\(^1\) Blass\(^2\) seeks to distinguish sharply between ἐλεγον and ἐπον, but with little success. The trouble, as already stated, is probably that ἐλεγον may be either aorist (like ἐλιπον) or imperfect. He admits that Thucydides introduces his speeches either with ἐλεγε or ἐλεξε. Gildersleeve,\(^3\) like Stahl, denies "an actual interchange of tenses." In any given incident the speaker or writer may have the choice of representing it in narrative by the aorist (punctiliar) or the imperfect (durative). An interesting example is found in Mk. 12:41-44.\(^4\) The general scene is presented by the descriptive imperfect ἔθεωρει and the durative present βάλλει. It is visualized by πολλοὶ—ἐβάλλον. But the figure of the widow woman is singled out by the aorist ἐβαλεν. The closing reference by Jesus to the rest is by the constative aorist παύτες ἐβάλον. Note also the precise distinction between ἔχειν and ἐβαλεν at the end. Where the aorist and the imperfect occur side by side, it is to be assumed that the change is made on purpose and the difference in idea to be sought. In juxtaposition the aorist lifts the curtain and the imperfect continues the play. Cf. ἐνύσταξαν (ingressive, 'fell to nodding') and ἐκάθευδον ('went on sleeping') in Mt. 25:5. So Τίς μου ἦψατο; καὶ περεβλέπετο (Mk. 5:32). 'He began to look around because of the touch.' See also ἔλυθη ὁ δεσμὼς τῆς γλώσσης αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἔλαλε ὁ ρήμα (7:35). A similar distinction appears in ἄγγελοι προσήλθον καὶ δημόνες αὐτῷ (Mt. 4:11); ἐπέσεν καὶ ἐδίδου (13:8); κατέβη λαίλαψ—καὶ συνεπληρόθηντο (Lu. 8:23); ἤρε τὸν κράβαττον αὐτοῦ καὶ περιπάτετο (Jo. 5:9); ἀνέβη—καὶ ἐδιδασκέν (7:14); ἔκαθαν καὶ ἐκράτησαν, (12:13). In Lu. 8:53 note κατεγέλων and ἀπέθανεν. Once again note ἐπέδαιμε—καὶ ἐκωλύμεν in 9:49 and κατευόμεν καὶ ἔδον (Ac. 11:6). Cf. further Ac. 14:10; 1 Cor. 3:6; Mt. 21:8; Mk. 11:18; Jo. 20:3 f. In 1 Cor. 10:4 note ἐπιον—ἐπιον; in 11:23, παρέδωκα, παρεδίδετο. The same sort of event will be recorded now with the aorist, as πολύ πλήθος ἡκολούθησεν (Mk. 3:7), now with the imperfect, as ἡκολούθηκεν ὁχλος πολύς (5:24). Cf. Lu. 2:18 and 4:22.\(^5\) But the changing mood of the writer does not mean that the tenses are equivalent to each other. A word further is necessary concerning the relative frequency of aorists and imperfects. Statistical syntax is interesting,

---

\(^1\) Gildersl., Synt., p. 114.  
\(^2\) Or. of N. T. Gk., p. 192.  
\(^3\) Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 398.  
\(^5\) Ib.
laborious and not always conclusive. Schlachter\(^1\) has applied statistics to Homer. In both Iliad and Odyssey the aorists in the indicative are more numerous than the imperfects. Gildersleeve\(^2\) found a similar result in Pindar. Jacobsthal (\textit{Der Gebrauch der Tempora und Modi in den kretischen Dialektinschriften}) finds the aorist surpassing the imperfect. But Hultsch\(^3\) found the imperfect very abundant in Polybius, and Prof. Miller\(^4\) has added statistics for other writers. "The imperfect divides the crown with the aorist in different proportions at different times and in different spheres."\(^5\) A further extended quotation from Gildersleeve\(^6\) is pertinent: "Not the least interesting is the table in which Schlachter has combined his results with Professor Miller's and from which it appears that the use of the aorist indicative gradually diminishes until it finds its low-water-mark in Xenophon. Then the aorist thrusts itself more and more to the front until it culminates in the N. T. The pseudo-naivete of Xenophon suggests an answer to one problem. The \textit{Hellenica} has the lowest percentage of imperfects, but it mounts up in the novelistic \textit{Kyropaideia}. The other problem, the very low percentage of the imperfect in the N. T. — e.g. Matthew 13 per cent., Apocalypse 7 — Schlachter approaches gingerly, and well he may. It stands in marked contrast to Josephus whose 46 per cent. of imperfects shows the artificiality of his style, somewhat as does his use of the participles (\textit{A. J. P.}, IX 154), which, according to Schlachter, he uses more than thrice as often as St. John's Gospel (41:12). This predominance of the aorist indicative can hardly be dissociated from the predominance of the aorist imperative in the N. T. (Justin Martyr, \textit{Apol.} I, 16. 6), although the predominance of the aorist imperative has a psychological basis which cannot be made out so readily for the aorist indicative. Besides, we have to take into consideration the growth of the perfect and the familiar use of the historical present, which is kept down in St. Luke alone (\textit{A. J. P.}, XX 109, XXVII 328)."

The personal equation, style, character of the book, vernacular or literary form, all come into play. It largely depends on what

\(^2\) Am. Jour. of Philol., 1876, pp. 158-165.
\(^3\) Der Gebr. der erzählenden Zeitf. bei Polyb. (1898).
\(^6\) Ib., p. 244.
the writer is after. If he is aiming to describe a scene with vividness, the imperfect predominates. Otherwise he uses the aorist, on the whole the narrative tense *par excellence*.1 Hence the aorist is the truly narrative tense, the imperfect the truly descriptive one; and both may be used of the same transaction.2

(8) Relation to the Past Perfect. It is rather shocking, after Winer’s protest that the tenses are not interchanged, to find him saying bluntly: "In narration the aorist is used for the pluperfect."3 Burton4 helps the matter by inserting the word "English" before "pluperfect." Winer meant "German pluperfect." Gildersleeve5 does much better by using "translated." "We often translate the aorist by a pluperfect for the sake of clearness." Goodwin6 adds more exactly that the aorist indicative merely refers the action to the past "without the more exact specification" which the past perfect would give. That is the case. The speaker or writer did not always care to make this more precise specification. He was content with the mere narrative of the events without the precision that we moderns like. We are therefore in constant peril of reading back into the Greek aorist our English or German translation. All that one is entitled to say is that the aorist sometimes occurs where the context "implies completion before the main action,"7 where in English we prefer the past perfect. This use of the aorist is particularly common in subordinate clauses (relative and temporal and indirect discourse).8 It must be emphasized that in this construction the antecedence of the action is not stressed in the Greek. "The Greeks neglected to mark the priority of one event to another, leaving that to be gathered from the context."9 Strictly therefore the aorist is not used for the past perfect. The Greeks cared not for relative time. In Mt. 14:3 it is plain that εἴδεσεν and ἀπέθετο are antecedent in time to ἤκουσεν, verse 1, and εἴπεε in verse 2, but the story of the previous imprisonment and death of John is introduced by γάρ in a reminiscential manner. In Mt. 2:9 δὲ εἶδον points back to verse 2. Cf. also ὅτι ἐγίμωσεν (Mt. 22:34); ὅτε ἐνεπαιξαν αὐτῷ ἔξεδυσαν αὐτόν (27:31). So in 28:2

---

1 Stahl, Krit.-hist. Synt., p. 158.  
2 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 77.  
3 W.-M., p. 343.  
4 N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 22.  
7 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 47.  
The aorist is antecedent to ἤλθεν in verse 1. In 27:18 note in particular ἤδει ὅτι παρέδωκαν and compare with ἐγίνωσκεν ὅτι παραδεδώκεισαν in Mk. 15:10 (cf. οὐτίνες πεποιήκεισαν in verse 7). Here Mark did draw the distinction which Matthew did not care to make. In Lu. 19:15 we have οἷς δεδώκει, but τί διεπραγματεύσαντο. Other examples where the antecedence is not expressed, though true, and the aorist is used, are ἐπελάθοντο (Mk. 8:14), ἐπειδὴ περ ἐπεξερήσαν (Lu. 1:1), ὡς ἔτέλεσαν (2:39), ἐπειδὴ ἐπλήρωσεν (7:1), ἐνεδύσατο (8:27), ὁ ἤτοιμασαν (Lu. 24:1), ὡς ἐγέυσατο (Jo. 2:9), ὅτι ἤκουσαν (4:1), ὥς εἶπεν (4:50), ἐξέφυσεν (5:13), ὡς ἐγένετο (6:16), ὅτι ἀνέβλεψεν (9:18), ὅτι ἔξεβαλον (9:35), ὅπου ὑπήντησεν (11:30 and note ἐληλύθει), οὐχὶ προέγνω (13:12); ὡς ἀπέβησαν (21:9), οὐχὶ ἔξελέξατο (Ac. 1:2), ὅτε ἐνιψεν (Ro. 8:29. Cf. 30 also). In Jo. 18:24, ἀπέστειλεν οὖν, the presence of οὖν makes the matter less certain. If all is transitional, there would be no antecedence. But if οὖν, is inferential, that may be true, though Abbott considers it "impossible." Clyde calls the aorist "an aggressive tense, particularly in the active voice, where it encroached on the domain of the perfect, and all but supplanted the pluperfect." That is true, and yet it must not be forgotten that the aorist was one of the original tenses, much older than the perfects or the future. In wishes about the past (unattainable wishes) the N.T. uses ὄφολον (shortened form of ὄφελον) with the aorist indicative (1 Cor. 4:8) ὄφελον γε ἐβασιλεύσατε. A similar remark applies to use of the aorist indicative in conditions of the second class (past time), without άν in apodosis (Gal. 4:15) or with άν (Jo. 11:21). In both cases in English we translate this aorist by a past perfect.

(c) Relation to the Present. The so-called Dramatic Aorist is possibly the oldest use of the tense. In Sanskrit this is the common use of the tense to express what has just taken place. One wonders if the gnomic or timeless aorist indicative is not still older. The absence of a specific tense for punctiliar action in the present made this idiom more natural. This primitive use of the aorist survives also in the Slavonic. Giles suggests that "the Latin perfect meaning, like the Sanskrit, may have developed directly from this usage." The idiom appears in Homer and is

2 Gk. Synt., p. 76.
4 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 129.
5 Giles, Man., etc., p. 498. "The aorist is used not uncommonly of present time." Ib., p. 497.
found chiefly in the dramatic poets where a sudden change comes,\(^1\) or in colloquial speech or passionate questions.\(^2\) It is a regular idiom in modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 123) as πείνασα, I grew hungry,' 'am hungry still.' This aorist is used of actions which have just happened. The effect reaches into the present. Moulton (*Prol.,* p. 247) quotes a traveller in Cos who "had a pleasant shock, on calling for a cup of coffee, to have the waiter cry "’Εφθασα." The Greek can still use a past tense in passionate questions affecting the present.\(^3\) Moulton\(^4\) speaks of "cases where an aorist indicative denotes present time," though he adds: "None of these examples are really in present time, for they only seem to be so through a difference in idiom between Greek and English." This latter statement is the truth. The aorist in Greek, particularly in dialogue, may be used for what has just happened. It seems awkward in English to refer this to past time, but it is perfectly natural in Greek. So we translate it by the present indicative. From the Greek point of view the peculiarity lies in the English, not in the Greek. The examples in the N. T. are numerous enough in spite of Winer\(^5\) to be worth noting. Moulton\(^6\) has made a special study of Matthew concerning the translation of the aorist. "Under the head of 'things just happened' come 9:18 ἔτελευτησεν (with ἄρτι), 5:28 ἐμοί- χεύσεν, and 14:15 παρῆλθεν and 17:12 ἰλθε (with ἡδη); 6:12 ἀφήκαμεν, 12:28 ἔθασεν, 14:2, etc., ἰγέρθη, 16:17 ἄπεκάλυψε, 18:15 ἐκέρδησας, 20:12 ἐποίησαν --ας, 26:10 ἦρράσατο, 26:13 ἐποίησε, 26:65 ἐβλασφήμησεν, ἰκούσατε, 26:25, 64 ἔπασ, 27:19 ἔπαθον, 27:46 ἐγκατέλιπες, 28:7 ἐίπον, 28:18 ἔδοθη (unless 11: 27 forbids) and perhaps ἐγενήθη." Certainly this is a respectable list for Matthew. Add ἐμερίσθη (Mt. 12:26). These all can be translated by the English 'have.' Ἐυδοκήσα (Mt. 3:17 and parallels) is a possible example also. Cf. δὲν ἐυδοκήσεν ἡ ψυχή μου (12:18, LXX). It is a "timeless" aorist\(^7\) and may be gnomic, as already pointed out. Cf. 2 Pet. 1:17; Mk. 10:20, ἔφυλα- ἔξαιν ἐκ τῆς νεότητος; ἐξέστη in Mk. 3:21; ἀπέχει, ἰλθε—παραδίδοταi (14:41). Other examples of the aorist for what has just happened are in ἰγέρθη, οὐκ ἐστὶν ὄδε (Mk. 16:6); ἰγέρθη—ἐπεσκέψατο (Lu. 7:16); ἰγόρασα, ἐγημα (14:18-20); ἐξήσεν, ἐυρέθη (15:32); ἐγνων (16:4); ἐκρύβη (19:42); δύνας ἰγέρθη (24:34); προσεκύνησαν (Jo.

\(^5\) W.-Th., p. 278.  \(^6\) Prol., p. 140.  \(^7\) Moulton, Prol., p. 134.
4:20; ἡκουσάς (11:41); ἀπήλθεν (12:19); ἡλθον εἰς τὴν ὄραν ταύτην (12:27); ἡθεν (13:1); νῦν ἔδοξάσθη (13:31), but ἔδοξασα (17:4) points backward, 'I did glorify thee,' while ἔδοξάσθη in 15:8 is possibly gnomic; ἔπιάσατε νῦν (21:10); ἔδοξαλωσα, ἐγενόμην (1 Cor. 9:19, 20, 22. Cf. ποιῶ in verse 23); ἐπεσέν, ἐπεσέν (Rev. 14:8; 18:2). With this use of the aorist adverbs of time are common to make clear the present relation of time. Cf. τούτο ἡδη τρίτου ἐφανερώθη (Jo. 21:14) where τούτο has the effect of bringing the action forward. For a sharp contrast between the aorist and present see ἐσχές, καὶ νῦν ὅν ἔχεις (Jo. 4:18). So ἐπικύρωσα καὶ ἀξίζω(ι), B.G.U. 287 (A.D. 250). Cf. also Lu. 10:24. See in particular ἐγνω, ἐγνωνυν and ἐγνωσάνυν in Jo. 17:25. The timeless aorist is well illustrated in the participle in Lu. 10:18, ἐθεώρουν τὸν Σατανᾶν πεσοῦτα.

(ζ) Relation to Present Perfect. The problem just here is not whether the present perfect is ever used as an aorist. That will be discussed under the present perfect. If the distinction between the two tenses was finally obliterated, as early happened in Latin, there would be some necessary confusion. But that has not happened in the N. T. period. Jannaris notes it regularly about 1000 A.D. It is undeniable that the early Sanskrit used the aorist chiefly for "something past which is viewed with reference to the present" and it disappeared before the growth of the other more exact tenses. The perfect may be said to be a development from the aorist, a more exact expression of completed action than mere "punctiliar" (aorist), viz. state of completion. But in the Greek the aorist not only held its own with the other tenses, but "has extended its province at the expense of the perfect," particularly in the N. T. period, though different writers vary greatly here. But was the aorist used "for" the perfect? Clyde says: "The aorist was largely used for the perfect." Winer replies: "There is no passage in which it can be certainly proved that the aorist stands for the perfect." Gildersleeve more correctly says: "The aorist is very often used where we should expect the perfect," i.e. in English. But the trans-

3 Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 78. Still, in Lat. the aorist must be noted for sequence of tenses. Cf. Meillet, L'Aoriste en Lat., Revue de Phil., 1897, p. 81 f.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 199. 8 W.-M., p. 344.
7 Gk. Synt., p. 78. 9 Synt., p. 107,
lation of the aorist into English will call for special discussion a little later. What is true is that the action in such cases "is regarded as subordinate to present time," in other words, the precise specification of relative time which we draw in our English perfect is not drawn in the Greek. The Greek states the simple undefined punctiliar action in a connection that suggests present time and so we render it in English by our "have." But Farrar is right in insisting that we do not explain the Greek tense by the English rendering. In truth, the examples given under the head of "Relation to the Present" (e) may often be rendered by the English "have" with tolerable accuracy. Sometimes the use of an adverb or particle helps the English. The examples are rather numerous in the N.T., as in the papyri, where the aorist and the present perfect occur side by side. Thus χωρίς ὅν ἀπεγραψάμην καὶ πέρπακα, 0.P. 482 (ii/A.D.); τῆς γενομένης καὶ ἀποπεπεμένης γυναικός, N.P. 19 (ii/A.D.). Moulton adds: "The distinction is very clearly seen in papyri for some centuries." In most instances in the N.T. the distinction is very sharply drawn in the context, as in ὅτι ἔστάφη, καὶ ὅτι ἔγνηερται (1 Cor. 15:4). So ἐκτίσθη, ἐκτισταί (Col. 1:16). Cf. Ac. 21:28. In most instances where we have trouble from the English standpoint it is the perfect, not the aorist that occasions it, as in πέρπακεν καὶ ἦγορασεν (Mt. 13:46). We shall come back to this point under the present perfect. As a rule all that is needed is a little imagination on the part of the English reader to sympathize with the mental alertness expressed in the changing tenses, a sort of "moving picture" arrangement. Cf. κατευνάσεν γὰρ ἑαυτὸν καὶ ἀπελήλυθεν καὶ εὐθέως ἐπεκάθεσέ ὁποίος ἤν (Jas. 1:24). The single point to note concerning the aorist in those examples where we use "have" is that the Greeks did not care to use the perfect. Cf. οὐκ ἔληλυθα καλέσαι δικαίους (Lu. 5:32) with οὐ γὰρ ἦλθον καλέσαι δικαίους (Mt. 9:13), just two ways of regarding the same act. That is the whole story and it is a different thing from saying that the aorist is used "for" the present perfect. Here are some of the most interesting examples in the N.T. where "we" in English prefer "have": ἥκουσατε (Mt. 5:21); εὔρον (8:10); ἀνέγνωτε (12:3); ἑπαχύνθη καὶ ἥκουσαν καὶ ἐκάμμυσαν (13:15, LXX, Is. 6:10).

3 Gk. Synt., p. 125.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 140.
5 Ib., p. 142 f.
Likely enough the timelessness of the Hebrew perfect may have caused this translation into the aorist so common in the LXX, ἰκυρώσατε (Mt. 15:6); συνεζευξεν (19:6); ἀνέγνωσε ὅτι κατηρτίσω (21:16); ἀφήκατε (23:23); κατέστησεν (24:45); ἐποίησεν (27:23); ἡγέρθη (28:6), ἔξεστη (Mk. 3:21), ἀπέθανεν (5:35; cf. τί ἐστι σκύλλεως; 5:35. Cf. ἀλλα καθεύδει; ἐδαμεν (Lu. 5:26); παρεδόθη (10:22); ἰμαρτον (15:21); ἐγνώσαν (Jo. 7:26); ἀφήκεν (8:29); ἔλαβον (10:18); ἔδειξα (10:32); ἔδοξασα (12:28. Cf. δοξάσω; ἔνυσσα (13:14); ἐξελεξάμην (13:18); ἡγάπησα (13:34); ἐγνώρισα (15:15); οὐκ ἐγνώσαν (16:3); ἢραν — ἔθηκαν (20:2); ἐπιάσατε (21:10).2 Cf. Mk. 14:8. Abbott remarks, that the Greek perfect does not lay the same stress on what is recently completed as does the English "have." Cf. also οὐκ ἐγνω (1 Jo. 4:8. Cf. 1 Cor. 8:3); ἐφανερώθη (1 Jo. 4:9. Contrast ἀπέσταλκεν in verse 9 and ἤγαπήκαμεν, ἤγαπήσαμεν in margin, in verse 10 with ἤγαπήσεν and ἀπέστειλεν in verse 10); ἔλαβον (Ph. 3:12); ἔμαθον (4:11); ἐκάθισεν (Heb. 1:3); ἔγειρεν (2 Cor. 5:13). The same event in Mk. 15:44 is first mentioned by ἦδη τέθηκεν and is then referred to by ἦδη (or πάλαι) ἀπέθανεν. The is not here very great, but each tense is pertinent. However, τέθηκεν means practically 'to be dead,' while ἀπέθανεν = 'died,' 'has died.' Cf. Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 108.

(ἡ) Epistolary Aorist. This idiom is merely a matter of standpoint. The writer looks at his letter as the recipient will. It is probably due to delicate courtesy and is common in Latin as well as in the older Greek, though less so in the later Greek.3 The most frequent word so used was ἐγραψα, though ἐπεμψα was also common. The aorist has its normal meaning. One has merely to change his point of view and look back at the writer. In 1 Jo. 2:12-14 we have the rhetorical repetition of γράφω, ἐγραψα (note the perfects after ὅτι). But in 1 Jo. 2:21 ἐγραψα may be the epistolary use, though Winer4 protests against it. Here as in 2:26, ταῦτα, ἐγραψα, the reference may be not to the whole epistle, but to the portion in hand, though even so the standpoint is that of the reader. Cf. also 5:13. In 1 Cor. 9:15 also the reference is to the verses in hand. In Eph. 3:3, καθώς προέγραψα ἐν ὀλίγῳ, the allusion may be to what Paul has just written or to the whole epistle, as is true of ἐπέστειλα (Heb. 13:22). Certainly γράφω is the usual construction in the N. T. (1 Cor. 4:14; 14:37; 2 Cor. 13:10, etc.). Ἐγραψα usually refers

---

1 Most of these exx. from Mt. come from Moulton, Prol., p. 140.
4 W.-Th., p. 278.
to an epistle just finished (Phil. 19; 1 Pet. 5:12; 1 Jo. 5:13),
but even so the standpoint veers naturally to that of the reader.
This is particularly so in Gal. 6:11 which probably refers to the
concluding verses 11-18 and, if so, a true epistolary aorist. In
Ro. 15:15 the reference may be1 to another portion of the
same epistle or to the epistle as a whole. In 1 Cor. 5:9, 11,
\( \epsilon\gamma\rho\alpha\iota\varsigma \) refers to a previous letter, as seems to be true also in 2
Cor. 2:3, 4, 9; 3 Jo. 9. But \( \epsilon\pi\epsilon\mu\varsigma\alpha \) is found in undoubted
instances as in Ac. 23:30; Eph. 6:22; Ph. 2:28; Col. 4:8.
So \( \delta\nu\epsilon\pi\epsilon\mu\varsigma\alpha \) in Phil. 12 and \( \eta\beta\omicron\upsilon\lambda\eta\theta\upsilon\eta \) in Text. Rec. 2 Jo. 12.
Curiously enough Gildersleeve2 says: "The aorist in the N. T.
[Ep. aor.] is clearly due to Roman influence, and is not to be
cited." The epistolary aorist is more common in Latin (cf.
Cicero's *Letters*), probably because of our having more epistolary
material. The idiom occurs often enough in the papyri. Cf.
\( \epsilon\pi\epsilon\mu\varsigma\alpha \), B.G.U. 423 (ii/A.D.), \( \epsilon\gamma\rho\alpha\iota\varsigma \ \upsilon\pi\epsilon\rho\ \alpha\upsilon\tau\omicron\upsilon\ \mu\eta\ \iota\delta\omicron\tau\omicron\varsigma\ \gamma\rho\alpha\omicron\mu\omicron\alpha\tau\omicron\alpha \),
P.Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66). There is therefore no adequate reason for
denying its presence in the N. T. examples above.

(\( \theta \)) Relation to the Future. The future was probably (cf. Brug-
mann, *Griech. Gr.*, p. 480) a late development in the language,
and other devices were at first used, like the present indicative,
the perfect indicative, the aorist subjunctive. The aorist indicative
was also one of the expedients that never quite disappeared.
It is not exactly, like the epistolary aorist, a change of stand-
point. It is a vivid transference of the action to the future (like
the present \( \epsilon\rho\chi\omicron\omicron\mu\alpha\iota \), Jo. 14:3) by the timeless aorist. The aug-
mented form is still used, but the time is hardly felt to be past.
This idiom, survives in the Slavonic also.3 It is a vivid idiom
and is still found in modern Greek.4 Thumb ( *Handb.*, p. 123) cites
\( \kappa\iota \ \alpha\nu \ \mu\epsilon \ \sigma\omicron\upsilon\beta\lambda\dot{i}\sigma\eta\varepsilon \text{te} \), \( \epsilon\nu\alpha\varsigma \ \Gamma\omicron\rho\alpha\imath\iota\kappa\omicron\varsigma \ \epsilon\chi\lambda\theta\eta \), 'even if you impale me only
one Greek perishes.' Radermacher ( *N. T. Gr.*, p. 124) cites from
Epictetus, \( \omicron\tau\alpha\nu \ \theta\epsilon\lambda\varsigma \ \epsilon\xi\eta\lambda\theta\epsilon\varsigma \). Gildersleeve5 calls it "a vision of
the future." Burton6 considers it "rather a rhetorical figure than
a grammatical idiom," but the idiom is not so strange after all.
Cf. Eur., *Alc.*, 386, \( \alpha\pi\omega\lambda\omicron\mu\eta\nu \ \epsilon\iota \ \mu\epsilon \ \lambda\epsilon\iota\psi\epsilon\iota\varsigma \text{=}'I perish if you leave
me.' The examples are not numerous in the N. T. and some
of them may be gnomic. Cf. \( \epsilon\dot{a}n \ \sigma\omicron\upsilon \ \alpha\kappa\omicron\upsilon\sigma\eta \), \( \epsilon\kappa\epsilon\rho\delta\sigma\sigma\varsigma \ \tau\omicron\nu \ \alpha\delta\epsilon\lambda\phi\omicron\nu \ \sigma\omicron\upsilon \) (Mt. 18:15. Cf. *para\alpha\lambda\alpha\beta\varepsilon* as the next apodosis in verse 16
and \( \epsilon\sigma\tau\omicron \) in verse 17); \( \epsilon\dot{a}n \ \kai \ \gamma\alpha\mu\omicron\sigma\varsigma \), \( \omicron\upsilon\chi \ \eta\mu\alpha\tau\omicron\varsigma \) (1 Cor. 7:

---

2 Synt., p. 128.
5 Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 114.
6 *N. T. Moods and Tenses*, p. 23.
28); ὅταν μέλλη σαλπίζειν, καὶ ἐτελέσθη (Rev. 10:7), probably also ἐὰν μὴ τις μένῃ ἐν ἐμοί, ἔβληθη—καὶ ἔξηράθη (Jo. 15:6), though this may be merely gnomical, as already stated. Cf. the use of ἐμερότηθη and ἔμθασεν in Mt. 12:26, 28 in a condition of the present time. In Jo. 13:31 ἐδοξάσθη (twice) is explained (verse 32) by δοξάσει καὶ εὐθὺς δοξάσει. Cf. p. 1020 (standpoint).

(i) Aorist in Wishes. The special use of the aorist indicative in wishes about the past and conditions determined as unfulfilled will be discussed in chapter XIX, Modes.

(k) Variations in the Use of Tenses. Where so much variety is possible, great freedom is to be expected. In modern English we make a point of uniformity of tense in narrative. The Greeks almost made a point of the opposite. It is jejune, to say no more, to plane down into a dead level the Greek spontaneous variety. Cf. ἡμαρτον καὶ ὑπεροῦνται (Ro. 3:23). In Matt. 4:11, for instance, we have ἀφίησιν, (historical pres.), προσήθον (aor.), διηκόνουν (imperfect). In Mt. 13:45 f. note ἐστίν, ζητοῦντι, εὐρών, ἀπέλαθών, πέπρακεν, ἐγένετο, ἴγορασεν. "When they wished to narrate a fact, or to convey a meaning, there is good ground for holding that they employed the tense appropriate for the purpose, and that they employed it just because of such appropriateness."1 That is well said. The explanation is chiefly psychological, not mere analogy, which is true of only a few tenses, especially in late Greek (Middleton, Analogy in Syntax, 1892, p. 6). Jan-naris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 437, lays probably too much stress on "the terminal homophony of the two tenses" (aor. and perf.).

(λ) Translation of the Aorist into English. The Greek aorist ind., as can be readily seen, is not the exact equivalent of any tense in any other language. It has nuances all its own, many of them difficult or well-nigh impossible to reproduce in English. Here, as everywhere, one needs to keep a sharp line between the Greek idiom and its translation into English. We merely do the best that we can in English to translate in one way or another the total result of word (Aktionsart), context and tense.2 Certainly one cannot say that the English translations have been successful with the Greek aorist.3 Weymouth in his New Testament in Modern Speech has attempted to carry out a consistent principle with some success. Moulton4 has thought the matter

4 Prol., pp. 135-140.
important enough for an extended discussion. He makes clear that the Greek aorist is true to itself, however it is rendered into English. Take τινὲς ἐκοιμήθησαν (1 Cor. 15:6), for instance, ‘fell asleep (at various times),’ Moulton explains, "and so have fallen asleep." In Mt. 3:7 ὑπέδειξεν may be translated by 'has warned,' but 'warned' will answer. The English past will translate the Greek aorist in many cases where we prefer "have." Burton\(^1\) puts it clearly thus: "The Greek employs the aorist, leaving the context to suggest the order; the English usually suggests the order by the use of the pluperfect." The Greek aorist takes no note of any interval between itself and the moment of speaking, while the English past takes note of the interval. The Greek aorist and the English past do not exactly correspond, nor do the Greek perfect and the English perfect.\(^2\) The Greek aorist covers much more ground than the English past. Cf. διό ἐκλήθη ὁ ἄγρος ἐκείνος Ἀγρός Αἴματος ἔως τῆς σήμερου (Mt. 27:8), where the Greek aorist is connected with the present in a way that only the English perfect can render. See also ἔως ἀρτί οὐκ ἦττησατε (Jo. 16:24). From the Greek point of view the aorist is true to its own genius. The aorist in Greek is so rich in meaning that the English labours and groans to express it. As a matter of fact the Greek aorist is translatable into almost every English tense except the imperfect, but that fact indicates no confusion in the Greek.\(^3\)

(c) The Aorist Subjunctive and Optative. The aorist of these two "side-moods"\(^4\) may very well be discussed together. The two moods are not radically different as we shall see.

(a) No Time Element in the Subjunctive and Optative.\(^5\) There is only relative time (future), and that is not due to the tense at all.\(^6\) The subjunctive is future in relation to the speaker, as is often true of the optative, though the optative standpoint is then more remote, a sort of future from the standpoint of the past.

(β) Frequency of Aorist Subjunctive. As between the aorist and present in subjunctive and optative, the aorist is far more common. For practical purposes the perfect may be almost left out of view; it is so rare. As a rule in these moods the action is either punctiliar (aorist) or durative (present). The contrast between point and linear action comes out simply and clearly here. It is just that

\(^{1}\) N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 27.
\(^{2}\) Ib., p. 24 f.
\(^{3}\) Thompson, Gk. Synt., 1883, p. xix.
\(^{4}\) Gildersleeve, Am. Jour. of 1908, p. 401.
\(^{5}\) K.-G., Bd. Up. 182.
\(^{6}\) Stahl, Hist.-krit. Synt., p. 171.
seen between the aorist and the imperfect indicative.¹ In the
classical Sanskrit the subjunctive exists only in a remnant of
the first person, which is treated as an imperative, but it is common
enough in the early language.² In Homer (both Iliad and Odyssey)
the aorist is in great preponderance over the present (65 to 35
for the average between subjunctive and optative, about the same
for each).³ Gildersleeve⁴ considers the difference due to the nature
of the constructions, not to mere lack of differentiation in the
early stage of the language. The subj. is more common in Homer
than in the later Greek and the aorist subj. is correspondingly
abundant. There is no doubt that the aorist is gaining in the
κοινή over the present in the subj., opt., imper. (Radermacher,
N. T. Gr., p. 123). The distinction is understood. Cf. μέχρις άν
ήλιος δύν (aim) and ἀξιός άν ἐπίκαιρον δοκή (duration), I. G., XII,
5, 647. Radermacher cites also ὠπώς λαμβάνωσιν and ὠπώς λάβωσιν,
ὠπώς ὑπάρχῃ and ὥσα δοθῇ from a Pergamum inscr., N.13 (B.C. 300).
He fears that this proves confusion between the tenses, and
appeals also to the papyrus example ἦνα γράφω καί φλωράρησω (Deiss-
mann, Light, p. 204). But there is no necessary confusion here.
The modern Greek preserves clearly the distinction between
punctiliar and linear action in the subj. and uses the aorist and
present side by side to show it (Thumb, Handb., p. 124). The
situation in the N. T. is even more striking. Mr. H. Scott,
Birkenhead, England, writes me that he finds only five present
subjs. in Acts and one (13:41) is a quotation. In the Pauline
Epistles (13) he notes 258 dependent aorist subjs. and 161 de-
pendent pres. subjs. Gildersleeve⁵ complains of Stahl's wearis-
omeness in proving what "no one will dispute." The point is
that the aorist subj. or opt. is used as a matter of course unless
durative (linear) action is to be emphasized or (as rarely) the com-
pleted state is to be stressed (perfect). But variations occur even
here. Thus Abbott⁶ notes only two instances of the pres. subj.

¹ Clyde, Gk. Synt., p. 82; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 194.
² Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 298.
³ Schlachter, Statist. Unters., pp. 236-238.
⁴ Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 245.
⁵ Ib., p. 400.
⁶ Joh. Gr., p. 370 f. But there is little point in these exceptions. Abbott
rightly notes the variations in the major uncials between –ις and –ζ in
Mk. 9:43-47. Mr. H. Scott finds εδώ with pres. subj. also (W. H.) in Mk.
1:40; 9:47 (4 in all). In Lu. he adds 5:12 (=Mk. 1:40); 10:6, 8, 10
(εδώ to be supplied); 13:3; 20:28 (8 in all). In Mt. he notes 5:23; 6:22,
23; 8:2 (=Mk. 1:40); 10:13 bis; 15:14; 17:20; 21:21; 24:49 bis; 26:35
(12 in all). But he makes 78 aor. subjs. with εδώ in the Synoptics.
with ἐάν in Mk. (9:45; 14:31) and two in Lu. (6:33; 19:31),
apart from and except clauses with ἔχω and θέλω. The aorist
subjunctive with ἐάν occurs in Synoptics 24 times, present 79.
But in John there is more diversity between the two tenses.
"Most Greek writers observe the distinction between the aorist
and present subjunctive, as Englishmen observe that between
'shall' and unconsciously and without any appearance of
deliberately emphasizing the difference. But we have seen above
(2511) that John employs the two forms with great deliberate-
ness, even in the same sentence, to distinguish between the begin-
ing of 'knowing' and the development of it."1 Cf. ἵνα γνώτε καί
γνωρίσκετε (10:38) and εἴ ταῦτα οἴδατε, μακάριοί ἐστε ἐάν ποιῆτε αὐτά
(13:17), where the pres. is again used purposely. Note also John's
τί ποιῶμεν (6:28) and Luke's τί ποιήσωμεν (3:10). We need not fol-
low all the details of Abbott,2 but he has made it perfectly clear
that John makes the sharp distinction between the aor. and pres.
subj. that is common between the aor. and imperf. ind. Cf. ἐάν τις
tηρήσῃ (Jo. 8:51) and ἐάν τηρῶμεν (1 Jo. 2:3); ὅτι ἐάν αἰτήσῃτε (Jo.
14:13) and δ' ἀν αἰτῶμεν (1 Jo. 3:22). But Paul also knows the
punctiliar force of the aor. subj. Cf. ἁμαρτήσωμεν (Ro. 6:15) with
ἐπιμενῶμεν (6:1), where the point lies chiefly in the difference of
tense. See also 2 Tim. 2:5, ἐὰν δὲ καὶ ἀθλῆ τις, οὐ στημανθήται ἐάν
μὴ νομίμως ἀθλήσῃ. Cf. ποιήτε in Gal. 5:17. In deliberative ques-
tions the aorist subj. is particularly common, as in δῶμεν ἢ μὴ δῶμεν
(Mk. 12:14). In εἰρήνην ἔχωμεν (Ro. 5:1) the durable present
occurs designedly = 'keep on enjoying peace with God,' the
peace already made (δικαιώθητες). Moulton (Prol., p. 186) thinks
that the aorist subj. in relative clauses like δς ἀν φονεύῃ (Mt.
5:21), or ὅπου ἐὰν καταλάβῃ (Mk. 9:18), or conditional sentences
like ἐάν ἀπασάσησθε (Mt. 5:47) "gets a future-perfect sense." But
one doubts if after all this is not reading English or Latin
into the Greek. Cf. Mt. 5:31. The special construction of the
aorist subj. with (οὖ μή) (Jo. 6:35; 18:11) comes up for discussion
elsewhere (pp. 929 f., 1174 f.).

(γ) Aktionsart. The three kinds of point-action occur, of
course, in the aorist subj. Thus in ἵνα μαρτυρήσῃ (Jo. 1:7) the
aorist is merely constative, as is ἐάν μείνητε ἐν ἑμοί (Jo. 15:7). Cf.
ἐάν μή τις μένῃ ἐν ἑμοί (15:6). In Jo. 6:30, ἵνα ἤδωμεν καὶ πιστεύσω-
μέν σοι, the ingressive use is evident in πιστεύσωμεν = 'come to be-
lieve' (cf. ἵνα πιστεύῃτε in verse 29). Cf. also ἵνα πιστυέσωμεν καὶ
ἀγαπῶμεν (1 Jo. 3:23); περιπατήσωμεν (Ro. 6:4; 13:13). The

1 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 381. 2 Ib., pp. 369-388.
effective aorist is seen in πώς πληρωθῶσιν (Mt. 26:54). Cf. ὅταν κατάργησῃ (1 Cor. 15:24) for the "perfective" use of the preposition also. In the modern Greek the aorist subj. preserves Aktionsart (Thumb, Handb., p. 124).

(8) Aorist Subjunctive in Prohibitions. It seems clear\(^1\) that originally both in Sanskrit and Greek prohibition was expressed only by the subj. Hence the growth of the imperative never finally displaced it. In particular the aorist subj. held its place in prohibitions as against the aorist imper. (a late form anyhow). This distinction has held in the main right on through. In the N. T. examples of the aor. imper. in prohibitions do occur in the third person, but the aor. subj. survives. In the second person the rule is still absolute. Moulton\(^2\) has given a very interesting discussion of the development of the discovery of the distinction between the two constructions. The aor. subj. is of course punctiliar, and the present imper. linear. Inasmuch as the prohibition is future, the aorist subj. would naturally be ingressive. Gottfried Hermann long ago made the distinction, but a few years ago Dr. Henry Jackson tells how one day he got the idea from a friend (quoted by Moulton\(^2\)): "Davidson told me that, when he was learning modern Greek, he had been puzzled about the distinction, until he heard a Greek friend use the present imperative to a dog which was barking. This gave him the clue. He turned to Plato's Apology, and immediately stumbled upon the excellent instance, 20 E, μὴ θορυβήσητε, 'before clamour begins,' and 21 A, μὴ θορυβεῖτε, 'when it has begun.' 'This distinction is clearly in harmony with the punctiliar aorist subj. and the durative present imper. It is maintained in ancient Greek and in modern Greek, and Moulton\(^3\) shows how the papyri abundantly illustrate it. Unfortunately the present imperative is rare in the papyri from the nature of the subject-matter, but the few examples agree to the distinction drawn. The aorist subjunctive is abundant enough. Moulton (Prol., p. 123) finds in O.P. (all ii/A.D.) six aorist subjs. with μὴ. Thus μὴ ἀμελήσης refers to a request in a letter. Cf. also μὴ ἀλλαξῃ ποιήσης, ὥρα μηδενί—προορκούσης. But τοῦτο μὴ λέγε, 'stop saying this,' is in a letter in reference to what had already been said. So μὴ ἀγωνία, 'don't go on worrying' Another good example is in Hb.P. 56 (iii/B.C.), σὺ ὡν μὴ ἐνόχλει αὐτόν. Moulton clinches it by the modern Greek μὴ γράψῃς (to one already writing) and μὴ γράψῃς (to one who has not begun),

\(^{1}\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 240.  
\(^{2}\) Prol., p. 122.  
\(^{3}\) Ib., p. 122 f.
The distinction is not admitted by all modern scholars. But the difficulty lies mainly in the use of the present imperative, not in the aorist subj. Examples like μὴ θαυμάσῃς (Jo. 3:7) do occur, where the thing prohibited has begun. Here it is the constative aorist rather than the ingressive which is more usual in this construction. Moulton\(^2\) quotes Dr. Henry Jackson again: "Μὴ δράσῃς always, I believe, means, 'I warn you against doing this,' ‘I beseech you will not'; though this is sometimes used when the thing is being done; notably in certain cases which may be called colloquial or idiomatic, with an effect of impatience, μὴ φροντίσῃς, 'Oh, never mind!' μὴ δείσῃς, 'Never fear!' μὴ θαυμάσῃς, ‘You mustn't be surprised!’" Add also μὴ φοβηθής (Mt. 1:20).

But, as a rule, it is the ingressive aorist subj. used in prohibitions to forbid a thing not yet done or the durative present imper. to forbid the continuance of an act. The N. T. is very rich in examples of both of these idioms because of the hortatory nature of the books.\(^3\) Moulton\(^4\) finds 134 examples of μὴ with the pres. imper. and 84 of μὴ with the aorist subj. In Matthew there are 12 examples of μὴ with the pres. imper. and 29 of μὴ with the aorist subj. But these figures are completely reversed in the Gospel of Luke (27 to 19), in James (7 to 2), in Paul's Epistles (47 to 8) and John's writings (19 to 1). The case in Jo. 3:7 has already been noticed. It may be said at once that the excess of examples of pres. imper. over aorist imper. is the old situation in Homer.\(^5\) In the Attic orators, Miller (\textit{A. J. P.}, xiii, 423) finds the proportion of μὴ ποιεῖ type to μὴ ποιήσῃς type 56 to 44, about the same as that in the N. T., 134 to 84. In the N. T. this predominance holds except in Matthew, 1 Peter and Rev. (Moulton, \textit{Prol.}, p.124). The aorist imper. was an after-growth, and yet is very common in the N. T. (and LXX) as compared with the older Greek.\(^6\) In a the Lord's Prayer, for instance, every tense is aorist (Mt. 6:9-13). Gildersleeve remarks that the aorist suits "instant prayer." But cf. Lu. 11: 2-4. However, the point is

2 Prol., p. 126.  
3 Ib., p. 123. Mr. H. Scott properly observes that "the correctness of these figures will depend upon how a repeated μὴ or μὴδὲ without a verb is to be counted. E.g. is Mt. 10:9 f. to be counted as one or as seven? The same question arises with a verb without a repeated ἔδωκα or ἵνα, etc. It seems to me that these are merely abbreviated or condensed sentences and should be counted as if printed \textit{in extenso} — as separate sentences. In that case Mt. 10:9 f. would count seven instances of μὴ with subj. aor."

4 Ib.  
5 Gildersl., \textit{Am. Jour. of Philol.}, 1908, p. 244,  
6 Gildersl., Justin Martyr, p. 137.
here that in the N. T., as a rule, the idiom gives little difficulty. Cf. μὴ νομίσητε (Mt. 5:17); μὴ εἰσενέγκας ἡμᾶς (Mt. 6:13; Lu. 11:4); μὴ στήσῃς αὐτοῖς ταῦτα (Ac. 7:60). Cf. μὴ σαλπίσῃς (Mt. 6:2), 'don't begin to sound,' and μὴ θησαυρίζετε (6:19), 'they were already doing it.' Note again μὴ δώτε μηδὲ βάλητε (Mt. 7:6) and μὴ κρίνετε (7:1). With Mt. 3:9 μὴ δόξητε λέγειν compare Lu. 3:8 μὴ ἁρέξησθε λέγειν. But in Lu. 3:14, μηδένα διασείσθητε μηδὲ συκοφαντησθήτε, we have the constative aorist rather than the pres. imper. (the soldiers were present, if John spoke in Greek to them, more restrained at any rate). In Lu. 11:7, μὴ μοι κόπον λαμάρεχε='quit troubling me,' while in Rev. 10:4, μὴ αὐτά γράψης='do not begin to write.' (Cf. Ἑμελλον γράφειν in same verse.) It is not necessary to labour the point. But in Mt. 6:25 we have μὴ μεριμνᾶτε, implying that they were anxious in 6:34, μὴ οὖν μεριμνήσθητε, a general warning in conclusion. Once more, in Mt. 10:26, note μὴ οὖν φοβεῖσθε αὐτούς, the warning against fearing evil men; in 10:31, μὴ οὖν φοβείσθε='quit being afraid.' In Jo. 5:45, μὴ δοκεῖτε, it is implied that 'they had been thinking that'; in 2 Cor. 11:16, μὴ τίς με δόξῃ, 'no one did, of course.' In Jo. 6:43 μὴ γογγύζετε is interpreted by ἐγώ γυναίκα in verse 41. Cf. μὴ κλαίετε (Lu. 8:52), 'they were weeping.' In μὴ δόξῃ 2 Cor. 11:16 and μὴ ἐξουσιάσθηση (1 Cor. 16:11) the normal use of μὴ with the aorist subj. occurs with the third person. A good double example occurs in Lu. 10:4, μὴ βαστάζετε βαλλάντιον (‘don't keep carrying’), and in μηδένα ἀσπασάσθησθε (‘don't stop to salute’). In Col. 2:21 μὴ ἄψης a warning to the Colossian Christians not to be led astray by the gnostic asceticism. In 2 Cor. 6:17, ἀκαθάρτου μὴ ἄπτεσθε, the prophet (Is. 52:11) assumes that the people were guilty, if ΚΑΨ be followed as by Paul, but B has ἄψησθε. In Jo. 20:17, μὴ μου ἄπτου, Jesus indicates that Mary must cease clinging to him. Cf. μήτε ὁμώσῃς (Mt. 5:36) and μὴ ὁμωθῇτε (Jas. 5:12). As to the present imperative further discussion belongs elsewhere, but a word is necessary here. Moulton² thinks that "rather strong external pressure is needed to force the rule upon Paul." John has only one case of μὴ with the aorist subj., and yet Moulton holds that all his uses of the present imper. fit the canon completely. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 164) says: "μὴ with the present imperative has to do with a course of action and means sometimes 'keep from' (resist), sometimes 'cease to' (desist)." So 'continue not doing,' or 'do not continue doing.' One of the imper. presents is merely exclama-

tory (cf. ἄγε, Jas. 5:1). Another, like ὁρα with μηδενὶ ἐπιτὶς (Mt. 8:4), is almost like a "sort of particle adding emphasis." If "a negative course of action" (Gildersleeve) is enjoined, it is not necessarily implied that one is doing the thing. Moulton's difficulty about Paul is thus obviated. Hence the answer to μὴ ποιεῖν, which usually = 'Stop doing,' may be in a given case = 'Do not from time to time,' 'Do not as you are in danger of doing,' 'Do not attempt to do' or simply 'Continue not doing.' In Eph. 5:18 μὴ μηθοὺσκεσθε may mean that some of them were getting drunk (cf. even at the Lord's Table, 1 Cor. 11:21), or a course of action (the habit) may be prohibited. In μὴ ἀμαρτάνετε (Eph. 4:26) the imminent peril of sin may be implied (cf. ὁργίζεσθε)

So in in μὴ ποιήσεσθε (Col. 3:9) we may have the course of action, though the usual linear notion is pertinent. But cf. μὴ ἀμέλει (1 Tim. 4:14), μηδενὶ ἐπιτίθει, and μηδὲ κοινώνει (5:22), and μὴ γίνε-σθε ὡς οἱ ὑποκριταί (Mt. 6:16), as illustrations of the point in dispute. In the modern Greek "as a prohibitive the aorist subj. is on the whole less commonly used than the pres. subj." (Thumb, Handb., p. 127). Μὴ with the present imper. survives in a few instances, but the subj. in modern Greek does practically all the work of prohibiting.

(e) Aorist Subjunctive with οὐ μὴ. It is merely the tense that calls for comment here, not the mode nor the negative. The present subj. was sometimes used with οὐ μὴ in the ancient Greek, but no examples occur in the N. T. The aorist is very natural as the action is distinctly punctiliar. Of the 100 examples of οὐ μὴ in the W. H. text, 86 are with the aorist subj., 14 are future inds. Cf. οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθητε (Mt. 5:20); οὐκέτι οὐ μὴ πίω (Mk. 14:25).

The other aspects of the subject will be discussed elsewhere (chapters on Modes and Particles).

(ζ) Aorist Optative. It is more frequent than the present in the N. T. This is partly due to the relative frequency of μὴ γένοιτο (cf. Gal. 6:14) and the rarity of the optative itself. The distinction of tense is preserved. Cf. μηδείς φάγοι (ingressive, Mk. 11:14); πλήθυνθείη (effective, 1 Pet. 1:2); κατευθύναι—πλεονάσσαι καὶ περισσεύσαι (constative, 1 Th. 3:11 f.). Cf. δύση (2 Tim. 1:16, 18). Cf. 2 Tim. 4:16. These are wishes. The aorist occurs also with the potential opt. as in τί ἄν ποιησαίεν, (Lu. 6:11). Cf. Ac. 26:29. In the N. T. certainly the optative usually refers to the future (relatively), though Gildersleeve is willing to admit

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 124. 2 Ib., p. 125 f. 3 Ib. 4 Ib., p. 190. 5 Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 403.
that Homer uses the potential opt. with to a few times of the past. The opt. in indirect questions has to be noted.

(d) **The Aorist Imperative.** In Homer the aorist imperative, as already stated, is not so common as the present, while in the N. T. it is remarkably frequent. This frequency of the imper. is characteristic of the κοινὴ generally, though in the end the subj. came to be used in positive commands like the Latin. There is no complication in the positive command, like the ban put upon μὴ ποίησον from the beginning of our knowledge of the Greek language. Hence in the positive imperative we are free to consider the significance of the aorist (and present) tense in the essential meaning. Here the distinction between the punctiliar (aorist) and the durative (present) is quite marked. Indeed Moulton (Prol., p. 129) holds that to get at "the essential character of aorist action, therefore, we must start with the other moods" than ind. It is easier, for the time element is absent.

Cf. περιβαλοῖ τὸ ἵματίου σου καὶ ἀκολούθει μοι (Ac. 12:8). It is exactly the distinction between the aorist and imperf. ind. (cf. ἔξελθων ἡκολούθει in verse 9). The constative aorist, περιβαλοῦ, is like the preceding, ζῶσαι καὶ ὑπόθησαι τὰ σανδάλια σου. In Jo. 5:8 note ἄρων τῶν κράβαττῶν σου καὶ περιπάτει (the ingressive aorist and the durative, 'walking,' 'went on walking'), and the same tense-distinction is preserved in verse 9, ἤρε---καὶ περιπάτει (cf. further 5:11). In ὑπαγε νήψαι (Jo. 9:7) the present ὑπαγε is exclamatory (cf. ἔγειρε ἄρων in 5:8). Cf. Mk. 2:9, 11. In the midst of the aorists in Jo. 2:5-8 (the effective ποίησατε, γεμίσατε, ἀντλήσατε νῦν) the present φέρετε stands out. It is probably a polite conative offer to the master of the feast. In the Lord's Prayer in Mt. (6:9-11) note ἀργασθῆτω, γευσθῆτω, δός, ἀφεῖς and εἴσελθε—πορευέσθαι in 6:6. In opposition to δός σήμερον in Matthew we have δίδου τῷ καθ' ἡμέραν in Lu. 11:3, a fine contrast between the punctiliar and the linear action. So τῷ αἰτοῦντι δός (Mt. 5:42) and παντὶ αἰτοῦντι δίδου (Lu. 6:30); χάριτε ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ (Lu. 6:23) and. χαίρετε (Mt. 5:12); ἀρατε ταῦτα ἐντεύθεν, μὴ ποιεῖτε (Jo. 2:16, a, very fine illustration). In Ro. 6:13 a pointed distinction in.

the tenses is drawn, μηδὲ παριστάνετε τὰ μέλη ὑμῶν ὑπλα ἀδικίας ἡ ἁμαρτία, ἀλλὰ παραστήσατε ἑαυτούς (one the habit of sin forbidden, the other the instant surrender to God enjoined). Cf. also νῦν

---

3 Ib., p. 449.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 173.
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 129.
παραστήσατε in verse 19. In Lu. 7:8, πορεύθητι — πορεύεται, ποιήσον — ποιεί, the presents are also aoristic. As with the ind. the aorist (constative) may be used with a durative word. So μείνατε ἐν τῇ ἁγάπῃ τῇ ἐμῇ (Jo. 15:9). The action, durative in itself, is treated as punctiliar. Cf. Mt. 26:38, μείνατε ὦδε καὶ γρηγορεῖτε μετ' ἐμοῦ (Mk. 14:34). So with μακροθυμήσατε ἐώς τῆς παρουσίας τοῦ κυρίου (Jas. 5:7); τὴν παραθήκην φύλαξον (1 Tim. 6:20). Cf. 2 Tim. 1:14; 1 Jo. 5:21; ταῦτα παράθου (2 Tim. 2:2); συνακοπάθησον (2:3); σπουδασον (2:15). Cf. the aorists in Jas. 4:9.

Most of them call for little comment. Cf. Jo. 4:16, 35. Abbott notes the avoidance of the aorist imper. of πιστεύω, possibly because mere belief (aorist) had come to be misunderstood. The pres. imper. presses the continuance of faith (cf. Jo. 14:11).

The real force of the effective aorist is seen in λύσατε τὸν ναόν τοῦτου (Jo. 2:19). In Mk. 15:32, καταβάτω νῦν, the "perfective" force of the preposition is added. Moulton notes that 1 Peter shows a marked liking for the aorist (20 aorists to 5 presents in commands, H. Scott), while Paul's habit, as already noted, is just the opposite. Moulton has an interesting comment on the fact that "in seven instances only do the two evangelists [Mt. 5-7 and Luke's corresponding passage] use different tenses, and in all of them the accompanying variation of phraseology accounts for the differences in a way which shows how delicately the distinction of tenses was observed." There may be variations in the translation of the Aramaic original (if the Sermon on the Mount was spoken in Aramaic?), "but we see no trace of indifference to the force of the tenses." In the imperative also different writers will prefer a different tense. One writer is more fond of the aorist, another of the present. Note the impressive aorists, ἀρατε τὸν λίθον, λύσατε αὐτὸν καὶ ἀφετε αὐτὸν ὑπάγειν (Jo. 11:39, 44). Abbott rightly calls the aorist here more authoritative and solemn than the present would have been. The aorist here accords with the consciousness of Jesus (11:41, ἡμικοσμας). The aorist imper. occurs in prohibitions of the third person, like μὴ γυνώτω (Mt. 6:3); μὴ καταβάτω (24:17); μὴ ἐπιστρέψατω (24:18). This construction occurs in ancient Greek, as μηδε σε κινησάτω τις, Soph. Ai. 1180.

But μὴ and the aorist subj. was preferred. In the N. T. this is rarely found (1 Cor. 16:11; 2 Th. 2:3; 2 Cor. 11:16).

(e) The Aorist Infinitive. In Homer the durative (present) idea is more common than the punctiliar (aorist) with the infiniti-

---

1 Joh. Gr., p. 319 f.  
3 Ib.  
4 Joh. Gr., p. 318 f.
Live, as with the imperative. There is, of course, no time in the inf. except relative time in indirect discourse. The history of the inf. belongs elsewhere, but here we have only to do with the excellent illustration of punctiliar action afforded by the aorist inf. Radermacher, p. 123, finds the aorist and the pres. inf. together in the Carthaginian inscr. (Audollent, 238, 29, Hi/A.D.), μηδὲ τρέχειν μηδὲ περιπατεῖν μηδὲ νικῆσαι μηδὲ ἔξελθειν. So in the papyri B.G.U., I, 183, 25. The features of the tenses in the inf., once they are fully established, correspond closely to the use in the moods. As a matter of fact originally the inf., because of its substantival origin, was devoid of real tense-idea (Moulton, Prol., p. 204), and it was only by analogy that tense-ideas were associated with the inf. But still the aorist inf. deserves a passing word. Take Ac. 15:37 f., for instance, Βαρνάβας δὲ ἐβούλετο συν-παραλαβεῖν καὶ τὸν Ἡ. τὸν καλ. Μάρκον. Here the constative aorist is perfectly natural for the proposed journey. But see the outcome, Πάυλος δὲ ἥξιον—μὴ συνπαραλαμβάνειν τούτον. Paul was keenly conscious of the discomforth of Mark's previous desertion. He was not going to subject himself again to that continual peril (durative). Cf. also Mt. 14:22, Ἡνάγκασε τοὺς μαθητὰς ἐμβηναί (constative aorist), καὶ προάγειν αὐτόν (durative, 'go on ahead of him'). An interesting example occurs in Jo. 13:36 f., οὐ δύνασαι μοι νῦν ἀκολουθήσαι (constative aorist most likely); διὰ τί οὐ δύναμαι σοι ἀκολουθεῖν ἄρτι (durative, 'keep on following,' is Peter's idea). The aorist inf. is the predominant construction with δύναμαι, δυ-νατός, θέλω, κελεύω, etc. The distinction in tenses is well observed. For δύναμαι see further λαμβάνειν (Jo. 3:27) and λαβεῖν (14:17); βαστάζειν (16:12) and βαστάσαι (Rev. 2:2); πιστεύσαι, (Jo. 5:44) and πιστεύειν (12:39). Abbott notes also that ποιησαί occurs in John with δύναμαι, only in Jo. 11:37, whereas ιδεῖν, εἰσελθεῖν, γεννηθήναι are natural (3:3 ff.). So with θέλω note λαβεῖν (Jo. 6:21); πιάσαι (7:44), but ἐρωτάν (16:19). In Mt. 5:17 f. καταλύσαι and πληρώσαι are effective, but σιγῆσαι (Ac. 15:13) is ingressive, while αἴτησαι (Mt. 6 : 8) is constative. Cf. Lu. 7:24 f. The aorist inf. is rare with μέλλω (ἀποκαλυφθήναι, Ro. 8:18; Gal. 3:23, though ἀποκαλύπτεσθαι in 1 Pet. 5:1). So ἐμελεύν ἀποθανεῖν (Rev. 3:2). Cf. Rev. 3:16; 12:4. A good example of the constative aorist

1 idea Gildersl., Am. Jour. of Philol., p. 244. In Sans. the inf. has no tenses at all.
3 Moulton, ib., p. 130.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 196 f.
6 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 360 f.
inf. occurs in Ro. 14:21. The aorist inf. is used with an aorist as the ind., οὐκ ἠλθοῦν καταλύσαι (Mt. 5:17), the subj., ἔπωμεν πῦρ καταβήναι (Lu. 9:54), the imper., ἄφες θάψαι (Mt. 8:22). But the aorist inf. is common also with durative tenses like ἔζησον κρατήσαι (Mk. 12:12); οὐκ ἤθελεν—ἐπάραϊ (Lu. 18:13). There is apparently no instance in the N. T. of an aorist inf. used to represent an aorist ind. in indirect discourse. In Lu. 24:46, ὅτι οὕτως γέγραπται παθεῖν καὶ ἀναστήναι ἐκ νεκρῶν, we have the usual timeless aorist, the subject of γέγραπται. So μηδείν (2:26). In Ac. 3:18 παθεῖν is the object of προκαθαρίζον. The aorist and pres. inf. with prepositions vary a good deal. The aorist occurs with μετα (Mt. 26:32; Lu. 12:5, etc.), with πρό (Lu. 2:21; Jo. 1:48); πρός (Mt. 6:1); ἐις (Ph. 1:23); and even with ἐν sometimes (Lu. 2:27), but only once with διά (Mt. 24:12). Cf. Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 49 f. The following are Mr. H. Scott's figures for the Synoptics:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>P</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>P</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>P</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>P</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>P</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>P</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>Perf.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>116</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Perf. 4
17

There are more articular presents than aorists in N. T.

(f) The Aorist Participle. The tenses got started with the participle sooner than with the inf. (cf. Sanskrit), but in neither is there time except indirectly. The Sanskrit had tenses in the participles. The aorist part. is not so frequent in Homer as is the present. But "the fondness of the Greeks for aorist participles in narrative is very remarkable."4

(a) Aktionsart. That is present here also. Thus we find the ingressive aorist, μεταμελήθει (Mt. 27:3); φοβηθεῖσα (Mk. 5:33); ἀγνοῆσαντες (Ac. 13:27); ἀγαπησας (2 Tim. 4:10). The effective

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 197.
3 Gildersle., Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 244.
4 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gr., p. 213.
aorist appears in πληρώσαντες (Ac. 12:25), the constative in συν-παραλαβόντες (ib.). Further examples of the effective aorist are πείσαντες τούς ὄχλους καὶ λιθάσαντες τὸν Παῦλον (Ac. 14:19); δικαιωθέντες (Ro. 5:1). The constative is seen again in παραδοῦσ (Mt. 27:4); πιστεύσαντες (Jo. 7:39). The aorist participle in itself is, of course, merely punctiliar action.

(β) 'O and the Aorist Participle. The punctiliar force of the aorist part. is well illustrated in this idiom. It differs from the relative (ὅς + verb) in being a more general expression. In Mt. 23:20 f., ὁ ὀμόσας ὄμνυει, we have identical action, not antecedent. The aorist is, strictly speaking, timeless (Burton, Moods and Tenses, p. 69). ὁ ὀμόσας = 'the swearer,' ὁ λαβὼν = 'the receiver,' etc. Cf. Seymour, "On the Use of the Aorist Part. in Greek," Transactions of the Am. Philol. Ass., 1881, p. 89. In John the examples, however, are usually definite.1 Contrast ὁ λαβὼν (Jo. 3:33) probably = 'the Baptist' with πᾶς ὁ ἄκούσας — μαθηθῶν (6:45) and οἱ ἄκούσαντες, οἱ ποιήσαντες (5:25, 29). Ὄ+ aorist part. may be used with any tense of the ind. Thus ὁ λαβὼν in Jo. 3:33 occurs with ἔσφαραγίσεν, πᾶς ὁ ἄκούσας (6:45) with ἔρχεται, οἱ ποιήσαντες (5:29) with ἐκπορεύσονται. Cf. Mt. 26:52, πάντες οἱ λαβόντες μάχαιραν ἐν μαχαίρῃ ἄπολούνται. In simple truth the aorist in each instance is timeless. It is not necessary to take it as= future perf.2 in an example like ὁ ὅποιοι εἰς τέλος ὡτος σωθήσεται (Mk. 13:13). So Mt. 10:39. Note the resumptive ὡτος. Cf. ὁ γυνοῦς—καὶ μὴ ἐτοιμάζας ἢ ποιήσας δαρῆσεται (Lu. 12:47). Cf. Jo. 7:39; 16:2; 20:29, in all of which examples the simple punctiliar action is alone presented in a timeless manner. But in Jo. 3:13, οὔδεις ἀναβέβηκεν εἰς τὸν ὦρανον εἰ μὴ ὁ ἐκ τοῦ ὦρανοῦ καταβάς, the content suggests antecedent action. Cf. also 6:41, ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ ἄρτος ὁ καταβάς; τὸν ἀποστείλαντα in Mt. 10:40; Jo. 5:15, ὁ ποιήσας; Heb. 10:29. 'O and the aorist part. is sometimes used of an act past with reference to the time of writing, though future with reference to the action of the principal verb.3 This classic idiom occurs in the N. T. also. Cf. Ἰουδας ὁ Ἰσκαριώτης ὁ καὶ παραδοῦσ αὐτῶν, (Mt. 10:4; cf. also 27:3); usually the phrase is ὁ παραδίδοις (26:25; Jo. 18:2, 5). So in Ac. 1:16 both γενομένου and συναβούσιν are future to προείπε. In Col. 1:8 ὁ καὶ δηλώσας is future to ἐμάθετε. So Jo. 11:2 (cf. 12:3) ἢν δὲ Μαριάμ ἢ ἀλέψασα τὸν κύριον μύρῳ καὶ ἐκμαξάσα τούς

1 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 363.
2 As Abbott does, Joh. Gr., p. 362.
3 Ib., p. 364 f.
πόδας αὐτοῦ. Cf. Ac. 7:35 τοῦ ὀφθέντος, 9:21 ὁ πορθήσας. This development, though apparently complex, is clue to the very indefiniteness (and timelessness) of the aorist participle and the adjectival force of the attributive participle.

(y) Antecedent Action. This is the usual idiom with the circumstantial participle. This is indeed the most common use of the aorist participle. But it must not be forgotten that the aorist part. does not in itself mean antecedent action, either relative or absolute.\(^1\) That is suggested by the context, the natural sequence of events. As examples of the antecedent aorist part. (antecedent from context, not \textit{per se}) take ὑπητῆσαι—ἐπείνασέν (Mt. 4:2); ἰδὼν—μεταμελήθη εἶπεν (27:3); ἐφίλα — ἀνέχώρησεν, ἀπελθὼν ἀπήγγελτο (27:5). These so-called antecedent aorists do not have to precede the principal verb in position in the sentence. Thus ἦγείρεν αὐτὴν κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς (Mk. 1:31), εὐχαριστοῦμεν—ἄκοψαντες (Col. 1:3, 4), μέλλειν κρίνειν—παρασχῶν (Ac. 17:31), ἐκάθισεν—γενόμενος (Heb. 1:3). This idiom is very common in the N. T. as in the older Greek.\(^2\) Indeed, one participle may precede and one may follow the verb as in Lu. 4:35, ἐξῆλθον—βλάψαν. In Heb. 6:10 the aorist is distinguished from the present, ἐνεδείξασθε—διακονήσαντες τοῖς ἁγίοις καὶ διακοινώνετες. In Ro. 5:16, δὲ ἐνός ἁμαρτήσατος, there is a reference to Adam (verse 14). The principal verb may itself be future as in ἀρας—ποιήσω (1 Cor. 6:15). In Lu. 23:19 ἦν βληθεὶς is punctiliar periphrastic (aorist passive), ἦν being aoristic also. Moulton (Prol., p. 249) cites ἦν ἄκούσασα from Pelagia (inscr. 18). Cf. ἦσαν γενόμενοι in Thuc. 4, 54, 3, and εἶναν φανεῖς in Herod. 3:27. See Gildersleeve, \textit{Syntax}, p. 125.

(δ) But Simultaneous Action is Common also. It is so with the circumstantial participle as with the supplementary. Here again it is a matter of suggestion. It is simple enough with the supplementary participle as in ἔλαβον ἐνέσαντες (Heb. 13:2), though rare, the present suiting better (cf. Mt. 17:25). The usual idiom is seen in ἐπεύσατο λαλῶν (Lu. 5:4). Indeed this simultaneous action is in exact harmony with the punctiliar meaning of the aorist tense. It is a very common idiom (chiefly circumstantial) in the N. T.\(^3\) as in the older Greek.\(^4\) So πέμψας—ἐπεν (Mt. 2:8); ἀποκριθεὶς ἐπεν (22:1); ἡμαρτον παραδοῦσιν αἰμα δίκαιον (27:4);

\(^1\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 197; Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 70; Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 160.
\(^2\) W.-M., p. 433.
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol., p. 131.
\(^4\) Goodwin, Gk. Moods and Tenses, p. 49 f.
TENSE (ΧΡΟΝΟΣ) 861

te kalwê̂j e[poi<hsaj parageno<menoj (Ac. 10:33); χρησάμενος ἐπέστρεψεν, (27:3). Cf. Ac. 1:24; Ro. 4:20; Heb. 2:10. It is needless to press the point except to observe that the order of the part. is immaterial. Note Ac. 10:33 above. So in σώσον καταβάς (Mk. 15:30); ἥλθαν σπεύσαντες (Lu. 2:16. Cf. σώσον καταβάς, Lu. 19:5); ἐμαρτύρησεν δούς τὸ πνεῦμα (Ac. 15:8); διέκρινεν καθαρίσας (15:9); ἐποίησαν ἀποστείλαντες (11:30); ἐγκατέλειπεν ἀγαπήσας (2 Tim. 4:10); ἐλάβετε πιστεύσαντες (Ac. 19:2). This construction of the part. after the verb is very common in the N. T. The coincident use of the aorist tense occurs also with the imperfect, as ἐκπεπλῆρωκεν—ἀναστήσας (Ac. 7:26), ἐπιβαλῶν ἐκαίεν (Mk. 14:72); the present, as ἀποκριθεὶς λέγει (Mk. 8:29); the perfect, as συνήλλασσεν—εἰπόν (Ac. 13:33); and the future, as καλῶς ποιήσεις προπέμψας (3 Jo. 6). In many examples only exegesis can determine whether antecedent or coincident action is intended, as in Heb. 9:12 εἰσήλθεν—εὑράμενος (Moulton, Prol., p. 132). So Moulton (ib., p. 131) notes εἰπόθσα a for antecedent and εἴπασα (BC*) for coincident action in Jo. 11:28. The coincident aorist part. is common enough in the ancient Greek (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 141). The papyri show it also. Cf. εὗ ποιήσεις δούς, F.P. 121 (iii A.D.), a constant formula in the papyri (Moulton, Prol., p. 131). Moulton (ib.) illustrates the obscure ἐπιβαλῶν in Mk. 14:72 by ἐπιβαλῶν συνέχωσεν Tb.P. 50 (B.C.), 'he set to and dammed up.' If it is coincident in Mark, it is so "with the first point of the linear ἔκλαιεν."

(e) Subsequent Action not Expressed by the Aorist Participle.

Some writers have held this as possible, though no satisfactory examples have been adduced. Gildersleeve2 denies that Stahl succeeds in his implication. "Coincidence or adverbiality will explain the tense." Burton3 likewise admits that no certain instance of an aorist part. used to express subsequent action has been found. He claims the idiom in the N. T. to be due to "Aramaic influence." But we can no longer call in the Aramaic or Hebrew, alas, unless the Greek itself will not square with itself. The instances cited by Burton are all in Acts (16:23; 22:24; 23:35; 24:23; 25:13). "In all these cases it is scarcely possible to doubt that the participle (which is without the article and follows the verb) is equivalent to καί with a co-ordinate verb and refers to an action

---

2 Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 408.
3 N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 66.
sequent in fact and in thought to that of the verb which it follows.\textsuperscript{1} This view is held by Prof. Sir W. M. Ramsay\textsuperscript{2} to apply to Ac. 16:6, and is in fact essential to his interpretation of that passage. Rackham\textsuperscript{3} adds Ac. 12:25 and regards these examples as "decisive." Another instance urged is Ac. 21:14. But are they "decisive" after all? Gildersleeve\textsuperscript{4} is still unconvinced. Blass\textsuperscript{5} bluntly says that such a notion "is not Greek" and even refuses to follow the uncials in Ac. 25:13 in reading \textit{ἀσπασάμενοι} rather than \textit{ἀσπασόμενοι}. Moulton\textsuperscript{6} refuses to follow Rackham in his interpretation of Ac. 12:25: "But to take \textit{συνπαραλαβόντες} in this way involves an unblushing aorist of \textit{subsequent} action, and this I must maintain has not yet been paralleled in the N. T. or outside." And, once more, Schmiedel\textsuperscript{7} comments on Ac. 16:6: "It has to be maintained that the participle must contain, if not something antecedent to 'they went' (διηλήθον), at least something synchronous with it, in no case a thing subsequent to it, if all the rules of grammar and all sure understanding of language are not to be given up." The matter might safely be left in the hands of these three great grammarians. But an appeal to the examples will be interesting.

As to Ac. 12:25, \textit{ὑπέστρεψαν—πληρώσαντες τὴν διακοινίαν, συνπαραλαβόντες Ἰωάννην}, there is no problem at all unless \textit{εἰς} be read rather than \textit{ἐκ} or \textit{ἀπό}. It is true that \textit{KBL} read \textit{εἰς}, but that reading is contradicted by the context. In 11:30 it is plain that Barnabas and Saul were sent from Antioch to Jerusalem, and in 13:3, 5, they are in Antioch with John Mark. The great uncials are not always correct, but if they are right in reading \textit{εἰς}, the text has been otherwise tampered with. Even granting the genuineness of \textit{εἰς} and the "subsequent" aorist, we are absolutely in the dark as to the sense of the passage. With \textit{εἰς} the coincident aorist is good Greek, but still leaves us in the dark. With \textit{ἐκ} or \textit{ἀπό} there is no problem at all, \textit{πληρώσαντες} being antecedent, and \textit{συνπαραλαβόντες} coincident. In 16:6, \textit{διηλῆθον δὲ τὴν Φρυγίαν καὶ Γαλατικὴν}
χώραν, κωλυθέντες ύπο τοῦ ἀγίου πνεύματος λαλῆσαι τὸν λόγον ἐν τῇ Ἁσίᾳ, the participle is naturally antecedent (or coincident). Paul was headed west for Asia, but, being forestalled by the Spirit, he turned farther north through "the Phrygian and Galatic region." Later he tried to push on into Bithynia, but the Spirit again interposed and he deflected northwest to Troas (16:7 f.). One is not entitled to make κωλυθέντες= καὶ ἐκωλύθησαν because of the exigencies of a theory that demands that "the Phrygian and Galatic region" be Lycaonia (southern part of the Roman province of Galatia), which had already been traversed (16:1 f.). Besides, the narrative in 16:6 seems to be not resumptive, but a new statement of progress. Whatever the fate of the much discussed "South Galatian" theory, the point of grammar here is very clear. Another so-called instance is in 16:23, ἔβαλον εἰς φυλακήν, παραγγειλαντες τῷ δεσμῳφύλακι. This is so obviously a case of coincident action that it would never have been adduced but for need of examples to support a theory elsewhere. Certainly "in 17:26 ὁρίσας is not 'later' than the ἐποίησεν in time (Moulton, Prol., p. 133). Still worse is the instance in 21:14, μὴ πειθομένου δὲ αὐτοῦ ἤρυχάσαμεν εἰπόντες: Τοῦ κυρίου τὸ θέλημα γινέσθω. The participle is here necessarily antecedent or coincident (this last remark of acquiescence). So in 22:24, ἐκέλευσεν—ἐἴπας, the participle is coincident like the common ἀποκριθεῖς εἴπεν. Cf. λέγων in Heb. 2:11 f.; Ac. 7:35. Precisely the same thing is true of ἐφη—κελεύσας in 23:35. In 24:23, ἀνεβάλετο is expanded by three coincident aorist participles, εἰδὼς—ἐἴπας—δισταξάμενος. There remains 25:13, κατήντησαν εἰς Καισαρίαν ἀσπασάμενοι τὸν Φήρστον. Here Blass, as already noted, accepts the future ἀσπασόμενοι, but the aorist is probably correct. But even so, if one simply notes the "perfective" force of the preposition in κατήντησαν, ‘went down,’ he will have no difficulty at all with the coincident action of the aorist part. Κατήντησαν is the effective aorist and accents the end (reinforced by κατ—). They came down saluting (‘by way of salutation’). The salutation took place, of course, when they were "down" (κατ—). Findlay (in loco) connects ἀσπ., with the initial act of κατήντησαν. Thus vanish into air the examples of "subsequent" action with the aorist part. in the N. T., and the construction is not found elsewhere. Moulton (Prol., p. 132) cites from the papyri, ἐξ ὃν δώσεις Σ.—λυτρώσασά μου τὰ ἰμάτια δρ. ἐκατόν O.P. 530 (i/ii A.D.), a clear case of coincident action. The redemption of the clothes is obtained by paying the hundred drachma.
A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

(ζ) Aorist Participle in Indirect Discourse (Complementary Participle). It is a rare construction on the whole, though more frequent with ὄραω than with ἀκοῦω. This aorist part. is absolutely timeless, not even relatively past. It is another instance of the coincident aorist part. So ὄσα ἔκοψαμεν γενόμενα (Lu. 4:23), ἑθεώρουν τὸν Σατανὰν ὡς ἀστραπήν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ πεσόντα (10:18). In πεσόντα we have the constative aorist. Contrast the perfect in Rev. 9:1, εἶδον ἀστέρα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ πεπτυκότα εἰς τὴν γῆν, and the present in Rev. 7:2, εἶδον ἄλλον ἀναβαίνοντα (linear), and εἶδαμέν τινα ἐν τῷ ὄνοματι σου ἐκβαλλοντα δαίμονια (Lu. 9:49). Cf. εἶδεν ἄνδρα—εἰσελθόντα καὶ ἐπιθέντα (Ac. 9:12. So in 10:3; 26:13); ἔκοισαμεν—ἐνεχθείσαν (2 Pet. 1:18).

2. PUNCTILIAR (AORISTIC) PRESENT (ὁ ἐνεστώς χρόνος). The present tense is named entirely from point of time which only applies to the indicative. But a greater difficulty is due to the absence of distinction in the tense between punctiliar and linear action. This defect is chiefly found in the indicative, since in the subj., opt., imper., inf. and part., as already shown, the aorist is always punctiliar and the so-called present practically always linear, unless the Aktionsart of the verb itself is strongly punctiliar. Cf. discussion of the imper. But in the ind. present the sharp line drawn between the imperf. and aorist ind. (past time) does not exist. There is nothing left to do but to divide the so-called Pres. Ind. into Aoristic Present and Durative Present (or Punctiliar Present and Linear Present). The one Greek form covers both ideas in the ind. The present was only gradually developed as a distinct tense (cf. the confusion about ἐ-φη-ν, whether aorist or imperf.). The present is formed on punctiliar as well as linear roots. It is not wise therefore to define the pres. ind. as denoting "action in progress" like the imperf. as Burton does, for he has to take it back on p. 9 in the discussion of the "aoristic present," which he calls a "distinct departure from the prevailing use of the present tense to denote action in progress." In sooth, it is no "departure" at all. The idiom is as old as the tense itself and is due to the failure in the development of separate tenses for punctiliar and linear action in the ind. of present time.

"The forms εἰμί, εἶμι, φημί, ἀγω, γράφω, etc., in which the stem has the form generally found only in aorists (§ 11, § 31) may be

1 Gildersl., Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 408.
2 Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 51.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 134.
5 N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 6.
TENSE (ΧΡΟΝΟΣ) 865

regarded as surviving instances of the 'Present Aorist,' i.e. of a present not conveying the notion of progress. We may compare the English use of *I am, I go* (now archaic in the sense of *I am going*), *I say, (says she)*, etc."¹ Hear Monro again: "The present is not a space of time, but a point," and, I may add, yields itself naturally to aoristic (punctiliar) action. Some presents are also "perfective" in sense like ἔκω. The so-called "present" tense may be used, therefore, to express an action simply (punctiliar), a process (durative or linear), a state (perfective or perfect).² Some of the root-presents (like φη-μί) are aoristic. The perfect came originally out of the root-meaning also (cf. ἔκω, αἴδα) and grew out of the present as a sort of intensive present.³ The notion of state in νικῶ, κρατῶ, ἠττῶμαι is really that of the perfect. So the momentary action in βη (ἐ-βη-ν) becomes linear in the iterative (βι-βα-ω, 'patter, patter.' Moulton⁴ clearly recognises that "the punctiliar force is obvious in certain presents." The original present was probably therefore aoristic, or at least some roots were used either as punctiliar or linear, and the distinctively durative notions grew up around specially formed stems and so were applied to the form with most verbs, though never with all. In the modern Greek we find "the creation of a separate aorist present (πάγω)," while πάγαινω is linear.

So πάγαινω is 'I keep going,' while πάγω is 'I go' (single act). Cf. Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 119. "As a rule the present combines cursive (durative, continuous, etc.) and aorist action" (ib., p. 120).

The aoristic present= undefined action in the present, as aoristic past (ind.) =undefined action in the past. In the case of ἀγω we see a root used occasionally for punctiliar, linear and even perfected action. There are, besides the naturally aoristic roots, three special uses of the aoristic present (the universal present, the historical present, the futuristic present).⁵

(a) The Specific Present. Gildersleeve⁶ thus describes this simplest form of the aoristic present in contrast with the universal present. It is not an entirely happy description, nor is "effective present," suggested by Jannaris,⁷ since there may be ingressive and constative uses also. The common ἐμί (Jo. 10:11) is often aoristic. A fine example of the constative aorist present occurs in Lu. 7:8, πορεύθητι, καὶ πορεύεται—ἔρχομαι, καὶ ἔρχεται—ποίησον, καὶ ποιεῖ. Cf. ἐξορικίζω σὲ (Mt. 26:63); ὄρω (Ac. 8:23);

¹ Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 45. ² Giles, Man., p. 484. ³ Ib., p. 491 f. ⁴ Prol., p. 119 f. ⁵ Giles, Man., p. 485. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 120. ⁶ Synt. of Cl. Gk., p. 81, ⁷ Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 433,
The frequent ἐγώ δὲ λέγω (Mt. 5:22, 28, etc.) is example of the specific aoristic present (constative). So ἀληθῶς λέγω (Lu. 12:44). Cf. σοὶ λέγω (Mk. 5:41); φησίν (Mt. 14:8); οὐ λαμβάνω—ἀλλὰ λέγω (Jo. 5:34), etc. In Mk. 2:5 ἀφίενται is effective aorist present as in ἰάται (Ac. 9:34). Cf. οἴσοι οὐκ ἐκουσίν, οἴτινες οὐκ ἐγνώσατε (Rev. 2:24); πόθεν ἦλθον and πόθεν ἔρχομαι (Jo. 8:14); ἔχει—ἦλθεν (Jo. 16:21). Moulton (Prol., p. 247) notes how in Mt. 6:2, 5, 16, ἀπέχουσι, the combination of the aoristic pres. and the perfective use of ἀπό makes it very vivid. "The hypocrites have as it were their money down, as soon as their trumpet has sounded." The "perfective" ἀπέχω (Mk. 14:41) is copiously illustrated in the papyri and ostraca (Deissmann, Light, etc., p. 111).

(b) The Gnomic Present. This is the aorist present that is timeless in reality, true of all time. It is really a gnomic present (cf. the Gnomic Aorist) and differs very little from the "Specific Present." In Mt. 23:2 ἐκάθισαν is gnomic, and in verse 3 we have the aoristic presents (gnomic also), λέγουσιν γὰρ καὶ οὐ ποιοῦσιν. Note Jo. 9:8. Cf. also ὤς λέγουσιν (Rev. 2:24). Good instances are found in 1 Cor. 15:42 ff., σπείρεται. So ὤσπερ οἶ ὑποκριταὶ ποιοῦσι (Mt. 6:2). Abbott1 has great difficulty with ἐκ τῆς Γαλι-λαίας προφήτης οὐκ ἐγείρεται (Jo. 7:52). It is this gnomic present. It is not true, to be sure, but this was not the only error of the Sanhedrin. Cf. Mt. 7:8.

(c) The Historical Present. This vivid idiom is popular in all languages,2 particularly in the vernacular. "We have only to overhear a servant girl's 'so she says to me' if we desiderate proof that the usage is at home among us."3 Cf. Uncle Remus. Curiously the historic present is absent in Homer.4 But Gildersleeve5 applauds Stahl for agreeing with his position "that it was tabooed as vulgar by the epos and the higher lyric" (A. J. P., xxiii, 245). It is absent from Pindar and the Nibelungenlied. Gildersleeve6 also observes that it is much more frequent in Greek than in English and is a survival of "the original stock of our languages." "It antedates the differentiation into imperfect and aorist." The "Annalistic or Note-Book Present" (like γίγνονται παῖδες δύο) is practically the same use of the aorist present. Moulto7 excludes γεννᾶται in Mt. 2:4, for that is more like the

---

1 Joh. Gr.,358.  
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 120 f.  
4 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 47.  
5 Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 393.  
6 Syntax of Cl. Gk., p. 86.  
7 Prol., p. 120.
futuristic (prophetic) use of the present. Brugmann\(^1\) divides the hist. pres. into "dramatic" and "registering" or annalistic presents (cf. Gildersleeve). This vivid idiom is preserved in the modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 120). It is common enough in the LXX, since Thackeray (Gr., p. xx) notes 151 examples in 1 Samuel, though it is rare in 2 Samuel and 2 Kings ("absent," Thackeray, Gr., p. 24). But Hawkins (Horae Synopticae, p. 213) finds it 32 times in 2 Samuel and twice in 2 Kings. Hawkins (ib.) finds the hist. pres. in the LXX 337 times. Josephus uses it also. The N. T. examples are thus "dramatic." The hist. pres. is not always aoristic. It may be durative like the imperfect.\(^2\) This point has to be watched. Blass\(^3\) considers that the historical present "habitually takes an aoristic meaning," but room has to be left for the durative meaning also. It is common in the Attic orators and in the N. T., except in Luke where it is rare.\(^4\) Luke's Gospel has it only 9 times (possibly 11) and the Acts 13 times. Hawkins, from whose Horae Synopticae (2d ed., pp. 143 ff.) these figures are taken, finds 93 historic presents in Matthew (15 of them in Parables), but 162 in John and 151 in Mark. It is rare in the rest of the N. T. It is most frequent in Mark, John, Matthew and in this order. Mark indeed uses it as often as 1 Samuel, though a much shorter book. John's Gospel is much longer than Mark's, but when the discourses and dialogues are eliminated, the difference between John and Mark is not great.\(^5\) Moulton\(^6\) adds that the idiom is common in the papyri. Cf. Par. P. 51 (ii/B.C.) ἀνύω—ὄρω—κλάω—ἐπορεύομαι—καὶ ἔρχομαι—ἔλεγον, etc. Moulton illustrates λέγει Ἰησοῦ in the Oxyrhynchus Logia by Καῖσαρ λέγει, Syll. 376. See also ἄφηρπασεν καὶ βούλεται, P. Oxy. 37 (A.D. 49). Luke's manifest reluctance to use it (changing Mark's historical presents except in 8:49) is due to the fact that in Luke's time the construction was regarded as "too familiar for his liking." He is the scientific historian, while Mark and John are the dramatists. Different writers would feel differently about it. "Josephus would use the tense as an imitator of the classics, Mark as a man of the people who heard it in daily use around him; while Luke

\(^1\) Gk. Gr., p. 484 f. The hist. present demands merely that the reader take his stand with the writer in the midst of the moving panorama. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., Bd. II, p. 261.
\(^2\) Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 11.
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 188. 4 Ib.
\(^4\) Hawkins, Horae Synopticae, p. 143 f.
\(^5\) Prol., p. 121.
would have Greek education enough to know that it was not common in the cultured speech of his time, but not enough to recall the encouragement of classical writers whom he probably never read and would not have imitated if he had read them." But what about John? Jannaris remarks that the idiom was common in the late Greek as in the early. The personal equation may have to explain the variations in the Gospels. Blass undertakes to give a philosophy of the matter on the theory that the "circumstances," "incidentals" and "final results" are expressed in the past tenses of the ind., while the "principal actions" are found in the historical present. He cites Jo. 1:29-42 in illustration (βλέπει—λέγει—ἐμαρείρησεν—ιστήκει—λέγει—ήκουσαν—λέγει—εἴπαν—λέγει—ήλθαν καὶ εἶδαν—ην—ην—εὕρισκει—λέγει—ηγαγείν—ἐπεσεν). One doubts if the phenomena can be brought under any rule. Matthew and Luke use ἴδου, to enliven the narrative, while Mark and John avoid it. Mark has a habit of using καί before the historical present, while John often employs asyndeton. But there is no doubt of the vividness of the narrative in Mark and John which is largely due to the historical presents. Modern literary English abhors this idiom, but it ought to be preserved in translating the Gospels in order to give the same element of vividness to the narrative. The historical present may begin a paragraph (often so), occur in the midst of aorists and imperfects, or alternate with aorists. In Mt. 3:1 παραγίνεται Ἰωάννης is preceded by a note of past time. In Mk. 5:15 ἔρχονται καὶ θεωροῦντιν occur between aorists. In Mk. 4:37 the realistic γίνεται λαύλαψ is followed by the imperfect. As specimens of this present in parables see Mt. 13:44. Sometimes the MSS. vary as between φαίνεται and ἐφάνη (Mt. 2:13). The variation in parables may be partly due to obscuration of the gnomic nature of the narrative. In such a wealth of material for illustration it is hard to select, but note John 20. In verse 1 f. note ἐρχεται—βλέπει—τρέχει—ἐρχεται, all indicating the excitement of Mary. Then the narrative goes on with aorists and imperfects till Peter and John draw near the tomb, when we have βλέπει—ἐρχεται—θεωρεῖ (5-7) with two parenthetic aorists interjected (οὐκ εἰσήλθεν, εἰσήλθεν). In verse 8 the narrative is resumed by aorists. In verse 12 again θεωρεῖ shows the surprise of Mary at seeing the angels (λέγουσιν—λέγει, verse 13), as in verse 14

1 Prol., p. 12k
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 18.S.
4 Hawkins, Hor. Synop., p. 144.
6 W.-Th., p. 267.
TENSE (ΧΡΟΝΟΣ) 869

the present is used when she sees Jesus. Historical presents run through the dialogue with Jesus (15-18). Then the resumptive ταῦτα εἶπεν. That is enough to say on the subject.

(d) The Futuristic Present. This futuristic present is generally punctiliar or aoristic. The construction certainly had its origin in the punctiliar roots, but some of the N. T. examples (cf. English "I am going," as well as "I go") are durative, as Moulton shows. Thus in 1 Cor. 16:5 διέρχομαι, (in contrast with διέλθω) means 'I am going through' (Macedonia). Γίνομαι leans to the aoristic and so γίνεται (Mt. 26:2) may be punctiliar. "In ἀπριντον ἄποθνήσκομεν (1 Cor. 15:32) we have a verb in which the perfective prefix has neutralized the inceptive force of the suffix –ίσκω: it is only the obsoleteness of the simplex which allows it ever to borrow a durative action." The aoristic origin of many present-stems has already been shown (and some perfectives like ἔρχω. Thus all three kinds of action are found in the present (punctiliar, durative, perfect). All three kinds of time are also found in the present ind. (historical present= past, futuristic present= future, the common use for present time). Some of these "momentary presents" are always future. So εἶμι in old Greek prose, but Homer uses εἶμι also as a present. The N. T. uses ἔρχομαι and πορεύομαι in this futuristic sense (Jo. 14:2 f.), not εἶμι. Indeed "the future of Greek was originally a present" (Jebb in Vincent and Dickson's Handbook, p. 323). That is too strong, for the future ind. often comes from the aorist subj. In the N. T. such so-called futures as πιέσαι and φάγεσαι, (Lu. 17:8) are really old aorist subjs. Cf. Mt. 24:40 f. The futuristic pres. occurs in the inscriptions and papyri, as in Petersen-Luschan, p. 160, N. 190, ἄν ἐὰς τῆς ἀδικήσῃ, ὑπόκειται. See ἄμι μὴ παύσεται, ἔρχεται, B. M. II, 417 (iv/A.D.), ἀντίγραψον κἀγὼ ἀναβαίνω, 0. P. 1157, 25 f. (A.D./iii), γράψον μοι καὶ πέμπω αὐτῷ ἐπιθήκην, 0. P. 1158, 23 f. (A.D./iii). Cf. Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 124. In South Italian Greek the futuristic present is the only means of expressing the future incl. The other use of the futuristic present is the dramatic or prophetic. "This present — a sort of counterpart to the historic present — is very frequent in

2 Giles, Mm., p. 485.
3 Prol., p. 120. Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 189.
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 120.
6 Gildersl., Synt., p. 84.
7 Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 10.
9 Giles, Mm., p. 485.
the predictions of the N. T." It is not merely prophecy, but certainty of expectation that is involved. As examples note Mt. 17:11 Ηλείας ἔρχεται καὶ ἀποκαταστήσει πάντα, 24:43 ποία φυλακή ὁ κλέπτης ἔρχεται, 26:2 γίνεται καὶ —παραδίδοται, 26:18 ποιῶ τὸ πάσχα, 27:63 ἐγείρομαι Λυ. 3:9 ἐκκόπτεται καὶ βάλλεται, 19:8 δίδωμι καὶ ἀποδίδωμι, Jo. 4:35 ὁ θερισμὸς ἔρχεται, 8:14 ποῦ ὑπάγω, 8:21 ὑπάγω καὶ ζητήσετε, 10:15 τὴν ψυχήν μου τίθημι, 12:26 ὅπου εἰμὶ ἐγὼ 20:17 ἀναβαίνω, 21:23 οὐκ ἀποθνῄσκει, 1 Cor. 15:26 καταργεῖται. In Jo. 10:15 ff. τίθημι really covers the whole of Christ's life viewed as a unit (constative aorist).2 In Mk. 9:31 we have παραδίδοται, in Mt. 17:22 μέλλει παραδίδοσθαι. This use of μέλλω and inf. is a sort of half-way station between the futuristic present and the punctiliar future. Cf. Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 443. The futuristic pres. startles and arrests attention. It affirms and not merely predicts. It gives a sense of certainty. Cf. in Mt. 18:12, ἀφήσει καὶ πορευθεῖς ζητεῖ together, and φεύγει (Rev. 9:6).

3. THE PUNCTILIAR (AORISTIC) FUTURE (ὁ μέλλων χρόνος).

(a) Punctiliar or Durative. The future is a "mixed tense" both in origin and meaning.3 The mixed origin was discussed in ch. VIII, (g). It was a late tense, little used in the early Vedic Sanskrit, and as a distinct form gradually disappeared from the modern Greek, where the periphrastic forms like θα λύω (λύσω) alone occur. But the modern Greek has developed thus two futures, θα λύσω punctiliar, θα λύω durative (Thumb, Handb., pp. 116, 125). The Germanic languages (cf. English shall and will) have only the periphrastic future. For the history of the future ind. see Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 552 ff. In Sanskrit the fut. had no modes, i.e. it was confined practically to the ind. (Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 201). The oldest roots are derived either from punctiliar presents (ind.) or aorist (punctiliar) subjunctives.4 Cf. πίομαι, βήσομαι. Gradually the future was formed on durative roots also. Thus μενῶ 'I shall remain.' Some verbs formed two futures,5 one punctiliar, like σχέσω from έσχω = 'I shall obtain,' the other durative, like έξω 'I shall have.' The κοινή has dropped σχέσω, as it has "generally got rid of alternative forms." So also θέξομαι (πέρχω) was durative and δραμοῦμαι (έδραμον) punctiliar,7 though both are absent in the N. T. It is probable

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 189.
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 479.
4 Giles, Man., p. 447.
5 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 480.
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 150.
7 Thompson, Synt., p. 219.
that in the future passive we have with most verbs a purely punticiolar future formed on the aorist stem. The middle future was usually durative, the future passive puntciolar.\(^1\) Very few of the list of examples given by Jannaris can be illustrated in the N. T. owing to the disappearance of the future middle before the future passive. In 1 Pet. 4:18 φανεῖται (LXX, Prov. 11:31) is durative and certainly φανήσεται (Mt. 24:30) is punctiliar. So in Lu. 16:31 πείσθησονται is punctiliar, (effective), but πείσομαι does not appear in the N. T. So κτήσεσθε τάς ψυχάς ὑμῶν (Lu. 21:19) seems to be durative, though no fut. passive of this verb appears in the N. T. So also συνακεράτησονται (Mt. 24:28) is punctiliar (effective). But the very disappearance of the future middle (as with the Attic φοβήσομαι) threw the burden of the durative future\(^2\) on the future passive. So φοβηθήσομαι in Heb. 13:6 is durative. Cf. the durative ἀρκετῷ τηρήσομεν (1 Tim. 6:8). So also ἀλλά καὶ χαρῆσομαι (Ph. 1:18) is durative. Cf. also Jo. 16:20, 22, though χαρήσονται in Lu. 1:14 is ingressive punctiliar, as πλησθήσεται (1:15) is effective punctiliar. But in Jo. 16:20 both λυπήσεσθε and γενήσεται seem ingressive. In Heb. 9:28 ὁφθήσεται (cf. Ac. 26:16) is ingressive, but ὄψομαι may be either durative (Mt. 5: 8; Jo. 1:50; 19:37; Rev. 22:4) or punctiliar (Jo. 1:39; Heb. 12:14, etc.). An excellent example of the effective future is found in ὁ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος σωθήσεται (Mt. 10:22). So the same form in the future may be either punctiliar or durative, as προάξω ὑμᾶς (Mk. 14:28) is durative, while ἀξιόλογος is punctiliar (effective= 'bring').\(^3\) Πείσομεν, is punctiliar (effective) in Mt. 28:14 and durative in 1 Jo. 3:19. So γνώσομαι is punctiliar or durative (Rev. 2:23). As punctiliar this verb may be either ingressive (1 Cor. 14:7, 9), effective (1 Cor. 4:19) or merely constative (Jo. 8:28, 32). From the nature of the action as future this Aktionsart of the verb will not be as prominent\(^4\) in the future aorist as in the other punctiliar constructions. Blass\(^5\) even goes so far as to say that the future "is the one tense which does not express action [kind of action, he means], but simply a time relation, so that completed and continuous action are not differentiated." But it must be borne in mind that the future tense in itself makes as much distinction between punctiliar and dura-

\(^2\) Moulton, Prol., p. 150.
\(^3\) Ib., p. 149.
\(^4\) Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 33.
\(^5\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 201.
tive action as the present tense does. The difference is that the future is usually punctiliar, while the present is more often durative. The point need not be pressed. Other examples of the punctiliar aorist are καλέσεις (Mt. 1:21) ingressive; παρακληθήσονται (Mt. 5:4) effective, and so χορτασθήσονται, but ἔλησθήσονται is ingressive while κληθήσονται is effective. In 1 Cor. 15:22, 28 note ζωοποιηθήσονται, and ὑποταγῇσται (effective). In Jo. 8:32 note ἐλευθερώσει effective= 'set free' (cf. ἐλεύθεροι γενήσεσθαι, verse 33). So then both in origin and use the future is chiefly punctiliar.

(b) The Modal Aspect of the Future. The future indicative is not merely a tense in the true sense of that term, expressing the state of the action. It is almost a mode on a par with the subjunctive and imperative. Gildersleeve puts the matter plainly when he says: "The future was originally a mood." In both Greek and Latin the forms of the future come for the most part from the subj. and it must be treated as a mode as well as a tense. Indeed Delbruck and Giles put it wholly under moods. It partakes, as a matter of fact, of the qualities of both mood and tense, and both need to be considered. The modal aspect of the fut. ind. is seen in its expression of will and feeling. Like the subj. the fut. ind. may be merely futuristic, volitional or deliberative. We have a reflection of the same thing in our shall and will. The fut. ind. has had a precarious history in Greek. Its place was always challenged by the present and even by the aorist ind., by the subj. and imper. modes, by periphrastic forms. It finally gave up the fight as a distinct form in Greek. See under 3, (a). In the modern Greek the distinction between the periphrastic fut. and the subj. is practically lost. The modal aspects of the fut. ind. appear clearly in subordinate clauses where the tense is common. In indirect discourse the future ind. merely represents the direct discourse (cf. Ro. 6:8). The future with the descriptive or identifying relative (Jo. 6:51) shows no modal features. But it is found in other relative clauses where purpose (Lu. 7:27) or result (Lu. 7:4) is expressed. The future has also a modal value in temporal clauses (Rev. 4:9; 17:17), in final clauses (Lu. 20:10; Heb. 3:12), in

1 Moulton, p. 149.
2 Synt., p. 115.
4 Man., pp. 500, 505; Thompson, Synt., p. 218.
6 Blass, Hermeneutik and Krit., 1892, p. 199.
7 Gildersl., Synt., p. 115.
conditional sentences (Lu. 19:40), in wish (Gal. 5:12). In Rev. 3:9 the fut. ind. and the aorist subj. occur side by side with ἤνα.

But in independent sentences also the modal aspects of the future appear.

(a) Merely Futuristic. This is the most common use of the future and in itself would not be modal. It is the prospective, what lies before the speaker. The predictive (or prophetic) future has to be classed as aoristic (usually constative), though the question as to whether the action is durative or punctiliar may not have crossed the speaker's mind. Cf. Mt. 21:37 ἑντραπήσουσιν, 41 ἀπολέσει, 43 ἀρθήσεται—δοθήσεται, 24:31 ἀποστελεῖ, etc. Cf. Mk. 13:24-27. Further good examples of the predictive future are in Mt. 11:28 f.; 12:31. Unfortunately in English we have no established principle for the translation of the predictive future. In the first person it is done by "shall," and naturally by "will" in the second and third persons. It is not always easy to distinguish the merely futuristic from the volitive future, "but we have to reckon with an archaic use of the auxiliaries which is traditional in Bible translations." The use of "shall" in the second and third persons is almost constant in the R. V. both for the volitive and the futuristic uses. If "shall" could be confined in these persons to the volitive and "will" to the futuristic, even "the solemnly predictive," it would be a gain. Thus in Mk. 14:13 ἀπαντήσει would be 'will meet.' In Mt. 11:28 f. ἀναπαύσω would be 'shall give you rest' (R. V. will'), εὑρήσετε will find' (R. V. 'shall'). But ἀναπαύσω here may be volitive. If so, 'will' is correct. So in Mt. 12:31 ἀφεθήσεται would be 'will be forgiven' (R. V. 'shall'). Cf. also Mt. 26:13, λαλήσεται= 'will be preached.' Moulton notes that ἀπαρνήση (Mt. 26:34; Mk. 14:30; Lu. 22:61) is often misunderstood because of the rendering 'shalt deny me.' "It could not therefore be Peter's fault if Jesus commanded him." Here "will" is free from that peril. Cf. Mt. 25:29, 32; Lu. 19:43. With the negative the English "shall" becomes volitive when the Greek is not. Cf. Mk. 13:31, οὐ παραελεύσονται, (cf. οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ in 13:30).

Sometimes (very rarely) οὐ μὴ occurs with the predictive fut. (cf. the usual aorist subj.) as in οὐ μὴ παραελεύσονται (Lu. 21:33); οὐ μὴ εὑρήσουσιν (Rev. 9:6); οὐκέτι οὐ μὴ εὑρήσουσιν (18:14; cf. ἀπήλθεν).

2 Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 34 f.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 150.     5 Moulton, Prol., p. 151.
4 Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 34.  6 Ib., p. 150.
The construction of οὐ μὴ with the fut. ind. is "moribund" in the N. T., only 14 and some of these doubtful (MSS. vary greatly between aorist subj. and fut. ind.). Some of the 14 are examples of the volitive future. In Mt. 15:5 οὐ μὴ τιμήσει is probably volitive, though some hold it predictive.

(β) The Volitive Future. The three divisions (futuristic, volitive, deliberative) glide into one another both in the subjunctive and the future incl. The volitive future is practically an imperative in sense, for the will is exercised. The futuristic glides imperceptibly into the volitive "as in the colloquial σὺ ὄψη, 'you will see to that,' Mt. 27:4." Cf. ὑμεῖς ὑψεῖσθε (Mt. 27:24), ἐκκόψησις (Lu. 13:9). In Heb. 8:5 the imperative and the fut. ind. occur together, ὅρα ποιήσεις. The impatient οὐ παύσῃ διαστρέφων (Ac. 13:10) is almost imperatival, certainly volitive. "The future ind. is exceedingly common in this sense (volitive)." In legal precepts the fut. ind. is unclassical. But the idiom itself is classical and "is not a milder or gentler imperative. A prediction may imply irresistible power or cold indifference, compulsion or concession." It is exceedingly frequent in the LXX. It is chiefly found in the N. T. in quotations from the O. T. Cf. καλέσεις (Mt. 1:21), οὐκ ἔσεσθε (6:5); ἔρειτε (21:3) = ἔπατε (Mk. 11:3). Cf. Jas. 2:8; Ro. 13:9; Gal. 5:14. The volitive future really includes purpose (will) in the first person, as well as in the second and (rarely) in the third. Thus προσεύξομαι, ψαλῶ (1 Cor. 14:15) = 'I will pray,' 'I will sing,' not mere futurity. So in ἄναστας πορεύσομαι (Lu. 15:18) we seem to find 'will,' not mere declaration. Most of the examples are in the second person, like οὐκ ἔσεσθε (Mt. 6:5), and are chiefly negative (4:7; Ac. 23:5; Ro. 7:7). But some examples occur in the third person also; though Burton is sceptical. Cf. ἔσται in Mt. 20:26 f. (note θέλη). So Mk. 9:35. In Lu. 10:6 we have ἐπαναπαθήσεται ἐπὶ αὐτοῦ ἡ εἰρήνη, while in Mt. 10:13 ἐλθάτω ἡ εἰρήνη ὑμῶν ἐπὶ αὐτήν. In the volitive future 'will' is the English translation for the first person, 'shall' for the second and third. The rare use of μὴ with the fut. ind. shows a volitive use. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 117) is sceptical, but Moulton (Prol., p. 177) cites from Demosthenes μὴ βουλήσεσθε εἰδέναι and from B. U. 197 (i/A.D.) μὴ ἐξέσται, B. U. 814 (iii/A.D.)

1 Prol., p. 190.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 18J
4 Ib., p. 177.
5 Ib., p. 176.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 209.
2 Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 35.
7 Gildersl, Synt., p. 116.
8 N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 35.
9 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 209.
μή ἀφήσης, Β. Μ. 42 μή — κρατήσεις (η/Β.Β.). Βλάσσιοι λέονος μιμήσετε from Clem., Hom., III, 69, and Moulton (Prol., p. 240) adds μή θησαυρίσεται, D in Mt. 6:19, and λέεις δε μηδέν, Eurip., Med. 822, and observes (p. 248) that MS. evidence should be watched on the point. Sometimes οὐ μή occurs with the volitive future as in οὐ μή τιμήσει. (Mt. 15:5); οὐ μή ἔσται σοι τούτο (16:22).

In Mt. 26:35 οὐ μή ἄπαρνήσομαι is also volitive (cf. Mk. 14:31). The volitive future seems to be found in Lu. 10:19, οὐδέν οὐ μή ὑμᾶς ἀδικήσει (W. H. text), but it is durative. But οὐ alone is the usual negative in the volitive future, as in οὐχ ἄπράσει τις ἐκ τῆς χειρός μου (Jo. 10:28. Cf. οὐ μή ἀπόλωνται). Cf. pres. imper. and fut. ind. side by side in Jo. 1:39 (cf. 1:46). Ον οὐ μή see Modes and Particles. It is possible that οὐ κατηχουσούσιν αὐτῆς (Mt. 16:18) is volitive.

(γ) Deliberative Future. Burton² has pointed out that questions are of two kinds (questions of fact or questions of doubt). Questions of fact make an inquiry for information about the past, present or future. These questions employ the moods and tenses as other simple declarative sentences in both direct and indirect discourse. But deliberative questions ask not for the facts, but about the "possibility, desirability or necessity" of a proposed course of action. The subj. as the mood of doubtful assertion is perfectly natural here. The future is also doubtful from the nature of the case. So deliberative questions use either the subj. or the fut. ind. Deliberative questions (like questions of fact) may be merely interrogative or they may be rhetorical. The deliberative questions in the N. T. with the fut. ind. are all direct questions except Ph. 1: 22, τί αἱρήσομαι οὐ γνωρίζω, where the punctuation is doubtful. (W. H. marg. have τί αἱρήσομαι.)³ In σχῶ τί γράψω (Ac. 25:26) it is not certain whether γράψω is fut. ind. or aorist subj. In Lu. 11:5, τίς ἐξ ὑμῶν ἐξει φίλον καὶ πορεύεσται—καὶ ἔσθη αὐτῷ, the fut. ind. (rhetorical) and aorist subj. occur side by side if we can trust the reading. Cf. Mt. 7: 6, with μὴπότε; Eph. 6:3, with ὡν (0. T.). The examples of the fut. ind. in deliberative questions are all disputed by some MSS. which have the aorist subj., so that Βλάσσιοι λέονος remarks that "the N. T. in this case practically uses only the conjunctive"; but that is an overstatement, since the best MSS. (see W. H. and Nestle texts) support the fut. ind. in some instances. As an example of merely interroga-

¹ Ib.  
² N. T. Moods and Tenses, pp. 36, 76 f.  
³ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 211.  
tive deliberative questions with fut. ind. take εἶ πατάξομεν ἐν μα-
χαίρῃ (Lu. 22:49). In Jo. 18:39, βούλεσθε ἀπολύσω, we may have
the fut. ind. or the aorist subj., but note βούλεσθε. The N. T.
examples are nearly all rhetorical. So Mt. 12:26 πώς σταθήσεται,
Mk. 4:13 πώς—γνώσεσθε, Jo. 6:68 πρὸς τίνα ἀπελευσόμεθα. Cf. fur-
ther Ro. 3:5; 6:1 (the common τί ἔρούμεν); 9:14; 1 Cor. 14:7,
9, 16; 15:29, 51; 1 Tim. 3:5. Cf. Lu. 20:15. Cf. ἀγοράσωμεν καὶ
dώσομεν (Mk. 6:37).

(c) The Future in the Moods. The future differs from the
other tenses in this respect, that in the moods where it occurs it
has always the element of time. This is not true of any other
Greek tense.

(a) The Indicative. It is far more common here than in the
other moods. In direct discourse the fut. ind. expresses absolute
time. Cf. τότε ὄψονται (Lu. 21:27). In the gnostic future the
act is true of any time (cf. gnostic aorist and present). So μόλις
ὑπὲρ δικαίου τῆς ἀποθανεῖται (Ro. 5:7); χρηματίσει (7:3), etc. In
indirect discourse the time is relatively future to that of the
principal verb, though it may be absolutely past. So with ἐνώ-
μισαν ὅτι λήψονται (Mt. 20:10); εἶπεν σημείων ποῖς θανάτῳ δοξάσει
τὸν θεόν (Jo. 21:19).²

(β) The Subjunctive and Optative. There never was a fut. im-
perative. The so-called fut. subjs. in the N. T. have already
been discussed. W. H. admit ὄψηθε to the text in Lu. 13:28,
but claim it to be a late aorist subj.³ The same thing may be
true of δώσῃ, read by MSS. in Jo. 17:2; Rev. 8:3, but not of
καυθῆσωμαι in 1 Cor. 13:3. This may be a lapsus calami⁴ for καυ-
χῆσωμαι. Harnack (The Expositor, May, 1912, p. 401) quotes
Von Soden as saying: "Καυθῆσωμαι — not καυθῆσομαι — is to be re-
ognised as the traditional form in families of MSS. which do not
give καυχῆσωμαι." But Harnack refuses to "saddle" Paul with
this Byzantine "deformity." Jannaris⁵ thinks that these sporadic
examples in late Greek are the fut. ind. "spelt with the thematic
vowel (η and ω) of the subjunctive." One naturally thinks of
the Latin subj. future. The fut. opt. never had a place save in
indirect discourse, and that is lost in the N. T.

(γ) The Infinitive. The future inf. was never a common con-
struction and was almost confined to indirect discourse.⁶ The six

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 201.
² Ib.
³ Appendix, p. 172.
⁴ Ib.; Moulton, Prol., p. 151.
⁵ Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 556.
⁶ See the list in Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 486.
examples in the N. T. seem to be punctiliar save two (Ac. 11:28; Jo. 21:25). Μέλλω has the fut. inf. three times, but only in the case of ἔσεσθαι (Ac. 11:28; 24:15; 27:10). The three other instances of the fut. inf. in the N. T. belong to ind. discourse. One (χωρήσειν) occurs with or οὕμα (Jo. 2:25), one (ἔσεσθαι) with μητήρ, or more exactly after ἐπιβουλή (Ac. 23:30, genitive absolute, μηνυθεῖσης μοι ἐπιβουλής ἔσεσθαι), one (εἰσελεύσεσθαι) with ὄμηρ (Heb. 3:18). So that the fut. inf. "was already moribund for practical purposes."² In the papyri Moulton found the fut. inf. often a mere blunder for an aorist. In Ac. 26:7, B has the fut. inf. after ἔλπιζω. In the fut. inf. the time relation is only relative, as with all infinitives, not absolute as in the incl.³ Elsewhere with such verbs the aorist occurs as with ἔλπιζω (1 Cor. 16:7); μέλλω (Ro. 8:18); ὄμηρ (Ac. 2:30); ὁμολογέω (Mt. 14:7); προσδοκάω (Ac. 27:33); προκαταγέλλω (Ac. 3:18); or the present inf. as with μέλλω (Ac. 3:3); or the perfect inf. as with ἔλπιζω (2 Cor. 5:11).

(5) The Participle. The future part. was later in its development⁴ than the other tenses of this very ancient, even prehistoric,⁵ verbal adjective. The fut. part. was never developed in the Boeotian Dialect.⁶ It is by no means dead in the papyri. Moulton⁷ notes "the string of final fut. participles in O. P. 727 (ii/A.D.); B. U. 98 (iii/A.D., etc." See also κοινολογήσομεν P. Goodspeed ⁴(ii/B.C.) τὰ — (σ) ταθησόμενα P. Tb. 33 (B.C. 112), and the list in O. P. 1118, 10 f (i/A.DB.). It seems to me to be more common in the papyri than in the N. T. Simcox⁸ suggests that its rarity in the N. T. is due to the use of other phrases. Cf. μέλλω in Ac. 18:14; 20:3, 7 and ἕρχομαιν in Rev. 1:4, etc. The time is, of course, only relative to that of the principal verb, as in ἔληθεν προσκυνήσων (Ac. 8:27). The anarthrous examples are volitive⁹ and are the most frequent.¹⁰ They are used for purpose or aim. Cf. Mt. 27:49 ἔρχεται σῷσων, Ac. 8:27 ἔληθε προσκυνήσων, 22:5 ἐπορευόμην οἴει ν, 24:11 ἀνέβην προσκυνήσων, 24:17 ποιήσων παρεγενόμην, Heb. 13:17 ἀγρυπνοῦσιν ώς ἀποδώσουντες. Cf. also v. 1. ώς εὑρήσων in Mk. 11:13. These all seem to be punctiliar. Some MSS. also read ἀσπασόμενοι in Ac. 25:13. This is surely a slim showing corn-

¹ Simcox, Lang. of the N. T., p. 120, suggests omission of μέλλω.
⁵ Moulton, Prol., p. 151.
⁶ Claflin, Synt. of the B. Inscr., p. 73.
⁷ Prol., p. 230.
⁸ Lang. of the N. T., p. 126.
⁹ Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 496.
¹⁰ Moulton, Prol., p. 151. That is, in the old Gk. Both volitive and futur-
pared with the classic idiom.¹ Some MSS. read κομιούμενοι in 2 Pet. 2:13, rather than ἀδικούμενοι. The future participle with the article is futuristic, not volitive. So with τὸ ἔσομαι (Lu. 22:49); ὁ παραδώσω (Jo. 6:64); τὰ συναντήσουτα (Ac. 20:22); ὁ κακώσωμι (1 Pet. 3:13); τὸ γενησόμενον (1 Cor. 15:37); ὁ κατακρίνων, (Ro. 8:34); τῶν αληθησόμενων (Heb. 3:5).

(d) The Periphrastic Substitutes for the Future. The periphrastic future is as old as the Sanskrit and has survived the inflected form in Greek. Some of these forms are durative, probably most of them, but a few are punctiliar. Tannaris notes in Sophocles, O. C. 816, λυπηθείς ἔσει, and O. T. 1146, οὗ σωπήσας ἔσει, but no examples of the aorist participle and ἔσομαι occur in the N. T. They are all present parts. (like ἔσεσας μισούμενοι, Lu. 21:17) and so durative. In the LXX we actually have the inf. with ἔσομαι (Num. 10:2; 2 Sam. 10:11; Tob. 5:15). The use of μέλλω with the aorist inf. approaches the punctiliar future.² Cf. ἠμελεῖν προσαγαγεῖ (Ac. 12:6); μέλλουσαν ἀποκαλυφθήναι (Ro. 8:18). Cf. Gal. 3:23), with which compare the pros. inf. in 1 Pet. 5:1. The aorist inf. occurs also in Rev. 3:2, 16; 12:4. The volitive future was sometimes expressed by θέλω and in the later Greek helped drive out the future form. It is disputed whether in the N. T. θέλω is ever a mere future. But in a case like θέλεις εἴπωμεν (Lu. 9:54) we note the deliberative subj.³ Cf. Mt. 13:28. So βούλεσθε ἀπολύσω (Jo. 18:39). Βούλομαι is less frequent in the N. T. than θέλω and can hardly be resolved into a mere future. It is purpose. Cf. examples with the aorist inf. in Mt. 11:27; Ac. 5:28; 17:20. With θέλω the aorist inf. is the usual construction, and it is nearly always easy to see the element of will as dominant. In a few cases θέλω seems to shade off towards the volitive fut. ind. Cf. Jo. 5:40, οὗ θέλετε ἔλθειν πρός με, Ac. 25:9, θέλεις—κριθήναι; Here we have an approach to the later usage, but the auxiliary has not yet lost its force. Cf. also Jo. 6:67; 9:27; Jas. 2:20, where the formula is polite. But in Jo. 7:17 the R. V. rightly preserves "willeth." So in Mt. 16:24. Herodotus shows a fondness for ἔθελεν as a quasi-auxiliary, and the connection between him and the modern Greek usage is doubtless through the vernacular. Cf. Jebb in Vine. and Dickson, p. 326. Even

¹ Cf. Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 335.
³ Moulton, Prol., p. 185.

III. Durative (Linear) Action.

The principles underlying the use of the tenses have now been set forth with sufficient clearness to justify brevity.

1. INDICATIVE.

(a) The Present (ὁ ἐνεστῶς) for Present Time. It has already been seen that the durative sense does not monopolize the "present" tense, though, it more frequently denotes linear action."

The verb and the context must decide.

(a) The Descriptive Present. Its graph is (---). As with the imperfect, so with the present this is the most frequent use. Cf. ἀπολλύμεθα (Mt. 8:25. Contrast aorist σώσων. So Mk. 4:38; Lu. 8:24); σβέννυνται (Mt. 25:8); ἐν ὅ ἔχομαι (Jo. 5:7); φαίνει (1 Jo. 2:8); συνχάννεται (Ac. 21:31); τελείται (2 Cor. 12:9); θαυμάζω ὅτι οὕτως ταχέως μετατίθεσθε (Gal. 1:6); ἐπιστρέφετε (4:9); έχουσιν, (Mk. 2:19). Cf. 1 Th. 3:8. In these examples the durative action is very obvious and has to be translated by the progressive (periphrastic) form in English, 'We are perishing,' 'Our lamps are going out,' etc. But in the case of θαυμάζω (Gal. 1:6) 'I wonder' brings out the durative idea, though 'ye are changing' is necessary for μετατίθεσθε. Cf. ἔχει (Jo. 3:36) where 'has' is durative. Cf. ζητοῦμεν (Lu. 2:48), οὐ θέλομεν (Lu. 19:14).

(b) The Progressive Present. This is a poor name in lieu of a better one for the present of past action still in progress. Usually an adverb of time (or adjunct) accompanies the verb.

Gildersleeve3 calls it "Present of Unity of Time." Cf. ἔστιν ἔως ἀρτι (1 Jo. 2:9). Often it has. to be translated into English by a sort of "progressive perfect" ('have been'), though, of course, that is the fault of the English. "So in modern Greek, ἔξηντα μήνας ὑπὸ ἀγαπῶ (Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 222). The durative present in such cases gathers up past and present time into one phrase" (Moulton, Prol., p. 119). Cf. ἵδου τρία ἐτή ἄφος οὐ ἔρχομαι (Lu. 13:7); τοσαίτα ἐτή δουλεύω σοι (15:29); πολλῶν ἦδη χρόνων ἔχει (Jo. 5:6); τουσοῦτον χρόνον μεθ' ἕμων ἐμί (14:9); ἀπ' ἀρχῆς μετ' ἐμοὶ ἐστε (15:27); πᾶλαι δοκεῖτε (2 Cor. 12:19). Cf. ἀπὸ βρέφους οἴδας (2 Tim.

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Cr., p. 443.  2 Moulton, Prol., p. 119.
3:15). It is a common idiom in the N. T. Cf. 2 Pet. 3:4; 1 Jo. 3:8. In Jo. 8:58 εἰμί is really absolute.

(γ) The Iterative or Customary Present. Its graph is ( . . . )

Cf. ἐγκρατεῦται (1 Cor. 9:25); πυκτεύω and ὑπωπιάζω καὶ δουλαγωγόω (9:26 f.). So νηστεύω διὰ τοῦ σαββάτου, ἀποδεκατεύω πάντα ὅσα κτώμαι (Lu. 18:12); διδῳμι καὶ ἀποδίδῳμι, (19:8, more likely it is a new purpose in Zaccheus, when it would be aoristic); ὑ νυλογοῦμεν (1 Cor. 10:16); ὅν κλώμεν (10:16); προιλαμβάνει (11:21); καταγγέλ-"лаτε (11:26); ἑσθίει καὶ πίνει (11:29); κοιμῶνται (11:30); οὐχ ἀμαρτάνει (1 Jo. 3:6); ἀμαρτάνει (3:8). Cf. Mt. 9:17. Probably also αφίομεν (Lu. 11:4).

(δ) The Inchoative or Conative Present. Either an act just beginning, like γίνεται. (Mk. 11:23), εὐθὺς σκανδαλίζονται (4:17), λιθάζετε (Jo. 10:32), νίπτεις (13:6), ποιεῖς (13:27), ἀγεῖ (Ro. 2:4), or an act begun but interrupted like πείθεις (Ac. 26:28; cf. 2 Cor. 5:11), ἀναγκάζεις (Gal. 2:14), δικαιοῦσθε (5:4), ἀναγκάζουσιν (6:12). Indeed λιθάζετε (Jo. 10:32) and νίπτεις (13:6) may be regarded as conative also. This idiom is more common in the imperfect. Cf. Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 82. In English we have to use "begin" or "try."

(ε) The Historical Present. These examples are usually aoristic, but sometimes durative.1 In Mk. 1:12 we have ἐκβάλλει which is durative. Cf. Ἠγετο in Lu. 4:1 (but Mt. 4:1, ἀνήχθη). So in Mk. 1:21 εἰσπορεύονται is durative. The same thing seems to be true of ἀκολουθοῦσιν in 6:1.

(ζ) The Deliberative Present. Rhetorical deliberative questions may be put by the present ind., but it is rather a rhetorical way of putting a negation than a question of doubt. Cf. τί ποιοῦμεν; (Jo. 11:47), "What are we doing?" Cf. τί ποιήσει (Mt. 21:40) with τί ποιῶμων (Jo. 6:28) and τί ποιήσωμεν (Ac. 4:16). The implication of the question in Jo. 11:47 is that nothing was being done. In Mt. 12:34, πῶς δύνασθε ἁγαθά λαλέιν; a durative deliberative question is expressed by means of δύνασθε and the pres. inf. Cf. a similar construction with δῆνε in Ac. 16:30.2 Cf. the same idiom in an indirect question (Col. 4:6; 2 Th. 3:7; 1 Tim. 3:15). The use of the pres. ind. in a deliberative question is a rare idiom. Blass3 finds parallels in colloquial Latin and an example in Herm., Sim., IX, 9, 1.

(η) The Periphrastic Present. The examples are not numerous in the LXX.4 Cf. Num. 14:8; 1 Ki. 18:12, etc. It is rare in

---

1 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 11.
3 Ib.
4 C. and S., Sel., p. 68.
the N. T. Moulton warns us that "εχων εστι and δεον εστι (with other impersonal verbs) are both classical and vernacular." In the present tense the idiom is on purely Greek lines, not Semitic. For classical examples see Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 81). So the impersonal verbs (and ἔχω) stand to themselves in support from ancient Greek and the koine. Cf. ἔστιν ἔχοντα (Col 2:23); πρέπον ἔστιν (Mt. 3:15); ἔχον (sc. ἔστι) in Ac. 2:29 and 2 Cor. 12:4; δεον ἔστιν (Ac. 19:36). Cf. 1 Pet. 1:6). Other examples are ἔστις εἰμί (Act 25:10), ἔστιν κατερχομένη (Jas. 3:15), ἔστιν προσαναπληροῦσα — ἀλλα καὶ περισσεύουσα (2 Cor. 9:12), ἔστιν ἀλληγοροῦμενα (Gal. 4:24) and, in particular, explanatory phrases with ὁ ἔστιν (Mt. 1:23; 27:33; Mk. 5:41; Jo. 1:41). Cf. further Ac. 5:25; Col. 1:6; 3:1; 2 Cor. 2:17.

(θ) Presents as Perfects. Here the form is that of the present, but the root has the sense of completion. The action is durative only in the sense of state, not of linear action. This is an old use of these roots. Cf. Lu. 15:27, ὁ δεκαφός ἤκει ('has come,' 'is here'). Cf. ἔξηλθον καὶ ἤκω (Jo. 8:42). See ch. VIII. So with κέιται (Mt. 3:10), 'the axe lies at the root of the trees' (has been placed there); ὁ διδάσκαλος πάρεστιν, (Jo. 11:28) = 'the Teacher is come.' Sometimes νικάω is so used (cf. Ro. 12:21; Rev. 15:2). So ἰττιωταί (2 Pet. 2:20). Cf. ἀκούω in 1 Cor. 11:18. See also ἀκουέται (1 Cor. 5:1) which is rather iterative. Ἄκικω in Mt. 20:13 is durative, but approaches a perfect in Ac. 25:11 (cf. πέρασχα).

(ι) Perfects as Presents. Some perfect forms have come to be used as practical durative presents, though not of the same word. Thus σιδα from σίδον = 'I have seen,' 'I know' (cf. Mt. 6:8). So ἑστηκα (Lu. 8:20), μείνημαι (1 Cor. 11:2). As to ἀπόλωλα that occurs in the N. T. in the participle (Mt. 10:6) and the same thing is true ἐισθα (Lu. 4:16), which occurs in past perfect. So βεβηκα, γέγονα, δέδοικα, ημιφεσμαί, ἐγρήγορα, έοικα, κέκλημαι, κέκτημαι, πέτοιθα, πέφυκα, τέθυκα. Cf. Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 438.

(κ) Futuristic Presents. These are usually punctiliar, but some are durative. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 83) calls this "Praesens Propheticum." The absence of εἰμι in the N. T. is noticeable. The papyri illustrate abundantly this futuristic present (Moulton, Prol., p. 120). Since the pres. ind. occurs for past, pres-

---

2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 204.
3 Goodwin, M.1 and T., p. 9; Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 10; Gildersl., Synt., p. 87.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 120.
ent and future time it is clear that "time" is secondary even in the ind. In the other moods it has, of course, no time at all. As examples of the durative present in this sense take παραδίδωσιν (Mt. 26:45), ἀναβάνομεν (Mk. 10:33), ὑπάγω ἄλλον ποίειν and ἐρχόμεθα (Jo. 21:3), δείρχομαι (1 Cor. 16:5), ἔχομεν (2 Cor. 5:1). Μέλλω and the pres. inf. is, of course, a prospective present. This idiom is very common in the N. T., 84 examples with the pres. (6 aor., 3 fut.) inf., though, of course, μέλλω is not always in the pres. ind. Cf. Mt. 2:13; 16:27, etc.

(b) The Imperfect for Past Time (ὁ παρατατικός). Here we have the time-element proper, the augment probably being an old adverb for "then," and the action being always durative. "The augment throws linear action into the past." The absence of a true imperfect in English makes it hard to translate this Greek tense.

(a) Doubtful Imperfects. They are sometimes called "aoristic" imperf. This term is not a happy one, as Gildersleeve shows in his criticism of Stahl for his "synonym-mongering" and "multiplication of categories." The only justification for the term is that, as already shown in the discussion of the aorist, it is not possible always to tell whether some forms are aorist ind. or imperf. ind. The same root was used for both forms, as only one form existed and it is hard to tell which tense the form is. A certain amount of obscurity and so of overlapping existed from the beginning. We see this difficulty in ἐγὼ, ἐφην, ἐλεγον, etc., particularly in verbs of saying, commanding, etc. Modern Greek conceives of ἐπηγα, ἐπηγα and ἐφερα as aorists (Thumb, Handb., p. 143). Thumb (Th. L.-Z., xxviii, 423) thinks that in the N. T. ἐφερον had begun to be treated as aorist, but Moulton (Prol., p. 129) demurs, though he admits the possibility of punctiliar action in πρόσφερε τῷ δώρῳ in Mt. 5:24 (ib., p. 247). See also φέρε καὶ ἔδει, φέρε καὶ βάλε in Jo. 20:27. But one must not think that the Greeks did not know how to distinguish between the aorist and the imperfect. They "did not care to use their finest tools on every occasion," but the line between aorist and imperf. was usually very sharply drawn. The distinction is as old as the Sanskrit. In modern Greek it still survives, though the differ-

---

ence between ἔλεγεν and ἐπευ, is well-nigh gone, if it ever existed. The same thing is true of the usage of Achilles Tatius. Hence we need not insist that ἦν (Jo. 1:1) is strictly durative always (imperfect). It may be sometimes actually aorist also. So as to ἔφη (Mt. 4:7); ἔλεγεν (Mk. 4:21, 24, 26, 30, etc.), etc. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 192, fails to make a clean distinction. Note ἐκέλευον (Ac 16:22).

(B) The Descriptive Tense in Narrative. But the linear action may be insisted on in the true imperfect. It is properly "nichtpunktuell." Though less frequent in Homer than the aorist it often "divides the crown with the aorist." The imperfect is here a sort of moving panorama, a "moving-picture show." The modern Greek preserves this idiom (Thumb, Handb., p. 121). In 1 Cor. 10:3 f. ἔφασαν and ἐπίστροφον give the summary (constative) record, while ἐπιστρέφει, presents an explanatory description. See further προσήλθον καὶ διηκόνουν (Mt. 4:11); ἔπεσεν καὶ ἔδιδον (13:8); ἔνοπται καὶ ἔκαθεν (25:5). Sometimes the change from aorist to imperfect or vice versa in narrative may be due to the desire to avoid monotony. In Mt. 26:60 we have οὐχ ἐυρον, in Mk. 14:55 οὐχ εὑρίσκον. The aorist tells the simple story. The imperfect draws the picture. It helps you to see the course of the act. It passes before the eye the flowing stream of history. It is the tense of Schilderung. Cf. ἔιχεν τὸ ἐνδυμα αὐτοῦ (Mt. 3:4), ἔπειρενος (3:5), ἐβαπτίζοντο (3:6). The whole vivid schen at the Jordan is thus sketched. Then Matthew reverts to the aorist (3:7). Cf. ἡρῴοντο in Jo. 19:2. So ὅς ὄφειλεν αὖ ὅῳ (Mt. 18:28) aptly describes a debtor as ἐπινίγει, ‘the choking in his rage.’ See the picture of Jesus in ἐθεώρει (Mk. 12:41). Cf. ἔθεώρον (Lu. 10:18), ἔξελεγοντο (14:7), περιεβλέπετο (Mk. 5:32), ἐξείστατο (Ln. 2:47; cf. Ac. 2:12). Cf. Lu. 9:43-45; 16:19; Mt. 8:24. A good example is ἐκείλετο ἀφρίζων (Mk. 9:20). Cf. further, ἐπιπέτευ καὶ προσήλχετο (Mk. 14:35), the realistic scene in Gethsemane (Peter’s description probably); ἐπεθύμει καὶ οὔδεις ἔδίδος (Lu. 15:16); ὦμιλουν πρὸς ἀλλήλους (24:14); ἐξεπλήσσουστο (Mt. 7:28); ἔτιθετο, (2 Cor. 3:13); ἡκολούθει καὶ ἐκάθητο (Mt. 26:58). A splendid example of the descriptive durative is ἐστίωσα (Mt. 26:63)= ‘kept silent.’ So ἐπλέομεν (Ac. 21:3). Note ἐνομιζόν (Ac. 21:29) between past perfect and aorist. Cf. ἔφίλει

4 Hultsch, per Gebr. d. erzählenden Zeitf. bei Polyb.
(Jo. 11:36), διετήρει (Lu. 2:51, Cf. 2:19). See the picture of Noah's time in Lu. 17:27. Cf. ἐπορεύοντο χαίροντες (Ac. 5:41). Quite striking is ἡλπίζομεν, in Lu. 24:21. See further for the "imperfect and aorist interwoven" in narrative Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 91. An artist could describe his work by ἐποίησα or ἐποίουν. Gildersleeve notes (ib., p. 93) that in the inscriptions of the fourth cent. B.C. the imperfect is absent. It becomes common again in the imperial time.

(γ) The Iterative (Customary) Imperfect. Sometimes it is difficult to tell whether an act is merely descriptive or is a series. Cf. πολλοὶ πλοῦσιοι ἔβαλλον (Mk. 12:41); ἐπυγνωσό (5:13), where the separate details are well described by the vivid imperfect. The notion of repetition is clearly present in ἡρώτα ἑλεμοσύνην (Ac. 3:3); ἡρώτα αὐτόν (Mk. 7:26). Cf. Jo. 4:31. The modern Greek keeps this usage (Thumb, Handb., p. 122). It is not necessary to see any "aoristic" notion here. Cf. παρεκάλουσιν σπουδαίως (Lu. 7:4, W. H.); παρῆμεν (Ac. 27:9). It is well shown in Ἱωάννης ἔβούλετο, Ἱασόν ηξίου (15:37 f.), the one opposing the other. In Ac. 24:26 repetition is shown in ὑμίνει by πυκνότερον μετα-πεμπόμενος. Cf. ἄλλοι δὲ ἄλλο τι ἐπεφώνουν (21:34); ἐπυθανότερο in verse 33; καθ' ἡμέραν ἐκαθεζόμην (Mt. 26:55); ἔτυπτον (27:30); ὁποὺ ἦκουν (Mk. 6:55), κατηρόουν πολλά (15:3); ἀπέλευν ὄν παρητούστο (15:6). Cf. εἰσέλθετε ἁπολύειν δι ἡθελον, Mt. 27:15; ἔνενυν (Lu. 1:62); ἐβάπτιζεν (Jo. 3:22); ξεια (5:18); ἐδίδοσαν (19:3); ἐξώνυμες (21:18); ἐτίθουσι (Ac. 3:2); ἐπιπρασκόν καὶ διεμέρισον (2:45). Cf. 4:34). Moulton (Prol., p. 128) represents the iterative imperfect by the graph ( . . . . . . ) Cf. Ac. 16:18; 18:8; Mk. 3:11; 4:33 f. A good example is in Lu. 2:41, ἐπορεύοντο κατ' ἐτος.

(δ) The Progressive Imperfect. Sometimes the imperfect looks backward or forward, as the case may be. Thus ἔτι ἐξητείτε με (Lu. 2:49); ἢν ἐχέχει ἁπ' ἀρχῆς (1 Jo. 2:7); ἐνεκοπτόμην (Ro. 15:22); ἡμελλόν (Rev. 3:2). This idea is, however, often expressed by ἁμέλω, but without the backward look also. Cf. Lu. 9:31; 10:1; Jo. 4:47; 6:71, etc. In ἐκινδύνευον (Lu. 8:23) the verb itself expresses peril or danger. Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 97) calls this idiom "Imperfect of Unity of Time." Cf. the "progressive" present in (α), (β). The Text. Recept. gives a good example in ἢν πάλαι τὸ πλοῖον ἐν μέσῳ τῆς θαλάσσης (Mk. 6:47). See also ἢν γὰρ ἔξ ἱκανών χρόνων θέλων ἑδείν αὐτόν (Lu. 23:8).

1 Blass, Gr. 7 N. T. Gk., p. 191.
3 Gildersl., Synt., p. 94 f.
The Inchoative or Conative Imperfect. Here the accent is on the beginning of the action either in contrast to preceding aorists (just begun) or because the action was interrupted (begun, but not completed). The two sorts of inchoative action may be represented by two graphs, thus ( - —) for the first, (— ) for the second. In English we have to say "began" for the one, "tried" for the other. The modern Greek maintains this idiom (Thumb, *Handb.*., p. 121). As examples of the first sort where "began" brings out the idea, note ἔδίδασκε (Mt. 5:2. Cf. Jo. 7:14); ἔλαλει (Mk. 7:35. Cf. Lu. 1:64); ἐκλαεν (14:72); διερήσετο (Lu. 5:6); διελάλουν (6:11); συνεπληροῦντο (8:23); ἐπεσκίαζεν (9:34. Note ingressive aorist ἐφοβήθησαν); ἐπέφωσκεν (23:54); ἐπεγίνωσκον (Ac. 3:10); ἐκήρυσσεν (9:20); διεκρίνοντο (11:2); κατήγγελον (13:5); θεορὸΰσιν (17:5); παρωξύνετο (17:16); ἀπελογεῖτο (26:1); ἐποιοῦντο (27:18); ἐλύετο (27:41). Cf. Lu. 13:13, 17. In ἔκαλουν (Lu. 1:59) we see both ideas combined. The action was begun, but was sharply interrupted by οὐχί, ἀλλά, from Elizabeth. Cf. νῦν ἔζητουν, (Jo. 11:8). A good instance of the interrupted imperf. is προσέβερεν in Heb. 11:17. Examples of the conative imperfect (action begun, but interrupted) are διεκώλυεν (Mt. 3:14); ἔδιδουν, (Mk. 15:23, in contrast with οὐκ ἔλαβεν); ἐκωλύομεν (Lu. 9:49); ἔζητουν (Jo. 10:39; cf. 19:11); ἐνόμιζεν (Ac. 7:25). Note οὐ συνήκατο; συνήξασθεν (7:26. Note ἀπώσατο); ἐπείθεν (Ac. 18:4); θνάγκαζον (26:11); but not Gal. 1:13. Moulton (Prol., pi 247) cites the conative pres. ἀναγκάζουσιν (Gal. 6:12).

The "Negative" Imperfect. This is not a very happy piece of nomenclature, to use Gildersleeve's remark about Stahl's over-refinement, and yet it is the best one can do. "The negative imperfect commonly denotes resistance to pressure or disappointment." As examples note ὁ δὲ οὐκ ἤθελεν, (followed by ἔβαλεν, Mt. 18:30) and preceded by παρεκάλει (iterative), οὐδεῖς ἔδίδου (Lu. 15:16), οὐκ ἤθελεν (15:28). Note ὁργίσθη, οὐκ ἐπίστευεν (Jo. 2:24), οὐ γὰρ ἤθελεν (Jo. 7:1), οὐδεῖς ἔτολμα (21:12), οὐκ έἶνω (Ac. 19:30). Cf. Mt. 22:3.

The "Potential" Imperfect. This is a peculiar use of the tense for pres nt time, where the present ind. fails to meet the requirement o the situation. Gildersleeve (*Syntax*, p. 97) calls it "modal" use, ἐδεί, etc. The unfulfilled duty comes as a surprise. This "modal" force of the imperfect ind. appears still in the

1 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 128.
modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 128). There are several varieties of it. Verbs of wishing form one class of passages. In a case like ἔβουλόμην (Ac. 25:22), βούλομαι would be too blunt (cf. 1 Tim. 2:8). The exact idea is 'I was just on the point of wishing.' It is freely rendered 'I could wish' or 'I should wish.'

In 2 Cor. 1:15 ἔβουλόμην πρότερον has its usual signification. In Phil. 13 f. ἔβουλόμην (a past preference) is set over against οὔδεν ηὐθελησα (a past decision). Another example is ἦθελον παρεῖναι πρὸς οὖμας ἀρτι (Gal. 4:20). Note ἀρτι. For the force of the present see 1 Cor. 10:20; Col. 2:1; and especially Lu. 19:14, of θέλομεν. In Jo. 6:21, ἦθελον, the usual notion occurs. An example is found in Ro. 9:3, ηὐχόμην, where Paul almost expresses a moral wrong. He holds himself back from the abyss by the tense. He does not say εὔχομαι (cf. 2 Cor. 13:7), nor εὔξαιμην ἰν (Ac. 26:29). Note υἱεύδομαι in Ro. 9:1. In Ac. 27:29 ηὐχοντο has its usual force.

Wishes about the present are naturally unattainable. In the ancient idiom ἐθε or ἐτ γάρ was used with the imperf. ind. or ὠφελοῦν and the inf. Callimachus, B.C. 260, uses ὠφελοῦν with the ind. The augmentless form ὠφελοῦν appears in Herodotus (Moulton, Prol., p. 201). In the N. T. only ὠφελοῦν is used with the perf. for wishes about the present. Cf. ὠφελοῦν ἀνείχεσθε (2 Cor. 1:1); ὠφελοῦν ἵς (Rev. 3:15).

Verbs of propriety, possibility, obligation or necessity are also used in the imperfect when the obligation, etc., is not lived up to, has not been met. Winer2 has stated the matter well. The Greeks (and the Latins) start from the past and state the real possibility or obligation, and the reader, by comparing that with facts, notes that the obligation was not met. The English and the Germans start from the present and find trouble with this past statement of a present duty (an unfulfilled duty). A distinction is usually drawn between the present and the aorist infinitives when they occur with these verbs (ἐδύνατο, ὠφειλοῦν, ἔδει, καλὸν ἦν, κρεῖττον ἦν, ἀνήκεν, καθῆκεν). The present inf. refers more directly to the present, the aorist to an action in the past. This is, however, only by suggestion. Thus in Mt. 18:33, οὐκ ἔδει καὶ σὲ ἐλείσατα, note ὡς καλῶ σὲ ἠλέησα. Cf. also Mt. 23:23 οὔτω δὲ ἔδει ποιῆσαι κάκεινα μὴ ἀφεῖναι, (25:27) ἔδει σὲ βαλεῖν, (26:9) ἐδύνατο πραθῆ ναί καὶ δοῆ ναί, (26:24) καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ (no inf. here), (Ac. 22:22) οὐ γάρ καθήκεν οὐτὸν ζῆν, (24:19) οὐς ἔδει ἐπὶ σοῦ παρεῖναι, (26:32) ἄπολελύσθαι ἐδύνατο (note perf. inf.), (27:21) ἔδει μὴ ἀνάγεσθαι

---

1 Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 15.
2 W.-Th., p. 282.
κερδησαί τε, (2 Pet. 2:21) κρείττον ἂν αὐτοῖς μὴ ἐπεγνωκέναι (perf. inf.), (2 Cor. 2:3) ἀφ’ ὄν ἔδει με χαίρειν, (Col. 3:18) ὡς ἀνήκεν ἐν κυρίῳ (Cf. Eph. 5:4.) But it must not be supposed that these imperfects cannot be used in the normal expression of a past obligation or possibility that was met. The context makes the matter clear. Cf. Lu. 13:16; 22:7; 24:26; Jo. 4:4, etc. In Lu. 15:32 ἔδει applies to both the past and present, probably with an implication against the attitude of the elder brother. In Heb. 2:10 ἐπρεπεν and 2:17 ωφειλεν have their natural past meaning.

Another instance where the imperfect refers to present time is in the second-class conditional sentences (see chapter XIX, Mode). When a condition is assumed as unreal and refers to present time, the imperfect tense is used both in the protasis and the apodosis in normal constructions. See apodosis in Mt. 26:24 and in Ac. 26:32 (both quoted above). It is only the tense that calls for discussion here. Cf. ἀμαρτίαν οὐχ ἐίχοσαν (Jo. 15:22, 24), where οὐν δὲ is used to explain the point. So οὐκ ἔρχεσ (Jo. 19:11). In 1 Cor. 5:10, ὡφείλετε ἀρα—ἐξελθεῖν, and Heb. 9:26, ἐπεὶ ἔδει—παθεῖν, we only have the apodosis. Cf. εἰ ἦν—ἐγίνωσκεν ἂν. (Lu. 7:39) as a type of the more usual construction with ἂν. Cf. Lu. 17:6. In Heb. 11:15 the imperfects describe past time.

(Θ) In Indirect Discourse. In general the imperfect in indir. discourse represents an imperfect of the direct discourse. But sometimes with verbs of perception it is relative time and refers to a time previous to the perception. Thus ἐίχον τὸν ᾽Ιωάννην ὅτι προφήτης ἦν (Mk. 11:32); ἔδον ὅτι οὐκ ἦν (Jo. 6:22. Cf οὐκ ἔστιν in verse 24); ὅτι προσανός ἦν (9:8); ἐπεγίνωσκον ὥστε ἦν ὁ καθήμενος (Ac. 3:10) while in 4:13 ἦσαν is rightly antecedent to ἐπεγίνωσκον, ἔδεσαν ὅτι—ὑπήρχεν (16:3). In Ac. 3:10 the idiom approaches that in Jo. 1:15, οὕτως ἦν ὁ ἐπισώ (a parenthesis), where the verb is thrown back to past time. Our idiom more naturally calls for ἔστιν, here. Gildersleeve2 calls this the "imperfect of sudden appreciation of real state of things."

(c) The Periphrastic Imperfect. It is easy to see how in the present, and especially in the future, periphrastic forms were felt to be needed to emphasize durative action. But that was the real function of the imperfect tense. The demand for this stressing of the durative idea by ἦν and the present participle was cer-

---

1 Blass, Gr.lol N. T. Gk., p. 192; Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 339. This imperfect is particularly common in John.
2 Synt., p. 96 f.
tainly not so great. And yet it is just in the imperfect in the N. T. that this idiom is most frequent. It is not unknown in the ancient Greek. Schmid finds it rare in the κοινή, especially in the imperfect, where the N. T. is so rich in the idiom. He suggests the Aramaic influence, particularly as that language is fond of this periphrasis. Periphrasis is thoroughly Greek, and yet in the N. T. we have unusual frequency of a usage that the κοινή has not greatly developed except "where Aramaic sources underlie the Greek" (Moulton, Prol., p. 226). Gildersleeve (Syntax, p. 124) gives classical examples from Pindar, Thuc., Isocrates, etc. It is true that in the N. T. the pres. participle with ἤν occurs chiefly in Mark (19 times), Luke (31), Acts (28, but 17 of them in chapters 1-12), and just in those portions most subject to Aramaic influence (possible Aramaic sources). Only 7 occur in Acts 13-28, and these mainly in the speech in 22 delivered in Aramaic.

The LXX gives abundant illustration of this analytic tendency in the imperfect. Cf. Gen. 37:2; Deut. 9:24; Judg. 1:7. Cf. Thackeray, Gr., p. 24. From Pelagia (p. 18) Moulton (Prol., p. 249) cites ἡμὴν ἀπερχόμενος. For a papyrus illustration see ὅσα ἤν καθῆκοντα, P. Oxy. 115 (ii/A.D.). The idiom itself is therefore Greek, but the frequency of it in the N. T. is due to the Hebrew and Aramaic. Matthew has it 10 times, John 11, Paul 5.

The Pauline examples (Gal. 1:22 f.; Ph. 2:26) are more like the classic independence of the participle. It is usually the descriptive imperfect that uses the periphrastic form. So ἤν διδάσκων (Mt. 7:29); ἤν ἔχων (Mk. 10:22); ὁσαν ἀναβαίνοντες (10:32); ἤν προσευχόμενον (Lu. 1:10); καὶομένη ἤν (Lu. 24:32). But sometimes it is the iterative imperfect as in ἤν διανεύων (Lu. 1:22); ἤν διδάσκων τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν (19:47). In Lu. 5:17 the periphrastic imperfect and past perfect occur in the same sentence. In Lu. 23:12 note προὐπήρχον ὄντες (cf. Ac. 8:9).

(k) Past Perfects as Imperfects. The present perfects of these verbs are merely presents in sense when compared with other verbs. So the past perfects have only an imperfect force. Thus ἔπει (Mt. 27:18); εἰώθει (27:15); ἰστήκει (Jo. 18:5).

(c) The Future for Future Time. The future is mainly aoristic (punctiliar), as has already been shown, but sometimes durative. The broad lines of the problem have already been

---

2 Atticismus, III, p. 113 f.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 227.
4 C. and S., Sel., p. 69.
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 227.
6 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 16.
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 149.
drawn. As already shown, the modern Greek has a special durative future by means of θὰ λάω (pres. subj.). See Thumb, Handb., p. 160. A summary statement of the durative future is given.

(a) The Three Kinds of Action in the Future (futuristic, volitive, deliberative). These occur here also. Thus merely futuristic are σώσει (Mt. 1:21); βαπτίσει (Mt. 3:11); ἐλπιοῦσιν (12:21); ἔσται (Lu. 1:14 f.); ἐπιστρέψει and προελεύσεται (1:16 f.); ἐλκύσω (Jo. 12:32); ζήσομεν (Ro. 6:2); κυριεύσει (6:14); βαστάσει (Gal. 6:5); ἐπιτελέσει (Φh. 1:6); χαρῆσομαι (1:18); ζητήσουσιν (Rev. 9:6). Burton¹ calls this "the progressive future." Cf. Ac. 7:6. Durative also is ἀδικήσει with οὐ μή (Lu. 10:19). So οὐ μή διψήσει (Jo. 4:14; cf. 6:35); οὐ μή ἀκολουθήσουσιν (Jo. 10:5). Examples of the volitive durative future are the legal precepts (common in the LXX) so often quoted in the N. T. Cf. οὖν φονεύσει (Mt. 5:21); οὐ μοιχεύσεις (5:27); οὐκ ἐπιρκήσεις, ἀποδώσεις (5:33); ἀγαπήσεις (5:43; cf. ἀγαπᾶτε, verse 44); ἐσεσθε (5:48), etc. Perhaps ὀικοδομήσω (Mt. 16:18)='I will' rather than 'I shall.' In 1 Tim. 6:8, τοῦτοις ἀρκεσθησόμεθα, the resolution is volitive. It is possible that we have the volitive use in Mt. 4:4, οὐκ ἔπῃ ἀρτῳ μόνῳ ζήσεται ὁ ἀνθρωπός. The deliberative future may also be durative. Cf. Mt. 18:21, ποσάκις ἀμαρτήσει; (merely interrogative) and Lu. 14:34, ἐν τίνι ἀρτυθήσεται; (rhetorical). Cf. aor., pres. and fut. ind. in Mt. 28:7.

(b) The Periphrastic Future. The very failure of the future to express durative action clearly² led to the use of the present participle ἐσομαι. In Lysias (2), 13, note ἔσονται γενόμενοι more like a future punctiliar (or perfect). Cf. Mt. 10:22 and 24:9, ἐσεσθε μισούμενοι (Mk. 13:13; Lu. 21:17); (Mk. 13:25) ἔσονται πιπτοντες (Lu. 1:20) ἐσῃ σιωπών, (5:10) ἐσῃ ζωγρων, (17:35) ἔσονται ἀληθούσαι, (21:24) ἔσται πατομένη, (1 Cor. 14:9) ἐσεσθε λαλοῦντες. Cf. Gen. 4:12, 14; Deut. 28:29; Mal. 3:3, etc. The frequent use of μέλλω and the pres. inf. (durative) has already been mentioned. The fut. of μέλλω itself occurs (Mt. 24:6) with the pres. inf.

2. SUBJUNCTIVE AND OPTATIVE. The rarity of the press subj. (and opt., of course) has already been commented upon. The aorist is used as a matter of course here unless durative action is to be expressed. A few examples will suffice. Thus τί ποιῶμεν; (Jo. 6:28); ἐὰν ἔχητε (Mt. 17:20); ἔχωμεν (Ro. 5:1). The subjunctive is very common indeed, but not in the present tense. There is in the N. T. no instance of a periphrastic present subj.

or optative. John's free use of the pres. subj. has already been noted (Abbott, *Joh. Gr.*, pp. 369 ff.). Cf. ἐὰν ποιήτε (13:17); ἐὰν μαρτυρῶ (5:31). In Col. 1:18 note γέννηται πρωτεύων like ἐγένετο στίλβοντα (Mk. 9:3). The present opt. survives in δυναμὴν (Ac. 8:31); ἔχοι (Ac. 17:11); βούλοιτο (Ac. 25:20); θέλοι (Ac. 17:18; Lu. 1:62); ἔτη (9:46; 15:26; 18:36; 22:23; Ac. 10:17).

3. IMPERATIVE. The contrast between the present imperative and the aorist subj. in prohibitions had to be set forth in connection with the punctiliar-aorist subj. The present imper. was found to be regularly durative. In Paul's frequent use of the pres. imper. with μὴ the inchoative or conative or customary (prohibiting a course of conduct) use of the present is noticeable, as in μὴ ἀμέλει (1 Tim. 4:14); μηδεὶς ἐπιτίθει (5:22); μηδὲ κοινώνει (ib.); μὴ μεθύσκεσθε (Eph. 5:18); μὴ ψεύδεσθε (Col. 3:9). Cf. μὴ ἀπαίτει (Lu. 6:30). In general μὴ is used with the present imper. to forbid what one is already doing. Cf. μὴ φοβεῖσθε (Jo. 6:20); μὴ κρίνετε (Mt. 7:1); μηκέτι ἀμάρτανε (Jo. 5:14); μὴ θαυμάζετε (5:28); μὴ δοκεί (5:45); μηκέτει σκύλλε (Lu. 8:49). The durative force of the pres. imper. is well seen in καθεύδετε καὶ ἀναπαύσετε (Mt. 26:45). Cf. also πάντοτε χαίρετε, ἀδιαλείπτως προσεύχεσθε, ἐν παντὶ εὐχαριστεῖ τε (1 Th. 5:16-22). A good example is seen in Ac. 18:9, Ἔγερθε, ἀλλὰ λάλει καὶ μὴ σιωπήσῃς, 'He had been afraid, he was to go on speaking, he was not to become silent.' Cf. 2 Tim. 2:16, 22 f. The contrast between aorist and pres. imper. is often drawn in the N. T., as in Jo. 5:8; Mt. 16:24. We note the periphrastic pres. imper. in ἵσθι εὐνοῶν (Mt. 5:25); ἵσθι ἔχων (Lu. 19:17); ἵστε γινώσκοντες (Eph. 5:5); ἐστωσαν καιόμενοι (Lu. 12:35). Cf. Judg. 11:10; Prov. 3:5; γίνου γρηγορῶν (Rev. 3:2); 2 Cor. 6:14. Moulton (Prol., p. 249) cites from Πελαγία (p. 26) ἀσο γινώσκων.

4. INFINITIVE. The present inf. can be assumed to be durative. The matter has had some discussion in connection with the aorist inf. (punctiliar), but a few further examples will illustrate the usage. Cf. τῶ ἀέτω γράφειν ὑμῖν (Ph. 3:1) and τὸ ἀγαπάν αὐτῶν (Mk. 12:33) where the linear action is obvious. Indeed the force of the pres. inf. is so normal as to call for little comment. Cf. οὐ δύναμαι ποιεῖν (Jo. 5:30. Cf. Mt. 6:24); τὸ θέλειν Ro. 7:18); ἀμαρτάνειν (1 Jo. 3:9); προσεύχεσθαι (1 Cor. 11:13); τὸν πτατεῖν (Lu. 10:19), etc. For the distinction between the
aorist and pres. inf. see ἐμβῆναι—καὶ προάγειν (Mt. 14:22). Cf. αἴτειν in Ac. 3:2. The frequent use of μέλλω and the pres. inf. has already been twice mentioned. In indirect discourse the pres. inf. merely represents the pres. ind. of the direct discourse. Cf. εἶναι (Mt. 22:23; Ro. 1:22); ἐκβάλλειν (Lu. 11:18), etc. There is one instance in the N. T. of a pres. inf. in indir. discourse representing an imperfect incl. 1 Luke has a periphrastic pres. inf., ἐν τῷ ἐναι αὐτὸν προσευχόμενον, which occurs twice (9:18; 11:1). Cf. 2 Chron. 15:16. Only two fut. infs. in the N. T. seem to be durative (Ac. 11:28; Jo. 21:25). The pres. inf. is most natural with ἔν (cf. Lu. 8:40), and is common with διά (cf. Mt. 13:f.); εἰς (Ro. 12:2); but not (pres. 3, aor. 9) with πρός (Mk. 13:22). It is used only once with πρό (Jo. 17:5) and is not used with μετά. Cf. Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 49 f.

5. PARTICIPLE. The present participle, like the present inf., is timeless and urative.

(a) *The Time of the Present Participle Relative*. The time comes from the principal verb. Thus in πωλοῦτες ἐφεροῦν (Ac. 4:34). Cf. πωλήσας ἠρείκεν in verse 37) the time is past; in μεριμνῶν δύναται (Mt. 6:27) the time is present; in ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι (Mt. 10:22), ὁ βλέπων ἀποδώσει (Mt. 6:18), ἄφονται τὸν ὦν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐρχόμενον, (24:30) it is future. Cf. Mt. 24:46; Lu. 5:4; 12:43. Further examples of the pres. part. of coincident action are seen in Mt. 27:41; Mk. 16:20; Jo. 6:6; 21:19; Ac. 9:22; 10:44; 19:9.

(b) *Futuristic*. Just as the pres. ind. sometimes has a futuristic sense, so the pres. part. may be used of the future in the sense of purpose (by implication only, however). Cf. εὐλογοῦντα (Ac. 3:26); ἀπαγγέλλοντας (15:27); διακοῦν (Ro. 15:25). In Ac. 18:23, εἴηθεν διερχόμενος τὴν Γαλατικὴν χώραν, the pres. part. is coincident with the verb. In 21:2 f. the pres. parts. διαπερῶν and ἀποφορτιζόμενον are futuristic (cf. 3:26; 15:27). Blass, page 189, notes ὁ ἐρχόμενος (Jo. 11:27) and ἐρχόμενον (1:9). This use of the pres. part. is common in Thuc. (Gildersleeve, A. J. P., 1908, p. 408).

(c) *Descriptive*. But usually the pres. part. is merely descriptive. Cf. Mk. 1:4; Ac. 20:9; 2 Cor. 3:18; 4:18. There is no notion of purpose in ἀγωνίταις (Ac. 21:16). In τοὺς σωζόμενος (Ac. 2:47) the idea is probably iterative, but the descriptive durative is certainly all that is true of τοὺς ἀγιαζόμενος in Heb. 10:14 (cf. 10:10).

1 Lu. 20:6, contrary to Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 52.
(d) Conative. It may be conative like the pres. or imperf. ind. as in πείθων (Ac. 28:23) or τοὺς εἴσερχομένους (Mt. 23:14).

(e) Antecedent Time. By implication also the pres. part. may be used to suggest antecedent time (a sort of "imperfect" part.). So τυφλός ὥν ἄρτι βλέπω (Jo. 9:25). See further Mt. 2:20; Jo. 12:17; Ac. 4:34; 10:7; Gal. 1:23. Cf. ὁ βαπτίζων (Mk. 1:4).

(f) Indirect Discourse. Cf. p. 864. An example of the pres. part. with the object of a verb (a sort of indir. disc. with verbs of sensation) is found in εἴδαμεν τινα ἐκβάλλοντα δαιμόνια (Lu. 9:49). The pres. part. is common after εἶδον in Rev. (10:1; 13:1, 11; 114:6; 18:1; 20:1, etc.). Cf. Ac. 19:35, γινώσκει τὴν πόλιν οὕσαν.

(g) With the Article. The present participle has often the iterative (cf. pres. ind.) sense. So ὁ κλέπτων (Eph. 4:28)='the rogue.' Cf. ὁ καταλύων (Mt. 27:40); οἱ ζητοῦντες (2:20). The part. with the article sometimes loses much of its verbal force (Moulton, Prol., p. 127; Kuhner-Gerth, I, p. 266). He cites from the papyri, τοὺς γαμοῦσαν, C. P. R. 24 (ii/A.D.). Cf. τοὺς σωζόμενους (Ac. 2:47). So in Gal. 4:27, ἢ οὐ τίκτουσα, ἢ οὐκ ὁδίνουσα.

(h) Past Action Still in Progress. This may be represented by the pres. part. So Mk. 5:25; Jo. 5:5; Ac. 24:10. Cf. Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 59.

(i) "Subsequent" Action. Blass finds "subsequent" action in the pres. parts. in Ac. 14:22 and 18:23. But in 14:22 note ὑπέστρεψαν εἰς τὴν Λύστραν—ἐπιστηρίζοντες τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν μαθητῶν the aorist ind. is "effective" and accents the completion of the action. The pres. part. is merely coincident with the "effective" stage. It is a point, not a process in the aorist.

(j) No Durative Future Participles. The few fut. parts. in the N. T. seem to be punctiliar, not durative, unless τὸ γενησόμενον (I Cor. 15:37) be durative, but this example is pretty clearly ingressive punctiliar.

IV. Perfected State of the Action (ὅ τέλειος ἡ συντελικός).

1. THE IDEA OF THE PERFECT.

(a) The Present Perfect. The oldest of the perfects. "The perfect is a present perfect." Such it was in the beginning undoubtedly. The past perfect and future perfect are both built upon the present perfect stem. Both are comparatively rare, especially the future perfect. The use was at first also confined to the indicative. Moulton (Prol., p. 140) calls it the most important exegetically of the Greek tenses.

(b) The Intensive Perfect. This use (or the iterative) was probably the origin of the tense. So ὑλλυμαι = 'I perish,' ὑλωλα = 'I perish utterly.'\(^1\) Cf. also θυνήσκω, τέθυηκα; μιμνήσκω, μέμνημαι. The iterative process is seen in ἀπέσταλκα (2 Cor. 12:17), ἐώρακεν (Jo. 1:18). The "effective" aoristic present is close kin to the perfect, as we have already seen, in (Lu. 15:27); ἀκουῶ (1 Cor. 11:18); ἀδικῶ (Ac. 25:11). Reduplication, though not always used, was an effort to express this intensive or iterative idea. So likewise the aorist of an action just accomplished, like ἔγνων τί ποιήσω, (Lu. 16:4), is near in idea to the present perfect, though there is a difference. More about the intensive perfect a little later.

(c) The Extensive Perfect. This comes to be the usual force of the tense, Gildersleeve\(^2\) has put the thing finely: "The perfect looks at both ends of an action." It "unites in itself as it were present and aorist, since it expresses the continuance of completed action."\(^3\) That is to say, the perfect is both punctiliar and durative. The aorist (punctiliar) represents an action as finished, the linear present as durative, but the perfect presents a completed state or condition. When the action was completed the perfect tense does not say. It is still complete at the time of the use of the tense by speaker or writer. In Jo. 1:32 τεθέαμαι in the mouth of John the Baptist refers to the baptism of Jesus some week before, but he still has the vision. Cf. 1:34, ἐώρακα καὶ μεμαρτύρηκα, where there is a difference of time between the two words. When Andrew said to Peter εὑρήκαμεν (1:41) his discovery is recent and vivid. No single graph for the perfect can therefore be made. In some cases the line of connection from the act (punctiliar) to the time of speaking would be very short, in others very long. This line of connection is just the contribution of the perfect tense as distinct from aorist and present. As a matter of fact, in the combination of punctiliar and durative in the perfect it begins with the punctiliar and goes on with the durable thus (•-----), but the emphasis may be now on the punctiliar, now on the durative. In others the two are drawn almost to a point, but not quite. In still others there is a broken continuity thus (A • • • • > • • • • B).\(^4\) It is the perfect of repeated action. Cf. Jo. 1:18; 5:37; 2 Cor. 12:17.

---

\(^3\) Blass, Cu of N. T. Gk., p. 198.
\(^4\) Moulton, Prol., p. 144.
(d) **Idea of Time in the Tense.** In the ind. it appears in three forms with the notion of time (past perfect, present perfect, future perfect). In the other modes only the present perfect occurs, but it has no time in itself and in the imper. and subj. is naturally future. Often in the N. T., as in the Attic writers, a sharp distinction is drawn between the perfect and the aorist or the present. Cf. μαρτυρεῖ with ἀπέσταλκεν and μεμαρτύρηκεν in Jo. 5:36 f.; εἰσήγαγεν—καὶ κεκοίμηκεν, (Ac. 21:28); ὃτι ἔταφη, καὶ ὃτι ἐγνήσεται (1 Cor. 15:4); ἐκτίσθη-ἐκτισταί (Col. 1:16); ἦσαν, ἔδωκας, τετήρηκας (Jo. 17:6). The perfect active is frequently intransitive, as has been already shown under Voice. Cf. ἵστημι, ἔστηκα, ἀπόλλυμι, ἀπόλλωλα, etc.

2. **THE INDICATIVE.**

(a) **The Present Perfect** (ὁ ἐνεσώς συντελικός ἡ παρακείμενος). It is not clear how the notion of present time is conveyed by this tense in the ind. since it is absent in the subj. and imper., not to say inf. and part. Gildersleeve suggests that it "comes from the absence of the augment and from the fact that a completed phenomenon cannot complete itself in the future." But that explanation is not very satisfactory. The tense does occur sometimes in the future, and the present perfect is older than the past perfect which rests on it. Perhaps at first it was just the perfect tense (cf. aoristic presents and timeless aorists) and was timeless. By degrees it came to be used only for present time. The rise of the past perfect made it clear. The pres. perf. is much more common in the κοινή than in the earlier Greek. "The perfect was increasingly used, as the language grew older, for what would formerly have been a narrative aorist" (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 141). In particular is this true of the vernacular as the papyri show.

(a) **The Intensive Present Perfect.** Moulton calls these "Perfects with Present Force." They are *Perfecta Praesentia*. In reality they are perfects where the punctiliar force is dropped and only the durative remains (cf. past perfect). Gildersleeve distinguishes sharply between the intensive use of emotional verbs and what he calls the "Perfect of Maintenance of Result." But it is questionable if the difference does not lie in the nature of the verb rather than in a special modification of the tense. A real distinction exists in 1 Jo. 4:14 between τεθεάμηθα and μαρτυροῦμεν. Burton follows Gildersleeve, but he admits the doubt on

1 Giles, Man., p. 493.  
2 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 23.  
4 Synt., p. 99 f.  
5 N. T. M. and T., p. 37 f.  
3 Prol., p. 147.
the subject.\(^1\) In these verbs when the perfect has lost the punctiliar notion it is due to the change in meaning of the verbs.\(^2\) The list is rather large in Homer, particularly where attitude of mind is expressed.\(^3\) Giles (Man., p. 481) thinks that originally the perf. was either intensive or iterative like ἔστηκα, and that the notion of recently completed action (extensive) is a development. These almost purely durative perfects in the N. T. may be illustrated by ἐσικά (Jas. 1:6); ἀνέψα (2 Cor. 6:11); ὀδα (Mt. 6:8); ἔστηκα (Rev. 3:20); ἐνέστηκα (2 Th. 2:2); πέποιθα (Ph. 2:24); κέκραγεν (Jo 1:15) which is an example of Gildersleeve's emotional intensives and due according to Blass\(^4\) to the "literary language," μέμνημαι (1 Cor. 11:2); τέθυκα (Lu. 8:49). Most of these verbs have an inchoative or conative or iterative sense in the present. Moulton\(^5\) has shown from the LXX and the papyri that κέκραγα, is vernacular κοινή and not merely literary. He thinks that, while κράζω in the LXX is durative, κέκραγα is merely punctiliar. See (Θ) The Aoristic Perfect. It is possible also that πεπιστεύκαμεν καὶ ἔγνωκαμεν (Jo. 6:69) belong here. It is less open to dispute that καταβέβηκα (Jo. 6:38) is a present state. Cf. κεκοίμηται (Jo. 11:11). But more doubtful are ἤλπικα (Jo. 5:45); ἡγημαί (Ac. 26:2); πέπειμαι. (Ro. 8:38).\(^6\) But τεάρακται (Jo. 12:27) seems to fall under the intensive perfect. Cf. ἐστώς εἶμι (Ac. 25:10).

(B) The extensive Present Perfect = a completed state. This act may be durative-punctiliar like ἡγγικεν (Mt. 3:2) with a backward look (-----•). Cf. thus ἡγώνυσμαι, τετέλεκα, τετήρηκα (2 Tim. 4:7). This consummative effect is seen in τετήρηκαν (Jo. 17:6), ἐλήλυθεν (12:23) and πεπληρώκατε (Ac. 5:28). Cf. Heb. 8:13; 10:4. In Jo. 20:29, ὅτι ἐωράκας με πεπίστευκας the culmination is just reached a few moments before. But more frequently it is the punctiliar-durative perfect where the completed act is followed by a state of greater or less duration (•-----). In Jo. 19:22, ὅ γέγραφα γέγραφα, we have an example of each. Cf. the common γέγραπται (Mt. 4:7). 'It was written (punctiliar) and still is on record' (durative). Thus is to be explained instances like εἴρηκεν in Heb. 10:9 (cf. εἶπον in 10:7). 'The statement is on record.' It is only in appearance that προσευνήσωκεν and πεποίηκεν (Heb. 11:17, 28) seem different. This common usage in Hebrews has been compared to that in Thuc. vol. I, pp. 2, 6, etc.

---

\(^1\) Cf. Delbruck, Vergl. Synt., Bd. II, p. 269 f.
\(^2\) Goodwin, M. and T., p. 15.
\(^3\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 22.
\(^5\) Prol., p. 147.
\(^6\) Ib.; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 199.
Cf. further Heb. 7:6, 9, 11, 13, 16, 20, 23, where the perma-
nence of the Jewish institutions is discussed. Jo. 6:25 γέγονονες
has punctiliar and durative ideas (‘earnest and art here’). Cf.
Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 347. In Col. 1:16 ἐκτίσθηνε is merely punc-
tiliar, while in same verse ἐκτίσταται adds the durative idea, whereas
in verse 17 again συνεστῆκεν has lost the punctiliar and is only
durative. In 1 Cor. 15:4 ἐγῇγερταί stands between two aorists
because Paul wishes to emphasize the idea that Jesus is still
risen. Usually ἦγερθη was sufficient, but not here. Cf. ἐστηρικταί
(Lu. 16:26). Cf. ἀφεωνται (Lu. 5:23); ἐκκεχυται (Ro. 5:5). John
is especially fond of this use of the present perfect. Cf. 1:32,
34, 41; 5:33, 36 ff. In chapter 17 the present perfects call for
special attention. Cf. 1 Jo. 1:1 for contrast between the pres-
ent perfect and the aorist.

(γ) The Present Perfect of Broken Continuity. As already ex-
plained, we here have a series of links rather than a line, a broken
graph (• • • • > • • • •). Perhaps πέπραξά τι in Ac. 25:11 is to be so
understood. But certainly it is true of ἀπεσταλκα (2 Cor. 12:17)
where Paul refers to various missions to the Corinthians. In
particular Moulton2 notes the examples with πώποτε, as οὐδείς
ἐώρακεν πώποτε (Jo. 1:18). Cf. further μεμαρτύρηκεν (5:37); δεδου-
λεύκαμεν (8:33).

(δ) The Dramatic Historical Present Perfect. Here an action
completed in the past is conceived in terms of the present time for
the sake of vividness. Burton3 doubts if any genuine examples of
the vivid historical perfect occur in the N. T. Certainly κέκραγέν
(Jo. 1:15) is a vivid historical tense even if only intensive in sense.
Cf. μαρτυρεῖ just before. But by the term "historical" it is not
meant that this use of the perfect is common in all narrative.
But the Vedic Sanskrit has it often in narrative. It is a matter
of personal equation after all. Thus Xenophon, who "affects
naivete," uses the present perfect much more frequently than
Herodotus and Thucydides.4 It is rather the tense of the orator
or the dramatist and is often rhetorical.5 Hence Isocrates and
Demosthenes surpass Plato in the use of the present perfect.
"The nearness of any department of literature to practical life
may readily be measured by the perfect."6 Moulton7 notes how
in the papyri there is an increasing use of the present perfect just

1 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 144.
2 Ib.
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 38.
5 Thompson, Synt., p. 216.
7 Prol., p. 141.
because it is so largely the language of life. He notes also how Socrates in Plato's Crito uses this vivid present perfect: "τεκμοίρομαι ἐκ τινος ἐνυπνίου, ὁ ἐώρακα ὀλίγον πρότερον ταύτης τῆς νυκτὸς, where point of time in the past would have εἶδον, as inevitable as the aorist is in English, had not Socrates meant to emphasize the present vividness of the vision." This vivid perfect is found in John's Gospel in particular. One only needs to have some imagina-
tion himself. Cf. τεθέαμαι. (1:32). John still has that vision. So εὑρήκαμεν (1:41). The aorist would have been prosaic. Cf. also ἀπεστάλκατε (5:33), a realistic change. (Cf. 1:19 ff.). So also ἀπέσταλκεν, in Ac. 7:35; κεκοίμωκεν in 21:28 and πεποίηκα in 2 Cor. 11:25. A striking instance of it is seen in Rev. 5:7, ἐξάληψεν, where point of time in the past would have εἰδον, as inevitable as the aorist is in English, had not Socrates meant to emphasize the present vividness of the vision. Another example of this vivid perfect is ἔχαρκαµεν (2 Cor. 1:9), a dreadful memory to Paul. So with ἐσχάλκεν in 7:5. A particularly good instance is γέγονεν (Mt. 25:6), where the present perfect notes the sudden cry (cf. aorist and imperf. just before). Cf. εὐρηκεν in 2 Cor. 12:9. Blass has observed that it occurs sometimes in parables or illustrations, and quite naturally so, for the imagination is at play. Thus is to be explained ἀπελήλυθεν, (Jas. 1:24) between two aorists. James sees the man. 'He has gone off.' Cf. Mt. 13:46, ἀπελθὼν πέρακεν πάντα ὅσα ἔδεχεν καὶ ἠγόρασεν αὐτόν. In Lu. 9:36 ἐώρακαν is "virtually reported speech."2 Cf. ἀκηκόαμεν (Ac. 6:11, but ἱκούσαμεν in 15:24).

(e) The Gnomic Present Perfect. A few examples of this idiom seem to appear in the N. T. The present was always the more usual tense for customary truths, though the aorist and the perfect both occur. Cf. τετελείωται (1 Jo. 2:5); δέδεται (1 Cor. 7:39); κεκρίται and πεπίστευκεν (Jo. 3:18); κατακέριται (Ro. 14:23); πεπλήρωκεν (13:8). Cf. Jo. 5:24; Jas. 2:10.

(ε) The Perfect in Indirect Discourse. It is misleading to say, as Blass' does, that "the perfect is used relatively instead of the pluperfect" in such instances. This is explaining Greek from the German. Blass does not call this construction "indirect discourse," but merely "after verbs of perception"; but see my discussion of Indirect Discourse in ch. XIX. Cf. Lu. 9:36 οὐδενὶ ἀπήγγειλαν οὐδὲν ὡς ἐώρακαν, Ac. 10:45 ἐξέστησαν ὅτι ἐκκέχυταί. In Mk. 5:33, εἶδον δ ἐγέγονεν αὐτῷ ἥλθεν, the perfect preserves the

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 200.  
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 144.  
3 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 53 f.  
4 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 39  
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 200,
vividness of the woman's consciousness. Here the past perfect or the aorist could have been used (cf. Mk. 15:10; Mt. 27:18; Ac. 19:32). It is akin to the reportorial vividness of the historical perfect. It is not the perfects here that call for explanation from the Greek point of view. It is rather the occasional aorists, imperfects or past perfects. Cf. MS. differences in Mk. 3:8.

(η) Futuristic Present Perfect. Since the present so often occurs in a futuristic sense, it is not strange if we find the present perfect so used also future perfect. This proleptical use of the perfect may be illustrated by δεδόξασθαι (Jo. 17:10), δέδωκα (17:22), τετέλεσται (19:28), σέσηπεν and γέγονεν and κατίωται in Jas. 5:2 f. (cf. ἠσταί καὶ φάγεται). This use is sometimes called "prophetico-perfect." Indeed some of the examples classed as gnomic are really proleptical also. Cf. Jo. 3:18; 5:24; Jas. 2:10; Ro. 13:8; 14:23.1

(θ) The "Aoristic" Present Perfect. The Present Perfect is here conceived as a mere punctiliar preterit like the aorist ind. We have seen how in some verbs the punctiliar idea drops out and only the durative remains in some present perfect forms (like οἶδα). It is not per se unreasonable to suppose that with some other verbs the durative idea should disappear and the form be merely punctiliar. We seem to have this situation in κέκραγα in the LXX (Moulton, Prol., p. 147). The action itself took place in the past though the state following its completion is present. "By centering attention on the former, while forgetting the latter, the perfect becomes aoristic. We must distinguish between the aoristic (punctiliar) and the preterit notions. We have seen that originally the tense was probably timeless. Nothing, then, but an appeal to the facts can decide whether in the N. T. the present perf. ind. ever = the aor. ind. (i.e. is preterit punctiliar). The Sanskrit2 shows a deal of confusion and freedom in the use of the pres. perf. ind. The blending of the perfect and aorist firms in Latin is also a point to note in spite of the independence of the Greek tense development. E. J. Goodspeed (Am. J. Theol., X, 102 f.) regards Latin as having some influence on the ultimate confusion in the Greek. There is no doubt of the ultimate confusion in the late Greek3 (from A.D. 300 on) between the perfect and the aorist (see later). The use of ἡγκα and —ηκα in the aorist pass. ind. in modern Greek illustrates one way confusion could

3 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 440; Moulton, Prol., p. 142.
arise (Thumb Handb., p. 144). Cf. ἔδωκα, δέδωκα. In the modern Greek all other remnants of the old perfect form are gone save in the participle, which has lost its reduplication, like δεμένος. But had it begun in the older Greek? Jannaris\(^1\) answers Yes and cites Thuc. 1, 21, οὐτε ὃς ποιηταὶ ὑμνήκασι—οὕτε ὁπὶ λογογράφοι ἔμεθεσαν. But this may be the dramatic historical perfect. Jebb\(^2\) answers Yes and quotes Demosthenes and Lucian; but these again may be merely the rhetorical dramatic perfect. The grammarians and scholiasts, under the influence of the Latin, did come to lose all consciousness of any distinction and explained one tense by the other.\(^3\) The present perfect was always more common in every-day life, as we have noted. The papyri prove this abundantly.\(^4\) Moreover, the present perfect grew in popular use at the expense of the aorist, where the aorist might have been employed. There is thus no strong presumption against the possibility of such confusion in the N. T. Besides, "the line between aorist and perfect is not always easy to draw."\(^5\) This is especially true of an event just past which may be described by either tense. Moulton\(^6\) admits that "the LXX and inscriptions show a few example of a semi-aoristic perfect in the pre-Roman age, which, as Thumb remarks (Hellenismus, p. 153), disposes of the idea that Latin influence was working" thus early. But Moulton rightly rejects ἴδων ὁ λαὸς ὅτι κεχρόνικε Μωϋσῆς (Ex. 32:1) as an instance (merely ορατίον οβλίκου). Simcox\(^7\) says that "no one but a doctrinaire special pleader is likely to deny that in Rev. 5:7; 8:5, ἐλήθιεν, and in 7:14, ἔφηκα are mere preterits in sense." Well, I do deny it as to ἐλήθιεν in Rev. 5:7 and 8:5, where we have the vivid dramatic colloquial historical perfect. The same thing is possible with ἔφηκα in 7:14, but I waive that for the moment. Burton\(^8\) is more cautious. He claims that the N. T. writers "had perfect command of the distinction between the aorist and the perfect," but admits that "there is clear evidence that the perfect tense was in the N. T. sometimes an aorist in force," though the idiom is confined within narrow limits. Some of the examples claimed by him for this usage I have explained otherwise already. Moulton\(^9\) sees that this confusion may exist in one writer, though not in another, but he admits a

---

\(^1\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 439.  
\(^2\) V. and D., Handb., p. 328.  
\(^3\) Ib.; Jann., Gk. Gr., p. 339 f.  
\(^4\) Moulton, Prol., p. 141.  
\(^5\) Ib.  
\(^6\) Ib., p. 142.  
\(^7\) Lang. of the N. T., p. 104.  
\(^8\) N. T. M. and T., p. 44.  
\(^9\) Prol., pp. 143 ff.
"residuum of genuinely aoristic perfects." He admits γέγονα to be "perplexing," though in the 45 examples in the ind. in the N. T. "it has obviously present time" and "the aoristic sense is not really proved for any of them." That is certainly true. There are instances in the N. T., as in the later Greek generally, where γέγονα approaches a present in sense, as in 1 Cor. 13:11, but its use as a mere preterit is not shown, not even by the examples quoted by Moulton from the papyri (0. P. 478 and B. U. 136). The first has προσβεβηκέναι—γεγονέναι—τετελευκέναι, all three apparently vivid historical perfects. The example in Josephus (Apion, 4:21) may be the same. We have left εἰληφα, ἔρημα, ἔσχημα, πέρρακα. The last Moulton refuses to admit as an aorist in sense, since "the distinction is very clearly seen in papyri for some centuries" between πέρρακα and ἦγοράσα. He cites 0. P. 482 (ii/A.D.), χωρίς ὄν ἀπεγραφάμην καὶ πέρρακα. Besides in Mt. 13:46 πέρρακεν is in a vivid parable (dramatic historical perfect). Moulton notes the confusion as worse in illiterate papyri, like οὐκ ἔλουσάμην οὐκ ἔλιμε (=ἤλειμμαι), 0. P. 528 (ii/A.D.). As to ἔσχημα the matter is more plausible in one example (2 Cor. 2:13). Blass affirms the true present perfect sense for ἔσχημα elsewhere in the N. T. (Mk. 5:15; 2 Cor. 1:9; 7:5; Ro. 5:2). Moulton replies that "we must, I think, treat all the Pauline passages alike." But why? He does not claim such uniformity for γέγονα in any N. T. writer. There is some analogy between ἔσχημα and ἔθημα and ἀφήκα, and ἔσχον may be ingressive, not constative. Moulton (Prol., p. 145) makes a good deal out of the fact that ἔσχον occurs only 20 times in the N. T. and that thus ἔσχημα may have come to mean 'possessed' (constative), but he admits that this does not suit in Ro. 5:2. He cites a possible example from B. U. 297 (ii/A.D.) τοῖς δικαίοις αἰτίας ἔσχηκόσι καὶ ἄνευ τινός ἀμφισβητήσεως ἐν τῇ νομῇ γενομένους (=—οὶς). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 122) thinks that the perfect in the κοινή comes within the sphere of the aorist at times. Thackeray (Gr., p. 24) thinks that εἰληφα in Dan. θ 4:30 and ἔσχημα, 3 M. 5:20, belong here. But if the whole case has to be made out from one example (2 Cor. 2:13; cf. 2 Cor. 7:5), it is at least quite problematical. The only substantial plea for taking ἔσχημα as preterit here is the fact that Paul did have ἄνεσις for his spirit after Titus

1 Cf. Buresch, Γέγοναν (Rh. M., 1891, p. 231 note).
2 Prol., p. 146.
3 Ib., p. 142.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 200.
5 Prol., p. 145.
6 Ib., p. 146.
came. But it was a partial ἀνεσθείς as the Epistle shows. It is therefore possible that in 2 Cor. 2:13 we do have a present perfect=preterit punctiliar (cf. ἔκρισθεν), possible but not quite certain. Paul may have wished to accent the strain of his anxiety up to the time of the arrival of Titus. The aorist would not have done that. The imperfect would not have noted the end of his anxiety. It was durative plus punctiliar. Only the past perfect and the present perfect could do both. The experience may have seemed too vivid to Paul for the past perfect. Hence he uses the (historical dramatic) present perfect. That is certainly a possible interpretation of his idea. Moulton (Prol., p. 238) in the Additional Notes draws back a bit from the preterit use of ἐσχήκα. He had advanced it "with great hesitation" and as "a tentative account." "The pure perfect force is found long after Paul's day: thus in the formula of an IOU, ὀμολογῶ ἐσχήκεναι παρὰ σοῦ διὰ χειρὸς ἐξ οἴκου χρῆσιν ἐντοκοῦν (B. U. 1015 in the early iii/A.D.), 'to, have received and still possess.'" We have ἐληφα and ἐφηκα left. Take ἐληφα. In Rev. 3:3 we have μνημόνευε οὖν πῶς ἐληφάς καὶ ἡκούσας καὶ τήρει, καὶ μετανόησον. It is preceded by ἐφηκα in the proper sense. This is an exhortation about the future. If ἡκούσας had been ἁκήκους no difficulty would exist. The perfect would emphasize the permanence of the obligation. It is as easy to say that ἡκούσας = a perfect as that ἐληφάς = an aorist. Both are abstractly possible and neither may be true. The reception may seem more a matter to be emphasized as durative than the hearing (punctiliar). It is a fine point, but it is possible. Cf. πεποίηκεν καὶ ἐληφὲν in Mk. 5:19. Cf. Jo. 3:32. The mere fact of the use of aorists and perfects side by side does not prove confusion of tenses. It rather argues the other way. It is possible with Blass to see the force of each tense in ἐώρακεν and ἡκούσεν in Jo. 3:32 (cf. 1 Jo. 1:1-3). Note also ἐσθήγαγεν καὶ κεκοίνωκεν, (Ac. 2:28). Cf. Lu. 4:18 where the change is natural. Moulton does find such confusion in the illiterate documents among the papyri. Simcox (Lang. of the N. T., p. 105) wishes to know what "distinction of sense" exists between ἔλαβον and ἔτελείωμαι in Ph. 3:12. It is very simple and very clear. ἔλαβον denies the sufficiency of Paul's past achievement, ἔτελείωμαι, denies it as a present reality. Cf. Ro. 13:12. I have already explained ἐληφα in Rev. 5:7 and 8:5. There is surely no trouble about ἐληφα in 2:28. In 11:17 again, ὅτι ἐληφές τὴν δύναμίν σου τὴν μεγάλην καὶ ἐβασίλευσας, it is not ἐληφές (punctiliar-durative, 

1 G. of N. T. Gk., p. 199.  
2 Prol., p. 142 f.
‘receivedst and still hast’) that calls for explanation, but ἐβασιλεύσας, which may be used to accent the ingressive idea or as a practical equivalent of the perfect. The use of εἰρήκα (Rev. 7:14) and εἰρήκαυ (19:3) seems more like a real preterit than any other examples in the N. T. In 7:14, B reads εἶπον. I would not labour the point over these two examples. If such a confusion of tenses occurred anywhere in the N. T., the Apocalypse would be the place to expect it. And yet even the Apocalypse is entitled to a word in its defence on this point in spite of the fact that Moulton¹ "frankly yields" these instances and Blass² says that "the popular intermixture of the two tenses appears undoubtedly in the Apocalypse." It is to be remembered that the Apocalypse is a series of visions, is intensely dramatic. It is just here that the rhetorical dramatic (historical) perfect so freely granted in the orators would be found. It is wholly possible that in this use of εἰρήκα we have only this idiom. "In history the perfect has no place outside of the speeches and the reflective passages in which the author has his say."³ It is curious how aptly Gildersleeve here describes these very instances of the present perfect which are called "aoristic." So I conclude by saying that the N. T. writers may be guilty of this idiom,⁴ but they have not as yet been proven to be. Cf. ἔχάρην ὅτι εἰρήκα in 2 Jo. 4. The distinction between the perf. and pres. is sharply drawn in Jas. 3:7, δαμάζεται καὶ δεδέμονασται.

(i) The Periphrastic Perfect. For the origin of this idiom see discussion in connection with the Past Perfect, (b), (n). The use of ἔχω (so common in later Greek and finally triumphant in modern Greek) has a few parallels in the N. T.⁵ Cf. ἔχε με παρητημένον (Lu. 14:19) with Latin idiom "I have him beaten." Cf. ἔχω κείμενα (Lu. 12:19, pres. part. used as perf.), ἔχεραμμένην ἔχων τὴν χείρα (Mk. 3:1). Cf. Mk. 8:17; Heb. 5:14; Jo. 17:13, ἔχωσιν --πεπληρωμένην. Here the perf. part. is, of course, predicate, but the idiom grew out of such examples. The modern Greek uses not only ἔχω δεμένο, but also δεμένα, but, if a conjunctive pron. precedes, the part. agrees in gender and number (cf. French). So τὴν ἔχω ὕδωμένη, 'I have seen her' (Thumb, Handb., p. 162). Passive is εἶμαι δεμένος. The use of γίνομαι is limited. Cf. ἔγενετο

εὐκοτωμένη (Rev. 16:10), a mixture of tenses (cf. Mk. 9:3). See Ex. 17:12; Ps. 72:14. Peculiar is γεγόνατε ἔχοντες in Heb. 5:12. It is εἰμί that is commonly used (about 40 times in the N. T.) with the perfect part. Cf. Num. 22:12; Is. 10:20. Burton\(^1\) notes that the intensive use of the perfect tense (cf. past perfect) is more common than the extensive. As examples of the intensive (=present) take πεπεισμένος ἔστιν (Lu. 20:6). So Jo. 2:17; Ac. 2:13, etc. For the extensive use (=completed act) note ἔστιν πεπραγμένων (Lu. 23:15). So Jo. 6:31; Heb. 4:2, etc. In Ac. 26:26 the main accent is on the punctiliar aspect (at the beginning, as in Jo. 6:31).

(k) Present as Perfect. These examples, like ἦκω, πάρειμι, ἡπτάομαι, κείμαι, have already been discussed under 1, (a), (η). Cf. ἀπόκειται, (2 Tim. 4:8).

(b) The last Perfect (ὁ ὑπερσυντελικός).

(a) The Double Idea. It is the perfect of the past and uses the form of the present perfect plus special endings and often with augment. The special endings\(^2\) show kinship with the aorist. As the present perfect is a blending in idea of the aoristic (punctiliar) and the durative present (a sort of durative aoristic present combined), so the past perfect is a blend of the aorist and the imperfect in idea.\(^3\) It is continuance of the completed state in past time up to a prescribed limit in the past. As in the present perfect, so here the relation between the punctiliar and the durative ideas will vary in different verbs. The name ὑπερσυντελικός (plus-quamperfectum)= more than perfect in the sense that it always refers to an antecedent date, "a past prior to another past"\(^4\) is no, always true.

(β) A Luxury in, Greek. The Greeks cared nothing for relative time, though that was not the only use for the past perfect, as just stated.\(^5\) Ordinarily the aorist ind. was sufficient for a narrative unless the durative idea was wanted when the imperfect was ready to hand. Herodotus shows a fondness for the past perfect.\(^6\) It disappeared in Greek before the present perfect,\(^7\) though in the N. T. it still survives in current, but not common, usage.\(^8\) It was never so frequent in Greek as the past perfect

---

\(^1\) N. T. M. and T., p. 40.
\(^2\) Giles, Man., p. 457.
\(^3\) Thompson, Synt., p. 217.
\(^4\) Moulton., Prol., p. 148. It is absent from the Boeotian dial. (Claflin, Synt., etc., p. 72).
\(^6\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 441.
\(^7\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 201.
\(^8\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 201.
was in Latin. The N. T. idiom conforms to that of the older language.

(γ) The Intensive Past Perfect. Present perfects that had come to be mere presents through accent on the durative idea and loss of emphasis on the aoristic (punctiliar) are virtual imperfects when turned into the past. Cf. ἦς εἰώθει (Mk. 10:1). So ἠδειν (Jo. 1:31), ἵστήκεσαν (Jo. 19:25; cf. Ac. 1:10 f.), ἐπισταθεὶς. (Lu. 11:22) and even ἐγνώκειτε (Mt. 12:7), for ἐγνώκα sometimes is used like ὁδα (1 Jo. 2:4). So with ἤν ἀπολωλὼς (Lu. 15:24; cf. εὐρέθη). Here we have a mere existing state in the past with the obscuration of the idea of completion (aoristic-punctiliar). But it is to be noted that the durative sense is usually a changed meaning from the aoristic sense. Cf. ὁδα from ἐδο. For this idiom in classic Greek see Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 103. Cf. also E. Schwartz, Index to Eus., pp. 214.

(δ) The Extensive Past Perfect. The past perfect usually presents a completed state or fixed condition in past time. As already said, it is not necessarily "a blend of past and praterpast." In Latin the past perfect shows no trace of the Aktionsart of the perfect; the past perfect is just time relatively past. The Greek past perfect expresses a state following a completed act in past time. Sometimes it is made clear by the context that a considerable space of time had intervened, though this is quite incidental with the Greek. Take Jo. 6:17, καὶ σκοτία ἡδη ἐγενότει καὶ οὔπω ἐληλύθει πρὸς αὐτοὺς ὁ Ἰησοῦς. The verb in the sentence before is ἥρχοντο (descriptive) and the verb following is διεγείρετο (inchoative). The time of these imperfects is, of course, past. But the two intervening past perfects indicate stages in the going (ἦρχοντο) before they reached the shore. Both ἡδη and οὔπω help to accent the interval between the first darkness and the final appearance of Jesus which is soon expressed by the vivid historical present, θεωροῦσιν (6:19). Here we have a past behind a past beyond a doubt from the standpoint of the writer, and that is the very reason why John used the past perfect here. In verse 16, ὦδ δὲ ὁψία ἐγένετο κατέβησαν οἱ μαθηταί, he had been content with the aorist in both the principal and the subordinate clauses. He had not cared there to express relative time, to stress the interval at all. The tenses in Jo. 6:16-21, by the way, form a very interesting study. John does, as a matter of fact, use the past perfect more

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 148.  
4 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 349.
frequently than do the Synoptists. He uses it to take the reader "behind the scenes" and often throws it in by way of parenthesis. Thus in 1:4 the past perfect δ'πεσταλμένου ἦσαν points back to the aorist δ'πέστειλαν in 1:19. In 4:8 δ'πεληθεισαν is a parenthetical explanation of what the disciples had done before this incident with the woman. So in 9:22 συνετέθειντο has ἦδη and notes a previous agreement. In 11:13 εἰρήκει points to a time just before, but note ἔδοξαν. The tenses in 11:11-13 are, all interesting (ἐπε, λέγει, ἐπον, εἰρήκει, κεκοίμηται, πορεύομαι, σωθήσεται). In 11:19 ἐληθεισαν denotes antecedent action, and in 11:30, τεθειμένος, the interval is marked. Cf. also 11:44, περιεδέδετο. In 11:57 δεδώκεισαν points backward as is true of οὐδέπω οὐδεὶς ἦν τεθειμένος (19:41). In 3:24 and 7:30; 8:20, the standpoint is later than the event described, but none the less it stretches backward though from a relatively future time. But this distinction is not confined to John. Cf. Mt. 7:25, τεθεμελίωτο, which points pack to verse 24. So in Mk. 14:44 δεδώκει refers to Judas' previous arrangement. Cf. also ἐκβεβλήκει in Mk. 16:9 with ἔφίλη. The tenses in Mk. 15:6-10 are interesting. The three past perfects all refer to antecedent action. Cf. ψυχόμητο with ἡγαγον in Lu. 4:29, and with ἐπορεύετο in verse 30. In Lu. 16:20 ἐβέβλητο suggests that the poor man had been at the door some while. In Ac. 4:22 γεγόνει (cf. τῷ γεγονότι) does not precede ἀπέλυςαν verse 21) by any great amount of time, yet the interval is real (cf. 3:1-10). In Ac. 9:21 ἐληθεί was contrasted with ἐστιν ὁ πορθήσας. In 14:23 cf. πεπίστευκεισαν with παρέθεντο. Cf. Ac. 4:27 and 31. In 14:26 the reference is to the beginning of the tour from Antioch. In 20:16, κεκρίκει, and 20:38, εἰρήκει, the two ends of the action nearly come together, but in 21:29 the antecedent action is clear. In Jo. 11:30, οὔπω ἐληθεῖ—ἀλλ' ἦν ἐτὶ—ὁποὺ ὑπήρθησεν, the three past tenses of the ind. come out well. In 11:56 f. τί δοκεὶ ύμῖν; ὅτι οὐ μὴ ἐλθη ἐίς τὴν ἑορτὴν δεδώκεισαν, the three kinds of time (present, future, past) are all employed. But in 12:16 the aorist ind. is employed, οὖκ ἐγνώσαν τὸ πρῶτον—τότε ἐμνήσθησαν, though antecedent time is indicated by τὸ πρῶτον and τότε. Here the past perfect would more exactly have marked off τὸ πρῶτον. If the previous time is to be depicted in its course, the past perfect is used (Thumb, Handb., p. 163).

(e) The Past Perfect of Broken Continuity2 (••• > •••). This is true of Lu. 8:29, πολλοῖς χρόνοις συνηρπάκει αὐτῶν. It is an

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 201.  
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 148.
iterative past perfect in a series of links instead of a line, like the present perfect of broken continuity in Jo. 1:18. Cf. the perf. inf. in Ac. 8:11.

\(\zeta\)  *Past Perfect in Conditional Sentences*. Usually the aorist ind. occurs in these conditions of the second class determined as unfulfilled in relation to the past. But sometimes the past perfect appears. Cf. Jo. 19:11; Ac. 26:32; 1 Jo. 2:19. See Conditional Sentences, ch. XIX.

\(\eta\)  *The Periphrastic Past Perfect*. This construction had already begun in ancient Greek. In the third person plural of liquid and mute verbs it was uniformly done for the sake of euphony. It was occasionally found also with other verbs. In the modern Greek\(^1\) we find εἶχα δεμένο, 'I had bound,' ἡμουν δεμένος or εἶχα δεθεί. ἔχω was at first more than a mere auxiliary, though in Herodotus it appears as a true auxiliary. The dramatists also use it often.\(^2\) In the N. T. the examples with εἶχον are not pertinent. Cf. συκῆν εἶχέν τις πεφυτευμένην (Lu. 13:6); ἦν εἶχον ἀποκείμενην, (Lu. 19:20), really predicative accusative participles with ἔχω. But the past perfect with the perfect partic. and ἦν is rather common. Cf. Jo. 19:11. Burton\(^3\) notes that about two-thirds of them are intensive, and only one-third extensive. As examples of the intensive use see Mt. 26:43, ἤσαν βεβαρμένοι; Lu. 15:24, ἦν ἀπολωλὼς. Cf. also Lu. 1:7. Examples of the extensive type are ἤσαν ἐληλυθότες (Lu. 5:17); ἤσαν προεσωρακότες (Ac. 21:29). For examples in the LXX see 2 Chron. 18:34; Judg. 8:11; Ex. 39:23, etc. See also βεβαπτισμένοι ύπηρχον (Ac. 8:16).

\(\theta\)  *Special Use of ἐκείμενον*. This verb was used as the passive of τίθημι. The present was a present perfect. So the imperfect was used as a past perfect, as in Jo. 20:12, ὅπου ἐκείντο τὸ σώμα= 'where the body had lain' or 'had been placed.' So in Jo. 2:6 ἤσαν κείμεναι is a periphrastic past perfect in sense. Cf. Lu. 23:53, ἦν κείμενος. See also 19:20. Perhaps a similar notion is seen in ὁμοθύμαδων παρήγαγον (Ac. 12:20).

\(\xi\)  *The Future Perfect* (ὁ μέλλων συντελεῖκός). There was never much need for this tense, perfect action in future time.\(^4\) It is rare in ancient Greek and in the LXX (Thackeray, *Gr.*, p. 194). The only active forms in the N. T. are εἰδήσω, (Heb. 8:11, LXX, possibly a mere future) and the periphrastic form ἐσομαι πεποιθώς (Heb. 2:13, LXX also). Both of these are intensive. Most of the MSS.

---

1 Thumb, Handb., pp. 161, 165.
2 Jebb in Vine. and Dickson's Handb., p. 329.
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 45.
TENSE (ΧΡΟΝΟΣ) 907

Read κεκράξονται in Lu. 19:40, but KBL have κράξουσιν. This is also intensive (cf. κέκραγα), if it is accepted, as it is not by W. H. nor by Nestle. I note ἔστι μὴ μεγάλην χάριταν κατ’αὐτὸν ἐπεθεμένος (cf. B. G. U. 596 (A.D. 84). The modern Greek has a fut. perf. in θάνατος ἐξῆλθεν (Thumb, Handb., p. 162). In ήξουσιν (Lu. 19:43) we have a practical future perfect (intensive). For the rest the futurum exactum is expressed only by means of the perfect part. and εἰμί. This idiom is found in the LXX (the active in Gen. 43:8; 44:32; Is. 58:14, etc. The passive in Gen. 41:36; Ex. 12:6). N. T. examples are ἔσται δεδημένου and ἔσται λελυμένου (Mt. 16:19); ἔσται λελυμένα (18:18); ἔσονται διαμεμερισμέναι (Lu. 12:52). These all seem to be extensive. For a sketch of the future perfect see Thompson, Syntax of Attic Greek, p. 225 f. This tense died before the I future did.

3. THE SUBIUNCTIVE AND OPTATIVE. The perfect optative is not found in the N. T. It was always rare in the Greek of the early period. See Hatzidakis, Einl., p. 219. The only inflected perf. subj. in the N. T. is εἰδῶ, which occurs ten times (Mt. 9:6; Mk. 2:10; Lu. 5:24, etc.). But in this form the perfect sense is gone. See γενέσεις εἰδήσεις, P. B. M. 1178 (A.D. 194). Indeed, the perf. subj. was always very rare in Greek. In the Sanskrit the perf. tense, outside of the Vedic language, never developed to any extent except in the ind. and the participle.1 In the classic Greek it was in subj. and opt. a mark of the literary style and did not really belong to the life of the people. The perf. subj. is absent from the vernacular modern Greek. A little reflection will show how usually there was no demand for a true perfect, combining punctiliar and durative, in the subj. Even in the literary style of the older Greek, when the perf. subj. did occur it was often the periphrastic form in the active and nearly always so in the passive.2 "The perfect of the side-moods is true to the kind of time, completion, intensity, overwhelming finality."3 By "kind of time" Gildersleeve means kind of action, not past, present or future. Cf. the LXX also, Is. 8:14; 10:20; 17:8.

In Lu. 14:8 there appears to be a conscious change from κλήθης θεῶς to μὴ ποτέ ἢ κεκλημένος, possibly suggesting a long-standing invitation by the latter. In Jo. 3:27, ἐκαύνυ μην ἢ δεδομένου, it is punctiliar-durative. In 16:24, ἢνα ἢ πεπληρωμένη (cf. 1 Jo. 1:4), the consummation is emphasized (durative-punctiliar), extensive per-

---

3 Gildersleeve, Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 01.
feet (completed act). The same thing is true of 17:19, ἵνα ὦσιν ἡγιασμένοι, and 17:23, ἵνα ὦσιν τετελειωμένοι. In Jas. 5:15, κἂν ἡ πεποιηκώς, we seem to have the perfect of "broken continuity." In 2 Cor. 1:9, ἵνα μὴ πεποιθότες ἦμεν, it is merely intensive.

4. THE IMPERATIVE. What has been said of the rarity of the perf. subj. can be repeated concerning the perf. imper. Out of 2445 imperatives in the Attic orators the speeches themselves show only eight real perfects (Gildersleeve, Syntax, Part I, p. 158. Cf. also Miller, "The Limitation of the Imperative in the Attic Orators," A. J. P., xiii, 1892, pp. 399-436). In Is. 4:1 one may note κελήσθω intensive. The perfect imper. is common in Homer.¹ In the late Greek it occurred most frequently in the purely intensive perfects or in the third person singular of other verbs.² But it is gone from the modern Greek and is nearly dead in the N. T. In Jas. 1:19 ὑστε may be imperative (intensive) or ind. See the formula ἔρρωσθε (Ac. 15:29) and ἔρρωσθο in Text. Rec. (23:30).³ The only other example is found in Mk. 4:39, σίωπα, πεφίμωσο, where it is also intensive like the others. The durative idea is in both σίωπα (linear pres.) and πεφίμωσο, 'put the muzzle on and keep it on.' The periphrastic perf. imper. occurs in Lu. 12:35, ἔστωσαν περιεψωμέναι (intensive). Cf. καἰόμενοι. The time of the perf. imper. and subj. is, of course, really future. Cf. p. 848 (a).

5. THE INFINITIVE. There were originally no tenses in the inf. (see Sanskrit), as has already been stated. But the Greek developed a double use of the inf. (the common use, and indir. discourse).

(a) Indirect Discourse. In indir. discourse (cf. ch. XIX) the tenses of the inf. had the element of time, that of the direct. But in the N. T. there is no instance of the perf. inf. representing a past perf. ind.⁴ The tense occurs in indir. discourse, but the time is not changed. Cf. Ac. 14:19 ἐσυροῦν ἔξω τῆς πόλεως, νομίζοντες ἡδη τεθυγκέναι, (12:14) ἀπήγγειλεν ἐστάναι. So εἰδέναι in Lu. 22:34; γεγονέναι (Jo. 12:29); γεγονέναι, (2 Tim. 2:18). These examples are also all intensive perfects. So with Col. 2:1, θέλω ὑμᾶς εἰδέναι. In 1 Tim. 6:17, παράγγελε ὑπησηλογφρονεῖν, μηδὲ ἠπικέναι (indir. command), the intensive perf. again occurs. In Lu. 10:36, δοκεῖ σοι γεγονέναι, we have "the vivid present of story-telling."⁵ Cf. πεπραχέναι (Ac. 25:25). On the whole the

¹ Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 22.
² Goodwin, M. and T., p. 23 f.
⁴ Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 52.
⁵ Moulton, Prol., p. 146. So Heb. 4:1.
perf. inf. is rather common (47 times, according to H. Scott) in the N. T. See further Jo. 12:18; Ac. 16:27; 27:13; Ro. 15:8; Heb. 11:3.

(b) Perfect Infinitive not in Indirect Discourse.
(a) Subject or Object Infinitive. Cf. 2 Pet. 2:21, μὴ ἔπεγνωκέναι, where the tense accents the climacteric aspect (durative-punctiliar) of the act and rather suggests antecedence (extensive) to ἂν. In Ac. 26:32, ἀπολελύσθαι ἐδύνατο, we have an instance of the obj. inf. with implied antecedence (extensive). Note also δος ἐργασίαν ἀπηλλάχθαι (Lu. 12:58). In Ac. 19:36 κατεσταλμένους ὑπάρχειν is a periphrastic form of the subject inf. In 2 Cor. 5:11 note πεφανερώσθαι with ἐλπίζω. Cf. 1 Pet. 4:3 (with ἀρκετός. Not very different is the use with ὅστε (Ro. 15:19).

(B) With Prepositions. At first it may seem surprising that the perfect tense should occur with the articular inf. after prepositions. But the inf. does not lose its verbal character in such constructions. It is still a verbal substantive. It is, of course, only by analogy that the tense function is brought into the infinitive.

For the papyri note ἐπὶ τῶν γεγονέναι, P. Oxy. 294 (A.D. 22); ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἀπολελύσθαι σε, P. B. M. 42 (B.C. 168). Cf. μετὰ τὸ εἰρηκέναι (Heb. 10:15), the only instance with μετά. Here the tense has the same force as εἰρήκεν in 10:9. It stands on record as said. We find it with εἰς (twice), as in Eph. 1:18, εἰς τὸ εἰδέναι (intensive) and εἰς τὸ γεγονέναι (Heb. 11:3). It is most frequent with διά and the acc. (7 times). So Mk. 5:4, δεδέσθαι καὶ διεσπάσθαι καὶ συνυπερήφανε (extensive). See οἰκοδομήσθαι (Lu. 6:48). Cf. Ac. 18:2; 27:9. In 8:11 we have the perf. inf. of "broken continuity."

In the N. T. the perf. inf. with prepositions appears only with διά, εἰς and μετά.

6. THE PARTICIPLE.
(a) The Meaning. The perf. part. either represents a state (intensive) or a completed act (extensive). Examples of the former are κεκοπιακώς (Jo. 4:6); ἐστῶς (18:18); τὸ εἰωθὸς (Lu. 4:16). Instances of the latter occur in ὁ εἰληφὼς (Mt. 25:24); πεποιηκότες (Jo. 18:18). The perf. part. is quite common in the N. T. and preserves the usual idea of the tense.

(b) The Time of the Tense. It is relative, not absolute. It may be coincident with that of the principal verb, usually so in the intensive use. Cf. Jo. 4:6 κεκοπιακώς ἐκαθέξετο, (19:33) εἴδου ἡδη τεθυνκότα, (Ro. 15:14) ἐστε—πεπληρωμένοι. But by suggestion the act may be represented as completed before that of

the principal verb and so antecedent action. Thus ἵστηκεισάν—
πεποιηκότες (Jo. 18:18); προσφήτως ἐληλυθότα (Ac. 18:2); ἀπολελυ-
μένην (Lu. 16:18); εἰρηκότος (Mt. 26:75). This antecedent action
may be expressed also by the intensive perfect as in ἐξῆλθεν ὁ τε-
θηρικός (Jo. 11:44), but δεδεμένος is coincident action. So in Mk.
5:15 ἰματισμένον is coincident, but τὸν ἐσχήκότα antecedent. Cf.
Rev. 6:9. The modern Greek keeps the perf. part. (Thumb,

(c) The Perfect Tense Occurs with Various Uses of the Participle.
The part. is used as attributive. Cf. οἱ ἀπεσταλμένοι (Ac. 10:17).
Sometimes a distinction is drawn between the aorist and the
perf. part. Cf. ὁ λαβών in Mt. 25:20 with ὁ εἰλθυμῶς (25:24);
ὁ καλέσας in Lu. 14:9 with ὁ κεκληκὼς (14:10). Cf. 2 Cor. 12:21;
1 Pet. 2:10. The predicate participle also uses it. Cf. Lu. 8:
9:1, εἶδον πεπτωκότα, compare Lu. 10:18, ἐθεώρουν πεσόντα (the
state, the act).

(d) The Periphrastic Participle. There are two examples of this
unusual idiom. Cf. Eph. 4:18 ἐσκοτωμένοι τῇ διανοίᾳ ὄντες, (Col.
1:21) ὄντας ἀπηλλοτριωμένους. The durative aspect of the perfect
is thus accented. Cf. Heb. 5:14 for ἔχω used periphrastically.
CHAPTER XIX

MODE (ἘΓΚΛΙΣΙΣ)

Introductory. For a brief sketch of the number of the modes and the reasons for treating the indicative as a mode see Conjugation Of the Verb, chapter VIII, v, (a). References are there given to the pertinent literature. The use of ἀν is given a brief treatment below in connection with the modes. The subject of conjunctions is divided for logical consistency. The Paratactic Conjunctions belong to the same division with Paratactic Sentences, while Hypotactic Conjunctions fall under Hypotactic Sentences. The conjunctions could of course be treated in separate or as a division of the chapter on Particles (XXI). That will be there done (v, 1) for Paratactic Conjunctions. Hypotactic Conjunctions will there receive only summary treatment and can best be discussed in detail in connection with subordinate clauses. And there are advantages in the present method. It needs to be said also that the division of the treatment of modes into those of Independent and Subordinate Sentences (A and B) is purely arbitrary and for the sake of clearness. There is no real difference in the meaning of a mode in an independent and a dependent sentence. The significance of each mode will be sufficiently discussed under A (Independent Sentences). The inclusion of all the subordinate clauses under mode is likewise for the sake of perspicuity. Voice, tense, mode thus stand out sharply.1 The difficulty of making a clear distinction in the significance of the mode has already been discussed in chapter VIII, pp. 321 ff.

A mood is a mode of statement, an attitude of mind in which the speaker conceives the matter stated.2 Apollonius Dyskolos first described (moods as Ψυχικαὶ διαθέσεις. That is a correct description of the function of mood as distinct from voice and tense.3

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 445 ff., has this plan. I had already made my outline before reading his treatment of the subject.
2 Thompson, Synt. of Att. Gk., p. 185.

911
The mode is the manner of the affirmation, while voice and tense have to do with the action of the verb (voice with relation of the subject to the action of the verb, tense with the state of the action). But even so the matter is not always clear. The mode is far and away the most difficult theme in Greek syntax. Our modern grammatical nomenclature is never so clumsy as here in the effort to express "the delicate accuracy and beauty of those slight nuances of thought which the Greek reflected in the synthetic and manifold forms of his verb."\(^1\) So appeal is made to psychology to help us out. "If the moods \(\psi\chi\iota\kappa\alpha\bar{i} \delta\imath\iota\theta\varepsilon\sigma\iota\varsigma\), why is not every utterance modal? Why does not every utterance denote a state of the soul? A universal psychology would be a universal syntax."\(^2\) Every utterance does denote a state of the soul. This is one argument for treating the indicative as a mode. The verb is necessarily modal from this point of view. But the term is naturally confined to the finite verb and denied to the infinitive and participle. Dionysius Thrax does call the infinitive a mode, but he is not generally followed.\(^3\) Gildersleeve\(^4\) notes also that "moods are temporal and tenses modal." He sees that the order moods and tenses is the natural sequence in the English (cf. chapter VIII, v, p. 320), but he follows the order tenses and moods in his Syntax of Classical Greek, though it is hard to separate them in actual study. Gildersleeve\(^5\) laments also that \(\delta\imath\iota\theta\varepsilon\sigma\iota\varsigma\) came to be applied to voice and \(\varepsilon\gamma\lambda\iota\sigma\iota\varsigma\) to mode (cf. enclitic words as to accent), "but after all tone of utterance is not so bad a description of mood." It is possible that at the beginning the indicative was used to express all the various moods or tones of the speaker, as the accusative case originally included the whole field of the oblique cases. It was only gradually that the other moods were developed by the side of the indicative (thus limiting the scope of the ind.) to accent certain "moods of mind, i.e. various shades of desire,"\(^6\) more sharply. Thompson calls this development "artificial," since no other race but the Greeks have preserved these fine distinctions between indicative, subjunctive, optative, imperative, not to say injunctive

---

\(^1\) Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 136.  
\(^5\) Ib., XXX, p. 1; Synt. of Classic. Gk., p. 79.  
\(^6\) Thompson, Synt., p. 510.
and future indicative (almost a mode to itself). But that is too severe a term, for the modes were a gradual evolution. The injunctive was the unaugmented indicative, like λύου, λύεσθε, λύσασθε, λύθητε, λύζετε, λύσατε, σχέσ.

Moulton says: "Syntactically it represented the bare combination of verbal idea with the ending which supplies the subject; and its prevailing use was for prohibitions, if we may judge from the Sanskrit, where it still remains to some extent alive. The fact that this primitive mood thus occupies ground appropriate to the subjunctive, while it supplies the imperative ultimately with nearly all its forms, illustrates the syntactical nearness of the moods. Since the optative also can express prohibition, even in the N. T. (Mk. 11:14), we see how much common ground is shared by all the subjective moods."

Yes, and by the indicative also. The present indicative is often a practical future. Originally the subjunctive had the short vowel (cf. ἔως in Homer). The distinction between the indicative and subjunctive is not always clear. The subjunctive in Homer is often merely futuristic. The affinity between the subjunctive and the optative is very close. The indicative continued to be used in the volitive sense (past tenses) and of command (future tense). Thus the other modes were luxuries of the language rather than necessities, while the indicative was the original possessor of the field. As already shown (chapter VIII, v) the injunctive survived in the imperative and subjunctive. The future indicative continued to fulfil the function of all the modes (cf. the indicative before the rise of the other modes). Thus the future indicative may be merely futuristic, or volitive, or deliberative. The same thing is true of the subjunctive and the optative.

Cf. Moulton, Probl., p. 184 f. Thompson (Syntax, p. 186) curiously says that "the indicative, however, assumed some of the functions of the other moods." If he had said "retained," he would have it right. He had just said properly enough: "It would be an error, with regard both to their origin and functions, to regard the moods as separate and water-tight compartments." The early process was from simplicity to variety and then from variety to simplicity (cf. again the history of the cases). The struggle between the modes has continued until in the modern Greek we have practically only the indicative and the subjunctive, and they

---

1 Moulton, Probl., p. 165.
2 Ib. Cf. also Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 510. The injunctive had "a meaning hovering between the imperative, conjunctive and optative."
3 Giles, Man., 459.
are in some instances alike in sound (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 115 f.).
The subj. is "considerably reduced" in use in the modern Greek. The optative has disappeared entirely, and the imperative, outside the second person, and the future indicative are expressed by periphrasis. Even the infinitive and the participle in the κοινή have felt the inroads of the subjunctive.¹
It is true that as a rule we see the modes to best advantage in the simple sentence,² though essentially the meaning in the compound sentence is the same. But it is true, as Gildersleeve³ urges, that "the predominance of parataxis over hypotaxis is a matter of style as well as of period. Hypotaxis holds fast to constructions that parataxis has abandoned. The futural subjunctive abides defiantly in the dependent clause of temporal sentences and dares the future indicative to invade its domain. The modal nature of the future, obscured in the principal sentence, forces itself upon the most superficial observer in the dependent clause." In a broad sense the indicative is the mode of objective statement in contrast with the subjective modes developed from it. But the description needs modification and is only true in a general sense. The N. T. idiom as of the κοινή in general will be found to differ from the classic Greek idiom here more than is true of the construction of the tenses.⁴ The disappearance of the optative is responsible for part of this change. But the effort must now be made to differentiate the four modes in actual usage whatever may be true of the original idea of each. That point will need discussion also. The vernacular in all languages is fond of parataxis. See Pfister, "Die parataktische Darstellungsform in der volkstümlichen Erzählung" (*Woch. f. klass. Phil.*, 1911, pp. 809-813).

A. INDEPENDENT OR PARATACTIC SENTENCES (*ΠΙΑΡΑΤΑΚΤΙΚΑ ΑΞΙΩΜΑΤΑ*)

I. The Indicative Mode (λόγος ἀποφαντικός or ἡ ὄριστικὴ ἔγκλισις).

1. MEANING OF THE INDICATIVE MODE.
The name is not distinctive, since all the modes "indicate." It is not true that the indicative gives "absolute reality,"⁵ though it

---

¹ Thompson, Synt., p. 494. In the Sans. it was the subjunctive that went down in the fight. Cf. Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 201 f.
² Ib., p. 495.
⁴ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 205.
is the “modus rectus.” It does express “l'affirmation pure et simple.”¹ The indicative does state a thing as true, but does not guarantee the reality of the thing. In the nature of the case only the statement is under discussion. A clear grip on this point will help one all along. The indicative has nothing to do with reality ("an sich").² The speaker presents something as true.³ Actuality is implied, to be sure, but nothing more.⁴ Whether it is true or no is another matter. Most untruths are told in the indicative mode. The true translation into Latin of ὀριστική would be finitus or definitus.⁵ Indicativus is a translation of ἀποσφαντικός. The indicative is the most frequent mode in all languages. It is the normal mode to use when there is no special reason for employing another mode. The assertion may be qualified or unqualified.⁶ This fact does not affect the function of the indicative mode to make a definite, positive assertion. Cf. Jo. 13:8, for instance. A fine study of the indicative mode is afforded in Jo. 1:1-18, where we have it 38 times, chiefly in independent sentences. The subjunctive occurs only three times (1:7 f.). The use of ἢν, ἐγένετο, ἦλθεν, οὐκ ἔγνω, παρέλαβον, ἔλαβον, ἔδωκεν, ἔθεασάμεθα, etc., has the note of certitude and confident statement that illustrate finely the indicative mode.

2. KINDS OF SENTENCES USING THE INDICATIVE.

(a) Either Declarative or Interrogative. The mere declaration probably (and logically) precedes in use the question.⁷ But there is no essential difference in the significance of the mode. This extension of the indicative from simple assertion to question is true of all Indo-Germanic tongues.⁸ Cf. Mt. 2:2; Mk. 4:7; Jo. 1:19. The simple assertion is easily turned to question. Cf. ἐπείνασα γὰρ ἐδώκατε μαοι φαγεῖν, ἐδίψησα καὶ ἐποτίσατέ με, κτλ, and πότε σε ἐίδομεν πεινώντα καὶ ἐθρέψαμεν, κτλ. (Mt. 25:35-39). For the change from question to simple assertion see πιστεύεις τότε; ἔγνω πεπίστευκα (Jo. 11:26 f.). Cf. Ac. 26:27. The formula σὺ λέγεις is sometimes used for the answer, as in Mt. 27:11; Lu. 22:70; Jo.18:37. So also σὺ ἐίπας in Mt. 26:25, 64. The question without interrogative words is seen in Mt. 13:28; Jo. 13:6; Ac. 21:37; Ro. 2:21-23; 7:7, etc. Sometimes it is diffi-

cult to tell whether a sentence is declarative or interrogative, as in 1 Cor. 1:13; Ro. 8:33 f.

For this very reason the Greek used various interrogatory particles to make plain the question. Thus ἀρα γε γινώσκεισ ἀνα-γινώσκεις; (Ac. 8:30. Note the play on the verb). Cf. Lu. 18:8; Gal. 2:17. It is rare also in the LXX (cf. Gen. 18:9; 37:10; Jer. 4:10), but ἀρα is common. It is a slight literary touch in Luke and Paul. The use of εἰ in a question is elliptical. It is really a condition with the conclusion not expressed or it is an indirect question (cf. Mk. 15:44; Lu. 23:6; Ph. 3:12). It is used in the N. T., as in the LXX quite often (Gen. 17:17, etc.). This construction with a direct question is unclassical and may be due to the Septuagint rendering of the Hebrew הוי by εἰ as well as by μή. Cf. Mt. 12:10, Εἰ ξεστίν τοῖς σάββασιν θεραπεύσαι; see also Mt. 19:3; Mk. 8:23; Lu. 13:23; 22:49; Ac. 1:6; 7:1; 19:2; 21:37; 22:25. Note frequency in Luke. In Mk. 10:2 (parallel to Mt. 19:3) the question is indirect. The idiom, though singular, has "attained to all the rights of a direct interrogative" by this time. The idiom may be illustrated by the Latin an which in later writers was used in direct questions. So si, used in the Vulgate to translate this εἰ, became in late Latin a direct interrogative particle. A similar ellipsis appears in the use of εἰ (cf. Heb. 3:11) in the negative sense of a strong oath (from the LXX also). The particle εἰ is found in the LXX Job 25:5 B, but not in the N. T. So far the questions are colourless.

The use of interrogative pronouns and adverbs is, of course, abundant in the N. T. Thus τίς, either alone as in Mt. 3:7, with ἀρα as in Mt. 24:45, with γάρ as in Mt. 9:5, with all as in Lu. 3:10. See the double interrogative τίς τί in Mk. 15:24. For τί τοῦτο (predicative use of τοῦτο) see Lu. 16:2. For the ellipsis with ἔνα τί (cf. διὰ τί in Mt. 9:11; εἰς τί in Mk. 14:4) see Mt. 9:4, and for τί ὅτι note Lu. 2:49 (cf. τί γέγονεν ὅτι in Jo. 14:22). The use of τί in Ac. 12:18 and 13:25 is interesting. Τί is an accusative adverb in Mk. 10:18. A sort of prolepsis or double accusative occurs in οἶδα σὲ τίς εἰ (Mk. 1:24). Other pronouns used in direct questions are ποίος (Mk. 11:28), πόσος (Mk. 6:

1 Viteau, Etude sur le Grec du N. T. Le Verbe, p. 22. Some editors read ἀρα in Gal. 2:17, but see Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 259. See ἀρα in Mt. 18:1.
3 W.-Th., p. 509.
4 Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 179.
5 Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 22.
6 Cf. Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 178.
Alternative questions are expressed by ἃ alone as in 1 Cor. 9:8, or with τί — ἃ as in Mt. 9:5. The case of ἃ τίς is different (Mt. 7:9).

Exclamations are sometimes expressed by the relative forms, like ὡς ὡραίοι in Ro. 10:15, but more frequently by the interrogative pronouns like πόσα (Mk. 15:4); πηλίκος (Gal. 6:11); τί (Lu. 12:49); ποσάκις (Mt. 23:37). Cf. ποσοῦν in Mt. 6:23.

(b) Positive and Negative. If an affirmative or negative answer is expedited, then that fact is shown by the use of οὐ for the question expecting the affirmative reply and by μή for the negative answer. As a matter of fact, any answer may be actually given. It is only the expectation that is presented by οὐ or μή. This use of οὐ is like the Latin nonne. So οὐ τῷ σῷ ὄνοματί ἐπροφητεύσαμεν; (Mt. 7:22). Cf. Mt. 6:25; 13:27; 13:55; Lu. 12:6; 15:8; 17:17; 1 Cor. 9:1; 14:23; Jas. 2:5; Heb. 3:16, etc. This is the common classic construction. The use of οὐ may suggest indignation as in οὐκ ἀποκρίνη οὐδέν; (Mk. 14:60. Cf. οὐκ ἀπεκρίνατο οὐδέν in verse 61). So with οὐ παῦσῃ διαστρέψων; (Ac. 13:10). Surprise is indicated by οὐκ ἔσταται in Ac. 21:38. Ὅδεξι is common. Cf. Lu. 6:39. Οὐκοῦν occurs once in the N. T. (Jo. 18:37). The presence of μή shows that the answer "no" is anticipated (the only instance of μή with the indicative in a principal sentence). Gildersleeve calls οὐ "the masculine negative" and μή "the feminine negative." There is certainly a feminine touch in the use of μή by the woman at Jacob's well when she came to the village. She refused to arouse opposition by using οὐ and excited their curiosity by μή. Thus μή τι οὗτος ἐστίν ὁ Χριστός; (Jo. 4:9). The examples in the N. T. are very numerous. The shades of negative expectation and surprise vary very greatly. Each context supplies a slightly different tone. Cf. Mt. 7:9, 16; 1:23; 26:22, 25; Mk. 4:21; Lu. 6:39; Jo. 6:67; 7:26, 35, 47, 51 f.; 21:5; Ro. 9:14; 11:1. Both οὐ and μή may occur in contrast in the same sentence. So μή κατὰ ἄνθρωπον ταῦτα λαλῶ, ἢ καὶ ὁ νόμος ταῦτα οὐ λέγει; (1 Cor. 9:8). Cf. Lu. 6:39 μήτι δύναται τυφλὸς τυφλὸν ὀδηγεῖν; οὐχὶ ἀμφότεροι εἰς βόθυνον ἐμπε-

1 See oh. XV, Pronouns.
3 Cf. also Jo. 4:33.
The use of μητί is common (cf. οὐχί). The combination μη οὐ will be discussed in the chapter on Particles, but it may be noted here that οὐ is the negative of the verb while μη is the interrogative particle expecting the answer "no." The English translation expects the answer "yes," because it ignores μη and translates only οὐ. Cf. 1 Cor. 9:4, 5; 11:22; Ro. 10:18, 19.

The construction is in the LXX (Judg. 6:13, etc.) and in classic Greek. It is a rhetorical question, not a simple interrogative. The kinds of sentences overlap inevitably so that we have already transgressed into the territory of the next group.

As already shown, the indicative is used indifferently with or without the negative in either declarative or interrogative sentences. The groups thus overlap. Cf., for instance, Jo. 1:2-8. The negative of a declarative independent sentence with the indicative is οὐ. This outright "masculine" negative suits the indicative. With questions, however, it is different, as has already been shown. Thus it is true that μη made a "raid" into the indicative, as οὐ did in the early language into the subjunctive.

The optative uses either οὐ or μη, but that is another story. The indicative with οὐ makes a pointed denial. Note the progressive abruptness of the Baptist's three denials in Jo. 1:20 f.

3. SPECIAL USES OF THE INDICATIVE.

(a) Past Tenses.

(α) For Courtesy. It is true that the indicative "is suited by its whole character only to positive and negative statements, and not to the expression of contingencies, wishes, commands or other subjective conceptions." That is perfectly true. The indicative is the normal mode for saying a thing. The other modes Gildersleeve aptly terms "side moods." I consider, as already explained, the indicative the mode par excellence, and I doubt the value of such language as "the modal uses of the indicative." It is not so much that the indicative "encroached upon the other moods, and in so doing assumed their functions, especially in dependent sentences," as that the indicative, particularly in dependent sentences, retained to some extent all the functions of all the modes. It is true, as already said, that the indicative was

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 254.
2 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 179.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 199.
7 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 186.
always the most virile of all the modes and has outlived them all. But, after the other modes became fully developed, these less frequent uses of the indicative seemed anomalous. The courteous or polite use of the imperfect indicative is the simplest of these special constructions. Here the indicative is used for direct assertion, but the statement is thrown into a past tense, though the present time is contemplated. We do this in English when we say: "I was just thinking," "I was on the point of saying," etc. So Ac. 25:22, ἐβουλόμην καὶ αὐτὸς τοῦ ἄνθρωπου ἀκούσας. Agrippa does not bluntly say βουλόμαι (cf. Paul in 1 Tim. 2:8; 5:14) nor ἐβουλόμην ἄν, which would suggest unreality, a thing not true. He does wish. He could have said βουλόμην ἄν, (cf. Ac. 26:29, where Paul uses the optative), but the simple ἐβουλόμην is better. The optative would have been much weaker. In 2 Cor. 1:15 ἐβουλόμην πρότερον has its natural reference to past time. Cf. ἐβουλήθην in 2 Jo. 12 and Phil. 13, ἐβουλόμην, not ‘would have liked’ as Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 207) has it. In Gal. 4:20, θέλειν δὲ παρέίναι πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἄρτι, Paul is speaking of present time (cf. ὅτι ἀποροῦμαι). He puts the statement in the imperfect as a polite idiom. The use of θέλω is seen in Ro. 16:19. The usual force of the mode and tense appears in θέλειν in Jo. 6:21. The negative brings out sharply the element of will (cf. Lu. 19:14; Mt. 22:3). In Ro. 9:3, ἡχόμην γὰρ ἀνάθεμα ἐμαυτός ἐγὼ ἀπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ, the same courteous even passionate) idiom occurs. It is not εὐχόμαι as in 2 Cor. 13:7 (he does not dare pray such a prayer), nor did he do it (cf. ἡχοῦντο Ac. 27:29). He was, however, on the verge of doing it, bit drew back. With this example we come close to the use of the indicative for unreality, the so-called "unreal" indicative. See also chapter on Tense.

(β) Present Necessity, Obligation, Possibility, Propriety in Tenses of the Past. This is the usual "potential" indicative. The imperfect of such verbs does not necessarily refer to the present. Thus in Jo. 4:4, ἐδει αὐτὸν διέρχεσθαι διὰ τῆς Σαμαρίας, it is simply a necessity in past time about a past event. So δεῖ in Jo. 4:20, 24 expresses a present necessity. This use of the imperfect ἐδει thus differs from either the present or the ordinary imperfect. The idiom is logical enough. It was a necessity and the statement may be confined to that phase of the matter, though the necessity still exists. So Lu. 24:26, οὐχὶ ταῦτα ἐδει παθεῖν τὸν Χριστόν; Cf. also Mt. 18:33; 23:23; 25:27; Lu. 11:42; 13:16 (cf. 

1 W.-Th., p. 283.  
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 206.
δέι in verse 14); Ac. 27:21. It is an easy step from this notion to that of an obligation which comes over from the past and is not lived up to. The present non-fulfilment of the obligation is left to the inference of the reader or hearer. It is not formally stated. It happens that in the N. T. it is only in the subordinate clauses that the further development of this use of ἐδέι comes, when only the present time is referred to. Thus in Ac. 24:19, οὐς ἐδέι ἔπι 
σοῦ παρεῖναι. They ought to be here, but they are not. Our En-
lish "ought" is likewise a past form about the present as well as about the past.1 So 2 Cor. 2:3, ἀφ’ ὄν ἐδεί με γαῖρειν. In Heb.
9:26, ἐπεὶ ἐδεί αὐτὸν πολλάκις παθεῖν, there is an implied condition and ἐδέι is practically an apodosis of the second-class condition, which see. The same process is seen in the other words. Thus in 2 Cor. 12:11, ἔγνω ὅψείλοιον ὑφ’ ὕμων συνίστασθαι, we have a simple past obligation. So in Lu. 7:41; Heb. 2:17. Note common use of the present tense also, as in Ac. 17:29. Cf. ἐδέι οἱ ποιήσαντες ἀποτελέσαντες (Lu. 17:10), where the obligation comes on from the past. But in 1 Cor. 5:10, ἐπεὶ ὅψείλετε ἢ ὑμᾶς κόσμῳ ἔξειλθεῖν, we have merely present time under consideration and a practical apodosis of a second-class condition implied. I do not agree with Moulton2 that ἦν, in such instances has been "dropped." It simply was not needed to suggest the unreality or non-realization of the obligation. The context made it clear enough. Χρή occurs only once in the N. T. (Jas. 3:10), whereas προςήκει (Attic) is not found at all, nor ἔγνεσται (but ἔγνω) nor ἐξῆν.3 But ἐδύνατο is used of the present time. So Jo. 11:37. Cf. the apodosis in the second-class condition without to in Jo. 9:33; Ac. 26:32. The use of ὃς ἄνηκεν (Col. 3:18) and ὃ οὐκ ἄνηκεν (Eph. 5:4) are both pertinent, though in subordinate clauses. Note in particular οὐ γὰρ καθῆκεν αὐτὸν ζῆν (Ac. 22:22), 'He is not fit to live.' In Mt. 26:24, καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ ἐν οὐκ ἐγεννηθήναι, we have the apodosis without ἦν of a condition of the second class (determined as unfulfilled). There is no condition expressed in 2 Pet. 2:21, κρείττον γὰρ ἦν αὐτοῖς μὴ ἐπεγνωσθέναι τὴν ὀδὸν τῆς δικαιοσύνης. Moulton4 finds the origin of this idiom in the conditional sentence, but Winer5 sees in it merely the Greek way of affirming what was necessary, possible or appropriate in itself. So Gildersleeve.6 The modern Greek preserves this idiom (Thumb,

---

1 Our transl. therefore often fails to distinguish the two senses of ἐδέι in Gk.
2 Prol., p. 200.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Glc., p. 206.
4 Prol., p. 200.
5 W.-Th., p. 282.

(γ) The Apodosis of Conditions of the Second Class. This matter has already been touched on slightly and is treated at length under Conditional Sentences. It can be merely sketched here. The condition is not always expressed and ἃν usually is present. The use of ἃν, however, in the apodosis is not obligatory.1 We know very little about the origin and meaning of ἃν anyhow. It seems to have a demonstrative sense (definite, then, in that case) which was shifted to an indefinite use. Cf. τὸν καὶ τὸν τὰ καὶ τὰ.2 Gildersleeve interprets it as a particle "used to colour the moods of the Greek language." With the past tenses of the indicative in independent sentences it is a definite particle. The effort to express unreality by the indicative was a somewhat difficult process. In Homer "the unreal imperfect indicative always refers to the past."3 So in Heb. 11:15. Nothing but the context can show whether these past tenses are used in opposition to the past or the present. The κοινῆ received this idiom of the unreal indicative "from the earlier age as a fully grown and normal usage, which it proceeded to limit in various directions."4 In Jo. 15:22 we have a good illustration of this construction.

We know that ἀμαρτίαν οὐκ ἐκοσαν is in opposition to the present reality because it is followed by νῦν δὲ πρῶφασιν οὐκ ἐκοσαν. The same thing is seen in verse 24 when νῦν δὲ ἐκτάσιν follows. In verse 19 ἃν ἐφίλει is used, the usual construction. In Lu. 17:6 ἠλέγετε ἃν and ὑπήκουσεν ἃν are used after the protasis εἰ ἐχετε (first-class condition). This is a mixed condition. So also the marginal reading in W. H. in Jo. 8:39 is ἐποιείτε after εἰ ἐστε and is followed by νῦν δὲ ζητείτε (cf. above). The absence of to seems more noticeable in John's Gospel. Cf. Jo. 19:11, οὐκ ἐχες ἐξουσίαν κατ' ἐμοῦ οὐδομίαν εἰ μὴ ἤν δεδομένον σοι ἀνωθεν.5 Paul has the same6 idiom. Thus Gal. 4:15 εἴ δυνατὸν τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς ὑμῶν ἐξορύξαντες ἐδώκατέ μοι and Ro. 7:7 τὴν ἀμαρτίαν οὐκ ἐγνων εἰ μὴ διὰ νόμου, τὴν τε

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 205.  
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 199.  
5 Here ΝΑ read ἐχεῖς.  
The MSS. vary in the support of ἄν as in Gal. 4:15, where EKLP (and Ἐκλός Ὁδίκος) have it. In Jo. 18:36, B does not have ἄν, while in 8:19, D does not have it, and the other MSS. differ in the position of ἄν. This particle comes near the beginning of the clause, though not at the beginning. It does not precede οὐκ (cf. Gal. 1:10). It is sometimes repeated in successive apodeses (cf. Jo. 4:10), but not always (cf. Lu. 12:39). Cf. Kuhner-Gerth, Bd. I, p. 247. On the use of ἄν in general see Thompson, Syntax, pp. 291 ff. Hoogeveer: (Doctrina Partic. Linguae Graecae, ed. sec., 1806, p. 35) makes ἄν mean simply debeo, a very doubtful interpretation. "The addition of ἄν to an indicative apodosis produced much the same effect as we can express in writing by italicizing 'if.'" This emphasis suggests that the condition was not realized. The papyri likewise occasionally show the absence of ἄν. The condition is not always expressed. It may be definitely implied in the context or left to inference. So καὶ ἔλθων σὺν τόκῳ ἄν ἔπραξα αὐτό (Lu. 19:23) and καὶ ἔλθων ἑώρακεν ἑκομισάμην ἄν τὸ ἐμὸν σὺν τόκῳ (Mt. 25:27). Here the condition is implied in the context, a construction thoroughly classical. But, in principal clauses, there is no instance of ἄν with a past tense of the indicative in a frequentative sense. It only survives in relative, comparative or temporal clauses (cf. Mk. 6:56; Ac. 2:45; 4:35; 1 Cor. 12:2; Mk. 3:11; 11:19). So D in Mk. 15:6, ἄν ἄν ἡτοιμάσατο. Both the aorist and the imperfect tenses are used thus with all in these subordinate clauses. There was, considerable ambiguity in the use of the past tenses for this "unreal" indicative. No hard and fast rule could be laid down. A past tense of the indicative, in a condition without ἄν, naturally meant a simple condition of the first class and described past time (cf. Heb. 12:25). But in certain contexts it was a condition of the second class (as in Jo. 15:22, 24). Even with ἄν it is not certain whether past or present time is meant. The certain application to present time is probably post-Homeric. The imperfect might denote a past condition, as in Mt. 23:30; 24:43 (Lu. 12:39); Jo. 4:10; 11:21, 32; 1 Jo. 2:

6 Monro, Hom. Gr., pp. 236 f. 7 Moulton, Profl., p. 201.
MODE (ΕΓΚΛΙΣΙΣ) 923

19; Heb. 11:15, or, as commonly, a present condition (cf. Lu. 7:39). The aorist would naturally denote past time, as in Mt. 11:21. The two tenses may come in the same condition and conclusion, as in Jo. 14:28. The past perfect is found in the protasis, as in Mt. 12:7; Jo. 19:11. Once the real past perfect meets us in the conclusion (1 Jo. 2:19). And note a ἀν ἢδειτε in Jo. 14:7.

(δ) Impossible Wishes. These impracticable wishes were introduced in Attic by εἰθε or εἰ γάρ, which used also ὠφελεῖν with the infinitive. From this form a particle was developed ὠφελέων (aumentless) which took the place of εἰθε and εἰ γάρ. The dropping of the augment is noted in Herodotus (Moulton, Prol., p. 201).

As a matter of fact, this unfulfilled wish occurs only three times in the N. T.: once with the aorist about the past, ὠφελέων γε ἐβασιλεύσατε (1 Cor. 4:8), and twice with the imperfect about the present (2 Cor. 11:1; Rev. 3:15). Ὀφελεῖν occurs once also with the future (Gal. 5:12). Many of the MSS. (D,EFGKL) read ὠφελεῖν in 2 Cor. 11:1, and a few do the same in 1 Cor. 4:8. The idiom occurs in the LXX and in the inscriptions. Cf. Schwyzter, Perg., p. 173. The modern Greek expresses such wishes by νά or ἀς and imperfect or aorist (Thum, p. 128). For ἔδραμον in Gal. 2:2, of unrealized purpose, see Final Clauses. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 127) quotes ὠφελόν ἔμεινας, Achilles Tatius, II, 24, 3, and ὠφελόν ἔγνω μᾶλλον ἐπύρεσσον, Epiet., Diss., 22, 12.

(b) The Present. In Mt. 12:38, διδάσκαλε, θέλομεν ἀπὸ σοῦ σημείου ἱδεῖν, the present seems rather abrupt.1 In Jo. 12:21, κύριε, θέλομεν τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἱδεῖν, this is felt so strongly that it is translated: ‘Sir, we would see Jesus.’ See also Jo. 6:67. Cf. ἔβουλόμην in Ac. 25:22 and ἐφευζαίμην ἂν, in 26:29. There does not seem to be the same abruptness in θέλω in 1 Cor. 7:7. Cf. also φείδομαι in 7:28. There were probably delicate nuances of meaning which sufficiently softened these words, shadings which now escape us. There is no difficulty about ἀρκεῖ in 2 Cor. 12:9. In a case like ὑπάγω ἀλλεύειν (cf. ἔρχομαι) in Jo. 21:3, the suggestion or hint is in the fact, not in the statement. The indicative is a definite assertion. The nature of the case supplies the rest. In 1 Cor. 10:22, ἢ παράξηλομεν τὸν κύριον; the indicative notes the fact, while the surprise and indignation come out in the interrogative form. The question in Jo. 11:47, τί ποιοῦμεν; is very striking. It may be questioned2 if the point is the same as τί ποιῶμεν; (cf. Jo. 6:28), like the Latin Quid faciamus? The subjunctive of de-

---

liberation suggests doubt on the whole subject or expresses a wish to do something. Blass\(^1\) cites the colloquial Latin for parallels for this idiom. But we do not need such parallels here. The inquiry of Caiaphas is rather indignant protest against the inactivity of the Sanhedrin than a puzzled quandary as to what they should do. The indicative suits exactly his purpose. He charges them with doing nothing and knowing nothing and makes a definite proposal himself. Winer sees the point clearly.\(^2\) The same use of $\text{θέλω}$ noted above appears in questions of deliberation as in $\text{θέλεις συλλέξωμεν}$; (Mt. 13:28). So $\text{βούλεσθε ἀπολύσω}$; (Jo. 18:39). Cf. Lu. 18:41. Possibility or duty may be expressed in questions also, as in $\text{πῶς δύνασθε ἀραθὰ λαλεῖν πονηρῷ ὄντες}$; (Mt. 12:34); $\text{τί με δεῖ ποιεῖν ἵνα σωθῶ}$; (Ac. 16:30). This is the analytical method rather than trusting to the mode.\(^3\) "It is found possible, and more convenient, to show the modal character of a clause by means of particles, or from the drift of the context, without a distinct verbal form."\(^4\)

(c) **The Future.** The future indicative "was originally a subjunctive in the main"\(^5\) and it has a distinct modal development. This fact comes out in the fact that the future tense of the indicative is a rival of the subjunctive, the optative and the imperative.\(^6\) Like the subjunctive and optative the future may be merely futuristic (prospective) or deliberative or volitive. This matter has been discussed at length under Tenses, which see. As an example of the merely futuristic note Mt. 11:28, of the volitive see Lu. 13:9, of the deliberative note Jo. 6:68.

II. **The Subjunctive Mode ($\text{ἡ υποτάκτική ἔγκλισις}$).** Some of the Greek grammarians called it $\text{ἡ διστάκτική}$, some $\text{ἡ συμβουλευτική}$, some $\text{ἡ υποθετική}$. But no one of the names is happy, for the mode is not always subordinate, since it is used freely in principal clauses, nor is it the only mode used in subordinate clauses. But the best one is $\text{ἡ διστάκτική}$.

1. **RELATIONS TO OTHER MODES.**

The development of the modes was gradual and the differentiation was never absolutely distinct.

(a) **The Aorist Subjunctive and the Future Indicative.** These are closely allied in form and sense. It is quite probable that the future indicative is just a variation of the aorist subjunctive. Cf. $\text{ἐδομαί, πίνομαι, φάγομαι}$. The subjunctive is always future, in

---

\(^1\) Ib. Cf. Thompson, Synt., p. 187.  
\(^2\) W.-Th., p. 284.  
\(^4\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 235.  
\(^5\) Moulton, Prol., p. 199.  
\(^6\) Thompson, Synt., p. 218.
subordinate clauses relatively future. Hence the two forms continued side by side in the language. There is a possible distinction. "The subjunctive differs from the future indicative in stating what is thought likely to occur, not positively what will occur." But in the beginning (cf. Homer) it was probably not so. Brugmann (Griech. Gr., p. 499) pointedly contends that many so-called future indicatives are just "emancipated short-vowel conjunctives." Cf. Giles, Manual, pp. 446-448; Moulton, Prol., p. 149.

(b) The Subjunctive and the Imperative. These are closely allied. Indeed, the first person imperative in Greek, as in Sanskrit, is absent in usage and the subjunctive has to be employed instead. There is a possible instance of the subjunctive as imperative in the second person in Sophocles, but the text is uncertain. The use of μὴ and the aorist subjunctive in prohibitions of the second and third persons is also pertinent. Thus the subjunctive is in close affinity with the imperative.

(c) The Subjunctive and the Optative. They are really variations of the same mode. In my Short Grammar of the Greek N. T. I have for the sake of clearness grouped them together. I treat them separately here, not because I have changed my view, but in order to give a more exhaustive discussion. The closeness of the connection between the subjunctive and the optative is manifest in the Sanskrit. "Subjunctive and optative run closely parallel with one another in the oldest language in their use in independent clauses, and are hardly distinguishable in dependent." In the Sanskrit the subjunctive disappeared before the optative save in the imperative uses. It is well known that the "Latin subjunctive is syncretistic, and does duty for the Greek conjunctive and optative." Delbruck, indeed, insists that the two modes originally had the same form and the same meaning. Delbruck's view has carried the bulk of modern opinion. But Giles is justified in saying: "The original meaning of these moods and the history of their development is the most difficult of the many vexed questions of comparative syntax." It is true that

1 Thompson, Gk. Synt., 1883, p. 133.
2 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 216.
5 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 216.
6 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., 1907, p. 191.
7 Die Crundl. d. griech. Synt., p. 115 f.
8 Comp. Plilol., p. 502.
the subjunctive in Greek refers only to the future, while the
optative is not bound to any sphere.\(^1\) But the optative is usually relatively\(^2\) future like our "should," "could," etc. The use of the
subjunctive was greater in Homer's time than afterwards. The
independent subjunctive in particular was more freely used in
Epic than in Attic. In the modern Greek\(^3\) the subjunctive has
not only displaced the optative, but the future indicative and the
infinitive. But even so in modern Greek the subjunctive is rela-
tively reduced and is almost confined to subordinate clauses
(Thumb, *Handb.*, pp. 115, 126). The fut. ind. in modern Greek
is really θα (θαναι) and subj. G. Hamilton\(^4\) overstates it in say-
ing: "This monarch of the moods, which stands absolute and
alone, has all the other moods dependent on it." It is possible
that originally these two moods were used indifferently.\(^5\) Vand-
cle\(^6\) argues for a radical difference between the two moods, but
he does not show what that difference is. There were distinctions
developed beyond a doubt in actual use,\(^7\) but they are not of a
radical nature. The Iranian, Sanskrit and the Greek are the
only languages which had both the subjunctive and optative.
The Sanskrit dropped the subjunctive and the Greek finally dis-
pensed with the optative as the Latin had done long ago.\(^8\)

2. ORIGINAL SIGNIFICANCE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE. Delbruck\(^9\)
is clear that "will" is the fundamental idea of the subjunctive,
while "wish" came to be that of the optative. But this position
is sharply challenged to-day. Goodwin\(^10\) denies that it is possible
"to include under one fundamental idea all the actual uses of
any mood in Greek except the imperative." He admits that the
only fundamental idea always present in the subjunctive is that
of futurity and claims this as the primitive meaning from the
idiom of Homer. Brugmann\(^11\) denies that a single root-idea of
the subjunctive can be found. He cuts the Gordian knot by three
uses of the subjunctive (the volitive, the deliberative, the futur-

---

2 Cf. Buumlein, Unters. uber griech. Modi (1846, p. 25 f.).
3 Cf. V. and D., Handb., p. 321 f.
4 Latin of the Latins and Greek of the Greeks, p. 23.
5 Bergaigne, De conjunctivi et optativi in indoeurop. linguis.
6 L'optatif grec, p. xxiii.
7 Ib., p. iii.
8 Jolly, Ein Kapitel d. vergl. Synt., Der Konjunktiv und Optativ, p. 119.
10 M. and T., App., Relation of the Optative to the Subjunctive and other
Moods, p. 371.
istic). W. G. Hale identifies the deliberative and futuristic uses as the same. Sonnenschein sees no distinction between volitive and deliberative, to which Moulton agrees. "The objection to the term 'deliberative,' and to the separation of the first two classes, appears to be well grounded." He adds: "A command may easily be put in the interrogative tone." That is true. It is also true "that the future indicative has carried off not only the futuristic but also the volitive and deliberative subjunctives." But for practical purposes there is wisdom in Brugmann's division. Stahl sees the origin of all the subjunctive uses in the notion of will. The future meaning grows out of the volitive. Mutzbauer finds the fundamental meaning of the subjunctive to be the attitude of expectation. This was its original idea. All else comes out of that. With this Gildersleeve agrees: "The subjunctive mood is the mood of anticipation," except that he draws a sharp distinction between "anticipation" and "expectation." "Anticipation treats the future as if it were present." He thinks that the futuristic subjunctive is a "deadened imperative." But Monro on the whole thinks that the futuristic meaning is older than the volitive. So the grammarians lead us a merry dance with the subjunctive. Baumlein denies that the subjunctive is mere possibility. It aims after actuality, "a tendency towards actuality." At any rate it is clear that we must seek the true meaning of the subjunctive in principal clauses, since subordinate clauses are a later development, though the futuristic idea best survives in the subordinate clause. In a sense Hermann's notion is true that three ideas come in the modes (Wirklichkeit, Möglichkeit, Notwendigkeit). The indicative is Wirklichkeit, the imperative is Notwendigkeit, while the subjunctive and the optative are Möglichkeit. I have ventured in my Short Grammar to call the subjunctive and optative the modes of doubtful statement, to call,
while the indicative is the mode of positive assertion and the imperative that of commanding statement. The modes, as already seen, overlap all along the line, but in a general way this outline is correct. The subjunctive in principal sentences appears in both declarative and interrogative sentences. Cf. εἰρήνην ἔχωμεν πορείας τοῦ θεοῦ (Ro. 5:1), τί εἴπω ὑμῖν; (1 Cor. 11:22). It is found in both positive and negative statements. Cf. δῶμεν ἤμισυ δῶμεν; (Mk. 12:14), μὴ σχίσωμεν αὐτόν, ἀλλὰ λαχωμεν (Jo. 19:24). It is the mood of doubt, of hesitation, of proposal, of prohibition, of anticipation, of expectation, of brooding hope, of imperious will. We shall, then, do best to follow Brugmann.

3. THREEFOLD USAGE. The three uses do exist, whatever their origin or order of development.¹

   (a) Futuristic. This idiom is seen in Homer with the negative οὐ as in οὔδε ἤδωμι, 'I never shall see.' It is an emphatic future.² This emphatic future with the subjunctive is common in Homer with ἄνυ or κεν and once without. Gildersleeve³ calls this the "Homeric subjunctive," but it is more than doubtful if the usage was confined to Homer. Moulton (Prol., p. 239) quotes P. Giles as saying: "This like does for many dialects what the subjunctive did for Greek, putting a statement in a polite, inoffensive way, asserting only verisimilitude." Note the presence of the subjunctive in the subordinate clauses with ἔδω (ἐδώ).⁴ The presence of here and there with the subjunctive testifies to a feeling for the futuristic sense. See ἦτίς οὐ κατοικισθῇ (Jer. 6:8). In the modern Greek, Thumb (Handb., p. 195) gives ἂ δὲν πιστεύεις, where is for οὔδέν. The practical equivalence of the aorist subjunctive and the future indicative is evident in the subordinate clauses, particularly those with εἰ, ἢν, ὅς and ὅστις. Cf. δ ὑποσενέγκη (Heb. 8:3). This is manifest in the LXX, the N. T., the inscriptions and the late papyri.⁵ Blass⁶ pronounces ως ἀνθρωπος βαλη (Mk. 4:26) "quite impossible" against ΝBDI, A. But Moulton⁷ quotes οὐ τεθῇ from inscriptions 317, 391, 395, 399 al. in Ramsay's Cities and Bishoprics of Phrygia, ii, 392. For the papyri, Moulton (Prol., p. 240) notes B. U; 303 (vi/A.D.) παράσχω= 'I will furnish,' A. P. 144 (v/A.D.) ἔλθω= 'I will come.' The itacisms in –ση and –σει prove less, as Moulton notes. The examples in the papyri of itacistic –σει, –ση, are "innumerable." In Ac. 5:15, W. H.

¹ Cf. Giles, Man., p. 505.  
² Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 198.  
⁴ Brug., Greich Gr., p. 503.  
⁵ Moulton, Prol., p. 240.  
⁶ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 321.  
⁷ Prol., p. 240.
print ἔνα—ἐπισκιάσει (B, some cursive). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 136) is quite prepared to take πῶς φύγησε (Mt. 23:33) =πῶς φεύξεσθε. This is probably deliberative, but he makes a better case for ἐν τῷ ἔργῳ τί γένηται (Lu. 23:31). Blass¹ notes that "the mixture of the fut. ind. and aorist conj. has, in comparison with the classical language, made considerable progress." He refers to Sophocles, Lexicon, p. 45, where έπιμω σοι is quoted as = ἐρῶ σοι.² In a principal clause in Clem., Hom. XI. 3, we have καὶ οὕτως—δινηθή, and Blass has noted also in Is. 33:24 ἄφεθη γὰρ αὐτοῖς ἡ ἁμαρτία. We cannot, indeed, trace the idiom all the way from Homer. "But the root-ideas of the subjunctive changed it remarkably little in the millennium or so separating Homer from the Gospels; and the mood which was more and more winning back its old domain from the future tense may well have come to be used again as a 'gnomic future' without any knowledge of the antiquity of such a usage."³ It was certainly primitive in its simplicity⁴ even if it was not the most primitive idiom. The use of οὖ with the subj. did continue here and there after Homer's day. We find it in the LXX, as in Jer. 6:8 (above) and in the Phrygian inscription (above). In fact, in certain constructions it is common, as in μὴ οὖ after verbs of fearing and caution. Cf. 2 Cor. 12:20 and MSS. in Mt. 25:9 (μὴ ποτε οὐκ ἀρκέση). It is even possible that the idiom οὖ μὴ is to be thus explained. Gildersleeve⁵ remarks on this point: "It might even seem easier to make a belong to αἰσχρηθῶ, thus combining objective and subjective negatives, but it must be remembered that οὖ with the subjunctive had died out (except in μὴ οὖ) before this construction came in." The vernacular may, however, have preserved οὖ with the subj. for quite a while. Jannaris⁶ confidently connects οὖ in this idiom with the subj. and explains μὴ as an abbreviation of μὴν. If either of these explanations is true, the N. T. would then preserve in negative principal sentences the purely futuristic subjunctive. Burton⁷ is clear that anyhow "the aorist subjunctive is used with οὖ μὴ in the sense of an emphatic future indicative." The ancient Greek sometimes employed the present subjunctive in this sense, but the N. T. does not use it. But the LXX has it, as in Jer. 1:19. So in Is. 11:9 we find οὖ μὴ κακοποιήσουσιν οὐδὲ μὴ δύσωμυταί. The future ind. with οὖ μὴ is rare in the N. T., but οὖ μὴ with the aorist

subj. appears in the W. H. text 100 times. It cannot be said that the origin of this a construction has been solved. Goodwin states the problem well. The two negatives ought to neutralize each other, being simplex, but they do not (cf. μή οὐ). The examples are partly futuristic and partly prohibitory. Ellipsis is not satisfactory nor complete separation (Gildersleeve) of the two negatives. Perhaps οὐ expresses the emphatic denial and μή the prohibition which come to be blended into the one construction. At any rate it is proper to cite the examples of emphatic denial as instances of the futuristic subjunctive. Thus οὐ μή σε ἀνω, οὔδὲ οὐ μή σε ἐγκαταλίπω (Heb. 13:5); οὐ μή ἀπολέσῃ (Mk. 9:41); οὐκέτι οὐ μή πίω (Mk. 14:25). Cf. Lu. 6:37 etc. See οὐ μή in both principal and subordinate clauses in Mk. 13:2. See also Tense.

It is a rhetorical question in Lu. 18:7 (note also μακροθυμεῖ.) rather than a deliberative one. In Rev. 15:4 we have the aor. subj. and the fut. ind. side by side in a rhetorical question, τίς οὐ μὴ φοβηθῇ, κύριε, καὶ δοξάσει τὸ ὄνομά; See also the τίς εἴ οὐ μὴν ἔξει φίλον καὶ πορεύσεται πρὸς αὐτόν—καὶ ἐπιη αὐτῷ; (Lu. 11:5). It is difficult to see here anything very "deliberative" about ἐπιη as distinct from ἔξει. It may be merely the rhetorical use of the futuristic subj. in a question. Have the grammars been correct in explaining all these subjunctives in questions as "deliberative"? Certainly the future incl. is very common in rhetorical and other questions in the N. T.

(b) Volitive. There is no doubt about the presence of the volitive subjunctive in the N. T. The personal equation undoubtedly cuts some figure in the shades of meaning in the moods, here as elsewhere. Gildersleeve would indeed make this "imperative sense" the only meaning of the mood in the standard language after Homer. He does this because the deliberative subjunctive expects an imperative answer. But, as already seen, that is a mooted question. Brugmann takes pains to remark that the element of "will" in the volitive subjunctive belongs to the speaker, not to the one addressed. It is purely a matter of the context. It occurs in both positive and negative sentences and the negative is always μή. The usage is common in Homer. Monro interprets it as expressing "what the speaker resolves or in-

2 M. and T., pp. 389 ff. See also pp. 101-105.
3 Giles, Man., p. 505.
5 Griech. Gr., p. 500.
6 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 197.
sists upon." In principle the hortatory subjunctive is the same as the prohibitive use with It was a necessity for the first person, since the imperative was deficient there. Moulton\textsuperscript{1} ventures to treat this hortatory use of the first person subj. under the imperative, since the Sanskrit grammars give the Vedic subjunctive of the first person as an ordinary part of the imperative. The other persons of the Sanskrit subj. are obsolete in the epic period. Thus bhrama, bharata, bharantu are compared with βαίνωμεν φέρετε, βερόντων (Attic for κοινή φερέτωσαν). Moulton\textsuperscript{2} appeals also to the combination of the first and second persons in constructions like εγείρουσθε αγωμεν, (Mk. 14:42). This example illustrates well the volitive idea in αγωμεν.\textsuperscript{2} The first person is usually found in this construction. Cf. also αγωμεν (Jo. 11:7); φάγωμεν και πίωμεν (1 Cor. 15:32); εξωμεν (Ro. 5:1, correct text); θρονώμεν (Ph. 3:1); γηγορώμεν και νήφωμεν (1 Th. 5:6). Cf. Lu. 9:33 in particular (infinitive and subj.). In 1 Cor. 5:8, οστε εορτάξωμεν, the subjunctive is hortatory and οστε is an inferential particle. Cf. further Heb. 12:1; 1 Jo. 4:7. As examples with μη see μη σχίσωμεν (Jo. 19:24); μη καθεύδομεν (1 Th. 5:6). The construction continued to flourish in all stages of the language.\textsuperscript{4} We have δευτε αποκτείνωμεν (Mk. 12:7). Cf. δευτε ὡδετε, Mt. 28:6) and ἄφες ἔδωμεν (Mt. 27:49). In ἄφες the singular has become stereotyped.\textsuperscript{5} This use of ἄφες was finally shortened into as in the modern Greek and came to be universal with the hortatory subjunctive of the first person and even for the third person imperative in the vernacular (as άς εξη for ἐξετω). In the N. T. ἄφες is not yet a mere auxiliary as is our "let" and the modern Greek άς. It is more like "do let me go."\textsuperscript{6} Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 134) quotes ἄφες δείξωμεν, Epict. I, 9, 15. In the first person singular the N. T. always has ἄφες or δεῦρο with the hortatory subjunctive.\textsuperscript{7} Thus ἄφες ἐκβάλω (Mt. 7:11)
4) = Lu. 6:42 and δεῦρο ἀποστείλω (Ac. 7:34, LXX). Moulton\(^1\) cites ἄφες ἐγὼ αὐτὴν θρηνύσω from 0. P. 413 (Roman period). We do not have to suppose the ellipsis of ἵνα, for ἄφες is here the auxiliary. In Jo. 12:7, ἄφες αὐτὴν ἵνα τηρήσῃ, it is hardly probable that ἄφες is just auxiliary,\(^2\) though in the modern Greek, as already stated, as is used with the third person.

In the second person we have only the negative construction in prohibitions with the aorist subjunctive, a very old idiom\(^3\) (see Tenses, Aorist). "The future and the imperative between them carried off the old jussive use of the subjunctive in positive commands of 2d and 3d person. The old rule which in ('Anglicistic') Latin made sileas an entirely grammatical retort discourteous to the Public Orator's sileam? — which in the dialect of Elis" (to go on with Moulton's rather long sentence) "produced such phrases as ἐπιμέλειαν ποιήσατε Νικόδρομορ — 'let Nicodorus attend to it.' has no place in classical or later Greek, unless in Soph., Phil., 300 (see Jebb). Add doubtfully Ll. P. 1, vs. 8 ([ii]/B.C.), Tb. P. 414, (ii)/A.D.)." See Moulton, Prol., p. 178.

In the LXX, Jer. 18:8, note καὶ ἐπιστραφῆ, parallel with ἀποστραφῆ in 18:11. In the modern Greek we have wishes for the future in the subj., since the opt. is dead. So ὁ θεὸς φυλάξῃ, God forbid' (Thumb, Handb., p. 127). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 135) finds the subj. for wish in late papyri and inscriptions. It is even in the LXX, Ruth 1:9 A, δῶ κύριος ύμιν καὶ εὐρητε ἀνάπαυσιν, but B has optative. In the Veda the prohibitive ma is found only with the conjunctive, thus seeming to show that the imperative was originally used only in positive sentences. This idiom of μὴ and the aorist subj. held its own steadily in the second person. This point has been discussed at some length under Tenses. Take as illustrations the following: μὴ φοβηθήσῃς (Mt. 1:20); μὴ νομίσῃς (5:17); μὴ εἰσεβεγκής (6:13). The use of ὃρα and ὥρατε with μὴ and the aorist subj. is to be noted. Some of these are examples of asyndeton just like ἄφες. Thus ὃρα μηδενὶ μηδὲν εἰπῇς (Mk. 1:44; cf. Mt. 8:4). So also ὃρα μὴ (Rev. 22:9) where the verb ποιήσῃς is not expressed. Cf. LXX ὁραὶ ποιήσεις (Heb. 8:5) ὥρατε μηδεὶς γινωσκέτω (Mt. 9:30) and ὥρατε μὴ θροεῖσθε (24:6). With βλέπετε it is not always clear whether we have asyndeton (parataxis) or a subordinate clause (hypotaxis). In Lu. 21:8,


\(^1\) Prol., p. 175.  
\(^2\) Ib.  
\(^3\) Delbruck, Synt., p. 120; Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 240.
βλέπετε μή πλανηθήτε, we may (p. 996) have parataxis as is possible\(^1\) in Heb. 12:25, βλέπετε μή παραιτήσῃσθε. Cf. Ac. 13:40; Gal. 5:15. These forms occur with the third person also, as βλέπετε μή τις ύμας πλανάσῃ (Mt. 24:4). But, per contra, see 1 Cor. 10:12 (μή ἔσται in Col. 2:8). In 1 Th. 5:15, ὅρατε μή τις κακῶν ἀντὶ κακοῦ τινὶ ἀποδῶ, parataxis is probable. But the third person aorist subj. occurs with μή alone as in μή τις οὖν αὐτὸν ἐξουθενήσῃ (1 Cor. 16:11); μή τίς με δέξῃ ἄφρονα ἔίναι (2 Cor. 11:16); μή τις ύμας ἐξά-πατήσῃ (2 Th. 2:3). Elsewhere μή and the aorist imperative occur in the third person. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 134) quotes μή and 3d person aor. subj. from κοινῆ writers, inscr. and papyri. Careless writers even use μή οὖν ἀλλως ποιήσῃ, B. G. U. III, 824, 17. Even Epictetus (II, 22, 24) has μή αὐτόθεν ἀποφαίνῃ. No less volitive is an example with οὐ μή, like οὐ μή ἐισέλθητε (Mt. 5:20), which is prohibitive. So οὐ μή νίψῃς (Jo. 13:8); οὐ μή πίη (Lu. 1:15). There is the will of God in ἰῶτα ἐν ἤ μία κεραιά ὦ μή παρέλθη (Mt. 5:18) in the third person. In Mt. 25:9, μή ποτε οὐ μή ἄρκέσῃ ἤμων καὶ ὑμῶν, the subj. is probably futuristic (or de-liberative). In a late papyrus, 0. P. 1150, 6 (vi/A.D.), note δεῖξον τὴν δύναμιν σου καὶ εξέλθη where the 3d pers. subj. imperative like Latin. There are examples in the N. T. where ἵνα seems to be merely an introductory expletive with the volitive subjunctive. Thus ἵνα ἐπιθῆς (Mk. 5:23); ἵνα ἀναβλέψω (10:51); ἵνα περισσεύητε (2 Cor. 8:7); ἵνα μνημονεύωμεν (Gal. 2:10. Note present tense); ἵνα φοβήται, (Eph. 5:33) parallel with ἀγαπάτω. Cf. ἵνα—δώῃ (δῶ) margin of W. H., Eph. 1:17. Moulton\(^2\) finds in the papyri (B. U. 48, ii/iii A.D.) ἧλαν ἀναβήσῃ τῇ ἐφορτῇ ἵνα ὤμόσε γεννώμεθα. So also he cites ἵνα αὐτὸν μὴ δυσωμήσῃς, F. P. 112 (99 A.D.), and ἵνα μηδὲ τῶν τόκων ὀλιγυρήσῃς (Cicero, Att. vi. 5). The modern Greek uses νά and subj. as imperative for both second and third persons (Thumb, Handb., p. 127 f.). Note also μή ἵνα ἀναστατώσῃς ἤμας, B. G. U. 1079 (A.D. 41), not ἵνα μή. Moulton (Prol., p. 248) quotes Epict., IV, 1, 41, ἵνα μή μωράς ἦ, ἄλλα ἵνα μάθη. The use of θέλω ἵνα (cf. Mk. 6:25; 10:35; Jo. 17:24) preceded this idiom. Moulton\(^3\) even suggests that προσεύχεσθε ἵνα μή ἔλθητε εἰς πειρασμὸν (Mk. 14:38) is as much parataxis as ὁράτε καὶ φυλάσσεσθε (Lu. 12:15). This "innovation" in the κοινῆ takes the place of ὕπως and the future ind. Moulton (Prol., p. 177 note) cites ὕπως μοι μή ἔφεις, Plato, 337 B, 'don't tell me,' where ὕπως=’in which case.’ The use of μή after words of caution and apprehension is probably

---

\(^1\) But Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 278) holds the opposite view.
\(^2\) Prol., p. 179.
\(^3\) Ib., p. 178.
paratactic in origin. Moulton notes the use of the present subj.
with expressions of warning as well as the aorist. Thus in Heb.
12:15, ἐπισκοποῦντες μὴ τις ῥίζα πικρίας ἐνοχῇ. But this construc-
tion borders so closely on subordinate clauses, if not clear over
the line, that it will be best discussed there.

Subordinate clauses show many examples of the volitive sub-
junctive (as clauses of design, probably paratactic in origin,
Moulton, Prol., p. 185). See δι' ἡς λατρεύωμεν (Heb. 12:28). See
discussion of Sub. Clauses.

(c) Deliberative. There is no great amount of difference be-
tween the hortatory (volitive) subjunctive and the deliberative.
The volitive is connected with the deliberative in Mk. 6:24 f.,
tί αἰτήσωμαι; θέλω ἵνα δώς. Thus ποιήσωμεν, ‘suppose we do it,’ and
tί ποιήσωμεν; ‘what are we to (must we) do?’ do not vary much.
The interrogative is a quasi-imperative. Gildersleeve notes in
Plato (rare elsewhere in Attic) a "number of hesitating half-
questions with μή or μή ou and the present subjunctive." It is
possible that we have this construction in Mt. 25:9, μή ποτε οὐ
μή (W. H. marg. just οὐ) ἀρκέσῃ ἡμῖν καὶ ὑμῖν. It is but a step to
the deliberative question. This is either positive or negative,
as in Mk. 12:14, δόμεν ἡ μή δώμεν; So also οὐ μή as in Jo. 18:
11, οὐ μή πῶς αὐτό; Cf. also Lu. 18:7; Rev. 15:4. The aorist
or the present tense occurs as in Lu. 3:10, τί οὖν ποιήσωμεν;
and in Jo. 6:28, τί ποιῶμεν; so λέγω in Heb. 11:32. Cf. the
indicative τί ποιοῦμεν; in Jo. 11:47 and the future τί οὖν ἔρομεν;
(Ro. 9:14). The question may be rhetorical (cf. Mt. 26:54;
Lu. 14:34; Jo. 6:68; Ro. 10:14) or interrogative (cf. Mt. 6:
31; 18:21; Mk. 12:14; Lu. 22:49). The kinship between
delib. subj. and delib. fut. ind. is seen in Mk. 6:37, ἀγοράσωμεν
καὶ δώσωμεν; The first person is the one of most frequent occur-
rence (cf. Ro. 6:1), τί αἰτήσωμαι (Mk. 6:24). But examples are
not wanting for the second and third persons. Thus πῶς φύγητε
ἀπὸ τῆς κρίσεως τῆς γεέννης; (Mt. 23:33); τί γένηται; (Lu. 23:31).
See further Mt. 26:14; Ro. 10:54. It is sometimes uncertain
whether we have the subjunctive or the indicative, as in ἔτερον
προσδοκῶμεν; (Mt. 11:3) and ἐπανέσω ὑμᾶς; (1 Con 11:22). But
note τί εἴπω ὑμῖν; in the last passage. In Lu. 11:5 we have both

1 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 212 f.
2 Prol., p. 178.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 211.
6 Burton, N. T. Moods and Tenses, p. 77.
τίς ἔξει· and ἐπη. So τί δοῦ, (Mk. 8:37, ACD δῶσει) may be compared with τί δῶσει (Mt. 16:26). This ambiguity appears in τί ποιήσω; and ἐγγὺς τί ποιήσω in Lu. 16:3 f. The deliberative subj. is retained in indirect questions. Cf. Mt. 6:31 with Mt. 6:25.

The kinship between the deliberative subj. in indirect questions and the imperative and the volitive subjunctive is seen in Lu. 12:4 f., μὴ φοβηθῇ· ὑποδείξω δὲ ὑμῖν τίνα φοβηθῆτε· φοβηθῆτε κτλ. The deliberative subj., like the volitive, has various introductory words which make asyndeton (parataxis). These become set phrases like ἀφεςς, ὅρα. Thus ποῦ θέλεις ἐτοιμάσωμεν; (Mt. 26:17), θέλεις ἐπισωμεν; (Lu. 9:54). In Lu. 18:41 we have τί σοι θέλεις ποιήσω; and ίνα ἄναβλέψω as the reply, using ίνα in the brief answer. Cf. further Mt. 13:28. In Jo. 18:39, βούλεσθε οὖν ἀπολύσω, we probably have the subj. also. Some MSS. have εἰ πατάξωμεν; in Lu. 22:49. We may leave further discussion of the subj. to the subordinate clauses. We have no examples in the N. T. of οὖν with the subj. in independent sentences (but see κέ and the subj. in Homer). In subordinate clauses οὖν is very common, though not necessary, as will be seen. (Cf. discussion of εἰ, ὅστις.) But Jannaris gives instances of οὖν with the subj. in principal clauses (futuristic) in Polybius, Philo, Plutarch, Galen, etc. With the disappearance of the fut. ind., the opt. and the imper., the subj. has the field as the "prospective mood." It is found in the modern Greek as in τί νῦν γίνη (Thumb, Handb., p. 126).

III. The Optative Mode (ἡ εὐκτικὴ ἔγκλισις). It has already been shown that the optative does not differ radically from the subjunctive. Jannaris calls the optative the "secondary subjunctive."

1. HISTORY OF THE OPTATIVE. For the facts see chapter on Conjugation of the Verb. It is an interesting history and is well outlined by Jannaris in his Appendix V, "The Moods Chiefly Since A. (Ancient Greek) Times." It retreated first from dependent clauses and held longest in the use for wish in independent sentences like γένοιτο. But even here it finally went down before the fut. ind. and subj. The optative was a luxury

---

2 Ib.
4 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 564. On the subj. see further Earle, Cl. Papers, p. 221.
5 Ib., p. 450.
6 Ib., pp. 560-567.
of the language and was probably never common in the vernacular. Certainly it is very rare in the vernacular ΚΟΙΝΗ (both inscriptions and papyri). It is a literary mood that faded before the march of the subj. In a hundred pages of the Memorabilia of Xenophon the optative occurs 350 times. He had a "hyperorthodox love of the mood." Plato's Phaedo shows it 250 times in a corresponding space, but Strabo has it only 76, Polybius 37, Diodorus Siculus 13 times in a hundred pages. The 67 examples in the N. T. are in harmony with the ΚΟΙΝΗ usage. Gildersleeve pithily says: "The optative, which starts life as a wish of the speaker, becomes a notion of the speaker, then a notion of somebody else, and finally a gnomon of obliquity" (A. J. of Phil., 1908, p. 264). In the LXX the optative is rare, but not so rare as in the N. T., though even in the LXX it is replaced by the subj. (Thackeray, Gr., p. 193) as in the late papyri and inscriptions (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., pp. 128, 135).

2. SIGNIFICANCE. There is no definite distinction between the subjunctive and the optative in the Sanskrit. The Latin put all the burden on the subj., as the Greek finally did. The Sanskrit finally made the optative do most of the work. In a word, the optative is a sort of weaker subjunctive. Some writers make the opt. timeless and used definitely of the past. It is rather a "softened future" sometimes flung back into the past for a Standpunkt. We do not know "whether the opt. originally expressed wish or supposition." The name does not signify anything. It "was invented by grammarians long after the usages of the language were settled." They just gave it the name ΕΥΤΙΚΗ because at that time the only use it had without ΑΥ was that of wishing. The name is no proof that wishing was the primitive or the only function or the real meaning of the mode. We have precisely the same difficulty as in the subjunctive. Indeed, the

3 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 218. In the original speech there was no clear distinction between the subj. and the opt. (Curtius, Temp. und Modi, 1846, p. 266). 
5 Baumlein, Griech. Modi, p. 177. 
7 Ib., p. 231. 
8 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 375.
optative has three values, just like the subjunctive, viz. the
futuristic (potential), the volitive (wishes) and the deliberative.¹
In the first and third kinds ἀν is usually present, but not always.
Brugmann² notes only two, omitting the deliberative as some
scholars do for the subj. He does reckon a third use in indirect
discourse, but this is merely the opt. in subordinate sentences
and may be either of the three normal usages. The rare fut.
opt. in indirect discourse illustrates the point (not in the N. T.).
There is no doubt of the distinction between the futuristic (po-
tential) with negative οὐ (cf. futuristic subj. in Homer) and the
volitive use with μή (cf. subj. again).³ But there was also a "neu-
tral sense" that can hardly be classed either as futuristic or voli-
tive.⁴ Gildersleeve⁵ calls this the "optative in questions," usually
with ἀν. This is the deliberative use.

3. THE THREE USES.

(a) Futuristic or Potential. We begin with this whether it is
the first in time or not. Delbruck⁶ has taken several positions on
this point. The use of the negative οὐ here shows its kinship with
the future (cf. fut. ind. and aorist subj. in Homer).⁷ The ἀν was
not always present in Homer and it is not the ἀν that gives the
potential idea to the mode. In poetry the use without ἀν con-
tinued. "The optative is the ideal mood of the Greek language,
the mood of the fancy."⁸ Moulton⁹ puts it clearly: "It was used
to express a future in a milder form, and to express a request in
deferential style." Radermacher cites from Epictetus, II, 23, 1,
ἀν ἠδιον ἄναγνώσῃ — ἀν τις ὁν ἁκούσει, showing clearly that the opt.
and the fut. ind. are somewhat parallel. Moulton (Prol., p. 194)
cites Deut. 28:24 ff., where the opt. and fut. ind. alternate in
translating the same Hebrew. I do not agree with Radermacher
(N. T. Gr., p. 128) in seeing in ἡθελον παρέιναι (Gal. 4:20) a mere
equivalent of θέλομι ἀν. See imperfect ind. The presence of ἀν
gives "a contingent meaning"¹⁰ to the verb and makes one think
of the unexpressed protasis of the fourth-class condition. The

¹ Giles, Man., p. 510.
² Griech. Gr., pp. 504 ff.
³ Goodwin, M. and T., p. 375.
⁴ Ib., p. 4.
opt.," which is an overrefinement. It is merely a weakened form of wish
(K.-G., Bd. I, p. 228) or of the potential use.
⁶ Cf. his Konjunktiv und Optativ, Syntaktische Forschungen, Att.-indische
Synt. In the last of these he suggests that the potential and wishing functions
are distinct in origin.
⁹ Prol., p. 197.
¹⁰ Ib., p. 166.
idiom has vanished as a living form from the vernacular koinē in the N. T. times.\(^1\) It appears only in Luke's writings in the N. T. and is an evident literary touch. The LXX shows it only 19 times outside of 4 Maccabees and 30 with it.\(^2\) Moulton' notes one papyrus which does not have ay (cf. Homer), though he would suspect the text and read as Mahaffy does οὐθέν Ἰ[υ] ἐπείπαμι, Par. P. 63 (ii/B.C.). But curiously enough Luke has only one instance of this "softened assertion" apart from questions. That is in Ac. 26:29 (critical text) εὑξαίμην ἂν. This fact shows how obsolete the idiom is in the koinē. The use of ἂν here avoids the passionateness of the mere optative (Gildersleeve, Syntax, p. 157). The other examples in Luke's writings are all in questions and may be compared with the subj. in deliberative questions. Only two examples appear of the opt. with ἂν in direct questions. They are πῶς γὰρ ἂν δυναίμην ἔαν μὴ τίς ὁδηγήσει με; (Ac. 8:31. The only instance of a protasis in connection with an optative apodosis in the N. T.) and τί ἂν θέλοι ὁ σπερμολόγος οὐτος λέγειν; (Ac. 17:18). Both are rhetorical questions and the second has a deliberative tone; see (c). In Ac. 2:12, E has τί ἂν θέλοι. Moulton (Prol., p. 198) cites τίς ἂν δῶῃ from Job 31:31 and holds that it does not differ from τίς δῶῃ elsewhere (Num. 11:29). The other instances of ἂν and the opt. are all in indirect questions, but the construction is not due to the indirect question. It is merely retailed from the direct. The use of the optative in an indirect question when the direct would have the indicative or the subjunctive is not the point. This is merely the classic sequence of modes in indirect questions. See Lu. 8:9, ἐπηρώτων τίς εἶν. So Lu. 22:23 (cf. ἂν in 24). Cf. Ac. 21:33. In Lu. 1:29, D adds ἂν and MSS. vary with some of the other examples (cf. Lu. 18:36). So ἂν is correct in Lu. 15:26. Moulton (Prol., p. 198) cites Esth. 13:3 πυθομένου — πῶς ἂν ἀχθεῖη and inscr. Magnes. 215 (i/A.D.) ἐπηρώτα — τί ἂν ποιήσας ἐδεώς διατελοῖη. Moulton (Prol., p. 198) argues for "a minimum of difference" in the examples of indirect questions with and without ἂν. The difference is in the direct question. The examples with ἂν (W. H.'s text) in indirect questions are Lu. 1:62; 6:11; 9:46; 15:26; Ac. 5:24; 10:17.\(^4\) In all of these instances the deliberative ele-

\(^1\) Moulton, Prol., p. 197 f.; Blass, Gr. of N.T. Gk., p. 220.  
\(^2\) Prol., p. 197.  
\(^3\) Ib., p. 198. He notes also 4 Macc. 5:13, συγγυόσειν without ἂν. In the Pap. ἂν is usually present with the potential opt. (Radermacher, N. T. Gk., P. 129). Sometimes 'laws occurs with the opt., ἵσως—ἀποφήσειν in Joh. Philop.  
\(^4\) Burton, M. and T., p. 80; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 220;
ment is undoubtedly present; see (c). The same thing is true of
Lu. 3:15 (μὴ τοὺς) Ac. 17:27 (εἰ), but Ac. 25:16 (πρὸν ἢ in
indirect discourse for subj. of the direct) is futuristic.

(b) Volitive. Moulton\(^1\) calls this use the "Optative Proper," a
curious concession to the mere name. It has been the most per-
sistent construction of the optative, and (in independent clauses)
thirty-eight of the sixty-seven examples of the N. T. come under
this category.\(^2\) Fifteen of the thirty-eight instances belong to μὴ
gένοιτο, once in Lu. 20:16, and the other fourteen in Paul's
Epistles (10 in Romans, 1 in 1 Cor., 3 in Gal.). Thumb considers
the rare use of μὴ γένοιτο in modern Greek (the only relic of
the optative) a literary phenomenon, but Moulton\(^3\) notes that
Pallis retains it in Lu. 20:16. Moulton compares the persistence
of the English optative in the phrase "be it so," "so be it," "be
it never so humble," etc.\(^4\) So he notes it in the papyri for oaths,
prayers and wishes.\(^5\) 0. P. 240 (i/A.D.) εὐ εἴη, O. P. 715 (ii/A.D.)
ἐνοχοί εἴμεν. 0. P. 526 (ii/A.D.) χαϊδεῖς, L. Pb. (ii/B.C.) δὲ διδοῖ
σοι, B. M. 21 (ii/B.C.) σοὶ δὲ γένοιτο. The N. T. examples are all
in the third person except Phil. 20, ἐγὼ σου ὀναϊμην. One is a
curse μηκέτι μηδείς φάγοι (Mk. 11:14) and is equivalent to the
imperative. "There is a strong inclination to use the imperative
instead of the optative, not only in requests, where the impera-
tive has a legitimate place in classical Greek as well, but also in
imprecations, where it takes the place of the classical optative:
ἀνασθεμα ἔστω, Gal. 1:8 f. Cf. 1 Cor. 16:22."\(^6\) Only in Mk. 11:
14 and Ac. 8:20, τὸ ἀργυρίον σου σὺν σοὶ ἔιη, do we have the optative
in imprecations in the N. T. The opt. comes very near the
imper. in ancient Greek sometimes (Gildersleeve, p. 155). Cf.
gένοιτο, P. Par. 26 (B.C. 163). In Ac. 1:20, where the LXX (Ps.
109:8) has λαβὲω, Luke gives λαβέτω.\(^7\) There are only 23 exam-
pies of the volitive optative in independent clauses outside of μὴ
gένοιτο. Paul has 15 of this 23 "(Ro. 15:5, 13; Phil. 20; 2 Tim.
1:16, 18; 4:16, and the rest in 1 and 2 Th.), while Mark, Luke,
Acts, Hebrews, 1 Peter and 2 Peter have one apiece, and Jude
two."\(^8\) They are all examples of the aorist optative except the
present in Ac. 8:20. The negative is μὴ and ἀνυ is not used. In

\(^1\) Prol., p. 194.
\(^2\) Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 79; Moulton, Prol., p. 194.
\(^3\) Ib., p. 240.
\(^5\) Moulton, Prol., p. 195 f.
\(^6\) Blass, Gr. of N. 1'. Gk., p. 220.
\(^7\) Ib.
\(^8\) Moulton, Prol., p. 195.
2 Th. 3:16 δώῃ is opt., not the subj. δώῃ. In 1 Th. 3:12 the context shows that περισσεύσαι is opt. (not aor. inf. nor aor. middle imperative). The rare use of the volitive opt. with εἴ (twelve cases in the N. T., but four belong to indirect questions), will be discussed under Conditional Sentences. If Ίνα δώῃ is the correct text in Eph. 1:17, we probably have a volitive optative, the Ίνα being merely introductory (cf. examples with the subj.).

It is hardly a case of final Ίνα with the optative. Blass reads δώῃ here subj. after B. In modern Greek Dr. Rouse finds people saying not μὴ γένοιτο, but ὁ θεὸς νὰ φυλάξῃ (Moulton, Prol., p. 249), though νὰ is not here necessary (Thumb, Handb., p. 127). The ancient idiom with εἴθε and εἴ γάρ is not found in the N. T., as stated already several times. ὁφελοῦν with the future ind. occurs for a future wish (Gal. 5:12).

c) Deliberative. There is little more to add here. The LXX gives instances of τίς δώῃ; (Num. 11:29; Judg. 9:29; 2 Sam. 18:33, etc.) without ὡς as in Homer, where a deliberative subj. would be admissible. See also Ps. 120 (119):3, τί δοθεῖ σοι καὶ τί προστεθείτι σοι; In Lu. 6:11 Moulton remarks that τί ὡς ποιήσαι in the indirect question is "the hesitating substitute for the direct τί ποιήσομεν;" Why not rather suppose a "hesitating" (deliberative) direct question like τί ὡς θέλοι ὁ σπερμολόγος οὕτος λέγειν; (Ac. 17:18). As already remarked, the context shows doubt and perplexity in the indirect questions which have ὡς and the opt. in the N. T. (Lu. 1:62; 6:11; 9:46; 15:26; Ac. 5:24; 10:17). The verbs (ἐνένευον, διελάλουν, εἰσήλθεν διαλογισμός, ἐπυνθάνετο, διηπόρον) all show this state of mind. See indirect question εἴ βούλοιτο in Ac. 25:20 after ἀποροῦμεν. Cf. 27:39. The deliberative opt. undoubtedly occurs in Lu. 3:15, διαλογιζομένων μὴ ποτε αὐτός ἐίῃ ὁ Χριστός. It is not therefore pressing the optative unduly to find remnants of the deliberative use for it (cf. subj. and fut. indicative).

---

1 They are all exx. of the third person save Phil. 20. Here is the list (with Burton's errors corrected by H. Scott): Mk. 11:14; Lu. 1:38; 20:16; Ac. 8:20; Ro. 3:4, 6, 31; 6:2, 15; 7:7, 13; 9:14; 11:1, 11; 15:5, 13; 1 Cor. 6:15; Gal. 2:17; 3:21; 6:14; 1 Th. 3:11, 12 bis; 5:23 bis; 2 Th. 2:17 bis; 3:5, 16; 2 Tim. 1:16, 18; 4:16; Phil. 20; Heb. 13:21; 1 Pet. 1:2; 2 Pet. 1:2; Ju. 2, 9.

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 196.

3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 211.

4 Moulton, Prol., p. 194.

5 Ib., p. 198. On the "development principle" of the opt. see Mutzbauer, Konj. and Opt., p. 155.
IV. The Imperative (ἡ προστατικὴ ἐγκλίσις).

1. ORIGIN OF THE IMPERATIVE. See chapter on Conjugation of the Verb for discussion of the various devices used by this latest of the modes in order to get a foothold. Giles, after giving the history of the imperative forms (five separate strata), curtly dismisses it as not properly a mode and declines to discuss it under syntax. So Radermacher passes it by in his N. T. Gr. Moulton, on the other hand, takes it up "first among the moods" because "it is the simplest possible form of the verb." It is the simplest in one of its forms like the interjectional ἔγρευ, but it is also the latest of the modes and is without a distinct set of endings. Besides, it never dislodged the aorist subj. from the second person in prohibitions and finally gave up the fight all along the line. The modes were slower than the tenses in making sharp distinctions anyhow, and in the Sanskrit "no distinction of meaning has been established between the modes of the present-system and those (in the older language) of the perfect- and aorist-systems." The ambiguity of the imperative persists in the second person plural present where only the context can decide the mode. Thus ἐράωνάτε (Jo. 5:39); πιστεύετε (14:1); ἀγαλλιάσθε (1 Pet. 1:6); οἰκοδομεῖσθε (2:5); τελείτε (Ro. 13:6); καθίστε (1 Cor. 6:4); cf. Jo. 12:19. The perfect form ἵστε (Jas. 1:19; Heb. 12:17) shows the same situation.

2. MEANING OF THE IMPERATIVE. In original significance it was demand or exhortation. But, as will be shown, it was not confined to this simple idea. Besides, the notion of command (or prohibition) was expressed in various ways before the imperative was developed. These uses of the other modes continued to exist side by side with the imperative till the N. T. time. Examples of this will be given directly. The imperative itself was extended to include various shades of the future ind., the subj. and the opt. There is a general sense in which the imperative is distinct, as is seen in ἀγαπάτε τοὺς ἐχθροὺς ὑμῶν (Mt. 5:44), but this idea of command easily softens to appeal as in κύριε, σῶσον, ἀπολλυμέθα (Mt. 8:25).

3. DISAPPEARANCE OF THE IMPERATIVE FORMS. It was the last mode to get on its feet. It followed the optative into oblivion save in the second person (Thumb, Handb., p. 154). There the forms held on in the main, but the present subjunctive with came also into use instead of μὴ and the present imper., and

---

1 Man., pp. 464-473, 502. 2 Prol., p. 171. 3 Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 220. 4 Delbruck, Die Grundl., p. 120.
finally the hortatory (positive) subj. also appeared as imper. In
the third person (both positive and negative with μή) ἔξεσται and
the subj. drove out the imperative. Thus the imperative forms
in modern Greek present a wreck, if indeed they were ever much
else. 1  The imperative, like the subjunctive, is always future
in time, though it may apply to the immediate future as in
"quit that."

4. ALTERNATIVES FOR THE IMPERATIVE. These, under all the
circumstances, can be logically treated before the imperative
itself. Indeed, they have already been discussed in the preceding
remarks on tense and mode, so that little in addition is required.

(a) The Future Indicative. See ch. XVIII, Tense, where it is
shown that the Volitive Future is the equivalent of the impera-
tive. The fut. ind., like the subj. and the opt., may be merely
futuristic or volitive, or deliberative. The volitive future is a
matter of context and tone of voice, to be sure, but that is true
also of the subj. and opt., and, in truth, of the real imperative.
But more of the "tone of the imperative" further on. English,
as well as Greek, continues to use this volitive future. Both posi-
tive and negative (οὐ) commands are given by the fut. ind. The
negative is sometimes μή as in μή βουλήσεσθε εἰδέναι (Demosthenes),
μή ἔξεσται (B. U. 197, i/A.D.), μηδένα μισήσῃ (Clem., Hom., III, 69). 2
So also οὐ μή with the fut. ind. is sometimes prohibition, as in οὐ
μή ἔσται σοι τοῦτο (Mt. 16:22). Cf. also Gal. 4:30. But it is
commonest in the simple future like σὺ ὑψη (Mt. 27:4); ὑμεῖς
ὁψεσθε (27:24); ἔκκοψης (Lu. 13:9); οὐκ ἐσεσθε (Mt. 6:5), etc. It
is true that this use of οὐ proves the origin of this idiom to be "a
purely futuristic form," 3 as is the case with the question οὐ παύσῃ
διαστέφων; (Ac. 13:10), but the tone of this future is volitive
( imperative). The Latin use of the volitive future coincides
with that of the Greek. Gildersleeve 4 says: "It is not a milder
or gentler imperative. A prediction may imply resistless power
or cold indifference, compulsion or concession." The exact
shade of idea in this volitive future must be watched as closely
as the imperative itself. Cf. καλέσεις (Mt. 1:21) with σὺ ὑψη
(Mt. 27:4). Blass 5 denies that this is a "classical" idiom (against

322 f.; Thumb, Handb., p. 127.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 177.
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 209.
Gildersleeve) and rather minimizes its use in the N. T. Many of the examples do come from the 0. T. (LXX) legal language. Certainly in the LXX the fut. ind. often replaces the imperative under the influence of the Hebrew (Thackeray, Gr., p. 194). But examples occur where the two are equivalent. Cf. ἀγαπήσεις in Mt. 5:43, with ἀγαπάτε in 5:44, ἔρειτε in Mt. 21:3, with ἐπατε in Mk. 11:3. Some MSS. have ἔστω rather than gurat in Mt. 20:26.

(b) The Subjunctive. The volitive subjunctive is quite to the point. In the first person this use of the subj. held its own always in lieu of the imperative. It is needless to repeat the discussion of this matter (see Subjunctive in this chapter). The use of ὑπα with the subj. in an imperatival sense is seen Mk. 5:23 (6:25), Eph. 5:33 is there discussed also. Cf. Tit. 2:4. Let μὴ σχίσωμεν αὐτόν, ἀλλὰ λάχωμεν, (Jo. 19:24) serve as an example. So in the second person the aorist subj. held its place in prohibitions past κοινή times to the practical exclusion of the aor. imper. with μὴ. The two constructions existed in the κοινή side by side with the third person. Thus μὴ γυνώτω (Mt. 6:3) and μὴ τίς ἔξουθενήσῃ (1 Cor. 16:11). Cf. δός and μὴ ἀποστραφῆς in Mt. 5:42. The final triumph of the subj. over the imperative (save in the second person) has been shown. Cf. the fate of the opt. before the subj.

(c) The Optative. There is only one example, μηκέτι μηδεῖς φάγοι (Mk. 11:14) in the N. T. The distinction between a curse and a prohibition is not very great. The parallel passage in Mt. 21:19 has οὐ μηκέτι ἐκ σοῦ καρπῆς γένηται (volitive subj.).

(d) The Infinitive. The idiom is very frequent in Homer. It occurs chiefly after an imperative. The command is carried on by the infinitive. There is no need for surprise in this construction, since the probability is that imperative forms like δεῖα (like the Latin legimini, Homeric λεγέ-μεναι) are infinitive in origin. It is true that the accent of the editors for the aorist active optative is different from the aorist active inf. in forms like κατευθύναι, περισσεύσαι (1 Th. 3:11 f.), but the MSS. had no accent. We could properly print the infinitive if we wished. So as to παρακαλέσαι (2 Th. 2:17) where the accent is the same for both infinitive and optative (the imper. form aor. mid. sec. singl. is παρακά-λεσαι). Cf. βάπτισαι and βαπτίσαι, one and the same form. The idiom is less frequent in the Attic outside of laws and maxims.

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 179.
2 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 162.
3 Giles, Man., p. 468.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 179.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 222.
but happens to be the one infinitive construction that is alive in the Pontic dialect to-day.\(^1\) Moulton\(^2\) expresses surprise at the rarity of this use of the inf. in the N. T., since it is common in the papyri. Cf. ἔξειναι, μισθῶσαι, A. P. 86 (1/A.D.). Moulton (Prol., p. 248) notes that Burkitt (Evang. da-Mepharr. ii, 252 f.) reads ταῦτα δὲ ποιήσαι κακεὶνα μὴ ἀφεῖναι in Mt. 23:23. Blass\(^3\) notes also a revival of the simple inf. or the accusative and infinitive in the later language in legal phraseology. He explains the idiom as an ellipsis, but Moulton is undoubtedly correct in rejecting this theory. There is no need of a verb of command understood in view of the etymology of a form like βάπτισαι. The use of χαίρειν as greeting in epistles (with the nominative) is explained in the same way. Cf. Ac. 15 23; 23:26; Jas. 1:1. It is the absolute use of the infinitive as often. It is very common in the papyri, as Πολυκράτης τωὶ πατρὶ χαίρειν, P. Petr. II, xi, 1 (iii/B.C.). So Moulton (Prol., p. 180) denies the necessity of the ellipsis of a verb of command. In Ro. 12:15 χαίρειν and κλαίειν are clearly parallel with εὐλογεῖτε καὶ μὴ καταρᾶσθε. So in Ph. 3:16 στοιχεῖν is to be compared with the hortatory φρονώμεν. Blass\(^4\) needlessly wishes to emend the text in 2 Tim. 2:14, so as not to read μὴ λογομαχεῖν. This use of the inf. occurs also in Tit. 2:9.

We probably have the same construction in μὴ σουναμίγνυσθαι (2 Th. 3:14), though it may be explained as purpose. In 1 Cor. 5:12 κρίνειν is the subject inf. In Lu. 9:3 after εἶπεν the quotation begins with Μηδὲν αὕρετε and is changed to μήτε ἔχειν (indirect command). In Mk. 6:8 f. both forms are indirect (one with ἵνα μηδέν αἰρωσίν—the other with μὴ ἐνδύσασθαι). The marg. in W.H. has μὴ ἐνδύσησθε. The MSS. often vary between the middle inf. and imper. or subj. Winer\(^5\) thinks that expositors have been unduly anxious to find this use of the infinitive in the N. T. But it is there. See further chapter XX, Verbal Nouns.

(c) The Participle. Winer\(^6\) found much difficulty in the absolute use of the participle in the N. T. The so-called genitive absolute is common enough and the participle in indirect discourse representing a finite verb. It would seem but a simple step to use the participle, like the infinitive, in an independent sentence without direct dependence on a verb. Winer admits that Greek prose writers have this construction, though "seldom." He ex-

---

2 Prol., p. 179 f.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 222.
4 Ib.
5 W.-Th., p. 316.
6 Ib., pp. 350 ff.
plains it on the ground of ellipsis of the copula as is so common with adjectives (cf. Mt. 5:3-11). He passes the poets by (often the truest index of the vernacular) and admits "the Byzantine use of participles simply for finite verbs." T. S. Green\(^1\) says: "The absolute use of the participle as an imperative is a marked feature of the language of the N. T." He explains it as an "Aramaism." To this W. F. Moulton\(^2\) expresses surprise and admits only "the participial anacoluthon," which, by the way, is very much the same thing. But J. H. Moulton\(^3\) has found a number of examples in the papyri where the participle is fairly common for the indicative. The instances in the papyro of the participle in the sense of the imperative are not numerous, but one of them seems very clear. Thus Tb. 59 (i/B.c.) \(\text{ἐν ὁῑς αὐ̄τ̄ ἐπορ̄δε̄ν̄σθε̄ μο̄ι ἐπιτάσ̄σσοντ̄ε̄ς μο̄ι προ̄θμο̄στ̄ε̄ρ̄ον.}\) It is preceded by a genitive absolute. Moulton gives another equally so: G. 35 (i/B.C.) \(\text{ἐπιμε̄λ̄ό̄με̄νο̄ι ἥ̄ν̄ ὑγιά̄σ̄τ̄ε̄.}\) Moulton\(^4\) cites also the Latin form \(\text{sequimini} (= \text{ἐπό̄με̄νο̄ι})\) for the second middle plural present indicative. The similar looking form \(\text{sequimini}\) imperative has an infinitive origin, as already shown. See chapter XX, Verbal Nouns, for other examples and further discussion. On the whole, therefore, we must admit that there is no reason \(\text{per se}\) why the N. T. writers should not use the participle in lieu of the imperative. It is, of course, a loose construction, as ellipsis is and anacoluthon is, but it is not the mark of an uneducated person. In the papyrus example (Tb. 59) given above Grenfell and Hunt call the writer "an official of some importance." Moulton\(^5\) also translates Thumb\(^6\) concerning the "hanging nominative" (common in classical and \(\text{κού̄μ̄η}\) Greek) as saying that the usage "is the precursor of the process which ends in modern Greek with the disappearance of the old participial construction, only an absolute form in \(\text{—ο̄ντᾱς}\) being left." In the ellipsis of the copula it is not always clear whether the indicative or the imperative is to be supplied. Cf. \(\text{ἐῡλο̄γη̄τ̄ο̄ς ὁ θε̄ο̄ς} (2 \text{Cor. 1:3}).\) Shall we supply \(\text{ἐστῑν} \text{or ἡ̄τ̄ω (ἐστ̄ω)}\) as we have it in 1 Cor. 16:22? In a case like 1 Pet. 3:8 f. it is plain that the unexpressed \(\text{ἐστ̄ε} \) would be imperative, but Moulton notes the curious fact that \(\text{ἐστ̄ε} \) (imperative) does not appear in the N. T. at all, though we have \(\text{ἐστ̄ω} \) five times, \(\text{ἐστ̄ω} \text{or ἡ̄τ̄ω} \) fourteen, and \(\text{ἐστ̄ωσ̄ᾱν} \) twice.\(^7\) There are in-\(^1\) Gr., p. 180. \(^2\) Prol., p. 223. \(^5\) Ib., p. 225. \(^3\) W.-Moulton, p. 732, n. 5. \(^4\) Ib. \(^6\) Hellen., p. 131. \(^7\) Mr. H. Scott notes the absence of \(\text{ἐστ̄ε} \) in the H. R. Conc. of the LXX, in Veitch, in Kuhn̄er-Bl., Mayser, Helbing, Thackeray. In Goodspeed’s
stances more or less doubtful, as ἐπιρήψαντες (1 Pet. 5:7), which is naturally taken with ταπεινώθητε as Moulton¹ now admits. He evidently reacted too strongly against Winer. This use of the participle should not be appealed to if the principal verb is present in the immediate context. Sometimes it is a matter of punctuation as in Lu. 24:47, where W. H. give in the margin ἀρέξάμενοι ἀπὸ Ἰερουσαλήμ ὑμεῖς μάρτυρες τούτων, instead of Ἰερουσαλήμ· ὑμεῖς. The marginal punctuation takes the participle as an imperative. The MSS. sometimes vary, as when ΥC give ἐνδείκαστε in 2 Cor. 8:24, while B, etc., have ἐνδεικνύεις. But a number of unmistakable examples appear both in Paul and Peter, though "Paul was not so fond of this construction as his brother apostle."² Thus ἔχοντες (1 Pet. 2:12) must be so explained or taken as anacoluthon (cf. ἀπέχεσθαι). So ὑποτασσόμενοι (1 Pet. 2:18; 3:1) reminds one of Eph. 5:22, an "echo" according to Moulton. Other examples occur in 1 Pet. 3:7, 9, possibly 16 also; 4:8 ff. Besides ἄνεχόμενοι and σπουδάζοντες (Eph. 4:2 f.) and ὑποτασσόμενοι (5:2) in Paul the most outstanding example is in Ro. 12:9 f., 16 f. These participles occur in the midst of imperatives or infinitives as imperatives (12:15). The asyndeton makes it impossible to connect with any verb. In verse 6 ἐχοντες appears as a practical indicative. Moulton⁴ adds to these 2 Cor. 9:11 f. and Col. 3:16. See also Heb. 13:5. But Lightfoot⁵ put in a word of caution when he said: "The absolute participle, being (so far as regards mood) neutral in itself, takes its colour from the general complexion of the sentence." The participle is not technically either indicative, subjunctive, optative or imperative. The context must decide. In itself the participle is non-finite (non-modal) like the infinitive, though it was sometimes drawn out into the modal sphere.

5. USES OF THE IMPERATIVE.

(a) Command or Exhortation. In general the imperative keeps within the same limits observed in the classical language, but that is not a narrow groove.⁶ It is the mood of the assertion of one's will over another or the call of one to exert his will. Thus

Index Pat. he finds it only in 1 Clem. 45:1, and the accent is doubtful here. He finds it also in Test. XII Pat. Reub. 6:1. It could have been used in Napht. 3:2 and in Ign. Eph. 10:2.

¹ Prol., p. 181, against his former view in Expositor, VI, x. 450.
² Ib.
³ Ib.⁵ On Col. 3:16 f.
⁴ Ib.⁶ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 221.
(b) *Prohibition.* This is just a negative command and differs in no respect save the presence of the negative μη. Thus μη κρίνετε (Mt. 7:1), μη φοβεῖσθε (Jo. 6:20). Often the presence of the imperative in the midst of indicatives is shown by μη as in μη πλανάσθε (1 Cor. 6:9). We do, indeed, have a with the imperative in marked contrast, where the force of the negative is given to that rather than to the mode. Thus in 1 Pet. 3:3, ἐστω οὐ ὁ —κόσμος, ἀλλ’ ὁ κρυπτὸς τῆς καρδίας ἄνθρωπος. The same explanation applies to οὐ μόνον—ἀλλά καί in 1 Pet. 2:18, but μη μόνον is regular in Jas. 1:22, etc., because of γίνεσθε understood. In cases of contrast with οὐ—ἀλλά (with participles and imperatives) the reason for οὐ is thus apparent (H. Scott). In Mt. 5:37 οὗ οὐ (like νοὶ ναι) is the predicate (like a substantive), not the negative of ἐστω. In 2 Tim. 2:14 ἐπ’ οὐδὲν χρῆσιμον (a parenthetical expression of μη λογομαχεῖν used as an imperative), the negative goes specifically with the single word χρῆσιμον. Cf. also 1 Cor. 5:10. The upshot is that μη remains the negative of the imperative. Cf. μη μοι κόπους πάρεξε (Lu. 11:7).

(c) *Entreaty.* A command easily shades off into petition in certain circumstances. The tone of the demand is softened to pleading. Moulton notes that the imperative has a decided tone about it. "The grammarian Hermogenes asserted harshness to be a feature of the imperative; and the sophist Protagoras even blamed Homer for addressing the Muse at the beginning of the Iliad with an imperative." The N. T. shows a sharp departure in the use of the imperative in petitions (rare in the older Greek and in the κοινή). The prophet pleads with the imperative, not with potential optative or future indicative. Jesus spoke with authority and not as the scribes. "Moreover, even in the language of prayer the imperative is at home, and that in its most urgent form, the aorist. Gildersleeve observes (on Justin Martyr, p. 137), 'As in the Lord's Prayer, so in the ancient Greek liturgies the aorist imper. is almost exclusively used. It is the..."
true term for instant prayer."¹ Gildersleeve² denies that the N. T. shows "the absolute indifference that some scholars have considered to be characteristic of Hellenistic Greek" in the use of the imperative. He credits Mr. Mozley with the observation that "the aorist imperative is regularly used in biblical Greek when the deity is addressed; and following out this generalization Herr Krieckers, a pupil of Thumb's, has made a statistical study of the occurrences of the two tenses in Homer, Hesiod, Sappho, YEschylus, Sophocles, Euripides, Aristophanes, with the result that in prayers addressed by men to men both present and aorist are often used, whereas in prayers addressed by men to gods the aorist largely predominates." Examples³ of the imperative in petitions appear in Mk. 9:22, βοήθησον ἡμῖν (Lu. 17:5) πρόσθες ἡμῖν πίστιν, (Jo. 17:11) τήρησον αὐτούς ἐν τῷ ὄνοματί σου.

(d) Permission. All this is in strict line with the ancient Greek.⁴ A good illustration is seen in Mt. 26:45, καθευδάτε λοιπὸν καὶ ἀναπαύσεσθε. This is not a question nor necessarily irony. It is too late to do Christ any good by keeping awake. He withdraws his plea for watchfulness. There is irony in πληρώσατε (Mt. 23:32), though it is the permissive use of the imperative. The note of permission is struck in ἔλθατω and ἐπιστραφήτω (Mt. 10:13). Cf. the fut. ind. in Lu. 10:6. See further χωρίζεσθω (1 Cor. 7:15); ἀγνοεῖτω (14:38, W. H. marg.). In 2 Cor. 12:16 ἔστω δὲ is like our 'Let it be so' or 'Granted.' In Mt. 8:31 ἀπόστειλον is entreaty, ὑπάγετε (32) is permissive. In 1 Cor. 11:6 κειράσθω is probably hortatory.

(e) Concession or Condition. It is an easy step from permission to concession. This also is classical.⁵ Take Jo. 2:19, λύσατε τῶν ναὸν τοῦτον, καὶ ἐν τρισίν ἡμέραις ἐγερῶ αὐτόν. This is much the same as ἐὰν λύσητε. It is not a strict command. We have parataxis with καὶ, but it is equivalent in idea to hypotaxis with ἐὰν. So with ἀντίστητε τῷ διαβόλῳ, καὶ φεύξεται ἄφι ὑμῶν (Jas. 4:7 f.); ἀνάστα ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν (LXX), καὶ ἐπιφανεῖσθαι σοι ὁ Χριστός (Eph. 5:14). See also μὴ κρίνετε, καὶ οὐ μὴ κρίθητε· καὶ μὴ καταδικάσητε, καὶ οὐ μὴ καταδικασθῆτε· ἀπολύστε, καὶ ἀπολυθήσεσθε· δίδοτε, καὶ δοθήσεται ὑμῖν (Lu. 6:37 f.). Then again μακροθυμήσων ἔπ έμοί, καὶ πάντα ἀποδώσω

¹ Moulton, Prol., p. 173.
σοι (Mt. 18:26). So also τοῦτο ποιεῖ καὶ ζήσῃ (Lu. 10:28); ἔρχεσθε καὶ δύνεσθε (Jo. 1:39). Cf. δεῦτε καὶ ποιήσω (Mt. 4:19). Sometimes two imperatives are connected by καὶ when the first suggests concession. Thus Eph. 4:26, ὁριζεσθε καὶ μή ἀμαρτάνετε. So also ἐραύνησον καὶ ὤδε (Jo. 7:52). Cf. ἔρχου καὶ ὤδε (Jo. 1:46). This seems simple enough.

(f) In Asyndeton. It is a regular classic idiom to have ἀγε, φέρε with another imperative. Ἡγε with κλαύσατε (Jas. 5:1) is an interjection like δεῦρο ἀκολουθεῖ μοι (Mt. 19:21) and δεῦτε ἱδετε (Mt. 28:6). See also Jo. 4:29; 21:12; Rev. 19:17. More common is ὑπαγε and ὑπάγετε with another imperative. So ὑπαγε πρῶτον διαλλάγηθι (Mt. 5:24); ὑπάγετε ἀπαγείλατε (28:10). See further Mt. 8:4; 18:15; 21:28; 27:65; Mk. 1:44; 6:38, etc. In Mt. 16:6 we have ὁράτε καὶ προσέχετε. Cf. also Lu. 12:15. But asyndeton occurs in Mt. 24:6, ὁράτε μή θροείσθε. So ὁράτε βλέπετε (Mk. 8:15). In Mt. 9:30 the persons and numbers are different, ὁράτε μηδείς γινωσκέτω. In Rev. 19:10, ὃρα μή, the verb with μή is not expressed. For ὃρα ποιήσεις see also Heb. 8:5 (LXX). The simplest form of asyndeton is seen in Ph. 3:2, βλέπετε, βλέπετε, βλέπετε.

(g) In Subordinate Clauses. The reason for treating this subject here is that it is so rare that one may not catch it in the discussion of subordinate clauses. It is well established, though rare, in Demosthenes, Lysias, Plato, Thucydides and the tragic poets. The case of ὄστε at the beginning of a clause is not pertinent, for there it is a mere inferential conjunction, as, for instance, 1 Cor. 3:21, ὅστε μηδείς καυχάσθω. Here ὄστε is not a hypotactic conjunction. Neither is the recitative ὅτι, in point, as in 2 Th. 3:10, τοῦτο παρηγγέλλομεν υἱῶν, ὅτι εἰ τίς οὐ θέλει ἐργάζεσθαι, μηδὲ ἐστίν. In 1 Cor. 1:31 there is probably an ellipsis of γένηται after ὅνα, and the imperative καυχάσθω is in the direct quotation after γέγραπται. In 1 Pet. 1:6, ἐν ὃ ἄγαλλιάσθε (probably imperative), W. H. begin a new sentence, but ὃ points back directly to καιρῷ as its antecedent. The same situation occurs in 1 Pet. 3:3 with ὅν άστω. In both examples the imperative appears with the relative. Two other instances of this construction are found in 1 Peter (a peculiarity of this Epistle). They are ὃ άντίστηται (5:9) and εἰς ἥν στήτε (5:12). We see it also in Heb. 13:7, ὃν—μηδείς, and in 2 Tim. 4:15, ὃν καὶ σὺ φυλάσσου. Cf. 0. P. 1125, 19 (ii/A.D.), ὃν θέμα καθαρόν ἀπὸ πάντων ἀναδότω.

2 ib., p. 167.
\( \Delta \iota \) at the beginning of the sentence was hardly felt as a relative (inferential particle), but see 1 Cor. 14:13, \( \delta \iota \ \pi \rho \sigma \varepsilon \upsilon \chi \acute{e} \sigma \theta \omega \).

(h) The Tenses. This matter received adequate discussion under Tenses. It may simply be noted here that in positive sentences the aorist imperative is naturally common, especially frequent in the N. T. Cf. \( \varepsilon \iota \sigma \varepsilon \lambda \theta \varepsilon \pi \rho \sigma \varepsilon \upsilon \zeta \alpha \iota \) (Mt. 6:6). The distinction between the present and the aorist is well seen in \( \delta \rho \nu \tau \omicron \nu \kappa \rho \alpha \beta \alpha \tau \tau \omicron \nu \varsigma \omicron \upsilon \kappa \alpha \iota \pi \rho \iota \sigma \tau \alpha \nu \tau \epsilon \iota \) (Jo. 5:8). See also Jo. 2:16 and Ac. 12:8. As an example of the periphrastic present note \( \gamma \sigma \theta \iota \ \varepsilon \chi \omega \nu \) (Lu. 19:17). The perfect is almost non-existent, but note \( \pi \varepsilon \phi \iota \mu \omega \sigma \omicron \) (Mk. 4:39). The present imper. second person alone occurs in prohibitions which are forbidden as in course of action or as a present fact (‘quit doing it’). Cf. Ro. 6:13 for sharp differences in idea between \( \mu \eta \ \pi \alpha \rho \iota \sigma \tau \alpha \nu \epsilon \tau \epsilon \) (course of action) and \( \pi \rho \alpha \sigma \tau \tau \tau \sigma \iota \pi \varepsilon \alpha \tau \epsilon \) (at once and for all). In the third person a prohibition may be either in the aorist imperative or the aorist subj. See the subj. mode for further remarks concerning the failure of the second person imperative aorist in prohibitions.

(i) In Indirect Discourse. This subject will receive adequate treatment under this head (see below). All that is attempted here is to indicate that, when the imperative is not quoted directly (cf. 2 Th. 3:10), it may be expressed in an indirect command either by the infinitive (cf. \( \lambda \epsilon \gamma \omicron \nu \ \mu \eta \ \pi \rho \iota \tau \epsilon \mu \nu \epsilon \iota \mu \mu \eta \delta \epsilon \pi \rho \iota \sigma \tau \alpha \nu \tau \epsilon \iota \) in Ac. 21:21) or by a conjunction like \( \iota \iota \) as in Mk. 6:8, or thrown into a deliberative question as in \( \upsilon \rho \omicron \delta \epsilon \iota \xi \omega \ \tau \omicron \alpha \ \phi \omicron \beta \eta \eta \epsilon \omicron \tau \epsilon \) (Lu. 12:5):

B. DEPENDENT OR HYPOTACTIC SENTENCES (\( \Pi \Pi \O O \T T A \K K I K K A \) 'A\( \Xi \I \O O M M A \)A)

Introductory.

(a) Use of Modes in Subordinate Sentences. There is no essential difference in the meaning of the modes in subordinate clauses from the significance in independent sentences. The division is not made on the basis of the modes at all. Leaving out the imperative because of its rarity in subordinate sentences, the other three modes occur in almost all the subordinate clauses. The same mode-ideas are to be sought here as there. The subordinate clauses make no change in the meaning of mode, voice or tense. Burton does say: "Others, however, give to the mood or

2 Gildersl., Synt., Pt. I, p. 164. See also Thompson, Synt., p. 190 f.
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 81.
tense a force different from that which they usually have in principal clauses. Hence arises the necessity for special treatment of the moods and tenses in subordinate clauses." I cannot agree to this as the reason for the separate treatment. Sometimes in indirect discourse after secondary tenses there may be a sequence of modes (true also in ancient Greek with final clauses after secondary tenses), but that is so slight a matter that it bears no sort of proportion to the subordinate clauses as a whole. Gildersleeve (A. J. of Phil., XXXIII, 4, p. 489) regards the subordinate sentence as "the Ararat in the flood of change" and parataxis and hypotaxis as largely a matter of style. Some of the modal uses have survived better in the subordinate clauses, as, for instance, the futuristic aorist subj. (cf. ὀστίς ἀρνήσται in Mt. 10:33), but the subordinate clause did not create the idiom. Originally there were no subordinate sentences.1 "In dependent, clauses the choice of the mood is determined by the nature of each individual case"2 as is true also of independent sentences. The qualification made above about the sequence of modes was always optional and is absent from the N. T. except a few examples in Luke. The great wealth of subordinate clauses in Greek with various nuances demand separate discussion. But we approach the matter with views of the modes already attained.

(b) The Use of Conjunctions in Subordinate Clauses. In chapter XXI, Particles, full space will be given to the conjunctions (co-ordinating, disjunctive, inferential, subordinating). Here it is only pertinent to note the large part played in the Greek language by the subordinating conjunctions. It must be admitted that the line of cleavage is not absolute. The paratactic conjunctions were first on the field.3 Popular speech has always had a fondness for parataxis.4 In the modern Greek vernacular "the propensity for parataxis has considerably reduced the ancient Greek wealth of dependent constructions" (Thumb, Handb., p. 185). Hence long periods are rare. So the Hebrew used, both as paratactic and hypothetic. In the Greek καὶ we see a partial parallel.5 In Mt. 26:15, τί θέλετέ μοι δοῦναι καγὼ ὑμῖν παραδώσω, the καὶ is almost equivalent to ἐὰν. So often in Luke, as in 9:51, ἐγένετο δὲ-καὶ, the καὶ clause is (like ὅτι) the logical subject of ἐγένετο. The common use of the recitative ὅτι illustrates well the close connection between subordinate and independent sentences. The ὅτι shows

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 552.  
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 552.  
that the clause is the object of the preceding verb, but the clause is preserved in the direct (co-ordinate) form. Cf. λέγετε ὅτι βλασφημεῖς (Jo. 10:36). Thus again a subordinate clause may be so loosely connected with the principal clause as to be virtually independent. 1 Thus the relative, as in Latin, often introduces a principal sentence, a paragraph, forsooth, as ἐν ὦς (Lu. 12:1) and ἀνθ' ὅν (12:3). But, on the whole, we can draw a pretty clear line between the independent and the dependent clause by means of the conjunctions. The case of asyndeton, treated elsewhere (cf. The Sentence), concerns chiefly parataxis, but some examples occur in hypotaxis, as in καὶ ἐγένετο—ἐπένευ τις (Lu. 11:1) where the ἐπένευ clause is the logical subject of ἐγένετο.

(c) Logical Varieties of Subordinate Clauses. Each subordinate clause sustains a syntactical relation to the principal clause after the analogy of the case-relations. The normal complete sentence has subject, predicate, object. Each of these may receive further amplification (see chapter X, The Sentence). The predicate may have a substantive (as subject or object). This substantive may be described by an adjective. An adverb may be used with predicate, adjective or substantive. Thus the sentence is built up around the predicate. In the same way each subordinate sentence is either a substantive (subject or object like an ὅτι clause), an adjective like ὅστις or an adverb like ὃποι. This is therefore a point to note about each subordinate clause in order to get its exact syntactical relation to the principal clause. It may be related to the predicate as subject or object, or to the subject or object as adjective, or to either as adverb. A relative clause may be now substantive, now adjective and now adverb. In simple truth most of the conjunctions have their origin as relative or demonstrative pronouns. In Kühner-Gerth2 the subordinate clauses are all discussed from this standpoint alone. Thumb (Handb., pp. 186 ff.) follows this plan. One questions the wisdom of this method, though in itself scientific enough. Burton3 has carefully worked out all the subordinate clauses from this standpoint, though he does not adopt it. Then, again, one may divide these clauses according to their form or their meaning. 4 Viteau5 combines both ideas and the result is rather confusion than clarification. There may be a series of subordinate clauses, one dependent on the other. So in 1 Cor.

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 194. 3 N. T. M. and T., p. 82.
5 Le Verbe: Syntaxe des Propositions, pp. 41-144.
1:14, εὐχαριστῶ ὅτι οὐδένα ὑμῶν ἐβάπτισα εἰ μη Ἰρίσποι καὶ Γαῖον; ἵνα μη τις ἐπὶ ὅτι εἰς τὸ ἐμὸν ὄνομα ἐβαπτίσθητε. See also Mk. 6:55 and section 10 in this chapter. The infinitive and the participle are used also in subordinate clauses, but they do not directly concern the problem of the modes save in indirect discourse. They are so important and partake of the functions of both noun and verb to such an extent that they demand a separate chapter—XX.

1. RELATIVE SENTENCES.
(a) Relative Sentences Originally Paratactic. The relative ὁς, as is well known, was first an anaphoric substantive pronoun. At first the relative clause was paratactic, a principal sentence like the other. Cf. ὁς γὰρ in Homer, where ὁς may be taken as demonstrative or relative. In its simplest form the relative was unnecessary and was not even a connective. It was just a repetition of the substantive. "The relative force arises where ὁς (and its congener) connects and complements." Indeed, the relative sentence is probably the oldest form of parataxis. It is only by degrees that the relative clause came to be regarded as a subordinate clause. As a matter of fact, that was not always the case, as has been seen in such examples as ἐν όις, ἀντὶ ὑν (Lu. 12:1, 3). But it is not true that this subordination is due to the use of the subjunctive mode. The effect of case-assimilation (cf. gender and number) and of incorporation of the antecedent was to link the relative clause very close to the principal sentence. Cf. Heb. 13:11.

(b) Most Subordinate Clauses Relative in Origin. This is true not merely of ὅτι and ὅτε which are accusative forms of ὁ, but also of other adverbs, like the ablative ὑς, ὁπως, ἐς. These subordinating conjunctions therefore are mostly of relative origin."

Cf. ἵνα, ὧποτε and perhaps εἰ. Πρίν, ἐπεί, ἠχρι, μέχρι are not relative.

Thus the subordinate clauses overlap. Burton,¹ indeed, includes ἐως under relative sentences. That is not necessary, since thus nearly all the subordinate clauses would properly be treated as relative sentences. See the relative origin of various conjunctions well worked out by Schmitt,² Weber³ and Christ.⁴ These clauses are mainly adverbial, though objective (and subject-clause also) ὅτι (indirect discourse) is substantive simply. The word ὃς occurs in Homer with the three values of demonstrative, relative and conjunction (cf. English "that").⁵ But here we pass by these conjunctions from relative or demonstrative roots.⁶ The relative pronoun alone, apart from the adverbial uses, introduces the most frequent subordinate clause, probably almost equal in some authors to all the other classes put together. In 1 Peter the relative construction is very common. Cf. 1 Pet. 1:6-12; 2:21-24.

At any rate it is the chief means of periodic structure.⁷ Take as an instance the period in Ac. 1:1-2. Note ὧν, ἠχρι ἢς ἡμέρας, οὖς, ὁς, all the subordinate clauses in the sentence except infinitive and participles. See also 1 Cor. 15:1-2, where four relatives occur and τίνι λόγῳ is almost like a relative. Cf. further Ro. 9:4 f. The relative sentence may be repeated indefinitely with or without καί.

(c) Relative Clauses Usually Adjectival. They are so classed by Kuhner-Gerth.⁸ The descriptive use followed the original substantive idiom just as the relative itself was preceded by the demonstrative. Thus the use of the relative clause as subject or object like ὅ and the participle is perfectly consistent. So ὃς ὧν ἐμὴ δέξηται δέχεται τῶν ἀποστειλαντα με (Lu. 9:48). Cf. also Mk. 9:37; Ac. 16:12. The descriptive character of the relative clause is well shown in τὴν μάχαιραν τοῦ πνεύματος ὃ ἔστιν ῥήμα θεοῦ (Eph. 6:17). Cf. ὃς in 1 Tim. 3:16. The adjectival use of the relative sentence is accented by the use of the article with it in Ro. 16:17, σκοπεῖν τοὺς τάς διχοστασίας καὶ τά σκάνδαλα παρὰ τὴν διδαχὴν ἢν ὑμεῖς ἐμάθετε ποιοῦντας. Here the relative clause is adjectival, but in itself a mere incident between τοὺς and ποιοῦντας.

¹ N. T. M. and T., pp. 126
² Ober den Ursprung des Substantivsatzes mit Relativpartik. im Griech.
³ Entwickelungsgesch. der Absichtsätze.
⁴ Der Substantivis. und das Rel. ὃς.
⁵ Baron, Le Pronom Rel. et la Conjonction en Grec, p. 130.
⁸ Bd. II, pp. 420 ff.
The clause is simply adjectival with παρὰς ὁς in Lu. 12:8. That comes to be its most usual character. So with δὴ ἦς is in Heb. 12:28.

(d) Modes in Relative Sentences. There is nothing in the relative pronoun or the construction of the clause per se to have any effect on the use of the mode.¹ The relative, as a matter of fact, has no construction of its own.² In general in dependent clauses the choice of the mode is determined by the nature of the individual case.³ Outside of relative clauses the choice in the N. T. is practically confined to the indicative and the subjunctive. The optative holds on in one or two examples. With the relative some examples of the imperative occur, as has already been shown. Cf. 1 Cor. 14:13; Tit. 1:13; 2 Tim. 4:15; 1 Pet. 5:9; Heb. 13:7. Cf. ὅθεν κατανοήσατε (Heb. 3:1). But the mode is not due at all to the relative. In a word, the relative occurs with all the constructions possible to an independent sentence.⁴ The indicative is, of course, the natural mood to use if one wishes to make a direct and clear-cut assertion. Thus οὐδεὶς ἐστὶν ὃς ἀφήκεν τὴν ὀίκιαν (Mk. 10:29). Cf. Jo. 10:12. The various uses of the subjunctive occur with the relative. The deliberative subj. is seen in ποῦ ἐστὶν τὸ κατάλυμα μου ὅπου τὸ πάσχα μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν μου φάγω; (Mk. 14:14; Lu. 22:11).⁵ Prof. Earle, in a fine paper on "The Subj. of Purpose in Relative Clauses in Greek" (Class. Papers, 1912, pp. 213 ff.) shows how Xenophon, Soph., Eurip., Plato and other Attic writers use the idiom. Cf. Xen., Anab., II, 4, 20, οὐχ ἐξουσιών ἐκείνοι ὅποι φύγωσιν. See also Tarbell, Class. Review, July, 1892, "The Deliberative Subj. in Relative Clauses in Greek." The subj. may be volitive as in Ac. 21:16, ἀγοντες παρ' ὑς εξενισθώμεν Μνᾶσσων τινι, and in Heb. 8:3, ὅθεν ἀναγκαῖον ἐχειν τι καὶ τούτον ὁ προσενέγκῃ (cf. ὁ προσφέρει in Heb. 9:7). In Heb. 12:28, δὲ ἦς λατρεύωμεν, the subj. may be conceived as either volitive (hortatory) or merely futuristic, more probably volitive like ἐχωμεν. Clearly futuristic is the subj. in Mt. 16:28, οἴτινες οὗ μὴ γεύσωμαι θεανάτου. These examples appear isolated. Cf. subj. with ὡστε (not relative) as in 1 Cor 5:8, ὡστε ἐορτάζωμεν (deliberative). But the futuristic subj., so rare in the independent sentence after Homer, is very common in the relative clause with

¹ See, per contra, Baron, Le Pronom Rel. et la Conjonction en Grec, pp. 61
² Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 189.
⁵ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 217, explains this subj. as due to a "final meaning." D in Mk. reads φάγομαι.
and sometimes without ἀν. It is not the ἀν that determines the subj., but the subj. usually has ἀν. Thus δὲ γὰρ ἐὰν θέλῃ and δὲ δ’ ἀν ἀπολέσῃ Rec. (Mk. 8:35). Cf. ὅστις τηρήσῃ (Jas. 2:10), though AKLP read τηρήσει (itacism). Cf. Mt. 10:33 and 38. In such relative sentences the future indicative is also very common, the two forms being closely allied in form and sense. Cf. δὲ ἀν ὁμολογήσει (Lu. 12:8). See also ὅστις ὁμολογήσει and ὅστις ἀρνήσηται (Mt. 10:32 f.).

(e) Definite and Indefinite Relative Sentences. Goodwin has made popular the custom of calling some relative sentences "conditional relatives." He has been followed by Burton. Jannaris considers conditional relative clauses "virtually condensed clauses capable of being changed into conditional protases." Almost any sentence is capable of being changed into some other form as a practical equivalent. The relative clause may indeed have the resultant effect of cause, condition, purpose or result, but in itself it expresses none of these things. It is like the participle in this respect. One must not read into it more than is there. Cf. δὲ ἔχει ὑπα (Mk. 4:9) and ἐχεῖν ὑπα (Mt. 13:9). Cf. εἴ τις in Mk. 4:23. One might as well say that ὁ λαμβάνων (Jo. 13:20) is the same thing as δὲ λαμβάνει (cf. Mt. 10:38). There is a change from participle to relative clause in Mt. 10:37 f., 41 f. Cf. Mt. 12:30, 32; Lu. 9:50. So then ἄν τινα πέμψω (Jo. 13:20) is a conditional clause. It is true that ὃν τινα does not occur in the N. T., but εἰ τίς and ὅστις differ in conception after all, though the point is a fine one. The MSS. sometimes vary between εἰ τίς and ὅστις as we see in Mk. 8:34; 1 Cor. 7:13. In Jo. 14:13 f. note ὅτι ἄν αἰτήσῃ and ἐὰν τι αἰτήσῃ. Note the distinction between ὁ κεχάρισμαι and εἰ τι κεχάρισμαι, in 2 Cor. 2:10. In Mk. 8:34 f. note εἴ τις θέλει — δὲ ἐὰν θέλῃ. What is true is that the relative sentences are either definite or indefinite. It is not a question of mode nor of the use of ἀν, but merely whether the relative describes a definite antecedent or is used in an indefinite sense. The definite relative is well illustrated by 2 Th. 3:3, πιστὸς δὲ ἐστιν ὁ κύριος ὅς στηρίζει, or Mk. 1:2, τῶν ἀγγελόν μου δὲ κατασκευάζει τὴν ὀδόν μου. So also χάριν δι’ ἃς λατρεύωμεν (Heb. 12:28). Cf. ὁ προσευχήκη (Heb. 8:3). But indefinite is δὲ ἔχει, δοθήσεται αὐτῷ (Mk. 4:25). In the same verse καὶ δὲ οὐκ ἔχει is indefinite, but καὶ δὲ ἔχει is definite. Indefinite also is ὅσοι Ἰησοῦ (Mt. 14:36) and

1 Moods and Tenses, p. 197.
2 N. T. M. and T., p. 119.
4 Cf. Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 169.
So also with πᾶς ὁ ἐρεῖ (Lu. 12:10) and πᾶς ὁ ὄνομολογήσει (12:8). Cf. ὁ ἐσται (17:31) with ὁ ἐὰν ζητήσῃ (17:33) and ὁ δὲ ἄν απολέσει. Cf. Ac. 7:3, 7; Gal. 5:17.

That it is not a question of mode is thus clear. Cf. ὁ ἐὰν θέλῃ with ὁ ἄν απολέσει (Mk. 8:35). Thus note in Mk. 4:25 ὁ γὰρ ἔχει δοθήσεται αὐτῷ, but in Lu. 8:18 ὁ δὲν γὰρ ἔχη δοθήσεται αὐτῷ.¹ So in Lu. 12:8 we have πᾶς ὁ ὄνομολογήσει ἐν ἔμοι, but in Mt. 10:32 πᾶς ὁ στίς ὄμολογήσει ἐν ἔμοι. The use of ὁ στίς is pertinent.

It is either indefinite, as here, from the sense of τίς = 'any one’ or definite from the sense of τίς = ‘somebody in particular,’ as in Lu. 9:30, ἄνδρες δύο συνελάλουν αὐτῷ ὄτινες ἦσαν Μωυσῆς καὶ Ἡλείας. Examples of the definite use of ὁ στίς may be seen in Mt. 7:26; 16:28; 22:2; 27:55, 62, etc. The indefinite use is seen in πᾶς ὁ στίς ἀκούει (Mt. 7:24), ὁ στίς ἔχει (Mt. 13:12), ὁ στίς ψώσει (Mt. 23:12), but apparently no instance of ὁ στίς ἄν and the future ind. occurs. The indefinite use of ὁ στίς with the subj. and ἄν is uniform (11 examples), as in ὁ στίς ἐὰν ἢ (Gal. 5:10), ὁ στίς ἄν ποιήσῃ (Mt. 12:50). Cf. Col. 3:17. We also find ὁ στίς ἀρνήσηται (Mt. 10:33), ὁ στίς τιρήσῃ (Jas. 2:10), but the definite use in Mk. 9:1. In 2 Cor. 8:12, εἰ ἦ προθυμία πρόκειται, καθὼ ἐὰν ἔχῃ, εὐπρόσδεκτος, οὖ καθὸ ὦκ ἔχει, there is a pointed distinction between the subjunctive and the indicative modes.² Thus the indicative occurs with either the definite or the indefinite and the subjunctive with the indefinite 122 times, the definite only Mk. 9:1 = Mt. 16:28. One may make a positive statement about either a definite or an indefinite relative or a doubtful assertion about either. The lines thus cross, but the matter can be kept distinct. The distinction is clearly perceived by Dawson Walker.³ The subjunctive with the indefinite relative, like that with ὁ στίς and ἔρχεται, is future perfect (cf. also future indicative). Moulton (Prol., p. 186) argues that, since this subj. is future, it is the aorist subjunctive used in the Greek and is very questionable.

(f) The Use of ἄν in Relative Clauses. This is the place for more discussion of ἄν, though, sooth to say, the matter is not perfectly clear. See also Conditions. It is probably kin to the Latin an and the Gothic an, and had apparently two meanings,

¹ Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 139.
² Cf. W.-Th., p. 307.
'else' and 'in that case rather.' Monro¹ argues that the primary use of ἀν and κεν is with particular and definite examples. Moulton (Prol., p. 166) translates ἐγὼ δὲ κεν αὐτὸς ἔλωμαι by the Scotch 'I'll jist tak her mysel'. There was thus a limitation by circumstance or condition. The use of ἀν with relative, temporal and conditional clauses "ties them up to particular occurrences" (Moulton, Prol., p. 186). It is not always quite so easy as that. This use of modal ἀν appears rarely in modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 188). "It is a kind of leaven in a Greek sentence; itself untranslatable, it may transform the meaning of a clause in which it is inserted" (Moulton, Prol., p. 165). That is putting it a bit strong. I should rather say that it was an interpreter of the sentence, not a transformer. Moulton counts 172 instances of modal ἀν, (ἐάν) in the N. T. (p. 166). Matthew leads with 55, then Mark 30, Gospel of Luke 28 and Acts only 10, Paul's Epistles 27, the Johannine writings only 20, Hebrews 1, James 1. Mr. H. Scott fears that these figures are not correct, but they are approximately so. The MSS. vary very much. These examples occur with incl. or subj. Moulton finds 739 cases of modal ἀν in the LXX (Hatch and Redpath). Of these 40 are with opt. (26 aorist), 56 with ind. (41 aorist, 6 imp., 1 plup., 7 fut. ind.), the rest with subj. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 165) finds modal ἀν in the koinh decreasing and unessential with ind., subj. or opt. in relative, temporal, final or conditional clauses. The use with indefinite or general statements was rare in Homer, but gradually came to be more frequent. But in the N. T. some examples of the definite use of ἀν survive especially in temporal clauses. So in Rev. 8:1, ὅταν ἦνοιξεν. But ὅταν στίκετε (Mk. 11:5) may be general. There is doubt also about ὅταν ὑψε ἐγένετο (11:19). But in Mk. 6:56, ὅσοι ἀν ὑψαντο, the construction is rendered more definite by ἀν, though ὅπου ἀν εἰςεσπερεύετο in the same verse is indefinite. In Mt. 14:36 we have ὅσοι ἀν ἔχειν, which is not more definite than Mark's construction.² In Rev. 14:4, ὅπου ἀν ὑπάγει, the construction is indefinite. In Ac. 2:45 and 4:35, καθότι ἀν τίς ἐίχεν, we have repetition and so a general statement to that extent. In Mk. 3:11, ὅταν αὐτὸν ἔθεωρον, it is general. In most instances in the N. T., therefore, the use of ἀν is clearly in indefinite relative clauses whether with the indicative or subjunctive.³ It

¹ Hom. Gr., p. 263 ff. ² Per contra see W.-Th., p. 306. ³ Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 217) quotes ἄς ἀν συντελέσωσιν, from an inscr. in Viereck's Sermo Graecus, p. 38.
cannot he said that ἂν is necessary with the indefinite relative and the indicative. It does not occur in the N. T. with ὅστις and the future incl. but we have both ὅστις ὁμολογήσει (Mt. 10:32) and ὅς ἂν ὁμολογήσει. (Lu. 12:8); ὅς ἔσται (Lu. 17:31) and ὅς ἂν ἀπολέσει (Mk. 8:35). For ὅς ἂν and fut. ind. see Compernass, De Sermone Pis., p. 38. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 145) cites ὅς δ’ ἂν ἀδικήσει, Inscr. Petersen-Luschan, Reisen, p. 174, N. 223, 21. As already seen, the relative with the subj. usually has ἂν, as εἰς ἢν ἂν πόλιν εἰσέρχησθε (Lu. 10:8); ὅτι ἂν προσδάπαυσθήσης (10:35). Cf. ὃς ἂν βούλησθαι (10:22). In a few examples the best MSS. do not have ἂν, as in ὅστις ἀρνήσεται (Mt. 10:33); ὅστις τηρήσῃ—πταισθῇ δέ (Jas. 2:10). The use of εἶν like ἂν has been shown (cf. Orthography) to be very common with relatives at this period. It is immaterial which is found. So ὅς εἶπεν λύση and ὅς ἂν ποιήσῃ (Mt. 5:19). The MSS. often vary between ἐὰν and ἂν, as in Mt. 10:14; Ac. 7:7. So also ὅσα ἐὰν θέλητε (Mt. 7:12) and ὅσα ἂν αἴτησθητε (Mt. 21:22). But in the N. T., as in the papyri, ἂν is twice as common in relative clauses. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 145) quotes ὅσοι—ἐγλίπωσι, Inscr. Perg. 249, 26, and ὅς ἄνασπαράξῃ (or ἂν ἄσπ. I. Gr. XII, 1, 671. Moulton (Prol., p. 169) cites C.P.R. 237 (ii/A.D.), ὅσα αὐτῷ προστέκηται. He (ib., p. 168) quotes δόρ’ ἂν πάσχετε F.P. 136 (iv/A.D.), ὅσα ἐὰν παρελαβόμην B.M. 331 (ii/A.D.). The ἂν is not repeated with the second verb. So ὅς ἂν ποιήσῃ καὶ διδάξῃ (Mt. 5:19). There is no instance of ἂν in a relative clause with an optative in the N. T. But in Gen. 33:10 the LXX has ὡς ἂν τις ἵδιοι πρόσωπον θεοῦ. So ὅς εἶμι τῦχοι, F.P. (see Moulton, Cl. Rev., 1901, p. 32). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 131) cites καθ’ ὅ ἂν μέρος στρέφεσθαι from Philo. There is one instance of ἂν with the infinitive in the N. T. (2 Cor. 10:9), ἵνα μὴ δοξῆ ὡς ἂν ἔκτροφβείν ὑμᾶς, but ἂν is here probably the same as εἶαν and ὡς ἂν = ‘as if.’ The upshot of it all is that ἂν has no peculiar construction of its own. It is more frequent with the subjunctive than with the indicative in relative sentences, but is not absolutely essential with either mode.1

In the Attic the subj. is invariable with ἂν, but "in the less cultured Hellenistic writers" (Moulton, Prol., p. 166) it occurs with the ind. also. Curiously in the Gospel of John απ occurs with ὅστις only in the neuter (Abbott, Johannine Grammar, p. 304). Always in the N. T. ὅτι εἶαν = ὅτι ἂν unless in Mk. 6:23 the correct text is ὅτι ὅ εἶαν as in margin of W. H. The text is probably correct (cf. Lu. 10:35; Ac. 3:23, etc.).

---

Special Uses of Relative Clauses. As in Latin,¹ the relative clause may imply cause, purpose, result, concession or condition, though the sentence itself does not say this much. This is due to the logical relation in the sentence. The sense glides from mere explanation to ground or reason, as in δικαιοσύνη ουσία. (Gal. 2:10). In 1 Cor. 3:17, ὁ ναὸς τοῦ θεοῦ ἁγίος ἔστιν οἰτίνες ἐστε ὑμεῖς, there is an argument in οἰτίνες. This is clearly true² in Ro. 6:2, οἰτίνες ἀπεθάνου ἡ ἁμαρτία, πῶς ἐτι ζήσομεν ἐν αὐτῇ; Cf. also Ac. 10:41, οἰτίνες συμφάγομεν καὶ συμνιπομεν αὐτῷ. See Gal. 5:4, οἰτίνες ἐν νόμῳ δικαίωσθε. Cf. Latin qui, quippe qui. A good example is seen in Ro. 8:32, or ὃς γε τοῦ ἰδίου υἱοῦ οὐκ ἐφείσατο. Cf. also ὁ ἐμελλόν (Rev. 3:2) and the common ἀνθ' ἄν (Lu. 1:20). Cf. Ac. 10:47; Ro. 1:25, 32; Ph. 2:20; Col. 3:5. Only the ind. mode occurs in the N. T. in this construction.³ Purpose is also found in relative clauses (cf. Latin qui = ut is). Either the future ind. or the subj. is used for this construction. When the subj. occurs it is probably volitive.⁴ So Burton⁵ would explain all the cases of subj. of purpose with relatives, but wrongly. The use in Mk. 14:14 is analogous to the retention of the subj. of deliberation in an indirect question. Cf. the subj. of purpose with relative clause in Attic Greek.⁶ But the subj. construction is Homeric (like Latin also). The Attic idiom is the future ind., and the future ind. also appears in the N. T. So ὃς κατασκευάσει (Mk. 1:2 = Mt. 11:10 = Lu. 7:27), ὃς ὑμᾶς ἀναμνήσει, (1 Cor. 4:17) which may be contrasted with the merely explanatory relative ὃς ἐστὶν μου τέκνων in the same sentence. So οἰτίνες ἀποδώσουσιν αὐτῷ (Mt. 21:41); οἱ προπορεύσονται. (Ac. 7:40; Ex. 32:1); οὕκ ἔχω ὃ παραθέσομαι (Lu. 11:6) where the Attic Greek would⁷ have ὃτι. Sometimes ἓνα occurs where a relative might have been used. So 2 Cor. 12:7 ἔδοθεν μοι σκόλοψ ἵνα με κολαφίζῃ, (Jo. 5:7) οὐκ ἔχω ἀνθρωπον ἵνα βαλή με, (9:36) ἵνα πιστεύσω εἰς αὐτόν. Cf. Gal. 4:5; Rev. 19:15. Viteau⁸ strikingly compares Mt. 10:26, ὃ οὐκ ἁπαλωθήσεται καὶ ὃ οὐ γυνωστήσεται, with Mk. 4:22, ἐὰν μὴ ἓνα φανερωθῇ καὶ ἓνα ἐλθῇ εἰς φανερόν. The variety of construction with ὃς is illustrated by Mt. 24:2 (Lu. 21:6), ὃς οὐ καταλυθήσεται, and Mk. 13:2, ὃς οὐ μὴ καταλυθή.

⁴ Moulton, Prol., p. 185.
⁵ N. T. M. and T., p. 126.
⁸ See Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 135.
The classic idiom preferred the fut. ind. for purpose with the relative (Schmid, *Atticismus*, IV, p. 621), but Isocrates (IV, 44) has ἐφ’ ὑς φιλοτιμηθόωσιν. Radermacher (*N. T. Gr.*, p. 138) cites for the κοινή Diod. XI, 21, 3, δι’ οὗ τρόπου—ἀνέλη; XIV, 8, 3, δι’ ὃν ἔξελωσιν; Ach. Tattius, IV, 16, 13, ὅσον—λάβη, etc.

Purpose is often contemplated result so that the consecutive idea follows naturally that of design. Only the ind. future is used in the N. T., unless one follows Blass in taking δ ἀποσενέγκη (Heb. 8:3) as result. A good instance of the future ind. is in Lu. 7:4, ἄξιος ἐστιν ὑπάρχη, which may be profitably compared with the non-final use of ἵνα in Jo. 1:27, ἄξιος ἵνα λύσω. Burton prefers to call this a "complementary limitation of the principal clause," a sort of secondary purpose. But the notion is rather that of contemplated result. The relative denotes a kind of consequence from a particular quality or state. See also Ph. 2:20 οὐδένα ἔχω ἱστψψ χον ὅστις—μεριμνήσει, Mk. 10:29 οὐδεὶς ἐστιν ὦς ἀφήκεν τὴν οἰκίαν, Lu. 7:49 τὸς ὁπότις ἐστιν ὦς καὶ ἀμαρτίας ἀφίησιν; Cf. 2 Th. 3:3 πιστὸς ὦς with 1 Jo. 1:9 πιστὸς ἵνα.

An example of the concessive use of ὅτινες is seen in Jas. 4:14, ὅτινες οὐκ ἐπίστασθε τῆς αὐριον ποία ἡ ζωὴ ὑμῶν.

The conditional use of the relative clause is only true in a modified sense, as already shown. The relative ὦς and ὅστις, whether with or without does not mean ἐὰν τίς or ἐὰν τίς, though the two constructions are very much alike. There is a similarity between ἐὰν τίς θέλει (Mk. 9:35) and ὦς ἄν θέλη (10:43). But I do not agree to the notion of Goodwin and Burton that in the relative clauses we have a full-fledged set of conditional sentences on a par with the scheme with the conditional particles. That procedure is entirely too forced and artificial for the Greek freedom and for the facts. There is a general sort of parallel at some points, but it is confusion in syntax to try to overdo it with careful detail as Viteau does. ἀν is not confined to the relative and conditional sentences, but occurs with ἐὼς, πρίν, ὡς, and ὅπως (temporal and final clauses). The indefinite relative like ὦς ἐὰν θέλη (Mk. 8:35) or ὅστις ὁμολογήσει (Mt. 10:32) is quite similar in idea to a conditional clause with ἐὰν τίς or ἐὰν τίς. But, after all, it is not a conditional sentence any more than the so-called

---

2. Blass, ib., cites also ἵναν ὡς τὰς ἀρτας in Mk. 1:7.
causal, final, consecutive relative clauses are really so. It is only by the context that one inferentially gets any of these ideas out of the relative. All that is true about the indefinite relative clauses has already been explained under that discussion. I therefore pass by any treatment of the kinds of conditional sentences in connection with the relative clauses.

(h) Negatives in Relative Clauses. When the subj. occurs the negative is μή, as in δις ἀν μή ἔχῃ (Lu. 8:18), but οὐ μή is found in Mk. 13:2, δις οὖ μή καταλυθή. So in Mk. 9:1 = Mt. 16:28 we have οὐ μη. With the indicative the negative is οὐ, in δις οὖ λαμβάνει (Mt. 10:38); δις γὰρ οὐκ ἐστὶν καθ’ ὑμῶν (Lu. 9:50). Occasionally when the relative is indefinite the subjective negative μή occurs with the indicative. So ὃ μὴ πάρεστιν ταῦτα (2 Pet. 1:9); ὃ μὴ ὁμολογεῖ (1 Jo. 4:3); ὃ μὴ δεῖ (Tit. 1:11). So also D in Ac. 15:29. Moulton (Prol., p. 171) calls this use of μή a survival of literary construction. He gives also some papyri examples (ib., p. 239) of μή in relative clauses: B.U. 114 (ii/A.D.) ἦν ἀποδέδωκεν αὐτῷ μήτε δύναται λαβεῖν, C.P.R. 19 (iv/A.D.) ὃ μὴ συνεφώνησα. The use of μή in relative clauses is more common in the koine than in the classic Greek (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 171). He cites examples from late Greek writers. There is nothing gained by explaining οὐ in relative clauses after the fashion of εἰ οὐ in conditional sentences as is done by Burton.1

2. CAUSAL SENTENCES.

(a) Paratactic Causal Sentences. These do not properly belong here, but there are so many of them that they compel notice. The common inferential particle γάρ introduces an independent, not a dependent, sentence. Paul uses it usually to introduce a separate sentence as in Ro. 2:28; 1 Cor. 15:9. In 1 Cor. 10:17 both ὅτι and γάρ occur. It will be treated in the chapter on Particles. Phrases like ἀνθ’ ἂν (Lu. 12:3), διό (Mt. 27:8), διόπερ (1 Cor. 8:13), θεοῦ (Ac. 26:19), ἢ ἂν αἰτίαν (2 Tim. 1:6, 12), οὐ χάριν (Lu. 7:47) are not always regarded as formally causal. The construction is sometimes paratactic. Indeed, the subordination of the ὅτι and διότι clauses is often rather loose.2 Thus there is very little difference between ὅτι (begins the sentence with W. H.) in 1 Cor. 1:25 and γάρ in 1:26. Cf. also ἐπειδὴ in 1:22. See further ὅτι in 2 Cor. 4:6; 7:8, 14, and διότι in Ro. 3:20; 8:7. The causal sentence is primarily para-

tactic. See Mt. 6:5; Lu. 11:32; 1 Cor. 15:29; Heb. 10:2.

The subordinate relative is a later development.¹

(b) With Subordinating Conjunctions. One may say at once that in the N. T. the mode is always the indicative. There is no complication that arises save with ἐπεῖ when the apodosis of a condition of the second class is used without the protasis as in Heb. 10:2, ἐπεῖ οὐκ ἔν ἐπαύσαντο. Here the construction is not due at all to ἐπεῖ. In the same way we explain ἐπεῖ ἔδει in Heb. 9:26 and ἐπεῖ ὑψεῖτε ὅρα in 1 Cor. 5:10. There is ellipsis also in the rhetorical question in 1 Cor. 15:29, ἐπεῖ τί ποιήσουσιν; But in Ac. 5:38 f. two complete conditional sentences (ἐὰν and εἴ, protasis and apodosis) occur with ὅτι. In a word, it may be said that the indicative is used precisely as in the paratactic sentences. Cf. Jo. 14:19, ὅτι ἐγὼ ζῶ καὶ ὑμεῖς ζήσετε.

The negative is usually οὐ as in 1 Jo. 2:16. Once in the N. T., Jo. 3:18, ὅτι μὴ πεπίστευκεν, we have μή, but οὐ is seen in 1 Jo. 5:10, ὅτι οὐ πεπίστευκεν. "The former states the charge, quod non crediderit, the latter the simple fact, quod non credidit" (Moulton, Prol., p. 171). Cf. ὅτι μή in Epictetus IV, 4, 11; IV, 5, 8–9. Cf. Abbott, Joh. Gr., pp. 162, 535. The distinction is subtle, μή being more subjective and ideal. In Heb. 9:17, ἐπεῖ μή τότε (or μή ποτε) ἵσχυει, we likewise meet μή. In B. G. U. 530 (i/A.D.), ἐπί μή ἀντέγραψας αὐτῇ—ὅτι οὐκ ἐπεμψας πρός σε, note ἐπί (εἴ) μή and ὅτι οὐκ with true distinction. With οὐ we have the objective fact, with μή the element of blame (μέμφεται) appears. "The comparison of Plutarch with the N. T. shows a great advance in the use of ὅτι μή" (Moulton, Prol., p. 239). Cf. also E. L. Green, Gildersleeve Studies, pp. 471 ff.; Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 171. He cites ὅτι μὴ ἔχεις, Epictetus IV, 10, 34. It is making inroads on ὅτι οὐ.

We sometimes have ἄνθερ' ὑν in a truly causal sense as in Lu. 1:20, and that is true also of ὅθεν in Mt. 14:7. In Heb. 2:18 ἐν ὑπὶ is practically causal. So also ἐφ' ὑ is causal in Ro. 5:12; 2 Cor. 5:4; Ph. 4:10. Cf. καθ' ὅτι = 'if right,' P. Oxy. 38 (A.D. 49). The classical ἐφ' ὑτε does not occur in the N. T. See ἐφ' ὑ δώσειτε, on condition that he give,' P. Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66).

Then ὅς may have almost the force of a causal particle as in Jo. 19:33; Mt. 6:12 (cf. Lu. 11:4, καὶ γὰρ); 2 Tim. 1:3. The same thing is true of καθός in Jo. 17:2. Καθ' ὅσον is causal in Heb. 7:20 (9:27) and ἐφ' ὅσον in Mt. 25:40, 45. So καθότι in Lu. 19:9 (cf. 1:7). In Ac. 17:31 HLP. read διότι. None of these

particles are strictly causal, but they come to be so used in cer-
tain contexts in the later Greek. We have ως ὅτι in 2 Cor. 5:19;
ως ὅτι θεός ἦν ἐν Χριστῷ κόσμου καταλλάσσων ἐαυτῷ (cf. our "since
that"). Here the Vulgate has quoniam. But in 2 Cor. 11:21 the
Vulgate renders ως ὅτι by quasi, as in 2 Th. 2:2, ως ὅτι ἐνέστηκεν.
Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 321 f. It is found also in Esther
4:14 and is post-classical.1

Διότι is found in the Lucan writings, the Pauline Epistles,
Hebrews, James and 1 Peter. In the modern Greek2 it takes the
form γιατί. Once (Ro. 8:21) some MSS. (W. H. read ὅτι) have
διότι in the sense of objective ὅτι ('that') as in later Greek (cf.
late Latin quia = quod). Instances of causal διότι may be seen in
Lu. 1:13; Ro. 1:19, etc. It is compounded of δια and ὅτι (cf.
English "for that"). In Ph. 2:26 διότι is causal and ὅτι is de-
clarative. In modern Greek διότι, survives in ἡ καθαρεύουσα. The
vernacular has ἀφοῦ, ἐπειδή, γιατί (Thumb, Handb., p. 194).

But all other causal particles are insignificant beside ὅτι which
grew steadily in use.3 It was originally merely relative and para-
tactic.4 In 1 Jo. 4:3 note ὅ — ὅτι and ὅτι ὅ in Ro. 4:21. It is
accusative neuter rel. ὅτι (cf. ὅτι ἄν προσδαπανήσῃς, Lu. 10:35) and
is more common as the objective particle in indirect discourse
(subject or object clause) than as a causal conjunction. In 1
Jo. 5:9 ὅτι occurs twice, once as causal and once as objec-
tive particle. In 2 Th. 3:7 f. exegesis alone can determine the
nature of ὅτι. In Jo. 3:19 Chrysostom takes ὅτι = 'because.'
Cf. also Jo. 16:8-11 (see Abbott, Johannine Gr., p. 158). The
English "the reason that" (vernacular "the reason why") is simi-
lar. It is very common in 1 John in both senses. In Jo. 1:15
causal ὅτι occurs three times in succession. In Lu. 9:49, ἐκω-
λόμεν αὐτὸν ὅτι οὐκ ἀκολουθεῖ μεθ' ἡμῶν, the present is used because
of a sort of implied indirect discourse. In Mk. 9:38 W. H.
read ὅτι οὐκ ἡκολουθεὶ. A good example of causal ὅτι is seen in Ro.
5:8. The precise idea conveyed by ὅτι varies greatly. In Jo.
9:17, τί σοί λέγεις περὶ αὐτοῦ, ὅτι ἦν ἐξένευ ὑμῖν ὅτι ὅτι ταῦτα ποιεῖς;
Akin to this construction is that in

1 Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 98..
3 Ib.
4 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 189.
5 As Viteau does in Le Verbe, p. 100. The LXX does show the idiom, as in
1 Ki. 1:8, τί ἐστι σοι ὅτι θλαίεις;
Jo. 14:22, τί γέγονεν ὅτι, which is shortened into τί ὅτι in Ac. 5:4, 9. There is a correspondence sometimes between διὰ τοῦτο and ὅτι. (Jo. 10:17); διὰ τί and ὅτι (Ro. 9:31 f.). ὥξ ὅτι may be either objective or causal as in Ph. 4:11, 17; 2 Th. 3:9. In the ancient Greek it meant 'not only do I say that, but I also say.' But in the N. T. it either means 'I say this not because' or 'I do not mean to say that,' and usually the latter according to Abbott.¹

We must have a word about ἐπεί, ἐπείδη, ἐπείδηπερ. As a matter of fact ἐπεί-δή-περ (note the composition) appears in the N. T. only in Lu. 1:1 (Luke's classical introduction). This is undoubtedly a literary touch.² Ἐπείδη is read by W. H. in Lu. 7:1 and Ac. 13:46, but ἐπεί δέ is put in the margin. Eight other examples remain, all in Luke (Gospel and Acts) and Paul (1 Corinthians and Philippians). Cf. Lu. 11:6; 1 Cor. 1:21 f. Ἐπεί, obsolescent in the late Greek,³ is almost confined to Luke, Paul, the author of Hebrews. Elsewhere in Matthew, Mark and John. Two of these are examples of the temporal use (Mk. 15:42; Lu. 7:1 W. H. marg.). The ordinary causal sense is well illustrated in Mt. 21:46, ἐπεί έις προφήτην ἐξέχου. The classical idiom of the ellipsis with ἐπεί has already been mentioned and is relatively frequent in the N. T. Cf. Ro. 3:6; 11:22; 1 Cor. 14:16; 15:29; Heb. 9:26; 10:2. It occurs in the simplest form in ἐπεί πῶς (Ro. 3:6) and ἐπεί τί (1 Cor. 15:29). In 1 Cor. 14:16, ἐπεί ἐάν, it is equivalent to ‘otherwise’ and in Ro. 11:22 to ‘else,’ ἐπεί ἐάν σοῦ ἐκκοπής η. The apodosis of a condition of the second class occurs in 1 Cor. 5:10; Heb. 9:26; 10:2.

Verbs of emotion in classical Greek sometimes used εἰ (conceived as an hypothesis) rather than ὅτι (a direct reason).⁴ The N. T. shows examples of θαυμάζω εἰ in this sense (Mk. 15:44; 1 Jo. 3:13), though θαυμάζω ὅτι is found also⁵ (Lu. 11:38; Gal. 1:6). Ὅτι is the N. T. construction⁵ with ἀγανακτέω (Lu. 13:14); ἔξωμολογόματι (Mt. 11:25); εὐχαριστέω (Lu. 18:11); μέλει (Mk. 4:38); χαίρω (Lu. 10:20); χολόω (Jo. 7:23). Cf. ὅτι and ἐπί ὃ in Ph. 4:10. On the possible causal use of ὅτε and ὅταυ see article by Sheppard, The Cl. Rev., Sept., 1913.

(c) Relative Clauses. This matter received sufficient discussion under Relative Clauses. For examples of ὅς take Ro. 8:32;

⁴ Cf. ib.
Heb. 12:6. For ὅστις note Mt. 7:15; Ho. 6:2. See also οὗ χάριν (Lu. 7:47) and διὰ ἥν αἰτίαν (8:47).

(d) Διὰ τὸ and the Infinitive. The construction is common in the N. T., occurring thirty-two times according to Votaw\(^1\) as compared with thirty-five for the O. T. and twenty-six for the Apocrypha. It is particularly frequent in Luke.\(^2\) Cf. Lu. 2:4; 18:5; Ac. 4:2; 8:11, etc. It is not in John except in 2:24, διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν γινώσκειν. Blass\(^3\) rejects it here because the Lewis MS. and Nonnus do not have the passage. Here note that ὅτι is used side by side with διὰ τὸ. So in Jas. 4:2 f. we have διὰ τὸ μὴ εἰτείσθαι ὑμᾶς and διὰτι κακῶς αἰτεῖσθε on parity. Cf. Phl. 1:7 καθὼς and διὰ τὸ. In Mk. 5:4, διὰ τὸ δεδέσθαι καὶ διεσπάσθαι καὶ συννυτερίσθαι, note the perfect tense and the repetition of the infinitive. Burton\(^4\) thinks that here διὰ gives rather the evidence than the reason. Why not both? There is one example of the instrumental use of the infinitive to express cause, τῷ μὴ εὑρεῖν με (2 Cor. 2:13). The text of B has six examples in the LXX\(^5\) (cf. 2 Chron. 28:22, τῷ θλιβήναι αὐτὸν). No examples of ἐπὶ τῷ occur.\(^6\)

(e) The Participle. We do not have ἀντί, διὸν, διὰ, as in classical Greek, to give the real reason. That is given simply by the participle as in δίκαιος ὅν καὶ μὴ θέλων αὐτὴν δειγματίσαι (Mt. 1:19). It is "exceedingly common" (Moulton, Prol., p. 230). Cf. Jas. 2:25; Ac. 4:21. But ὦς occurs with the participle to give the alleged reason, which may be the real one or mere assumption. Thus in Mt. 7:28 f., ὦς ἐξουσίαν ἔχων καὶ ὦς οἰ γραμματεῖς, the first ὦς gives the ostensible (and true ground) of the astonishment of the people. Cf. also Lu. 16:1: Ac. 2:2. But in Lu. 23:14, ὦς ἀποστρέφοντα τὸν λαόν, Pilate does not believe the charge against Jesus to be true. So also with ὦς μελλόντων in Ac. 27:30.

3. COMPARATIVE CLAUSES. The discussion in my Short Grammar\(^6\) forms the basis of this section. The conjunctions employed are all of relative origin, but the construction deserves separate treatment.

(a) The Relative ὅσος. This is a classic idiom and occurs only in Hebrews, except once in Mark. In Heb. 1:4 the correlative is expressed and the comparative form of the adjective is found

---

\(^{1}\) The Use of the Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20. Mr. II. Scott notes pres. 24, aor. 1 (Mt. 24 : 12), perf. 7 times.

\(^{2}\) Blass, Gr. of N.T. Gk., p. 236.

\(^{3}\) N. T. M. and T., p. 161.

\(^{4}\) Votaw, The Use of the Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 29.

\(^{5}\) Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 101.

\(^{6}\) Chapter XXVIII.
in both clauses. Both correlative and relative are here in the instrumental case, τοσσούτω κρείττων γενόμενος τών ἀγγέλων ὅσω διαφορώτερον παρ’ αὐτούς κεκληρονόμηκεν ὤνομα. The same phenomena are present in 8:6, save that the correlative is absent. In 10:25 there is no comparative in the relative clause. The others are examples of καθ’ ὅσον. In 3:3 there is no correlative, but the comparative appears in both clauses. In 7:20 f. the correlative is κατὰ τοσσούτο, but there is no comparative in the relative clause. This is probably causal in idea, as is true of καθ’ ὅσον in 9:27, where there is no comparative, though we have the correlative ὅστις καί. The example in Mk. 7:36, ὅσον δὲ αὐτοῖς διεστέλλετο αὐτοὶ μᾶλλον περισσότερον ἐκήρυσσον, lacks the correlative and has no comparative with the relative, but has a double comparison in the principal clause. In Jo. 6:11 and Rev. 21:16, ὅσον is simply relative, not a conjunction. The causal and temporal uses of ὅσον are discussed elsewhere.

(b) Relative ὅς with κατά. The singular καθό is found only in Ro. 8:26 καθὸ δεῖ, 1 Pet. 4:13 καθὸ κοινωνεῖτε, and 2 Cor. 8:12 καθὸ ἔαν ἔχω εὐπρόσδεκτος, οὐ καθὸ οὔκ ἔχει, where a good distinction is drawn between the subjunctive and the indicative. Cf. 0. P. 1125, 14 (ii/A.D.) καθὸ μισθοὶ μέρος. The construction with ἔαν is like that of the indefinite relative with ἔαν (Ἀν) and the subj. The plural καθά, however, is found only once in the N. T. (Mt. 27:10). Καθάπερ, however, is found seventeen times (three doubtful as compared with καθώς, Ro. 9:13; 10:15; 2 Cor. 3:18) and all in Paul’s writings save in Heb. 4:2 (without verb). It is thoroughly Attic and a slight literary touch. Cf. 1 Cor. 10:10. The mode is always indicative, but cf. καθά ἀρέσκῃ in Gen. 19:8. In Ro. 12:4 the correlative is ὅστις.

(c) Καθότι in a Comparative Sense. It occurs only twice (Ac. 2:45; 4:35) and the same idiom precisely each time, καθότι ἄν τις χρείαν ἐἴχεν. Here ay seems to particularize each case from time to time (note imperfect tense), the iterative use of ἄν, (Moulton, Prol., p. 167). This usage approaches the temporal in idea. The classic idiom of the aorist ind. with ἄν, no longer appears with these conjunctions.

(d) ὅς and its Compounds. These are the most common comparative particles. The most frequent of all is ὅς itself which has various other uses as exclamatory (ὁς ὑπαίτος οἱ πόδες in Ro. 10:15), declarative like ὅτι (Ac. 10:28), causal (Mt. 6:12), temporal (Lu. 12:58), with the infinitive (Lu. 9:52; Heb. 7:9), as a final particle (ὁς τελειώσω, Ac. 20:24, W. H. text), with superlative
adverbs (ὡς τάχιστα, Ac. 17:15), with the sense of 'about,' as ὡς δισχίλιοι (Mk. 5:13) and with participles (ὡς μέλων, Ac. 23:20). The richness of this particle is thus illustrated. But the comparative relative adverb is the origin of them all. In Heb. 3:11; 4:3 ὡς may be consecutive 'so,' but ὡς is more often comparative than anything else. Usually ὡς has a correlative. Thus ὡς—ὁντος (1 Cor. 4:1); ὡς—οὖντος (Ac. 8:32); ὡς—ὁντος καί (2 Cor. 7:14); ὡς—καί (Gal. 1:9); ἵσος—ὡς καί (Ac. 11:17); καί—ὡς καί (Mt. 18:33). But often no correlative is expressed (cf. Mt. 8:13).¹ The verb is not always expressed. Thus ὡς οἵ ὑποκριταί (Mt. 6:5). This predicate use of ὡς is very extensive. Cf. ὡς καί (1 Cor. 7:7). The mode is usually the indicative, as in Mk. 10:1, but the subj. occurs in Mk. 4:26, ὡς άνθρωπος βάλη (cf. ὡς οὐκ ὀδεῖν). Blass² considers this "quite impossible," but it is read by ΧΒΔ. Some late MSS. add ἐὰν and others read ὅταν, but surely ἐὰν (ἅν) is not "indispensable" to the subj. (cf. Mt. 10:33). In Gal. 6:10, ὡς καιρὸν ἔχωμεν, the temporal ὡς is likewise minus ἅν. See Relative Clauses and discussion of ἅν which is by no means necessary in these subj. clauses. Cf. Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 164. In 1 Th. 2:7, ὡς ἐὰν τροφός θάλπη τά ἐαυτῆς τέκνα, we do have ἐὰν, but the construction in Mark is not lawless. Καθός comes next to ὡς in frequency (chiefly with Luke and Paul). It sometimes has the correlative. So ὡς καθός (Lu. 24:24); καθός—ὁντος (Jo. 3:14); καθός—ὁντος καί (2 Cor. 8:6); καθός καί—ὁντος καί (Col. 3:13); καί—καθός καί (Ro. 1:13); καθός—καί (Jo. 15:9); ὅμοιος καθός (Lu. 17:28), and note κατά τά αὐτά in verse 30. The correlative is not always expressed (Mt. 21:6). So in Col. 1:6, καθός καί. Sometimes the principal clause is unexpressed as in 1 Tim. 1:3, or only οὖ occurs, as οὖ καθός (1 Jo. 3:12; Jo. 6:58). It is a late word but is abundant in the papyri. In the N. T. it occurs only with the indicative. The word, as already noted, sometimes has a causal sense (Ro. 1:28). It may have a temporal signification in Ac. 7:17. It occurs in indirect question in Ac. 15:14, and is epexegetical in 3 Jo. 3. Καθόςπερ is read only once in the N. T. (Heb. 5:4), though W. H. put it in the margin in 2 Cor. 3:18 (text καθάπερ). ὅσεί is classical, but has no verb (cf. Mt. 3:16; Mk. 9:26, etc.) in the N. T., though it occurs with the participle ὁσεί πρόβατα μὴ ἔχουτα ποιμένα (Mt. 9:36). Cf. also Ro. 6:13. It is used in the sense of 'about' as in Lu 9:14, 28, etc. It is commonest in the Gospels and Acts.

¹ In general correlatives are rare in the LXX. Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 142.
² Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 321.
In 2 Cor. 10:9 we have ὡς ἀν ἐκφοβεῖν (here alone in the N. T. with infinitive) = 'as if to frighten.' Ὅσπερ occurs with the indicative as in Mt. 6:2. In Mt. 25:14 a parable is thus introduced, but with no correlative. But we have the correlative in Ro. 5:19 (6:4), Ὅσπερ—Ὁῦτῳς καὶ. So Jo. 5:21. So Ὅσπερ— Ὅσφαὑτῶς (Mt. 25:14-18); Ὅσπερ—Οὐτῳς (13:40). We find Ὅσπερ also with the participle (cf. Ac. 2:2). Often the verb is wholly wanting as in Mt. 6:7. We meet Ὅσπερεῖ only once (1 Cor. 15:8) and that without a verb.

4. LOCAL CLAUSES. These are all relative adverbial sentences and are usually treated with relative sentences, but they are worthy of a separate note. The adverbs (conjunctions) used are ὡθεῖν, οὐ, ὁποῦ. With ὡθεῖν only the indicative is found as in Lu. 11:24, ὡθεῖν ἐξ ἡμᾶς. More common than ὡθεῖν is οὐ as in Mt. 2:9, οὐ ἦν τὸ παιδίον. Cf. past perfect in Ac. 20:8. It occurs mainly in Luke's writings and always with the indicative save once in 1 Cor. 16:6, οὐ ἐὰν πορεύωμαι. Here the indefinite relative naturally has ἄν and the subjunctive. οὖ is used with verbs of motion as well as with those of rest as this passage shows. Cf. also Lu. 10:1, οὖ ἴμελλεν αὐτὸς ἐρχεσθαι. But ὁποῦ is the usual local conjunction in the N. T., particularly in Matthew, Mark and John (Gospel and Revelation). It occurs with verbs of rest as in Mk. 2:4, ὁποῦ ἦν, and of motion as in Jo. 7:34, ὁποῦ ὑπάγω. The indicative is the usual mode. Once, Mk. 6:56, ὁποῦ ἀν εἰσεπρεύστω, we find ἄν to emphasize the notion of repetition in the imperfect tense, but this is not necessary. Cf. ὁποῦ ἥθελες (Jo. 21:18). Note the emphatic negative in ὁποῦ οὐ θέλεις (ib.). Cf. also ὁποῦ ἄν ὑπάγει (Rev. 14:4) where ἄν occurs with the present ind. (indefinite relative). In ὁποῦ φάγω (Mk. 14:14; Lu. 22:11), as noted on p. 964, the subj. is probably deliberative, answering to ποῦ φάγω in the direct question. Cf. οὐκ ἔχει ποῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν κλίνῃ (Lu. 9:58). But the subj. with ἐὰν in ὁποῦ ἐὰν ἀπέρχη (Lu. 9:57) is the common future subj. So in the parallel passage in Mt. 8:19. See further Mt. 24:28; 26:13; Mk. 6:10; 9:18; 14:9, 14. Curiously enough all the N. T. instances of ὁποῦ with the subj. are found in the Synoptic Gospels. There is ellipsis of the copula in Rev. 2:13, as is not infrequent with relatives.

Ὅποῦ is used also in metaphorical relations, as in Heb. 9:16. The correlative adverb ἐκεῖ, occasionally appears with ὁποῦ as in Lu. 12:34; 17:37; Jo. 12:26. Καὶ is a correlative in Jo. 17:24.

The use of ὁποῦ in classical Greek is confined to indefinite sentences, but the N. T. shows a frequent use (especially in John)
where there is a definite antecedent.\textsuperscript{1} Cf. Jo. 1:28; 4:46; 7:42; 10:40; 12:1, etc.

5. TEMPORAL CLAUSES.

(a) Kin to Relative Clauses in Origin and Idiom. Blass\textsuperscript{2} bluntly says that temporal clauses introduced by ὅτε and ὅταν "are generally only a special class of relative sentence, and exhibit the same constructions." The same thing is true of local sentences. Burton\textsuperscript{3} carries this conception to such a point that he has no separate treatment of temporal sentences at all. This is surely going too far. Thompson\textsuperscript{4} sees the matter rightly when he says: "The vague original relative import becomes specialized." Hence we expect to find both definite and indefinite temporal clauses as with other relative (and local) clauses. Definite temporal clauses may be illustrated by Mt. 7:28, ὅτε ἐπέλεξεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς τοὺς λόγους τούτους, ἔξεπλήσσαντο οἱ ὁχλοὶ. The indefinite is shown in Jo. 15:26, ὅταν ἐλάχιστο τὸ παράκλητος. The temporal clause may be indefinite in its futurity, frequency and duration.\textsuperscript{5} Indefinite futurity is the most common, indefinite duration the least common. The modes used in temporal clauses in the N. T. are the indicative and the subjunctive. These uses conform to the historical development of the two modes. There is one example of the optative in a temporal clause (Ac. 25:16, πρὸς οὓς ἀπεκρίθην ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν ἐδοξείς ἔρωμαι ξαράξεσθαι τινα ἀνθρωπον πρίν ἢ ὁ κατηγορούμενος κατὰ πρόσωπον ἔχοι τοὺς κατηγόρους τόπον τε ἀπολογίας λάβοι περὶ τοῦ ἐγκλήματος). Here, as is evident, the optative is due to indirect discourse, not to the temporal clause. The subjunctive with ἂν (πρὶν ἢ ἂν ἔχῃ--λάβῃ) occurs rather than the optative according to sequence of modes. This sequence was optional and a classic idiom, and so is found in the N. T. only in Luke's writings. Observe that ἔστιν, is retained in the indicative. This sentence is a fine illustration of the Greek subordinate clauses. In the context in Acts it is seen that four dependent clauses precede the πρὶν ἢ clause in the long sentence. The use of ἂν or ἡ ἂν in temporal clauses has very much the same history as in other relative clauses. The usage varies with different conjunctions and will be noted in each instance. The point of time in the temporal clause may be either past, present or future. It is a rather complicated matter, the Greek temporal clause, but not so much so as the Latin cum clause, "in which the Latin lan-
language is without a parallel.\(^1\) The different constructions may be conveniently grouped for discussion. Just as the optative with temporal clauses vanished, so there came a retreat of various temporal conjunctions. As a result in the later Greek the construction is much simpler.\(^2\)

(b) *Conjunctions Meaning ‘When.’* The classic use of the optative for repetition with such clauses has been effectually side-tracked in the vernacular *κοινή* (Radermacher, *N. T. Gr.*, p. 130). Only the ind. and subj. modes occur in these clauses. ‘Επει έπει has vanished\(^3\) in this sense, save in Lu. 7:1 where it is a variant (margin in W. H. and Nestle) for ἐπειδῆ, the correct text. Curiously enough this is also the only instance of the temporal use of ἐπειδῆ in the N. T., ἐπειδῆ ἐπλήρωσεν. It is a definite point of time in the past and naturally the indicative occurs. There are three examples of all with the subjunctive (Mt. 2:8, ἐπαν εὑρήτε; Lu. 11:22, ἐπαν νικήσῃ; 11:34, ἐπαν ἤ, where it is parallel with ὅταν ἤ. There are only two instances of ἡμίκα (2 Cor. 3:15, 16, ἡμίκα δὲν ἀναγινώσκηται, ἡμίκα εἶν ἐπιστρέψῃ. It is the indefinite idea as the subjunctive shows. Note and ἐάν (indefinite also and with notion of repetition). Nestle (AEH) reads ὅποτε ἐπείνασεν in Lu. 6:3, but W. H. and Souter (KBCD) have ὅτε. Ὅποταν does not occur in the N. T. Ὅτε and ὅταν, are both common and in all parts of the N. T. The connection between ὅτε (cf. ὃ-θεν, Brugmann, *Griech. Gr.*, p. 254) and Homeric ὅτε and ὅσ τε (Monro, *Hom. Gr.*, p. 191) is disputed.\(^4\) Cf. the conjunction ὅ from ὅς and ὅτι from ὅστις. Homer used ὅτε as a causal conjunction like ὅτι. Only the indicative (see below) mode appears with ὅτε in the N. T., but it occurs with past, present and future. Usually the events are definite, as in Mt. 21:1, ὅτε ἤγγισαν εἰς Ἰεροσόλυμα. The present time is rare, as in ὅτε γένοιν αὐνήρ in 1 Cor. 13:11; ὅτε ζῆ in Heb. 9:17. In Mk. 11:1 ἐγγίζουσιν is the historic present. The great bulk of the examples are in the past with the aorist indicative, though the imperfect occurs for custom or repetition, as in Jo. 21:18; Col. 3:7. The future indicative is naturally indefinite even when ὅτε is preceded by a word like ὅρα (Jo. 4:21, 23) or ἡμέρα (Ro. 2:16. Incorporated in W. H.). Souter’s Rev. Text (so W. H.) has

---


\(^2\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 466.


The text is in much confusion, but at any rate here is manuscript evidence for the subjunctive with ὅτε without άν. This is in harmony with what we saw was true of ὅς and ὅστις. It is also a well-known Homeric idiom. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 164) cites ὅτε ἀρέστατοι (Vettius, pp. 106, 36). Ὅταν, naturally occurs more frequently with the subjunctive for indefinite future time. It is usually the aorist tense, as in Mt. 24:33, Ὅταν ὑδήτε. The present subj. does occur when the notion of repetition is implied, as in Mt. 15:2, Ὅταν ἄρτον ἐσθίωσιν. Cf. Mt. 6:2. Once the idea of duration seems manifest (Jo. 9:5, Ὅταν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ὃ), but usually it is future uncertainty simply. It is not necessary to take the common aorist subj. here as the Latin futurism exactum. Cf. Ὅταν παραδοῦ in Mk. 4:29. The ἄν (ὅτε ἄν) is always present save in the doubtful ὅτε ἑπτήτε of Lu. 13:35. Ὅτε with the subj. is found in poetry and in the Byzantine writers. So Test. XII Pat. Levi 2:10 Ὅτε ἀνέλθης ἐκεῖ. On the other hand a number of examples occur of Ὅταν with the indicative (cf. ἐὰν and ὅπου ἄν) with the indicative). Homer, Iliad, 20, 335, has Ὅτε κέν ἐμπλήσῃ αὐτῷ. So in Rev. 4:9 we find Ὅταν δώσουσιν. The close affinity in form and meaning of the aorist subj. with the future indicative should cause no surprise at this idiom. In Lu. 13:28 BD read Ὅταν ὑψεσθε, though W. H. put, ὑψησθε in the text. A good many manuscripts likewise have Ὅταν with the future ind. in Mt. 10:19 and 1 Tim. 5:11. Cf. Ὅταν ἐστατι in Clem., Cor. 2, 12, 1. Moulton (Prol., p. 168) notes in the papyri only a small number of examples of ἄν with temporal clauses and the ind. Thus Ὅταν ἔβημεν in Par. P. 26 (ii/B.C.); ἔπαν ἐπιθύμησα in B. U. 424 (ii/iii A.D.); ὁπόταν ἀναιροῦσαται in B. U. 607 (ii/A.D.). It is common in the LXX, Polybius, Strabo, etc. See Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 463; Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 164. Ramsay (Cit. and B., ii, p. 477, no. 343) gives Ὅταν ἔζωσεν ἐγὼ a "curious anti-Christian inscription" (Moulton, Prol., p. 239). A few instances occur of Ὅταν, with the present indicative. So Ὅταν στή-κετε in Mk. 11:25. Here some MSS. have the subj., as in Ro. 2:14 some read Ὅταν ποιεῖ. Cf. also various readings in Mk. 13:4, 7. This construction is not unknown in earlier writers, though more common in the ΚΟΥΝ. Cf. Ex. 1:16; Ps. 101:3;

1 Cf. Mutzbauer, Konjunktiv and Optativ, p. 97.
2 W.-M., p. 387.
4 Cf. W.-M., p. 388,
Prov. 1:22; Josephus, *Ant.*, xii, 2, 3; Strabo, I, 1, 7; *Act. Apocr.*, 126. In 2 Cor. 12:10, ὅταν ἀσθενῶ, we probably have the present subj. Cf. 1 Th. 3:8, ἐὰν στῆκετε. The examples of ὅταν with the aorist or imperfect indicative are more numerous. In Thucydides ὅτε was always definite and ὅποτε indefinite.1 Ὅταν, with the optative appears in Xenophon.2 The Atticists have ἐπειδὴ καὶ ὅποταν (sic) with the opt. (Radermacher, *N. T. Gr.*, p. 165). In the κοινὴ the field of ὅταν is widened, as already shown. Agathias uses ὅταν with the aorist indicative.3 It is common in the Septuagint to have ὅταν with past tenses (Gen. 38:11; 1 Sam. 17:34, ὅταν ἤρχετο; Ps. 119:7, ὅταν ἔλαλουν; Num. 11:9; Ps. 118:32; Dan. 3:7).4 The usual notion is that of indefinite repetition. Thus we note it in Polybius 4, 32, 5, ὅταν μὲν οὗτοι ἤσαν ἐγένετο τὸ δὲν. Strabo I, 1, 7 has ὅταν φησίν. Cf. also 13, 7, 10. In Tobit 7:11 observe ὅποτε ἔδωκαν. In Mk. 3:11 we have ὅταν αὐτῶν ἔθεωρουν, προσέπιπτον αὐτώ. Cf. ὅποταν καὶ ὅσοι καὶ in Mk. 6:56. But the κοινὴ writers used ὅταν with the aorist indicative for a definite occurrence. This is common in the Byzantine5 writers. In the modern Greek ὅταν is freely used with the indicative.6 See Philo II, 112, 23, ὅταν εἰς ἑνοία ἦλθεν. Blass7 calls this quite incorrect, though the LXX has ὡς ἀν ἐξηλθέων ἵακωβ (Gen. 27:30; cf. 6:4) of "a single definite past action."8 There are two examples in the N. T., Mk. 11:19, ὅταν ὑψε ἐγένετο, ἐξηπορεύοντο ἔξω τῆς πόλεως (possible to understand it as repetition), and Rev. 8:1, ὅταν ἦν οἰκεῖον τῆς σφραγίδα τῆς ἐβδόμην. But, as Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 248) observes, it is possible to regard ἐπορεύοντο in Mk. 11:19 as pictorial rather than iterative and the papyri examples of ὅταν, as seen above, allow either usage. Simcox9 explains this "lapse" on the ground that Mark and the author of the Apocalypse are the least correct of the N. T. writers. But the idiom belonged to the vernacular κοινὴ. See Ex. 16:3, ὃφελον ἀπεθάνομεν—ὅταν ἐκαθίσαμεν ἐπὶ τῶν λεβήτων καὶ ἰσθίομεν ἄρτους. Ὁσάκις is only used with the notion of indefinite repetition. It occurs

1 Winifred Warren, A Study of Conjunctional Temp. Clauses in Thucydides, 1897, p. 73. Ὅτε is found twice in 1 Thuc. with the optative, but Miss Warren reads ὅποτε.
2 Baumlein, Unters. über die griech. Modi und die Partik. κέν und αὐν, 1846, p. 322.
5 W.-M., p. 389.
6 Ib.; Mullach, Vulg., p. 368.
7 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 218.
8 W.-M., p. 389.
9 Lang. of the N. T., p. 111.
four times in the N. T. (1 Cor. 11:25 f.; Rev. 11:6), each time
with ἐὰν and the subjunctive. These points are all obvious.

'὏ς is rather common in the N. T. as a temporal conjunction.
It is originally a relative adverb from ὅς and occurs in a variety of
constructions. The temporal use is closely allied to the com-
parative. Cf. ὅς ἔλαξεν ἡμῖν ἐν τῇ ὅδῷ, (Lu. 24:32). So Jo. 12:
36. The temporal aspect is sharp in Mk. 9:21 where ὅς means
'since.' The examples in the N. T. are usually in the aorist
or imperfect indicative as in Jo. 6:12, 16; Ac. 8:36 and chiefly
refer to definite incidents. In 1 Cor. 12:2, ὅς ἃν ἡγεσθε, we have
the imperfect ind. with ἄν for the notion of repetition (cf. ὅταν).
So in Aristeas 7, 34, ὅς ἃν ἡξαντο. In modern Greek σάν, (from
ὁς ἃν) is used for 'when' (Thumb, Handb., p. 192). The use of
ὁς ἃν= 'as if' is that of conditional, not modal, ἃν, and is very
common in the papyri (Moulton, Prol., p. 167). See Conditions.
As early as i/B.C. the papyri show examples of ὅς ἃν= ὃταν (origi-
nally ὅς ἃν='as soon as'). Cf. Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 164.;
Gr., p. 164) gives ὅς ἃν ὁμαία, Dion. Hal. and Dio Chrys., ὅς ἃν
ἀμείνουν ἔδοξεν, Luc. Alex. 22. But ὅς is used a few times with the
subjunctive, thrice with ἃν (Ro. 15:24; 1 Cor. 11:34; Ph. 2:
23), once without ἃν (Gal. 6:10), ὅς καὶ ἰν ἐχωμεν. In classical
Greek this futuristic subj. would have ἃν (Moulton, Prol., p.
248 f.). With the last construction compare Mk. 4:26. In the
temporal use ὅς ἃν is not common in Attic. In Mk. 9:21 note
πόσος ἵν ὁνος—ὁς. In Ac. 17:15 we have ὅς τὰ ἀχιστα, a remnant
of the rather frequent use of ὅς with superlative adverbs. It is
possible that καθός has a temporal sense in Ac. 7:17 (cf. 2 Macc.
1:31).

(c) The Group Meaning 'Until' ('While'). The words in this
list have a more complex history than those in the preceding one.
They are ἄχρι, μέχρι, ἐως and πρῶ. ἀχρι (twice in the N. T.,
ἀχρίς, Gal. 3:19 and Heb. 3:13) is more frequently a prepo-
osition (cf. ἄχρι καιροῦ, Lu. 4:13) than a conjunction. It is rare in
Greek prose and ἀχρι ἃν only in poetry.1 But Philo (I, 166, 20)
has ἀχρίς ἃν—σβέσει. But the simple conjunction is less fre-
quent than the compound form (preposition and relative), as ἄχρι
ὁ with (Lu. 21:24) and ἀχρι ἡ ἡμέρας (Mt. 24:38). Sometimes the
MSS. vary between ἄχρι, μέχρι, and ἐως, as in Mt. 13:30 (prepo-
sition). Cf. Ac. 1:22. Past tenses of the indicative are used of
an actual historical event. No example of the simple ἄχρι ap-

1 Meisterh.-Schwyzer, Gr. d. attisch. Inschr., p. 251.
pears in this construction in the N. T., but we have ἀρχιν ὀὖ ἀνέστη (Ac. 7:18) and ἀρχιν ἢς ἡμέρας εἰσηλθεν (Lu. 17:27). The only instance of the present ind. is in Heb. 3:13, ἀρχιν ὀὖ τὸ σήμερον καλείται. Here the meaning is 'so long' (linear) or 'while' (cf. ἐως). The more common use is with reference to the indefinite future. In two instances (Rev. 17:17, ἀρχιν τελεσθήσονται, and 2:25, ἀρχιν ὀὖ ἐλθεν. This latter could be aorist subj.) the future indicative is read. Elsewhere we meet the subjunctive, either without ἀν (ἀρχιν σφραγίσωμεν, in Rev. 7:3 and ἀρχιν τελεσθή in 20:3, 5, ἀρχιν ὀὖ ἐλθη in 1 Cor. 11:26; ἀρχιν ἢς ἡμέρας γένηται in Lu. 1:20) or with ἀν (ἀρχιν ἢς ἐλθη in Gal. 3:19, though W. H. put just ἀρχιν ὀὖ in the margin). Here the time is relatively future to the principal verb προσετέθη, though it is secondary. The subj. is retained instead of the optative on the principle of indirect discourse. As a matter of fact ἀν occurs only twice, the other instance being Rev. 2:25 above. Cf. ἀρχιν ὀὖ σαρώθη, 0. P. 1107, 3 (v/A.D.). Μέχρις (so twice, Mk. 13:30; Gal. 4:19, and once μέχρι, Eph. 4:13) occurs only three times as a conjunction. In Eph. 4:13 it is μέχρι simply, in the other examples μέχρι ὀὖ. In all three instances the aorist subj. is used without ἀν, for the indefinite future. The use as a preposition is more frequent. Cf. μέχρι ὧν ὑστερήσεις (Lu. 16:16) and μέχρις αὔματος (Heb. 12:4). It means 'up to the point of.' The κοινή writers show a rather varied use of μέχρι (cf. Diodorus, Strabo, Polybius, Josephus, Justin Martyr). They, like the papyri, have μέχρι and μέχρι ὀὖ with and without ἀν, (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 140). ἐως is much more frequent in the N. T. both as preposition (cf. ἐως ὤτο, Mt. 11:23) and as conjunction. The prepositional use is illustrated also in ἐως τοῦ ἐλθεῖν (Ac. 8:40). The prepositional use (more frequent than the conjunctival) goes back as far as Aristotle and denotes the terminus ad quem. ἐως is Attic for Homeric ἡς and Doric ἂς. As with ἀρχιν and μέχρι, we find ἐως alone as a conjunction (Mt. 2:9), ἐως ὀὖ (Mt. 14:22) and ἐως ὦ (5:25). It is used both with the indicative and the subjunctive. When an actual event is recorded in the past only the aorist indicative is used. This is the usual classic idiom. So ἐως ἓλθεν (Mt. 24:39), ἐως ὀὖ ἐτέκειν (1:25), ἐως ὧν ἐφώνησαν, (Jo. 9:18). When the present ind. appears with ἐως the notion is 'while,' not 'until,' and it is either a contemporaneous event, as in ἐως αὐτὸς ἀπολύει τὸν ὕπολον (Mk. 6:45).

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 563.
2 Ib., p. 200.
Note dependence on ἡμᾶς γιασεν, like indirect discourse), or a lively proleptic future in terms of the present, as in ἦς ἔρχομαι πρόσεχε τῇ ἀναγνώσει (1 Tim. 4:13) and in Jo. 21:22 f. It is possible to take Mk. 6:45 as this proleptic future. Indeed some MSS. here give also ἀπολύσῃ and – εἰ. In Mt. 14:22 the reading (in the parallel passage) is ἦς οὖ ἀπολύσῃ. Cf. the construction with the Latin dum. In Lu. 19:13 W. H. read ἐν τῷ ἔρχομαι instead of ἦς ἔρχομαι. Instead of ἦς ημέρα ἔστιν (Jo. 9:4) W. H. have ὥς in the margin, though keeping ἦς in text (as does Nestle). If ἦς is genuine, it is clearly 'while,' not 'until.' In Jo. 12:35 f. W. H. read in the text an, not gun. We have, besides, ἦς ὤτου εἶ in Mt. 5:25. Most of the examples of ἦς deal with the future and have only the subj. after the classic idiom. The future, being identical in form with the aorist subj., is possible in the cases of ἦς οὐ ἀναπέμψω (Ac. 25:21) and ἦς ὤτου σκάψω (Lu. 13:8), but the regular subj. is the probable idiom. In Lu. 13:35 some MSS. have ἦς ἦςει (see (b)), but W. H. reject ἦςει ὥσει. Both ἦς οὐ and ἦς ὤτου are used, but always without δὲν. So ἦς οὐ ἀνέλωσιν (Ac. 23:21) and ἦς ὤτου πληρωθῇ (Lu. 22:16). With simple gun it is more common to have δὲν. So ἦς δὲν ἀποδῶ (Mt. 5:26), but note ἦς ἦς θεό (10:23). ἔς ἦς is not essential in this construction. Cf. Lu. 12:59; 15:4; 22:34. In Mk. 14:32, ἦς προσεύξωμαι, the notion is rather 'while' than 'until.' Cf. Mt. 14:22; 26:36; Lu. 17:8. But the note of expectancy suits the subjunctive. In Mt. 18:30, ἔβαλεν αὐτῶν εἰς φυλακὴν ἦς ἀποδῶ τῷ ὀφειλόμενον, the subj. is retained after secondary tense of the indicative as in indirect discourse. ἔς ἦς occurs after negative verbs also (cf. πρίν), as in Lu. 22:34. Moulton (Prol., p. 169) quotes Tb. 6 (ii/B.C.) ἦς μένωσιν, G. H. 38 (i/B.C.) ἦς καταβῆς. In the papyri δὲν, as in the N. T., is often absent from these conjunctions meaning 'until.' Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 140) finds ἦς and the subj. common in the papyri, the inscrs. and the κοινή writers. Blass thinks he sees a certain affinity with final sentences in the subj. with these conjunctions for the future indefinite. At any rate it is good Attic and should cause no trouble. The κοινή fully agrees with the ancient idiom. It is, of course, a matter of taste with the writer whether he will regard a future event as a present reality or a future uncertainty to be hoped for and attained.

Πρίν is a comparative form (cf. superlative πρὼ-τος) like the Latin

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 128. But the proper sense of the indic. is better as an expression of the fact. Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 140.
prius.\(^1\) It is the neuter accusative singular. It is really the same in idea as πρότερον, ‘before,’ ‘formerly.’ Pindar uses it as a preposition with the ablative πρίν ώρας = πρὸ ώρας. The original construction with πρίν, was the infinitive, though the subj. and the optative occur with it in Homer.\(^2\) Homer has it 81 times with the infinitive, 6 with the subj., once with the opt. and not at all with the indicative.\(^3\) The word developed so much importance in the later Greek that Goodwin in his Moods and Tenses gives it a separate extensive discussion (pp. 240-254). In the N. T. there are only fourteen examples of it and all of them in the Gospels and Acts. Eleven of the fourteen are with the infinitive (cf. Homer). Cf. πρίν ἀποθανεῖν (Jo. 4:49), πρίν Ἀβραὰμ γενέσθαι (8:58). Six times we have πρίν ἢ, as in Mt. 1:18. Luke alone uses the classic idiom of πρίν with the subj. or opt. after negative sentences. In both instances it is only relative future after secondary tenses, but in Lu. 2:26, μὴ ἴδειν θάνατον πρίν [Ἡ] ἀν ἴδη τὸν Χριστὸν κυρίον, the subj. is retained according to the usual rule in indirect discourse in the κοινὴ (so often in the Attic). In Ac. 25:16, as already explained (p. 970), πρίν ἢ ἔχοι—λάβοι after ἀπεκρίθην ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν, is changed from the subj. to the opt. as is possible in indirect discourse, a neat classic idiom found in Luke alone in the N. T. Some of the MSS. do not have ay in Lu. 2:26 and reads ἐως ἀν here. A few MSS. have πρίν ἢ in Lu. 22:34.\(^4\) The papyri writers do not show the same consistency as Luke in the use of πρίν.\(^5\) But note μήτε διδότω—πρίν αὐτῷ ἐπιστέλληται., 0. P. 34 (ii/A.D.). For 'until' ἐως kept the field. Indeed in Lu. 22:34, οὐ φωνήσει σήμερον ἀλέκτωρ ἐως τρὶς ἀπαρνήσῃ, we see ἐως where πρίν would usually come (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 164). Very early πρὸ τοῦ and inf. also began to displace πρίν (see Verbal Nouns). In the modern Greek πρίν holds its place (also πρὶ νά, ὅσο, προτὸ) with ind. and subj. (Thumb, Handb., p. 193). The N. T. does not have ἐστε, but the papyri show it. Cf. ἐστιν ἀν, Amh. P. II, 81, 11 (iii/A.D.). See also Job 13:22 Χ.

(d) Some Nominal and Prepositional Phrases. We have already seen in the case of ἀχρι, μέρι and ἐως how they occur with relative pronouns as conjunctional phrases. The same thing occurs with a number of temporal phrases. Thus ἀφί οὖ. In Lu. 13:7 ἀφί οὖ is preceded by τρία ἔτη as the terminus a quo. It

\(^2\) Sturm, ib., p. 145.
\(^3\) Ib., p. 6.
\(^5\) Moulton, Prol., p. 169 note.
means 'since.' Cf. τρίτην ταύτην ἡμέραν ἄγει ἀφ’ οὗ in Lu. 24:21. In Rev. 16:18 it is the simple equivalent of ἀπὸ τούτου ὅτε as in the Attic Greek and Herodotus. In these examples the indicative occurs, but in Lu. 13:25, ἀφ’ οὗ δὲν ἐγέρθη, the construction of ἐσ of is used for the uncertain future, the subj. with δὲν. The conception of ἀπὸ τούτου ὅτε has to be appealed to, 'from that moment when,' 'when once' the master arises. In like manner we see ἀφ’ ἃς used for 'since' in Lu. 7:45; Ac. 24:11; 2 Pet. 3:4. In Col. 1:6, 9 we have the form ἀφ’ ἃς ἡμέρας. ἐν ὃ is not always temporal. It may be merely local (Ro. 2:1), instrumental (Ro. 14:21) or causal (Ro. 8:3). The temporal use is much like ἐσ in the sense of 'while,' as in Mk. 2:19 (Lu. 5:34) ἐν ὃ ἕν [μήφιος μετ’ αὐτῶν ἐστίν. Cf. Jo. 5:7, ἐν ὃ ἐρχομαι with ἐσ ἐρχομαι in Jo. 21:22. In Lu. 19:13 the Text. Rec. has ἐσ ἐρχομαι, but ἐν ὃ is the true reading. In 1 Pet. 1:6 ἐν ὃ has its antecedent expressed in the preceding sentence and means 'wherein.' In Mk. 2:19 we see ὃσου χρόνου for duration of time. In Mt. 9:15 the shorter ἐφ’ ὃσου occurs, while in Heb. 10:37 note ὃσου ὃσου (a Hebraism from the LXX, though paralleled in the papyri). In Ro. 7:1 we read ἐφ’ ὃσου χρόνου the fullest form of all. Moulton (Prol., p. 169) cites C.P.R. 24, 25 (ii/A.D.) ἐφ’ ὃν ἡ χρόνου (note absence of ἂν).

(e) The Temporal Use of the Infinitive. There are nine examples of πρὸ τοῦ and the infinitive. In the LXX there are 35 examples (Votaw, The Infinitive in Bibl. Gk., p. 20). These examples all have the accusative with the infinitive, as in πρὸ τοῦ ὑμᾶς αἰτῆσαι αὐτόν (Mt. 6:8. Cf. Lu. 2:21; 22:15; Jo. 1:48 f.; 17:5; Ac. 23:15; Gal. 2:12; 3:23), except Jo. 13:19, πρὸ τοῦ γενέσθαι, but even here it is implied. The tense is aorist except a present in Jo. 17:5. The sense is quite like πρὶν (see before). The inscriptions (Moulton, Prol., p. 214) show scattered examples of πρὸ τοῦ and inf. The use of ἐν τῷ as 'when' or 'while' is much more common. It occurs only 6 times in Thucydides, Plato 26 times, Xenophon 16 times. But it is very common in the Septuagint as a translation of the Hebrew ב and the infinitive construct.

Moulton admits a Hebraism here in the sense of 'during,' a meaning not found in the vernacular κοινή so far. The construction is, however, very common in Luke, the most literary of the N. T. writers, and in all parts of his Gospel. It is found both in the sense of 'while' and 'when.' Usually it is the present tense that has the notion of 'while' and the aorist that of 'when.' So

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 215. 2 Ib., p. 249.
in Lu. 1:8 note ἐν τῷ ἱερατεύειν αὐτόν, (2:27) ἐν τῷ εἰσαγαγεῖν τοῦ γονεῖς τὸ παιδίου Ἰησοῦν. The examples are numerous (55 in the N. T.), but the LXX shows 500 instances,¹ undoubted proof of the influence of the Hebrew there, where it is nearly as common as all other prepositions with the infinitive. This use of ἐν τῷ and the infinitive is not always temporal. In Lu. 12:15 it is rather the content than the time that is meant, In Lu. 1:21 it may be causal. Ἔμπορε τῷ and the infinitive we find fifteen times in the N. T. In the LXX the construction appears 108 times according to Votaw.² It has the resultant meaning of 'after' and always has the aorist infinitive except the perfect in Heb. 10:15. It is found in Luke, Paul, Matthew, Mark, Hebrews, and chiefly in Luke. A good example is found in μετὰ τῷ ἀποκτείνα (Lu. 12:5). See also Ac. 7:4; 10:41. Mention should also be made of ἐν τῷ ἐλθεῖν in Ac. 8:40, as in the LXX (Judith 1:10; 11:19). It occurs 52 times in the O. T. and 16 in the Apocrypha. But note μέχρι τοῦ πλέειν, P. B. M. 854 (i/A.D.). On prepositions and inf. see Verbal Nouns.

(f) Temporal Use of the Participle. This subject will demand more extended treatment under the head of the Participle (Verbal Nouns). Here it may be noted that the participle does not of itself express time. We may in translation render the participle by a temporal clause with 'as,' ‘while,’ ‘since,’ ‘when,’ ‘after,’ etc., like the Latin cum.³ As a rule the unadorned participle in English is enough to bring out the idea. The participle may be co-ordinated in translation with the principal verb by the use of 'and.' The present participle is merely descriptive and contemporaneous, as ἀποθνῄσκων (Heb. 11:21). The aorist participle has either simultaneous action, as ἀποστασάμενοι (Ac. 25:13), or antecedent, as ἐμπόρευσα (Mt. 13:2). The wealth of participles gave the Greek a great advantage over the Latin in this matter. In the flourishing period of the language the temporal participle vied with the conjunctions in the expression of temporal relations. In the κοινή this use of the participle is still quite live, as almost any page of the N. T. shows, though it has manifestly in places shrunk before the analytic tendency to use conjunctions and finite verbs. This tendency to use conjunctions is still more noticeable in modern Greek.⁴

¹ Votaw, The Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20. ² Ib. ³ Moulton, Prol., p. 230. "We should not usually put a temporal clause to represent these, as it would overdo the emphasis." ⁴ Jebb in V. and D.'s Handb., p. 333.
6. FINAL AND CONSECUTIVE CLAUSES.

(a) Kinship. It is a difficult matter to correlate properly these subordinate clauses. They nearly all have relative adverbs as conjunctions. Often the same conjunction is used indifferently in a number of different kinds of clauses. So ὡς in comparative, declarative, causal, temporal, final, consecutive, indirect interrogative, exclamatory. In like manner ὅπως has a varied use. Cf. the Latin ut, which is comparative, final, apprehensive, consecutive. The English that and German dass have a like history. Goodwin,⁠¹ therefore, treats "final and object-clauses" together as pure final clauses, object-clauses with verbs of care and effort, clauses with verbs of fearing. He gives a separate discussion of consecutive clauses.² Burton³ practically follows Goodwin. Viteau⁴ blends them all into one. Winer practically ignores consecutive clauses. Jannaris⁵ pointedly says that the popular speech "avoids the consecutive construction" and uses ὧςτε and the infinitive for either final or consecutive (cf. Latin ut and English that) "thus confounding consecutive with final clauses." It was not quite that. As a matter of fact the various points of view shade off into one another very easily and sometimes quite imperceptibly. It is not always easy to distinguish purpose and result in the mind of the writer or speaker. The very word finis may be the end aimed at (purpose) or attained (result). My colleague, Prof. W. O. Carver, D.D., has suggested grouping these ideas all under result, either contemplated, feared or attained. Some such idea is near the true analysis and synthesis. The later Greek showed a tendency to gather most of these ideas under ἐνα.⁶

(b) Origin in Parataxis. It seems clear that these final clauses had their origin in parataxis, not hypotaxis. The conjunctions, when used, were an after-development. The step from parataxis to hypotaxis has already been taken when we meet the Greek of Homer,⁷ though the paratactic construction continued side by side in isolated instances. Examples like ἀφεὶς ἐκβάλω (Lu. 6:42), βούλεσθε ἀπολύσω (Jo. 18:39), θελεῖς ἔτοιμασωμεν (Mk. 14:12) are probably instances of this original idiom rather than of a mere ellipsis of ἐνα.⁸ Cf. also the possible origin of οὐ μη as οὐ· μη. This

¹ M. and T., pp. 105-137.
⁴ Le Verbe, pp. 71-95.
⁵ Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 455.
⁶ Ib., p. 458. Thus ὅπως and ὡς gradually disappear.
disconnected idiom was felt to be especially bare in the positive form, but the negative paratactic construction with μὴ with verbs of fearing is present in Homer. Gildersleeve quaintly says: "Parataxis, which used to be thrust into the background, has come forward and claimed its rights." This grammatical sage, barring the infinitive and participle, adds: "Nihil est in hypotaxis quod non prius fuerit in parataxi." The subjunctive, therefore, in final clauses is merely the volitive subj. of parataxis. It was natural that the parataxis should be plainer in negative sentences, for alongside of μὴ (originally the mere negative in parataxis and the negative conjunction in hypotaxis) there came ῥεθα μὴ, ὄπως μὴ. The whole matter is carefully worked out by Weber with careful discussion of each construction in the various writers during the long course of Greek linguistic history from Homer through the Attic writers.

(c) **Pure Final Clauses.** Here conscious purpose is expressed. This class constitutes the bulk of the examples and they are the easiest to understand. The Greek is rich in variety of construction for this idea. We can deal only with the idioms in the N. T. Ὀφρα is not in the N. T. or LXX, nor is the idiom of ὄπως with the future indicative after verbs of striving.

(a) ῥεθα. The etymology of ῥεθα is not certain. A fragment of Hesiod has ῥεθα ᾧτῳ. Perhaps ῥε-α is derived from this form. But at any rate in Homer ῥεθα = ἔκει in Iliad, 10, 127. After Homer, especially in the poets, it has the meaning 'where,' 'in what place,' 'whither.' The exact connection between this local demonstrative and relative sense and the final 'that' (ut) is not clear. But we have a similar transition in the Latin ut, English that, German dass. Sophocles in his *Lexicon of the Roman and Byzantine Periods* gives nineteen uses of ῥεθα for the Greek of that era. They may all be whittled down to three, viz. the pure final, the object-clauses or sub-final, the consecutive. There is no doubt that ῥεθα came to be used in all these ways in the Byzantine period. In the κοινή of the N. T. time the first two are abundantly shown. The ecbatic or consecutive use is debatable in the N. T. But each in its order.

Curiously enough the Attic inscriptions make a very sparing use

---

1 Ib., p. 108.  
2 Am. Jour. of Philol., 1883, p. 419.  
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 185.  
5 Entwickelungsgeschichte der Absichtsätze (1884, 1885).  
6 Dyroff, Gesch. des Pronomen reflexivum, 1892, p. 71.  
8 Ib.
of ἰνα, much preferring ὁπος and ὁπος ἂν.\(^1\) So in epic and lyric poetry ἰνα is overshadowed by ὅφρα and in tragedy by ὦς, though Aristophanes uses it in three-fourths of his final sentences and Plato and the Attic orators use it almost exclusively (Goodwin, *Moods and Tenses*, p. 109). The original use of ἰνα, after the demonstrative and the relative, stage, was the pure final. It is so in Homer, though Monro admits one instance of the object-clause.\(^2\) Only the subj. occurs with it in Homer in this construction. This is the natural mode for the expectant note in clauses of purpose.\(^3\) But it must not be overlooked that ἰνα in no way controls the mode, for the idiom is at bottom paratactic in origin.\(^4\) But the indicative had a use also as well as the optative, as will presently be shown. A word further is needed concerning the tremendous development in the use of ἰνα. Thucydides used ὁπος three times as often as ἰνα, and ὦς as a final particle only twice. Xenophon in the first three books of the *Anabasis* has ὁπος one and a half times as often as ἰνα, and ὦς nearly as often as ἰνα. But Polybius (books I–V) uses ἰνα exclusively, and the N. T. has ἰνα about twelve times as often as ὁπος and ὦς perhaps once. It is thus not simply that ἰνα displaced ὁπος and ὦς, but it gradually usurped the final use of the infinitive also. It comes to be almost the exclusive means of expressing purpose, and in the modern Greek vernacular every phase of the subj. and the old future ind. can be expressed by νά (ἵνα) and the subj.\(^5\) Νά is used also with the ind. The intention in modern Greek is brought out a bit more sharply by γά εά (Thum, *Handb.*, p. 197). But the distinction is sometimes faint. All in all it is one of the most remarkable developments in the Greek tongue. The eight and a half pages of examples in Moulton and Geden's *Concordance* bear eloquent testimony to the triumph of ἰνα in the N. T. Nearly a page and a half of these examples are in the Gospel of John. But we are now specifically concerned with the pure final use of ἰνα. Here ἰνα is in the accusative case of general reference. Thus in ἔλημυθα ἰνα μάθω (cf. *veni ut discam*, 'I am come that I may learn') ἰνα is really a demonstrative. 'I am come as to this,' viz. 'I may learn.' The conjunction is supplied to avoid the asyndeton and is in apposition with μάθω. As already explained, the subj. is the predominant mode, as in τοῦτο δέ ὅλου γέγονεν ἰνα πληρωθή (Mt. 1:

\(^1\) Meisterh.-Schw., p. 253 f. \(^2\) Hom. Gr., p. 207.
\(^3\) Stahl, Krit.-hist. Synt., p. 479; Mutzbauer, Konj. and Opt., p. 76.
\(^4\) Goodwin, M. and. T., p. 107; Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 211.
22. Cf. Ph. 3:8. The negative with ένα is μη, as in ένα μη κριθήσε (Mt. 7:1). The aorist subj. is the normal tense, of course, as in ένα μεταδώ (Ro. 1:11), though the present occurs to denote a continuous action, as in ένα πιστεύη (Jo. 13:19). Cf. ένα γνώτε και γινώσκη (Jo. 10:38). The perfect subj. occurs in ειδώ, as ένα ειδής (1 Tim. 3:15); ένα ειδώμεν (1 Cor. 2:12); ένα ειδήτε (1 Jo. 5:13). Cf. also Jo. 17:19, 23; 1 Cor. 1:10; 2 Cor. 1:9 (ένα μη πεποιθότες ὠμεν); ένα παρεσκευασμένοι ἤτε (2 Cor. 9:3). The subj. is regularly retained after a secondary tense of the indicative as in ἀνέβη ένα ἵδη (Lu. 19:4); ἐπέτιμησεν ένα μηδενε εἴπωσιν (Mt. 16:20). Cf. Mk. 8:6. There is no instance in the N. T. of the optative used with ένα after a secondary tense of the indicative. It is true that W. H. read ένα δώη in the text of Eph. 1:17 (ένα δώη or δω in the margin), but this is after a primary tense, οwget Παύωμαι. It is the volitive use of the optative and is not due to ένα. It is like the optative in a future wish.\(^1\) This use of the opt. with ένα after a wish is not unknown to classic Greek.\(^2\) It is the subj., not the opt., that is seen in ένα πληροί (Col. 4:17), ένα παράδοι (Mk. 14:10) and in the sub-final ένα ὑνοι (Mk. 9:30).\(^3\) In Homer and the early writers generally the rule was to use the opt. with the final clauses after secondary tenses, but in the Attic orators the two modes (subj. and opt.) are on a par in such a construction, while Thucydid and prefers the subj., though Xenophon is just the reverse.\(^4\) In the N. T. the optative in final clauses after secondary tenses is non-existent. In 2 Tim. 2:25 μη ποτε δώη is after a primary tense as in Eph. 1:17, and here again the text is uncertain (cf. δώη in margin and ἀναξιωσίων in text.) The Atticists (Arrian, Appian, Herodian, 4th Macc., Plutarch) made a point of the opt. with ένα as "the hall-mark of a pretty Attic style" (Moulton, ProL., p. 197). The N. T. writers, more like Diodorus and Polybius, fail "to rival the litterateurs in the use of this resuscitated elegance." Moulton speaks also of "the

\(^2\) W.-M., p. 363.  
\(^3\) On the sparing use of the opt. with final sentences in late Gk. see the tables in Diel, De enuntiatis finalibus apud Graecarum rerum scriptores posteriors aetatis, 1894, pp. 20 See also Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 132. Moulton (ProL., p. 197) notes how the Atticists revelled in the opt. with ένα, ὀπως, ὃς, Josephus has 32 per cent. opts., Plut. 49 (Lives), Arrian 82, Appian 87! Polyb. has only 7, Diodorus 5. These are true koinη literati. Moulton finds only one pap. of this period with ένα, O.P. 237 (late ii/A.D.), ένα — δωνησήν. In iii/A.D. he notes L.Pw., ἓν — ἵτι in primary sequence. Tb. 1 (ii/B.C.) actually has ἥξισα χρηματισθησίοτο.

riot of optatives" in the artificial Byzantine writers. On the whole subject of final clauses see Gildersleeve on "The Final Sentence in Greek," 1883, p. 419, *A. J. of Philol.*, IV, pp. 416 ff., VI, pp. 53 There is no trouble to find in the papyri, inscr. and *koinē* writers generally abundant examples of *ίνα* and the subj. in pure design (Radermacher, *N.T.Gr.*, p. 138). But while the subj. is the normal construction, the indicative is also present. In classical Greek *ίνα* was not used with the future ind. It was not common even with ὅπως, ὦς and μή. The similarity in form and sense (not to mention itacism of –η and –ei) made the change very easy and, indeed, the text is not always certain as between the aorist subj. and the future ind. Thus in 1 Cor. 13:3 *ίνα καυχήσωμαι* is supported by ΚΑΒ, *ίνα καυθήσωμαι* by ΚΚ and *ίνα καυθήσωμαι* by late documents. In Gal. 2:4 the best documents have *ίνα καταδουλώσουσιν* instead of *—σώσουν*. In Jo. 17:2 the MSS. vary between *ίνα δώσει* and δώσῃ. So in Jo. 15:8 note *ίνα φέρητε καὶ γένυσθε* (γενήσεθε in margin of W. H.); Eph. 6:3, *ίνα γένηται καὶ ἐσθη*. But the idiom is well established in the N. T., especially in the Apocalypse. Thus *ίνα θεωρήσωσιν* (Jo. 7:3); *ίνα εὐρήσωται* (Ac. 21:24); *ίνα ἔρει* (Lu. 14:10); *ίνα θῆσω* (1 Cor. 9:18); *ίνα δώσουσιν* (Lu. 20:10); *ίνα κενώσει* (1 Cor. 9:15); *ίνα κερδηθήσονται* (1 Pet. 3:1); *ίνα σφαξέωσιν* (Rev. 6:4); *ίνα δώσει* (8:3); *ίνα ἀξιωσῦν—γνώσιν* (3:9); *ίνα ἐσται καὶ εἰσέλθωσιν* (22:14), etc. This last example may be non-final. In some of these examples the subj. and ind. future occur side by side. In Mk. 6:56 and Ac. 5:15 note *ίνα καν* (only instances of *ἀν* with *ίνα* in the N. T.). This is not modal *ἀν*, but *καν* as 'even' = καί (Jannaris, *Hist. Gk. Gr.*, p. 165; Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 167). In Rev. 13:15 the MSS. vary between *ίνα ποιήσῃ* and —ει, and in 16 between *ίνα δώσιν* and δώσει (ποιεί *ίνα* sub-final). The usage is thus on a firm foundation in the N. T. It is in the LXX also. See *ίνα ἐσται* in Lev. 10:6 and in other writers of the *κοινή* (Iren., 584 A, *ίνα ἐστι*). But *ίνα* occurs also with the present ind. This is a rare construction in the N. T. and is not a classic idiom. It occurs only three times in the N. T. Thayer calls it "a solecism frequent in the eccl. and Byzantine writers." It is so common in late writers as not to surprise us in the N. T. Thus 1 Cor. 4:6 *ίνα μή ἐμαυτοῦσθε*, Gal. 4:17 *ίνα ζηλοῦτε* and 1 Jo. 5:20 *ίνα γνωσκόμεν*. The first two are possible subjunctives. W. H. read *ίνα μήτις δύναται* in the margin of Rev. 13:17, and various

1 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 115.  
2 Approved by Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 212.  
3 Moulton, Pro!., p. 35.  
MSS. support the present ind. with ἵνα in Jo. 4:15; 5:20; 17:3; Gal. 6:12; 1 Th. 4:13; Tit. 2:4; 2 Pet. 1:10; Rev. 12:6.\(^1\)

In the earlier Greek writers we do find ἵνα used with past tenses of the indicative.\(^2\) The idea was to show that the purpose was dependent on an unfulfilled wish or unattained action. But this refinement does not appear in the N. T. except in two examples with μή πως. With all the wide extension of ἵνα in Western Hellenistic,\(^3\) at the heart of it there is the pure telic idiom. ἵνα with the imperative in 1 Cor. 1:31 is due, of course, to the quotation. ἵνα is repeated three times in 2 Cor. 12:7. In Jo. 11:37, ποιήσατι ἵνα καὶ ὁμοίως μή ἀποθάνῃ, one is reminded of the Latin facere ut (sub-final). Westcott (Hebrews, p. 342 f.) gives a list of all the examples of ἵνα in the Epistle (20). Only two of ὅπως.

(β) ὅπως. It is compounded of the neuter accusative relative ὁ and the indefinite adverb πως.\(^4\) It occurs in indirect questions as in Lu. 24:20 in the sense of 'how,' the usual interrogative sense, and note article also as in τό πῶς (Lu. 22:2). ὅπως in a sense is the connecting link between the various kinds of final sentences.\(^5\) Thucydides and Xenophon preferred ὅπως to ἵνα, and Aristotle has ἵνα only a few times (W. Schmid, Atticismus, III, p. 87). Polybius does not use ὅπως at all in books I–V. The N. T. has ἵνα 493 times, ὅπως 52 (Jannaris, p. 417) as far as Colossians. Scott counts ἵνα 746 times in text of W. H. (not including 6 of ἵνα τί–) and 58 of ὅπως. Thumb does not give ὅπως as a final particle in modern Greek (Handb., p. 197).

Even in later Greek ὅπως was a sign of literary affectation.\(^6\) As already noted, in the fourth and fifth centuries B.C. ὅπως was quite the rule in the Attic inscriptions.\(^7\) It is rare in Homer and never has κέ or ἄν in pure final clauses in the Homeric language.\(^8\) This idiom with ἄν first appears in Aeschylus. In the great Attic writers and the Attic inscriptions the subjunctive, the future indicative and the optative after secondary tenses, all are found. The future indicative occurred chiefly with verbs of striving, though sometimes in pure final clauses.\(^9\) The negative with this future indicative was μή (ὅπως μή), though no example

\(^{1}\) Cf. W.-H., App., pp. 167, 169, 171. See further Meyer on 1 Cor. 4:6.

\(^{2}\) Cf. Goodwin, M. and T., p. 120. The Mod. Gk, has νά with past tenses of the ind. (Thumb, Handb., p. 198).

\(^{3}\) Moulton, Pro1., pp. 41, 205, 211.


\(^{5}\) Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 348.


\(^{7}\) Meisterh.-Schw., p. 253 f.  

\(^{8}\) Goodwin M. and T., p.

\(^{9}\) Ib., p. 113 f.
occurs in the N. T. Moulton (Prol., p. 177 note) finds in the papyri a few survivals of ὅπως μὴ and the fut. ind., though mostly ousted by ἵνα μὴ. Cf. Hb. P. 45, 60, 168 (iii/B.C.), Tb. P. 414 (ii/A.D.). Stahl (Syntax, p. 360) calls ὅπως and fut. ind. Attic. In the N. T. the optative does not occur in this construction. In the Atticists it is revived as with ἵνα. The fut. ind. with ὅπως in pure final clauses has practically vanished from the N. T. The one example in Ro. 3:4, ὅπως ἄν δικαίωσεν καὶ πιάσωσεν is a quotation from the LXX (Ps. 51:6), but changed from subj. there. But ὅπως θανατώσουσιν is a variant reading in Mt. 26:59, and the future ind. is possible in Mt. 2:8, ὅπως προσκυνήσω, though it is probably the aorist subj. Other variant readings where the future ind. is supported with ὅπως are 1 Cor. 1:29, καυχήσεται, and Mk. 5:23 ὅπως ζήσεται, (here W. H. read ἵνα ζήσῃ). But at any rate the use of the future ind. with ὅπως in pure final clauses is not quite dead in the N. T. period, though surely dying. Elsewhere the aorist subj. alone occurs save in Lu. 16:26 (bis), 28 and Mt. 6:4. ὅπως no longer has ἄν in final clauses save in the quotation from Ps. 51:6 (Ro. 3:4) and three passages in Luke's writings (Lu. 2:35 ὅπως ἄν ἀποκαλύφθωσιν Ac. 3:19 f. ὅπως ἄν ἠλθῶσιν—and ἀποστείλῃ, 15:17 ὅπως ἄν ἐκζητήσωσιν from Amos (so A, but B without ἄν) 9:12). ἄν is a variant reading in Mt. 6:5 and is found very often in the LXX. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 158) finds ὅπως ἄν in Diodorus XIV, 80, 8, Aristaeas, § 239, inscr. of Halicarnassus (iii/B.C.), Jahrb. d. Ost. Inst. XI, 56. But it is rare and ὅπως steps into the background before ἵνα. The revival of ὅπως in the third and fourth cent. A.D. was Atticistic and did not affect, the vernacular. The inscriptions and the papyri for the first century A.D. show the prevalence of ἵνα over ὅπως (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 157 note). The negative is, of course, always μὴ, as in Ac. 20:16, ὅπως μὴ γένηται. The subj. is used indifferently after primary tenses (Mt. 6:2, ποιοῦσιν ὅπως δοξασθῶσιν) and secondary tenses (Ac. 9:24, παρεπεμφωντο ὅπως αὐτὸν ἀνέλωσιν). Cf. Ro. 9:17. It is interesting to note that in the N. T. ὅπως is almost confined to Matthew and Luke's writings. The literary flavour of Luke explains his use of the idiom, but we do not look for literary ear-marks in Matthew. The one example in John (11:57) occurs side by side with ἵνα (ἵνα μηνύσῃ, ὅπως πιάσωσιν) and may be used for the sake of variety as in ἵνα γένηται ὅπως γένηται, (2 Cor. 8:14). Cf. also Lu. 16:28;

2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 211.
1 Cor. 1:29; 2 Th. 1:12, though ἕνα—ἕνα appear in 1 Cor. 4:6; Gal. 4:5. In 1 Cor. 1:17 note ἕνα μή and ὁπως μή 1:29. But ἕνα has "invaded the territory of ὁπως, as with φροντίζειν and σπουδάζειν" (Moulton, Prol., p. 206). In modern Greek ὁπως has lost all telic force (Thumb, Handb., p. 198). Sometimes ὁπως represents the main purpose and the infinitive the subordinate purpose, a construction amply illustrated in the papyri. So then, though ὁπως as a pure final conjunction is disappearing in the N. T., it yet occurs with the same concept on the whole.

(γ) Ος. It was not a favourite final particle with Thucydides (only twice), though Xenophon used it nearly as much as ἕνα. It is not surprising to find only one instance of it in the N. T. and that one not certain. ΧΒ read ὅς τελειώσω in Ac. 20:24 instead of ὅς τελειώσαι (cf. Lu. 9:52). W. H. and Neste read τελειώσω, but Souter (Rev. V.) gives τελειώσαι. It is the last leaf on the tree and a fluttering one at that. The form could be the future incl. or aorist subj. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 158) finds final ὅς merely a reminiscence in the κοινή, but it is needless to cite Mk. 4:26 f., ὅς ἄνθρωπος βάλη, since this is not final at all, but comparison. On ὅς ἄν in final sentences see Schmidt, Joseph. Bloc., p. 409, for statistics. Radermacher quotes F. P. 118 (110 A.D.), πορεύοντες ἐς τὸν έκεῖ έλαιώνα ποτίσῃς, where ἐς ὅς is used as final ὅς. Per contra in modern Greek, Moulton (Prol., p. 249) notes that ὅς takes the meaning of ἐς ὅς as well as its own.

(δ) Μή, μή ποτε, μή πως. Negative purpose is expressed by ἕνα μή, ὁπως μή also, but originally it was done merely by μή in a paratactic sentence. In Homer and the early writers μή is far in excess of ἕνα μή, ὁπως μή, but in Aristophanes and Herodotus the reverse is true, while in Plato and Xenophon μή as a final conjunction has about gone. It is rare in the Attic historians and orators generally. Originally a negative adverb (subjective negative) it came to be used also as a conjunction. Cf. Latin ne. The idioms μή οὐ appears in Homer in a few final clauses, and after Homer μή οὐ is used with verbs of fearing. In the N. T. ἕνα μή (1 Cor. 1:17) and ὁπως μή (1:29) have the run over the conjunction μή. Only the subj. is used, though in Ac. 27:42 μή τις διαφύγων is a variant reading, but διαφύγη is correct after the secondary tense of the incl. In Mk. 13:36, μή εὕρη a primary tense occurs in the principal verb. In Col. 2:4 W. H. read ἕνα μηδεις

1 Ib. 2 Moulton, Prol., p. 220.
3 Goodwin, M. and T., pp. 107, 112.
4 Ib., p. 112.
5 Ib., p. 107.
paralogiζται instead of μὴ τις (the variant reading). See also μὴ τις λογίστηται (2 Cor. 12:6). Both μὴ and μὴ πως are preserved as final conjunctions in the modern Greek (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 198).

The use of μὴ ποτε and μὴ πως is practically the same. Μή πως appears with the subj. (Paul) after (secondary and primary tenses.

So ἐπεμψα μὴ πως κατασκυλισθῶμεν (2 Cor. 9:3 f. Note also ἰνα μὴ in 9:3, 4) and μὴ πως γένωμαι (1 Cor. 9:27). In Gal. 2:2 (μὴ πως ἐδραμον) and 1 Th. 3:5 (μὴ πως ἐπείρασεν) we have a difficult construction. One view is to take it as an indirect question. This is possible in Gal. 2:2, but not in 1 Th. 3:5. Even in Gal. 2:2 there would be an ellipsis of a participle like ζητῶν μαθεῖν.

Moulton (Prol., p. 201) suggests that ἐδραμον as an "after-thought" in Gal. 2:2 has plenty of classical Parallels. Cf. Goodwin, *Moods and Tenses*, § 333. In 1 Th. 3:51 we have μὴ πως ἐπείρασεν καὶ γένωμαι. It is better therefore to take τρέχω in Gal. 2:2 as subj. also. Thus in both examples we have the subj. and the aorist ind. This is in accord with the ancient idiom where in pure final sentences a past tense of the incl. was used if it is distinctly implied that the purpose was not attained.¹

That is precisely the case here. Paul did not run in vain. The tempter did not succeed with the Thessalonians. It is thus unfulfilled purpose that Paul neatly expresses in accord with the Attic diction. Μή ποτε loses the notion of time in ποτε and has rather the idea of contingency, ‘but perchance’ rather than 'lest at any time.' Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 158) thinks that ποτέ and πως often distinguish deliberative (dubitative) from final μη. As a strictly final particle it occurs either with the subj. or the future ind., though the subj. is more common.²

For the fut. ind. note Mt. 7:6 μὴ ποτε καταπατήσωσιν (correct text, though the aorist subj. has support), Mk. 14:2 μὴ ποτε ἔσται. In Lu. 12:58 note μὴ ποτε κατασύρη καὶ ἀποδώσει. Both subj. and fut. ind. likewise occur in Mt. 13:15 (Ac. 28:27) μὴ ποτε ἵδωσιν—καὶ ἱδαμοί (LXX, Is. 6:10). So also in Lu. 14:8 f., μὴ ποτε ἢ κεκλημένος (note perfect subj.) καὶ ἐρέι (cf. ἰνα ἐρέι in verse 10). The normal subj. is seen in Lu. 14:12, μὴ ποτε ἀντικαλέσωσιν. The opt. in the N. T. is wanting in final sentences as in Lses of repetition (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 131). W. H. read μὴ ποτε δώῃ (opt.) in 2 Tim. 2:25. But even so, if true, it not a pure final clause but a kind of indirect question as in Lu. 3:15, only in 2 Tim. 2:25 the opt. occurs after a primary tense. It is hardly just to say

¹ Goodwin, M. and T. p. 120 f.
² Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 86.
with Moulton\(^1\) that here Paul "misused an obsolete idiom," since the opt. after primary tenses occurs occasionally with i\(^{n}a\) in the papyri.\(^2\) Cf. μὴ ποτὲ αὐτών χρεία γένοιτο, εὐθέως αὐτοῦς εξέλασον, P. Oxy. I, 118, 38. But it is more than likely, as Moulton argues, that in 2 Tim. 2:25 we should read subj. δόξη, since ἀναθεσίως undoubtedly is subj. The epic δόξη is supported by εὖν γνώμη, Clem., Paed., III, 1. (Moulton, Prol., p. 193.)

(e) Relative Clauses. This construction in the earlier Greek, like the Latin, had either the subj. or the opt. The Attic added the future ind. which largely displaced the subj. and the opt.\(^3\) The N. T. follows the Attic use of the fut. ind. Cf. διττές ἀποδώσοντι (Mt. 21:41); οὖς καταστήσομεν (Ac. 6:3). See 1 Cor. 4:17, δὲ ἀναμήνεται. Blass\(^4\) explains the occasional return to the subj. as due to ἵνα. See ὅπως φάγω (Mk. 14:14); ταρπὶ ἐξεσθώμεν (Ac. 21:16); ὁ προσευέγκη (Heb. 8:3); δι', ἡς λατρεύσωμεν (12:28).

Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 138) quotes B. U. III, 822 (ii/A.D.) ἐδρον γερφύν τίς (= δός) αὑτὰ ἐλύσῃ, Diodorus, XIV, 8, 3, δι', ὅν ἐξέλασον τὰ τείξη. The N. T. hardly uses the relative clause of purpose as freely as the Attic Greek.

(ζ) The Infinitive. A brief statement is alone necessary here, since the infinitive receives full discussion in the next chapter. Suffice it to say that the infinitive is exceedingly common in the N. T. for the notion of pure purpose. Votaw\(^5\) counts some 1,285 such instances of the simple infinitive of purpose in "biblical Greek." He gives the figures for the N. T. alone as 211. He notes that "this use of the infinitive is second only to that of general object in order of relative frequency of occurrence." Moulton (Prol., p. 205) notes that the inf. of purpose is more common in the N. T. than in Attic, and he agrees with Thumb (Theol. Lit., 1903, p. 421) in the theory that this frequency of the inf. of purpose in the κοινή is due to the Ionic dialect. It has survived in the Pontic dialect of modern Greek, though elsewhere displaced by νά and the subj. Cf. ἐποιμάσωμεν φάγειν (Mt. 26:17) and ἐποιμάσωμεν ἵνα φάγῃς (Mk. 14:12). The telic inf. is common in the κοινή writers generally (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 152). Cf. Xenophon of Eph., 393, 28, ἠληθέω συν προσεύξασθαι. It is commonest with verbs of movement (Moulton, Prol., p. 205), as in ἐὰν ἀναβῇ καγὼ προσκυνήσαι, Par. P. 49 (ii/B.C.). This infinitive may be resolved easily into the original dative (or locative), as in Jo.

\(^1\) Prol., p. 194.  \(^2\) Ib., p. 197.  \(^3\) Goodwin, M. and T., pp. 216.  \(^4\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 217.  \(^5\) The Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 10.
21:3, ὑπάγω ἀλιεύειν, 'I go a-fishing'; Mt. 2:2, ἠλθομεν προσκυνήσατε,
we went up for worshipping.¹ It is easy to see the purpose
in the dative form of προσκυνήσατε, but less clear in the locative
ἀλιεύειν, (probably due to syncretism). Moulton² suggests that
the locative was originally a sort of designed result and gradually
the line of cleavage vanished between the two forms as was true
of ἵνα (and ut). "The burden of making purpose clear is in all
these cases thrown on the context; and it cannot be said that any
difficulty results, except in a minimum of places." This idiom
has a much wider range in Homer than in Attic writers and is
again more prevalent in the N. T. than in the Attic.³ A few ex-
amples must suffice: οὐκ ἠλθον καταλύσατε, ἀλλὰ πληρώσατε (Mt. 5:17);
ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἀνήχθη—πειρασθήσατε ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου (4:1); οὐκ ἠλθον κα-
λέσατε δικάιος (Mk. 2:17); πάρεσαμεν ἀκούσατε (Ac. 10:33). Cf. Lu.
18:10; Ac. 11:25; 12:13; 13:44, etc. Less frequent is the inf.
with τοῦ for the idea of purpose. Votaw⁴ notes but 34 such exam-
pies of direct purpose in the N. T., though the 0. T. shows 734.
These 34 are almost confined to Matthew, Luke and Acts. Cf.
tοῦ ἀπολέσατε (Mt. 2:13); τὸ σπεάραι (Lu. 8:5); τοῦ οἰτείν (Ac. 3:2).
See both together in Lu. 1:76 f., 79; 2:22, 24, παραστήσατε—καὶ
tοῦ δούναι. For a full discussion see "Articular Infinitive" (Verbal
Nouns). Paul seems to avoid it as a rule. But see Ro. 6:6; Ph.
3:10. The use of ὄστε and the inf. for pure purpose is rare in
the N. T., some half-dozen instances.⁵ Only probable examples
should be claimed (p. 1089). Thus ὄστε ἐκβάλλειν (Mt. 10:1).
Cf. Mt. 15:33; 24:24; 27:1; Lu. 4:29; 20:20. Radermacher
(N. T. Gr., p. 160) cites P. Oxy. I, 52, 7 (325 A.D.), ἐποιοσταλέντος ὄστε
τὴν διάθεσιν ἐγγραφὸν προσφυνήσατε. For further examples of telic
ὄστε in the inscriptions and writers of the κοινὴ see Koch,
Observationes grammaticae, p. 20. It is more frequent in the LXX.
Radermacher even cites a case of final ὄστε with the subj. in a
late papyrus; B. G. U. III, 874, γεγράφηκα ὑμὶν ὄστε πέμψητε. There
are two examples of ὃς in W. H., ὃς ἔτοιμόςατε (Lu. 9:52, other
editors ὄστε) and ὃς ἔπος εἰπέτειν (Heb. 7:9). In Ac. 20:24 most
editors have ὃς τελειῶσατε, but not W. H. The articular infinitive
with prepositions is very common in the N. T. as in the LXX,
about one-half of all the examples of the articular infinitives.⁶ For
a discussion of prepositions with the inf. see Verbal Nouns. Both
ἐἰς τό and πρὸς τό occur with the inf. in the papyri, the latter

¹ Moulton, Prol., p. 204.
² lb., p. 207.
³ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 223.
⁴ Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 21.
⁵ lb., p. 10.
⁶ lb., p. 19.
more frequently. They both seem "to carry the thought of a remoter purpose." (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 220.) Moulton cites B. U. 226 (i/A.D.) ὑπὸς ἑιδή παρέσεσται (=θαί) — πρὸς τὸ τυχίν, 0. P. 237 (ii/A.D.) ὑπὸς φροντίς ἡς — πρὸς τὸ μή—ἐντυγχάνειν. The papyri have εἰς τὸ ἐν μὴ δεν μιμοφθήναι as a "recurrent formula." Cf. P. Fi. 2 (iii/A.D.) 4 times. Moulton gives numerous papyri references for telic εἰς τό. The examples with εἰς τό are the most common of all in the N. T. (72 instances). As a rule these indicate purpose more or less strong, though not always. It is particularly common in Paul (50 exx., H. Scott). So εἰς τό στηριχθήναι (Ro. 1:11), εἰς τό ἐίναι (8:29). Cf. 4 Th. 3:5; Eph. 1:12; Ph. 1:10). The instances of πρὸς τό are ew (12) and chiefly in Matt. and Paul. Cf. πρὸς τό θεαθήναι (Mt. 6:1); πρὸς τό διύνασθαι (Eph. 6:11).¹

(η) *The Participle.* The future participle, so common in this construction in the Attic Greek, has nearly vanished from the N. T. as from the rest of the *koinh.* A few remnants survive like ἔρχεται Ἡλείας σώσων (Mt. 27:49), ἀνέβην προσκυνήσων and ποιήσων, (Ac. 24:11, 17). Cf. Ac. 8:27. So also the present participle occasionally occurs where purpose is implied. Thus ἀπεστάλκαμεν ἀπαγγέλλοντάς (Ac. 15:27). Cf. ἔπεμψαν ἀγγέλλοντας (Thuc. VII, 26, 9).² Cf. also Mk. 3:31. A good example is Ac. 3:26, ἀπέστειλεν αὐτὸν αὐτολούντα. See Participle (Verbal Nouns) and Tense for further remarks.

(d) *Sub-Final Clauses* (really object or subject clauses like ὅτι clauses). There are a considerable number of clauses which are not pure purpose and yet are not result. They are the bridge, in a sense, between the two extremes. They are found with verbs of striving, beseeching, commanding, fearing. In some instances the clause is hardly more than an object-clause. The same conjunctions are here used in general, and this shows that no hard and fast line was drawn in the matter. Various divisions are made of these verbs.³ Burton⁴ calls them object-clauses of exhorting, of striving, of fearing, of subject and predicate, of complementary and epexegetical clauses, of conceived result. But even so they overlap and run into one another.

(a) ὅτα. Here again the main conjunction is ὅτα. All these varieties noted by Burton are seen with ὅτα save with verbs of

² Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 198.
⁴ N. T. M. and T., p. 83.
fearing. As we have seen, there were two tendencies in the κοινή. One was the spread of the Ionic use of the inf. of purpose, the other was the wide extension of ἵνα in Western Hellenistic. So the ἵνα in the non-final or sub-final sense, once rare, now comes to be exceedingly common. The development came on soon after the close of the classical age. But Thackeray (Gr., pp. 24, 194) finds it rare in the LXX. It came to be used in almost any sense that the infinitive bore and finally displaced it. This weakened use of ἵνα is one of the characteristics of the κοινή and is richly illustrated in the N. T., particularly in the writings of John. Thus in Mt. 5:29, συμφέρει ἵνα ἀπόληται, the ἵνα clause is the subject of συμφέρει and is a subject-clause in the nominative case. There is a great variety of phrases which thus use ἵνα. So ἀρκετὸν ἵνα γένηται (Mt. 10:25; 18:6). Cf. 1 Pet. 4:3 (inf.).

See also ἱκανός ἵνα (Mt. 8:8), though elsewhere inf.; ἔξεσθαι ἵνα (Jo. 1:27), but inf. in 1 Cor. 16:4, as often; συνήθεια ἤμιθα ἵνα (Jo. 18:39); ἐλήλυθεν ὄρα ἵνα (Jo. 12:23); ἔμοι εἰς ἐλάχιστον ἐστιν ἵνα (1 Cor. 4:3); ἔμοι βρώμα ἐστιν ἵνα (Jo. 4:34); λευτερεύει ἵνα (Lu. 17:2); τοῦτο, ἵνα ἔλθῃ (Lu. 1:43); ζητεῖται ἵνα (1 Cor. 4:2); χαράν ἵνα (Ph. 2:2). Thus the ἵνα clause is seen to be either nom. or acc., simply, or in apposition with a substantive. In John the appositional use is very frequent. So αὐτῇ ἵνα (Jo. 17:3); μείζονα ταύτης, ἵνα (15:13, ablative); ἐν τούτῳ ἵνα (15:8, locative); χάριν, ἵνα (3 John 4, accusative). Cf. Jo. 6:39; 1 Jo. 3:1, 11, 23; 4:21; 2 Jo. 6; 1 Cor. 9:18; Rev. 2:21. In Jo. 15:12 ἵνα ἀγαπᾶτε (subj.) is in apposition with ἐντολή. Some of these are complementary or expository clauses. In the subject and object (or appositive) clauses the subjunctive is usually found, though occasionally the fut. ind., as in ἔφρεσθή ἵνα ἀδικήσουσιν (Rev. 9:4). See further examples of the fut. ind. in Rev. 3:9; 6:11; 13:12; 14:13 (especially common in the Apocalypse). In Rev. 9:5 we have ἐδοθῇ ἵνα μὴ ἀποκτείνωσιν αὐτούς, ἀλλ' ἵνα βασανισθήσονται. In Jo. 17:3 some MSS. read ἵνα γινώσκουσιν (read by Treg. and Tisch.). Object-clauses with ἵνα after verbs of striving, beseeching, etc., largely displace ὅπως. Many of these verbs use also the infinitive and a few retain ὅπως. Blass gives a careful list of the construction in the N. T. with each of these verbs. See also

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 205.
2 It is seen as early as Demosthenes (IV, 28).
3 Jebb in V. and D.'s Handb., p. 320.
4 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 228.
5 W.-Th., p. 338 f.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 225 f.
7 Tb.
Thayer under ἵνα (2). Cf. Acta Pauli et Theclae, 29, πρόσευξαι ὑπὲρ τοῦ τέκνου μου, ἵνα ζήσεται. With these verbs ἵνα gives the purport or object rather than the purpose. This use of ἵνα is very rare in classic Greek, though in itself not out of harmony with the Greek genius. The parallel between ἵνα in this sense and ὅτι is seen in Jo. 11:50; 1 Jo. 5:3, 9, 11. Per contra see 1 Jo. 5:13 for distinction. Cf. also ὅτι in Mt. 13:13 with ἵνα in Lu. 8:10. It is worth repeating that in the modern Greek (except in the Pontic dialect) it is universal (νά) to the exclusion of the inf. and ὅπως. It is common after verbs of saying (Thumb, Handb., p. 189). The examples in the N. T. are too numerous to give a complete list. But note ἵνα after ἀγγαρεύω (Mt. 27:32); ἀγαλλιάζομαι, (Jo. 8:56); ἀγωνίζομαι (Jo. 18:36); αἰτέομαι (Col. 1:9); ἀπαγγέλλω (Mt. 28:10). So παραγγέλλω, Mk. 6:8); ἀποστέλλω (Ac. 16:36); ἀφίμη, (Mk. 11:16); βουλεύομαι (Jo. 12:10); and συμβ. (Mt. 26:4); βλέπω (1 Cor. 16:10); γράφω (Mk. 9:12); διαστέλλομαι (many MSS. in Mt. 16:20); δέομαι (Lk. 9:40); δίδωμι (Mk. 10:37); ἐντολὴν δίδωμι (λαμβάνω), as in Jo. 11:57 (13:34; 15:12); ἐντέλλομαι (Mk. 13:34); ἐπιτιμάω (Mt. 12:16; 16:20, W. H.); ἔξορκίζω (Mt. 26:63); ἔρωτάω (Mk. 7:26); εἶπον (Mt. 4:3); and λέγω (Ac. 19:4); θέλω (Mk. 6:25); ἔστιν θέλημα (Mt. 18:14); ζηλώ (1 Cor. 14:1); ζητέω (1 Cor. 4:2); κηρύσσω (Mk. 6:12); μεριμνάω (1 Cor. 7:34); παρακαλέω (Mt. 14:36); πείθω (Mt. 27:20); ποιέω (Jo. 11:37); προσέχομαι (Mk. 14:35); συντίθεμαι (Jo. 9:22 and inf.); τίθημι (Jo. 15:16); φυλάσσομαι (2 Pet. 3:17).

This is a most interesting list. Kalker (Questiones de elocutione Polybiana, 1880. Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 20) has shown how Polybius favours ἵνα with verbs of commanding like αἰτέομαι, παραγγέλλω, etc. No real distinction in sense can here be drawn between the inf. and ἵνα. The later κοινή (and so the N. T.) carried this use of ἵνα much further than did Polybius, who had more affinity with the old literary Greek. There is no need to appeal to Latin influence for this sub-final use of ἵνα, as Moulton (p. 208) abundantly shows from the papyri. So 0. P. 744 (i/B.c.) ἐρωτῶ σὲ ἵνα μὴ ἀγωνίας, N. P. 7 (i/A.D.) ἔγραψα ἵνα σοι φυλαχθῶσί, B. U. 531 (ii/A.D.) παρακαλῶ σὲ ἵνα κατάσχης, 0. P. 121 (iii/A.D.) εἶπά σοι ἵνα δῶσωσίν. Moulton (Prol., pp. 177, 208) recalls the old jussive subj. as sufficient explanation of this use of ἵνα. Radermacher (Rh. M., LVI, 203) and Thumb (Hellen., p. 159) support Moulton against the Latin influence theory. Per contra see Goetzeler, De Polybii El., pp. 17 ff.; Kalker, Quest.; Viereck, Sermo Graeco-

1 It is found in Hom. Cf. Goodwin, M. and T., p. 128.
A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

Moulton scores his point and observes also that the inf. was not driven out by ἵνα in the papyri, see (e). Cf. A. P. 135 (ii/A.D.), ἔρωτῶ σε μὴ ὀμελεῖν μου. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 155 f.) gives numerous other examples of non-final ἵνα in papyri and inscriptions. The subj. is the usual mode employed even after secondary tenses. Thus ἔβουλεύσαντο ἵνα ἀποκτείνωσιν (Jo. 12:10). In Mk. 9:30, οὐκ ἤθελεν ἵνα τις γυναί, we have still the subj., not the opt. As already noted, ἵνα δύση in Eph. 1:17 is an optative of wish after a primary tense. It is here also the subfinal ἵνα. Cf. Phil. 14; Col. 4:12. Moulton¹ points out how closely akin are προσεύχεσθε ἵνα μὴ ἔλθητε (Mk. 14:38) and ὀρατε καὶ φυλάσσεσθε (Lu. 12:15). The paratactic origin of the ἵνα construction is thus well illustrated. "An innovation in Hellenistic is ἵνα c. subj. in commands, which takes the place of the classic ὁπως c. fut. indic."² Moulton cites a moderate number of examples of this abrupt use of ἵνα in the papyri. So F. P. 112 (99 A.D.) ἐπέχουν (=υν) ζωλλίλωι καὶ εἶνα αὐτῶν μή δυσώπησής, letter of Cicero (Attr. 6:5) ταῦτα οὖν πρῶτον μέν, ἵνα πάντα σῶζεται· δεύτερον δέ, ἵνα μηδὲ τῶν τόκων ὀλιγωρήσῃς, B. U. 48 (ii/iii A.D.). ἵνα ὀμόσε γενώμεθα. There is a doubtful ex. of this sense of ἵνα in Soph., Oed. C. 155, though ὁπως was so used.³ It appears in Arrian and Epictetus. In the modern Greek the νά clause sometimes "approaches the nature of a principal sentence" (Thumb, Handb., p. 198). But this elliptical imperative is undoubted in the N. T. Cf. Mk. 5:23, ἵνα ἔλθων ἐπιθής. So also Mt. 20:32; 1 Cor. 7:29; 2 Cor. 8:7; Eph. 4:29; 5:33. With this construction compare the asyndeton without ἵνα in Mk. 10:36, τί θέλετε ποιήσω ὑμῖν. As already explained (p. 430), this may be parataxis (two questions). Cf. ἵνα in Mk. 10:35 and Gal. 5:17.⁴

(β) ὁπως. It is much rarer in the N. T. in these constructions. It no longer occurs with the future ind. after verbs of striving.

The papyri show ὁπως occasionally in this sense also. Moulton (Prol., p. 208) cites B. M. 21 (ii/n.c.) ἡξίωσά σε ὁπως ἀποδοθῇ, while "ἀξίω c. infin. occurs in the same, papyrus." Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 141 f.) quotes Theoph. ad Autolycum, 2, 34 ἐστω σοι ἐσεῦναν τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ ὁπως δυνήσει, inscr. from Magn., 90, 12 (ii/B.C.) ἐφρονίσευν ὁπως—ἀποκαταστώσιν. The few examples in the N. T. are all in the subj. Burton notes only three (Mt. 12 14; 22:15; Mk. 3:6), and all three after συμβολίου ἔλαβον (ἐδίδον). The clause thus thus partakes of the nature of an indirect deliberative

question (cf. Mk. 11:18, πώς). They are all after secondary tenses. There are some instances in the N. T. of ὁπως after verbs of beseeching, though many verbs that in Attic had this idiom no longer have it. Thus ὁπως and the subj. occur with δέομαι. (Mt. 9:38), αἰτέομαι (Ac. 25:3), ἑρωτάω (Lu. 7:3), παρακαλέω (Mt. 8:34), προσεύχομαι (Ac. 8:15).

(γ) Μή, μή πως, μή ποτε. The usual construction in the negative sub-final clauses is ίνα μή, but a small list of verbs commonly have μή as the conjunction. This is true of verbs meaning 'to take heed,' to care for, 'fear.' It is a much narrower range than the sub-final use of ίνα. In the N. T. the subj. always occurs with μή except in Col. 2:8 βλέπετε μή τις ἔσται. Thus βλέπετε μή τις ὑμᾶς πλανήσῃ (Mt. 24:4). Treg. and Tisch. read the fut. ind. in 2 Cor. 12:21, but W. H. and Nestle rightly have ταπεινώσῃ (cf. verse 20). The pres. subj. occurs in Heb. 12:15 ἑπισκοποῦντες μή ἐνοχλητή. Elsewhere we have only the aor. subj. Thus after βλέπω (Mk. 13:5); ὀράω (Mt. 18:10); σκοπέω (Gal. 6:1); φοβέομαι, (Ac. 27:17). In Ac. 23:10 some MSS. have εὐλαβέομαι, but φοβέομαι is correct. This construction with φοβέομαι is rare in the N. T. (Luke, Paul and Hebrews) and is apparently a literary touch. Cf. Ac. 27:29. In Ac. 5:26, ἐφοβοῦντο γὰρ τὸν λαόν μή λιθασθῶσιν (note subj. after secondary tense), there is a prolepsis of τὸν λαόν. Μή πως is found after βλέπω with the aor. subj. (1 Cor. 8:9) and φοβέομαι (2 Cor. 11:3; 12:20). Cf. Gal. 2:2 in 6, (c), (δ) Pure Final Clauses. If the fear is about an object in the present or past, the ind. is used. Cf. p. 1045. Thus in Lu. 11:35, σκόπει μή —ἔστιν, and in Gal. 4:11, φοβοῦμαι ὑμᾶς μή πως εἰκή κεκοπίακα εἰς ὑμᾶς. This is in strict accord with Attic idiom. The papyri show it also (Moulton, Prol., p. 193). So Par. P. 49 (ii/B.c.) ἀγωνιῶ μή ποτε ἀρρωστεῖ, N. P. 17 (iii/A.D.) ὑφωροῦμε μή ἀρα ἐνθρωπόκων ἔλαθεν ὕδατι. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 141) adds examples of fut. ind., as Enoch 6:3, φοβοῦμαι μὴ οὐ θελήσετε; Dio Chrys., xxxiv, 44, οὐ γὰρ ἔστι κίνδυνος, μή Μᾶλλωτῶν ἐσομένων ἀσθενε- στεροὶ δῶθεται. The negative in such a clause is οὐ. Thus φοβοῦμαι μή πως οὐχ οἶνος θέλω εὖρω (2 Cor. 12:20). This is to show contrast to Cf. Col. 2:8, μή τις ἔσται—καὶ οὐ. Sometimes a verb of fearing is implied, though not expressed (cf. elliptical use of ίνα and ήνα μή). Thus Ac. 5:39, μή ποτε εὑρεθήτε. This is a possible explanation of μή ποτε οὐ μή ἀρκέσῃ (or μή ποτε οὐκ) in Mt. 25:9

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., pp. 88, 951f.
3 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 133.
(note negatives) and μὴ ποτὲ δῷ (2 Tim. 2:25). Μὴ ποτὲ is used with the aorist subj. after προσέχω (Lu. 21:34; Heb. 2:1), with a present subj. after φοβέομαι (Heb. 4:1), with a pres. opt. after διαλογίζομαι (Lu. 3:15, ind. question), with a fut. ind. after βλέπω (Heb. 3:12). These clauses are of paratactic origin. This paratactic construction survives in the use of ὅρα with the imperative (Mt. 9:30; 24:6), but even so the clause may be dependent in actual use as in Mt. 18:10; 1 Th. 5:15. Some doubt arises concerning the clauses with βλέπω which have a paratactic origin, but are practically dependent. Those in the third person are clearly so (Mk. 13:5; Ac. 13:40, etc.). This argues for a like usage in Lu. 21:8; Gal. 5:15; Heb. 12:25.

(8) The Relative Clause. It is a classic idiom for complementary relative clauses to be used in a sub-final sense. As examples of this idiom in the N. T. note ἀξίος ἔστιν ὁ παρέχει (Lu. 7:4); οὐκ ἔχω ὁ παραθήσω (11:6); οὐδένα ἔχω ὡς τειχίζω μεριμνήσω (Ph. 2:20). Cf. σχῶ τί γράψω (Ac. 25:26) and τί γράψαι οὐκ ἔχω (ib.). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 138) quotes from Achilles Tatius, IV, 16, 3, ἀπογεύσομαι τοσοῦτον ὅσον κάκεινη λάβη.

(e) The Infinitive. With verbs of exhorting, beseeching, etc., the infinitive was the normal idiom in the ancient Greek. In the N. T. it still occurs twice as often as ἵνα and ὑπός together. Some of these verbs have only the inf. in the N. T., as αἰσχύνομαι, ἀξίω, ἀσκέω, βούλομαι, δοκέω, ἐάω, ἐπιθυμεῖ, ἐπιποθεῖ, ἐπιπερίερω, κελεύω, ὁκνέω, παραίνεω, πειράω, σπουδάζω, τάσσω and compounds, φροντίζω, φοβέομαι in the sense of 'to be afraid to do' (Mt. 2:22).

Many of the verbs that use sub-final ἵνα may have the inf. also. Thus ποιήσω ὑμᾶς γενέσθαι (Mk. 1:17). So also βουλεύομαι, αἰτέομαι, προσεύχομαι, λέγω etc. Cf. ἀξίος λύσαι (Ac. 13:25) and ἀξίος ἵνα λύσω (Jo. 1:27). In 2 Cor. 9:5 the inf. is used after the ἵνα clause to express an epexegetic or complementary purpose (ταύτην ἐτοίμην ἐναί), a rather common usage. Cf. in 1 Cor. 9:15 both ἵνα and the inf. in a broken sentence. Moulton argues that in Paul the majority of cases of τοῦ with the inf. are epexegetic (Ro. 1:24; 7:3; 8:12; 1 Cor. 10:13) or adnominal (Ro. 15:23; 1 Cor. 9:10; 16:4; 2 Cor. 8:11; Ph. 3:21) or the ablative construction (Ro. 15:22; 2 Cor. 1:8). Certainly τοῦ μὴ ἐλθεῖν in Lu. 17:1 is not purpose, nor τοῦ ἐσελθεῖν in Ac. 10:25. Cf. also Mt. 21:32, τοῦ πιστεύωσα. Luke uses τοῦ and the inf. more than

1 Moulton, Prol., pp. 185, 248. 4 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 87.
2 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 89. 5 Prol., p. 218 f.
any other N. T. writer. The papyri show this non-final use of τοῦ and the inf. (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 219 f.) So B. U. 1031 (ii/A.D.) φρόνησον τοῦ ποιήσαι, B. U. 164 (ii/iii A.D.) πείσαι αὐτὸν τοῦ ἐλθεῖν, B. M. 23 (ii/B.C.) προσδεομένου μου τοῦ περιποίησαι. In Lu. 18:1, πρός τὸ δεῖν, is not final. Εἰς τό and the inf. a we find chiefly in Paul (44 examples, Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 218. Mr. H. Scott makes 50 by counting the verbs instead of the preposition). The construction is always final in the other N. T. writers. But Paul has non-final uses, as in 1 Th. 2:12; 4:9.

(ζ) Εἰ and ὅτι. In Lu. 17:2 we have λυσιτελεῖ εἰ ἔρριπται ἥνα σκανδαλίσῃ, where εἰ and ἥνα introduce subject-clauses. Cf. also εἰ= ὅτι in Mk. 9:42. In Lu. 19:21, ἐφοβοῦμην σε ὅτι ἀνθρωπός αὐστηρός εἰ, the rare use of ὅτι with φοβέομαι may be causal. It is made easier by the proleptic use of σε. The usual object-clause with ὅτι belongs to indirect discourse.

(e) Consecutive Clauses.

(a) ἦνα. It is debatable whether ἦνα has ecbatic use in the N. T. There is in itself no reason why it should not have it, since undoubtedly it was so used in the later Greek. It occurs also in modern Greek, as εἶναι να ἥπας κανεῖς τὸ μυαλὸ του, 'that is for one to lose his reason' (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 197). The parallel of the Latin ut may have had some influence on this late Greek. The development, however, was in the vernacular, and out of the sub-final use of ἦνα, and the Latin influence was not needed. There is not space to follow the long debate in the grammars and commentaries on this subject. Kuhner held that ἦνα had the ecbatic sense, but Thayer boldly accepts the verdict of Frithzsche and Winer who "have clearly shown that in all the passages adduced from the N. T. to prove the usage the telic (or final) force prevails." W. F. Moulton agreed with Winer as against Frithzsche in the admission of the sub-final use of ἦνα, but he balked at the consecutive idea. "But it does not follow that the weakened ἦνα is generally equivalent to ὅστε: this use of ἦνα is rather, as we can still perceive in most cases, an extension of eo consilio ut." Yes, in most cases, beyond a doubt. I once had just this feeling and stood against the admission of the consecutive force of ἦνα. J. H. Moulton confesses to a similar development of opinion on this subject. He had once committed himself against the ec-

---

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 455.
2 Gr., § 555, 2, Anm. 3.
4 W.-M., p. 421.
6 Prol., p. 206.
7 Intr. to N. T. Gr., p. 217.
batic ἵνα, but now he confesses himself "troubled with unsettling doubts." He boldly advocates the freedom of commentators to interpret ἵνα as the context demands (final, sub-final, consecutive). Ellicott had defended just this principle, and he is the most severely grammatical of commentators. The commentator must have grammar, but he needs the grammar of the author on whose work he is making comments. So, also Sanday and Headlam on Ro. 11:11 (μὴ ἔσται σαν ἵνα πέσωσιν) pointedly interpret it thus: ἵνα expresses the contemplated result." They appeal to Ellicott, Lightfoot and Evans in support of this laxer use of ἵνα as against Winer and the Germans. They also (p. 143) quote Chrysostom's exposition of ἵνα in Ro. 5:20: τὸ δὲ ἵνα ἔνταῦθα ὦκ αἰτιολαγίας πάλιν ἀλλ' ἐκβάσεως ἔστιν. Lightfoot admits the consecutive force of ἵνα in Gal. 5:17; 1 Th. 15:4. He is correct in both instances. See also Lu. 1:43. In Jo. 16:2, ἔρχεται ὧρα ἵνα δόξη it is almost temporal. It is argued that, where ἵνα seems to be used in a consecutive clause, it is the divine purpose that is to be considered. But certainly no such explanation is possible in Ro. 11:11. There is such a thing as the divine purpose and it is seen in Lu. 9:45, ἢν παρακαλώμενον ἁπν ἀὐτῶν ἵνα μὴ αἰσθωνται αὐτό. Cf. also Mt. 1:22, ἵνα πληρωθῇ. But surely no such purpose appears in Jo. 6:7 οὐκ ἀρκοῦσιν αὐτοῖς ἵνα ἐκαστὸς βραχὺ λάβῃ.

Here we have contemplated result, it is true, but it is result just the same. It is probably just out of this idiom (conceived result) that the use of ἵνα for actual result came. Burton admits this conceived result as in Heb. 10:36, and seeks to explain Jo. 9:2, τίς ἰματεν—ἵνα τυφλὸς γευνηθῇ; But the effort is not successful. He denies that there is a certain, "scarcely a probable, instance in the N. T. of a clause denoting actual result conceived as such." He considers Rev. 13:13, ποιεῖ σημεία μεγάλα, ἵνα καὶ πῦρ ποιή ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καταβαίνειν, as the most probable instance of ἵνα denoting actual result. But there are others just as plain, if not clearer. Thus 1 Jo. 1:9, πιστὸς ἐστιν καὶ δίκαιος, ἵνα ἀφῇ τὰ ἀμαρτίας. Blass places this beside ἀδικος ἐπιλαθέσθαι (Heb. 6:10) and thinks that the consecutive use of ἵνα grew out of the infinitive in that sense. With this Moulton agrees. Cf. also Rev. 9:20, οὗ μετενόησαν, ἵνα μὴ προσκυνήσουσιν, with οὗ μετενόησαν δοῦναι αὐτῷ δόξαν

1 Prol., p. 209.
2 On Epli. 1:17.
4 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 228.
5 N. T. M. and T., p. 92 f.
6 Ib., p. 04.
7 Ib.
8 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 224.
Note in particular 1 Jo. 3:1, where the clause καὶ ἐσμεν accents the ecbatic force of ἵνα. This use is possible also in Jo. 9:36; Mk. 11:28. In Mk. 4:22, ἐὰν μητὴ ἵνα φανερωθῇ, we have ἵνα (cf. ἀλλ` ἵνα) used like ὡστε and the inf. (cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 218). In Mk. 2:10 ἵνα we have real purpose. The consecutive ἵνα appears outside of the N. T. as in Arrian (Diss. Epict., II, 2, 16) οὗτω μωρὸς ἦν, ἵνα μηδεν. Sophocles in his Lexicon gives a quite extensive list of passages in the κοινή writers where ἵνα has the consecutive sense. He has probably claimed too many, but some of them are real instance. Even Josephus has ἵνα in the sense of conceived result.

Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 156) cites Epictetus, IV, 3, 9, ἐλευθερος γάρ εἰμι καὶ φίλος τοῦ θεοῦ ἵνα ἐκών πείθωμαι αὐτῷ. Several other examples occur in Epictetus. So, then, we conclude that ἵνα has in the N. T. all three uses (final, sub-final, consecutive), and thus runs a close parallel with the infinitive which it finally displaced. Sophocles cites several examples of consecutive ἵνα from the LXX. One of these is certainly pertinent, Wisdom of Sol. 13:9, for ἵνα δύνωνταί follows τοσοῦτον and ἵνα has the force of ὡστε.

(β) ὡστε. This conjunction is merely ὡς and τέ= 'and so.' In Homer ὡς is both a demonstrative and a relative. Either idea may appear in ὡστε. It is really a comparative particle. In the early writers the inf. was more common than the ind. with ὡστε. Thus in Euripides the inf. occurs 130 times to 20 indicatives. In Thucydides it is 144 to 82, but in Plato it is 253 to 240. The consecutive sentence began with the inf. and was extended to the finite verb. In late Greek it returned to the inf. construction. Cf. Green, Diodorus and the Peloponnesian War, 1899, p. 21. Of the 95 instances of ὡστε in the N. T. probably 30 do not come up for discussion under either final or consecutive clauses. The word in these examples is merely an introductory inferential particle like all. The structure is wholly paratactic. In this sense of 'therefore' the particle occurs with the ind. nineteen times.

Cf. Mt. 12:12, ὡστε ἔξεστιν. Once the subj. appears, 1 Cor. 5: 8, ὡστε ἐορτάζωμεν. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 161) even quotes P. Oxy. IV, 743, 27 (ii/B.C.) ὡστε δὲν τοῦτο σε θέλω γινώσκειν, and there are other instances like it. The other eleven instances have the

---

5 Mr. H. Scott makes 95 times by counting the verbs, Geden 83.
imper. (pres.). Cf. ὠστε βλεπέτω (1 Cor. 10:12). See 1 Cor. 3:21; 11:33, etc. Of the hypotactic examples 62 have the infinitive and only two the indicative. In the Attic Greek actual result was expressed by ὠστε and the indicative, while ὠστε and the inf. (so as to) denoted a result naturally or necessarily following the preceding cause. In the N. T. there are only two instances of the ind. with ὠστε (as a hypotactic conjunction). They are Jo. 3:16, ὅτως γὰρ ἠγάπησεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν κόσμον ὠστε τὸν υἱὸν τὸν μονογενῆ ἔδωκεν, and Gal. 2:13, καὶ συνυπεκρίθησαν αὐτῷ οἱ λοιποὶ Ἰουδαῖοι ὠστε καὶ Βαρνάβας συναπῆχθη αὐτῶν τῇ ὑποκρίσει. Here the actual result is distinctly accented. Blass on the flimsiest grounds seeks to oust ὠστε in Jo. 3:16 by ὅτι and to put the inf. in Gal. 2:13, so as to get rid of this construction entirely in the N. T. Moulton rightly shows small patience with such "summary" methods in textual criticism. The construction with the ind. is not quite obsolete in the vernacular κοινή, but in the LXX it is almost absent. This classic idiom stands, therefore, in the N. T., but only to make the contrast sharper. Of the 62 instances of ὠστε with the inf. in the N. T. they are nearly all consecutive, not final nor even sub-final. Even in the classical Greek the inf. with ὠστε in the sense of actual result was displacing the ind. and in the vernacular it grew rapidly. Cf. ὠστε—ἀπολελύσθαι, B. G. U. 27 (ii/A.D.). This is a distinct encroachment on the old idiom and has a wider range than in Attic. In Ac. 14:1 note ὅτως ὠστε. See Mt. 13:32 ὠστε ἔλθειν τὰ πετεινὰ τοῦ ωρανοῦ καὶ κατασκευασθοῦν ἐν τοῖς κλάδοις αὐτοῦ, (Mk. 4:37) ὠστε ἡ ἡγεσίς ἑθελεῖ σκοταδίσθαι τὸ πλοίον, (Ac. 15:39) ὠστε ἀποκρυφίζεσθαι αὐτοὺς ἡ ἀλήθεια. Tatian took ὠστε consecutive in Lu. 4:29 (Moulton, Prol., p. 249). Consecutive ὠστε and inf. is too common in the inscriptions and papyri for Radermacher to mention (N. T. Gr., p. 160). We do not have ὠστε after a comparative (ἡ ὠστε) in the N. T. There is no example of ὠστε nor of ἐφ᾽ ὠστε in the sense of 'on condition that.' In Gal. 2:9 ἵνα has practically that idea.

(γ) Ὅξ. Thayer considers that in Heb. 3:11 and 4:3 we have the consecutive use of Ὠξ. It is a quotation from the LXX (Ps. 94:11) and is possible, though the simple 'as' is sufficient. But

1 Goodwin, M. and T., pp. 223 ff.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 224.
3 Prol., p. 209.
5 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 224.
6 In Xen. Ws rather than ὠστε occurs both with the inf. and the modes. Cf. Wehmann, De ὠστε particulae usu Heroditeo Thucydideo Xenophonneo, 1891, p. 40.
(δ) "Ωτί. There is no doubt about the consecutive use of OT in the later Greek.1 We find it in the LXX, as in Ex. 3:11, τίς εἴμι ἐγὼ Ότι πορεύσομαι πρὸς Φαραώ; Cf. also 2 Ki. 8:13. The instances in the N. T. are not numerous, but they are very clear. Thus Mk. 4:1, τίς ἁρα οὔτός εὗτον Ότι καὶ ο ἀνέμος καὶ ή θάλασσα ὑποακούει αὐτῷ; In Mt. 8:27 note ποταπός Ότι (cf. οὔτως ὡστε). See also Heb. 2:6 (Ps. 8:5); Lu. 4:36. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 160) quotes Acta Christophori, 68, 18, οἱ άνθρωποι έστων ίνεν οἱ Θεοί ὑπὸ ἐνυακίσις έκκινήσαν. Moulton (Prol., p. 249) gives τί διδοῖς τοῖς άμνοῖς σου, ὃ ἐκεῖνον εὔχομαι; Pelagia, 20. It occurs in Theocritus 25 μέγας—τοσούτων Ότι—διέκοψα, x, 14 ἐς τοσούτων Ότι. C. Abbott (Joh. Gr., p. 534) takes Ότι as consecutive in Jo. 14:22, τί γέγονεν ὃ ἡμῖν μέλλεις ἐμφανίζειν; Abbott finds no instance of consecutive Ότι in the Egyptian papyri. The idiom is common in the late Greek. Akin to it is the modern Greek use of ποῦ as consecutive (Thumb, Handb., p. 197). The same idea is found in Jo. 7:35.

(e) The Relative. This is a common classic idiom. The mode is the ind. and the negative οὐ.2 In Latin the subj. is the mode with qui. The tense is usually the fut. ind., though the construction is rare3 in the κοινή. But one may note in the N. T., Mt. 10:26 and in particular 24:2, οὐ μὴ ἄφες τοῦ δὲ λίθος ἐπὶ λίθου δὲ οὐ καταλυθήσεται. See also Lu. 8:17; 1 Cor. 6:5; Ro. 8:32. In Jo. 5:7, ἀνθρώπων οὐκ ἐξεύρετα τοὺς είναι βάλη; we see ένα usurping this province of the relative. Cf. Rev. 19:15. See "Relative" under Sub-final.

(ζ) The Infinitive. The inf. with ὡστε has been discussed, but we have left the simple inf., the articular (τοῦ) inf., εἰς τό and the inf. There are apparently examples of each construction in the N. T. Thus the simple inf. of result is seen in Lu. 1:54, ἀντελάβετο Ἰσραήλ παιδὸς αὐτοῦ μνησθήσαντα ἔλεος; at any rate it is used here very freely. Blass4 considers the infinitives in Lu. 1:72 used "quite incoherently." But in Ac. 5:3 ψεύσασθαι has a consecutive idea, as has ἐπιλαθέσθαι in Heb. 6:10. See also ἀνωτέρας in Rev. 5:5 and δούλως in 16:9. Cf. Lu. 1:76, 78 f. It is probable that originally the Dative –ας in the inf., δόμεναι as opposed to δόμεν.
expressed "designed result" (Moulton, *Prol.*, pp. 204, 207), but this idea shrank into the background. This idiom is found in the papyri, as in O. P. 526 (ii/A.D.), οὐκ ἡμν ϟἀπαθης ἀλόγως σε ἀπολείπειν. Meyer on Ro. 7:3, τὸ νη ἐγναι, argues that τὸ ν and the infinitive never expresses result, a position which I once held. But the evidence is too strong to resist. See Infinitive for distinction between actual and hypothetical result. Radermacher (*N. T. Gr.*, p. 154) quotes *Acta Barnabae*, 10, μὴ βιάση Βαρνάβαν τὸ νη πορεύεσθαι, as consecutive. The idiom is not common in the papyri as is true of τὸ ν and infinitive. (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 220). It belongs chiefly to the LXX and Byzantine writers, and Moulton puts it in "the higher stratum of education in the main." The epexegetical use occurs, as in C. P. R. 156 ἐξοσίαν—τὸ ν—θέσθαι, O. P. 275 τὸ ν ἀποσπασθήμαι ἐπίτειμον. This construction (τὸ ν and the infinitive) had a very wide development in the N. T. in opposition to the encroachments of ἰνα. See Lu. 17:1 and Ac. 10:25, where τὸ ν and the infinitive is practically the subject of the verb (cf. original dative and locative cases). Luke has two-thirds of the examples of τὸ ν and the infinitive in the N. T. Only half of these (in Gospel and Acts) seem clearly final according to Moulton. He holds that of the 13 examples in Paul none are unmistakably final, though Ro. 6:6 and Ph. 3:10 are probably so. In both instances τὸ ν and the infinitive is epexegetical of a ἰνα clause (Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 218). In Paul 'so as to' will usually express his idea with τὸ ν and the infinitive. A clear instance in Luke is seen in Ac. 7:19, ἐκάκωσεν τοὺς πατέρας τὸ ν ποιεῖν—'so as to make.' Blass cites a parallel from the LXX (1 Ki. 17:20), σὺ ἐκάκωσας τοὺς θανατώσαι τὸ ν υἱὸν αὐτῆς. Other LXX instances are Gen. 3:22; 19:21; Is. 5:14. Cf. Ro. 7:3 (epexegetical use, consec., p. 1067), τὸ ν μη ἐγναι. It is probable in Lu. 9:51; Ac. 18:10; 20:3; 27:1; Ro. 1:24. Cf. τὸ ν ἐρωτήσαι and ὡς καταγάγης in Ac. 23:20. So with εἰς τό and the infinitive. Its most natural signification is aim or purpose, but, just as with ἰνα, so here result is sometimes the idea. Meyer in his note on Ro. 1:20, εἰς τό ἐγναι αὐτοῦς ἀναπολογήτους, insists that the meaning of εἰς τό is always purpose. In this particular instance divine purpose may be the idea, though result is the probable conception. See Sanday and Headlam *in loco*. Ellicott on 1 Th. 2:12, εἰς τό περιπατεῖν (after παρακαλοῦντες κτλ.), admits the sub-final use of εἰς τό (cf. ἰνα) after verbs of exhorting (cf. 1 Th. 3:10), though denying the ecbatic use. But it is only a step to go on and that

---

2 Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 156.  
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 236.
MODE (ΕΓΚΛΑΙΣΙΣ) 1003

the N. T. writers took. See the epexegetic use of εἰς τό in 1 Th. 4:9. Winer¹ admitted the consecutive use of εἰς τό and the inf. as in 2 Cor. 8:6, as εἰς τό παρακαλέσαι ἡμᾶς Τίτου, 'so that we besought Titus.' This idiom is not present in the Johannine writings, though it is very frequent in Paul's writings especially Ro. and 1 Th.) and Hebrews. Notice ταχὺς εἰς τό ἀκοῦσαι, βραδὺς εἰς τό λαλῆσαι (Jas. 1:19). In Heb. 11:3, εἰς τό γεγονέναι, we have a clear example of result. Note the perfect tense with notion of permanence.² See also φρονεῖν εἰς τό σωφρονεῖν (Ro. 12:3), where purpose is impossible. Cf. Gal. 3:17. As to πρὸς τό and the inf. the point is not clear. Purpose is undoubtedly present as in Mt. 6:1; Eph. 6:11, and there is total absence of purpose in Lu. 18:1, πρὸς τό δέιν. It is not certain, in spite of Blass' comment,³ that in the N. T. πρὸς τό expresses result. In Mt. 5:28, πρὸς τό ἐπιθυμήσαι, either purpose or result is possible. W. F. Moulton⁴ denies that the idiom ever conveys mere result, but admits that it may have subjective purpose as in 1 Th. 2:9. J. H. Moulton⁵ holds that this is the idea in all the four examples in Paul's writings. See further 2 Th. 3:8; 2 Cor. 3:13.

7. WISHES. The use of the optative for a future wish like αἰγιάσαι (1 Th. 5:23), μὴ γένοιτο (Gal. 6:14), is not a hypotactic construction. This is pure parataxis and has already been discussed under the Optative.⁶ See Optative Mode. The only hypotactic sentence for the expression of a wish in the N. T. is that with ὅφειλω, which comes in the late Greek to be used as a particle. Even here it is possible to regard the construction as paratactic, but note εἰ γάρ and εἴθε. It is the second aorist ind. of ὅφειλω without the augment. Ὅφελον, with the inf. occurs in Herodotus, and the form is thus probably Ionic.⁷ For κοινὴ parallels see "Impossible Wishes" under Indicative Mode. Cf. Ὅφελον συνίστασθαι in 2 Cor. 12:11. It is found in the LXX⁸ as a conjunction, as in Ex. 16:3, Ὅφελον ὧπεθάνομεν. Cf. Num. 14:2; 20:3. Moulton⁹ suggests that its application to the second and

¹ W.-M., p. 413 f.    ³ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 236.
⁵ Prol., p. 218. See further Ogden, De infinitivi finalis vel consecutiviv constructione apud priscos poetas Graecos, 1913.
See ch. on "Wishes" in my Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 157.
⁶ Moulton, Prol., p. 201.
⁷ In W.-Sch., p. 29, reference is made to εἰ Ὅφελον ἐφύλαξας in Job 14:13 and εἰ γάρ Ὅφελον δυναίμην in Job 30:24. Evidently Ὅφελον was not felt to be sufficient alone.
⁸ Prol., p. 201.
third persons is due to the meaning ‘I would’ rather than ‘thou shouldst.’ As a matter of fact its use in the N. T. is very limited, though εἰθε and εἰ γάρ are wanting as particles of wishing. For a wish about the past we have the aorist ind. So ὄφελον γε ἔβασιλεύσατε (1 Cor. 4:8). Cf. Ps. 118 (119):5. For a wish about the present we have the imperfect ind. So 2 Cor. 11:1, ὄφελον ἄνειξεμεν, and Rev. 3:15, ὄφελον ής. The Text. Rec. here has ὄφελον ἐίς, but it is baseless. However, we do find the fut. ind. for a future wish. So Gal. 5:12, ὄφελον ἀποκόψεσθαι. Wishes as a separate idiom are vanishing in the N. T. But ὄφελον appears in Lucian, Athenagoras, Greg. Naz., Socrates. Cf. Sophocles' Lexicon. To compensate for this loss we have the strong asseverations with οὐ μὴ (Mt. 13:14), the use of εἴ like the Hebrew מָי (Mk. 8:12; Heb. 4:3), εἴ μὴν (Heb. 6:14), the use of the participle like the Hebrew inf. absolute (Mt. 13:14). The distinction between wish and supposition with εἴ was sometimes hard to make in Homer.1 The relation between wishes and conditions is not clear.

8. CONDITIONAL SENTENCES.

(a) Two Types. No hypotactic clause is more important than this. For some reason the Greek conditional sentence has been very difficult for students to understand. In truth the doctors have disagreed themselves and the rest have not known how to go. The theory of Hermann, followed by most Germans (Winer,2 Blass3), is the one that I learned from Broadus and have expounded in my Short Grammar.4 It is also that of Gildersleeve.5 This theory in brief is that there are four classes of conditions which fall into two groups or types. The two types are the determined and the undetermined. The point in "determined" is that the premise or condition is assumed to be true (or untrue). A positive statement is made in either case and the conclusion follows logically from this premise. The indicative is the one used for this type (the first and second class conditions, real and unreal, or fulfilled and unfulfilled). The other type is the undetermined condition. Naturally the indicative is not allowed here. The element of uncertainty calls for the subj. or the optative. The difference therefore between the third and fourth class conditions is just that between the subj. and the opt. They are both modes of doubtful, hesitating affirmation, but the optative

2 W.-M., pp. 363 ff.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 213 f.
4 Pp. 161
is more remote than the subj. In this type the premise is not assumed to be either true or untrue. The point is in the air and the cloud gathers round it. But there is less mist over the subj. than the opt. In broad outline this is the classification of the conditional sentences which I hold to be true. Thompson is surely right in saying that no division can claim any higher right than that of convenience and intelligibility, except that I should like to add that the exposition should be in harmony with the facts of the historical development of the Greek language. There is no nobler achievement in syntax than the Greek conditional sentence before it broke down from the loss of the optative and the future indicative. In the modern Greek it is therefore a wreck, and there is corresponding obscurity between the various classes of conditions, as in English, in spite of special developments to make atonement for the loss. In broad outline these four classes of conditions may be termed Reality, Unreality, Probability, Possibility. The word Probability is, however, too strong a term for the third-class condition (εάν and the subj.). La Roche prefers "objektive Möglichkeit" for the third class and "subjektive Möglichkeit" for the fourth class (εἰ and the opt.). This is also the language of Winer, "objective possibility" and "subjective possibility." Farrar prefers the words Possibility, Impossibility, Slight Probability, Uncertainty. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 142) calls εἰ with ind. "objektiv," έαν with subj. "an sich objektiv," εἰ with opt. "subjektiv," εἰ with past tenses of ind. "Irrealitât." So it goes. Radermacher thinks also that, to understand the Greek conditions, we must distinguish sharply between the vernacular and the κοινή ("so müssen wir Scharf scheiden zwischen Volkssprache and der Koine"), a mistaken view in my judgment. It is best to use κοινή for both the vernacular and literary language. This brings us face to face with the other theory, the one adopted by Farrar. It was expounded by Goodwin and has had quite a vogue in America and England. This theory calls for "particular" and "general" suppositions as a fundamental element. This is a false step in itself. As

---

1 Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 296.
3 Beitr. zur griech. Gr., 1893, pp. 14, 18. He uses "Wirklichkeit" and "Irrealität" (pp. 8, 28) for the others.
4 W.-M., p. 364.
5 Gk. Synt., p. 156 f.
7 Adopted by Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 296.
Gildersleeve\textsuperscript{1} shows, each of the four classes of conditions may be particular or general. That point has no bearing on the quality of the condition. Goodwin's past general supposition, where alone a show of distinct structure is made, is a mixed condition (see later under fourth class condition): But the point on which I wish to attack Goodwin's scheme is chiefly in his definition of the first and second class conditions. That involves the third also, as will be seen. Goodwin confuses the "fact" with the "statement" of the fact. He describes the first condition thus: "When the protasis \textit{simply states} a present or past particular supposition, implying nothing as to the fulfilment of the condition, it takes a present or past tense of the indicative with $\epsilon_{1}$." The words to which I object, besides "particular," are "implying nothing as to the fulfilment of the condition." This condition \textit{pointedly} implies the fulfilment of the condition. It is the condition of actuality, reality, \textit{Wirklichkeit}, and not mere "possibility" as Farrar has it (see above) \textit{a la} Goodwin. This is the \textit{crux} of the whole matter. Once see that the first class condition with the ind. implies the reality of the premise, all else follows naturally. In the discussion of the second class condition Goodwin\textsuperscript{2} properly says: "When the protasis states a present or past supposition, implying that the condition is not or was not fulfilled, etc." This is the condition of \textit{unreality} as the other is that of \textit{reality} and the indicative is, of course, used with both. Hence the subj. and the opt. conditions fall apart to themselves as undetermined. The point about all the four classes to note is that the form of the condition has to do only with the \textit{statement}, not with the absolute truth or certainty of the matter. Examples will be given directly to show that the second class condition is sometimes used where the fact is just the opposite. The same thing is true of the first class condition. We must distinguish always therefore between the fact and the \textit{statement} of the fact. The conditional sentence deals only with the statement. This point is clearly seen in Kuhnerr-Gerth, II, p. 465, except that the third class is lost sight of and merged with the first. Burton\textsuperscript{3} follows Goodwin through all his

\textsuperscript{2} M. and T., p. 147.  
\textsuperscript{3} N. T. M. and T., pp. 100 ff. Farnell (Gk. Conditional and Rel. Sent., 1892) also follows Goodwin, as does R. H. Smith (The Theory of Cond. Sent. in Gk. and Lat., 1894).
ramifications. A word further is demanded by way of warning. One must not try to explain the Greek condition by the English or German translation. The English is often hopelessly ambiguous, while the Greek is perspicuous if one will only give it a chance to speak for itself. The true explanation is only possible by the approach from the Greek standpoint. And that is by the mode, not by ei or ἐάν. Ἐάν is nothing but ei ἄν. The ἄν is not essential to either protasis or apodosis. Homer used ei with the subj. with or without κέ or ἄν. The Attic Greek sometimes has ei ἄν with the opt. and Demosthenes used ei ἄν with the past ind. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 127) quotes Joh. Philop. De aeternitate 430, 28 (iii/A.D.) ei—ηδύνατο ἄν. He gives also (p. 163) κάν—βοιθοῖ, Diod. XI, 37, 3; ἐάν μη—ῥύσαιτο, Diod. I, 77, 3. The modern Greek uses ἄν (for ἐάν) with any tense of the ind. (Thumb, Handb., p. 194). There is no principle involved in ἄν, simply custom. In modern Greek the subj. is used, of course, more freely since the fut. ind. and the opt. have vanished. Jolly holds that the ind. was a later development with conditional sentences in Greek and that the first attempt was made with the subj. and the opt. He thinks that the use of the ind. was the result of a clearer conception of the logical possibilities of the conditional clause. The subj. was more common in the Zend and the Sanskrit (and Latin) than in the Greek. Here as always ἄν is difficult to explain. "Now it has a definite reference, now it is indefinite. Sometimes the reference is supplied by the context, sometimes by the opposite." See The Use of ἄν in Relative Sentences in this chapter. We shall first examine the standard forms of the conditional sentence and then note the variations and modifications.

(b) Four Classes.

(a) Determined as Fulfilled. This class of condition assumes the condition to be a reality and the conclusion follows logically and naturally from that assumption. Gildersleeve (Am. Jour. of Philol., 1882, p. 435) observes that this is the favourite condition: "It is the favourite condition when one wishes to be or seem fair, the favourite condition when one is sure of the premiss." The construction is ei (sometimes ἐάν) and any tense of the in-

6 The origin of ei is uncertain. Ei is the same as al in Homer (and Doric).
dicative in the protasis. The apodosis varies very greatly. It all depends on what one is after, whether mere statement, prediction, command, prohibition, suggestion, question. Hence the apodosis may be in the indicative (any tense) or the subjunctive or the imperative. There is no necessary correspondence in tense between protasis and apodosis. The variation in the mode of the apodosis has no essential bearing on the force of the condition. This condition, therefore, taken at its face value, assumes the condition to be true. The context or other light must determine the actual situation. The apodosis is the principal clause, but since the protasis is the premise, the protasis usually precedes the apodosis. The apodosis may be declarative or interrogatory, positive or negative. This condition is so frequent in the N. T. that no exhaustive list can be given, but representative examples must suffice. Thus in Mt. 12:27, εἴ ἐγὼ ἐν Βεζεβούλ ἐκβάλλω τὰ δαίμονια, οἱ υἱοὶ υμῶν ἐν τίνι ἐκβάλλουσιν; This is a good example (cf. also Gal. 5:11) to begin with, since the assumption is untrue in fact, though assumed to be true by Jesus for the sake of argument. The question is a reductio ad absurdum. In verse 26, εἴ ὁ Σατανᾶς τὸν Σατανᾶν ἐκβάλλει, ἐφ᾽ ἐαυτόν ἐμερίσθη, there is the additional point of change of tense in the apodosis. He was already divided against himself, in that case, before he casts himself out. But the tense may be merely due to a quick change of view-point as accomplished (timeless aorist in reality). This point comes out well in verse 28, εἴ δὲ ἐν πνεύματι θεοῦ ἐγὼ ἐκβάλλω τὰ δαίμονια, ἃρα ἐφθασεν ἐφ᾽ υμᾶς η βασιλεία. Note ἃρα with the aorist. For the past ind. in both clauses see Ac. 11:17 (εἴ ἔδωκεν, τίς ἡμῖν); 1 Cor. 15:2; Rev. 20:15 (εἴ τις οὐχ εὕρεθη, ἐβλήθη). For the present ind. in both clauses note Mt. 19:10 (εἴ οὔτως ἐστίν — οὐ συμφέρει); Ro. 8:9; Jo. 15:18; 1 Cor. 15:12. The presence of the perfect in protasis (15:14, 17, 19) or apodosis (15:13, 16) does not vary the point. In 2 Cor. 2:5, the perfect is followed by the perfect. The fut. ind. may, though rarely in the N. T., occur in both clauses, as in Mt. 26:33 (εἴ σκανδαλίσθησονται, σκανδαλίσθη—σομαι). Cf. Mk. 14:29; Lu. 19:40; 1 Cor. 3:15; 2 Tim. 2:12; 1 Cor. 3:14 f. But such little niceties cut no figure in this construction. There is perfect liberty to mix the tenses ad libitum. So past and present (Lu. 19:8 f.; 11:18; 2 Cor. 7:8, 14; Ro.

Lange (Der horn. Gebr. der Partikel Εἴ) makes it exclamatory. But Hale (The Orig. of Subj. and Opt. Cond. in Gk., Harv. Stu. in Class. Philol., 1901) treats it as a demonstrative in the locative case, meaning 'in that case.' This is more probable.
4:2; 15:27; 1 Jo. 4:11), past and future (Jo. 3:12; 15:20; Lu. 16:11), present and future (Mt. 17:4; Jo. 5:47; 11:12; Ac. 5:39; 19:39; Ro. 8:11). In 1 Cor. 9:11 εἰ ἔσπειραμεν and εἰ θερίσομεν occur side by side. Examples of the imperative in the apodosis occur as in Mk. 4:23 εἰ τις ἔχει ὑτα ἀκούειν, ἀκουέτω. Cf. Mt. 5:29; 8:31; Lu. 4:3; Ac. 16:15; Jo. 7:4; 18:23. In Lu. 4:3, εἰ υἱὸς εἰ τοῦ θεοῦ, εἰπέ, we have a good example of the first class condition. The devil would not, of course, use the second class (assumed to be untrue), for that would be an affront to Christ. The third and fourth classes would throw doubt on the point. The temptation, to have force, must be assumed as true. The devil knew it to be true. He accepts that fact as a working hypothesis in the temptation. He is anxious to get Jesus to prove it, as if it needed proof for Christ's own satisfaction and for his reception. If the devil used Aramaic, then we have Christ's own translation of it or that of the Evangelist. In Jo. 18:23 (εἰ κακῶς ἐλάλησα, μαρτύρησον περί τοῦ κακοῦ), however, the assumption is not a fact, though Christ treats it as such for argument's sake. Cf. Lu. 23:35, 37. In Jo. 20:15 note the aorist ind. (εἰ ἐβάστασα) and the imper. (εἰπέ). Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 215) takes εἰ θέλεις in the late κοινή to be like the French s'il vous plait. Cf. Mt. 17:4. For the subj. in the apodosis note Gal. 5:25, εἰ ζωμεν πνεύματι, πνεύματι καὶ στοιχώμεν. The use of εἶ with the ind. is rather more frequent in the late κοινή. Finally εἰ came to be "a mere literary alternative." ¹ In the κοινή in Pisidia and Phrygia ἐάν occurs with the aorist ind., the pres. ind. and the future ind. as well as with the subj. ² The papyri examples are unmistakable, as ἐάν δεῖ in Tb. P. 58 (ii/B.C.), ἐάν οἶδεν B. U. 546 (Byz.), ἐάν φαίνεται, A. P. 93 (ii/A.D.), ἐάν δὲ εἰσίν 0. P. (ii/A.D.), ἐάν κελεύεις 0. P. 1150, 2 f. (vi/A.D.), ἐάν μαχοῦσιν Par. P. 18, ἐάνπερ ἑκπληρώσουσιν Par. P. 62 (ii/B.c.). ³ Radermacher (N. T. Gr., pp. 83, 163) cites others from the papyri and inscriptions. So Heberdey-Wilhelm, Reisen, p. 137, ἐάν δὲ τις θήσει; Eum. Hippiatr., p. 244, 30, ἐάνπερ ἐνόρχης ἐστίν. Perhaps examples like ἐάν ἦν are not to be counted as instances, since ἦν for ἦ is sometimes subj. ⁴ In general, the difference between εἰ and ἐάν is considerably lessened in the κοινή, though it must be

² Compernass, De Sermone, p. 35 f.  
³ Moulton, ProL., p. 168.  
⁴ Ib., pp. 49, 168, 187; Cl. Rev., XVIII, p. 108. For the usage of the LXX see Sterenberg, The Use of Cond. Sent. in the Alex. Version of the Pentateuch, 1908.
remembered that ἐὰν was never confined to the subj. nor εἰ to the ind. and opt. Ἐδών ἡσαυ occurs in Job 22:3, and Moulton\(^1\) quotes it from Hb. P. 78 (iii/B.c.) as "certainly subj." Cf. also ἐὰν ἡσαυ Tb. P. 333 (iii/A.D.), and a number of undoubted examples of ἐὰν with past, present and future tenses of the ind. from κοινὴ writers are given in Sophocles' Lexicon under ἐὰν. Thayer calls it "a somewhat negligent use, met with from the time of Aristotle on."

It was just a normal development in the κοινὴ till in the modern Greek ἂν, is used indifferently with either ind. or subj. So ἂν τὸ ’κανεῖς, ‘if you did so,’ ἂν διψᾷς, ‘if you thirst’ (Thumb, Handb., p. 194 f.). Theophylact in his Proem to Luke has ἐὰν μὴ ἔθάρρει, In the N. T. we note ἐὰν οἶδαμεν (1 Jo. 5:15); ἐὰν στήκετε (1 Th. 3:8), where the distinction is clear between the two modes (ind. and subj.). In 1 Th. 3:8 BD have στήκητε, but in Lu. 6:34 there is considerable support for ἐὰν δανείζετε, as there is for ἐὰν τε ἀποθυμήσκομεν in Ro. 14:8. In Gal. 1:8 a few MSS. read ἐὰν εὐάγγελίζεται. It is possible to treat ἐὰν μαρτυρῶ as pres. ind., Jo. 5:31; 8:14. There is undue scepticism on Blass' part\(^2\) concerning ἐὰν and the fut. ind. It is true that the MSS. are generally divided, but there is no real room for doubt about following Β的理念 in Ac. 8:31, ἐὰν δοθηγησεί, except for possible itacism with –η. That is possible also in Rev. 2:5 where W. H. read ἐὰν μετανοησῆς. But there is no room for itacism in Mt. 18:19 ἐὰν συμφωνησοῦσιν, supported by ΒΔΕΛ Δ 33, although rejected by W. H. and Nestle (FGKM have –ωσιν), nor in Lu. 19:40 ἐὰν σιωπησοῦσιν, nor in Rev. 2:22 ἐὰν μὴ μετανοησοῦσιν. In Mt. 18:19 the editors seem unwilling to follow the MS. evidence for the fut. ind. It is mere tradition to feel that ἐὰν has to have the subj. Besides, we have ἐὰν ἔση and ἐὰν μηκέτι προσθησῶ Hermas, Mand. V, 1. 2 and Mand. IV, 3. 7. In Lev. 22:9 we find ἐὰν βεθηλῶσουσιν. There is at any rate no great difference in the resultant sense between the fut. ind. and the aor. subj. and it was a very natural development. Cf. Homer's use of κέ with both. But, when all is said, as a matter of fact, in the N. T. as in the κοινὴ generally, the rule is for εἰ to appear with the incl. and ἐὰν with the subj. In 1 Cor. 7:5 we have εἰ μὴτι ἄν (bracketed by W. H.) without a verb. It is matched by the papyri\(^3\). Thus B. U. 326 εἰ τι ἐὰν — καταλίπω, 0. P. 105 (ii/A.D.) εἰ τι ἄλλο αἰᾶν (ἐ)γρω, B. M. 233 (iv/A.D.) εἰ τι ἄν — ἀναλωσῆς, Tb. P. 28 (ii/B.C.) εἰ κἂν δύναται. In these the modal ἄν (ἐὰν) is separated from εἰ and used as if with ὅς, ὅπου. Rader-

\(^1\) Prol., p. 168.
\(^2\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 215.
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol., p. 169.
macher (*N. T. Gr.*, p. 162) cites also Joh. Philop., *De aetern.*, p. 85, 19, εἰ οὐκ ἀν—ὑπέρχῃ. Deissman\(^1\) sees no analysis of ἐὰν μὴ τι in this, though Moulton contends for this explanation. The use of ἐὰν πέρικείται in Mk. 9:42 in the sense of ὅτι Blass (*Gr. of N. T. Gk.*, p. 215) calls "quite incorrect." He means it is not "classic." Note the irony in 1 Cor. 14:38, εἰ τίς ἀγνοεῖ, ἀγνοεῖται.

The negative of the protasis in the first class condition is practically always οὐ in the N. T. We have εἰ οὐ as a rule, not εἰ μὴ. In the classic Greek the rule was to use εἰ μὴ, and εἰ οὐ appeared only where the οὐ coalesced with a single word (the verb generally) or for sharp antithesis or emphasis.\(^2\) But in the N. T., as in the koine generally and occasionally in the Attic,\(^3\) we meet εἰ οὐ in the condition of the first class. Jannaris\(^4\) notes 34 examples of εἰ οὐ in the N. T., but Moulton\(^5\) finds only 31 of this class of condition. There are only two in the second, so that there is a slight discrepancy. In truth εἰ μὴ occurs only five times with the simple logical condition, and the examples are not quite normal except the one in Mk. 6:5, οὐκ ἐδύνατο εἰ μὴ ἐθαράπευσεν (a simple past condition), and in 1 Tim. 6:3, εἰ τίς—μὴ προσέρχεται. (Blass calls this an "abnormal" instance from the literary style and unlike the N. T. idiom). But see 1 Cor. 15:2 ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ εἰκῇ ἐπιστεύσατε, 2 Cor. 13:5 εἰ μὴ τίνι δικαίμοι ἐστε, Gal. 1:7 εἰ μὴ τινὲς εἰσιν. Elsewhere the negative is οὐ. This is in harmony with the meaning of οὐ and the ind. mode. The definite negative goes with the definite mode. This is the condition of supposed reality and εἰ οὐ is the natural combination. In general Blass\(^6\) is correct in saying that οὐ is the negative of the ind. and of the other modes including the inf. and part. This, of course, was not the Attic standard, but that was hopelessly gone even for the Atticists.\(^7\) In the modern Greek δὲν, (from οὐδὲν) supplants οὐ with the ind. and μὴ(ν) goes with the subj. That is the goal, as Moulton observes,\(^8\) which is not yet reached in the N. T., for μὴ occurs in questions of doubt with the ind. and εἰ μὴ still holds on. Even in the modern Greek, Thumb (*Handb.*, p. 195) gives δὲν, with subj. or ind. in conditions as ἃ δὲν πιστεύσης and ἃ δὲν πήγαινα.

---

1 B. S., p. 204.  
2 W.-Th., p. 477.  
4 Ib.  
5 Prol., T.  
macher (N. T. Gr., p. 172) cites Pap. Wess. xxvi, εἶ οὐ δίδοταί. But the point to get clear is that in the first class condition the normal negative in the κοινὴ is εἶ οὐ. Moulton counts the idiom 6 times in Luke, 3 in John, 16 in Paul, 2 in James, and one each in Matthew, Hebrews, 2 Peter and Revelation. As examples take Lu. 18:4 εἰ καὶ τὸν θεὸν οὐ φοβοῦμαι οὐδὲ ἀνθρωπὸν ἐντρέπομαι and Jo. 1:25 εἰ σὺ οὐκ εἶ ὁ Χριστός. In the latter case the negative is very emphatic. So in Jo. 5:47 εἰ οὐ πιστεύετε. Cf. further Lu. 12:26; 16:11, 31; Jo. 3:12; Ro. 11:21; 1 Cor. 15:13, 15-17; 2 Th. 3:10. Sometimes οὐ practically coalesces with the verb, as in Lu. 14:26; 1 Cor. 7:9; 11:6; 16:22; 1 Tim. 5:8; Rev. 20:15. The notion of contrast is seen in Jo. 10:37 εἰ οὖ ποιῶ, εἰ δὲ ποιῶ. Note also κἂν μὴ πιστεύητε. So in 5:46 εἰ πιστεύετε, εἰ δὲ--οὐ πιστεύετε. See further Lu. 11:8; Jas. 2:11; 2 Pet. 2:4. In Mt. 26:42 note εἰ οὐ δύναται τοῦτο παρελθεῖν ἐάν μὴ πίω. In Ro. 11:21, εἰ οὐκ ἐφείσατο, οὐδὲ σοῦ φείσεται, it is hardly possible to translate εἰ οὐ by 'unless.' The same thing is true in 1 Cor. 9:2 and 15:29. Cf. ἐάν μὴ in 9:16.

(B) Determined as Unfulfilled. In this somewhat difficult condition only past tenses of the ind. occur. The premise is assumed to be contrary to fact. The thing in itself may be true, but it is treated as untrue. Here again the condition has only to do with the statement, not with the actual fact. A good illustration is found in Lu. 7:39 οὗτος εἰ ἣν ὁ προφήτης, ἐγίνωσκεν ἢν. The Pharisee here assumes that Jesus is not a prophet because he allowed the sinful woman to wash his feet. Jesus is therefore bound to be ignorant of her true character. The form of the condition reveals the state of mind of the Pharisee, not the truth about Jesus' nature and powers. As a matter of fact it is the Pharisee who is ignorant. For this reason I cannot agree with Moulton's statement\(^1\) that the ind. is not suited to the expression of contingencies, wishes, commands or other subjective conceptions. On p. 201 Moulton recovers himself by saying that "these sentences of unfulfilled condition state nothing necessarily unreal in their apodosis," and "the sentence itself only makes it untrue under the circumstances." I should add "as conceived by the speaker or writer." Surely the ind. is the mode for positive and negative statements, for directness of statement and clarity of expression. But one must emphasize the words "statement" and "expression." The ind. does not go behind the face value of the record. Most untruths are told in the ind. mode. The

\(^1\) Prol., p. 199. Goodwin, M. and T. (p. 147), sees clearly on this point.
statement of unreality here from the standpoint of the speaker or writer, is as clear cut and positive as that of reality in the first class condition. The term "unreal" as applied to this use of the ind. properly belongs only to the standpoint of the user. To him the case is impossible and he makes a positive statement to that effect with the ind. By the ind. mode the condition is determined. Whether it is fulfilled or unfulfilled is a more difficult matter. This idea has to be conveyed by suggestion. It is not a question of positive or negative, but of definite assumption of unreality. The "unreality" does not come from the ind. That in its origin is a matter wholly of the context. Take Mk. 6:5, for instance, οὐκ ἐδύνατο εἰ μὴ ἐθεράπευσεν. In the abstract it is not possible to tell which class of condition we have here. Its is either first or second, we know. If the writer is talking about the present time in terms of past time, then it is a second class condition determined as unfulfilled. The Greek fell upon the use of the past tenses of the ind. as a device to help in this matter. An unfulfilled condition about present time was expressed in terms of the imperfect ind. An unfulfilled condition about past time was expressed in terms of the aorist or the past perfect ind. There is the analogy of wishes to justify it, if, indeed, wishes did not come out of this construction (εἰθε, εἰ γάρ). The origin of this precise point is obscure.¹ In the context one must seek for light and help. In Mk. 6:5 (οὐκ ἐδύνατο ἐκεῖ ποιῆσαι οὐδεμίαν δύναμιν, εἰ μὴ ὀλίγοις ἀρρώστοις ἐπίθεις τὰς χείρας ἐθεράπευσεν) it is clear that a definite past event is chronicled. So it is a condition of the first class, determined as fulfilled. But in Jo. 15:22 (and 24) εἰ μὴ ἡλθον καὶ ἠλάλησα αὐτοῖς, ἀμαρτίαν οὐκ εἰχοσαν, how is it? Is it a simple historical narrative about a past situation? Is it a hypothesis about the present time in terms of past time to suggest its unreality? Fortunately here the context shows. The very next words are νῦν δὲ πρόφασιν οὐκ ἐχοσιν περὶ τῆς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν (Cf. also νῦν δὲ in verse 24). The contrast with the present and actual situation is made in plain terms. In Jo. 9:41 we have νῦν δὲ even after ἄν. This is not always clone in the context and one is either left to his wits or ἄν is added to the apodosis. In verse 19 of John 15 we have εἰ ἔκ τοῦ κόσμου ἦτε, ὁ κόσμος ἄν τὸ ἔδιον ἐφίλει. "The addition of ἄν to an indicative hypothesis produced much the same effect as we can express in writing by italicising 'if' "² or by add-

¹ Cf. Wilhelmus, De Modo Irreali qui Vocatur, 1881, p. 3. Mod. Gk. no longer has this idiom. It uses ἄν with the past ind. and θε in the apodosis for ἄν.

² Moulton, Prol., p. 200.
ing to the apodosis 'in that case.' This is the definite use of ἀν.
But it is a mistake to say, as some writers¹ do, that ἀν in the apodosis is essential to the second class condition. Even Moulton² says: "The dropping of ἀν in the apodosis of unfulfilled conditions was classical with phrases like ἐδεί, ἔχρην, καλὸν ἴν.\" The absence was so undoubtedly, but was ἀν ever really necessary with these verbs? When ἀν was used with them, there was a slight change of meaning. The N. T. is in perfect accord with ancient idiom when it has καλὸν ἴν εἰ οὐκ ἔγεννηθή (Mt. 26:24); ἔδύνατο εἰ μὴ ἐπέκκλητο (Ac. 26:32); εἰ μὴ ἴν, οὐκ ἔδύνατο (Jo. 9:33), not to mention the apodosis alone in Mt. 25:27; Lu. 19:23; Ac. 22:22; 27: 21; 2 Cor. 2:2; 12:11; 2 Pet. 2:21. In Ac. 24:19, as οὐς ἔδει ἐπὶ σοῦ παρεῖναι καὶ κατηγορεῖν εἰ τί ἔχοιεν πρὸς ἐμὲ it is a mixed cond. (protasis in fourth class) and the apodosis is itself a relative clause.

But the idiom goes further than these verbs of propriety and possibility and obligation, as is seen in Gal. 4:15, εἰ δύνατόν, ἔδω-κατέ μοι; Jo. 15:22, 24; 19:11, οὐκ ἐχεῖς, εἰ μὴ ἴν σοι δεδομένον Ro. 7:7, οὐκ ἔγνων εἰ μὴ διὰ νόμου καὶ οὐκ Ἡδειν εἰ μὴ ἔλεγεν. In 1 Cor. 5:10, ἐπεὶ ὁμφαίλετε, we have the apodosis of this condition. Moulton (Prol., p. 200 note) cites P. 526 (ii/A.D.) εἰ καὶ μὴ ἀνέβευε ἔγω οὐ παρέβεβλεον; 0. P (ii /A.D.) εἰ—παρέκειτο, ἀπεστάλκειν Rein. P. 7 (ii/B.C.) οὐκ ἀπέστητι, εἰ μὴ ἴνα γιάση. But in most cases the ἀν regularly appears in the apodosis, though not as the first word. Thus εἰ ἔγεννοντο, πάλα ἁν μετενόησαν (Mt. 11:21). In Ac. 18:14 f. we have the second and first class conditions side by side, εἰ μὲν ἴν ἀδίκημα τι ἡ βασιλεία μας ποιηθήν, ὁ Ἰουδαῖοι, κατὰ λόγου ἄν ἀνεσχέσθην ὡς ἔδω εἰ δὲ ζητήματα ἐστὶν περὶ λόγου καὶ ὀνομάτων καὶ νόμου τοῦ καθ᾽ ὑμᾶς, ὅψεσθε αὐτοῖς. Here Gallio neatly justifies his own impatience by the first condition (second class) and shows his own opinion by the second condition (first class). Sometimes ἀν is repeated with two verbs as in εἰ ἦδει, ἐγρηγόρησεν ἄν καὶ οὐκ ἄν ἐίσασεν (Mt. 24:43), but it is not repeated in the parallel passage in Lu. 12:39 εἰ ἦδει, ἐγρηγόρησεν ἄν καὶ οὐκ ἄφηκεν, though W. H. have one verb in the margin. ἀν is repeated also in Jo. 4:10.

The simplest form of this condition is when the imperfect occurs in both clauses or the aorist in both. In the former case present time is generally meant, as in Lu. 7:39 εἰ ἴν, ἐγίνωσκεν ἄν, Jo. 5:46 εἰ ἐπιστεῦετε, ἐπιστεῦετε ἄν. So also Jo. 8:42; 9:41; 15:19;

² Prol., p. 200.
In Jo. 8:19, εἰ ἴδειτε—ἀν ἴδειτε, we have the same construction, for this past perfect has the sense of the imperfect. In Heb. 11:15, εἰ ἐμνημόνευσεν—εἰχον αὖ, however, the reference is to past time as the context makes clear. It is descriptive of an unreal hypothesis in the past of a continuous nature. 'If they had kept on remembering, 'they would have kept on having.' This is a classical idiom, though uncommon. Another example is seen in Mt. 23:30, εἰ ἡμεθα ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις των πατέρων ἡμῶν, οὐκ ἂν ἡμεθα. Only the context can help one tell the kind of condition in 1 Cor. 12:19 and Heb. 7:11, for the apodosis appears in the form of a question without ἂν and the verb. The other normal condition of this class is where the aorist ind. occurs in both clauses, as in Mt. 11:21 εἰ ἐγένετο, πάλαι ἂν μετενόησαν, Mk. 13:20 εἰ μή ἐκολοβωσεν οὐκ ἂν ἐσώθη. This refers to past time. Cf. Mt. 25:27; 1 Cor. 2:8; Jo. 14:2; Heb. 10:2 (only apodosis). Sometimes one tense occurs in one clause, another in the other. The standpoint is shifted. Thus in Jo. 14:28 εἰ ἡγαπάτε, ἔχαρητε ἂν, Gal. 3:21 εἰ ἐδόθη, ἂν ἦν, Heb. 4:8 εἰ κατέπαυσεν, οὐκ ἂν ἔλαλει. Cf. also Jo. 15:22, 24. It is not always certain that the present reference of ἦν can be insisted on, since there was no separate aorist form of εἰμί. Sometimes ἦν is aorist. So as to Jo. 11:21, 32, εἰ ἦς, οὐκ ἂν ἀπέθανεν. But the point of difference is certainly made in Jo. 18:30, εἰ μή ἦν ποιῶν, οὐκ ἂν παρεδώκαμεν. Cf. Ac. 18:14; Mt. 26:24. In Jo. 4:10, εἰ ἴδεις, σὺ ἂν ἰτησάς, we have the same thing. Cf. also Mt. 24:43. In Ac. 18:14 note in the next verse εἰ δὲ ἐστίν, ὄψεσθε (first class). In 1 Jo. 2:19 we have the past perfect in the apodosis εἰ ἦσαν, μεμνημέκεισαν ἂν the solitary example. But the past perfect occurs in the protasis as in Ac. 26:32, ἀπολελυσθαι ἐδύνατο, ὁ ἄνθρωπος οὗτος εἰ μή ἐπεκέκλητο Καίσαρα. Cf. also εἰ ἐγνώκειτε, οὐκ ἂν κατεδικάσατε (Mt. 12:7), though Westcott takes this as a "real imperfect" like ἴδειν above. The periphrastic past perfect we find in Jo. 19:11 οὐκ εἶχες, εἰ μή ἦν δεδομένου. Moulton has given a list of the times that ἂν appears in the apodosis in the N. T. with the ind. imperfect. (17 times), the ind. aor. (24) and the past perfect (1). In Lu. 17:6 we have the pres. ind. and the imperfect combined, εἰ ἔχετε, ἐλέγετε ἂν. This is really a mixed condition (first and second classes). Cf. Jo. 8:39, εἰ

1 Cf. Westcott on Heb., pp. 111 ff., for an excellent summary of the second class conditions.
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 201.
3 On Heb., p. 113.
4 Prol., p. 166.
\[\text{ἔστε, ἔποιεῖτε (the margin of W. H.). Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 163) quotes P. Oxy. IV, 729 (137 A.D.) \text{ἔαν δὲ μὴ ἐκώλυσεν Ζεὺς ἔξησεν ἄν, where note \text{énergie} with aorist ind. like the modern Greek ἀν τὸ ἥξευρα (Thumb, Handb., p. 195).}

The negative of the second class condition is in the N. T. always \text{μὴ} except twice, Mt. 26:24 (Mk. 14:21) \text{καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ ἐι ὦκ ἐγεννήθη.} Here the \text{οὐ} is very emphatic. Elsewhere we have \text{ἐὶ μὴ} as in Mt. 24:22 (note \text{μὴ} in protasis, \text{οὐ} in apodosis); Jo. 9:33; 15:22, 24; 18:30; 19:11; Ac. 26:32; Ro. 7:7. In itself \text{ἐὶ μὴ} is three times as common in the N. T. as \text{ἐὶ οὐ}, but outside of the five examples of \text{ἐὶ μὴ} in the first class conditions above and one in the third class (Lu. 9:13) \text{ἐὶ μὴ} is confined to the second class condition and to the elliptical use like \text{πλὴν} in the sense of 'except' or the phrase \text{ἐὶ δὲ μὴ} meaning 'otherwise' without a verb (cf. \text{ἐὶ μὴ} thus in Mt. 12:4; Lu. 4:26; \text{ἐὶ δὲ μὴ} in Jo. 14:11).\textsuperscript{1} See a bit later on this point. As already noted, modern Greek uses \text{ἄν δὲν in this condition (Thumb, Handb., p. 195).}

\text{(γ) Undetermined, but with Prospect of Determination. This class uses in the condition clause the mode of expectation (Erwartung), the subj. It is not determined as is true of the first and second class conditions. But the subj. mode brings the expectation within the horizon of a lively hope in spite of the cloud of hovering doubt. W. G. Hale\textsuperscript{2} considers that the subj. in this condition is due "to a fusion of volitive subj. and the anticipatory subj." Monro\textsuperscript{3} thinks it is the quasi-imperative sense (volitive subj.). He argues that the use of \text{μὴ} with the subj. (cf. prohibitions) proves this. But Moulton\textsuperscript{4} replies that "the negative \text{μὴ}, originally excluded from this division of the subjunctive, has trespassed here from the earliest times." So he urges that the subj. with \text{ἔαν} (as with ὁται) is the futuristic, not the volitive, use. The futuristic subj. in Homer may have \text{οὐ}, but usually \text{μὴ} with the subj. in conditions, and yet some cases of \text{ἐὶ οὐ} with the subj. occur in Homer when a coalesces with the verb as \text{ἐὶ οὐκ ἔθελωσιν, Iliad 3. 289, ἐὶ οὐκ εἰώσιν, 20. 139}. In Jer. 6:8 we still have ἢτις \text{οὐ κατοικισθῆ} in B. The truth probably is that in some instances this subj. is futuristic, in others volitive or deliberative. The point is a fine one as one can readily see. Gildersleeve\textsuperscript{5} finds the}

\textsuperscript{1} Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 254; Moulton, Prol., p. 171.
\textsuperscript{4} Prol., p. 185.
\textsuperscript{5} AM. Jour. of Philol., 1909, p. 11.
prevalence of the subj. in conditional (as in temporal) clauses due to the-greater exactness of the subj. here. It enables one, since it has a "tendency to realization" (Tendenz zur Wirklichkeit), to make a difference between the indicative and the optative conditions, though it has more affinity with the optative, except in the case of some future indicative conditions which come very close to the subj. idea. The kinship in origin and sense of the aorist subj. and fut. ind. makes the line a rather fine one between ei and the fut. ind. and εάν and the subj. indeed, as we sometimes have εάν and the fut. ind. in the first class condition, so we occasionally meet ei and the subj. in the third class condition. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 162) notes ei and subj. at first as a "vulgarism," but surely the classic usage answers that. The inscriptions have usually only εάν and aorist subj. he finds. But he finds also abundant instances of ei and subj. in κοινή and late writers. So Epictetus, II, 18, 11 ei μή τις εξελείψη, Vettins, 274, 11 ei δε τις λογίσται, Hippiatr., 177, 2 ei προσσχής, Demetrius, De eloc. 21, 11 ei γένηται, Pausanias, II, 35, 3 ei — ὧδεισθεναι. So in Lu. 9:13 ei μήτι ἀγοράσωμεν, 1 Cor. 14:5 ἐκτὸς ei μή δειριμπνεύσῃ Ph. 3:12 ei καταλάβω (possibly also ei πως καταντήσω in verse 11), Rev. 11:5 ei τις θέλησῃ (text of W. H., but margin θέλει or θελήσει). In Ro. 11:14, ei πως παραξηγήσω καὶ σώσω, we may also have the aorist subj. In 1 Th. 5:10 we have εἴτε γρηγορῶμεν εἴτε καθεύδωμεν. It is in the midst of a final sentence with ἧνα. In 1 Cor. 9:11 some MSS. read ei θερίσωμεν. This construction occurs occasionally in classical Greek. It was frequent in Homer and in the Attic poets, but is rare in our normalized texts of Attic prose, though a few examples occur in Time., Plato, Xenophon. This "laxity" increased till finally ei, like οὔτε, vanishes before εάν (ἀν) which is used indiscriminately with ind. or subj., while ei is a mere "literary alternative." In modern Greek ἀν has driven ei out of the vernacular. In Deut. 8:5 AF have ei τις παίδευση. Cf. Judg. 11:9. Moulton finds the same construction in the papyri as does Deissmann.

1 Griech. Modi, p. 177.
2 Gildersl. (Am. Jour. of XXXIII, 4, p. 490) complains that in Germany no standing is given to his distinction between the "minatory and monitory" use of ei with the. future indicative. He first promulgated it in 1876.
5 B. S., p. 118.
though it is rare in the early papyri. 1 Moulton (Prol., p. 187) cites O. P. 496 (ii/A.D.) εἰ δὲ ἤν (= ἢ), though he2 seems curiously unwilling to admit the examples in the N. T. As to ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ in 1 Cor. 15:2, we have the ind. with this combination. Deissmann (B. S., p. 118) cites inscr. ἐκτὸς εἰ μὴ ἐὰν—θελήσῃ. It is true that in the N. T as a rule εἰ goes with the ind. and ἐὰν with the subj. It is mainly in the future conditions that the line is breaking down. In Mt. 12:29 we have ἐὰν μὴ δῆσῃ and then διαρπάσει, but W. H. break the sentence into two. Besides the normal ἐὰν and the occasional εἰ in this condition we have also ἀν (shortened form of ἐὰν, not the modal ἀν). Thus Jo. 12: 32 ἀν ὑψωθῶ, 13:20 ἀν τινα πέμψω, 16:23 ἀν τι αἰτήσῃτε. It occurs in the N. T. only six times (cf. ἀν μὴ in Jo. 5:19) and all in John. Cf. Ac. 9:2 ἢ. But note Lu. 12:38, καὶαὶ ἐλθῇ καὶ εὕρη (contraction of καὶ + ἐὰν). Cf. Mt. 21:21; Lu. 13:9. It is absent from the Attic inscriptions, but supplants ἐὰν in modern Greek. It is not clear why ἐὰν disappeared thus in odern Greek. The Ionic form is ἦν. 3 The future conditions are na urally the most frequent of all.

Just as the second class condition was debarred from the future, so the third class condition is confined to the future (from the standpoint of the speaker or writer). The first class condition covers past, present and future. In I Cor. 10:27 note εἰ τὶς καλεῖ and ἐὰν τὶς ἐὰπῃ. In Ac. 5:38, ἐὰν ἢ and εἰ—ἐστίν, a real distinction is preserved. Gamaliel gives the benefit of the doubt to Christianity. He assumes that Christianity is of God and puts the alternative that it is often in the third class. This does not, of course, show that Gamaliel was a Christian or an inquirer. He was merely willing to score a point against the situation, but ἐὰν and the subj. ontemplate the future result Sadducees. Here, indeed, the su position is about a present (turn out to be). So ἐὰν ἐχῆς in 1 Cor. 4:15; ἐὰν ἢ in Mt. 6:22. Ἐὰν θέλῃς in Mt. 8:2 is future in conception. In Jo. 5:31, ἐὰν μαρτυρῶ (possibly pres. ind.), the idea would be ‘if perchance I bear witness.’ Cf. also 8:14. I such instances the matter may be looked at as a present reality (so εἰ σκανδαλίζει. Mt. 5:29)


2 Prol., p. 187.

3 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 43; Meisterh.-S p. 225 f. In Jo. 5:19 we have both uses of ἀν (conditional and modal). In Mk. 5:28 note ἐὰν ἀψωμαι κἂν τῶν ἰματίων, not a repetition of modal ἀν, but a particle κἂν= ‘even.’
or a future possibility (so ἔαν σκανδαλίσῃ, Mk. 9:43). Cf. also ἔαν ἀγαπήσητε in Mt. 5:46 with εἰ ἀγαπᾶτε in Lu. 6:32 (in verse 33, ἔαν ἀγαθορποιήτε).¹ In Jo. 13:17 note εἰ ταῦτα οὖν διατε, μακάριοι ἔστε ἔαν ποιήτε αὐτά. Here we have the first and third class conditions happily combined with clear distinction. Jesus assumes the knowledge as a fact, but the performance is doubtful.

The tense is usually the aorist, though sometimes the pres. subj. occurs. Thus ἔαν ἰκουσή (Mt. 18:15); ἔαν διψά (Jo. 7:37). In 2 Tim. 2:5 note ἔαν δὲ καὶ ἀθλή τις, οὐ στεφανοῦται ἔαν μὴ νομίμως ἀθλήσῃ, where the distinction is drawn between the two tenses. I doubt the propriety, however, of reading a future perfect sense a la Latin into this aorist subj. as Moulton² does. He cites Mt. 5:47, ἔαν ἀσπάσησθε, but surely the simple aorist conception is sufficient. John's fondness (see Tenses) for the pres. subj. with ἔαν has been discussed.³ In Jo. 3:27 we have the periphrastic perfect; ἔαν μὴ Ἐξανθέμεν. Cf. also Jas. 5:15, κἂν ἢ πεποιηκώς. The conclusion of this condition is naturally most frequently the future ind. Thus Mt. 9:21 ἔαν ἄψωμαι, σωθῆσομαι; Jo. 16:7 ἔαν πορευθῶ, πέμψω; Ac. 5:38 ἔαν ἢ, καταλυθήσεται Mt. 5:13; 28:14; Jo. 7:17; 12:26; 14:15; Ro. 2:26. But this normal apodosis is by no means universal. Thus note οὐ μὴ ἔλθη in Jo. 16:7 after ἔαν μὴ ἀπέλθω. See also Jo. 8:51. Cf. Ac. 13:41.

In Mk. 14:31 note οὐ μὴ ἀπαρνήσομαι. The imperative may occur in the apodosis as in Mt. 18:15, ἔαν ἀμαρτήσῃ, ὑπαγε ἔλεξον. So Mt. 10:13; 18:17; 26:42; Ro. 12:20; 13:4; Ph. 2:1. But oftentimes the conclusion is stated in terms of the present either as a present hope or a vivid projection into the future (futuristic present). So in 2 Cor. 5:1, ἔαν καταλυθῇ, ἔχομεν. The condition is future in conception, but the conclusion is a present reality, so confident is Paul of the bliss of heaven. Cf. Mt. 18:13. In 18:12 both the fut. and the pres. ind. appear in the apodosis. A lively sense of present need is seen in Mt. 8:2. A practical turn is given by the pointed question in Mt. 5:47. In Ro. 14:8 note ἔαν τε—ἔαν τε. A maxim often has the pres. ind. in the apodosis. Thus οὐ δύναται οὐδείς—ἔαν μὴ πρώτον δήσῃ (Mk. 3:27). Cf. Jo. 8:16, 54; 11:9; 12:24; 1 Cor. 7:39, 40; 2 Tim. 2:5. The pres. perf. is likewise so used, as in Ro. 14:23, οὐ δὲ διακρίνομεν ἐὰν φάγῃ κατακέρμαται. So Jo. 20:23; Ro. 2:25; 7:2. More difficult seems the aorist ind. in the apodosis. The aor. ind. is sometimes timeless as is always true of the other modes (see chapter on

² Prol., p. 186.
Tenses where papyri parallels are given). That may be the explanation here. It is possible also to explain it as a change of standpoint. The protasis looks to the future, while the apodosis turns back to the past. Such vivid changes in language are due to the swift revolution in thought. See Mt. 18:15, ἐὰν ἀκούσῃ, ἐκέρδησας; Jo. 15:6, εὰν μὴ τις μένη ἐν ἐμοί, ἐβλήθη ἔξω καὶ ἐξηράνθη (cf. ἐδοξᾶσθη ἦνα φέρητε also of the future); 1 Cor. 7:28, ἐὰν καὶ γαμήσῃς, οὐχ ἥμαρτες· καὶ ἐὰν γύμη ἢ παρθένος, οὐχ ἥμαρτεν. For a similar idiom see Ignatius, Ep. to Romans 8:3; to Polycarp 5:2. Moulton (Prol., p. 247) cites Epict., ἄν μὲν στρατεύσωμαι, ἀπηλλάγην. See also Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 586. In Mk. 10:30, ἐὰν μὴ λάβῃ, we have ἐὰν μὴ almost in the sense of ὅς μή. Cf. also ἐὰν μὴ ἵνα in Mk. 4:22. The use of εἰ οὐ and ἐὰν μή side by side is seen in Mt. 26:42, εἰ οὐ δύναται τοῦτο παρελθεῖν ἐὰν μὴ αὐτὸ πίω. Cf. also Jo. 10:37, εἰ οὐ ποιῶ and κἂν μὴ πιστεύῃ.

(8) Remote Prospect of Determination. Hale attributes "the Greek optative assumption to a fusion of the true opt. and the potential opt." The use of the opt. in the protasis of this condition is probably volitive, since the negative is μή. That is certainly true of the optative in wishes with εἰ or εἰ γάρ (ἐθέ). But the deliberative use occurs a few times with εἰ in indirect questions. The potential opt. in the apodosis with ἃν is more difficult to explain. It is certainly not volitive any more, not more than mere fancy (Vorstellung), the optative of opinion, and apparently futuristic. This fourth class condition is undetermined with less likelihood of determination than is true of the third class with the subj. The difference between the third and fourth classes is well illustrated in 1 Pet. 3:13 f. So Jesus draws a distinction in Lu. 22:67. The use of the opt. in both apodosis and protasis accents the remoteness of the hypothesis. And yet it is not in the category of unreality as in the second class. It floats in a mirage, but does not slip quite away. It is thus suitable not merely for real doubt, but it also fits well the polite temper of courteous address. It is evident that this condition will be comparatively infrequent. It is an ornament of the cultured class and was little used by the masses save in a few set phrases (or wishes). It is not strange, therefore, that no complete example of this fourth class condition appears in the LXX, the N. T. or the papyri so far as examined. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., pp.

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 196.
3 Monro, Horn. Gr., p. 227.
5 Moulton, Prol., p. 196.
with all his diligence produces no example of the opt.
in both condition and conclusion in the current κοινή. In the modern Greek it has disappeared completely. In the N. T., as in the LXX, the instances of the protasis are very few. Moulton\(^1\) notes only 13 in the LXX apart from the Atticistic 4 Maccabees. Of these he observes that 2 are wishes, 5 are cases of ὅσος (περ) ἐὰς τις and 2 are indirect questions. There are in the N. T. only 11 examples. Some of these are indirect questions. Thus in ἔλεγον ἤ το βούλιον πορεύεσθαι (Ac. 25:20) we have the opt. of ind. discourse. The direct was ἤ βούλη. The same thing is true of
27:39, ἤ βουλεύοντο ἤ δύνατο ἐκσώσαι τό πλοῖον. There is implied indirect discourse or purpose (cf. the classic use of ἤ for purpose).\(^2\) So we see aim in Ac. 17:27, ζητεῖν ἤ ἀρα γε ψηλαφήσειαν αὐτόν καὶ εὐροίεν, and 20:16, ἐσπεύδεν ἤ δυνατόν ἤη. In 27:12, πῶς δύναμτο, we have both purpose and implied indirect discourse.
In 24:19, ἤ τί ἔχοιεν, the protasis is more nearly that of the proper fourth class condition, but even so it is a mixed condition, since the apodosis ἔσει belongs to the second class. Blass\(^3\) ventures to suggest ἤ τί ἔχουσίν as more correct. But it is needless to change the text. These examples are all in Acts, one of the more literary books of the N. T. Paul has only the stereotyped phrase ἤ τύχοι. (1 Cor. 14:10; 15:37), which is a, true example of this protasis, "if it should happen." The two other examples are in 1 Pet. 3:14 ἤ καὶ πάσχοιτε διὰ δικαιοσύνην, μακάριοι, and 3:17 κρέιττον ἄγαθοποιοῦτας, ἤ θελοι το θέλημα τοῦ θεοῦ, πάσχειν. The idiom is a mere torso, as is evident. In 0. P. 1106, 7 (vii/A.D.), ἤ γὰρ ἐπιμένειν, πλῆθος ἐπιστήσεται στρατιωτικὸν, we have a mixed condition.

The apodosis with ἄν (the less definite ἄν) is more frequent and occurs both in direct and indirect discourse. Since the potential opt. in the N. T. never occurs in connection with the protasis, the matter was discussed sufficiently under The Optative Mode in Independent Sentences (see this chapter, III, 3, (b)). This potential opt. is practically the apodosis of an unexpressed protasis. But the exx. occur in questions save one (Ac. 26:29). Twice the questions are direct (Ac. 8:31; 17:18). The rest are indirect (opt. preserved as in the direct). Cf. Lu. 1:62 τί ἄν θέλοι, Ac. 5:24 τί ἄν γένοιτο. So Lu. 6:11. The deliberative element in some of these questions is well illustrated in Lu. 9:46; Ac. 10:17. The MSS. vary in some cases about the presence of ἄν as

---

\(^1\) Ib.
\(^2\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 228 f.
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 221.
in Lu. 18:36. The examples are all in Luke's writings. In Ac.
8:31 we do indeed have a protasis, but not of the fourth class.
It is a mixed condition. The disappearance of this opt. condi-
tion led to the enlarged use of the first and third classes. In
Ro. 3:6 and 1 Cor. 15:35 the fut. ind. is used where the po-
tential opt. would have suited the Attic idiom.

(c) Special Points.

(a) Mixed Conditions. The human mind does not always
work in stereotyped forms, however excellent they are. Gram-
matical construction is merely the expression of the mental con-
ception. Freedom must be acknowledged without any apology.
I say these somewhat commonplace things because of the bill of
"exceptions" which meet us in so many grammars at this point.
It would have been a miracle if the four classes of conditions were
never "mixed," that is, if the protasis did not belong to one
class, while the apodosis fell in another. In P. Goodsp. 4 (ii/B.C.),
εἰ ἔρρωσαι, εἰὴ ἄν, we have the protasis of the first class and the
apodosis of the fourth. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 132) quotes
Pastor Hermæ, Sim. IX, 12, 4 οὐδεὶς εἰσελεύσεται εἰ μὴ λάβοι,
Theoph. Ad Autolycum εἰ μᾶρ βάβοι—ἐκκαύσει. Thus in Lu. 17:6,
εἰ ἔχετε, ἐλέγετε ἄν, we have a protasis of the first class (determined
as fulfilled) and the apodosis of the second (determined as unful-
filled). The same thing is true of the marginal reading in the
text of W. H. in Jo. 8:39, εἰ ἐστέ, ἐποιεῖτε. In Ac. 24:19, οὗς ἔδει
ἐπὶ σοῦ παρεῖναι καὶ κατηγορεῖν εἰ τι ἔχουσαν πρὸς ἐμὲ, we find a prot-
asis of the fourth class with an apodosis of the second class.
Then again in Ac. 8:31, πῶς γὰρ ἄν δυναίμην ἔαν μὴ τις ὀδηγῆσει με;
we have a protasis of the first class (barring. itacism) and an apod-
osis of the fourth. The examples like 1 Cor. 7:28 do not amount
to mixed condition, since it is merely a question of the standpoint
in time of the apodosis, though this apodosis does more naturally
go with the first class condition. There may be two protases, as
in 1 Cor. 9:11, and both of the same class, or the two may belong
to different classes, as in Jo. 13:17.

(b) Implied Conditions. Sometimes the apodosis is expressed,
while the protasis is merely implied by a participle, an impera-
tive or a question. In such examples one must not think that
the participle, for instance, means 'if.' Thus in Ro. 2:27 τε-
lούσα with κρίνει suggests a condition of either the first or the
third class according as one conceives it. The condition is hinted
at, not stated. The same thing is true of λαμβανόμενον in 1 Tim.

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 220.
4:4 and μετατιθεμένης in Heb. 7:12. Cf. also Heb. 2:3; 1 Cor. 11:29; Gal. 6:9. This use of the participle is still very frequent in the N. T. In Mt. 16:26 we have ἐὰν κερδῆσῃ, while in Lu. 9:25 note κερδῆσας. In Lu. 19:23, κἀγὼ ἐλθὼν σὺν τόκῳ ἄν αὐτὸ ἔπραξα, the apodosis calls for a condition of the second class (context). The imperative is used where a protasis might have been employed. Thus in Mk. 1:17, δεῦτε ὀπίσω μου, καὶ ποιήσω. The adverb δεῦτε has the force of an imperative. There is an implied condition here. So also 11:24 πιστεύετε καὶ ἔσται. Cf. Mt. 7:7; 11:28; 19:21; Lu. 7:7; Jo. 2:19; 14:16; Jas. 4:7. The imper. may be (Jas. 1:5) the apodosis of an expressed condition and the implied protasis of another conclusion. In Eph. 4:26; ὀργίζεσθε καὶ μὴ ἄμαρτάνετε, two imperatives together practically answer as protasis and apodosis. In Mt. 7:10, ἐὰν καὶ ἰχθοῦν αἰτήσει—μὴ ὁφιν ἐπιδώσει αὐτῷ; the two questions do the same thing in a rough sort of way (anacoluthon), not technically so. In Mt. 26:15, τί θέλετέ μοι δοθῆναι κἀγὼ ὑμῖν παραδώσω αὐτόν, the question takes the place of the protasis. Here καὶ joins the two parts of the sentence, but in Jas. 5:13 we have question and imperative in separate sentences. Cf. also 1 Cor. 7:21. These devices are all found in the classic idiom.

(γ) Elliptical Conditions. An incomplete condition is really a species of ellipsis or aposiopesis and is common to all languages. Ellipsis of the copula in the apodosis (1 Cor. 12:19) or the protasis (Ro. 8:17) is not the point. That is, of course, common. So Ro. 4:14; 8:17; 11:16; 1 Cor. 7:5; 1 Pet. 3:14; 2 Cor. 11:16. There may be the absence of either protasis or apodosis. The apodosis is wanting in some instances. The suppression of the apodosis in Lu. 13:9, κἂν μὲν ποιήσῃ καρπὸν εἰς τὸ μέλλον—amounts to aposiopesis. See also 19:42, εἰ γνως καὶ σὺ. Cf. further Mk. 7:11; Jo. 6:62; Ac. 23:9. In Lu. 22:42 the aposiopesis disappears from the text of W. H. (παρένεγκε, not παρενεγκειν). In 2 Th. 2:3, ἐὰν μὴ ἐξ θετη, we have a mere anacoluthon as in Ph. 1:22. These protases belong to either the first, second or third classes. The lonely protases of the fourth class discussed above (cf. 1 Pet. 3:14, 17) come in here also. We have a species of anacoluthon. The structure of the sentence is changed so that the corresponding apodosis does not follow. In the same

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 230.
4 Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 166.
5 W.-Th., p. 600.
way (suppression of apodosis) is to be explained the use of εἰ like ὅτι in the sense of 'not,' in solemn oaths or questions. The apodosis is wanting. So εἰ δοθῆσεται τῇ γενέῃ ταύτη σημεῖον (Mk. 8: 12). So Heb. 3:11 (4:3, 5) εἰ ἐλευσοῦνται (Ps. 94:95:11). This is aposiopesis. The full expression is seen in Gen. 14:23; Num. 14:30; 1 Sam. 14:45. It is an apparent imitation of the Hebrew idiom, though not un-Greek in itself. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 184) treats this idiom in Mk. 8:12 as due to translation from the Hebrew (Aramaic). Analogous to this is εἰ μὴν, in Heb. 6:14, if εἰ is not really ἃ changed by itacism (cf. Ezek. 33:27; 34:8).

Hort holds to the difference between εἰ μὴν and η μὴν and would take εἰ in Heb. 6:14 as the true εἰ. But Moulton makes out a good case from the papyri and the inscriptions for taking it as merely a variation of η μὴν. He finds eleven papyri examples of εἰ μὴν from ii/B.C. to i/A.D. Particularly clear is the Messenian Mysteries inscr., Michel 694, εἰ μὰν ἔξειν. If so, it does not come in here. But the use of εἰ in questions is pertinent. Thus εἰ ὀλίγοι οἱ σωζόμενοι; (Lu. 13:23). Cf. Mt. 12:10; Lu. 12:26; 22:49; Ac. 17:27; 19:2. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 136) takes εἰ in questions=ἂ as in Lu. 22:49. This is possible on grounds of itacism, but it does not entitle Radermacher to say "werden muss." The use of the condition in the sense of 'to see if' borders on this elliptical construction. Something has to be supplied before the protasis in order to make the idea clear. The apodosis is virtually contained in the protasis. It is a classic idiom and reappears in the papyri. So 0. P. 743, ὅλος διαπονοῦμαι εἰ Ὁ ἔλεος κοῦς ἀπόλεσεν. The protasis here may conform to the first class condition as in εἰ ἔξει (Lu. 14:28); εἰ πῶς ἡ δῆ ποτὲ εὐδοκίστασομαι (Ro. 1:10). So Mk. 11:13; Ac. 8:22. In Ph. 3:12, εἰ καὶ καταλάβω, we have the third class and possibly also in Ro. 11:14. But in Ac. 27:12 it is the fourth class, εἰ πῶς δύναιντο. The use of εἰ in the indirect question, as in Mk. 3:2, εἰ θεραπεύσει, corresponds closely with the preceding. Cf. also 11:13. The same thing is true of εἰ in the sense of ὅτι, as in Ac. 26:23. This is also true of εἰ with verbs of wonder, as in Mk. 15:44; Ac. 26:8.

The protasis itself is sometimes abbreviated almost to the vanishing point, as in εἰ μὴ without a verb, in the sense of ‘except’ (Mt. 5:13). Here εἰ and μὴ seem to coalesce into one word like πλὴν. Cf. 11:27, οὐδεὶς ἐπιγνῶσκει τὸν υἱὸν εἰ μὴ ὁ πατὴρ. This is very common as in classic Greek. Sometimes we have εἰ μὴ μόνον as in

1 App., p. 151.
2 Prol., p. 46.
3 Goodwin, M. and T., pp. 180
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 194.
Mt. 21:19. The origin of this use of \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \) was the fact that the verb was identical with the preceding one in the apodosis and so was not repeated. From this ellipsis the usage spread to mere exceptions to the previous statement, a limitation simply. \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \) may make exception to a preceding negative as in Gal. 1:19, \( \epsilon\tau\epsilon\rho\omicron \varsigma \ \delta \varepsilon \ \tau\omicron \ \alpha\omicron \omicron \omega\omicron \tau\omicron \lambda o\omicron \nu \ \omega\omicron \ \varepsilon\iota\delta\omicron \nu \ \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \ \iota \Lambda \alpha\kappa\omicron\beta\omicron \nu \ \tau\omicron \ \alpha\delta\epsilon\lambda\varphi\omicron \nu \). The effect here is to make \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \) seem adversative instead of exceptive. Cf. Mt. 12:4. For \( \varepsilon\alpha\nu \ \mu \eta \) in this construction see Gal. 2:16.

In 1 Cor. 7:17 \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \) has the sense of ‘only’ and is not to be construed with \( \pi\epsilon\rho\iota\pi\sigma\alpha\tau\epsilon\iota \tau \omega \). The use of \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \) occurs in questions expecting a negative answer, as in Mk. 2:7, \( \tau\omicron \ \delta \upsilon\nu\alpha\tau\alpha\iota \ \alpha\phi\iota\mu\e\nu\alpha\iota \ \alpha\mu\rho\omicron\tau\tau\iota\alpha\varsigma \ \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \ \varepsilon \iota \varsigma \ \theta\omicron\omicron\varsigma \); In 1 Cor. 7:5, \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \tau \gamma \ [\alpha\nu] \), we have \( \tau \iota \) (cf. \( \varepsilon \iota \ \tau \iota \) in Mt. 18:28) added and possibly also \( \alpha\nu \). B here omits \( \alpha\nu \), possibly to "case a difficulty" as Moulton\(^1\) suggests. If genuine, it would be a sort of analysis of \( \varepsilon\alpha\nu \) into \( \varepsilon \iota \ \alpha\nu \), that occurs in the illiterate papyri. For examples see under 8, (b), (a). For \( \varepsilon \iota \mu \eta \tau \gamma \) with the ind. pres. see 2 Cor. 13:5 and the subj. aorist. See Lu. 9:13. The use of \( \epsilon\kappa\tau\omicron\varsigma \ \varepsilon \iota \ \mu \eta \) probably comes by analogy from \( \epsilon\kappa\tau\omicron\varsigma \ \varepsilon \iota \) (cf. Latin nisi), but it occurs in the N. T. without verbs only in 1 Tim. 5:19. Elliptical also are \( \varepsilon \iota \ \mu \eta \ \iota \nu \alpha \) (Jo. 10:10); \( \varepsilon \iota \ \mu \eta \ \omicron \tau \iota \) (2 Cor. 12:13); \( \varepsilon \iota \ \mu \eta \ \omicron \tau\alpha\nu \), (Mk. 9:9). In Jo. 14:11 note \( \delta \varepsilon \ \mu \eta \) in the sense of 'but if not,' otherwise.' Cf. Mk. 2:21; Rev. 2:5, 16. For \( \delta \varepsilon \ \mu \eta \gamma \epsilon \) see Lu. 5:36. Other forms of \( \varepsilon \iota \) used elliptically are \( \varepsilon \iota \ \pi\epsilon\rho \) (Ro. 3:30); \( \omega\sigma\epsilon\iota \) (Mt. 3:16); \( \omega\sigma\pi\epsilon\rho\epsilon\iota \) (1 Cor. 15:8). \( \varepsilon \delta \ \mu \eta \) and \( \varepsilon \delta \ \mu \eta \ \gamma \epsilon \) became such fixed phrases\(^2\) that they occur even when the preceding sentence is negative (Mt. 9:17) or where \( \varepsilon\alpha\nu \mu \eta \) would be more natural (Lu. 10:6, where the phrase answers to \( \varepsilon\alpha\nu \ \mu \eta \). Cf. Lu. 13:9. In Jo. 14:2, \( \varepsilon \delta \ \mu \eta \ \epsilon\pi\omicron\omicron \ \alpha\nu \), the conclusion is expressed.

In 2 Cor. 10:9 we have \( \omega\varsigma \ \alpha\nu \) without a verb= 'as if.' It is common to have \( \epsilon\pi\omicron\epsilon\iota--\epsilon\pi\omicron\epsilon\iota \) (1 Cor. 8:5) without the verb. The use of \( \kappa\alpha\nu \) without the verb is also found in the sense of 'if only,' 'at least.' So in Mk. 5:28; 6:56. In 2 Cor. 11:16 we have both \( \varepsilon \ \delta \ \mu \eta \ \gamma \epsilon \) and \( \kappa\alpha\nu \ (\delta \epsilon\xi\eta\sigma\epsilon \) to be supplied). In Lu. 12:38 note \( \kappa\alpha\nu \) --- \( \kappa\alpha\nu \). The suppression of the protasis occurs in all the examples of the potential opt. already discussed, as in Ac. 26:29. Even in the deliberative questions of the opt. with Ccv the same thing is true. Cf. Ac. 17:18 (direct); Lu. 1:62 (indirect). The protasis is also suppressed sometimes with \( \epsilon\pi\omicron\epsilon\iota \). Cf. 1 Cor. 15 29, \( \epsilon\pi\omicron\epsilon\iota \ \tau \\pi\omicron\iota\mu\sigma\omicron\omicron\omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron \omicron ; \) Here a protasis of the first or (more probably) of the third class must be supplied. So in Ro. 3:6; 11:6,

\(^1\) Prol., p. 169.  \(^2\) Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 111.
22. In 1 Cor. 14:16, ἐπεὶ ἔδωκεν ἐν ὠλογιᾷ πῶς ἔρει, the ellipsis still occurs in spite of ἔδωκεν. In Heb. 9:26, ἐπεὶ ἐδείκτηκα, and 10:2, ἐπεὶ οὐκ ἐπαύσαντο, the protasis would belong to the second class, as is true also of ἐπεὶ ὁμολογεῖτε ἄρα in 1 Cor. 5:10. In 7:14, ἐπεὶ ἢρα ἔστιν, the protasis would be of the first class.

(8) Concessive Clauses. These are really just conditional clauses with the addition of καί. In καί εἰ and καὶ ἔδωκεν (καὶν) the sense is 'even if' and is climacteric. Burton² seeks to draw quite a distinction between concessive and conditional clauses. He cites Mt. 26:33, εἰ πάντες σκανδαλισθῆσονται ἐν σοί, ἠγώ οὐδέποτε σκανδαλισθῆσομαι, as an instance of the concessive idea without καί. It is possible that we may read the idea into this passage because in the parallel passage in Mk. 14:29 we read εἰ καί — ἀλλὰ ἠγώ. Cf. also καὶ δειν in Mt. 26:35 with ἔδωκεν δείη in Mk. 14:31. The use of εἰ (ἐδώκεν) in the sense of 'though' shows that there is at bottom no essential difference. The structure is precisely the same as the conditional sentence. They are, to repeat, nothing but conditional sentences of a special tone or emphasis. The use of καί was to sharpen this emphasis either up or down.

With καὶ εἰ the supposition is considered improbable.³ With καὶ εἰ the truth of the principal sentence is stoutly affirmed in the face of this one objection. It is rhetorically an extreme case. In 1 Cor. 8:5, καὶ γὰρ ἑπερ ἐστίν — ἢμιν εἰς θεός, we have an instance. In Mk. 14:29 the true text is εἰ καί, not καὶ εἰ. In 1 Pet. 3:1 W. H. read simply εἰ. In late Greek καὶ εἰ vanishes before καὶ ἔδωκεν (ἐδώκεν).⁴ So in the N. T. we have καὶ ἔδωκεν κρίνω (Jo. 8:16). So also Gal. 1:8. For καὶν see Jo. 8:14, καὶν μαρτυρῶ. So Mt. 21:21; 26:35. See Jo. 10:38, εἰ δὲ ποιῶ, καὶν ἐμοὶ πιστεύητε. The clauses with ἔδωκεν and the subj. are, of course, third class conditions. Sometimes⁵ καὶ εἰ and καὶν can hardly⁶ be considered as strong as 'even if.' They may be resolved into 'and if.' So Mt. 11:14; Lu. 6:32; Mk. 16:18; Jo. 8:55; Rev. 11:5.

Much more common is εἰ καί. This phrase means 'if also.' Here the protasis is treated as a matter of indifference. If there is a conflict, it makes no real difficulty. There is sometimes a tone of contempt in εἰ καί. The matter is belittled. There is often some particle in the conclusion in this construction as in Lu. 18:4, εἰ καὶ τὸν θεὸν ὃς φοβεῖται ὦτε ἄνθρωπον ἐντρέπομαι, διά γε τὸ παρέχειν, κτλ. Note γε as in 11:8. Cf. Col. 2:5, εἰ καί — ἀλλὰ.

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 215.
² N. T. M. and T., p. 112.
³ Paley, Gk. Part., p. 31.
⁵ Thayer's Lexicon.
There is considerable variety with \( \epsilon i \) \( \kappa a i \). Thus in 2 Cor. 7:8 we have a condition of the first class (so Lu. 11:8; 18:4, etc.), while in 1 Pet. 3:14, \( \epsilon i \) \( \kappa a i \) \( \pi a s c h o i t e \), we have one instance of the fourth class. With \( \epsilon a u \) \( \kappa a i \) and the subj. we find, of course, the third class. So Gal. 6:1, \( \epsilon a u \) \( \kappa a i \) \( \pi r o l h m u f h e \). Cf. 2 Tim. 2:5.

In 1 Cor. 7:28, \( \epsilon a u \) \( \kappa a i \) \( \gamma a m h s e s h e s \), the notion is 'if even' rather than 'also' (cf. \( \kappa a i \) \( \epsilon a u \) \( \gamma h m e h \)). In Mt. 18:17 note \( \epsilon a u \) \( \pi a r a k o u s h a \) \( a u t o w h n \), and \( \epsilon a u \) \( d e h \) \( \tau h s \) \( e k k l h s i a s \) \( \pi a r a k o u s h a \). There is nothing peculiar about Ro. 14:8, \( \epsilon a u \) \( \tau e \) \( \z w i m e n \)--\( \epsilon a u \) \( \tau e \) \( \alpha p o d h n h s k w m e n \) (Cf. Ex. 19:13.) Cf. \( \epsilon i t e --\epsilon i t e \) with the ind. (1 Cor. 3:22) or the subj. (1 Th. 5:10). The use of the participle for concession (see \( \k a i p e r \) \( \d w h n \), Heb. 5:8) will be treated under the Participle. For the use of \( \k a a n \) even after \( \epsilon a u \) see Mk. 5:28.

(e) **Other Particles with \( \epsilon i \) and \( \epsilon a u \).** These have no effect on the condition as a distinct class, though they modify the precise idea in various ways. This point will be treated more exactly under Particles. But note \( \epsilon i \) \( \alpha r a \) (Mk. 11:13; Ac. 8:22); \( \epsilon i \) \( \gamma e \) (Eph. 4:21); \( \epsilon i \) \( \alpha r a \) \( \gamma e \) (Ac. 17:27 opt.); \( \epsilon i \) \( \gamma e \) \( \k a a i \) (2 Cor. 5:3); \( \epsilon i \) \( \delta e \) \( \mu h g e \) (Lu. 5:36); \( \epsilon i \) \( \sigma h u \) (Mt. 6:23; Heb. 7:11); \( \epsilon i \) \( \pi e r \) (Ro. 3:30); \( \epsilon a u \) \( \pi e r \) (Heb. 3:14; 6:3); \( \epsilon i \) \( \pi w h s \) (Ro. 1:10, the fut. ind.; Ac. 27:12, the opt.). In Mk. 8:23 \( \epsilon i \) \( \tau i \) is in direct question.

9. INDIRECT DISCOURSE (Oratio Obliqua).

(a) **Recitative 'Ote in Oratio Recta.** Direct quotation is more frequent in primitive language, in the vernacular, and in all vivid picturesque narrative. It is the dramatic method of reporting speech. It is natural in Homer, in the Old Testament and in the Gospels, in Aristophanes and in Shakespeare, and in Uncle Remus. The prolonged indirect discourse in Thucydides and in Livy, in Xenophon and Caesar, is more or less artificial. In the LXX little use is made of indirect discourse. The direct quotation may not be as verbally exact as the indirect,\(^1\) but it is more lively and interesting. As a rule the direct discourse is simply introduced with a word of saying or thinking. The ancients had no quotation-marks nor our modern colon. But sometimes tin was used before the direct quotation merely to indicate that the words are quoted. We find this idiom occasionally with \( \delta t h i \), more seldom with \( \dot{w}z \), in the Attic writers.\(^2\) It is very rare\(^3\) in the LXX, since the Hebrew so frequently has a special participle like 'saying.' But see Gen. 28:16. In the N. T. Jannaris\(^4\) counts 120 instances of recitative \( \delta t h i \).

---

\(^1\) Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 130.  
\(^3\) Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 50; but see on the other hand Con. and Stock, Sel., p. 114.  
\(^4\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 472.
The idiom appears chiefly in the historical books. See Mt. 7:23, ὀμολογήσω ὅτι οὐδέποτε ἔγνων ὑμᾶς. This particular instance can be looked upon as indirect discourse, since the person is the same in both clauses and the tense and mode are unaffected. It is probable that indirect declarative clauses grew out of constructions of this nature.¹ But in Mt. 27:43, εἶπεν ὅτι θεοῦ εἰμὶ υἱός, there is no doubt at all. See 26:74, ὄμνυεν ὅτι οὐκ οἴδα τὸν ἄνθρωπον, and 26:75, εἰρηκότος ὅτι πρὶν ἀλέκτορα φωνήσαι τρὶς ἀπαρνήσῃ με. So Mk. 1:37; 2:12, 16; 4:21; 8:28; Jo. 10:36; Ac. 25:8; Ro. 4:17. In Mt. 16:7 we have (W. H., but R. V. marg. has causal) recitative ὅτι (ὅτι ἄρτους οὐκ ἔλαβομεν); while in verse 8 the indirect (probably causal) use, ὅτι ἄρτους οὐκ ἔχετε; In Mk. 6:23 (W. H. marg.) we have a direct quotation with ὅτι, in Mt. 14:7 the same thing appears as indirect discourse without ὅτι. In Jo. 10:34, ἀπεκρίθη—οὐκ ἔστιν γεγραμμένον ὅτι ἐγὼ ἔπαι θεοί ἔστε, note a treble direct quotation, once with ὅτι and twice without. In Jo. 1:50 the first ὅτι is causal, the second is indirect discourse. The ὅτι in the beginning of Jo. 20:29 is causal. In Jo. 20:18 ὅτι is recitative, causal in 3:18, declar. in 3:19. It is doubtful whether first ὅτι is recitative or causal in Jo. 21:17. In Ro. 3:8, ὅτι ποιήσωμεν (hortatory subj.), ὅτι is also recitative. So in 2 Th. 3:10 ὅτι is merely recitative. The instances of direct quotation without ὅτι are very numerous. Cf. Mt. 8:3; 26:25. Sometimes the same thing is reported with ὅτι (Mt. 19:9) or without ὅτι (Mk. 10:11). For single words quoted without agreement with the word with which they are in apposition note ὅ διδάσκαλος and ὅ κύριος in Jo. 13:13. W. H. seek to indicate the presence of recitative ὅτι by beginning the quotation with a capital letter as in all their quotations. Cf. Jo. 9:9. This redundant ὅτι may occur before direct questions as in Mk. 4:21; 8:4. It continues common in the κοινή and the modern Greek uses πῶς in this idiom.²

(b) Change of Person in Indirect Discourse. Sometimes this was not necessary, as in Jo. 18:8. So in Mt. 16:18, καὶ ἔγω δέ σοι λέγω ὅτι σὺ εἶ Πέτρος, there is no change in the second person. Cf. also Jo. 11:27; Gal. 2:14. But in Mt. 20:10, εὐῳσσαν ὅτι πλείους λήμψονται, the direct discourse would have λήμψόμεθα. So Lu. 24:23. Compare ἔλαβομεν in Mt. 16:7 with ἔχετε in v. 8. Note τί φάγωμεν (direct) in Mt. 6:31, but τί φάγητε (indirect) in 6:25. In Mk. 9:6, οὐ γὰρ ἦδει τί ἀποκριθη, the direct would be τί ἀποκριθω;

¹ Schmitt, Uber den Urspr. des Substantivsatzes, 1889, p. 66.
² Thumb, Handb., p. 192. Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 472. Καὶ τότες εἶπε πῶς Δὲ σοῦ τῷ λεγά ἐγώ; then he said, Didn't I tell you so?
The person may be both ways in the same sentence, as in Ac. 1: 4, παρήγγειλεν—περιμένειν τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τοῦ πατρὸς ἦν ἱκουσάτε μου. See further under Mixture.

(c) **Change of Tense in Indirect Discourse.** Mr. H. Scott objects to the wide scope here given to the term "inquiet discourse" to cover "object clauses" after ὁράω, κτλ., but I conceive the principle to be the same. After primary tenses there is, of course, no change in mode or tense. Note Mt. 16:18 above. See also Mk. 11:24, πιστεύετε ὅτι ἐλάβετε καὶ ἔσται ὑμῖν. It is only after secondary tenses that any change occurs. Usually even then there is no change of tense in Greek. Thus ὅπου ἔκουσαν ὅτι ἐστίν (Mt. 6:55). So with ἀκούσας ὅτι βασιλεύει—ἐφοβηθη (Mt. 2:22). So ἡλπίζομεν ὅτι αὐτὸς ἐστίν (Lu. 24:21). See also Mt. 21:45; Mk. 6:49, Lu. 1:22; Jo. 2:17; 6:24. Cf. Gal. 2:14, εἶδου ὅτι οὐκ ὀρθοποδοῦσιν. So Jo. 11:13. In Jo. 21:19 the future ind. is retained after εἶπεν σημαίνων. Cf. Mt. 20:10. So in Lu. 5:19 the aorist subj. occurs. In Mk. 2:16 we have ὅτι ἐσ-ιεί twice, the first in ind. discourse and the second with interrogative ὅτι. But sometimes the ancient Greek, even the Attic,1 used a past tense of the indicative in ind. discourse where the direct had the tenses of present time. The N. T. shows occasionally the same construction. In a case like Jo. 1:50, εἶπόν σοι ὅτι εἶδον σε, the aorist tense belonged to the direct. Cf. 9:30, 32, 35. So as to the imperfect ἦν and aorist ἀνέβλεψεν in Jo. 9:18. Cf. also Lu. 13:2. In Mt. 27:18, ἤδει ὅτι διὰ φθόνον παρέδωκαν αὐτὸν, the aorist is used for antecedent action. Cf. παραδεδώκεισαν in Mk. 15:10. See also Mt. 16:12, ὅτι οὐκ εἶπεν. But in Jo. 2:25, αὐτὸς γὰρ ἐγίνωσκεν τί ἦν ἐν τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ, the direct form2 would have ἐστίν, not ἦν. So with ἤδειν τί ἐμελλέντο ποιεῖν (6:6); οὗκ ἐγνώσαν ὅτι τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦς ἔλεγεν (8:27). Cf. also 11:51; 12:16, 33; 18:32. In Ac. 19:32, οὐκ ἤδεισαν τίνος ἐνεκα συνελήμβεισαν, the past perfect stands when the direct would have the present perfect. In Ac. 16:3, ἤδεισαν ὅτι Ἔλλην ὁ πατήρ αὐτοῦ ὑπήρχεν, the imperfect may indicate that Timotheus' father was no longer living, though it is not the necessary meaning, as we have just seen. Cf. Mk. 11:32; Jo. 6:22-24; 16:19; Ac. 22:2; 1 Pet. 1:12. In Ac. 22:29, ἐφοβήθη ἐπιγνοῦσα ὅτι Ῥωμαίος ἐστίν καὶ ὅτι αὐτὸν ἦν δεδεκός, we see both constructions combined. In

1 Cf. Goodwin, M. and T., p. 263.
2 Cf. Robertson, Short Gr., p. 1S1. As a matter of fact, the primitive method in oratio obliqua was probably this very change of tense as in Eng. We have it more frequently in Hom. than the change of mode or the graphic retention of tense. Cf. Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 402.
Jo. 11:40, ὀὐκ ἐπόν σοι ὅτι ἔδω πιστεύσης ὄψη, the subj. and the fut. ind. are retained after secondary tense, unless ὅτι is recitative. This preservation of the original tense appears in clauses not strictly in indirect discourse. In Lu. 9:33, ἔπεν—μη ἐδώς ὅ λέγει, the present tense is retained in the relative clause ὅ λέγει, as it is in the causal clause in 9:49, ἐκκλησίους αύτὸν ὅτι ὀὐκ ἀκολούθει μεθ’ ἥμων. In Jo. 21:25, χρωμάσειν, the future inf. stands for the future ind. in the direct, as τεθυμάζειν does in Ac. 14:19 for the perfect ind. In Lu. 20:6 ἔπνιγαι really represents the imperfect indicative of the direct.

(d) Change of Mode in Indirect Discourse. The rule with the Greek was not to change the tense. The mode after past tenses, with more freedom, was either retained1 or changed to the corresponding tense of the optative mode. The optative, as the most remote in standpoint of the modes, suited this idiom very well. The imperfect and past perfect indicative were, however, retained, though even here the optative sometimes appeared.2 When the aorist optative represented an aorist indicative of the direct discourse the opt. represented past time.3 Usually the optative and subjunctive are future as to time. We have the optative in the N. T. in indirect discourse only in Luke. It was in the κοινή a mark of literary care, almost Atticism, quite beyond the usual vernacular. And with Luke the idiom is almost confined to indirect questions. Luke never has the opt. after ὅτι or ὅς. Once (Ac. 25:16) in a subordinate temporal clause the optative occurs where the subj. with (cf. Lu. 2:26) or without all would be in the direct, πρὶν ἡ ἔχοι—τε λάβοι. And even here ὀὐκ ἐστιν, after ὅτι comes just before. This change in the subordinate clause was also optional in the ancient idiom.4 If ἄν was used with the subj. in the direct it was, of course, dropped with the change to the optative in the indirect. Similar to this is the use of ἐν and the optative with dependent single clause either as protasis with implied apodosis or purpose like ἐν παράφησειν (Ac. 17:27); ἐν δυνατὸν ἔτη (20:16); ἐν πῶς δύναστο (27:12). Here after primary tenses we should have ἐὰν and the subj. or ἐν and the future ind. Cf. Ph. 3:12; no. 1:10. Cf. τί γράψω in Ac. 25:26. As already explained also, the indirect questions with ἐν and the

---

1 In archaic Lat. the incl. was used in indirect discourse as in Gk. Cf. Draeger, Hist. Synt., Bd. II, p. 460.
2 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 263.
optative (Ac. 25:20; 27:39) are instances where the indicative would be used in the direct. Even in indirect questions Luke usually keeps the mode of the direct. So the indicative as in τὸ τίς—δοκεῖ (Lu. 22:24), the subjunctive as in τὸ πῶς—ἀποδῷ (22:4) or the optative as in τὸ τί ἄν θέλο (1:62). The indicative is never changed to a subjunctive as in Latin. When the subj. in Greek occurs in an indirect question it does so because it was the subj. in the direct. Thus οὐ γὰρ ἀδει τί ἀποκριθῇ (Mk. 9:6). Cf. Mt. 6:25, 31, τί φάγητε, τί φάγωμεν. So Lu. 22:2, 4; Ac. 4:21. Cf. subj. with ἵνα after secondary tenses (Ro. 1:13; 1 Pet. 4:6).

The use of the optative (as distinct from subj.) in indirect discourse was a Greek development. We see the beginning of it in Homer. The optative, however, does occur in Lu. (18:36, W. H. text, margin ἃν) in an indirect question where the direct had the indicative. Cf. ποταμὸς ἕη in 1:29. So 8:9, ἐπηρωτών τίς εἶν. In Ac. 21.33, ἐπιστάθηκε τίς εἶν καὶ τί ἐστιν πεποιηκός, both constructions occur side by side. The variation here in the mode (retention of the ind.) gives a certain vividness to this part of the question. See Optative in Paratactic Sentences where the κοινή parallels are given. In γίνοιτο κρατεῖν πάσης ἂν ἀφησθε χώρας, P. Par. 26 (B.C. 163), there is no sequence of mode. The subj. is with the indefinite relative and the opt. is a wish. It has been already (under Optative) shown that ἃν, and the opt. in an indirect question is there because it was in the direct (cf. Ac. 17: 18, τί ἄν θέλοι; with Lu. 1:62, το τί ἃν θέλοι). Sometimes, one must admit, the difference between the two is reduced to a minimum, as in the papyri occasionally. 1 So in Lu. 9:46, τὸ τίς ἃν εἶν (cf. τὸ τίς ἕη) in Lu. 22:23). See also Lu. 15:26; Ac. 10:17. But there is always a shade of difference. The manuscripts reflect this haziness in the variations between ind. and opt. as in Lu. 22:23; Ac. 2:12, et cet. In Lu. 3:15, μὴ ποτὲ ἕη, we also have the opt. in an indir. question. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 165) quotes Diod. I, 75, 5, ἐπειδὴ ἀν—πρόσθετο. The Atticists used it often.

(e) The Limits of Indirect Discourse. It is not always easy to draw the line between indirect discourse and other constructions. Thus Jannaris2 uses it only for declarative clauses with ὅτι or ὡς. Burton3 confines it to indirect assertions and indirect questions, but admits that it also covers indirect commands and promises. Take Mt. 14:7, ὠμολόγησεν αὐτῇ δοῦναι ὃ ἐὰν αἰτήσηται. The in-

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 198.  
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 131. So most of the grammars.
finitive δοῦναι is the direct object of the verb and does not seem to be in indir. discourse, for in Mk. 6:23 the direct form has δώσω. But, after all, it is practical indir. discourse, though the analogy of tense construction breaks down in this instance. But note fut. infinitive with ὑμοσεύν in Heb. 3:18, according to the principle of indirect discourse. On the whole it is best to consider three classes or kinds of indirect discourse: declarative clauses, indirect questions, indirect commands.

(f) Declarative Clauses (Indirect Assertions).

(a) ὡς and the Indicative. There is no clear instance of ὡς in this sense in the N. T. It was common in the ancient Greek.  
Just as final Ὑς retreating before ένα, so declarative ὡς did before ὡς.  
In late Greek ένα monopolized the field as a final particle and divided it with ὡς as a declarative conjunction. We do have ὡς in indirect questions a few times as will be shown. This is more likely the meaning even in Ac. 10:28, ἐπίστασθε ὡς ἀδέιμιτον. 
Reeb3 points out that Demosthenes uses ὡς for what is false and ὡς for what is true. The German wie is used like ὡς with verbs of reading, narrating, testifying. With these verbs ὡς is more than just on ('that'). ὡς expresses the thing itself and ὡς the mode or quality of the thing (Thayer). With this explanation it is possible to consider it as declarative, though really meaning 'how.' Cf. Lu. 24:6, μην ζηθείτε ὡς ἐλάλησεν. So in Lu. 8:47 with ἀπαγγέλλω, 23:55 after θεάμαι, Ac. 10:38 after οἴδα, Ac. 20:20 with ἐπισταμαι, Ro. 1:9 with μάρτυς (so Ph. 1:8; 1 Th. 2:10). The manuscripts vary in some passages between ὡς and ὡς and πῶς. W. H. bracket do in Lu. 6:4 and read πῶς in Mk. 12:26 and ὡς in Jude, though ὡς is retained in 7.4 In all these passages it is possible to regard ὡς as the 'how' of indirect question rather than declarative. The encroachment of πῶς on ὡς is to be noticed also. Cf. Mt. 12:4 after ἀναγινώσκω (and Mk. 12:26), Mk. 12:41 after θεωρέω, Mk. 5:16 after διηγέομαι, Lu. 14:7 after ἐπέχων, Ac. 11:13 after ἀπαγγέλλω (so 1 Th. 1:9). In the later Greek πῶς comes gradually to be equivalent to ὡς.5

Gradually πῶς gained the ascendency over ὡς till in the modern Greek it became the regular declarative particle. See Thumb, Handb., p. 190. In Ro. 10:15; 11:33, ὡς is exclamatory. The κοινη writers and the papyri show this same retreat of ὡς before

---

1 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 258.  
3 De Particulorum ὡς et ὡς apud Demosthenenum Usu, 1890, p. 38.  
4 Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 230 f.  
5 Hatz., Einl., p. 19.
...ti and the inroad of πῶς on ὁτι (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 159).
Cf. B. U., I, 37 (51 A.D.), οἴδας πῶς—χρῆςω. Epictetus often after ὅραω. There is, however, no doubt of the use of ὅς ὁτι in the declarative sense—'that.' It is an unclassical combination, but it appears in the LXX (Esther 4:14) and in the κοινή writers. 

It is like the Latin quasi in the Vulgate. The late papyri (fourth cent. A.D.) show that ὅς ὁτι came in the vernacular to mean simply 'that.'

Moulton cites also two Attic inscriptions from the first century B.C. which have ὅς ὁτι in the sense of ὅς or ὁτι alone. The editors have removed ὁτι from ὅς ὁτι in Xenophon's Hellen. III. ii, 14, εἰπὼν ὅς ὁτι ὁκνοῖη. Moulton agrees to Blass' stigma of "unclassical" on ὅς ὁτι, but Paul has κοινή support for his use of it in 2 Cor. 5:19; 11:21; 2 Th. 2:2. But ὁτι has won its place in the N. T. not only over ὅς, but also over the infinitive. The use of the infinit. in indir. discourse3 takes quite a subordinate place in the N. T. Luke alone uses it to any extent.

The periphrasis with ὁτι has superseded it in nearly all the N. T. writers. 

The use of ὁτι is the common way of making a declaration in indirect discourse in the N. T. There arose also διότι in the declarative sense5 (cf. late Latin quia=quod), but no example occurs in N. T. The classic causal sense of διότι prevailed.

It is sometimes doubtful whether ὁτι is causal or declarative as in Ac. 22:29. The context must decide. Finally, as noted, πῶς came to be the normal declarative conjunction in the vernacular over the infinit. as over ὅς and ὁτι) as the infinitive disappeared from indir. discourse.6 The only mode used with ὁτι in the N. T. is the ind. In Ro. 3:8 (subj.) ὁτι is recitative. At bottom ὁτι is just ὁ τι, and Homer sometimes used ὁ τε in the declarative sense (and 6). Cf. ὁτι ὁτε together in 1 Cor. 12.

The verbs after which ὁτι is used in the N. T. cover a wide range. Indeed, ὁτι comes also after substantives like ἀγγελία (1 Jo. 1:5); κρίσις (Jo. 3:19); λόγος (Jo. 15:25); μαρτυρία (1 Jo. 5:11); μάρτυς (2 Cor. 1:23); παρρησία (1 Jo. 5:14), causal in Ac. 22:14; φάσις (Ac. 21:31). It is in apposition also with ἐν ὑμῖν (Mk. 9:41). We see also ἐν τούτω ὁτι (1 Jo. 3:16). Some-

---

Moulton (Prol., p. 212) gives C.P.R. 19 (iv/A.D.) πρῷην βιβλία ἐπιδεικνύει τῇ σῇ ἐπιμελεία ὅς ὁτι ἐβολολήθην

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 212.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 231.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 211.
5 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 413.
6 Mitsotakis, Praktische Gr. der neugriechischen Schrift- and Umgangssprache, 1891, p. 235.
times ὅτι itself seems to imply ἐν τούτῳ (Ro. 5:8) or περὶ τούτου (Mk. 1:34) or εἰς ἐκείνῳ (Jo. 2:18). Cf. τούτω ὅτι (Rev. 2:6).

Another irregularity of construction is the prolepsis of the substantive before ὅτι (and change of case) as in 1 Cor. 16:15. This idiom is sometimes called the epexegetic use of ὅτι. Cf. further Ac. 9:20. It is a rather common idiom. Cf. Mt. 25:24. See especially Jo. 8:54. In Ro. 9:6 note οὐχ ὅτων δὲ ὅτι. In 1 Cor. 15:27 ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὅτι is almost adverbial, but that is not true of πρὸς ὑπὲρ τοῦ ὅτι in Heb. 7:14. The elliptical τί ὅτι (Lu. 2:49) may be compared with τί γέγονεν ὅτι, in Jo. 14:22. The elliptical οὐχ ὅτι (cf. Jo. 6:46) is like the corresponding English "not that."

The ὅτι clause may be in the nominative (subject clause) as in Mk: 4:38, οὗ μέλει σοι ὅτι ἀπολλύμεθα; More usually it is, of course, in the accusative (object clause) as in Jo. 11:27, πεπίστευκα ὅτι. The ὅτι clause may also be in apposition with the locative as in Mk. 9:41. In Gal. 1:20, ἵδον ἐνώπιον θεοῦ ὅτι, we have a solemn oath as in ἀληθεία ὅτι (2 Cor. 11:10); πιστός ὅτι (1:18); πάρτυς ὅτι (2 Cor. 1:23); ὁμοίως ὅτι (Rev. 10:6); ξω ἐγὼ, ὅτι (Ro. 14:11, LXX). Rarely the personal construction occurs with ὅτι as in 1 Cor. 15:12, Χριστὸς κηρύσσεται ὅτι. In Jas. 1:13 we either have recitative ὅτι or oratio variata. In Jo. 4:1 we have one ὅτι clause dependent on another. ὅτι may be repeated in parallel clauses as in Jo. 6:22; Ac. 17:3; 22:29; 1 Cor. 15:3 ff. In 1 Jo. 5:9 we have two examples of ὅτι, but one is causal. In Jo. 1:15 ff. the three are all causal. In Jo. 11:50 we have ὅτι and ἵνα in much the same sense. Not so 1 Jo. 5:13. Cf. ἵνα in 1 Jo. 5:3 with ὅτι in 5:11.

The verbs that use declarative ὅτι in the N. T. are very numerous. A few have only ὅτι. Thus Mk. 11:32, ἀπαντεῖς εἰχόν τὸν Ἰωάννην ὅτι προφήτης ἦν (note ἦν). Blass calls this use of ἔχω a Latinism like habeo. Cf. also ὑπολαμβάνω ὅτι (Lu. 7:43), a classical construction. So also λαλέω (Heb. 11:18); συμβιβάζω (Ac. 16:10); σφραγίζω (Jo. 3:33); γυνωρίζω (1 Cor. 12:3); ἐμφανίζω (Heb. 11:14); ἔξωμολογέω (Ph. 2:11); κατηχέω (Ac. 21:21); κηρύσσω (1 Cor. 15:12); ἀποδείκνυμι (2 Th. 2:4); μηνύω (Lu. 20:37); ὑποδείκνυμι (Ac. 20:35); φανερόμαι (2 Cor. 3:3); ἀποκαλύπτω (1 Pet. 1:12); παραδίδωμι (1 Cor. 15:3); παρατίθημι (Ac. 17:3); προφήτευω (Jo. 11:51). The great mass of the verbs of perceiving, showing (contrary to Attic), knowing, believing, hoping, thinking, saying, declaring, replying, testifying, etc., use either the declarative ὅτι or the infinitive. In Lu.

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 231,
9:18 f. with λέγω we have the inf. and ὅτι side by side. So also in Ac. 14:22 with παρακαλέω. Outside of the verbs λέγω, ἐπιμαρτυρέω, κατακρίνω and παρακαλέω the infinitive in indir. discourse in the N. T. is confined to the writings of Luke and Paul and Hebrews according to Viteau, \(^1\) "comme vestige de la langue littéraire." But even with Luke and Paul the rule is to use ὅτι. Blass\(^2\) has a careful list of the uses of these verbs. In margin of W. H. in Jo. 5:15 we have ἰναγγέλλω with ὅτι, but the text has εἰπον. But see ὅτι also in Ro. 2:4 (ἀγνοεῖω), Mt. 12:5 (ἀναγινώσκω), Lu. 18:37 (ἄπαγγέλλω), Ac. 25:16 (ἀποκρίνομαι), 1 Jo. 2:22 (ἀρνεώμαι), Ac. 17:6 (βοάω), 1 Pet. 2:3 (γεύομαι), Ro. 10:5 (γράφω), Mt. 16:21 (δεικνύω), 1 Cor. 1:11 (δηλώ), Ac. 10:42 (διομαρτύρομαι), Ac. 17:3 (διανοίγω), Mk. 8:31 (διδάσκω), Mt. 6:7 (δοκέω), Ac. 9:27 (δητιγέομαι), Lu. 24:21 (ἐλπίζω), Mt. 6:26 (ἐμβλέπω), 1 Cor. 11:2 (διηγέομαι), Ac. 13:32 (εὐαγγελίζομαι), Lu. 18:11 (εὐχαριστέω), Rev. 2:4 (ἔχω κατά τινος), Lu. 11:38 (θαυμάζω), Jo. 6:5 (θεάομαι), Ac. 4:13 (καταλαμβάνομαι), Lu. 12:24 (κατανόω), 2 Cor. 5:14 (κρίνω), 2 Pet. 3:5 (λαυθάω), Mt. 3:9 (λέγω), Ac. 23:27 (μανθάνω), 2 Cor. 1:23 (μάρτυρα τον θεόν ἐπικαλούμαι), Heb. 7:8 (μαρτυρέω), Ac. 20:26 (μαρτύρομαι), Mt. 27:63 (μιμητικός), Mt. 5:17 (νομίζω), Mt. 15:17 (νοέω), Mt. 26:74 (ὁμοῦ), Jas. 1:7 (οἶμαι), Ro. 9:1 (οὐ ψεύδομαι), 1 Cor. 15:3 (παραδίδωμι), Heb. 13:18 (πείθομαι), Jo. 6:69 (πιστεύω), Ro. 4:21 (πληροφορέω), 2 Cor. 13:2 (προειρήκα καὶ προλέγω, cf. Gal. 5:21), Ac. 23:34 (πυθανόμαι), Lu. 15:6, 9 (συγχαίρω), Jo. 18:14 (συμβούλευω), Ro. 8:16 (συμμαρτυρέω), Mt. 16:12 (συνήμη), Ju. 5 (ὑπομιμητικός) 1 Cor. 10:19 (ὁμήμ), Lu. 10:20 (χαίρω), 1 Tim. 1:12 (χάριν ἔχω τινί). I cannot claim that this is a complete list, but it is the best I can do with the help of H. Scott, Blass, Thayer, Moulton and Geden, and Viteau's list. At any rate it gives one a fairly clear idea of the advances made by ὅτι on the classic infinitive idiom. Some verbs still share the participle with ὅτι, but not verbs of showing. These no longer appear in the N. T. with the participle.\(^3\) So with ὅτι note βλέπω (Heb. 3:19); θεωρέω (Mk. 16:4). Cf. Ac. 19:26, θεωρέω and ἄκουω. So also ἐπιγινώσκω (Lu. 7:37); ἐπίσταμαι (Ac. 15:7); εὐρίσκω (Ro. 7:21); μημονεύω (Ac. 20:31); ὁράω (Mk. 2:16). Besides some verbs appear with either ὅτι, the infinitive or the participle. Thus ἄκουω (Mt. 5:21; Jo. 12:18; Lu. 4:23); γινώσκω (Mt. 21:45; Heb. 10:34; Lu. 8:46); λογίζομαι (Ro. 8:18; 2 Cor. 10:2 both inf. and part.); οἶδα (Ac. 16:3; Lu. 4:41; 2 Cor. 12:2); ὁμολογέω (Mt. 7:23 unless recitative ὅτι);

\(^1\) Le Verbe, p. 51.  
\(^2\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 231 f.  
\(^3\) Ib., p. 233.
Tit. 1:16; 2 Jo. 7). In Ac. 27:10 we find used with the infinitive "quite irregularly" Blass calls it. But it is just the classic mingling of two constructions seen in the more usual form in Ac. 14:22, where a change is made from the inf. to ὅτι and δεῖ. Different verbs had varying histories in the matter of ὅτι. It was not a mere alternative with many. With ἀκούω, for instance, ὅτι is the usual idiom. The same thing is true with γινώσκω, ὁδικα, λέγω, νομίζω, πιστεύω. But with θημί, in classical Greek almost always with the infinitive (Ro. 3:8), we twice have ὅτι (1 Cor. 10:19; 15:50). For ὅτι and then the inf. see Mk. 8:28 f. The substantive nature of the ὅτι clause is well shown in 1 Th. 3:6.

Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 159) cites ὅτι-ὑπάρχειν from Proklus' In rem publ., II, 225, 22. The ὅτι clause is often called an object clause and may be in the nominative or in the accusative.

(B) The Infinitive. With some verbs we have only single instances of the infinitive of indirect discourse in the N. T. So with βοᾶω (Ac. 25:24); γινώσκω (Heb. 10:34); καταλαμβάνωμαι (Ac. 25:25); ἤγεομαι (Ph. 3:8); νοεῖ (Heb. 11:3). Ἀποκρίνομαι has it only thrice (Lu. 20:7; Ac. 25:4). See also ἀπαγγέλλω (Ac. 12:14); ἀπαρνέμομαι (Lu. 22:34); δισχεύριζομαι (Ac. 12:15); δηλοῖ (Heb. 9:8); ἐπαγγέλλομαι (Mk. 14:11; Ac. 7:5); ἐπιμαρτύρομαι (1 Pet. 5:12); κατακρίνω (Mk. 14:44); μαρτυρέω (Ac. 10:43); προαιτιάομαι (Ro. 3:9); προκαταγγέλλω (Ac. 3:18); σημαίνω (Ac. 11:28); χρηματίζω (Lu. 2:26). Some of these are words that are not used with any construction very often, some occur only with the infinitive, like ἐπιδεικνύω (Ac. 18:28); προσδοκάω (Ac. 3:5; 28:6); ὑποκρίνομαι (Lu. 20:20); ὑπονοεῖ (Ac. 13:25; 27:27). There is, besides, the inf. with βούλομαι, θέλω, κελεύω, etc., more exactly the simple object inf. Other verbs that have occasionally the inf. are in the list given under (a), those with either ὅτι or the inf. like ἀρνέομαι, (Heb. 11:24); γράφω (Ac. 18:27); δεικνύω (Ac. 10:28); διδάσκω (Lu. 11:1); διαμαρτύρομαι (Ac. 18:5); διανοήγο (Ac. 16:14. Cf. τοῦ in Lu. 24:45); εὐαγγελίζομαι (Ac. 14:15), συμβουλεύω (Rev. 3:18). In Luke and Paul the inf. of indirect discourse is fairly common with λέγω (Lu. 9:18, 20, etc. Cf. Mt. 12:24; Mk. 3:28) and with νομίζω (Lu. 2:44; Ac. 7:25, etc.).

In the old Greek the inf. was the favourite construction in indirect discourse. The Latin had it in all its glory, but the gradual disappearance of the inf. from late Greek made it wither away. Indeed, it was a comparatively late development in Greek

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 233.
anyhow and is rare in Homer.1 It is not easy to draw the line between βούλομαι and κελεύω with the inf. on the one hand and λέγω and νομίζω with the inf. on the other.2 At bottom the construction is the same. The question of the case of the substantive or adjective used with this inf. is not vital to the idiom. It is really a misnomer to call it "the accusative and infinitive." That is, in fact, more frequently the case found with this inf., but it is so, not because the idiom calls for it per se, but simply because the infinitive can have no subject, not being a finite verb (cf. the participle). Hence when a noun (not the object) occurs with the inf. in indir. discourse it is put in the accusative of general reference, if there is no word in the sentence in another case for it naturally to agree with by apposition. This matter was discussed under Cases, but will bear some repetition at this point since it is so often misunderstood. Clyde3 correctly sees that, since the inf. itself is in a case and is non-finite, it cannot have a subject. Monro4 thinks that the accusative was a late development to assist the "virtual" predication of the later inf. Sometimes this acc. itself is the direct object of the principal verb (so verbs of asking, ad.). Gildersleeve has a pertinent word: "I look with amazement at the retention [by Cauer in his Grammatica Militans] of Curtius' utterly unsatisfactory, utterly inorganic explanation of the acc. c. inf. in oratio obliqua, against which I protested years ago (A. J. P., XVII, 1890, 517): ἐγγειλαν ὅτι ὁ Κῦρος ἐνίκησε becomes ἐγγειλαν τὸν Κῦρον ὅτι ἐνίκησεν, but ὅτι ἐνίκησεν=νικῆσαι" (A. J. P., XXXIII, 4, p. 489). To go no further, Gildersleeve shows that the ὅτι construction is later than the acc. c. inf. But the grammarians went astray and called this accusative the "subject" of the inf., and, when some other case appears with the inf., it is an "exception" to the rules of the grammarians, though in perfect harmony with the genius of the Greek inf. Even Moulton5 says: "In classical Greek, as any fifth-form boy forgets at his peril, the nominative is used regularly instead of the accusative as subject to the infinitive when the subject of the main verb is the same." Now, there is no doubt about the presence of the nominative in such an instance. But why say "instead of the accusative"? The nominative is normal and natural in such a construction. This construction probably, almost certainly, antedated the accusative with the inf.6 We still

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 162.
2 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 269.
3 Gk. Synt., p. 139.
4 Hom. Gr., p. 162.
5 Prol., p. 212.
6 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 162.
meet it in the N. T. The oldest idiom was to have no noun with the inf., as in Lu. 24:23, ἧλθαν λέγουσαι καὶ ὀπτασίαν ἀγγέλων ἔωρακέναι. The context makes it perfectly clear that the word ὀπτασίαν is the object of ἔωρακέναι and the rest is matter of easy inference. Cf. Ac. 26:9 (with δεῖν); Jas. 2:14; 1 Jo. 2:6, 9; Tit. 1:16.

In the majority of cases in the N. T. the noun is not repeated or referred to in the predicate. So in Lu. 20:7 we have ἀπεκρίθησαν μὴ εἰδέναι, but in Ac. 25:4 Φήστος ἀπεκρίθη τηρείσθαι τὸν Παῦλον εἰς Καισαρίαν, ἑαυτὸν δὲ μέλλειν. It is easy to see why Παῦλον has to be in the acc, if expressed at all. We could have had αὐτός rather than ἑαυτὸν which probably is just co-ordinated with Παῦλον. Cf. κρίτης εἶναι in Ac. 18:15; Mt. 19:21 τέλειος εἶναι, Ph. 4:11 ἐμαθὼν αὐτάρκης εἶναι, where the principle is the same, though not technically indirect discourse; it is the predicate nominative. So with βούλομαι, θέλω, ζητέω, etc. The personal construction is a good illustration of the nominative. Cf. Heb. 11:4, ἔμαρτυρήθη εἶναι δίκαιος. The nominative occurs also in Ro. 1:22, φάσκοντες εἶναι σοφοί. See further Ro. 9:3; 1 Cor. 3:18; 8:2; 14:37; 2 Cor. 10:2; Heb. 5:12; Jas. 1:26; Jo. 7:4 (W. H. text). In a case like Lu. 20:20 δικαίους εἶναι is inevitable because of ὑποκρινομένους. But there are a good many examples in the N. T. where the nominative could have been properly retained and where the accusative has crept in, perhaps owing to a tendency towards uniformity rather than to any special Latin influence as Blass supposed. Moulton notes the same tendency in the koinē outside of Latin influence. Moulton (Prol., p. 249) refers to AEschylus, P. V. 268 f., with the note of Sykes and Wynne-Wilson, and to Adam's note on Plato, Apol., 36 B., for classical examples of acc. with inf. where nom. could have occurred. Cf. Ro. 6:11, ὑμεῖς λογίζεσθε ἑαυτούς εἶναι νεκροὺς. It is rare in the classical Greek for the accusative to occur in such sentences. The N. T. undoubtedly shows an increase of the acc. where the nominative was the rule for the older Greek. So Ro. 2:19, πέποιθας σεαυτὸν ὄθησόν εἶναι τυφλῶν, where αὐτός (cf. Ro. 9:3) would have been sufficient. Cf. also Ac. 5:36 (cf. 8:9) λέγων εἶναι τινα ἑαυτόν, (Ph. 3:13) ἐγὼ ἐμαυτῶν οὕτω λογίζομαι κατειληφέναι, (Heb. 10:34) γινώσκοντες ἐξεύθεν εὐαυτοῦς κρείσσουσα ὑπαρξίν, (Eph. 4:22) ἀποθέσθαι ὑμᾶς (some distance from the verb ἐδιδάχθητε). See also Ac. 21:1; Ro. 1:20 f. Blass, p. 238, thinks that in 2 Cor. 7:11 the class. Greek would have had ὅντας, not ἑιναι. Even so, but the N. T. has

---

1 Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 238 f.
2 Prol., p. 212 f.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 237.
eiναι. An example like Lu. 20:20 (see above) is hardly pertinent, since the participle on which the inf. depends is itself in the accusative. Cf. 6:4.¹ In Ac. 25:21, τού Παύλου ἐπικαλεσμένου τηρεῖσθαι αὐτόν the pronoun could have been assimilated to the case of Παύλου (αὐτοῦ). So also in Lev. 2:9; 3:9, τῶν λεγόντων Ἰουδαίους eiναι ἐαυτοῦ (different order in 3:9). We find the same lack of assimilation in Ac. 22:17, μοι—μου—με, and in 25:27 μοι—πέμποντα and in Heb. 2:10 αὐτῷ—ἀγαγόντα. In 2 Pet. 3:3, γινώσκοντες is clue to anacolouthon (cf. 1:20) as with ἀπέχεσθαι—ἔχοντες (1 Pet. 2:11 f.) and with στελλόμενοι (2 Cor. 8:20). So Lu. 1:74 ἡμῖν ῥυσθέντας, 5:7 μετέχοις ἐλθόντας. The Greek of the N. T. did sometimes have assimilation of case as in Ac. 16:21, αὐτῷ ἔχεστιν ἡμῖν μαραδέχεσθαι οὐδὲ ποιεῖν Ὀρωμαίοις οὕσιν. So also 15:25, ἔδοξεν ἡμῖν γενομένως ὀρθομαθῶν ἐκλεξαμένως (—οὐς margin of W. H.) πέμψαι (cf. accusative retained in verse 22, ἐκλεξαμένους). Cf. also Lu. 1:13; 9:59; 2 Pet. 2:21. Contrast ἔδοξε ὁι μοι of Lu. 1:3 with ἔδοξεν ἐμαυτῷ of Ac. 26:9. The same situation applies to the cases with the articular infinitive. Cf. Mt. 26:32, μετὰ τὸ ἐγερθῆναι με προάξω. Here the με is not necessary and αὐτός could have been used. So with Lu. 2:4, διὰ τὸ eiναι αὐτόν. The αὐτός is superfluous, as in Heb. 7:24.² Cf. Lu. 10:35, ἐγὼ ἐν τῷ ἐπανέρχεσθαι με ἀποδώσω σοὶ. See further Lu. 1:57; 2:21; 24:30; Ac. 18:3. It is easy to show from this use of the articular inf. that the inf. has no proper "subject." The accusative is due to other reasons. Take Lu. 2:27, ἐν τῷ εἰσαγαγεῖν τοὺς γονεῖς τὸ παιδίον Ἰησοῦν, where the context makes plain that παιδίον is the object of εἰσαγαγεῖν and γονεῖς the acc. of general reference. The article τῷ must be considered in explaining this instance. Cf. Lu. 18:5; Ac. 1:3; 27:4; Heb. 5:12 (three accusatives in W. H.'s text). The acc. with the inf. was normal when the substantive with the inf. was different from the subject of the principal verb. Cf. Ro. 3:8, φασίν τινες ἡμᾶς λέγειν ὅτι (note inf. after φημι, and ὅτι after λέγω, but it is recitative ὅτι). In Lu. 24:23, λέγουσιν αὐτόν ξῆν we see λέγω with the acc. and inf. Typical examples are seen in Mt. 17:4, καλῶν ἔστιν ἡμᾶς ὤδε eiναι Ac. 12:14; 14:19; 16:13; 24:15; 1 Pet. 3:17; 5:12; 1 Cor. 14:5; Heb. 9:8. See further Verbal Aspects of Inf., (d), in next chapter.

The tense of the original is preserved in the inf. as a rule. A case like Mt. 14:7, ὑμολόγησεν αὐτῇ δοῦναι ὃ ἔαν αἰτήσηται, may

¹ See also Lu. 23:2, λέγοντα αὐτόν eiναι.
seem a bit disconcerting since in the direct discourse in Mk. 6:23 we find θωσώ. But the future is aoristic anyhow. The line between indir. discourse and the simple object inf. is not sharply drawn. Cf. Ac. 23:12. In Lu. 20:6, πεπεισμένος γὰρ ἐστιν Ἰωάννης προφήτην εἶναι, the inf. represents ην of the direct. There was no help for this, since there is no imperfect inf. The future inf. in indir. discourse is rare, but see Jo. 21:25; Ac. 23:30 (see Tenses). Examples of the perfect inf. in this idiom occur in Ac. 12:14; 14:19; 16:27; 25:25; Heb. 9:8. Cf. ὄμολογεῖ εἰληφέναι, P. Oxy. 37 (A.D. 49).

There is little more to say. The use of τοῦ and the inf. as subject has been noted (pp. 996, 1002). See τοῦ ἑλθεῖν, Lu. 17:1, where τά σκάνδαλα is the acc. of general reference while this genitive inf. is itself in the nominative case. See also Ac. 10:25. We do not have ἄν with the inf. in indir. discourse. In 2 Cor. 10:9, ἵνα μὴ δόξω ὡς ἄν ἐκφοβεῖν, we have ῦως ἄν='',as if.' It is not the ἄν in apodosis. Nestle in his N. T. gives at 1 Pet. 5:8 ζητῶν τίνα καταπιέσω, but surely τίνα is the correct accent. W. H. places even this in the margin. Souter prints τίνα, departing from R. V. which has τίνα. But Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 147) cites Cal- linicus in Vita Hypatii, 57, 12, τοῦ εὑρεῖν, and 113, 11, τί ποιήσαι (cf. German Was tun?). It may be worth while to add that frequently we meet an inf. dependent on an inf. (cf. inf. on part. in Lu. 20:20). I have noticed the idiom in Luke, Paul, Mk., Heb. Cf. Lu. 6:12, ἐξελθεῖν αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸ ὄρος προσεύξασθαι, where the first is in indirect discourse, and Ac. 18:2, διὰ τὸ διατεταχεύναι Κλαύδιου χωρίζεσθαι πάντας τούς Ἰουδαίους, where the second is indirect discourse (indir. command). Cf. Ro. 15:8.

(γ) The Participle. Middleton1 suggests that the use of the participle in indir. discourse is older than the inf. This may be true, since in the Sanskrit it developed much more rapidly than the inf. But there were cross-currents at work in indirect discourse. Just as the inf. was circumscribed by the declarative ὅτι, so the participle was limited by ὅτι or the infinitive. Thus verbs of showing (δείκνυμι, δηλῶ) and of manifesting (φανερῶ) no longer occur with the participle in the N. T. However, we have the participle with φαίνομαι (‘appear’), as in Mt. 6:16. Besides, the participle has disappeared from use with αἰσθάνομαι, μανθάνω, μέμημαι, συνίημι. The participles with μανθάνω in 1 Tim. 5:13 are additional statements, as the Revised Version correctly translates. With the inf. μανθάνω means 'to learn how,' not 'to learn that.'

1 Analogy in Synt., p. 64.
Cf. Ph. 4:11; Tit. 3:14. But some verbs in the N. T. still have the participle in indir. discourse. They are verbs of perception by the senses (hearing, seeing, knowing). In the ancient Greek the nominative was used when the participle referred to the subject of the verb. Thus ὥρω ἡμαρτηκὼς meant 'I see that I have sinned.' In the N. T., however, we have declarative ὅτι in such clauses (Mk. 5:29; 1 Jo. 3:14).¹ Viteau² rightly insists on a real difference between the participial conception and the declarative ὅτι or the inf. If the idea is one of intellectual apprehension merely, an opinion or judgment, we have ὥρω ὅτι (Jas. 2:24). If it is a real experience, the participle occurs as in Mk. 8:24, ὡς δένδρα ὥρω περιπατεώντας. So in Ac. 8:23, his εἰς σύνδεσμον ὥρω σε ὅντα. There is something in this distinction. Cf. βλέπω ὅτι (Jas. 2:22), but the participle in Heb. 2:9, Ἰησοῦν ἐστεφανώμενον. In Mk. 8:24 we have ὅτι with βλέπω and the part. with ὥρω. The realistic quality of the part. is finely brought out in Mk. 9:1, ἦς δὲν ὠδωρὶν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ ἐλπὶδιεῖται ἐν δυνάμει. Note the tense as in Lu. 10:18, ἐθεώρουν τὸν Σατανᾶν—πεσόντα. Cf. 9:49; 21:20; Ac. 11:13; 17:16. See Jo. 19:33, ὥς εἶδον ἡ Αὐτὸν τεθνηκότα. The tense of the direct is preserved. See for θεωρέω, Mk. 16:4 and Lu. 24:39, καθὼς ἐμὲ θεωρεῖτε ἐξουσία. For ἐπίσταμαι take Ac. 15:7 and 24:10. Cf. also μνημονεῦω with ὅτι. (Ac. 20:31) and the part. (2 Tim. 2:8). It is very clear in εὑρίσκω (see ὅτι in Ro. 7:21) which, as in classic Greek, is commonly used with the participle. See Mt. 1:18; 12:44; Lu. 23:2; Ac. 9:2. In Mt. 1:18 we have the passive construction εὑρέθη ἐξουσία. In Lu. 23:2 we find three participles. Δοκιμάζω in the N. T. has only the inf. (Ro. 1:28) and the participle (2 Cor. 8:22). So with ἡγεόμαι (Ph. 2:6; 3:7). Cf. also ἔχε με παρητημένου (Lu. 14:18). In 2 Jo. 7 note the part. with ὀμολογέω. In verse 4, περιπατοῦντας with εὑρίσκω, the case agrees only in sense with ἐκ τῶν τέκνων. The difference between ὅτι with ὁδὸν (Ac. 23:5) and the part. is clear (2 Cor. 12:2), though this is the only instance of the part. with this verb. It prefers ὅτι, but may have the inf. (Lu. 4:41). The difference is even clearer in γινώσκω. See ὅτι in Mt. 21:45, the inf. in Heb. 10:34. The usual idiom is ὅτι, but note Lu. 8:46, ἔγνων δύναμιν ἐξεληλυθοῦαν ἀπ’ ἐμοῦ, where Christ thus graphically describes the terrible nervous loss from his healing work. He felt the power "gone" out of him. In our vernacular we speak of a sense of "goneness." See also Ac. 19:35; Heb. 13:23. But see Mk. 5:29, ἔγνω τῷ σώματι ὅτι ἵστατι.

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 246. ² Le Verbe, p. 531f.
Mk. 5:30 ἐπιγινώσκω has the attributive participle after it. Ἀκούω also occurs with declarative ὅτι (Mt. 5:21; 32 times), the inf. (Jo. 12:18; 1 Cor. 11:18) or the part. (Ac. 7:12; 14:9; 3 Jo. 4; 2 Th. 3:11, etc.). These examples have the accusative when the thing is understood. Blass\(^1\) curiously calls the acc. incorrect in Ac. 9:4; 26:14. The genitive with φωνή does occur in 11:7; 22:7. Blass has an overrefinement on this point. As with the acc. construction of the part. with ἀκούω, so most of the genitive examples are found in the Acts. So 2:6; 6:11; 14:9, etc. But see also Mk. 12:28, ἀκούσας αὐτῶν συζητούτων. So 14:58; Lu. 18:36; Jo. 1:37. The perfect part. in this construction is seen in Lu. 8:46; Jo. 19:33, etc. For the aorist see Lu. 10:18. In Mk. 6:8 we have oratio variata. The sentence starts with ἵνα and concludes with the inf. Hence the part. ὑποδεικνύοντας is construed with the inf. See the acc. part. in Rev. 4:4 as explained by εἶδυ in verse 1, though ἴδοι and the nominative have come between.

(8) Καὶ ἐγένετο. One hardly knows whether to treat this construction as indirect discourse or not. It is a clear imitation of the Hebrew יִהְיָה and is common in the LXX with two constructions. It is either καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ with finite verb (or ἐγένετο δὲ) as in Gen. 24:30; 29:13; Josh. 5:1, etc.), or we have asyndeton, καὶ ἐγένετο plus finite verb (Gen. 22:1; 24:45, etc.). For ἐγένετο we often find ἐγενήθη (1 Sam. 4:1; 11:1, etc.). This asyndeton is also common in the future as καὶ ἐσται with finite verb (Is. 9:16; 10:20, 27, etc.). This καὶ ἐσται construction is quoted a few times in the N. T. (Ac. 2:17, 21; Ro. 9:26) from the LXX. For καὶ ἐσται καὶ see Ex. 13:11 f. W. F. Moulton\(^2\) has pointed out that the idiom occurs when the principal sentence has some note of time. J. H. Moulton\(^3\) quotes Driver (Tenses, § 78) as describing the יִהְיָה construction in a similar fashion, "a clause specifying the circumstances under which an action takes place."

All the examples of these two constructions in Luke fit this description. Luke has in the Gospel eleven of the καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ examples and twenty-two of the καὶ ἐγένετο type. For καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ see Lu. 17:11; without the second καὶ 17:14. See in particular Lu. 8 and 9. It is frequently the case that Luke has ἐν τῷ and the inf. with the idiom. So 9:51, ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν τῷ συμπληροῦσθαι—καὶ αὐτὸς ἐστήρισεν. Here καὶ is almost equivalent to ὅτι. So καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ ἔδωκεν—ἐἶπεν τις (11:1). We have καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ also in

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 246.
\(^2\) W.-M., p. 760, n. 2.
\(^3\) Prol., p. 16.
Mt. 9:10. The form καὶ ἐγένετο Moulton\(^1\) counts outside of Luke only twice in Mark and five times in Matthew with the phrase ἐγένετο ὅτε ἔτελεσεν. Cf. Mt. 7:28. Moulton is concerned to show against Dalman that the idiom is not Semitic. He admits the Hebraism in καὶ ἐγένετο καὶ, but doubts as to καὶ ἐγένετο (asyndeton). But surely the LXX has left its mark in this point also. The LXX does not have ἐγένετο (or γίνεται) and the infinitive (but cf. 2 Macc. 3:16 ἡν — τιτρώσκεσθαι). In the N. T. we find it in Mt. 18:13; Mk. 2:15; five times in Luke and seventeen times in Acts. Cf. ὃμιν γίνοιτο κρατεῖν, P. Par. 26 (B.C. 163-2). The other two constructions are absent from the Acts, showing that in the Gospel Luke was more directly using Semitic sources or imitating the LXX on the point. But even inf. with ἐγένετο is not ancient Greek, which used συνέβης. We have συνέβης and the inf. in Ac. 21:35. The modern Athenian vernacular has συνέβης ὅτι on while the country districts\(^2\) use ἔτυχε νά. Moulton finds the inf. with γίνεται in the papyri and rightly in the vernacular κοινὴ the origin of this idiom. There is no essential difference between the inf. with γίνεται and ἐγένετο. Cf. Ac. 9:32; 16:16; 9:32, 37, 43; 11:26, etc. Outside of Luke (Gospel and Acts) the inf. with ἐγένετο is confined to Mk. 2:23, which Moulton calls "a primitive assimilation of Lu. 6:1." See Ac. 10:25, ἐγένετο τοῦ εἰσελθεῖν. This is Moulton's presentation, which is certainly more just than the mere description of "Hebraism" for all these constructions.\(^3\) We do not have the ὅτι clause with γίνεται or ἐγένετο in the N. T.

\(\text{(g) Indirect Questions.}\)

\(\text{(a) Tense.}\) See (c) under Indirect Discourse. It may here be simply stated that when the principal verb is primary no change in tense occurs. When it is secondary, still no change appears as a rule, though occasionally one does see it, as in, Jo. 2:25; 6:6; 18:32. But note ἐπυνθάνετο ποῦ γεννᾶται (Mt. 2:4); ἐθεώρουν ποῦ τέθειται (Mk. 15:47). Cf. Ac. 10:18. Note difference between present perfect in Mk. 15:44 and the aorist in the same verse. For the future ind. see Jo. 21:19; Mk. 11:13.

\(\text{(β) Mode.}\) It is only necessary to say that as a rule the same mode is retained in the indirect question that was in the direct. Thus see Mk. 5:14; 15:47; Lu. 8:36; 23:55; Ac. 10:29, where the indicative occurs. We have the ind. after secondary as well as primary tenses. This is the common idiom in the N. T. as in

\(^1\) Ib. \(^2\) Ib., p. 17. \(^3\) As in Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 142
the κοινή. In all instances where a subj. appears in this construction it is due to the fact that the subj. would have been present in the direct (deliberative subj.). Note τί φάγωμεν; in Mt. 6:31 and τί φάγητε (6:25). See also ποῦ μένεις of Jo. 1:38 and εἶδον ποῦ μένει of verse 39 for the retention of the indicative. The Latin changed the ind. to the subj. in indirect questions, but the Greek did not. This deliberative subj. occurs after primary tenses as in Lu. 9:58, οὐκ ἔχει ποῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν κλίνῃ, and after secondary tenses also as in Mk. 9:16, οὐ γὰρ ἦδει τί ἀποκριθή. Cf. also Mk. 6:36; Lu. 5:19; 12:36. So also the optative occurs a few times where it was in the direct. This is the construction with ἔνυ which has already been discussed twice. See Ac. 17:18, τί ἔνυ θέλοι, for the direct form, and Lu. 1:62, τί ἔνυ θέλοι, for the indirect. Cf. Lu. 9:46; Ac. 5:24. In 2 Tim. 2:25, μὴ ποτε δώῃ (W. H. have δώῃ in margin), we have the optative without ἔνυ after a primary tense if δώῃ be correct. Moulton considers the subj. here a "syntactical necessity." We heed not moralize, therefore, on this instance of the optative even if it is genuine. Radermacher (Neut. Gr., p. 132) shows that the Atticists frequently used the opt. after a primary tense, as copyists often fail to catch the spirit of a thing. The papyri (ib.) have some illustrations of the same idiom. The other examples of the opt. in indirect questions are all after secondary tenses and the change is made from an indicative or a subj. to the optative. These examples all occur in Luke. As instances of the opt. where the direct had the incl. see Lu. 1:29; 3:15; 18:36. See Ac. 21:33 for both modes. In Ac. 17:27, εἰ ἄραγε ψήλαφθησειαν, the opt. represents a subj. with ἔνυ after a primary tense. So in Ac. 27:12. In no instance where the opt. without ἔνυ occurs in the indirect discourse is it necessary. In all these examples the indicative or the subj. could have been retained. The infinitive with τίνα in 1 Pet. 5:8 is read by Nestle, but not by W. H. or Souter. See under (f), (β).

(γ) Interrogative Pronouns and Conjunctions Used. One notes at once the absence of ὅστις in this construction, the common classic idiom. We do have ὅτι once in Ac. 9:6, λαλήθησεται σοι ὅτι σε δέι ποιεῖν. Elsewhere the most usual pronoun is τίς and τί as in Ac. 10:29; 21:33. We even have τίς τί ἄρη in Mk. 15:24 (double interrogative). Tischendorf reads τίς τί in Lu. 19:15, but W. H. have only τί. Thin double use appears rarely in the older Greek. As a rule the distinction between τίς and ὅς is pre-

2 Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 68.
served in indirect questions, as in Jo. 13:24 (cf. 13:12). The occasional confusion between τίς and ὃς was discussed under Pronouns. See 1 Tim. 1:7 and Jas. 3:13. Now and then the simple relative pronoun or adverb is used in an indirect question, as was true of classical Greek also. So Mk. 5:19 f. ὅσα, Lu. 8:47 δι' ἡν αἰτίαν, Ac. 15:14 καθώς, 1 Th. 1:5 οἴοι, and the various examples of ὡς discussed in connection with Indirect Assertions (Lu. 8:47; Ac. 10:28, 38, etc.) which are more likely to be understood in the sense of 'how,' and so indirect questions. Cf. Lu. 6:3 f. (ὁ and ὡς), Mt. 10:19 (δοθήσεται πῶς ἢ τί λαλήσητε) Lu. 17:8 (τί). Other interrogative words used are ποῦ (Mt. 2:4), πόθεν (Jo. 8:14), ποῖος (Rev. 3:3), πότε (Lu. 12:36), πῶς (Lu. 8:36), πηλίκος (Gal. 6:11), πόσος (Mt. 16:9), ποταπός (Lu. 1:29). The correlative words, besides the lone instance of ὅτι in Ac. 9:6, are ὅπως (Lu. 24:20), ὅποιος (1 Th. 1:9). In Mk. 14:14 (Lu. 22:11) ποῦ—ὁπου φαγω; most likely the ὅπου clause is an indirect question with the deliberative subj., but it may be the volitive subj. simply. There are plenty of instances of εἰ in indirect questions (see Conditional Sentences) as in Mk. 15:44 after θαυμάζω and ἐπερωτάω; Lu, 14:28 after ψη-φίς; 14:31 after βουλέωμαι; Mt. 26:63 after εἶπον; 27:49 after ὄραω; Mk. 3:2 after παρατηρέω; Jo. 9:25 after οἴδα; Ac. 4:19 after κρίνω; 10:18 after πυνθάνομαι; 19:2 after ἀκούω; 2 Cor. 2:9 after γινώσκω; 13:5 after πειράζω. There are, besides, those passages1 where a word is suppressed, like Mk. 11:13; Eph. 3:2; Ph. 3:12; 2 Th. 2:15. See also the optative with εἰ in Ac. 17:27; 25:20; 27:12. This is all quite classical and gives no trouble. We find μή also used like an indirect question after σκοπεῖσαι (cf. p. 995) with the ind. (Lu. 11:35) and μὴ ποτε after διαλογίζομαι with the opt. (Lu. 3:15). In Jo. 7:17 an alternative indirect question occurs with πότερον—ἡ. The only other alternative construction in an indirect question is in 2 Cor. 12:2 f. after οἴδα, and is εἴτε—εἴτε. In all these points the N. T. is in harmony with the κοινή. The use of τί with the subj. (Mt. 6:36) or the future ind. (Ac. 25:26 possibly subj. aor.) may be compared with ποῦ after ἔχω in Lu. 9:58. In Col. 4:6 πῶς after εἰδέναι is to be distinguished from the use of the inf. after οἴδα ('know how to do.' Cf. Lu. 11:13). In Mk. 2:24, ἤδε τί ποιοῦσιν; the ἤδε is probably just the interjection as in Mt. 25:25. For the acc. and the ind. question side by side see Mt. 16:9.

(δ) The Article with Indirect Questions. This classical idiom

appears in Luke and Paul. See τὸ τί (Lu. 1:62), τὸ τίς (9:46), τὸ πῶς (22:4). So Paul has τὸ πῶς in 1 Th. 4:1 and τὸ τί in Ro. 8:26 (cf. τί τό in 8:27). See also 22:23 f.; Ac. 4:21; 22:30. The substantive nature of the indirect question is well shown also in Jo. 4:10. Cf. Lu. 24:19 f.

(h) **Indirect Command.** As already explained, this construction is somewhat vague and the line is hard to draw between this and other idioms.

(a) **Deliberative Question.** A direct command may be turned into a deliberative question in the indirect with the subjunctive. The volitive idea of the imperative thus glides into the deliberative. In Lu. 12:5, ὑποδείξει δὲ ὑμῖν τίνα φοβήσθητε· φοβήσθητε τὸν, κτλ., we have the point illustrated both in the direct (imperative) and the indirect (deliberative subj.). Here the only difference between the two forms is the accent. Cf. μὴ φοβήσθητε in verse 4. In Mt. 10:28 we have φοβεῖσθη. Obviously this is a natural, though not very frequent, turn for the Command to take.

(b) **The Conjunctions ἵνα and ὅπως.** These may be used after verbs of commanding and beseeching. This idiom does not differ clearly from the sub-final construction. It is a species of purpose (or sub-final. See Final Clauses). The examples there given might suffice, but note the following: Mk. 6:8 παρήγαγελεν αὐτοῖς ἵνα μηδὲν ἁρέσησιν, Mt. 16:20 ἐπετίμησεν τοῖς μαθηταῖς ἵνα μηδενὶ ἑϖσιν, 2 Th. 3:12 παραγγέλλομεν καὶ παρακαλοῦμεν ἐν κυρίῳ Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ ἵνα— ἐσδῶσιν, Ac. 25:3 αἰτούμενοι ὅπως μεταπέμψηται. See further Mt. 8:34; Lu. 16:27; 1 Cor. 1:10. In Lu. 16:27 f. we have the purely final idea in both ὅπως and ἵνα which are subordinate to the first ἵνα after ἐρωτῶ. But we cannot follow this use of ἵνα after θέλω and such verbs where it is more or less purely objective. The recitative ὅτι with the imperative in 2 Th. 3:10 is not an instance of indirect command, but simply the direct command preserved.

(g) **The Infinitive.** It seems more obvious and is still common in the κοινή, though retreating before ἵνα. The negative is, of course, μὴ. This use of the infinitive must not be confounded with the idiom for indirect assertion (declarative) as in Mk. 12:18, ὁίνας κελεύσωσιν ἀνάστασιν μὴ εἴναι. Note Ac. 21:21, λέγων μὴ περιτέμνειν αὐτοὺς τὰ τέκνα μηδὲ τοῖς ἔθεσιν περιπατεῖν, where we have prohibition, not assertion (note incidentally the two Accusatives) with λέγων (same verb as above). So also 23:12, λέγοντες μὴ τοῖς μὴτε φαγεῖν μὴτε πεῖν. Cf. 21:4. Simple enough is the construction after εἶπα in Lu. 9:54, εἶπομεν πῦρ καταβῆναι; See also Mk. 8:
7. In Mt. 16:12, συνήκαν ὅτι οὐκ εἶπεν προσέχειν (cf. προσέχετε in verses 6 and 11), we have the declarative ὅτι and the indicative followed by the inf. in indirect command. In im. 2:26, ἦν αὐτῷ κεχρηματισμένον μὴ ἰδεῖν θάνατον, the construction is like that of indirect command, but the sense comes nearer to the mere object infinitive. See the direct δώσω in Mk. 6:23 reproduced in the indirect by δοθήναι (Mt. 14:7). There is a certain amount of freedom taken in such transference to the indirect. In Ac. 18:2, διὰ τὸ διατεταχέναι Ἐκλαύδιον χωρίζεσθαι πάντας, the inf. is dependent on an inf. Other instances of the inf. in indirect command are seen in Ac. 25:24, βοώντες μὴ δεῖν αὐτὸν ζῆν, 26:20, ἄπτήγγελλον μετανοεῖν. In 2 Th. 3:6 we have παραγγέλλωμεν στέλλεσθαι, while in verse 12 we have ἵνα. In verse 10 the direct quotation follows this same verb. In Mk. 6:8 f. we have both ἵνα μὴ αἰρωσίν and μὴ ἐνδυσάσσομαι (marg. of W. H., Ἰη ἐνδύσησθε) after παρήγγειλεν. Luke (9:3-5) gives it all in the direct form. In 2 Th. 3:14, τούτον σημειοῦσθε, μὴ συναναμίγνυσθαι αὐτῷ, the inf. is not in indirect command, but rather the inf. used in the direct as the equivalent of the imperative. But in 1 Cor. 5:11, ἐγγραψά ὑμῖν μὴ συναναμίγνυσθαι (so also verse 9), we de have indirect command.

(i) Mixture. Strictly this point belongs to the chapter on Figures of Speech (cf. also, Oratio Variata, The Sentence), but a word is called for here. We have mixture of several sorts as in the classic Greek. In Ac. 19:1 f., Παῦλον ἐλθεῖν καὶ εὐρείν, εἶπέν τε, we have the infinitive (object-clause subject of ἐγένετο) and the finite clause εἶπέν τε side by side. Cf. Ac. 4:5 f. for inf. followed by καὶ and the indicative. So in Lu. 9:19 we have the infinitive construction and the ὅτι construction side by side after ἀποκριθέντες εἶπαν. In Ac. 14:22, παρακαλοῦντες ἐμένειν τῇ πίστει καὶ ὅτι—δεῖ, the construction glides from the inf. into ὅτι. In Ro. 3:8 the recitative ὅτι is dependent on the inf. λέγειν after φασίν. In Ac. 9:27, διηγήσαντο πῶς ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ εἶδεν τὸν κύριον καὶ ὅτι ἐλάλησεν αὐτῷ, καὶ πῶς κτλ., we have a change from ind. question to indirect assertion and then back again to indirect question. The change may be from the indirect to the direct as in Ac. 1:4, περιμένειν τὴν ἐπαγγέλλαν τοῦ πατρὸς Ἦν ἰκούσατε μου. Cf. also 23:22. See also Jo. 12:29. This change appears in Mk. 6:8 f., if the true text is ἐνδύσησθε. But the change may be just the reverse, from the direct to the indirect is in Ac. 23:23, εἶπεν Ἐκοιμάσατε—κτήνῃ τε παραστήσατε. In 27:10 ὅτι occurs with the inf., a mixture of the ὅτι and the infinitive constructions in indirect assertions. This use of ὅτι with the inf. appears in.
classic Attic (cf. Xen., Cyr., 1, 6, 18, etc.). See Jannaris, Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 570. Moulton (Prol., p. 213) gives a papyrus example, 0. P. 237 (ii/A.D.), δηλών ὅτι εἰ τὰ ἁληθῆ φανείη μηδὲ κρίσεως δεῖσθαι τὸ πράγμα. See further Winer-Moulton, p. 426.

(j) The Subordinate Clause. A complex sentence may be quoted in indirect discourse as readily as the simple sentence. This principal clause follows the usual laws already discussed. Secondary tenses of the indicative in the subordinate clause suffer no change at all in mood or tense.¹ This is obviously true after primary tenses, as in Gal. 4:15, μαρτυρώ ὧμιν ὅτι εἶ δυνατόν — ἐδώκατέ μοι. Here the copula ἦν is suppressed. In Lu. 19:15 note εἶπεν φωνηθήναι — οῖς δεδώκει. So after primary tenses the primary tense follows, as in Mk. 11:23, λέγω ὅτι ὅς ἀν εἶπῃ — ἔσται αὖτι. Cf. Ac. 25:14 f. But even after secondary tenses the rule is to retain the tense and mode of the direct much more than in the Attic where the mode was quite optional.² See Lu. 9:33, εἶπεν μὴ εἰδὼς οὗ λέγει. Another example of the relative clause appears in Mt. 18:25, ἐκέλευσεν — πραθήναι — καὶ ὃσα ἔχει. Even after a condition of the second class the primary tense may be retained, as in Lu. 7 39, ἐγίνωσκεν ἀν τίς καὶ ποταπὴ ἡ γυνὴ ἡτίς ἀπτεται αὐτοῦ ὅτι ἀμαρτωλός ἔστιν. For a causal sentence see ἐκωλύμενεν αὐτὸν ὅτι οὐκ ἀκολουθεῖ μεθ' ἡμῶν (Lu. 9:49). A temporal clause with the subjunctive appears in Mt. 14:22, ἦνάγκασεν — προάγειν — ἐὼς οὗ ἀπολύσῃ. See also Ac. 23:12 ἀνεθεμάτισαν — ἐὼς οὗ ἀποκτείνωσιν. In 25:16, however, we have the optative in the subordinate clause of time with πρὶν ἃ (ἕχωι, λάβωι), after ἀπεκρίθην, the sole example. It is in Luke, as one would expect. The change here is from the subj. to the opt. In Lu. 7:43, ὅτι ὃ, only the subordinate relative clause is given.

10. SERIES OF SUBORDINATE CLAUSES. It is interesting to observe how rich the Greek language is in subordinate clauses and how they dovetail into each other. It is almost like an endless chain. The series may run on infinitum and yet all be in perfect conformity to the genius of the language. I have collected quite a number of examples to illustrate this complexity of structure, some of which are here given. A typical one is Mk. 11:23. After λέγω ὅτι we have ὅς ἀν εἶπῃ which has oratio recta, but the relative clause proceeds with καὶ μὴ διακριθὴ ἄλλα πιστεύῃ ὅτι ὁ λαλεῖ γίνεται. The relative ὁ λαλεῖ, is the fourth involution of subordinate clauses after λέγω. Cf also Jo. 17:24. A similar multiplicity of subordinate clauses is found in Ac. 25:14-16.

After ἀνέθετο λέγων we have oratio recta. The first step is the relative clause ἐπὶ οὐ-ἐνεφαύνσας, on which hangs πρὸς οὐς ἀπεκρίθην, which in turn is followed by ὅτι οὐκ ἦστιν and that by χαρίζεσθαί, and this again by πρὶν ἣ ἔχοι—λάβοι. The πρὶν ἣ clause is the fifth involution in the oratio recta. Cf. also Ac. 3:19 ff. (πρὸς τὸ ἐξαλιφθήναι, ὅπως ἦν, ὅν δεὶ δεξασθαί, ἢν). In Ac. 11:13 there are five involutions. The complications are not, of course, always so many. In Lu. 7:39 the oratio recta has a series of three (τίς — ἢτις — ὅτι). See the threefold series in Ro. 3:8, καθὼς φασίν τινες ἡμᾶς λέγειν ὅτι, κτλ. So also Mk. 6:55, περιφέρειν ὅπου ἔκοιν ὅτι ἦστιν (infinitive, relative, declarative). So again 1 Cor. 11:23 f. (ὅτι, ἢ, ἐπεν and oratio recta). Here also the ὅ clause is in opposition with the ὅτι clause. Cf. Lu. 19:15 (inf., ἵνα, τί). In Ac. 7:25, ἐνόμιζεν συνιεῖν τοῦς ἄδελφους ὅτι, κτλ., we have two forms of indirect assertion (the inf., then ὅτι), one dependent on the other. So also ὅτι follows διὰ τὸ λέγεσθαί in Lu. 9:7 f. In 4:10 we have the ὅτι clause and then the articular inf. In Jo. 6:24 the ὅτι clause is subordinate to the ὅτε clause. In 1 Jo. 5:9 we have a ὅτι clause dependent on a ὅτι clause. In Jo. 4:1 we have ὃς — ὅτι—ὁτι. In Mt. 16:20 the sequence is ἵνα—ὁτι. So Jo. 16: 4; 17:23. In Mk. 14:14 we have two cases of oratio recta, one dependent on the other. In Lu. 24:7 it is ὃς—ὁτι. Cf. ἵνα — ἵνα in Gal 3:14. In Col. 1:9 the ἵνα clause and the infinitive περιπατήσαι are parallel. The instances are numerous where one infinitive is dependent on another infinitive. Thus ἐξέλθειν προσεύξασθαί (Lu. 6:12); δοθῆναι φαγεῖν (8:55); πρὸς τὸ δεῖν προσεύχεσθαί (18:1); διὰ τὸ πεταχέναι Κλαύδιον χαρίζεσθαί, after ἐληλυθότα (Ac. 18:2); δεῖν πράξαι (26:9); γεγενήσθαι εἰς τὸ βεβαιώσαι (Ro. 15: 8); κατηρτίσθαι εἰς τὸ γεγονέναι (Heb. 11:3). In Ac. 23:30, ἡμνυ-θείσῃς μοι ἐπιβουλῆς εἰς τὸν ἄνδρα ἐσεσθαί, the future inf. in indirect discourse is dependent on the participle in the genitive absolute. In Heb. 9:8, τούτῳ δηλούντος τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου πεφανερώσθαί, the perfect inf. follows the genitive absolute. There are various other combinations. These are given as illustrations. No rules are called for about the using of a series of subordinate clauses. The presence of so many of them in Luke, Paul and Hebrews shows the literary quality of a more periodic structure.
CHAPTER XX

VERBAL NOUNS (ΟΝΟΜΑΤΑ ΤΟΥ ΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ)

I. Kinship. The finite verb, *verbum finitum* (*das bestimmte Verb*), has now been discussed as adequately as the space in this grammar allows. Originally there was no difference between verb and noun (see Conjugation of the Verb). But gradually there was developed a difference. It was done largely by the help of the pronouns which were added to the verb-stems. Nouns also had their own inflection. But a considerable body of words partook of the nature of both verb and noun and yet did not cut loose from either. In a sense therefore the finite verb is a combination of verb and pronoun while the non-finite verb combines verb and noun. These verbal nouns are the non-finite verb, *verbum infinitum* (*das unbestimmte Verb*).¹ They failed to add the personal pronominal endings of the finite verb and so did not become limited to a subject (finite). And yet they developed tense and voice and were used with the same cases as the finite verb. In so far they are true verbs. On the other hand they are themselves always in a case like other nouns. The verbal substantive comes to drop its inflection (fixed case-form) while the verbal adjective is regularly inflected in the singular and plural of all three genders just like any other adjective. These verbal nouns may be regarded either as hybrids or as cases of arrested development, more properly deflected development, for they continued to develop in a very wonderful way. The Greek of the Attic period would be barren indeed if robbed of the infinitives and the participles. The names are not distinctive, since both are participles² (partake of the nature of both verb and noun) and both are non-finite or infinitives (are not limited to a subject by personal endings). The root-difference between these lies not

¹ K.-B1., Bd. II, p. 4.
² In K.-G. (Bd. II, p. 1) the ch. begins thus: "Lehre von den Partizipialen; dean Infinitiv and dem Partizipe." Both are "particiles" and both are "infinitives."
in the verbal idea, but in the noun. It is the difference between substantive and adjective. Both are verbals both are nouns, but one is a substantive and the other is an adjective. These general remarks may help one to understand the history and usage of both infinitive and participle.

II. The Infinitive (ἡ ἀπαρέμφατος ἔγκλισις or ἀπαρέμφατον ῥήμα)

1. ORIGIN. There is no real ground for difference of opinion on this subject, however much scholars may argue as to the significance of the infinitive. In the Sanskrit the infinitive did not have tense or voice. The root used was that of a substantive closely connected with a verb. But it is verbal in Sanskrit also in the notion of action, nomina actionis. In the Veda and Brahmana the number of these verbal nouns is very large. They are used with cases, the cases corresponding to the verb, but that phenomenon appears in Latin and Greek. In Plautus "we even find the abstract noun tactio in the nominative governing its case just as if it were tangere. Classical Greek has a few well-known examples of a noun or adjective governing the case appropriate to the verb with which it is closely connected." The same thing occurs in the N. T. also. Cf. κοινωνία φωτί (2 Cor. 6:14). See chapter on Cases. These substantives have enough "verbal consciousness " to "govern" cases. In the old Sanskrit these verbal substantives occur in any case (except the vocative, which is not a real case). The later Sanskrit has only one such case-ending so used, the accusative in –tum or –itum (cf. the Latin supine). But for the developments in other languages, especially in the Greek and Latin, these Sanskrit verbal substantives would not have been called infinitives. But they show beyond controversy the true origin of the infinitive before tense and voice were added. They were originally substantives in any case, which were used as fixed case-forms (cf. adverbs) which had a verbal idea (action), and which were made on verbal roots. The Latin shows three cases used in this way: the locative as in regere, the dative as in regi and the accusative as in the supine rectum. The Greek infinitive shows only two case-endings, the dative —αι as in λύσαι (cf. also δούναι, δούναι, with Sanskrit davane; Homeric Fίδμεναι with Sanskrit vidmane) or the

locative in \( \lambda \upsilon \varepsilon \iota \nu \). Thus in the Greek and Latin it is only oblique cases that were used to form the infinitives. It is then as a substantive that the infinitive makes its start. We see this in the Sanskrit \( \text{davane vasunam} = \delta \nu \nu \alpha \tau \tau \\alpha \tau \gamma \omega \nu \). This substantive aspect is clearly seen in the use of \( \pi \alpha \nu \tau \omicron \varsigma \) with \( \tau \omega \zeta \eta \nu \) in Heb. 2:15. The first step towards the verbal idea was in the construction \( \delta \nu \nu \alpha \tau \tau \alpha \gamma \alpha \theta \alpha \). Moulton illustrates the border-land of the English inf. by the sentence: "He went out to work again." If we read "hard work" we have a substantive; but if we read "work hard," we have a verbal notion. Strictly speaking, \( \delta \nu \nu \alpha \tau \tau \alpha \gamma \alpha \theta \alpha = 'for giving the good things,' while \( \chi \iota \varepsilon \nu \tau \alpha \alpha \gamma \alpha \theta \alpha = 'in seeing the good things.' This was the original etymological sense as the Sanskrit makes clear. See further chapter on Conjugation of Verb.

2. DEVELOPMENT. In the Sanskrit we see the primitive infinitive without tense or voice. In the modern Greek the infinitive, outside of the Pontic dialect, has disappeared save with auxiliary verbs, and even so it is in a mutilated state, as with \( \tau \theta \lambda e i \lambda \upsilon \varepsilon i \), \( \overline{\tau} \theta \lambda e i \delta e \theta e i \), \( \epsilon \chi \nu \delta e \sigma e i \), remnants of the ancient infinitives \( \lambda \upsilon \varepsilon i \nu \), \( \delta e \theta \eta \nu \alpha \iota \), \( \delta e \sigma \alpha i \) (Thumb, Handb., pp. 162, 167). Between these two extremes comes the history of the rise and fall of the Greek infinitive. We may sketch that history in five periods.

(a) The Prehistoric Period. The infinitive is simply a substantive with the strict sense of the dative or locative case. Cf. the Sanskrit. We may infer also that there was no tense or voice. This original epexegetical use of the inf. as the dative of limitation has survived with verbs, substantives and adjectives. So

\( \delta \chi r \rho \omicron \nu \nu \tau \omicron \theta e \kappa e i \nu \) (Lu. 1:57). Cf. our "a wonder to behold." See \( \delta \nu \nu \tau \alpha i \delta \nu \upsilon e \varepsilon i \nu \) (Mt. 6:24), \( \omicron \mu \mu \omicron \mu \mu \delta \nu \rho \iota \sigma \alpha i \) (Ac. 14:5), \( \iota \kappa \alpha \nu \omicron \zeta \lambda \upsilon \sigma \alpha i \) (Mk. 1:7). See also Jas. 1:19, \( \tau \alpha \chi \upsilon \zeta \epsilon i \zeta \tau \omicron \alpha \kappa \omicron \omicron \sigma \alpha i \), where \( \epsilon i \zeta \tau \omicron \) reproduces the dative idea.

(b) The Earliest Historic Period. The case-form (dative or locative) begins to lose its significance. In Homer the dative idea is still the usual one for the infinitive, in harmony with the form. With verbs of wishing, commanding, expecting, beginning, being able, etc., the dative idea is probably the original explanation of

---

1 Cf. Giles (Man., p. 470) for \( \lambda \upsilon \varepsilon i \nu \), and its relation to the Sans. — san-\( i \).
3 Ib.
4 Ib.
5 Prol., p. 203.
6 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 143, has four. But see Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 188.
the idiom. Cf. ὄρος ἰδίωρα (Mt. 7:11), ‘knows how to give’ (for ‘giving’). Homer has βὴ δ’ ἵππα = ‘stepped’ for ‘going.’ But already in Homer there are signs that the case-form is getting obscured or stereotyped. It occurs as apparent subject with impersonal verbs and as the logical object of verbs of saying in indirect discourse.1 The use of πρέπει with the inf. is common also in Homer. Πρέπει would naturally be used with the ablative, like pura and the infinitive in Sanskrit,2 and so the Greek idiom must have arisen after the dative or locative idea of the inf. in Greek was beginning to fade.3 In Homer the inf. is already a fixed case-form. The disappearance of –ατ as a distinct case-ending in Greek may have made men forget that the usual inf. was dative. This dative inf. was probably a survival of the old and once common dative of purpose. Gradually the inf. passed from being merely a word of limitation (epexegetic) to being subject or object. We see the beginning of this process in Homer, though there is only4 one instance of the article with the inf., and that is in the Odyssey (20. 52), τὸ φυλάςσειν. But even here τὸ may be demonstrative.5 But in Homer the inf. has tense and voice, a tremendous advance over the Sanskrit inf. This advance marks a distinct access of the verbal aspect of the inf. But there was no notion of time in the tense of the inf. except in indir. discourse where analogy plays a part and the inf. represents a finite mode.6 This use of the inf., afterwards so common in Latin, seems to have been developed first in the Greek.7 But it was the loss of the dative force as an essential factor that allowed the inf. to become distinctly verbalized.8 As it came to be, it was an imperfect instrument of language. As a verb it lacked person, number and time except in indirect discourse. As a substantive it lacked inflection (without case or number) after it came to be limited to two cases. Even after the case-idea vanished and it was used in various cases it was still indeclinable.9

1 Ib., pp. 157, 159. 
2 Whitney, Sans. Gr., § 983. 
3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 158. It seems a bit odd to find Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 145) saying of the inf.: “in seiner ursprünglichen Bedeutung als Modus.” The inf. is not a mode and the original use was substantival, not verbal. 
4 Monro ib., p. 179. 
5 Birkletn, Entwickelungsgesch. des substantivierten Infin., 1888, p. 2 f. 
7 Goodwin, Moods and Tenses, p. 299. 
The addition of tense and voice to the fixed case-form of the substantive with verbal root was possible just because of the obscurcation of the case-idea.

(c) The Classic Period from Pindar on. The articular infinitive is often used and there is renewed accent on its substantival aspects. The inf. is freely used with or without the article in any case (except vocative) without any regard to the dative or locative ending. Pindar first uses the neuter article τό with the inf. as the subject.1 "By the assumption of the article it was substantivized again with a decided increment of its power."2 It is to be remembered, however, that the article itself is a development from the demonstrative and was very rare in Homer with anything. Hence too much must not be made of the later use of the article with the inf. Hesiod shows two examples of the article with the inf. Pindar has nine and one in the accusative.3 The absence or ambiguous character of the article in early Greek makes it necessary to be slow in denying the substantival aspect or character of the inf. in the Homeric period.4 Hence it is best to think of the article as being used more freely with the inf. as with other nouns as the article made its onward way. The greatly increased use of the article with the inf. did serve to restore the balance between the substantival and verbal aspects of the inf. now that tense and voice had come in. The enlarged verb-force was retained along with the fresh access of substantival force. "The Greek infinitive has a life of its own, and a richer and more subtle development than can be found in any of the cognate languages."5 The infinitive, thus enriched on both sides, has a great career in the classic period of the language, especially in Thucydides, the Orators, Xenophon and Plato. It has a great variety of uses. In general, however, it may be said that the inf. was not as popular in the vernacular as in the literary style for the very reason that it was synthetic rather than analytic, that it lacked clearness and emphasis.6 But it was not till the koinή period that the inf. began to disappear.7

(d) The Koinή Period. The inf. begins to disappear before ένα

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 143.
3 Birklein, Entw. d. subst. Infinitivs, p. 4 f.
7 Ib., p. 480.
ion the one hand and ὁτί on the other. Jannaris outlines the two chief functions of the inf. in its developed state to be prospective (purpose like ἵνα) and declarative (subject or object like ὁτί and ἵνα ultimately also). The fondness for analysis rather than synthesis, particularly in the vernacular, gradually pushed the inf. to the wall. The process was slow, but sure. There is indeed a counter tendency in the enlarged use of τοῦ and the inf. in the κοινή, particularly in the LXX under the influence of the Hebrew infinitive construct, and so to some extent in the N. T. So from Polybius on there is seen an increase of τοῦ and the inf. side by side with the enlarged use of ἵνα and ὁτί. The two contradictory tendencies work at the same time. On the whole in the κοινή the inf. has all the main idioms of the classic age (with the marked absence of ἐφ' ὑπὲρ and the new turn given to τοῦ and ἐν τῷ. The Hebrew did not use the inf. as much as the Greek and never with the article. Certainly the inf. is far less frequent in the LXX than in the comparatively free Greek of the N. T., about half as often (2.5 to the page in the LXX, 4.2 in the N. T.). But the Hebrew has not, even in the LXX, introduced any new uses of the inf. in the Greek. The Hebrew inf. construct had no article and was thus unlike τοῦ and the inf. The total number of infinitives in the N. T., according to Votaw, is 2,276. The number of anarthrous infs. is 1,957, of articular 319. The inroad of ἵνα and ὁτί is thus manifest as compared with the Attic writers. The writings of Luke show the largest and most varied use of the inf., while the Johannine writings have the fewest. Paul's use is very uneven. Votaw finds the same inequality in the case of the apocryphal books. The papyri show a similar situation. Different writers vary greatly, but on the whole the inf. is dying save in the use with auxiliary verbs, and it is going even there as is seen from the use of ἵνα with θέλω in the N. T. Cf. Mk. 9:30. In the κοινή we find ἵνα with βοῦλομαι and δύναμαι in Polybius, the LXX and later κοινή writers. As the inf. disappears in the later Greek strange combinations appear, as in Malalas and Theophanes we

1 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 568.
2 Kalker, Questiones de Elocutione Polyb., 1880, p. 302.
3 Votaw, The Use of the Inf. in Bibl. Gk., 1896, p. 55
4 Ib., p. 50.
5 Ib., p. 52.
6 Ib.
meet προ τοῦ with the subjunctive (προ τοῦ ἐπιρρίψωσιν, προ τοῦ ἐνωθῶσιν). The inf. never had a monopoly of any construction save as the complement of certain verbs like βούλομαι, Θέλω, etc. This was probably the origin use of the inf. with verbs and it was true to the dative case-idea. It was here alone that the inf. was able to make a partial stand to avoid complete obliteration.

(e) The Later Period. Outside of the Pontic dialect the inf. is dead, both anarthrous and articular, save with the auxiliary verbs. The use of Θέλω as a mere auxiliary is common enough in Herodotus and probably was frequent in the vernacular then as it was later. "The fortunes of the infinitive were determined by its nature." The increased use of abstract nouns made it less needed for that purpose, as the fondness for ἵνα and ὅτι made it less necessary as a verb. The N. T. is mid-stream in this current and also midway between the rise and the end of this river. The writers will use the inf. and ἵνα side by side or the inf. and ὅτι parallel. Even in the classical Attic we find ὅπως after πειράζω (Xenophon). As ὅπως disappeared ἵνα stepped into its place. In Latin ut was likewise often used when the inf. could have occurred. The blending of ἵνα and ὅτι in the κοινή helped on the process.

In the N. T. the exclusive province of the inf. is a rather narrow one. It still occurs alone with δύναμαι and μέλλω. It has a wide extension of territory with τοῦ. But on the whole it has made distinct retreat since the Attic period. The story is one of the most interesting in the history of language.

3. SIGNIFICANCE. Originally as we have seen, the infinitive was a substantive, but a verbal substantive. This set case of an abstract substantive has related itself closely to the verb. The Stoic grammarians called it a verb, ἄπαρέμφατον ῥήμα, ἄπαρέμφατος ἐγκλησίς. Apollonius Dyskolos called it a "fifth mode" and the later grammarians followed his error. Some of the Roman grammarians actually took infinitivus in the sense perfectus,

---

1 Rueger, Beitr. zur hist. Synt. d. griech. Sprache, 1895, p. 11.
3 Jebb in V. and D.'s Handb., p. 324.
4 Ib., p. 326. G. Meyer (Essays and Studien, 1885, p. 101) says that the Albanians are the only Slavic folk "dem ein Infinitiv abgeht." It is due to the mod. Gk.
5 Thompson, Synt. of th., Attic Gk., p. 247.
6 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 221. 7 Ib., p. 222.
8 Curtius, Erlaut., p. 296.
9 Jolly, Gesch. des Inf. im Indoger., 1873, p. 16.
10 Ib., p. 22.
just as they mistranslated γενική by genitivus. Bopp rightly perceived that the inf. has a nominal origin and was later adjusted to the verb in Greek. It is not a real verb in the very height of its glory. And yet the consciousness of the nominal origin was partially obscured even in the time of Homer. The original case-form is so far forgotten that this dative may appear in the nominative and the accusative. The tenses and voices have developed. But Brugmann seems to go too far in saying that already the inf. was "only" a verb in the popular feeling. Moulton, indeed, harks back to Apollonius Dyskolos: "The mention of 'The Verb' has been omitted in the heading of this chapter, in deference to the susceptibilities of grammarians who wax warm when λέιν or λύσαι is attached to the verb instead of the noun. But having thus done homage to orthodoxy, we proceed to treat these two categories almost exclusively as if they were mere verbal moods, as for most practical purposes they are." He states, it is true, that every schoolboy knows that in origin and part of the use the inf. is a substantive, but "nearly all that is distinctive is verbal." I venture to say that this is overstating the case. It is not a mere question of the notion of the user of the infinitive in this passage or that. The history is as it is. In the full development of the inf. we see the blending of both substantive and verb. In this or that example the substantival or the verbal aspect of the hybrid form may be dominant, but the inf. in the historical period is always both substantive and verb. It is not just a substantive, nor just a verb, but both at the same time. The form itself shows this. The usage conforms to the facts of etymology. It is not true that the article makes the inf. a substantive as Winer has it. As a matter of fact, therefore, the inf. is to be classed neither with the noun nor with the verb, but with the participle, and both stand apart as verbal nouns. The article did enlarge the scope of the inf. just as the use of tense did. The Germans can say das Trinken and French le savoir like the Greek τὸ γνῶναι. There is no infinitive in Arabic. As a matter of fact, the inf. because of its lack of endings (here the participle is better off with the adjective endings) is the least capable of all parts of speech of fulfilling its functions.

1 Ib., pp. 31 ff.  
2 Vergl. Gr., p. 3.  
3 Cf. Schroeder, Vber die formelle Untersch. der Redet. im Griechischen and Lateinischen, p. 10.  
4 Griech. Gr., p. 515.  
8 W.-M., p. 399.
In its very nature it is supplementary. It is either declarative or prospective,¹ but always a verbal substantive. There is a difference between τὸ πράσσειν and ἡ πράξεις. Both have, verbal stems and both are abstract. The difference² lies in the tense and voice of πράσσειν. But πράσσειν has all that is in πράξεις plus tense and voice. I decline, therefore, to divide the infinitive into the anarthrous and articular uses so popular in the grammars. These uses do exist, but they simply represent two uses of the inf. in its substantival aspects. They do not affect the verbal side of the inf. at all. The inf. may properly be discussed under its substantival and its verbal aspects. But even so a number of uses cross over as indirect discourse, for instance, or the inf. to express purpose (with or without the article). We must look at both sides of the inf. every time to get a total idea of its value. A number of points of a special nature will require treatment.

4. SUBSTANTIVAL ASPECTS OF THE INFINITIVE.

(a) Case (Subject or Object Infinitive). Here I mean the cases of the inf. itself, not the cases used with it. The inf. is always in a case. As a substantive this is obvious. We have to dismiss, for the most part, all notion of the ending (dative or locative) and treat it as an indeclinable substantive. A whole series of common expressions has the inf. as subject besides the ordinary verbs. Thus note 1 Cor. 9:15 καλὸν μοι μάλλον ἀποθανεῖν, (Heb. 4:6; 9:27) ἀπόκειται τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ἀπαξ ἀποθανεῖν, (Mt. 18:13) ἐὰν γέννηται εὐρεῖν αὐτό, (3:15) πρέπον ἐστίν ἡμῖν πληρῶσαι, (Ac. 21:35) συνέβη βαστάζεσθαι, (Lu. 6:12) ἐγένετο ἐξελθεῖν αὐτῶν, (18:25) εὐκοπωτέρων ἐστιν ἐσελεθεῖν, (Jo. 18:14) συμμέφωρ ἀποθανεῖν, (Mt. 22:17) ἐξεστὶν δοῦναι, (Heb. 9:5) οὐκ ἔστιν νῦν λέγειν, (Ac. 27:24) δεῖ παραστῆναι, (Ac. 2:24) ἦν δυνατὸν κρατεῖσθαι, (Ph. 3:1) τὰ αὐτὰ γράφειν οὐκ ὄντων. So Ac. 20:16; 2 Pet. 2:21. All this is simple enough. The articular inf. is likewise found in the nominative as in Mk. 9:10, τί ἐστιν τὸ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστήναι. Here the article is not far removed from the original demonstrative. Cf. 10:40, τὸ καθίσαι οὐκ ἔστιν ἐμὸν δοῦναι, where δοῦναι is probably the original dative ‘for giving.’ One naturally feels that the articular inf. is more substantival than the anarthrous, as in Ro. 7:18, τὸ θέλειν παράκειται μοι, but that is no correct. The subject-inf. occurs freely both with and without the article in the N. T. as in the κοινὴ generally. See Mt. 15:20 τὸ φαγεῖν, (Mk. 12:33) τὸ

\[ \alpha\gammaλα\nu \, (Ro. \ 7:18) \ \tauο \ \thetaελειν \ and \ \tauο \ \kατεργαζεσθαι. \ Add \ 1 \ Cor. \ 7:26; \ 11:6; \ 2 \ Cor. \ 9:1; \ Ph. \ 1:21, \ 24, \ 29; \ Heb. \ 10:31; \ Ro. \ 14:21. \ The \ origin \ of \ this \ nominative \ or \ subject \ is \ probably \ due \ to \ its \ use \ with \ impersonal \ expressions. \ Moulton^1 \ illustrates \ it \ by \ the \ Latin \ *humanum \ est \ errare*, \ where \ the \ force \ of \ the \ locative \ form \ *errare* \ may \ be \ seen \ by \ translating: \ ‘There \ is \ something \ human \ in \ erring.’ \ This \ may \ have \ been \ the \ original \ idiom, \ but \ it \ has \ gone \ beyond \ that \ to \ mean: \ ‘Erring \ is \ human.’ \ English \ students \ often \ forget \ that \ ‘erring’ \ is \ here \ infinitive, \ not \ participle, \ both \ in \ sense \ and \ history. \ It \ is \ a \ step \ further \ in \ the \ N. \ T. \ to \ see \ *του* \ and \ the \ inf. \ used \ as \ subject \ nominative. \ Cf. \ Lu. \ 17:1; \ Ac. \ 10:25; \ 1 \ Cor. \ 16:4. \ In \ 2 \ Cor. \ 7:11 \ the \ substantival \ aspect \ of \ the \ inf. \ is \ shown \ by \ the \ use \ of \ the \ pronoun \ *αυτο* \ *του* \ *το* \ *λαυσηθηναι* \ in \ the \ nominative \ with \ *κατεργαζαστα* \ Cf. \ the \ inf. \ in \ the \ predicate \ nom. \ with \ *του* \ in \ Ro. \ 1:12, \ *του* \ δε \ *εστιν \ συνπαρακληθηναι*. \ So \ in \ Ro. \ 13:11, \ *ωρα \ ηδη \ υμας \ εξ \ οπνου \ εγερθηναι*, \ where \ the \ inf. \ is \ in \ predicate \ apposition \ with \ *ωρα*. \ Originally \ it \ was \ doubtless \ ‘time \ for \ arising.’ \ In \ 1 \ Th. \ 4:6 \ we \ have \ both \ the \ anarthrous \ and \ articular \ inf. \ in \ apposition \ with \ *του*. \ Cf. \ also \ the \ appositive \ inf. \ in \ Ac. \ 15:28; \ Jas. \ 1:27; \ 1 \ Th. \ 4:3; \ Ro. \ 4:13.

The \ object-infinitive \ in \ the \ accusative \ is \ quite \ common \ both \ with \ and, \ particularly, \ without \ the \ article. \ In \ the \ N. \ T. \ more \ than \ half \ of \ the \ instances \ of \ the \ inf. \ come \ in \ here, \ the \ object-inf. \ with \ verbs \ of \ various \ sorts.\textsuperscript{2} \ In \ the \ LXX, \ however, \ it \ is \ rare \ in \ proportion \ to \ the \ other \ uses. \ The \ accusative \ case \ is \ to \ us \ more \ manifest \ when \ the \ article \ occurs. \ See \ Ph. \ 2:6, \ *ουχ \ αρπαγμον \ ηγησατο \ το \ ευναι \ ίσα \ θεω*, \ where \ the \ articular \ inf. \ is \ the \ direct \ object \ of \ *ηγησατο*. \ So \ in \ 2:13, \ with \ *ο ενεργον \ και \ το \ θελειν \ και \ το \ ενεργειν*. \ Cf. \ Ac. \ 25:11, \ *ο παραιτουμαι \ το \ αποθανειν*. \ See \ further \ 1 \ Cor. \ 14:39; \ 2 \ Cor. \ 8:10. \ In \ Ph. \ 4:10, \ *ανεθαλετε \ το \ υπερ εμοι φρονειν*, \ the \ acc. \ may \ be \ that \ of \ general \ reference. \ Certainly \ in \ 1 \ Th. \ 3:3, \ *το \ σαυνεσθαι*, \ this \ is \ true. \ Blass\textsuperscript{3} \ calls \ it \ here "quite \ superfluous." \ In \ Ro. \ 14:13 \ *το \ μη \ τιθεναι*, \ is \ in \ apposition \ with \ the \ accusative \ *τουτο*, \ as \ in \ 2 \ Cor. \ 2:1. \ In \ 2 \ Cor. \ 10:2, \ *δεομαι \ το \ μη \ παρων \ θαρρησαι*, \ we \ should \ naturally \ look \ for \ the \ ablative \ with \ *δεομαι*. \ The \ instances \ without \ the \ article \ are \ more \ numerous. \ A \ fairly \ complete \ list \ of \ the \ verbs \ in \ the \ N. \ T. \ that \ have \ the \ inf. \ in \ indirect \ discourse \ was \ given \ in \ the \ chapter \ on \ Modes \ (Indirect \ Discourse, \ pp. \ 1036 ff.). \ These \ infs. \ are \ in \ the \ acc.,

\[ \textsuperscript{1} \text{Prol., p. 210.} \ \textsuperscript{2} \text{Votaw, Inf. in Bibl.Gk., p. 57.} \ \textsuperscript{3} \text{Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 234. Cf. 2 Esd. 6:8 *το \ μη \ καταργηθηναι.}\]
though some of them may possibly preserve the original dative or locative idea. But the acc. with the inf. is that of general reference, while the inf. itself is in the acc. case, the object of the verb of saying or thinking. Cf. Lu. 2:44, νομίσαντες αὐτὸν εἶναι.
The occasional use of the nom. predicate, as in Ph. 4:11, ἔμαθον αὐτάρκης εἶναι, acccents the acc. character of the object-inf. This point is clear also in the case of indirect commands where the noun or pronoun is in the dative and the inf. in the acc., as in 1 Cor. 5:11, ἔγραψα ὑμῖν μὴ συναναμίγνυσθαι. The illustrations are numerous and need not be multiplied (see list under Indirect Discourse). With βούλομαι, δύναμαι, θέλω the dative makes a good idea and was probably so understood in the beginning. It may be questioned, however, if in actual usage this idiom is not also the acc. Cf. Mt. 1:19 ἔβουλήθη ἡ παραλαβεῖν, (1:20) μὴ φοβηθῆς παραλαβεῖν, (5:34) λέγω ὑμῖν μὴ ὁμόσαι, (16:12) οὐκ ἔτεν προσέχειν, (Lu. 18:1) πρὸς τὸ δεῖν προσεύχεσθαι (both infs. in the acc., one with πρός, the other general reference with δεῖν), (Ro. 15:8) λέγω Χριστὸν διάκονον γεγενήσθαι (cf. Ac. 27:13), (2 Cor. 10:2) λογίζομαι τολμῆσαι, (1 Th. 4:11) παρακαλοῦμεν περισσεῦειν καὶ φιλοτιμεῖσθαι ἡσυχάζειν καὶ πράσσειν τὰ ἴδια καὶ ἐργάζεσθαι (note the interrelation of these infs.). See further Mk. 9:28; 12:12; Lu. 16:3; Jo. 5:18; Ro. 14:2; Gal. 3:2; 1 Cor. 10:13. In the acc. also are the articular infs. with prepositions like εἰς (Ro. 1:11); διά (Ac. 8:11); μετά (Lu. 22:20); πρὸς (Mt. 5:28).

But the inf. occurs in the other oblique cases also with more or less frequency. The genitive, for instance, appears with the prepositions ἀντί (Jas. 4:15); διά (Heb. 2:15, διὰ παντὸς τοῦ ζῆν); ἐνεκα (2 Cor. 7:12); ἔως (Ac. 8:40). The only instance of an attribute with the infinitive in the N. T. is Heb. 2:15, except in apposition with τοῦτο. It was rare in classic Greek and confined to pronouns. Cf. τὸ αὐτόν πράττειν, Plato, Rep. 433. The genitive may be found with ἐπιλαμβάνομαι as in Mk. 8:14, ἐπελαβόμενο λαβεῖν (cf. ἐπιλαμβάνεσθαι τοῦ ἔργου in Heb. 6:10. But we have τὰ ὀπίσω in Ph. 3:13). At any rate in Lu. 1:9, ἔλαχε τὸ θυμιάσας (cf. 1 Sam. 14:47), we have an undoubted genitive. Cf. also μετεμελήθη ἡ τοῦ πιστεύσαι (Mt. 21:32). The very common use of τοῦ with the inf. must also be noted. Most of these are genitives, as in τοῦ ἀπολέσας (Mt. 2:13). The free use of τοῦ with the inf. where the case is not genitive will be discussed under a special section under the article with the inf. Cf., for instance, Lu. 17:1; Ac. 10:25; 20:3; 27:1. The gen. occurs

with substantives just as other substantives are used. This is a fairly common idiom. See Ac. 27:20 ἐλπὶς πᾶσα τοῦ σῶζε-σθαι, (1 Cor. 9:10) ἐπὶ ἐλπίδα τοῦ μετέχειν, (Ro. 15:23) ἐπιπόθειαν δὲ ἔχων τοῦ ἐλθεῖν, (1 Pet. 4:17) καιρὸς τοῦ ἀρξασθαι, (Heb. 5:12) χρεῖαν τοῦ διδάσκειν. Note, in particular, Ro. 11:8, ἐδωκεν αὐτοῖς ὁ θεὸς πνεῦμα κατανύξεως, ὦρθαλμοὺς τοῦ μὴ βλέπειν, καὶ ὡτα τοῦ μὴ ἀκούειν, where the infs. are parallel with κατανύξεως. Cf. Lu. 1:57, 74; 2:6; 10:19; 21:22; 22:6, etc. Note especially Ph. 3:21, κατὰ τὴν ἔνεργειαν τοῦ δύνασθαι αὐτῶν καὶ ὑποτάξασθαι. Let these suffice. They illustrate well how the inf. continued to be regarded as a real substantive. The genitive occurs also with adjectives as in βραδεῖς τοῦ πιστεύσαι (Lu. 24:25); ἔτοιμοὶ ἐσμέν τοῦ ἀνελεῖν (Ac. 23:15). The genitive is found with ἄξιος (the anarthrous inf.) as in Lu. 15:19, 21, ἄξιος κληθήναι (cf. Rev. 5:4, 9). In 1 Cor. 16:4 τοῦ πορεύεσθαι may be due to ἄξιον, but is probably used as subj. nominative in a rather loose way. The inf. ins the genitive is specially common in Luke and also in Paul.1

The ablative illustrations are not very numerous, but they are clear. Thus we have the abl. with verbs of hindering as in Mt. 19:14, μὴ κωλύετε αὐτὰ ἐλθεῖν πρὸς με, and Lu. 4:42, κατείχον αὐτὸν τοῦ μὴ πορεύεσθαι. The classical Greek had also τὸ and the inf., as in 1 Cor. 14:39, and τὸ μὴ after verbs of hindering, which last does not occur in the N. T., so that it is probable that an inf. without the art. as in Mt. 19:14 is in the abl., though not certain. Moulton (Prol., p. 220) illustrates Lu. 4:42 and Ac. 14:18 by B. U. 164 (ii/iii A.D.) πείσαται αὐτὸν τοῦ ἐλθεῖν, J.H.S., 1902, 369 (Lycaonian inscription) τῷ διχοτομήσαντί με τοῦ τὸ λοεπὸν ζήν, B. U. 36 (ii/iii A.D.) τοῦ ζήν μεταστήσας, Ν. Ρ. 16 (iii/A.D.) κωλύσαντες τοῦ μὴ σπείρειν. See further Lu. 24:16 ἐκρατοῦντο τοῦ μὴ ἐπιγνωνωταί αὐτὸν, Ac. 10:47 δύναται κωλύσαί τις τοῦ μὴ βαπτισθήσας, 14:18 κατέπαυσαν τοῦ μὴ θύειν. Cf. also Ac. 20:20, 27; Ro. 11:10; 15:22; 2 Cor. 1:8; Heb. 7:23; 1 Pet. 3:10. Cf. in the LXX, Gen. 16:2; 20:6; Ps. 38:2; 68:24 (quoted in Ro. 11:10); Is. 24:10; 1 Sam. 8:7; Jer. 7:10.2 The abl. occurs also with prepositions as ἐκ in 2 Cor. 8:11, ἐκ τοῦ ἔχειν and πρὸ, in Mt. 6:8 πρὸ τοῦ αἰτῆσαι. In Ac. 15:28, τούτων τῶν ἐπάναγκες, ἀπέχεσθαι, the inf. is in the abl., in apposition with the preceding words.

The only instance of the inf. in the instrumental in the N. T. occurs in 2 Cor. 2:13, τῷ μὴ εὕρειν με Τίτον. The inf. is not found with σῦν in the N. T. Votaw (Inf. in Biblical Greek, p. 29) notes six examples of the instrumental τῷ and the inf. in, the LXX text

1 Blass, Cr. of N. T. Gk., p. 234. 2 Cf. Viteau, Le Verbe., p. 172.

The locative occurs with ἐν as in ἐν τῷ εὐλογεῖν (Lu. 24:51). It is extremely frequent in the N. T., especially in Luke. The possible Hebraistic aspect of the idiom comes up under Prepositions with the Inf. There remains, of course, a possible locative use of a form like λύειν. But one doubts if this original idea is preserved in the N. T.1 Cf. Mt. 16:3, γινώσκετε διακρίνειν, which is more naturally explained as a dative: 'ye have knowledge for discerning,' though 'in discerning' makes sense. But with the dative it is different. There is no instance of the dative inf. with a preposition, but the original dative is clear in all examples of purpose without τοῦ or a preposition. Thus Mt. 5:17, οὐκ ἠλθοῦν καταλῦσαι, ἀλλὰ πληρῶσαι, 'I came not for destroying, but for fulfilling.' So Lu. 12:58, δοῦς έργασίαν ἀπελλάχθαι, 'give diligence for being reconciled.' Cf. Mt. 7:11; 16:3 with οἶδα and γινώσκω. See further Mt. 2:2, ἠλθομεν προσκυνήσαι, 'we came for worshipping'; Jo. 21:3, ὑπάγω ἀλλεύειν, 'I go a-fishing.' So Ro. 3:15, LXX, δεῖς ἐκχεῖς αἵμα, 'swift for shedding blood.' The substantive also has the dative inf. in Ro. 9:21, ἐξουσίαν ποιήσαι, 'power for making.' See further 1 Pet. 4:3, κατειργάσθαι, 'for having wrought'; Gal. 5:3, ὁφειλέτης ποιήσαι, 'debtor for doing'; Heb. 11:15, καιρὸν ἀνακάμψαι, 'time for returning.' This was the original idiom and, with all the rich later development as verbal substantive, the inf. did not wholly get away from the dative idea.

(b) The Articular Infinitive. We have to cross our tracks frequently in discussing the inf. in a lucid fashion. Numerous examples of the articular inf. have already been given in treating the cases of the inf. But the matter is so important that, it calls for special investigation. If we pass by the doubtful articular inf., τὸ φυλάσσειν, in the Odyssey,2 we still find (cf. p. 1054) a few examples in the oldest Greek (two in Hesiod, nine in Pindar, nine in the Lyrics).3 The use of the article with the inf. grew with the growth of the article itself. But it is not to be overlooked that in Homer the anarthrous inf. had already developed nearly

1 Moulton, Prol D. 210.
3 Birklein, Entwicklungsgeschichte, p. 91.
all the constructions of this verbal substantive. The addition of
the article made no essential change in the inf. It was already
both substantive and verb. But the use of the article greatly en-
larged the range of the inf. It is extended to new uses, especially
with prepositions. The article was first used with the nom., then
the acc. and then the other cases. The use of τοῦ and τῶ with
the inf. is wholly post-Homeric. In the Dramatists and Herodo-
tus it is still chiefly in the nom. and acc., though we do find τοῦ
and τῶ, and we see the inf. used with prepositions also.3 In Thu-
cydides the articular inf. suddenly jumps to great prominence,
occurring 298 times,4 especially in the speeches. Of these 163
occur with prepositions.5 He even uses τὸ with the future inf.
and with ἄν and the inf. The orators likewise use the art. inf.
very freely. It was especially in Demosthenes that "the power
of taking dependent clauses" was fully developed.6 Only the
Pontic dialects, as already noted, keep the inf. as a living form,
and a few substantives preserve a mutilated form) like τὸ φαγά
(‘eating’) τὸ φαγεῖν, τὸ φιλά, (‘kissing’) = τὸ φιλεῖν (Thumb,
Handb., p. 117). In the N. T. we see all this power still retained
with the further development in the use of τοῦ. The inf. itself, as
we have seen, is retreating in the N. T., but it still possesses the
full range of its varied uses. The articular inf. has all the main
uses of the anarthrous inf. Votaw (The Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 51)
finds 22 uses of the inf. (19 anarthrous, 15 articular), but some
of these overlap and are artificial. Moulton (Prol., p. 214) con-
cludes from a study of the inscriptions that the articular inf.
only invaded dialects as the κοινή was starting. There is no
essential difference in idea, and the mere presence or absence of
the article is not to be pressed too far. Jannaris7 admits that
sometimes the verbal character is completely obscured. On that
point I am more than skeptical, since the inf. continues to have
the adjuncts of the verb and is used with any voice or tense.
Jannaris8 thinks that in late Greek the substantival, aspect grew
at the expense of the verbal and the articular inf. had an in-
creasing popularity. I admit the popularity, but doubt the dis-

1 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 315.
4 Birklein, Entwickelungsgeschichte, p. 91.
Asso., 1878, pp. 5-19.
6 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 315. Hypereides, he adds, even exceeds Demos-
thenes.
appearance of the verbal aspect. Jannaris makes the mistake of taking "substantival inf." as coextensive with "articual inf." Blass\textsuperscript{1} questions if the article always has its proper force with the inf. and suggests that perhaps sometimes it merely occurs to show the case of the inf. Here again I am skeptical. Why does the case of the inf. need to be shown any more than other indeclinable substantives? In Mt. 1 the article does serve to distinguish object from subject. I have never seen an articular inf. where the article did not seem in place. Moulton\textsuperscript{2} considers the use of the article "the most characteristic feature of the Greek infinitive in post-Homeric language." Blass\textsuperscript{3} seems puzzled over the frequency of the articular inf. in the N. T., since it is chiefly confined to Luke and Paul, whose writings have most affinity with the literary language. Jannaris\textsuperscript{4} notes how scarce it is in the writings of John and in unlearned papyri and inscriptions, doubtful in the mediaeval period, and absent from the modern vernacular. "The articular infinitive, therefore, could not resist any longer the tendency of the time, whether it was conceived as a noun or as a verb."\textsuperscript{5} The analytic tendency drove it out finally. Moulton\textsuperscript{5} has made some researches on the use of the articular inf. in the dialect inscriptions. He does not find a single instance in Larfield's Boeotian inscriptions. He finds one from Lesbos, one from Elis, one from Delphi, a few from Messene, etc. He notes the silence of Meisterhans on the subject. The conclusion seems to be inevitable that the articular inf. is as rare in the Attic vernacular as it was common in the Attic orators. It is "mainly a literary use, starting in Pindar, Herodotus and the tragedians, and matured by Attic rhetoric." Aristophanes uses it less than half as often as Sophocles and Aristophanes gives the Attic vernacular. And yet it is not absent from the papyri. Moulton\textsuperscript{7} counts 41 instances in vol. I of B. U. The N. T. uses it about as often to the page as Plato. He scores a point against Kretschmer's view that the Attic contributed no more to the koinē than any one of the other dialects, since from the literary Attic "the articular inf. passed into daily speech of the least cultured people in the later Hellenist world."\textsuperscript{8} Polybius\textsuperscript{9} deserves to rank with Demosthenes in the wealth of his use of the inf. He employs the

\begin{footnotesize}
\begin{itemize}
  \item \textsuperscript{1} Gr. of N. T. Uk., p. 233.
  \item \textsuperscript{2} Prol., p. 213.
  \item \textsuperscript{3} Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 233.
  \item \textsuperscript{4} Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 579.
  \item \textsuperscript{5} Ib.
  \item \textsuperscript{6} Prol., pp. 213 ff.
  \item \textsuperscript{7} Ib., p. 213.
  \item \textsuperscript{8} Ib., p. 215.
  \item \textsuperscript{9} Allen, The Inf. in Polyb. Compared with the Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 47.
\end{itemize}
\end{footnotesize}
inf. in all 11,265 times, an average of 7.95 to the page. He has the articular inf. 1,901 times, an average of 1.35 to the page. In the N. T. the inf. occurs 2,276 times, an average of 4.2 times to a page. The articular inf. is found in the N. T. 322 times, an average of .6 times to a page. The N. T. shows fewer uses, in proportion, of the articular inf. than the O. T. or the Apocrypha. Of the 303 (Moulton) instances, 120 are in Luke's writings and 106 in Paul's Epistles. But Votaw\(^1\) counts 319 in all. The MSS. vary in a number of instances and explain the difference. Moulton\(^2\) gives the figures for all the N. T. books thus: James 7, Hebrews 23, Gospel of Luke 71, Paul 106, Acts 49, 1 Peter 4, Matthew 24, Mark 13 (14), John 4, Revelation 1, not in Col., Philem., Past. Eps., Joh. Eps., 2 Pet., Jud. Luke has the most varied use of the articular inf., and Paul's is somewhat uneven.\(^3\)

The use of the articular inf. in the various cases has already been sufficiently discussed. In general one may agree with Moulton\(^4\) that "the application of the articular infin. in. N. T. Greek does not in principle go beyond what is found in Attic writers." The special use of the articular inf. with prepositions is reserved for separate discussion. There is little doubt that the first use of τό with the inf. was demonstrative as it was with everything.\(^5\)

In Mk. 9:10, τί ἐστιν τῷ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστημένῳ, the article is almost demonstrative, certainly anaphoric (cf. verse 9). The same thing is true of 10:40 where τὸ καθίσας refers to καθίσας μεν in verse 37. It is not necessary to give in detail many examples of the articular inf. in the N. T. I merely wish to repeat that, when the article does occur with the inf., it should have its real force. Often this will make extremely awkward English, as in Lu. 2:27, ἐν τῷ εἰς ἀγαθεῖν τοὺς γονεῖς τῷ παιδίου. But the Greek has no concern about the English or German. It is simply slovenliness not to try to see the thing from the Greek standpoint. But we are not to make a slavish rendering. Translation should be idiomatic. It is hardly worth while to warn the inept that there is no connection between the article τό and the English to in a sentence like Ph. 1:21, ἔμοι γὰρ τὸ χρήστος καὶ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν κέρδος. Here the article τό has just the effect that the Greek article has with any abstract substantive, that of distinction or contrast. Life and death (living and dying) are set over against each other. See further Mt. 24:45; Lu. 24:29; Ac. 3:12; 10:25; 14:9; 21:

\(^1\) Inf. in Bibl. Gk., pp. 50 ff.
\(^2\) Prol., p. 216.
\(^3\) Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 52.
\(^4\) Prol., p. 215.
\(^5\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 164.
Some special words are needed about τοῦ and the inf. The question of purpose or result may be deferred for separate discussion. We have seen how the genitive inf. with τοῦ occurs with verbs, substantives, adjectives and prepositions. The ablative inf. with τοῦ is found with verbs and prepositions. The ablative use is not here under discussion, since it involves no special difficulties save the redundant μὴ. We may note that in Critias τοῦ was very common with the inf. We see it also in Polybius in various uses named above. It is an Attic idiom that became very common in the postclassical and Byzantine Greek. Cf. μὴ ἁμελησθῆς τοῦ ἐνοχλήσαι θωνίω. O. P. 1159, 11-13 (iii/A.D.). There is no special difficulty with τοῦ and the inf. with verbs as object except in a case like Mt. 21:32 where τοῦ πιστεύσαι "gives rather the content than the purpose of μετέμεληθητε."

The instances with substantives like Ac. 14:9, ἔχει πίστιν τοῦ σωθῆναι, give no trouble on the score of the article. It is the case (objective genitive) that has to be noted. So with Ph. 3:21, τὴν ἐνέργειαν τοῦ δύνασθαι. As to adjectives, as already noted, it is doubtful if in 1 Cor. 16:4, ἐὰν δὲ ἄξιον ἥ τοῦ καὶ ἔπρεπε σθαι, the inf. is to be taken with ἄξιον as genitive. Moulton so regards it, but it may be a loose nominative, as we shall see directly. But there is a use of τοῦ and the inf. that calls for comment. It is a loose construction of which the most extreme instance is seen in Rev. 12:7, ἐγένετο πόλεμος ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, οἱ Μιχαὴλ καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι αὐτοῦ τοῦ πολέμησαι μετὰ τοῦ δράκοντος. This inf. (note the nom. with it) is in explanatory apposition with πόλεμος. Moulton cleverly illustrates it with the English: "There will be a cricket match — the champions to play the rest." It is a long jump to this from a case like Ac. 21:12, παρακαλοῦμεν τοῦ μὴ ἀναβαίνειν αὐτόν, where the simple object-inf. is natural (cf. 1 Th. 4:10 f.). Cf. also Ac. 23:20, συνέθεντο τοῦ ἐρωτήσαι σε ὑπὸς καταγάγης. "This loose inf. of design" is found twelve times in Thucydides, six in Demosthenes and five in Xenophon. These writers prefer the prepositions with τοῦ and the inf. Polybius in his first five books has this simple τοῦ and the inf. only six times, all negative.

1 Birklein, Entwick., p. 9. 4 Moulton, Prol., p. 216.
2 Allen, The Inf. in Pdyb., pp. 29 ff. 5 Ib.
3 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 578. 6 Ib., p. 218.
8 Jann., ib.
The normal use of τοῦ with the inf. was undoubtedly final as it was developed by Thucydides, and in the N.T. that is still its chief use. But many of the examples are not final or consecutive. It is only in Luke (Gospel 24, Acts 24) and Paul (13) that τοῦ with the inf. (without prepositions) is common. They have five-sixths of the examples. And Luke has himself two-thirds of the total in the N.T. Matthew has seven. John avoids it. Moulton shows that of Paul's "thirteen" examples three (Ro. 6:6; 7:3; Ph. 3:10) either final or consecutive, two (Ro. 15:22; 2 Cor. 1:8) are ablative, five occur with substantives (Ro. 15:23; 1 Cor. 9:10; 16:4; 2 Cor. 8:11; Ph. 3:21), four are epexegetic (Ro. 1:24; 7:3; 8:12; 1 Cor. 10:13). In Luke calls about half are not final. It is this loose epexegetical inf. that calls for notice. We find it in the LXX (cf. Gen. 3:22; 19:19; 31:20; 47:29, etc.). It is possible that this very common idiom in the LXX is due to the Hebrew. It does not occur in Polybius. In the LXX also we see τοῦ and the inf. used as the subject of a finite verb in complete forgetfulness of the case of τοῦ. Cf. 2 Chron. 6:7, ἐγένετο ἐπὶ καρδίαν Δαυΐδ τοῦ πατρὸς μου τοῦ οἰκοδομήσαι οἶκον.

So 1 Sam. 12:23; 1 Ki. 8:18; 16:31; Ps. 91:3; Is. 49:6; Jer. 2:18; Eccl. 3:12; 1 Esd. 5:67. One must recall the fact that the inf. had already lost for the most part the significance of the dative ending —αι and the locative —ι (—ιν). Now the genitive τοῦ and the dative —αι are both obscured and the combination is used as subject nominative. We have this curious construction

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pres.</th>
<th>Aor.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Paul</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Synoptics</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acts</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

79 (less 9 fr. LXX, 4 Paul, 5 Ac.=70)

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 216. 2 Ib., p. 217. 3 Mr. H. Scott gives the following list for Toy and the inf.:

in Lu. 17:1, ἀνένδεκτόν ἐστιν τοῦ μὴ ἐλθέιν. See also Ac. 10: 25, ἐγένετο τοῦ ἐφεσλείν, and 27:1, ἐκρίθη τοῦ ἀπολείν. Cf. further 20: 3. It is naturally rarer in the N. T. than in the LXX. Moulton (Prol., p. 220) gives a papyrus example closely allied to it, 0. P. 86 (iv/A.D.) ἔθος τοῦ παρασχεθήματι. See Winer-Moulton, p. 411, for numerous examples in LXX. But very much like it is the use of τοῦ as object-inf., with ἐντέλλομαι in Lu. 4:10 (Ps. 90: 11); κατανεώ in 5:7; στηρίζω in 9:51; ποιέω in Ac. 3:12; κακῶ in 7:19; ἐπιστέλλω in 15:20; παρακαλέω in 21:12; συγνόθημα in 23: 20. Cf. also ἔτοιμος τοῦ in Ac. 23:15. This is surely "a wide departure from classical Greek."1 It is, however, after all in harmony with the genius and history of the inf., though the nominative use of τοῦ comes from the LXX.

The vernacular papyri show a few examples of τοῦ and the inf. It is found in the inscriptions of Pisidia and Phrygia. Cf. Compernass, p. 40. Moulton2 illustrates Lu. 1:9 with ἀμέλειν τοῦ γράφειν, B. U. 665 (i/A.D.); Mt. 18:25 and Jo. 5:7 (ἐξω) with ἐν ἔξω τοῦ πωλείν, B. U. 830 (i/A.D.); 1 Cor. 9:6 with ἐξουσία—τοῦ —Θέσσαλι, C. P. R. 156; Lu. 22:6 with ἐυκαρίας—τοῦ εὑρείν, B. U. 46 (ii/A.D.). He concludes that the usage is not common in the papyri and holds that the plentiful testimony from the LXX concurs with the N. T. usage to the effect "that it belongs to the higher stratum of education in the main." This conclusion holds as to the N. T. and the papyri, but not as to the LXX, where obviously the Hebrew inf. construct had a considerable influence. Moulton seems reluctant to admit this obvious Hebraism.

(c) Prepositions. We are not here discussing the inf. as purpose or result, as temporal or causal, but merely the fact of the prepositional usage. The idiom cannot be said to be unusual in classical Greek. Jannaris3 agrees with Birklein4 that classical writers show some 2000 instances of this prepositional construction. The writers (classic and later) who use the idiom most frequently are Thucydides, Xenophon, Polybius, Diodorus, Dionysius, Josephus, Plutarch, Dio Cassius. The most prolific user of the construction is Polybius (1053 instances) and Josephus next (651 times).5 If the prepositional adverbs be added to the strict

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 159. In late Gk. this use of τοῦ and the inf. came to displace the circumstantial participle and even finite clauses, only to die itself in time. Cf. Jann., WA. Gk. Gr., p. 483.
2 Prol., p. 219 ff.  
4 Entwickelungsgesch., p. 103.  
5 Krapp, Der substantivierte Inf., 1892, p. 1.
list of prepositions, the number is very much enlarged, especially in Polybius, who has 90 with χάριν, 115 with ἀμα, 504 with δία, 160 with πρός, 74 with εἰς, 24 with ἐν, 90 with ἐπί, 33 with μετά, 41 with περί, only one with παρά.¹ The idiom was here again later than the articular inf. itself and was also Attic in origin and literary. But it is common also in the Greek inscriptions according to Granit.² It is rare in the papyri, according to Moulton,³ save in the recurrent formula, εἰς τὸ ἐν μηδενὶ μεμφῆµαι, and (cf. 990) in the case of πρός τὸ. Cf. πρός τὸ τυχῆν, B. U. 226 (i/A.D.); πρός τὸ μὴ-ἐντυγχάνειν, 0. P. 237 (i/A.D.); πρός τὸ --δηθήναι (ib.). Votaw⁴ finds the prepositional inf. almost one-half of all the articular infs. in the 0. T., the Apocrypha and the N. T., the proportion being about the same in each section of the Greek Bible. Not quite, all the prepositions were used with the inf. in ancient Greek, the exception⁵ being ἀνά. Ἀμφὶ had it only with the genitive, κατὰ, with the accusative, παρὰ, with the acc., περὶ with the acc. and gen., πρός with acc. and loc., ὑπὲρ with the ablative, ὑπό with the ablative.⁶ It was not therefore freely used with all the usual case with the different prepositions. As a rule the article was essential if a preposition occurred with an inf. The reason for this was due to the absence of division between words. It was otherwise almost impossible to tell this use of the inf. from that of composition of preposition with the verb if the two came in conjunction. Cf. ἀντὶ τοῦ λέγειν in Jas. 4:15. A few instances are found without the article. Thus ἀντὶ δὲ ᾀρχεσθαι (note presence of δὲ between) in Herodotus I, 210. 2. It appears thus three times in Herodotus. So also in AEschines, Eum. 737, we have πλὴν γάμου τυχέων.⁷ So Soph., Ph., 100. Winer⁸ finds two in Theodoret (cf. IV, 851, παρὰ συγκλώθεσθαι). The papyri give us εἰς βάσια, 0. P. 36 (i/A.D.), and the common vernacular phrase⁹ εἰς πεῖν ("for drinking"). Cf. δός μοι πεῖν in Jo. 4:10. Moulton¹⁰ cites also an example of ᾀρχὴτ from Plutarch, p. 256 D, and one from an inscription of iii/B.C. (0. G. I. S. 41, Michel 370) ἐπὶ — λαμβάνειν. The instances without the article are clearly very few. Moulton (Prol., p. 81) suggests that the significant frequency of

ei]j pei?n in the papyri is due to Ionic influence. The LXX furnishes several instances of anarthrous ei]j, as ei]j ἐκφυγέiν in Judg. 6:11 (cf. 2 Esd. 22:24; Sir. 38:27; Judith 4:15). Note also ἐως ἑλθεiv in 1 Macc. 16:9; ἐως οὗ οἰκτειρήσαi in Ps. 122:2 (so Ruth 3:3); μέχρις οὗ ἤγγίσαi in Tob. 11:1. Cf. also πλην with anarthrous inf. in Polybius, etc.

The tenses have their full force in this prepositional construction, as in Mk. 5:4, διὰ το --δεδέσθαι και --διεσπάσθαι και --συντετρί-φθαι. Naturally some tenses suit certain prepositions better, as with the present tense.1 The principles of indirect discourse apply also to the inf. with prepositions. Cf. μετά το ἐγερθήναι με προάξω (Mk. 14:28). In the N. T. the accusative seems to occur always even when the nominative predicate would be possible,2 as in διὰ το μένειν αὐτόν (Heb. 7:24). So also Lu. 11:8. But note Xen., Cyr., I. 4. 3, διὰ τὸ φιλομαθής εἶναι.

It is not necessary for the article to come next to the inf. as in Mt. 13:25. Several words may intervene and the clause may be one of considerable extent. Cf. Mk. 5:4; Ac. 8:11; Heb. 11:3; 1 Pet. 4:2. But the N. T. does not have such extended clauses of this nature as the ancient Greek, and the adverbs usually follow the inf.3 The English "split inf." is not quite parallel.

In the 0. T. there are 22 prepositions used with the inf. and the Apocrypha has 18, while the N. T. shows only 10.4 Of these only eight are the strict prepositions (ἀντί, διὰ, ei]j, ἐν, ἐκ, μετά πρό, πρός) and two the prepositional adverbs ἐνεκα and ἐως. It remains now to examine each in detail.

Ἀντί τοῦ is not rare with the inf. and is chiefly found in the Greek orators.5 But we have it in Thucydides, Xenophon and Plato. Herodotus6 has only 11 instances of the preposition with the inf., but 5 of them are with ἀντί. It does not occur in Polybius. In the N. T. we have only one instance, Jas. 4:15, ἀντί τοῦ λέγειν. Votaw gives one for the LXX, Ps. 108:4, ἀντί τοῦ ἀγαπάν.

Διὰ has 33 instances in the N. T., all but one (genitive, Heb. 2:15, διὰ παντός τοῦ ζῆν) in the accusative. Mr. H. Scott reports the 33 exx. thus: Phil. 1, Jas. 1, Heb. 4, Mk. 5, Mt. 3, Lu. 9, Ac. 9, Jo. 1. The 0. T. has it with the inf. 35 times and the

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 50.  
2 W.-M., p. 415.  
3 Ib., p. 413.  
4 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Ck., p. 20.  
6 Birklein, Entwiek., p. 104.  
6 Helbing, Die Prapositionen bei Herod., p. 148.
Apocrypha 26,1 all with the accusative. The idiom δια τό is so frequent in Xenophon and Thucydides that as compared with ὅτι it stands as 2 to 3.2 In later Greek (κοινή and Byzantine) it comes to displace even ὅπως though finally shifting to διά νά, in modern Greek (cf. English "for that").3 It is not surprising therefore to find it in the N. T. with comparative frequency. Δια τό is frequent in Luke's writings, and once in Paul's Epistles, and rare in the other N. T. writers.4 It is always the cause that is given by δια τό, as in Mt. 13:5 f., δια τό μή ἔχειν. It is not merely the practical equivalent ὅτι and διότι, but is used side by side with them. Cf. Jas. 4:2f. δια τό μή αἰτιε- σθαι ὑμᾶς—διότι κακῶς αἰτεῖσθε. It may stand alone, as in Lu. 9: 7; 11:8, or with the accusative of general reference as in indirect discourse, as in Lu. 2:4; 19:11. Note two accs. in Ac. 4:2. The perfect tense occurs seven times, as in Mk. 5:4 (ter); Lu. 6:48; Ac. 8:11; 18:2; 27:9. In Mk. 5:4 it is the evidence, not the reason, that is given.5 Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 236) unnecessarily rejects Jo. 2:24.

Εἰς τό is in comon also with the inf. without much difference in sense from ἐπὶ τῷ and πρὸς τό with the inf.6 But the N. T. does not use ἐπὶ with the inf. There is no doubt about the final use of εἰς τό whatever, is true of the consecutive idea. In the late Greek Janaris7 notes a tendency to use εἰς τό (cf. βραδὺς εἰς τό λαλῆσαι in Jas. 1:19) rather than the simple inf. Cf. 1 Th. 4:9. But this tendency finally gave way to ἔνα. The 0. T. has εἰς τό 124, the Apocrypha 28 and the N. T. 72 times.8 In the N. T. it is more common than any other preposition with the inf., ἔν coming next with 55 examples. Moulton9 counts only 62 instances of εἰς τό in the N. T., but Votaw is right with 72. Paul has it 50 times. There are 8 in Hebrews and only one each in Luke and Acts, a rather surprising situation. The papyri10 show scattered examples of it. Cf. εἰς τό ἐν μηδενὶ μεμφηθηναι, P. Fi. 2 (111/A.D.) 4 times. In 1 Pet. 4:2, εἰς τό --βιωσαί, note the long clause. There is no doubt that in the N. T. εἰς τό has broken away to some extent from the classic notion of purpose. That idea still occurs as in Ro. 1: 11, εἰς τό στηριξθηναι. This is still the usual con fiction. Cf. Ro. 3:26; 7:4; 8:29; Eph. 1:12; Ph. 1:10; 1 Th. 3:5; Jas.

---

1 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20. 6 Birklein, Entwick., p. 107.
4 Viteau, Le Verbe, p. 165. 9 Prol., p. 218.
1:18; 1 Pet. 3:7; Heb. 2:17, and other examples in Mt. and Heb., to go no further. In Paul we notice other usages. In Ph. 1:23, ἐπιθυμίαν εἰς τὸ ἀναλύσαι, we have it with a substantive and in Jas. 1:19 it occurs with the adjectives ταχύς and βραδύς. It is epexegetically also with the verbal adjective θεοδίδακτοι in 1 Th. 4:9. Besides, we find it as the object of verbs of command or entreaty giving the content of the verb as in 1 Th. 2:12; 3:10; 2 Th. 2:2, ἐρωτῶμεν εἰς τὸ μὴ ταχέως σαλευθῆναι. Cf. also 1 Cor. 8:10. So in Mt. 20:19; 26:2; 1 Cor. 11:22 there is a really dative idea in εἰς τὸ. Just as ἵνα came to be non-final sometimes, so it was with εἰς τό, which seems to express conceived or actual result (cf. τὸ αὐτὸ also) as in Ro. 1:20; 12:3; 2 Cor. 8:6; Gal. 3:17. Cf. the double use of ὠστε for 'aim' or 'result.'

The perfect tense can be used with εἰς τὸ as in Eph. 1:18 εἰς τὸ εἰδέναι and Heb. 11:3 εἰς τὸ γεγονέναι, the only instances. But the present occurs 32 times, the aorist 38, the perfect 2=72. These developed uses of εἰς τὸ occur to some extent in the LXX (1 Ki. 22:8; 1 Esd. 2:24; 8:84).

ἐν τῷ appears in the tragedies. It is found 6 times in Thucydides, 16 in Xenophon, 26 in Plato. But Blass observes that the classical writers did not use ἐν τῷ in the temporal sense of 'while' or 'during.' Moulton sought to minimize the fact that in the O. T. ἐν τῷ occurs 455 times (45 in the Apocrypha) and that it exactly translates the Hebrew ה and held that it did not in principle go beyond what we find in Attic writers. But he took that back in the second edition under the suggestion of Dr. E. A. Abbott that we must find Attic parallels for 'during.' So he now calls this "possible but unidiomatic Greek." In the N. T. we have ἐν τῷ and the inf. 55 times and 3/4 in Luke. In the Greek Bible as a whole it is nearly as frequent as all the other prepositions with the inf. The Semitic influence is undoubted in the O. T. and seems clear in Luke, due probably to his reading the LXX or to his Aramaic sources. Cf. Lu. 1:8; 8:5 ἐν τῷ σπείρειν; 24:51; Ac. 3:6; 4:30; 9:3, etc. Jan-naris sees here a tendency also to displace the participle. The

2 Birklein, Entwick., p. 108.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 215.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 237.
5 Prol., p. 215.
6 P. 249.
7 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.
8 But Dalman, Worte Jesu, p. 26 f., denies that it is an Aramaean constr.
idiom is not confined to Luke's writings. Cf. Mt. 13:4; 13:25; Mk. 4:4; Heb. 2:8; 3:12, etc. Ordinarily it is the present inf. as in Mt. 13:4; Lu. 8:5; Ac. 3:26, where the Attic writers would have the present participle. But in Luke we have also the aorist inf. as in 2:27 ἐν τῷ εἰσαγαγεῖν, (3:21) ἐν τῷ βαπτίσθηναί, where Blass\(^1\) sees the equivalent of the aorist participle (cf. Ἱησοῦ βαπτισθέντος) or a temporal conjunction with the aorist indicative. One questions, however, whether the matter is to be worked out with so much finesse as that. The aorist inf. with ἐν ἑσθó occurs only 12 times in the N. T.\(^2\) It is more correctly just the simple action of the verb which is thus presented, leaving the precise relation to be defined by the context, like the aorist participle of simultaneous action. Cf. ἐν ὑποτάξαι in Heb. 2:8; Gen. 32:19, ἐν τῷ εὐρεῖν. This is all that ἐν τῷ should be made to mean with either the present or the aorist. Cf. Mt. 13:4; 27:12; Lu. 8:40; 9:29. The idea is not always strictly temporal. In Ac. 3:26 (cf. Jer. 11:17), 4:30, it is more like means. Votaw\(^3\) sees content in Lu. 12:15; Heb. 3:12. In Heb. 8:13, ἐν τῷ λέγειν, the notion is rather causal. The conception is not wholly temporal in Lu. 1:21.\(^4\) No other preposition occurs in the N. T. with the inf. in the locative case. But cf. ἐπὶ τῷ ἐμαί παραμένειν, 0. P. 1122, 9 f. (A.D. 407).

ʼἘνεκεν τοῦ appears in Xenophon, Plato and Demosthenes, usually as final, but also causal.\(^5\) Sophocles in his Lexicon quotes the construction also from Diodorus and Apophth. There is only one instance of it in the N. T., 2 Cor. 7:12, ἐνεκεν τοῦ φανερωθῆναι τῇ σπουδῆν ὑμῶν, where it is clearly causal as with the two preceding participles, ἐνεκεν τοῦ ἀδικήσαντος, ἐνεκεν τοῦ ἀδικηθέντος (a good passage to note the distinction between the inf. and the part.). The case is, of course, the genitive.

ʼΕκ τοῦ,\(^6\) likewise, appears in the N. T. only once with the inf. (2 Cor. 8:11, ἐκ τοῦ ἔχειν), but the case is ablative. Its usual idea in Attic prose is that of outcome or result.\(^6\) Votaw\(^7\) gives no illustration from the 0. T., but three from the Apocrypha. Blass\(^8\) takes it in 2 Cor. 8:11, to be equivalent to καθὼ ἐν ἔχει. More

---

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 237.  
\(^2\) Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 50.  
\(^3\) Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.  
\(^4\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 237.  
\(^5\) Birklein, Entwick., p. 106. It is found in Polyb. also. Cf. Kalker, Questions, p. 302; Allen, Inf. in Polyb., p. 35. Lutz (Die Casus-Adverbien bei Att. Redn., 1891, p. 18) finds it "zuerst bei Antiphon."  
\(^6\) Birklein, Entwick. p. 105.  
\(^7\) Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.  
\(^8\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 237.
likely it is meant to accent the ability growing "out of" the possession of property, whatever it may be. In Polybius έκ τοῦ with the inf. has a more varied use (departure, source of knowledge, source of advantage).\(^1\) He uses it 25 times.

`Έως τοῦ, likewise, occurs but once (Ac. 8:40, ἔως τοῦ ἐλθεῖν), and with the genitive. Birklein does not find any instances of έως τοῦ and the inf. in the classic writers, though he does note μέχρι τοῦ and less frequently ἄχρι τοῦ.\(^2\) Cf. μέχρι τοῦ πλεῖν, P. B. M. 854 (i/ii A.D.). But in the O. T. Votaw\(^3\) observes 52 instances of ἔως τοῦ and 16 in the Apocrypha. Cf. Gen. 24:33; Judith 8:34. We have already noted the anarthrous use of ἔως ἔλθειν in 1 Macc. 16:9 A. Cf. Gen. 10:19, 30, etc. So also ἔως οὗ and μέχρι(ς) οὗ and the inf., 1 Esd. 1:49, and Tob. 11:1 B. It is rather surprising therefore that we find only one instance in the N. T. and that in the Acts. The construction is probably due to the analogy of πρὶν and the inf.

Μετὰ τó is found only a few times in Herodotus, Plato and Demosthenes.\(^4\) It appears, however, thirty-three times in Polybius and usually with the aorist tense.\(^5\) The idea is temporal and the aorist is a practical equivalent for the aorist participle. In the O. T. Votaw\(^6\) finds it 99 times and only 9 in the Apocrypha. There are 15 examples in the N. T. and the case is the accusative always. Μετὰ τó vanished with the inf. in modern Greek.\(^7\) The aorist is always used in the N. T. save one perfect (Heb. 10:15). See Mk. 1:14; 14:28, μετὰ τó ἐγεθῆναι με. Eight of the examples occur in Luke's writings (Lu. 12:5; 22:20; Ac. 1:3; 7:4; 10:41; 15:13; 19:21; 20:1). See also Mt. 26:32; Mk. 16:19; 1 Cor. 11:25; Heb. 10:15, 26.

Πρó τοῦ in the ancient writers was used much like πρίν and in the temporal sense.\(^8\) It gradually invaded the province of πρίν, though in the N. T. we only meet it 9 times. It is not common in the papyri nor the inscriptions.\(^9\) See Delphian inscr. 220, πρó τοῦ παραμεῖναι. Polybius has it 12 times.\(^10\) In the O. T. we find it 46 times, but only 5 in the Apocrypha.\(^11\) The tense is always the aorist save one present (Jo. 17:5). Cf. Gal. 3:23, πρó τοῦ ἐλθεῖν τήν πίστιν. There is no essential differ-

---

1 Allen, Inf. in Polyb., p. 34 f.
2 Entwick., p. 105.
3 Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.
4 Birklein, Entwick., p. 108.
5 Allen, Inf. in Polyb., p. 41.
6 Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.
7 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 386.
8 Entwick., p. 105.
9 Moulton, Prol., p. 214.
10 Allen, Inf. in Polyb., p. 33.
11 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.
ence in construction and idea between ρρίς and the inf. and προ τοῦ and the inf. The use of πρίς with the inf. was common in Homer before the article was used with the inf. The usage became fixed and the article never intervened. But the inf. with both πρίς, and προ is in the ablative case. Cf. ablative\(^1\) inf. with pura in Sanskrit. Πρίς was never used as a preposition in composition, but there is just as much reason for treating πρίς as a prepositional adverb with the ablative inf. as there is for so considering ἔως τοῦ, not to say ἔως alone as in ἔως ἔλθειν (1 Macc. 16: 9). The use of the article is the common idiom. The fact of πρίς and the inf. held back the development of προ τοῦ. In modern Greek πρό τοῦ as προτοῦ occurs with the subj. (Thumb, Handb., p. 193). In the N. T. πρίς is still ahead with 13 examples. The instances of πρό τοῦ are Mt. 6:8; Lu. 2:21; 22:15; Jo. 1:48; 13:19; 17:5; Ac. 23:15; Gal. 2:12; 3:23.

Προς τῷ is the remaining idiom for discussion. It was used by the ancients in much the same sense as εἰς τῷ and ἐπὶ τῷ, 'looking to,' with a view to.\(^2\) The idiom is very common in Polybius,\(^3\) 150 examples, and there are 10 of πρὸς τῷ. But in the O. T. we have only 14 examples and 12 in the Apocrypha.\(^4\) The N. T. shows 12 also. Some of the LXX examples are of πρὸς τῷ (Ex. 1:1; 2 Macc. 7:14), but in the N. T. they are all πρὸς τῷ. the papyri Moulton\(^5\) finds πρὸς τῷ rather more common than εἰς τῷ. In the N. T. Matthew has it five times (5:28; 6:1; 13:30; 23:5; 26:12). These express aim unless 5:28 is explanatory of βλέπων.\(^6\) Mark has it once, 13:22. Luke has it twice (18: 1, where πρὸς τῷ δείπνοι means 'with reference to'; Ac. 3:19 only ΝΒ, while other MSS. read εἰς).\(^7\) Paul's four examples (2 Cor 3:13; Eph. 6:11, DEFG εἰς; 1 Th. 2:9; 2 Th. 3:8) all give the "subjective purpose."\(^8\) Both present (3 times) and aorist (9 times) tenses occur. Cf. πρὸς τῷ θεαθήναι in Mt. 6:1.

(d) The Infinitive with Substantives. Numerous examples of the inf. with substantives were given in the discussion of the cases of the inf. The matter calls for only a short treatment at this point. The use of the inf. with substantives was given in the discussion of the cases of the inf. The matter calls for only a short treatment at this point.

\(^1\) Whitney, Sans. Gr., § 983; Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 15S. Homer used πρίς with the inf. after both positive and negative clauses.
\(^2\) Birklein, Entwiek., p. 107.
\(^3\) Allen, Inf. in Polvb., p. 33.
\(^4\) Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 20.
\(^5\) Prol., p. 220.
\(^6\) Ib., p. 218.
\(^7\) Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 236.
\(^8\) W.-M., p. 414 note.
with τοῦ. It was always common in the classic Greek.1 The usage is common in Polybius with both the anarthrous and the articular inf.2 The same thing is true of the O. T. and the Apocrypha.3 It is so frequent as not to call for illustration. The meaning is that of complement and the inf. most frequently occurs with words of time, fitness, power, authority, need, etc. It is abundantly used in the N. T. both with and without the article. Some anarthrous examples are (Mt. 3:14) χρείαν βαπτισθῆναι, (Lu. 2:1) δόγμα ἀπογράφεσθαι, (Jo. 1:12) ἐξουσίαν γενέσθαι, (19:40) ἔθος ἐνταφιάζειν, (Ac. 24:15) ἐλπίδα μέλλειν, (Ro. 13:11) ὥρα ἐγερθῆναι, (Gal. 5:3) ὀφειλέτης ποιήσαι, (Heb. 7:5) ἐντολήν ἀποδεκατοῦν, (Rev. 11:18) καιρὸς κριθῆναι, etc. These are all real datives and the construction is common enough in the N. T., more so than in the LXX. In Ph. 1:23 note ἐπιθυμίαν εἰς τὸ ἀναλῦσαι. The same substantives may have τοῦ and the inf., though now, of course, the case is genitive. Cf. (Lu. 1:57) χρόνος τοῦ τεκέιν, (2:21) ἡμέραι τοῦ περιτεμείν, (10:19) ἐξουσίαν τοῦ πατείν (Ac. 14:9) πιστιν τοῦ σωθῆναι, (27:20) ἐλπὶς τοῦ σῶζεσθαι, etc. It occurs ten times in Luke's writings and nine in Paul's Epistles. It is about as common in proportion as in the LXX.4 See further Lu. 1:74; 2:6; 21:22; 22:6; Ac. 20:3; Ro. 1:24; 8:12; 11:8; 15:23; 1 Cor. 9:10; 10:13; 2 Cor. 8:11; Ph. 3:21; 1 Pet. 4:17; Heb. 5:12, etc. Since the inf. is a substantive, the genitive relation with other substantives is obvious and natural.

(e) The Infinitive with Adjectives. This idiom is likewise classical and is common from Homer on.5 As already shown, the case varies with different adjectives. This inf. is complementary as with substantives. It is natural with adjectives as any other substantive is. It held on longest with δυνάτος, ἰκανός, but other adjectives in late κοινή began to give way to εἰς τό (cf. Jas. 1:19, τοχύς εἰς τὸ ἀκοῦσαι, βραδύς εἰς τὸ λαλῆσαι) rather than the simple inf. and finally this disappeared before ἴνα (cf. Mt. 8:8, ἰκανὸς ἴνα).6 In the LXX and the N. T. the inf. with adjectives is less frequent than with substantives. We have it with both the anarthrous and the articular inf. See (Mt. 3:11) ἰκανός βαστάσαι, (Mk. 10:40) ἐμὸν δοῦναι, (Lu. 15:19) ἄξιος κληθῆναι, (Jas. 3:2) δυνάτος χαλιναγωγῆσαι, (1 Cor. 7:39) ἐλευθέρα γαμηθῆναι, (Heb. 5:11) δυσσερμήνευτος λέγειν, (1 Pet. 4:3) ἀρκετὸς κατεργάσθαι, etc. It is

---

1 Goodwin, M. and T., p. 301.  
2 Allen, Inf. in Polyb., pp. 23, 32.  
3 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., pp. 15, 25.  
4 Ib., p. 27.  
5 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 155 f. For Polyb. see Allen, Inf. in Polyb., pp. 23, 32.  
more common with ἄξιος, δυνατός, ἰκανός. The only adjective that often has τοῦ and the inf. in the O. T. is ἔτοιμος. We find it also with adverbs as in Ac. 21:13, δεθηναι ἀποθανεῖν ἐτοίμως ἔχω (so 2 Cor. 12:14). The articular examples are less frequent. But note (Lu. 24:25) βραδείς τοῦ πιστεύειν, (Ac. 23:15) ἔτοιμοι τοῦ ἀνελεῖν. Some would add 1 Cor. 16:4, ἄξιον τοῦ πορεύεσθαι, but see Cases of the Inf.

(f) The Infinitive with Verbs. This usage came to be, of course, the most frequent of all. It started as a dative or locative, then a sort of accusative of reference, then the object of verbs with whatever case the verb used. It is both anarthrous and articular. It is not necessary to go over again (see Cases of the Inf.) the varied uses the inf. with verbs, whether the object of verbs of saying or thinking in indirect discourse, verbs of commanding or promising, direct object of verbs (auxiliary inf.), verbs of hindering, etc. As a matter of fact they are all object-infms. whatever the case (acc., gen., abl., dat., instr.). Votaw notes that in the N. T. this use of the inf. is four times as common as any other. It is usually the anarthrous inf., but not always. Even δύναμαι and ἀρχομαι (not N. T.) are used with τοῦ and the inf. Jannaris has made a careful list of the verbs that continued for a while in late Greek to use the inf. against the inroads of ἵνα. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 150) argues that in general the N. T. use of the inf. With verbs is like that of the κοινή. The inf. λαλῆσαι with ἐπαρρήσιαςάμεθα (1 Th. 2:2) is not a Hebraism, but a Hellenism. But surely it is not necessary to call this usage an Atticism. In the discussion of ἵνα (see pp. 430, 994) the displacement of the inf. by ἵνα even after verbs like θέλω was sufficiently treated. Schmid "shows how this 'Infinitivsurrogat' made its way from Aristotle onwards." In the N. T. it is chiefly in the Gospel of John that we find this use of ἵνα. "The strong volitive flavour which clung to ἵνα would perhaps commend it to a writer of John's temperament." But after all, the inf. with verbs has not quite disappeared from John's Gospel. Jannaris has worked out the situation in John's Gospel as between this use of the inf. and ἵνα.

1 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 27.
3 See Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 4S7.
4 Inf. in Bibl. p. 7.
5 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 574 f.
6 Atticismus, Bd. IV, p. 557.
7 Moulton, Prof, p. 211.
8 Ib.
9 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 572 f. For an extended list of the verbs in the N. T. used with the complementary inf. see Viteau, Le Verbe, pp. 157
He finds ἵνα, about 125 times and the inf. with verbs about 129 times. Of these 57 belong to δύναμαι (37) and θέλω (20). There are besides, 10 with δέι and 12 each with ζητέω and with μέλλω. The rest are scattered with δίδωμι, ἔχω, ὁφείλω, δοκέω, ἀφίημι, αἰτέω, ἔρωτάω, ἀρχομαι, etc. It is clear, therefore, that the inf. with verbs is by no means dead in the N. T., though the shadow of ἵνα is across its path. As illustrations of the great wealth of verbs with the inf. in the N. T. note (Mt. 11:20) ἢρκατο ὁνειδίζειν, (27:58) ἐκέλευσεν ἀποδιοθήκησαι, (Mk. 12:12) ἐξήτουν κρατήσαι, (Lu. 16:3) σκάπτειν οὐκ ἵσχύω, ἐπαιτεῖν αἰσχύνομαι. Almost any verb that can be used with a substantive can be used with the inf.

The use of the inf. with προστίθεμαι is a Hebraism. Cf. Ex. 14:13. See Lu. 20:11 f., προσέθετο πέμψαι. It means 'to go on and do' or 'do again.' It is the one Hebraism that Thumb finds in Josephus, who is Atticistic. The articular inf. with verbs is much less frequent. But note τὸ ἀγαπάν after ὁφείλω (Ro. 13:8); παραιτοῦμαι τὸ ἀποθανεῖν, (Ac. 25:11); τοῦ περιπατεῖν after ποιέω (Ac. 3:12); ἐπιστείλαι τοῦ ἀπέχεσθαι (15:20); κατέιχον τοῦ μὴ πορεύεσθαι, (Lu. 4:42). In 1 Ki. 13:16 we have τοῦ ἐπιστρέψαι with δύναμαι.

These are just a few specimens. See Cases of the Inf.

(g) The Appositional Infinitive. The grammars draw a distinction here, but it is more apparent than real as Votaw well says. The inf. in apposition is that with nouns; the epexegetical inf. is used with verbs. But at bottom the two uses are one. They are both limitative. With nouns the appositional inf. restricts or describes it. It is a common enough idiom in classical Greek and is found also in the LXX. In the N. T. observe Ac. 15:28 πλὴν τούτων τῶν ἐπάναγκες, ἀπέχεσθαι, (Jas. 1:27) θρησκεία καθαρὰ καὶ ἀμίαντος—αὐτὴ ἐστίν, ἐπισκέπτεσθαι. Cf. further Ac. 26:16; 2 Cor. 10:13; Eph. 3:6; 8; 4:17; 1 Th. 4:3 f.; Heb. 9:8; 1 Pet. 2:15 (ὁύτως). The articular inf. may also be appositional as in Ro. 14:13, τοῦτο κρίνατε μᾶλλον, τὸ μή τιμῆσαι. So also 2 Cor. 2:1; 7:11; Ro. 4:13; 1 Th. 4:6 bis. In the N. T. and the Apocrypha it is only τὸ (in the articular use) that is appositional, but in the O. T. 15 out of the 17 instances have τοῦ without any reference to the case of the noun.4 It is worth noting that ἵνα is common also in appositional clauses (cf. Lu. 1:43; 1 Cor. 9:18), especially in the writings of John (Jo. 4:34; 15:8;

---

2 Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 17.
3 Cf. Hadley and Allen, § 950; Goodwin, § 1517.
4 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 29.
17:3; 1 Jo. 3:11, 23; 4:21; 5:3, etc.). We find ὅτι also in 1 Jo. 2:3; 3:16.1

5. VERBAL ASPECTS OF THE INFINITIVE. It is worth repeating (p. 1057) that the inf. is substantive as well as verb. Each inf. does not, of course, have all the substantival and verbal uses, but each inf. has both substantival and verbal aspects. The uses vary with each example. The verbal aspects do not exclude the substantival, though some2 writers say so. Per contra, Jan- naris3 holds that "the verbal nature of the substantival infinitive was sometimes completely lost sight of." This I do not concede. After tenses came to the verbal substantive its dual character was fixed. But, pp. 1050, 1056 f., the inf. did not come to the rank of a mode.

(a) Voice. The Sanskrit inf. had no voice. In Homer the inf. already has the voices, so that it is speculation as to the origin. It is possible that the original Greek inf. had no voice. This is an inference so far as the Greek is concerned, but a justifiable one. Moulton4 illustrates it well by δυνατός θαυμάσας, 'capable for wonder- ing,' and ἄξιος θαυμάσας, 'worthy for wondering,' when the first means 'able to wonder' and the second 'deserving, to be wondered at.' They are both active in form, but not in sense. "The middle and passive infinitives in Greek and Latin are merely adaptations of certain forms, out of a mass of units which had lost their individuality, to express a relation made prominent by the closer connection of such nouns with the verb."5 There was so much freedom in the Greek inf. that the Sanskrit –*tum did not develop in the Greek as we see it in the Latin supine. Gradually by analogy the inf. forms came to be associated with the voices in the modes. Practically, therefore, the Greek inf. came to be used as if the voices had distinctive endings (cf. the history of the imper. endings).6 Thus in Lu. 12:58, δός ἐργασίαν ἀπηλλάχθαι ἀπ' αὐτοῦ, it is clear that the passive voice is meant whatever the origin of the form –*sqai. The reduplication shows the tense also. The same remark applies to Mk. 5:4, διὰ τὸ δεδέσθαι καὶ διεπισάσθαι ὑπ' αὐτοῦ τὰς ἀλύσεις. See also 5:43, ἐπεν δοθήσαι αὐτῇ φαγεῖν. No special voice significance is manifest in φαγεῖν, which is like our

---

1 See Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 229.
2 As, for instance, Szczurat, De Inf. Horn. Usti, 1902, p. 17. He claims that the Horn. inf. came to serve almost all the ideas of the finite verb.
4 Prol., p. 203.
5 Ib.
6 In Ac. 26:28, πείθεις Χριστιανῶν ποιήσαι, one notes a possible absence of the strict voice in ποιήσαι. But it is a hard passage.
‘eating’ and is the acc. of general reference with δοθῆναι which in turn is the direct object of ἐπενευ. But δοθῆναι has the passive force beyond a doubt. Cf. further ἀπολελύσθαι ἠδύνατο in Ac. 26:32 and ἐνέκεν τοῦ φανερωθῆναι in 2 Cor. 7:12. In general, therefore, after the inf. is fully developed, the voice in the inf. appears exactly as in the modes. So τοῦ ἀπέχεσθαι (Ac. 15:20); ἀπογράψασθαι (Lu. 2:5); ἐπιλαθέσθαι (Heb. 6:10); γαμμηθῆναι (1 Cor. 7:39); κληθῆναι νίός (Lu. 15:19). Cf. θεάσασθαι (Lu. 7:24) and θεαθήναι (Mt. 6:1).

(b) Tense. See chapter on Tenses for adequate discussion of this point. Some general remarks must here suffice. As the Sanskrit inf. had no voice, so it had no tense. In the original Greek there was possibly no tense in the inf., but in Homer the tense is in full force. There is no time-element in the inf. (cf. subj., opt. and imperative) except as the future inf. echoes the expectation of a verb like ἐλπίζω (or μέλλω) or as the inf. represents a fut. ind. in indirect discourse (see Indirect Discourse under Modes). It is probably true that originally there was no distinction between aorist (punctiliar) and present (linear) action in the inf. In Sanskrit and Latin the infinitives and supines have no necessary connection with the present stem (cf. supine tactum and inf. tangere). "The σ in ἴσαι has only accidental similarity to link it with that in ἴσωσα." Moulton tersely adds: "But when once these noun-forms had established their close contact with the verb, accidental resemblances and other more or less capricious causes encouraged an association that rapidly grew, till all the tenses, as well as the three voices, were equipped with infinitives appropriated to their exclusive service." But even so at first the tense of the inf. had only to do with the kind of action (punctiliar, linear, state of completion), not with time.

In general, as with the subj., opt. and imper., the aorist inf. came to be the natural one unless some reason for the present or perf. or fut. existed. Cf. καταβῆναι (Lu. 9:54); παθεῖν (Lu. 24:46); καταλύσαι (Mt. 5:17); προσεύξησθαι (Lu. 18:10); ἀκοῦσαι (Ac. 10:33); ἐκχέαι (Ro. 3:15), etc. Sometimes, as in ἔδει ποιήσαι (Mt. 23:23), the inf. was used to suggest antecedent action. But the timeless aorist may point to what is future, as in Lu. 24:46 above. Cf. also Lu. 2:26; Ac. 3:18. Essentially, it does not. Cf. μέλλω with aor. inf. So μέλλοντα ἐνεγκ[εί]ν, P. Grenf.,

---

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 204  
3 Ib.  
4 Ib.  
5 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 59, notes 5,484 aorists and 3,327 presents in the Gk. Bible. In the N. T. the ratio is 4:3, in the O. T. 2:1.
VERBAL NOUNS (ONOMATA TOY RHMATOS) 1051

ii, 77 (iii/A.D.). In indirect assertions the aorist inf. represents the aor. indicative, but the N. T. seems to show no instance like this.1 However, that is a mere accident, for note ἔν τῷ εἰσαγαγέων τούς γονεῖς τὸ παιδίου τοῦ ποιήσας αὐτοὺς. (Lu. 2:27) where the same principle applies. Contrast the tense of ποιήσας and πείθεις in Ac. 26:28. In Lu. 24:46, γέγραπται παθεῖν τὸν Χριστόν, we have the timeless aorist in indirect discourse.

The present inf. with some verbs would accent linear action and with others the inf. would not draw the point, sharply. Some writers have a fondness for the present.2 One can see the force of linear action in ἡμᾶς δεῖ ἐργάζεσθαι (Jo. 9:4) and in τὸ ἀγαπάν αὐτόν (Mk. 12:33). Cf. also στοιχεῖν, in 3:16. In 1 Jo. 3:9, οὐ δύναται ἀμαρτάνειν, the linear notion is prominent (cf. οὐχ ἀμαρτάνει in verse 6). It is also quite normal with μέλλω, with which it occurs 84 times in the N. T. to 6 of the aorist. See Mt. 14:22 for both aorist ἐμβῆναι and present προάγειν in same sentence. Cf. also Ac. 15:37 f. The usual tense-distinction may be assumed to exist, though in a case like λέγειν (Heb. 5:11) the point is not to be stressed. The present inf. in indirect assertion represents the same tense of the direct, as in Mt. 22:23; Lu. 11:18, etc. Rarely the present inf. represents an imperfect indicative as in Lu. 20:6.

The perfect inf. is common also in indirect discourse to stand for the same tense of the direct, as in Jo. 12:2. A.c. 12:14; 14:19; 16:27. This is natural enough. But the perfect inf. is found also in the complementary inf. as Ac. 26:32, ἀπολέλυσθαι ἐδύνατο. Note Lu. 12:58, δός ἐργασίαν ἀπηλλάξας. But we also find the perfect tense with the articular inf. (so aorist and present) as in Mk. 5:4; Lu. 6:48; Ac. 27:9. In the N. T. there are in all 47 perfect infs. and the same number in the O. T.3 Of the N. T. examples 23 are anarthrous, 8 articular. The papyri show the articular perf. inf. Cf. ἐπὶ τῷ γεγονέναι, P. Oxy. 294 (A.D. 22); ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἀπολέλυσθαι σε, P. Br. M. 42 (B.C. 168).

The future inf. is increasingly rare. Thucydides even used τό with the future inf. The same construction is found in Polybius.4 But in the κοινή the future inf. is weakening rapidly. This disappearance of the fut. inf. is partly due to the retreat of the fu-

---

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 53.
2 Gilders1., Am. Jour. of Philol., 1882, p. 193. Madvig, Bemerkungen uber einige Punkte des Griech., 1848, p. 321, shows how the inf. has only the time of the principal verb.
3 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Grk., p. 50.
4 Allen, Inf. in Polyb., p. 48.
ture tense in general\(^1\) and partly to the apparent kinship between
the future and aorist forms. In the papyri Moulton\(^2\) notes that
the future inf. is sometimes used in the koinē as equivalent to
the aorist or even the present, since the sense of the future was
vanishing. Cf. χρησεί in Jo. 21:25 (\(\text{KBC}\)), while the other later
MSS. give χρησαί. In the 0. T. the fut. inf. (anarthrous always)
occurs only 14 times and only 6 in the N. T. The Apocrypha
has, however, 54, but almost all in 2 and 3 Maccabees.\(^3\) Three
of the N. T. examples are with μέλλω (Ac. 11:28; 24:15; 27:10).
Another is in Ac. 23:30 and is dependent on a participle after a
past indicative. In Ac. 26:7 the margin of W. H. (after B) has
καταντήσειν (text — ἴσα) with ἔλπιζει. In Heb. 3:18 note ὑμωσεν
μη ἔστελευσθοι (LXX). Another example is in Jo. 21:25, after
οἴμαι. Moulton (Prol., p. 219) cites χρη ἐτοιμάσειν, B. U. 830 (i/A.D.).

(c) Cases with the Infinitive. In general the inf. uses the same
case that the finite verb does. So the genitive in Heb. 6:10
ἐπιλαθέσθαι τοῦ ἐργου, the dative in 1 Cor. 7:39 ὦ θέλει γαμηθήναι,
the acc. in Ac. 23:15 τοῦ ἀναλέειν, the instrum. in Mt. 15:20 τὸ
ἀνίπτως χερσίν φαγεῖν, the locative in Ac. 21:21 μηδὲ τοῖς ἔθεσιν
περιπατείν, the ablative in Ac. 15:20 τοῦ ἀπέχεσθαι τῶν ἀληθημά-
tων, the predicate nominative in Ac. 17:18 καταγγελεύς εἶναι, the
predicate accusative in Ro. 2:19 πέποιθας σεαυτὸν ὀδηγὸν εἶναι, or
the acc. of general reference in ind. discourse in Mk. 12:18. But
this brings us again to the acc. in indirect assertion, a matter al-
ready treated at some length. (See Accusative Case, Indirect Dis-
course, and the next section.) But the thing to note is the real
verbal nature of the inf. in the matter of cases. Note the three
accusatives with τοῦ διδάσκειν in Heb. 5:12, two objects, one of
general reference. The cognate neuter plural is seen in πολλὰ
παθεῖν (Mt. 16:21).

(d) The Infinitive in Indirect Discourse. The frequent ob-
scuration of the cases with the inf. in indirect discourse justifies
some additional remarks besides those in the chapter on Modes.
The inf. is not finite and, like the participle, has no subject. By
courtesy the grammars often say so, but it beclouds more than
it clears to do so. The case of the predicate\(^4\) with the inf. is the

\(^1\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., pp. 486, 552 ff.
\(^3\) Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 59.
takes the acc. as originally the obj. of the verb. That was not always true,
as we have seen in Indirect Discourse (pp. 1037 ff.).
place to start. Cf. Mt. 19:21, εἶ θέλεις τέλειος εἶναι. See also 2 Cor. 10:2, δέσμαι τοῦ μὴ παρών θαρρήσαι, where the nominative occurs within the domain of the accusative articular inf. But note Mk. 14:28, μετὰ τὸ ἐγερθῆναι με προάξω. The true nature of the acc. with the inf. as being merely that of general reference comes out well in the articular inf., as in Jas. 4:2, οὐκ ἔχετε διὰ τὸ μὴ αἴτείσθαι ὕμᾶς. It is not necessary here to go over again the steps taken under Modes, but simply to insist on the true nature of the accusative with the inf. It stands, indeed, in the place of a finite verb of the direct statement, but does not thereby become finite with a subject. From the syntactical standpoint the construction is true to both the substantival and verbal aspects of the inf. The subject of the finite verb, when thrown into the acc., takes this turn because of the limitations of the inf. When it is retained in the nominative, it is by apposition with the subject of the principal verb or by attraction if in the predicate. Draeger sees this point clearly in his treatment of the latter in Latin where the acc. with the inf. is much more frequent than in Greek.1 "The name is confessedly a misnomer," say King and Cookson.2 Schmid3 also sees the matter clearly and makes the acc. with the inf. the acc. of general reference. The usual beaten track is taken by Jolly,4 but the truth is making its way and will win. Schmitt5 admits that the acc. is not the grammatical subject, but only the logical subject. But why call it "subject" at all? Schroeder6 properly likens it to the double accusative with διδάσκω, as in διδάσκω αὐτὸν περιπατεῖν. The late Sanskrit shows a few examples like English "if you wish me to live:"7 The use of the acc. with the inf. early reached a state of perfection in Greek and Latin. Schlicher8 notes 130 instances of it in Homer with φημί alone as against 15 with ὑπὸ ὅτι. We see it in its glory in historians like Xenophon and Thucydides in Greek and Cesar in Latin. Votaw9 notes the rarity of the construction in the O. T. and Apoc. (46 verbs), while the N. T. has 27 (83 exx.) verbs which use the idiom. But even in the N. T., as compared with the ancient Greek, the construction is greatly narrowed. The particular

---

verbs in the N.T. which may use the acc. and the inf. in indirect assertion were given under Modes. A general view of the matter discloses a rather wide range still. But the idiom, being largely literary, is chiefly found in Luke, Rom. and 1 Cor. The other writers prefer ὅτι. Luke, in fact, is the one who makes the most constant use of the idiom, and he quickly passes over to the direct statement. There is with most of them flexibility as was shown. Blass\(^1\) has a sensible summary of the situation in the N.T. There is, in truth, no essential difference in the Greek construction, whether the inf. is without a substantive, as in Ac. 12:15 διὰ τοῦ ἔριζεν ὅτως ἐξείν, with the acc., Ac. 24:9 ἠφάσκουν τὸ ταῦτα οὕτως ἐξείν, or with the nom. Ro. 1:22 ἠφάσκουν εἶναι σοφοί. Cf. Ac. 17:30; 1 Pet. 3:17. Words like δεῖ, ἀνάγκη may be followed by no substantive (Mt. 23:23; Ro. 13:5). Cf. Lu. 2:26. In 1 Pet. 2:11, we have only the predicate ὡς παροίκους—ἀπέχεσθαι. Freedom also exists. In Mk. 9:47 we have καλὸν σὲ ἐστὶν μονὸ-φθαλμὸν εἰσελθεῖν, while in Mt. 18:8 we read καλὸν σοὶ ἐστὶν μονὸ-φθαλμὸν εἰσελθεῖν. Even in Matthew the predicate adj. is acc., though it might have been dative, as in Ac. 16:21. Further examples of the predicate dative when an accusative is possible are seen in Lu. 1:3; 9:59; Ac. 27:3 (\textit{NA}B); 2 Pet. 2:21. But see Ac. 15:22, 25; Heb. 2:10. The case of the inf. itself is not the point here. There are besides verbs of willing, desiring, allowing, making, asking, beseeching, exhorting, some verbs of commanding, the inf. with πρῶν, ὧςτε, τὸ, τοῦ, prepositions and the articular infinitive. With all these the acc. may occur.

A difficult inf. occurs in Ac. 26:28, ἐν ὀλίγῳ με πείθεις Χριστιανὸν ποιῆσαι. Is με the object of πείθεις or of ποιῆσαι? Can πείθεις be ‘try by persuasion’? Prof. W. Petersen suggests that this is a contamination of ἐν ὀλίγῳ με πείθεις Χριστιανὸν εἶναι and ἐν ὀλίγῳ με ποιῆσαι Χριστιανὸν. But verbs differ. \textit{Kēleū}, for instance, always has the acc. and the inf., while the dative comes with τάσσω (Ac. 22:10), ἐπιτάσσω (Mt. 6:39), and verbs like ἐπετέλλομαι, ἐπιτρέπω, παραγγέλλω, and impersonal expressions like συμφέρει, ἐθος ἐστὶν ἀξίωμα, αἰσχρόν, etc. As shown above, καλὸν ἐστὶν is used either with the acc. or the dative, as is true of λέγω (cf. Mt. 5:34, 39 with Ac. 21:21; 22:24). Blass\(^2\) adds also Ac. 5:9, συνεφωνήθη ὃμιν πειράσαι. He notes also that προστάσσω occurs with the acc. (Ac. 10:48) as is true of ἐπιτάσσω (Mt. 6:27) and τάσσω (Ac. 15:2). Even συμφέρει appears with the acc. and inf. (Jo. 18:14) and ἔξεστιν (Lu. 6:4, where D has the dative, as is true of Mt.

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., pp. 239-241. \(^2\) Ib., p. 240.
12:4). With ἔγενετο Blass\(^1\) observes how clumsy is ἔγενετο μοι—γενέσθαι με (Ac. 22:17). The acc. and inf. occurs with ἔγενετο (Ac. 9:32) and the dative also in the sense of it 'befell' or 'happened to' one, as in Ac. 20:16. In Ac. 22:6, ἔγενετο μοι—περιαστράψαι φῶς, the two constructions are combined. Blass\(^2\) further observes the independence of the inf. in adding an acc. of general reference besides the acc. with a verb of asking, as in Ac. 13:28 ἡτήσαντο Παιλάτον ἀναίρεθηναι αὐτῶν, (1 Th. 5:27) ὁρκίζω ὑμᾶς ἀναγνωσθήναι τὴν ἑπιστολήν. In Ac. 21:12, παρεκαλοῦμεν—τοῦ μὴ ἀναβαίνειν αὐτῶν εἰς Ἱεροσολύμη, the αὐτῶν is acc. of general reference with the inf., which is itself in the genitive as to form, though the real object of the verb. There is no instance in the N. T. of the inf. in a subordinate clause unless we follow Nestle in 1 Pet. 5:8, ζητῶν τίνα καταπείν. There are sporadic examples of such a construction due to analogy of the inf. in the main clause.\(^3\) Cf. 0. P. 1125, 14 (ii/A.D.), οὗς καὶ κυριεύειν τῶν καρπῶν.

(e) Personal Construction with the Infinitive. Many verbs and adjectives allowed either the personal or the impersonal construction with the infinitive. The Greek developed much more freedom in the matter than the Latin, which was more limited in the use of the impersonal.\(^4\) In the N. T. the impersonal construction occurs with fixed verbs like δεῖ, Ac. 25:24, βοῶντες μὴ δεῖν αὐτῶν ζην μηκέτι, where note inf. dependent on inf. as is common enough (Ac. 26:9; Lu. 5:34; Heb. 7:23; Mk. 5:43; Lu. 6:12; 8:55). So also with ἐξεστίν, etc. The impersonal construction is seen also in Lu. 2:26; 16:22; Ph. 3:1; Heb. 9:26, etc. The inf. with impersonal verbs is somewhat more frequent in the N. T. than in the LXX. On the whole the personal construction with the inf. is rare in the N. T.\(^5\) But in the N. T. δοκέω has the personal construction, as in Ac. 17:18, δοκεῖ καταγγελεύς εἶναι (cf. Jas. 1:26; Gal. 2:9, etc.), but we find ἐδοξέι μοι in Lu. 1:3 (cf. Ac. 15:28, etc.) and even ἐδόξα ἐμαυτῷ δεῖν πρᾶξαι (Ac. 26:9). The κοινή seems to use it less frequently than the ancient Greek. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 148) quotes Vett. Valens, p. 277, 19, δοξεῖ—ὑπάρχειν αὐτήν τὴν αἴρεσιν. We have δεδοκιμάσμεθα πιστευθήναι (1 Th. 2:4) and ἐμαρτυρήθη εἶναι (Heb. 11:4). One may compare the personal construction with ὅτι (1 Cor. 15:12; 2 Cor.

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 241.  
\(^2\) Ib.  
\(^4\) Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 239.  
\(^5\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 239.
The personal construction occurs with πρέπει (Heb. 7:26). The impersonal has the acc. and the inf. (1 Cor. 11:13), the dative and the inf. (Mt. 3:15), both the dative and the acc. (Heb. 2:10). Cf. W. F. Moulton in Winer-Moulton, p. 402. The love of the passive impersonal appears in Ac. 13:28 ἡττήσαντο Πειλάτον, ἀναιρεθήμαν αὐτόν and in 5:21, ἀπέστιλαν ἄχρησθαι αὐτοὺς (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 148). The nominative predicate with the inf. and the nom. in indirect discourse is to be noted also.

(f) Epexegetical Infinitive. As already remarked, there is no essential difference between the appositional and the epexegetical use of the infinitive. The epexegetical inf. is added to a clause more or less complete in itself, while the merely appositional is more simple.¹ It is common in the dramatists. This use is probably adnominal² in origin, but it drifts into the verbal aspect also. We see a free use of the limitative³ inf. in ὃς ἔπος εἶ πεῖν which only occurs once in the N. T. (Heb. 7:9). Brugmann does not agree with Granewald that this is the original epexegetical or limitative inf., though it is kin to it. Blass⁴ applies "epexegetical" merely to the appositional inf. It is in the epexegetical inf. that we see more clearly the transition from the original substantive to the verbal idea. It is hard to draw the line between δόγμα ἀπογράφεσθαι πᾶσαν τὴν ὀικουμένην (Lu. 2:1) and παρέδωκεν αὐτοὺς εἰς ἀδόκιμον νοῦν, ποιεῖν τὰ μὴ καθήκοντα (Ro. 1:28). The first is appositional, the latter epexegetical. A good instance of the epexegetical inf. is seen in 2 Cor. 9:5, where ταύτην ἐτοίμην εἶναι ὡς εὐλογίαν is subsidiary to the ἦνα clause preceding, as is often the case. Vièteau⁵ notes that the construction is frequent in the Epistles. Cf. Eph. 1:16-18 (ἡνα—εἰς τὸ εἰδέναι), 3:16 f. (ἡνα—κραταιωθήμαν, κατοικήσαί, Col. 1:10 (ἡνα—περιπατήσαι), 4:3 (ἡνα—λαλήσαι). Further examples occur in Lu. 1:54 μνησθήσαί, 1:72 ποιήσαί καὶ μνησθήσαι, 1:79 ἐπιφάνεια τοῦ κατευθύναι, Ac. 17:27 ζητεῖν, 2 Pet. 3:2 μνησθήσαί. The LXX⁶ shows rather frequent instances of the articular inf. in this sense (cf. Gen. 3:22; Judg. 8:33; Ps. 77:18). The N. T. shows very few. Indeed, Votaw finds only one, that in Gal. 3:10, ἐπικατάρατος πᾶς ὃς οὐκ ἐμένει πᾶσιν τοῖς γεγραμμένοις ἐν τῷ βιβλίῳ τοῦ νόμου τοῦ ποιήσαι αὐτά. But certainly

¹ Thomson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 239.
² Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 517.
³ Granewald, Der freie formelhafte Inf. der Limit. im Griech., p. 21 f.
⁴ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 229.
⁵ Le Verbe, p. 161.
VERBAL NOUNS ( ὀΝΟΜΑΤΑ ΤΟΥ ῬΗΜΑΤΟΣ ) 1087

τοῦ ἀτιμάζεσθαι (Ro. 1:24) after παρέδωκεν is just as truly epexegetical as is ποιεῖν in verse 28 after παρέδωκεν. So also Ro. 7:3; 8: 12; 1 Cor. 10:13. Burton¹ looks at the epexegetical inf. as "an indirect object," as in Lu. 10:40, ἢ ἀδελφὴ μου μόνην με κατέλειπεν διακονεῖν. There is no doubt that in such instances the inf. is in the original dative case with the dative idea. See further Mk. 4:23; 6:31; Lu. 7:40; 12:4; Ac. 4:14; 7:42; 17:21; 23:17, 18, 19; Tit. 2:8, etc.

(g) Purpose. It is but a step from the explanatory or epexegetical inf. to that of design. Indeed, the epexegetical inf. sometimes is final, a secondary purpose after ἵνα, as in Eph. 1:18; 3: 17; Col. 1:10, etc. The sub-final or objective use of the inf. is also a step on the way. This use was very common in the ancient Greek, but was partially taken up by ἵνα in N. T.² But many verbs, as we have seen, retain the sub-final inf. in the N. T. as in the rest of the κοινῆ. Blass' careful lists and those of Viteau were given under Indirect Discourse. This notion of purpose is the direct meaning of the dative case which is retained. It is the usual meaning of the inf. in Homer,³ that of purpose. It goes back to the original Indo-Germanic stock.⁴ It as always more common in poetry than in prose. The close connection between the epexegetical inf. and that of purpose is seen in Mk. 7:4, a παρέλαβον κρατεῖν ('for keeping,' 'to keep'). So Mt. 27:34, ἐδωκαν αὐτῷ πιεῖν ὀἴνον ('for drinking,' 'to drink'). So Mt. 25:35, ἐδώκατε μοι φαγεῖν. The inf. with the notion of purpose is exceedingly frequent in the LXX, second only to that of the object-inf. with verbs.⁵ It was abundant in Herodotus.⁶ Hence Thumb⁷ thinks its abundant use in the κοινῆ is due to the influence of the Ionic dialect. Moulton⁸ agrees with this opinion. This is true both of the simple inf. of purpose and τοῦ and the inf. The Pontic dialect still preserves the inf. of purpose after verbs like ἀναβαίνω, etc. It is noteworthy that this inf. was not admitted into Latin except with a verb of motion. Moulton (Prol., p. 205) cites Par. P. 49 (ii/B.C.) ἔαν ἀναβώ καγὼ προσκυνήσαι, as parallel to Lu. 18:

¹ N. T. M. and T., p. 147.
⁵ Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 10.
⁶ Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 240.
⁷ Theol. Lit., 1903, p. 421.
⁸ Prol., p. 205.
10, ἀνέβησαν — πορεύεσαι. Moulton\(^1\) notes this correspondence between the ancient and the modern vernacular and agrees with Thumb's verdict again that the result is due to the two conflicting tendencies, one the universalizing of ἵνα, which prevailed in Western Hellenism and resulted in the disappearance of the inf. in modern Greece, while the idealizing of the inf. in Pontus serves to illustrate to-day the N. T. idiom. The N. T. use of the inf. of purpose includes the simple inf., τοῦ and the inf., εἰς τό and the inf., πρὸς τό and the inf. ὑστε and the inf. There is no example of ἐφ' ὑμεῖς. First note the simple inf., all in the original dative case. This use had a wider range in Homer than in the Attic writers. Thus Mt. 2:2 ἠλθομεν προσκυνήσαμεν αὐτῷ; (5:17) οὐκ ἠκολούθησαν, ἀλλὰ πληρώσατε; (7:5) διαβλέψεις ἐκβαλεῖν τὸ κάρφος (11:7) τί ἐξήλθατε εἰς τὴν ἔρημον θεάσασθαι (so verse 8, ἴδειν); 20:28; (Mk. 3:14) ἀποστέλλῃ αὐτοὺς κηρύσσειν (5:32) περιβλέπετο ἵδεῖν; (Lu. 18:10) ἀνέβησαν προσεύχασθαι; (Jo. 4:15) διέρχομαι ἐνθάδε αὐτέλειν; (Ac. 10:33) πάρεσμεν ἀκούσασθαι; (2 Cor. 11:2) ἡμοσάμην ὑμᾶς — παραστήσασθαι; (Rev. 5:5) ἐνίκησεν ἀνοίξασθαι; (16:9) οὐ μετενόησαν δούλαι. These examples will suffice. It is very common in the N. T. It is not necessary to multiply illustrations of τοῦ after all the previous discussion. The O. T. shows the idiom in great abundance, though the construction is classic. It was used especially by Thucydides.\(^2\) This was a normal use. We have already noticed that Paul makes little, if any, use of this idiom.\(^3\) It is possible in Ro. 6:6; Ph. 3:10. Indeed, Votaw\(^4\) notes only 33 instances of τοῦ and inf. of purpose in the N. T., and these are chiefly in Matthew, Luke and Acts. Note (Mt. 2:13) ἐξῆλθεν τοῦ ἀπολέσασθαι, (13:3) ἐξῆλθεν τοῦ σπέιρειν, (Lu. 21:22) τοῦ πλησθῆσαι πάντα, (24:29) τοῦ μείναι. See further Ac. 3:2; 5:31; 26:18; 1 Cor. 10:7; Gal. 3:10; Heb. 10:7, etc. The use of τοῦ μη ἀποκλεῦειν ἡμᾶς. Cf. Ac. 21:12. In Lu. 2:22 note παραστήσασθαι, and in verse 24 τοῦ δοῦναι. Purpose is also expressed by εἰς τό as in 1 Th. 3:5, ἐπεμψα εἰς τό γνώναι, and by πρὸς τό as in Mt. 6:1, πρὸς τό θεαθῆναι. In the N. T. ὑστε with the inf. of purpose is rare. Originally purpose was the idea with ὑστε, or conceived result. Actual result with ὑστε was expressed by the indicative.

\(^1\) Prol., p. 205. Allen gives no ex. of the simple inf. of purpose in Polyb., only τοῦ, ὑστε, ἐφ' ὑμεῖς. Cf. Inf. in Polyb., p. 22.
\(^2\) Moulton, Prol., p. 216. Thuci was the first to use τοῦ and the inf. for purpose (Berklein, Entwickelungsgesch., p. 58).
\(^3\) Ib., p. 217 f.
\(^4\) Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 21.
In the LXX the notion of purpose is still common, especially in the books of Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus. In the N. T. there are only 8 instances, leaving out Ac. 20:24, according to W. H., and only 7 if we follow W. H. in Lu. 9:52. See Mt. 10:1, ἐδωκεν αὐτοῖς ἔξουσίαν ὣςτε ἐκβάλλειν καὶ θεραπεύειν. And ὣςτε (=ὡς, τε, 'and so') is simply 'so as,' not 'so that.' See also Lu. 4:29, ὣςτε κατακρημνύσαι. Cf. further Mt. 15:33; 27:1; Lu. 20:20. Burton\(^2\) thinks that in Mt. 27:1 ὣςτε gives rather content than purpose. One must not confuse with τοῦ and the inf. of purpose the somewhat analogous construction of τοῦ and τοῦ μὴ after verbs of hindering. This is in reality, as was shown, the ablative and the regular object-inf. (substantival aspect). Cf. Lu. 4:42; Ac. 20:27; Ho. 15:22. Votaw\(^3\) notes 22 verbs in the LXX and the N. T. that use this idiom. The only common one is κυλίων. See further Final Clauses in chapter on Modes for papyri examples.

(h) **Result.** Purpose is only "intended result," as Burton\(^4\) argues. Radermacher (\textit{N. T. Gr.}, p. 153) says that the difference between purpose and result in the inf. is often only in the more subjective or objective colouring of the thought. It is hard to draw a line between conceived result and intended result. Blass\(^5\) explains a number of examples as result that I have put above under Purpose, as Rev. 5:5; 16:9. It is largely a matter of standpoint. The line of distinction is often very faint, if not wholly gone. Take Rev. 5:5, for instance, ἔνικησεν ὁ λέων ἀνοίξαι. The lion had opened the book and so it was I actual result. So also Ac. 5:3, διὰ τί ἐπλήρωσεν ὁ σατανᾶς τὴν καρδίαν σου, ψεύσασθαι σε. Ananias had actually lied. In the ancient Greek also the distinction between purpose and result was not sharply drawn.\(^6\) The inf. may represent merely the content\(^7\) and not clearly either result or purpose, as in Eph. 3:6, ἐίναι τὰ ἔθνη. Cf. also 4:22, ἀποθέσασθαι. This is not a Hebraistic (Burton) idiom, but falls in naturally with the freer use of the inf. in the κοινή. See also Ac. 15:10 ἐπιθέειναι ζυγόν, (Heb. 5:5) γενηθήναι ἀρχιερεία. Where it is clearly result, it may be actual or hypothetical.\(^8\) The hypothetical is the natural or conceived result. The N. T. shows but 12

---

\(^1\) Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 10.  
\(^2\) N. T. M. and T., p. 150.  
\(^4\) N. T. M. and T., p. 148.  
\(^5\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 224.  
\(^6\) Baumlein, Modi, p. 339.  
\(^7\) W.-M., p. 400. See Burton, N. T. M., and T., p. 150 f.  
\(^8\) Allen, Inf. in Polyb., p. 21,
instances of the simple inf. with the notion of result, according to Votaw.\(^1\) In the 0. T. it is quite common. The 12 examples in the N. T. are usually hypothetical, not actual. So Ro. 1:10 εὐ-δωθήσομαι ἐλθεῖν πρὸς ὑμᾶς (Eph. 3:17) κραταίωθηναί, κατοικήσαί, (6:19) γνωρίσαι, (Col. 4:3) λαλήσαι, (4:6) εἰδέναι, (Heb. 6:10) ἐπιλα-θέσθαι. It is here that the kinship with purpose is so strong. Cf. Rev. 16:9. But some examples of actual result do occur, as in Lu. 10:40; Ac. 5:3; Rev. 5:5. In the 0. T.\(^2\) we have actual result with τοῦ and the inf., but no examples occur in the N. T. Not more than one-half of the examples of τοῦ and the inf. in Luke, who gives two-thirds of the N. T. instances, are final.\(^3\) Some of these are examples of hypothetical result. See discussion of Result in chapter on Mode for further discussion and papyri examples. It is rather common in the 0. T., though not so frequent in the N. T.\(^4\) It is possible to regard Mt. 21:32, μετεμελήθητε τοῦ πιστεύ-σαί, thus, though in reality it is rather the content of the verb.\(^5\) There is similar ambiguity in Ac. 7:19, ἐκάκωσεν τοῦ ποιεῖται. But the point seems clear in Ac. 18:10, οὐδεὶς ἐπιθήσεται σοι τοῦ κακώσαι σε, and in Ro. 7:3, τοῦ μὴ ἐναί αὐτὴν μοιχαλίδα. If τοῦ can be occasionally used for result, one is prepared to surrender the point as to εἰς τό if necessary. It is usually purpose, but there is ambiguity here also, as in Mt. 26:2; 1 Cor. 11:22, where the purpose shades off toward hypothetical result. In Ac. 7:19 we seem to have hypothetical result, εἰς τὸ μὴ ζωογονεῖσθαι. So also Ro. 6:12, εἰς τὸ ὑπάκουειν. It is true also of Heb. 11:3, εἰς τὸ γεγονέναι. See further Ro. 12:3; 2 Cor. 8:6; Gal. 3:17.\(^6\) Votaw\(^7\) argues for actual result in Ro. 1:20, εἰς τὸ εἶναι αὑτοῦς ἀναπολογήτους. It is hard to deny it in this passage. But it is ὡστε and the inf. that is the usual N. T. construction for this idea with the inf. As already shown (see Mode) nearly all of the 62 examples of ὡστε and the inf. in the N. T. have the notion of result. Once Votaw\(^8\) notes an instance of hypothetical result in the N. T., 1 Cor. 13:2, κἂν ἔχω πάσαν τὴν πίστιν ὡστε ὑπη μεθιστάνειν. Burton\(^9\) goes further and includes in this category Mt. 10:1; 2 Cor. 2:7. But these debatable examples are in harmony with the usual am-

\(^{1}\) Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 13.
\(^{2}\) Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 25. Cf. Ruth 2:10, τί ὄτι εὗρον χάριν ἐν ὄφθαλ-μοῖς σου τοῦ ἐπιγνωσαί με; See also 2 Chron. 33:9; 1 Macc. 14:36.
\(^{3}\) Moulton, Prol., p. 217.
\(^{4}\) Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 25. \(^{5}\) Moulton, Prol., p. 216.
\(^{7}\) Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 21.
\(^{8}\) Ib., p. 14. \(^{9}\) N. T. M. and T., p. 149.
biguity as to result and purpose. There is no doubt about the examples of actual result with ἔστε. Thus Mt. 13:54 ἐδίδασκεν αὐτοῦς ἔστε ἐκπλήσσεσθαι καὶ λέγειν, (Mk. 9:26) ἔστε τούς πολλοὺς λέγειν, (Lu. 12:1) ἔστε περιπατεῖν ἀλλήλους, (Ac. 5:15) ἔστε ἐκφέ- 

feiν. See also Ac. 15:39; Ro. 7:6; 2 Cor. 7:7; Ph. 1:13, etc.

There is one instance in the text of W. H. where ὡς occurs with the inf., Lu. 9:52, ὡς ἔτομάζασαι with the idea of purpose involved. Cf. ὡς σχεῖν 0. P. 1120, 19 f. (iii/A. D.). The use of ὡς ἔπος ἐἵπειν (Heb. 7:9) is the absolute idea, as already shown. Different also is ὡς ἄν ἐκφοβεῖν (2 Cor. 10:9) = ‘as if.’ A clear case of result occurs in Epictetus, IV, 1, 50, οὕτως—μὴ ἀποδύ- 

ρασθαί.

(i) Cause. There is only one example in the N. T. of the ar-
ticular inf. without a preposition in this sense. That is in 2 Cor.
2:13, τὸϲ μὴ εὑρεῖν, and it is in the instr. case as already shown.
The LXX shows a half-dozen examples, but all with variant 
readings.1 But it is common with διὰ τό to have the causal sense, 
some 32 times in the N. T.2 See Prepositions and Substantival 
Aspects of the Infinitive. Cf. Mt. 13:5 f.; Mk. 5:4; Lu. 6:48;
Jas. 4:2 f. There is one instance of ἔνεκεν τοῦ in 2 Cor. 7:12.

(j) Time. Temporal relations are only vaguely expressed by 
the inf. See Tense in this chapter for the absence of the time-
element in the tenses of the inf. except in indirect discourse.
Elsewhere it is only by prepositions and πρῶ, (an adverbial pre-
position in reality) that the temporal idea is conveyed by the inf.
Antecedent time is expressed by πρῶν or πρὸ τοῦ. For πρὸ τοῦ, see 
Mt. 6:8; Lu. 2:21, etc. Πρῶν, or πρὸ τοῦ (so in Mt. 1:18; Mk.
14:30; Ac. 7:2; W. H. have πρῶν η in the marg in Ac. 2:20)
ocurs with the inf. 11 times, all aorists (all in Gospels and 
Acts). We have it only twice with finite verb after negative 
sentences, once with the subj. (Lu. 2:26), once with the opt. 
(Ac. 25:16), both in Luke (literary style). See, for the inf.,3 

Mt. 26:34 πρῶν ἀλέκτορα φωνῆσαι, (Jo. 4:49) πρῶν ἀποθανεῖν. See 

further Mt. 26:75; Mk. 14:72; Lu. 22:61 (five of the instances 
are practically identical); Jo. 8:58; 14:29; Ac. 2:20. In He-
rodotus, under the influence of indirect discourse, the inf. occurs 
with ὃκως, ἐπεί ἐπείδη, εἰ, διότι and the relative pronouns.4 Con-

1 Votaw, Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 29.
3 The inf. with πρῶ is common in Hom. See Monro, p.58.
4 Benard, Formes verbales en Grec d'apres le Texte d'Orodote, 1890, p. 196. See also Sturm, Die Entwick. der Konstrukt. mit πρῶ, 1883, p. 3.
temporaneous action is described by ἐν τῷ, especially in Luke. Cf. Lu. 1:21, ἐν τῷ χρονίζειν. See Prepositions with Infinitive for further remarks. Subsequent action is set forth by μετὰ τὸ as in Mt. 26:32; Lu. 12:5, etc. In Ac. 8:40, ἐν τῷ ἐλθεῖν, we have the prospective future.

(k) The Absolute Infinitive. This idiom is very common in Homer, especially as an imperative and in the midst of imperatives.1 R. Wagner2 notes that in Homer this use of the inf. occurs with the nom. The papyri still show examples like ὁ δείνα τῷ δείνα χαίρειν.3 Gerhard4 holds that in such cases there is ellipsis of λέγει. The Attic inscriptions5 frequently have the absolute infinitive as imperative. Deissmann (Light from the Anc. East, p. 75) notes that, as in German, it is common in edicts and notices. Cf. imperatival use of infinitive in modern French. He quotes from the "Limestone Block from the Temple of Herod at Jerusalem" (early imperial period): Μηθένα ἀλλογενὴ εἰςπορέεσθαι ἔντος τοῦ περί τὸ ἱερὸν τρυφάκτου καὶ περιβόλου, 'Let no foreigner enter within,' etc. See also Epictetus, IV, 10, 18, ἵνα δὲ ταῦτα γένηται, οὐ μικρὰ δὲξασθαι οὐδὲ μικρῶν ἀποτυχεῖν. The imperative use was an original Indo-Germanic idiom.6 It flourishes in the Greek prose writers.7 Burton8 and Votaw9 admit one instance of the imperatival inf. in the N. T., Ph. 3:16, τῷ αὐτῷ στοιχεῖν. But Moulton10 rightly objects to this needless fear of this use of the inf. It is clearly present in Ro. 12:15, χαίρειν, κλαίειν. The case of Lu. 9:3 is also pertinent where μὴ τε ἔχειν comes in between two imperatives. Moulton himself objects on this point that this inf. is due to a mixture of indirect with direct discourse. That is true, but it was a very easy lapse, since the inf. itself has this imperative use. In 1 Th. 3:11; 2 Th. 2:17; 3:5 there is the nominative case and the whole context besides the accent to prove that we have the optative, not the aorist active infinitive. See Mode for further discussion. Moulton11 quotes Burkitt as favouring the mere infinitive, not ἔδει, in Mt. 23:23, ταῦτα δὲ ποιήσαι κακεῖνα μὴ ἀφεῖναι, after the Lewis Syriac MS., and also καυχάσθαι. — in 2 Cor. 12:1 after Χ. The

---

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 162.
2 Der Gebr. des imper. Inf. ion Griech., 1891, p. 12.
3 Reinach, Pap. grecs et demotiques, 1905.
5 Meisterh., p. 244.
6 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 516.
7 W.-M., p. 397.
8 N. T. M. and T., p. 146.
9 Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 18.
10 Prol., p. 179.
11 Ib., p. 248.
imperatival use of the inf. was common in laws and maxims and recurs in the papyri.¹ So A. P. 86 (i/A.D.) ἐξεῖναι, μισθῶσαι. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 146) quotes Theo, Progynn., p. 128, 12, φέρε ζητεῖν, where the inf. is used as a deliberative subj. would be. He gives also the Hellenistic formula, εἰς δύναμιν ἔιναι τὴν ἐμὴν, Inscr. Pergam., 13, 31; 13, 34. Hatzidakis² notes that in the Pontic dialect this construction still exists. The epistolary inf. has the same origin as the imperatival inf. It is the absolute inf. This is common in the papyri. See Ac. 15:23; 23:26; Jas. 1:1, χαίρειν. The nom. is the nominative absolute al Cf. 2 Jo. 10, where χαίρειν is the object of λέγετε. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 146) notes how in the later language the ace. comes to be used with the absolute inf., as in C. Inscr. lat. V. 8733, δουκα ουτών = δοῦ ναι αὐτόν. It is just in this absolute inf. that we best see the gradual acquirement of verbal aspects by the inf. It is probably the oldest verbal use of the inf.³ The construction in Heb. 7:9, ως ἐπος εἰπεῖν, is but a step further on the way. There is but one example of this absolute inf. with ως in the N. T.⁴ Cf. τοῦ πολε-μήσαι in Rev. 12:7, where it is an independent parenthesis.

(1) Negatives. The ancient Greek used μη chiefly with the inf. except in indirect assertion where οὐ of the directs was retained. But we see οὐ with the inf. after verbs of saying as early as Homer, φῆς οὐχ ὑπομείναι, Iliad, XVII, 174. Thus οὐ won a place for itself with the inf., but many verbs retained μη as verbs of swearing, hoping, promising, etc. But special phrases could have οὐ anywhere and strong contrast or emphasis would justify οὐ.⁵ Votaw⁶ finds 354 instances in the Greek Bible where the inf. itself is modified by the negative. Of these 330 have μη and the rest have compounds of μη. The anarthrous inf. with he notes 59 times in the O. T., 32 in the Apocrypha and 47 in the N. T., 139 in all. The articular inf. with μη he finds in the O. T. 136 times (τοῦ 99, τό 37), in the Apocrypha 21 times (τοῦ 10, τό 11), in the N. T. 35 times (τοῦ 15, τό 20), 192 in all (τοῦ 124; τό 68). With the anarthrous inf. the negative more frequently occurs with the principal verb as in οὐ θέλω. We do have οὐ in infinitival clauses, as will be shown, but in general it is true to say that the inf. directly is always negatived by μη in the N. T. This is true of

¹ Ib., p. 179. ² Einl., p. 192. ³ Moulton Prol., p. 203.
⁴ For the variety of uses of the absolute inf. in ancient R. see Goodwin, M. and T., pp. 310 ff.
⁵ Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 414.
⁶ Inf. in Bibl. Gk., p. 58.
all sorts of uses of the inf. So the subject-inf. uses μη, as κρείτ-
tουν ἢν αὐτοῖς μὴ ἐπεγνωκέναι (2 Pet. 2:21), both the anarthrous
as above and the articular as in Lu. 17:1. The object-inf.
likewise has μη, as in Lu. 21:14, θέτε ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις ὡμῶν μη
προμελετᾶν. For the articular accusative with μη see Ro. 14:13.
We have it with indirect commands as in Mt. 5:34, λέγε ὡμῖν
μη ὡμόσαι, and in indirect assertion as in Ac. 23:8, λέγουσιν μη
ἐἶλαι ἀνάστασιν μήτε ἁγγέλου μήτε πνεύμα. We have it with τοῦ μη
as in Jas. 5:17, τοῦ μη βρέξαι, and with prepositions as in 2 Cor.
4:4, εἰς τοῦ μη αὐγάσαι. With verbs of hindering and denying the
negative μη is not necessary, but it was often used by the ancients
as a redundant negative repeating the negative notion of the
verb, just as double negatives carried on the force of the first
negative. It was not always used. When the verb itself was
negativized, then μη οὐ could follow.1 But we do not find this
idiom in the N. T. Examples of the N. T. idiom have already been
given in this chapter. The variety in the N. T. may be illus-
trated. See Lu. 23:2 κωλύουτα φόρους Καίσαρι διδόναι, (Ac. 4:17)
ἀπειλησώμεθα αὐτοῖς μηκετί λαλέιν, (Gal. 5:7) τίς χίλια ἐνέκοψεν ἀλη-
θεία μη πείθεσθαι, (Ro. 15:22) ἐνεκκοπτόμην τοῦ ἐλθέιν (Lu. 4:42)
κατέχουν αὐτῶν τοῦ μη πορεύεσθαι, (Mt. 19:14) μη κωλύετε αὐτὰ ἐλθέιν
πρός με, (1 Cor. 14:39) το λαλεῖν μη κωλύετε (Ac. 14:18) μόλις
κατέσασαν τοὺς ὄχλους τοῦ μη θύειν αὐτοῖς (Ac. 8:36) τί κωλύει με
βαπτισθῆναι, (10:47) μήτι το ὕδωρ δύνατι κωλύσας τις τοῦ μη βαπ-
tισθῆναι, (20:20) οὐδὲν ὑπεστειλάμην τοῦ μη ἀναγγείλατι. Rader-
macher (N. T. Gr., p. 149) illustrates "the Pauline το μη with the
infinitive" by Sophocles' Electra, 1078, το τε μη βλέπειν ἐτοίμα and
the inscr. (Heberdey-Wilhelm, Reisen in Kilikien, 170, 2), το μηδὲν'
ἄλλων--ἐπεισεμενεκέιν. We may note also Ac. 4:20, οὐ δυνάμεθα μη
λαλέιν, where the negative is not redundant. Cf. also Jo. 5:19,
οὐ δύναται ποιεῖν οὐδέν, where the second negative is redundant, but
it repeats the οὐ. Some MSS. have a redundant negative μη with
εἰδέναι in Lu. 22:34 (cf. 1 Jo. 2:22 after ὅτι) and with προστεθῆ-
Even in indirect discourse the same negative is repeated, as in
Ac. 26:26, λανθάνειν αὐτῶν τούτων οὐ πείθομαι οὐθέν. Here οὐθέν
strictly goes with λανθάνειν in spite of its position after πείθομαι,
but οὐ is construed with πείθομαι, and so οὐθέν, is used rather than
μηθέν or μηδέν. But in Mk. 7:24, οὐδένα ἤθελεν γνώσας, it is not
best to explain οὐδένα with the inf. in this fashion. This looks
like the retention of the old classic use of οὐ with the inf. which

1 See Thompson, Synt., pp. 425 ff.
the grammars are not willing to allow in the N. T. 1 Epictetus uses ὦ with the inf. as in IV, 10, 18, ὦ μικρὰ δὲ ἔξασθαι ὦ ὥδε μικρῶν ἀποτυχεῖν. As a matter of fact we have a number of other examples of ὦ with the inf., too many to rule out without ceremony. There is the case in Heb. 7:11, τίς εἶτι χρεία κατὰ τὴν τάξειν Μελχισεδὲκ ἔτερον ἀνίστασθαι καὶ ὦ κατὰ τὴν τάξειν λέγεσθαι; It is true that a comes just before κατὰ τὴν τάξειν but it is rather orced to deny it any connection with λέγεσθαι. Sec also Ro. 8:12, ὰφειλέται ὦ τῇ σάρκι τοῦ κατὰ σάρκα ζῆν, where, however, a occurs outside of τοῦ and is directly concerned with τῇ σάρκι. Other examples of sharp contrast by means of ὦ are found, as in Ac. 10:40 f., ἐστιν αὐτὸν ἐμφανῆ γενέσθαι, ὦ παυτὶ τῷ λαῷ ἄλλα μάρτυσι; Ro. 7:6, ὦστε δουλεύειν ἐν καινότητι πνεύματος καὶ ὦ παλαιότητι γράμματος; Heb. 13:9, ἐβεβαιώσθαι ὦ βρώμασιν (but here no contrast is expressed). In Ro. 4:12, 16, with εἰς τό, we find ὦ μόνον—ἀλλὰ καί.

(m) ὶν with the Infinitive. This classic idiom has vanished from the N. T. save in 2 Cor. 10:9, ὡς ἐκφοβεῖν. Even here it is not a clear case, since ἐκφοβεῖν depends on δόξῳ and ὡς ἔν to comes in as a parenthetical clause, 'as if' ('as it were'). The treatment of the infinitive has thus required a good many twists and turns due to its double nature.

III. The Participle (ἡ μετοχή).

1. THE VERBALS IN –τος AND –τέος. These verbals are not exactly participles inasmuch as they have no tense or voice. They are formed from verb-stems, not from tense-stems, and hence are properly called verbal adjectives.2 In the broadest sense, however, these verbals are participles, since they partake of both verb and adjective. Originally the infinitive had no tense nor voice, and the same thing was true of the participle. For convenience we have limited the term participle to the verbal adjectives with voice and tense. The verbal in –τος goes back to the original Indo-Germanic time and had a sort cf perfect passive idea.3 This form is like the Latin –tus. Cf. γνωτός, notus; ἀγνωτός, ignotus. But we must not overdo this point. Strictly this pro-ethnic –tos has no voice or tense and it never came to have intimate verbal connections in the Greek as it did in Latin and English.4 Thus amatus est and ἀγαπητός ἐστιν do not correspond, nor, in truth, does 'he is loved' square with either. "Even in Latin, a word like tacitus illustrates the absence of both tense

1 Cf. Blass, Cr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255.
2 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 262.
4 Moulton, Prol., p. 221.
and voice from the adjective in its primary use."1 Already in the Sanskrit voice and tense appear with some of the participles, but "the division-line between participial and ordinary adjectives is less strictly drawn in Sanskrit than in the other Indo-European languages."2 The ambiguity due to the absence of voice in the verbal in --τος was inherited from the original Indo-Germanic time.3 It becomes, therefore, a lexical, not a syntactical problem to decide in a given instance whether the verbal is "active" or "passive" in signification. In itself it is neither. A similar problem is raised in compound adjectives like θεο-μάχοι (Ac. 5:39), 'fighting God.' In modern Greek the verbal in --τος is rare and is little more than an adjective (Thumb, Handb., p. 151), though the new formation in --άτος has more verbal force. This ambiguity appears in Homer and all through the Greek language.4 Blass5 overstates it when he says that in the N. T. "the verbal adjective has practically disappeared, with the exception of forms like δυνατός, which have become stereotyped as adjectives." As a matter of fact the verbal in --τος is still common in the N. T. as in the κοινή in general. Take, for instance, ἀγαπητός, ἀγνωστός, ἀδύνατος, ἀκατάγνωστος, ἀναμάρτητος, ἀνεκτός, ἀόρατος, ἀπίστος, ἀπόβλητος, ἀρεστός, γεννητός, γραπτός, διδακτός, δυνατός, εὐλογητός, ζεστός, θαυμαστός, θυμήτος, θεόπνευςτος, ὀρατός, παθητός, παρείσακτος, πιστός, φθαρτός, χρηστός, etc. It is true6 that the tendency is rather to accent the adjectival aspect at the expense of the verbal idea of these words. But this also was true at the start, as we have just seen in the Sanskrit. The point to note is that the verbal does not denote voice. In Ac. 14:8; Ro. 15:1, ἀδύνατον is 'incapable,' whereas usually it is 'impossible,' as in Mt. 19:26 =Mk. 10:27, etc. In Ro. 8:3, therefore, it is doubtful whether τὸ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου is the 'impotency' or the 'impossibility' of the law.7 There is no notion of tense or of Aktionsart in these verbals in --τος and so ἀγαπητός does not distinguish8 between ἀγαπώμενος, ἀγαπηθείς and ἡγαπημένος. Moulton thus properly notes the fact that in Mt. 25:41 we have κατηραμένοι, 'having become the subjects of a curse,' not κατάρα-τοι, 'cursed.' It is interesting to note χαρὰ ἀνεκδαλητῷ καὶ δεδο-ξασμένῃ in 1 Pet. 1:8, but here ἀνεκδαλητός is active in sense,

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 221. 4 Stahl, Krit.-hist. Synt., p. 761.
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 221. 8 Ib.
‘inexpressible.’ The ambiguity comes also in our English participle 'borne' used for αἰρόμενον in Mk. 2:3, and the punctiliar ‘brought’ used for ἐνέχθεισαν in 2 Pet. 1:18. With these Moulton¹ contrasts ἔρμενον (‘taken away’) in Jo. 20:1. It is worth while to study a few more examples from the lexical point of view. In general² the passive sense is more common, as in ἀγαπητός (Mt. 3:17); εὐθείας (Lu. 9:62); διδακτός (Jo. 6:45); θεόπνευστος (2 Tim. 3:16); θεοδιδακτός (1 Th. 4:9); γραπτός and κρυπτός (Ro. 2:15 f.)³ Here (Ro. 2:15 f.) τὰ κρυπτὰ is used just like a substantive (neuter adjective in plural). But ζυγός (Rev. 3:15) is active in sense as ἀσύνετος (Ro. 1:31), though ἀσύνεθες next to it (paronomasia) is made from the middle συντιθημαί (‘covenant’).⁴ Συνετός, sometimes passive in sense in the old Greek, is always active in the N. T., as in Mt. 11:25, but θυμός (Ro. 6:12) is 'liable to death,' not 'dying,' as παθητός (Ac. 26:23) is ‘capable of suffering.’ Cf. the Latin adjectives in —bilis.

The verbal in –τέος is later than that in -τος and does not occur in Homer. It is probably a modification of the verbal -τος to express the idea of the predicate-infinitive, like ‘this is not to eat (to be eaten).’⁵ It is really a gerundive and is used in the personal or impersonal construction, more commonly the latter.⁶ The personal is always passive in sense, while the impersonal is active and may be formed from transitive or intransitive verbs.⁷ It expresses the idea of necessity. It will never as common as the verbal in —τος and is not unknown in the papyri,⁸ though not frequent. It is more like the verb (and participle) than the verbal in -τος in one respect, that it often uses the cases of the regular verb.⁹ This is seen in the one example n the N. T. (Lu. 5:38) ἀνένευν νέον εἰς ἀσκοῦς βλητέου. It is the impersonal construction, though the agent is not here expressed. This example of -τέον in Luke is a survival of the literary style (cf Viteau, "Essai sur la Syntaxe des Voix," Revue de Philologie, p. 38). See Theo, Progymn., p. 128, 12, εἰ γαμητέου.

¹ Ib., p. 222. ² Riem. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 707. ³ In Sans. the verbal adjts. in -ta are sometimes called passive participles (Whitney, Sans. Gr., p. 340). This form does not belong to the tense system. ⁴ Moulton, Prol., p. 222. ⁵ Brug., Griech. Gr., pp. 184, 525. ⁶ Riein. and Goelzer, Synt., p. 707. ⁷ Goodwin, M. and T., p. 368 f. ⁸ Moulton, Prol., p. 222. ⁹ But even with -τος this sometimes appears as in διδακτοὶ θεοῦ (Jo. 6:45) where we have the ablative. Cf. Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 5221
2. HISTORY OF THE PARTICIPLE.

(a) The Sanskrit Participle. This was more advanced in its development than the Sanskrit infinitive, which had no voice or tense. In the Veda the aorist present, perfect and future tenses have participles. The distinction in the structure of the participle as compared with the other verbal adjectives lies just in this point. The mere verbal is formed on the verb-stem, while the participle is formed on the tense-stem. In the Sanskrit also both voices (active and middle) show these participles. Thus already in the original Indo-Germanic tongue it appears probable that the participle existed with voice, tense, Aktionsart and government of cases. The Greek participle is thus rooted in this pro-ethnic participle as seen by the very suffixes –nt–, –meno–, –wos– (–us).4

(b) Homer's Time. Already in Homer and Hesiod the participle occurs as a fully developed part of speech. It occurs on an average of 8 1/6 times per page of 30 lines. In Hesiod the participle is chiefly attributive, while the predicate participle is less common than in Homer. This use of the participle as the practical equivalent of the hypotactic clause is a purely Greek development (copied by the Latin to some extent) within historical times. The participle is a literary device, and flourished best with writers of culture who were φιλομέτοχοι. Broadus used to call the Greek "a participle-loving language," and, taken as a whole, this is true. Certainly the participle had its most perfect development in the Greek. The aorist participle died in the Sanskrit and did not appear in the Latin. It is the aorist active participle which made the participle so powerful in Greek. The English, like the Sanskrit and the Greek, is rich in participles, though the German is comparatively poor. "We gain a certain grandeur and terseness by the construction, a certain sweep, a certain περιβολή, such as Hermogenes recognises as lying in the participle." This wealth of participles gives flexibility and swing to the language.

(c) The Attic Period. In Herodotus the participle jumps to

---

4 Brug., Indoger. Forsch., V, pp. 80 ff.; Giles, Man., p. 473; Moulton, Prol., p. 221.
7 Ib.
8 Jann., Hist. Gk. Or., p. 505.
VERBAL NOUNS (ὍΝΟΜΑΤΑ ΤΟΥ ΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ) 1099

17 1/2 times per page of 30 lines.¹ But Sophocles has it only 9 times on the same scale. Williams² runs the parallel on with 13 for Thucydides, 125 for Xenophon, 10 1/6 for Platt, 10 3/4 for Demosthenes. It is thus in the historians and orator and not the poets, that we see the participle in its glory.

(d) The Κοινή. Here we note a sharp difference in the several styles of writing. The Atticists like Josephus with 20, and 2 Maccabees with 23 1/2, lead in conscious imitation of the ancients. They go beyond them in fact. But the writers of the literary Κοινή follow close behind, as Polybius with 17 4/5, Strabo with 13 1/2 and Plutarch with 14. Certainly there is no sign of decay here. But in the LXX, Exodus, Deuteronomy and Judges give only 6 1/6 while³ the papyri show 6 4/5. This confirms the judgment that the vernacular was not fond of the participle and found it clumsy. Jannaris⁴ quotes striking passages from Thucydides, Plato and Demosthenes which illustrate well the clumsiness and ambiguity of the participle in long, involved sentences. Even in the older Greek in unconventional or unscholarly composition the accumulation of participles is shunned. The clearer and easier analysis of co-ordinate or subordinate clauses was used instead.⁵ In the N. T. we see the participle used on the whole more frequently than in the LXX and the papyri. The Hebrew had a certain restraining influence on the participle in the LXX. In the vernacular papyri the participle was held back on the principle just stated above. It is Luke who make most frequent use of the participle with 161 in the Gospel and 17 1/6 in the Acts per page of 30 lines.⁶ But 1 Peter follows close behind with 15 2/3 and Hebrews with 14. In the other Gospels Matthew has it 12 1/2, Mark 11 2/3 and John 10 2/5.⁷ James has it 10 per page, while in the Epistles and Revelation it drops back to 8 and 9. On the whole it is much as one would expect. The more literary books lead (after Paul with only 9 per page average in Gal., 1 Cor., and Rom.).⁸ The historical books surpass the Epistles, while Hebrews here reveals its hortatory, sermonic character. For a succession of participles see Ac. 12:25; 23:27; Heb. 1:3 f.; Mk. 5:15. The details of the N. T. situation will come later.

(e) Modern Greek. The participle more and more came to be

---

¹ Williams, The Part. in Acts, p. 7.
² Ib., p. 10.
³ Ib.
⁴ Hist. Gk. Cr., p. 504.
⁵ Ib., p. 505.
⁶ Williams, Part. in Acts, p. 23.
⁷ Ib.
⁸ Ib., p. 22. Williams did not count 2 Cor. and the other Pauline Epistles.
scholastic and dropped out of the vernacular.\(^1\) In particular was this true of the circumstantial participle. The classic Greek by means of the participle developed the periodic style (\(\lambda \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \kappa \alpha \tau e \sigma \tau r a \mu m e n \eta \)) and is seen at its highest in Isocrates. See, for example, the "Ciceronian period" in Isocrates, p. 82. Jebb\(^2\) contrasts this with \(\lambda \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \varepsilon \iota \rho o m e n \eta \), simply tacking clause to clause as in Mt. 7:25, 27 and colloquial repetition of finite verbs as in Jo. 1 47; 7:4. But \(\beta \lambda \varepsilon \pi e t e, \beta \lambda \varepsilon \pi e t e, \beta \lambda \varepsilon \pi e t e\) (Ph. 3:2) has rhetorical effect. In the vernacular modern Greek, therefore, we see a retreat of the participle all along the line. It is not dead as the infinitive, but is dying, though some vernacular writers are bringing back the use of the participle for literary purposes (Thumb, Handb., p. 168). The analytic tendency of modern language is against it. See Jebb's remarks for the various devices used instead of the participle. The only participles left in modern Greek are the indeclinable present active in —\(\omega n t a \) (cf. gerund in Latin), some middle (or passive) parts. in —\(\omega m e n o s\) or —\(\hat{a} m e n o s\) and perfect passives like \(\delta e m e n o s\) (no reduplication).\(^3\) A few are made from aorist stems like \(\hat{i}d o m e n o s\) (Thumb, Handb., p. 150). The use of the part. in the modern Greek is very limited indeed.

3. SIGNIFICANCE OF THE PARTICIPLE.

(a) Originally an Adjective. The infinitive was originally a substantive, as we have seen. In the Sanskrit it did not acquire voice and tense, though it had the verbal idea of action. The participle, as we have seen, had made more progress in the Sanskrit, but it was also originally an adjective. It never got away from this original adjectival idea.\(^4\) But we are not left to history and logic to prove this point. It so happens that some participles in form never became participles in fact. They are merely adjectives. Homer shows a number of such words.\(^5\) Cf. \(\hat{a} \sigma -m e n o s\).

We see remnants of this usage in the N. T. like \(\acute{e}k \omega \nu\) (Ro. 8:20), \(\acute{a}k \omega \nu\) (1 Cor. 9:17). Other participles come in certain uses to be only substantives (adjectives, then substantives), though the true participial use occurs also. Cf. \(\acute{a} \rho \chi \omega \nu\), 'a ruler' (Mt. 20: 5); \(\acute{e} \gamma o \mu e n o s\), 'a governor' (Ac. 7:10); \(\tau \alpha \ \dot{u} \mu e \rho \chi o n t a \ \dot{u} \mu \omega \nu\), 'your belongings' (Lu. 12:33). In general "the adjective represents a quality at rest, the participle represents a quality in motion."\(^6\) But

---

not all verbs express motion. The mere adjectival notion is more common in the Latin, as in *praeteritus, quiétus, tacitus*, etc. In Mt. 17:17, *γενεά ἀπιστος καὶ διεστραμμένη*, the verbal adjective and participle occur together.

(b) *The Addition of the Verbal Functions.* These functions are tense, voice and case-government. There was originally no notion of time in the tense, nor does the tense in the participle ever express time absolutely. It only gives relative time by suggestion or by the use of temporal adverbs or conjunctions. The verbal idea in the participle thus expands the adjectival notion of the word. But the addition of these verbal functions does not make the participle a real verb, since, like the infinitive, it does not have subject.

(c) *The Double Aspect of the Participle.* The (very name participle (*pars, capio*) indicates this fact. The word is part adjective, part verb. Voss calls it *mules*, which is part horse and part ass. Dionysius Thrax says: *Μετοχὴ ἔστι λέξις μετέχουσα τής τῶν ῥημάτων καὶ τῆς τῶν ὄνομάτων ἰδιότητος*. In the true participle, therefore, we are to look for both the adjectival and the verbal aspects, as in the infinitive we have the substantival and the verbal. The emphasis will vary in certain instances. Now the adjectival will be more to the fore as in the attributive articular participle like ὁ καλῶν. Now the verbal side is stressed as in the circumstantial participle. But the adjectival notion never quite disappears in the one as the verbal always remains in the other (barring a few cases noted above). One must, therefore, explain in each instance both the adjectival and verbal functions of the participle else he has set forth only one side of the subject. It is true that the verbal functions are usually more complicated and interesting, but the adjectival must not be neglected.

(d) *Relation between Participle and Infinitive.* As already explained, they are closely allied in use, though different in origin. Both are verbal nouns; both are infinitival; both are participial. But the participle so-called is inflected always, while the infinitive so-called has lost its proper inflection. The infinitive, besides, expresses the action in relation to the verb, while the participle expresses the action in relation to the subject or the object of the

---

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 522.  
2 Ib.  
3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 53.  
5 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 522.  
6 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 163.  
7 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 242. In general, on this Point, see Goodwin, M. and T., p. 357.
1102 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

verb (or some other substantive or pronoun). The distinction between the participle and the infinitive thus becomes quite important. Thus in Lu. 16:3, ἐπαιτεῖν αἰσχύνομαι, the idea is ‘I am ashamed to beg and do not do it,’ while ἐπαιτῶν αἰσχύνομαι would be ‘I beg and am ashamed of it.’

Thus in Lu. 16:3, ἐπαιτεῖν αἰσχύνομαι, the idea is ‘I am ashamed to beg and do not do it,’ while ἐπαιτῶν αἰσχύνομαι would be ‘I beg and am ashamed of it.’

Cf. the analytic expression in 2 Tim. 1:12. In Xenophon, Mem., 2, 6, 39, we have αἰσχύνομαι λέγων. So ἄρχομαι in Attic Greek took the infinitive as a rule, linking the infinitive with the verb. But sometimes the participle occurred, linking the action to the subject (or object) and so contrasting the beginning with the end. In the N. T. all the examples have the present infinitive except Lu. 13:25 ἐστάναι. In Lu. 3:23, ἄρχομενος ὥσεὶ ἐτῶν τριάκοντα, we have neither with ἄρχομενος. Cf. Lu. 14:30, ἱράτῳ οἴκοδομεῖν. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 169) compares ἀρξόμενος ἐξετάζετο (Ac. 11:4) with ἄρξαμενη—κατέχομαι (Xen. of Eph., p. 388, 31). On the other hand, in the N. T. παύομαι occurs only with the participle, as in Lu. 5:4, ἐπαύσατο λαλῶν. Cf. Ac. 5:42; 6:13; Eph. 1:16; Col. 1:9; Heb. 10:2. But in Ac. 14:18 note κατέπαυσαν τοῦ μή θέειν, which well illustrates the difference between the inf. and the part. The use of ἔτελεσεν διατάσσομεν (Mt. 11:1) Blass calls unclassical. The part. alone occurs with ἐνυκακέω (Gal. 6:9; 2 Th. 3:13). Note also ἐπέμενον ἔρωτώντες (spurious passage in Jo. 8:7), but ἄστιοι διατελέσατε (Ac. 27:33) without ὄντες. Cf. Ac. 12:16, ἐπέμενεν κρούων, and Lu. 7:45, οὐ διέλιπεν καταφιλοῦσα. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 169) finds the part. with ἐπιμένων in "vulgar literature." He observes that many of these neater classical idioms with the part. do not appear in the N. T. Contrast with this the inf. in Ac. 20:20, 27, οὐ γὰρ ὑπεστειλάμην τοῦ μὴ ἀναγγέλαι. There is no example of the inf. with φαινομαι in the N. T., but the part. occurs in Mt. 6:16, 18 (ὑπαρχῶν).

The adjective alone is seen in Mt. 23:27, 28. Cf. also Ro. 7:13. It is hardly on a par with the participle in Mt. 6:17 in spite of Blass’s insistence. Thoroughly classical also are προεφθασεν αὐτοῦ λέγων (Mt. 17:25) and ἔλαθον ξενίσαντες (Heb. 13:2), specimens of literary style. The infinitive with προφθάνω occurs in Clem., Cor., II, 8, 2. The part. with τυγχάνω does not occur in the N. T. In the later κοινῆ the inf. takes the place of the participle with λαυθάνω, παύομαι and φθάνω (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 169). The part. is found with ὑπάρχω

1 Cf. Schoemann, Die Lehre von den Redet. nach den Alten, 1862, p. 34.
2 Robertson, Short Gr., p. 194.
3 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 245.
4 Ib.
5 Ib.
(Ac. 8:16) and προὐπάρχω (Lu. 23:12). It is doubtful if the participle belongs to the verb in 1 Tim. 5:13, ἀργαὶ μαυθάνουσιν περιερχόμεναι, but, if so, it is not to be understood as like the inf. In Ph. 4:11; 1 Tim. 5:4, the inf. occurs with μαυθάνω according to classic idiom. At any rate, if περιερχόμεναι (1 Tim. 5:13) is a circumstantial part., something has to be supplied with ἀργαί. The part. in 1 Tim. 1:12, πιστῶν μὲ ἡγῆσατο θέμενος, is certainly circumstantial. The distinction between the inf. and the part. comes out sharply in indirect discourse also. The inf. is more objective. Thus note ἤκουσαν τούτο αὐτῶν πεποιηκέναι τὸ σημεῖον (Jo. 12:18) and ἀκούομεν γὰρ τινὰς περιπατούντας (2 Th. 3:11). The participle is a descriptive adjective even though in indirect discourse (cf. Lu. 4:23; Ac. 7:12). See 1 Cor. 11:18 for the inf. again. In Mt. 7:11, οἶδατε δόματα ἄγαθα διδόναι, the inf. with οἶδα means 'know how to give.' But in Lu. 4:41, ἤδεισαν τὸν Χριστὸν αὐτῶν ἔλναι, it is mere indirect discourse. For lithe part. see 2 Cor. 12:2, οἶδα—ἀρπαγέντα τὸν τοιοῦτον (cf. Mk. 6:20). In Ac. 3:9 note ἐδείκνυς αὐτῶν περιπατοῦντα. Here we have the same root, though a different sense. οἶδα is common with ὅτι. But γινώσκω occurs both with the inf. as in Heb. 10:34, γινώσκοντες ἔχειν ἐαυτοῦς κρείσσονα ὑπάρξῃ, and the participle as in Heb. 13:23, γινώσκετε τὸν ἀδελφὸν ἡμῶν Τιμόθεου ἀπολελυμένου. Cf. Lu. 8:46, ἐγὼ ἐγνωσων δύναμιν ἐξεληλυθόνα, where the tense and participle both accent the vivid reality of the experience. But note the inf. in Mt. 16:13. The same thing is true of ὁμολογεῖ as in Tit. 1:16, θεὸν ὁμολογοῦσιν εἰδέναι, and 1 Jo. 4:2, ὁ ὁμολογεῖ Ἰησοῦν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα (cf. 2 Jo. 7). Cf. also Ac. 24: 10 ὅτα σε κριτήν ἐπιστάμενος and δοκιμάζω in 1 Th. 2:4 and 2 Cor. 8:22. Note difference between ἵνα εὑρὼσιν κατηγορεῖν αὐτοῦ (Lu. 6:7) and εὑρίσκει αὐτοῦς καθεὑδοῦντας (Mk. 14:37). Cf. Indirect Discourse. Further examples of the supplementary participle come later. These sufficiently illustrate the difference between the use of inf. and part.

(e) Method of Treating the Participle. The hybrid character of the participle has led to a great deal of diversity in its treatment in the grammars. Prof. Williams gives an interesting summary in his monograph. None of them are satisfactory because they do not follow a consistent plan. Part of the, divisions are from the adjectival, part from the verbal point of view. They are not parallel. Thus we have Kuhner's complementary, attributive, adverbial participles; Goodwin's attributive, circumstantial, supplementary; Burton's adjectival, adverbial, substantival;
Jannaris' adjectival and adverbial; Blass' attributive and in additional clause; Hadley and Allen's attributive and predicate; Delbruck-Brugmann's external, objective, adverbial. Then Williams adds another that no better, ascriptive, adverbial, complementary. Thompson gives the attributive and the supplementary participle after saying that the nominal and the verbal classification is more elastic. The only way to get symmetry in the treatment of the participle is to follow the line of its double nature (adjectival and verbal) and discuss the adjectival functions and the verbal functions separately. See the discussion of the infinitive. That is to say, each participle must be considered as both adjectival and verbal. Not all the adjectival aspects will be true of any one participle nor all of the verbal, but each one will have some adjectival and some verbal functions. Thus alone can one get a clear statement of the many participial combinations and permutations. As an Adjective the participle is attributive (anarthrous or articular) or predicate. It may even be substantival, especially with ὁ. It is always declinable. As a verb there is always voice and tense and there may be cases. But any given anarthrous predicate participle may be either supplementary (complementary) or circumstantial (additional) or wholly independent (as indicative or imperative). The articular participle is ruled out of this three-fold alternative, though it still has voice, tense and governs cases. The articular participle is always attributive (or substantival). The lines thus cross and recross in the nature of the case. But a clear statement of all the essential facts can be made by taking the adjectival and the verbal aspects separately. In any given instance there is thus a double problem. Both sides of the given participle must be noted.

4. ADJECTIVAL ASPECTS OF THE PARTICIPLE.

(a) Declension. The free declension of the participle in number and gender and case (cf. per contra the infinitive) makes the task of noting the adjectival aspects comparatively simple. There are anomalies of agreement in these three points as with other adjectives. Thus in Rev. 3:12 ἡ καταβαίνουσα in apposition with τῆς καίνης Ἱερ. does not conform in case. There is a difficulty of both case and gender in πεπωμένης in Rev. 1:15. See also πλήθος κράζοντες (Ac. 21:36) where the number and gender both vary. In Mk. 4:31 note ὅς ὦν πάντων τῶν σπέρματος where ὦν takes the gender of σπέρμα. Cf also ἦν καθήμεναι (Mt. 27:61).

1 The Part. in Acts, p. 5.
2 Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 249.
But these matters are discussed adequately in chapter on The Sentence.

(b) **Attributive Participle.**

(a) **Anarthrous.** The article is not of course necessary with the attributive participle any more than with any other attributive adjective. Thus we have ὦδωρ ζῶν (Jo. 4:10), 'living water,' which is just as really attributive as τὸ ὦδωρ τὸ ζῶν (Jo. 4:11). When the article is used there is no doubt abort the participle being attributive. When it is absent, it is an open question to be examined in the light of the context. Note also 1 Cor. 13:1, χαλκός ἥχων ἡ κύμβαλον ἀλαλάξων. This construction (the anarthrous attributive) is not so common as the other uses of the participle, and yet it is not wholly absent from the N. T. See ἤχος ὅπερ φερομένης πυνής βιαίας (Ac. 2:2) and θύρα ἤνεωμένη (Rev. 4:1). It is not always easy to draw the line between the anarthrous attributive participle and the predicate participle of additional statement. Cf. ἀνήρ γεγεννημένος ἐν Ταρσῷ ἀνατεθραμμένος δὲ ἐν τῷ πόλει ταύτη (Ac. 22:3). If ὥ occurred before these participles, we should have the articular-attributive participle which is equivalent to a relative. So in Ac. 10:18, we have ὁ ἐπικαλούμενος Πέτρος, but in 10:32, ὁς ἐπικαλεῖται Πέτρος. Cf. Lu. 6:48, ὁμοίως ἔστιν ἀνθρώπων οἶκοδομοῦντι οἰκίαν, with Mt. 7:24, ἀνδρὶ οὐσίας ὑκοδόμησεν αὐτῷ τὴν οἰκίαν. See also Lu. 6:49. Cf. Ro. 8:24, ἔλπις βλεπομένη οὐκ ἔστιν ἔλπις. Cf. Mt. 27:33. The problem is particularly real in Mk. 5:25, 27. W. H. indicate by the comma after ἐλθοῦσα that they regard the participles with γινοῦ (οὗσα, παθοῦσα, δαπανήσασα, ὑψεληθείσα, ἑλθοῦσα) up to that point as attributive. They describe the woman who comes. Then the sentence proceeds with the predicate-circumstantial participles (ἀκούσασα ἑλθοῦσα) before ἢψατο. Luke (8:43) makes the matter plainer by putting a relative clause after the first participle. The anarthrous attributive participle is closely bound to the substantive or pronoun even when it is an additional statement. See Mt. 12:25, πᾶσα βασιλεία μερισθεῖσα καθ’ ἑαυτῆς ἐρημοῦται. See also Lu. 6:0; 2 Th. 2:4; Rev. 2:15. In Mt. 13:19, παντὸς ἀκούντος, we probably have the genitive absolute and so predicate circumstantial, but even here αὐτοῦ occurs, though remote. Cf. πᾶς ὁ ἀκούων (Mt. 7:26) and πᾶς ὅστις ἄκουει (7:24), where we see how nearly these constructions approach each other. But the anar-

---

The anarthrous indefinite participle is clearly found in Jas. 4:17, εἰδότι οὐν καλὸν ποιεῖν καὶ μὴ ποιοῦντι, ἀμαρτίᾳ αὐτῶ ἔστιν. This passage may throw some light on Mt. 12:25. In Mt. 13:35, διὰ τοῦ προφήτου λέγοντος, we probably have the articular attributive participle, since the Greeks did not always place the attributive participle between the article and the substantive.\(^1\) The use of ἐξων is interesting in Rev.15:1, εἰδοῦν ἄγγέλους ἐπτά ἔχοντας πληγάς. The anarthrous indefinite participle is seen also in a few constructions like προσετίθητον πιστεύοντες τῷ κυρίῳ (Ac. 5:14), where the participle means ‘believing men’ and has πληθῆ in apposition with it. See also φωνῇ βοῶντος (Mk. 1:3, LXX), ἐξελεύσεται ἡγούμενος (Mt. 2:6, LXX), οὗκ ἔστιν συνίσων and οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκςητῶν (Ro. 3:11, LXX) where ὁ is more common, ἕχεις ἐκεῖ κρατοῦντάς (Rev. 2:14). It is worth noting in this connection also the fact that occasionally a preposition occurs with an anarthrous participle (cf. infinitive). So χωρίς κηρύσσοντος (Ro. 10:14). Here the idea is not ‘without preaching,’ but ‘without one preaching,’ ‘without a preacher.’ For ‘without preaching’ we must have χωρίς τοῦ κηρύσσειν. See once (more χαίρειν μετὰ χαίροντων, κλαίειν μετὰ κλαιόντων (12:15) and ἐπὶ ποιοῦντας (1 Pet. 3:12). In 1 Cor. 15:27, ἐκτὸς τοῦ ὑπόπαξαντός, we have the usual articular construction.

(β) Articular. The articular participle occurs a few times in Homer.\(^2\) In general the Book of Acts has the articular participle about the same proportion as the great Attic writers.\(^3\) All articular participles are, of course, attributive. But the matter has some points of interest and cannot be dismissed with this general statement. The examples are very numerous. The substantives may be expressed as in τὴν ἡτοιμασμένην ὑμῖν βασιλείαν (Mt. 25:34); οἱ γραμματεῖς οἱ ἄπο Ιεροσολύμων καταβάντες (Mk. 3:22). Like other articular adjectives, the participle may come between the article and the substantive, as in τῇ ὑγιαινοῦσῃ δίδασκαλίᾳ (1 Tim. 1:10); τοῦ φαινομένου ἀστέρος (Mt. 2:7); τῆς προκειμένης αὐτῶ χαρᾶς (Heb. 12:2). Cf. Jude 3. The substantive may precede and the article may be repeated, as τὸ ὑδρό τὸ ζῶν (Jo. 4:11); τὸ σῶμα τὸ γεννησόμενον (1 Cor. 15:37); τῷ θεῷ τῷ διδόντι (1 Cor. 15:67). Cf. Mt. 26:28; 27:44; Jam. 5:1; Ro. 2:10. In Mk. 12:38 the article is repeated as in 1:40 (apposition) when the nominative reminds us of the common anacoluthon in Revelation.

---


\(^2\) Vogrinz, Gr. des hom. Dialektes, 1889, p. 184.

\(^3\) Williams, The Part. in the Book of Acts, p. 46.
With proper names note Ἰησοῦς ὁ λεγόμενος Χριστός (Mt. 1:16); ὁ ἐπικαλούμενος Πέτρος (Ac. 10:18). Cf. 1 Th. 1:10; 2 Tim. 1:8 f. For a long passage see ὁ — διδάσκων (Ac. 21:28). The order of the words is not insisted on and in long passages the participle may follow without the repetition of the article, as in Mt. 6:30, τὸν χῶρον τοῦ ἀγροῦ σήμερον ὄντα καὶ αὐριον εἰς κλῆσαν βαλλόμενον. See also Ac. 12:10; 13:32; 26:4, 6; Heb. 2:2; Heb. 12:3, where in the long clause the participle with τοιαῦτα, comes in between τὸν and ὑπομεμενηκότα and a good distance from ἀντιλογίαν. Sometimes the article is, used with the participles but not with the substantive, as in παίδιος τοῖς ἐν ἁγορᾷ καθημένοις (Lu. 7:32); χρυσίον τοῦ ἀπολυμένου (1 Pet. 1:7); ὄνομα τὸ δεδομένον (Ac. 4:12); πολὺς ἁριθμὸς ὁ πιστεύσας (Ac. 11:21); πολλοὶ πλάνοι οἱ μὴ ὁμολογούντες (2 Jo. 7); ἰσχυροὶ οἱ ἀρνοῦμενοι, (Jude 4, where note the series of participles and one adjective ἀσεβείας parallel with the participles). Cf. also 1 Cor. 2:7. The articular participle also occurs with pronouns, as in σὺ ὁ ἐρχόμενος (Mt. 11:3); τινὰς τοὺς πεπαιθότας (Lu. 18:9); τις ὁ συλαγωγῶν (Col. 2:8); αὐτοῖς τοῖς πιστεύουσιν (Jo. 1:12); σὺ ὁ κρίνων (Jas. 4:12); τινές οἱ ταράσσοντες (Gal. 1:7); πολλοὶ οἱ φρονοῦντες (Ph. 3:18. f.). Particularly in address do we find the articular participle, as in Mt. 7:23; 27:40; Lu. 6:25 (but note dative in 6:24); Ac. 2:14; 13:16. The use of the articular participle with πᾶς is common, as πᾶς ὁ ἁργιζόμενος (Mt. 5:22); πᾶς ὁ ἀκούων (Mt. 7:26), πᾶς ὁ λέγων (7:21). This is equal to the relative clause πᾶς ὁστις (Mt. 7:24). In Ro. 2:1 πᾶς ὁ κρίνων is used with ἰσχύρωσε. Cf. πάντες οἱ ἀκούοντες in Ac. 9:21. Here also ὁ πορθήσας is continued by καὶ ἐληλύθει as if it were a relative clause. The articular participle sometimes occurs where it is followed by an infinitive. Here it is still further complicated, but it is clear. See τὴν μέλλουσαν δάξαν ἀποκαλυφθῆναι (Ro. 8:18); τὰ δοκοῦντα μέλη—ὑπάρχειν (1 Cor. 12:22). Cf. also 2 Pet. 3:2. The use of ὁ ὁμ. in Acts calls for special remark. In Ac. 13:1, κατὰ τὴν οὖσαν ἐκκλησίαν, we see this idiom, which Moulton translates ‘the local church.’ Note 14:13 D, τοῦ ὄντος Διὸς Προπόλεως (or πρὸ πόλεως). Cf. Ramsay's remark (Ch. in Rom. Emp., p. 52, quoting J. A. Robinson), that in Acts ὁ ὁμ., "introduces some technical phrase, or some term which it marks out as having a technical sense (cf. 5:17; 13:1 28:17), and is almost equivalent to τοῦ ὑομαζουμένου." An ingenious person might apply this in Eph. 1:1 to the text with ἐν Ἐφεσσω absent; but the usual view needs no defence against such an alternative.

2 Prol., p. 228.
With αἱ οὗσαι in Ro. 13:1 we may compare Par. P. 5 (ii/B.C.), ἔφε ἰερέων καὶ Ἰερεῦν τῶν ὄντων καὶ οὗσων. So N. P. 49 (iii/A.D.), τοῦ ὄντος μηνὸς ‘the current month.’ The passage in Ac. 5:17 reads ἡ οὕσα αἰρεσίς, and 28:17 has τοὺς ὄντας τῶν Ἰουδαίων πρῶτος.

Moulton agrees, we may note, with Sanday and Headlam (in loco) in taking ὁ ὃν επὶ πάντων (Ro. 9:5) as referring to Jesus. As is well known, the difficulty here is a matter of exegesis and the punctuation of the editor will be made according to his theology. But it may be said in brief that the natural way to take ὁ ὃν and θεός is in apposition to ὁ Χριστός. It is a very common thing in the N. T., as already noted, to have ὁ and the participle where a relative clause is possible. But this idiom is common in the older Greek. See Ac. 10:18, 32, and chapter on Article. It remains then to speak of the frequent use of the articular participle without a substantive or pronoun. This idiom is too common for exhaustive treatment, but some examples are given. Cf. Mt. 10:40, ὁ δεχόμενος ὑμᾶς ἐμὲ δέχεται, καὶ ὃ ἐμὲ δεχόμενος δέχεται τὸν ἀποστειλαντά με. Note also ὁ δεχόμενος and the next verse and ὅς ἀν ποτίσῃ in verse 42. See further Mt. 10:37; Ac. 10:35; Rev. 1:3. The question of the tense is interesting in some of these examples, as in ὁ εὐρῶν τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ἀπολέσει αὐτὴν in Mt. 10:39, but that will be discussed a bit later. Like a relative clause, the articular participle may suggest1 the notion of cause, condition, purpose, etc., as in Mt. 10:37, 39, 40, 41; Lu. 14:11; Ro. 3:5. But this notion is very indefinite.

(c) **Predicate Participle.** From the adjectival standpoint all participles that are not attributive are predicate. This aspect of the participle must be elucidated further. The verbal aspect comes into special prominence with all the predicate participles. They will be touched very lightly here and receive full discussion under Verbal Aspects. It may be said at once that all the supplementary and circumstantial participles are predicate. One must not confuse the articular participle in the predicate like σὺ ἐὰν ἔρχομενος (Lu. 7:19) with the real predicate participle. Cf. Lu. 16:15; 22:28.2 The predicate participle is simply the adjective in the predicate position. That is, it is not attributive. There are obviously many varieties of the predicate participle. But the predicate adjective has had adequate treatment. Cf. ἔχε με παρητημένον (Lu. 14:18). Cf. also Heb. 5:14; Ac. 9:21.

(d) **The Participle as a Substantive.** The adjective, though a variation from the substantive, is sometimes used as a substantive

---

1 Burton, N. T. M. and T., p. 167.  
2 Ib., p. 169.
as in τὸ ἀγαθόν. It is not strange, therefore, that the participle also shows substantival uses. These are sometimes anarthrous, as in ἀρχων, (Mt. 9:18), ἡγούμενος (Mt. 2:6). But, as a rule, the participle as a substantive is articular. Cf. Lu. 12:33, τὰ ὑπάρχοντα ὑμῶν, where the genitive shows the substantival character of this participle. Cf. further 2:27 τὸ έἰθισμένον τοῦ νόμου, (1 Cor. 7:35) πρὸς τὸ ὑμῶν αὐτῶν συμφέρον, (Ph. 3:8) διὰ τὸ ὑπερέχον τῆς γνώσεως, (Mt. 14:20) τὸ περισσεῦν τῶν κλασμάτων (Ro. 7:23) τῷ ὄντι (Heb. 12:11) πρὸς τὸ παρόν, etc. There are also the many examples where ὁ and the part. is used without a subst. or pron., as in Mt. 10:39, ὁ εὐρών and ὁ ἀπολέσας (cf. ὁ ἀγαθός, ὁ κακός). The substantive use of the participle is a classic idiom.1

The use of the neuter participle as an abstract substantive is not so common in the N. T. as in the ancient Greek.2 But see further τὸ γεγονός (Lu. 8:56), τὰ γινόμενα (9:7), τὸ ἀπολλων (19:10), τὰ ἐρχόμενα (Jo. 16:13), τὸ ὑψὸν ἔχον (Ac. 24:25), τὰ μὴ ὄντα, τὰ ὄντα (1 Cor. 1:28), τὸ αὐλομενον (14:7), τὸ δεδοξασμένον (2 Cor. 3:10 f.), τὸ δοκοῦν (Heb. 12:10), etc. In Lu. 22:49 note τὸ έσόμενον. One is not to confuse with this idiom the so-called "substantive participle" of some grammars, which is a term used for the substantivizing of the verbal force of the participle, not the adjectival.

Thus Burton3 calls the supplementary participle like that in Ac. 5:42, οὐκ ἐπαύοντο διδάσκοντες, and in Lu. 8:46, ἔγνων δύναμιν ἐξελημοθεύτων αὐτῷ ἀπ’ ἐμοῦ, the "substantive participle." I confess that I see nothing to be gained by applying "substantive" to the purely verbal aspects of the participle. Confusion of thought is the inevitable result. See 5, (d), (δ).

1109

(e) The Participle as an Adverb. The formation of adverbs from participles is due to its adjectival function. Cf. ὄντως (Mk. 11:32), ὁμολογούμενως (1 Tim. 3:16), ὑπερβαλλόντως (2 Cor. 11:23). Besides, the participle itself (cf. neuter adjective πολύ, etc.) sometimes has an adverbial force. In particular note τυχόν (1 Cor. 16:6). See also ἐπιβαλλόντως έκλαιεν (Mk. 14:72). This obscure participle expresses coincident action (cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 131). Cf. ηθαν σπεύσαντες (Lu. 2:16), σπεύσας κατάβηθι and σπεύσας κατέβη (19:5 f.). We cannot always draw a distinction between this use and the circumstantial participle of manner. The verbal and the adjectival standpoints come together. A number of the grammars apply the term "adverbial" to all the circumstantial participles.4 But it is more than doubtful if

---

2. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 244.
one gains as much as he loses thereby. It is true that logically a sort of adverbial relation may be worked out, an adverbial
addition to the sentence. But it does not help much from the syntactical point of view to insist on this fact in the exposition
of the circumstantial participle. As to form the circumstantial participle is still adjectival. The adverbial notion is inferential and purely logical. There is something, however, to be said for the adverbial aspect of the redundant participle in βλέποντες βλέπετε (Mt. 13:14, LXX), which is on a pair with ἄκονθα ἄκοινστετε. are attempts to translate the Hebrew inf. absolute. Moulton has found the idiom in AESchyluls and Herodotus, but the N. T. usage is clearly due to the LXX, where it is very common. Cf. also ἰδὼν εἶδον (Ac. 7:34), εὐλογῶν εὐλογήσω (Heb. 6:14), from the LXX again. Blass (Gr. of the N. T. Grk., p. 251) calls this construction "thoroughly un-Greek." There are other pleonastic participles like the common ἀποκριθεὶς εἰπεν (Mt. 3:15) which is somewhat like the vernacular "He ups and says" (Moulton Prol., p. 15 f.). Cf. also τοῦτο εἶπὼν λέγει (Jo. 21:19), ἀπελθὼν πέπρακεν (Mt. 13:46), 'he has gone and sold.' So also ἀναστὰς ἡλθεν (Lu. 15:20), 'he arose and came.' Once again note λαβοῦσα ἐνέκρυσεν (Mt. 13:33), 'she took and hid.' This idiom is more Aramaic than Hebraic and is at any rate picturesque vernacular. But it is also Greek. Pleonasm belongs to all tongues. Radermacher (N. T. Grk., p. 179) quotes Herod. VI, 67, 10, εἶπε νοῦς; VI, 68, 5, ἔφη-λέγων. Mr. Dan Crawford finds in the Bantu language "dying he died" for the, irrevocableness of death. We now turn to the verbal aspects of the participle, which are more complex.

5. VERBAL ASPECTS OF THE PARTICIPLE.

(a) Voice. There is nothing of al distinctive nature to say about the voice of the participle in addition to what has already been said (see ch. on Voice). The voices run in the participles precisely as in the verb itself. We find the voice in the earliest Greek as in the Sanskrit. All the nuances of the voices appear in the participle. Cf. the active in διδάσκων (Lu. 13:10), ζων, (Jo. 4:10); the middle in προσδεχόμενος (Lu. 2:36), ἐπικαλεσάμενος (Ac. 22:16), σπασάμενος (Mk. 14:47); the passive in λυπούμενος (Mt. 19:22), τὴν ἄποκρισιμένην (1 Cor. 2:7), ἀπολελυμένον (Heb. 13:23), ἐπιστραφείς (Mk. 5:30), κωλυθέντες (Ac. 16:6). We may note in particular ἔχε με παρηγκότεν (Lu. 14:18 f.), ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι (Mt. 10:22) and ἔσεσθε λαλοῦντες (1 Cor. 14:9). In Mk. 5:26,
παθοῦσα ὑπὸ πολλῶν ἰατρῶν, the active participle has the construction of the passive, but this is due to the verb πάσχω, not to the voice. Cf. also Gal. 4:9, γνώντες θεόν μᾶλλον δὲ γνωσθέντες ὑπὸ θεοῦ.

(b) Tense.

(a) Timelessness of the Participle. It may be said at once that the participle has tense in the same sense that "the subjunctive, optative and imperative have, giving the state of the action as punctiliar, linear, completed. In the beginning¹ this was all that tense meant in the participle. The participle was timeless. Indeed the participle in itself continued timeless, as is well shown by the articular participle.² Thus in Mk. 6:14, Ἰωάνης ὁ βαπτίζων, it is not present time that is here given by this tense, but the general description of John as the Baptistizer without "regard to time. It is actually used of him after his death. Cf. οἱ κητοῦντες (Mt. 2:20). In Mt. 10:39, ὁ εὑρὼν ἀπολέσει, the principal verb is future while the participle is aorist, but the aorist tense does not mean past or future time. So in Mt. 25:20 and 24 ὁ λαβὼν and ὁ εἶληφώς have no notion of time but only the state of the action. But the tenses of the participle may be used for relative time. In relation to the principal verb there may be suggested time. Thus ὁ εὑρὼν ἀπολέσει above implies that εὑρὼν is antecedent to ἀπολέσει which is future. In Ac. 24:11, ἄνεβην προσκυνήσων the principal verb is past, but the participle is relatively future, though absolutely past. The relative time of the participle approximates the indicative mode and is able to suggest antecedent (aorist, present, perfect tenses), simultaneous (aorist, present tenses) and subsequent (present, future tenses) action. The tenses of the participle must be studied with this distinction in mind. But this notion of relative time "is deeply imbedded in the nature of the participle and the use is universal."³ Certainly this notion of relative time is more obvious in the Greek participle than in the Latin or in the modern languages.⁴ In the chapter on Tense the participial tenses were treated with reasonable completeness, but some further remarks are necessary at this point. A word needs to be said about the idiom οὗτος ἦν ὁ εἰπών (Jo. 1:15), οὗτος ἦν ὁ — καθήμενος (Ac. 3:10), where the principal verb is thrown into the past.

¹ Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 522.
² Moulton, Prol., p. 126. He notes Heb. 10:14, τοῦς ἄγιαζομένους, as a good ex. of the timelessness of the part.
⁴ W.-M., p. 427.
(β) The Aorist. The Aktionsart of the aorist participle is sufficiently illustrated in the discussion of the aorist tense. There is, of course, no reason for not having the constative, ingressive or effective aorist in the participle. Schaefer argues that in most cases the participle uses the effective aorist. That may be true, though there is nothing in the nature of the participle itself to cause it. Blass thinks that the aorist participle contains the idea of completion, but even so that motion may be merely constative or ingressive. Goodwin holds that the aorist participle generally represents the action as antecedent to the principal verb. Burton has it more nearly correct when he insists that the aorist participle conceives of the event indefinitely or simply. So Blass denies that the aorist tense implies antecedent action. It is usually assumed that the proper use of the aorist participle is antecedent action and that only certain verbs (as exceptions) may occasionally express simultaneous action. But this is a misapprehension of the real situation. It is doubtless true, as Burton notes, that the antecedent use furnishes the largest number of instances, but that fact does not prove priority or originality of conception. "The aorist participle of antecedent action does not denote antecedence; it is used of antecedent action, where antecedence is implied, not by the aorist tense as a tense, but in some other way." Moulton is equally explicit: "The connotation of past time was largely fastened on this participle, through the idiomatic use in which it stands before an aorist indicative to qualify its action. As point action is always completed action, except in the ingressive, the participle naturally came to involve past time relative to that of the main verb." It is probable that the original use of the aorist participle was that of simultaneous action. From this was developed quite naturally, by the nature of the various cases, the antecedent notion. Cf. ἔστευσεν ἐπείνασε (Mt. 4:2) where the fasting expressed by the participle is given as the reason for the hungering expressed by the principal verb. For further examples of antecedent action see Mt. 2:14; 2:16; 27:3; 2 Cor. 2:13. For the articular aorist see Mt. 10:39; Lu. 12:47; Jo. 5:15. While this came to be the more common idiom

1 Schaefer, Das Partizip des Aoristes bei den Tragikern, 1894, p. 5.
2 Ib.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 197.
5 N. T. M. and T., p. 59.
6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 197.
7 N. T. M. and T., p. 61.
8 Ib.
9 Prol., p. 130.
from the nature of the case, the original use of the aorist participle for simultaneous action continued. One has no ground for assuming that antecedent action is a necessary or an actual fact with the aorist participle.\(^1\) The aorist participle of simultaneous, action is in perfect accord with the genius and history of the Greek participle. For numerous examples of both uses see the chapter on Tense. A good instance is seen in Mt. 27:4, ἠμαρτον παραδοὺς ἀμίαν ἀθῷον. So also ὑπολαβὼν ἐπεν (Lu. 10:30). See Ac. 2:23, τοῦτον προσπίξαντες ἀνείλατε, where the slaying was manifestly done by the impaling on the cross. The two actions are identical *per se*. Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 131) observes that when the verb precedes the aorist participle it is nearly always the participle of coincident action. He (*Prol.*, p. 132) cites O. P. 530 (ii/A.D.), ἔδωκεν δώσεις—λυτρώσασά μου τὰ ἰμάτια. It so happens that the N. T. shows a great number of such examples. See Mk. 15:30 σώσον καταβάς, (Lu. 2:16) ἠλθον σπείραντες, (Ac. 10:33) καλῶς ἐποίησας παραγενομένος. Cf. Mt. 26:75. In Ac. 10:29, ἠλθον μεταπεμφθείς, the participle is antecedent in idea. Acts, however, is particularly rich in examples of the coincident aorist participle which follows the verb. See 10:39; 11:30; 13:33; 15:8, 9; 19:2; 23:22, 25, 30; 25:13; 26:10. It is in point of fact a characteristic of Luke's style to use frequently the coincident participle (both aorist and present) placed rater the principal verb. This fact completely takes away the point of Sir W. M. Ramsay's argument\(^2\) for the aorist of subsequent action in Ac. 16:6, where, however, it is more probably antecedent action, as is possible in Ac. 23:22. The argument made against it under Tense need not be repeated here.\(^3\) Burton assents\(^4\) to the notion of the aorist of "subsequent" action in the participle, but no real parallels are given. I have examined in detail the N. T. examples adduced and shown the lack of conclusiveness about them all. See chapter on Tense. It is even claimed that subsequent action is shown by the participles (present as well as aorist) in Ac. 5:36; 6:11; 8:10, 18; 14:22; 17:26; 18:23; 28:14, but with no more evidence of reality. Actual examination of each passage shows the action to be either simultaneous or antecedent. See also Lu. 1:9, ἔλαχε τοῦ θυμιάσαι εἰσελθὼν εἰς τὸν ναὸν, where it is obviously coincident. The same thing is true of Heb. 11:27, κατέλιπεν Αἴγυπτον, μὴ φοβηθείς. Cf. also Ac. 7:35 δὺ ἠρυνήσαντο

\(^1\) Moulton, *Prol.*, p. 131. \(^2\) *St. Paul the Traveller*, p. 212. 
\(^3\) See Ballentine, *Bibliotheca Sacra*, 1884, p. 787, for discussion of N. T. exx. 
\(^4\) *N. T. M.* and *T.*, p. 65.
eiπóntes, (13:22) εἶπεν μαρτυρῆσας. A case like 1 Pet. 1:20 f. is not, of course, pertinent. However, the common use of the aorist participle in indirect discourse (as with all the supplementary participles) without any notion of time is to the point. So Ac. 9:12, εἶδες ἄνδρα εἰσελθόντα καὶ ἐπιθέντα. So ἐθεώρουν τὸν Σατανᾶν πεσόντα (Lu. 10:18). The action is purely punctiliar with no notion of time at all. It is true that the articular participle is occasionally used (see chapter on Tense) for time past to the time of the writer, but future to the time of the principal verb. As a matter of fact this aorist participle is timeless, as is shown by the use of ὁ παραβοῦς in Mt. 10:4 and ὁ παραδίδον in 26:25. So ὁ εἰπὼν in Jo. 5:12; ὁ ποιήσας 5:15; ἡ ἀληψασα 11:2. It is the action alone that is under consideration, not the time of its performance. See, per contra, ὁ γυνὸς—καὶ μὴ ἔτοιμάς ἂς ἢ ποιήσας διαρήσται (Lu. 12:47) where the aorist participle gives the simple action with a future verb. Cf. Lu. 6:49 for the articular aorist part. with the present indicative. Burton\(^1\) feels the weakness of his contention for "subsequent" action in the aorist participle when he explains that it is "perhaps due to Aramaic influence." There is no need for an appeal to that explanation, since the fact does not exist. It is only in the circumstantial participle that any contention is made for this notion. It is certainly gratuitous to find subsequent action in Ro. 4:19, μὴ ἀσθενήσας τῇ πίστει κατενόησεν, not to mention 4:21; Ph. 2:7; Heb. 9:12. Burton reluctantly admits that, though in 1 Pet. 3:18 ζωοποιηθεῖς is "clearly subsequent to ἀπέθανεν," yet it "is probably to be taken together with θανατωθεῖς as defining the whole of the preceding clause." This latter view is, of course, true, since the order of the participles is θανατωθεῖς ζωοποιηθεῖς. The timelessness of the aorist participle is well shown in Jo. 16:2, ὁ ἀποκείματος [ὑμᾶς] δόξῃ λατρείαν προσφέρειν τῷ θεῷ. Cf. also ἄγαγόντα—τελειῶσαι. (Heb. 2:10). This coincident use of the aorist participle is by no means so rare in the ancient Greek as is sometimes alleged.\(^2\) The action was specially likely to be coincident if the principal verb was also aorist.\(^3\) Like the other articular participles, the aorist participle may be the practical equivalent of the relative. So in Lu. 12:8 f. δὲς ἄν ὁμολογήσει and ὁ ἀρνητήσαμενος are used side by side.

\(^{1}\) N. T. M. and T., p. 66.
\(^{2}\) See Leo Meyer, Griech. Aor., p. 125.
(γ) The Present. As the aorist participle timeless and punctiliar, so the present participle is timeless and durative. The participle is thus, like the infinitive, ahead of the present indicative, which does not distinguish between punctiliar and durative action. A careful treatment of the force of the present participle has been given under Tense. The real timelessness of this participle is shown in the fact that it is used indiscriminately with past, present or future tenses of the indicative. So πωλοῦντες ἔφερον (Ac. 4:34); ἀποστήσκων εὐλόγησεν (Heb. 11:21); καίτερ ὦν υἱὸς ἐμαθεν (Heb. 5:8); μεριμνῶν δύναται (Mt. 6:27); ἔσεσθε λαλοῦντες (1 Cor. 14:9). The articular present especially shows the absence of time. So οἱ δοκοῦντες οὐδὲν προσανέθεντο (Gal. 2:6); προσετίθει τοὺς σωζομένους (Ac. 2:47); ὁ δεχόμενος ἕμετ ἐδέχεται (Mt. 10:40); ἔσθίετε τά παρατίθεμα (Lu. 10:8); ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρυφαίῳ ἀποδώσει (Mt. 6:18). There will be Aktionsart in this participle also. Some of these words are really punctiliar (δέχομαι, for instance). But, in general, the present participle gives linear action. The present participle may have relative time. This relative time is usually simultaneous or coincident. This is only natural. Sometimes, however, this relative time may be antecedent action, a classic idiom.1 Example of this idiom were given under Tense, but add Jo. 9:8, οἱ θεωροῦντες τὸ πρότερον where the adverb of time helps to throw the participle back of ἔλεγον, as ἄρτι with βλέπω makes the verb later than τυφλὸς ὄν in 9:25. Cf. also Gal. 1:23, ὁ διώκων ἢμᾶς ποτε νῦν εὐαγγελίζεται, where both participle and verb have adverbs of time by way of contrast. For other instances like these see Mt. 9:20 Mk. 5:25 Lu. 8:43; Jo. 5:5; Ac. 24:10; Eph. 2:13; Col. 1:21; 1 Tim. 1:13, etc. There are also undoubted instances of the present participle to express the notion of purpose, futuristic in conception, though present in form. Add to the instances already given the following: Mk. 3:31, ἔξω στήκοιντες ἀπεστείλαν καλοῦντες. Here the first participle is only noticeable as the usual linear action (with aorist indicative). The second participle, however, is practically purpose. ‘They sent to him calling him.’ ‘They sent to call him.’ So also Lu. 13:6 ἤθελεν ζητῶν, (13:7) ἔρχομαι ζητῶν. It is not strictly true that here the present participle means future or subsequent time. It is only that the purpose goes on coincident with the verb and beyond. This prospective present part. (cf. present ind.) appears in Ac. 21:3, ἤν ἀποφορτιζόμενον τὸν γόμον. ‘The ship was appointed to unload her cargo.’ Cf. Mt. 6:30;

The future is "simulated" also by the present participle when it is used for conative action. It is, of course, not the participle that brings out this notion. See (Mt. 23:14) οὐδὲ τοὺς ἐσερχοµένους ἀφίητε εἰσελθέν (27:40) ὁ καταλόων τὸν ναὸν (Ac. 28:23) πέιθους αὐτούς. The notion of repetition (iterative present) occurs also as in Ac. 2:47, προσετίθει τοῦς σωζοµένους, 'kept adding those saved from time to time.' So πωλοῦντες ἐφεροῦ καὶ ἐπίθοουν (Ac. 4:34). 'They would from time to time sell and bring and place at the feet of the apostles.' There is thus a sharp contrast from the specific instance of Barnabas, of whom it is said: πωλησας ἠµεγκευ (4:37). It is not clear, (however), why the present participle occurs in 3:8, ἔξαλλόµενος ἐστὶ καὶ περιστάτει, unless it is to note that he kept on leaping and walking (alternately). Cf. this notion in verse 8, περιστατός καὶ ἀλλόµενος. Cf. also in 5:5, ἄκοοις πεσών ἐξέψυξεν, where πεσών is antecedent to the verb, but ἄκοοις is descriptive (linear). The notion of distribution is perhaps present in Heb. 10:14, τοὺς ἀγιαζοµένους, 'the objects of sanctification.' Certainly ὁ κλέπτων is iterative in Eph. 4:28. Cf. Ac. 1:20; Col. 2:8. It is interesting to note the difference between the present and the aorist participle in Mt. 16:28, ἔως ἀν ἔδωσιν τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐρχόµενον, and in Ac. 9:12, εἶδεν ἄνδρα εἰσελθόντα. The perfect participle of the same verb and in the same construction occurs in Mk. 9:1, ἔως ἂν ἔδωσιν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ ἐληλυθώναν ἐν δυνάμει. The three tenses of the participle of πέπτω may also be illustrated by the punctiliar notion of the aorist in πεσόντα in Lu. 10:18, the durative notion πεπτότων in Mt. 15:27 and of πέπτοντες in Mk. 13:25, the perfect notion of πεπτωκότα in Rev. 9:1.

(5) The Perfect. This tense brings little that is distinctive in the participle. Cf. τετελειωµένοι (Jo. 17:23), πεποιηκότες (18:18), προσφάτως ἐληλυθότα (Ac. 18:2), κεκοπιακώς (Jo. 4:6), πεπτωκότα (Rev. 9:1), ἐληλυθότα (1 Jo. 4:2), ὁ εἰληθιώς (Mt. 25:24). The distinction between intensive and extensive was drawn under Tense. Some of the intensive uses have lost the notion of completion (punctiliar) and hold on to the linear alone in the present sense. Cf. ἐστώς εἰμι (Ac. 25:10), εἶδώς (Mt. 12:25) with which contrast οἱ ἐγνωκότες (2 Jo. 1), συνειδηµένης (Ac. 5:2), τεθυµκός (Lu. 7:12), παρεστηκός (Jo. 18:22). The periphrastic use of the perfect participle in past, present and future time has been sufficiently illustrated already. So has the rare com-

---

2 Moulton, Prol., p. 127.
bination of perfect and present participle in Eph. 4:18; Col. 1:21. The perfect participle also is either articular or anarthrous, attributive or predicate. For the predicate use see in particular Lu. 13:6 συκήν ἐίχεν τις πεφυτευμένην, (Heb. 5:14) τά αἰσθητήρια γεγυμνασμένα ἐκλυτων. It needs to be noted again that the perfect participle has no time in itself. In the nature of the case the act will be antecedent except where the tense has lost its true force as in ἐστώς, τεθυμωκώς, εἰδώς. But it is only relative time, not absolute, and the leading verb may itself be punctiliar, linear or perfect, in the past, present or future. Just as the present participle may suggest antecedent action and so be a sort of "imperfect" participle (past time), so the perfect participle is sometimes used where a sort of past perfect sense results. The action was finished and is now no longer the fact, though the state represented by the perfect once existed. So ἐπὶ τῷ σῳμβεβηκότι αὐτῷ in Ac. 3:10. Cf. Mk. 5:15, θεωροῦσιν τὸν δαιμονιζόμενον καθήμενον ἱματισμένον καὶ συφρονοῦσα, τὸν ἐσχηκότα τὸν λεγιῶνα, καὶ ἐφοβήθησαν. This is a most instructive passage. The historical present and the aorist indicative here occur side by side. The attributive and the predicate participles appear side by side. The present and the perfect participles come together. Of the two perfect participles, one, ἱματισμένον, is still true (punctiliar plus linear) and describes the man's present state; the other, τὸν ἐσχηκότα, is no longer true and describes the state of the man before Jesus cast out the demon, which casting-out is itself in the past. This participle is therefore a sort of past perfect. Cf. also Jo. 8:31. Another striking example is Jo. 11:44, ἐξῆλθεν ὁ τεθυμώκως δεδεμένος. Here δεδεμένος is still true, though τεθυμωκώς is not. Lazarus had been dead, but is not now. We see the same situation in 1 Cor. 2:7, τὴν ἀποκεκρυμμένην. The wisdom of God is no longer hidden. The point is still clearer in Ro. 16:25 μουστηρίου χρόνος αἰώνιος σεστιγμένου φανερωθέντος δὲ νῦν, where the long silence is now expressly said to be broken. Note the sharp contrast in the aorist participle with νῦν. This distinction between the perfect and aorist participle is often clearly drawn. See 2 Cor. 12:21 τῶν προπαρατικῶν καὶ μὴ μετανοησάντων, (1 Pet. 2:10); οἱ οὐκ ἤλειθμένοι νῦν δὲ ἔλειθέντες. The same act may be looked at from either standpoint. One may not always care to add the linear aspect to the punctiliar. Cf. ὁ γεγενημένος and ὁ γεννηθείς in 1 Jo. 5:18, τὸν ἐσχηκότα τὸν λεγιῶνα in Mk. 5:15 and ὁ δαιμονισθεί in 5:18.

A GRAMMAR OF THE Gitii, EK NEW TESTAMENT

The Future.

The future participle, like the future tense in general, was later in its development than the other tenses. It is usually punctiliar also and has something of a modal value (volitive, futuristic) like the subjunctive (aorist).\(^1\) See discussion under Tense. The future participle is always subsequent in time to the principal verb (cf. the present participle by suggestion), not coincident and, of course, never antecedent. Hence the future participle comes nearer having a temporal notion than any of the tenses. But even so it is relative time, not absolute, and the future participle may occur with a principal verb in the past, present or future. This idiom grew out of the context and the voluntative notion of the future tense.\(^2\) This point is well illustrated by the parallel use of μέλλων to express intention. Cf. ὁ παραδώσων αὐτόν (Jo. 6:64) and ὁ μέλλον αὐτόν παραδίδοναι (12:4).

As already shown, the future participle is much less frequent in the N. T. (as in LXX) than in the κοινή generally (as in the papyri). Another rival to the future participle is ἐρχόμενος (Jo. 1:9), ὁ ἐρχόμενος (Lu. 7:19). Both μέλλω and ἐρχομαι (cf. εἴμι) are anticipatory presents.\(^3\) Cf. ἐνεστώτα and μέλλοντα in Ro. 8:38. Nearly all the N. T. examples of the future participle (see chapter on Tense for discussion) are in Luke and Paul and Hebrews (the three best specimens of literary style in the N. T.). But see Mt. 27:49, σώσων; Jo. 6:64, ὁ παραδώσων; 1 Pet. 3:13, ὁ κακώσων. For the Gospel of Luke see 22:49, τὸ ἐσόμενον.

The rest of his examples are in the Acts, as 8:27, προσκυνήσων, (20:22) τὰ συναντήσοντα (22:5) ἐξων, (24:11) προσκυνήσων, (24:17) ποιήσων. For Paul see Ro. 8:34, ὁ κατακρινών (a

---

\(^1\) Cf. Delbruck, Synt. Forsch., IV, p. 97.

\(^2\) Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 523.

\(^3\) There is an expectant note in τὸ ἐκχυννόμενον (Mt. 26:23).
question of editing, but cf. ὁ ἀποθανὼν, 1 Cor. 15:37,
tὸ γενέσιμον. For Heb. see 3:5, τῶν λαληθησομένων, (13:17)
ἀποδώσοντες. We find ὃς in Heb. 13:17. In conclusion one must
note that the future part. disappeared wholly from the later
Greek. The modern Greek does not know it at all. Instead it
uses νά and the subjunctive. But in general in the N. T. the
participle is still used in thorough accord with the ancient idiom
so far as the tenses are concerned. In the papyri I note it more
frequently than in the N. T. Cf. κοινολογησόμενον, P. Goodsp. 4
(ii/B.C.); τὰ — [σ] ταθησόμενα, P. Tb. 33 (B.C. 112).

(c) Cases. There is no need to tarry here tp prove the verbal
force of the participle as to cases. Precisely the same cases occur
with the participle as with the finite modes of the verb. Cf.
ἐκβαλὼν πάντας (Mk. 5:40) and κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου (5:
41). These illustrations illustrate the point and that is enough.

(d) The Supplementary Participle. The term supplementary
or complementary is used to describe the participle that forms
so close a connection with the principal verb that the idea of the
speaker is incomplete without it. The participle does not differ
in reality from the adjective in this respect, and it is still an
adjective like πιστὸς μένει (2 Tim. 2:13). But it is the verbal
aspect of the participle that is here accented. The participle fills
out the verbal notion.

(a) The Periphrastic Construction. The general aspects of this
idiom were treated in chapter on Tense (cf. also Conjugation of
Verbs). It is only necessary here to stress the close connection
between this participle and the principal verb as in ἡ ἐκβάλλων
δαιμόνιον κωφὸν (Lu. 11:14). In Ac. 19:36, δέου ἐστίν ὕμᾶς κατεσταλ-
μένους ὑπάρχειν, we have two examples of this idiom. Cf. Lu.
13:11. Sometimes we find the periphrastic participle alone
without the copula as in ἔξον (Ac. 2:29), εἰ δέου (1 Pet. 1:6).
But note ἔξον ἡ (Mt. 12:4) and δέου ἐστίν (Ac. 19:36). So πρέπον
ἐστίν (Mt. 3:15). Particularly interesting is εἰσιν γεγονότες (Heb.
7:23). The periphrastic participle, as already noted, was far
more common in the N. T. and the LXX than in the older Greek.
But the reverse is true of certain verbs frequently so used in the
Attic. Radermacher3 thinks that the commonness of the peri-
phrastic participle in the N. T. is due to the rhetorical tendency.

1 Cf. Jebb in V. and D., p. 335.
2 The fut. part. is rare in the inscr. Cf. Granit, De Inf. et Partic. in Inscr.
3 N. T. Gk., p. 166.
This might apply to Hebrews, but surely not to the Synoptic Gospels and Acts. Moulton (Prol., p. 226) admits that the Semitic sources of part of the Gospels and Acts account for the frequency of the periphrastic imperf. (cf. Aramaic). Certainly the LXX is far ahead of the classic Greek and of the κοινή in general. The papyri (Moulton, Prol., p. 226) show it often in fut. perects and in past perects. Schmid (Attic., p. 113 f.) finds it rare in literary κοινή save in fut. perects. Moulton finds periphr. imperf. in Matthew 3 times, Mark 16, Luke 30, John 10, Acts (1-12) 17, Acts (13-28) 7, Paul 3. And even sb some of these examples are more adjectival than periphrastic. Cf. Ph. 2:26. See p. 888.

(β) A Diminution of the Complementary Participle. This decrease is due partly to the infinitive as with ἐρχομαι, δοκέω. See discussion in this chapter on Relation between the Inf. and the Participle. But it is due also to the disappearance of the personal construction and the growth of the impersonal with οτι or ὑνα. In Mk. 2:1, εἰσελθὼν πάλιν εἰς Καφαρναούμ δι’ ἡμερῶν ἠκούσθη οτι ἐν οἶκω ἐστίν, the personal construction is retained even with the circumstantial participle. Cf. also 2 Cor. 3:3, φανεροῦμενοι οτι ἐστε ἐπιστολή Χριστου. But it is vanishing with the verbs where it was once so common. See under Infinitive, 5, (e), for further remarks. Jannarisl has made a careful study of the facts in the later Greek. It may be noted that οὐχομαι does not occur at all in the N. T., though the LXX (and Apocrypha) has it 24 times, twice with the inf. it disappeared from the vernacular. As to τυγχάνω it occurred only once with the participle (2 Macc. 3:9). It has the inf. as well as ὑνα (να) in the later Greek, though it is very abundant with the participle in the papyri. Cf. τυγχαίνει Νείλος ἰέων, P. B. M. 84 (ii/A.D.). But τυγχάνω φίλος without ὑν occurs also in the κοινή (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 169). Curiously enough λαυθάνω appears once with the participle in the LXX (Tob. 12:13) as in the N. T. (Heb. 13:2). In the κοινή the inf. supplants the part. as it had already gained a foothold in the old Greek. Note also the adverb as in λάθρας, ἐκβαλλοστιν (Ac. 16:37). Φθάνω continued in use through the κοινή but with the sense of ‘arrive,’ ‘reach,’ not the idiomatic one 'arrive before.' This latter notion appears in προφθάνω (cf. προλαμβάνω), which has it once only in the N. T. (Mt. 17:25), while the inf. is seen in προέλαβεν μυρίσαι (Mk. 14:8). As early as Thucydides the inf. is found with φθάνω, and see also 1 Ki. 12:18. It is, common in the κοινή. The

tendency to reverse the construction by using one of these verbs in the participial form is seen in τυχόν (participial adverb) in 1 Cor. 16:6. It is possible that φαίνομαι still shows the participial construction in Mt. 6:16, 18, but not in Ro. 7:13, where the participle is circumstantial, not complementary. The impersonal construction gains1 on the personal in the κοινή. In the N. T. we no longer have δῆλος εἰμί nor φανερός εἰμί. But we do have εὐρέθη ἡχοῦσα in Mt. 1:18. Ἀρχομαι has lost the part. in the N. T., but ὑπάρχω holds on to it, but not in the sense of 'begin,' rather of 'existing.' Cf. both adjective and part. in Jas. 2:15 and 1 Tim. 4:3. It tends to sink into the level of εἰμί as an auxiliary verb with the periphrastic participle, as in Ac. 8:16; 19:36. The same thing is true of προϋπάρχω in Lu. 23:12, but not in Ac. 8:9 where μακεύων is circumstantial. We have seen that παύομαι is true to the part. (cf. Lu. 5:4; Ac. 5:42, etc.) and that the part. occurs also with ἐπιμένω (Jo. 8:7), τελέω (Mt. 11:1), and that διατελέω has the adj. without δὲν (Ac. 27:33). Cf. also διαλείπω in Lu. 7:45. See also the part. with ἔγκακως in Gal. 6:9; 2 Th. 3:13. The part. with καρτέρεω in Heb. 11:27 is circumstantial, as is that with ἀνέχομαι in 1 Cor. 4:12 and with κάμψω in Heb. 12:3. The doubtful participle with μανθάνω in 1 Tim. 5:13 has already been discussed (Relation between Inf. and Part., 3, (d)). Moulton2 is positive that the absolute construction advocated by Weiss is intolerable and that we must either admit the supplementary participle here or boldly insert εἶναι with Blass. Moulton3 is probably right in opposing the incorrectness of the part. with ἐὰν πρᾶσσω in Ac. 15:29, ἐὰν διατριβοῦτες ἐκατούρθες ἐὰν πράξετε. At bottom this is the same idiom as we have in 10:33, καλῶς ἐποίησας παραγενόμενος. Cf. also Ph. 4:14; 2 Pet. 1:19; 3 Jo. 6. Blass4 is right in including here τί ποιεῖτε λύτοντες (Mk. 11:5), τί ποιεῖτε κλαίοντες (Ac. 21:13), ἥμαρτον παραδοῦς (Mt. 27:4).

(γ) Verbs of Emotion. As a matter of fact it is not beyond controversy that the part. with these verbs of emotion is the supplementary and not the circumstantial participle. At any rate the idiom comes to the border-line between the two constructions. I do not wish to labour the point and so treat the construction as complementary. The connection is not, however, so close with these verbs as is true of those in the two preceding lists. Indeed, the connection varies with different verbs and with the same verb in different contexts. It seems clear enough in

1 Ib.  
2 Prol., p. 229,  
3 Ib., p. 228 f.  
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 245.
Ac. 16:34, Ἡγαλλιάσατο πεπιστευκώς, and in 2 Pet. 2:10, οὗ τρέμουσιν βλασφημοῦτες. The examples with ἀγανακτεῖ (Mt. 21:15, etc.) and χαίρω (Mt. 2:10, etc.) all seem to be circumstantial. The same thing is true of λυπέω. The participle does not occur in the N. T. with αἰσχύνομαι. The step over to the circumstantial participle of manner or cause is not very far to take.1

(8) Indirect Discourse. This participle is clearly supplementary and in the N. T. is usually connected with the object of the principal verb. The nom. of the part. ἐξουσιά appears with the passive εὑρέθη in Mt. 1:18 as noted above. The active in the N. T. would have had ὅτι and the ind., if the reference was to Mary. The classic Greek could have said εὑρεν ἐξουσιά, but the N. T. Greek, ἐὑρεν ὅτι ἐξε. Cf. also εὑρεθεὶς ὡς ἀνθρωπός in Ph. 2:8.

But 1 Tim. 5:13 has to be noted. This subject was treated in detail under Indirect Discourse (see Modes). See that discussion for details about the different verbs, some of which, besides the participial construction, may instead use the infinitive or ὅτι and the indicative. Here it is sufficient to give enough illustrations of this participle in indirect discourse with verbs of mental action to show the real complementary nature of the participle. The tense, of course, represents the tense of the direct. With most of these verbs (especially ὁδιήγ, μανθάνω, ὁμολογέω) the participle is giving way to the infinitive or ὅτι, but still the idiom is common enough to attract notice in all parts of the N. T. Cf. γείωσκε σαυτόν ἐξοντα, P. B. M. 356 (i/AD.). It is common to explain this participle as the object of the principal verb after the analogy of the infinitive in indirect discourse. So Jannaris calls it "the objective participle" and Burton "the substantive participle as object." Blass more correctly perceives that it is the substantive or pronoun that is the object while the participle is a predicate adjective agreeing with this object. It is easy to see this point where no indirect discourse occurs, as in Heb. 7:24, ἀπαράβατον ἐχει τὴν ἱερωσύνην, where ἐχεω does not mean to 'opine' and where the verbal adjective occurs. But see the participle in 5:14, τῶν τὰ αἰσθητήρια γεννυμασμένα ἐχόντων, or, still better, Lu. 14:18, ἐχε με παρηγορούν, where ἐχεω means 'consider' and we have the participle.

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 245. 2 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 495.
VERBAL NOUNS (‘ONOMATA TOY ‘RHMATOS) 1123

Cf. Mk. 3:1; Ac. 9:21, ἴνα δεδεμένους αὐτοὺς ἀγάγῃ. See also 24:27. Then note Ph. 2:3, ἀλλήλους ἤγονεμοι ὑπέρέχοντας.1 The addition of ὦς does not change the real construction as in τοὺς λογιζόμενους ἤμας ὦς κατὰ σάρκα περιπατοῦντας, 2 Cor. 10:2; ὦς ἑχθρόν ἤγείσθε 2 Th. 3:15. In principle it is the double accusative, too common with some verbs, only the second ace. is a predicate adj., not a substantive. Cf. Ro. 10:9 (margin of W. H.), ἐὰν ὀμολογήσῃς κύριον Ιησοῦν, and 2 Jo. 7, ὀμολογοῦτες Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐρχόμενον ἐν σαρκί. The presence or absence of the copula does not materially change the construction when an adj. or substantive is the second ace. Thus note 2 Cor. 8:22, ὃν ἐδοκιμάσαμεν σπουδαίον ὄντα, and Mk. 6:20, ἐδώς αὐτὸν ἀνδρα δίκαιον. So we have no part. after ἐδοκ. in Jo. 1:50; Mt. 25:37, 38, 39; Ac. 8:23; 17:16. Blass2 calls this an "ellipse" of the participle, an idiom common in classical Greek. It is hardly necessary to appeal to the "ellipse" to explain it. The predicate force of ὄντα, comes out well in Ac. 8:23. If no substantive or adjective is used, the participle is itself the full predicate and represents the predicate of the direct discourse. Cf. Mk. 12:28 ἀκούσας αὐτῶν συνεζητοῦντων (Lu. 8:46) ἐγνων δύναμιν ἐξεληλυθίαν ἀπ’ ἐμοῦ. The point to note is that even here in indirect discourse, where the participle represents the verb of the direct, the participle is still an adjective though the verbal force has become prominent. The examples are too numerous to discuss in detail or even to quote in full. As representative examples see Mt. 16:28 after ἐδοκ. (ἐρχόμενον, but Mk. 9:1 has ἔλθη ὑπίσταν), Mk. 5:30 after ἐπίσταμα, 7:30, after εὐρίσκω (cf. also Lu. 23:2), Lu. 10:18 after θεωρέω (cf. in particular Ac. 7:56), Jo. 1:38 after ἐπίσταμα, 7:32 after ἀκοῦσω, Ac. 19:35 after γινώσκω, 24:10 after ἐπίσταμα, Heb. 2:9 after βλέπω, Heb. 13:23 after γινώσκω, 2 Cor. 8:22 after δοκιμάζω, Ph. 2:3 after ἥγεομαι, 2 Jo. 7 after ὀμολογέω. The punctiliar idea is present as in πεπόντα in Lu. 10:18, or the linear as in ἐγγίζουσαν (Heb. 10:25), or the perfected state as in πεπτωκότα (Rev. 9:1). Cf. also Ac. 2:11; 24:18; Mk. 9:38; 1 Jo. 4:2. Burton3 explains as "the substantive participle" (see 4, (d)) also Jo. 4:39, τῆς γυναικὸς μαρτυροῦσης and Heb. 8:9, ἐν ἡμέρα ἐπιλαβομένου μου. The first example is really the attributive participle liken τοῦ προφήτου λέγοντος (Mt. 21:4). The second example is more difficult, but it is a quotation from the LXX (Jer. 31:32) and is not therefore a model of Greek. The μου has to be taken with ἡμέρα and the

1 Cf. Goodwin, M. and T., pp. 359
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 246.
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 176.
The Circumstantial Participle or Participial Clauses.

(a) The General Theory. There is but one difference between the supplementary and the circumstantial participle. It lies in the fact that the circumstantial participle is an additional statement and does not form an essential part of the verbal notion of the principal verb. The circumstantial participle may be removed and the sentence will not bleed. It is still a true participle, predicate adjective as well as circumstantial addition to the verb. In point of agreement the circumstantial may be related to the subject of the principal verb or the object, or indeed any other substantive or pronoun in the sentence. It may have also an independent construction with a substantive or pronoun of its own (genitive or accusative absolute) or have no substantive or pronoun at all. Once again the participle may be so independent as to form a sentence of its own and not merely be a subordinate clause. See the section on The Independent Participle as a Sentence. Here we are dealing with the independent participle in a subordinate clause with various stages of independency from mere addition and agreement with a substantive or pronoun to complete isolation though still subordinate. Some of the grammars, Burton\(^1\) for instance, call this the "adverbial" participle. There is a slight element of truth here, but only so far as there is a sort of parallel with the subordinate conjunctural clauses which are adverbial (cf. ὅτε, ἵνα, ὡς, etc.). But it is distinctly misleading to treat this participle as adverbial. In fact, there is a constant tendency to read into this circumstantial participle more than is there. In itself, it must be distinctly noted, the participle does not express time, manner, cause, purpose, condition or concession. These ideas are not\(^2\) in the participle, but are merely suggested by the context, if at all, or occasionally by a particle like ἄμα, εὐθὺς, καίπερ, ποτὲ, νῦν, ὡς. There is no necessity for one to use the circumstantial participle. If he wishes a more precise note of time, cause, condition, purpose, etc., the various subordinate clauses (and the infinitive) are at his command, besides the co-ordinate clauses. The vernacular increasingly

---

\(^1\) N. T. M. and T., pp. 166

\(^2\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 247.
preferred the co-ordinate or the subordinate clause with conjunctions to the rather loose circumstantial participle.\(^1\) We see the triumph of this analytic tendency in the modern Greek.\(^2\) But it remains true that the participial clause was one of the great resources of the Greek language and in contrast the Latin seems very poor.\(^3\) The English comes next to the Greek in its rich use of the circumstantial participle. Moulton\(^4\) notes the failure of the English, even with the help of auxiliary verbs, to express the precise difference between \(λύσας\) and \(λελυκὼς\) (\(ό λαβών\) and \(ό εἰληφώς\), for instance, in Mt. 25:18, 24). He rightly also calls attention to the weakness of the Greek because of its wealth of participles, since so much ambiguity is possible. Does a given circumstantial participle bear the notion of 'because' or 'although'? Only the context can tell, and men do not always interpret the context correctly. One more remark is necessary. By means of the circumstantial participle the sentence may be lengthened indefinitely. Good illustrations of this freedom may be seen in the periodic structure in Thucydides, Isocrates, Lysias and Demosthenes. But the N. T. itself has examples of it as is seen in 2 Pet. 2:12-15, \(βλασφημοῦντες, ἀδικοῦμενοι, ἦγοομενοι, ἐντρυ-φώντες\).

(\(\beta\)) Varieties of the Circumstantial Participle. Here are treated only those examples which have syntactical agreement in case with some substantive or pronoun in the sentence. It may be repeated that this participle does not express the ideas called by the usual classification into participles of time, manner (means), cause, purpose, condition, concession. Hence it is proper to group the examples together. The classification is only justified by the context and occasional use of a particle.\(^5\) The same classification is possible also for the absolute use of the participial clause. The examples are too numerous for exhaustive treatment. A few must suffice.

Time. It is not the tense that is here under discussion, though naturally the different tenses will vary in the way that time is treated (antecedent, simultaneous, future), as already shown. The point more exactly is whether a given circumstantial parti-

\(^1\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 499.
\(^2\) Jebb, in V. and D., p. 333.
\(^3\) Moulton, Prol., p. 229.
\(^5\) Certainly we cannot admit the idea that the part. itself has different meanings. Cf. Paul, Prin. of the Hist. of Lang., p. 158.
ciple occurs in a context where the temporal relation is the main one rather than that of cause, condition, purpose, etc. It is usually a mistake to try to reproduce such participles by the English 'when,' 'after,' etc., with the indicative. To do this exaggerates the nuance of time as Moulton\(^1\) observes. It is generally sufficient to preserve the English participle or to co-ordinate the clauses with 'and.' The slightness of the temporal idea is well seen in the pleonastic participles ἀναστάς (Mt. 26:62), ἀποκριθῆς (Mt. 3:15, very common in the Synoptic Gospels. John usually has ἀπεκριθῆς καὶ ἔπεν as in 1:49), ἀπελθῶν (Mt. 13:46), ἀπελθῶν (13:31, cf. verse 33), πορευθέντες (21:6). Here the notion is temporal, but very slightly so. Cf. also προσθέεις ἔπεν in Lu. 19:11. The use of ἀρξάμενος as a note of time is seen in Mt. 20:8 f.; Lu. 23:5; 24:47; Ac. 1:22. In Ac. 11:4, ἀρξάμενος Πέτρος ἐξετίθετο αὐτοῖς καθεξῆς, the part. is slightly pleonastic,\(^2\) but note contrast with καθεξῆς as with ἐξ ὑμῶν πρῶτων in Mt. 20:8. Cf. ἔρχομενος[5] ἔρχου, P. Tb. 421 (iii/A.D.). Sometimes the temporal idea is much more prominent, as in διοδεύσαντες (Ac. 17:1), ἐλθὼν ἐκείνος ἔλεγξε τὸν κόσμον (Jo. 16:8). So also Mt. 6:17, σὺ δὲ νηστεύων ἀλειψάι. Here the descriptive force of the participle is distinctly temporal. In examples like Mk. 1:7 κύψας λῦσαι τὸν ἱμάντα, Ac. 21:32 παραλαβών σχηματίσατο κατέθραμεν ἐπ' αὐτοῦς, there is precedence in order of time, but it is mere priority with no special accent on the temporal relation.\(^3\) Cf. Mt. 2:16; 13:2. In Ac. 24:25 f. we have some interesting examples of the participle. In διαλέγομαι αὐτῶν we see the temporal notion of 'while' with the genitive absolute. In τοῦ μέλλοντος the temporal notion in this attributive part. is due to μέλλω. In γενομένος it is mere antecedence with ἀπεκρίθη (almost simultaneous, in fact). In τὸ νῦν ἔχου the attributive participle again has the temporal idea due to the words themselves. In μεταλαβῶν we have antecedence emphasized by καίρων. In ἀμα καὶ ἐπίζων we have the linear notion stressed by ἀμα. In πυκνότερον αὐτὸν μεταπεμψάντες ὑμίλει αὐτῶ the note of repetition in πυκνότερον reappears in participle and verb. An interesting example is also seen in Heb. 11:32, ἐπιλείψει με διηγομένου ὁ χρόνος, where in a poetic way time is described as going off and leaving the writer discoursing about Gideon and the rest. In 1 Pet. 5:10, ὅλιγον παθόντας, the adverb of time makes it clear. The note of time may appear in any tense of the participle and with any tense in the principal verb. It is not always easy to

---

\(^1\) Prol., p. 230.  
\(^2\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 249.  
\(^3\) Ib., p. 248.
discriminate between the temporal participle and that of attendant circumstance or manner. Moulton\(^1\) and Blass\(^2\) make no distinction. These two uses are the most frequent of all. A good example of this ambiguity occurs in Ac. 21:32, where παραλαβών (cf. λαβών in ancient Greek) may be regarded as merely the attendant circumstance. So also the notion of occasion wavers between time and cause. Cf. ἀκούοντες (Lu. 4:28). For ὥς with this participle see 1 Cor. 7:29

**Manner.** The ancient use of ἔχων in the sense of ‘with’ occurs in Mt. 15:30 ἔχοντες μεθ’ ἑαυτῶν χωλοῦς, Mk. 14:3 ἔχουσα ἀλάβαστρον μύρου, Ac. 21:23 εὑρήν ἔχοντες ἀφ’ ἑαυτῶν. Cf. also φέρων in Jo. 19:39. In Jo. 18:3 we have λαβών used in practically the same sense as μετά in Mt. 26:47. Cf. also λαβών in Mt. 25:1.

In Lu. 1:64, ἐλάλει εὐλογῶν, the part. is one of manner, as in Mt. 19:22 ἀπήλθεν λυπούμενος, (Mk. 1:22) ὥς ἔρχοσίαν ἔχον, where ὥς makes the point plainer, (1:4) κηρύσσων, where the participle is not the periphrastic construction with ἔγένετο, (1:5) ἔξωμολογούμενοι, (Ac. 3:5) ἐπέίχεν αὐτοίς προσδοκών τι, (a picturesque bit of description), (2 Th. 3:11) μηδέν ἐργαζόμενος ἀλλα περιεργαζόμενος (a real pun). It is hard to tell how to classify a participle like that in Gal. 6:3, μηδέν ὥς. It makes sense as temporal, causal or modal. But there is no doubt in a case like Lu. 19:48. ἐξεκρέμετο αὐτοῦ ἀκούσαν or Ac. 2:13 διαχλευάζοντες ἔλεγον or ὥς οὐκ ἀέρα σχέσεων (1 Cor. 9:26).

This notion of manner appears in the participles that have an adverbial notion like σπεύδος (Lu. 19:5 f.), ἐπιβαλλόν (Mk. 14:72), τυχόν (1 Cor. 16:6), βλέποντες (Mt. 13:14); προσθείς ἐπεν (Lu. 19:11). Cf. also ἀναβλέψας ἐπεν in verse 5. So also the pleonastic participles like ἀποκρίθεις (see above) may be looked at either as temporal or modal or even adverbial. See further κρίμασαντες (Ac. 5:30), συμβιβαζόν (9:22) as good examples of the modal participle. Burton\(^3\) makes a separate division for the participle "of attendant circumstance," but this is not necessary and leads to overrefinement. These examples are either temporal as in ἐξελθόντες (Mk. 16:20), ἐκλεξεμένος (Ac. 15:22) or modal as δοξαζόμενος (Lu. 4:15), ἀναλαβών (2 Tim. 4:11) or pleonastic as ἀπεκρίθησαν λέγουσας (Mt. 25:9). Blass' term "conjunctive" (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 249) throws no particular light on the point. In 1 Tim. 1:13 ἄγνωστον is manner. In Ac.

---

1 Prol., p. 230.  
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 248.  
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 173. Cucuel and Riemann (Règles Fondamentales de la Synt. Grecque, 1888, p. 110) consider this notion an "exception," but it is not necessary to do that.
18:18, *κειράμενος*, we have in truth both the temporal and the modal. But it is easy to split hairs over the various circumstantial participles and to read into them much more than is there. Cf. 2 Cor. 4:1 f. See *βαπτίζοντες* and *διδάσκοντες* in Mt. 28:19 f. as modal participles. So *ἀγνοῶν* in 1 Tim. 1:13. Cf. *κατὰ ἀγνοιαν* in Ac. 3:17.

**Means.** It is usual\(^1\) to distinguish means from manner in the participle. There is a real point, but it is not always clear where manner shades off into means. But some instances are clear. Cf. Mt. 6:27, *τί μεριμνῶν δύναται προσθέιναι*; So also *μαντευομένη* in Ac. 16:16. Thus the maid furnished the revenue for her masters. In Heb. 2:10 *ἀγαγόντα* and 2:18 *πειρασθείς* we may also have instances of this notion, but the first may be temporal and the second causal. Jannaris\(^2\) blends the treatment of manner and means and notes how this participle disappears in the later Greek.

**Cause.** The ground of action in the principal verb may be suggested by the participle. Cf. *δίκαιος ὃν καὶ μὴ θέλων αὐτὴν δειγματίσαι ἔβουλήθη*, Mt. 1:19; *ἡμαρτον παραδοῦς αἶμα*, 27:4; *ἐχάρησαν ἱδόντες*, Jo. 20: 20. As a matter of fact this idiom is very frequent. Cf. further Mt. 2:3, 10; Jo. 4:45; 21:12; Ac. 4:21; 9:26; 24:22, *εἰδὼς—εἴπας*, Ro. 6:6, *γινώσκοντες*, and *εἰδότες*; 2 Pet. 3:9; Col. 1:3 f.; 1 Tim. 4:8; Jas. 2:25. For ὃς with this participle see 1 Cor. 7:25, ὃς ἥλεκμενος. In Ac. 24:22 *εἰδώς* may be taken as 'wishing to know,' though Felix may also have actually had some knowledge of Christianity (cf. Paul's appearance before Gallio). So also *εἰδὼς* (24:22) may mean 'wishing to know.' The N. T. no longer has ἀτε, ὅιον, ὅια with the part. as classic Greek did.\(^3\) In Jo. 5:44 a 'causal participle λαμβάνοντες* is coordinate with ζητέйте.

**Purpose.** The use of the participle to express aim or design has already been discussed several times from different points of view (Tense, Final Clauses, Tense of the Participle). This fine classic idiom is nearly gone in the N. T. Purpose is expressed chiefly by ἔνα or the inf. For the future part. of purpose see Mt. 27:49; Ac. 8:27; 22:5; 24:11, 17. In Heb. 13:17, ὃς ἀποδώσοντες, there is as much cause as purpose. Blass\(^4\) wrongly accepts ἄπασατομενοι in Ac. 25:13. The present part. is also used in the sense of purpose where the context makes it clear. So Ac. 3:26, ἀπέστειλεν αὐτὸν εὐλογοῦντα. Cf. Lu. 13:6 f.; Ac. 15:

---

\(^{1}\) Goodwin, M. and T., p. 333.  
\(^{2}\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 504.  
\(^{4}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 248.
27; RO. 15:25. But it is not absent from the papyri. Cf. P. Goodsp. 4 (ii/B.C.) ἀπεστάλκαμεν—κοινολογοῦμεν σοι. So also the present part., P. Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66), διακονοῦντα καὶ ποιοῦντα.

**Condition.** The use of the conditional disappeared more rapidly than the temporal and causal in the later Greek. It is only the protasis, of course, which is here considered. It is still a common idiom in the N. T. In Mt. 16:26 we have ἐὰν τὸν κόσμον ὄλον κερδήσῃ, while in Lu. 9:25, we find κερδήσας τὸν κόσμον ὄλον. Here it is the condition of the third class plainly enough.

See ποιήσας ἔσῃ κτλ., in B. G. U. 596 (A.D. 84). In 1 Cor. 11:29, μὴ διακρίνων, it may be the first class condition with ἐὰν that is the equivalent, but one cannot always be certain on this point. Cf. Ro. 2:27, τελοῦσα; Gal. 6:9, μὴ ἐκλυόμενοι; 1 Tim. 4:4, λαμβανόμενον; Heb. 2:3, ἀμελήσαντες: 7:12, μετατίθεμένης. Moulton denies that the participle stands in the N. T. for a condition of the second class (unreal condition). In Lu. 19:23, καὶ γὰρ ἐλθὼν σὺν τόκῳ ἀν αὐτὸ ἔπραξα, the participle is part of the apodosis, while the condition is implied in the preceding question. Moulton rightly notes that one can no longer decide by the presence of μὴ with the participle that it is conditional or concessive, since μὴ has come in the κοινὴ to be the usual negative of participles.

There is no instance of ἀν with the participle in the N. T., though Moulton (Prol., p. 167) quotes one in a κοινή inscr., I. M. A. iii, 174, διακιότερον ἀν σωθέντα (in a despatch of Augustus). For ἄν ἔν see Particles with Participles.

**Concession.** This is also a frequent construction. Cf. Mt. 14:9, λαξάνθείς. The context calls for the adversative idea in 7:11, πονηροὶ ὄντες. See further Mt. 26:60; 14:5; Mk. 4:31; Jo. 12:37; 21:11; Jas. 3:4; Ac. 13:28; Ro. 1:21, 32; 9:22; 1 Cor. 9:19; Jude 5. To avoid ambiguity the Greek often used particles to make the concessive idea plain, and this idiom survives in the N. T. Cf. καὶ γε—ὑπάρχουσα (Ac. 17:27), καὶ τοι γενηθέντων, (Heb. 4:3), καίπερ more frequently as in Ph. 3:4; Heb. 5:8; 7:5; 12:17; 2 Pet. 1:12. In Heb. 11:12 we also have καὶ ταῦτα νενεκρωμένου. Καίτοι γε occurs only with the finite verb as in Jo. 4:2. So κοίτων in Ac. 14:17. It is worth while to note the survival of ὡς with καὶ γε in Ac. 17:27. Moulton (Prol., p. 231), admits Wellhausen's (Einl., p. 22) claim that ἀλειβάλασφημεῖ. (Mk. 2:7) is an Aramaism for two Aramaic participles,

---

"the second of which should appear as a participle" as in:
βλασφημεῖ.

(γ) The Absolute Participle in Subordinate Clauses. It is not
strange that the participle should have been used in clauses that
stand apart from the rest of the sentence. There it has its adjec-
tival agreement. It is but a step further than the ordinary cir-
cumstantial participle which makes an additional statement. All
the varieties of the circumstantial participle can appear in the
absolute participle.

Nominative Absolute. It is possible thus to explain some ex-
amples of anacolutha in ancient Greek1 and the N. T., though
Blass2 demurs. Cf. ὁ πιστεύων εἰς ἔμε-ποτμαι ἐκ τῆς κοιλίας αὐτοῦ ἰε-
ὐσωσθεῖν (Jo. 7:38); ἐπιγνώστες, δὲ ἐγένετο μία ἐκ πάντων (Ac.
19:34); ὁ νικῶν δῶσῳ αὐτῷ (Rev. 3:21). Cf. also τῶν θελόντων and
οἱ κατέσθωστες (Mk. 12:40). So Mk. 7:19; Rev. 2:26. At any
rate it is the nominativus pendens, and there is not any special
difference. In the modern Greek (Thumb, Handb., p. 169) the
nominative absolute with the participle occurs, though rare, and
usually a conjunctural clause has supplanted the genitive ab-
solute.

Accusative Absolute. This construction was used with im-
personal verbs or phrases like δέον, ἔξον, παρόν. It was prob-
able an appositional addition to the sentence.3 It has nearly, if
not quite, disappeared from the N. T. The adverb τυχόν (1 Cor.
16:6) is really an instance of it, but not so ἔξον in Ac. 2:29,
where ἔστιν is probably to be supplied. Cf. ἔξον ἐν (Mt. 12:4)
and δέον ἐστίν (Ac. 19:36). Cf. also οὗ συμφέρον μέν in 2 Cor.
12:1. But a possible accusative absolute is γυνώστην ὄντα (Ac.
26:3), though it is very rare to see the accusative absolute with
a substantive of its own.4 In such instances it was usual to have
also ὡς or ὑσπερ.5 The accusative is an old idiom, appearing in
the oldest Greek title known to us.6 But it came to be rather
common in Thucydides.7 It was rare in the Attic orators. Luke
avoids the accusative absolute in Ac. 23:30, by an awkward8

1 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 259.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 251. He calls it "antiquated." It was never very
common.
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 524.
5 Thompson, Synt., p. 261.
7 Lell, Der Absolut-Akkusativ im Griech. bis zu Arist., 1892, p. 17.
8 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 252.
use of the genitive absolute, μηνωθείσης δέ μοι ἐπιβουλής εἰς τὸν ἄν-δρα ἔσεσθαι. The papyri use ἐξόντος rather than ἔξον.¹ We do not
have the acc. absolute in Ph. 1:7, since ὑμᾶς ὄντας is a resumption
(apposition) of ὑμᾶς before.

*Genitive Absolute.* It is by no means certain that the case
is always genitive. Indeed, it is pretty clear that some of these
examples are ablative. Probably some are real genitives of
time.² The Sanskrit uses chiefly the locative in these absolute
constructions. It is possible that the Latin ablative absolute
may sometimes be locative or instrumental.³ The use of the
true genitive in the Greek idiom is probably to be attributed
to expressions of time in the genitive case with which partic-
ciples were used. Then the temporal circumstantial participle
was right at hand. It is in Attic prose, particularly the orators,
that we see the highest, development of the idiom.⁴ The
accusative absolute was just as idiomatic as this genitive-ablative
construction, but it did not get the same hold on the language.⁵
See Cases for further remarks. The κοινή shows a rapid extension
of the genitive absolute. "In the papyri it may often be seen
forming a string of statements, without a finite verb for several
lines."⁶ In the N. T. different writers vary greatly, John's Gosp-
el, for instance, having it only one-fourth as often as the Acts.⁷
The most frequent use of the idiom is when the substantive (or
pronoun) and the participle stand apart with no syntactical con-
nection with any part of the sentence. Cf. Mk. 4:17, εἶτα γενο-
μένης θλίψεως ἡ διωγμοῦ διὰ τὸν λόγον εὐθὺς σκανδαλίζονται; Ac. 12:
18, γενομένης δὲ ἡμέρας ἦν τάραχος οὐκ ὀλίγος; 18:20; 7:5; Eph. 2:20;
Mk. 8:1; 2 Pet. 3:11; Heb. 9:6-8, 15, 19. These are perfectly
regular and normal examples. But sometimes the genitive abso-
late occurs where there is already a genitive in the sentence. So
Mt. 6:3, σοῦ δὲ ποιοῦντος — ἡ ἀριστερά σου; Jo. 4:51; Ac. 17:16. In
Mk. 14:3 we find a double gen. absolute ὄντος αὐτοῦ — κατακειμένου
αὐτοῦ. Even in the classical Greek the genitive absolute is found
when the participle could have agreed with some substantive or
pronoun in the sentence.⁸ It was done apparently to make the

¹ Oὐκ ἐξόντος, P. Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66).
² Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 524.
³ Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 167 f.
⁴ Cf. Spieker, The Genitive Abs. in the Attic Orators, Am. Jour. of Philol.,
VI, pp. 310-343.
⁵ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 251.
⁶ Moulton, Prol., p. 74.
participial clause more prominent. The papyri show illustrations. of the same thing, as in B. U. 1040 (ii/A.D.) χαίρω ὅτι μοι ταύτα ἐποίησας, ἐμοί μεταμελομένου περὶ μηδὲνός. It is fairly common in the N. T. We have it even when the part. refers to the subject of the verb, as in Mt. 1:18, μήστερείσης τῆς μητρὸς αὐτοῦ Μαρίας—ἐὑρέθη ἐξουσία. In Ro. 9:1 the construction is regular, though μοι and μου occur. In Mt. 8:1 we find καταβάντος αὐτοῦ—ἡκολούθησαν αὐτῷ. Cf. 5:1; 9:18; 17:22; 2 Cor. 4:18, etc. Likewise the genitive and the accusative come together as in Jo. 8:30, αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος—ἐπίστευσαν εἰς αὐτόν. Cf. also Mt. 18:25; Ac. 28:17. Quite unusual is Ac. 22:17 where we have μοι ὑποστρέψατε, προσευχομένου μου and γενέσθαι με. The N. T. occasionally uses the participle alone in the genitive absolute according to the occasional classic usage. In the papyri it is more frequent than in the N. T. In particular note the common ἔξοντος, P. Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66). Cf. also δηλωθέντος, B. U. 970 (ii/A.D.). See Mt. 17:14, ἑλθόντων; 17:26, εἰπότος; Ac. 21:31, ζητοῦτων. In Lu. 12:36, ἑλθόντος καὶ κρούσαντος εὐθέως ἀνοίξωσιν αὐτῷ, we have the genitive participle although αὐτῷ is present. Cf. B. G. U. 423 (ii/A.D.) ὅτι μου κινδυνεύοντος εἰς θάλασσαν ἔσωσε, where με the object of ἔσωσε is not expressed.

(f) The Independent Participle in a Sentence. There is no doubt that the use of the absolute participle (nominative, accusative, genitive ablative) is a sort of "implied predication." It remains to be considered whether the participle ever forms an independent sentence. We have seen that the inf. is occasionally so used. It is but a step from the independent clause to the independent sentence. Did the participle take it? The nominative absolute as a sort of anacoluthon appears in the ancient Greek. Cf. Plato, Apol. 21 C, καὶ διαλεγόμενος αὐτῷ ἔδοξε μοι ὁ ἀνήρ εἶναι σοφός. As the genitive absolute, like other circumstantial participles, retreated before the conjunctival clauses, there was an increasing tendency to blur or neglect the grammatical case agreements in the use of the participles. The N. T., like the κοινή in general, shows more examples of the anacoluthic nominative participle than the older Greek. The mental strain of so many participles in rapid conversation or writing made anacolutha

1 Cf. Moulton, Prol., pp. 74, 236; Cl. Rev., XV, p. 437.
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 74. This idiom is common in Xen. Roche, Beitr., p.
5 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 259.
easy. 

"Hence even writers of systematic training could not but occasionally blunder in the use of the circumstantial participle." Jannaris had thus concluded that the late Greek showed an independent use of the participle as anacoluthon. Blass would go no further than this. Viteau found abundant illustration of the independent use of the anacoluthic participle in the LXX. Viteau explains it as a Hebraism. But Moulton claims that the subject is removed from the realm of controversy by the proof from the papyri. Thumb finds the idiom in classical Greek and in the \( \kappaοινη \) (in the LXX, N. T., papyri, inscriptions, etc.). It is easy to be extreme on this point of dispute. In the chapter on Mode (the Imperative) adequate discussion appears concerning the participle as imperative. That discussion need not be repeated. It may be insisted, however, again that the participle in itself is never imperative nor indicative, though there seem to be examples in the N. T., as in the papyri, where, because of ellipsis or anacoluthon, the participle carries on the work of either the indicative or the imperative. In examples like 2 Cor. 1:3, \( \varepsilonυλογηтος \) \( \dot{o} \) \( \thetaεος \), either \( \varepsilonστιν \) or \( \varepsilonστω \) may be supplied with the verbal adjective. It must not be forgotten that this is the work of the interpreter to a large extent rather than of the grammarian. The manuscripts often vary in such examples and the editors differ in the punctuation. But the grammarian must admit the facts of usage. The papyri and the N. T. show that sometimes the participle was loosely used to carry on the verbal function in independent sentences. Cf. \( \alphaποστυγούντες \) \( το \) \( \ποινηρόν \), \( κοιλώμενοι \) \( τω \) \( \alphaγαθω \) (Ro. 12:9), for instance, where we have a complete sentence without connection with anything else. The preceding sentence is \( \tauη \) \( \alphaγαπη \) \( \αινώπωκριτος \) (an independent sentence itself) and it is followed by a series of independent participles (verses 10-13). In verse 14 we have abruptly \( \varepsilonυλογείτε \)\textemdash \( και \) \( \muη \) \( καταράσθε \) (imperatives) and then the absolute infinitive \( \chiαίρεν \) (imperatival also). The point seems to be incontrovertible. Cf. also Col. 3:16. It is only necessary to add a word about the independent participle in the midst of indicatives, since this use is far more frequent than the imperative idiom just noted. In general it may be said that no participle

---

1 Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p 505.  
2 Ib., pp. 500, 505.  
3 Gr. of Gk. N. T., p. 283.  
4 Le Verbe, pp. 200  
5 Prol., pp. 180 ff., 222 ff.  
6 Hellen., p. 131.  
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 180, cites Meisterh., pp. 244-246, for the use of the imp. part. in decrees. It is the nomination pendens applied to the part.
should be explained in this way that can properly be connected
with a finite verb. In Ro. 12:6, ἔχοντες δὲ it is clear that we can-
not carry on the participle as subordinate to ἔχομεν or ἐσμεν in the
preceding verses. W. H. boldly start a new sentence. In either
case, whether we have comma or period before, we must take
ἔχοντες as imperatival or indicative, on the one hand, or, on the
other hand, supply ἐσμεν or ὡμεν as ποιέστε is supplied in Ro. 13:
11 with καὶ εἰδότες τοῦ καιροῦ.¹ But other examples leave no such
alternative. We may first summarize Moulton's satisfactory ex-
position of the matter. There is a striking similarity between
the third person plural indicative and the participle in the Indo-
Germanic tongues (*bheronti, ferunt, φέρουσι, bairand, etc.). The
frequent ellipsis of est in the Latin perfect and passive is to be
noted also. The probability that the Latin second plural middle
indicative is really a participle which has been incorporated into
the verb inflection (cf. sequimini and ἐπόμενοι) is also suggestive.
This fact may point to the prehistoric time when the Latin used
the participle as indicative. The papyri re-enforce the argument
strongly. We quote a bit from Moulton²: "Tb. P. 14 (ii/B.C.),
tῶν οὖν σημαινομένων Ἡράτι παραγγελκότες ἐνώπιον, 'I gave notice in
person' (no verb follows). Tb. P. 42 (ib.), ἔδικημένος (no verb fol-
lows). A. P. 78 (ii A.D.) βίαν πάσχουν ἐκάστοτε, etc. (no verb)."
This may serve as a sample of many more like it. Moulton
(Prol., p. 223) adds that use of the part. as ind. or imper. in the
papyri is "not at all a mark of inferior education." See 1 Pet. 2:
12 where ἔχοντες does not agree with the παροίκους. We may now
approach the passages in dispute between Winer³ and Moulton.⁴
Moulton passes by Winer's suggestion that in 2 Cor. 4:13
ἔχοντες is to be taken with πιστεύομεν. This is probable, though
awkward. So in 2 Pet. 2:1 the participles can be joined with
παρεισάζουσιν. But in Ro. 5:11 it is, Moulton argues, somewhat
forced to take οὗ μόνον δὲ, ἀλλὰ καὶ καυχώμενοι otherwise than as
independent. If we once admit the fact of this idiom, as we
have done, this is certainly the most natural way to take it here.
Moulton is silent as to στελλόμενοι in 2 Cor. 8:20. Winer connects
it with συνεπέμψαμεν in verse 18 and he is supported by the punctu-
tuation of verse 19 as a parenthesis by W. H. But even so in
verse 19 we have οὗ μόνον δὲ ἀλλὰ καὶ χειροτονηθείς (cf. Ro. 5:11)
stranded with no verb. Moulton also passes by Heb. 6:8 and 2
Pet. 3:5. In Heb. 7:1 Moulton follows W. H. in reading ὅ (not

¹ Moulton, Prol., pp. 180, 183 f.
² Ib., pp. 223 f.
³ W.-Th., p. 351 f.
⁴ Prol., p. 224 f.
So he sees no necessity for taking ἔρμηνευόμενος as an indicative. In Heb. 8:10; 10:16, Moulton takes διδοὺς as parallel with ἐπιγράψῳ, whereas Winer would resolve ἐπιγράψῳ into a participle. Here Moulton is clearly right. In Ac. 24:5, εὐρότερας γάρ, we have anacoluthon as both Winer and Moulton agree. Moulton adds: "Luke cruelly reports the orator verbatim." Moulton omits to comment on Winer's explanation of the parenthetical anacoluthon in 2 Pet. 1:17, λαβών γάρ. It is a violent anacoluthon and Winer does not mend it. Note 2 Cor. 5:6, θαρρούντες, where after a parenthesis we have θαρρούμεν δέ (resumptive). But Moulton takes 2 Cor. 7:5 θαλάβομενοι as an example of the "indicative" participle. So does he explain Ro. 12:6 ἔχοντες, and ἔχων in Rev. 10:2. In Ac. 26:20 the MSS. vary between ἀπαγγέλλων and ἀπήγγελλον. In Heb. 10:1 ἔχων will also be independent if δύναται be read. In Ph. 1:30 ἔχοντες has ὑμῖν, above and halts in the case agreement. On the whole, therefore, we may conclude that, while every instance is to be examined on its merits, a number of real examples of the idiom may be admitted in the N. T. Viteau has entirely too large a list of such instances. Many of them admit a much simpler explanation as in Ph. 1:30 above. In Revelation, it is true, there is more than usual laxity in the agreement of the participle, especially when it is in apposition. There is also a change from nominative to accusative between ἰδοὺ and ἴδον as in Rev. 4:1-5; 7:9; 14:1-3; 14:14, etc. But there are real examples in Rev., as καὶ ἔχων (1:16), λέγων, (11:1). With all this development along a special line we must not forget that the participle is both adjective and verb. Blass has a careful discussion of "the free use of the participle." In Col. 1:26 he notes that the participle ἀποκεκρυμένον is continued by the indicative ἐφανερώθη. Cf. Jo. 5:44.

(g) **Co-ordination between Participles.** Blass uses the term "conjunctive" participle instead of a special use of the "circumstantial" participle. It is not a particularly happy phrase. But it does accent the notion that this participle, though an addition to the principal verb, is still joined to it in grammatical agreement. Blass shows clearly how identity of action may be expressed by two finite verbs, as well as by the pleonastic participle of identical action. Cf. Jo. 1:25 καὶ ἠρώτησαν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἔστη (Mt. 15:23 ἠρώτησον λέγοντες), 12:44 ἐκραξεν καὶ ἐπεν

1 Le Verbe, pp. 201  
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 284 f.  
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 247.  
4 Ib., p. 250.
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

(Mt. 8:29 ἐκραξάν λέγοντες), 13:21 ἐμαρτύρησεν καὶ ἐπε (Ac. 13: 22 ἐπευ μαρτυρήσας), 18:25 ἤρνησατο καὶ ἐπευ, (Mt. 26:70 ἤρνη-
σατο λέγων), where John prefers the particularity of the finite
verb. But see also Lu. 6:48, ἔσκαψεν καὶ ἐβάθυνεν, 'he dug and
depended= 'he dug deep.' Cf. Jo. 8:59. There remains the
relation of participles to each other when a series of them comes
together. There is no rule on this subject beyond what applies
to other words. Two or more participles may be connected by
καὶ as in Ac. 3:8, περίπατών καὶ ἀλλόμενος καὶ αἰώνων τῶν θεῶν. But we
have asyndeton1 in Ac. 18:23, διερχόμενος τὴν Γαλατικὴν χώραν,
στηρίζων τοὺς μαθητάς. Cf. Lu. 6:38, μέτρον καὶ πεπιεσμένον σεσα-
λευμένον ὑπερεκχυμνόμενον δώσουσιν. Sometimes καὶ occurs only
once as in Mk. 5:15, καθήμενοι ἰματισμένον καὶ σωφρονοῦντα.
may be a subtle reason for such a procedure as in Ac. 18:22,
κατελθὼν εἰς Καισαρίαν, ἀναβὰς καὶ ἀσπασάμενος, where the first parti-
ciple stands apart in sense from the other two. Cf. also Mk. 5:
32. In a list of participles one may be subordinate to the other
as in Mk. 5:30, ἐπιγυνοῦς ἐν ἐαυτῷ τὴν ἔξ αὐτοῦ δύναμιν ἐξελθοῦσαν
ἐπιστραφεῖς. This accumulation of participles is only occasional
in the Synoptic Gospels (cf. Mt. 14:19; 27:48; and, in particu-
lar, Mk. 5:25-27), but very common in Acts and the Pauline
Epistles. Blass2 concedes to Luke in Acts "a certain amount of
stylistic refinement" in his use of a series of participles, while
with Paul it is rather "a mere stringing together of words," an
overstatement as to Paul. Luke was not an artificial rhetorician
nor was Paul a mere bungler. When Paul's heart was all ablaze
with passion, as in 2 Corinthians, he did pile up participles like
boulders on the mountain-side, a sort of volcanic eruption. Cf.
2 Cor. 3:8-10; 6:9 f.; 9:11ff. But there is always a path
through these participles. Paul would not let himself be caught
in a net of mere grammatical niceties. If necessary, he broke
the rule and went on (2 Cor. 8: 20). But Moulton3 is right in
saying that all this is "more a matter of style than of gram-
mar." It is rhetoric.

(h) Οὐ and μὴ with the Participle. It is worth noting that in
Homer4 οὐ is the normal negative of the participle, μὴ occurring
only once, Od. 4. 684, and in an optative sentence of wish.
It cannot be claimed that in Homer has won its place with
the participle. In modern Greek μὴ alone occurs with the pres-
ent participle (Thumb, Handb., p. 200). It is generally said that

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 250.  2 Ib., p. 251.  3 Prot., p. 231.  4 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 262 f.
in classical Attic οὐ is always the negative of the participle unless condition or concession is implied when the negative is μὴ. But if one looks at all the facts up to 400 B.C. he will go slow before he asserts that μὴ is proof that the participle shows a conditional or concessive force. Jannaris claims the rule only for Attic, "though even here οὐ is not rarely replaced by μὴ," that is to say, the rule does not apply even in Attic. The use of "replaced" is wholly gratuitous when it is admitted that the rule does not apply outside of Attic. It is so hard to be historical always even in an historical grammar. If one takes the long view, from Homer with its one use of to the modern Greek with nothing but οὐ he sees a steady progress in the use of μὴ which gradually ousted οὐ altogether. The Attic marks one stage, the κοινή another. It is true that in the Attic there is a sort of correspondence between οὐ and the participle and the indicative with οὐ on the one hand, while, on the other, μὴ and the participle correspond to the subjunctive or the optative with μὴ. But οὐ occurred in Homer with the subj. and persisted with the indicative. The lines crossed and the development was not even, but on the whole μὴ gradually pushed οὐ aside from the participle. In the N. T., as in the κοινή generally, the development has gone quite beyond the Attic. In the Attic the use of οὐ was the more general, while in the κοινή the use of μὴ is normal. In the N. T. there is no need to explain μὴ with the participle. That is what you expect. Cf. Lu. 12:33 μὴ παλαιοῦμενα, Jo. 5:23 ὁ μὴ τιμῶν Ac. 17:6 μὴ εὐρότετες, Heb. 11:13 μὴ κομισάμενοι. In the N. T. it is οὐ that calls for explanation, not μὴ. But it may be said at once that the N. T. is in thorough accord with the κοινή on this point. Even in a writer of the literary κοινή like Plutarch one notes the inroads of μὴ. The papyri go further than Plutarch, but still have examples of οὐ, like οὐ κεκομισμένοι P. Par. (B.C. 163), τῶν οὐκ ἐν λευκαῖς ἐσθήσιν ἐν θεάτρῳ καθίσαντα 0. P. 471 (ii/A.D.), ὁδέπω πεπληρωκότων 0. P. 491 (ii/A.D.), οὐ δυνάμενος A. P. 78 (ii/A.D.). Moulton thinks that in many of these papyri examples there is "the lingering consciousness that the proper negative of a downright fact is οὐ." In general it may be said of the κοινή that the presence of a with the participle means that the negative is clear-cut

3 Blass, Cr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255.
4 See further exx. in Moulton, Prol., p. 231.
5 Prol., p. 232.
and decisive. Cf. Mt. 22:11 οὐκ ἐνδεδυμένον ἔνδυμα γάμου, (Lu. 6: 42) οὐ βλέπων, (Jo. 10:12) ὁ μισθωτὸς καὶ οὐκ ὃν ποιήν, (Ac. 7:5) οὐκ ὄρτος αὐτῷ τέκνου (17:27) καὶ γε οὐ μακρὰν –ὑπάρχοντα, (26: 22) οὐδὲν ἐκτὸς λέγων, (28:17) οὐδὲν ποιήσας, (1 Cor. 4:14) οὐκ ἐν- τρέπων, (9:26) ως οὐκ ἀέρα δέρων, (2 Cor. 4:8) ἀλλ’ οὐ στενοχωρού- μενοι, (Ph. 3:3) καὶ οὐκ ἐν σαρκὶ πεποιθοῦτες, (Col. 2:19) καὶ οὐ κρατών, (Heb. 11:1) πραγμάτων οὐ βλεπομένων, (11:35) οὐ προσδεξάμε- νοι, (1 Pet. 1:8) οὐκ ἵδουτες (2:10) ο̂ οὐκ ἡλεμένοι. In all these we have no special departure from the Attic custom, save that in Ac. 17:27 the participle is concessive. But we have just seen that the Attic was not rigid about οὐ and μή with the participle. In two of the examples above οὐ and μή come close together and the con- trast seems intentional. Thus in Mt. 22:11 we have οὐκ ἐνδεδυ- μένον ἔνδυμα γάμου, while in verse 12 we read μή ἔχων ἔνδυμα γάμου. The first instance lays emphasis on the actual situation in the description (the plain fact) while the second instance is the hypothetical argument about it. In 1 Pet. 1:8 we read δὲν οὐκ ἵδουτες ἀγαπάτε, εἰς δὲν ἄρτι μή ὄρωντες πιστεύοντες δὲ ἀγάλλιατε. Here οὐ harmonizes with the tense of ἵδουτες as an actual experience, while μή with ὄρωντες is in accord with the concessive idea in con- trast with πιστεύοντες. Cf. Hort in loco who holds that the change of particles here is not capricious. "Though Blass thinks it arti- ficial to distinguish, it is hard to believe that any but a slovenly writer would have brought in so rapid a change without a rea- son."1 It may be admitted further that "in Luke, Paul and Hebrews we have also to reckon with the literary conscious- ness of an educated man, which left some of the old idioms even where μή) had generally swept them away."2 See also τὰ μή καθη- κοντα (Ro. 1:28) and Text. Rec. τὰ οὐ ἀνήκοντα (Eph. 5:4). Cf. μή and οὐ in Ac. 9:9. Blass3 notes that the Hebrew צו is regu- larly translated in the LXX by οὐ without any regard to the Greek refinement of meaning between οὐ and μή with the par- ticipe. Hence in the N. T. quotations from the LXX this peculiarity is to be noted. Moulton4 observes also that, while this is true, the passages thus quoted happen to be instances where a single word is negatived by οὐ. Cf. Ro. 9:25 τήν οὐκ ἡγαπημένην, (Gal. 4:27) ἡ οὐκ τίκτουσα, ἡ οὐκ ὁδίνουσα. A case like Ac. 19:11, οὐ τὰς τυχόνσας, is, of course, not pertinent. It is a "common vernacular phrase,"5 besides the fact that οὐ is not the

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 232.  
2 Ib.  
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255.  
4 Prol., p. 232.  
5 Ib., p. 231.
negative of the participle\(^1\) any more than it is in Ac. 19:11; 28:21. Moulton\(^2\) also rules out οὐκ ἔξον (2 Cor. 12:4) on the ground that it is the equivalent of the indicative. The copula is not expressed. But note οὐκ ἔξοντος, Oxy. 275 (A.D. 66). On this count the showing for οὔ with the participle is not very large in the N.T. Luke has οὔ five times with the participle (Lu. 6:42; Ac. 7:5; 17:27; 26:22; 28:17). Paul leads with a dozen or so (Ro. 9:25; Gal. 4:27 twice; 1 Cor. 4:14; 9:26; 2 Cor. 4:8, 9; Ph. 3:3; Col. 2:19; 1 Th. 2:4). Hebrews has two (11:1, 35) and Peter three (1 Pet. 1:8; 2:10; 2 Pet. 1:16, οὐκ--ἀλλᾶ). Matthew has only one (22:11), and note μὴ ἔχων in the next verse. The MSS. vary also between the negatives as in Mt. 22:11, where C\(^3\)D have μὴ which Blass\(^3\) adopts with his whimsical notions of textual criticism. At any rate Matthew, Luke (Gospel) and John use μὴ almost exclusively with the participle, while Mark, James, the Johannine Epistles and Revelation do not have οὔ at all with the participle. In Ro. 8:20, οὐχ ἐκουσά, the old participle is merely an adjective as in Heb. 9:11. In Ro. 9:25, τὸν οὔ λαόν, the negative occurs with a substantive (quotation from LXX). The ancient Greek would usually have added ὄντα.

(i) Other Particles with the Participle. The ancient Greek\(^4\) had quite a list of adverbs (particles) that were used with the circumstantial participle on occasion to make clearer the precise relation of the participle to the principal verb or substantive. Some of these (like ἀπε, ὁπο, ὁπα) no longer occur with the part. in the N.T. But some remain in use. These particles, it should be noted, do not change the real force of the participle. They merely sharpen the outline. The simplest form of this usage is seen in the adverbs of time like τὸ πρῶτον (Jo. 9:8); ποτέ (Gal. 1:23. Cf. Eph. 2:13; Lu. 22:32); πυνότερον (Ac. 24:26). In Mk. 9:20; Jo. 5:6 note other expressions of time. More idiomatic is the use of εὐθὺς as in εἰσελθοῦσα εὐθὺς (Mk. 6:25). Cf. also ἢδη ὄψιας γενομένης (Mk. 15:42), ἤτι ὤν (2 Th. 2:5) and ἄρτι ἔλθοντος Τιμοθέου (1 Th. 3:6). Blass\(^5\) denies that ἀμα with the participle in the N.T. suggests simultaneousness or immediate sequence. He sees in ἀμα καὶ ἠλπίζων (Ac. 24:26) only ‘withal in the expectation,’ not ‘at the same time hoping.’ I question

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255 f.  
2 Prol., p. 231.  
5 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 252.
the correctness of Blass' interpretation on this point. Cf. also
άμα ἀνέντες (27:40); προσευχόμενοι ἀμα καὶ περὶ ἡμῶν (Col. 4:3),
where it requires some overrefinement to refuse the classic idiom
to Luke. Under the concessive participle we saw examples of
καὶ γε (Ac. 17:27), καίτα (Heb. 4:3), καίτερ (Heb. 5:8, etc.).
There is also the use of οἷμος in the principal sentence to call at-
tention to the concessive force of the participle (1 Cor. 14:7).
So οὖτως points back to a participle of time or manner (Ac. 20:
11). Worth noting, besides, is καὶ ταῦτα νεκρωμένου
(Heb. 11:12). There remain ὡς, ὡσί, ὡσερ. The use of ὡσεί
(Ro. 6:13) and of ὡσερ (Ac. 2:2) is limited to condition or
comparison. It is only with ὡς that there is any freedom or
abundance. Blass¹ notes the absence of the accusative abso-
lute with ὡς in the N. T. and its absence from the future parti-
ciple save in Heb. 13:17, where it is not strictly design. There
is nothing specially significant in the phrase οὖχ ὡς, 'not as if,' in
Ac. 28:19; 2 Jo. 5. The N. T., like the classical Greek, uses ὡς
without the participle in abbreviated expressions like ὡς τῷ κυρίῳ
(Col. 3:23); ὡς ἐν θεῷ (Ro. 13:13); ὡς δι’ ἡμῶν (2 Th. 2:2),
etc., where the participle is easily supplied from the context.²
In some instances one must note whether the particle does not
belong with the principal verb. But, common as ὡς is with the
participle, it does not change the nature of the participle with
which it occurs.³ The participle with ὡς may be causal, tempo-
rnal, conditional, manner, etc. Then again ὡς may be used to
express the notion of the speaker or writer as well as that of one
who is reported. In truth, ὡς implies nothing in itself on that
point. The context alone must determine it.⁴ The various uses
of ὡς itself should be recalled. There may be nothing but com-
parison, as in ὡς ἐξουσίαν ἐγείρω (Mk. 1:22); ὡς οὐκ ἀέρας δέρων
(1 Cor. 9:26). So also Mk. 6:34; 2 Cor. 6: 9 f.; 1 Pet. 2:13,
16. In Lu. 22:26 f. observe ὡς ὁ διακονῶν. The causal idea is
prominent in ὡς ἠλεημένος (1 Cor. 7:25). Cf. Heb. 12:27 and
D in Ac. 20:13, ὡς μέλλονυ. The concessive or conditional notion
is dominant in 1 Cor. 7:29 f.; 2 Cor. 5:20, ὡς τοῦ θεοῦ παρακα-
λοῦντος δι’ ἡμῶν. So also in Ac. 3:12; 28:19; 2 Jo. 5. In Lu.
16:1, ὡς διασκόρπισιν, the charge is given by Jesus as that of the

¹ Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 253. ² Ib.
³ Fuhrer, De Particulae ὡς cum Participis et. Praepositionibus punctae
Usu Thucydideo, 1889, p. 7.
⁴ Goodwin, M. and T., p. 343.
slanderer (διεβληθη) and the context implies that it is untrue (only alleged).\footnote{Cf. Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 253.} Pilate makes a similar use of ὁς ἀποστρέφοντα τὸν λαόν in Lu. 23:14. He declines by the use of ὁς to accept the correctness of the charge of the Sanhedrin against Jesus. For a similar use see ὁς μέλλοντας (Ac. 23:15); ὁς μέλλων (23:20); προφάσει ὁς μελλόντων (genitive absolute 27:30). But in 2 Cor. 5:20 (see above) Paul endorses the notion that he is an ambassador of God and ὁς is not to be interpreted as mere pretence. God is speaking through Paul. There is no instance of ἀν with the participle in the N. T. as appears in classic Greek. Winer\footnote{W.-M., p. 378.} notes two instances of ὁς ἀν with the participle in the LXX (2 Macc. 1:11; 3 Macc. 4:1). To these Moulton\footnote{Prol., p. 167.} adds another (2 Macc. 12:4) and a genitive absolute example in the papyri, Par. P. 26 (11/B.C.), ὁς ἀν εὐτακτησμενῶν. Cf. also ib., ὁς ἀν ὑπὸ τῆς λυμῆς διαλύμενοι. The inscrs. show it also, O. G. I. S. 90, 23 (ii/B.C.), ὁς ἀν—συνεστηκώι. Blass\footnote{Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 253.} finds a genitive absolute with ὁς ἀν Barnabas 6:11. All this is interesting as fore-shadowing the modern Greek use of σαν as a conjunction.\footnote{Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 167; Hatz., Einl., p. 217.}
CHAPTER XXI

PARTICLES (AI ΠΑΡΑΘΗΚΑΙ)

I. Scope. The word particle is a Latin diminutive, particula (cf. French particule) from pars. It is a small part of something. Longinus terms this part of speech παραθήκη with the notion that it was a word placed beside another. No portion of syntax is treated with so little satisfaction in the grammars. The grammarians are not agreed as to what parts of speech should be called "particles." Riemann and Goelzer treat under this term (Les Particules) negative particles, particles of comparison and prepositions. Jannaris includes prepositions, conjunctions and negative particles. Kühner-Gerth here discuss conjunctions, prepositions and the modal adverbs, though they use the phrase "die sogenannten Partikeln." Blass almost confines the discussion of particles to conjunctions. He makes the two terms equivalent: "Particles (Conjunctions)." Winery uses the word broadly to cover all adverbs, prepositions and conjunctions. Monro limits the designation to certain conjunctions and adverbs "that are mainly used to show the relation between other words and between clauses." But he does not treat all conjunctions (paratactic and hypotactic) nor all modal adverbs. He passes by prepositions. Brugmann sees clearly that, as there is no real distinction between adverbs and prepositions, so there is no fast line ("keine feste Grenze") between "particles" and other adverbs. All languages have a large group of words that pass over into the category of particles, but Brugmann cuts the Gordian knot by declaring that it is not a function of scientific grammar to delimit these words. That is a matter of subjective standpoint. He takes little interest in the various subdivisions of the particles, but he extends the term to its widest sense to

1 Synt., pp. 802-820.
3 II, pp. 113-347.
5 W.-Th., pp. 356-512.
cover all modal adverbs, prepositions and conjunctions. Brugmann notes that many of these particles go back to the Indo-Germanic time and hence their etymology is unknown. He treats the particles from the standpoint of their origin so far as known. Hartung\textsuperscript{1} takes a much narrower view of particles. He discusses the paratactic conjunctions and the intensive particles. He\textsuperscript{2} conceives that the greater portion of the particles have no meaning in themselves, but are merely modifications on other words or on whole sentences. This is not strictly correct. We are not always able to discover the original import of these words, but it is probable that they originally had a definite meaning. It is true that the particles are all subordinated to other words in various ways. In a broad way it may be stated that there are four classes of words (verbs, nouns, pronouns, particles) in the sentence. From this point of view the word particle covers all the adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions and interjections. But it is impossible, as Brugmann holds, to make a perfectly scientific treatment of the particles without much overlapping. The interjections in one sense do not belong to grammar. The negative and the interrogative particles cannot be properly treated under adverbs, though they are adverbs. So also conjunctions are adverbs, but a good deal more. Intensive particles again are adverbs, but more. It is not worth while to recount the story of the adverbs and the prepositions at this stage. They are particles, but they have received sufficient discussion in special chapters. In the same way the construction of hypothetic conjunctions came in for somewhat careful treatment in connection with subordinate sentences under Mode. Hence, hypothetic conjunctions do not here demand as much discussion as the paratactic conjunctions. One has to be, to a certain extent, arbitrary in this field, since the ground is so extensive and so much remains to be clone. There is still need of a modern and exhaustive treatise on the Greek Particles. It was in 1769 that the Dutch scholar Hoogeveen\textsuperscript{3} wrote his book. He was followed by Hartung.\textsuperscript{4} Klotz\textsuperscript{5} reworked the writings of Devarius. In

\textsuperscript{1} Lehre von den Partikeln der griech. Spr., Tl. I, 1832; Tl. II, 1S33.
\textsuperscript{2} Ib., Tl. I, p. 37. Schroeder (Über die formelle Untersch. der Reclet., 1874, p. 35 f.) writes well on the obscurity of the origin of particles and the use of the term.
\textsuperscript{3} Doctrina Particularum Linguae Graecae. Ed. Secunda, 1806.
\textsuperscript{4} See above.
\textsuperscript{5} De Graecae Linguae Particulis, vol. I, 1840; II, 1842.
1861 Baumlein produced his *Untersuchungen uber griech. Parti-
heln*. Paley\(^1\) has carried the work on, as has Navarre.\(^2\) There
are, to be sure, a great number of monographs on special groups
or on single particles.\(^3\) "If any particular section of Greek gram-
mar were taken as a specimen to illustrate the historical evolu-
tion of the Greek language, no better representative could be
selected than the section of the particles."\(^4\) Jannaris speaks thus,
not because the grammars have treated the particles with such
skill, but because the particles best show the growth and decay
of parallel words before other new synonyms that are constantly
coming into existence. The particles come to a sharp point and
gradually lose the edge and whittle down into platitudes. Then
they give way to others with more freshness. In general, the
particles mark the history of the effort to relate words with each
other, clause with clause, sentence with sentence, paragraph
with paragraph. They are the hinges of speech, the joints of
language, or the delicate turns of expression, the nuances of
thought that are often untranslatable. We must here confine
our attention to Intensive Particles, Negative Particles, Interrog-
ative Particles, Conjunctions and Interjections. This order is
chosen for logical reasons simply, not because this was the order
of development. That we do not know. The particles that are
linked to single words logically come before conjunctions which
have to do with clauses and sentences. Interjections stand apart
and so are put last in the list. Some of the particles are employed
with words, clauses and sentences (like ἀρα, δὲ, οὖν), so that a strict
division on this basis is not possible.\(^5\)

II. Intensive or Emphatic Particles (παραθέθαι ἐμφατικαί or
παραπληρωματικοὶ σύνδεσμοι according to Dionysius Thrax).

1. LIMITATIONS. Here again there is no absolute agreement
as to what particles are considered "emphatic" or "intensive."
Winer, indeed, has no separate discussion of the intensive par-
ticles like γε, περ. He admits\(^6\) that, while the Greek of the N. T.
uses adverbs well in an *extensive* sense, it is defective in the in-
tensive use. Adverbs of place, time, manner, all come in abund-
ance in the N. T. Thompson\(^7\) follows Winer in the absence of
discussion of the intensive particles. The intensive particles, in

\(^1\) The Gk. Particles, 1881.
\(^3\) Cf. Hubner, Grundr. zu Vorlesungen uber die griech. Synt., pp. 70-87.
\(^5\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 240.
\(^6\) W.-Th., p. 462.
\(^7\) Synt. of Attic Gk.
fact, as a rule receive poor handling in the grammars.\textsuperscript{1} But Paley\textsuperscript{2} properly sees that they are "an elaborately finished part of a most complex and beautiful machinery." Poetry, especially tragic poetry, uses these emphatic particles more than other kinds of writing. In Homer "they sustain and articulate the pulses of emotion. By them alone we can perceive that Greek was the language of a witty, refined, intellectual, sensitive and passionate people. It would be impossible in any book to tabulate the delicate shades of meaning, the subtle, intricate touches of irony or pathos, the indescribable grace and power which the particles lend to many of the grandest passages in ancient literature."\textsuperscript{3} It is only by a close study of the entire context that these can be felt. They can never be fully translated from one language to another. Thus it is impossible to reproduce in English the various shades of meaning of μέν and δέ when in contrast. "The attempt to translate a particle leads to curious results.

Dr. Cyril Jackson used always to render Τρώξ ἀα by 'the Trojans, God help them,' and a former head-master of Eton always distinguished between σοί, 'Sir, to you,' and τοί, 'at your service' (Coleridge, Greek Classic Poets, p. 221).\textsuperscript{4} Indeed, it is not possible to put into mere written language all that the look, the gesture, the tone of voice, the emphasis of the accent carried when heard and seen. Cf. a Frenchman in conversation. The spoken vernacular thus has all the advantage of the written style. All the vernacular cannot be reproduced on the page. Cf. the charm of the actual speech of Jesus and Paul. The N. T. is in the vernacular κοινή, but even so it does not reproduce to any great extent the witchery of the old Greek particles. Time has worn them down very much. Still, we do find them here and there. There is a good example in Ph. 3:8, ἀλλὰ μέν ὁδυ γε καὶ ἕσομαι. So also εἰ πως ἡδη ποτε (Ro. 1:10) and τί ἔτι κάγω ὑς (3:7). Cf. P. B. M. 42 (B.C. 168) οὐ μὴν ἀλλ' ἐπεὶ καὶ and 0. P. 1164, 5 (vi/vii A.D.) οὐ μὴν δὲ ἀλλά καί. This shows that Paul at least knew how to indicate the finer shades of thought by means of the Greek particles. Blass\textsuperscript{5} notes that, in comparison with the Semitic languages, the N. T. seems to make excessive use of the particles, poor as the showing is in comparison with the classic period. "Modern Greek has lost the classical Greek wealth of connective and other particles which lend nicety and

\textsuperscript{1} Paley, The Gk. Particles, p. vi.  
\textsuperscript{2} Ib., p. ix.  
\textsuperscript{3} Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 195.  
\textsuperscript{4} Ib.  
\textsuperscript{5} Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 259.
precision of thought. Only καί (οὖτε, οὔδέ), η and the less commonly used conjunctions ἀλλά, πλήν, ὃμως have been retained. The loss of γάρ, ἄρα has been compensated by new formations; but the ancient Greek τέ, δέ, μέν—δέ, μέντοι, μή, οὖν (γοῦν), ὡτι, δή, γέ, πέρ have left no successors" (Thumb, Handb., p. 185).

The papyri seem barren of intensive particles in comparison with the older Greek. Jannaris'1 observes how these postpositive particles (γέ, δή, μέν πέρ, τοί and their compounds) tend in the later Greek either to disappear or to become prepositive. The N. T. is in harmony with this result. The same thing occurs with ᾧρα, which sometimes becomes prepositive, but that is not true of γάρ, δέ οὖν. Dionysius Thrax2 has a very extensive list of "expletive particles" or παραφλωρματικοί σύνδεσμοι (εἰσὶ δὲ οἴδερ
δή, ρά, νύ, τοῦ, τοί, θήν ᾧρ, δήτα, πέρ, πώ, μήν, ἄν, οὖ, νύν, οὖν, κέν, γέ, ἀλλά, μήν, τοίνυν, τοίγραφον). Some of these (like ᾧρα, οὖν, ἀλλά, and one might add γάρ, δέ) are so prevailingly conjunctival that they are best treated under conjunctions. Others (like κέν, ρά) belong to earlier stages of the language. The discussion of οὖν could have come here very well, since it is undoubtedly intensive whatever its actual meaning, whether it is blended with ei into εάν or used with ὅς, ὅστις, ἣνα, ὅπως, ὅς, etc., or used with the verb itself in the apodosis of a condition. It is a modal adverb of emphasis (now definite as in Rev. 8:1, now indefinite as in Mt. 23:18). It is like a chameleon and gets its colour from its environment or from its varying moods. This fickleness of meaning is true of all the intensive particles. Indeed, Dionysius Thrax is rather slighting in his description of these words, ὅσοι παρόντες οὖδέν ὃθησαίναι οὔτε μήν χωρίσθέντες λυμαίνονται. He contradicts his disparagement by the use of μήν in this very sentence.

The adverbial nature of the intensive particles is well shown by the variety of usage of the modal adverb οὔτως. See Thayer's Lexicon for the N. T. illustrations, which are very numerous (some 200). In Jo. 4:6, ἐκαθέζετο οὔτως ἐπὶ τῇ πιστῇ, we have a good example of the possibilities of οὔτως. The local adverb πού dwindles from 'somewhere' (Heb. 2:6) to 'somewhat' in Ro. 4:19. Cf. also δὴ πού (‘surely’) in Heb. 2:16. Some of the temporal adverbs also at times approach the emphatic particles. Cf. το λοιπῶν in Ph. 3:1; 4:8 (see Kennedy in loco) almost3 =οὖν.

But in the N. T. ἀρτι and ἦδη are always strictly temporal. How-

---

1 Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 400.
3 So mod. Gk., Thumb, Handb., p. 184.
ever, \(\pi\omicron\omicron\\acute{\nu}\acute{e}\) sometimes loses its notion of ‘once upon a time’ (Gal. 1:23) and fades into that of ‘ever’ as in 1 Cor. 9:7; Eph. 5:29. In \(\grave{h}d\acute{h}\ \pi\omicron\omicron\\acute{\nu}\acute{e}\) (Ro. 1:10; Ph. 4:10) it is more the notion of culmination (‘now at last’) than of time. But in \(\mu\acute{h}\ \pi\omicron\omicron\\acute{e}\) the notion of time may be wholly gone before that of contingency (‘lest perchance’), as in Lu. 12:58. In the N. T. we find undoubted instances of the non-temporal use of \(\nu\omicron\omicron\) and \(\nu\omicron\omicron\acute{h}\) where the sense differs little from \(\delta\acute{h}\) or \(\omicron\omicron\omicron\). Some of the passages are in doubt. But the logical and emotional use, as distinct from the temporal, is clear in Jo. 15:22, 24 where \(\nu\omicron\omicron\ \delta\acute{e}\) gives the contrast to the preceding conditions, 'but as it is.' Cf. also 1 Jo. 2:28, \(\kappa\acute{a}i\ \nu\omicron\omicron\ \tau\acute{e}k\nu\acute{a}\), where John's emotional appeal is sharpened by the use of \(\nu\omicron\omicron\). Cf. likewise \(\kappa\acute{a}i\ \nu\omicron\omicron\ \delta\acute{e}\upomega\) in Ac. 7:34 (LXX). Cf. \(\kappa\acute{a}i\ \nu\omicron\omicron\), B. U. 530 (i/A.D.). In general, the N. T. language, like the English, leaves most of the emotion and finer shades of thought to be brought out by the reader himself. "The historical books of the N. T., and especially their dialogues and discourses, are only fully and truly intelligible to us in reading them in high voice in the original Greek text, and in supplying the intonation, the gestures, the movement, that is to say, in reconstituting by the imagination the scene itself."\(^1\)

2. THE N. T. ILLUSTRATIONS.

(a) \(\Gamma\acute{e}\). We may begin with \(\gamma\acute{e}\). The origin of \(\gamma\acute{e}\) is by no means certain. In the Boeotian, Doric and Eleatic dialects it is \(\gamma\acute{\alpha}\). It seems to correspond\(^2\) to the \(k\) in the Gothic \(mi-k\) (German \(mi-ch\)). Cf. Greek \(\acute{e}\upmu\acute{e}-\gamma\acute{e}\). Brugmann sees also a kinship to the \(g\) in the Latin \(ne-g-otium, ne-g-legere, ne-g-are\). Hartung\(^3\) connects it with the adverb \(\zeta\acute{\alpha}\). It may also be the same word as the Vedic Sanskrit \(gha\), which is used in the same way.\(^4\) Cf. further \(qui\) in the Latin \(qui-dem\). It is not so common in the \(k\omicron\omicron\hat{h}\) as in the classic Attic (Radermacher, \(N. T. \acute{G}\Gamma.\), p. 29). Its function is to bring into prominence the particular word with which it occurs. It is enclitic and so postpositive. The feelings are sharply involved when \(\gamma\acute{e}\) is present. It suits the Greek,\(^5\) which "delights in pointed questions, irony and equivocal assent." But there is no English equivalent and it frequently cannot be translated at all. Hartung\(^6\) sees in \(\gamma\acute{e}\) a comparative element, while

---

\(^1\) Viteau, Etude stir le grec, 1896, p. ii.


\(^4\) K.-G., II, p. 171.


\(^6\) Partikellehre, I, p. 326.
καί is cumulative and arithmetical. As a matter of fact, γέ brings to the fore the idea of the word with which it is used, but adds no distinctive notion of its own. Hubner calls it a concessive particle on a par with δύνας. But that is not always true of γέ. The distinction made by γέ may be either the least important or the most important (Thayer). The resultant idea may be ‘at least,’ this much if no more, a concessive notion. We find this to be the significance of γέ in Lu. 11:8, διά γέ τήν ἀναιδίαν αὐτοῦ. Here, however, the γέ more properly belongs to ἀναιδίαν, since that is the point, not the preposition διά. The same slight variation from the classic idiom appears in 18:5, διά γέ τὸ παρέχειν μοι κόπον τήν χήραν ταύτην. The concessive minimizing idea comes out clearly in Jo. 4:2, καίτοι γε Ἰησοῦς αὐτός. See further ἄρα γέ and καί γέ in Ac. 17:27, and, in particular, ἀλλά γέ ὑμῖν εἰμί (1 Cor. 9:2) where again the ancient idiom would prefer ὑμῖν γέ, ‘to you at least’ (if not to others). Once more note εἰ γέ in Eph. 3:2; 4:21; Col. 1:23, and εἰ δὲ μή γέ in Mt. 6:1; 9:17, etc. There is a keen touch of irony in Ro. 9:20, ὃ ἀνθρώπου, μουντύγχο σῶ τίς εἰ; Cf. ἄρα γέ in Mt. 17:26. On the other hand γέ means 'this much,' ‘as much as this,’ in other contexts. So in Lu. 24:21, ἀλλά γέ καί σὺν πάσι τούτωι, where the ascensive force is accentuated by καί, σὺν and ἀλλά (affirmative here, not adversative), and the climax of the crescendo is reached in γέ. The same climactic force of the particles occurs in Ph. 3:8, ἀλλά μὲν οὐν γέ καί ἦγοροι πάντα ζημίαν εἶναι. 'I go,' says Paul, 'as far as to consider all things to be loss.' Cf. ἄρα γέ in Mt. 7:20 and καί γέ in Ac. 2:18 (Joel 3:2). So we have ἄρα γέ in Ac. 8:30. A fine example is δός γέ τοῦ ἱδίου υἱοῦ οὐκ ἐφείσατο (Ro. 8:32). So 10:18. There is irony again in καί ὅπελὼν γέ ἐβασιλεύσατε (1 Cor. 4:8), and note the position of γέ apart from καί. In Homer γέ is very common with the pronouns, but in the N. T. we have only δός γέ (Ro. 8:32). We no more find ἕγω γέ, but ἕγω μέν (Mt. 3:11), ἕγω -- σῶ (3:14), ἕγω δέ (5:22), αὐτὸς ἕγω (Ro. 9:3). Indeed all of the thirty examples of γέ in the N. T. occur with conjunctions (paratactic or hypotactic) or other particles except those in Lu. 11:8; 18:5; Ro. 8:32. Cf. ἀμαρτία γέ ἐστιν (‘indeed it is sin’) in Hermas, Vis., i, 1.8. The particles with which γέ is found in the N. T. are ἀλλά γέ (Lu. 24:21); ἄρα γέ (Mt. 7:20); ἄρα γέ (Ac. 8:30); εἰ γέ (Eph. 3:2); εἰ δὲ μή γέ (Mt.

1 Baumlein, Griech. Partikeln, 1861, p. 54.  
2 Grundr., p. 85. Cf. also Nagelsbach, Comm. de particulae γέ usu Hom. 1830, p. 4.  
3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 258.
PARTICLES (AI ΠΑΡΑΘΗΚΑΙ)                        1149

6:1; καί γε (Ac. 17:27); καίτοιγε (Jo. 4:2); μήτιγε (1 Cor. 6:3); δέθελον γε (1 Cor. 4:8); μενοῦγε (Ro. 9:20). Cf. δια γε in Lu. 11:8; 18:5. Γάρ is compounded of γέ and ἀρα, but it will be treated under conjunctions, though it is sometimes not much more than an intensive particle. Cf. τί γάρ κακόν ἑποίησεν (Mt. 27:23).

(b) Δή. It has likewise an uncertain etymology. It appears in the Attic poets as δαί (cf. νή, ναί) and is seen in composition with δή-τα, δή-ποι, ἔπει-δή, ἡ-δή. In ἡ-δή we probably have ἡ and δή. It was originally temporal in idea and goes back to the Indo-Germanic period. Jannaris thinks δέ that and δή are one and the same word (cf. μέν and μήν) and holds that the difference is due to the transliteration from the old to the new alphabet when alone a distinction was made between ε and ε (η). Thus the spelling δή was confined to the intensive particle, while δέ was the form for the conjunction. It is certain that in Homer there is confusion between and before vowels. In Homer also δή may begin a sentence, but in the N. T. as elsewhere all the examples are postpositive (but not enclitic). Blass does not treat it as an intensive particle, but as a consecutive particle. It is hard to follow Blass' theory of the particles. Like the other intensive particles it has no English or German equivalent and is a hard word to translate. It is climacteric and indicates that the point is now at last clear and may be assumed as true. Cf. Latin jam nunc, νῦν—ἡδη (1 Jo. 4:3); ἡδη ποτέ (Ro. 1:10). The similarity in sense between δή and one usage of δέ may be seen in Ac. 6:3, ἔπισκεψασθε δέ (δή), where W. H. put ἡδη in the margin. Cf. καὶ σὺ δέ in Lu. 1:76. Δή is not genuine in 2 Cor. 12:1. There are left only six N. T. illustrations, counting δή ποι in Heb. 2:16, οὐ γάρ δή ποι ἄγγέλων ἐπιλαμβάνεται. In Mt. 13:23, δές δή καρποφορεῖ, it occurs in a relative sentence, 'who is just the man who.' The other examples are all with the hortatory subjunctive (Lu. 2:15; Ac. 15:36) or the imperative (Ac. 13:2; 1 Cor. 6:20) in accord with the classical idiom. There is a note of urgency in ἀφορίσατε δή (Ac. 13:2) and δοξάσατε δή (1 Cor. 6:20). The passage with δή ποτε in Jo. 5:4 has disappeared from the critical text.

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 547.
2 Prellwitz, Et. Worterbuch, p. 73.
3 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 256.
5 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 256.
6 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 273 f.
7 Klotz ad Devar., II, p. 392.
8 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 274.
Somewhat akin to the positive note in δή is the use of ἡ μὴν which is read by many MSS. in Heb. 6:14. The etymology of this adverb is again quite uncertain, though it is possible that it may have the same root as ἢ (ἠFe, ἠFε). ¹ Cf. ἡ δῆ (ἡδην). In ἡπερ (Jo. 12:43) and ἡτω (Ro. 6:16) we have the comparative or disjunctive ἢ. In Homer it was often used in connection with other particles.² We may pass μὴν for the present. If ἢ were genuine in Hebrews the usage would be in strict accord with classic construction for a strong asseveration. But certainly εἴ μὴν is the true text. This queer idiom appears a few times in the LXX (Ezek. 33:27; 34:8; 38:19, etc.). It occurs also in the papyri and the inscriptions³ after iii/B.C. Cf. εἴ μὴν P. Oxy. 255 (A.D. 48). So that it is mere itacism between ἢ and εἴ. The Doric has εἴ for ἢ where Moulton⁴ holds against Hort⁵ that the distinction is strictly orthographical. See further chapter VI, Orthography and Phonetics, ii, (c). So then εἴ μὴν has to be admitted in the κοινὴ as an asseverative particle. It is thus another form of ἢ μὴν. Jannaris⁶ gives a special section to the "asseverative particles" νη and μᾶ. We do not have μᾶ in the N. T. and νη only once in 1 Cor. 15:31, καθ ἡμέραν ἀποθνήσκω νη τὴν ἡμετέραν καυχήσειν. Νη is a peculiarity of the Attic dialect and is used in solemn asseverations (oaths, etc.) and means 'truly,' 'yes.' It is probably the same word as ναί, the affirmative adverb which occurs over thirty times in the N. T. Ναί may be simply 'yes,' as in Mt. 13:51. It may introduce a clause as 'yea' or 'verily,' as in Mt. 11:9. It is used in respectful address, Ναί, Κύριε (Jo. 11:27). It may be used as a substantive (like any adverb) with the article (2 Cor. 1:17) or without the article (Mt. 5:37), where it is repeated. It occurs with ἄμην in Rev. 1:7. It stands in contrast with οὐ in Mt. 5:37 and 2 Cor. 1:17. There was an old form ναί-χι (cf. οὐ-χι). But we do not know the etymology, though Brugmann⁷ compares it with the Latin ne and nae and possibly also with the old Indo-Germanic να-να ("so — so").

(μά used with words of swearing after a negative), μήν and μέν are one and the same word. Indeed, in Homer\(^1\) all three forms occur in the same sense. That original sense is affirmative, meaning ‘surely,’ ‘indeed,’ ‘in truth.’ It is overrefinement to find in μέν (μήν) the subjective confirmation and in δή the objective attestation.\(^2\) It is probable that in the change from the old alphabet to the new the transcribers adopted the two ways of spelling, common in Attic and Ionic (μέν and μήν) with a notion that μήν was merely emphatic with single words, while μέν was correlative (forwards or backwards) or antithetical.\(^3\) Questions of metre may also have entered into the matter. But there is no doubt at all that in itself μέν does not mean or imply antithesis. The original use was simply emphatic confirmation of single words, usually the weightiest word in the sentence. This use was gradually left more and more to μήν and other particles, but it is not anacoluthic, as Winer\(^4\) holds, for μέν to occur without the presence of δέ or ἀλλά. The older language is naturally richer\(^5\) in this original idiom with μήν, but it survives in the N. T. and is not to be regarded as unclassical or uncouth. For an example in the papyri see B. U. 423 (ii/A.D.), πρὸ μέν πάντων. The old idiom survived best in the vernacular and in poetry, while the literary prose was more careful to use the antithetical or resumptive μέν. This μέν, *solitarium*, as the books call it, may have a concessive or restrictive force.\(^6\) Cf. εἰ μέν γὰρ ὁ ἐρχόμενος (2 Cor. 11:4), where there is no thought of δέ or ἀλλά. It is seen also rather often in the Acts. Cf. 1:18 οὗτος μέν οὖν ἐκτήσατο χωρίον, (3:13) δὲν ὑμείς μέν παρεδόκατε (cf. ὑμείς δέ in next verse which is copulative, not adversative), (3:21) δὲν δεῖ οὕρανον μὲν δὲξασθαί, (3:22) Μωσῆς ἄνθρωπος μέν (17:12) πολλοὶ μὲν οὖν έξ αὐτῶν ἐπίστευσαν, (21:39) ἡγώ ἄνθρωπος μὲν εἰμι, (23:18) ὁ μέν οὖν παραλαβών (cf. also 23:31), (27: 21) ἐδεί μέν, (28:22) περὶ μὲν γὰρ τῆς αἱρέσεως ταύτης, and the instances of οἱ μὲν οὖν Acts 1:6; 2:41; 5:41; 8:25, where no contrast is intended. See εἰ μέν οὖν in Heb. 7:11; ἡ μέν εὐδοκία in Ro. 10:1; ἐφ’ οὐσον μὲν οὖν εἰμὶ ἐγὼ in 11:13. Cf. 2 Cor. 12:12; 1 Th. 2:18, ἐγὼ μέν. Cf. also the single instance of μενοῦν as one word (Lu. 11:28) which is obviously without contrast. The same thing is true of μενοῦνγα (Ro. 9:20; 10:18; Ph. 3:8) however it is printed. The main word is sharpened to a fine point and there is a hint of contrast in Ph. 3:8. Indeed, most

---

\(^1\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 251.
\(^3\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 409.
\(^4\) W.-Th., p. 575.
\(^6\) Hartung, Partikellehre, II, p. 404.
of the instances of μέν οὖν in the N. T. are resumptive, not correlative or antithetical. ¹ There remain the instances where μέν implies contrast. It is just a step in advance of the original idiom. Cf. Mt. 8:21, ἐπίτρεψον μοι πρῶτον ἄπελθειν, where there is nothing to correspond to πρῶτον. The ἕπειτα is involved in what precedes. So with πρῶτον and τε—καί in Ro. 1:16 and πρῶτον — καί in 2 Cor. 8:5. The καί does not answer to the πρῶτον.² Just so we have τόν μὲν πρῶτον λόγον in Ac. 1:1 without a δεύτερον δέ though the clear implication is that the Acts is the second book. In 1 Cor. 11:18, πρῶτον μὲν γάρ, the contrast is implied³ in verses 20 ff., but in Ro. 1:8, πρῶτον μὲν εὐχαριστῶ, there is no hint of other grounds of thanksgiving. This instance may be a change of thought on Paul's part (anacoluthon), or it may be the original use of μέν, meaning 'first of all in truth.' Cf. πρῶτον μὲν in Ro. 3:2. In Ro. 7:12, ὁ μὲν νόμος, there is no contrast stated, but in verse 14 it is given by δέ, yet without μέν. In Col. 2:23, ἀπειτά ἐστιν λόγον μὲν ἔχουσα σοφίας, the antithesis is really stated in οὐκ ἐν τιμή, κτλ. without an adversative particle. In 1 Cor. 5:3 the μέν stands alone, while ἄπῳων and παρών are contrasted by δέ. In Heb. 12:9 there is contrast between the μέν clause and the next, which has no particle (only πολὺ μᾶλλον). In Ac. 26:4, 6, μέν is followed by καὶ νῦν by way of contrast and by τὰ νῦν in 17:30. Cf. μέν — καί in 1 Th. 2:18, μέν — τέ in Ac. 27:21, where there is practically no contrast. But see ὁ μὲν — καὶ ἐτερον in Lu. 8:5 ff., ὁ μὲν — καὶ ἄλλο in Mk. 4:4 ff. We have μέν — ἕπειτα in Jo. 11:6; Jas. 3:17; 1 Cor. 12:28. These are all efforts to express antithesis. We see this also in μέν — πλὴν in Lu. 22:22 and in μέν — ἄλλο in Ac. 4:16; Ro. 14:20; 1 Cor. 14:17. In Mk. 9:12 f. ἄλλο, is independent of the μέν. But it is the μέν — δέ construction that is the most frequent in the N. T. as in the Attic Greek. There are two and a half pages of examples of μέν in its various uses in the N. T. given in Moulton and Geden's Concordance, but even so the particle has made a distinct retreat since the Attic period. ⁴ It is wholly absent from 2 Peter, 1, 2 and 3 John, 2 Thessalonians, 1 Timothy, Titus (critical text) and Revelation. It occurs thrice in Jude, only once in Eph. (4:11), Col. (2:23), 1 Th. (2:18), Jas. (3:17). It is most frequent in Matthew, Acts,

² Cf. W.-Th., p. 576.
³ But Blass (Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 267) takes it to be 'from the very outset' and so the original use of 1.47). ⁴ Ib., p. 266,
Romans, 1 Corinthians and Hebrews. Paley\(^1\) thinks that μέν and δέ may contain the roots of one (μία) and two (δύο). But certainly the correlative antithesis is not necessary to either of them, though with δέ there is the notion of addition. Cf. in this connection μέν — καὶ ( Mk. 4:4; Lu. 8:5) and τότε μέν (Jo. 11:6). There are varying degrees of contrast where μέν and δέ occur together. There may be no emphasis on the μέν and very little on the which is not essentially adversative. The μέν may preserve almost its original idiom while δέ has slight contrast. So Lu. 11:48, ἀρα μάρτυρες ἐστε καὶ συνευδοκείτε τοῖς ἐργοῖς τῶν πατέρων, ὡς αὐτοὶ μέν ἀπέκτειναν αὐτοὺς ὑμεῖς δὲ ὀλκοδομεῖτε. The whole sentence is quoted to show that it is agreement (correspondence), not opposition, that is here accented. In verse 47 we have 8, but not μέν, which is hardly felt in 48. See also Ac. 13:36 f.; Ph. 3:1; Heb. 7:8. In particular we note this slight contrast when a whole is distributed into its parts as in Mt. 25:14 ff.; 1 Cor. 9:25. Cf. also Ac. 18:14 f. But the distribution may amount to sharp division, as in 1 Cor. 1:12, Ἠγὼ μέν εἰμι Παύλου, Ἠγὼ δὲ Ἀπολλω, Ἠγὼ δὲ Κηρᾶ, Ἠγὼ δὲ Χριστοῦ. It is thus the context that decides how pointed is the contrast. It is not the words μέν and δέ that inherently mean opposition. Indeed, the contrast may be indicated by δέ alone as in Mt. 5:22, 28, 32, 34, 39, 44; 25:46; Ac. 12:9; Heb. 2:8; 4:13; 6:12.\(^2\) We see a good illustration of clear antithesis in John's words about his baptism and that of Christ in Mt. 3:11, Ἠγὼ μέν—δὲ δέ. See further 20:23; 22:8; 23:28; 25:33, καὶ στήσει τὰ μέν πρόβατα ἐκ δεξιῶν αὐτοῦ τὰ δὲ ἐρίφια ἐξ εἰσώνυμων. The examples are numerous. See οἱ μέν—οἱ δὲ (Ph. 1:16 ff.); οὗς μέν—οὗς δὲ (Jude 22); τινὲς μέν—τινὲς δὲ (Ph. 1:15); εἰς μέν—εἰς δὲ (Heb. 9:6 f.); οἱ μέν—ἀλλοι δὲ (Mt. 16:14); ἀλλὰ μέν—ἀλλὰ δὲ (1 Cor. 15:39); τοῦτο μέν—τοῦτο δὲ (Heb. 10:33); πρῶτον μέν ἐπειτα δὲ (Heb. 7:2); εἰ μέν ὅτι—εἰ δὲ (Ac. 19:38 f.); εἰ μέν—νῦν δὲ (Heb. 11:15 f.), etc. These examples fairly exhibit the N. T. usage of μέν. It is often a matter of one's mood how much emphasis to put on μέν and δέ, as in Mt. 9:37 and Mk. 14:38. In μέντοι there is always strong contrast. As examples of μέν—ἀλλάδι in sharp contrast see Ro. 14:20; 1 Cor. 14:17. So also μέν—πλήν (Lu. 22:22).

(e) Πέρ. It is probably a shortened form of περί (cf. perfect) or πέρι more exactly.\(^3\) It is both postpositive and enclitic and is usually in the N. T. printed as a part of the word with which it

---

1 The Gk. Particles, p. 34.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 266.
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 545.
occurs. But in Homer this is not true, while πέρ follows καί only once.\(^1\) There is no doubt about the etymology of this particle.\(^2\) Some\(^3\) even connect it directly with πέραν or πέρα. Cf. περαιτέρω (critical text in Ac. 19:39). But this idea does not conflict with the other, for πέρι, is the locative of πέρα. It is an Indo-Germanic root and the original notion of πέρι occurs in περι-πίμπλημι, περι-πληθος, nu-per, per-manere, per-tinax, sem-per, etc. It means then to do a thing to the limit (beyond), thoroughly. There is a note of urgency in πέρ. It is intensive as γέ but probably tends to be more extensive also.\(^4\) Sometimes the emphasis in πέρ is in spite of opposition\(^5\) as in καίπερ which occurs six times in the N. T. (Ph. 3:4; Heb. 5:8; 7:5; 12:17; 2 Pet. 1:12), and always with participles, as καίπερ ών ύιος (Heb. 5:8). The Textus Receptus has ώνπερ in Mk. 15:6, but W. H. read only ών, but διπερ appears twice as an inferential conjunction (1 Cor. 8:13; 10:14). See δσπερ, O. P. 1125, 6 (iii/A.D.). The other examples are all with conjunctions, as εάνπερ (Heb. 3:14; 6:3); έπερ (a half-dozen times, all in Paul, as Ro. 8:9; 1 Cor. 15:15); έπειπερ (some MSS. in Ro. 3:30, but the best MSS., as W. H. give, have έπερ); έπειδήπερ (only Lu. 1:1); ήπερ (only the critical text in Jo. 12:43); καθάπερ (some 17 times, all in Paul save Heb. 4:2), καθώςπερ (Heb. 5:4 and a varia lectio in 2 Cor. 3:18), ώσπερ (some 36 times, chiefly in Matthew, Luke and Paul, as Mt. 6:2), ώσπερεί (once only, 1 Cor. 15:8).

(f) Τοί does not occur alone in the N. T., but only in composition. It is enclitic as in ήτοι, καίτοι, μέντοι, but it comes first in τοίγαρον and τοίνυν. The etymology is not certain. Brugmann\(^6\) takes it to be a fixed form of the ethical dative σοί (τοί). Others\(^7\) take it as the locative of the demonstrative τό. Kuhner-Gerth\(^8\) consider it the locative of the indefinite τί. There seems no way of telling for certain. But it seems to have the notion of restriction and in Homer\(^9\) is often combined with adversative particles. In the N. T. we find ήτοι, once (Ro. 6:16), καίτοι twice (Ac. 14:17; Heb. 4:3), καίτοιγε once (Jo. 4:2), μέντοι eight times, five in John's Gospel as Jo. 4:27 and once in Paul (2 Tim. 2:19), τοίγαρον twice (1 Th. 4:8; Heb. 12:1), τοίνυν three times (Lu. 20:25; 1 Cor. 9:26; Heb. 13:13). Ομως is an adversative par-

\(^1\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 257.  
\(^2\) Hartung, Partikellehre, I, p. 327.  
\(^3\) Baumlein, Partikeln, p. 198.  
\(^5\) Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 257.  
\(^6\) Griech. Gr., pp. 402, 525.  
\(^7\) Cf. Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 252  
\(^8\) II, p. 149.  
\(^9\) Hom. Gr., p. 252.
tide that occurs three times in the N. T. (Jo. 12:42, here with ἡμέρα; 1 Cor. 14:7; Gal. 3:15), twice with a participle.

III. Negative Particles (στερητικὰ παραθήκαι). The use of the negative particles has been discussed already in various parts of the grammar in an incidental way in connection with the modes, verbal nouns and dependent clauses. But it is necessary at this point to treat the subject as a whole. It is not logical negative that one, has here to deal with. Many words are negative in idea which are positive in form. Thus "empty" is negative, "cold" is negative, "death" is negative. Aristotle uses στερητικὸς for this negative conception. It is in reality an ablative idea as στερέω implies. But the grammarian is concerned simply with those words that are used to make positive words (or clauses) negative. This is the grammatical negative. There are, indeed, in Greek, as in English, negative post-fixes. But there is a common negative Greek prefix ἀ(ν) called alpha privative, Sanskrit a(n), Latin in, Gothic un, English un. In Sanskrit this prefix does not occur with verbs and is rare with substantives. It is there found chiefly with adjectives and participles. In Greek it occurs with verbs, but chiefly denominative verbs like ἄνωθεν. The use of ἀ– (ἀν– before vowels) is in the Greek still more common with adjectives and verbals. See the chapter on Formation of Words for details. Cf. ἄδοκομος, ἄδικος, ἄπειθης, ἄσύνετος, ἄσυνθετος, ἄστοργος, ἄνελεήμων (Ro. 1:28-30).

1. THE OBJECTIVE Οὐ AND ITS COMPOUNDS.

(a) Origin. This is unknown. Hubschmann sees a connection with the Latin haud as do other scholars. Fowler takes it as an original intensive particle like pas in the French ne pas and –χί (Indo-Ger. –ghi) in οὐ-χί. The Zend ava is also noted and the Latin au (au-fero). But there is no doubt that a in the Greek took the place of the Sanskrit na, Latin ne- (ne-que, ne-scio; the relation of ne ne-quit, ne-quam to this ne is not known), Gothic ni. The use of the Greek οὐ corresponds to the Sanskrit na.

1 Anon., Notes on Negative Postfixes in Gk. end Lat., 1884, p. 6.
2 Thompson, Synt. of Attic Gk., p. 447.
3 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 529.
7 But Draeger (Hist. Synt., p. 133) says that this connection with the Lat. haud cannot be shown.
(b) **History.** As far back as Greek goes we find **ou**, but a did not hold its own with **μη** in the progress of the language. Within the past century **ou** has become obsolete in modern Greek outside of a few proverbs save in the Laconian and the Pontic dialects. The Pontic dialect uses **κι** from Old Ionic **οικι**. But modern Greek has **ουδέ** and **ουτέ** (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 200). In the Boeotian dialect, it may be noted, **ου** never did gain a place. We have seen **ουδέν** used as an adverb, an idiom that goes back to Homer. Jannaris explains that the vernacular came to use **ουδέν** and **μη-δέν**, for emphasis and then on a par with **ου** and **μη**. Then **ουδέν** dropped **ου** and **μηδέν** lost **δέν**, leaving **δέν** and **μη** for the modern Greek. At any rate this is the outcome. **Δέν** is the negative of the ind. in modern Greek except after **νά**, and final clauses when we find **νά μη** (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 200). And **δέν** is the regular negative in the protasis of conditional sentences both with ind. and subj. The distinction between **ου** and **μη** did become more or less blurred in the course of time, but in the N. T., as in the **κοινη** generally, the old Greek idiom is very well preserved in the main. Buttmann even thinks that the N. T. idiom here conforms more exactly to the old literary style than in any other point. **Δέν** may represent **μηδέν** (Rendel Harris, Exp., Feb., 1914, p. 163).

(c) **Meaning.** **Ου** denies the reality of an alleged fact. It is the clear-cut, point-blank negative, objective, final. Jannaris compares **ου** to **ότι** and **μη** to **ίνα**, while Blass compares **ου** to the indicative mode and **μη** to the other modes. But these analogies are not wholly true. Sometimes, indeed, **ου** coalesces with the word as in **ου φημι** = not merely 'I do not say,' but 'I deny.' So **ουκ έδω** (Ac. 16:7) = 'I forbid.' Cf. **ου θέλω** (Mk. 9:30); **ουκ έχω** (Mt. 13:12); **ουκ α'γνοεω** (2 Cor. 2:11). See also **τον ου λαον** in Ro. 9:25 (LXX) where **ου** has the effect of an adjective or a prefix. Delbruck thinks that this use of **ου** with verbs like the Latin *ne-scio* was the original one in Greek. In the LXX **ου** translates **καν**.

(d) **Uses.** Here it will be sufficient to make a brief summary, since the separate uses (pp. 917 f., 929 f., etc.) are discussed in detail in

---

2 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 259.
5 Gr. of the N. T. Gk., Thayer's Transl., p. 344.
8 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 253.
9 Synt. Forsch., IV, p. 147.
the proper places. The point here is to show how all the varied uses of οὐ are in harmony with the true meaning of the particle.

(i) The Indicative. We meet οὐ with the indicative in both independent and dependent clauses.

(a) Independent Sentences. Here the negative οὐ is universal with the indicative in declarative sentences. The force of οὐ (οὐκ before vowels, οὐχ before aspirate) is sometimes very powerful, like the heavy thud of a blow. Cf. οὐκ ἔδωκατε, οὐκ ἔποιήσατε, οὐ συνηγάγετε, οὐ περιεβάλετε, οὐκ ἐπεσκέψασθε (Mt. 25:42 ff.). The force of all these negatives is gathered up in the one οὐ in verse 44. In verse 45 οὐ and οὐδὲ are balanced over against each other. See οὐκ ἔσεσθεν, in Mt. 7:25. Cf. οὐ παρέλαβον in Jo. 1:11. In Mt. 21:29 see the contrast between ἐγὼ, κύριε and οὐκ ἀπήλθεν. Note the progressive bluntness of the Baptist's denials till οὐ comes out flat at the last (Jo. 1:21 f.). In the N. T. οὐ alone occurs with the future indicative used as a prohibition, though the classic idiom sometimes had μὴ. Cf. οὐ φονεύσεις (Mt. 5:21); οὐκ ἔσεσθε ως οἱ ὑποκριταί (6:5), etc. Still, Blass¹ quotes μηδένα μισήσετε in Clem., Hom., III, 69. The volitive subjective nature of this construction well suits μή, but οὐ is more emphatic and suits the indicative. In Mt. 16:22, οὐ μὴ ἔσται σοι τὸ τοῦτο, we have οὐ μὴ) in the prohibitive sense. When οὐ occurs alone = 'no,' as at the end of a clause, it is written οὐ as in οὐ, μὴ ποτε (Mt. 13:29); τὸ Οὐ οὐ (2 Cor. 1:17).

But in interrogative (independent) sentences οὐ always expects the answer 'yes.' The Greek here draws a distinction between οὐ and μὴ that is rather difficult to reproduce in English. The use of a negative in the question seems naturally to expect the answer 'yes,' since the negative is challenged by the question. This applies to οὐ. We may leave μὴ till we come to it. Οὐ in questions corresponds to the Latin nonne. Cf. Mt. 7:22, οὐ τῷ σῷ ὄνοματι ἐπροφήτευσαμεν κτλ., where οὐ is the negative of the whole long question, and is not repeated with the other verbs. See further Mt. 13:55; Lu. 17:17; 1 Cor. 14:23. In 1 Cor. 9:1 we have οὐ four times (once οὐχί). The form οὐχί is a bit sharper in tone. Cf. Mt. 13:27; Lu. 12:6. In Lu. 6:39 we have μὴ with one question, μὴ δύναται τυφλῶς τυφλοὺν ὀδηγέων; and οὐχί with the other (side by side) οὐχί ἀμφότεροι εἰς βόθυνον ἐμπερσοῦνται: There is a tone of impatient indignation in the use of οὐ in Ac. 13:10, οὐ παύσῃ διαστρέφων τὰς ὀδοὺς τοῦ κυρίου τὰς εὐθείας; In Ac. 21:38, οὐκ ἄρα σὺ εἰ ὁ Αἰγύπτιος; the addition of ἄρα means 'as I supposed,

¹ Gr. N. T. Gr., p. 254.
but as I now see denied.1 In Mk. 14:60 note the measured use of οὐ and οὐδέν in both question, οὐκ ἀποκρίνεται οὐδέν; and the description of Christ's silence, καὶ οὐκ ἀπεκρίνατο οὐδέν. In Lu. 18:7, οὐ μὴ ποιήσῃ—καὶ μακροθυμεῖ ἐπὶ αὐτοῖς; we come near having οὐ μὴ in a question with the present indicative as well as with the aorist subjunctive. In a question like μὴ οὐκ ἔχομεν; (1 Cor. 9:4) οὐ is the negative of the verb, while μὴ is the negative of the sentence. Cf. Ro. 10:18, 19. In 1 Cor. 9:8 we have μὴ in one part of the question and οὐ in the other, μὴ κατὰ ἀνθρωπον ταῦτα λαλῶ, ἢ καὶ ὁ νόμος ταῦτα οὐ λέγει; In Mt. 22:17 (Lu. 20:22; Mk. 12:14) we have ἢ οὐ; as the alternative question, and Mark adds ἢ μὴ. Babbitt2 holds that "οὐ is used in questions of fact, while in other questions (e.g. questions of possibility) μὴ is used." I doubt the correctness of this interpretation.

In declarative sentences the position of οὐ is to be noted when for emphasis or contrast it comes first. Cf. οὐ and ἀλλὰ in Ro. 9:8. So οὐ γὰρ—ἀλλὰ ὦ in 7:15. In 7:18 f. note οὐ οὐ side by side. Cf. also position of οὐ in Ac. 1:5; 2:15; Ro. 11:18 (οὐ σοῦ—ἀλλὰς). So ἀλλὰ οὐκ ἐγὼ in 1 Cor. 6:12.

(β) Subordinate Clauses. In principle the use of οὐ is the same as in independent sentences. But there are some special adaptations which have already been discussed and need only brief mention here.

In relative clauses with the indicative οὐ is almost the only negative used in the N. T., the examples of μὴ being very few as will be seen directly. This is true both with definite relative clauses where it is obviously natural, as in 2 Cor. 8:10, οἵτινες οὐ μοῦνον—προσέρχεσθαι (cf. Ro. 10:14; Jas. 4:14), and in indefinite relative clauses where μὴ is possible, but by no means necessary, as in Mt. 10:38, δς οὐ λαμβάνει (cf. Lu. 9:50; 14:33, etc.). The use of οὐ in the relative clause which is preceded by a negative is not an encroachment3 on μὴ. Cf. οὐ μὴ ἀφεθῇ ὡδὲ λίθος ἐπὶ λίθων δς οὐ καταλυθήσεται (Mt. 24:2). It is a common enough idiom in the old Greek, as we see it in 10:26 (Lu. 12:2), οὐδὲν ἐστὶν κεκαλυμμένον δ οὐκ ἀποκαλυφθήσεται. Cf. Lu. 8:17, where the second relative has οὐ μὴ γνωσθῇ and Ro. 15:18 for the negative οὐ in principal and relative clause. In Mk. 4:25 note δς ἔχει and δς οὐκ ἔχει. Cf. δ θέλω and δ οὐ θέλω (Ro. 7:15, 19). Practically the same4 construction is οὐ with the relative in a question, as τίς

---

1 W.-Th., p. 511.
3 W.-Th., p. 451.
4 Thouemin, Les Negations, etc., p. 233 f.
 ἐστιν δὲ οὗ in Ac. 19:35; cf. Heb. 12:7. For further illustration of οὗ with relative clauses see Mt. 12:2=Mk. 2:24; Jo. 6:64; Lu. 14:27; Jo. 4:22; Ro. 15:21; Gal. 3:10; Rev. 9:4.

In *temporal* clauses with the indicative οὗ comes as a matter of course.¹ This is true of a definite note of time as in Ac. 22:11, ὡς οὗκ ἐνέβλεπον, and of an indefinite period as in Jo. 4:21, ὥρα οὗτε οὗτε (cf. also 9:4, νῦξ οὗτε οὗδεῖς).

In *comparative* clauses with the indicative the negative comes outside in the principal sentence, since comparison is usually made with a positive note. So οὗ καθάπερ (2 Cor. 3:13); οὗ καθώς ἡλπίσαμεν (8:5); οὗκ εἶμι ὅσπερ (Lu. 18:11); οὗχ ὡς (Ro. 5:15 f.). We do have ὡς οὗκ ἀέρα δέρων, in 1 Cor. 9:26 (participle) as in 2 Cor. 10:14 we have οὗ γάρ, ὡς μὴ ἐφικνούμενοι, where the two negatives are in good contrast.

In *local* clauses likewise the use of οὗ is obvious, as in ὅπου οὗκ ἐξευν γῆν ποιλὴν (Mt. 13:5); ὅπου οὗ θέλεις (Jo. 21:18. Here the οὗ is very pointed); οὗ δὲ οὗκ ἐστιν νόμος (Ro. 4:15).

In *causal* sentences οὗ is not quite universal, though the usual negative. Cf. Mt. 25:45 ἐφὶ οὗ οὐκ ἐποιήσατε ἐνι τούτων τῶν ἐλαχίστων, (2:18) ὅτι οὗκ είσιν (Heb. 6:13) ἐπεί κατ' οὔτεν ὡς εἶσιν, (1 Cor. 14:16) ἐπειδὴ οὗκ ὀδεί. See further Lu. 1:34; Jo. 8:20, 37; Ro. 11:6. In Heb. 9:17 ἐπεὶ μὴ τότε [μὴ ποτὲ marg. of W. H.] ἵσχύει may be a question as Theophylact takes it, but W. H. do not print it so in the text. But it is not a departure from ancient Greek idiom to have μὴ with the ind. in causal sentences as will be shown. Cf. Jo. 3:18 with 1 Jo. 5:10.

In final clauses with the ind. οὗ does not occur. The reason for μὴ in clauses of purpose is obvious even though the ind. mode be used (cf. Rev. 9:4, 20). It is only with clauses of *apprehension* that οὗ is found with the verb when μὴ occurs as the conjunction. Cf. 2 Cor. 12:20, φοβοῦμαι μὴ πως οὗχ εὑρω. But this is the subj., not the ind. Cf. here οὗχ οίους θέλω and οἶου οὗ θέλετε. Cf. also Mt. 25:9. In Col. 2:8 we have βλέπετε μὴ τις ἐσταί—καὶ οὗ κατὰ Χριστὸν. The καὶ οὗ is in contrast with κατὰ τὰ στοιχεῖα τοῦ κόσμου, though as a second negative it would properly be οὗ any-how. But in Rev. 9:4 we have ἵνα μὴ ἀδικήσουσιν—οὔδε—οὔδε. This² does seem unusual and is almost an example of ἵνα οὗ. No example of a clause of result with a negative occurs in the indicative, but it would, of course, have οὗ.

The use of οὗ in conditional sentences has already received

¹ Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255.
adequate treatment. See Conditional Sentences, ch. on Mode. The details need not be gone over again here. There is no doubt of the fact that εἰ οὐ made encroachments on εἰ μή in the later Greek.1 Blass2 puts it "in direct contradistinction to the classical language." Thouvemin3 likewise treats this use of εἰ οὐ as "contrairement a l'usage classique — ou on le trouve exceptionnellement." It is only the frequency, the normality of εἰ οὐ in the N. T. that is remarkable. This is in full accord with the κοινή development, since4 in the modern Greek δὲν "is regularly used in the protasis of a conditional sentence, alike with the indicative and with the subjunctive mood." So δὲ δὲν πήγαινα, 'if I had not gone' (Thumb, Handb., p. 195). See Mt. 26:42; Lu. 12:26; Jo. 1:25; 3:12; 5:47; 10:37; 2 Pet. 2:4; Ro. 8:9; 11:21; 1 Cor. 16:22; 2 Cor. 12:11; Heb. 12:25, etc. They are all conditions of the first class (determined as fulfilled) save one of the second class (determined as unfulfilled) in Mt. 26:24. In 26:42 εἰ οὐ and δὲν μή stand out sharply. It is so nearly the rule with conditions of the first class in the N. T. that it is hardly necessary to follow out the analysis of Winer5 to bring the examples into accord with ancient usage. It is gratuitous to take εἰ οὐδέ as causal in Lu. 12:26, or to make εἰ οὐκ εἰμί in 1 Cor. 9:2 a denial of a positive idea. There are cases of emphatic denial, as εἰ τις οὐ φιλεῖ (1 Cor. 16:22). Cf. also 2 Jo. 10, εἰ τις ἐρχεται καὶ οὐ φέρει. Cf. also εἰ οὐ ποιῶ and εἰ ποιῶ in Jo. 10:37 f., where the antithesis is quite marked. See also the decisive negation in Jo. 1:25. But, when all is said, εἰ οὐ has made distinct inroads on εἰ μή in the later Greek.

As to the negative in indirect discourse with the indicative, it only remains to say that the use of οὐ is universal. Cf. Mt. 16: 12, συνήκαν ὅτι οὐκ εἶπεν προσέχειν. In 16:11 note πῶς οὐ νοεῖτε ὅτι οὐ περὶ ἀρτών εἶπον ὑμῖν; where each negative has its own force. Cf. also 1 Cor. 6:9.

(ii) The Subjunctive. In Homer οὐ was the negative with the futuristic subjunctive6 as in οὐ δὲ έξωμαί, Iliad, I, 262. This futuristic use of the subj., as we have seen (Modes), largely passed over to the future indicative,7 so that a disappears from the subjunctilre almost entirely both in principal and subordinate clauses.

---

One may compare the final disappearance of \( \text{oú} \) before \( \text{μὴ} \) with participles. In Jer. 6:8 B reads \( \text{ήτις oú kατοικισθή} \) where \( \text{ΚΑQ} \) have \( \text{kατοικισθήσεται} \). It is to be remembered also, as already noted, that in the modern Greek \( \text{δὲν} \) occurs in the protasis with subjunctive as well as with the indicative, as a \( \text{δὲν πιστεύης} \) (Thumb, Handbook, p. 195). This is partly due, no doubt, to the obscuration of the \( \text{oú} \) in \( \text{δὲν} \), but at bottom it is the futuristic use of the subj. We have already noted the use of \( \text{μὴ oúχ} \) in 2 Cor. 12:20 with \( \text{εὐρω} \) after \( \text{φόβοδμα} \), where the \( \text{oú} \) is kept with the subj. (classic idiom) to distinguish it from the conjunctinal \( \text{μὴ} \).

It is also a case of the futuristic subj., not volitive as in final clauses with \( \text{ίνα} \) or \( \text{ὅπως} \). In Mt. 25:9 the margin of W. H. has \( \text{μὴ ποτε oúκ ἀρκέση} \) without a verb of fearing, though the notion is there. The text has \( \text{μὴ ποτε oú μὴ} \). Jannaris\(^1\) boldly cuts the Gordian knot by denying that \( \text{μὴ} \) in \( \text{oú μὴ} \) is a true negative. He makes it merely a shortening of \( \text{μὴν} \). If so, ‘all the uses of \( \text{oú μὴ} \) with the subj. would be examples of \( \text{oú} \) with the subj. Some of these, however, are volitive or deliberative. This view of Jannaris is not yet accepted among scholars. It is too simple a solution, though Jannaris argues that \( \text{oú μὴν} \) does occur as in Soph. El. 817, Eur. Hec. 401, and he notes that the negation is continued by \( \text{oú δέ} \), not by \( \text{μὴ δέ} \). \textit{Per contra} it is to be observed that the modern Greek writes \( \text{μὴν} \) as well as \( \text{μὴ} \), as \( \text{νὸ μὴν εἰχε παράδειγμα} \), ‘because he had no money’ (Thumb, Handb., p. 200).

But, whatever the explanation, we do have \( \text{oú μὴ} \) with the aorist subj. in the N. T. We have had to discuss this point already (Tense and Mode), and shall meet it again under Double Negatives. But in Jo. 18:11, \( \text{oú μὴ πίω} \); the answer is in accord with \( \text{oú} \).

(iii) \textit{The Optative.} In the N. T. there are no instances of the use of \( \text{oú} \) with the optative. It is only in wishes (volitive) that the optative has a negative in the N. T. and that is naturally \( \text{μὴ} \).\(^2\) But this is just an accident due to the rapid disappearance of the optative. There is no reason why a should not be found with the potential optative (futuristic) or the deliberative which was always rare.

(iv) \textit{The Imperative.} The most striking instance is 1 Pet. 3:3, \( \text{ὅν ἐστω oúχ ὁ --κόσμος, ἀλλ’ ὁ κρυπτός, κτλ.} \). It is the sharp contrast with \( \text{ἀλλ’} \) that explains the use of \( \text{oúχ} \). Cf. also \( \text{oú μόνον} \) in 1 Pet. 2:18, where the participle stands in an imperative atmosphere.

\(^{1}\) Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 433.

\(^{2}\) Robertson, Short Gr. of the Gk. N. T., p. 200.
Cf. also οὐ with the inf. in the imperatival sense in 1 Cor. 5:10.
Elsewhere with the imperative we have μή μόνον (Jo. 13:9; Ph. 2:12; Jas. 1:22). οὐ is used in an imperatival connection with the fut. ind. (Mt. 5:21) and in questions of like nature (Ac. 13:10).

(v) The Infinitive. It is common to say that in the N. T. οὐ does not occur with the infinitive, not even in indirect assertion. In Homer and in the classic Attic we do find οὐ with the inf. in indirect assertion. This is usually explained on the ground that the οὐ belonged to the original indicative in the direct and is simply preserved in the indirect. Monro (Hom. Gr., p. 262) observes that in the old Sanskrit only finite verbs have the negative particles. This question received full discussion under Mode and Verbal Nouns. Only a brief word is allowed here. The oldest use of the negative in indirect discourse was in the form οὖ φησιν δώσων where οὐ formally goes with φησιν, but logically with δώσειν. From this use Monro conceives there came a with the inf. itself. But the situation in the N. T. is not quite so simple as Blass makes it. In Jo. 21:25, οὐδ᾽ αὐτόν ὅμαι χωρήσειν, the negative does go with ὅμαι. But this is hardly true in Mk. 7:24, nor in Ac. 26:26. Besides οὐ occurs in a number of clauses dependent on the inf., as in Heb. 7:11; Ho. 8:12; Ac. 10:41; Ro. 7:6; 15:20; Heb. 13:9; 1 Cor. 1:17; Ac. 19:27. For the discussion of these passages see Infinitive, ch. XX, 5, (l). It is proper to say that in the N. T. we still have remnants of the old use of οὐ with the inf., though in general μή is the negative. In Ro. 15:20 οὖχ ὅπως after εὐγγελίζεσθαι stands in sharp contrast with ἀλλὰ καθὼς. In 2 Cor. 13:7 we have μὴ ποιήσας ύμᾶς κακὸν μηδέν οὖχ ὑπα—ἀλλ᾽ ὑπα where the οὖχ is clearly an addendum. Burton explains εἰς οὖθεν λογισθήσαται, in Ac. 19:27, "as a fixed phrase," but even so it is in use. Besides, there is μὴ λογομαχεῖν ἐπ᾽ οὖθεν χρήσιμον in 2 Tim. 2:14. See also καὶ οὖ ἀ after ὡς τε δουλεύειν in Ro. 7:6. The use of οὖθεν, with the inf. after οὐ with the principal verb is common enough. Cf. Mk. 7:12; Lu. 20:40; Jo. 3:27; 5:30; Ac. 26:26, etc. Burton notes that in the N. T. οὐ μόνον occurs always (cf. Jo. 11:52; Ac. 21:13; 26:29; 27:10; Ho. 4:12, 16; 13:5; 2 Cor. 8:10; Ph. 1:29; 1 Th. 2:8) except once μὴ μόνον in Gal. 4:18. The use of οὐ μόνον occurs both in limiting clauses and in the sentence viewed as a whole.

(vi) The Participle. There is little to add to what was given on

---

2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255.
3 N. T. M. and T., p. 184.
4 Ib., p. 183 f.
the subject of οὕτως and μή with the participle under the Verbal Aspects of the Participle (see Verbal Nouns). Galloway¹ thinks that it was with the participle that οὕτως was first used (as opposed to the Sanskrit negative prefix) before the infinitive had οὗτος. At any rate οὗτος is well established in Homer. We may simply accent the fact that the encroachment of μή on οὗτος with the participle gives all the greater emphasis to the examples of οὗτος which remain. Cf. ὁ οὗτος ὄνειρον ποιήσας (Jo. 10:12); ὁς οὗτος δέρων (1 Cor. 9:26). There is no trouble in seeing the force of οὗτος wherever we find it with the participle in the N. T.

(vii) With Nouns. Here we see a further advance of the negative particles over the Sanskrit idiom which confined them to the finite verb. The Greek usually employs the negative prefix with nouns, but in a few instances in the N. T. we have οὔτως. So τῶν οὗτως λαοῦ in Ro. 9:25 (LXX), οὖν λαός in 1 Pet. 2:10 (LXX), οὗτος ἔθνει in Ro. 10:19 (ὁ ἔθνος ἡ'; Deut. 32:21). But this is by no means a Hebraism, since it is common in the best Greek writers. Cf. ή οὗτος διάλαµσες in Thuc. 1, 137. 4 and ή οὗτος ἐκπνεύει in 5, 50. 3. Cf. οὗτος ἀρχιερεύς in 2 Macc. 4:13. As Thayer well says, οὗτος in this construction "annuls the idea of the noun." The use of οὗτος to deny a single word is common, as in οὗτος θυσίαν (Mt. 9:13). Cf. οὗτος ἐμὲ in Mk. 9:37. In general for οὗτος with exceptions see οὗτος ἐν σοφίᾳ (1 Cor. 1:17), οὗν μέλαν (2 Cor. 3:3). In 2 Tim. 2:14, ἐπ' οὗδέν χρήσιμον, it is possible that χρήσιμον is in the substantival sense. There is, of course, nothing unusual in the use of οὗτος with adjectives like οὗτος πολλοὶ σοφοί (1 Cor. 1:26). What is noteworthy is the litotes so common in the N. T. as in the older Greek. Cf. μετ' οὗτος πολλός (Ac. 27:14); μετ' οὗτος πολλάς ήµέρας (Lu. 15:13); οὗτος ολίγα (Ac. 17:4); οὗτος αἰτήμου (21:39). Cf. οὗτος ἐκ μέτρου (Jo. 3:34); οὗν μετρίως (Ac. 20:12). Οὗ πᾶς and πᾶς οὗ have received discussion under Adjectives, and so just a word will suffice. Οὗ πᾶσα σάρξ (1 Cor. 15:39) is 'not every kind of flesh.' Cf. οὗ πάντες τῷ λαῷ (Ac. 10:41); οὗ πάντες (Mt. 19:11); οὗ πάντως (1 Cor. 5:10). But οὗτος ἔσωθη πᾶσα σάρξ (Mt. 24:22) means 'no flesh,' like the Hebrew נְנָפֶת. The construction in both senses is more common in John than in the Synoptic Gospels. It is perhaps worth while to note the use of οὗδέν or οὗθεν (1 Cor. 13:2) as an abstract neuter in the predicate. In general, attention should be called to the distinction made by the Greeks between negating a word and a sentence. This is one reason why with the imper., subj. and inf. we find οὗτος with

¹ On the Use of ἀρεία with the Participle in Class. Gk., 1897, p. 6.
single words or phrases, where μή is the normal negative of the clause.

(e) Καὶ Οὐ. In general when a positive clause is followed by a negative we have καὶ οὐ as in classic Greek. Cf. Ro. 7:6 (with inf. as in Heb. 7:11). See also Col. 2:8, 19. So Lu. 8:14, συνπινύονται καὶ οὐ τελεσφοροῦσιν. Cf. Mt. 9:13. Once, indeed, in a peculiar case, we find καὶ connecting two negative clauses, Lu. 6:37, καὶ μὴ κρίνετε καὶ οὐ μὴ κριθήτε.

(f) Redundant or Pleonastic Οὐ. There is one instance of οὐ in indirect discourse where it is pleonastic according to the classic idiom (see also the French ne). It is in 1 Jo. 2:22, ὁ ἀρνούμενος ὃτι Ἰησοῦς οὐκ ἔστιν. Some MSS. have the pleonastic οὐ in Mk. 9:39.

(g) Repetition of Οὐ. When the second is a single negative, the full force of each is retained. It is seldom that we find two examples of οὐ in the same clause, as in 1 Cor. 12:15 f., οὐ παρὰ τοῦτο οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκ τοῦ σώματος, 'It is not therefore not of the body.' There are instances of οὐ followed by μή where both preserve the full force, Ac. 4:20, οὐ δυνάμεθα—μὴ λαλεῖν. Cf. also οὐ—μή in 1 Cor. 9:6. So also ὁ μή ποιῶν διακαιοσύνην οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ (1 Jo. 3:10). Cf. 5:12. The examples are numerous enough when the second a is in a dependent clause. So οὐδὲν γάρ ἔστιν κεκαλυμμένον ὁ οὐκ ἀποκαλυφθήσεται (Mt. 10:26); πῶς οὐ νοεῖτε ὃτι οὐ, κτλ. (16:11) οὐ τολμησεω τι λαλεῖν ῥήν οὐ κατειργάσατο Χριστός (Ro. 15:18); οὐκ οὐδατε ὃτι—οὐ κληρονομήσουσιν (1 Cor. 6:9). In Mt. 24:2 οὐ follows οὐ μή. See also Lu. 8:17. The uses of μή οὐ and οὐ μή are treated later. But note οὐ, μή ποτε—ἐκριζώσητε (Mt. 13:29) where οὐ stands alone. The solemn repetition of οὐ—οὐ in 1 Cor. 6:10 is rhetorical.

(h) The Intensifying Compound Negative. We have seen how οὐ can be made stronger by χί (οὐχί, as in Lu. 1:60). Brugmann considers this an intensive particle and different from the Homeric κί (οὐ-κί) which is like τί (κί, κί, τί, τί). So also οὐδέ was originally just οὐ δέ (‘and not,’ ‘but not’) and is often so printed in Homer. In the sense of 'not even' see Mt. 6:29. The form οὐδείς is intensive also, originally 'not one indeed' and was sometimes printed οὐδέ ἐίς (Ro. 3:10) for even stronger emphasis. But οὐ—τί also occurs (Jo. 10:28). Cf. also οὖδέ τίς (Mt. 11:27); οὐ δύνη ἔτι (Lu. 16:2); οὖτε—τίς (Ac. 28:21);

---

2 Griech. Gr., p. 528.
4 Ib.
5 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 528.
The adverbial form οὐδέν, occasionally occurs in Homer. The form οὐδεῖς (cf. Ac. 26:26), which flourished for a limited period in the koine has already had sufficient discussion. Various other compound negatives were built up on οὐ, as οὐδαμῶς (Mt. 2:6); οὐδέπω (Jo. 20:9); οὐδέποτε (Mt. 7:23); οὐκέτι (Mt. 19:6). Οὐκοῦν was used so much in questions that it lost its negative force (Jo. 18:37), unless one writes it οὐκοῦν. Οὔτε is, of course, only οὐ and τέ. These compound negatives merely strengthen the previous negative. This emphatic repetition of the compound negative was once good vernacular in both English and German, but it gave way in literary circles before the influence of the Latin. It was always good Greek. This discussion does not apply to subordinate clauses (as in Jo. 8:20) where each negative has its own force. The use of οὐδέ and οὔτε belongs to the discussion of conjunctions (cf. οὔτε — οὔτε—οὐδέ in Ac. 24:12 f.), but the examples in the N. T. of the other compound negatives with οὐ are numerous. Farrar gives some good illustrations of old English. "No sonne were he never so old of years might not marry," Ascham, Scholemaster. Modern English vernacular refuses to give up the piling-up of negatives. "Not nohow, said the landlord, thinking that where negatives are good, the more you heard of them the better" (Felix Holt, ii, 198). Again: "Whatever may be said of the genius of the English language, yet no one could have misunderstood the query of the London citizen, Has nobody seen nothing of never a hat not their own?" So likewise the Hebrew uses two negatives to strengthen each other (cf. 1 Ki. 10:21; Is. 5:9). A good example is Mk. 5:3, οὐδὲ οὐκέτι οὐδείς. So οὐδεῖς οὐπω (11:2). The commonest kind of example is like οὐ δύνασθε ποιεῖν οὐδέν (Jo. 15:5). Cf. 2 Cor. 11:8. Another instance of triple negative is Lu. 23:53, οὐκ ἦν οὐδεῖς οὐπω. The οὐ is sometimes amplified by οὔτε — are as in Mt. 12:32, as well as by οὔτε—οὐδέ as in Jo. 1:25. Plato shows four negatives, οὐδενὶ οὐδαμῇ οὐδαμῶς οὐδεμίαν κοινωνίαν (Phaedo 78 (1)). The combinations with οὐ μή may also be noticed, as οὐδὲν οὐ μὴ (Lu. 10:19); οὐ μὴ σε ἀνώ οὐδὲ οὐ μή σε ἐγκαταλίπω (Heb. 13:5); οὐκέτι οὐ μή (Rev. 18:14). There is no denying the power of this accumulation of negatives. Cf. the English hymn "I'll never, no never, no never forsake."

(i) The Disjunctive Negative. We frequently have οὐ "where one thing is denied that another may be established." Here

---

1 W.-Th., p. 499.  
3 Cf. W.-Th., p. 499.  
4 Thayer's Lex., p. 461.
there is sharp antithesis. The simplest form is οὐ — δὲ as in
Jas. 2:11, or οὐ — ἀλλά as in Mt. 15:11; Mk. 15:11; Lu. 8:52;
Ac. 5:4; 1 Cor. 15:10; 2 Cor. 3:3, etc. In Jo. 7:22 we have
οὐχ ὅτι—ἀλλά, as also in Ph. 4:17. In Ph. 4:11 οὐχ ὅτι oc-
curs alone without ἀλλά. In 2 Cor. 7:9 we have οὐχ ὅτι—ἀλλ' ὅτι.
In 1 Jo. 2:21 we have οὔκ ἔγραψα ὑμῖν ὅτι—ἀλλ' ὅτι where
more naturally we might expect ἔγραψα οὐχ ὅτι—ἀλλ' ὅτι.
Winer' makes rather overmuch of the possible rhetorical dis-
tinctions between the varying shades of emphasis in the differ-
ent contexts where οὐ — ἀλλά, occur. Cf. further οὐχ ἵνα—ἀλλά
(Jo. 6:38); οὐχ ἵνα—ἀλλ' ἵνα (Jo. 3:17). We usually have a
μόνον—ἀλλά καὶ (Jo. 5:18; Ro. 1:32, etc.), but sometimes
merely οὗ μόνον—ἀλλά (Ac. 19:26; 1 Jo. 5:6). Sometimes
the negative is not expressed, but is to be supplied in thought as
in Mt. 11:7-9. Then again we may have only the negative as
in οὗ βρωμασίν (Heb. 13:9), leaving the contrast to be supplied in
the thought. The contrast may even be expressed by καὶ οὗ as in
Mt. 9:13, ἐλεος θελω καὶ οὗ θυσίαν (A, LXX). But we have already
entered the sphere of the conjunctions as in the parallel οὐτε —
καὶ in Jo. 4:11. So 3 Jo. 10.

2. THE SUBJECTIVE NEGATIVE Μή AND ITS COMPOUNDS.
(a) The History of Μή. The Ionic, Attic and Doric dialects
have μή, the Eleatic has μα, like the Sanskrit ma. In the old
Sanskrit ma was used only in independent sentences, while ned
occurred in dependent clauses.2 In the later Sanskrit ma crept
into the dependent clauses also. It was originally a prohibitive
particle with the old injunctive which was in the oldest San-
skrit always negative with ma.3 In the later Sanskrit ma was
extended to the other modes. In the Greek we see μή extended
to wish and then denial.4 Wharton5 undertakes to show that μή
is primarily an interrogative, not a prohibitive or negative par-
ticle, but that is more than doubtful. Already in Homer "μή
had established itself in a large and complex variety of uses, to
which we have to appeal when we seek to know the true nature
of the modal constructions as we come to them."6 The distinc-
tion between οὐ and μή goes back to Indo-Germanic stock and has

1 W.-Th., pp. 495 ff.
2 Thompson, Synt., p. 448; Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 528.
3 Thompson, ib., p. 499.
5 The Gk. Indirect Negative, 1892, p. 1. Cf. also Babbitt, The Use of Μή
in Questions, Harv. Stu. (Goodwin Vol.).
6 Moulton, Prol., p. 170.
survived into modern Greek. But from the very start μή made
inroads on οὐ, so that finally μή occupies much of the field. In the
modern Greek μή is used exclusively with participle, in prohibi-
tions and with the subj. except in conditions, and occurs with νά
(νά μή) and the incl. Gildersleeve\(^1\) has shown in a masterly way
how μή made continual encroachments on οὐ. In the N. T., out-
side of εἴ οὐ, advance of μή is quite distinct, as Gildersleeve
shows is true even of Lucian. So as to the papyri and the inscrip-
tions. The exact Attic refinements between οὐ and μή are not
reproduced, though on the whole the root-distinction remains.\(^2\)

(b) Significance of Μή. Max Miller\(^3\) gives an old Sanskrit
phrase, \textit{ma kaphalaya}, 'not for unsteadiness,' which pretty well
gives the root-idea of μή. It is an "unsteady" particle, a hesi-
tating negative, an indirect or subjective denial, an effort to pre-
vent (prohibit) what has not yet happened. It is the negative of
will, wish, doubt. If οὐ denies the fact, μή denies the idea.
made one advance on οὐ. It came to be used as a conjunction.
We see this use of \textit{ma} in the late Sanskrit.\(^4\) But the origin of this
conjunctive of μή is undoubtedly paratactic in clauses of
both fear and piirpose.\(^5\) It is obviously so in indirect questions\(^6\)
where μή suggests 'perhaps.' Campbell\(^7\) argues that "the whole
question of the Greek negatives is indeterminate." This is an
extreme position, but there is no doubt a border-line between οὐ
and μή which is very narrow at times. One's mood and tone
have much to do with the choice of οὐ or μή. Cf. Jo. 4:29, μήτι
οὗτος ἐστιν ὁ Χριστός; where a would have challenged the oppo-
sition of the neighbours by taking sides on the question whether
Jesus was the Messiah. The woman does not mean to imply
flatly that Jesus is not the Messiah by using μή τι, but she raises
the question and throws a cloud of uncertainty and curiosity over
it with a woman's keen instinct. In a word, μή is just the nega-
tive to use when one does not wish to be too positive. Μή leaves
the question open for further remark or entreaty. Οὐ closes the
door abruptly.\(^8\) The LXX uses μή for ἦς.

\(^1\) Encroachments of Μή on οὐ in Later Gk., Am. Jour. of Philol., I, pp. 45
\(^2\) Moulton, Prol., p. 170. Cf. also Birke, De Particularum μή et οὐ Usu
Polybiano Dionysmo Diodoreo Straboniano, 1897, p. 14 f.
\(^3\) Oxford inaugural Lecture, Note C.
\(^4\) Thompson, Synt., p. 448.
\(^5\) Moulton, Prol. p. 192 f.
\(^6\) Ib.
\(^7\) On Soph. Truch., 90.
(c) Uses of Μή. In general we may follow the outline of οὐ.

(i) The Indicative. Blass\(^1\) expounds the two negatives by saying that "οὐ negatives the indicative, μή the other moods, including the infinitive and participle." But, unfortunately, the case is not so simple as that. "In reviewing Blass, Thumb makes the important addition that in modern Greek δὲν belongs to the indicative and μὴ(ν) to the subjunctive."\(^2\) But δὲν occurs in the protasis with the subj. in modern Greek, as we have seen. Besides, as Moulton\(^3\) adds, "μή has not been driven away from the indicative" in the N. T. It may be said at once that with the indicative is as old as historic Greek.\(^4\) The Sanskrit suggests that originally μή was not used with the indicative. But already in Homer μή occurs with the indicative in prohibition, wish, oath, fear, question.\(^5\) "The essence of these idioms is the combination of the imperative tone — which shows itself in the particle — with the mood proper to simple assertion."\(^6\) But in the N. T. we no longer have μή with the fut. ind. in prohibition, except in case of οὐ μή.

In independent sentences we have with the indicative only in questions. "It's use in questions is very distinct from that of οὐ and is maintained in the N. T. Greek without real weakening."\(^7\) In Jo. 21:5, παιδία, μή τι προσφάγιον ἔχετε; we have a typical example with the answer Blass\(^8\) expresses needless objection to this "hesitant question," as Moulton rightly expounds it. Cf. Jo. 4:33; 7:26; and Ro. 11:1, μή ἀπώσαιτο; with the answer in verse 2, οὐκ ἀπώσασθο. See Jo. 7:51, where Nicodemus adroitly uses μή in a question and the sharp retort of the other members of the Sanhedrin μή καὶ σοῦ; The difference between οὐ and μή in questions is well shown in Jo. 4:33, 35. In the use of μή the answer in mind is the one expected, not always the one actually received as is illustrated in the question of the apostles at the last passover. They all asked μή τι ἐγὼ εἰμί, ὅβεβεί; The very thought was abhorrent to them, "It surely is not I."\(^9\) But Judas, who did not dare use οὐ, received the affirmative answer, σοῦ εἴπας (Mt. 26:25). Μήτι comes to be used intensively much like οὐχί (both chiefly in questions). In the case of μή οὐ

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 253.  
2 Moulton, Prol., p. 170.  
3 Ib.  
4 Vierke, De mil Particulae cum Indicativo Conjunctione Antiquiore, 1876.  
6 Ib., p. 261.  
7 Moulton, Prol., p. 170 f. Moulton gives an interesting note on the use of παιδία as "lads" in the mod. Gk.  
8 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 254.  
9 Ib., p. 254.
in question (Ro. 10:13 f.; 1 Cor. 9:4 f.; 11:22) μή is the interrogative article while οὐ is the negative of the verb.

In dependent clauses μή occurs with the indicative with the second class conditions (ἐἰ μή) always except in Mt. 26:24 (Mk. 14:21). Cf. εἰ μή in Jo. 15:22, etc. There are also five instances of ἐἰ μή with the ind. in conditions of the first class.1 So Mk. 6:5; 1 Cor. 15:22 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 1:7; 1 Tim. 6:3. Cf. μή in a few relative clauses, as ὃ μη δεῖ (Tit. 1:11); ὃ μη πάρεστιν ταῦτα (2 Pet. 1:9); ὃ μη ὀμολογεῖ, (1 Jo. 4:3, W. H. text). Cf. Ac. 15:29 D. There is a certain looseness about μή here that one can feel as in Plato who, "with is sensitiveness to subtle shades of meaning, had in μή an instrument singularly adapted for purposes of reserve, irony, politeness of suggestion."2 This use of with the relative and indicative is clearly a remnant of the literary construction.3 This literary use of μή with the relative was often employed to characterize or describe in a subjective way the relative. There is a soli-
tary instance of μή in a causal sentence, ὅτι μή πεπίστευκεν (Jo. 3 18), which may be contrasted with ὅτι οὐ πεπίστευκεν (1 Jo. 5:10). For ὅτι μή ἔχεις see Epictetus, IV, 10. 34, and ὅτι σοι οὐ, IV, 10. 35. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 171) quotes ἔσαρσην ὅτι μή δεῖ, Diog. of Oinoanda, Fragm. IV, 1. 9. There is, besides, ἔπει μή τότε ἵσχύει in Heb. 9:17, according to the text of W. H., though they give in the margin ἐπεί μή ποτε—διαθέμενος; In that case (the marginal reading) μή ποτε would introduce a question. See further Causal Clauses. In clauses of design we have ἵνα μή with the ind., as in Rev. 9:4, ἵνα μή ἀδικήσουσιν. The margin of W. H. in 13:17 has ἵνα μή τις δώναται. Moulton4 explains μή with the ind. after verbs of apprehension as not originally a conjunction, but μή in the sense of 'perhaps' (paratactic, not hypotactic). So Lu. 11:35, σκόπει μή τὸ φῶς—σκότος ἐστίν. Cf. also Col. 2:8; Heb. 3:12; Gal. 4:11; 1 Th. 3:5. The papyri give abundant parallels. Moulton (Prol., p. 193) cites ἄγωνι ὡς μή ποτε ἀρρωστεῖ, P. Par. 49 (ii/B.C.). The use of μή as a conjunction in clauses of design and fear with the indicative is parallel to the use of the negative particle μή, but does not fall here for discussion.

(ii) The Subjunctive. After all that has been said it is obvious that μή was destined to be the negative of the subj., first of the volitive and deliberative uses and finally of the futuristic also. The few remnants of οὐ with the subj. have already been discussed. For the rest the normal and universal negative of the

---

1 Moulton, Prol., p. 171.  
2 Thomson, Synt., p. 441.  
3 Moulton, Prol., p. 171.  
4 Ib., p. 192.
subj. is μή. Cf. μή ἐνκακῶμεν (Gal. 6:9). In Mk. 12:14, δῶμεν ἢ μή δῶμεν; (cf. οὐ just before), we see how well μή suits this deliberative question. The use of μή with the aor. subj. in prohibitions need not be further stressed. Wherever the subj. in a dependent clause has a negative (save after the conjunction μή after verbs of fearing) the negative is μή. Cf. ὅς ἄν μη ἔχῃ (Lu. 8:18); ἵνα μή ἔλθητε (Mk. 14:38), etc. It is needless to give more examples.

(iii) The Optative. It is only the optative of wish that uses μή. It was rare to have the negative precative optative in the old Sanskrit. But already in Homer μή is used with the optative for a future wish. In the N. T. there is no example of μή with the optative except in wish. It is seen chiefly in μή γένοιτο, as in Ro. 3:4, 6, 31; Gal. 6:14, etc. But note also the curse of Jesus on the fig-tree in Mk. 11:14, μηδεις καρπόν φάγωι.

(iv) The Imperative. It seems that the imperative was originally used only affirmatively and the injunctive originally only negatively with ma. The oldest Sanskrit does not use ma with the imperative. In Homer we find once μή ἔνθεο (Il., IV, 410) and once μή καταδύσεο (Il., XVIII, 134) and once μή ἁκουσάτω (Od., XVI, 301). The second person aorist imper. in prohibitions did not take root and the third person only sparingly (cf. p. 856). See Mt. 6:3, μη γνώτω. The original negative injunctive appears in the form μη ποιήσῃς (Latin ne feceris). The imperative in Greek follows the analogy of this construction and uses μή uniformly. Cf. Lu. 11:7, μή μοι κόπος πάρεχε. For the difference between μή with the present imperative and μή with the aorist subjunctive see Tenses and Modes. Cf. Mk. 13:21, μή πιστεύετε, with Lu. 12:11, μή μεριμνήσητε, and μή φοβεῖσθε with μή φοβηθήτε (Mt. 10:28, 31). It is obviously natural for μή to be used with the imperative. For a delicate turn from οὐ to μή see Jo. 10:37. But Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 171) cites οὐδενὶ ἐξέστω from an inscr. (Benndorf-Niemann, Reisen in Lykien und Karien, 129 N. 102).

(v) The Infinitive. As we have already seen, the oldest Sanskrit inf. did not use the negative particles, and in Homer οὐ appears to be the original negative. But there are a few instances of pit with the inf. in Homer. They occur when the inf. is used as an imperative (cf. in the N. T. 1 Cor. 5:9; 2 Th. 3:14), for an oath, a will or an indirect command. It is thus from the imperative and other finite modes that μή crept into constant use with the inf.

1 Thompson, Synt., p. 499.
2 Ib., p. 495 f.
3 Ib.
4 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 263.
It came to be the normal idiom with the inf. outside of indirect assertion and in antithetical or emphatic phrases (see under οὐ). Thompson\(^1\) challenges the statement of Gildersleeve: "Not till the infinitive, came to represent the indicative (in indirect statement) could οὐ have been tolerated with the infinitive." Thompson adds: "But this toleration is established in Homer." Just as we saw μη make inroads on οὐ in other constructions (cf. participles), so it was with the inf. Even in indirect statement.\(^2\) The came to be the rule (cf. the Atticist Lucian). Even in the Attic οὐ did not always occur with the inf. in indirect statement.\(^2\) The facts as to the use of μη with the inf. in the N. T. have been already given. (see Infinitive and Indirect Discourse). Cf., for instance, λέγουσιν ἀνάστασιν μὴ ἔιναι (Mk. 12:18); ἀπεκρίθησαν μὴ εἰδέναι (Lu. 20:7). In short, Blass\(^3\) says that in the N. T. "μη is used throughout." That is not quite true, as we have seen, but the limitations have already been given under οὐ. Cf. Lu. 11:42, ταύτα δὲ ἔδει ποιῆσαι καίκεινα μὴ παρέίναι. Cf. 21:14. The use of μη λαλεῖν after οὐ δυνάμεθα (Ac. 4:20) has already been noticed. Here μη retains its full value. We need not pursue the matter. Cf. τοῦ μη (Ac. 21:12); πρὸς τὸ μη (2 Cor. 3:13); εἰς τὸ μη (4:4); διὰ τὸ μη (Mt. 13:5) τῷ μη (2 Cor. 2:13); ὡστε μη (Mt. 8:28), etc. The redundant or pleonastic use of μη with the inf. has likewise come up for consideration under the Infinitive. In Lu. 20:27 some MSS. read ἀντί-λέγοντες and thus μη is redundant after ἀντί--, but ΧΒCDL do not have ἀντί—. Then in 22:34 ΧΒLT reject with μη with εἰδέναι after ἀπαρνήση. In Heb. 12:19 W. H. put μη in the margin after παρητήρισαντο. But there is no doubt of the use of the redundant μη in the N. T. Cf. Lu. 17:1 ἀνεῦ-δεκτον ἐστίν τοῦ τὰ σκάνδαλα μη ἔλθειν, (24:16) ἐκρατοῦντο τοῦ μη ἐπιγινώσκαι αὐτῶν. See also Lu. 4:42; 1 Pet. 3:10; Gal. 5:7. But this pleonastic μη is by no means necessary (cf. Ac. 8:36; Ro. 15:22). It does not usually occur with κωλύω in the N. T., but note Ac. 10:47, μητί τοῦ ὅδωρ δύναται κωλύσαι τις τοῦ μη βαπτισθή-

\(^1\) Synt., p. 414. \(^2\) Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 430. 
\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 255. 
(vi) The Participle. We have seen already how the oldest Sanskrit did not use the negative particles with the participle. In Homer we have only one instance of with the participle (Od., IV, 684). But μή gradually made its way with participles even in Attic Greek. In the modern Greek μή has driven οὐ entirely from the participial use. In the N. T. οὐ still hangs on, as we have seen, but that is all. The drift of the κοινή is for μή, and a writer like Plutarch shows it. ² Μή is the usual negative of the participle. The details were given in connection with Participles. In the N. T. we need pay no attention to the Attic refinements on this point, which were not always observed even there. We have μή with the participle in the N. T. as a matter of course. Cf. Mt. 12:30 ὁ μή ὄνων and ὁ μή συννάγων, (1 Tim. 5:13) τὰ μή δέουντα (Lu. 4:35) μηδέν Βλάψαν, (Ac. 20:22) μη εἰδώς. In Mt. 22:11 f. and 1 Pet. 1:8, a distinction, as was shown, seems to be drawn between οὐ and μή with the participle. Cf. Mt. 18:25; Lu. 12:33; Jo. 7:15; Ac. 9:9; 17:6; 1 Th. 4:5 (cf. Gal. 4:8), etc. The downright denial of lingered on awhile in the κοινή (cf. papyri), but μή is putting οὐ to rout. ³ (vii) Nouns. The ancient Greek ⁴ used μή with substantives as ὁ μή ἱατρός (Plato, Gorg. 459 b), adjectives as οἱ μή καθαροί (Ant. v. 82), or adverbs as τὸ μή ἐμποδών, (Thuc. ii, 45. 1). In the N. T., so far as I have noticed, μή with substantives and adjectives occurs only in contexts where it is natural. Thus in Lu. 10:4, μή πῆραν, μή ὑποδήματα, we have just before μή βαστάζετε βαλλάντιον. In Jo. 13:9, μή τοῦς πόδας μου μόνον, we have no verb, but νίπτε is to be supplied from the preceding sentence. Cf. also Eph. 5:15; Jo. 18:40. So in Ro. 12:11 μή ὄκηροι is in the midst of participles used in an imperatival sense. In 1 Tim. 3:3, μή πάροινον, μή πλήκτην, the construction is δεῖ εἶναι. This infinitival construction is carried on in verse 6 (in spite of the parenthesis in verse 5) by μή νεόφυτον. So as to verse 8 and Tit. 1:7. There is no difficulty as to the use of μή in Col. 3:2 and 2 Th. 3:6. (d) The Intensifying Compounds with Μή. The same story in the main that we found with οὐ is repeated with μή. There is no μηχί, but we have μήτι in this sense. The examples in the N. T. are all in questions (cf. Mt. 7:16; Jo. 18:35) except one, εἰ μήτι (Lu. 9:13). The position of μή may give it emphasis as in Jas. 3:1 (cf. οὐ in Mt. 15:11). The use of the compound

1 Monro, Hom. Gr., p. 263. 2 Thompson, Synt., p. 255. 3 Cf. Moulton, Prol., p. 231 f. 4 Thompson, Synt., p. 410 f.
negative as a second (or third) negative is simply to strengthen
the negative s is true of ou'. Cf. Mk. 11:14 μηκετι μηδεις φαγοι,
(Ac. 25:24) επιβοωντες μη δειν αυτουν ζην μητι, (Ro. 13:8) μηδενι
μηδεν οφειλετε, (2 Cor. 13:7) μη—μηδεν, etc. Besides μηδεις there
is μηθεν (Ac. 27:33), μηδε in the sense of 'not even' (Eph. 5:
3), μηγε (Mt. 6:1), μηδεποτε (2 Tim. 3:7), μηδεπω (Heb. 11:7),
μηκετι (Mk. 9:25), μηποτε (margin of W. H. in Heb. 9:17. Else-
where in the N. T. a conjunction), μηδαιμως (Ac. 10:14), μηπου
(Ac. 27:29), μηπω (Ro. 9:11), μητιγε (1 Cor. 6:3), μητις (2
Th. 2:3). Μηπος is only a conjunction in the N. T. If μη is
followed by ou as in 1 Jo. 3:10, ὃ μη ποιων δικαιοσυνην ουκ ἐστιν
ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ, the last negative retains its force. So vice versa in Ac.
4:20. In Gal. 6:3 there is a sharp contrast between τι and
μηδεν (both neater abstracts referring to a person.).

(e) Και μη. We saw that after a positive statement the nega-
tive was carried on by και ou'. So also we have και μη as in Eph.
4:26, ὁργißεσθε και μη ἀμαρτάνετε, and in Lu. 1:20; 2 Cor. 12:21
In Ac. 18:9 note μη φοβοβ αλλα λάλει και μη σιωπησης, where
a positive command comes in between the two examples of p,77.
In Jas. 3:14, per contra, μη κατακαυχασθε και ψευδεσθε κατὰ της
ἄλληθειας, the negative μη seems to cover both verbs connected by
και rather than μηδε. Cf. also Lu. 3:14. We have instances.
also of και connecting a clause with the conjunction μη ποτε (Mt.
13:15 = Mk. 4:12).1 In Lu. 14:29, ἵνα με ποτε θεντος αυτουθεμέ-
κιον και μη ἵσχυοντος—ἀρξωνται we have μη ποτε with ἀρξωνται and
μη with ἵσχυοντος.

(f) Disjunctive Use of Μη. The simplest form of this con-
trast is μη—δε as in Lu. 10:20, μη χαιρετε—χαιρετε δε. Then we
have μη—αλλα as in μη τοιτον αλλα τον Βαραββαν, Jo. 18:40; μη
φοβοβ αλλα λαλει, Ac. 18:9. We have μη—πλην, in Lu. 23:28.
In Lu. 10:20 we really have μη οτι—δε οτι. Moulton (Prol.,
240) does not find μη οτι in the N. T., but considers μητιγε in p.
1 Cor. 6:3 as tantamount to it. See Jo. 13:9 for μη μονον—
αλλα και. So Ph. 2:12. We need not trench further upon the
conjunctions.

3. COMBINATION OF THE TWO NEGATIVES.

(a) Μη ου. This is very simple. It is in the N. T. confined to
questions where is the interrogative particle and ου is the nega-
tive of the verb. Each negative thus has its own force, though
it is a bit difficult to translate the combination into good Eng-
lish. But it is good Greek. Moulton (Prol., p. 192) quotes

1 Cf. W.-Th., p. 494.
Plato's *Protag.* 312 A, ἀλλ' ἀφρα μή οὐκ ὑπολαμβάνεις. Cf. also μή οὔχί, in Jer. 23:24. So Ro. 10:18, μή οὐκ ἤκουσαν; 'We may render it 'Did they fail to hear?' expecting the answer 'No.' Paul repeats the same idiom in 10:19. See further 1 Cor. 9:4 f.; 11:22. 1 Cor. 9:8 is not an instance, since μή comes in one part of the question and οὖ in the other. We do have μή πως οὔχε εὕρω after φοβοῦμαι, in 2 Cor. 12:20, but here μή is a conjunction and οὔχε is the negative of εὕρω, both retaining their full force. The construction in 1 Jo. 3:10 is not pertinent.

(b) οὐ μή. The use of οὐ—μή in Ac. 4:20 is not under discussion, nor the redundant μή after οὐ (Ac. 20:20, 27), but only the idiomatic οὐ μή with the aorist subj. (rarely present) or occasionally the fut. ind. Cf. οὐ μή φαγω, οὐ μή πείνω in the boy's letter, P. Oxy. 119 (ii/iii A.D.). See Is. 11:9, οὐ μή κατκοπτοὺσον σωσίν οὔδε μὴ δύναυταί. Whatever the origin of this vexed problem, the negative is strengthened, not destroyed, by the two negatives. We need not here recount the various theories already mentioned.¹ See Tense and Mode. Let it go at Gildersleeve's suggestion that was originally οὐ μή. Moulton (*Prol.*, p. 249) quotes Giles to the effect that this explanation was offered in the Middle Ages (the ancients have all our best ideas) and notes "in one if not both of the best MSS. of Aristophanes it is regularly punctuated οὐ μή." In Mt. 13:29 we have οὐ μή ποτε—ἐκριζώστητε where μή is a conjunction. Gildersleeve notes that οὐ μή is more common in the LXX and the N. T. than in the classic Greek.² But Moulton (*Prol.*, pp. 187-192) will not let it go at that. "In the LXX θ' is translated οὐ or οὐ μή indifferently within a single verse, as in Is. 5:27." It seems probable that the force of οὐ μή has worn down in the LXX and the N. T. In the non-literary papyrus "οὐ μή is rare, and very emphatic," Moulton notes. He urges also that in spite of the 100 examples in the text of W. H. the idiom in the N. T. is as rare as in the papyri when the 13 LXX quotations and the 53 from the words of Christ are removed, "a feeling that inspired language was fitly rendered by words of a peculiarly decisive tone." But in these examples the force of οὐ μή is still strong. Of the other 34 some are probably weakened a bit as in Mt. 25:9; Mk. 13:2; Jo. 18:11. It is only in the Gospels and the Apocalypse (66 and 18 respectively) that οὐ μή occurs with frequency. It is interesting to observe that on this point Moulton gets the Gospels and Revelation in har-

² Justin Martyr, p. 169.
mony with the papyri by eliminating the 70 passages due to Semitic influence. Cf. Gildersleeve (A. J. P., iii, 202 ff.) and Bal-lentine (ib., xvn, 453 ff.). But Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 172) explains Mt.24:21, οὐδὲ οὐ μὴ γένησαι, not as a Hebraism, but as a "barbarism" like the Wesseley Papyrus xxvi, οὐδὲ οὐ μὴ γένησαι μοι γνω. He quotes also Pap. Lugd. II, p. 107, 9, ἐὰν θέλησι γυναῖκας οὐ μὴ σχεθήναι (Rev. 2:11); οὐ μὴ ἔσται (Mt. 16:22). There is a climax in Rev. 7:16, οὐ—οὐδὲ σε ἑγκαταλίπω. Even οὐ μὴ was not strong enough sometimes, so that we have οὐδὲ and οὐ μὴ in Heb. 13:5, οὐ μὴ σε ἀνώ οὐδὲ οὐ μὴ σε ἑγκαταλίπω. So also οὐδὲν οὐ μὴ ἀδικήσει (Lu. 10:19). In Mk. 13:2 we have οὐ μὴ in both the principal and the subordinate (relative) clause.

IV. Interrogative Particles (ἐπερωτηκαί παραθήκαι). It is not the mode that we have under discussion here, but simply the particles used in the various forms of questions.1

1. SINGLE QUESTIONS.

(a) Direct Questions.

(i) No Particle at all. So συνηκατε ταύτα πάντα; (Mt. 13:51).

So 13:28 and fiery often. Here the inquiry is colourless except as the tone of voice or context may indicate one's attitude. In fact, most interrogative sentences have no interrogative word at all. Cf. Lu. 13:2; Jo. 7:23; 13:6; Ac. 21:37, etc. Hence it is sometimes a matter of doubt whether a sentence is interrogative or declarative. Cf. Jo. 16:31; Ro. 8:33; 14:22; 1 Cor. 1:13; 2 Cor. 3:1; Heb. 10:2; Jas. 2:4, etc. It may be doubtful also at what point the question ends. Cf. Jo. 7:19; Ro. 4:1. Winer2 rightly says on this point grammar cannot speak.

(ii) The Use of Negative Particles. They are used to indicate the kind of answer expected. This subject has already had sufficient discussion. See under οὐ and μὴ. Οὐ expects the answer 'yes' (cf. Mt. 7:22) and μὴ the answer 'no' (cf. Jo. 7:31). In Jo. 18:37 we οὐκοῆς, according to W. H., which has lost its negative force, but οὐκοῦν would preserve it. Probably Pilate was hardly ready to go that far unless in jest. The use of μὴ varies greatly in tone. The precise emotion in each case (protest, indignation, scorn, excitement, sympathy, etc.) depends on the context. Cf. Jo. 4:29; 6:67; 7:47; Lu. 6:39; Ro. 10:18; 11:1.

In Jo. 3:10 the first part of the question has no negative and the second part has οὐ.

1 Cf. W.-Th., pp. 508 ff.; Robertson, Short Gr., pp. 177 ff.

2 W.-Th., p. 508.
(iii) **Other Particles.** There are not many. There is ἀρα (akin to root of ἄρ-ἀρ-ίςκω, 'to join'), an illative particle which occurs with οὐκ as in Ac. 21:38, μὴτι as in 2 Cor. 1:17, or with τίς as in Mt. 18:1. This classic use is not strictly interrogative, but illative in the interrogative sentence. But ἀρα, from the same root1 with more vocal stress, is interrogative. Indeed, it is sometimes doubtful which accent is correct, as in Gal. 2:17, where ἀρα is probably correct. In Ro. 14:19, however, W. H. give ἀρα οὐν We have ἀρα in Lu. 18:8 and ἀρα γε in Ac. 8:30. ἀρα looks backward, ἀρα forward. But the accent is a question of editing. The use of εἰ in direct questions is either a Hebraism2 or involves ellipsis. Cf. Mt. 12:10, εἰ ἔξεστι τοίς σάββασιν θεραπεύειν; So also 19:3. It is common in the LXX (cf. Gen. 17:17) but is foreign to the old Greek. The classic Greek, however, did use εἰ in indirect questions, and this fact may have made it easier for the direct use of εἰ to arise. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 136) takes this εἰ= ἢ. The N. T. does not use ἢ, but the papyri have it: ἢ μείνων ἐν βακχιάδι; ἢ μέλ(λ)ω ἐντυνχάνων; P. Fay. 137 (i/A.D.). So the question to the oracle.

(iv) **Interrogative Pronouns.** The most common in the N. T. is τίς (cf. Mt. 3:7). Other words are frequently added, as ἀρα (24:45); γάρ (9:5); οὖν (Lu. 3:10). The various uses of τί as adverb (Mt. 10:18, Lu. 16:2); with prepositions, as διὰ τί (Mt. 9:11) and εἰς τί (Mk. 14:4) or χάριν τίνος (1 Jo. 3:12); or elliptically, as τί ὥσ (Lu. 2:49) and ἱνα τί (Mt. 9:4), need not detain us. The double interrogative τίς τί appears in Mk. 15:24. Both τίς and ποίος occur in 1 Pet. 1:11. For ποταπός see Mt. 8:27, and πόσιος see 15:34. We need not tarry longer on these elementary details.

(v) **Interrogative Conjunctions.** These are common besides τί (as in Mk. 10:18). The possible exclamatory use of τί in Lu. 12:49= 'how' is sustained by the modern Greek τί καλά= 'how fine.' Cf. ποσικάς (Mt. 18:21); πότε (25:38); ἐως πότε (17:17); ποῦ (Lu. 8:25); πῶς (10:26); πόθεν (Mt. 13:27), etc.

(b) **Indirect Questions.** Here there must be either a pronoun or a conjunction.

(i) **Pronouns.** The use of τίς (τί) is common. Cf. Mt. 6:25; Lu. 9:46; Jo. 2:25; Ac. 19:32. We find ὃτι so used in Ac. 9:6 and ὃ apparently so in 1 Tim. 1:7. Certainly ὅποιος occurs in this construction (1 Cor. 3:13). The same thing is true of

---

1 Jann. (Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 411) notes the pre-Attic ἢ ὅ.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 260.
PARTICLES (AI ΠΑΡΑΘΕΔΗΚΑΙ) 1177

όσιος (Mk. 5:19) and ὀπισθος (Jas. 1:24). Cf. also ποιος (Mk. 11:29); πασχάλιος (M 27:13); ποταπός (Lu. 7:39); πηλός (Heb. 7:4), and ἡλίκος in Gal. 6:11 (margin of W. H.) if this reading be accepted. Cf. τι in Ac. 12:18.

(ii) Conjunctions. These are also common, as εἰ (Mk. 15:44); πάνθευ and τοῦ (Jo. 3:8); πότε (Mk. 13:33); πῶς (1 Th. 1:9); ὁ πῶς (Lu. 24:20); ὁποου (Mk. 14:14); μή ποτε (Lu. 3:15), etc.

2. DOUBLE QUESTIONS. These are rare.

(i) Direct. There is no instance of πότερον—η. We do have τίς—η (Mt. 9:5; 23:17; 27:17), the later Greek caring little for the dual idea in πότερον. We more commonly have simply with the second part of the question and nothing in the first, as in Lu. 20:2, 4; Ro. 2:3 f. We may have ἢ ὅ (Mt. 22:17) and ἢ μή (Mk. 12:14). Sometimes we have simply at the beginning of the question with a reference to an implied alternative (1 Cor. 9:6; 2 Cor. 1:17). This ἢ may come in the middle of the sentence as in 1 Cor. 9:8. The may even precede τίς as in Mt. 7:9.

(ii) Indirect. There is one instance of πότερον—η in an indirect question Jo. 7:17).

V. Conjunctions (σύνδεσμοι). In the nature of the case much had to be said about the conjunctions in the treatment of the Sentence and also Subordinate Clauses. The syntactical principles controlling both paratactic and hypotactic sentences have received adequate discussion. But conjunctions play such an important part in the language that it is best to group them all together. They connect words, clauses, sentences and paragraphs, and thus form the joints of speech. They have a very good name, since they bind together (con-jungo) the various parts of speech not otherwise connected, if they need connection, for asyndeton is always possible to the speaker or writer. The point here is to interpret each conjunction as far as possible so that its precise function may be clear.

1. PARATACTIC CONJUNCTIONS (σύνδεσμοι παρατακτικοί).

(a) Copulative. Conjunctions which connect words and clauses are evidently later in development than the words and clauses. The use of conjunctions came to be very common in the Greek so that the absence was noticeable and was called asyndeton.

1 The distinction between adv. and conj. is, of course, arbitrary. Conjs. are advs. just as the other particles are. Cf. Paul, Principles of the Hist. of Lang., p. 406.

2 "Co-ordinating" is from co-ordino, to range together.
ton. 1 But it is a mistake to suppose that these connectives are necessary. One may fail to use them as a result of rapidity of thought as the words rush forth, or they may be consciously avoided for rhetorical effect. Cf. βλέπετε, βλέπετε, βλέπετε in Ph. 3:2, with Tennyson's "Break, break, break." All this is entirely within the province of the speaker. Cf. 1 Cor. 3:12, χρυσόν, ἄργυρον, λίθους τιμίους, ἔυλα, χρότον, καλάμην. Cf. also 1 Cor. 13:4-7 where the verbs follow one another in solemn emphasis with no connective save one δέ. In the same way contrast may be expressed without conjunctions as in 1 Cor. 15:43 f. 2 In Luke and John there is a pleasing alternation of asyndeton and conjunctions. Cf. Gal. 5:22. The first conjunctions were the para-
tactic or co-ordinating, since language was originally in principal sentences. 3 The copulative (connecting) conjunctions are the simplest and earliest type of the paratactic structure. They simply present the words or clauses as on a par with each other. 4 The primitive conjunctions were monosyllabic like καί, τέ, δέ. 5

(i) Τέ. This word appears to be related to the Sanskrit ca, the Latin que (with labio-velar q’), and the Gothic –h. 6 These words are all enclitic and postpositive. The Sanskrit is almost devoid of conjunctions which were so highly developed by the Greek and Latin, but ca is one of the few possessed by this ancient tongue. 7 There is a striking connection between quis, que, quis-que and τίς, τέ τίς. The Thessalian dialect has κίς for τίς and κίς-κε. We have τίς τέ in the old Greek. Τέ shows this double pronominal origin in its use for and and ever (just like que, quis-que). 8 The indefinite use is distinctly Homeric. 9 The use of ἐπεί τέ, ὅς τέ was old Ionic and continued in Attic tragedy, as ὅς τέ did in Attic prose. Cf. Rademacher (N. T. Gr., p. 5). Indeed, some scholars 10 hold that the correlative use (τέ--τέ) was the original one, but this is doubtful. It seems certain that τέ indicates a somewhat closer unity than does καί. This close correlative use is certainly very old. Cf. σὺ τ’ ἐγώ τέ in Homer. 11 In the N. T. it is rare except in the Acts, where it occurs some 175 times. It is common in all parts of the book and is thus a subtle argument

1 Brug., Griech. Gr., p. 551.  
2 Cf. W.-Th., p. 538.  
3 Brug., ib., p. 552.  
5 W.-Th., p. 434.  
for the unity of the work (we-sections and all). It is something additional, but in intimate relation with the preceding. We find τε alone as in Ac. 2:33, where ὑψωθεῖς and λαβῶν are united by τε. Cf. also 10:22, where again two participles are connected. In 23:24, κτήνη τε παραστήσαται, the change from the direct to the indirect discourse is marked by τε, whereas καί is used twice before to join minor phrases. Τέ puts παραστήσαται on a par with ἔτοιμα-σατε.¹ In the same way in 20:11 the first two participles are joined by καί and then both are related to the next by τε. The same idiom occurs in Jo. 6:18, where τε gives an additional item somewhat apart from the καί—καί just before. In Jo. 4:41 καί—τε are not co-ordinate. Καί introduces the whole sentence and τε connects the two parts. Cf. thus δέ—τε in Ac. 2:37. But τέ—τέ is strictly correlative. Cf. the Latin que — que, English as — so. See Ac. 2:46 where the two participles are co-ordinated. In Ro. 14:8 -- have τε four times in succession with ἐὰν. There are here two pairs of conditions. The parts of each pair are balanced carefully. The disjunctive ἐίτε—ἐίτε (cf. 1 Cor. 12:26) is at bottom this same correlative use of τε. So as to οὔτε—οὔτε (Mt. 12:32) and μήτε—μήτε (Ac. 27:20). The use of τέ—καί is also common where there is an inner bond, though no hint is given as to the relative value of the matters united. Cf. ἄρχε-ρείς τε καὶ γραμματείς (Lu. 22:66); ποιεῖν τε καὶ διδάσκειν (Ac. 1:1); ἀνδρείς τε καὶ γυναικείς (8:12); ἐκκυνήθη τε—καί ἐγένετο (21:30); δι-καίων τε καὶ ἀδίκων (24:15); μικρῷ τε καὶ μεγάλῳ (26:22); Ἑλλησίν τε καὶ βαρβάροις (Ro. 1:14); ἦιουδαίου τε πρῶτον καὶ Ἑλληνος (2:9), etc. For τέ καί—τέ see Ac. 9:15, and for τέ καί—τέ—καί 26 20. In Jo. 4:11, οὔτε—καί, we really have the τέ—καί ('both and') construction. Cf. Latin non que—et. We even have οὔτε—οὔτε—καί in Jo. 5:37 f. In Ac. 27:20 μήτε—μήτε stand together and both are parallel to τε following. Per contra we find τέ—δέ in Ac. 19:2 and also 3. The manuscripts often vary between τε and δέ (cf. Ac. 3:10; 4:14, etc.). We have τέ γάρ (common from Aristotle on²) in Ro. 1:26 followed by ὁμοίως τε καί. In Heb. 2:11 note τέ γάρ—καί. As a rule τε stands after the word or words that are paralleled, but this is not always so.

(ii) Καί. The etymology of this conjunction is disputed. Curtius³ makes it he locative case of the pronominal stem κα--, κο--, so

¹ This classic idiom is a mark of Luke's literary style. But in the κοινὴ τε is on the retreat before καί. Jann., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 401.
² Cf. Hammer De τε Particulae Usu Herodoteo Thucydidoe Xenophonteo, 1904, p. 92.
³ Gk. Etymology.
that it would ultimately come from the same root as τέ (que).

It would thus mean 'in this respect,' 'this besides.' Brugmann finds its original sense in κοινός, Latin co-, cum, Gothic ga. The idea would then be 'together with,' 'in addition to.' The Arkadian, South Achaean and Cypriote dialects use κάς and καί=καί. Whatever the origin, it all comes to the same thing in the end. It is by far the most frequent of all the conjunctions or other particles in the N. T. It is so common in fact that Moulton and Geden do not list it in their concordance. This in itself is in accord with the later Greek idiom, as Thumb notes in Aristotle and in the modern Greek and Moulton in the papyri. Moulton cites Par. P. 18, ἔτι δύο ἡμέρας έχομεν καὶ φθάσομεν εἰς Πηλοῦσί, as parallel to Mk. 15:25; Jo. 4:35. But there can be little doubt that the extreme fondness for parataxis in John's Gospel, for instance, is partially due to the use of καί in the LXX for the Hebrew which "means a hook and resembles a hook in shape."4 It was certainly used to "hook" together all sorts of sentences. There is not the same unity in the older Greek in the matters united as is true of τέ. Κια, "connects in a free and easy manner"5 and the Hebrew ḫ still more loosely. There are three main uses of καί which appear in the N. T. as in all Greek.

The Adjunctive Use ('Also'). This is possibly the original use, though one cannot tell. It is thus like the Latin et-iam, English too (to) = addition to something already mentioned, and is common enough in all stages of the language.6 A good example of this use of καί is seen in Mt. 8:9, καὶ γὰρ ἐγὼ ἄνθρωπὸς εἰμι ὑπὸ ἐξουσίαν. The καί here points to Christ's relation to the boy. The centurion, like a true soldier, does not say that he is a man who gives orders, but rather one who obeys them. He has the true military spirit and knows therefore how Jesus can cure the boy without going to see him. The καί is here very significant. Cf. οὖτως καὶ ὑμεῖς in Mt. 7:12, where the Golden Rule is applied to Christ's hearers by καί. Cf. Jo. 7:3 ἧνα καὶ οἱ μαθηταί σου, (12:10) ἔνα καὶ τὸν Λαξαρόν. This use of καί is more frequent in Luke than elsewhere in the N. T.7 Cf. καγώ (Lu. 20:3); ἡ καί (Lu. 12:41); δὲ καί (12:54, 57); τί καί (1 Cor. 15:29); και γὰρ (Mt. 8:9); ἐὰν καί (Gal. 6:1); εἰ καί (2 Cor. 11:15); καὶ δὲ (Mt. 10:

1 Griech. Gr., p. 542.
2 Hellen., p. 129.
3 Prol., p. 12.
4 Farrar, Gk. Synt., p. 196.
5 Jann., Gk. G-., p. 401.
7 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 140.
PARTICLES (ΑΙ ΠΑΡΑΘΕΝΚΑΙ) 1181

18); ὦς καὶ (Ac. 11:17); καθὼς καὶ (Ro. 15:7); οὔτω καὶ (Ro. 6:11); δός καὶ (Ac. 2:6, 8); ὠμοίως καὶ (Jo. 6:11); ὡσαύτως καὶ (1 Cor. 11:25); καθάπερ καὶ (1 Th. 3:12); διὸ καὶ (Lu. 1:35); διὰ τοῦτο καὶ (Lu. 11:49); ἄλλα καὶ (24:22), etc. So then καὶ in the sense of 'also' occurs with nouns, pronouns, verbs, adverbs, conjunctions. It may refer to a word or a clause. Cf. ἄλλως τε καὶ, B. G. U. 530 (i/A.D.). For the use of ὅ καὶ see the Article, and for σὺν καὶ see Prepositions. 1 It is common for καὶ to sum up a sentence that precedes. For the relative and articular participle see the καὶ in the sentences in Mt. 5:39-43. Here καὶ balances the principal and the subordinate clauses. So in the apodosis of a conditional sentence we find καὶ, as in Jo. 14:7. Cf. Heb. 7:26, where καὶ almost means 'precisely,' and Mt. 6:10, where, it means 'just so.' Cf. Ro. 11:1. So with ὅ we find it in the apodosis (Jo. 5:19). Cf. also after ὠσπέρ in 5:26. Sometimes the καὶ seems to be redundant as in Lu. 11:1, καθὼς καὶ, or ὦς καὶ in 1 Cor. 7:7. We may indeed have καὶ ('also') in both parts of the comparison, a studied balancing of the two members of the sentence as in Mt. 18:33, καὶ σὲ—ὡς κἀγὼ. So Ro. 1:13, καὶ ἐν ὑμῖν καθὼς καὶ ἐν τοῖς λοιποῖς ἔθνεσιν. See ὅδα καὶ—ὁδα καί (Ph. 4:12).

The Ascensive Use ('Even'). The notion of 'even' is an advance on that of mere addition which is due to the context, not to καὶ. The thing that is added is out of the ordinary and rises to a climax like the crescendo in music. Cf. Latin adeo. Cf. οὐ μόνον, ἄλλα καί (Ac. 21:13; Ro. 13:5). This use of καὶ depends wholly on the context. Cf. Mk. 1:27, καὶ τοῖς πνεύμασι τοῖς ἀκαθάρτοις ἐπιτάσσει (So Lu. 10:1). Cf. also καὶ οί τελώναι and καὶ οί ἐθνικοὶ, Mt. 5: 46 f. See further Ac. 10:45; 11:1, 20; Gal. 2:13. The use of καὶ ei belongs here. (Cf. 1 Cor. 8:5.)

The Mere Connective ('And'). The difference between καὶ as 'and' and καὶ as 'also' is very slight, whichever was the original idea. The epexegetic or explicative use of καὶ occupies a middle ground between 'also' and 'and.' Blass 2 treats it under 'also.' Cf. Lu. 3:1; πολλά καὶ ἔτερα παρακαλῶν, where the "connective" force of καὶ is certainly very slight. So also Jo. 20:30, πολλά καί ἄλλα σημεία. See further Jo. 1:16, καὶ χάριν ἀντὶ χάριτος, where the clause is an explanatory addition. Cf. (Ac. 22:25) καὶ ἀκατάκριτον, (1 Cor. 2:2) καὶ τοῦτον ἐσταυρωμένον, (Ro. 13:11) καὶ τοῦτο (Latin idque) which is our 'and that too' where we combine 'and' and 'also' ('too') in the καί, (Heb. 11:12) καὶ ταῦτα (frequent in ancient

1 Cf. Deiss., B. S.; Hatch, Jour. of Bib. Lit., 1908, p. 142.
2 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 263.
Greek). See in particular Eph. 2:8, καὶ τοῦτο οὐκ ἔξ ὑμῶν, where τοῦτο refers to the whole conception, not to χάριτι. The simple copulative idea is, however, the most common use of καὶ where words are piled together by means of this conjunction. Sometimes the connection is as close as with τέ. Thus ὁ θεὸς καὶ πατήρ (2 Cor. 1:3); καλὴ καὶ ἄγαθη (Lu. 8:15). But the words may be very loosely joined in idea, as οἱ Φαρισαῖοι καὶ Σαδδουκαίοι (Mt. 16:1). Καὶ may be used to connect all sorts of words, clauses and sentences. Thus λέγω Ἐρχομαι, καὶ ἔρχεται (Mt. 8:9). The use of καὶ after the imperative is seen in Mt. 11:29. The chain with καὶ as the connective may go on indefinitely. Cf. the four examples in Ph. 4:9; five in Ro. 9:4; the six in Rev. 7:12 (so 5:12). So we have καὶ ὅτι three times in 1 Cor. 15:4 (καὶ to connect ὅτι clauses). In Rev. 12-16 every paragraph and most of the sentences begin with καὶ. In fact it is true of much of the Apocalypse. If one turns to First Maccabees, it is true even to a much greater extent than in the Apocalypse. In First Maccabees καὶ translates the Hebrew.

1 But Thumb has found this repetition of καὶ in Aristotle so that the Hebrew influence simply intensified a Greek idiom. We have noted the use of καὶ with τέ (τέ—καὶ). Cf. Ro. 1:20). The use of καὶ—καὶ is far more common in the sense of 'both — and' as in Ac. 2:29, καὶ ἐτελεύτησε καὶ ἐτάφη. Cf Mk. 4:41; Ph. 2:13; Ac. 26:29. Sometimes the connection almost amounts to 'not only, but also.' In Col. 2:16 note καὶ—ἡ. Cf. καὶ—καὶ (Lu. 12:38). A. Brinkmann contends that in the papyri and late Greek καὶ is sometimes 'at any rate' and is never a mere link (Scriptio continua und Anderes, Rhein. Mis. LXVII, 4, 1912). In Lu. 5:36 we have καὶ—καὶ—καὶ οὐ (so Jo. 6:36), and in Jo. 17:25 καὶ οἶ—ἠ—καὶ. It is usual to have καὶ οὐ after an affirmative clause as in Jo. 10:35. Cf. καὶ μῆ in 2 Cor. 9:5. See Negative Particles. In Lu. 12:6 καὶ οὐ follows a question with οὐχί. Καὶ connects two negative sentences in Lu. 6:37. For οὐτε—καὶ see Jo. 4:11. Sometimes καὶ begins a sentence when the connection is with an unexpressed idea. Children use "and" thus often in telling stories and asking questions. Cf. καὶ σὺ ἡσθα in Mt. 26:69 (and 73) like Et tu, Brute. See also Mk. 10:26, καὶ τίς δύναται σωθῆναι. So also Lu. 10:29; Jo. 9:36; 2 Cor. 2:2. Cf. also the use of καὶ in parenthesis as in Ro. 1:13, καὶ ἐκωλύθην ἄρι τοῦ δεῦρο. The context gives other turns to καὶ that are sometimes rather startling. It is common to find καὶ where it has to bear the content 'and yet.' So Jo.

1 Hellen., § 129.
PARTICLES (ἈΙ ΠΑΡΑΘΗΚΑΙ)

3:19; 4:20; 6:49; 7:30; 1 Jo. 2:9. The examples are common in John's Gospel (Abbott, Joh. Gr., pp. 135 ff.). See Jer. 23:21. In Mk. 4:4 note μέν—καί. In 1.Cor. 10:21 we have οὐ—καί in contrast. Cf. Mt. 3:14, καί σὺ ἔρχῃ πρός με; So also Ph. 1:22, καί τί αἰρήσουμαι. This idiom occurs in Plato, and Abbott notes a number of them in the Gospel of John. Cf. 1:5; 2:20; 3:13; 5:39 7:27 f.; 8:57, etc. In Lu. 12:24 καί is almost equal to ἀλλά, that is, the context makes contrast. Cf. also Mt. 6:26 (οὐ—καί); Mk. 12:12; Lu. 20:19; Jo. 18:28. Tholuck1 so takes καί in Ro. 1:13 (the parenthetical καί). Sometimes καί seems imitative of the Hebrew י by almost having the sense of ὅτι or ὑπάρχον (‘that’) as in Mt. 26:15; Mk. 14:40; Lu. 9:51; 12:15. In particular note καί ἐγένετο καί (as in Lu. 5:1, 12, 17, etc.). In Mt. 16:6 observe ὡς ἐγένετο καί. So Lu. 12:15 and Mt. 26:15. In modern Greek καί has so far usurped the field that it is used not only in all sorts of paratactic senses like ‘and,’ ‘but,’ ‘for,’ ‘or,’ ‘and so,’ but even in hypotactic senses for να or ποτε, declarative and even consecutive (Thumb, Handb., p. 184). In Mk. 3:7 καί comes near taking the place of ὅ, for in the next verse there are five instances of καί co-ordinate with each other, but subordinate to καί in verse 7. Sometimes after καί we may supply 'so' as in καί λάμπει, Mt. 5:15; καί βλέπομεν, Heb. 3:19. See also Ph. 4:7. This is a kind of consecutive2 use of καί. Cf. Lu. 24:18. The fondness for co-ordination in the Gospels causes the use of καί where a temporal conjunction ὡς would be more usual. Cf. Mk. 15:25, ἦν ὥρα τρίτη καί ἐσταύρωσαν (Lu. 23:44). But Blass3 admits that this is a classic idiom. Cf. Mt. 26:45; Lu. 19:43, where καί drift further away from the ancient idiom. Cf. also καί ἰδού in the apodosis, 'and behold,' as in Lu. 7:12. In 2 Tim. 2:20 note καί allowed by ἀ μέν—ἀ δέ. In Ph. 4:16 note καί thrice (one= 'even,' two = 'both — and').

(iii) Δέ. This conjunction is generally ranked wholly as an adversative particle.4 Monro5 says: “The adversative δέ properly indicates that he new clause stands in some contrast to what has preceded. Ordinarily, however, it is used in the continuation of a narrative.” As a matter of fact, in my opinion, Monro has the matter here turned round. The ordinary narrative use (continuative) conceive to be the original use, the adversative the developed and later construction. The etymology confirms

---

1 Beitr. zur Spracherklärung d. N. T., p. 35.
2 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 262.
3 Ib.
5 Hom. Gr., p. 245.
this explanation, though it is largely conjectural. Brugmann\(^1\) associates it with the *aksl. ze* and possibly also\(^2\) with δή and the enclitic ending –δέ (*δίκαιος-δέ, ὁ-δέ, τοσός-δέ*), while Hartung\(^3\) connects it with δύο, δίς, and Baumlein\(^4\) with δεῦ-τρος. The enclitic –δέ thus means ‘again,’ ‘back,’ while the conjunction δέ would mean ‘in the second place’ or ‘a second comment’ or an important addition’ (δή). But, however we take it, there is in the word no essential notion of antithesis or contrast. What is true is that the addition is something new\(^5\) and not so closely associated in thought as is true of τέ and νκαί. I prefer therefore to begin with the narrative and transitional (copulative) use of δέ. Kuhner-Gerth\(^6\) call this use of δέ for ‘something new’ (*etwas Neues*) copulative and give it separate discussion. Abbott\(^7\) has the matter correctly: "In classical Greek, calling attention to the second of two things, may mean (1) *in the next place*, (2) *on the other hand*." The first of these uses is the original one and is copulative. The second is adversative. Abbott notes also that δέ in both senses occurs in Matthew and Luke nearly three times as often as in Mark and John. Its use is mainly in the historical books of the N. T. It is so common there that, as with καί, Moulton and Geden do not give any references. A good place to note the mere copulative force of δέ is in the genealogy in Mt. 1:2-16 where there is no notion of opposition at all. The line is simply counted from Abraham to Christ. In verses 6 and 12 there are breaks, but the contrast is made by repetition of the names, not by δέ, which appears with every name alike. In Mt. 23:4 we have both uses of δέ. The first is properly translated ‘yea’ and the second ‘but’ (adversative). See further 1 Cor. 4:7 (δέ and δέ καί) where there is a succession of steps in the same direction. So 15:35; 2 Cor. 6:15 f.; Heb. 12:6; and in particular the list of virtues in 2 Pet. 1:5-7. Sometimes a word is repeated with δέ for special emphasis, as δικαιοσύνη δέ in Ro. 3:22 (cf. 9:30). A new topic may be introduced by δέ in entire harmony with the preceding discussion, as the Birth of Jesus in Mt. 1:18 (‘Now the birth of Jesus Christ,’ etc.). The use of δέ in explanatory parenthesis is seen in Jo. 3:19 (‘And this is,’ etc.); 19:23 (‘Now the coat,’ etc.). For ὃς δέ (‘and when,’ ‘so when’) in John see 2:9, 23. In John

\(^1\) Griech. Gr., p. 547.
\(^2\) I. p. 156 f.
\(^3\) I., p. 156 f.
\(^4\) Part., p. 59.
\(^5\) II., p. 274.
\(^6\) W.-Th., p. 443.
\(^7\) Joh. Gr., p. 104.
as elsewhere it is sometimes not clear whether δέ is copulative or adversative. Cf. 3:1, ἦν δέ. Is Nicodemus an illustration or an exception? The resumptive use of δέ, after a parenthesis, to go on with the main story, is also copulative. Cf. Mt. 3:1; Lu. 4:1. There is continuation, not opposition, in the use of καὶ δέ, as in Lu. 1:76 καὶ σὺ δέ where means ‘and’ and καὶ ‘also.’ Cf. further Mt. 10:18; 16:18; Jo. 15:27. In Jo. 6:51 we have καὶ δέ in the apodosis of the condition in this sense. Δέ is always postpositive and may even occupy the third place in the sentence (Mt. 10:11) or even the fourth (Jo. 6:51) or fifth (1 Jo. 2:2) or sixth (Test. xiii, Patr. Jud. 9:1) as shown in chapter on Sentence.

In accord with the copulative use of δέ we frequently have οὐδέ and μηδέ in the continuative sense, carrying on the negative with no idea of contrast. Cf. Mt. 6:26, οὖ σπείρουσιν οὐδὲ θερέζουσιν οὐδὲ συνάγουσιν. So also 6:28; Mk. 4:22, etc. In Jo. 7:5, οὐδὲ γάρ, we have οὐδέ in the sense of 'not even' as often (Mt. 6:29, etc.). In Mt. 16:15 οὐδέ means 'not also' (cf. also 21:27, etc.). All three uses of καὶ are thus paralleled in οὐδέ (merely οὐ δέ). For μηδέ in the continuative sense see Mt. 7:6. It means 'not even' in 1 Cor. 5:11. For the repetition of continuative μηδέ see 1 Cor. 10:7-10. In Mk. 14:68, οὖτε οἶδα οὔτε ἔπισταμαι (some MSS. οὐκ—οὐδέ), we come pretty close to having οὔτε--οὔτε in the merely continuative sense as we have in οὔτε--καὶ (Jo. 4:11; 3 Jo. 10).

(iv) Άλλα. Here there is no doubt at all as to the etymology. Άλλα is a virtual proclitic (cf. ἐπι and ἐπί), and the neuter plural was ἄλλα (Ἄλλα, 'other things'). Baumlein does take ἄλλα as originally an adverb. But in reality it is 'this other matter' (cf. ταῦτα and τοῦτο). In actual usage the adversative came to be the most frequent construction, but the original copulative held on to the N. T. period. It is a mistake to infer that ἄλλος means 'something different.' In itself it is merely 'another.' Like δέ the thing introduced by ἄλλα is something new, but not essentially in contrast. So the classic Greek used ἄλλα μήν in the emphatic continuative sense. Blass observes that "the simple ἄλλα also has this force of introducing an accessory idea." Cf. 2 Cor. 7:11, πόσημα κατειργάσατο ὑμῖν σπουδήν, ἄλλα ἀπολογίαν, ἄλλα ἀγανάκτησιν, ἄλλα φόβου, ἄλλα ἐπιπόθησιν, ἄλλα ζήλουν, ἄλλα ἐκδικήσιν. All these six examples are confirmatory and continuative. See further Lu. 24:21, ἄλλα γε καὶ σὺν πάσιν τούτοις, where it is clia-
acteric, not contradictory. The story is carried on by ἀλλά καὶ in verse 22. Cf. also 2 Cor. 1:9; Lu. 12:7; 16:21. In Ph. 1:18, χαίρω, ἀλλά καὶ χαρῆσομαι, the connection is very close. The most striking example of all is Ph. 3:8, ἀλλά μενοῦνγε καὶ ἕγοομαι. In 2 Cor. 11:1, ἀλλά καὶ ἀνέχεσθε, the tone of irony makes it doubtful whether to take ἀλλά as copulative or adversative. These and similar passages are not a dropping of the adversative idea, but merely the retention of the original copulative meaning. Abbott¹ sees that "it is hard to find a satisfactory explanation of Jo. 8:26" along the usual line. If one no longer feels impelled to translate by 'but,' the trouble vanishes. Just make it 'now' or 'yea' and it is clear. Abbott² likewise considers axm "inexplicable" in 4:23, because it has to mean 'but.' Cf. Jo. 16:2, ἀλλ᾽ ἔρχεται ὥρα, 'yea, the hour comes.' The same use of ἀλλά occurs also in negative sentences. In 1 Cor. 3:3, ἀλλ᾽ οὐδὲ νῦν δύναςθε after οὐδὼ ἐδύναςθε. In 4:3, ἀλλ᾽ οὐδὲ after an affirmative clause. In Ac. 19:2, ἀλλ᾽ οὐδ᾽, the thought answers the preceding question and is probably adversative, as is possible in 1 Cor. 3:3. The ἀλλά at any rate is negative like the οὐδέ. So as to ἀλλ᾽ οὐδὲ Ἡρώδης (Lu. 23:15).

(b) Adversative. It should be stated again that not all of these conjunctions mean contrast (antithesis) or opposition, but the context makes the matter clear. The modern Greek keeps ἀλλά, ὅμως, πλῆν, but not δὲ and μέντοι (Thumb, Handb., p. 185).

(i) Δέ. In Jas. 1:13 f. note the two uses of δέ (continuative and adversative). Sometimes the positive and the negative are sharply contrasted and then δέ is clearly adversative as in Mt. 23:4, αὐτοὶ δὲ οὐ Θέλουσιν. More obvious still is 6:14 f., ἐὰν ἀφήτε —ἔὰν δὲ μὴ ἀφήτε. Cf. also 6:23. So μὴ θησαυρίζετε—θησαυρίζετε δέ (6:19 f.). Cf. 1 Cor. 1:10, etc. The contrast may lie in the nature of the case, particularly where persons stand in contrast as in ἔγὼ δέ (Mt. 5:22, 28, 32, etc.), σὺ δέ (Mt. 6:6; 1 Tim. 6:11; ἡμεῖς δέ (1 Cor. 1:23); ὑμεῖς δέ (Mk. 8:29); the common ὁ δέ (Mk. 1:45), οἱ δέ (Mt. 2:5); αὐτὸς δέ (Lu. 8:37), αὐτὸς δὲ Ἰησοῦς (Jo. 2:24), etc. The contrast is made more manifest by the use of μὲν, (see Intensive Particles) as in Mt. 3:11. In 1 Cor. 2:6, σοφίαν δὲ οὐ τοῦ αἰώνος τοῦτο, an exception is filed to the preceding. This adversative use of δέ is very common indeed. Cf. further Mk. 2:18; Lu. 5:5; 9:9, 13; 24:21; Ac. 12:15; Ro. 8:9 ff.

(ii) Ἀλλὰ. Just as ἀλλὰς (cf. 2 Cor. 11:4) can be used in the sense of ἐτερος (when it means 'different,' not merely 'second'), so

¹ Joh. Gr., p. 100. ² Ib., p. 99.
\(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) can mean 'another' in contrast to the preceding. With a negative the antithesis is sharp as in Lu. 1:60, \(\varphi\chi\iota\iota\iota\), \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) \(\kappa\lambda\eta\theta\eta\-\sigma\tau\alpha\) \(\iota\iota\omega\alpha\eta\nu\)\(\zeta\). So Jo. 6:32, \(\omicron\ \mu\omega\nu\sigma\varsigma\zeta\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\) \(\omicron\ \pi\alpha\tau\iota\rho\) (cf. 6:38). Cf. Mk. 9:37; 1 Cor. 15:37. In verse 39 of 1 Cor. 15 note \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\nu\ \mu\epsilon\nu\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\nu\ \delta\epsilon\) where both \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\), and \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\nu\) have the notion of difference due to the context. In 1 Cor. 9:12 note \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\), twice. In Mt. 15:11 \(\omicron\) begins one clause and \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) the other. Cf. 2 Cor. 4:5, \(\omicron\ \gamma\alpha\rho\ \epsilon\alpha\alpha\upsilon\omicron\upsilon\varsigma\mu\rho\sigma\sigma\omicron\omicron\upsilon\), \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) \(\chi\rho\iota\omicron\tau\omicron\upsilon\  \iota\iota\sigma\sigma\omicron\nu\) \(\kappa\upiota\omicron\nu\). So Mt. 5:17. In Lu. 12:51 note \(\omicron\chi\iota\iota\iota\ \alpha\lambda\lambda\) \(\eta\) and in 2 Cor. 1:13, \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\) \(\eta\) a sort of pleonastic use of \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\). This is a classical idiom. Cf. also \(\omicron\ \mu\omicron\nu\nu\omicron\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\), (Ac. 19:26) or \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) \(\kappa\alpha\iota\) (Ro. 5:3). See Negative Particles. For \(\omicron\chi\iota\iota\iota\ \omicron\tau\iota\iota\iota\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) see Jo. 7:22, for \(\omicron\chi\iota\iota\iota\ \iota\nu\omega\alpha\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) see 6:38. For \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) \(\gamma\epsilon\) in apodosis see 1 Cor. 9:2, for \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\). Col. 2:5, for \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\) \(\omicron\), 1 Cor. 4:15. Sometimes \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\) \(\iota\nu\alpha\) may be elliptical as in Mk. 14:49; Jo. 1:8. \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) alone may refer to an interruption in thought not expressed, as in Jo. 12:27. One of the most striking instances of \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) occurs in Ac. 16:37, \(\omicron\ \gamma\alpha\rho\), \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\), where \(\omicron\ \gamma\alpha\rho\) means 'not much' with fine shorn (cf. \(\kappa\alpha\iota\ \upsilon\upsilon\nu\); just before). Both Winer and W. F. Moulton (W.-M., p. 566) felt certain that \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) never equalled \(\epsilon\iota\ \mu\eta\), not even in Mt. 20:23 and Mk. 4:22. But J. H. Moulton (Prol., p. 241) quotes Tb. P. 104 (i/B.C.), \(\kappa\alpha\iota\ \epsilon\xi\epsilon\epsilon\sigma\tau\omega\ \phi\iota\lambda\iota\sigma\kappa\omega\iota\ \gamma\nu\nu\alpha\iota\kappa\alpha\ \alpha\lambda\lambda\nu\ \epsilon\pi\alpha\gamma\alpha\gamma\epsilon\sigma\theta\alpha\iota\ \alpha\lambda\lambda\ \alpha\ 'A\pi\omicron\lambda\lambda\nu\nu\iota\alpha\nu\), where \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\) means practically 'except.' See also Gen. 21:26. Moulton suggests that, since \(\epsilon\iota\ \mu\eta\) (brachylogy) in Lu. 4:26 f.; Rev. 21:27, means 'but only,' the same may be true of \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\).

(iii) \(\Pi\lambda\eta\nu\). Curtius gets it from \(\pi\lambda\omicron\epsilon\omicron\nu\) (‘more’), but Brugmann\(^2\) finds its original --meaning to be 'near by.' At any rate it was a preposition (Mk. 12:32). Cf. Ac. 15:28, \(\pi\lambda\omicron\epsilon\omicron\nu\ \pi\lambda\eta\nu\ \tau\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\nu\) where the two words exist together. Probably its original use as a conjunction is seen in the combination \(\pi\lambda\eta\nu\ \omicron\tau\iota\iota\iota\) (Ph. 1:18). It is chiefly confined to Luke's writings in the N. T. As a conjunction it is always adversative (cf. Lu. 6:24; 12:31, etc.). In Mt. 26:39 note \(\pi\lambda\eta\nu\ \omicron\chi\iota\iota\iota\ \omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\) — \(\alpha\lambda\lambda\) \(\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron\). The classical language used it as a preposition and with \(\omicron\tau\iota\iota\iota\), but Aristotle\(^3\) shows the existence of \(\pi\lambda\eta\nu\) as a conjunction which developed in the vernacular. Blass\(^4\) notes that Paul uses it at the end of an argument to single out the main point. Cf. 1 Cor. 11:11; Eph. 5:33; Ph. 3:16; 4:14.

\(^1\) Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 269.
\(^3\) Blass, Gr of N. T. Gk., p. 268.
\(^4\) Ib.
(iv) **Me<ntoi.** This word is a combination of two intensive par-

isles (μέν, τοί), and is used to mean 'however.' Cf. Jo. 4:27; 12:42. It occurs in the N. T. only eight times.

(v) **'Omwj.** This word is even more rare than μέντοι. It occurs with two participles (1 Cor. 14:7; Gal. 3:15) and once with μέν-

τοι (Jo. 12:42).

(vi) **Ei μή.** This phrase marks an exception, as in Mt. 12:4; Jo. 17:12. We even have ἐκτός εἰ μή (1 Cor. 14:5; 15:2; 1 Tim. 5:19).

(c) **Disjunctives.** Dionysius Thrax calls this construction σύν-

θεσίς διαζευγμένη. It was always possible to express alternative ideas without any conjunction (cf. the Latin nolens volens) or by copulative conjunctions (δὲ, καὶ), a construction common in the vernacular1 (cf. Hebrew). Dissimilar things may be united by καὶ as in Col. 3:11, but we do not have to take καὶ as being ἢ or vice versa.2

(i) **'H.** Its origin from ἢ (enclitic) is held by Brugmann.3 They are equivalent in Homer. We may have just ἢ as in Mt. 5:17. For ἢ καὶ see Mt. 7:10; Lu. 18:11. In the sense of 'or' ἢ may be repeated indefinitely (Ro. 8:35). In Ro. 1:21 we have οὔχ—ἡ as in 4:13. See μὴ πω—μὴ δὲ—ἡ (Ro. 9:11). This use in negative clauses appears in Thuc. 1, 122, and later writers. In 1 Th. 2:19 note ἢ οὔχι καί. In Mt. 21:23 we have καὶ τίς, while in Lu. 20:2 (parallel passage) the reading is ἢ τίς. This does not prove καὶ and ἢ to be synonymous. The logion was translated differently. The modern Greek retains οὔτε, μήτε and ἢ (Thumb, *Handb.*, p. 185). In 1 Cor. 11:27, δὲ ἄν ἐσθίει τὸν ἄρτον ἢ πίνῃ τὸ ποτήριον τοῦ κυρίου, some MSS. have Kai, but iij is the true text. This, however, does not mean that some partook of one element and some of the other, but that, whatever element was taken in this way, there was guilt. The correlative use of ἢ—ἡ (‘either--or’) is also frequent.4 Cf. Mt. 6:24; 1 Cor. 14:6. In Ro. 6:16 note ἢ τοῖς—ἡ. As a disjunctive we have πότερον—ἡ in Jo. 7:17 and ἢ—ἡ—ἡ in Mk. 13:35. For πρὶν ἢ see Mt. 1:18; for ἢ after θέλω see 1 Cor. 14:19; after καλὸν, Mt. 18:8; after χαρά, Lu. 15:7; for ἄλλα ἢ, Lu. 12:51. Radermacher (N. T. Gr., p. 27) finds ἢ τοῖς—ἡ, B. G. U. 956; ἢ τοῖς—ἡ τοῖς,

2 W.-Th., p. 440.
3 Griech. Gr., p. 541.
Vett. Val., p. 138, ἢτε--ἡ, I. G. XII, 2, 562, 5 (Roman time); ἢτε--ἡτε, Quaest. Barth., pp. 24, 30.

(ii) Εἴτε--εἴτε (ἐάντε—ἐάντε). These conditional particles are like the Latin sive — sive. Cf. 1 Cor. 10:31, εἴτε--εἴτε--εἴτε.
So 12:13; 14:7. We have εἴτε eight times in 3:22. In 14:7 it follows ἢ—ἡ in verse 6. For ἐάντε—ἐάντε see Ro. 14:8.

(iii) Οὕτε--οὕτε (μήτε—μήτε). We have seen that there is nothing inherent in οὕτε to make it disjunctive. Cf. Jo. 4:11; 3 Jo. 10. It is simply οὗ and τέ (cf. οὗ δέ, a negative copulative conjunction. In Rev. 5:3 f. we have οὐδέ--οὐτε (cf. Gal. 1:12) and the next verse οὐδεῖς—οὐτε. In Ac. 24:12 f. we have οὕτε--οὕτε--οὐδέ. Cf. Lu. 20:35 f. In Jo. 5:37 f. note οὕτε--οὕτε—καὶ οὗ. In 1 Cor. 6:10 note οὐτε--οὗτε--οὗ—οὗ. In Jas. 3:12 cf. are after question. A good-example of the correlative οὕτε--οὕτε is 1 Cor. 3:7. In Ro. 8:38 f. οὐτέ occurs ten times. In Ac. 23:8 we find μῆ—μήτε—μήτε. This is also just a copulative negative conjunction (μή τε). In Mt. 5:34-36 we have μῆ—μήτε—μήτε—μήτε. In 2 Th. 2:2 we have μηδέ—μήτε—μήτε. In Lu. 7:33 μῆ—μήτε, while in 9:3 μηδέν is followed by μήτε five times. There is often some confusion in the MSS between μηδέ and μήτε, οὐδέ, and οὐτέ. Blass rejects οὕτε οὐδα οὕτε ἐπίσταμαι in Mk. 14:68 (NBDD), but on whimsical grounds.

(d) Inferential Conjunctions. It is not easy to draw a distinction between "inferential" and "causal." There is no doubt about ἀρα and οὖν. These are inferential paratactic particles. What about γάρ? Monro calls it causal. Kuhn-Gerth treat all three as causal. Perhaps it is just as well to reserve the term "causal" for the hypotactic particles ὅτι, ἐπεί, etc. One has to be arbitrary sometimes. And even so these particles (ἀρα, οὖν, γάρ) were originally just transitional or explanatory in sense. Blass calls them "consecutive" co-ordinate conjunctions.

(i) ἀρα. The etymology seems to be clear, though not accepted by all scholars. The root ἀρ—(ἀρ—ἀρ—ἰσκω, 'to fit') suits exactly. It means then 'fittingly, accordingly.' Cf. our "articulate" (ar-ticus). The word expresses some sort of correspondence between the sentences or clauses. It was postpositive in the ancient Greek, but in the N. T. it is not always so. Cf.

Mt. 12:28; Ac. 17:27. It occurs some 50 times in the N. T., in Matthew, Mark, Luke, Acts, Paul's Epistles, and Hebrews. The original notion of mere correspondence is apparently preserved in Lu. 11:48, ἢρα μάρτυρες ἔστε, 'so ye are witnesses.' Cf. also Ac. 11:18. In Mk. 11:13; Ac. 17:27, εἰ ἢρα has the idea of 'if haply.' Klotz takes ἢρα to describe the unexpected and strange, something extrinsic, while Baumlein considers it a particle giving point to what is immediately and necessarily conclusive. Most of the N. T. instances seem to be clearly illative. Cf. Mt. 17:26 f.; Ro. 7:21. It has γε added three times (cf. Mt. 7:20; 17:26 f.; Ac. 17:27). Paul is specially fond of ἢρα οὖν (Ro. 5:18; 7:3, 25, etc.). Once he has ἢρα νῦν (Ro. 8:1). ἢρα occurs also in the apodosis (Mt. 12:28; Gal. 2:21). We have μὴτι ἢρα in a question in 2 Cor. 1:17.

(ii) Γάρ. There is no doubt as to the origin of this word. It is a compound of γέ and ἢρα and is always postpositive. It is called σύνδεσμος αἰτιολογικός, but it does not always give a reason. It may be merely explanatory. We have seen that ἢρα itself was originally just correspondence and then later inference. So then γέ can accent as an intensive particle either of these ideas. It is a mistake, therefore, to approach the study of γάρ with the theory that it is always or properly an illative, not to say causal, particle. It is best, in fact, to note the explanatory use first. Thayer wrongly calls the illative use the primary one. The word is common in all the larger books of the N. T. It is least common in the Gospel of John and in Revelation. In Matthew and Luke it is much more frequent in the discourses and is rare in the strict narrative. In Mark and John it is about half and half.  

The explanatory use is common in Homer. The N. T. examples are numerous. Cf. Mt. 19:12; Mk. 5:42; 16:4; Lu. 11:30; 18:32. Here the explanation follows immediately. Sometimes the explanation comes in by way of appendix to the train of thought. So Mt. 4:18, ἡσαυν γάρ ἀλιεῖς. Cf. also Mk. 2:15; Ro. 7:2. In questions we have good examples, particularly τι γάρ. So Mt. 27:23, τί γάρ κακῶν ἐποίησεν; Cf. Ro. 3:3. In Ac. 16:37, οὗ γάρ ἄλλα, we have to resolve γάρ into its parts and make the phrase= 'not much, but.' In Jo. 9:30, ἐν τούτῳ γάρ, the man uses γάρ with fine scorn, 'why, just in this,' etc. In Jo. 19:6 it is hardly creditable to Pilate's common sense to take γάρ as illative. Cf. also Jo. 7:41; Ac. 19:35; Mt. 9:5. Γάρ sometimes

1 Abbott, Joh. Gr., p. 102.  
PARTECNES (AI ΠΑΡΑΘΗΚΑΙ) 1191

gives the major premise (Mt. 26:52), more often the minor premise (2 Pet. 1:15 f.), sometimes both (Jo. 3:19 f.). The purely illative use of γάρ is simple enough, though the force of the ground or reason naturally varies greatly. See Mt. 1:21, αὐτὸς γάρ σῶσει; (6:24) ἦ γάρ; (Ro. 8:18) λογίζομαι γάρ. Paul begins every sentence with γάρ in Ro. 8:18-24. For καὶ γάρ see Ro. 11:1; 15:3. The precise relation between clauses or sentences is not set for by γάρ. That must be gathered from the context if possible. Cf. Jo. 4:44. Note γάρ — ὅτι in 1 Tim. 6:7.

(iii) Οὐν. The etymology of οὐν is unknown. Brugmann¹ thinks it probable that it is derived from *ὁ ἐν or ὁ ὄν (cf. ὅντως, τῷ ὄντι). The Ionic also has ὄν (so Lesbian, Doric, Boeotian). But, however that may be, it is important to note that the particle is not illative nor even consequential in Homer.² It is merely a transitional particle relating clauses or sentences loosely together by way of confirmation. It was common in this sense in Homer, though rare in the Attic writers save in μὲν οὐν. But it is very frequent in the Gospel of John as a mere transitional particle. In this Gospel it occurs about 200 times, nearly as frequent as all the rest of the N.T., though it is rare in the other Johannine writings. In John's Gospel, outside of 8 examples in the words of Jesus, the rest occur in the narrative portion.³ Abbott⁴ seems puzzled over the many non-illative instances of οὐν in John and suggests that “the writer perhaps had in view the objections of controversialists” But this is wholly gratuitous and needless in the light of a history of the particle. Probably a majority of the instances in John's Gospel are non-illative as in Homer, the original use of the word.⁵ Luke preserves the literary Attic idiom by the common use of μὲν οὐν as in Ac. 15:3, 30, etc. But John boldly uses οὐν alone and needs no apology for doing so. It just carries along the narrative with no necessary thought of cause or result. It is, because of John's free use, one of the commonest particles in the N. T. and is oftener in the narrative books than in the epistles.⁶ It is interesting in John to take a chapter and note when οὐν is merely continuative and when illative. Cf. ch. 11, for instance, verses 3, 6, 12, 14, 16, 17, 20, 21, 31, 32, 33, 36, 38, 45, 47, 54, 56. So we start off again in 12:1 with ὁ οὐν Ἰησοῦς

(continuative). It is the commonest connective between sentences in this Gospel. We moderns do not feel the same need for connecting-particles between independent sentences. The ancient Greeks loved to point out these delicate nuances. The interrogative οὐκοῦν occurs only in Jo. 18:37. A good instance of the purely illative use is in Mt. 3:8, ποιήσατε οὖν καρπόν. It is common in Paul's Epistles (Ro. 5:1; 6:12, etc.). Paul is fond also of ἀρα οὖν (Ro. 8:12) and of τί οὖν (6:1, 15; 7:7; 8:31, etc.). οὖν is always postpositive.

2. HYPOTACTIC CONJUNCTIONS (συνδεσμοί ὑποτακτικοί). The conjunctions used in the N. T. with subordinate clauses have been discussed and the constructions given in detail already. See Modes (Subordinate Clauses). The relative, temporal, comparative, local, causal, final and consecutive, apprehensive, conditional and declarative conjunctions make a goodly list. But it is not necessary to go over the same ground again. Most of these conjunctions, as previously shown, are of relative origin.¹ All are adverbs. It was necessary to treat at length the paratactic conjunctions which antedate the hypotactic in origin and were always exceedingly abundant in the vernacular. The hypotactic belong to the more highly developed speech, but one must not think that the hypotactic conjunctions regulate the construction of the sentence. They get their meaning from the sentence, not the sentence from the conjunction. The other view is a mechanical theory of language out of harmony with the historical growth of both mode and particle.² Hypotaxis grew out of parataxis. This paratactic origin survives in many ways. Cf., for instance, the relative at the beginning of sentences, as ἐν οἷς (Lu. 12:1). So also ὅτι in 1 Jo. 3:11 f. The Greek is particularly rich in its subordinating conjunctions as compared with the Sanskrit and the Hebrew. Each subordinate clause possesses a case-relation toward the principal sentence as substantive, adjective or adverb, so that the sentence expansion is on the lines of the word-relations. In general the disappearance of the ancient Greek conjunctions from the modern Greek is noticeable. ὅποτε (ὅποταν), ἀχρίς, μέχρις, εἰ, ἐφ’ ὁ "have entirely disappeared" (Thumb, Handb., p. 186).

¹ On the relative origin of conjns. like ὅτι, ὅτε, ὅπως, ὡς, ἐκακτε see Baron, Le Pronom Relatif et la Conjonction, 1891, pp. 95 ff.
Nά has greatly extended its functions. Some survive greatly modified, like ἀφοῦ, ἐάν, ἐπειδή, πρίν, ὅς ποῦ (ἐως), ποῦ (ὅπου), προτοῦ, etc. The paratactic conjunctions are "pressed into service to form dependent clauses" as at the beginning.

Parataxis turfs into hypotaxis.

VI. Interjections. Winer¹ considers interjections to be mere sounds, and so entirely outside of the sphere of syntax and indeed of grammar. But one² of the imperatival forms (ἀγε) is exclamatory in origin. Or is the interjection an imperative in origin? We this form still used as an interjection in Jas. 4:13. So also ὦ in Jo. 1:29, ὦ ἀμυνος τοῦ θεοῦ. Cf. δεῦρο (Mk. 10:21), δεῦτε (Mt. 11:28). Δεῦρο is very vivid in Jo. 11:43, Λάζαρ εὐρο ἔξω. Ἰδού is either used absolutely (Mt. 11:10) or with the nominative (Rev. 4:1) and is of frequent occurrence. Καὶ ἰδοὺ is gold Greek, but its frequency reminds one of the Hebrew idiom. We have ζα in Lu. 4:34. Once οὐά occurs (Mk. 15:29) with the vocative. So οὐαί is found with the vocative in Lu. 6:25. It is found absolutely in Rev. 18:10, 16, 19, οὐαί, οὐαί. Twice it is used with the accusative (Rev. 8:13; 12:12), as the object of thought. Usually the dative is found with οὐαί as in Mt. 11:21; Lu. 6:24 f.; 11:42. The word occurs mainly in Matthew and Like. Sometimes we ὦ have with the vocative as in Mt. 15:28, ὦ γύναι. So Ac. 13:10; Ro. 2:1; Gal. 3:1. There is usually some vehemence or urgency when ὦ is used. But not always. See Ac. 1:1; 18:14. In Ro. 10:15 ὅς is an exclamatory particle, as τί is in Lu. 12:49. It is not quite true, therefore, to say that interjections lie quite outside of grammar. Indeed, language may come from just these ejaculatory sounds, like "mama" with the babe. Tragedians³ naturally use interjections more frequently. People differ greatly in the use of "Oh" and "Ah." The English audiences are fond of "Hear, hear," while the American crowds love to clap their hands or stamp their feet. Farrar⁴ follows Scaliger and Destutt de Tracy in regarding them as words par excellence and as having high linguistic importance. Grammar can deal with emotion as well as with thought.

¹ W.-Th., p. 35 ² Cf. Moulton, ProL., p. 171 f.
³ Muller, De interjeetionum apud Sophoclem, Euripidem que Usu, 1885, p. 3.
⁴ Gk. Synt., p. 201.
CHAPTER XXII

FIGURES OF SPEECH (ΓΟΡΓΙΕΙΑ ΣΧΗΜΑΤΑ)

I. Rhetorical, not Grammatical. Strictly speaking there is no need to go further in the discussion of the points of syntax. There are various matters that the grammars usually discuss because there is no N. T. rhetoric. These points belong to language in general, though in some of them the Greek has turns of its own. Each writer has, besides, his own style of thought and speech. See discussion in chapter IV. Under The Sentence we have a ready discussed the ellipsis (of subject, predicate or copula), matters of concord, apposition, the position of words (emphasis, euphony, rhythm, poetry, prolepsis, ὑστερον πρότερον, postpositive wards, hyperbaton, order of clauses), simple and compound sentences, connection between words (polysyndeton and asyndeton), connection between clauses and sentences (paratactic and hypothetic) and asyndeton again, running and periodic style, parenthesis, anacoluthon, oratio variata, connection between paragraphs. These matters call for no further comment. They could have been treated at this point, but they seemed rather to belong to the discussion of sentences in a more vital way than the remaining rhetorical figures. For attraction and incorporation see Cases and Relative Pronouns. The points now to be discussed have not so much to do with the orderly arrangement (συνέκτος) as with the expression and the thought.

II. Style in the N. T. The characteristics of the N. T. writers received treatment in chapter IV. The precise question here is whether the writers of the N. T. show any marks of rhetorical study. We have seen already (The Sentence, Rhythm) that the scholars are divided into two camps on this subject. Blass\(^1\) (but not Debrunner) argues that Paul's writings and the Epistle to the Hebrews show the influence of the rules of rhythm of the literary prose of Asia (Asianism) and Rome (Pausanias, Cicero,

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 295.
2 Die Rhythmen der asianischen and romischen Kunstprosa, 1905.
Curtius, Apuleius). Deissmann\textsuperscript{1} will have none of it. It is a pretty quarrel and, as usual, there is truth in both views. One must get his bearings. We can all agree with Blass\textsuperscript{2} at once that the N.T. writers are not to be compared on this point with the literary masters of Attic prose, but with writers like Polybius. We are surely of to look for the antithetic style of the Attic orators (Isocrates, Lysias, Demosthenes).\textsuperscript{3} If there is aesthetic beauty in 1 Cor. 13 or Heb. 11, it may be the natural aesthetic of Homer's rhapsodies, not the artificialities of Isocrates. Blass\textsuperscript{4} admits the poverty of the Oriental languages in the matter of periods and particles and does not claim that the N. T. writers rose above the 0. T. or rose to the level of Plato. And yet Norden in his \textit{Antike Kunstprosa} claims that in his best diction Paul rises to the height of Plato in the Phaedrus. Wilamowitz-Mollendorff likewise calls Paul "a classic of Hellenism." Sir W. M. Ramsay is a stout advocate for the real Hellenic influence on Paul's life.\textsuperscript{5} But Ramsay scouts the word "rhetoric" in connection with Paul: "I can hardly imagine that one who had ever experienced the spell of Paul could use the word rhetoric about the two examples which he mentions from First Corinthians, and Romans."\textsuperscript{6} There was in Paul's time artificial rhetoric with which Paul evinently had no connection, nor did any of the writers of the N. T. One cannot believe that Paul, for instance, studied at one of the famous schools of rhetoric nor that he studied the writings of the current rhetoricians. This much may be freely admitted about all of the N. T. writers, who wrote in the language the people, not of the schools. Deissmann correctly say: "The history of Christianity, with all its wealth of incident, has been treated much too often as the history of the Christian literary upper class, the history of theologians and ecclesiastics, schools, councils and parties, whereas Christianity itself has often been most truly alive in quarters remote

\textsuperscript{1} Theol. Lit., 1906, p. 434; The Expositor, 1908, p. 74. See also his St. Paul (1912).
\textsuperscript{2} Hermeneutik und Kritik, 1S02, p. 198. The true grammarian is but too willing to see the ether point of view. Cf. Gildersl., Am. Jour. of Philol., 1908, p. 266.
\textsuperscript{3} Hahne, Zur sprachl. Asthetik der Griech., 1896, p. 4.
\textsuperscript{4} Hermeneutik und Kritik, p. 19S.
\textsuperscript{5} Cf. the controversy between him and Principal Garvie in The Expositor for 1911 anent Garvie's book, Studies of Paul and His Gospel (1911).
\textsuperscript{6} The Expositor, Aug., 1911, p. 157.
\textsuperscript{7} Light from the Ancient East, p. 404.
This is all pre-eminently true and we must never forget that Jesus was a carpenter, John a fisherman and Paul a tentmaker. And yet Deissmann himself will say of John: "St. John has no liking for progress along an unending straight road; he loves the circling flight, like his symbol, the eagle. There is something hovering and brooding about his production; repetitions are in no wise abnormal with him, but the marks of a contemplation which he cherishes as a precious inheritance from St. Paul and further intensifies." There is a perfection of form in the Parables of Jesus that surpasses all the rules of the grammarians and rhetoricians. The eagle flight of John makes the cawing of the syntactical crows pitiful. The passion of Paul broke through all the traditional forms of speech. He lacked the punctilious refinements of the Stoic rhetoricians, but he had the cyclonic power of Demosthenes and the elevation of Plato. Even Blass sees that "the studied employment of the so-called Gorgian assonances is necessarily foreign to the style of the N. T., all the more because they were comparatively foreign to the whole period; accident, however, of course produces occasional instances of them, and the writer often did not decline to make use of any that suggested themselves." This would seem modest enough to satisfy Deissmann. In particular Blass notes "the absence of rhetorical artifice in the Johannine speeches." He finds little of that nature in Mark and Luke. "But in Matthew there really is same artistic sense of style," but it is "mainly drawn from Hebrew and not from Greek." The many quotations in this Gospel show a close use of the LXX and the Hebrew O. T. And yet, on the whole, the Greek runs smoothly enough. Konig has a valuable article on "Style of Scripture" in the Extra Volume of Hastings' Dictionary of the Bible, but he deals mainly with the O. T. There is in truth little that is distinctive in the style of the N.T. apart from the naturalness, simplicity, elevation and pass on of the writers. It is only in the Epistle to the Hebrews that Blass finds "the care and dexterity of an artistic writer" as shown by his occasional avoidance of hiatus, but even here Blass has to strain a point to make it stick. Bultmann draws a definite parallel between the style of Paul and the Cynic-Stoic

1 Light from the Anc. East, p. 410.
2 J. Weiss, Beitr. zur paulinischen Rhetorik, 1897, p. 168.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 298.
4 Ib., p. 302.
5 Ib., p. 296.
6 Der Stil der paulinische Predigt und die kynisch-stoische Diatribe, 1910.
Diatribe and Makes his point, but even so one wonders if after all Paul uses question and answer so skilfully by reason of definite study of the subject or because of his dialectical training as a rabbi and his native genius in such matters. It is per se, however, entirely possible that Paul knew the common Stoic dialectic also as he did the tenets of current Stoicism (cf. Paul's work in Athens). The examples of figures of speech in the N. T. are due to the nature of speech in general, to the occasional passion of the writer, to the play of his fancy, to unconscious expression of genius, to mere accident. We must not make the mistake of rating men like Luke, Paul, James and the author of Hebrews as boorish and unintellectual. They lived in an age of great culture and they were saturated with the noblest ideas that ever filled the human brain. As men of genius they were bound to respond to such a situation. They do show a distinct literary flavour as Heinrici has so well shown. In 1 Cor. 13 we have finish of form and thought. Even John, called ὁ γράμματος καὶ ἴδιωτης (Ac. 4:13), rose to the highest planes of thought in his Gospel. Deissmann in his St. Paul goes to the extreme of making Paul a mere man of affairs devoid of theological culture, — an untenable position in view of Acts and Paul's Epistles when he says: "His place is with Amos, the herdsman of Tekoa, and Tersteegen, the ribbon-weaver of Mulheim" (p. 6). We may brush aside the artificial rules of Gorgias as too studied efforts for the N. T. Indeed, the men of the time had larger refused to follow the lead of Gorgias of Sicily, though his name clung to the figures of speech. His mannerisms were not free from affectation and pedantry. The Attic orators of the fourth century B.C. had their own rules for easy and flexible practical speech. The writers and speakers of the later time modified these in their own way. We are not concerned here to follow Blass in his effort to prove that Paul and the writer of Hebrews were students of the current rhetoricians. This we fail to see, but we do see that the language of the N. T. was a living organism and exhibits many of the peculiarities of human speech which the rhetoricians have discussed. For convenience, therefore, we adopt their terminology.

1 Norden (Die ant. Kunstprosa, Bd. II, p. 508) speaks of Paul's use of rhetorical figures as die to his "Ton." Heinrici (Zum Hellen. d. Paulus, Komm. zu II Kor.) sees Paul's "Eigenart."
2 Der literarische Charakter d. neut. Schriften, 1908.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 295.
4 Die Rhythmen der asianischen and romischen Kunstprosa, 1905.
III. Figures of Idea or Thought (σχήματα διανοίας). Blass\(^1\) observes that these figures of thought belong more to the later period of Attic oratory. Some of them are distinctly rhetorical in character, as the rhetorical question of which Paul makes abundant use, especially in the Epistle to the Romans. Blass\(^2\) makes a good critique of such questions as showing dialectical liveliness and perspicuity, as in Ro. 3:1 τί οὖν τὸ περισσόν τοῦ Ἰουδαίου; (4:10) πῶς οὖν ἐλογίσθη; ἐν περιτομῇ ὄντι ἤ ἐν ἀκροβυσσίᾳ; This is quite like the diatribe in Epictetus and other κοινὴ writers (Radermacher, N. T. Gr., p. 182). Cf. 1 Cor. 7:18 ff. Other questions are quite emotional, as in 2 Cor. 11:22. In Ro. 8:31-35 we have a "brilliant oratorical passage," worthy of any orator in the world. There are others almost equal to it, Ro. 6, 7, 9, 10, 11; 1 Cor. 3, 4, 8, 9, 12, 13, 15; 2 Cor. 2, 3, 4, 5, 8, 10, 11, 13. Here we have oratory of the highest kind with the soul all ablaze with great ideas. The words respond to this high environment and are all aglow with beauty and light. Certainly the Epistle to Hebrews is oratory of the highest order, as are the addresses in Acts. Blass\(^3\) thinks that Luke is distinctly "unprofessional (idiotisch)" in his manner of presenting the great speeches in Acts, ἰδιωτικὴ φράσις, not τεχνικὴ φράσις. That is true, but one would have a martinet spirit to cavil at the word eloquence here. The discourses of Jesus in Matthew, Luke and John are above all praise in content and spirit. One cannot think that Jesus was a technical student of rhetoric, but he sang with the woodrobin's note, and that far surpasses the highest achievement of the best trained voice whose highest praise is that she approaches the woodrobin or the nightingale. There is perfection of form in the thoughts of Jesus whether we turn to the Sermon on the Mount in Matthew, the Parables in Luke 15, or the Discourses in the Upper Room and On the Way to Gethsemane in John 14-17. The style of the reporters does not conceal the consummate skill of Christ as the "Master Preacher" of the ages.

There is undoubted use of irony (ἐφιστάμενοι) in the N. T. We see it in the words of Jesus. See the high scorn in καὶ ὑμεῖς πληρώσατε τὸ μέτρον τῶν πατέρων ὑμῶν (Mt. 23:32). This is the correct text, not πληρώσετε. So also καλῶς ἀπετέλετε τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ θεοῦ (Mk. 7:9) and ὅτι οὐκ ἐνδέχεται προφήτην ἀπολέσθαι ἐξ Ἰερουσαλήμ (Lu. 13:33).

\(^1\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 304.


\(^3\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 305.
There is more of it in Paul's writings. Cf. 1 Cor. 4:8; 2 Cor. 11:19 f.; 12:13; Ro. 11:20. There was never a more nimble mind than that of Paul, and he knew how to adapt himself to every mood of his readers or hearers without any sacrifice of principle. It was no declaimer's tricks, but love for the souls of men that made him become all things to all men (1 Cor. 9:22). He could change his tone because he loved the Galatians even when they had been led astray (Gal. 4:20). The rhetoricians call it _prodiorthosis_, as in 2 Cor. 11:21, ἐν ἀφροσύνη λέγω (cf. also 11:1f., 16 f., 23) and _epidiorthosis_ as in Ro. 3:5, κατὰ ἀνθρωπον λέγω. Cf. also 1 Cor. 7:6; 12:11; Ro. 8:34; Gal. 4:9. So Paul uses _paraleipsis_, as 2 Cor. 9:4, μὴ πως κατασχυνθώμεν ἡμεῖς, ὅνα μὴ λέγωμεν ἡμεῖς, instead of μὴ ποτε κατασχυνθήτε. As Blass suggests, Paul's innate delicacy of feeling makes him take the reproach on himself. Cf. also Phil. 19, ὅνα μὴ λέγω ὁτι καὶ σεαυτόν μοι προσο-φείτε. So in Ro. 7:4 Paul says καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐθανατώθητε τῷ νόμῳ rather than bluntly assert καὶ ὁ νόμος ἀπέθανεν (or ἐθανατώθη). There is sometimes of parallelism (heterogeneous structure). Cf. 1 Jo. 2:2, ἱλασμός περὶ τῶν ἀμαρτίων ἡμῶν, ὅπερ περὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων μούν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὅλον τοῦ κόσμου, instead of τῶν ὅλον τοῦ κόσμου. also Ph. 2:22, πατρὶ—σὺν ἐμοί. Cf. περιπατεῖν καὶ ἀσπασμοῦς in Mk. 12:38 f., τὴν μένουσαν ἐν ἡμῖν καὶ μὲθ ἡμῶν ἔσται in 2 Jo. 2.

V. Figures of Expression (σχήματα λέξεως). What Winer calls "Broken and Heterogeneous Structure" (anacoluthon, oratio varicaata) has had sufficient discussion under The Sentence. So as to asyndeton. There remain a number of other points which may be grouped for convenience.

(a) PARALLELS AND CONTRASTS (Parallelismus membrorum).

There are many illustrations of this idiom in the N. T., both in the Gospels and, Epistles. The O. T. is full of such words and phrases, particularly in the Psalms. One who read these hymns much would naturally have his eye and ear trained to this form of rhythm. We do not need to see conscious effort at poetry, though in 1 Tin. 3:16 we probably have a fragment of an early Christian hymn. The Hebrew _parallelism_ is manifest in Lu. 1:42-45 (the song of Elizabeth), 46-56 (the song of Mary), and 68-79 (the son, of Zacharias), 2:29-32 (the song of Simeon). One does not have to go to the Greek rhetoricians. The spirit of rhapsody here shown is due to the Spirit of God moving the heart and stirring the highest impulses of the soul. There are other examples of primitive Christian song in the N. T., as in Eph. 5:

---

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 304.  
2 W.-Th., p. 566.
There is the perfection of poetic form in the noble prose in 1 Cor. 13; 15: 54-7; Col. 1:10-12. One hesitates to think that this use of antithesis or parallelism is artificial even if it is conscious. This parallelism may be synonymous (Mt. 10:26; Jo. 1:17; Ro. 11:33) or antithetic (Jo. 3:6; Ro. 2:7). There are also examples of Chiasm or Reverted Parallelism (from the letter X) as in Philemon 5, τὴν ἀγάπην καὶ τὴν πίστιν ἦν ἐχεῖς εἰς τὸν κύριον Ἰησοῦν καὶ εἰς πάντας τοὺς ἀγίους. So Mt. 7:6; Ph. 1:15 f.; 1 Th. 5:6; Ph. 3:10. I doubt very much if Paul was at all conscious of the stilted parallelism that Blass sees in 1 Cor. 1:25 with anaphora (the first words alike) as in οὐ πολλοί—οὐ πολοί, or antistrophe (the last words alike) as in τοῦ θεοῦ—τοῦ θεοῦ—τῶν ἄνθρωπων—τῶν ἄνθρωπων, or symbole (both alike) as in ἐξεκέκατο ὁ θεὸς ἵνα καταισχύνῃ, ἐξεκέκατο ὁ θεὸς ἵνα καταισχύνῃ. Cf. Heb. 2:16. The manuscripts vary a deal in 1 Cor. 1:25 ff., and Blass has to juggle the text in order to make it come out in "rounded periods of three sections." What if this finesse was praised by dilettante rhetoricians when they found it in Demosthenes or Cicero? Surely Paul was not a "stylist" of the fashion of Cicero nor even of Demosthenes. Perhaps no orator "would have regarded the eloquence of this passage with other feelings than those of the highest admiration." Doubtless so, but for the passion and force, not for the mere word-play. Just so the three poetical quotations (Ac. 17:28; 1 Cor. 15:33; Tit. 1:12) do not justify straining after accidental lines in Ac. 23:5; Jas. 1:17; Heb. 12:12 f., or elsewhere. Blass is so fond of finding poetic parallelism in the Gospels that he actually makes it tilt the scales against the best manuscripts in some passages as in Mt. 5:45; 7:13 f.; 25:35. This seems much like eisegesis.

(b) CONTRASTS IN WORDS. There is the solemn repetition of a word with powerful effect (the epanadiplosis of the rhetoricians), but Blass does not claim this as a rhetorical device in the N. T. It is natural to strong emotion. Cf. ἐπιστάτα ἐπιστάτα (Lu. 8:24); κύριε κύριε (Mt. 25:11); σταύρωσον σταύρωσον (Jo. 19:6); Rev. 18:2, ἐπεσεν ἐπεσεν. See Ph. 3:2. Cf. also the two hours of shouting in Ac. 19:34. Climax is as old as Homer. This is again a perfectly natural method of emphasis. Cf. the links in the list of virtues in 2 Pet. 1:5-7. See also Ro. 5:3-5; 10:14. There is a cumulative force in the repetition. Per contra, zeugma puts together

1 W.-Th., p. 639.
2 Green, Handb. to N. T. Gk., p. 355.
3 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 300 f.
4 Ib., p. 302.
words that do not properly go together, as in 1 Cor. 3:2, γάλα
ύμας ἐπότισσα, οὐ βρώμα. So also Lu. 1:64, ἀνεψχθη τὸ στόμα αὐτοῦ
παρακρῆμα καὶ ἡ γλώσσα αὐτοῦ. Cf. 1 Tim. 4:3. This construc-
tion is usually explained as elliptical, one verb (as above) being
used where two are necessary for the full statement. Kuhner-
Gerth treat it as a species of brachylogy. The use of synonyms
is not absent in the N. T., though not in the richness of the classic
idiom. Cf. Lu. 8:15, ἐν καρδίᾳ καλῇ καὶ ἀγαθῇ, and the use of ἀγα-
pάω and φιλέω side by side in Jo. 21:15-17 where Peter makes a
point of using φιλέω. See chapter on Formation of Words. The
play on words takes many turns. The onomatopoetic words like
gogγωζω (cf. our "murmur") are very simple. Cf. Jo. 6:41. Ex-
amples of initial alliteration occur, like πονηρίᾳ, πλεονεξίᾳ (Ro. 1:
29); ὑβρισταῖς, ὑπερηφάνους (1:30); ἀπειθεῖς, ἀσυνετοὺς, ἀσυνθέτους,
ἀστόργους, ἀνελεήμονας (1:30 f.). It is hard to tell whether this is
conscious or unconscious. There are also instances of paronoma-
sia and annominatio. Paronomasia is rather loosely applied in
the books. Winer uses it only for words of similar sound, while
Blass confines it to the recurrence of the same word or word-
stem, like κακοῦς κακῶς (Mt. 21:41); ἐν παντὶ πάντοτε πάσαν (2 Cor.
9:8); ὁ νόμος νομίμως (1 Tim. 1:8), and uses parechesis for differ-
ent words of similar sound, like λιμῷ καὶ λοιμῷ (Lu. 21:11); ἐμαθεῖν
ἀφ’ ὄν ἐπαθεῖν (Heb. 5:8); φθόνου φόνου Ro. 1:29); ἀσυνέτους ἀσυν-
θέτους (1:31). See also 2 Cor. 10:12; Ro. 11:17. The point is a
fine one and need not be pressed. But annominatio deals with
the sense as well as the sound. Thus Πέτρος and πέτρα in Mt.
16:18; γινώσκεις ἀναγινώσκεις (Ac. 8:30); υπερφρονεῖν—φρονεῖν
—συφρονεῖν (Ro. 12:3); μηδὲν ἐργαζόμενους, ἀλλὰ περιεργαζόμενους
(2 Th. 3:11). Cf. also Mt. 27:9; Lu. 9:60; Ac. 23 :3; 2 Cor.
3:2; 1 Cor. 11:29 ff.; Ph. 3:2 f.; 2 Cor. 4:8 f.; Ro. 1:20; 5:
19; 12:15; Eph. 4:1. Even so there is a certain amount of
overlapping in the two figures. The ancients did not smile because
a pun was made. It was merely a neat turn of speech and was
very common. So Jesus says to Thomas, μη γίνου ἀπίστους ἀλλὰ
πιστὸς (Jo. 20:27).

(c) CONTRACTION AND EXPANSION. It is difficult to draw lines
between groups among these figures of speech. Zeugma, as we
have seen, can very well come in here as a sort of ellipsis. The
ellipsis of subject or predicate came up for discussion under

1 I II, p. 570.
2 Cf. Trench, N. T. Synonyms; Heine, Synonymik d. neut. Griech.
3 W.-Th., p. 636.
4 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 298.
The Sentence. But a few more words are needed here. Cf. 
πιστός ὁ θεός (2 Cor. 1:18); ὁ κύριος ἐγγύς (Ph. 4:5) as samples
of the absence of the copula. So Jo. 14 : 11; Ac. 19 :28, 34; 2
Cor. 11:6. It is not always clear what verb is to be supplied,
though εἰμί and γίνομαι are the most common. Cf. φωνή πάλιν ἕκ
δευτέρου πρὸς αὐτόν, Ac. 10:15; οὐκ ἐν λόγῳ ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ, ἀλλ’
ἐν δυνάμει, 1 Cor. 4:20. Cf. Jo. 21:21; 1 Cor. 5:12. Usually the
context makes clear what verb is wanting, as in Mt. 27:25;
Ac. 18:6; Ro. 4:9; 5:18; 2 Cor. 9:7; Gal. 2:9; Rev. 1:4.
In 2 Cor. 8:15 the participle ἔχων must be supplied with ὁ ac-
cording to a common Greek idiom. Cf. also Ro. 13:7, τῷ τὸν
φόρον, where Winer\textsuperscript{1} supplies ἀποδίδοναι κελεύοντι. Cf. also 1 Cor.
4: 6. It is easy to supply ὁ θεός in passages like Heb. 1:7 λέ
γει, 4:3 εἴρηκε. The context supplies the noun in a case like
Ac. 21:31, ζητοῦτων τε αὐτῶν ἀποκτεῖναι. Cf. Jo. 20:2, ἠραν τὸ
κύριον (‘people took away’). In Ac. 21:16, συνήθου καὶ τῶν μαθη-
tῶν, supply τινὲς as in Lu. 11:49, τινάς. Many verbs are con-
sidered clear enough without the object. So διάγω (sc. βίου) in
Tit. 3:3; προσέχω (sc. νοῦν) in Lu. 17:3, ἐπέχω in 14:7, ἐνέχω (sc.
χόλου) in Mk. 6:19; σωμβάλλω (sc. λόγους) as in Ac. 4:15 (cf. Lu.
24:17, αὐτιβάλλετε with object); συλλαμβάνω in Lu. 1:31. It is
unnecessary (see Adjectives) to recount again the many instances
of the adjective without a substantive where the gender and
number and context make it clear. A few common examples suf-
sce. For the absence of ἡμέρα note τῇ τρίτῃ (Lu. 13:32); ἡ αὐριον
(Mt. 6:34); τῆς στήμερον (Mt. 27:8); τῇ ἔχομενῃ (Lu. 13:33); τῇ
ἐπιούσῃ (Ac. 16:11); τῇ ἔξης (21:1); τῇ ἐτέρᾳ (Ac. 20:15). Γῇ is
easily supplied in Mt. 23:15, ἡ ἐξηρά, and in Heb. 11:26, εὖ Αἰγύπ-
tου. Supply γλώσσα in Rev. 9:11, εὖ τῇ Ἑλληνικῇ. So with ὅδος
in Lu. 5:19, ποιάς; 19:4, ἐκείνης. We miss ἰμάτιον in Jo. 20:12,
ἐν λευκοῖς, and ὕδωρ in Mt. 10:42, ψυχρὸν. So with χείρ in Mt. 6:
3, ἡ δεξιά, ἡ ἀριστερά and χώρα in Lu. 17:24, ἐκ τῆς –εἰς τὴν.
Much more serious is the ellipsis in Mt. 26:5, and Gal. 5:13, where
the context must supply both verb and subject. Cf. also οὐχ ὅτι
--- ἀλλ’ in Jo. 7:22. In a case like 2 Th. 2:3 f., ὅτι ἐὰν — ὅτι,
there is no apodosis expressed. These are but samples of the
ellipses common to Greek (cf. εἰ δὲ μὴ) as to all languages more or
less. It is not worth while to try to bring under this rhetorical
figure all the lapses and turns of style in each writer. Cf. the
absence of the verb with θύα in 1 Cor. 1:31, with τὸ μῆ in 4:6,
with ἐν δὲ in Ph. 3:13, with τοῦτο δὲ in 2 Cor. 9:6, with θύα
\footnote{1 W.-Th., p. 590.}
again in Gal. 2: 9. Cf. also Mk. 14:29; 1 Cor. 10:24; 2 Cor. 5:13.

*Aposiopesis* stands to itself since it is a conscious suppression of part of a sentence under the influence of a strong emotion like anger, fear, pity. Curiously enough Blass, who sees so many rhetorical tropes in the N. T., denies that any instances of aposiopesis occur in the N. T. I do not consider his objections well founded. We may dismiss Mk.7:11 and Lu. 22:42 because of the true text (see W. H.), and need not quibble over ὅρα μὴ in. Rev. 22:9. We may agree with Winer that we have simply anacolutha in 2 Th. 2:3 ff. But we have left others like Mk. 11:32, ἄλλα ἐπιμενὲς εἰς ἄνθρωπων;—ἐφοβοῦντο τὸν ὃχλον. See also Lu. 13:9, κἂν μὲν ποιήσῃ καρπὸν εἰς τὸ μέλλον—εἰ δὲ μήγε, ἐκκόψεις αὐτήν. So again 19:42, εἰ ἔγνυς καὶ σὺ. So Jo. 6:62, ἐὰν οὐν θεωρήτε τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἄνθρωπου ἀναβαίνοντα ὅπου ἦν τὸ πρότερον; Then again Ac. 23:9, εἰ δὲ πνεῦμα ἐλάλησεν αὐτῷ ἢ ἄγγελος--;. It is possible to regard Ro. 7:24 as aposiopesis. What differentiates these passages from ellipses or abbreviations of other clauses (cf. Mt. 25:14; Mk. 13:34; 2 Cor. 3:13) is the passion. One can almost see the gesture and the flash of the eye in aposiopesis.

We need not follow minutely the various sorts of *breviloquence* or *brachylogy* that are possible. Thought moves more rapidly than expression and the words often crowd together in a compressed way that may be not only terse, but at first obscure. A good illustration occurs in Mt. 9:6, ἵνα δὲ εἰδήτε ὅτι ἐξουσίαν ἐχει ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἄνθρωπου ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἀφιεναι ἀμαρτίας—τότε λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ Ὕγειερ ἄρον σου τὴν κλίνην, κτλ. Here the Evangelist has inserted τότε λέγει τῷ παρ. before the conclusion to make it clearer. The same thing is done in the parallel passages in Mk. 2:10; Lu. 5:24 (an incidental argument for a common document for this paragraph). Cf. also Mk. 14:49, ἄλλα ἵνα πληρωθῶσιν αἱ γραφαί. So Jo. 13:18; 15:25. Cf. Ac. 1:1, where ἦβησατο implies καὶ διετέλει before ποιεῖν τε καὶ διδάσκειν ἄχρι τῆς ἡμέρας, κτλ. See a similar use of ἀφέσαινος in Mt. 20:8, Lu. 23:5. A case like Lu. 24:47, ἀφέσαινοι, amounts to anacoluthon or the use of the participle as a principal verb. Cf. also καθάρισον in Mk. 7:19. Various examples of ellipsis-like zeugma are also instances of brachylogy. No clear line of distinction appears. So in comparisons we sometimes have to fill out the sense. Cf. Rev. 13:11, εἰ τε κέρατα δύο ὑμων ἄρνιω, i.e. κέρατιν ἄρνιου. Cf. 1 Jo. 3:11 f.; 2 Pet. 2:1. Other instances of brachylogy may be seen in Lu. 4:26 f.; Jo.

---

1 Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 294. 2 W.-Th., p. 600.
5:36; 15:11; Ac. 27:22; Gal. 2:16. The so-called *constructio praegnans* belongs here also. Cf. 2 Tim. 4:18, σῶσε εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν, though εἰς of itself does not mean 'into.' But note διὰ-σώσωσι πρὸς Φήλικα (Ac. 23:24) where the notion is that of taking to Felix and so saving Paul. Cf. also ἐκάθητο παρὰ τὴν ὀδόν (Mk. 10:46). See also Lu. 11:13 ὁ πατὴρ ὃ ἐξ ὦρανοῦ, (Col. 4:16) τὴν ἑκ Λαοδικίας. Blass\(^1\) distinguishes brachylogy from ellipsis in that brachylogy affects the thought rather than the grammatical form, but both ideas are usually present. Cf. Ro. 11:18. It would be wearisome to endeavour to put a name or tag upon every structure that seems defective from the standpoint of formal grammar or rhetoric. "It will be seen that many of them are due to that agility and acuteness of the Greek intellect which enables the Hellene or Hellenist readily to sacrifice the grammar of a sentence to its logic, or in other words its form to its meaning. Hence arose the many forms of the *sense-figure* (*σχήμα πρὸς τὸ σημαινόμενον, constructio ad sensum*)."\(^2\) We have seen illustrations of this construction κατὰ σύνεσιν under Concord (The Sentence) and only a few further are called for here. Indeed, this section is largely an illustration of this principle. In Jo. 15:6 αὐτά refers to τὸ κλῆμα; in Ac. 17:16 αὐτῶ points to Christ, who has not been mentioned; in 7: 24, τὸν Ἄιγύπτιον, though no Egyptian had been mentioned; in 1 Cor. 7:36, γαμεῖτωσαν, the subject being drawn from the context (the two young people). Winer\(^3\) was glad to note a decline in emphasis on these overrefinements in his day. These supposed abnormalities were called *hypallage*. From the present standpoint Winer himself yielded entirely too much to the very thing that he condemned. What is the use in figuring out the various ways that Paul could have expressed himself in 2 Cor. 3:7, for instance? The papyri have taught us to be chary about charging John with being ungrammatical in πλήρης χάριτος (Jo. 1:14). These matters simply show that the N. T. writers used a live language and were not automata.\(^4\) It is doubtless true that no other writer used repetition of word and phrase as did the author of the Fourth Gospel, but no one will deny that he did it with consummate skill and marvellous vividness and dramatic power.\(^5\)

\(^{1}\) Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 294.  
\(^{3}\) W.-Th., p. 634.  
There are many instances of pleonasm in the N. T. as in all vernacular speech. It is of many sorts. The same word may be repeated for clearness as in ὑμᾶς – ὑμᾶς (Col. 2:13); σπούδασον—ταχέως (2 Tim. 4:9). This redundancy is usually due to the custom of the language with no thought of the repetition,1 as in ἦς—αὐτῆς (Mk. 7:25); περισσοτέρως μᾶλλον (2 Cor. 7:13); ὄν—μή (Ac. 20:20, 27); ἐκτὸς εἰ μή (1 Cor. 15:2); ἀπεκρίθη λέγων (Mk. 15:9); ἀνάστησι καὶ πορεύον (Ac. 8:26); τῷ οἰκοδεσπότῃ τῆς οἰκίας like our "church-house" (Lu. 22:11); ἔσείτα μετὰ τοῦτο (Jo. 11:7); προδραμύν ἔμπροσθεν (Lu. 19:4); ἔξαγεν ἔξω Rec. (24:50); ὄρκῳ ὦμοσεν (Ac. 2:30); ἀρνούμενος ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν (1 Jo. 2:22); πάλιν ἐκ δευτέρου (Ac. 10:15), etc. Cf. also the cognate accusative. Redundances like these examples are not linguistic vices. They seem pleonastic to the technical student who is unwilling to allow for the growth of the language. Emphatic words have the constant tendency to become less so and to need re-enforcement. This love of emphasis in the N. T. is natural to conversation and to a certain extent has the Oriental richness and wealth of colour.2 We see the same thing in the O. T. and in the papyri letters. It is a sign of life and in particular life in the East. These vivid details give life and beauty to the picture. Cf. ἐκτείνας τὴν χείρα (Mt. 26:51); ἔρχεται Ἰησοῦς καὶ λαμβάνει (Jo. 21:13); γράφαντες διὰ χειρός αὐτῶν (Ac. 15:23); ὡμολόγησε καὶ οὐκ ἤρνησάτο (Jo. 1:20). Epexegetical clauses are common. Cf. τὴν λογικὴν λατρείαν ὦμων (Ro. 12:1), in apposition with the infinitive clause, παραστήσαι, κτλ. So 1 Cor. 7:26, ὅτι καλὸν ἀνθρώπῳ, as an expansion of τοῦτο καλὸν ὑπάρχειν. In Jo. 7:35 ὅτι is probably causal.

We meet hyperbole in Jo. 21:25, ὥδε ἀὐτῶν οἶμαι τὸν κόσμον χωρίσειν τὰ γραφόμενα βιβλία. Cf. also Mt. 13:32. Litotes is common enough, as in Ac. 1:5, οὐ μετὰ πολλὰς ταύτας ἡμέρας; 14:28, χρόνον οὐκ ὀλίγον. See also 15:2; 19:11, 23 f.; 21:39; 27:14, 20; 28:2. Meiosis is, of course, only a species of hyperbole by understatement. Cf. Paul's use3 of it in 1 Th. 2:15; 2 Th. 3:2, 7. We may put together two remarks of Milligan.4 "St. Paul had evidently not the pen of a ready writer, and when he had once found an expression suited to his purpose found it very difficult to vary it. "St. Paul had evidently that highest gift of a great writer, the instinctive feeling for the right word, and even when writing, as he does here, in his most 'normal

1 Blass, Gr. of N. T. Gk., p. 295.
2 Cf. A. J. Wilson, Emphasis in the N. T., Jour. of Theol. Stu., VIII, pp. 75
style, and with an almost complete absence of the rhetorical figures, so largely practised in his day, he does not hesitate to avail himself of the more popular methods of adding point or emphasis to what he wants to say." There is no necessary inconsistency in these two statements. Add another from Milligan\(^1\) which will help to reconcile them. "We readily recognise that the arresting charm of the Apostle's style is principally due to 'the man behind,' and that the highest form of all eloquence, 'the rhetoric of the heart,' is speaking to us." So it is with all the N. T. writers more or less. They are men of genius, of varying degrees of culture, and men of love for Christ and man. Language with these men is not an end in itself. They do not say "pretty" things and toy with them. As the words of Jesus are spirit and life, for they throb and pulse to-day (Jo. 6:63), so the Letters of Paul are βαρείαι καὶ ἰσχυραὶ, as even his enemies admit (2 Cor. 10:10). The Judaizers at Corinth did not discuss the rhetorical niceties of these Letters. They felt the power of the ideas in them even when they resisted Paul's authority. Paul used tropes,\(^2\) but he smote hearts with them and did not merely tickle the fancy of the lovers of sophistry.\(^3\) Paul denied that he spoke ἐν πιθοῖς σοφίας λόγοις, though his words seem to the lover of Christ to be full of the highest appeal to the soul of man. One must discount this disclaimer not merely by Paul's natural modesty, but by contrast with the Corinthian's conception of πιθός. They loved the rhetorical flights of the artificial orators of the time.

(d) METAPHORS AND SIMILAR TROPES. We need not tarry over antiphrasis, ambiguity, hendiadys, hypokorisma, oxymoron, periphrasis, polyptoton, syllepsis, and the hundred and one distinctions in verbal anatomy. Most of it is the rattle of dry bones and the joy of dissection is gone. We may pause over Metaphor (μεταφορά), since little progress could be made in speech without the picture of the literal and physical carried over to the moral and spiritual as in ὁ ποιμήν ὁ καλός (Jo. 10:11). Cf. the greatest metaphor in the N. T., Paul's use of σῶμα for the church (Eph. 1:22 f.). The Simile is just a bit more formal, as is seen in the use of ὁμοίως in Mt. 13:52, πᾶς γραμματεύς ὁμοίως ἐστίν ἀνθρώπῳ ὁ ἑκάστοτε. Parables are but special forms of the metaphor or simile and form the most characteristic feature of the teaching of Jesus in so far as form is concerned. The parable (παραβολή)

---
\(^1\) Comm. on Thess. Epistles, p. lvi f.
\(^2\) Cf. Heinrici, Zum Hellen. des Paulus, Komm. zu 2 Igor.
\(^3\) 1 Cor. 2:4.
draws a comparison between the natural and the moral or implies it. It may be a crisp proverb (Lu: 4:23) or a narrative illustration of much length, as in the Sower (Mt. 13). The Allegory (ἀλληγορία) is a parable of a special sort that calls for no explanation, a speaking parable (cf. the Good Shepherd in Jo. 10 and the Prodigal Son in Lu. 15). Metonymy (μετωνυμία) and Synecdoche (συνεκδοχή) are so much matters of exegesis that they must be passed by without further comment.

It is certain that no words known to man are comparable in value with those contained in the N. T. Despite all the variety of diction on the part of the reporters, probably partly because of this very fact, the words of Jesus still fascinate the mind and win men to God as of old. Καὶ ἐγένετο ὅτε ἐτέλεσεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς τοῦ λόγους τούτους, έξεπλήσσοντο οἱ ὄχλοι ἐπὶ τῇ διδακῇ αὐτοῦ· ἦν γὰρ διδάσκων αὐτοῦς ὡς ἐξουσίαν ἔχων καὶ οὐχ ὡς οἱ γραμματεῖς αὐτῶν 7:28 f.). It is the constant peril of scribes and grammarians1 to strain out the gnat and to swallow the camel. I may have fallen a victim, like the rest, but at least I may be permitted to say at the end of the long road which I have travelled for so many years, that I joyfully recognise that grammar is nothing unless it reveals the thought and emotion hidden in language. It is just because Jesus is greater than Socrates and Plato and all the Greek thinkers and poets that we care so much what Luke and Paul and John have to tell about him. Plato and Xenophon hold us because of their own message as well as because they are the interpreters of Socrates. It matters not if Jesus spoke chiefly in the Aramaic. The spirit and heart of his message are enshrined in the Greek of the N. T. and interpreted for us in living speech by men of the people whose very diction is now speaking to us again from the rubbish-heaps of Egypt. The papyri and the ostraca tell the story of struggle on the part of the very class of people who first responded to the appeal of Paul (cf. 1 Cor. 1:26 ff.). Christianity is not buried in a book. It existed before the N. T. was written. It made the N. T. It is just because Christianity is of the great democracy that it is able to make universal appeal to all ages and all lands and all classes. The chief treasure of the Greek tongue is the N. T. No toil is too great if by means of it men are enabled to understand more exactly the

1 Gildersl. is scornful of those who fear "that anthropology is going to invade the sacrosanct realm of syntax, which belongs, strictly speaking, to the microtomists and statisticians — otherwise known as Dead Sea Apes." Am. Jour. of Philol., 1907, p. 235.
mind of Christ. If one is disposed to think less of the N. T. because it stands in the vernacular κοινή, let him remember that the speech of these Christians was rich beyond measure, since out of it came the words of Jesus. These were carried in the common tradition of the period and written down from time to time (Lu. 1:1-4). Paul was not a rhetorician, though a man of culture, but he cared much for the talk of the Christians that it should be worthy. Ὅ λόγος ὑμῶν πάντοτε ἐν χάριτι ἁλατὶ ἡρτυμένος, εἰδέναι πώς δεῖ ὑμᾶς ἐν ἐκάστῳ ἀποκρίνεσθαι (Col. 4:6). That was good advice for the Colossians and for all speakers and writers, grammarians included, and makes a fitting bon mot to leave with the rhetoricians who might care to quibble further over niceties of language.

Ταῦτα μελέτα, ἐν τούτοις ἵσθι.
ADDITIONAL NOTES

1. Καθαρίζω or καθερίζω (p. 183). Mr. H. Scott furnishes me the following table for the variations between α and ε in the augmented tenses of καθαρίζω:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ἐκθαερ</th>
<th>ἐκαθαρ</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Χ</td>
<td>0/8</td>
<td>8/8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>2/7 Mt., Mk</td>
<td>5/7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>7/7</td>
<td>0/7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>4/5</td>
<td>1/5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>0/6</td>
<td>6/6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Syr.</td>
<td>0/6</td>
<td>6/6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For LXX see Helbing and Thackeray.

2. Prothetic Vowels in the N. T. (p. 206). The following is a table of (probable) prothetic vowels in N. T. (supplied by Mr. H. Scott).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BEFORE</th>
<th>α</th>
<th>ε</th>
<th>ο</th>
<th>ι</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ρ</td>
<td>ἐ-ρυθρός</td>
<td>ἐ-ρεύγομαι</td>
<td>ὁ-ρύσσω</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Λ</td>
<td>ἀ-λείφω</td>
<td>ἐ-λαχύς, ἐ-λεύθερος</td>
<td>ὁ-νειδίζω, ὁ-νομα</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Β</td>
<td>ἀ-νεψιός</td>
<td>ἐ-με, ἐ-μός</td>
<td>ὁ-μίχλη</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μ</td>
<td>ἀ-μοιβή, ἀ-μύνω</td>
<td>ἐ-χες</td>
<td></td>
<td>ἴ-χθος</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χθ</td>
<td>ἀ-στήρ [ἀ-στρον]</td>
<td>ἀ-στράπτω</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>στ</td>
<td>ἀ-στήρ [ἀ-στρον]</td>
<td>ἀ-στράπτω</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φρ</td>
<td>ἀ-κούω</td>
<td>ἐ-κεί, ἐ-κείνος</td>
<td>(ἐπ-) ὁ-κέλλω</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θ</td>
<td>ἐ-θέλω</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δ</td>
<td>ὁ-δύνη</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Φ</td>
<td>ἀ-εἶδω=ἀ-δω</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ὁ-δυρμός [ὁ-δύρομαι]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τ</td>
<td>ἀ-οίδ=ψόδη</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ὁ-τρύνω</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3. **Elision** (p. 208). Mr. H. Scott adds οὐδ’ ἐάν (Lu. 16:31, W. H. text), οὐδέ ἡ (Tisch., οὐδὲ ἡ W. H.), οὐδ’ ἀυτόν (Jo. 21:25). We have both καθ’ and κατὰ ἐξ, but κατὰ ἐκατόν (Mk. 6:40). There is much variation with prepositions before nouns.

4. **Παρρησία** (p. 212). Mr. H. Scott notes that out of 40 occurrences in the N. T. 24 read παρρ— without variant. In the remaining 16 Ν reads παρρ— 13/16, B 10/16, A 14/14, C 9/10, D 7/14, L 8/9, Syr. 16/16. In Gospels B always has παρ— except in Jo. 11:14, Ν only in Jo. 11:14.

5. **Assimilation of ἐν μέσῳ** (p. 216). Mr. H. Scott notes that the phrase ἐν μέσῳ occurs 27 times in the N. T., of which 2 (Jo. 8:3, 9) are in a spurious passage. Hort (*Notes on Orth.*, p. 150) observes that ΝΒΔ never have ἐμμέσῳ. But A of Gospels and E of Acts always have ἐμμέσῳ, while C has it 9/12 times.

6. **Rules for Assimilation of Consonants** (p. 216). The familiar rules are given in all the school grammars (cf. Hadley and Allen, Goodwin, etc.), and need not be given here in detail. Note only these:

   - Before a τ mute a π or κ mute is co-ordinated.
   - Before μ α π mute changes to μ,
     - “ “ a κ mute changes to γ,
     - “ “ a τ mute changes to σ (analogy).
   - Before σ a π mute makes ψ
     - “ “ a κ mute makes ξ,
     - “ “ a τ mute drops out.
   - Before a labial ν changes to μ.
     - a palatal ν changes to γ (nasal)
     - λ or ρ, ν is assimilated.
     - σ, ν is dropped, and the preceding vowel is lengthened.
   - Between two consonants σ is dropped.
   - The insertion of σ in some tenses is treated in the chapter on Conjugation of the Verb.

7. **Metathesis** (p. 221). We find φαινόλιον in P. Oxy. III, 531, 14 (ii/A.D.), but also φαιλον νίων, B. U. iii, 816, 24 (iii/A.D.). So the modern Greek φέλον. Φάνη (Lu. 2:7, etc.) is the Homeric and Attic form. Moeris (212, 9) says that πάθη is the Hellenistic form. Modern Greek has πάθη. Some LXX MSS. have it so.

   Cf. Thackeray, p. 106; Blass-Debrunner, p. 20.
8. Enclitics and Proclitics (p. 233 f.). Rules for accent by Mr. H. Scott:

**ENCLITICS**

Indefinite, τίς in all its forms.  
Pers. pron., μού, μοί, μέ,  
sὸῦ, σοί, σέ.  
Pres. indic., εἰμί (except 2d sing. εἶ);  
φημί, φησίν, φασίν  
Particles, γέ, τέ and the inseparable —δέ.  
Indef. adverbs, ποτέ, ποῦ, πέρ, πώ, πώς.  
Enclitics incline their accent when the preceding word is  
(a) proparoxytone,  
(b) properisimmenon,  
(c) a proclitic.  
Enclitics lose their accent when the preceding word is  
(a) oxytone,  
(b) perispomenon,  
(c) paroxytone.  
Enclitics retain their accent:  
(a) if they begin or end a sentence;  
(b) if dissyllables, after a paroxytone;  
(c) if dissyllables, after perisopomena.  
(d) after an elided vowel;  
(e) if dissyllables, after a proclitic.

If two or more enclitics occur together, each one receives the accent of the preceding, the last being unaccented. Editors differ in practice as to this rule.

**PROCLITICS**

Art., ὁ, ἡ, οἱ, οί.  
Prep., εἰς, ἐκ, ἐξ, ἐν  
Conj., εἰ, ὡς  
Negative, οὐ (οὐκ, οὐχ)  
Proclitics receive the acute accent:  
(a) when they are at the end of a sentence;  
(b) when followed by an enclitic.

9. Βουστροφηδόν (p. 243). The Greeks first wrote from right to left and then alternately. This alternate method (right to left, left to right) was called βουστροφηδόν, 'as oxen turn at the plow.' Cf. Geddes, *A Compendious Greek Grammar*, 1888, p. xiv. The Greeks had a fine system of abbreviations in frequent use. For full particulars see Thompson, *Handbook of Greek and Latin Palaeography*, pp. 86-96.


11. Augment in the Past Perfect (p. 366). Mr. H. Scott notes that of the 15 out of 22 verbs with past perfects in the N. T. the active verbs are equally divided as to augment. Of the 7
passive verbs only ἑμελιήω is unaugmented. Βάλλω is augmented in the passive, but not in the active. Γίνομαι and ἵστημι have both the augmented and the unaugmented forms in the active.

12. List of Important Verbs. (Purely normal verbs are not listed here. Only the tenses are given that occur in the N. T.) Mr. H. Scott has rendered valuable aid in preparing it.

'Αγαλλίαω. Pres. act. in 1 Pet. 1:8 and Rev. 19:7; aor. act. ἤγαλλίασα (Lu. 1:47), but the active does not occur in LXX. The middle is in LXX (Ps. 15:9) and the N. T. (Jo. 8:56, etc.). The aor. passive appears in Jo. 5:35 (ἀγαλλιάθησα, BL –σθήσαι).

'Αγγέλλω (comp. ἀν-, ἀπ-, δι-, ἔξ-, ἔπ-, προ-επ-κατ-, προ-κατ-).
Simplex only in Jo. 20:18 ἀγγέλλουσα, and Jo. 4:51 in ΚΔ. –ἀγγελώ, –ηγέλω, –ηγελια, –ηγελιμαι, –ηγελεν. The classic nor. pass. ἤγγελθης does not occur in LXX or N. T.

'Αγνομω (only κατ-ἀγνωμω as in Attic and LXX). Three forms in N. T.: a fut. act. κατ-έαξει (Mt. 12:20; LXX has κατάξω), an aor. act. κατ-έαξαν (Jo. 19:32 f.), an aor. pass. κατεαξώστιν (Jo. 19:31. Cf. κατεαξήθαι in Plato, etc.). The copyists kept the augment where it did not belong, so that even a pres. act. καταέξωσθαι is found. Cf. Ἰακ., Hist. Gk. Gr., p. 253.

'Αγω (comp. ἀν-, ἥπ-, δι-, ἔξ-, καθ-, περι-, προ-). Simplex only middle. –ελώ, (as LXX), αἰριθμοίαι, αἰρεθήσομαι; –είλον and –είλα (middle also); –ηρούμην, –ηρημαι, –ηρέθην.

Αἴρω (ἀπ-, ἔξ-, ἔπ-, μετ-, συν-, ὑπερ-). Principal parts regular. Only note imperative aor. ἄροι and infl nor. act. ἄραι, while ind. nor. act. ἄρα and fut. act. ἄρω.

Αἰσθάνομαι. Only once in N. T. (Lu. 9:45), aor. mid. ἀισθώμεθα.

'Ακούω (δι-, εἰς-, ἔπ-, παρ-, προ-, ὑπ-) 'Ακούω, ἡκουσα, ἀκόηκα("Attic perf."). ἀκούουμαι, ἀκοσθήσομαι, ἡκούσθην

'Αλλάσσω (ἀπ-, δι-, κατ-, ἀπο-κατ-, μετ-, συν-). 'Αλλάξω, ἡλλαξάμην (Ro. 1:23, LXX); pass. –ηλλαγμαι, –ηλλάγην, ἄλλαγθήσομαι (1 Cor. 15:51).

'Αλλομαι (ἐξ-, ἐφ-). Aor. –ἄμεν and –ἁμεθ. Conjoined to Acts save Jo. 4:14.

'Αμαρτάνω (προ-). 'Αματῆσω, ἡμαρτοῦν and ἡμάρτησα, ἡμάρτημα.


'Αμφίεννυμι, ἡμφίεσσαι

'Αναθέλλω (only comp.). 'Ανεθέλετε (Ph. 4:10).

'Αναλίσκω (also comp., also κατ-αν-). Other tense-stems from ἀναλῶ; ἀναλώσω; aor. act. ἀναλώσαι; aor. pass. ἄναλωθήται (N. T. forms do not show augment). In 2 Th. 2:8 W. H. in margin give ἀναλοῖ, as present (so Attic and LXX).

'Ανοίγω (δι-, ἔξ-, Ac. 12:16 D). The simplex ὁγω, ὁγνυμι does not occur in LXX or N. T. Imperf. διψοιγε (Lu. 24:32); fut. ἀνοίξω; nor. act. ἤνοετε, ἀνέκτε, ἤνέκτε. The aor. ind. (22 times) is confined (H. Scott) to John (6), Acts (5), Rev. (10), except διψοιγε (Lu. 24:45). The predominant. form is
ADDITIONAL NOTES

... (16 times without v. r.) and read by W. H., except ἀνέψευν (Jo. 9:14), and ήνέψευν (Jo. 9:17, 32). Pass. fut. ἀνοιχθήσεται (Lu. 11:9 f. A); ἀνοιγόμενος (Rev. 20:12 (bis), δι-, Lu. 24:31); ἀνευθῇ—— (Lu. 1:64); ήνεψῳ ηγ.— (Mt. 3:16; 9:30; 27:52; Jo. 9:10; Ac. 16:26). 2d aor. indic. 9:14), and ἀνείρην (Jo. 9:17, 32). Pass. fut. ἀνέψευν (Lu. 11:9 f. A); ἀνευθῇ— (W. H., Mt. 7:7, 8=Lu. 11:9, 10). Aor. indic. occurs 9 times: ἠνεοθῇ— (Mt. 3:16; 9:30; 27:52; Jo. 9:10; Ac. 16:26). 2d aor. indic. ἠνείρην— (4 times, Mk. 7:35; Ac. 12:10; Rev. 11:19; 15:5); subj. Mt. 20:33. Perf. part. (only) 11 times: δι-νοιγμένος (Ac. 7:56); ἀνευγμένος (Ac. 9:8; 10:11; 16:27; Ro. 3:13; 2 Cor. 2:12); ἠνεψωμένος (Rev. 3:8; 4:1; 10:2, 8; 19:11).

'Αυτάω (ἀπ-, κατ-, συν-, ὑπ-). The simplex does not occur. The parts are regular. Fut. infin. κατ-αντήσειν (Ac. 26:7, W. H. marg.); fut. part. συν-άντησοντα (Ac. 20:22).

Ἀπο-κτείνω. The simplex does not occur. Pres. varies between —κτείνω, —κτένω (2 Cor. 3:6 W. H. alt., Mt. 10:28 W. H. alt., Lu. 12:4 W. H. alt.) and —κτένυμι (Mk. 12:5); fut. ἀπο-κτείνω; aor. ἀπ-κτείνα; pass. inf. ἀπο-κτένυσθαι (Rev. 6:11); 1st aor. ἀπ-εκτάνθην.

Ἀπτω (ἀν-, καθ-, περ-). Ἡψα, Ἡψάμην, Ἡψήθην.

'Αρνεόμαι (ἀπ-), ἀρνήσομαι, ἀρνηθήσομαι, —πρυθάμην, ἠρνηθαί.

Ἀρπάζω (δι-), συν-—— Ἀρπάζω, ἴπασα; pass. 2d aor. ἴπάγασα; 1st aor. ἴπασθην; 2d fut. ἴπαγόσαμαι.


Βάλλω (ἀμφι-, ἁνα-, ἀντι-, ἁπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, ἐμ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, μετα-, παρα-, παρεμ-, περι-, προ-, συμ-, ὑπερ-, ὑπα-). Imperf. ἐβάλλον (ἐκ- ἐπ- συν-) fut. βαλλόν (ἐκ- ἐμ- ὑπα-), 1st aorist ("Alexandrian") ἐβαλὼν (Ac. 16:37); ἐπ- (Mt. 7:22 W. H. alt.; 21:39 W. H. alt.); ἐπ- (Ac. 21:27; Mk. 14:46); 2d aorist, ἐβαλὼν (ἐκ-, ἐπ-, παρα-, περι-, συμ-, ὑπερ-, ὑπα-); perf. βεβληκώς; pluperf. ἐκ-βεβλήτηκα. Mid. fut. περι-βαλείται (Rev. 3:5); 2d aor. ἁν-, περι-, συμ-βαλόμην; pass. fut. βεβληθομαι, ἐκ--; 1st aor. ἁν-, περι-, συμ-βαλέσθη; perf. βεβληκαί, ἐκ--; pluperf. ἐβεβλήτηκα.

Βαρέω (ἐπ-, κατα-). Ἐβαρήσατα, ἐβαρημαί, ἐβαρηθῆν (2 Cor. 1:8, Lu. 21:34). Only passive save in compounds.

Βαρόω. The older verb is ousted in N. T. by βαρέω except in Mk. 14:40, κατα-βαροῦναι. It is read in Lu. 21:34 Rec. βαρωθωσί.

Βλαστάω. This is the old form of the pres. The pres. in N. T. is βλαστάω (Mk. 4:27). The aor. ἐβλάστησα may be from βλαστάω or βλαστέω, a form of the pres. occurring in LXX.

Βλέπω (ἀνα-, ἁπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, ἐπι-, περι-, προ-). Ἐβλέπων, βλέψω, ἐβλέψα; περι-ἐβλέπατο; περι-προ-βλεψάμενος.

Γαμέω. Ἔγαμουν, Attic ἐγαμίσα, late ἐγαμίσα, ἐγαμίσα, ἐγαμίσην. Γαμικώς is a late form and only pres. active and pass. and imperf. pass. ἐγαμίζοντο appear in N. T. Ἐγαμίσκω likewise in pres. pass. stem appears in Lu. 20:34 (W. H.) and ἐκ-γαμίσκω in some MSS. in Lu. 20:34 Rec.


'Εγνώμην; γενόμην: part. γενήσβομενος (1 Cor. 15:37), ἐγενόμην and ἐγενήθην. Opt. γένοιτο; part. γενήμενος. The frequent use of the part. in comp., ἁπο-, δια-, ἐπι-, παρα-, συμ-παρα-, προ-, is noteworthy. Γενόμενος is a frequent variant. J. H. Moulton counts 69 instances of the part. (simple and comp.) in Luke's writings, and 48 in remainder of N. T. It does not
occur at all in the Johannine writings. "Strong perfect," γέγονα, γεγένημαι. A in 1 Macc. 14:30 has ἔγενεν, probably an error (cf. γέγονα).

Pluperf. γεγόνει (Ac. 4:22), and ἐγεγόνει, (Jo. 6:17). Γειν– is a rather frequent spelling, e.g. Ac. 21:11 ΡΒ*AD; 23:10 Β*; Lu. 22:26 ΡΒD; 42

**RBAA; 1 Cor. 10:20 B*D*, etc.**

Γινώσκω (άνα-, δια-, ἐπι-, κατα-, προ-). Γινώσκοι, ἐγνωσκώ, ἐγνωσκώ, ἐγνώσκω, ἐγνωσκόμαι. Subj. aor. both γνώ (Jo. 7:51) and γνω (Mk. 5:43; 9:30; Lu. 19:15); imper. γνώριζε; inf. γνώσατε; part. γνώριστος.

Γράφω (άπο-, ἐγ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, προ-). Ἐγράφων, γράψω, ἔγραψα, γέγραψα; pass. γέγραμμαι, -γράμματα, ἐπὶ-, ἐγράφημα, προ-.

**Mid. 1st aor. ἀπο-γράφασθαι** (Lu. 2:5).

Δείκνυμι and δεικνύω (άνα-, ἀπο-, ἐν, ἐπι-, ὑπο-). Δείξω, δείξεια; pass. δειγμάτων

(Heb. 8:5); perf. ἄπο-δειγμάτων; mid. 1st aor. ἐν-δειγμάτων. The pres. has forms from -νυμι and — νυ.

Δέρω. Ἐδειρά, δαρήσομαι.

Ἔδομαι (άνα-, ἀπο-, δια-, εἰσ-, ἐκ-, ἀπ-ἐκ-, ἐν-, ἐπι-, παρα-, προσ-, ὑπο-).

Ἐδέχμην, ἐπεδέχημαι. Ἐδέχητον In Lu. 8:38 W. H. read ἐδέχτο rather than ἐδέχτο; (W. H. alt.) or ἐδέχτο. Impersonal ἐδεί and ἐδεί.

Διδόμενοι (άνα-, ἀπο-, παρα-, προ-). Pres. ἐπι-δίδωμι (2d sing.), 3d pl. ἐπι-διδάσκων (Rev. 17:13); subj. παρα-δίδω (1 Cor. 15:24, -διδασσει. BEG); imperf. ἐπί-διδοσαν (Jo. 19:3), παρα- (Ac. 16:4); fut. δώσω; part. ἀπο- (Heb. 13:17), παρα- (Jo. 6:64) δώσων; -α κα aor. ἐδωκα, 3d pl. ἐδωκαν; 2d aor. 3d pl. παρ-ἐδοσαν (Lu. 1:2); imper. δίδω; subj. δω, δώκες (Mk. 6:25), δω (Jo. 15:16); subj. 3d sing. cont. δίδω (Mk. 8:37), παρα- (Mk. 4:29), δώ or δώ (2 Tim. 2:25, Eph. 1:17); opt. 3d sing. δώ (Ro. 15:5; 2 Th. 3:16; 2 Tim. 1:16, 18); inf. δούναι; part. δω; perf. δωκα; plup. δωκόμενοι; mid. fut. δωκόμενοι, ἐκ- (Mt. 21:41); 2d aor. ἐδέχτο (N Mt. 21:33 =Mk. =Lu.) with variant 1. –ότο in each passage; plur. without variant, ἀπ-ἐδοσθε, -ἐδοντο. Pass. pres. and imperf. - ἐδέχτο, δι- (Ac. 4:35), παρα- (1 Cor. 11:23), with variant -ότο in each case; fut. δοθήσομαι, ἀπο-παρα-, παρα- . 1st aor. ἐδεικνύει, ἀπο-, ἐπ-, παρ-; perf. δόμαι. Dr. Hort considers the change of the vowels in imperf. and 2d nor. from -ότο to -έτο as probably euphonic. 

Διδόω (άπο-, δια-, παρα-). Pres. διδώ (Rev. 3:9); imper. διδο- (Ro. 15:5; 2 Th. 3:16; 2 Tim. 1:16); inf. δου; part. διδωκε, midd. fut. διδωκε, ἐκ- (Mt. 1:41); 2d aor. ἐδέχτο (N Mt. 21:33 =Mk. =Lu.) with variant 1. –ότο in each passage; plur. without variant, ἀπ-ἐδοσθε, -ἐδοντο. Pass. pres. and imperf. - ἐδέχτο, δι- (Ac. 4:35), παρα- (1 Cor. 11:23), with variant -ότο in each case; fut. δοθήσομαι, ἀπο-παρα-, παρα- . 1st aor. ἐδεικνύει, ἀπο-, ἐπ-, παρ-; perf. δόμαι. Dr. Hort considers the change of the vowels in imperf. and 2d nor. from -ότο to -έτο as probably euphonic. 

Δινομαι. Pres. 2d sing. δύνασαι (Mt. 5:36; 8:2; Mk. 1:40; Lu. 6:42). Opt. 

δυνάμην (Ac. 8:31; 27:12, 39). Ἐδυνάμην, and ἐδυνάμην, δυνάσθομαι, ἐδυνάσθην and ἐδυνάσθην. Δύναμαι, 2d sing. δύνη (Mk. 9:22 f.; Lu. 16:2; Rev. 2:2).

There are traces of this late Greek form in B in present tense in Mt. 19:12; 26:53; Mk. 10:39; Ac. 4:20; 27:15.

Δώ (ἐκ-, ἀπ-ἐκ [mid.], ἐν-, ἐπι-ἐν-, παρα-ἐις-, ἐπι-). Simplex only, Mk. 1:32.

Pres. ἐπι-δικτύω 2d nor. ἐδώκα, ἐδοκε (Mk. 1:32); midd. -δεικνύει; pass. παρα-δεικνύει, 2d nor. (Jo. 4) ἐν-δεικνύεινος.

Δώνω (ἐκ-). In pres. only.

'Εδώ (προ-). Ἐδώ, ἐδώ, ἐδώσα. Augt. ἐσαF=εαF=ει-. See Jannaris, § 719.

'Ἐγγίζω (προ-). Ἑγγίζει, ἐγγίζω and ἐγγίζει (Jas. 4:8 W. H. alt.), Ἑγγίζει, Ἑγγίζει.
ADDITIONAL NOTES 1215

'Εγείρω (δι-, εξ-, ἐπ-, συν-). 'Εγερώ, ἡγείρα, δι-εγείρετο (Jo. 6:18 δι-ηγ. alt.), ἤγερεμαι, ἤγερθην, ἤγερθησομαι. In Mk. 2:9 ἐγείρουν, but usually intransitive ἐγείρει (cf. ὕγε, ἔτειγε) as Mk. 5:41. "Ἐγείραι not in N. T., nor ἐγρήγορα.

'Εδαφίζω. 'Εδαφίζω ("Attic" fut.).

'Εθω. Obsolete in pres. ἐίῳθα, εἴῳθεν.

Εἴδων and εἰδω (ἀπ-, ἐπ-, προ-, συν-, ύπερ-). Not used in pres. Fut. εἰδήσω (Heb. 8:11, LXX), 1st aor. εἶδα, εἰδαμεν, εἰδατε, εἶδαν (W. H. text 18 times and 2 alt.). 2d aor. εἶδον and ὑδων (ind. both complete); imper. ἤδε; subj. ὑδω; infl. ἤδειν; part. ὑδών. 2d perf. ὑδά complete, and ἵστε (?), ἴσαςιν (Ac. 26:4); imper. ἵστε (?); subj. εἴδω; infl. εἴδεναι; part. εἴδως; pluperf. ἤδεειν complete. As ἐῖδον and ὑδα have the same root they are put together. It does not seem reasonable to divide the same root between ἐῖδον and ὑράω. See ἵδω.

Εἴμι (ἀπ-, ἐν-, εξ-, πάρ-, σύν-, συμ-πάρ-). Ἠν and mid. ἤμην, ἤθα, ἤμεθα; imper. pres. ἤσθα, ἦστω ἦτω, ἦστωσαν (ἔστε 2d pl. does not occur); opt. εἶναι ἔσομαι, ἔσεσθαι, ἔσομενος (L. 22:49).

Εἴμι. Only in comp. (ἀπ-, εἰσ-, ἐξ-, ἐπ-, σύν-). Only pres. (fut. sense) 3d pl. — ἢσαί, εἰσ- (Heb. 9:6); imper. ἢσι-θεῖ (Ac. 9:6 B) and imperf. (ἡεῖν).

'Ελαύνω (i.e. ἔλα-νύω) (ἀπ-). Pres. infl. ἐλαύνειν. 1st aor. ἀπ-ήλασα; perf. ἐλα-λά-κως; imperf. pass. ἠλαύνετο.

'Εκα. Pres. act. and pass. εἰ-; imperf. ἐλκόν; other tenses from ἐλκών. Ἐλκύσω, ἐκλύσα.

'Επω (ἀντ-, ἀπ-, προ-). Pres. not used. Fut. ἐρῶ. 1st aor. εἰπα, etc.; imper. εἶπον (?), εἰπάτω, ἀτε, ἀτώσαν; part. εἰπάς. 2d aor. εἶπον; imper. εἰπετε; subj. εἶπα; infl. εἰπεται; part. εἰπών. Perf. εἰρήκα, 3d pl. — καὶν and — κασιν (Ac. 17:28); infl. εἰρήκαιναι; part. εἰρήκης. Pluperf. εἰρήκει. Mid. 1st aor. ἀπ-εἰπάμεθα.

Pass. 1st aor. ἐρρήθην and ἐρρήθη; part. ἐρήθεις; perf. ἐρήρησαν; part. ἐρημένως.

'Εργάζομαι (κατ-, peri-, προσ-). Εἰργάζομαι (Ac. 18:3 HIP) and ἤργαζόμην (W. H.), ἤργαζόμην (Gosp.) and κατ-εἰργάσατο (2 Cor. 7:11), ἐργασμαί (passive). 1st aor. κατ-εἰργάσθην and κατ-προς- (BDC, W. H. alt.).


'Ερωτάω (δι-, ἐπ-). Ἡρωτάω, ἡρωτήσω, ἡρωτήσθα, ἡρωτηθείς, 1st aor. pass.

'Εσθίων and ἐσθὼν (κατ-, συν-). Pres. only. Ἑσθίον, φάγομαι, 2d sing. φάγεσαι (Lu. 17:8); ἐφάγον complete; opt. φάγοι (Mk. 11:14).

Ἐυαγγέλιζω (προ-). Active only, 1st aor. (Rev. 10:7; 14:6). Προ-, εὐηγγελι-ζομαι, εὐηγγελισάμαι, εὐηγγελίσθης, εὐηγγελίσθης.

Ἐυδοκέω (συν-), (εὖ, ηὐδόκομεν (1 Th. 2:8), (εὖ, ἠηὐδόκησα (εὖ– in Gospels. In the Epistles the reading varies).

Εὐφρίσκω (ἀν-). Εὐφρίσκων καὶ ἦρπ-, εὐρήσω, εὕρον (εὐρομεν, etc.) and εὑρίσκα (some mss.) εὕρηκα, ἦ-, εὐφρίσκομαι, εὑρέθη, εὑρεθήσομαι, mid. εὑράμενος.

'Εχω (ἀν-, ἀντ-, ἐπ-, ἐν-, ἐπ-, κατ-, μετ-, παρ-, περί-, προ-, πρό-, συν-, ύπερ-, ύπο-). Εἶχον (εἶχομεν, εἶχοσαν, as well as εἶχαν and εἶχον), ἔξω, ἐσχον, ἐσχῆκα, εἰχόμη, ἔξομαι; 2d aor. mid. ἀν-εχόμην.

Ζάω (ἀμα-, συν-). Pres. ζῶ, ζῶς, ζή; infl. ζην. Ζεῴων, ζήσω, ζήσομαι, ζήσα. Ζώνυμοι καὶ ζώνυμου (i.e. θην-νυ-) (ἀμα-, δια-, περι-, ύπο-). Ζωήνυμων, ζῶς, —ζῶσα, mid. fut. περι-ζώσομαι. 1st aor. ζωσάμαι, -ζῶσμαι

'Ἡκω (ἀν-, καθ-). Ηκον, ἥξεω ἥξα in subj., ἥκα in Mk. 8:3. Some MSS. have ἥκουσιν instead of ἥκασιν. BLA (W. H.) rend εἰσίν.
A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

1st aor. 

1216 A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

\begin{verbatim}

'Ησσώμαι, once (2 Cor. 13:15). Elsewhere ἥτταιμαι, ἤττημαι, ἤττήθην
Θάπτω (συν.). 'Επαίσ, ἐτάφην. θαυμάζω (ἐκ.). 'Επαίσμαζον, ἑθαυμάσθη, θαυμασθήσομαι and mid. θαυ-
μάσομαι (Rev. 17:8 KB).

Θύησκω (ἀπο–, συνάπο–). Simplex perf. only, ἀπ-ἐθύησκον; —θαυμάζασθαι. —ἐθάνουν, τεθύησθαι. Both θευθύναι and τεθύησθαι (Ac. 14:19), but τεθύησθαι.

Ἰαμαι. Pres. ἰάμαι, ἱάμαι mid. ἱάμαι, ἱασάμην; pass. ἱμαί (ἵματι Mk. 4:29), ἱάθην, ἱαθήσομαι.

Ἰω obsolete. For ἐδον and ἑιδα see ἐδο (εἰδέω).

Ἰκ-νεμαι (ἀφ-, δι-, ἔφ.). Simplex not found in N. T. Pres. —κνομένος;

2d aor. ἀφίκετο; inf. ἐφ-κέσθαι; part. ἀφ-κόμενος.

Ἰμι (i.e. *σι-σι-μι) (ἀν-, ἀφ-, καθ-, παρ-, συν-). Simplex does not occur in LXX
or N. T. forms in —μι. Pres. complete, ἀν-, ἀφ-, συν- Fut. ἀφ-, συν- ἤσω.

1st aor. ἀφ-, καθ-, συν- ἤκα (complete). 2d aor. imper. ἀφ- ἤσε; 2d pl. ἀφ-, σύν- ἤσε; subj. ἀν-, ἀφ-, συν-, ἠσαί; part. ἀν-, ἀφ- ἤσ. Medio-pass. pres. ἀφ- εἰμεν; part. καθ- ἤσομαι. Fut. ἀφ- ἤσθομαι; 1st aor. ἀν-, ἀφ- ἤθην; subj. ἀφ- ἤθη; perf. ἀφ- ἤσνται (Lu. 5:20); part. ἀφ- εἰμενός, —ἰω (ἀφ-, συν-).

Pres. (Lu. 11:4); ἀφ-, συν- ἤσσαν; subj. συν- ἤσται; part. συν- ἤσσεν (Ro. 3:11); imperf. ἤφ- ἤν (Mk. 1:34; 11:16). Pass. ἀφ- ἤσσανται (Jo. 20:23 W. H. marg.). —ἐω (ἀφ-). Pres. ἀφ- ἤσ (Rev. 2:20, 2d sing.).

Ἱστημι, ἱστάμω, ἱστάω (ἀν-, ἐπα-, ἀνθ-, ἐξαν-, ἀφ-, δι-, ἐν-, ἐξ-, ἐπ-[ἴσταμαι], ἐφ-, κατεφ-, συνεφ-, καθ-, ἀντικαθ-, ἀποκαθ-, ἀποκαθ-, μεθ-, παρ-, περι-, προ-, συν-). Simplex has not the pres. and imperf. active or passive. ἤστην (complete), ἤστησα (complete), ἤστηκα, εἰ(ἰ)[ἐστι] ἤστηκεν; mid. fut. ἤστη-
μαι; ἀνα-, ἐπανα-, ἀπο-, etc. Passive ἀνθ-, ἀφ-, ἐξ- ἤσταμην, ἤσταθην, στα-
θήσομαι. Both ἤστας and ἤστηκως, ἤς- ἤστακέναι and ἤσταναι. Both ἤστακα
and ἤστηκα.

Καθάριω (δια-, ἐκ-). —κάθαρα, κεκάθαρμα. Inf. καθάρι.

Καθαρίζω (δια-). Καθαρίζω, ἐκαθάρισα, κεκαθαρίσσα, ἐκαθαρίσθην καὶ ἐκαθαρισθη 
(Mt. 8:3 =Mk.).

Καθέξομαι (δια–). The simplex ἤξομαι does not occur in LXX or N. T. Pres.
part. καθέξομενος; imperf. ἐκαθέξομαι. 1st aor. part. καθαρθεσθείς.

Κάθημαι (συν-). Pres. 2d sing. κάθη (Ac. 23:3); imperf. κάθου (Jas. 2:3); subj.
kαθήσθη (Lu. 22:30); imperf. καθήθηται; part. καθήσομεν; imperf. ἐκαθήμην; fut. κα-
θήσομαι.

Καθίζω (ἀνα-, ἐπι-, παρα- [Rec.], συν-). The simplex ἢζω does not occur in
LXX or N. T. Fut. καθίσω; 1st aor. ἐκαθίσα; perf. κεκάθικα; mid. fut. καθίσεσθε
(Mt. 19:28).

Καίω (ἐκ-, κατα-). Κατ-ἐκαίων, κατ-καύσω, κατ-ἐκαίσα, κέκαυμαι, κατ-καύν, ἢ-
καυθήν, κατα-καύησθαι, κατα-καυθήσομαι. In 1 Cor. 13:3 some MSS. have καυ-
θήσωμαι (fut. subj. Byz.).

Καλέω (ἀντι-, ἐν-, ἐισ- [-μι], ἐπι-, μετα-, παρα-, συνπαρα-, προ-, προσ-, συν-). Ἠκα-
λάμους, καλέως, ἐκάλεσα, κέκληκα, κέκλημαι, ἐπ-ἐκέκλητο, ἐκλήθην, κληθήσομαι. Mid. fut. ἐπι-, μετα-καλέσομαι, ἐπι-, μετα-, προσ-ἐκαλέσαμην.

Κάμων. Ἐκακομοῦ, κέκριμα.

Κεραυ-ννυμι, κεραυ-ννω (συγ-). The present does not occur in N. T. Ἐκεράσεα, 
κεκέρασαμαι, συν-.

Κερδάίων. Pres. and imperf. do not occur. Fut. κερδανω (1 Cor. 9:21 W. H.); 
aor. subj. κερδάνω: a matter of editing.

\end{verbatim}

A H A D D I T I O N A L  N O T E S

Κερδάω. Fut. κερδήσω (Jas. 4:13); aor. ἐκέρδησα; subj. κερδήσω (1 Cor. 9:19-21). Pass. fut. κερδιθήσομαι (1 Pet. 3:1).

Κλαίω. Ἐκλαῖον, κλάισθω, ἐκλαύσθησαι, κλαύσθησαι (Rev. 18:9 W. II. marg.).

Κλαύω (ἐκ-, κατα-). Ἐκλάσθη, ἐκλάσθησαι, ἐκλάσθησα; subj. κλαύσθη (1 Cor. 9:19-21). Pass. fut. ἀνακληθήσωμαι, ἐκλήθη, ἀνα-, κατα-, προσ-.

Κομίζω (ἐκ-, συν-, ἐκμίσθα, συμ-). Pass. ἐ-κομίζετο mid. κομίζομαι και κομιοῦμαι (1 Pet. 5:4; some MSS. in Col. 3:25), ἐκομίσαμην.

Κόπτω (ἀπο-, ἐκ-, κατα-, προ-, προσ-). Ἐκποτοῦ, ἐκ-, προ-κόψω, ἐκοψά; pass. 2d aor. ἐ-κόπην; 2d fut. ἐ-κόπησομαι, ἐκόψαμην, κόψαμαι, ἀπ-.

Κοπένυμι, κεκοπεσμένος, κοπεσθείς.

Κράζω (ἀνα-). Ἐκραζόν, κράζω, κραζέω, κραζέως (1 Pet. 3:1). Pass. fut. ἐ-κραζέομαι, ἐκραζέομαι, ἐκραζέωμαι, ἐκραζέων, ἀπο-

Κυλίω (ἀνα-, ἀπο-, προσ-). Ἀποκυλίσω, ἀπο-, προσ-κυλίσα; pass. ἐκυλίετο, κεκυλίσαμαι, ἀνα-, ἀπο-

Λακέω or λάσκω. Both presents could give ἐλάκησε (Ac. 1:18).

Λαμβάνω (ἀν-, ἀντι-, συναντί- [–μαί], ἀπο-, ἐπι-, κατα-, μετα-, παρα-, συν-παρα-, προ-, προσ-, συν-, συν̆περ-, ὑπό-). Ἐλάμβανον, ἐλαμβανόμενον, ἐλάμβας; opt. λάβοι. Λάβε, not λαβέ; ἐλάβατε (1 Jo. 2:27); συν-ελάβασαν (2 Th. 3:6), ἐλάβαν (Jo. 1:12). Ἐλήφα; ἐλήφης (Rev. 11:17); ἐ-λήμφημαι, ἐ-λήμφησαι. Pass. fut. παραλήμφησαι; mid. 2d aor. ἐ-λαβώμην; imper. ἐπι-, προσ-λαβών. Ἀνυθάνω (ἐκ-, ἐπι- [–μαί]). Simplex active only, ἐλθόν. Ε-ἐ-λαθόμην, -λέλησμαι (ἐκ-, ἐπι-).

Λέγω, 'say' (ἀντι-, δια-, ἐπι-, προ-). The simplex has pres. and imperf. act. and pres. mid. only. Imp. ἐλεγέων, ἀντ-, προ--; ἐλέγεαν (Jo. 11:56 ΝΔ). Pass. imperf. δι-ελεγόμην; 1st aor. δι-ελέγης; mid. 1st aor. δι-ελεξάμην.

Λέγω, 'choose' (ἐκ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, παρα-, συν-). Simplex has not this meaning. Συν- is the only compound with active forms. Fut. συν-λέξω; 1st aor. συν-εξάμην; pass. perf. ἐκ-λεξα αμένος.

Λεηπώ (ἀπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, ἐν-κατα-, περι-). Simplex only pres. (act. and pass.) except Tit. 3:13 W. H. marg. Ἐ-λεηπών, -λεηψω, -ἐ-λεηψα, ἐληπόν; pass. -λεηποῦμαι, -λεηηθήσης. (Some MSS. have a compound of λυ-μι-πάω in pres. and imperf., Ac. 8:24.)

Λογίζομαι (ἀνα-, δια-, παρα-, συν-). Ἐλογιζόμην, ἐ-λογίζωμη, ἐ-λογίζησαι, λογισθήσομαι.

Λούω (ἀπο-). Ἐλουσά; pass. λελούσας και λέλουσας (Heb. 10:22); mid. 1st aor. ἐλουσάμην.

Μανθάνω (κατα-). Ἐμαθὼν, μεμάθηκα.


Μέλλω. Ἐμελλόν and ἢμελλόν, μελὴς.
Mένω (ἀνα-, δια-, ἐν-, ἐπι-, κατα-, παρα-, συν-πα拉- [Rec.], peri-, proo-, ύπο-), Ἐμνον, μενον, ἔμεινα, -μεμένητα, μεμενέκειν.
Μιαίνω. Μεμιάμμα, ἐμιάνθην.
Μίγνυμι and μίσγω (syn-ana-). Ἐμίεικα, μέμιγμα.
Μίμνησκω (ἀνα-, ἐπι-ανα-, ὑπα-). —πινήσω, μέμνημαι, ἐμνήσθημαι, μνημοθήσομαι
Μνηστεώ. Ἐμνιστεύμα, ἐμνιστεύθην.
Νύσσω (κατα-). Ἐνυξα; 2d aor. pass. κατ-ενύγην.
Σηραίνω. Pres. does not occur. Ἐξηράνα, ἐξηράμμαται, ἐξηράνθην.
Σύραω. The form Συρασθαί occurs (1 Cor. 11:6), which may be accented Συρα-σθαι (pres. inf.) or Συρασθαί (1st aor. mid. inf.). Ἐξύραμα, ευρήσομαι.
Οικοδομέω (ἀνα-, ἐπ-, συν-). Ὠικοδόμουν, οἰκοδομήσα, (also οἰκοδ-, οἰκοδομηθήσομαι.
Ὁλλομαι, and ὅλλοι. Simplex does not occur in N. T. It is confined in LXX to Job, Prov. and part of Jer. (Thackeray, p. 279). Comp. ἀπ-, συν-ἀπ-.
Pres. act. ἀπ-ολλω; pres. pass. ἀπ-ολλύμαι, ἀπ-ολλύσαι, ἀπ-ολλύθην; imperf. ἀπ-ολλυντο (1 Cor. 10:9); fut. ἀπ-ολλέσω and ἀπ-ολω (1 Cor. 1:19 Q); 1st aor. ἀπ-ώλεσα; 2d perf. ἀπ-ολλωλ; mid. imperf. ἀπω-λύμην; fut. ἀπ-ολλοῦμαι; 2d aor. ἀπ-ωλόμην, συν-ἀπ-; inf. ἀπ-ολέσθαι, part. ἀπ-ολόμενος.
Ὀμοιώ (ἀφ-). Ὀμοιώσω, ὀμοίωθην (also ὀμοίωθην), ὀμοιωθήσομαι, ἀφ-ομοιωτικόν.
Ὀράω (ἀφ-, καθ-, προ-). Pres. complete. Imper. ὄρα, ὄρατε; imperf. ὄφρων, (3d pl., Jo. 6:2); perf. ὄφρακα (Gospels and Acts. In Paul and 1 John variation between ὄ- and ὣ-); plup. ὄφρακε; pass. pres. καθ-ὄραται; imperf. προ-οροῦμεν (LXX). Stem ὄ-: fut. δύναμαι; fut. pass. ὄφρησομαι; 1st aor. pass. ὄφρησθην; 1st aor. mid. δύνασθη (Lu. 13:28). Stem ὥ-: see ὦδεο.
Ὀρῦσσω (δι-, ἐξ-). Ὀρυξα, ἐξ-, δι-ορυγήθηναι or δι-ορυγήναι (W. H. alt.).
Πάσχω (προ-, συμ-). Ἐπαθον, πέπονθα.
Παιώ (ἀνα-, ἐπ-ανα-, συν-ανα [-μαι], κατα-). Simple aor. act. once only. Παύσω, ἐπαυσα; mid. παύσωμαι, ἐπαυσάμην, παύσωμαι, ἐπαυσάμην, πέπαυμαι, -πάγομαι.
Πεθω (ἀνα-). Ἐπεθοθ, ἐπεθα, ἐπεπόθεθαι; pass. ἐπεθοθίμω, πέπεθαι, ἐπεπόθεθαι, ἐπεθοθήθη,
Πιάζω and πιέζω ἐπισα, πεπίσαμα, ἐπίασθην.
Πίμπλημαι. Ἐπιπλέον, κατ-ἐπιθόδην.
Πιπράσκω, πεπρακα, πέπραμαι, ἐπράθην.
In Rev. 2:5 πέπτωκαι. Rev. 18:3 πέπτωκαν.
Πλέω (ἀπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, κατα-, παρα-, ὑπο-, -ἐπέλευ (3d sing. ἐξ-ἐπελει contracted), -ἐπελευσα.
Πλέκω (ἐμ- only comp.), πλέκομαι; aor. act. part. πλέκας; 2d aor. pass. ἐμπλακεῖς.
Πλησσω (ἐκ-, ἐπι-). Act. 1st aor. subj. ἐπι-πλησίας (1 Tim. 5:1); pass. pres. ἐκ-πλησσασθαι; imperf. ἐξ-ἐλησσόμην, 2d aor. ἐπλήγη (simplex) and ἐξ-ἐπλαγήν
(see Veitch).
Πυγώ (ἀπο-, ἐπι-, συμ-). Ἐπυγών, ἐπυγά, ἐπυγίμην, ἀπ-ἐπύγνη.
Πράσσω. Πράζω, ἐπραζά, πέπραχα, πέπραγμα.
Πυθάνομαι. Ἐπιθαναθύμην, ἐπιθομήν.
Ῥαυτίζω. Ῥαύτισις (some MSS. ῥαύρατ.), Ῥεράντισμα (so W. H., but some MSS. ῥαύρ.. Mid. 1st aor. subj. ῥαυτίσωται (Mk. 7:4).
ADDITIONAL NOTES

1219

'Ρέω (παρα-). Ἐρεύσω; 2d abr. pass. -ερρύῃν.

'Ρήσσω (δια-, περι-, προσ- and ῥήγγυμι). The active forms belong to ῥήσσω and the passive to ῥήγγυμι. Act. pres. ῥήσσει, δια-; fut. ῥήσσω; 1st aor. ἔρ(ᾷ)ῥήσα, δια-, περι-, προσ-; pass. ῥήγγυμι; δι-ἐρ(ᾳ)ῥήγγυμι (Lu. 5:6). The reading of Lu. 5:6 varies between δι-ἐρ(ᾳ)ῥήγγυμι and δι-ἐρ(ᾳ)ῥήσετο.

Σβέννυμι and σβεννυν, σβέννυμαι, stem σβε(σ)-. Pres. σβέννυτε, σβέσω, ἔσβεσα; pass. σβέννυμαι.

Σειω (ἀνα-, δια-, κατα-). Ἀν-δι-κατ-έσεισα, σείσω; pass. pres. σειώμενος; 1st aor. ἐσείσθην.

Σκάπτω (κατα-). Ἑσκάπτα, -ἐσκάμμαι (Ac. 15:16 Rec.).

Σκέπτομαι is not found in N. T. save in ἐπίσκεπτοσαι (Jas. 1:27; Heb. 2:6 Q), ἐπί-σκέφημαι; 1st aor. mid.


Σπείρω (δια-, ἐπι-). Ἑσπείρα, ἐσπαρμαί, ἐσπάρην, δι-.

Στέλλω. Simplex only in pass. pres. (Ἀπο-, ἔξ-ἀπο-, συν-ἀπο-, δια-, ἐπι-, κατα-, συ(ν), ὑπο-). Ὕπ-ἐστελλόμου, δι-ἐστελλόμην,-στελλᾶ, ἐπ-ἐσταλκα (ἀπέσταλκα in Ac. 16:36); --ἐσταλμαί, ἀπο-ἐστάλην, δι-, ὑπ-ἐστελάμην.

Στήκω. Cf. modern Greek στεκώ from ἐστήκα. Imperf. ἐστήκομι in Jo. 8:44 and Rev. 12:4 according to W. H.

Στριζω (ἐπι-). Στριζέω (-ίσω in MSS., 2 Th. 3:3, W. H. alt.; cf. ὑ- in LXX), ἐστρίζημα, ἐστρίζσθην; 2d aor. ἐστρίζσθην; 1st aor. ἐστρίζθην; perf. ἐστρίζομαι.

Στρε总共 (ἀνα-, ἀπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, μετα-, συν(ν), ὑπο-). Ὕπ-ἐστρεφομον, -στρεψα, ἐστραφμαί, ἐστράφημα, μετα-στραφθομαι.

Στρώννυμι or στρώννυω (κατα-, ὑπο-). Present does not occur. Ἐστρώννυμον, ἑστρώσα, ἑστρώμαι, κατα-ἐστρώθην.

Σφαζω (κατα-). Present does not occur. Σφαζώ, ἔσφαζα, ἔσφαμαί, ἔσφάγνην.

Σώζω (δια-, ἕκ-). Σῶζω, ἔσωσα, σέσωκα, ἕσωζόμην, σέσωμαι, ἔσωθην, σωθήσομαι.

Σάσσω (ἀνα-[μαι], ἀντί-, ἀπο-, δια-, ἐπι-, [μαι], ἐπι-, [προ-] προσ-, συν-, ὑπο-). Ἐτάξα, δια-ταξαχέαν, τάταγ-[μαι]; 2d aor. δια-, ὑπ-ταγήν, δια-τάξομαι; 2d fut. ὑπο-ταγίσσωμαι; 1st aor. δια-ταχθείς 1st nor. mid. ἐταξάμην.

Σελέω (ἀπο-, δια-, ἕκ-, ἐπι-, συν-). --τελέσω, ἐτέλεσα, τετελέσαμαι, ἐτελέσθην, τετελεσθόμαι.

Σέλλω (ἀπο-, ἐξανά-, ἐν-). Simplex does not occur in N. T. 1st aor. ἀν-, ἐξανέ-τειλα; perf. ἀνα-τελλόμαι. fut. ἐν-τελεύμαι; perf. ἐν-τετάλαιμα; mid. 1st aor. ἐν-τετελάμην.

Σέλδω (περι-, συν-). Simplex does not occur. 2d aor. περι-ἐτέλειμον; inf. περι-τελείμην; pass. pros., 1st aor. περι-τετελήσθη; perf. περι-τετελήμενος.

Στέγμω (περι-, συν-). Act. pres. complete. Imperf. ἐτέγαθαι and ἐτέγαθαν, ἐτέγαθον (from τιθέω); fut. τίθησαι; 2d aor. τίθησαι, κας-κας (3d pl.); imperf. θές (ἐπι-, προσ-); subj. θω (complete); inf. θειά; part. θείας; perf. τιθεικα; mid. and pass. τιθεμαι, τιθεμαι, συν-τιθεμεντο, ἐτιθημήν (ἐς-, προσ-); mid. fut. δαι-, ἐπι-θησαι; 2d aor. θέμην (complete); imperf. θοῦ (παρα-); θέσθε (ἀπο-); inf. θέσθαι (ἀπο-, κατα-); part. θεμενος (ἀπο-, δια-). Pass. fut. τεθήσομαι; aor. ἐτθήναι; inf. τεθῆναι; part. τεθεῖς.

Στίκω. Τύχωμαι, ἕτεκον, ἔτεχθην.

Στρέω (ἀνα-, ἀπο-, ἕκ-, ἐπι-, μετα-, περι-, προ-) Simplex not in N. T. 1st nor. ἀν-, ἐπ-ἐτρέφη; mid. pres. imperf. ἐν-ἐτρεπόμην; 1st aor. part. προ-.
1220 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

τρεψάμενος; pass. "strong" fut. ἐκ-, ἐν-τραπήσονται; 2d aor. ἐκ-, ἐπ-τράπην; perf. ἐπί-τέτραπται (1 Cor. 14:34 Rec.).

Τρέφω (άνα-, ἐκ-, ἑν-). Ἕθεψα, -θεψάμην, τέθραμαι, -τράφην.

Τρέχω (εἰσ-, κατα-, περι-, προ-, προσ-, συν-, ἐπί-συν-, ὑπο-). Pres. complete.

Τρέξω, ἔδραμον.

Τρίβω (δία-, συν-). Simplex does not occur. Pres. διά-, συν-; imperf. στ-έτριβον;

fut. συν-τρίψω; 1st aor. δι-, συν-τρήσας; pass. pres. συν-τρίβομαι; 2d fut. συν-

τρίβομαι; perf. inf. συν-τετρίφθαι; part. συν-τετριμμένος

Τυγχάνω (ἐν-, ὑπερ-ἐν-, ἐπι-, παρα-, συν-). Ἐτύχον opt. τύχων, τέτυχα (Heb.

8:6 Ν*ΚΛ), τέτυχα (Rec., BE, or even τετύχηκα in MSS.).

Φαίνω (ἀνα-, ἑπι-). Pres. ἐφανε, Rev. 8:12, 18:23 is variously accented),

ἔφανην, φανησάμαι and φανόμαι (LXX).

Φείδωμαι. Φείδωμαι, ἔφειδαμην.

Φέρω (ἀνα-, ἀπο-, δια-, εἰσ-, παρ-εἰσ-, ἐκ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, παρα-, περι-, προ-, προσ-, συν-, ὑπο-). Ἐφερον, ἐφερόμην, οἶκω, ἤνεγκα, indic. ἤνεγκον; other parts ἤνεχθην; 2d perf. act. προσ-ἐντύνχα.

Φεύγω (ἀπο-, δια-, ἐκ-, κατα-). Mid. fut. φεύγαμαι; 2d perf. ἐκ-πεφευγέναι,

ἐφευγον.

Φθάνω (προ-). Ἐφθασα, ἔφθακα (1 Th. 2:16 W. II. marg.).

Φθείρω (δια-, κατα-). Imperf. (?) ἔφθειρεν (Rev. 19:2). Φθερῶ, ἔφθειρα, ἔφθειραμαι, ἔφθαμην, φθαρήσαμαι.

Φράσσω. Ἐφράσα, ἔφράγγην, φραγγόςαμαι

Φύω (ἐκ-, συν-). Pres. part. φύων; pass. 2d aor. part. φυέω, συν-φυείσαι. A further form ἐκ-φυή (Mt. 24:32 = Mk.) may be accented –φυή (W. H.) and will then be active pres. subj. or 1st aor. subj.; or –φυή and will then be pass. 2d aor. subj. In this case ἡ φύλλα is considered the subject.

Χέω (ἐκ-, ἐπι-, κατα-, συν-). Simplex does not occur in N. T. and χύννω (simplex not in LXX or N. T.). Comp. ἐκ-, ὑπερ-, συν-. Active part.

(Lu. 10:34); imperf. συν-ἐχύννειν (Ac. 9:22); fut. ἐκ-χεῦ (LXX); 1st aor. ἐκ-, κατ-ἐχεια; inf. ἐκ-χειαί (Ro. 3:15, LXX); 2d aor. (?) imper. ἐκ-χέετε (Rev. 16:1), συν-ἐχεύν (Ac. 21:27). Hort. (II, p. 165) would refer the above forms "to an otherwise virtually unknown 2d aor." Pass. pres. ἐκ-χείται (Mt. 9:17) and ἐκ-συν-, ὑπερ-ἐκχύννομαι; imperf. ἐκ-ἐχύννετο (Ac. 22:20); fut. ἐκ-χυθῆσαι; 1st aor. ἐξ-, συν-ἐχυθήνην; perf. ἐκ-, συν-κέχυμα.

Χρίω (ἐγ-, ἑπι-). Aor. ἔχρισα, ἐγ-χρίσασαι, (Rev. 3:18) may be inf. of 1st aor. active (W. H.) or imper. of 1st aor. mid. (ἐγχρίσαι).

Χαίρω (συν-). Ἐχαίρων, ἐχάρην, χαρῆσομαι, some MSS. χαρώ, (Rev. 11:10).

Χαρίζομαι. Mid. χαρίζομαι, ἐχαρίσασαι; pass. κεχαρίσασαι, ἐχαρίσθησα-

μαι.

Χράομαι (κατα-). Ἐχρώμην, ἐχρησάμην, κέχρημα. Impers. χρῆ only once (Jas. 3:10).


'Ωνέμαι. 'Ωνησάμην, not ἐκπιάμην.

13. Ablaut. It is important for the student to note the part played in Greek words, both root-syllables and other syllables, by ablaut or vowel-gradation. We find qualitative ablaut, as φέρω, φορῶς and λείπω, λέλοιπα. Then there is quantitative or qualitative-quantitative ablaut, as in ἤμεν, ἐμι and λιπέν, λείπω.
The subject is still more or less obscure as to the precise order of these vowel-changes and the precise factor in each change (accentuation, vowel-contraction, compensative lengthening). For a brief account see Wright, *Comparative Grammar of the Greek Language*, 1912, pp. 49-61; Brugmann, *Kurze vergl. Gr.*, pp. 138-50; Hirt, *Handbuch der griech. Laut- and Formenlehre*, pp. 84-105. For a fuller discussion see Hirt, *Der indogermanische Ablaut*; Brugmann, *Grundriss*, vol. I, pp. 482-505.
INDEX OF SUBJECTS

References to pages. A complete List of Topics is not attempted

A
K: see Sinaiticus.
a-text: see Syrian text.
N: see Alexandrinus.

Abbreviations: of personal names, 171-3.

Ablative case: form, 248; Doric genitive-ablative, 254; Attic gen.-abl., 255 f.; name, 514; meaning, 514; rare with substantives, 514 f., with adjectives, 515 f.; with prepositions, 516 f. and ch. XIII; with verbs, 517-20 (of departure and removal 518, of ceasing and abstaining 518, of missing, lacking, despairing 518, of differing, excelling 519, of asking and hearing 519, with the partitive idea 519, attraction of relative 519 f.); after comparative, 667.

Ablaut: 1220 f.

Absolute: use of cases, 416; nominative, 459 f.; accusative, 400 f.; genitive, 512-4; positive adjective in absolute sense, 661; inf., 1092 f.; participle, 1130-2.

Abstract nouns: 152, 794.


Accidence: in the vernacular κοινή 1223

72 f.; in the N. T., 82; part II, 141-376.

Accumulation of prepositions: see prepositions.

Accusative case: form, 248; double accusative, 257; singular in third decl., 264 f.; plural, 265 f.; like nom. in -ες, 266; singular of adjectives, 274; name, 466 f.; meaning of, 467 f.; with verbs of motion, 468 f.; extent of space, 469; for time, 469-71; with transitive verbs, 471-7; cognate, 477-9; double, 479-84; with passive verbs, 484-6; adverbial, 486-8; by antiptosis, 488; by inverse attraction, 488; with the infinitive, 489 f.; acc. absolute, 490 f., 1130; with prepositions, 491 and ch. XIII; compared with genitive, 506-10.

Achaean: origin, 16; Achan-Doric, 17, 54, 266; Achaean-Dorian κοινή 53, 63.

Active voice: endings, 337-9; displacing future middle, 356; meaning of, 799; transitive or intransitive, 799 f., effect of prepositions, 800; variation in tenses, 800 f.; causative, 801 f.; with reflexives, 802; impersonal, 802; infinitives, 802; as passive of another verb, 802 f. Acts: 120-3. See Index of Quotations, and passim in the volume.

Adjectives: with formative suffixes, 157-60 (primitive, 157 f.; secondary, 158-60: from verbs 158, from substantives 158, from adjectives 159 f., from adverbs 160); compound, 161-9 (with inseparable
prefixes 161 f., agglutinative or juxtapositive 168 f.; declension of adjectives, 270-6 (origin of the adjective 270 f., inflection of adjectives with one termination 271 f., with two terminations 272 f., with three 273 f., the accus. singular 274, contraction in 274 f., indeclinable 275 f.); comparison of, 276-81 (positive 276, comparative 276-8, superlative 278-81); in predicate, 401; and substantive, 407; gender in, 412 f.; with vocative, 464; with genitive, 503-5; with ablative, 515 f.; with locative or instrumental, 523; with dative, 537; distinguished from adverbs, 549 f., 657; syntax of, ch. XIV, 650-75; origin of, 650; adjectival or appositional use of substantive, 651 f.; as substantive, 652-4 (any gender 652, masculine 652, feminine 652 f., neuter 654 f.); agreement with substantives, 654 f. (number 654 f., gender 655, case 655, two or more adjectives 655); attributive, 655 f.; predicate, 656 f.; personal construction, 657 f.; with cases, 658; with the inf. and clauses, 658 f.; as adverb, 659; positive, 659-61 (relative contrast 659 f., as comparative or superlative 660 f., with prepositions 661, comparison implied by \( \gamma \) 661, in absolute sense 661), comparative, 662-9 (contrast or duality 662 f., degree 663, without suffixes 663, double 663 f., without object of 664-6, followed by 666, by the ablative 666 f., by prepositions 667, displacing the superlative 667-9); superlative, 669-71 (vanishing 669, few true in N. T. 669 f., dative 670, no "Hebraistic" 671); numerals, 671-5; with inf., 1076 f.; part. originally, 1100 f.; adjectival aspects of part., 1104-10; negatives with, 1163 f.

**Adverbs**: with formative suffixes, 160; agglutinative compounds, 169-71; neglect of adverbs, 293; formation of, 294-7 (fixed cases 294, accus. 294 f., ablative 295, genitive 295, locative 295, instrumental 295 f., dative 296, suffixes 296, compound adverbs 297, analogy 297, comparison of adverbs 297); adverbial stems, 297-9 (substantives 298, adjectives 298, numerals 298, pronouns 298, verbs 298 f.); use of adverbs, 299-300 (manner 299, place 299 f., time 300); scope of, 300-2 (relative between adverbs and prepositions 301, adverbs and conjunctions 301 f., adverbs and intensive particles 302, adverbs and interjections 302); adverbial accusative, 486-8; genitive with, 505; dative with, 537 f.; syntax of, ch. XII, 544-52; special difficulties, 544; nature of, 544; narrower sense of, 544 f.; adverbs with verbs, 545 f. (commonest 545, N. T. usage 545, predicate uses 545 f., with \( \epsilon \chi \omega \) 546, with participles 546, loose relation 546); with other adverbs, 546; with adjectives, 546 f.; with substantives, 547; as substantives, 547 f.; frequent use of, 548; as marks of style, 548 f.; distinguished from adjective, 549 f. (different meaning 549, difference in Greek and English idiom 549 f.); adverbial phrases 550-2 (incipient adverbs 550, prepositional phrases 550 f., participles 551,1109 f.), the verb, 554 f.; prepositions, 554 f.; adjective as, 659; article with, 765 f.

**Adversative particles**: 1187 f.

**AEolica**: lyric odes, 17; persistence of, 52; relation to Doric, 17, 53; influence on \( \kappa o u p \), 63; on the N. T., 82; and here and there, \textit{ad libitum}.

**AEschylus**: see Index of Quotations.

**Affixes**: 146.

**Agent**: words expressing, 153 f.; dative of, 542; with passive, 820.

**Agglutinative**: type of languages, 37; compounds, 163-71.

**Agreement**: see concord.
Aktionsart: 344 f., 823 f., 828 f., 831-5, 850 f., 858 f.
Alexander the Great: 44, 49-51, 53 ff., 60-3, 66-8, 71, 239, etc.
Alexandrian type of text: 180 and art 850 f., aorist subj. in prohibitions 851-4, aorist subj. with ὑπερ, 854, aorist opt. 854 f.); imperative, 855 f.; in finitive, 856-8; participle, 858-64 and 1112-4 (Aktionsart 858 f., .5 and aorist 859 f., anteecedent action 860, simultaneous action 860 f., subsequent action 861-3, aorist participle in indirect discourse 863 f.).
Aoristic: see punctiliar, present, perfect, future.
Aphaeresis: 205 f.
Apocalypse: 101, 135 f.; solecisms in, 413-6 and passim. See Index of Quotations.
Apocrypha: passim. See Index of Quotations.
Apostrophe: use of, 244.
Appian: see Index of Quotations.
Apposition: with substantive, 368-400; partitive, 399; predicative amplifications, 401; peculiarities in, 413 ff.; to vocative, 464; genitive of, 498 f.; appositional use of substantive, 651 f.; with ὐφοις, 698-700; ἐκείνος 708; appositional inf., 1078 f.
Aquila: see Index of Quotations.
Aramaic: spoken by Jesus, 26-9; distinct from the Hebrew, 102; portions of the O. T. in, 103; the vernacular of Palestine, 103 f.; Josephus' use of, in his War, 104; signs of, in the N. T., 104 f.; possible use by Mark and Matthew, 105; proper names, 214 f., 236; on prepositions, 556 f.; and passim.
Arcadian: 63, 67, 82, 84, 184, passim.
Aristophanes: and the vernacular, 66. See Index of Quotations.


Arrangement: see sentence.

Arrian: see Index of Quotations.

Article: use by Peter, 127; with vocative, 465 f.; as possessive, 684; with possessive, 685; with reflexive, 690; with ὁτος<, 700-2; with ἐκεῖνος<, 708; origin and development of, 754 f. (a Greek contribution 754, derived from demonstrative 755); significance of, 755; method employed by, 756-8 (individuals from individuals 756, classes from classes 757, qualities from qualities 758); varied usages of, 758-76 (with substantives, context, gender, proper names, anaphoric 758-62, with adjectives, resumptive, adj. alone, with numerals 762-4, with participles 764 f., infinitive 765, with adverbs 765 f., with prepositional phrases 766, with single words or whole sentences 766, with genitive alone 767, nouns in predicate 767-9, distributive 769, nominative with = vocative 769, = possessive 769 f., with possessive 770, with ἀὐτός< 770, with demonstratives 770 f., with ὅλος<, πᾶς< [ἁπάς<] 771-4, with πᾶς< 774 f., ἀκρος<, ἴμισος<, ἐγχατος<, μέσος< 775, with ἄλλος< and ἕτερος< 775 f., with μόνος< 776); position with attributives, 776-89 (with adjectives, normal, repetition, one with several, anarthrous substantives, partitiples 776-9, with genitive, between article and gen., after gen. without repetition, repetition with gen., absent with both, correlation of article 779-82, with adjuncts or adverbs, between article and noun, repeated, only with adjunct, only with noun, when several adjuncts occur, phrases of verbal origin, exegetical questions, anarthrous attributive 782-4, several attributives with καὶ<, same person or thing, when distinguished, treated as one, point of view, difference in number or gender, with disjunctive particle 785-9); position with predicates, 789 f.; absence of, 790-6 (with proper names 791, with genitives 791, prepositional phrases 791 f., with both preposition and genitive 792 f., titles 793, words in pairs 793, ordinal numerals 793 f., in predicate 794, abstract words 794, qualitative force 794, only object of kind 794-6); with inf., 1062-8; articular part., 1106-8.

Article, indefinite: ἐ< as, 674; τις< and οὓς<, 796.

Articular infinitive: 1062-S.

Articular participle: 1106-S.

Artistic prose: see literary κοινή<.

Asianism: 60, 73, 57 f., passim.

Aspirate: 191, 209; doubling of, 215; aspiration of consonants, 219; origin of the aspirate, 221 f.; variations in MSS., 223-5; transliterated Semitic words, 225; use with ρ< and pp<, 225 f.; question of αὕτου<, 226.

Assertion, sentence of: see indirect discourse.

Asseverative particles: 1150.

Assimilation: of consonants, 215-7; rules for, 1210.

Associative case: see instrumental.

Asyndeton: 427-44; imperative in, 949.

Athens: losing its primacy in culture, 67, passim.

Attendant circumstance, participle of: see participle.

Attic: 16, 17, 20, 22, 35 f., 41-4; triumph of, 51; vernacular, the base of the κοινή<, 60-2; influence on N. T., 82; Attic inscriptions show indifference to hiatus, 207; genitive-abl., 255 f.; "Attic" declension, 260; ad libitum in the book.

Attica: 181 f.

Atticism: not part of the κοινή<, 50; the
Atticistic reaction and its influence, 58-60, 73; conservative influence of, 177 f.; pronunciation, 239, passim.

Attraction of relative: inverse, 488; to genitive, 512; to ablative, 519 f.; with ὡς, 714-9; ὡς ὅς, 732 f.

Attributive: adjective, 655 f.; positive article, 776-89. See participle.


Authorized version: influence of, on English language, 92.

B

B: see Vaticanus.
β-text: see Neutral text.

Bezae, Codex: 179 f., passim.
"Biblical" Greek: 5; view of E. Hatch refuted by Deissmann, 24 f.; the new point of view, 30; N. T. not "biblical Greek," 77-9, 88, 92, 112 f., passim.


Blending: see cases.

Boeotian: 16, 52; influence of, 61, 63; monophthongizing, 204 f.; pronunciation, 240; passim.

βοστροφίας: 724 f.; pronunciation, 1119.

Brachylogy: 1201, 1203.

Breathings: 221-6; use with ἰ and ρρ, 225 f.; in Ionic, 240.

Breviloquence: see Brachylogy.

Brittany, bilingual: 29.

Broken continuity: see perfect and past perfect.

Byzantine Greek: literature on, 22-4, 43, 155, 179, 183, 191, 210, passim.

C

C = Codex Ephraemi: passim.

Cardinals: see numerals.

Cases: number of, 247-50 (history of the forms 247 ff., blending of case-endings, syncretism of the forms 249 f., origin of case-suffixes 250); concord in, 413-6 (adjectives 413, participles 413, the Book of Revelation 413-6, apposition 416, absolute 416); syntax of, ch. XI, 446-543; history of interpretation of, 446-9 (confusion 446, Bopp's contribution 446 f., modern usage 447, Green's classification 447 f., syncretism of the cases 448, freedom in use of 448 f.); purpose of the cases, 449 (Aristotle's usage, word-relations); encroachment of prepositions on, 450-3 (reason 450, no "governing " of cases 450 f., original use with "local" cases 451, 567, increasing use of 451 f., distinction preserved in N. T. 453); distinctive idea in each case, 453-6 (fundamental idea 453 f., cases not yet interchangeable 454, vitality of case-idea 454, historical development of the cases 454 f., method of this grammar 456); nominative, 456-66; vocative, 461-6; accusative, 466-91; genitive, 491-514; ablative, 514-20; locative, 520-5; instrumental, 525-35; dative, 535-43; functions of prepositions with, 567-71; see discussion of each preposition in ch. XIII; adjective and substantive, 655; with adjectives, 658; ἱ, attraction and incorporation, 714-9; ὡς ὅς, 728 f.; of inf., 1058-62; with inf., 1082; participle, 1119.

Causal participle: see participle and causal clauses.

Causal particles: see conjunctions and causal sentences (hypotactic).

Causal sentences: use of ὡς, 724 f.; paratactic, 962 f.; with hypotactic conjunctions, 963 f.; relatives, 965 f.; ἔτη ἔτος, and the infinitive, 966; participle, 966, 1128; inf., 1091.

Causative verbs: 150; active, 801 f., middle, 808 f.
Cautious assertion: see final and consecutive sentences.

Chaldee (Aramaic): 211. See Aramaic.

Chiasm: 1200.

Chinese: 250.


Chrysostom: passim.

Circumlocutions: 330, 64S f.

Circumstantial participle: see participle.

"Classical Greek": 5, 89, passim.

Clause: paratactic, 428 f.; hypotactic, 429-31; inf. and part., 431 f.; clauses with the adjectives, 658 f.

Climax: 1200.

Collectives: see gender and number.

Colloquial: see vernacular.

Colon: 243.

Comma: origin of, 243.

Common speech: see κοινή.

Comparative: see adjectives.

Comparative clauses: with relative ὅσος, 966 f.; relative with κατά, 967; καλότε, 967; ὡς and its compounds, 967 ff.

Comparative grammar or philology: 8-12; the linguistic revolution, 8; sketch of Greek grammatical history, 8-10; the discovery of Sanskrit, 10; from Bopp to Brugmann, 10 ff.; importance of, 36; the original Indo-Germanic speech, 38; Greek as a "dialect" of, 39 f.; applied to N. T. word-formation, 144; system of affixes, infixes, prefixes, suffixes, 146-247, 250, passim.

Comparison: of adjectives, 276-81; of adverbs, 297; syntax of, 661-9.

Complementary infinitive: see infinitive (with verbs).

Complementary participle: see participle.

Composition: compound words common in the N. T., 82; compound verbs in -εω, 147 f.; discussion of composita in the N. T., 160-71 (kinds of, proper, copulative, de-

Conclusive action: 880, 885.

Concessive: imperative as, 949; clause, 1026; participle, 1128.

Concord: and government, 949; clause, 1026; participle, 1128.

Conditional sentences: apodosis of second class, 921-3; two kinds of sentences, 1004-7; four classes, 1007-22 (determined as fulfilled 1007-12, determined as unfulfilled 1012-6, undetermined, but with possibility of determination 1016-20, remote possibility of determination 1021 f.); mixed conditions, 1022; implied conditions, 1022 f.; elliptical, 1023-6; concessive clauses, 1026 f.; other particles with ἐι and ἐκν, 1027; participle, 1129.

Conjugation of verb: ch. VIII, 303-76.

Conjuncts: adverbs, 301; in subordinate clauses, 951 f.; and all through the discussion of hypotactic clauses, 950-1049; paratactic, 1177-92 (copulative: τέ 1178 f., καί 1179-83, δέ 1183-5, ὥστε 1185 f.; adversative: δέ 1186 f., πλέον 1187, μέντοι 1188, ἐξως 1188, ἐι μὴ 1188; disjunctive: ἕλθε 1188 f., ἐξετά and ἐξένε 1189, οὔτε and μὴτε 1189; inferential: ἃρα 1189 f., γὰρ 1190 f., οὔν 1191 f.); hypotactic, 1192 f.

Consecutive: use of ὅς; clauses, see final and consecutive.

Consonants: changes, 209-21 (origin and character of the consonants 209 f., the insertion of 210, the omission of 210 f., single or double 211-5, assimilation of 215-7, interchange and changing value of 217-9, aspiration of 219, variable final 219-21, metathesis 221).
INDEX OF SUBJECTS

Constative action: see aorist.
Constructio ad sensum: illustrated in, 400-424, 683 f., 1201.
Constructio praegnans: 1204. See also prepositions.
Contrasts: in Greek words, 175 f.; in comparison, 662 f.
Co-ordination: 443 f.; between participles, 1135 f.
Coptic: 215, 250 f., passim.
Copula: not necessary, 395 f.
Copulative conjunctions: 1177-86.
Coronis: 244.
Correlation of article: see article.
Correlative pronouns: 289 f., 298, 709 f., 732.
Crasis: 208.
Cretan dialect: passim.
Crete: early Greek culture in, 43.
Culture: variations in N. T. writers, 381.
Cynic-Stoic diatribe: 420 f., 1196 f.
Cyprus: as purveyor of Greek culture, 43; language and N. T. Gk., 82, passim.

D
D: see (Codex) Bezae.
δ-text: see Western text.
Dative: form, 248 ff.; syncretism, 535; decay of dative, 535 f.; idea of, 536; with substantives, 536 f.; with adjectives, 537; with adverbs and prepositions, 537 f. and ch.
XIII; with verbs, 538-43 (indirect object 538, dative with commodi, 538 f., direct object 539-41, with intransitive verbs 541, possession 541, infinitive in dative 541 f., of the agent 542, because of preposition in composition 542 f.); ambiguous examples, 543; eth., 539.
Declarative clauses: 915 f., and see indirect discourse.
De-aspiration: increasing, 222 f.
Declensions: ch. VII, 246-302; history of the, 246 f.; first or a declension, 254-9 (Doric genitive-ablative singular 254 f., Attic genitive-ablative 255, vocative in -α 256, words in -πα and participles in –νίο 256; retention of –α gen.-abl. 256, double declensions 257, heteroelipsis and metaplasm 257-9, indeclinable substantives 259); second or o, 259-63 (the "Attic" 260, contraction 260 f., vocative 261, heteroclisis and metaplasm 261-3, mixed declension 263, proper names 263); third decl., 263-9 (nomi
ergative as vocative 264, accus. singular 264 f., accus. plural 265 f., peculiarities in the nominative 267 f., gen.-abl. 268, contraction 268, proper names 268 f., heteroclisis and metaplasm 269); indeclavible words, 269 f.; declension of adjectives, 270-81; numerals, 281-4; pronouns, 284-93; adverbs, 293-302.
Defective verbs: in voice, 799. See verbs.
Deictic: see demonstrative.
Deliberative: future, 875 f.; subjunctive, 934 f.; opt., 940; questions, 1046.
Delphian: 266.
Delta: 91.
Demonstrative pronouns: inflection of, 289 f.; nature of, 693; shades of meaning, 693; ὁ, ἧ, τό, 693-5; ὅς, 695 f.; ὅδε, 696 f.; ὁμος, 697-706 (the deictic use 697, the contemptuous use 697, the anaphoric use 697 f., in apposition 698-700, use of article 700 f., without article 701 f., contrast with ἐκεῖνος 702 f., antecedent of relative 703 f., gender and number 704, adverbial uses 704 f., phrase τότε ἐστιν 705, with other pronouns 705, ellipsis 705, shift in reference 706); ἐκεῖνος 706-9 (the purely deictic 707, the contemptuous use 707, the anaphoric 707, the remote object 707 f., emphasis 708, with apposition 705,
with article 708, antecedent to relative 708, gender and number 708 f., independent use 709; αὐτός, 709; correlative demonstratives 709 f.; article derived from, 755; article with, 770 f.

Demosthenes: in the New Attic, 52; pronouncing Greek, 238. See Index of Quotations.

Denial and prohibition, with οὐ (see aorist subj. and fut. ind. Denominative verbs: 147.

Deponents: 332 f., 811-3, 817 f.

Derivation: derivative verbs, 147-50.

Design, sentences of: see final.

Diacritical marks: 226.

Dieresis: 204 f.; marks of, 244.

Dialects: fuller knowledge of the dialects, 16 f., 39 f., 41-4, 46, 52 f., 71, 79, 110 f.; dialect-coloured vernacular, 61-9, S2, 178 f.; accent in, 229-31, 238 ff.; declension in, 247; passim.

Diatribe, Cynic-Stoic: 420 f., 1196 f.

Diffuseness: see pleonasm.

Digamma: 209, 223 f.

Digraphs: 209.

Digression: 437 f.

Diminutives: frequent in the N. T., 82; less common than in modern Gk., 155.

Diodorus Siculus: see Index of Quotations.

Diphthongs: 204 f.

Direct discourse: exchange with indirect, 442 f.; with recitative ὃτι, 1027 f.

Discord: see concord.

Disjunctive particles: negative, 1165 f., 1173; conjunctions, 1188 f.

Dissimilation: see assimilation.

Distributive numerals: see numerals.

Distributive pronouns: see numerals.

Division of words: not in old MSS., 243 f.

Doric: purest Hellenic, 17; tenacity of, 52; Doric-AEolic, 53; influence on the κοινή, 63; on the N. T., 82; genitive-ablative, 254, passim.

Double comparative and superlative: 663, 670.


Double consonants: 211-5.

Double declension: 257.

Double interrogative: 737.

Dual: origin and disappearance of, 251 f.

Durative (linear) action: 823 f., 879-92.

Dynamic: see middle voice.

Ecbatic ἴνα: see consecutive clauses.

Ecbatic infinitive: see consecutive clauses and infinitive.

Editor's prerogative: 244 f.

Effective action: see aorist.


Elative: 278 f., 670.

Elean: 266.

Elision: 72, 206-8, 223, 226, 1210.

Ellipsis: of subject or predicate, 391; of οὗτος, 705 f.; in general, 1201 f.


Enallage: 454.


English: best English spoken in Edinburgh and Louisville, 69.

Epanadipepsis: 1200.

Epexegetic infinitive: 1086 f. — Epexegetical apposition: 399.
Epic: 185, 204, *passim*.

Epicene: gender, 252.

Epidiorthosis: 1199.

Epimenides: see Index of Quotations.

Epistles: distinction from letters, 70 ff., 85 ff., 197, 200, 239.

Epistolary aorist: see aorist.

Erasmus: on pronunciation of Greek, 237, 240.

Etacism: 191.

Etymology: work of the philosophers, 31; use of term, 143 f.

Euphony: 419-23.

Euripides: see Index of Quotations.

Euthalius: 241.

Exclamation: 461, 739, 741.

**F**

Fayum Papyri: see Index of Quotations.

Feminine: see gender.

Figures of speech: ch. XXII, 1194-1208: rhetorical, not grammatical, 1194; style in the N. T., 1194-7; figures of thought, 1198 f. (rhetorical question, oratory, irony, prodiorithosis, epidiorthosis, paraleipsis, heterogeneous structure); figures of expression, 1199-1208 (parallels and contrasts: parallelism, synonymous or antithetic, chiasm or reverted parallelism, anaphora, antitrope, poetry 1199 f.; contrasts in words: epanadiplousis, climax, zeugma, brachylogy, synonyms, onomatopoetic, alliteration, parenosmia, annominatio, parechosis, pun 1200 f.; contraction and expansion:ellipsis, aposiopesis, breviloqueness or brachylogy, *constructio praegnąns, constructio ad sensum, hypallage, pleonasm, hyperbole, litotes, meiosis 1201-6; metaphors and similar tropes: metaphor, simile, parable, allegory, metonymy 1206 f.)

Final and consecutive clauses: kinship, 980; origin in parataxis, 980 f.; pure final, 981-91 (iva 981-5, ὦς 985-7, ὦς 987, μή, μή ποτε, μή πως, 987-9, relative 989, infinitive 989-91, participle 991, 1128 ff.; sub-final, 991-7 (ίνα 991-4, ὄψως 994 f., μή, μή ποτε, μή πως 995 f., relative 996, infinitive 996 f., 1087-9, εἰ and ὦτι. 997); consecutive, 997-1003 (ίνα 997-9, ὦς 1000 f., ὦτι. 1001, relative 1001, infinitive 1001 ff., 1089-91).


Finnish: 250.

First or a declension: 254-9, 267.

Foreign words: 108-11, 235 ff. See Latinisms.

Formation of words: in the vernacular, 72; ch. 11, pp. 143-76; formative suffixes, 146-60; by composition, 160-71.

Forms, rare: see declensions and conjugation of verbs.

Formulas of citation: 1027 f.

Fourth Book of Maccabees: see Index of Quotations.

Fourth Gospel and Apocalypse: see Index of Quotations.

French: accent, 230; cases and prepositions of, 252; gender, 252; *passim*.

Future: conjugation of, 353-7 (origin of 353 f., Ionic-Attic 355, syncopated 353 f., of liquid verbs 356, active and middle 356, second passive 356 f., first passive 357, periphrastic 357); syntax of middle, 813 f.; passive, 818-20; relation of aorist to, 846 f.; punctiliar (aoristic), 870-6 ("mixed" tense, punctiliar or durative 870-2, modal aspect of, merely futuristic, volitive, deliberative 872-6, in the modes 876-9: indicative 876, subjunctive and optative 876, infinitive 876, participle 877 f., periphrastic substitutes for 878 f.); durative (linear), 888-9 (three kinds of action 889, periphrastic 889); fut. ind. and nor. subj., 924 f.; fut. ind. as imperative, 942 f., 1118 f.
Future perfect: 361, 906 f.
Futuristic: modal aspect of future, merely futuristic, 872-4; present, 869 f., 881; pres. part., 992; present perfect, 898; subj., 928-30; optative, 937-9.


Gnostic: aorist, 836 f.; present, 866; present perfect, 897.

Gorgian figures: 1197 IT.

Gothic: passim.

Grammar: the ideal grammar, 3; the pre-Winer period, 3; the service of Winer, 4; the modern period, the service of Deissmann, Thumb, Moulton, etc., 5-7; the new grammatical equipment, 8-31; sketch of Greek grammatical history, 8-10; advance in general Greek grammar, 12; critical editions of Greek authors, 13; grammatical monographs, 13; grammatical commentaries, 29; new point of view, 30; comparative, 31-48; in Alexander's time, 58-61; Greek grammarians and Latin, 822; Alexandrian grammarians and adjectives, 650; passim.

Greek authors: 13 f., 55, 57-9, 86 f., 94, 109, 121, 128 f., 147, 191, 199, 203, 218, 227, 238, 251, 265 f., chapter on Formation of Words, and passim. See Index of Quotations.

Greek language: sketch of Greek grammatical history, 8-13; relation to earlier tongues, 39; regarded as a whole, 40-45; unity of, 41 f.; periods of, 43; the Greek point of view, 46-48; passim.

Greek culture: 14 ff., 35; subject to non-Greek influences, 49, 58, 67, 75, 84 f., 111 f., passim.

Greek, later: see Byzantine or modern Greek.

Greek point of view: 46-8.

Headings, anarthrous: see article.

Hebraisms: 3; the old view, 24 ff.; the revolt of Deissmann, 25 f.; number of, in N. T., 76 ff., 89; the traditional standpoint, 88 f.; translation, 89 f.; papyri and inscriptions disprove many, 90 f.; real, in
INDEX OF SUBJECTS

N. T., 94-6; greater indirect influence of the LXX, 96-102; transliterated words, 225; variety in N. T. writers, 106-8; on prepositions, 556 f.; φοβείσθαι θαλας δεινό, 577; use of εἰς, 5 f.; superlative, 671; tense, 822; passim.

Hebraists: 76 ff., 88 f., 90 f.

Hebrew: proper names, 214; transliterated Hebrew words, 225; accent of proper names, 236, 259, 263, 268 ff.; passim.

Hebrews: literary quality of, 106; peculiarities of, 132 f.; alone of the N. T. books avoids hiatus, 206, 218; rhythm in, 1196 f.

Hellenism: influence on Paul, 86.

Hellenistic: see κοινή.

Hendiadys: 1206.

Herculaneum: 196, 223, passim.

Hennas: see Index of Quotations.

Herodotus: 13, 57, 59, 266, passim.

Heteroclisis: 257-9 (the first and second decls., the first and third); between second and third, 261 f.; between masculine and neuter of second, 262 f.; third decl., 269.

Heterogeneous structure: 441 f., 1199.


Historic present: see present.


History of words: 173 f.

Homer and Homeric Greek: 249, 252, passim. See Index of Quotations.

Hypallage: 1204.

Hyperbaton: 423 f.

Hyperbole: 1205.

Hypocoristic: 171-3.


Hypothetical sentences: see conditional sentences.

Hysterion proteron: 423.

Identical pronouns: see intensive pronouns.

Illative particles: see (inferential) conjunctions.

Illicit: in the papyri, 70 f.; diversity of culture, 85; passim.

Imparative: origin of, 320, 327-30 (non-thematic stem 327, thematic stem 327 f., suffix -Θ 328, suffix -τω 328, old injunctive 328 f., forms in -έμ, 329, form in -σον 329, first person 329 f., prohibitions 330, perfect 330, periphrastic 330, circumlocations 330); perfect, 360 f.; use of aorist, 855 f.; present, 890; perfect, 908; imper. and subj., 925; origin of, 941; meaning of, 941; disappearance of imperative forms, 941 f.; alternatives for, 942-6 (fut. ind. 942 f., subj. 943, opt. 943, infinitive 943 f., participle 944-6); uses of, 946-50 (command or entreaty 946 f., prohibition 947, entreaty 947 f., permission 948, concession or condition 948 f., in asyndeton 949, in subordinate clauses 949 f., tenses 950, in indirect discourse 950); negative with, 1161 f., 1170.

Imperfect: relation of, to aorist, 837-40; doubtful, 882 f.; descriptive tense in narrative, 883 f.; iterative or customary, 884; progressive, 884; inchoative or conative, 885; "negative," 885; potential, 885-7; in indirect discourse, 887; periphrastic, 887 f.; past perfect as, 885.

Impersonal verbs: active, 802; construction, 820.

"Improper" prepositions: see prepositions, 554, 636

Inceptive action: 150.

Incorporation of antecedent: 718 f., 731, 733.
Indeclinable words: accent, 236; substantives, 259; various foreign words, 269 f.; adjectives, 275 f.; τί, 736; τι, 744.

Indefinite article: 674 f., 796.

Indefinite pronouns: inflection of, 292; Tis, 741-4 (accent 741, relation to rigid 741 f., as substantive 742, with numerals 742, with substantives 742 f., with adjectives 743, as predicate 743, position of 743, as antecedent 743, alternative 743, negative forms 743 f., indeclinable τι 744); ἔς, 744; πάς, 744; ὅ δείνα, 744.

Independent sentences: see para.-taxis.

Indicative: real mode, 320 f.; no mode sign, 322 f.; use of aor. ind., 835-48; future, 876; meaning of, 914 f.; kinds of sentences using, 915-8 (declarative or interrogative 915-7, positive or negative 917 f.); special uses of, 918-24 (past tenses, for courtesy 918 f., present necessity, obligation, etc. 919-21, apodosis of second class conditions 921-3, impossible wishes 923, present 923 f., future 924); in indirect discourse, 1032-6; negative with, 1157-60, 1168 f.

Indirect discourse: exchange with direct, 442 f.; aorist participle in, 863 f.; imperfect ind., 887; present part., 992; perfect in, 897; inf. perf., 908; recitative ὅτι in oratio recta, 1027 f.; change of person in indirect discourse, 1028 f.; change of tense in, 1029 f.; change of mode in, 1030 f.; limits of indirect disc., 1031 f.; declarative clauses (indirect assertions), 1032-43 (ὅτι and indicative 1032-6, infinitive 1036-40, 1082-5, participle, 1040-2, 1122-4, καὶ ἐγένετο 1042 f.); indirect questions, 1043-6 (tense 1043, mode 1043 f., interrogative pronouns and conjunctions used 1044 f.); indirect command, 1046 f., 1082-5 (deliberative questions 1046, conjuncts ὅνα and ὅπως 1046, infinitive, 1046 ff.); mixture, 1047 f.; the subordinate clause, 1048.


Indo-European: see Indo-Germanic.


Inferential conjunctions: 1189-92.

Infinitive: ending, 246; forms of, 368-71 (original terminology 368, fixed case-forms 368 f., with voice and tense 369 f., no personal endings 370, article with 371, disappearance of inf. 371, N. T. forms 371); in apposition, 399 f.; in clauses, 431 f.; accusative with, 489 f.; in genitive, 512; in dative, 541 f.; with adjectives, 658 f.; article with, 765; and voice, 802; use of aorist, 856-8; future, 876 f.; perfect, 908 f.; as imperative, 943 f.; causal use of διὰ τό, 966; temporal use of, 978 f.; purpose, 989-91; sub-final, 996 f.; consecutive, 1001-3; in indirect discourse, 1036-40; in indirect command, 1046-8; origin of inf., 1051 f.; development, 1052-6 (prehistoric period 1052, earliest historic period 1052-4, classic period 1054-6, later period 1056-8); substantival aspects of inf., 1058-79 (case, subject or object 1058-62, articular 1062-8, prepositions with 1068-75, with substantives 1075 f., with adjectives 1076 f., with verbs 1077 f., appositional and epexegetical 1078 f.); verbal aspects of, 1079-95 (voice 1079 f., tense 1080-2, cases with 1082, in ind. disc. 1082-5, personal construction with 1085 f., epexegetical inf. 1086 f., purpose 1087-9, result 1089-91, cause 1091, time 1091 f., absolute 1092 f., negatives with 1093-5, 1162, 1171, āν with 1095); relation between part. and inf., 1101-3.

Infinitives: 146.

Inflectional languages: 37.

Ingressive action: see aorist.
Injunctive mood: 321, 328 f., 913.
Inscriptions: the Greek inscriptions, 14-6, 52, 56 ff., 66 ff., 76-80; more literary than the papyri, 84, 90 f., 96 f., 100 f., 106, 116, 130 f., 138 f., 148, 180, 181-93, 200, 202, ad libitum through the book. See Index of Quotations.
Inseparable prefixes: 161-3.
Instrumental case: endings, 249 f.; term, 525 f.; syncretistic, 526; place, 526 f.; time, 527 f.; associative idea, 528-30; with words of likeness and identity, 530; manner, 530-2; with adjectives, 523, 530; measure, 532; cause, 532; means, 532-4; with prepositions, 534 f. and ch. XIII.
Instrumental use of ἐν: 589-91. See also locative.
Intensive particles: adverbs, 302; prepositions, 563 f.; limitations, 1144-7; γέ, 1147-9; δή, 1149; εἰ μὴν, νὴ and ναί, 1150; μέν, 1150-3; πέρ, 1150-3; τοῦ, 1150-3.
Intensive perfect: see perfect tense.
Intensive pronouns: declension of, 287; nominative use of αὐτός, 685 f.; varying degrees of emphasis, 686; αὐτός with οὕτως, 686; αὐτός almost demonstrative, 686, in oblique cases, 686 f.; side by side with reflexive, 687; 6 667-65, 687.
Interjections: 302, 1193.
Interrogative particles: single questions, 1175-7 (direct, no particle, negative, others, interrogative pronouns, conjunctions, indirect, pronouns, conjunctions); double questions, 1177 (direct, indirect).
Interrogative pronouns: inflection of, 291 f.; τίς, 735-40 (substantival or adjectival 735, absence of gender 735, =ποίος 735 f., indeclinable τί 736, alternative questions 736 f., double 737, as relative 737 f., predicate τί 738, adverbia 738 f., with prepositions 739, with particles 739, as exclamation 739, indirect questions 739, τίς or τίς 739 f.); ποίος, 740 (qualitative, non-qualitative, indirect questions); τὸσος, 741 f. (rarity, meaning, indirect, exclamatory); πότερος, 741 (rare, indirect questions); ποταμός, 741; in indirect questions, 1044 f.
Intransitive: 330 f., 797 f., 806, 815 f.
Inverse attraction: 488, 717 f.
Inseparable prefixes: 161-3.
Ionic: earliest in literature, 16, 17; influence on the koinh<, 62 f.; on the term, 525 f.; syncretistic, 526; place, 526 f.; time, 527 f.; associative idea, 528-30; with adjectives, 523, 530; measure, 532; cause, 532; means, 532-4; with prepositions, 534 f. and ch. XIII.
Intensive particles: adverbs, 302; prepositions, 563 f.; limitations, 1144-7; γέ, 1147-9; δή, 1149; εἰ μὴν, νὴ and ναί, 1150; μέν, 1150-3; πέρ, 1153 f.; τοῦ, 1154 f.
Intensive perfect: see perfect tense.
Intensive pronouns: declension of, 287; nominative use of αὐτός, 685 f.; varying degrees of emphasis, 686; αὐτός with οὕτως, 686; αὐτός almost demonstrative, 686, in oblique cases, 686 f.; side by side with reflexive, 687; 6 667-65, 687.
Interjections: 302, 1193.
Interrogative particles: single questions, 1175-7 (direct, no particle, negative, others, interrogative pronouns, conjunctions, indirect, pronouns, conjunctions); double questions, 1177 (direct, indirect).
Interrogative pronouns: inflection of, 291 f.; τίς, 735-40 (substantival or adjectival 735, absence of gender 735, =ποίος 735 f., indeclinable τί 736, alternative questions 736 f., double 737, as relative 737 f., predicate τί 738, adverbia 738 f., with prepositions 739, with particles 739, as exclamation 739, indirect questions 739, τίς or τίς 739 f.); ποίος, 740 (qualitative, non-qualitative, indirect questions); τὸσος, 741 f. (rarity, meaning, indirect, exclamatory); πότερος, 741 (rare, indirect questions); ποταμός, 741; in indirect questions, 1044 f.
Intransitive: 330 f., 797 f., 806, 815 f.
Inverse attraction: 488, 717 f.
Iota adscript: 194 f., 209.
Iota subscript: 194 f.
Ireland, bilingualism in: 30.
Irony: 1198 f.
Irrational final and v: 194, 219-21.
"Irregular" verbs: see list, 1212-20.
Isolating languages: 37.
Isolation of Greek, not true: 36-39.

J

James, peculiarities of: 123 f. See Index of Quotations.
Jesus language of: both Aramaic and Greek 26 9.
"Jewish" Greek: see "Biblical Greek, Hebraisms, Aramaic, koinh<.
Jews: 83, 98 f., 102, etc.
John peculiarities of: 133 - 7. S Index of Quotations.
Josephus: 28; an illustration of Atticistic Gk. in contrast with 1 Maccabees, 87, 236, 269, passim. See Index of Quotations.
Jude: peculiarities of, 124 f. See Index of Quotations.
Justin Martyr: see Index of Quotations.

K

Καθαρεύουσα: 18; artificial modern Greek, 36, 60, passim.
Kinship of Greek words: 174 f.
**Koinh:** 17, 18, 21-4, 32, 46; chapter on, 49-74; term, 49; origin, 49; triumph of the Attic, 51; fate of the other dialects, 52 f.; influence of the dialects on the koinh, 53; partial koines, 53; effect of Alexander's campaigns, 53 f.; spread of the koinh, 54-60; a real world-speech, 54-56; vernacular, 56; literary, 57 f.; the Atticistic reaction, 58-60; characteristics of the vernacular koinh, 60-73; vernacular Attic, the base of the koinh, 60-2; the other dialects in the koinh, 62-64; non-dialectical changes in, 64 f.; new words in, 65; new forms of old words, 65 f.; poetical and vernacular words, 65; new meanings to old words, 66; i/A.D. the climax of the koinh, 66; provincial influences in, 66-9; koinh in Asia Minor and in Alexandria, 67 f.; in Palestine, 69; koinh a single language, 69; personal equation, 69-71; resume of the characteristics of the vernacular koinh, 71-4 (phonetics and orthography 71 f., vocabulary 72, word-formation 72, accidence 72 f., syntax 73 f.); adaptability of the koinh to the Roman world, 74 f.; place of the N. T. in the koinh, 76-140, 152 f., 159 f., 161-3, 171; accent in, 228 f.; pronunciation in, 236-41; ad libitum in the book.

**Labials:** assimilation before, 216, 264, 1210.

**Language of Jesus:** 26-9, 99, 102 f., 105. See Jesus.

**Language, study of:** the fascination of, 3; the new point of view, 8-12; as history, 31; a living organism, origin of, evolution in, changes in vernacular, 33 f.; Greek not isolated, 36; common bond in, 37, passim.

**Late Greek:** see Byzantine.

**Latin:** 36, 39, 46 f.; late Latin as ill koinh, 55, 74, 79, 103; Latinisms in the N. T., 108-11, 131, 137, 144; passim.

**Latin authors:** 85, 108 f., 128, passim. See Index of Quotations.

**Latin versions:** passim.

**Latinisms:** 10S-10, 131, etc.

**Lesbian:** 17, 184, 249. See AEolic.

**Letters:** as distinct from epistles, 70, 85 ff.

**Lewis Syriac:** passim.

**Lexical:** new knowledge of words, 65 f.; N. T. lexicography needing reworking, 144, passim.

**Limitative infinitive:** see infinitive.

**Linear action:** see durative.

**Literary element in N. T.:** 83-8.

**Literary koinh:** true part of the koinh, 50, 57 f.; literary elements in the N. T., 83-8, 106; high standard of culture in the Greco-Roman world, 85.

**Literary plural:** 406 f., 677 f.

**Litotes:** 1205.

**Local cases:** 451. See cases.

**Local clauses:** 969 f.

**Locative:** form, 249 f.; name, 520; significance, 520 f.; place, 521 f. time, 522 f.; with adjectives, 523; with verbs, 523 f.; with substantives, 524; with prepositions, 524 f. and ch. XIII; pregnant construction, 525.

**Lucian:** see Index of Quotations.

**Luke:** literary element in, 106; pecu- of, 120-3, 135, 179, 240, passim. See Index of Quotations.

**Luther's German Bible:** influence of, 92.

**LXX:** see Septuagint.

**Lycaonian:** vernacular surviving in koinh, 55 f.

**M Macedonian:** influence on the koinh, 63 f.; words, 111.

**Magnesia:** 196, 200, 208, 223, passim.

**Manner:** see adverbs, instrumental case, participle.

**Manuscripts of N. T.:** vary in orthography, 179-89, 191-231; show
changes in pronunciation, 239 ff.;
have beginnings of chapters and
paragraphs, 241 f.; uncialists have no
distinction between words, 242 ff.;
ad libitum.

Mark: Aramaic influence in, 106;
Latin, 110; peculiarities of, 118 f.
See Index of Quotations.

Masculine: see gender.

Matthew: Aramaic influence in, 106;
peculiarities of, 119 f., 135, passim.
See Index of Quotations.

Means: see instrumental case, participle.

Meiosis: 1205 f.

Metaphor: 1206.

Metaplasm: 257-9, 261-3, 269.

Metathesis: 221, 1210.

Metonymy: 1207.

Middle: passive displacing, 333 f.;
endings, 339 f., giving way to active,
356; perfect, 359; with reflexive
pronoun, 690 f.; origin of, 803;
meaning of, 803 f.; acute difference
from active, 804; use of not obligatory, 804-6; transitive or intransitive, 806; direct, 806-8; causative
or permissive, 808 f.; indirect, 809 f.;
redundant, 811; dynamic (deponent), 811-3; middle future though active present, 813 f.; retreating in
N. T., 814.

Minuscula: 217, passim.

Mixed declension: 263. See declensions.

Mode (mood): conjugation of, 320-30 (number of 320 f., distinctions
between 321 f., indicative 322 f.,
subjunctive 323 ff., optative 325 ff.,
 imperative 327-30); syntax of, ch.
XIX, 911-1049; introductory dis-
cussion, 910-4; in paratactic sen-
tences, 914-50 (indicative 914-24, subjunctive 924-35, optative 935-
40, imperative 941-50); in hypo-
tactic sentences, 950-1049 (use of
modes in 950, use of conjunctions
in 951 f., logical varieties of sub-
ordinate clauses 952-1049: relative
953-62, causal 962-6, comparative
966-9, local 969 f., temporal 970-9,
final and consecutive 980-1003;
conditions 1003 f., conditional 1004-27,
indirect discourse 1027-48, series
of subordinate clauses 1048 f.);
change of mode in indirect discourse, 1030 f.

Modern Greek: literature on, 22-4;
importance for N. T. Gk., 44-6;
illustrating N. T. Gk., 137 f., 147,
150, 155, 177 f., 557, ad libitum.

Mood: see mode.

Music: 228.

Mycenaean age: 43 f.

Names of persons: see proper names.

Narrative, tenses in, in Greek: see
aorist, imperfect, present, present
perfect.

Negative particles: in relative clauses,
962; with inf., 1093-5; with parti-
ciple, 1136-9; objective οὐ and its
compounds, 1155-66 (origin 1155,
history 1156, meaning 1156 f., with
the indicative, independent sentences, subordinate clauses 1157-
60, with the subjunctive 1160 Er
with the optative 1161, with the
imperative 1161 f., with infinitive
1162, with the participle 1162 f.,
with nouns 1163 f., καὶ οὐ 1154,
redundant or pleonastic οὐ 1164,
repetition of οὐ 1164, intensifying compound 1164 f., disjunctive
1165 f.); subjective μὴ and its coin-
pounds, 1166-75 (history of μὴ
1166 f., significance of 1167, uses
of μὴ, indicative 1168 f., subjunc-
tive 1169 f., optative 1170, impera-
tive 1170, infinitive 1171, participle
1172, nouns 1172, intensifying com-
pounds 1172 f., καὶ μὴ 1173, dis-
junctive use 1173); combination of
two negatives, 1173-5 (μὴ οὐ 1173 f.,
οὐ μὴ 1174 f.).

Negative pronouns: οὐδείς, οὔθείς οὐδὲ,
ἕις, ἕις—οὐ, 750 f.; οὔτεις, μὴ τίς,
751 f.; οὐ πᾶς, μὴ πᾶς 76.5, 752 f.
Neuter: as substantive, 156, 267 f.; see gender.

Neutral type of text: 180, 212, 219, passim.


New Testament, Greek of: place in the κοινή, 76-140; chiefly the vernacular, 76-83; not a biblical Greek, 77-79; proof that in the vernacular, 79-83; the lexical proof from the papyri and inscriptions, 80-2; accidence corroborated by papyri and inscriptions, 82; syntactical peculiarities, 82 f.; phrases common to N. T. and papyri, 83; literary elements in N. T. Gk., 83-8; literary quality in the N. T., 84; controversy now whether there is appreciable Semitic colouring in the N. T., 88 f.; view of Deissmann and Moulton, 89-93; some real Hebrewisms in the N. T., 92 f.; little direct Hebrew influence, list of probable Hebrewisms, 94-6; deeper impress of the LXX in vocabulary, accidence and syntax, though great variety in the LXX, 96-102; Aramaisms in the N. T., 92 f.; little direct Hebrew influence, list of probable Hebrewisms, 94-6; deeper impress of the LXX in vocabulary, accidence and syntax, though great variety in the LXX, 96-102; Aramaic in the N. T., 92 f.; little direct Hebrew influence, list of probable Hebrewisms, 94-6; deeper impress of the LXX in vocabulary, accidence and syntax, though great variety in the LXX, 96-102; Aramaic and Hebrew colouring in different parts of the N. T., 106-8; Latinisms in the N. T., names of persons and places, military terms, words and phrases, syntax, 108-11; sporadic foreign words in the N. T., 111; the Christian addition, 116; individual peculiarities of N. T. authors, 116-37; see separate writers by name; N. T. Gk. illustrated by modern Gk., 137 ff.; syntax of, 381-3.

N. T. authors: 28 f., 76-139. See Index of Quotations.

Nominative: nominativus pendens in the vernacular κοινή, 73; form as vocative, 264, 461; N. T. forms in, 267 f.; not the oldest case, 456; reason for, 457; predicate, 457 f.; sometimes unaltered, 458 f.; absolute, 459 f.; parenthetic, 460; in exclamations, 461; absolute, 1130.

Non-thematic present stems: see present tense.

Northwest Greek: remains of, in the κοινή, 53; influence of, 61, 63; on the N. T., 82, 266, passim.

Nouns: root-nouns, 145; substantive and adjective, 246; verbal, ch. XX; negatives with, 1163 f., 1172.

Number: in substantives, 251 f.; concord in, 403-9 (subject and predicate 403-7, substantive and adjective 407 f., representative singular 408, idiomatic plural in nouns 408, idiomatic singular in nouns 409, special instances 409); adjective and substantive, 654 f.; οὗτος, 704; ἐκείνος, 708; ὁς, 714; ὁστίς, 729; ὁδός, 731.

Numerals: declension of, 281-4 (origin of 281, different functions of 281, cardinals 281-3, ordinals 283 f., distributives 284, proportionals 284, adverbs 284); syntax of, 671-5 (εἰς and πρῶτος 671 f., simplification of the 'teens 672, inclusive ordinal 672, distributives 673, cardinal ἐπτά, 673 f., substantive not expressed 674, adverbs with 674, εἰς as indefinite article 674 f., εἰς-τίς 675, distributive use of εἰς 675); τίς with, 742; article with ordinals, 793 f.

Object of verb: see case.

Object-clauses: see hypotaxis.

Oblique cases: 247. See cases.


Onomatopoetic: 1201.

Optative: origin of form, 320, 325-7; perfect, 360 f., 907 f.; use of aorist, 854 f.; future, 876; present, 889 f.; opt. and subj., 925 f.; history of, 935 f.; significance, 936 f.; three uses, 937-40 (futuristic or potential 937-9, volitive 939 f., deliberative 940); as imper., 943; in indirect dis-
course, 1030 f., 1043 f.; negative with, 1161, 1170.

Oratio obliqua: see indirect discourse.

Oratio recta: see direct discourse.

Oratio variata: 440-3 (distinctive from anacoluthon 441 f., heterogeneous structure 441 f., participle in 442, exchange of direct and indirect discourse 442 f.).

Oratory: in Hebrews, 1198.

Ordinals: see number.

Orthography: in the vernacular κοινή, 71 f.; ch. VI, 176-245; the ancient literary spelling, 177 f.

Ostraca: 17-21; texts of, 22, 91, 191, 266, passim.

Oxyrhynchus papyri: see Index of Quotations.

P

Palatals: 216 f., 1210.

Papyrus: literature on, 17-22, 52, 56 f., 66 ff.; illustrate the vernacular κοινή, 69; illiteracy in, 70 f.; and the N. T. Gk., 80-3; agreeing with the unicals in orthography, 181; accidence and syntax of, 381; ad libitum through the book.

Parable: 1206 f.

Paragraph: discussion of, 241 f.; connection between, 444.

Paraleipsis: 1199.

Parallelism: 1199 f.


Parechthesis: 1201.

Parenthesis: 433-5; parenthetic nominative, 460.

Paronomasia: 1201.

Participle: in –υια, 256; forms of, 371-6 (name 371 f., verbal adjectives 372 f., with tense and voice 373 f., in periphrastic use 374-6); gender in, 412; case, 413; in clauses, 431 f.; in anacoluthon, 439 f.; in oratio variata, 442; ace. absolute, 490 f.; gen. absolute, 512-4; adverbs with, 546; as adverbs, 551; article with, 764 f., 777-9; use of aorist, 858-64; future, 877 f.; present, 891 f.; perfect, 909 f.; participle as imperative 944-6; causal, 966; temporal use, 979; purpose, 991; in indirect discourse, 1040-2; history of part., 1098-1100 (Sanskrit 1098, Homer’s time 1098, Attic period 1098 f., κοινή 1099, modern Gk. 1099 f.); significance, 1100-4 (originally an adjective 1100 f., addition of verbal functions 1101, double aspect of 1101, relation between part. and inf. 1101-3, method of treating 1103 f.); adjectival aspects of, 1104-10 (declension 1104, attributive, anarthrous, articular 1105-8, predicate 1108, as a substantive 1108 f., as an adverb 1109 f.); verbal aspects of, 1110-41 (voice 1110 f., tense 1111-9, timelessness 1111, aorist 1112-4, present 1115 f., perfect 1116-8, future 1118, cases 1119, supplementary 1119-24, periphrastic construction 1119 f., diminution of complementary 1120 f., with verbs of emotion 1121 f., indirect discourse 1122-4; circumstantial, participial clauses 1124-32 (general theory 1124, varieties of, time, manner, means, cause, purpose, condition, concession 1125-30, absolute nominative, accusative, genitive 1130-2); independent, 1132-5; coordination between, 1135 f.; οὐ and μή with, 1136-9, 1162 f., 1172; other particles with, 1139-41).

Particles: elision with, 207; with subordinate clauses, 950-1049; with participle, 1036-41; scope, 1142-4; intensive or emphatic, 1144-55; negative, 1155-75; interrogative, 1175-7; conjunctions, 1177-93 (paratactic, 1177-92, hypotactic 1192 f.); interjections, 1193.

Partitive: apposition, 399, 746; genitive, 502, 519; ablative, 519; use of ἐκ, 599; with ἐκαστος, 746.

Passive: supplanting middle, 333 f.; endings, 340 f.; future, second and
first, 356 f.; perfect, 359; σ in aorist, 362; with accusative, 484-6; origin of, 814 f.; significance of, 815; intransitive or transitive, 815 f.; syntax of aorist, 816 ff.; passive "deponents," 817 f.; future, 818-20; agent with, 820; impersonal construction, 820.

**Past perfect**: relation of aorist to, 837-40; double idea, 903; a luxury in Greek, 903 f.; intensive, 904; extensive, 904 f.; of broken continuity, 905 f.; in conditional sentences, 906; periphrastic, ἐκεῖμην, 906; augment in, 1211 f.

**Patronymics**: 155.


**Perfect, future**: see future perfect.

**Perfect, past**: see past perfect.

**Perfect, present**: of -μι verbs, 319 f.; imperative, 330; conjugation of, 359-62 (name 359, original perfect 359 f., κ perfect 358 f., aspirated 359, middle and passive 359, decay of perfect forms 359 f., in subjunctive, optative, imperative 360, indicative 360-2, σ in middle and passive 362); reduplication in, 363-5; completed state, 823 f.; relation of aorist to, 843-5; present as perfect, 881; perfect as present, 881; idea of, 892-4 (present, intensive, extensive, time); present perfect indicative, 894-903 (intensive 894 f., extensive 895 f., of broken continuity 896, dramatic historical 896 f., gnomic 897, in indirect discourse 897 f., futuristic 898, "aoristic" present perfect 898-902, periphrastic 902 f.); subj. and opt., 907 f.; infinitive, 908 f. (indirect discourse 908 f., not indirect disc., subject or object, preposition 909); participle, 909 f. and 1116-8 (meaning, time, various uses, periphrastic).

"*Perfective*": use of prepositions,

563 f.; ἀπό, 576 f.; διά, 581 f.; 596 f.; ἐπί, 600; κατά, 606; παρά, 613; περί, 617; πρός, 623; σύν, 627 f.; ὑπέρ 629; "perfective" and "imperfective," 826-8.

**Pergamum**: a centre of culture, 56 ff., 61, 63, 66, 75, 111, 208, 223, *passim*.

**Period**: use of, 242 f.

**Periodic structure**: 432 f., 1200.

**Periods of N. T. grammatical study**: 3-7.

**Periods of the Greek language**: 43 f.

**Periphrasis**: with participle, 330, 357, 374-6, 826, 878, 887 f., 889, 906, 1119 f.

**Persian**: words in N. T., 111.

**Person**: concord in, 402 f., 712; change in ind. disc., 1028 f.

**Person-endings**: 329, 335; active, 335-9.

**Personal construction**: with adjective, 657 f.; with inf., 1085 f.

**Personal equation**: in the κοινή, 69 ff., 179.

**Personal pronouns**: question of αὐτῶ, 226; inflection of, 286 f.; nominative, 676-80 (emphasis in 676, first 677 f., second 678, third 679 f.); oblique cases, 680-2 (originally reflexive 680 f., αὐτῶ, 681, genitive for possessive 681, enclitic forms 681 f.); frequency of, 682 f.; redundant, 683; according to sense, 683 f.; repetition of substantive, 684.

**Peter**: peculiarities of, 125-7. See Index of Quotations.

**Philo**: see Index of Quotations.

**Philology**: see comparative grammar.

**Phocian**: 266.

**Phoenician**: words in N. T., 111, 182, 209, *passim*.

**Phonetics**: in the vernacular κοινή, 71 f.; ch. VI, 177-245.

**Phrygia**: old dialect of, 67.

**Pindar**: see Index of Quotations.

**Pindaric construction**: 405.

**Plato**: see Index of Quotations.

**Play on words** : 1201.
INDEX OF SUBJECTS

Pleonasm: in pronouns, 683; ou, 1164, 1205.

Pluperfect: see past perfect.

Plural: 251. See number.

Plutarch: see Index of Quotations.

Poetry: see rhythm.

Point-action: see punctiliar.

Polybius: see Index of Quotations.

Polysyndeton: 1194.

Pompeian: 186, passim.

Pontic infinitive: 1056, 1063.

Position: of words, 417-25 (freedom 417, predicate 417, emphasis 417 f., minor words in 418 f., euphony and rhythm 419-23, prolepsis 423, hysteron proteron 423, hyperbaton 423 f., postpositives 424 f., fluctuating words 424 f., order of clauses in compound sentences 425); of genitive, 502 f.; of article with attributive, 776-89; with predicate, 789 f.

Positive: adjective, 276, 659-61.

Possessive pronouns: inflection of, 288 f.; article as, 684; only first and second in N. T., 684; emphasis, 684 f.; with article, 685; possessive and genitive, 685; objective use, 685; instead of reflexive, 685; article as, 769 f.; article with, 770.

Postpositive: 424; some prepositions, 553.

Potential: imperfect, 885-7; opt., 937-9.

Predicate: essential part of sentence, 390 f.; only predicate, 390 f.; verb not the only, 394 f.; copula not essential, 395 f.; one of the radiating foci, 396 f.; expansion of, 400 f. (predicate in wider sense 400, inf. and part. 400, relation between predicate and substantive 400, pronoun 400, adjective 401, adverb 401, prepositions 401, negative particles 401, subordinate clauses 401, apposition and looser amplifications 401); agreeing with subject, 403-6; position, 417; pred. nominative, 457 f.; vocative in, 464 f.; adjective, 655 f.; nouns with article, 767-9; article with, 789 f., 794; participle, 1108.

Prefixes: 146; inseparable, 161-3.

Pregnant construction: 525, 548, 584 f., 591-3.

Prepositional adverbs: new ones, 169 f.

Prepositions: double in composition, 160, 165; adverbs, 301; encroachment on cases, 450-3; accusative with, 491; genitive with, 505; effect of compound prep.s. on case, 511 f., 542 f.; with ablative, 516 f.; with locative, 524 f.; with instrumental, 534 f.; with dative, 537 f.; phrases, 550 f.; ch. XIII, 553-649; name, 553 f. (some postpositive 553, original use not with verbs 553, explanation 553 f.); origin of, 554 f. (originally adverbs 554, reason for use of 554, varying history 555); growth in use of, 555-7 (once none 555, still adverbs in Homer 555, decreasing use as adverbs 555 f., Semitic influence in N. T. 556 f., modern Greek 557); in composition with verbs, 557-65 (not the main function 557 f., prep. alone 558, increasing use 558, repetition after verb 559 f., different preposition after verb 560 f., second preposition not necessary 562 f., dropped with second verb 563, intensive or perfective 563 f., double compounds 565); repetition and variation of, 565-7 (same prep. with different case 565, repetition with several nouns 566, repetition with the relative 566 f., 721, condensation by variation 567); functions of, with cases, 567-71 (case before prep. 567, notion of dimension 567, original force of the case 567 f., groundmeaning of the prep. 568, oblique cases alone with 568, original freedom 568 f., no adequate division by cases 569, situation in N. T. 569 f.: with one case, with two, with three, one with four, each prep. in a case 570 f.); "proper"
prepositions in N. T., 571-636; ἀνα, 571 f.; ἀντί, 572-4; ἀπό, 574-80 (original significance 575 f., meaning "back" 576 f., "translation-Hebraism" in φοβεῖσθαι ἀπό 577, comparison with ἐκ 577 f., comparison with παρά. 578 f., compared with ἀπό 579 f.); διά, 580-4 (root-idea 580, by twos or between 580 f., passing between or through 581 ff., because of 583 f.); ἐν, 584-91 (old use with accusative or locative ablative 584 f., older than εἰς 585 f., place 586, time 586 f., among 587, in the case of 587 f., as a dative 588, accompanying circumstance 588, amounting to 589, instrumental use of 589-91); εἰς, 591-6 (original static use 591-3, with verbs of motion 593 f., time 594, like a dative 594, aim or purpose 594 f., predicative use 595 f., compared with ἐπί, παρά and πρός 596); ἐκ, 596-600 (meaning 596, in composition 596 f., place 597, time 597, separation 597 f., origin or source 598 f., participial use of 599, ἐκ and ἐν, 599 f.); bri, 600-5 (ground-meaning 600, in composition 600, frequency in N. T. 600 f., with the accus. 601 f., with the gen. 602-4, with the loc. 604 f., the true dative 605); κατά, 605-9 (root-meaning 605 f., distributive sense 606, in composition 606, with ablative 606 f., with genitive 607, with accusative 607-9); peri, 609-12 (root-meaning 609, in composition 609 f., loss of locative use 610, with genitive 610-2, with accusative 612); παρά, 612-6 (significance 612, compared with πρός 613, in composition 613, with the locative 614 f., with the ablative 614 f., with the accusative 615 f.); περί, 616-20 (root-meaning 617, in composition 617, originally with four cases 617, with the ablative 617 f., with the genitive 618 f., with the accusative 619 f.); πρό, 620-2 (original meaning 620, in composition 620 f., cases used with 621, place 621, time 621 f., superiority 622); πρός, 622-6 (meaning 622 f., in composition 623, originally with five cases 623, with ablative 623 f., with the locative 624, with the accusative 624-6); σύν, 626-8 (meaning 626 f., history 627, in composition 627 f., N. T. usage 628); ὑπέρ, 628-33 (meaning 629, in composition 629, with genitive 629 f., with 630-2, with accusative 632 f.); ὑπό, 633-6 (meaning 633, in composition 633, cases once used with 634 f., with the accusative 635, with the ablative 635 f.); the "adverbial" or "improper" prepositions, 636 48 ( ἀμ ρύ 638, ἀνευ 638, ἄντικρυς 638, ἀντίπερα 638 f., ἀπέναντι 639, ἀπέρ 639, ἀχρις 639, ἐγγύς 639 f., ἐκτός 640, ἐμπρόσθεν 640, ἐναντίων 640, ἐνεκα 641, ἐντός 641, ἐνωπίων 641 f., ἐνώπιον 641 f., ὑπάρχων 642, ἐπέκειναι 642, ἐσω 642 f., ἐσχε 643, κατέναντι 643, κατευθύσιον 644, κυκλώθεν 644, κύκλω 644, μέσων 644, μεταξύ 645, μέχρι 645, ὑπισθεν 645, ὑπίσω 645, ὑψι 645 f., παραπλήσιον 646, παρεκτός 646, πέραν 646, πλήν 646, πλησίον 646, ὑπεράνω 646 f., ὑπερεκίναια 647, ὑπερεκπεριστού 647, ὑποκατω 647, χάριν 647, χωρίς 647 f.); compound prepositions, 648; positional circumlocutions, 648 f. (μέσων, ὄνομα, προσβολον, χείρ); adjectives of comparison with, 661, 667; article with, 766; effect on active voice, 800; with infinitive, 1068-75.

**Present tense**: 73, 119 f., 123, 145, 150, 203; of μι verbs, 311-9; classes of present stems, 350-3 (non-thematic reduplicated 350, non-thematic with -να and -νου 351, simple thematic 351, reduplicated thematic 351, thematic with suffix 351, 351-3, with σ dropped 353); relation of aorist to, 841-3; punctiliar (aoristic), 864-70 (specific 865 f., gnomic 866, historical pres-
ent 866-9, futuristic 869 f.); durative (linear) indicative, 879-82 (descriptive 879, progressive 879 f., iterative or customary 880, inchoative or conative 880, historical 880, deliberate 880 f., as perfect 881, perfect as present 881, futuristic 881 f.); durative subj. and opt., 889 f.; durative imperative, 890; durative infinitive, 890 f.; durative participle, 891 f. and 1115-6 (relative time 891, futuristic 891, descriptive 891, conative 892, antecedent time 892, indirect discourse 892, with the article 892, past action still in progress 892, "subsequent" 892, durable future 892).

Principal parts of important verbs in N. T.: 1212-20.

Proclitics: accent of, 235; rules for accent of, 1211.

Prodiorthosis: 1199.

"Profane Greek": 5, 89.

Prohibition: see imperative, aorist subj., future indicative, infinitive.

Prolepsis: 423.

Pronouns: 226, 234; declension of, 284-93 (idea of 284 f., antiquity of 285, pronominal roots 285 f., classification of 286-93); syntax of, ch. XV, 676-753; personal, 676-84; possessive, 684 f.; intensive and identical, 685-7; reflexive, 687-92; reciprocal, 692 f.; demonstrative, 693-710; relative, 710-35; interrogative, 735-41; indefinite, 741-4; alternative or distributive, 744-50; negative, 750-3.

Pronunciation: 71 f., 236-41.

Proper names: abbreviated, 171-3, 184, 205; doubling of consonants in Hebrew and Aramaic, 214 f.; accent of, 235; foreign names, 235 f.; mixed declension of, 263; in third decl., 269 f.; article with, 759 ff., 791, passim.

"Proper" prepositions: 554, 636 f.

Proper names: 171-3, 184, 205; doubling of consonants in Hebrew and Aramaic, 214 f.; accent of, 235; foreign names, 235 f.; mixed declension of, 263; in third decl., 269 f.; article with, 759 ff., 791, passim.

Prothetic vowels: 205 f., 1209.

Psilosis: 191, 222-5.

Psychological treatment of grammar: 32.

Ptolemaic: 210, 220, 256, passim.

Pun: 1201.

Punctiliar action: 823 f., 830-79 (aorist 831-64, present 864-70, future 870-9).


Purists: 3, 76 ff., 88, 90 f., 160, passim.

Purpose: see final clauses.

Qualitative use of anarthrous nouns: see article.

Questions: "ο" in direct, 725; 5 in indirect, 725 f.; "οστι" direct 729 f., indirect 730 f.; "οσο" 731; "οσο" 733; see direct discourse, indirect discourse, interrogative pronouns, interrogative particles, mode; indirect, 1043-6; deliberative, 1046; single, 1175-7; double, 1177; particles in direct, 1175 f.; indirect, 1176 f.

Quotations in 0. T.: 206, 242 f.

Reciprocal pronouns: inflection of, 292 f.; reflexive as, 690; syntax of, 692 f.

Recitative "οτι": 1027 f.; see direct discourse.

Redundance: see pleonasm.


Reflexive pronouns: inflection of, 287 f.; personal originally so, 680 f., 685; distinctive use, 687 f.; no nominative, 688; indirect, 688; in
singular, 688 f.; in plural, 689 f.; article with, 690; in reciprocal sense, 690; with middle voice, 690 f., 811; use of ἵστος, 691 f.; with active voice, 802.

Relative pronouns: inflection of, 290 f.; inverse attraction, 488; attraction to genitive, 512; attraction to ablative, 519 f.; repetition of prepositions with, 566 f.; list in the N. T., 710 f.; name, 711; bond between clauses, 711; ὃς, 711-26 (in Homer 711, comparison with other relatives 711 f., with any person 712, gender 712 ff., number 714, case 714-9, absence of antecedent 719 ff., prepositions with antecedent and relative 721, phrases 721 f., pleonastic antecedent 722 f., repetition of ὃς 723 f., consecutive idea 724, causal 724 f., direct questions 725, indirect questions 725 f., idiom ὁδέις ἐστιν ὃς 726); ὅστις 726-31 (varied uses 726, distinction between ὃς and ὅστις 726 f., indefinite use 727, definite exx. 727 f., = value of ὃς 728, case 728 f., number 729, direct questions 729 f., indirect 730 f.); ὁδὸς, 731 f. (relation to ὃς 731, incorporation 731, indirect question 731, number 731, ὁδὸν τέ ἐστιν 732); ὁποίος, 732 (qualitative, double office, correlative); ὅσος, 732 f. (quantitative, antecedent, attraction, incorporation, repetition, with ὅν, indirect question, comparison, adverbial); ἡλίκος, 733 f.; ὁ 734 f.; τίς as, 737 f.

Relative sentences: originally para-tactic, 953; most subordinate clauses relative in origin, 953 f.; usually adjectival, 955 f.; modes in, 955 f.; definite and indefinite, 956 f.; use of ὅν in, 957-9; special uses of, 960-2; negatives in, 962; causal, 965 f.; purpose, 989; subj. final, 996; consecutive, 1001.

Relative time: see tense.

Repetition: of substantive, 684; of ὃς, 723 f.; of ὅσος or, 733.

Result: see consecutive clauses.

Reuchlinian pronunciation: 240.

Revelation: see Apocalypse.

Rhetoric: figures of speech, 1194-1208.

Rhetorical questions: with the ind., 924; with the subj., 930; in Paul, 1198.

Rhythm: metrical passages so printed in W. H., 242; position as showing, 417-23; poetry, 421 f.

Roman Empire and the koinh: 74 f.

Romans: passim. See Index of Quotations.

Roots: in Sanskrit, 38; discussion of, 144-6; verb-root, 344 f.

Running style: 432 f.

S

Sahidic: 202, passim.

Sanskrit: the discovery of Sanskrit, 10, 36 f., 39 f., 47, 143, 145 f., 246-8; voice in, 798 f., ad libitum.

Second Epistle of Peter: passim. See Index of Quotations.

Second or o declension: 257, 259-63.

Semitic: 37, 88-108, 198, 205, 212, 225, 236, passim. See Aramaic and Hebrew.

Sentence, the: punctuation of, 242 f.; discussion of, ch. X, 390-445; the sentence and syntax, 390; sentence defined, 390-7 (complex conception 390, two essential parts 390 f., one-membered sentence 391, elliptical 391, only predicate 391-3, only subject 393 f., verb not the only predicate 394 f., copula not necessary 395 f., two radiating foci 396 f., varieties of the simple sentence 397); expansion of the subject, 397-400; expansion of the predicate, 400 f.; subordinate centres in the sentence, 402; concord in person, 402 f.; concord in number, 403-9; concord in gender, 410-3; concord in case, 413-6; position of words in, 417-25; compound sentences, 425-7; connection in sentences, 427-44
(single words 427, clauses 428-32, two kinds of style 432 f., parenthesis 433-5, anacoluthon 435-40, *oratio variata* 440-3, connection between sentences 443, between paragraphs 444, forecasts 444 f.); independent or paratactic, 914-50; subordinate or hypotactic, 950-1049.


**Sequence, rules of:** see indirect discourse.

**Simile:** 1206.

**Sinaiticus, Codex:** spelling of, 179, *passim*.

Singular: 251. See number.

Socrates: 75 f.

**Solecisms:** in the Apocalypse, 413-6.

**Sophocles:** see Index of Quotations.

**Sources for study of ΚΟΙΝΗ:** see ch. I and ΚΟΙΝΗ.

**Southeast dialects:** 211, *passim*.

**Spoken Greek:** see vernacular.

**Stoic:** grammarians, 143; dialectic, 1197.

**Style:** in Scripture, 87; two kinds of, 432 f.; in the N. T., 116-39, 1194-7. See individual peculiarities.

**Sub-final:** see final and consecutive.

**Subject:** essential part of sentence, 390 f.; ellipsis of, 391; only subject used, 393 f.; one of the radializing foci, 396 f.; expansion of the subject, 397-400 (idea-words and form-words 397, concord and government 397 f., group around 398-400, subordinate clause 398, with the article 398, the adverb 398, the adjective 398, the substantive in an oblique case 398, or in apposition 398-400); subject and predicate as to concord, 403-7 (two conflicting principles 403, neuter plural and singular verb 403 f., collective substantives 404 f., singular verb with first subject 405 f., literary plural 406 f.); suspended, 436 f.

**Subjective:** see genitive case, possessive pronoun and middle voice.

**Subjunctive:** origin of form, 320, 323-5; perfect, 360 f., 907 f.; use of aorist, 848-54; future, 876; present, 889 f.; relation to other modes, 924 ff. (aor. subj. and fut. ind., subj. and imper., subj. and opt.); original significance of, 926-8; threefold usage, 928-35 (futuristic 928 ff., volitive 930-4, deliberative 934 f.); as imper., 943; negative with, 1160 f., 1169 f.

**Subordinate sentences:** see hypotaxis.

**Subsequent action in participle:** see participle.

**Substantives:** root-substantives, 145; with suffixes, 150-7 (primitive 150 f., derivative 151-7: from verbs 151-4, from substantives 154-6, from adjectives 156 f.); compound, 161-8 (inseparable prefixes, 161 f.; agglutinative 165-8); declension of, 246-70; number in, 251 f.; gender in substantives, 252-4; with genitive, 495-503; with ablative, 514 f.; with locative, 524; with dative, 536 f.; appositional use of, 651 f.; adjectival as, 652-4; agreement of adjective with, 654 f.; substantival aspects of infinitive, 1058-79; with inf., 1075 f.; participle as, 1108 f.; negatives with, 1163 f.

**Suffixes:** 146; participle without, 663.

**Superlative:** forms, 278-81; positive as, 660 f.; displaced by comparative 667-9; syntax of, 669-71.

**Supplementary:** see participle.

**Syncope:** 203 f.

**Synonyms:** in Greek words, 175 f.; phrases, 1200 f.
Syntax: in the vernacular κοινή, 73 f.; in the N. T., 82 f.; of LXX, 100; part III, 379-1208; meaning of syntax, ch. LX, 379-89 (backwardness in study of 379-81, N. T. limitations 381-3, advance by Delbruck 383 f., province of 384-7, the word 384 f., construction of words and clauses 385 f., historical 386, irregularities 386 f., method of this grammar 387-9, principles 387, original significance 387, form and function 387 f., development 388, context 388 f., translation 389, limits 389); the sentence and syntax, 390.

Syriac versions: passim.


T

Tarsus: new centre of culture, 67; Paul learning Greek in, 239.

Temporal clauses: kin to relative, 970 f.; conjunctions meaning when, 971-4; group meaning until, 974-7; some nominal and prepositional phrases, 977 f.; use of inf., 978 f., 1091 f.; participle, 979, 1125 f.

Tenses: of -μι verbs in the N. T., 307-20; conjugation of, 343-68 (term tense 343 f., confusion in names 344, verb-root 344 f., aorist 345-50, present 350-3, future 353-7, perfect 359-62, reduplication 362-5, augment 365-8); infinitive, 369 f., 1080-2; participle, 373 ff., 1119-9; periphrastic tenses in N. T., 374-6; syntax of, ch. XVIII, 821-910; complexity of subject, 821-30 (Greek and Germanic tenses 821, influence of Latin on Greek grammarians 822, Hebrew influence 822, gradual growth of Greek tenses 822, "Aktionsart" of the verb-stem 823, three kinds of action 824, time-element 824 f., faulty nomenclature 825, analytic tendency (periphrasis) 826, "perfective" use of prepositions 826-8, Aktionsart with each tense 828 f., interchange of tenses 829 f.; punctilious action, 830-79 (aorist 830-64, present 864-70, future 870-9); dative (linear), 879-92 (indicative, present, imperfect, future 879-89, subj. and opt. 889 f., imperative 890, infinitive 890 f., participle 891 f.); perfected state, 892-910 (idea of perfect 892-4, indicative, present perfect, past perfect, future perfect 892-907, subj. and opt. 907 f., imperative 908, infinitive 908, participle 909 f.); tenses of imperative, 950; change in ind. discourse, 1029 f.

Textual criticism: passim.

Textus receptus: 199, 213, 217, passim.

Thematic vowel: see present tense.

Thessalian: 192, 202, passim.

Third declension: 258, 263-9.

Thucydides: 265, passim. See Index of Quotations.

Time: cases used, 460-527 f., (nom. 460, acc. 469-71, gen. 495, locative 522 f., instrumental 527 f.); δοξά, 580 ff.; έν, 586 f.; έσι, 594; έκ, 597; πρό, 621 f.; element in tense, 824 f., 894; temporal clauses, 970-9; timelessness of participle, 1111.

Transitive verbs: 330 f.; with accusative, 471-7; with genitive, etc., 506 ff.; transitiveness and voice, 797 f., 799 f., 806, 815 f.

Translation Greek: in the LXX and portions of Gospels and Acts, 89 f., 91 f., 93, 100 ff.

Transliteration of Semitic words: 225.

U

Uncials: 179-81, 186, 189, 192 f., 195, 200, 202, ad libitum.

Uncontracted vowels: see contraction.

Unfulfilled condition: see conditional sentences.
Unification of Greek dialects in the modern koinê: 53-4; finally complete, 67.

Universal language: the Greek, 49 f.; Panhellenic, 49; origin of, 53 f.; march towards universalism, 54; a real world-speech, 54-56; limitations in, 64.

V

Vase-inscriptions: see inscriptions.

Vaticanus, Codex: 179, passim.


Verbal nouns: eh. XX, 1050-1141; kinship between infinitive and participle, 1050 f.; the infinitive, 1051-95; the participle, 1098-1141.

Verbs: root-verbs, 145; with formative suffixes, 146-50 (primitive verbs 146 f., secondary verbs 147-50); compound verbs, 161-5 (with inseparable prefixes 161 f., agglutination or juxtaposition 163-5); conjugation of, 303-76 (difficulty of the subject 303, nature of the verb, relation to noun 303 f., meaning of 304, pure and hybrid 304, survival of —μι verbs, cross division 306, oldest verbs 306, gradual disappearance 306, second aorists 307-11, presents 311-9, perfects 319 f., modes 320-30, voices 330-43, tenses 343-68, infinitive 368-71, participle 371-6); accusative with, 471-86; genitive with, 505-11; ablative with, 517-20; dative with, 538-43; adjectival use, 551 f.; compounded with prepositions, 557-65; syntax of voice, ch. XVII, 797-820; syntax of tense, 821-910; syntax of mode, 911-1049; inf. with, 1077 f.; verbal aspects of inf., 1079-95; verbal aspects of participle, 1110-41; list of important verbs in N. T., 1212-20; of hindering, 1061,1089,1094.

Vernacular: 17 f., 22 f., 34 ff., 44; "vulgar " Greek, 50; vernacular koinê, 60-73; vernacular Attic, 60-2; N. T. chiefly in the vernacular koinê, 76-83; vernacular writers in the N. T., 76; dialect-coloured, 178 f.; indifferent to hiatus, 207; ad libitum.

Verner's law: 11, footnote.

Verses: see rhythm.

Vocabulary: 65 f.; in the vernacular koinê, 72, 80-3, 87, passim.

Vocative: 247; in first declension, 256; in second declension, 261; in third decl., 264; nominative form, 264, 461; nature of, 461; various devices 462 f.; use of ὁ, 463 f.; adjectives with, 464; apposition to, 464; in predicate, 464 f.; article with, 465 f.

Voice: conjugation of, 330-43 (transitive and intransitive 330 f., names of voices 331, relative age of 332, "deponent " 332 f., passive supplanting middle 333 f., personal endings 335, cross divisions 335, active endings 335-9, middle endings 339 f., passive endings 340 f., contract verbs 341-3); with infinitive, 369 f., 1079 f.; with participle, 373 f., 1110 f.; syntax of, ch. XVII, 797-820; point of view, 797-9 (distinction between voice and transitivity 797 f., meaning of voice 798, names of the voices 798, history of 798, help from Sanskrit 798 f., defective verbs 799); syntax of active, 799-803; middle, 803-14; passive, 814-20.

Voltive: future, 874 f.; subj., 930-4; opt., 939 f.

Vowels: original of vowel symbols, 178; the original Greek vowels, 181 f.; vowel changes, 181-203 (changes with ι 182-6, with ο 186-91, with η 191-5, with τ 195-9, with ω 199-201, with υ 201 f.; with ω 202 f.); contraction and syncope, 203 f.; diphthongs and diaeresis, 204 f.; aphaeresis and prothetic vowels, 205 f.; elision, 206–8; cra
sis, 208 f.; shortening stem-vowels, 230 f.

**Vulgate:** *passim.*

**W**

**Wales bilingualism in:** in 30.

**Weltsprache:** 44 f., 49-56, or 64, 79. *passim.* See universal or *κοινή*

**Western text** (*δ*-text): 180, 214, 216, 218 f., 253, 260, *ad libitum.*

**Wish:** mode and tense in impossible wishes, 923; ways of expressing, 1003 f.

**Word-formation:** see formation of words.

**Words:** number in the N. T., 81, 87, 115; relation of words in origin, 145; with formative suffixes, 146-60; composita, 160-71; history of, 173 f.; kinship of Greek, 174 f.; contrasts in, 175 f.; punctuation of, 243 f.; idea-words and form-words, 397; position of; in sentence, 417–25; connection between, 427; word relations, 449; glory of the words of the N. T., 1207 f.

**World-language:** see *κοινή.*

**X**

**Xenophon,** forerunner of the *κοινή* 55.

**Zeugma:** 1200 f.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

Only words are here given which are discussed, not the words in the lists of examples, many thousands of which are given in the text. See Index of Quotations.

A

\(\alpha\)- (\(\alpha\nu\)-): prefix, 161 f., 168, 170, 273, 516 1155.
\(\alpha\)-: collective or intensive, 161.
\(\alpha\): vowel, 181 f.

-\(\alpha\): voc. ending, 151, 256; vowel-changes with, 182-6, 191, 274, 341 f., 326; Doric gen. abl., 254 f.; stems in, 258, 267; acc. ending, 264 f.; imper. ending, 337; aor. ending, 305, 337-9, 348 f.; 2d perf. in, 358, 801; adverbs in, 526; prothetic, 1209.

-\(\alpha\): dat. ending, 249, 256.

\(\alpha\)ba\(\delta\)\(\delta\)\(\omega\): 95.

\(\alpha\)b\(\beta\)\(\beta\): 26, 105, 131, 236; case, 461.

\(\alpha\)-\(\beta\)\(\rho\)\(\rho\): 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\theta\)-\(\epsilon\)\(\gamma\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omega\): 163, 204.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\theta\)-\(\pi\)\(\iota\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omega\): 163.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\theta\)-\(\pi\)\(\iota\)\(\iota\): 166, 168.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\delta\): meaning, 176, 276, 653, 661; reading, 201; forms, 273.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\theta\)\(\omega\)\(u\)\(\rho\)\(\gamma\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omega\): 163, 204.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\theta\)-\(\sigma\)\(\nu\)\(\omega\)\(\nu\) reading, 201.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\lambda\)\(\lambda\)\(\lambda\)\(\omega\): constr., 509; formation, 150; forms, 1212.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\nu\)\(\alpha\)\(\kappa\)\(\tau\)\(\epsilon\)\(\tau\): c. \(\dot{o}\)\(\iota\) 965; c. part., 1122.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\pi\)\(\alpha\)\(\omega\): constr., 478, 482; use, 1078, 1201.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\pi\)\(\tau\): in koi\(\eta\), 152; gen. use, 14, 65, 80, 115, 499; and art., 758; meaning, 115, 768.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\pi\)\(\tau\)\(\tau\): discussed, 372, 1096.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\): 254, 411, 759, 766.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\alpha\)\(\rho\)\(\alpha\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omicron\)\(\epsilon\): 111.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\gamma\)\(\lambda\)\(\lambda\)\(\lambda\)\(\iota\): \(\dot{o}\)\(\iota\) with, 1033.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\gamma\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\lambda\): compounds and forms of, 338, 349, 1212.

\(\alpha\)-\(\gamma\)\(\nu\)\(\e\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\alpha\)\(\omega\): 97, 115, 125, 131, 147; constr., 855, 1003; part., 891.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\sigma\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 151.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\sigma\): accent, 232; use, 115, 125, 777.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 125.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 65, 156.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\sigma\): 151, 280.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\omicron\): 151, 280.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\omicron\): 153, 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\iota\)\(\omicron\): 153, 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\nu\): 65, 156.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\nu\)\(\mu\): compounds and forms of, 1212. See κατ-\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\nu\)\(\mu\).

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): constr., 483, 510.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): spelling, 185.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\rho\)-\(\epsilon\)\(\lambda\)\(\lambda\)\(i\): 161, 166, 168.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\): compounds and forms, 299, 302, 328, 330, 346 (\(\tilde{\eta}\)\(\gamma\)\(a\)\(\gamma\)\(o\)\(u\)), 348, 351, 363 (\(\tilde{\eta}\)\(\gamma\)\(a\)\(\gamma\)\(o\)\(u\)), 368 (\(\tilde{\eta}\)\(\gamma\)\(a\)\(\gamma\)\(o\)\(u\)), 391, 428, 430, 1212; –\(\tilde{\eta}\)\(\alpha\), 348; constr., 477; voice of, 330, 799 f.; meaning, 865; transitive and intransitive, 799, 800; use, 871, 931; part., 891; use of \(\acute{\alpha}\)\(\gamma\), 124, 299, 302, 327, 328, 330, 391, 428, 799, 941, 949.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\omega\): 326.

\(\alpha\)\(\gamma\)\(\na\)\(\nu\)\(\nu\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\) \(\acute{\alpha}\)\(\gamma\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 478.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\ell\)\(\phi\): 80, 81, 115.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\ell\)\(\phi\)\(\omicron\): 154.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\iota\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 156, 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\iota\)\(\kappa\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 124, 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\iota\)\(\alpha\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 161.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\iota\)\(\alpha\)\(\epsilon\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\)\(\omicron\): 170, 295.

\(\alpha\)\(\delta\)\(\iota\)\(\alpha\)\(\phi\): 161.
άδικα: voice of, 472, 808, 816; use, 878, 881, 889; c. two acc., 482, 484.
-άδος: 62.
'Αδραμυτηρός: spelling, 210, 223.
άδυνατός: 372.
-άδυν: verb ending, 147 bis and n., 151.
αεί: form, 185, 295; use, 300.
άθανασία: 130.
άθέμιτος: 161; c. inf., 1084.
άθεσμος: 65, 161.
άθετών: 130, 161.
άθέτησις: 65, 80, 161.
Αθήνησι: case of, 249.
αι: c. augment, 367.
αί: =ae, 238; =ε, 186, 239; vowel changes, 186, 204, 327, 367.
αι: dat. ending, 249, 370, 542; inf. ending, 249, 370, 542, 1001, 1051 ff., 1067; opt. ending, 327, 335.
αιών: form, 190.
αιδειγ: form, 272.
αιματεχυσία: 166.
–αιών: verb ending, 147, 150, 349, 352.
αιρητιζ: 149.
αιρέω: voice of, 806, 809 f.; compounds and forms of, 339 (–ειλαν), 1212.
αιρόμενος: use, 1097.
αιρώ: class, 352; fut., 356; transitive, 799; voice of, 799; constr., 855 f., 1097; compounds and forms of, 1212.
–αιρώ: verbs in, 349, 352.
-αις: dat. ending, 249.
αιρεθάνουμαι: 131; constr., 509; in or. obl., 1040; form of, 1212.
αιρηθήριον: 132, 171.
αιρηχρία: 156.
αιρεχρόν έστιν: c. inf., 1084.
αιρεχρότης: 130.
αιρεχρύνουμαι: intransitive, 473; use, 1102; and part., 1122.
αιτέω: constr., 480, 482, 850, 857, 1085; voice of, 805, 814, 820.
αιτιατική: name of acc., 466.
αιτίωμα: 153.
αιχμαλωτεύω: 148, 479.
αιχμαλωτικώς: 149.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

άλλογένης: 80, 168.
άλλομαι: compounds and forms of, 1212.
άλλος: use, 292 f., 692; in comparison, 662; c. ές, 671; c. art., 695, 775 f.; discussed, 746 ff.; and ἔτερος, 749; antithetic, 750.
άλλοτρι(o)επίσκοπος: 65, 82, 165, 166, 204.
άλλος: and άλλος, 748.
άλογος: form, 273.
άμ: root of, 145.
άμα: origin, 249; num. adv., 284, 295, –an: ending, 73, 155, 257; verb ending, 336, 338; for –ασι, 73; verb-stem in, 352; acc. s. in 3d decl., 67, 68, 82, 97.
–αν: inf. ending, 194, 343.
άνα: cases with, 451, 491, 524, 569 f.; in comp., 163, 166, 168, 170, 476, 561, 571; use, 556; in mod. Gk., case-form, 570; discussed, 571 f.; with άπα, 575, with εἰς, 673; in prepositional phrases, 791.
–ανα: in verbs, 349, 352.
άναβαίνω: forms, 328.
άναβάλλω: use, 863.
άνάβλεψις: 151.
άνάγαγον: 185, 260.
άνεγνανάο: 65.
άνεγνωσκόν: άτι with, 1032.
άναγκάζω: constr., 857.
άναγκαστώς: 126.
άνάγκη: c. inf., 1084.
άναζην: 80, 130, 147, 163.
άναθαλλω: forms of, 348, 1212; constr., 476.
άναθεματίζω: 149.
άνακαίνων: 65, 149, 152.
άνακινωσίς: 152.
άνάκειμαι: 66.
άνακεφαλαίον: voice of, 809.
άνακλίνω: voice of, 66, 819.
άναλίσκω: compounds and forms, 1212.
άναλω: 82, 130.
άναμένω: c. acc., 475.
άναμιμήσκω: constr., 482, 509.
άνα·μίξ: fixed case, 294, 460.
άνάξιος: constr., 504.
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

αναπαυω: voice of, 807; use, 873.
αναπηπτω: forms, 66, 338; c. acc., 486.
αναστατω: 80, 149, 163.
αναστρέφωμαι: 80.
αναστροφη: 126, 166.
ανατρέψω εἰς: 481.
αναφαίων: constr., 486; voice of, 817.
αναφέρω: 80.
ανεκδήγητος: 82, 162.
ανεκδάλητος: use, 1096.
ανεμίζω: 149.
ανενέγκαι: form, 338.
ανεξεραύνητος: 82, 162.
ανεψις: use, 900 f.
ανετάως: 163.
ανεθ: use, 301, 553, 638.
ανέχοιμαι: c. augment, 368; constr., 508; voice of, 807; c. acc., 486; c. part., 1121.
ανεψις: 162.
αντίκω: use, 886.
ανθ' ὄν: 208, 223, 556, 574, 963.
ανθρωπάρεσκος: 65, 168 bis
ανθρωπος: use 120.
ανίστημι: forms, 310, 328
ανώγω: c. augment, 368; compounds and forms of, 82, 349, 364, 368, 371, 895, 1212; intransitive, 800.
ανταναλήρως: 160, 165.
ανταπόδομαι: 151.
αντάω: compounds and forms, 1213.
αντί: elision, 208, 223; cases with, 451, 569 f.; case-form, 524, 570; in comp., 163, 165, 170, 542, 563, 572; use, 556; in mod. Gk., 557; in condensation, 567; αντίς in mod. Gk., 570; discussed, 572-4; ανθ' ὄν, 208, 223, 556, 574, 696, 714, 722, 724, 953, 962-3; c. πρό, 620; and ὑπέρ, 630; and αντίσεω, 639; base of compound prepositions, 639; c. ὄν causal, 963; c. inf., 1060, 1069 f. 
αντικαθιστημ: 133.
αντικριμ: use, 221, 231, 638.
αντιλαμβάνομαι: 131, 163.
αντιλέγοντες: reading, 1171.
αντιλέγω: meaning, 66; c. inf., 1035.
αντιλήπτωρ: 80.

άντιληψις: 80.
άντιλυτρον: 65, 166.
άντιμισθία: 115.
άντιπερα: use, 231, 638.
άντιτυπος: 115.
άντιχριστος: 115, 166.
άντιλημα: 153.
άντοφθαλμέω: 81, 164.
άνω: in adj., 160; use, 296; adv., 298, 300. 
–άνω: verbs in, 147, 316, 352. 
άνωθεν: 300.
άνωτερος: 160.
άξιος: constr., 658, 996; c. gen., 504; c. inf., 369, 996, 1077, 1079.
άξιόω: meaning, 828; use, 80, 577, 827, 866.
άξις: constr., 505.
–αος: equal to –ως, 267.
άπαγγέλω: in or. obl., 1032, 1036.
άπαγχοιμα: voice of, 807.
άπαις: form, 272.
άπαντας: use, 873; in mod. Gk., 138 n.
άπαντησις: 65, 152; c. ds, 91.
άπανωθεν: use, 637.
άπαξ: use, 284, 296, 300.
άπαρνέομαι: fut., 818, 819; voice of, 819; use, 873; in or. obl., 1036.
άπαξ: and art., 771 ff.
άπαγασμα: 153.
άπειπάμεθα: spelling, 338.
άπελπίζω: constr., 476; form, 164.
άπέναντι: use, 170 bis, 639, 644.
άπέρχομαι: use, 905.
άπέχω: meaning, 828; use, 80, 577, 827, 866.
άπλοος: use, 284.
από: anticipatory position, 110; elision, 208; cases with, 111, 469, 482, 534, 554, 568, 570; in adv. phrases, 297, 300, 548, 550; c. ὄν 135, 414, 459, 574 f.; "translation-Hebraism," 472; c. verbs, 511, 517 f., 559, 562, 566; for "partitive gen.," 515, 519; in comp., 164 f., 542, 563, 827 f.; frequency, 556; in mod. Gk., 138, 557; use, 561, 977 f.; in condensation, 567; c. αντί, 574; dis-
cussed, 574-80; and ἐκ, 596; and παρά, 613 f.; and πρός, 624; and ὑπό, 634; in prepositional phrases, 791; for agent, 820.

ἀπογραφή: formation, 151; meaning, 82.

ἀπογράφω: form, 164; voice of, 807, 809.

ἀποδείκνυμι: constr., 480, 481.

ἀποδίδωμι: voice of, 810.

ἀποδοχή: 151.

ἀπόθεσις: 125.

ἀποθεύσκω: constr., 479; meaning, 345, 827, 838, 845; use, 635, 869; voice of, 802, 815.

ἀποκαθίστημι: augment of, 73, 368.

ἀποκαλύψις: 152.

ἀποκαρδικία: 81, 166.

ἀποκαταλάσσω: 160, 165.

ἀποκατάστασις: 152.

ἀποκαταστάνει: reading, 316.

ἀποκόπτω: voice of, 809, 819.

ἀπόκριμα: 80.

ἀποκρίνομαι: "deponent," 66, 334; aor. pass., 334, 340; aor. pass. part., 1126; constr., 473, 484; c. πρός, 626; voice, 818; c. ὧν, 1036; c. inf., 1036.

ἀποκτέω: use, 635; pass. voice of, 802, 815; meaning, 827; forms, 352, 1213.

ἀποκτένων: 73, 82.

ἀπόλλυμι: 311; formation, 147; fut., 335; perf., 358, 363, 800; voice of, 800, 804; meaning of, 827 f.


ἀπολύω: voice of, 807, 809.

ἀπολύτρωσις: 115, 175.

ἀπονύστομα: voice of, 810.

ἀποπλέω: contract verb, 342.

ἀπορέομαι: intransitive, 472.

ἀποσκίασμα: 153.

ἀποστάσις: 65, 152.

ἀποστέλλω: forms, 336; use, 894, 896, 905.

ἀποστέρέω: constr., 472, 483; voice of, 808, 816.

ἀπόστολή: 115.

ἀπόστολος: meaning, 53 n., 65, 65 n., 115.

ἀποστρέφωμαι: and case, 472, 484.

ἀποτάσσομαι: 80.

ἀποτίθημι: voice of, 810.

ἀποτομώς: 170 bis.

ἀποφεύγω: constr., 476.

ἀπτω: compounds and forms, 353, 1213; ἀπτομα: constr., 508, 853; c. μή, 853; voice of, 806 f.

ἀπωθέομαι: voice of, 810.

ἀπώλεια: 115.

ἀρα: accent, 232; reading, 244; in interrogation, 916 f.; use, 1176.


-ἀρα: in verbs, 349, 352.

ἀραβών: spelling, 81, 105, 211 n., 212, 802, 815; meaning, 827 f.

ἀρεσκεία: 152, 231.

ἀρέσκω: constr., 479, 487; c. dat., 540; a. ἐνῷ πιον τινὸς, 94.

ἀρετή: 80, 101, 126 n., 148 n.

-ἀρισ: diminutive, 66.

ἀριστερά: 449.

ἀρκετός: 80.

ἀρκέω: forms, 210, 324; constr., 541; use, 889.

ἐρκέω: 210, 252.

Ἄρμα γενῶν: 95.

ἀρνέωμαι: in or. obl., 1035 f.; compounds and forms, 1213.

ἀροτριάω: 65, 150.

ἀροτριάω: 130, 151.

ἀρπάζω: compounds and forms, 349, 1213; ἡρπάγην, 82.

ἀρπάζω: use, 272.

ἀραβῶν: 81, 95, 111, 212.

ἀρρήτα: breathing, 212, 225.

ἀρσενοκόιτης: 166.

ἀρτι: use, 548, 1146; c. part., 1139.

ἀρτος: 115.


-ἀρχης: in comp., 231, 257 f.

ἀρχή: prefix, 161 f.


\[ \text{ἀρχερεύς: 115, 162.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀρχος: in comp., 257.} \]
\[ \text{ἀρχω: ἀρξέμενοι reading, 49; ἡρξατο redundant, 107; use, 1102, 1121,} \]
\[ \text{1126; c. inf., 1077-8, 1102; not} \]
\[ \text{used with part. in N. T., 1102,} \]
\[ \text{1121; ἀρξάμενος, 1126; and ellipsis,} \]
\[ \text{1203.} \]
\[ \text{άς: in mod. Gk., 430, 923, 931.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀς: ending, 138, 254, 256, 265, 267,} \]
\[ \text{337.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀς, – ἀς: in proper names, 172, 254} \]
\[ \text{and n.} \]
\[ \text{ασθένημα: 153.} \]
\[ \text{– αστ: ending (perf.), 336.} \]
\[ \text{'Ἀσια: c. art., 788.} \]
\[ \text{'Ἀσιάνος: 155 n.} \]
\[ \text{'Ἀσιάρχης: 80, 166.} \]
\[ \text{ἀπαξόμαι: constr., 80, 853, 862 f.} \]
\[ \text{ἀτημος: 80.} \]
\[ \text{ἀσπλως: 64, 162.} \]
\[ \text{ἀσσων: meaning, 665.} \]
\[ \text{ἀσώμετος: voice, 372; use, 1097.} \]
\[ \text{ἀσώμετος: voice, 372; use, 1097.} \]
\[ \text{ἀχημονέω: 147.} \]
\[ \text{– ατε: per. end., 308.} \]
\[ \text{ἀτευιξ: 149, 162.} \]
\[ \text{ἀτερ: use, 639.} \]
\[ \text{ἀτοπος: 80.} \]
\[ \text{ἀτός: in mod. Gk., 185.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀτος: ending, 277, 279 f.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀτω: per. end., 308.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀτωσαν: per. end., 308.} \]
\[ \text{αὐθεντέω: 80, 148, 164.} \]
\[ \text{αὐξάνω: constr., 478; trans., 799.} \]
\[ \text{αὕριον: form, 294.} \]
\[ \text{αὐτό: – in comp., 168.} \]
\[ \text{αὐτόθω: use, 296.} \]
\[ \text{αὐτομάτη: form, 273.} \]
\[ \text{αὐτός: in problem of ἀστου, 226, 232;} \]
\[ \text{intensive, 287, 399, 416; semi-} \]
\[ \text{demonstrative, 290, 686; gen.} \]
\[ \text{form, αὐτοῦ, adverbial, 298; posi-} \]
\[ \text{tion of gen., 503; 3d per. pro., 679,} \]
\[ \text{683 f.; use of αὐτοῦ, 681, 683; dis-} \]
\[ \text{cussed, 685-7, 709 f.; use, 688-90;} \]
\[ \text{καὶ αὐτός, ἐν, 122, 680; τὸ αὐτό, 487;} \]
\[ \text{ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό, 83, 602; αὐτή and αὐτή,} \]
\[ \text{232, 680; ὁ αὐτός "same," 290, 679,} \]
\[ \text{687, 770; αὐτός emphatic "he,"} \]
\[ \text{679, 416; αὐτός "himself," 680;} \]
\[ \text{αὐτός ὁ, 686, 709, 770; c. per. pro.,} \]
\[ \text{687; c. οὗτος, 686, 705; and ἐκεῖνος,} \]
\[ \text{707 f.; c. ὁς, 723; c. art., 770, 779;} \]
\[ \text{resumptive, 698; pleonastic, 722;} \]
\[ \text{in sense-figure, 1204.} \]
\[ \text{ἀυτός: question of, 226, 688 f.; use,} \]
\[ \text{232, 287, 289; feminine, 254.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφαιρέομαι: constr., 480, 483; voice of,} \]
\[ \text{819.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφεωτόν: 154.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφελότης: 156, 162.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφης: use, 82, 329, 430, 855 f., 931 f.,} \]
\[ \text{935.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφετής: 97.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφεώται: 63, 82, 342.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφήκα: 900.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφήκες: 135.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφίημι: forms of, 107, 315, 329, 337,} \]
\[ \text{342, 347; constr., 855 f.; use, 931;} \]
\[ \text{c. inf., 855-8; c. ἡν, 431; aor.,} \]
\[ \text{900.} \]
\[ \text{ἀπλάργυρος: 80, 162.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφίω: forms of, 315, 335.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφοράω: 132.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφωρων: voc. of, 463.} \]
\[ \text{ἀφυνόω: 149.} \]
\[ \text{– αχοθ: suffix, 296.} \]
\[ \text{ἀχρι: with final 3, 221, 296; use, 639,} \]
\[ \text{954, 974; in prepositional phrases,} \]
\[ \text{791; c. ἡν, 975; c. inf., 1074.} \]
\[ \text{– ἀω: confused with – ἐω, 73, 82, 341;} \]
\[ \text{verbs in, 147 ff., 184, 203, 316;} \]
\[ \text{341 ff., 351.} \]

**B**

\[ β: 209; = ν, 238, 240; in mod. Gk.,} \]
\[ 217; verb root in, 353.} \]
\[ – β: inserted, 210.} \]
\[ βάλα: 254, 411.} \]
\[ Βαβυλῶν: 269, 494.} \]
\[ Βαθέα: 232.} \]
\[ Βαθέως: 160, 274.} \]
\[ Βαίνω: forms and compounds, 305-8,} \]
\[ 800, 1213; – εβην, 348, 350.} \]
\[ βαίνω: 111.} \]
\[ βάλλω: aor. of, 307, 338, 836, 847;} \]
\[ class, 352; trans. and intrans.,} \]
\[ 799 f.; voice, 799 f., 815; meaning;} \]
\[ 834, 838; use, 905; compounds and}
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

forms, 1212 f.; ἔβαλαν, 338; βαλω, 356; βέβλημα, 364.

βαπτίζω: βάπτισα accent, 943 f., and form, 329, 332, 944; formation, 149; meaning, 66, 81, 115; constr., 389, 475, 482, 485, 520, 525, 533, 590, 592; voice of, 807 f.; use, 1073, 1111, 1128.

βαπτισμα: 65, 115, 153 bis.

βαπτισμός: 65, 115, 152 f.

βαπτιστής: 65, 153.

βάπτω: 149, 353.

βαρ—or: 105.

βάρβαρος: form, 272, 362.

βαρέω: compounds and forms, 1213.

βαρύνω: forms, 1213.

βασιλεία: 115, 116, 125; β. τῶν οὐρανῶν, 119.

βασιλευ: meaning, 116; "cases" of pl., 447; voc. of, 465; and art., 760, 769.

βασιλεύω: causative, 801; constative, 833; use, 902.

βασιλισσα: 55, 65, 155.

βασκαίνω: and cases, 473.

βαστάζω: constr., 80, 853.

βάτος: 95, 253.

—ββ—: 213 f.

βεβαιώσις: 80.

βέβηλος: 362.


βέλτερος: form, 662.

βέλτιον: form, 277 f., 294, 299; adv., 488; meaning, 665.

βήρυλλος: reading, 199.

βιάζομαι: 80, 816.

βιαστής: 153.

βιβάξω: 362 n.

βιβώ: meaning, 865.

βιβλαρίδιον: 155.

βίβλος: spelling, 111, 199.

βιβρώσκω: 65 n.

βιώ: forms, 348 bis, 354; constr., 479.

βίωσις: 152.

βιλάττω: constr., 472, 482, 484.

βλαστάω: trans. and intrans., 799; forms, 348, 1213.

βλασφημέω: and case, 473; constr., 479.

βλέμμα: 126.

βλέπω: c. subj., 82; in John, 134 n.; constr., 330, 996; and asyndeton, 430; and case, 471; c. ἄπα, 73, 91, 577; use of βλέπει, 330, 932 f., 955, 1110; in or. obl., 1035, 1041; compounds and forms, 1213.

βλητέον: 157, 373, 486. See –τέον.

βοανηργῆς: 95.

βοάω: in or. obl., 1036.

βοηθέω: case with, 472, 541.

βούλομαι: forms, 339; βούλει, 82, 193, 339; ἐβούλημην, 886, 919; ἐβούληθην, 817; use, 80, 430, 876, 878, 886, 919; c. subj., 876–8; c. ἐν (not in N. T.), 1055; in or. obl., 1036–5; c. inf., 1038, 1055 f., 1060.

βουνός: 111.

βραδείον: 154.

βραδύω: forms, 230.

βραδύς τῇ καρδίᾳ: 487.

βρέχω: trans. and intrans., 799, 802.

βροχή: 80.

βύσσος: 95 bis, 105, 111.

Γ

γ: 209, 216, 359.


γάζα: 111 bis.

γαζοφυλάκιον: 166.

Γαλατική with art., 788.

γαμέω: constr., 111, 1204; forms, 348, 1213.

γαμικόν: 150.

γάμοι: 408.

γάρ: use, 424, 433, 443, 962, 1189; in interrogation, 916; c. εἰ, 886, 940, 1003 f., 1020; c. τέ 1179; discussed, 1190 f.

γέ: use, 244, 291, 302, 424, 1144; καί γε c. part., 1129; discussed, 1147 ff.; enclitic, 207, 244, 1211.

γεννα: 97, 105.

γεμίζω: constr., 506, 510.

γέμω: c. acc., 455, 474.

γενεά: 65.

γέννημα: reading, 80, 211, 213.

γεννάω: use, 866 f.

γένος: 448, 487.

γεώμαι: 105, 449; and case, 473, 507 f.

γῆ: and ellipsis, 272, 652, 1202.
γηράσκω: 150.
-γι.: in verbs, 351.
γιά: prep. in mod. Gk., 570, 982.
γίνομαι: 55, 61, 73, 82, 210; itacism
in, 197, 210; ἐγένετο with καί, 95,
102, 107, 122, 122 n., 393, 426,
1042 f.; ἐγένετο c. acc. and inf.,
1085; ἐγενάμην, 82; aor., 816; fre-
quency in Mt., 122; followed by
asyndeton, 429; in periphrastic
forms, 330, 902; γίνεσθαι cases with,
497; c. advs., 545 f.; ἐγένετο, 658,
829; voice of, 801, 818, 820; γέ-
νοιτο with μῆ, 325, 854, 935, 939 f.,
1003; imper. of, 855; use, 869, 871,
896 f., 905, 951, 1085, 1202; omis-
sion of, 396; pred. nom., 457; subj.
forms, 890; perf., 900; γέγονα, 333,
358, 358 n., 801, 896, 900; γέγοναν,
68, 336; γέγονεν ὅτι, 1034; com-
pounds and forms, 350-1, 1212 f.
γινώσκω: compounds and forms, 82,
134, 210, 308, 324, 328, 330, 346,
1214; perf. redupl., 364; use of
γνωστόν, 656; meaning, 827 f., 834,
904; aor. of, 843, 856; use, 871;
plupf. =impf., 904; εἰ ἐν or. obl., 1035f.,
1041; c. inf., 1062, 1103; c. part.,
1103.
γλώσσα: meaning, 115; and ellipsis,
652, 1202.
γλωσσόκομον: various readings, 204;
formation, 166; accent, 231.
γνώστης: 151, 231.
γνωστός: 157.
γωγγύσω: meaning, 80; formation,
150; form, 358, 363; constr., 853.
γωγγυστής: 153.
Γολγόθα: spelling, 211; form, 105,
236, 259.
γονυ-: in comp., 164.
γονυπετέω: formation, 164; and case,
474.
γραμματεύς: meaning, 80.
γραφή: and πάς, 772.
γράφω: compounds and forms, 80,
346, 351, 406, 1214; γέγραψα, 358,
364; ἔγραψας, 82; ἔγραψα, 845; ἔγρα-
ψον, 346; constr., 845 f., 853; in
mod. Gk., 851; use, 875, 895; in or.
obl., 1035 f.
γραώδης: 168.
γρηγορέω: 65, 148, 351; ἐγρήγορα, 148,
363.
γυμνότης: 156.
γυναίκαριον: 155.
γυνή: and ellipsis, 652.

Δ
δ: 210, 240, 248.
-δ-: inserted, 210 bis.
-δα: adv. end., 295.
δαμώνια: constr., 66, 404.
δάκρυ(ον): 262.
δανείζω: voice of, 809.
δέ: elision, 207; origin, 301; c. art.,
290, 694 f.; conj., 301, 428 f., 440,
443 f.; postpositive, 424, 1188;
καί, 122; c. ὅς 695 f.; c. οὗτος, 705;
c. ἐκεῖνος, 707; antithetic, 750, 1145,
1153; c. ei μῆ, 1025; c. negative,
1164; discussed, 1183-5; adversa-
tive, 1186.
-δε: suffix, 296, 1211.
δει: form, 319; use, 880, 919 ff.; ἔδει,
886, 919; c. inf., 1058 (as subject);
1078, 1084 f.
δειγματικός: 149.
δείκνυμι: use, 55, 135; compounds and
forms, 174 f., 306 f., 311, 327, 1214.
δείκνυω: compounds and forms, 307,
311; in or. obl., 1035 f.
δείνα: use, 292, 744.
δειπνέω: meaning, 80.
δεισιδαιμονία: 65, 81, 166.
δέκα: use, 282; in comp., 169, 283.
δεκατών: 65, 149.
δέν: in mod. Gk., 206, 928, 1011,
1156 ff., 1168.
δεξιός: in comp., 168, 232; in com-
parison, 662.
δεōμαι: forms, 342; ἔδειτο, 203, 342; c.
abl. and acc., 519; c. obj.-inf., 1059.
δέον: use with ἔστι, 80, 881, 1130.
δέρω: constr., 477 bis, 485; forms of,
1214.
δέσμη: 231.
δέσμιος: 65 n.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

δέσμος: 262, 263 n.
δεσμοθύλαξ: 166.
δεύρο: form, 299, 302, 328; use, 430, 931, 949, 1193.
δεύτε: form, 299, 302; use, 328, 330, 430, 931, 949; in conditions, 1023.
δευτεραίοι: use, 298.
δευτεροπρώτοι: 168.
δευτερο: form, 299, 302; use, 328, 330, 430, 931, 949; in conditions, 1023.
διαιρέω: 472.
διαισπάω: meaning, 564, 828.
διαισπορά: 97, 151.
διάστημα: 151.
διαταγή: 151.
διατελεώ: c. part., 1121.
διατηρέω: meaning, 828.
διατιθέμαι: 479
διατρίβω: constr., 477.
διαφέρω: case with, 455.
διαφεύγω: meaning, 828; constr., 987.
διαφθείρω: 486.
διδασκόω: 150; form, 331; constr., 474, 335, 342, 1214.
διδυκούς: 170.
διδύκος: loc. form, 295; use, 691.
δίπου: use, 302.
διά: elision, 208; c. enclitic, 244; in comp., 164, 168, 476, 529, 558, 561, 563, 800, 827 f.; cases with, 491, 534, 565, 569 f.; frequency, 556; in mod. Gk., 557; c. verbs, 560; in condensation, 567; case-form, 570; discussed, 580-4; and κατά, 606; and ὑπέρ, 629; and ὑπό, 636; c. μέσον, 648; διὰ τί . . .: 244, 730, 739, 916, 1176; in prepositional phrases, 791; for agent, 820; c. inf., 584, 858, 891, 909, 966, 1060, 1069 f., 1091; c. τότῳ, 965.
διαβάζω: constr., 476, 800.
διαβάλλω: meaning, 80.
διαξώνυμοι: voice of, 810.
διαθήκη: 116.
διακονέω: 540.
διάκονος: 115.
διακρίνομαι: constr., 478.
διαλέιται: c. part., 1121.
διαμαρτύρομαι: constr., 484; in or. obl., 1035 f.
διανοίγω: in or. obl., 1035 f.
διαπαρατρήθη: 165-6.
διαπλέω: 476.
διαπορέω: 476.
διάπορος: 472.
διαπορέω: meaning, 564, 828.
διασπάω: 97, 151.
διάστημα: 151.
διαταγή: 151.
διατελεώ: c. part., 1121.
διατηρέω: meaning, 828.
διατιθέμαι: 479
διατρίβω: constr., 477.
διαφέρω: case with, 455.
διαφεύγω: meaning, 828; constr., 987.
διαφθείρω: 486.
διδασκόω: 150; form, 331; constr., 474, 482 bis, 485, 486, 1083; voice of, 816; in or. obl., 1035 f.
δίδωμι: compounds and forms, 190, 306, 307 f., 311, 324, 326 f., 335, 337, 347, 409, 876, 1044, 1214; δίδω, 311 n., 312, 335; δίδω, 135, 307, 311; διδάσας, 82; διδαστό, 190, 312; διδάσκας, 82, 312; διδύκα, 55; διδύσας, 309, 324, 348; διδύσκες, 82; δώμα, 326; δός, 329; constr., 855, 940, 983 f., 1032; use, 135, 905, 1062, 1080, 1135; διεξαν δ., 83; τιθέναι, 95, 102; in indirect command, 1047; δουναί, 1052, 1058, 1132.
διέρηκτης: 166.
διέρμηνεια: 166.
διέρχομαι: constr., 472, 476, 477, 800, 869.
διηγόμαι: ὑμί with, 1032.
διηγηρίτωμα: in or. obl., 1036.
διεκκορία: 65, 166.
δίκαιος: meaning, 80, 115, 174, 176; c. three endings, 273.
δικαιοσύνη: with subjective gen., 499; use, 781.
δικαίω: 149, 174.
δίκη: 174.
διά: use, 132, 950.
Διώνυσος: reading, 200.
διόπερ: use, 1154.
Διώσκορος: 199.
διότι: use, 80, 244, 430, 962, 964.
διπλότερον: form, 278, 299.
διπλούς: use, 284.
δίς: adv., 284; spelling, 296, 298, 300.
δισχίλιοι: use, 283.
δίχα: adv., 284,
διχοτομέω: meaning, 80.
διψάω: formation, 147; aor. forms, 342; and case, 474, 508.
δογματίζω: formation, 149; voice of, 807.
δοκέω: constr., 541, 853, 1085.
δοκιμάζω: in or. obl., 1041; c. inf., 1085.
δοκίμαιον: 80, 126 n., 156, 158.
δόκιμος: 80.
δαλιώ: formation, 149; form, 336, 343.
δόνοι: adv. suffix, 295 f.
δεφάντω: aor. of, 837, 843, 847, 853.
δοσις: in comp., 164.
δοσιμαί: use, 1154.
δοκίμασι: 80.
δομική: use, 176.
δομομί: formation, 149.
δοματέω: formation, 147.
δοματός: c. inf., 369, 857, 1077, 1079.
δομαμί: reading, 312.
δόμων: intrans., 800; compounds and forms, 1214.
δόμο: forms, 251, 282; δόμο δόμο Hebraism (7), 74, 91, 284, 673; δωσι, 72, 82, 251; and art., 769.
δόρομαι: spelling, 206.
δωροδορίζω: in comp., 161 ff.
δωρός: compounds and forms, 348, 1214.
δώδεκα: use, 282.
δώδεκα–δέκαλον: 166.
δώμα: use, 65 n., 66, 80, 138; spelling, 200.
δωρεάν: 294, 298, 488.

Ε
ε: short vowel, 178, 181 f.; vowel-changes with, 178, 183-91, 324; instead of o, 308; inserted by analogy, 349; with Doric fut., 354; reduplication and augment, 363-7; voc. ending, 462 f.; prothetic, 1209.
έα: use, 302, 391, 1193.
έαν: form, 181, 190 f.; for ἄν, 72, 80, 83, 97, 181, 190 f.; ἄν for έαν, 190 f.; crisis, 208; constr., 220, 325, 850, 928, 967, 969, 1129; c. indic., 82, 325, 1009; and ἄστις, 727; and ἄσος, 733; and ὄποιος, 969; use, 948, 968, 971, 1129; c. ὅς, 957, 959; ὃς ἄν (έαν) not= έαν τις 961; c. ἔπει, 965; in conditions, 1005-27.
έανπερ: use, 1154.
έαντε—έαντε: use, 1189.
έαυτός: form, 185, 226, 287; use, 287, 289, 687-90; for all three persons, 73, 97, 287-8; and ὅποιος, 691 f.; and art., 779; with mid. voice, 810.
έας: έασεν, 365; c. οὐκ, 1156; compounds and forms, 1214.
έβδομος: 125.
Έβραικός: 159.
Έβραϊστα: form, 95, 205, 296, 298; use, 104, 106, 524.
έγγιζω: meaning, 81; formation, 149; constr., 623 f.; compounds and forms, 1214.
έγγυς: form, 248 n., 294, 298; in comparison, 298; constr., 538, 638; adjectival, 547; use, 549, 568, 639 f.
έγειρω: voice of, 799, 816, 817; usually trans., 799; use, 866, 896; gnomic, 866; c. εἰς, 482; ἡγέρθη intrans., 817; ἐγήγερται, 896; compounds and forms, 186, 1215.
έγκακεν: c. part., 1121.
έγκαλέω: constr., 511.
έγκομβομαι: voice of, 808.
έγκρατεύομαι: 148, 478.
έγχρις: 81, 232.
έγνω: crisis, 208; accent with enclitic; 230, 234 f., 286, 420; interchange with ἡμείς, 406; ἐγνώ old form of, 285, 466; discussed, 677 f.; enclitic forms of, 682, 1211; use, 685, 689, 693; and ἐκείνος, 707; and ἄλλος, 746; position of μου, 779; use of ἡμῶν, 785; c. particles, 1148.
έδαφίζω: forms of, 1215.
έδίδοσαν, 82,
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

ε: in contraction, 342.

εξελο-θρησκία: 166.

εδήλω: form, 205 f.; use, 878, 886, 919.

είδεω: είδοσμένος, 364.

εθνικός: 158.

εθνικώς: 160.

έδος ἔστιν: 1084.

εω: forms of, 358, 364, 1215; εὐωθα, 801.

ε: 187, 191-4, 195 f., 198, 204, 324, 367; =, 196, 238, 239; proper names in, 198. 

-ε: 2d pers. mid. ending, 339.

ει: accent, 233 f., 244, 1211; and ὧτι, 340, 965; and οὖντος, 699 f.; and γάρ, 886, 940, 1003 f., 1020; use, 916, 928, 997, 1176; in interrogation, 122, 916; c. opt., 127; c. τις, 956; c. οὖ, 962, 1011, 1160; c. μήν, 1004; c. μή, 1160; c. καί, 1026; in conditions, 1005-27, 1129; εὶ δοθῆσται.

στμένον, 94, 1024; in or. obl., 1030, 1045; proclitic, 1211.

-εία: ending, 152, 196 f., 326.

εἰδέω: compounds and forms, 1215.

εἰδοῦ: forms, 223 f., 325, 339, 344, 360, 366; no present, 344; εἰδαν, 339; perf. subj., 325, 360, 907, 983; use, 413 f., 437, 441, 892, 1135; in or. obl., 1041.

εἰδος: meaning, 80.

εἰω: ἵμερον, ἴστε, ἱσασίν, 87, 238-9, 319; perf. subj., 325, 360; εἰδιά, 62; compounds and forms, 361, 906 f., 1215.

εἰδωλέων: 154.

εἰδωλο-λατρεία: 161, 166.

εἰδωλο-λατρεύω: 161.

-εῖε: opt. end., 327, 335.

εἰθε: in wish constr., 886, 940, 1003 f,

--είκα: perf. end., 310.

εἰκή: 295.

Εἰκόνιον: spelling, 197.

εἰκοσι: form, 221, 283.

εἰκώ: perf. ἐοικα, 124, 364, 895.

εἰκὼν θεοῦ: 97.

εἰλι-κρίνεια: 166, 223.

εἰ μή: use, 192 f., 747, 1011, 1014, 1016, 1024 f., 1160; 1169, 1187-8.

Also see εἰ and μή.

εἰ μήν: discussed, 80, 1150.


οἰκί: accent, 233 f.; compounds and forms, 1213, 313, 350, 396, 1215; use, 869, 881.

-είν: inf. ending, 342, 370.

-εώ: inf. ending, 249, 370, 388; pluperf. ending, 339, 361.

-ενος: ending, 197.

-εν: ending, 197.

-ενος: ending, 197.

εἰπερ: use, 1154.


εἰποῦ: accent, 229, 231, 329; augment, 366; no present, 344; forms of, 327, 329, 338, 345 f., 363, 368; εἶπα, 55, 61, 73, 338 bis, 346; εἰπέ 714, 327, 329, 338; redupl., 363 bis; constr., 480, 484, 626, 902; c. prod. acc., 480, 484; c. subj. in question, 930; c. ὧτι, 1035; c. ἀπό τοῦτον, 626; and λέγω 838, 883; use, 930; in or. obl., 1048.

εἰρήνευς: constr., 486.

εἰρήνη: Hebraic use, 95, 105, 115; εἰρήνη θεοῦ, 105.

εἰρήνω--: in comp., 164.

εἰς: spelling, 187; meaning, 80, 389, 449, 561; in idiom, 401; case with, 451, 481, 484, 491, 524, 535, 569 f.;
in mod. Gk., 453, 535, 557; Semitic influence, 457 f.; c. verbs, 469, 481, 540, 542, 559 ff., 562, 566; in "pregnant construction," 525, 1204; in adv. phrases, 550; frequency, 556; in LXX, 481; c. pred. acc., 481 f.; εἰς ἀπάντησιν τοῦ, 91, 528; εἰς τί . . ., 739; rather than διά, 582; and ἐν, 97, 123, 449, 453, 584 ff.; discussed, 591-6; and παρά, 613; and πρός, 624, 626; in prepositional phrases, 792; c. inf., 658, 858 (aor.), 891 (pres.), 909 and 1072 (perf.), 990 f., 997, 1001 ff., 1060, 1069-72, 1088, 1090; c. 1088, and adj., 1072; reading, 862; anarthrous, 1070; proclitic, 1211.

-είς: root of, 145; and οὖ, 232, 751; indeclinable use, 282 f.; supplanting τίς, 83, 292; case, 460; and πρώτος, 671; εἰς καθ' εἰς, 105, 450, 460; καθ' εἰς, 292, 294, 450, 460; τό καθ' εἰς, 487; εἰς εἰς, ὑμῶν, 675; as indef. art., 674, 796; equal to τίς, 675, 744; distributive, 675; and ἄλλος, 747; antithetic, 750.

εἰς: nom. and ace. plural ending, 265.

εἴς in aor. pass. part., 373.

εἰςέρχομαι: constr., 855.

εἰςπορέυομαι: voice of, 806; use, 880.

ἐῖα: use, 300, 429.

ἐῖε: ἐῖε–ἐῖε, 1025, 1045, 1179, 1189.


ἐὶ τίς: use, 292, 751.


515, 519; case with, 534, 570; in adv. phrases, 548, 550; frequency, 556; in mod. Gk., 558; use, 561; c. αὐτοῦ, 575, 577; discussed, 596-600; and παρά, 614; and ὑπό, 636; for agent, 820; c. inf., 1061, 1073; proclitic, 1211.

ἐκάστος: use, 61, 292; discussed, 745 f.; c. plu. verb, 746; c. εἰς, 746; and art., 745, 769; and πάς, 771.


ἐκατόν: use, 283.

ἐκβάλλω: voice of, 803; use, 880.

ἐκδύω: c. two ace., 483.

ἐκεῖ: and aphaeresis, 206; loc. form, 249, 295; meaning, 299; constr., 443, 548; as root, 706; use, 969.

ἐκέθεν: 300.

ἐκεῖνος: Ionic κεῖνος, 206, 706; use in John, 134, 290; meaning and use, 693; resumptive, 698, 707; εκεῖνης in Luke, 494; and ὡμῆς, 707 f.; and οὗτος, 702 f., 707; discussed, 289 n., 706-9; and art., 770.

ἐκείσθε: form, 296; meaning, 299; constr., 548; and ὅπου, 722.

ἐκζήτησε: 152.

ἐκκακέω: 65.

ἐκκλησία: meaning 97, 115, 130; absent in John's Gospel, 134; origin, 174.

ἐκκρέμαιμαι: form, 340.

ἐκλαυθάων: constr., 509.

ἐκλέγομαι: constr., 480; voice of, 808, 810, f.

ἐκλεκτός: meaning, 115; accent, 231; forms, 273.

ἐκμυκτηρίζω: 65.

ἐκπίπτω: voice of, 802.

ἐκπλέω: form, 342.

ἐκπορεύω: c. ace., 486.

ἐκτένεια: 80, 166.

ἐκτινάσσω: use, 65 n.; meaning, 80; voice of, 810.

ἐκτός: use, 80, 296, 300, 640, 1025.

ἐκφεύγω: constr., 476; meaning, 828.


ἐκχέω: forms, 213, 342, 352.

ἐκών: formation, 157 n.; three end., 274; use, 298, 373.


ἐλάβων: form, 72, 218, 277 f.; constr., 484 f.; adv., 488.

ἐλάμπων: 72, 218.


ἐλαύνω: compounds and forms, 1215.

ἐλαφρία: 156.

ἐλάχιστος: form, 278 f., 669; double superlative, 278, 670.

ἐλέεω: forms of, 184, 342.

ἐλέεω: forms of, 342; transitive, 474.

ἐλεημοσύνη: 65, 156.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Meaning / Notes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἐλεινός</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλεός</td>
<td>261, 262 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλεύθερος</td>
<td>meaning, 662.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλεγμα</td>
<td>accent, 230.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλκω</td>
<td>compounds and forms, 1215; instrumental, 73, 95, 102, 452, 525-34, 589; locative, 520, 522-5, 527, 531; agent, 534; place, 586; time, 586; accompanying circumstance, 588; sphere, 589; repetition, 566-7; ἐν τοῖς, 83; ἐν κυρίῳ, 587; ἐν Χριστῷ, 587; and εἰς, 453, 484, 520, 525, 559, 569, 585, 591-3; and ἐκ, 599; and ἐπί, 600; and ὑπό, 636; in prepositional phrases, 792, 978; c. ὑ, 963; proclitic, 1211; statistics, 556, 572, 586-7, 801, 858, 1069.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐν: accent, 232.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐναυτίον</td>
<td>80; form, 170; use, 639 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδείκνυμι</td>
<td>formation, 170; use, 573, 639 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνατος</td>
<td>213.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδείκνυμι</td>
<td>reading, 946.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδέκα: use, 282.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδέσις</td>
<td>57.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδιδυσκω</td>
<td>80; formation, 150; acc. c. pass. of, 485; voice of, 810.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδόμησις</td>
<td>152.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδομα</td>
<td>151.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδώ</td>
<td>c. two acc., 483; acc. c. pass. of, 485; voice of, 809.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδώμησις</td>
<td>spelling, 152, 201.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεδρεύω</td>
<td>meaning, 80; and case, 474.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνέδρου</td>
<td>166.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεκα: origin, 249; position, 301, 425, 641; use, 641; c. inf., 1060.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεκεν</td>
<td>spelling, 183, 187; aspiration, 225; position, 425; use, 55, 641; c. τοῦ+inf., 1073, 1091.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνεργέω</td>
<td>transitive, 455; c. acc., 476; meaning, 564.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνθάδε</td>
<td>meaning, 299; use, 548.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνκακέω</td>
<td>formation, 164; use, 1102.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐννέα: use, 282.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνορκίζω</td>
<td>constr., 484, 1085.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνοχος</td>
<td>meaning, 80; constr., 504, 535, 537; c. gen., 504; c. dat., 504, 537; c. els, 535.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>–ἐντ–: part. ending, 373.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνταθα: use, 299.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνταφιαζω</td>
<td>147.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνταφιασμός</td>
<td>152.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek Word</td>
<td>Meaning</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντέλλωμαι</td>
<td>c. dat., 1084; c. inf., 1068.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντεθεῖν</td>
<td>300.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνετίας</td>
<td>use, 296, 300, 641.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντρέπω</td>
<td>c. acc., 65 n., 455, 473, 484.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντροπή</td>
<td>82.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντυγχάνω</td>
<td>80.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνώπιον</td>
<td>in papyri, 90; in Luke, 122; constr., 80, 160, 170 bis, 540, 641.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκ: form, 215; in mod. Gk., 557; in comp., 170; c. verbs, 558; cases with, 568; in prepositional phrases, 792; proclitic, 1211.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκαγοράζω</td>
<td>voice of, 810</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκακολουθέω</td>
<td>148.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκατοτῆς</td>
<td>170 bis.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκείμενο</td>
<td>forms, 314, 339.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκέραμα</td>
<td>153.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκέραχωμα</td>
<td>473 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεστὶ</td>
<td>constr., 491, 1084 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεγέομαι</td>
<td>meaning, 829.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκείσαν</td>
<td>87, 339.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεῖ: adv., 296; constr., 547.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεστώς</td>
<td>voice of, 806.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκελθεῖν</td>
<td>148.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκεμολογέω</td>
<td>forms, 188; c. ὀτι, 965.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκου: use, 1130.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκορκίω</td>
<td>constr., 475.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκορκιστής</td>
<td>153.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκουδενέω</td>
<td>149.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκουδενῶν</td>
<td>149.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκουδενεῖν: spelling, 219; forms, 342; constr. 853.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκουσία</td>
<td>115, 134 n., 148 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκουσιῶν</td>
<td>149.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκο: adj. stem, 160; form, 296, 301; use, 300, 642.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκουθεῖν: use, 296, 300, 548, 642.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκώτερος: formation, 160, 278, 298; meaning, 662.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκώμα: intransitive, 801.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκτή: c. ἐν, 523.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκτιό: in contraction, 274.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαγγελία</td>
<td>125, 479.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαγγέλλω</td>
<td>constr., 479, 1036.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαγχύνομαι</td>
<td>and case, 472, 485; trans., 473.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαιτεῖν: 65 n.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπακοῦω: constr., 507.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπάν: use, 971.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαναπαύμα: voice of 819.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπάνω: use, 642, 666.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπάνωθεν: use, 637.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπεί: use, 132, 954, 963, 965, 971, 1025 f.; not relative, 954.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπειδή: use, 965, 971.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπειδήπερ: use, 965, 1154.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπείκως: 204.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπείπερ: use, 1154.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπείπτα: use, 300, 549.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπέκενα: accent, 232, 244; use, 642.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπεκτείνω: voice of, 807.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπέρχομαι: transitive, 455.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπέχω: meaning, 477, 828; ὁτί, with, 1032.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπηρεάζω: and case, 473.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπι: in comp., 161 f.; elision, 223; ἐφ', 223-4; ἐφ' ἐλπίζω, 224; cases with, 451, 491, 524, 565, 568 ff.; case-form, 524, 570; in &quot;pregnant construction,&quot; 525; c. verbs, 540, 542, 559 ff., 562, 566; in adv. phrases, 550; frequency, 556; meaning, 561; and ἐίς, 596; discussed, 600-5; and κατά, 607; and πρός, 625; c. ὅσων, 733, 963; ἐφ' ὡτε not in N. T., 963, 1000, 1055, 1088, 1088 n.; ἐφ' ὧν 963; in prepositional phrases, 792, 963, 978; ἐπὶ τῶ + inf. in papyri, 909; c. inf., 1069, 1071.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπισήμερο: in mod. Gk., 230.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπισφαλήν: 80.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιγνωσκω: meaning of, 827; use, 125, 909; in or. obl., 1035, 1042.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιγράφω: use, 1135.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιδείκνυμι: voice of, 810.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιδεικνύω: in or. obl., 1036.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπίθεμα: spelling, 188.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιθυμεῖν: and cases, 472, 473 n., 474, 508.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπικαλέω: voice of, 509.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπικατάρατος: 80.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιλαυθάνομαι: constr., 472, 473 n., 509; c. inf., 1060.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιληποσφοι: 151.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπίλυσις: abl. use, 514.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιμαρτύρομαι: in or. obl., 1035, 1036.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιμελεύμα: constr., 509; voice of, 820.</td>
<td>1262</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

έπιμένω: use, 850; c. part., 1121.
έπιούσιος: meaning, 80; origin, 159.
έπιποθεία: 152.
έπιπόθησις: 152, 168.
έπισείω: 65 n.
έπισκοπος: 80, 115.
έπισταμαί: forms, 224, 314, 328, 340; in or. obl., 1035, 1041.
έπιστάτα: 122.
έπιστέλλω: meaning, 66; epistolary form, 204, 340; meaning, 564; stems of, 823.
έπιστρέφω: meaning, 115; constr., 856; use; 948.
έπισυνάγω: 160, 486.
έπισυναγωγή: 80, 166.
έπιστάσιος: 542, 1084.
έπιστήμη: σοί, 477; ἐπί, 560.
έπιστώμω: accent, 232; constr., 542.
έπιστρέφω: constr., 1084.
έπιστυγάχω: constr., 473 n., 509.
έπιφαίνω: form, 341, 349, 371 (-φάναι).
έπιφάνεια: 81.
έπιφανής: 81.
έπιχορηγέω: 81, 164, 166.
έπτά: use, 282; cardinal, 673.
έπτάκις: use, 281, 298, 300.
έπω: constr., 473; έρημα, 364, 899, 902; εἰρήκει, 905; compounds and forms, 342, 349, 1215.
έραυνώ: compounds and forms, 184, 329.
έργαζομαι: augment, 367; constr., 474, 494; meaning, 564; compounds and forms, 1215; εἰργασμένος, 364.
έργον: ἔργα 115; breathing, 223.
έρμος: form, 231, 272 f.
έρωτικα: 152, 231.
έρτς: form, 265 bis, 267.
έρμηνευόμενο: use of part., 1135.
έρχομαι: constr., 313, 478 f., 538; compounds and forms of, 327 f., 800 f., 1215; ἥλθα, 82, 97; ἥλθον, 68, 97; ἠλάθω, 328; ἠλθέ, 327; ἥλθω, 363, 801, 905; constative aor. of, 833; use, 869, 904, 905, 948; periphrastic use, 118; futuristic sense, 869; ἐλθόν, 1105; use of part., 1118.
έρωτάω: meaning, 66, 80, 90; compounds and forms, 184, 341, 1215; ἰπώτου, 63, 184, 341; constr., 482; in papyri, 90; in indirect command, 1046.
–ες: ending in mod. Gk., 138; acc. pl., 62, 63, 82, 139, 184, 266; perf. and aor., 82, 337.
έσθιω: compounds and forms, 204, 340, 1215; φάγομαι, 324, 354, 813; φάγεσαι, 340; meaning, 564; stems of, 823.
έσθω: compounds and forms of, 204, 353 f., 1215.
έσπερινός: 158.
έσχατος: form, 279 f., 669; and art., 769, 775.
έσχατως: use, 299, 546, 799.
έσω: use, 187, 231 n., 300, 642.
έσωθεν: use, 300, 505, 548, 643.
έσώτερος: 160, 278.
έτάξω: 143.
έταίρος: use, 186, 725.
έτεος: 143.
έτερος: in comp., 164, 168.
έτεροδιάσκαλώ: 115, 164.
έτερογενέω: form, 330.
έτερος: form, 277; use, 292; and ἄλλος, 746 f.; discussed, 748-50; and art., 775 f.
–ετης: suffix, 231.
έτοιμος: accent, 231; form, 272; c. inf., 1068, 1077.
έτος: form, 268; καθ’ ἐτος, 223-4; c. ἐν, 523.
έτυμολογία: 143.
έτυμος: 143.
εὐ: vowel-changes, 198, 201 f.
εὖ- verbs begin. with, 367 bis.
εὖ: in comp., 164, 367; adv., 299; c. πράσσω, 1121.
εὐαγγελίσω: meaning, 115, 125, 134; augment, 367; reduplication, 365; constr., 474, 483; trans. and intrans., 799; in or. obl., 1035 f.; compounds and forms of, 1215.
εὐαγγέλιον: 115, 133, 134.
εὐάγγελιστής: 115, 153.
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

εὐάρεστος: 80, 168.
εὖγε: use, 299.
εὐγενής: form, 272.
εὐδαιμονία: 156.
Εὐδία: case of, 460.
εὐδοκέω: meaning, 81; trans., 473 n., 474; compounds and forms of, 164, 837, 842, 1215.
εὐθέως: use, 549.
εὐθυ-: in comp., 164, 296.
εὐθύς(ς): form, 294, 296; use, 549; c. part., 1124, 1139.
Εὐκαιρεῖος: 81.
εὐλογέω: and case, 473.
εὐλογία: 53 n.
εὐνώμω: forms, 330.
εὐδοῖω: form, 325 n., 343.
εὐπερίστατος: 133.
εὐπροσωπέω: 80, 148, 164.
εὐρακύλων: 108, 166.
εὐρίσκω: 150; compounds and forms, 327, 338, 360, 1215; εὐρή, 327; aspiration, 225; voice of, 809; use, 873, 883, 893, 1103, 1122, 1135; in or. obl., 1035, 1041.
--εὐς: ending, 272.
εὐσεβής: form, 272.
εὐσχήμων: 80.
εὐφαίνω: 150.
εὐχαριστέω: meaning, 66, 80; voice of, 474; c. ὧν, 965.
εὐχαριστία: 81.
εὐχόμαι: use, 886, 919.
--εὐω: verbs in, 147 ff., 152.
ἐφισάθα: 105, 215.
Ἐφεσος: form, 295.
ἐφίστημι: form, 328.
(α)λφιδιος: form, 272.
ἐθές: 206.
ἐχω: compounds and forms, 200 f., 206, 319, 338, 346, 367, 870, 897, 900 f., 1215; ἐχθροσαν, 63, 73, 82, 336, 887, 921; ἐσχά, 73; ἐφαν, 68, 73, 339; σχές, 329; ἐσχοῦ, 823; ἐσχήκα, 364, 900; intrans., 799; intrans. in its compounds, 800, 802, 815, 828; aspiration, 223; periphrastic forms, 330, 360; in Rev., 414, 441; in anacolutha, 439; ἐχει impersonal, 457; constr., 477, 480, 487, 508, 789, 838, 843, 850; c. pred. acc., 480-1; c. adv., 299, 546, 799; voice of, 799 f., 809, 815; c. κακώς, 802, 815; stems of, 823; meaning, 828; use, 879, 902, 906, 930, 946, 1122; ἐχων, 135, 881, 1106, 1122, 1126 f., 1134 f., 1202; "Latinism," 108, 1034.
--εῶ: verbs in, 147 ff., 184, 203, 341 ff., 351; confused with --άω, 73, 82, 184, 341 f.
ἐως: use, 80, 297, 550, 643, 674, 953, 975 f.; in phrases, 550, 792; c. κατω, 297, 550, 643; c. ὄντω, 291, 729, 975-6; c. πότε, 643; c. ὧν, 976; preposition, 643, 674, 792, 975; adv., 643, 1075; conjunction, 953, 975 f.; c. inf. (ἐως τοῦ ἔλθεν), 975, 979, 1060, 1070, 1074, 1092.
ἐωτοῦ: Ionic, 203.

F

F: 365.

Fίδιος: 289.

Z

ζ: 218, 240.
ζαω: formation, 147; constr., 479; compounds and forms, 194, 341 f., 1215; future, 356, 813, 889; voice of, 807; meaning, 833 f.; ζην, 341; ζων 1105.
ζεστός: use, 1097.
ζεγνυμι: compounds and forms, 314.
ζευτηρία: 157.
ζηλευω: 148.
ζηλος: 261, 262 n.
ζηλω: forms, 148, 203, 342; ζηλοῦτε, 203, 325, 342.
ζημιω: acc. c. pass., 485.
Ζηράς: 172 bis.
ζητέω: c. inf., 1038, 1078; c. ἴνα, 1078.
ζιζάνιον: 95, 111.
ζυγός: 262, 263 n.
-ζω: verbs in, 348, 352; -σα-forms, 348 f.
ζωή: meaning, 115, 134-5; spelling, 200 f.
ζωο-: in comp., 164.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

ζώνυμι: 311; compounds and forms, 314, 1215.
ζωνύω: compounds and forms, 314, 1215.
ζωοτείω: 82, 164.
ζωοτηθείς: use, 1114.

Η
Η: breathing, 222
η: origin, 178; long vowel, 178, 182, 191, 240; vowel-changes with, 184, 187, 191-6, 324, 341, 361; η=ι, 191, 192 n., 238-9; η and ει, 192, 240, 324; η and ι, 195; nom. end., 267; after ε, ι, ρ, 274; augment, 286, 368; in fut. pass., 356; in 2d aor., 340.
ἡ: use, 406, 412, 427, 432, 661, 663, 666, 789, 1158; "or," 406, 427, 666, 789, 1158; "than," 616, 661, 663 (μᾶλλον ἡ), 666, 789 (μᾶλλον ἡ); after comparative, 666; and παρά, 616; in interrogation, 917; ἡ τίς, 917; in mod. Gk., 1146; in comp., 1150; in double questions, 1177; discussed, 1188 f.
ἡ: use, 1150.
-η: ending, 194, 232, 249, 256, 274.
η: vowel-changes, 194 f., 198, 324; η=ι, 239; η=οι, 326; in aor. subj. and fut. ind., 193; iota subscript, 194.
ἡγέμοια: meaning, 80; constr., 480, 481; in or. obl., 1036, 1041.
ἡδη: position, 423; constr., 546; use, 1146.
ἡδιστο: form, 294; meaning, 670; adv. 488.
ἡδο-οσμος: 166.
ἡ: vowel-changes, 193 f.
ἡκω: compounds and forms, 337, 358, 907, 1215; perf. sense but pres. form, 337, 358, 865, 869, 893; 82.
ἡλεί: 95, 105.
ἡλικα: 80.
ἡλικος: use, 291 f., 710, 741; discussed, 733 f.
ἡλιος: gender of, 252.

Ἡμαι: compounds and forms, 314, 329, 340, 350.
Ἥμερα: Hebraic use, 95; gem use, 295, 497; loc. use, 522; gen.-abl. of, 256; and ellipsis, 652, 1202.
Ἥμέρας και νυκτός: 495.
Ἥμετερος: form, 277; use, 286, 288, 684.
Ἕμι: form, 192, 1024; use, 1150.
Ἕμι-: prefix, 161, 163.
Ἕμισις: form, 199, 274 f.; c. art., 775.
ἕμιστρος: 495.
Ὁ
Θ: consonant, 222.
-Θ-: verb-stem, 353.
-Θα: ending, 337.
-Θα: inf. end., 370.
θάλασσα: constr., 794.
θαλάσσοις: 159.
θάλπω: 65 n.
θανάτος: meaning, 115; use, 784, 794.
θανατωθείς: use, 1114.
θάπτω: compounds and forms, 1216.
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

θαρρέω: in anacolutha, 440, 1135; constr., 474.
θαρροσ: spelling, 217.
θαμάζω: various readings, 188; constr.,
474, 532, 965; use, 879; θ. θαμα, 478; θ. εἰ, 965; aorists, 818; coin-
pounds and forms, 1216.
θεόμα: aorists, 818; meaning, 829, 893 f.
θεατρίζω: 149.
θείος: 116.
θείοτης: 65.
θέλημα: 151.
θέλησις: 151.
θέλω: form, 205 f.; augment, 368; in mod. Gk., 353; constr., 353, 391,
430, 431, 551, 857, 878; for fut., 67; use, 919, 923 f., 933; as aux-
iliary verb, 1056; θέλω ἵνα, 431,
933, 1046, 1055-6; οὗ θέλω, 1093;
in or. obl., 1036; in indirect coin-
mand, 1046; c. inf., 551, 1038,
1055 f., 1060, 1078, 1093; c. aor. inf.,
878; inf. of, 1058 f.; in John, 1078.
θέμα: spelling, 153, 200.
θέμελιώ: 80, 262, 263 n.
θεμελίω: formation, 149; form, 1212.
--θεν: suffix, 250 n., 296, 300.
--θεντ:- in nor. pass. part., 373.
θεο—: in comp., 168.
θεοπνευστός: 65, 168.
θέδος: gender of, 252, 253; double
decl., 257; vocative of, 261, 261 n.,
463, 465; θέω, 463; reading, 477;
use of gen., 499 f., 516; abl. of,
514; meaning, 116 bis, 768; and art.,
758, 761, 780, 786, 795; omitted,
1202.
θεόφιν: form, 269.
θέτω: in mod. Gk., 149.
θεωρέω: durative meaning, 80, 838; in
John, 134 n.; impf. of, 843; in or.
obl., 1032, 1035, 1041.
aor. suffix, 332, 357.
-θη-: in mod. Gk., 898.
--θην: aor. pass. end., 334, 340, 347.
θηριο—: in comp., 164.
-θης: aor. end., 332, 340, 356 f.; fut.,
357.
θησαυρίζω: constr., 853.

-θήσωμαι: verb end., 340, 357, 818.
-θθ-: 215.
-θυ: imper. suffix, 328.
θυγγάω: constr., 508.
θλίβω: class, 351; use of part., 1135.
θλψ: accent, 230.
θυήσκω: compounds and forms of,
319, 1216; meaning, 345, 827, 845,
893; use of inf., 1030.
θυντός: use, 1097.
θορυβέω: aor. of, 851.
θρησκεία: 124, 231.
θρησκός: 124, 231.
θριαμβεύω: meaning, 81, 108; forma-
tion, 148; constr., 474; voice of, 800.
θυγάτηρι: 118.
θυμάω: 150.
θυμός: 151.
θυσιαστήριον: 138.
-θω: subj. end., 310.
-θω: verbs in, 149, 353.

I

i: vowel-changes with, 187 f., 191 f.,
195-9, 204 f., 207, 230, 237; i, 205;
loc. end., 249, 452, 520, 1067; class
of verbs, 351, 363; in reduplica-
tion, 363; in augment, 366 f.; dat.
end., 520; prothetic, 1209.
i: verbs begin with, 367.
i: adv. suffix, 296, 452.
iα: suffix, 156, 196 f., 273; for εια, 197.
iανός: suffix, 155.
iδομα: fut., 819; voice of, 819; compo-
unds and forms, 232, 1216;
aorists, 818.
--ιας: gen. end., 259.
--ιαω: verbs in, 150, 351.
ιδε: accent, 231; adv., 302; interj.,
328, 391; ἵδε, 327, 328.
ίδιος: compared with, αὐτός, 62, 80,
83, 134, 287, 289; ιδιαν with κατά,
223-4, 609; discussed, 691 f.; and art.,
770.
ιδου: adv. and interj., 302; καὶ ιδοῦ,
120, 122, 396; in elliptical sen-
tences, 391, 396; case with, 413,
441, 460; c. nom., 460; use, 1193.
ιδω: forms, 1216.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

- Ιερός Πόλει: declension, 257.
- Ιερατεία: 152.
- Ιεράτευμα: 153.
- Ιεράτευσι: 80, 148.
- Ιερεύς: 115.
- Ιερός: spelling, 223, 225.
- Ιεροσόλυμα: spelling of, 225; gender of, 253, 257; and art., 760; use, 120, 253, 253 n., 257, 263.
- Ιερωργήω: form, 204; constr., 474.
- Ιερωσαλήμ: use, 120, 253.
- Ιερωσάνυ: spelling, 156, 201.
- ε-ίω: verbs in, 147, 149 ff., 351 f., 355; fut. of, 355.
- η: in opt., 326.
- Ηησούς: form, 263; and art., 760.
- Ικανός: constr., 480.
- Ικνέωμα: compounds and forms, 1216.
- Ικόνιον: spelling, 197.
- ε-ικός: words in, 158 f.; three terminations, 273; constr. of words in, 504.
- Ιλάσκομα: constr., 474.
- Ιλεώς: spelling, 62; meaning, 80; reading, 260; form, 272.
- Ιματίζω: 80, 149.
- Ιμάτιον: meaning, 408; and ellipsis, 1202.
- Ιματισμός: 152.
- Ινα: in John, 24, 64, 69, 74, 82, 134, 138, 1055, 1077; rather than inf., 111, 371, 996, 1054 f., 1071, 1077; use, 120, 244, 393 f., 400, 430 f., 584, 907 f., 928 f., 933, 935, 940, 943, 950, 960 f., 980, 1054 f., 1087 f.; Ινα πληρωθῇ, 120; c. pres. indic., 325; Ινα μή c. indic., 127, 194, 984, 1169; c. fut. indic., 127, 194; ε-ιν an auxiliary, 933; constr., 201, 203, 292, 325, 330, 850; origin, 249, 301; c. oin-os, 699; c. μή, 134, 983-4, 987, 995, 1169; Ινα clause as subject, 393, 430, 992; in appositive clauses, 1078; in final clauses, 981-5, 991-4; non-final, 1072; Ινα τί, 244, 739, 916; and ὅπως, 987, 1056; in consecutive clauses, 997-9, 1002; and ὄτι, 1032, 1049, 1055, 1056; in indirect command, 1046 f.; and ἀλλά, 1187; and ellipsis, 1202; statistics in N. T., 985.
- -ινος: suffix, 158, 197.
- -ινον: ending, 154-6, 197, 273; dimin. end., 66.
- Ιόπη: spelling, 214.
- -ιος: ending, 159, 197, 273, 276.
- Ιουδαίω: 150.
- Ιουδαίως: 160, 205.
- Ιουδαίος: 95.
- -ιοθέτ: fut. end., 355.
- -ις: ending, 261, 296.
- -ισα: 87, 319.
- -ισών: fut. end., 355.
- Ισθί: 328, 330.
- -ισκων: verb suffix, 869.
- Ισμεν: 87, 238-9, 319.
- Ισο-: in comp., 168.
- Ισος: accent, 231.
- Ισραήλ: and art., 760.
- -ισσα: suffix, 155.
- Ιστάων: 316.
- Ιστάω: compounds and forms, 316.
- Ιστε: 87, 238-9, 319, 329, 360, 941.
- Ιστημι: compounds and forms, 225, 231, 305, 306, 310, 315 f., 319 f., 346, 359, 366, 1212, 1216; Ιστω, 307; Ιστη, 327; Ιστην, 346-8, 800, 817; Ιστήθην, 817; Ιστακα, 320, 359; Ιστηκα, 320, 358-9, 364, 895; (ε)Ιστήκειν, 366; Ιστώς, Ιστηκώς 320, 734 f.; voice of, 800, 817.
- Ιστορέω: 80.
- -ιστος: ending, 276 ff.
- Ισχύς: 148 n., 231.
- Ισχύω: 351; constr., 478.
- -ισω: fut. end., 355.
- Ιτουραία: c. art., 788.
- Ιχθύδιον: 155.
- -ιω: fut. in, 355.
- Ιώνης: forms, 194, 214, 255, 258.
- -ιων: ending, 276 f.
- Ιωσής: form, 263, 268.
- Ιωσήφ: and art., 761.
K

κ: 216, 223, 346 f., 358 f., 1210; in perf., 358.


καθαίρω: compounds and forms, 1216.

καθαπερ: use, 967, 1154.

καθαρίζω: meaning, 80; formation, 150; augment of, 1209; compounds and forms, 183, 183 n., 1216.

καθαρός: 80.

καθέξομαι: forms and other compounds, 1216.

καθείς: in mod. Gk., 292, 68.

καθεξής: 171.

καθηγήτης: 138.

καθηκω: use, 886.


καθημερινός: 158.

καθίζω: use, 866; compounds and forms, 1216.

καθίστμι: constr., 480, 481, 486.

καθό: use, 967; c. ἐὰν, 967.

καθότε: use, 722, 963, 967; c. ἃν, 967.


καθώς: use, 433, 963, 968; in or. obl., 1045.

καθουσπέρ: use, 968, 1154.

καί: crasis, 208, 984; use, 94, 133, 134, 135, 393, 426-9, 432, 443 f., 680, 947 f., 951, 1041, 1136, 1188; δὲ καί 122; καί ἵσου, 120, 122; καί αὐτός, -ῆ 122; καί= ὅτι, 393, 426; καί= 'and yet,' 426; καί ταῦτα, 1129, 1140; c. αὐτός, 441; c. τοῦτο, 460, 487, 1140; c. καί, 427, 566; c. numerals, 672; c. art., 694 f., 724; and οὖν, 705; with several attributives, 785-9; and can, 968; correlative, 969; in concessive clauses, 1026; in or. obl., 1047; c. γε, 1129, 1140; in mod. Gk., 1146; c. negatives, 1164, 1173; discussed, 1179-83.

καίνος: meaning, 80, 176.

καίπερ: use, 431, 1129; c. part., 1124, 1129, 1140.

καίρος: form and meaning, 522 f.

καίτω: use, 1129, 1140, 1154.

καίτοιγε: use, 1129, 1154.

καίω: meaning, 828; compounds and forms, 185, 350, 352, 1216.

κακ: in comp., 164.

κάκει: 208.

κάκεινος: crasis, 208.

κακλογέω: and case, 473.

κακοπάθεια: 80, 156.

κακών: ὁ κακώσων, 127; c. inf., 1068.

κακώς ἔχειν: 546, 799.

καλέω: meaning, 115; constr., 478, 480; as copula, 394, 457; c. pred. acc., 480, 485; use, 485, 885; imperf. tense, 885; καλέσω, 349, 355; compounds and forms, 349, 355, 907 f., 1216.

κάλλιον: form, 277 f.; meaning, 665.

καλο: in compounds, 164, 166.

καλός: meaning, 661; c. infinitive, 1084; καλόν c. εἰμι, 276, 886, 1084.

καλύπτω: class, 353.


κάμηλος: 95, 192.

καμιμώω: 204.

καμιμω: c. part., 1121; forms of, 1216.

καν: 208, 984, 1025.


καραδεκώνε: 164.

καρδία: inst., 487; loc., 523.

καρτερέω: forms of, 833; c. part., 1121.

κατ: 204.

κατ': 207.

κατά: form, 80, 204, 223; in comp., 163-5, 166, 169, 476, 511, 558, 561, 827 f.; cases with, 491, 531, 569 f.; in adv. phrases, 550; κατ' ὅρα, 83; τὸ καθ' ἡμέραν, 487; frequency, 556; in mod. Gk., 557, 570; with verbs, 560; case-form, 570; contrasted with ἀνά, 571; contrasted with ἀντί, 523; discussed, 605-9; and παρά, 616; and ὑπέρ, 630; with ἐξ, 673; with ὅσον, 733, 963, 967; with ὃς, 967; in prepositional phrases, 792; with inf., 1069.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

καταβαίνω: forms, 328, 330; constr., 856; use, 895
καταβαρέω: trans., 455, 476.
καταβαρεῖν: c. acc., 477.
καταγγελέω: 80, 166.
καταγγέλλω: meaning, 330, 833.
κατάγνωμι: κατέξει, κατεαγώσιμοι, 365, 1212.
καταγωνίζω: 477.
καταδούλω: voice of, 802.
κατα-: case-form, 296, 605
κατακαίω: meaning, 828.
κατάκλιμα: constr., 482.
κατάκριμα: 80, 156, 166.
κατακρίνω: constr., 784; meaning, 828;
   in or. obl., 1035 f.
κατάκρισις: 156.
καταλαλέω: trans., 455.
καταλαμβάνω: voice of, 812; in or. obl., 1036.
καταλέγω: form, 341.
καταλαλαγή: 115.
καταλλάσσω: 115.
κατάλωμα: 151, 166.
καταλώώ: meaning, 828; constr., 857.
κατανεύω: c. inf., 1068.
καταντάω: use, 80, 863.
κατάνυξις: 151.
καταπαύω: trans. and intrans., 800.
καταπέτασμα: 80, 167.
καταπονέω: 455.
καταράμαι: and case, 473.
κατάρατος: use, 1096.
καταργέω: aor. of, 851.
κατακτικόν: form, 343.
καταστομίζω: c. acc., 477.
καταστέλλω: 65 n.
καταφεύγω: meaning of, 827 f
καταφρονέω: c. gen., 573.
καταχέω: form, 342.
καταχράμαται: 476-7.
κατέναντί: formation, 160, 171, 297;
   use, 639, 643 f.
κατενώπιον: formation, 160, 171, 297;
   use, 644.
κατηγόραμαται: meaning, 564.
κατεσθίω: meaning, 564.
κατέχω: 139.
κατηγορέω: constr., 136, 473 n., 475 n.,
   511.
κατήρω: 80, 166.
κατήρχεσις: 65.
κατηρχέω: 65, 485, 486.
κατηρχεῖν: trans., 455.
κατοπισθέν: use, 647.
κατοπτρίζω: voice of, 810.
κατόρθωμα: 153.
κάτω: adj. stem, 160; case, 296; use,
   298, 300.
κατώτερος: 160, 278, 297, 298.
καύδα: spelling, 211
καυματίζω: acc. c. pass., 485.
καυσών: 149.
καυχάμαι: forms of, 341, 876; constr.,
   475.
καφαρναούμ: 180, 184, 219.
κε: use, 354.
κείμαι: compounds and forms of, 316,
   350, 357, 375; voice of, 813; special
   use of ἐκείμην, 906.
κείνος: Ionic, 206.
κείρια: form, 197.
κείρω: voice of, 809.
κελεύω: constr., 514, 1084; in or. obl.,
   1036 f.; c. acc. and inf., 111, 857,
   1078, 1084; c. obj. inf., 1036 f.
κέλλω: spelling, 206.
κέν: in rel. clauses, 958.
κεν: in verbs, 164.
κενός: in comp., 169; c. abl., 372.
κενῶς: 160.
κεράνυμμα: compounds and forms, 317,
   1216.
κεραννύω: compounds and forms, 1216.
κερδαίων: forms of, 232, 349, 1216.
κερδάω: forms of, 1217.
-κες: 2d pers. sing. end., 309, 337.
κεφαλαίον: 149.
κεφαλή: use, 781.
κεφαλίζω: 149.
κεφαλίζω: 149.
κήρυξ: accent, 230.
κηρύσσω: meaning, 115; use of part.,
   1106.
Κηφᾶς: 105.
-κι: 742.
κινδυνεύω: use, 884.
κιννάμωμον: 111.
κίς (κί): Thessalian Gk., 291.
-κκ-: 214.
κλάω: constr., 475, 853; meaning, 834; forms, 185, 352, 355, 1217.
κλάδον: form, 211.
κλάω: compounds and forms, 185, 1217.
κλέις: accent, 231; forms, 265.
κλείω: compounds and forms, 340, 1217.
kληρονομέω: constr., 475.
κλητος: 115, 125.
κλίβανος: 63.
κλίμα: spelling, 230.
κλυνάριον: 155.
κλυτή: 80, 119.
κλυτίδον: 155.
kλίνω: trans. and intrans., 800; compounds and forms, 1217.
kνήθω: 149, 353.
kομμά: 65 n.; voice of, 817, 819; aor. of, 817, 848.
kονύς: readings, 202; use, 691.
kοινωνία: 115.
kοινωνύς: constr., 504.
kόκκινος: 80, 158.
kολάζωμαι: 80.
kολαφίζω: 80, 149.
kολλάω: meaning, 80; voice of, 817, 819.
kολλυβιστής: 120, 154.
kολλούριον: readings, 202.
Κολαβών: 149.
Κολοσσαί: form, 184 f.
kομίζω: use, 878; compounds and forms 813, 1217
κόπος: 65 n., 80.
kόπτω: constr., 475; voice of, 809; compounds and forms, 1217.
kοπιάω: meaning, 150; forms, 341
κοράσιον: 64, 80, 118, 155.
kορβάν: 95, 236, 270.
kορέψωμαι: forms, 1217
κοσμικός: use, 777.
kόσμιος: meaning, 115, 134; and art., 796.
kράβατος: spelling, 65, 119, 213.
kράζω: intrans., 801; use, 895 1.; compounds and forms, 325, 348, 361, 907, 1217; κέκραγα, 896, 898.
kραταίω: 149.
kρατέω: constr., 455, 473 n., 475, 475 n., 508, 511; kind of action, 865.
kράτιστος: 278.
kράτος: 148 n.
kρείσσων: form, 218, 277 f., 299, 669; superlative of, 670; κρέισσων with ην, 886.
kρείττων: 72, 218.
kρέμαμαι: compounds and forms, 316 f., 350, 1217.
kρεμαννώ, κρεμάζω και κρεμάω: compounds and forms, 317, 1217.
kρέω: root, 175.
kρίμα: 153.
kρίμα: accent, 186; form, 230.
kρίνω: constr., 478, 511; meaning, 828; use, 905; compounds and forms, 233, 1217.
kρίσις: in John, 134; ὅτι with, 1033.
kρύθω: new pres., 147; imperf. of compound, 351.
kρυπτός: and art., 764.
kρύστω: constr., 483; voice of, 807, 817; compounds and forms, 1217.
kρυσταλλίζω: 150.
kρυφά: Doric, 249, 295.
kτάμακα: meaning, 80; constr., 472; voice of 810; forms of, 871.
kτίζω: use, 896.
kτίσις: and πάς, 772.
kτίσμα: 151.
kτίστης: 151, 231.
kυκλόθεν: use, 644.
kυλίω: compounds and forms, 1217.
kύμνοος: 95, 105, 111.
kυνάριον: 118, 155.
kυρία: 81, 173.
kυριακός: 80, 116, 158.
kυριεύω: 473 n.
kύριος: voc. of, 466; gen. or abl., 503; and art., 761, 785 f., 795; meaning, 80, 81, 97, 116; ἐν κυρίῳ, 115.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

κυριότης: 154.
κωλύω: use, 838, 863; constr., 1089, 1171.
κκωμόπολις: 167.

Λ

λ: 211, 216, 352, 356.
λαγχάνω: c. inf., 1060.
λάθρα: 295.
λακέω or λασκω: form, 1217.
λαλέω: use of fut., 873; c. ὠτί, 1034; in or obl., 1048; a Hellenism, 1077.
λαμή: 105.
λαμβάνω: compounds and forms of, 210, 231, 327 f., 939, 1217; ἐλαβα, 82; ἐλαβαν, 339; λάβε, 231, 327-8; ἐλήμα, 359, 364, 899, 901; c. pred. acc., 480; c. 482; use of aor. part., 859, 1127, 1135; perf. use, 897, 899 ff.; meaning, 829.
λανθάνω: constr., 551, 1102, 1120; compounds and forms, 1217.
λάδος: 63, 65 n., 407.
λατρεύω: 164.
λατρευω: constr., 540.
λειτουργία: 81, 193.
λειτουργικός: 80, 158, 169.
λευκός: 263.
ληνός: 253, 410.
ληστής: forms, 409.
λίβανος: 95, 96, 105.
λιβερτίνος: use, 109; constr., 788.
λιθος: -- in comp., 164.
λίθος: gender of, 253; reading, 718.

λικμάν: 80.
λιμός: gender of, 63, 63 n., 253, 253 n., 410.
λιμπάνω: 65 n., 147.
λίπανω: root, 197.
λίψ: 80.
--λα: 214.
λογεία: 80, 152, 197.
λογία: 65.
λογίζομαι: voice of, 816, 819; c. εἰς, 481; c. two acc., 489; ὠτί with, 1035; compounds and forms, 1217.
λογο-: in comp., 164, 167.
λόγος: meaning, 97, 134-5; formation, 151; forms, 327; ὠτί with, 1033.
λοιδορέω: and case, 473.
λοιπόν: τὸ λοιπὸν, 294, 487, 488; τοῦ λοιποῦ, 295.
λοῦω: compounds and forms, 80, 340, 1217; constr., 486.
λωμαίνομαι: and case, 473.
λυπέω: use, 871; c. acc., 473 n.; c. part., 1122.
λύπη: gen., 515.
λυσιτελέω: c. dat., 472
λύτρον: 115, 175.
λυτρόω: 97, 115.
λυτρωτής: 154.
λυχνία: 65.
λύω: accent, 230; reading, 202; form, 328, 333, 347; constr., 856; in mod. Gk., 870; meaning, 828.

Μ

μ: 210, 216, 362.
μαθητεύω: formation, 148; constr., 475; trans., 65, 800.
Μαθθαίος: spelling, 215.
--ματ: per. end., 340.
μάκαρ: adj., 272.
μακάνω: adv., 294; adjectival, 547.
μακρο-: in comp., 164, 169.
μακρόθεν: ἀπὸ μακρόθεν, 297, 300, 545.
μάλιστα: use, 279, 298, 488, 663, 670.
μάλλον: constr., 276, 278 f., 298, 663;
positive, 278, 663; μᾶλλον c. comparative, 278, 488; adv., 298, 663.

μαμωνάς: 95, 105, 111, 214, 254.

Μανάσσης: form, 268.

μανθάνω: in or. obl., 1040; c. inf., 1038, 1040, 1103, 1122; c. part., 1040, 1122; compounds and forms, 1217.

μάνυα: 95, 270.

μαρανά, θά: 105.

Μαρίαμ: 96, 214, 259.

μαρτυρέω: μαρτυροῦμαι, 80; aor. of, 850; use, 134, 135, 894; constr., 479, 1085; in or. obl., 1036.

μαρτυρία: use, 135; ὅτι with, 1033.

μάρτυς: c. art., 136, 414; ὅτι with, 1033.

ματαιότης: 156.

μάχαρα: 82, 256.

μέ: prep. in mod. Gk., 535, 570.

μεγαλότης: 148 n., 156.

μεγαλοσύνη: spelling, 156, 201.

μέγας: forms, 294; use, 661; superlative of, 278-9, 670.

μεγιστάν: 155.

μεθεδέα: 152.

μεθρίων: 156.

μεθύσκω: formation, 150; constr., 854.

μείζων: forms, 272, 274, 277; μειζότερος, 80, 277; in comparison, 80, 663.

μείρομαι: spelling, 206.

μελαντώτερος: use, 277.

μελίσσιος: 159.

μέλλω: augment, 82, 368; forms of, 368 f., 1217; and tense, 824; constr., 857, 870, 877 ff.; in periphrastic forms, 889, 891; imperf., 884; use, 882, 884, 921, 1082, 1126; as adj., 157 n.; μέλλων = 'future,' 373; c. inf., 1056, 1078; c. pres. inf., 870, 882, 889, 891, 1081; c. fut. inf., 369, 877, 882, 1080, 1082; c. aor. inf., 857, 878, 882, 1056, 1078, 1081; c. part., 877-8, 1118, 1126; use of part., 373, 1118.

μέλω: μέλει c. ὅτι, 965; compounds and forms, 1217.


μέμνημαι: in or. obl., 1040

μέμφομαι: constr., 473, 475

μέν: particle, 302; postpositive, 424; c. δέ, 127, 132, 135, 428, 432, 747, 749, 1145, 1186; without δέ, 440; and asyndeton, 440; and art., 694; c. ὧς, 695 f.; c. ὅτι, 705; c. ὁλος, 747; c. ἐτος, 749; antithetic, 750, 1145; discussed, 1150-3; c. καί, 1183; c. οὖν, 695, 1151, 1191.

--μεν: per. end., 370; Homeric inf. end., 249.

-μεναι: Homeric inf. end., 370.

-μενο: part. suffix, 373.

μενοθγέ: use, 80, 425.

μέντω: use, 424, 1154, 1188.

μένω: constr., 475; compounds and forms, 233, 475, 1218; fut., 356; aor. of, 850, 856.

μέριμνα: 62.

μεριμνάω: c. μή and imperative, 853.

μεριστής: 154.

μέρος: use, 487.

μεσιτέω: 148.

μέσον: use, 471.

Μεσοποταμία: c. art., 788.

μέσος: in comp., 167; use, 550; c. διά, 581; and art., 775; μέσω c. ἐν, 1210.


μέτα: in comp., 164, 561; elision, 223; in phrases, 226; origin, 249; cases with, 491, 524, 531, 533, 569 f.; and σύν, 526, 626 f.; frequency, 556; in mod. Gk., 557; c. verbs, 560, 562; case-form, 570; and ἐν, 588; and κατά, 607; discussed, 609 12; and πρὸς, 625; c. ταύτα, 704; c. inf., 626, 858, 909, 979, 1039, 1060, 1069, 1074, 1092; c. perf. inf., 909; statistics c. inf., 858, 979, 1069, 1074, 1092.

μεταβαίνω: forms, 328.

μεταδίωμι: constr., 510.

μεταλαμβάνω: constr., 510, 519.

μεταμέλειμαι: voice of, 819.

μεταμορφώ: constr., 486.

μετανοεί: meaning, 115, 134; reading, 1010.

μεταξύ: verbs, 562; origin, 626; use, 645; c. art., 789.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Usage/Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>metatižēmi</td>
<td>use, 879.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>metéξw</td>
<td>constr., 509.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>métōchos</td>
<td>constr., 505.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>metrio-</td>
<td>in comp., 164.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mέχρι</td>
<td>and final 5, 221, 296; and δέχρι, 639; use, 645, 954, 975; not relative, 954; in prepositional phrases, 792; c. δν, 975; c. inf., 979, 1074.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mή: form, 244; in mod. Gk., 1167; encroaches on οὐ, 74, 82, 1167; use, 330, 401, 423, 430, 436 ff., 751, 850-4, 890, 916, 925, 931, 933 f., 937, 941 f., 962 f., 981; in interrogation, 436, 850, 917 f., 1157, 1168, 1175; meaning, 930; in prohibitions, 630, 851 f., 854-6, 947; in relative clauses, 962, 1169; c. ind., 963, 1168-9; c. pres. imp., 430, 851-4, 890, 1170; c. aor. imp., 330, 851 ff., 856, 925, 933, 1170; c. subj. in prohibitions, 330, 850 ff., 854, 925, 930-3, 934, 941, 943, 981, 1169-70; c. subj., 437; c. nouns, 1172; c. ὅρα, 430, 854, 932; c. βλέπετε, 430, 932; c. γένοντο, 325, 401, 854, 939 f., 1003; c. πάς, 292, 437, 752 f.; c. οὐ (see ob), 874 f., 917, 929, 934, 962, 1004, 1156-66; mή οὐ . . . , 1169, 1171, 1173; c. τίς, 951; c. ἴνα (see ἴνα); c. πως, 985, 987 ff., 995 f.; c. ὁπως, 985 f.; c. ποτε, 987 ff., 995 f.; c. εἰ, 1011, 1024 f., 1169; ὅτι μή, 1169; in final clauses, 987 ff., 995 f.; in conditions, 1011 f., 1016 ff.; in indirect command, 1046; c. inf., 423, 1061, 1066, 1093 ff., 1170-1; c. part., 74, 127, 1136 ff., 1172; discussed, 1166-77; in or obl., 1045.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-μή: suffix, 151.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μηδέ: use, 428, 1173, 1185.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μηδέν: use, 1156.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μηθείς: form, 72, 181, 219, 282; use, 282, 750 f., 1094, 1156 ff.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήν: form, 929, 1151; c. εἰ, 1004, 1024; c. ob, 1161.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήποτε: use, 135, 203, 244, 1173; c. fut., 203, 988, 1147; c. subj., 988.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήπως: use, 135, 244, 1173; discussed, 988, 995.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήτε: use, 427, 1179; discussed, 1189.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήτηρ: constr., 501.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήτι: use, 292, 917, 1172.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μήτις: form, 292; use, 743, 751, 933.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--μ-verbs: use, 147, 335 f.; discussed, 306-20; forms of, 345 ff., 350 ff., 358.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-μ: suffix, 306; in opt., 335.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μιένω: forms, 1218.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μίγμα: spelling, 230.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μίγνωμι: compounds and forms, 317, 1218.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μικράς: 80.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μιμνήσκω: constr., 448, 487, 509; c. gen., 482; c. 67-1., 1035; c. πάντα, 479, 487; compounds and forms, 893, 1218.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μίσθιος: 159.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μισθώ: voice of, 809.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μιτυληνάιος: use, 199.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μιτυλήνη: readings, 199.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--μμ--: 214.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μνᾶ: 111.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μνημονεύω: c. gen. and acc., 509; c. ὅτι, 1035, 1041; c. part., 1041; in or obl., 1035, 1041.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μνηστεύω: forms, 364, 1218.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μογιλάζω: 80, 169, 210, 231.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μόλις: use, 296.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μονή: 80.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--μονή: suffix, 151.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μονο--: in comp., 164.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μονογενής: 97.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μόνος: use, 423, 549, 657, 659; μόνον adv., 657, 659; and art., 776; μόνον c. οὖ, 947, 1161 f.; μόνον c. μή, 947, 1162.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μονόθαλμος: 62, 65, 120.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--μός: suffix, 151 f.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μοσχο--: in comp., 164.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μυκτηρίζω: 150.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μυλών: 154, 231.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μυριάς: 283.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μύριοι: use, 233, 283.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
μυστήριον: 81, 133, 146.
μωρέ: 95.
Μουσῆς: spelling, 203, 205; forms, 268.

-ν: class. in pres., 352; in root of verb, 352.

-να: in verbs, 351.

ναί: discussed, 1150.
-να: inf. end., 370 f.

ναός: 55, 63, 97.

νάρδος: 96.

ναύς: 80, 145.
-νε: in verbs, 352.

νεανίας: type, 256.

νεκρός: 149.

νέος: meaning, 176; comparative of 664.

νεώφυτος: 80, 169.

νεωτερικός: 159.

νή: discussed, 80, 487,
νη:-: prefix, 161, 163.

νήθω: 149, 353.

νηπιάζω: 147.

νηστεία: 53 n.

νηστεύω: constr., 478.

νήστις: form, 266, 275.

νικάω: use, 135; νικῶν with art., 136, 243, 414; forms, 203; constr., 475; meaning, 865.

νίπτω: new pres., 147; voice of, 806.

νίτρων: 96.
-νυ: 213 ff.

-νυ: in verbs, 352.

νοέω: in or. obl., 1036.

νομίζω: constr., 480; in or. obl., 1036 f.

νόμος: in Paul, 129 n.; in comp., 167; use, 780; and art., 796.

νοσσός: 204.

νοσφίζω: voice of, 810.

νοθεσία: 65.

νομηνία: 204.

νομεχώς: use, 297, 298; form, 170, 171.

νοῦς: 261.
-νς: acc. end., 265.
-ντ-: part. end., 373.
-νυ-: in verbs, 147, 306, 351.

νύκτα καὶ ἱμέραν: 470, 495.

-νυμ: verbs in, 311.

νῦν: constr., 546 f.; form, 296; use, 424, 548, 1117, 1147; ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν, 83; τὸ τὰ νῦν, 487; c. δὲ 1013.

νυνί: use, 290, 1147; loc. form, 296, 523.

νύσσω: compounds and forms, 1218.
-νω: verbs in, 147, 352.

-ζα: aor. in, 349.

ξενίζομαι: constr., 475.

ξενοδοχεῖον: 138.


ξηραῖων: compounds and forms, 836, 847, 1218.

ξῦν: form, 626 f.

ξυράω: forms of, 184, 342, 1218; voice of, 809.

ο: vowel, 178, 181 f.; vowel-changes, 189 f., 196, 198-201, 367; o-verbs, 308, 324, 367; o/e suffix, 147, 305, 323, 327; prothetic, 1209.

ό, ή, τό: c. δέ 290; c. νικῶν, 136, 243, 414; crasis of τοῦ, 208; as d strative, 290; constr., 502; c. ἐστίν, 411; τοῦ and inf. as subject, 1059; τοῦ and inf., 97, 122, 512, 858, 990, 996, 1067, 1077, 1086-88 f.; as ablative, 1061; after nouns, 1061, 1063, 1066; and inf., 765, 858, 1053-4, 1059, 1065; τῷ and inf. (see c. inf.); c. inf., 122, 512, 584, 587, 659, 858, 990, 996, 1001 ff.,
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Definitions</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>οἰκονόμος</td>
<td>161.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἰκτείρω</td>
<td>474.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἰκτήριον</td>
<td>65 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμαι</td>
<td>use, 406, 1082; c. οὐ, 1162.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-οίν.:</td>
<td>inf. end., 194, 343, 371.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶο:</td>
<td>archaic gen. end., 494.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶος:</td>
<td>use, 291, 429, 1139; and τοιοῦτος, 710; discussed, 731 f.; and ὤτι, 1034; in or. obl., 1045.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-οίς:</td>
<td>dat. end., 249, 266; loc. end., 452.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἱ τὴν παραλίαν:</td>
<td>disputed reading, 469.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οὐχομαί</td>
<td>use, 1120.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶκ:</td>
<td>for οἶκ, 199.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴκτω:</td>
<td>use, 282.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶλθρεύω</td>
<td>compounds and forms, 189 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶλγον:</td>
<td>adv., 488.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶλγως:</td>
<td>160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶλμι:</td>
<td>use, 893; compounds and forms, 317, 1218.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶλλω:</td>
<td>compounds and forms, 1218.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶλθρεύω:</td>
<td>148, 189, 189 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἶμερομαί</td>
<td>form, 164, 198, 206, 225.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ομεν:</td>
<td>per. end., 200.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμυμι:</td>
<td>compounds and forms, 317, 371; constr., 475, 479, 484, 1032; c. ἐν, 120, 588; c. ἐίς, 120; use of aor. part., 859.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμυω:</td>
<td>constr., 479, 484.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμοθμαδόν:</td>
<td>form, 295, 296.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμιος:</td>
<td>constr., 530, 1206; accent, 135, 231; fem., 272.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμιοδ:</td>
<td>constr., 530; compounds and forms, 1218.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμολογέω:</td>
<td>meaning, 80; forms from, 295, 298; constr., 475, 478, 480, 541, 1103, 1122; ομολ. ομολογίαν, 478; c. ἐν 108, 524, 588; in or. obl., 1035, 1041.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμολογομένως</td>
<td>160, 298.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμου:</td>
<td>in comp., 164; adv. of place, 295, 299.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οἴμως:</td>
<td>accent, 233; adv., 295; use, 423, 1140, 1154, 1188; in mod. Gk., 1146.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
–ον: per. end., 335, 348.

όνναρ: κατ’ ονναρ, 120.

όναριον: 155.

όνειδίως: constr., 473, 475, 480, 482.

όνειδεσμός: 66, 152.

όνικός: 158.

όνινημα: forms, 310, 348, 350.

όνομα: in "pregnant construction,"
525; "cases" of, 447; ένοματος, 452; ένοματι, 487; c. εἰς, ἐν, ἐπί, 120; in circumlocution, 649; of God, 135; meaning 'person,' 80, 91; ὅτι in opposition with, 1033.

όνοματής: constr., 480.

όνεπερ: reading, 291, 710, 1154.

—οντο: per. end., 340.


ὁπερ: use in LXX, 710.

ὁπισθεν: use, 300, 645.8s.

ὁπίσως: c. verbs, 562; use, 301, 645.

ὁποίος: use, 291, 1176 f.; and τοιούτος, 710; and ποίος, 740; discussed, 732; in or. obl., 1045.

ὁπόταυ: use, 971.

ὁπότε: use, 300, 971; origin, 954.

ὁπου: adv., 295, 288 f., 548; use, 712, 722, 969; ὅπου ἄν c. ind., 972 f.; in or. obl., 1045.

ὁπτάως: new pres., 73, 147; voice of, 820.

ὁπτασία: 66.

ὁπως: in John, 134; use, 430, 731, 933, 953, 980, 982; discussed, 985-7; c. μή, 980, 987; c. ἄν in N. T. and LXX, 986; and ὑν, 992 f., 994; ὅπως πληρωθῇ, 120; in final clauses, 994 f.; in or. obl., 1045; in indirect command, 1046; c. if., 1056; disappearance of, 980 n., 981, 1056.

ὁρα: use, 330, 430, 874, 932, 935, 949.

ὁρατός: 157.

ὁραώς: in John, 134 n.; compounds and forms, 188, 324, 339, 344, 348, 364, 368, 876, 1211, 1218; fut., 813; no aorist, 344; ὠπει, 193, 339; ἐώραμεν, 68, 359; ἐώρακα, 364; ἐώρακα, 97, 134 n., 359, 365, 368; ἐώρων, 368; voice, 819 f.; roots, 823; in or. obl., 864, 1035, 1038, 1041; use, 871, 893, 901; use of ὄρα and ὄρατε, 932 f., 949; use of parts., 1118; perf. of, 1211.

ὁργίζομαι: meaning, 834.

ὁρέγομαι: constr., 508.

ὁρθο:— in comp., 164.

ὁρθός: use, 549, 659.

ὁρθοτίως: 65, 150.

ὁρθοτυπός: 158.

ὁρθώς: use, 549, 659.

ὁρίζω: constr., 863.

ὁρίζως: constr., 475, 483.

ὁριστίον: 269.

ὁριζει: spelling, 219, 267.

ὁρος: contraction, 203, 268; and art., 760.

—ὁρος: ending, 199.

ὁρόσκοπως: compounds and forms, 349, 1218.

ὁς: demonstrative, 290; relative, 291; followed by pronoun, 97; c. ἂν and ἔαν, 72, 191; c. γε, 244, 291; c. τε, 290; ἄν not expressed, 425; reading, 438; ἄν with verbs, 511; ὃ with ἔαν, 587; = καὶ ὄτος, 111; ἔν ὃς, 696, 714, 722, 953; use, 693, 706, 928, 953 f., 956, 959; discussed, 695 f., 711-26; and ὄτος, 698, 703; and τοιούτος, 710; in n Homer, 711; ὃ with ἐστιν, 411, 713; and ὄστις, 726; value of, 728; and οἶος, 731; and μέν, antithetic, 750; and attraction, 820; c. ἔαν, 959; and ἄν, 961; c. κατά, 967; in consec. clauses, 1001; in or. obl., 1044 f.


ὁσάκις: use, 973.

—ὁσαν: per. end., 63 bis, 73, 335, 343; in mod. Gk., 138.

ὁς ἄν θέλῃ: use, 961.

ὁσοδήπερ: reading, 710.

ὁσοδήποτε: use, 291.

ὁσμή εὐωδίας: 97.

ὁσος: form, 291; and οὕτος, 698; and τοιούτος, 710; discussed, 732 f., 966 f.; καθ’ ὁσον, and ἐρ’ ὁσον, 963; in rel. clauses, 956 ff.; in or. obl., 1045; use, 1177.

ὁσπερ: use, 291.

ὁστέα: 62, 203.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS 1277

οστέων: 203, 225, 260.
οστις: form, 290 ff.; in LXX, 727, 729; use, 693, 928; for ὠς, 67; and τοιούτος, 710; discussed, 726-31; and τις, 737; ὧν for ὄτι, 960; ἐώς ὄτου, 291, 729; in rel. clauses, 956 ff., 959-61; in or. obl., 1044 ff., 1176.

οὐτράκινος: form, 158.

-οτ:- in perf. part., 373.

όταυ: use, 300, 325; in LXX, 325, 927 ff.; and οὔτος, 700; c. ind., 82, 118, 972; in temp. clauses, 958, 970 ff.

ότε: adv., 296, 300 ff.; origin, 953; use, 953, 970 ff.; c. subj., 972.

ο τε: in Attic, 290.

-ότερος: compar. end., 278.

ότι: in John, 134; origin, 953; wider use, 74, 82, 97, 111, 134; consecutive, 1001; recitative, 97, 120, 433, 442, 951, 1027; exegetical use, 1034; repetition of, 1034; driven out by πώς, 1032 f.; drives out ως, 1032; position of verbs with, 965, 1034 ff.; and οντός, 111, 120, 371, 437, 442, 489 ff., 584, 1047, 1054 ff.; in place of inf., 111, 371, 489-90, 584, 1055 f.; ousts inf., 1054 f.; ὦτι and ἵνα blending, 1055-6; causal, 962, 964, 997, 1192; and hiatus, 206; c. εἴστην, 233; and ὦ τι, 243, 291; ως ὦτι, 964, 1033; τι ὦτι, 916, 1034; ὦτι clauses, 120, 393, 400, 426, 430, 951, 952, 954, 1001; ὦτι clause as subject, 393, 430, 1034; in apposition, 400, 699, 1034, 1079; as object, 430, 951, 1034; with verbs of saying, 120; ‘prolepsis’ of subst. before, 1034; and οὔτος, 699; and ἐκείνος, 708; use, 724, 951-3, 962-5, 997, 1054 ff., 1085 f., 1122, 1192; in interrogation, 730, 916; in or. obl., 1027-49; c. negatives, 963, 965, 1034, 1173; c. καῖ, 1182; c. πληρή, 1187.

ὁ τι: see ὄστις.

ου: vowel-changes, 199, 202 ff.


οῦ, οὐκ, οὖχ: use, 401, 418, 423 f., 928 f., 937, 962 f., 965, 995; οὖχ, 224; C. τις, 751; c. ἐτις, 751; μη, 850, 854, 873 ff., 889, 929, 933, 942, 962, 950, 957, 1004; οὐ μη c. fut., 874-5, 889, 929, 942, 1157, 1168, 1174; οὐ μη c. subj., 854, 929, 934, 962, 1004, 1161, 1174; οὐδ' οὐ μη, 854, 1165, 1175; οὐ c. fut., 889, 1157, 1162, μη οὐ, 987, 1161, 1169; οὐ . . . πᾶς ὦ, 94; in interrogation, 917 f.; meaning, 930; c. μένου ὁλα̇καί, 947; in conditions, 1011 f., 1016 ff.; c. ind., 947, 1093 ff., 1162; c. part., 1136 ff.; discussed, 1154-77; c. καῖ, 1183; proclitic, 1211.

οὖ: accent, 229; personal pronoun (not in N. T.), 286, 679; relative, 229, 298 ff., 301 bis; adverb, 717, 722, 969; use, 286, 298 ff., 301, 717, 722, 969.

οὐδ': accent, 231; use, 302, 1193.

οὐαι: gender, 270, 410; interjection, 302; in ellipsis, 391; case with, 135, 487; use, 1193.

οὐδε: elision, 207, 1210; and εἶτ, 741; use, 1156, 1165, 1185.

οὐδείς: form, 219; use, 282, 292, 1094; c. εἴστιν ως, 63, 726; discussed, 750.

οὐδέν: adverb, 457; use, 1156

οὐδείς: form, 72, 97, 181, 219; use, 282, 750, 1094.

οὐκοῦν: accent, 233, 1165, 1175; use, 917, 1165, 1175.

-ομένος: part. end., 374.

οὖν: in Mark, 119; in John, 133-4, 134 n., 841; position, 424, 1192; use, 133, 424, 434, 443 f., 841; τι οὖν . . .; 916; in interrogation, 916; discussed, 1111 f.

-ουν: verb end., 341, 343.

οὕπω: form, 296.

οὕρανόθεν: 296, 300.

οὐρανός: use, 408.

-ουρος: ending, 199.

οὖς: 145, 156.

-ους: adj. end., 274.


οὔτε: use, 428, 1156 ff., 1179; discussed, 1189.

οὔτις: form, 292; use, 743, 751.
οὔτος: c. έστι, 207, 233, 244, 289 n., 399, 411 f., 416; use, 290, 401, 411, 419, 437, 693, 720, 843; with proper names, 701; resumptive, 437, 693, 698; deictic, 693, 697; relative, 693, 710; anaphoric, 697; contemptuous use, 697; preceded by articular part., 698; preceded by ὃς 698; followed by έινα, 699; followed by εἰ, 700; followed by τό-clause, 700; c. αύτός, 686; αὐτοί αὐτοῖ, 700, 705; αὐτὸ τοῦτο, 705; and ὃς, 696, 702; discussed, 697-706; and εἰκείνος, 270, 708; pleonastic, 722 f.; and ὅς, 732; τοῦτο with τί, 736; τοῦτ' ἔστιν, 207, 233-4, 244, 399, 411, 412, 416, 705; and art., 419, 770; c. articular noun, 419, 701, 770; c. ἀνάς, 771; τάστα πάντα and πάντα τάστα, 705; and ὃς, 723; c. πολύς, 774; ὅτι with prep. and, 1033 f.; c. inf., 700, 1059; in idioms, 1111; c. καί, 460, 487, 1181; τοῦτο with clause in apposition, 401, 698. 

οὔτως: form, 221, 248 295 f.; adv., 286, 298, 710; and οὔτος, 705; use, 965, 968, 1140, 1146. 

οὐχί: form, 290; use, 296, 391, 917. 

οὐθελίτης: 80, 153. 

οὐθελίμα: 153. 

οὐθελώ: use, 841, 886; constr., 1003. 

οὐθελός: use, 82, 841, 886, 923, 940, 1003 f. 

οὐθελμός: 95, 102. 

οὔθαρα: not in N. T., 981-2. 

𝑜χλο: in comp., 165. 

οχλος: breathing, 225; use, 404, 407; c. πολύς, 774. 

ψάριον: 65, 66, 155. 

ψάφος: constr., 517, 645 f.; meaning, 517. 

ψαμία: 119. 

ψάμων: 65, 66, 80, 155. 

-ώς: verbs in, 147, 149, 342 f., 351. 

II 

π: 210, 223, 353, 1210. 


παγαίνω: meaning, 865. 

παγιδεύω: 148. 

πάγω: meaning, 865. 


παιδάριον: 66. 


παιδήθεν: 119. 

παιδίον: 155. 

παιδίσκη: 1361. 

πάλαι: form, 249, 296. 

πάλιν: in comp., 167; form, 296; use, 300, 551. 

παμπληθεί: form, 170, 171; spelling, 197. 


πανήγυρις: 132. 

πανοικεί: form, 170, 171; spelling, 197. 

πανταχή: form, 295, 300, 526. 

πανταχού: form, 296, 300; use, 299. 

πάντη(η): 295. 

πάντοθεν: 300. 

πάντοτε: form, πάντως: 423. 170, 171; use, 300. 

παρά: in comp., 80, 165, 169, 565; elision, 208; origin, 80, 249, 301; case-form, 301, 482, 570; cases with, 451, 491, 524, 534, 554, 565, 567, 569 f.; instrumental case, 301, 613; c. abl., 482, 517-8, 554, 614; c. acc., 477, 491, 614, 792; c. loc., 524-5, 542, 614; c. three cases, 451, 567, 569-70, 613; constr. in comp., 132, 477, 524; c. verbs, 517 f., 560, 562; agent, 534, 636, 820; παρα—παρά, 560; παρα—ἀπό, 561; ύπερ—παρά, 562; ὕπερ—παρά, 561; παρά— 

πάντως, 423. 170, 171; use, 300. 

παράδοξος: 80, 148. 

παραβολεύομαι: 80, 148, 165. 

παραβολή: 134. 

παραγγέλλω: constr., 1047, 1084; c. οὕτω, 1035; c. ἤνα, 1046. 

παραδεισος: 80, 111.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS 1279

παραδίδωμι: forms, 309, 347.
παραθαλασσία: form, 273.
παραθήκη: 80, 166.
παραίτησις: 309, 347.
παραπέπλεω: form, 260, 296, 301, 537.
παραπηλώμεα: voice of, 810.
παρακάλεσμεν: meaning of, 66; form, 943;
constr., 475, 1035, 1085; c. τού and
inf., 1068.
παράληπος: 115, 161, 167.
παρακυπτω: 80.
παραλαμβάνω: readings, 336.
παράλογος: form, 273.
παραμετρώμεν: 80, 166.
παραπαλάσσω: form, 273. acc. c. pass., 485;
voice of, 801, 810; c. and forms of, 351,
871, 895, 1215; πέποιθα, 895.
παρανώ: aor. form, 342, 371; and case,
voice of, 801; 810; c. cases, 477; 491, 509,
524, 569 f.; c. verbs, 511, 560, 566; fre-
cquency, 556; in condensation, 567;
and κατά, 608; discussed, 616-20;
and μή, 617.
παρείση: 80, 126 n.
παρασακά: form, 171, 244; use, 646.
παρεμβολή: 64.
παρεπίθημος: 80.
παρέσχομαι: c. acc., 477, 800.
πάρεισις: 80.
παρέχω: voice of, 810; constr., 480,
853.
παριστάνω: meaning, 950.
παίστημι: constr., 473 n., 542, 855.
πάροικος: 65, 80, 102.
παρόν: 1130.
παροξύνομαι: 80, 150.
παρός: gen. form, 301.
παρουσία: 81.
παρρησία: meaning, 66; ὃτι with,
1033; spelling, 212, 1210.
πάς: in Luke, 122; ἐν πάντι, ἐν πάσι by
Paul, 116, 117; indeclinable rap,
274; c. μῆ, 292, 752 f.; use, 419,
436, 744; πάντα adv., 487; c. nega-
tives, 437, 751-3, 1163; c. ὄντος,
705; c. art., 708, 771 ff., 1107; c.
-strokes, 727; c. δόμος, 732; c. πολύς,
774; c. ὅς, 957.
πάσιγχα: 95, 105, 270.
πάσιγχα: compounds and forms of,
327, 1218; c. κακῶς, 802; constr.,
858.
Πάτερα: use, 183.
πατήρ: voc, 461 f., 464; art. with
voc. of, 465; ὁ πατ. ὁ οὐράνιος, 120;
ὁ πατ. ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, 120.
πατροπαράδοτος: 80, 169.
Παύλος: and art., 788; use, 1038.
παύω: c. part., 1102, 1121; compounds
and forms, 1218.
πεδή: case of, 249; for μετά, 609.
πεξή: form, 295.
πειθαρχεῖν: 163 n.
πειθάς: 157.
πείθω: constr., 454, 478, 540, 1084;
acc. c. pass., 485; voice of, 801,
810; compounds and forms of, 351,
871, 895, 1215; πέποιθα intrans.,
801; πέποιθα, 895.
πεινάω: aor. form, 342, 371; and case,
474, 508.
πειραίζω: voice of, 802.
πειρασμός: 152.
πειρομνή: 151.
πελεκίζω: 150.
πέμπω: 359; epistolary aor. of, 845 f.
πένης: use, 272.
πενθέω: constr., 475.
πεποίθησις: 151.
πέρ: intensive, 302, 617, 1144; dis-
cussed, 1153 f.; enclitic, 1211.
πέραν and ἄντιπέρα: c. acc., 294; use,
646.
περί: in comp., 165, 167, 477, 487,
542, 562, 564; form, 301 f., 524,
570; c. cases, 471, 491, 509, 524,
569 f.; c. verbs, 511, 560, 566; fre-
cquency, 556; in condensation, 567;
and κατά, 608; discussed, 616-20;
and πρός, 626; and ὑπέρ, 629, 632;
in prepositional phrases, 792; c.
inf., 1069; use, 616.
περιάγω: c. two acc., 480; trans. and
intrans., 477; followed by ἐν, 562;
literal sense, 617.
περιβάλλωμαι: constr., 475, 483, 485 f.,
855; voice of, 807, 809, 819.
περιβλέπω: voice of, 809, 813; mean-
ing, 838.
περίέρχομαι: constr., 477; use, 1103.
περίέχω: 800, 802.
περιζώννυμί: form, 330.
περίστημι: c. acc., 477.

原材料中的内容已经以自然语言的形式呈现。
περίκειμαι: 65 n.; constr., 485; voice of, 815-6.
περιλαμβάνω: constr., 483.
περιμένω: c. acc., 475.
περιούσιος: etymology of, 159.
περιπατέω: constr., 855.
περιποιέω: voice of, 810.
περιπατώνω: reading, 211.
περισπάμαι: 66, 80.
περισσεύσαι: form, 940.
περισσέωσα: form, 105.
περίστις: meaning, 115, 134; gen. use, 499, 515, 704; πίστει in Heb., 11, 533.
πιστός: 115, 125.
πλανήτης: 125.
πλασίων: proportional, 284, 673.
πλαστός: 126.
πλατώνω: constr., 486.
πλείον: constr., 516, 666; stereotyped form, 667.
πλείων: spelling, 187; use, 665; super-
πλεκώ: compounds and forms, 1218.
πλεονεκτέω: 80, 455.
πλεκώ: compounds and forms, 1218.
πλεονετέω: 80, 407.
πληθύνω: use, 125, 127, 871.
πληθυσμός: 155, 214, 232, 250.
πληθύς: use, 646; in mod. Gk., 1146; discussed, 1187.
πλήρης: indecl., 72, 97, 188, 274 ff., 413, 463, 464; voc., 264, 463 f.; constr., 1204.
πληρο—: in comp., 72, 165.
πληροφορέω: 72, 80, 147, 165.
πληρώω: forms of, 119, 133, 325, 343; constr., 473 n., 483, 485, 510, 857; ὑπός, ὑπάλληλος, εὐθυγράμμων, 120; meaning, 834; aor. of, 851; use, 948.
πλήρωμα: 105.
πλησίον: form, 294; use, 547, 646.
πλήσιμος: compounds and forms, 1218.
πλοιάριον: constr., 82, 521.
πλούς: 261.
πλοῦς: adj. end., 284.
πλούτος: 63, 262, 262 n.
πνεύμα: meaning, 97, 115, 125; use, 436, 590, 709; and art., 761, 795.
πνευματικός: 115, 158 f.
πνευματικός: use, 299.
πνέω: form, 342.
πνίγω: class, 351; compounds and forms, 1218.
πόθεων: 300; constr., 548; in or. obl., 1045; in questions, 1176.
πόι: form, 295.
ποιέω: forms, 325, 327; act. and mid., 802, 812; εὖ, and κακῶς, 473; c.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>kalwɔ</td>
<td>473; c. karpon, 105; c. συμ-βολιον, 105; μή c. pres. inf. and aor. subj., 852, 854, 856; constr., 480, 850, 852, 854, 856; c. τί and subj., 850, 923, 934; c. pred. acc., 480; c. two acc., 484; voice, 802, 812; use, 884, 923, 934; in narrative, 884; c. inf., 1068.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>karpo&lt;n</td>
<td>105; c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bou&lt;lion</td>
<td>105; mh&lt; c. pres. inf. and pra&lt;ktwr: 81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ti&lt; and prasiai&lt;: in Mark, 119; case, 487; dis-subj., 850, 923, 934; c. pred. acc., 487; two acc., 484; voice, 802, 812; use, 884, 923, 934; in narrative, 884; c. inf., 1068.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pra&lt;ssw: c. two acc., 484; use of inf. of, 1058; c. eũ, 1121; compounds and forms, 359, 1218.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poimai&lt;nw poi&lt;mhn: 478.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pre&lt;pw: constr., 541, 1086.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poi&lt;aj: interrogative, 916; case, 487; discussed, 740; in or. obl., 1045; in indirect question, 1176.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poi&lt;oj: interrogative, 291 f., 916; in Luke, 494; and ὅπως, 732; equal to τίς, 735; c. art., 735; dis-, cussed, 740; in or. obl., 1045; in indirect question, 1176.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>polu&lt;j: in comp., 169, 171; acc. form, 294; πολυ adv. 188; το πολυά, 487; πολλά adv., 120, 488; constr., 432, 660; in comparison, 664; c. art., 774 f.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>polu&lt;: in comp., 169, 171; acc. form, 294; πολυ adv. 188; το πολυά, 487; πολλά adv., 120, 488; constr., 432, 660; in comparison, 664; c. art., 774 f.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>potapo&lt;j: origin, 160; use, 292, 917; discussed, 7 c. τίς, 736; in or. obl., 1045.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poti&lt;zw: constr. 484, 485.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pote: adv., 29f., 300; c. μή, 987 ff., 995 f., 1173; c. part., 1124, 1139; meaning, 1147; enclitic, 1211.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>proo&lt;riɔ: in or. obl., 1087.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pro&lt;qesij: 80.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pro&lt;r: in comp., 165, 167; accent, 234; final letter of, 248; frequency of use, 122, 451, 491, 556; cases with, 491, 524, 569 f.; c. acc., 122, 451; separation implied, 517; case-form, 524, 570; c. verbs, 542, 560 ff., 566; c. verbs of speaking instead of αὐτῷ, etc., 625-6; in mod. Gk., 570;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

and ἀπό, 575; and εἰς, 596; and παρά, 613; discussed, 622-6; c. με 234, 286, 682; πρός τι, 736, 739; in prepositional phrases, 234, 792; in papyri, 990-1, 1069; c. inf., 858, 990 f., 1003, 1060, 1069, 1075, 108S; c. purpose inf., 1088; statistics c. inf., 858, 1003, 1069, 1075.

προσαναβαίνω: form, 328.

προσόδοκω: in or. obl., 1036.

προσέρχομαι: use, 120.

προσευχή: 80, 91, 151.

προσεύχομαι: form, 328; use, 874.

προσέχω: 81, 477.

προσήλυτος: 157.

πρόσθεμα: spelling, 188.

πρόσκαιρος: 65, 169.

προσκαλέω: voice of, 809.

προσκαρτερέω: 81.

προσκαρτέρησις: 80, 167.

πρόσκομμα: 115, 151.

προσκυλίω: constr., 543.

προσκυνέω: constr., 448, 455, 476 f., 540 990.

προσκύνησις: 80, 154.

προσλαμβάνω: constr., 510, 519; voice of, 809.

προσμενώ: 623.

προστάσσω: constr., 1084.

προστίθημι: c. inf., 87 n., 94, 96 n., 1078.

προσφάγιον: 156, 167.

προσφάτως: 171.

προσφέρω: form, 338.

προσφιωνέω: use, 65 n.; trans., 455; constr., 477.


προσώπολημπτέω: 94, 165.

προσώπολημψια: 165, 167.

πρόσωπον: use, 94, 95, 97, 102, 285 n, 649; c. λαμβάνειν, 94, 97.

πρότερος: form, 280, 283; adv., 487; meaning, 662; use, 669.

προτιθήμι: constr., 480; voice of, 810; in periphrastic forms, 822.

προτίθημι: constr., 480; voice of, 810; in periphrastic forms, 822.

προύπαρχω: c. part., 1103, 1121

προφήτης: 81, 116.

προφητικός: 169.

προφθάνω: use, 1120.

προχειρίσασθαι: constr., 700.

πρωί: spelling, 205; use, 295, 471; and ἀμα 638.

πρωίνος: new word, 158; readings, 201, 205.

πρωτο—: in comp., 167, 169.

πρώτος: comparison, 73, 280; ordinal, 283 f.; πρώτου adv., 294, 297, 298, 300, 460, 487, 488, 657, 659, 1152; πρώτως numeral, 160, 298; meaning, 516; use, 73, 97, 280, 306, 549, 657, 659, 662, 669 f.; and εἰς, 671.

πρωτοτοκία: 132.

πρωτότοκος: 80, 169, 233.

πρωτότοκος: 80, 169, 233.

πρόσωπον: use, 298; c. μή, 987 ff., 995 f.; enclitic, 1211.


P


ρ-verbs: redupl., 364.

ρ-verbs: redupl., 364.

ραββέι: 95, 416, 433.

ραβουνεί: 105.

ρακά: 105, 219.

ραντίζω: 66, 149; forms of, 211 f., 225, 1218; ἐραν—, 211, 225, 364; voice, 807; constr., 486.

ραντισμός: 152.

ράπισμα: 153.

ρέδη: 111.

ρέω: compounds and forms, 212, 342, 355, 1219.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS 1283

δῆμα: ---‘thing,’ 94; breathing, 225.
-~-~-ς: ending, 72, 82, 256, 275.
δήμαρχος: forms, 212, 318, 1219.
δητῶς: 160.
δίπτως: forms, 21, 364;
δήμιος: 64.
δίφωνωι: forms, (ἐρρωσθε), 212, 318, 330, 364, 908.

Σ
σ, ς: 210, 214 f., 218, 220 f., 223, 248, 267, 296, 34ε114-6, 362, 1210.
-σ--: in fut., 354, in pres., 362; in perf. pass., 340,
-ς: 221, 296 (adv.)
-σα: per. end., 305, 339, 346; 1st aor. end., 346.
σαβαζθανεῖ: 105, 219, 236.
σάβαωθ: 95.
σάββατισμός: 152.
σάββατον: 95, 105, 262; c.
σαγινήνη: 151.
σαλπίζω: constr., 853.
Σαμωνίω: form,
-σαν: 3d pl. end., 82.
σανάλαλιον: 111.
Σαούλ: 96.
σαπθείρος: 95, 9
σαπρός: 80.
σαρκικός: etymol. Gk., 158 f.
σάρκινος: etymology, 158.
σάρξ: meaning, 115; use, 754.
σαρδής: 149.
σατανᾶς: 95, 105
σβέννυμι: forms, 318, 1219.
σβεννύω: forms, 1219.
-σε: suffix, 296.
σεαυτός: form, 226, 287; use, 288, 687-90.
-σει: itacism in, 240, 928.
σείων: verbs in, 150, 351.
σείω: compounds and forms, 1219.
σελήνη: gender of, 252.
σεο/ε: fut. suffix, 354 f.
-ση: itacism in, 240, 928.
σημαινώ: in or. obl., 1036.
σημείοιον: use, 176.
σημειώνον: 149.
σήμερον: form, 219, 294.
σήμπω: class, 351; voice of, 801.
-σθε: pers. end., 186, 240.
σθενών: 149.
-σθω: per. end., 328.
-σθωσαν: per. end., 61, 73, 82, 328.
στιστήματος: 158.
στιμέων: 108, 189, 192.
στινάπι: forms, 111 bis, 268.
στιών: 111.
στυάζω: 147.
-στι-ς: denoting action, 151 ff.
στιτιστός: 158.
στιτομέτριον: 80, 167.
σισίμια: use, 883, 908; reading, 1010.
-σκ-verbs: 150, 352.
σκάνδαλον: history of, 174.
σκάπτω: compounds and forms, 1219.
-σκε: verb suffix, 352.
σκέπτομαι: root, 145-6; compounds and forms, 1219.
σκηνήριον: in comp., 167.
σκηνών: meaning, 829.
σκληρο: in comp., 167, 169.
σκληρύνω: 150.
-σκο: verb suffix, 150, 352.
σκόλοψ: 81.
σκοπός: 146.
σκορπίς: 150.
σκότος: 134, 262.
σκύλω: meaning, 65 n., 81; voice of, 807.

σκώ: verbs in, 150, 352.

σκαράθυνος: 81.

σκό: per. end., 340.


Σολομών: spelling, 268.

σον: imp. end., 329.

σό: form, 288; use, 288, 684.

σοφία: 134.

σπάω: meaning, 564, 828; redupl. in perf., 364; voice of, 805, 810; compounds and forms, 364, 1219.

σπείρης: 62, 82, 232, 256.

σπείρω: constr., 478; compounds and forms 1219.

σπεκουλάτωρ: 81, 108.

σπλαγχνίζομαι: 150.

σπλάχνω: form, 410.

σπουδαίως: comp. adv., 488; use, 299.

σπουδή: form, 296.

συν: position of, 418; voc., 461; discussed, 678 f.; use, 693; c. αὐτός, ἐκαίνει, 687, 689; and ἐκείνος, 707; σοῦ, position of, 779; enclitic forms of, 234, 286, 682, 689, 1211.

συγγενής: 81, 272.

συγκρίνω: 66.

συζεύγυμη: 314.

συκάμινος: 95, 96, 105.

συμβαίνω: συνέβη in or. obl., 392, 1043.

συμβουλεύω: voice of, 811; in or. obl., 1036 f.


συμμορφίζω: 150.

σύμμορφος: constr., 528.

συμπόστιον: form, 460; case, 487; distributive, 119, 284, 673.

συμφερώ: impersonal, 1058, 1084; c. dat., 539, 1084; c. ἑνα clause, 992; c. acc. and inf., 1084; inf. subject of, 1058, 1084.

συμφυτος: constr., 528.

συμφύω: form, 341.

συμφωνέω: reading, 1010; constr., 1084.

σύν: in comp., 165, 167, 169, 216 f., 527 f., 528 ff., 558, 562; LXX use, 451; case with, 451, 534, 569 f.; σὺν-- c. dat., 528; σὺν=καί, 111; c. acc., 451, 628; c. gen., 138 n., 628; σὺν--...μετά, εἰς, ἐπί, πρός, 562; use in Attic, 553; frequency, 122, 556; c. verbs, 560; and ἐν, 588; and κατά, 606; and μετά, 526, 610; and πρός, 625; and ἄμα, 627; oί σὺν ... , 628; discussed, 626-8.

συνάγω: use, 120, 871.

συνάγωγη: 65, 124.

συναγωγή: 65 n.; use of part., 1135.

συναντιλαμβάνομαι: 72, 80, 160, 163, 171.

συνειδησίας: 81, 115.

συνεργέω: trans., 455, 477.

συνεργός: substantival, 504.

συνετός: use, 1097.

συνεδοκέω: 81.

συνεσχόμαι: 81.

συνέχω: voice of, 808; meaning, 81, 828.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Definition/Usage</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>σῶν</td>
<td>ending, 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνίημαι</td>
<td>accent, 233; forms, 315; in or. obl., 1040.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνστάων</td>
<td>const., 480.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνίστημαι</td>
<td>meaning, 81; use, 896.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συνταλαμβάνω</td>
<td>constr., 857, 862.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συντάσσω</td>
<td>115.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συντέλεια τοῦ αἵματος</td>
<td>120.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συντηρέω</td>
<td>meaning, 627, 828.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>συντίθεμαι</td>
<td>c. inf., 1068.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σφάγιον</td>
<td>157.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σφάζω</td>
<td>compound and forms, 1219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σφαγίζω</td>
<td>81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σφυδρόν</td>
<td>210.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σφύρις</td>
<td>81, 219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σχεδόν</td>
<td>form, 296, 298, 488.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σχολή</td>
<td>66, 82.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σῶζω</td>
<td>Aramaic, 105; meaning, 115; constr., 598; part., 891; compounds and forms, 1219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σῶμα</td>
<td>meaning, 81; use, 1206.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σωματικός</td>
<td>160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σωτήρ</td>
<td>meaning, 81 bis, 115, 116; and art., 786.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σωτηρία</td>
<td>old word, 81, 97, 115, 116, 125, 157.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σωτηρίος</td>
<td>form, 157, 272.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σωφρονισμός</td>
<td>152.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τ</td>
<td>218, 223, 218, 1210.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τ—</td>
<td>verbs, 352.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταβέρναι</td>
<td>109.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάδε</td>
<td>use, 289 f., 696.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τα—</td>
<td>per. end., 340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταλείθα</td>
<td>spelling of, 105; voc. of, 465.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταμείον</td>
<td>66, 72, 204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—ταμος—</td>
<td>early end., 279.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταπεινός</td>
<td>115.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταπεινοφρονοσύνη</td>
<td>115, 156, 167.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταρταρώω</td>
<td>126.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάσσω</td>
<td>constr., 1084; compounds and forms, 349, 359, 1219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τατος—</td>
<td>form, 277, 279 f., 670; in mod. Gk., 668.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταυτά</td>
<td>crisis, 208.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάφος</td>
<td>120.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάχα</td>
<td>295.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάχειον</td>
<td>adv., 488; use, 197, 278, 664.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ταχέως</td>
<td>298.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—ταχινός</td>
<td>158.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάχιον</td>
<td>form, 278 f., 297.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάχιστος</td>
<td>for, 294, 297, 669; adv., 488.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τάχυ</td>
<td>form, 294, 298, 488.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέ</td>
<td>origin, 301; c. rel., 290; conj., 301, 1178 f.; position, 424; c. τέ, 427; c. καί, 122, 427 f., 432, 566, 789; use, 135 n., 207, 434; in Luke, 122, 135 n., 428 (Acts); in Heb., 132; in Homer, 711; enclitic, 1211.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τε</td>
<td>adv. end., 296.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τεκνίον</td>
<td>66, 232.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέκνον</td>
<td>c. gen., 497, 651.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τεκτο—</td>
<td>in comp., 165.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τελειώ:</td>
<td>reading, 987.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τελειωτής</td>
<td>154.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τελέω</td>
<td>meaning, 834; use, 901; c. part., 1121; fut. τελέω, 349, 355; pres. τελ(ε)σω, 362; in comp., 1219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέλλω</td>
<td>compounds and forms, 1219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τελώνιον</td>
<td>65, 154.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέμνω</td>
<td>compounds and forms, 1219.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τέος—</td>
<td>verbal form, 157, 304, 320, 372 f., 486; discussed, 1095</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέρας</td>
<td>use, 176.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τέρος—</td>
<td>compar. end., 277 f., 298, 660.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέσσαρες</td>
<td>reading, 63, 266, 282.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τεσσάρεςκαιδέκτος:</td>
<td>form, 244, 284.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τέσσερα</td>
<td>in comp., 165, 167, 204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τετράδιον</td>
<td>154.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τετράκις</td>
<td>form, 296.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τήκω</td>
<td>351.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τηλικός</td>
<td>use, 709.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τηλικότος:</td>
<td>form, 290; use, 709, 731; and art., 771.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τηρέω</td>
<td>constr., 598, 850; meaning, 828; τετίπηκα, 895.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τήρησις</td>
<td>81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τήριον—</td>
<td>suffix, 154, 157, 157 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—της—</td>
<td>suffix, 151, 153 f., 156, 256, 272.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—τι—</td>
<td>adv. suffix, 296.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τί δὲν</td>
<td>θέλω: in or. obl., 1044.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τίθημι:</td>
<td>constr., 480; use, 900; τιθέω, 318; τίθω, 318; τιθό, 82; θές, 329;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

1286  A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

τέθεικα, 364; c. εἰς, 482; compounds and forms, 306, 310, 318, 347, 350, 1219.

τίκτω: class, 351; forms, 1219.

τιμάω: formation, 147; forms, 305, 334, 351.

τιμή: 151.

τίς: τίς for πότερος, 61, 736; τί and hiatus, 206; c. opt. in LXX and N. T., 940; interrogative, 291 f., 916, 940; τί...; 'why,' 298, 487, 738-9; τί...; 'what,' 739, 916; τί...; 'how,' 739, 1176; τί δι...; 730, 739, 965, 1034; τί τούτο...; 736; τί γάρ...; 132, 739; τί οὖν...; 132, 739; τίνα τί, 739; κατά τί, 739; διὰ τί, 584, 739; εἰς τί, 739; indeclinable τί, 736; τί ἐμοί (ἡμῖν) καὶ σοί, 395, 539, 736; τίς... ἢ...; 1177; as relative 'who,' 737 f.; in object clauses, 739; for ὅστις, 67, 72; τί in idioms, 395, 539, 730; c. gen., 515; discussed, 735-40, 1176; c. ποιός, 740; and τις, 233, 739, 741, 1040; in subj., 934 f.; τί c. ὅτι, 1034; accent of τίνα, 233, 740, 1040; in or. obl., 1044.

τίς: τί and hiatus, 206; enclitic, 233, 234 f., 1211; position in sentence, 235, 425; τινά constr., 490; c. gen., 515; τί adv., 547; and ὁὗτος, 698; in Homer, 711; and τις, 233, 292, 739; τί c. ὅτι, 584; c. εἰς, 292; discussed, 741-4; antithetic, 750; c. negative, 751, 987 f., 1164; and art., 778, 796.


τό: substantivized neut. adj., 156 f.; τό before clauses, 118, 122; not the art., 185; denoting quotation, 243; c.'Αγαρ, 254, 411; forming adv. phrase, 249 f., 487; c. λοιπόν, 470, 487; c. inf., 118, 966.

tοί: use, 302; discussed, 1154 f.

tοιγαροῦν: use, 425, 1154.

tοίων: use, 425, 1154.

tοιόσδε: form, 290; use, 709; and art., 771.

tοιοῦτος: use, 290, 710, 731; and ὁποῖος, 732; and art., 771.

tολμάω: roots of, 823.

tόπος: 81.

—τος: verbal form, 157 f., 276, 304, 320, 372 f.; adv. form, 296; comparison of verbałs in, 276; superla-tive end., 283; constr., 504; discussed, 1095 ff.

tοσόνδε: use, 709.

tοσοῦτος: use, 290, 710; and art., 771.

τότε: pronominal, 298; use, 300; constr., 429; in Mt., 119, 443, 549.

—τοι: gen., 256.

τοῦνατίνοιον: 208.

tοῦνομα: 208.

tοὐ' ἑστιν: see οὗτος.

Τραχύνητις: c. art., 788.

τρεῖς: forms, 282.

τρέσω: compounds and forms, 359, 1219.

τρέφω: use, 203; compounds and forms, 359, 1220.

τρέγω: compounds and forms, 870, 1220.

τριάκοντα: form, 284.

τριάκοντα: see ouστος.

τρίακοντα: 284.


τριακοστός: 284.

τρίβω: compounds and forms, 1220.

τρίζω: form, 284, 296; τρίῳ, 282; τρίᾳ τρίᾳ, 91, 284.

τρισχίλιοι: use, 283.


—τρού: nominal suffix, 174.

τροπο—: in comp., 165, 219.

τρόπων: ὁν τρόπων, 486, 487.

τρόπως: 487.

τροφο—: in comp., 165, 219.

τρώγων: 351.

τυχήσων: constr., 509, 1120; τέτυχα trans., 801; compounds and forms, 1220.

τυχικῶς: 160.

τύπτω: class, 353.

Τυχικός: 159.


τω: accent, 233.

—τω: per. end., 328, 338.

—τω-verbs: 352.

—τωρ: suffix, 151.

—τωσαν: per. end., 55, 61, 63 n., 73, 82, 328, 336, 338.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>Meaning/Usage</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>υ: vowel-changes</td>
<td>185, 195, 198-202, 205, 230, 265; υ=, 238; dropped, 185; stems in, 24k, 249.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>άλος:</td>
<td>184, 253.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ορίσμ.: and case, 473.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ά:</td>
<td>204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ορίσμ.:</td>
<td>275.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>οδωρ:</td>
<td>495; loc. use, 521, 533, 590.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>άτος:</td>
<td>65 n.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>άω: verbs in, 150.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ά:</td>
<td>238.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>άμεσ.: form, see a-a, 195 f.; discussed, 289 n., 678.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>άμετρος:</td>
<td>form, 277; use, 288, 684.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ημ: verbs in, 311.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ών:</td>
<td>in comp., 147, 150, 213.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπαγω:</td>
<td>constr., 855; use of ύπαγε with another imperative, 428, 949.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπακος:</td>
<td>constr., 507; meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπαυτάμω:</td>
<td>constr., 47 n.; meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπάντησις:</td>
<td>152; εις ύπάντησιν, 528.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπάρχω:</td>
<td>c. part., 1112, 1121.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπείκω:</td>
<td>meaning, 63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπέρ:</td>
<td>in comp., 16, 167, 171, 477; adv., 293, 450; constr., 784; cases with, 491, 569 f; ύπερ εγώ 244, 450; separation implied, 517; frequency, 556; c. verbs, 560; in condensation, 567; c. αυτί, 573 f.; and ἐπί 600; and κατά, 607; and περί, 616, 618; and πρός, 623; discussed, 628-33; c. comparatives, 83, 667; c. inf., 1069.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπεράνω:</td>
<td>form, 161, 170, 171, 297; use, 550, 646.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερβαλλόντως: origin, 160, 297 f.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερβιαία: use, 550.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερέκειμα:</td>
<td>form, 171 bis, 244, 297; use, 647.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερκεπερισσοῦ:</td>
<td>form, 170, 171, 297; --σως adv., 171, 297; use, 647.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερκέπερισσοῦ:</td>
<td>477.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερεντυγχάνω:</td>
<td>82, 165.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερέχω:</td>
<td>c. acc., 477.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερκατωθεν: use, 647.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπερφων:</td>
<td>157.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπηρέτις:</td>
<td>constr., 540.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπό:</td>
<td>elision, 208; form, 223, 226; constr. in comp., 165, 167, 477, 542; cases with, 491, 517, 524, 532, 534, 536, 569 f.; case-form, 524, 570; frequency, 556; c. verbs, 560, 562; in condensation, 567; c. από, 575, 579; and διά, 582; and ἐπί, 600; and παρά, 615; and ὑπέρ, 630; discussed, 633-6; in., prepositional phrases, 792; for agent, 820; c. inf., 1069.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποβάλλω:</td>
<td>meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποδείκνυμι:</td>
<td>aor. of, 848.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποδέχομαι:</td>
<td>meaning, 633.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποζύγιον:</td>
<td>81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποζυώνομι:</td>
<td>meaning, 633.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποκάτω:</td>
<td>use, 637.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποκάτωθεν:</td>
<td>use, 637.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποκρίνομαι:</td>
<td>in or. obl., 1036.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποκρίσις:</td>
<td>meaning, 633.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποκρίτης:</td>
<td>meaning, 633.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπολαμβάνω:</td>
<td>constr., 480; meaning, 633; c. οτι, 1034.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπολειπω:</td>
<td>c. acc., 477; meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπολήπιον:</td>
<td>157, 167.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπομένω:</td>
<td>c. acc., 477.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπομενησικω:</td>
<td>constr., 483, 509; meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύπονοεῖ: in or. obl., 1036.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποπλέω:</td>
<td>meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποπλέω:</td>
<td>constr., 475; meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποπλέων:</td>
<td>65, 81, 167.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποπλέων:</td>
<td>81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποπλείων:</td>
<td>gen., 515.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποταγή:</td>
<td>compounds, 167; use, 819.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποτάσσω:</td>
<td>voice of, 807, 809, 817; use, 946.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποτάσσω:</td>
<td>trans., 455; meaning, 633.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύποτασσέω:</td>
<td>constr., 477; meaning, 634.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύριον:</td>
<td>ending, 202.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ύριον:</td>
<td>95.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

υστερέω: constr., 476, 478, 519, 541; voice of, 814.
υστερος: form, 294; meaning, 662; adv., 488.
ψηλοφροέω: 163 n.
ψιστος: form, 279, 669.
ψώ: constr., 480.
—ω: verbs in, 62.

Φ
—φα: perf. in, 359.
φαγος: 157.
φαγω: form, 340; γάγομαι, 324, 354; use 883 1063.
φαίνω: class, 352; futs., 356; compounds and forms, 328, 341, 349, 871, 1220; ἐφανη, 340, 347, 350; φανη 349; use, 868; in or. obl., 1040; c. part., 1040; 1102, 1120.
φανερός: and art., 764.
φαρσαίοι: 105.
φάρις: ὅτι with, 81, 1033.
φαιδωμαι: origin, 295, 298; compounds and forms, 295, 298, 1220.
φείδωλος: 157.
φέρω: compounds and forms, 338, 363, 430, 1220; ἱγεγκα, 55, 338; -ἐνεγκαί 338, ἱγεγκου, 338, 363; roots, 823; constr., 855; use, 81, 882, 1097; use of φέρε, 949.
φεύγω: compounds and forms, 346, 351, 355, 828, 1220; constr., 476.
φημι: compounds and forms, 144-5, 305, 310, 319, 337, 346, 434, 902; gory, 337, 346; punctuation, φησι, 434; ‘aoristic’ pres., 865; in or. obl., 1036, 1039; c. ὅτι, 1036, 1039; constr., 1083; c. inf., 1036, 1039, 1083; c. ό, 1156, 1162; enclitic forms of, 1211.
φθάνω: meaning, 66, 81, 138; constr., 551; use, 842, 1102, 1120; compounds and forms, 1220.
φθείρω: compounds and forms, 1220.
—φι: suffix, 249.
φίαλη: 184.
φιλαδελφία: 65, 81.

Φιλέω: use, 1063, 1201; and ἀγαπάω, 1201.
Φιλιππίσσαι: 110.
φίλο—: in comp., 81, 165, 169.
φιλοπρωτεύω: 80, 165.
φίλος: 81.
φιλοστοργία: 81.
φιλοτιμόμαι: 81.
φιμώ: reading, 330; use, 908.
φοβέω: accent, 232; and case, 472 f., 485; constr., 479; 000. φοβ. φόβοι, 478; ἐφρήθη, 817-8; c. ἀπό, 577; aor. of, 852 f.; use, 472, 871, 995, 997; in indirect command, 1046.
φόβος: and art., 758.
φοινικίσσα: 155.
φοίνικη: accent, 230.
φορέω: spelling, 201; forms, 349.
φορτίζω: constr., 484.
φράζω: 352.
φράζεω: forms, 1220.
φρεν—: in imp., 165, 167, 169.
φρυγία: c. art., 788.
φυγάς: use, 272.
φυλακή: c. ἐν, 523.
φυλακίζω: 150.
φυλάσσω: constr., 476, 477, 483; form, 352; c. ἀπό, 111; φιλ. φυλακάς, 477, 479; voice of, 807.
φυσικός: 160.
φυσίω: spelling, 203, 342.
φώ: intrans., 800; compounds and forms, 350, 1220.
—φό: 215.
φωνή: in or. obl., 1033, 1042.
φως: in John, 134; gen. use, 496 f.

Χ
—χα: adv. suffix, 296.
χάρις: inf. with imp. sense, 329; χ.
χαράν, 477; constr., 509, 855; voice of, 817; aor. pass., 817; aor. mid., 818; use, 871; use of χαρέων, 944, 1093; c. ὅτι, 965; c. part., 1122;
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS

compounds and forms, 1220; fut., 356.

χαμαί: case-form, 249, 296, 521, 537.
χαρά: gen., 515.
χάμα: 81, 116.
χαρίζομαι: forms, 311, 1220.
χάριν: adv., 294, 298; position, 425; prep., 488; use, 72, 647; c. inf., 1069.
χάρις: 81, 115, 265 bis.
χαρτώ: 149.
χειλέων: 62, 203, 208.
χειμαρρος: forms, 275.
χείρ: in comp., 167 168, 169; use, 95, 102, 649; and ellipsis, 652, 1202.
χειρόγραφο: 72, 16
χείρων: form, 278, 69.
χερουμί: 95.
χέω: accent, 354; compounds and forms 342 352, 354 1220.
χέδε: form 206.
χιλιάς: 283.
χίλιον: use, 281 f., 283.
χίς: 283.
χιτων: 105, 111.
χίς: 283.
χοινίς: accent, 230.
χολαρι: c. ὅτι 965.
Χοραζίν: spelling, 205.
χορτά: trans., 455
χορτάζω: meaning, 66, 82, 138.
χράομαι: compounds and forms, 319, 341, 1220; con .tr., 454, 473 n., 476, 530, 532, 920.
χρεία: 81.
χρεοφειλετής: 168, 201.
χρή: 124, 319.
χρής: c. gen., 518
χρηματίζω: in or. ob1., 66, 1036.
χρηστεύομαι: 149.
χρίσιμα: accent, 2311
χρίστιανοι: 110, 15.
Χριστός: meaning, 97, 101, 115; spelling, 192, 230; c. ἐν, 115, 587, 784; c. εἰς, 592 and art., 760 f., 795; and Ἰησοῦς, 795 f.
χρίω: constr., 483; compounds and forms, 1220.
χρόνος: c. ἐν, 523; case, 527 f., 543.
481; and τοιοοτος, 710; temporal (in Lu. esp.), 122, 974; use, 953 f., 963, 967 f., 974, 980, 982, 1032, 1130, 1140, 1193; causal, 963; ως ‘about’ c. numeral, 674, 968; c. οτι, 964, 1033, 1049; c. part., 966, 1124, 1127; in indirect questions, 1032; discussed, 987, 1032; disappearance of, 980 n.; c. inf., 990, 1091, 1093; in consec. clauses, 1000 f.; in conditions, 1021, 1025; in 1 Peter, 127; in Homer, 954; in Lu., 122, 974, 1030; c. αν, 974, 1040 f.; ουχ ως, 1140; proclitic, 1211.

-ως: names, 172; adv., 248.
--ωςαν: 62.
ωςαννα: 95.

ώςανως: adv., 298.
ώςει: use, 674, 968, 1140.
ώςπερ: use, 431, 969, 1130, 1140, 1154.
ώςπερει: use, 1154.
ώςτε: connecting particle, 431; c. inf., 431, 909, 990, 1000, 1088, 1090; c. perf. inf., 909; c. indic., 999 f., 1088; c. subj., 931, 990, 999; pure purpose, 990, 1072, 1089, 1090; and ηνα, 999; intro. inferential particle, 999; in consec. clauses, 999 f., 1088; use and statistics, 135, 999.

-ωςύνη: 201.
ώτάριον: 82, 156.
--ότερος: compar. end., 278.
ώτιον: 65, 82, 156.
ωυ: 203, 205.
ώφελευ: accent, 233; constr., 472, 483 f., 485, 541.
--ως: in perf. part., 373.
IIDEX OF QUOTATIONS

Complete for Scripture references and reasonably so for the other sources quoted.
(Figures at end of lines refer to pages.)

(a) NEW TESTAMENT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matthew</th>
<th>1:1</th>
<th>2:12</th>
<th>561, 747, 800, 816</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>780, 793, 795</td>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>313, 476, 513, 828, 868,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>263</td>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>882, 990, 1060, 1088</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2-16</td>
<td>760, 788, 1184</td>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>1112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>269</td>
<td>112</td>
<td>636</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>255, 268 bis, 501, 1184</td>
<td>2:15, 22</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>263 bis</td>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>231, 297, 298, 834,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>269, 603</td>
<td>1112, 1126</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11f.</td>
<td>501</td>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>494, 781, 1184</td>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>475, 1159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>215</td>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>392, 406, 892 bis, 1111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>1107</td>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>559</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>576, 643, 773</td>
<td>2:22</td>
<td>510, 574, 996, 1029</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>514, 515, 977, 1041 bis, 1091, 1121, 1122, 132, 1184, 1188</td>
<td>2:23</td>
<td>593</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>817, 966, 1060, 1128</td>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>587, 697, 708, 868, 1185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>261, 3 4, 350, 418, 463, 464, 514, 541, 817, 820, 852, 932, 1060</td>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>408, 609, 652, 762, 895</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:21</td>
<td>287, 459, 575, 679, 779, 872, 87 889, 942, 1191</td>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>255, 697</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:23</td>
<td>515, 611, 713, 881</td>
<td>3:5</td>
<td>255, 491, 624, 652, 773, 883</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:24</td>
<td>541</td>
<td>3:6</td>
<td>271, 525 bis, 586, 636, 651, 760, 791, 883</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>459, 975</td>
<td>3:7</td>
<td>213, 602, 735, 848, 883, 916, 1176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>255, 263, 408 bis, 575, 760, 762, 791</td>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>504, 835, 1192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>231, 366, 370, 419, 540, 542, 810, 915, 990, 1062, 1088</td>
<td>3:9</td>
<td>598, 834, 853, 1035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>253, 263, 760, 772, 774</td>
<td>3:10</td>
<td>418, 423, 771, 881</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>530, 762, 1106</td>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>235, 677, 682, 885, 1076, 1148, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>366, 860, 971, 986</td>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>221,309,315,393,772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>408, 642, 7 4, 840, 969, 975</td>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>881, 1058, 1086, 1110, 1119, 1126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>258, 477, 484, 1122</td>
<td>3:17</td>
<td>538, 561, 575, 578, 968, 1025, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>593</td>
<td>3:18</td>
<td>372, 460, 597, 697, 837, 842, 1097</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matt.</td>
<td>Lines</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>635, 820, 880, 990</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>349, 860, 1112</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>329,993</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>781</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>705</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>391</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>540, 838, 847, 883</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>219, 273, 593, 613, 759</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15</td>
<td>469, 500, 646</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>263, 501, 586, 620, 747, 770, 780</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:23</td>
<td>477, 499, 562, 617, 655</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:23-25</td>
<td>428</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:24</td>
<td>412, 799</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:25</td>
<td>28, 788</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:1</td>
<td>307, 561, 593, 597, 756, 1132</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:2</td>
<td>885</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>417, 523, 762</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3-10</td>
<td>757</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>945</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>443</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>764, 872</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>474, 508</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td>395, 523, 871</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:17</td>
<td>485</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>234, 392, 473, 505, 551</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:20</td>
<td>621,855</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:21</td>
<td>269, 534, 590, 739, 751, 768, 1019, 1024</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:22</td>
<td>505, 642</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>221, 263, 428, 491, 633, 635, 757, 766, 1183</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>640, 710, 782</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>231, 427, 428, 789, 833, 834, 853, 857, 885, 932, 990, 1062, 1080, 1088, 1187, 1188</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:26</td>
<td>186, 405, 406, 561, 677, 751, 933</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:27</td>
<td>219, 502, 535, 537, 541, 677, 744, 772, 1107, 1148</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:28</td>
<td>866</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matt.</th>
<th>Lines</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5:22, 28</td>
<td>866</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>6:9-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>428, 470, 529, 621, 640, 657, 690, 882, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>330, 375, 488, 573, 729, 890, 975, 976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:26</td>
<td>526, 547, 646, 764 bis, 773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:27</td>
<td>224, 333, 889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:28</td>
<td>348, 517, 645, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:29</td>
<td>279, 516, 618, 660, 947, 1150 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:30</td>
<td>183, 562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:31</td>
<td>471, 653, 764, 986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:32</td>
<td>630, 889, 041, 943, 947</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:33</td>
<td>735, 1019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:34</td>
<td>687, 850, 1019 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:34-36</td>
<td>594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:35</td>
<td>183,562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:36</td>
<td>853, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:37</td>
<td>727, 746, 747</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:38</td>
<td>573</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:39</td>
<td>1181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:42</td>
<td>437, 529, 538, 683, 802</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:43</td>
<td>183,562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:44</td>
<td>630, 889, 041, 943, 947</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:45</td>
<td>392, 757, 764, 799, 801, 1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:46</td>
<td>735, 1019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:47</td>
<td>687, 850, 1019 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:48</td>
<td>429, 678, 889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:49</td>
<td>244, 394, 542, 626, 818, 820, 858, 991, 1003, 1075 bis, 1080, 1088, 1148, 1148-9, 1173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:50</td>
<td>349,429, 577, 633, 687, 853, 866 bis, 969, 972, 986, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:51</td>
<td>652, 662, 856, 943, 1131, 1170, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:52</td>
<td>471, 653, 764, 986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:53</td>
<td>552, 828, 874 bis, 942, 963, 968, 986, 1157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:54</td>
<td>204, 777, 835, 855, 947, 950, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:55</td>
<td>184, 589, 591, 969, 1035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:56</td>
<td>482, 720, 726, 857, 881, 895, 978, 1061, 1075, 1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:57</td>
<td>459, 464, 779</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:58</td>
<td>69-11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:59</td>
<td>855</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matt.</th>
<th>6:10</th>
<th>334, 350, 396, 600, 818, 1181</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>159, 779</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td>538, 677 842, 963, 967</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13</td>
<td>518, 575, 593, 652, 653, 853, 932</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:14 f.</td>
<td>1186</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15</td>
<td>1185</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:16</td>
<td>395, 427, 84, 1040, 1102</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:16, 18</td>
<td>1121</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>683, 779, 811, 1102, 1126</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:18</td>
<td>589, 891, 1102, 1115</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:19</td>
<td>231 405, 853, 875</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:19 f.</td>
<td>286, 687, 1186</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:20</td>
<td>792</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:21</td>
<td>523</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:22</td>
<td>284, 768, 1018</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:22, 23</td>
<td>849</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:23</td>
<td>740, 97, 1027, 1186</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:24</td>
<td>251, 573, 675, 748, 749, 751, 890, 1052, 1188, 1191</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:25</td>
<td>539, 564, 738, 853, 917, 935, 1028, 1044, 1176</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:25, 31</td>
<td>1031</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:26</td>
<td>561, 581, 105, 1183, 1185</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:27</td>
<td>515, 561, 733, 81, 1115, 1128</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:28</td>
<td>341, 606, 19, 799, 1185</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:29</td>
<td>502, 515, 807, 1164, 1185</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:30</td>
<td>532, 1107, 1115</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:31</td>
<td>738, 934, 95, 1028, 1044</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:32</td>
<td>404, 419, 705, 771</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:33</td>
<td>542</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:34</td>
<td>411, 509, 547, 594, 765, 853, 1202</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:1</td>
<td>853, 890, 947, 983</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:2</td>
<td>534, 590, 718, 721</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:3</td>
<td>471, 685 bis, 738, 782</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:4</td>
<td>34, 286, 329, 430, 596, 931</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:5</td>
<td>582, 659, 1088</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:6</td>
<td>203, 538, 763, 853, 875, 988, 1185, 1200</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:7</td>
<td>357, 1023</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:7, 8</td>
<td>1213</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:8</td>
<td>1213</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:9</td>
<td>439, 82, 917, 1177</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:10</td>
<td>231, 1023, 1188</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:11</td>
<td>40, 1053, 1062, 1103, 1129</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:12</td>
<td>427, 704, 732, 733, 959, 1180</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:13</td>
<td>800</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:13 f.</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:14</td>
<td>730, 739</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:15</td>
<td>272, 477, 548, 589, 727, 729, 800, 966</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:16</td>
<td>392, 66, 576, 1172</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:17</td>
<td>221</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Matt. | 7:19  | 402 |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7:20</td>
<td>425, 1148 bis, 1190</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:21</td>
<td>752 ter, 1107</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:22</td>
<td>367, 524, 525, 708, 917, 1157, 1175, 1213</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:23</td>
<td>559, 575, 1028, 1035, 1107, 1165</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:24</td>
<td>468, 479, 602, 727, 772, 905, 957, 1105 bis, 1107</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:25</td>
<td>361, 366, 606, 905, 1100, 1157</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:26</td>
<td>727, 752, 772, 957, 1105, 1107</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:27</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:28</td>
<td>350, 532, 835, 883, 970, 1043</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:28 f.</td>
<td>966, 1207</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:29</td>
<td>394</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:29 f.</td>
<td>597, 683, 1132</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:1</td>
<td>391, 1018, 1019, 1214</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:2</td>
<td>383, 391, 684, 770, 1028, 1216</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:3</td>
<td>330, 338, 430, 595, 683, 849, 854, 932, 949</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:4</td>
<td>329, 635, 653, 657, 658 bis, 681, 819, 992, 1076</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:5</td>
<td>391, 817, 1180 bis, 1182</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:6</td>
<td>710, 844</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:7</td>
<td>334, 357, 408, 819</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:8</td>
<td>278, 298, 803</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:13</td>
<td>818, 968</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:15</td>
<td>367</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:16</td>
<td>392, 533, 653, 773</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:17</td>
<td>491, 646</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>282, 292, 674, 675, 796, 969</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:20</td>
<td>737, 757 bis, 800</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:21</td>
<td>748, 1152</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:22</td>
<td>690, 858</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:23</td>
<td>525, 560, 585, 683</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:24</td>
<td>679, 883</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:25</td>
<td>828, 879, 941</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:26</td>
<td>738, 813</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:27</td>
<td>292, 507, 543, 741, 917, 1001, 1176</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:28</td>
<td>597, 634, 708, 1171</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:29</td>
<td>348, 621, 729, 1136</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:30</td>
<td>499</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:31</td>
<td>948, 1009</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:32</td>
<td>339, 570, 607</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:33</td>
<td>528, 609, 628, 771</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:34</td>
<td>995, 1046</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:35</td>
<td>691, 692, 770</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:36</td>
<td>315, 603</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:37</td>
<td>244, 395, 739 bis, 916, 1176</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:38</td>
<td>186, 617, 737, 916, 917, 1176, 1177, 1190</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:39</td>
<td>119, 319, 434, 443, 562, 907, 1203</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDEX OF QUOTATIONS** 1293
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matt.</th>
<th>12:3</th>
<th>726, 844</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Matt.</td>
<td>13:12</td>
<td>727, 957, 1156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:4</td>
<td>491, 611, 714, 776, 1016, 1025, 10:32, 1084-5, 1119, 1130, 1188</td>
<td>13:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:5</td>
<td>1035</td>
<td>13:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:7</td>
<td>231, 904, 923, 1015</td>
<td>13:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:9</td>
<td>683</td>
<td>13:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>511, 51'2, 916, 1024, 1176</td>
<td>13:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:12</td>
<td>292, 740, 999</td>
<td>13:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:13</td>
<td>401, 656, 746</td>
<td>13:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>119, 994</td>
<td>13:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:16</td>
<td>541,993</td>
<td>13:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:18</td>
<td>474, 842</td>
<td>13:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:19</td>
<td>752</td>
<td>13:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:20</td>
<td>365, 1212</td>
<td>13:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:21</td>
<td>889</td>
<td>13:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:22</td>
<td>292, 697, 917</td>
<td>13:29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:24</td>
<td>590, 1036</td>
<td>13:30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:25</td>
<td>319, 403, 413, 817, 1105, 1106, 1116</td>
<td>13:31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:26</td>
<td>602, 750, 842, 376, 1008</td>
<td>13:32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:26 f</td>
<td>452, 317</td>
<td>13:33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:26, 28</td>
<td>847</td>
<td>13:34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:27</td>
<td>1003</td>
<td>13:35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:28</td>
<td>425, 429, 842, 1003, 1190 bis</td>
<td>13:36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:29</td>
<td>742, 757, 1018</td>
<td>13:37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:30</td>
<td>607, 611, 1172</td>
<td>13:38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:30, 32</td>
<td>956</td>
<td>13:39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:31</td>
<td>494, 500, 655, 779, 873 bis</td>
<td>13:40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:33</td>
<td>830,924</td>
<td>13:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:34</td>
<td>429</td>
<td>13:43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:35</td>
<td>408, 757, 776</td>
<td>13:44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:36</td>
<td>416, 439, 459, 718</td>
<td>13:45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:38</td>
<td>515, 579, 742, 923</td>
<td>13:46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:39</td>
<td>955, 411</td>
<td>13:47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:40</td>
<td>429</td>
<td>13:48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:42</td>
<td>617</td>
<td>13:50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:43</td>
<td>602, 079, 1126</td>
<td>13:51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:44</td>
<td>413, 560, 582</td>
<td>13:52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:45</td>
<td>300, 548, 1041</td>
<td>13:53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:46</td>
<td>516, 611, 749</td>
<td>13:54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:50</td>
<td>679, 957</td>
<td>13:55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:1</td>
<td>314, 367, 615, 813</td>
<td>13:56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>602, 079, 1126</td>
<td>13:57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:3</td>
<td>512, 652, 757, 764, 1088</td>
<td>14:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:4</td>
<td>107, 40, 564, 606, 695, 1073 ter</td>
<td>14:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:4 f</td>
<td>747</td>
<td>13:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:5</td>
<td>1159, 1171</td>
<td>14:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:5 f</td>
<td>391, 1071, 1091</td>
<td>14:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:5-3</td>
<td>746, 749</td>
<td>14:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:6</td>
<td>794</td>
<td>14:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>838, 833</td>
<td>14:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:9</td>
<td>956</td>
<td>14:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:11</td>
<td>707</td>
<td>14:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:14</td>
<td>568</td>
<td>16:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:15</td>
<td>546, 613, 842</td>
<td>16:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:16</td>
<td>265</td>
<td>16:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:17</td>
<td>350, 367, 561, 1136</td>
<td>16:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:18</td>
<td>392, 1109</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:21</td>
<td>419, 648, 674</td>
<td>16:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:22</td>
<td>477, 857, 891, 975, 976 bis, 1048, 1081</td>
<td>16:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:23</td>
<td>224, 656, 657</td>
<td>16:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:24</td>
<td>469, 644, 775</td>
<td>16:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:25</td>
<td>523</td>
<td>16:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:25 f</td>
<td>603</td>
<td>16:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:26</td>
<td>580</td>
<td>16:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:28</td>
<td>601</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:29</td>
<td>601</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:31</td>
<td>508,739</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:33</td>
<td>546</td>
<td>16:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:34</td>
<td>219</td>
<td>16:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:36</td>
<td>732, 956, 958, 993</td>
<td>16:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:2</td>
<td>564, 811, 972</td>
<td>16:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:2, 3</td>
<td>739</td>
<td>16:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:3</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>16:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:4</td>
<td>531</td>
<td>16:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:5</td>
<td>485, 789, 874, 875</td>
<td>16:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:6</td>
<td>845</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:9</td>
<td>482</td>
<td>17:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:11</td>
<td>559, 1166, 1172, 1187</td>
<td>17:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:14</td>
<td>488, 849</td>
<td>17:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:16</td>
<td>488, 546</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:17</td>
<td>773, 1035</td>
<td>17:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:18</td>
<td>561</td>
<td>17:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:19</td>
<td>408,427</td>
<td>17:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:20</td>
<td>1058, 1082</td>
<td>17:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:22</td>
<td>261, 463, 464</td>
<td>17:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:23</td>
<td>341, 484, 645, 1135</td>
<td>17:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:25</td>
<td>541</td>
<td>17:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:26</td>
<td>757</td>
<td>17:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:27</td>
<td>519, 577, 1116</td>
<td>17:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:28</td>
<td>463, 464, 1193</td>
<td>17:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:29</td>
<td>615</td>
<td>17:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:30</td>
<td>212, 615, 749, 1127</td>
<td>17:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:32</td>
<td>266, 275, 460, 602, 623, 726, 737</td>
<td>17:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:33</td>
<td>710, 990, 1089</td>
<td>17:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:34</td>
<td>740, 1176</td>
<td>17:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:35</td>
<td>491, 561, 602</td>
<td>17:22 f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:36</td>
<td>311</td>
<td>17:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:37</td>
<td>219, 502</td>
<td>17:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:1</td>
<td>1182</td>
<td>17:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:2</td>
<td>213, 460</td>
<td>17:26 f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:2 f.</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>17:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:3</td>
<td>1062 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:5</td>
<td>812</td>
<td>18:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:6</td>
<td>472, 949, 1047, 1183</td>
<td>18:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:7</td>
<td>1028 bis</td>
<td>18:3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>18:4</td>
<td>244, 281</td>
<td>19:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:5</td>
<td>525, 710</td>
<td>19:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:6</td>
<td>317, 594, 620, 992</td>
<td>19:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:7</td>
<td>537, 577, 580</td>
<td>19:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:8</td>
<td>406, 537, 593, 658, 661 bis, 687, 1084, 1188</td>
<td>19:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>19:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:9</td>
<td>276, 496</td>
<td>19:29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:10</td>
<td>995, 996</td>
<td>19:30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:12</td>
<td>541 is, 870, 1019</td>
<td>20:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:12 ff</td>
<td>213</td>
<td>20:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:13</td>
<td>1019, 1043, 1058</td>
<td>20:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:14</td>
<td>993</td>
<td>20:3, 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:15</td>
<td>339, 348, 428, 505, 562, 645, 687, 842, 846, 949, 1019 bis, 1020</td>
<td>20:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:16</td>
<td>604, 649, 846</td>
<td>20:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:17</td>
<td>231, 539, 757, 846, 1019</td>
<td>20:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:18</td>
<td>361, 375, 733, 907</td>
<td>20:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:19</td>
<td>715, 716, 1010</td>
<td>20:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:20</td>
<td>593, 56, 685, 776</td>
<td>20:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:21</td>
<td>281, 333, 56, 548, 674, 889, 917, 934, 1176</td>
<td>20:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:22</td>
<td>673 bis</td>
<td>20:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:23</td>
<td>611, 837</td>
<td>20:20, 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:23 f</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>20:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:24</td>
<td>233, 283, 674</td>
<td>20:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:25</td>
<td>514, 73, 1048, 1068, 1132, 1172</td>
<td>20:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:26</td>
<td>538, 568, 570, 949</td>
<td>20:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:26 f</td>
<td>605</td>
<td>20:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:27</td>
<td>509</td>
<td>20:26 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:28</td>
<td>538, 883, 1025</td>
<td>20:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:30</td>
<td>309, 834, 885, 976</td>
<td>20:29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:31</td>
<td>689, 690</td>
<td>20:30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:32</td>
<td>464, 708</td>
<td>20:32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:33</td>
<td>886, 19, 968, 1181</td>
<td>20:33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:34</td>
<td>773</td>
<td>21:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:35</td>
<td>746 bis</td>
<td>21:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:1</td>
<td>517, 763</td>
<td>21:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:2</td>
<td>774</td>
<td>21:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:3</td>
<td>609, 916 bis, 1176</td>
<td>21:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:4</td>
<td>574</td>
<td>21:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:5</td>
<td>458, 595, 819</td>
<td>21:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:6</td>
<td>314, 845, 1165</td>
<td>21:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:8</td>
<td>626</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:9</td>
<td>646, 649, 747, 1028</td>
<td>21:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:10</td>
<td>545, 1008</td>
<td>21:10 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:11</td>
<td>706, 720, 752, 1163</td>
<td>21:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:12</td>
<td>233, 312, 367, 727, 1190, 1214</td>
<td>21:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>21:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:14</td>
<td>710, 11061 bis, 1094</td>
<td>21:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:16</td>
<td>675, 735</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:17</td>
<td>653, 661, 738, 768</td>
<td>21:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:18 f</td>
<td>766</td>
<td>21:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:20</td>
<td>1419, 476, 478</td>
<td>21:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:24</td>
<td>482, 740</td>
<td>23:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:25</td>
<td>300,613</td>
<td>23:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:26</td>
<td>443, 481</td>
<td>23:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:27</td>
<td>1185</td>
<td>23:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:28</td>
<td>949</td>
<td>23:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:29</td>
<td>1157</td>
<td>23:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:31</td>
<td>291, 737</td>
<td>23:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:32</td>
<td>334, 996, 1060, 1066, 1090</td>
<td>23:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:33</td>
<td>308, 340, 367, 399 bis, 575, 617, 727, 1214</td>
<td>23:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:35</td>
<td>696 23:20f</td>
<td>23:20f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:36</td>
<td>516, 667</td>
<td>23:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:38</td>
<td>330, 697</td>
<td>23:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:40</td>
<td>484, 880</td>
<td>23:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:41</td>
<td>119, 355, 727, 873, 960, 989, 1201, 1214</td>
<td>23:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:43</td>
<td>873</td>
<td>23:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:44</td>
<td>787, 1029, 1035, 1041</td>
<td>23:29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:45</td>
<td>334, 481, 965</td>
<td>23:30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:46</td>
<td>409, 860</td>
<td>23:31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:1</td>
<td>408, 957</td>
<td>23:32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:2</td>
<td>885, 919</td>
<td>23:33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:3</td>
<td>788</td>
<td>23:34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:4</td>
<td>399, 691, 692, 695</td>
<td>23:35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:6</td>
<td>1153</td>
<td>23:37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:7</td>
<td>424</td>
<td>23:38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:8</td>
<td>485, 818, 1138 bis, 1139 bis</td>
<td>23:39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:9</td>
<td>486, 828</td>
<td>23:40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:10</td>
<td>148, 994</td>
<td>23:41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:12</td>
<td>269, 1058, 1158, 1177</td>
<td>23:43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:13</td>
<td>891, 1081</td>
<td>23:44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:14</td>
<td>348</td>
<td>23:45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:15</td>
<td>488, 668</td>
<td>23:46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:16</td>
<td>833</td>
<td>23:47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:17</td>
<td>392</td>
<td>23:48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:18</td>
<td>480</td>
<td>23:49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:19</td>
<td>408, 880</td>
<td>23:50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:20</td>
<td>832, 840</td>
<td>23:51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:21</td>
<td>660, 740</td>
<td>23:52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:22</td>
<td>774 bis</td>
<td>23:53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:23</td>
<td>411, 661, 669</td>
<td>23:54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:24</td>
<td>232, 530</td>
<td>23:55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:25</td>
<td>317</td>
<td>23:56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:26</td>
<td>738, 786, 837, 866</td>
<td>23:57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:27</td>
<td>733, 866</td>
<td>23:58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:28</td>
<td>560, 1184, 1186</td>
<td>23:59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:36</td>
<td>776</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:38</td>
<td>621, 639, 717, 974</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:39</td>
<td>975</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:40</td>
<td>675</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:40 f</td>
<td>750, 869</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:41</td>
<td>154, 231, 233, 675</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:42</td>
<td>292, 522, 740 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:43</td>
<td>349, 708 740, 870, 922, 1014, 1015</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:44</td>
<td>718</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:45</td>
<td>768, 777, 783, 792, 845, 916, 1065, 1176</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:46</td>
<td>891</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:47</td>
<td>604</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:49 bis</td>
<td>849</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:50</td>
<td>715, 716, 718 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:1</td>
<td>727, 1127</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:2, 4, 9</td>
<td>272</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:3</td>
<td>611</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:5</td>
<td>349, 367, 838, 883</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:6</td>
<td>611</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:8</td>
<td>318, 879</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:9</td>
<td>244, 334, 689 818, 929, 933, 934, 995, 1127, 1 59, 1161, 1174</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:10</td>
<td>776</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:11</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:14</td>
<td>969, 1203</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:14 ff</td>
<td>1153</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:14-18</td>
<td>969</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:15</td>
<td>282, 696</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:16</td>
<td>746, 813</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:17</td>
<td>747</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:18</td>
<td>1118, 1125</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:19</td>
<td>562</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:20</td>
<td>835, 910, 1111, 1118</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:20, 24</td>
<td>1125</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:21</td>
<td>337, 601</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:21, 23</td>
<td>299, 604</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:24</td>
<td>718, 909, 910, 1034, 1111, 1116, 1118</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:24, 26</td>
<td>548</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:25</td>
<td>1045</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:27</td>
<td>886, 919, 922, 1014, 1015</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:29, 32</td>
<td>873</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:32</td>
<td>559</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:33</td>
<td>408, 1153</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:34</td>
<td>504, 516, 777, 793, 1106</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:35</td>
<td>340, 347, 1087, 1200</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:35-39</td>
<td>915</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:36</td>
<td>234</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:37</td>
<td>334, 339, 357, 819, 1123</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:38</td>
<td>917, 1123, 1176</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:39</td>
<td>234, 1123</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:40</td>
<td>733</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:40, 45</td>
<td>963</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:58</td>
<td>883</td>
<td>27:41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:59</td>
<td>505, 986</td>
<td>27:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:60</td>
<td>883, 1129</td>
<td>27:43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:61</td>
<td>581, 697</td>
<td>27:44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:62</td>
<td>562, 736, 1126</td>
<td>27:45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:63</td>
<td>475, 607, 781, 865, 883, 993, 1045</td>
<td>27:46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:64</td>
<td>678, 679, 842, 915</td>
<td>27:47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:65</td>
<td>312, 802, 842</td>
<td>27:48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:66</td>
<td>504 bis, 658</td>
<td>27:49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:67</td>
<td>212, 561, 694</td>
<td>27:50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:68</td>
<td>313, 337, 674, 1182</td>
<td>27:51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:70</td>
<td>517, 1136</td>
<td>27:52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:71</td>
<td>547, 697</td>
<td>27:53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:73</td>
<td>28, 103, 653, 1182</td>
<td>27:55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:74</td>
<td>1028, 1035</td>
<td>27:56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:75</td>
<td>910, 1028, 1091, 1113</td>
<td>27:57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:3</td>
<td>609, 817, 858, 859, 860, 1112</td>
<td>27:58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:4</td>
<td>109, 290, 339, 626, 736, 859, 860, 874, 942, bis, 1113, 1121, 1128</td>
<td>27:59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:5</td>
<td>409, 807, 860</td>
<td>27:60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:8</td>
<td>643, 848, 962, 1202</td>
<td>27:62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:9</td>
<td>1201</td>
<td>27:63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:10</td>
<td>967</td>
<td>27:64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:11</td>
<td>678 bis, 768, 769, 915</td>
<td>27:65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:12</td>
<td>517, 741, 1177</td>
<td>27:66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:13</td>
<td>473, 484, 1073</td>
<td>27:67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:14</td>
<td>473, 738, 751</td>
<td>27:68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:15</td>
<td>606, 608, 884, 888</td>
<td>27:69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:17</td>
<td>737, 1177</td>
<td>27:70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:18</td>
<td>583, 841, 888, 898, 1029</td>
<td>27:71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:19,</td>
<td>396,707,842 28:10</td>
<td>27:72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:20</td>
<td>805, 835, 993</td>
<td>27:73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:21</td>
<td>515, 577, 737</td>
<td>27:74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:22</td>
<td>279, 845, 1149, 1190</td>
<td>27:75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:23</td>
<td>484</td>
<td>27:76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:24</td>
<td>516, 576 bis, 639, 644 ter, 678, 770, 874, 810, 942</td>
<td>27:77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:25</td>
<td>1202</td>
<td>27:78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:26</td>
<td>562, 593</td>
<td>27:79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:27</td>
<td>483</td>
<td>27:80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:28</td>
<td>465, 474, 598</td>
<td>27:30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:29</td>
<td>593, 884</td>
<td>27:31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:32</td>
<td>483 bis, 840</td>
<td>27:32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:33</td>
<td>528, 993</td>
<td>27:33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:34</td>
<td>411, 714, 881, 1105</td>
<td>27:35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:35</td>
<td>317, 611, 1087</td>
<td>27:36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:36</td>
<td>690, 811</td>
<td>27:37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:37</td>
<td>604</td>
<td>27:38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:39</td>
<td>697</td>
<td>27:39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:40</td>
<td>675, 750, 792</td>
<td>27:41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:41</td>
<td>473</td>
<td>27:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:42</td>
<td>308, 465, 581, 781, 892, 1107, 1116</td>
<td>27:43</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Mark</th>
<th>1:13</th>
<th>255, 611</th>
<th>3:3</th>
<th>775</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>1074</td>
<td>3:5</td>
<td>368, 813</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>119, 453, 536, 540, 601</td>
<td>3:6</td>
<td>994, 1214</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>188</td>
<td>3:7</td>
<td>596, 611, 624, 838, 1183 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>481, 656, 996, 1023</td>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>28, 620, 733, 898, 1123</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>528</td>
<td>3:10</td>
<td>562</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>659</td>
<td>3:11</td>
<td>118, 404, 884, 922, 958, 973</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>262, 559, 880</td>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>611, 1088</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>1127, 1140</td>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>434, 441, 459, 488</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:23</td>
<td>589, 784 3:17</td>
<td>3:20</td>
<td>411, 434, 713</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:24</td>
<td>118, 263, 395, 488, 738, 762, 916</td>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>614 bis, 842, 845</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:27</td>
<td>334, 540, 1181</td>
<td>3:22</td>
<td>210, 778, 1106</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:29</td>
<td>255, 611</td>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>817, 879</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:31</td>
<td>860 3:26</td>
<td>4:29</td>
<td>602</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:32</td>
<td>341, 348, 1214 bis</td>
<td>3:27</td>
<td>1019</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:33</td>
<td>774</td>
<td>3:28</td>
<td>479, 732, 733, 1036</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:34</td>
<td>193, 315, 319, 367, 546, 1034, 1216</td>
<td>3:29</td>
<td>504 ter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:36</td>
<td>606, 766</td>
<td>3:30</td>
<td>589</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:37</td>
<td>1028 3:32</td>
<td>3:31</td>
<td>991, 1115</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:38</td>
<td>299, 424, 477, 595</td>
<td>3:32</td>
<td>404</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:39</td>
<td>118, 593</td>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>521, 524, 617</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:40</td>
<td>474, 849 ter, 1214</td>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>525, 615, 625, 670</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:42</td>
<td>183, 559</td>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>431</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:44</td>
<td>118, 430, 619, 932, 949</td>
<td>4:4 ff</td>
<td>107, 339, 1073, 1153, 1183</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:45</td>
<td>300, 604, 1186</td>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>747, 749</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>119, p25, 559, 581, 586, 593, 1120</td>
<td>4:7</td>
<td>915</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>119, 625</td>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>589, 592</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>392, 1097</td>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>232</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>604, 969</td>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>720, 956</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5</td>
<td>866</td>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>244, 341, 482, 550, 653, 765</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>118, 221, 697, 705, 1025, 1129</td>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>233, 315, 1173</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>737, 885, 1215</td>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>876</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>119, 434, 907, 999, 1203</td>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>300, 880, 1131</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>428, 855</td>
<td>4:21, 24,-26, 30</td>
<td>789, 917, 1028 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12, 16</td>
<td>1028</td>
<td>4:22</td>
<td>883</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>119, 596</td>
<td>4:23</td>
<td>653, 764, 960, 999, 1020, 1185, 1187</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>31, 393, 1043, 1190</td>
<td>4:24</td>
<td>956, 1009, 1087</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>730, 917, 1029, 1035</td>
<td>4:25</td>
<td>392, 471, 718</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>990</td>
<td>4:26</td>
<td>392, 720, 956, 957, 1158</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>786, 787, 1186</td>
<td>4:27</td>
<td>603, 928, 968, 974</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:19</td>
<td>528, 587, 718, 733, 879 bis, 978 bis</td>
<td>4:28</td>
<td>987</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>186, 183, 273, 275, 276, 549, 687</td>
<td>4:29</td>
<td>470, 1213</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22</td>
<td>212, 214, 1025</td>
<td>4:30</td>
<td>309, 800, 972, 1214</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:23</td>
<td>373</td>
<td>4:31</td>
<td>407, 678, 736</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:24</td>
<td>523, 763, 1043</td>
<td>4:32</td>
<td>516, 782, 1104, 1129</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>679</td>
<td>4:33</td>
<td>343, 371, 635</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26</td>
<td>603, 628, 714</td>
<td>4:34</td>
<td>710</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:27</td>
<td>584</td>
<td>4:35</td>
<td>884</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28</td>
<td>439</td>
<td>4:36</td>
<td>224</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>656, 789, 902, 1123</td>
<td>4:37</td>
<td>549</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>1024, 1045</td>
<td>231, 561, 800, 868, 1000</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mark</td>
<td>A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>--------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:38</td>
<td>427, 602, 623, 679, 879, 965, 1034</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:39</td>
<td>330, 360, 428, 908, 950</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:41</td>
<td>405, 468, 699, 1001, 1182</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>223, 1165</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:4</td>
<td>231, 533, 581, 636, 828, 909, 966, 1070 bis, 1071 bis, 1079, 1081, 1091</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5</td>
<td>244, 582, 793</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:6</td>
<td>300</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:7</td>
<td>279, 475, 483, 670</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:9</td>
<td>656</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>624 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:13</td>
<td>283, 550, 607, 674, 884, 968</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>1043</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>868, 900, 910, 1099, 1117 bis, 1136</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td>1032</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>1117</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:19</td>
<td>624, 733, 901, 1045, 1177</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:20</td>
<td>733</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:22</td>
<td>625</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>297, 299, 324, 546, 800, 933, 943, 986, 994</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>774, 838</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>779, 892, 1115</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:26</td>
<td>615, 635, 1110-11</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:27</td>
<td>619</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:28</td>
<td>208, 1018, 1025, 1027</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:29</td>
<td>232, 524, 1041 bis, 1216</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:30</td>
<td>508, 599, 1042, 1110, 1118, 1123, 1136</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:32</td>
<td>838, 883, 1088, 1136</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:33</td>
<td>542, 726, 858, 897, 1118</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:34</td>
<td>264, 462, 596</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:35</td>
<td>502, 845</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:37</td>
<td>528</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:39</td>
<td>1166</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:40</td>
<td>1119</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:42</td>
<td>497, 531, 1190</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:43</td>
<td>308, 1079, 1085, 1214</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1</td>
<td>880</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:2</td>
<td>262, 705, 710 bis, 735, 771</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:3</td>
<td>255, 263, 697, 768, 785</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>269</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>368, 682, 751, 1011, 1013 bis, 1169</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:6</td>
<td>797</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:7</td>
<td>284, 673</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>438, 441, 657, 944, 950, 993, 1042, 1046</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:3 f</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:9</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:11</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:12</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mark</td>
<td>7:13</td>
<td>715, 716</td>
<td>Mark</td>
<td>9:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:15</td>
<td>642</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:11</td>
<td>944, 730, 917</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:18</td>
<td>233, 438, 548</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:12</td>
<td>149, 219, 224, 316, 342, 602, 993</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:18, 21, 23</td>
<td>300</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:12 f.</td>
<td>1152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:19</td>
<td>118, 413, 438 bis, 1130, 1203</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:13</td>
<td>732</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:20</td>
<td>707</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:14</td>
<td>620</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:22</td>
<td>402</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:15</td>
<td>407, 597</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:23</td>
<td>548</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:17</td>
<td>624</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:24</td>
<td>156, 334, 350, 368, 1094, 1162</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:18</td>
<td>184, 318, 850, 969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:25</td>
<td>560, 683, 722, 1205</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:19</td>
<td>264, 464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:26</td>
<td>155, 487, 884, 993</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:20</td>
<td>436, 603 bis, 883, 1139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:27</td>
<td>633, 634, 647</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:21</td>
<td>300, 740, 741, 974 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:28</td>
<td>1123</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:22</td>
<td>312, 472, 948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:31</td>
<td>491, 596, 775</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:22 f.</td>
<td>340, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:32</td>
<td>210, 770</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:23</td>
<td>118, 491, 766</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:34</td>
<td>231</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:25</td>
<td>465, 769, 1173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:35</td>
<td>27, 29, 215, 714</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:26</td>
<td>412, 968, 1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:36</td>
<td>349, 549, 835, 838, 885, 1213</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:28</td>
<td>221, 244, 514, 730, 917, 1060</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:37</td>
<td>278, 279, 488, 546, 663, 680, 733, 967</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:30</td>
<td>348, 983, 994, 1055, 1156, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:38</td>
<td>171, 297, 546</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:31</td>
<td>815, 870</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:1</td>
<td>407, 696, 708, 1131</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:33 f.</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:2</td>
<td>460, 726</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:34</td>
<td>334, 529, 668, 811, 818</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:3</td>
<td>266, 275, 337, 1215</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:35</td>
<td>775, 874, 961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:4</td>
<td>508, 1028</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:36</td>
<td>800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:6</td>
<td>561, 983</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:37</td>
<td>710, 771, 954, 1163, 1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:7</td>
<td>339, 1046-7</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:38</td>
<td>964, 1123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:11</td>
<td>529, 614</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:39</td>
<td>726, 1164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:12</td>
<td>94, 1004, 1024 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:40</td>
<td>630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:13</td>
<td>190, 841, 1060</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:41</td>
<td>484, 795; 930, 1033, 1034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:15</td>
<td>471, 541, 577, 949</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:42</td>
<td>663, 997, 1011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:17</td>
<td>360, 409, 656, 789, 902</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:43</td>
<td>218, 1019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>535</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:43, 45</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:22</td>
<td>259, 807</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:43-47</td>
<td>849</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:23</td>
<td>508 bis, 916, 1027</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:45</td>
<td>231, 850</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:24</td>
<td>423, 1041 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:47</td>
<td>849, 1084</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:25</td>
<td>170, 368</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:48</td>
<td>318</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:28</td>
<td>747, 1028</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:49</td>
<td>269, 534</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:28 f.</td>
<td>1036</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:50</td>
<td>145, 269 ter, 534, 767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:29</td>
<td>861, 1186</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:1</td>
<td>801, 904, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:31</td>
<td>350, 579, 1035</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:2</td>
<td>794, 916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:34</td>
<td>727, 956</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:7</td>
<td>574</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:34 f.</td>
<td>956</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:9</td>
<td>314</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:35</td>
<td>193, 956, 957, 959, 961</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:10</td>
<td>503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:36</td>
<td>472, 485, 689</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:11</td>
<td>747, 1028</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:37</td>
<td>109, 573, 935, 1214</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:12</td>
<td>747</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:38</td>
<td>472, 473, 485, 523</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:13</td>
<td>392, 538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:1</td>
<td>742, 957, 962, 1041, 1116, 1123</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:16</td>
<td>318</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:2</td>
<td>428</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:17</td>
<td>418 bis, 474, 675</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:3</td>
<td>375, 723, 890, 903</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:18</td>
<td>176, 276, 298, 479, 480, 656, 661, 916, 1176 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:4</td>
<td>268, 529</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:20</td>
<td>507, 842</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:6</td>
<td>473, 738, 1028, 1031, 1044</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:21</td>
<td>302, 476, 541, 834, 1193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1025, 1065</td>
<td>10:23</td>
<td>888</td>
<td>741</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDEX OF QUOTATIONS**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Mark**

**13:30**

**13:31**

**13:32**

**13:33**

**13:34**

**13:35**

**13:36**

**13:37**

**14:1**

**14:2**

**14:3**

**14:4**

**14:5**

**14:6**

**14:7**

**14:8**

**14:9**

**14:10**

**14:10 f.**

**14:11**

**14:12**

**14:13**

**14:14**

**14:15**

**14:16**

**14:17**

**14:18**

**14:19**

**14:20**

**14:21**

**14:22**

**14:23**

**14:24**

**14:25**

**14:26**

**14:27**

**14:28**

**14:29**

**14:30**

**14:31**

**14:32**

**14:33**

**14:34**

**14:35**

**14:36**

**14:37**

**14:38**

**14:39**

**14:40**

**14:41**

**14:42**

**14:43**

**14:44**

**14:45**

**14:46**

**14:47**

**1305**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Mark</th>
<th>Luke</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>16:1</td>
<td>501</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:2</td>
<td>523, 602, 672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:3</td>
<td>596, 597</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:4</td>
<td>1035, 1041, 1190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:5</td>
<td>408, 485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:6</td>
<td>817, 842</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:9</td>
<td>578, 672, 905</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:10</td>
<td>708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:12</td>
<td>293, 749, 792</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:18</td>
<td>208, 473, 1026</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:19</td>
<td>561, 1074</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:20</td>
<td>891, 1127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>367, 841, 965, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1-4</td>
<td>107, 121, 418, 432 bis, 1208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>308, 347, 687, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>221, 244, 279, 392, 463, 464, 570, 771, 1039 bis, 1084, 1085</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>292, 395, 743, 760</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>505, 641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>523, 587, 906, 963</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>148, 505, 640, 658, 979, 1072</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>231, 509, 1060, 1065, 1113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>418, 560, 602</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>480, 964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>356, 357, 541, 871, 1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14 f.</td>
<td>270, 505, 642, 871, 933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>679</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16, 17</td>
<td>255, 477, 562, 683</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>208, 353, 594, 714, 717, 721, 728, 889, 960, 963, 975, 1173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:21</td>
<td>260 bis, 532, 979, 1073, 1092</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>582, 680, 888, 1029</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:23</td>
<td>658</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:24</td>
<td>351, 617, 1217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>224, 566, 721, 792</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:27</td>
<td>364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:28</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:29</td>
<td>741, 938, 1031, 1044, 1045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:30</td>
<td>614, 647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:31</td>
<td>480, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:33</td>
<td>602</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:34</td>
<td>1159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:35</td>
<td>409, 560, 764, 1181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:36</td>
<td>256, 267, 272, 275, 701, 790</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:37</td>
<td>752</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:38</td>
<td>940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:39</td>
<td>255, 652, 708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.33</td>
<td>602</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5</td>
<td>216, 364, 801, 807, 809, 1080, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6</td>
<td>1061, 1076</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>376, 477, 479</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

2:12 701 3:19 258, 512, 619, 717, 719
2:13 272, 404, 407, 412, 655, 656 3:20 605 bis
2:14 242, 792 bis 3:21 371, 771, 1073
2:15 393, 714, 1149 3:22 795, 837 bis
2:16 759, 760, 861, 1109, 1113 3:23 1102
2:18 532, 619, 838 3:23-38 236, 761
2:19 828, 884 3:24 215, 263
2:20 429, 716, 717 3:25 f 215
2:21 457, 480, 621, 858, 978, 1039, 1075, 1076, 1091 3:29 215, 236
2:22 491, 561, 609, 1088 3:32 214
2:22, 24 990 3:33 255
2:24 204, 1088 3:35 236
2:25 395, 602, 770 3:36 236
2:26 362, 816, 858, 977 bis, 1030, 1036, 1047, 1080, 1084, 1085, 1091 4:1 396, 880, 1185
4:3 781, 1009 bis
2:27 47, 490, 501, 619, 858, 979, 1039, 1065, 1073, 1081, 1109 4:6 701, 771
4:7 234, 540
2:28 473, 593 4:9 834
2:29-32 1199 4:10 582, 762, 1068
2:32 210 4:13 505, 576, 771, 791, 974
2:33 405, 412, 605 4:14 607
2:35 687, 986 4:15 1127
2:36 723 4:16 219, 299, 358, 523, 537, 881, 909
2:37 232, 495, 518, 559, 576, 680 bis 4:17 29, 103
2:38 523, 541, 574, 686 4:18 425, 641, 901
2:39 766, 800, 841 4:20 757, 773
2:41 224, 270, 523, 608, 884 4:22 418, 496, 532, 651, 697, 838
2:42 497 4:23 402, 864, 1035, 1103, 1207
2:44 269, 469, 479, 496, 1036, 1060 4:25 253, 255, 410, 523, 602, 604
2:46 491 4:26 219, 263, 399, 1016
2:47 883 4:26 f 1187,1203
2:48 402, 879 4:27 214, 603
2:49 502, 86, 739, 767, 884, 916, 1034, 1176 4:28 1127
2:50 680 bis 4:29 365, 603, 905, 990
2:51 828, 884 4:30 1000, 1089
3:1 189, 255, 510, 523, 788, 793 4:30 550, 565, 581, 648, 775, 791, 905
3:2 255 bis, 501, 603 4:34 391 bis, 488, 539, 738, 1193
3:5 458, 595, 652 4:35 230-1, 472, 482, 484, 648, 860, 1172
3:6 772 4:36 735, 1001
3:8 853 4:37 261
3:9 870 4:38 619
3:10 850, 916, 934, 1176 4:40 800
3:12 243, 996 4:41 404, 1035, 1041, 1103
3:13 187, 667 4:42 643, 1061 bis, 1078, 1089, 1094, 1171
3:14 409, 532, 541, 582, 626, 853, 1173 4:43 474 748, 776
3:15 939, 940, 988, 996, 1031, 1044, 1045, 1177 4:5 375, 615
3:16 355, 520, 521, 722, 828 5:1 393
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

Luke
5:1, 12, 17 1183 6:24 f. 1193
5:2 1 559 6:25 333, 356, 459, 466, 1107, 1193
5:3 597, 733
5:4 431, 860, 891, 1102, 1121 6:26 208
5:5 339, 582, 604, 774, 1186 6:27 473
5:6 212, 318, 885, 1219 bis 6:27 f. 428
5:7 529, 616, 745, 748, 769, 1039, 1068 6:28 473 bis
5:9 433, 628, 717 6:30 855, 890, 1214
5:10 353, 504, 528, 765, 889 6:32 1019, 1026
5:12 334, 792, 817, 849 6:32 f. 740
5:14 442, 537 6:33 687, 850, 1019
5:17 323, 393, 788, 888, 906 6:34 576, 720, 721, 1010
5:18 396 6:35 223, 476
5:19 494, 506, 550, 561, 636, 652, 740 bis, 1029, 1044, 6:37 f. 948
5:20 342, 1216 6:38 184, 213, 718, 828, 1136
5:20, 23 315 6:39 917 ter, 1157, 1175
5:21 703 6:40 1105
5:22 896 6:41 692
5:23 434, 907, 1203 6:42 312, 597 bis, 659, 686, 932, 980, 1138, 1139, 1214
5:24 642 6:45 676, 762, 763
5:25 845 6:47 436
5:26 263, 612 6:48 212, 214, 232, 256, 365, 530, 551, 779, 909, 1071, 1081, 1091,
5:27 263 1105, 1136
5:29 611 6:48 f. 712
5:30 844 6:49 212, 648, 785, 1105, 1114
5:31 478 7:1 841, 965 bis, 971
5:34 978, 1085 7:2 546
5:36 560, 1025, 1027, 1182 7:3 582, 995
5:37 356 7:4 724, 872, 884, 961, 996
5:38 157, 373, 486, 1097 7:5 367
6:1 168, 393, 533, 560, 1043 7:6 518, 807
6:2 235, 425 7:7 1023
6:3 300, 726, 971 7:8 767, 856, 865
6:3 f. 1045 7:9 290, 474
6:4 435, 714, 1032, 1039, 1084 7:11 523, 530, 547, 660, 774
6:6 393, 684, 748 7:12 232, 536, 537, 680, 1116, 1183
6:7 1103 6:11 327, 854, 885, 938, 940 bis, 1021 7:16 842
6:8 680, 800 7:17 586
6:9 500, 582, 1040, 1049, 1058, 1085 7:18 194, 258
6:12 477, 577 7:19 f. 478
6:13 428 7:21 818
6:14 480 7:24 1080
6:16 501, 767 7:24 f. 857
6:17 28, 273, 579, 613 7:25 364, 816
6:17 f. 714 7:27 872, 960
6:20 593, 681, 683, 770, 910 7:28 234, 504
6:21 333, 356 7:30 535, 594
6:22 641, 834 7:32 778, 792, 1107
6:23 208, 523, 855 7:33 519, 1189
6:24 1107, 1187 7:35 837
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Luke</th>
<th>7:36</th>
<th>742</th>
<th>8:33</th>
<th>607</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:37</td>
<td>586, 1035</td>
<td>8:34</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:38</td>
<td>525, 533 bis, 645, 799</td>
<td>8:35</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:39</td>
<td>292, 727, 736, 741 bis, 887, 923, 1012, 1014, 1048, 1049, 1177</td>
<td>8:36</td>
<td>1043, 1045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:40</td>
<td>742, 1087</td>
<td>8:37</td>
<td>1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:41</td>
<td>201, 668, 749, 750, 920</td>
<td>8:38</td>
<td>203, 342, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:42</td>
<td>393, 515, 737</td>
<td>8:39</td>
<td>608, 733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:42 f.</td>
<td>608</td>
<td>8:40</td>
<td>828</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:43</td>
<td>659, 1034, 1048</td>
<td>8:41</td>
<td>234, 742, 910, 1035, 1041, 1042, 1103, 1109, 1118, 1123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:44</td>
<td>701</td>
<td>8:42</td>
<td>1045 bis, 1032</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:45</td>
<td>581, 653, 717, 978, 1102, 1121</td>
<td>8:43</td>
<td>718, 721, 726 bis, 966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:47</td>
<td>647, 720, 722, 774, 777, 962, 966</td>
<td>8:44</td>
<td>264, 462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7:49</td>
<td>703, 724, 735, 961</td>
<td>8:45</td>
<td>742, 827, 867, 890, 895</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:1</td>
<td>587, 608</td>
<td>8:46</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:1, 22</td>
<td>680</td>
<td>8:47</td>
<td>752</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:3</td>
<td>214, 215, 599, 749</td>
<td>8:48</td>
<td>475, 809, 853, 1166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:4</td>
<td>313, 505, 583</td>
<td>8:49</td>
<td>341, 827, 838</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:5</td>
<td>107, 478, 695, 990, 1072, 1073, 1153</td>
<td>8:50</td>
<td>264, 465, 769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:5f</td>
<td>749</td>
<td>8:51</td>
<td>1049, 1085</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:5 ff</td>
<td>1152</td>
<td>8:52</td>
<td>1109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:6-8</td>
<td>350, 749</td>
<td>8:53</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:7</td>
<td>216, 341, 644</td>
<td>8:54</td>
<td>571, 944, 1092, 1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:8</td>
<td>284, 777</td>
<td>8:55</td>
<td>1047</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:9</td>
<td>736, 938, 1031</td>
<td>8:56</td>
<td>437, 733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:10</td>
<td>993</td>
<td>8:57</td>
<td>299, 608</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:11</td>
<td>704</td>
<td>8:58</td>
<td>233, 792, 1071, 1109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:12</td>
<td>233</td>
<td>8:59</td>
<td>743, 750, 1049</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:13</td>
<td>625, 793</td>
<td>8:60</td>
<td>636, 747</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:14</td>
<td>1164</td>
<td>8:61</td>
<td>710</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:14 f.</td>
<td>704</td>
<td>8:62</td>
<td>1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:15</td>
<td>176, 600, 1182, 1201</td>
<td>8:63</td>
<td>691, 733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:16</td>
<td>318, 634</td>
<td>8:64</td>
<td>367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:17</td>
<td>726, 64, 1001, 1158, 1164</td>
<td>8:65</td>
<td>800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:18</td>
<td>957, 962, 1170</td>
<td>8:66</td>
<td>201, 666, 751, 762, 1016, 1017, 1025, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>530</td>
<td>8:67</td>
<td>482, 487, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:20</td>
<td>349, 881</td>
<td>8:68</td>
<td>771</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:21</td>
<td>700</td>
<td>8:69</td>
<td>561</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:22</td>
<td>675, 680</td>
<td>8:70</td>
<td>371, 375, 891</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:23</td>
<td>834, 838, 884, 885</td>
<td>8:71</td>
<td>1036</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:24</td>
<td>787, 879, 1200</td>
<td>8:72</td>
<td>1035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:25</td>
<td>541, 697, 917, 1176</td>
<td>8:73</td>
<td>695, 1047</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:26</td>
<td>573, 638, 693, 728</td>
<td>8:74</td>
<td>579, 762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:27</td>
<td>527, 528, 809, 841</td>
<td>8:75</td>
<td>681, 688, 690, 811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:28</td>
<td>234, 463, 464, 519</td>
<td>8:76</td>
<td>641, 688, 689, 698</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:29</td>
<td>212, 262, 318, 392, 527, 581, 827, 905</td>
<td>8:77</td>
<td>816, 1023, 1129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:29 f.</td>
<td>543</td>
<td>8:78</td>
<td>473, 743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:30</td>
<td>404</td>
<td>8:79</td>
<td>107, 434, 460, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:31</td>
<td>252, 404</td>
<td>8:80</td>
<td>163, 748, 1073</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:32</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>8:81</td>
<td>957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:31</td>
<td>343, 884</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:32</td>
<td>529, 533, 582, 628, 766</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:33</td>
<td>1720, 726, 750, 931, 1030, 1048</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:33, 41</td>
<td>299</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:34</td>
<td>431, 885</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:35</td>
<td>507, 818</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:36</td>
<td>337, 364, 657, 680, 720, 776, 834, 897 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:37</td>
<td>393, 529, 774</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:38</td>
<td>232, 541</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:39</td>
<td>231, 296</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:40</td>
<td>993</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:41</td>
<td>264, 299, 463, 464, 623</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:42</td>
<td>212, 818</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:43</td>
<td>537, 716, 717</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:43-45</td>
<td>883</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:45</td>
<td>509, 812, 998,1212</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:46</td>
<td>424, 491, 585, 739, 766, 890, 938, 940, 1021, 1031, 1044, 1046, 1176</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:47</td>
<td>614</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:48</td>
<td>668, 698, 954</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:49</td>
<td>611, 838, 864, 885, 892, 964, 1030, 1041, 1048</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:50</td>
<td>607, 720, 956, 962, 1158</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:51</td>
<td>349, 426, 951, 1002, 1042, 1068, 1183</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:52</td>
<td>621, 967, 987, 990, 1089, 1091</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:54</td>
<td>561, 858, 878, 935, 1046, 1080</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:55</td>
<td>731, 740 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:56</td>
<td>748</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:57</td>
<td>969</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:58</td>
<td>969, 1044, 1045</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:59</td>
<td>1039, 1084</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:60</td>
<td>582, 1201</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:61</td>
<td>536, 593</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:62</td>
<td>1097</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:1</td>
<td>284, 299, 571, 655, 673 bis, 749, 884, 969</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:3</td>
<td>644</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:4</td>
<td>608, 853, 1172</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:5</td>
<td>537</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:6</td>
<td>334, 357, 394, 561, 819, 874, 948, 1025</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:6, 8, 10</td>
<td>849</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:7</td>
<td>408, 561, 615, 709, 757</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:8</td>
<td>959, 1115</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:9</td>
<td>401, 539, 699</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:10</td>
<td>643, 678</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:11</td>
<td>418</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:12</td>
<td>543, 1181</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:13</td>
<td>843, 864, 883, 910, 1041, 1012, 1114, 1116, 1123 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:19</td>
<td>875, 889, 590, 1061, 1076, 1165, 1175</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:20</td>
<td>965, 1035, 1173 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:21</td>
<td>464, 524, 709, 764, 788</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:22</td>
<td>845, 959</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:24</td>
<td>339, 678, 843</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:25</td>
<td>743, 796</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:26</td>
<td>423, 917, 1176</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:27</td>
<td>765</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:28</td>
<td>949</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:29</td>
<td>234, 547, 1182</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:29, 36</td>
<td>646, 765</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:30</td>
<td>521, 524, 542, 634, 1113</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:31</td>
<td>165</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:34</td>
<td>508, 691, 817, 1220</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:34 f.</td>
<td>219</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:35</td>
<td>107, 243, 291, 602, 681, 688, 729, 959 bis, 964, 1039</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:36</td>
<td>501, 561, 585, 593, 908</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:37</td>
<td>611</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:38</td>
<td>633, 743</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:39</td>
<td>289, 613, 696</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:40</td>
<td>529, 560, 565, 573, 618, 627, 816, 1087, 1090</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:40 f.</td>
<td>620</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:41</td>
<td>816</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:42</td>
<td>518, 559, 562, 728, 810, 819</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:1</td>
<td>371, 375, 429, 742 bis, 891, 952, 1036, 1042, 1181</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:2-4</td>
<td>852</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:3</td>
<td>159, 487, 766, 855, 1214</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:4</td>
<td>315, 335, 541, 744, 773, 853, 880, 963, 1216</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:5</td>
<td>185, 738, 875, 930, 934</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:6</td>
<td>720, 726, 960, 965, 996</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:7</td>
<td>300, 340, 362, 593, 853, 947, 1170</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:8</td>
<td>244, 518, 733 bis, 1012, 1026, 1027, 1070, 1071, 1148 bis, 1149</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:9 f.</td>
<td>357, 1213</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:9, 10 f</td>
<td>1213</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:11</td>
<td>436, 490, 573, 738</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:11 f.</td>
<td>439</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:13</td>
<td>548, 599, 1045, 1204</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:14</td>
<td>1119</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:15</td>
<td>515</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:15 f.</td>
<td>749</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:17</td>
<td>750</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:18</td>
<td>750, 891, 1081</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:21</td>
<td>690, 779</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:22</td>
<td>231, 366, 580, 904, 971</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:24</td>
<td>969</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:26</td>
<td>775</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:27</td>
<td>219</td>
<td>12:26</td>
<td>669, 670, 1012, 1024, 1160 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:28</td>
<td>1151</td>
<td>12:28</td>
<td>184, 352, 1212</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:29</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>12:29</td>
<td>609</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:30</td>
<td>1190</td>
<td>12:30</td>
<td>419, 705</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:32</td>
<td>963</td>
<td>12:31</td>
<td>1187</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:33</td>
<td>231, 764</td>
<td>12:32</td>
<td>231, 261, 465</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:34</td>
<td>284, 971</td>
<td>12:33</td>
<td>215, 504, 1100, 1109, 1137, 1172</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:35</td>
<td>995, 1045, 1169</td>
<td>12:34</td>
<td>969</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:38</td>
<td>32, 621, 808, 965, 1035</td>
<td>12:35</td>
<td>313, 314, 328, 330, 360, 375, 890, 908</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:39</td>
<td>399, 505, 642, 643, 786</td>
<td>12:36</td>
<td>597, 1044, 1045, 1110, 1132</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:40</td>
<td>547, 642</td>
<td>12:37</td>
<td>158, 523, 794, 1018, 1025, 1182</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:42</td>
<td>315, 477, 499, 500, 800, 919, 1171, 1193</td>
<td>12:38</td>
<td>718</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:44</td>
<td>642</td>
<td>12:39</td>
<td>718</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:45</td>
<td>473</td>
<td>12:40</td>
<td>1180</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:46</td>
<td>484</td>
<td>12:41</td>
<td>604</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:47</td>
<td>1153</td>
<td>12:42</td>
<td>891</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:48</td>
<td>529, 1153 bis, 1190</td>
<td>12:43</td>
<td>604, 866</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:49</td>
<td>1181, 1202</td>
<td>12:44</td>
<td>718</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:50</td>
<td>213, 796</td>
<td>12:45</td>
<td>1180</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:51</td>
<td>789</td>
<td>12:46</td>
<td>109, 686</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:52</td>
<td>265</td>
<td>12:47</td>
<td>559, 909, 967, 988, 1062, 1079, 1081, 1147</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:54</td>
<td>474</td>
<td>12:47 f</td>
<td>775, 976</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:2</td>
<td>627, 818 bis, 1158</td>
<td>12:48</td>
<td>436, 477, 479, 485, 659, 718, 720</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:3</td>
<td>696, 722, 724, 818, 952, 962</td>
<td>12:49</td>
<td>302, 739, 917, 1176, 1193</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:4</td>
<td>72, 577, 704, 752, 935, 1046, 1087, 1213</td>
<td>12:50</td>
<td>302, 729</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:5</td>
<td>232, 560, 818, 858, 950, 979, 1046, 1074, 1092</td>
<td>12:51</td>
<td>1187, 1188</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:6</td>
<td>751, 818, 917, 1157, 1182</td>
<td>12:52</td>
<td>361, 375, 907</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:7</td>
<td>818 bis, 1186</td>
<td>12:52 f</td>
<td>605</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:8 f.</td>
<td>1114</td>
<td>12:57</td>
<td>109, 686</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:9</td>
<td>439</td>
<td>12:58</td>
<td>559, 909, 967, 988, 1062, 1079, 1081, 1147</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>642, 812, 818, 819</td>
<td>13:1</td>
<td>290, 317, 611, 613, 686</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:11</td>
<td>334, 561, 739, 787, 1170</td>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>616 bis, 661, 801, 1029, 1175</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:12</td>
<td>523, 709, 726, 776</td>
<td>13:3</td>
<td>849</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:13</td>
<td>742 bis</td>
<td>13:4</td>
<td>253, 283, 616 bis, 724</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>480</td>
<td>13:6</td>
<td>906, 1115, 1117</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:15</td>
<td>472, 476, 543, 598, 772, 802, 807, 933, 949, 979, 994, 1073, 1183 bis</td>
<td>13:6 f.</td>
<td>1128</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:16</td>
<td>349</td>
<td>13:7</td>
<td>739 bis, 879, 977, 1115</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:18</td>
<td>699</td>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>528, 620, 976</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:19</td>
<td>594, 902</td>
<td>13:9</td>
<td>208, 394, 594, 874, 924, 942, 1018, 1023, 1025, 1203</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:20</td>
<td>264, 392, 406, 463, 464, 523, 541, 816, 820</td>
<td>13:10</td>
<td>1110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:21</td>
<td>689</td>
<td>13:11</td>
<td>627, 1119</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:23</td>
<td>411, 516, 654</td>
<td>13:12</td>
<td>264, 518</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:24</td>
<td>606, 1035, 1183</td>
<td>13:13</td>
<td>367, 770</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:25</td>
<td>606, 1035, 1183</td>
<td>13:14</td>
<td>885</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:26</td>
<td>669, 670, 1012, 1024</td>
<td>13:15</td>
<td>920, 965</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:27</td>
<td>669, 670, 1012, 1024</td>
<td>13:16</td>
<td>746</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:28</td>
<td>669, 670, 1012, 1024</td>
<td>13:17</td>
<td>283, 460, 518, 887, 919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:29</td>
<td>669, 670, 1012, 1024</td>
<td>13:18</td>
<td>542, 605</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Luke

| 13:19  | 458, 595, 690, 791 | 15:4 | 976 |
| 13:19, 21 | 715 | 15:4, 7 | 213 |
| 13:21 | 656 | 15:4, 8 | 738 |
| 13:23 | 916, 1024 | 15:6 | 562, 563, 786, 805 |
| 13:24 | 434 | 15:6, 9 | 1035 |
| 13:25 | 188, 319, 800, 978, 1102 | 15:7 | 661, 1188 |
| 13:25, 26 | 324 | 15:8 | 738, 917 |
| 13:27 | 559, 773 | 15:9 | 787, 805 |
| 13:28 | 188, 324, 339, 348, 876, 972, 1218 | 15:11 | 743 |
| 13:29 | 254 | 15:13 | 771, 1163 |
| 13:32 | 653, 1202 | 15:14 | 253, 410, 608, 680 |
| 13:33 | 393, 652, 1198, 1202 | 15:15 | 675, 817 |
| 13:34 | 204, 219, 267, 348, 635, 689, 718 | 15:16 | 208, 716, 883, 885 |
| 13:35 | 972 bis, 976 | 15:17 | 510, 532, 741, 828 |
| 14:1 | 613, 811 | 15:18 | 594, 874 |
| 14:2, 16 | 743 | 15:19, 21 | 658, 1076, 1080 |
| 14:3 | 787 | 15:20 | 1061 |
| 14:4 | 574 | 15:21 | 1110 |
| 14:7 | 360, 477, 800, 811, 883, 1032, 1202 | 15:22 | 845 |
| 14:8 | 907 | 15:23 | 483, 649 |
| 14:9 | 910 | 15:24 | 701, 904, 906 |
| 14:10 | 186, 308, 328, 338, 561, 910, 984, 988 | 15:25 | 507, 792 |
| 14:11 | 1108 | 15:26 | 407, 411, 736, 890, 938 bis, 940, 1031 |
| 14:12 | 988 | 15:27 | 881, 893 |
| 14:13 (21) | 192 | 15:28 | 885 |
| 14:14 | 574 | 15:29 | 470, 477, 879 |
| 14:15 | 356 | 15:30 | 697 |
| 14:16 | 262 | 15:31 | 685 |
| 14:17 | 186, 656 | 15:32 | 834, 842, 887 |
| 14:18 | 109, 360, 375, 480, 550, 653, 104, 1108, 1122 | 16:1 | 529, 652, 697, 703, 966, 1140 |
| 14:18f | 1110 | 16:2 | 312, 736, 916, 1164, 1176, 1214 |
| 14:18f | 1110 | 16:3 | 480, 483, 559, 600, 1060, 1078, 1102 |
| 14:18f | 1110 | 16:4 | 935 |
| 14:19 | 809 | 16:5 | 308, 518, 827, 842, 893 |
| 14:19 | 809 | 16:6 | 201 |
| 14:19f | 842 | 16:7 | 499 |
| 14:20 | 842 | 16:8 | 496, 633, 651, 667, 779 |
| 14:21 | 748, 902 | 16:9 | 254, 510, 598 |
| 14:22 | 427, 787 | 16:10 | 658, 660, 782 bis |
| 14:23 | 789 | 16:11 | 1009 |
| 14:24 | 473, 506 | 16:12, 31 | 1012 |
| 14:25 | 774 | 16:13 | 288 bis |
| 14:26 | 688, 789, 1012 | 16:14 | 251, 508, 748 |
| 14:27 | 1159 | 16:15 | 472, 705, 778 |
| 14:28 | 1024, 1045 | 16:16 | 1108 |
| 14:29 | 1173 | 16:17 | 221, 645, 975 |
| 14:30 | 770, 1102 | 16:18 | 186, 921 |
| 14:31 | 281, 531, 589, 748, 1045 | 16:19 | 579 bis, 910 bis |
| 14:32 | 546 | 16:20 | 485, 810, 883 |
| 14:33 | 515, 720, 744, 1158 | 16:21 | 361, 364, 366, 905, 910 |
| 14:34 | 269, 889, 934 | 16:22 | 1186 |
| 14:35 | 535 | 16:23 | 1085 |
| 15:2 | 529, 697 | 16:24 | 408, 502, 586 |
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Luke</th>
<th>1313</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>16:24</td>
<td>495, 775</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:25</td>
<td>341, 696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:26</td>
<td>548, 561, 800, 896</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:26, 28 bis</td>
<td>986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:27</td>
<td>1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:27 f</td>
<td>1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:28</td>
<td>986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:29</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:30</td>
<td>791</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:31</td>
<td>819, 871, 1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:3</td>
<td>477, 542, 689, 802, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:4</td>
<td>505, 769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:5</td>
<td>310, 948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:6</td>
<td>887, 921, 1015, 1022</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:7</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:8</td>
<td>340, 738, 869, 976, 1045, 1215, 1218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:9 f.</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:10</td>
<td>920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:12</td>
<td>367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:13</td>
<td>304, 791, 1012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:14</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:15</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:16</td>
<td>819</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:17</td>
<td>917, 1157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:18</td>
<td>505, 641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:22</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:23</td>
<td>392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:24</td>
<td>652, 792, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:25</td>
<td>579</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:27</td>
<td>717, 884, 975</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:28</td>
<td>968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:29</td>
<td>791</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:30</td>
<td>208, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:31</td>
<td>308, 440, 442, 708, 724, 957, 959</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:32</td>
<td>506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:33</td>
<td>193, 957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:34 f</td>
<td>748, 749</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:35</td>
<td>602, 889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:37</td>
<td>969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:1</td>
<td>626, 997, 1003, 1049, 1060, 1075</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:2</td>
<td>743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:4</td>
<td>688, 1012, 1026, 1027</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:5</td>
<td>201, 244, 966, 1039, 1148 bis, 1149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:6</td>
<td>496, 651</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:7</td>
<td>495, 930, 934, 1158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:7 f.</td>
<td>802</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:8</td>
<td>589, 916, 1176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:8</td>
<td>589, 916, 1176</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Luke

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Verses</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>19:37</td>
<td></td>
<td>154, 412, 619, 623, 624 bis, 719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:40</td>
<td></td>
<td>325, 333 bis, 356, 361, 801, 873, 907, 1008, 1010, 1217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:41</td>
<td></td>
<td>834</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:42</td>
<td></td>
<td>483, 523, 793, 835, 842, 1023, 1203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:43</td>
<td></td>
<td>617, 873, 907, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:46</td>
<td></td>
<td>480, 470, 487, 550, 888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:48</td>
<td></td>
<td>190, 317, 340, 766, 771, 1127, 1217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:1</td>
<td></td>
<td>523</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1177, 1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:3</td>
<td></td>
<td>1180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:4</td>
<td></td>
<td>1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:6</td>
<td></td>
<td>163, 891, 903, 1030, 1046, 1081</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:7</td>
<td></td>
<td>1036, 1038, 1171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:9</td>
<td></td>
<td>308, 470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:10</td>
<td></td>
<td>324, 519, 522, 872, 984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:11</td>
<td></td>
<td>748</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:11 f.</td>
<td></td>
<td>551, 1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>94, 822</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:14</td>
<td></td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:15</td>
<td></td>
<td>876</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:16</td>
<td></td>
<td>939 bis, 940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:17</td>
<td></td>
<td>718</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:19</td>
<td></td>
<td>626, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:20</td>
<td></td>
<td>481, 508, 787, 990, 1036, 1038, 1039, 1040, 1089</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:22</td>
<td></td>
<td>1158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:24</td>
<td></td>
<td>393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:25</td>
<td></td>
<td>425, 767, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:26</td>
<td></td>
<td>508, 573</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:27</td>
<td></td>
<td>458, 1094, 1171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:28</td>
<td></td>
<td>849</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:34</td>
<td></td>
<td>150, 1213 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:35</td>
<td></td>
<td>509, 598, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:35 f.</td>
<td></td>
<td>1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:36</td>
<td></td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:37</td>
<td></td>
<td>253, 1034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:40</td>
<td></td>
<td>1162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:42</td>
<td></td>
<td>199, 686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:47</td>
<td></td>
<td>564</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:2</td>
<td></td>
<td>743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:5</td>
<td></td>
<td>153, 187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:6</td>
<td></td>
<td>416, 439, 459, 565, 601, 960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:8</td>
<td></td>
<td>932, 3, 996</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:11</td>
<td></td>
<td>219, 1201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:17</td>
<td></td>
<td>375, 636, 878, 889</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Luke

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Verses</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>21:10</td>
<td></td>
<td>324, 519, 522, 872, 984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>626, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:14</td>
<td></td>
<td>334, 818, 1094, 1171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:15</td>
<td></td>
<td>573</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:16</td>
<td></td>
<td>599</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:17</td>
<td></td>
<td>375, 636, 878, 889</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

1314
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>22:48</td>
<td>311, 533</td>
<td>23:55</td>
<td>726, 729, 1032, 1043</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:49</td>
<td>374, 456, 502, 590, 620, 876, 878, 916, 934, 935, 1024 bis, 1109, 1118, 1215</td>
<td>24:1</td>
<td>274, 495, 522, 672, 718, 841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:50</td>
<td>156, 292, 675, 742</td>
<td>24:4</td>
<td>1032</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:52</td>
<td>611</td>
<td>24:5</td>
<td>1061, 1171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:53</td>
<td>704</td>
<td>24:6</td>
<td>518, 1061, 1171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:54</td>
<td>559</td>
<td>24:7</td>
<td>572, 625, 703, 735, 835, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:55</td>
<td>617, 644</td>
<td>24:10</td>
<td>1039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:56</td>
<td>697</td>
<td>24:11</td>
<td>1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:58</td>
<td>612, 653, 678</td>
<td>24:13</td>
<td>1048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:59</td>
<td>550, 697, 743, 746</td>
<td>24:14</td>
<td>1049</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:61</td>
<td>483, 509, 873, 1091</td>
<td>24:14, 25, 31</td>
<td>1050</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:63</td>
<td>628</td>
<td>24:16</td>
<td>657, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:65</td>
<td>1130</td>
<td>24:17</td>
<td>1051</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:67</td>
<td>1020</td>
<td>24:19</td>
<td>1052</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:70</td>
<td>678, 695, 915</td>
<td>24:19 f.</td>
<td>1053</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:1</td>
<td>404, 412</td>
<td>24:21</td>
<td>216, 244, 392, 424, 628, 679, 701, 771, 884, 978, 1029, 1035, 1148 bis, 1185, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:2</td>
<td>339, 1039, 1041 bis, 1094, 1123</td>
<td>24:22</td>
<td>550, 657, 1181, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:4</td>
<td>786</td>
<td>24:23</td>
<td>489, 1028, 1038, 1039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:5</td>
<td>413, 548, 1126, 1203</td>
<td>24:24</td>
<td>968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:6</td>
<td>916</td>
<td>24:25</td>
<td>658, 659, 716, 1061, 1077</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:7</td>
<td>561</td>
<td>24:26</td>
<td>887, 919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:8</td>
<td>597, 884</td>
<td>24:27</td>
<td>367, 566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:11</td>
<td>483, 628</td>
<td>24:28</td>
<td>297, 298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:12</td>
<td>226, 1289, 405, 625, 686, 690, 888, 1103, 1121</td>
<td>24:29</td>
<td>625, 765, 792, 1065, 1088</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:14</td>
<td>219, 511, 560, 720, 750, 966, 1141</td>
<td>24:30</td>
<td>1039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:15</td>
<td>534, 542, 794, 820, 903, 1186</td>
<td>24:31</td>
<td>575, 682, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:18</td>
<td>170, 348, 530, 760</td>
<td>24:32</td>
<td>367, 888, 974, 1212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:19</td>
<td>323, 375, 860</td>
<td>24:33</td>
<td>334, 842</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:21</td>
<td>695</td>
<td>24:34</td>
<td>534, 587, 726</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:23</td>
<td>805</td>
<td>24:35</td>
<td>587, 739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:26</td>
<td>517, 645</td>
<td>24:36</td>
<td>203, 260, 1011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:28</td>
<td>475, 1173</td>
<td>24:37</td>
<td>580, 743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:29</td>
<td>219</td>
<td>24:38</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:30</td>
<td>338</td>
<td>24:39</td>
<td>315, 1036, 1212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:31</td>
<td>195, 587, 588, 929, 934</td>
<td>24:40</td>
<td>315, 1036, 1212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:32</td>
<td>749</td>
<td>24:41</td>
<td>858, 1080 bis, 1081</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:33</td>
<td>696, 792, 794</td>
<td>24:42</td>
<td>413, 491, 535, 946, 1126, 1203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:35, 37</td>
<td>1009</td>
<td>24:43</td>
<td>643, 683, 1205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:38</td>
<td>159, 604</td>
<td>24:44</td>
<td>561, 581, 1072</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:39</td>
<td>409</td>
<td>24:45</td>
<td>700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:41</td>
<td>720</td>
<td>24:46</td>
<td>918</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:44</td>
<td>1183</td>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>135, 579, 623, 625, 758, 761, 767, 792, 794, 795, 883, 915</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:45</td>
<td>775</td>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>628, 761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:47</td>
<td>700</td>
<td>1:2-8</td>
<td>700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:49</td>
<td>366, 560, 778</td>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>918</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:50</td>
<td>176</td>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>918</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>John</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>751, 1316</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>243, 768, 801, 692, 714, 762 bis, 770, 795, 881, 893, 897</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>1183</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>416, 434, 460, 534, 615, 707</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>583, 703, 707, 723, 850</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7 f</td>
<td>915</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7, 22</td>
<td>619</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>505, 707, 708, 1187</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>777, 891, 1118</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>502, 691 ter, 767, 834, 1157</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>563</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>339, 732, 778, 834, 1076, 1107, 1217</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>408, 534</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>275, 276, 394, 407, 413, 505, 767, 794, 818, 829 ter, 1204</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>280, 434, 438, 473, 484, 516, 640, 662, 670, 801, 887, 895, 896, 1111</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15 ff.</td>
<td>964, 1034</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>407, 505, 574, 829, 1181</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>133 n., 364, 536, 559, 586, 593, 614, 656, 707, 708, 829, 893, 896, 906</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>704, 905, 915</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19 ff.</td>
<td>897</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>1205</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20 f.</td>
<td>918</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:21</td>
<td>233, 768</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:21 f.</td>
<td>1157</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:24</td>
<td>905</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>1012, 1135, 1160 bis, 1165</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:26</td>
<td>505, 550, 644, 720</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:27</td>
<td>503, 658 bis, 961, 992, 996</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:28</td>
<td>970</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:29</td>
<td>391, 1193</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:29-42</td>
<td>868</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:30</td>
<td>234, 629, 632, 677</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:31</td>
<td>904</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:32</td>
<td>408, 440, 602, 792, 893, 897</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:32, 34, 41</td>
<td>896</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:33</td>
<td>440, 677, 707, 708, 724</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:34</td>
<td>677, 893, 896</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:35</td>
<td>366</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:37</td>
<td>1042</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:38</td>
<td>411, 416, 433, 465, 1044, 1123</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:39</td>
<td>299, 470, 714, 813, 871, 875, 949, 1044</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:40</td>
<td>519, 614 bis, 762, 779, 785</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>John</th>
<th>John</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:41</td>
<td>416, 433, 549, 657, 691 bis, 692, 714, 762 bis, 770, 795, 881, 893, 897</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:41 (42)</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:42</td>
<td>255, 376, 411, 678, 835</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:44</td>
<td>578, 598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:45</td>
<td>578, 720, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:46</td>
<td>428, 598, 743, 875, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:47</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:48</td>
<td>621, 634, 635 bis, 683, 765, 858, 978, 1075, 1028, 1029, 1123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:49</td>
<td>769, 781, 1126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:50</td>
<td>277, 396, 476, 634, 871, 1028, 1029, 1123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:51</td>
<td>364, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2, 12</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>539, 736</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5</td>
<td>243, 729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5-8</td>
<td>855</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6</td>
<td>571, 906</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>510</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>474, 506, 507, 841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9, 23</td>
<td>1184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>218, 277, 643, 678</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>216, 701-2, 704, 771, 781</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>470, 680, 681, 686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>265, 427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>855, 950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>500, 903, 1029</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>311, 433, 964, 1034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:19</td>
<td>586, 856, 948, 1023</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>283, 365, 367, 523, 527, 833, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>399, 498, 707, 708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22</td>
<td>715 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:23</td>
<td>523, 760, 1184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:24</td>
<td>226, 287, 476, 686, 688, 689, 765, 885, 966, 1071, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>1029, 1043, 1176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26</td>
<td>395, 434, 460, 599, 782, 1185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:27</td>
<td>611 bis, 793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28</td>
<td>857</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:29</td>
<td>751</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:30</td>
<td>795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:31</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:32</td>
<td>852 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:33 ff.</td>
<td>299, 342, 548 bis, 800, 1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:34</td>
<td>678, 768, 1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:35</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:37</td>
<td>654, 1009, 1012, 1160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13</td>
<td>600, 859, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>135, 437, 753, 758, 762, 770, 1000 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:17</td>
<td>1166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:18</td>
<td>897, 898, 963, 1028, 1159, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:19</td>
<td>426, 663, 666, 699, 789, 964, 1028, 1033, 1183, 1184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:19 f.</td>
<td>1191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>364, 795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:22</td>
<td>405, 438, 884</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23</td>
<td>392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>905</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:25</td>
<td>433, 515, 598, 610</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:26</td>
<td>539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:27</td>
<td>857, 907, 1019, 1162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:28</td>
<td>707</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:29</td>
<td>94, 531 bis, 550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:30</td>
<td>218, 707, 708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:31</td>
<td>243, 598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:32</td>
<td>901 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:33</td>
<td>859, 1034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:34</td>
<td>597, 1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:35</td>
<td>585, 649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:36</td>
<td>540, 879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>438, 666, 684, 841, 1034, 1049</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1-3</td>
<td>434</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>1129, 1148, 1149, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2, 12</td>
<td>680</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>393, 582, 887, 919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>505, 547, 596, 646, 715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>367, 428, 549, 599, 604, 778, 909 bis, 1116, 1146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7 ff</td>
<td>434</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7, 9</td>
<td>343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>905</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>204, 371, 482, 530, 678</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>418, 656, 678, 762, 922 bis, 1014, 1015, 1146, 1069, 1105, 1110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>394, 656 bis, 762, 777, 778, 1105, 1106, 1166, 1179, 1182, 1185, 1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>599</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>519, 520, 716, 813, 889, 1212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15</td>
<td>201, 985, 1088</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16, 35</td>
<td>856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>699</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:18</td>
<td>657, 702, 720, 790, 823, 843</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:20</td>
<td>426, 842-3, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:20, 24</td>
<td>919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>1159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21, 23</td>
<td>971</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>John</th>
<th>John</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7:9</td>
<td>833</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:10</td>
<td>429, 444</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:11</td>
<td>707 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:13</td>
<td>491, 500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:14</td>
<td>444, 838, 885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:15</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:16</td>
<td>496</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:17</td>
<td>292, 551, 741, 757, 878, 1019, 1045, 1177, 1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:18</td>
<td>698, 762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:19</td>
<td>1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:22</td>
<td>243, 434, 1166, 1187, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:23</td>
<td>275, 418, 541, 656, 774, 965, 1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:24</td>
<td>478</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:25</td>
<td>27, 444, 698, 703</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:26</td>
<td>135, 845, 1168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:26, 35, 47 f.</td>
<td>917</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:27 f</td>
<td>1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:30</td>
<td>231, 905, 1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:31</td>
<td>716, 720, 1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:32</td>
<td>444, 1123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:33</td>
<td>659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:34</td>
<td>969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:34, 36</td>
<td>232, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:35</td>
<td>495, 501, 581, 1001, 1205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:37</td>
<td>234, 444, 1019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:38</td>
<td>333, 355, 356, 437, 459, 1130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:39</td>
<td>368, 433, 795, 859 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:40</td>
<td>599 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:41</td>
<td>1190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:41 f</td>
<td>578</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:42</td>
<td>970</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:44</td>
<td>857</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:45</td>
<td>444</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:47</td>
<td>1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:48</td>
<td>599</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:49</td>
<td>404, 407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:51</td>
<td>308, 1168, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:52</td>
<td>866, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:14</td>
<td>208, 866, 870, 1010, 1018, 1026, 1045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:16</td>
<td>208, 424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>922, 1015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:20</td>
<td>586, 905, 1165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:20, 37</td>
<td>1159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:21</td>
<td>870</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:23</td>
<td>547 bis, 548, 765</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:24</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
John

9:30, 32, 35  1029  11:14  966, 800
9:31  698  11:18  283, 424, 469, 575, 760
9:32  597  11:19  619, 620, 905
9:33  920, 1014, 1016  11:20  521, 791,
9:34  656, 678, 768, 774  11:21  420, 841
9:35  841  11:21, 32  313, 922, 1015
9:36  960, 999, 1182  11:22  676, 684, 733
9:40  611  11:23  420
9:41  1013, 1014  11:24  669
10:1  300, 708  11:25  356, 768
10:3  608  11:26 f.  915
10:3, 9, 12  428  11:27  391, 781, 891, 1028
10:4  358, 404, 801  11:28  1034, 1150
10:5  355, 356, 4188, 889  11:29  861, 881
10:6  708, 736  11:30  841, 905 bis
10:7  501 768  11:31  596
10:8  507, 622  11:32  420 bis, 681, 706, 722, 779,
10:10  1025  11:35  1015
10:11  398, 418, 429, 650, 762 ter,  11:36  391, 834
776, 788, 8657 1206  11:37  302, 339, 741, 884
10:11 14  762  11:38  698, 857, 920, 985, 993
10:11 15  632  11:39  341, 559, 560, 593, 596, 604
10:12  434, 764, 955, 1138, 1163,  11:39  657
10:13  509  11:39, 44  856
10:15 ff  870  11:40  1030
10:17  965  11:41  541, 841, 856
10:18  420, 579, 843  11:42  477, 617
10:22.  408, 760  11:43  328, 1193
10:27  762  11:44  193, 197, 361, 366, 486,
10:28  333, 356, 752, 875, 1164,  11:45  905, 910, 1117
10:301  402, 677  11:47  880 bis, 923, 934
10:27  740, 845, 880 bis  11:48  681
10:2  480  11:49  675, 742
10:34  1028  11:50  631 bis, 993, 1034
10:35  434, 480, 708, 1182  11:51  688, 1029, 1034
10:36  425, 437, 442, 781, 952;1028  11:51, 53  709
10:37  1012, 1020, 1060, 1170  11:52  581, 593, 1162
10:37 f  1160  11:54  205, 640
10:38  425, 850, 983, 1026  11:55  517, 621
10:39  409, 885  11:56  1217
10:40  487, 659, 833, 970  11:56 f.  905
11:1  256, 578  11:57  134, 234, 308, 905, 986, 993
11:2  859, 1114  12:1  110, 424, 598, 621, 622,
11:3, 6, 12, 14 etc  1191  11:57  702, 762, 970, 1191
11:4  632  12:2  627
11:6  470, 706, 718, 1152, 1153  12:3  510, 598, 859
11:7  931, 1205  12:4  111, 1118
11:8  885  12:7  932
11:9  587, 800, 1019  12:9  656, 777
11:10  587  12:9, 12  762, 774
11:11  895  12:10  811, 993, 994, 1180
11:11-113  905  12:13  243, 528, 595, 838
11:12  1009  12:15  264, 462
11:13  498, 905, 1029  12:16  487, 550, 605, 653, 765, 905
11:14  1210 bis  12:16, 33  1029
11:16  580  12:17  892
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

| John | 12:18 | 909, 1035, 1042, 1103 | 13:29 | 235, 442 595, 706, 720 |
|      | 12:19 | 843, 941 | 13:31 | 843, 847 |
|      | 12:19, 21 | 243 | 13:33 | 548 |
|      | 12:20 | 27 | 13:34 | 845, 993 |
|      | 12:21 | 923 | 13:36f | 857 |
|      | 12:22 | 405 | 13:37 | 879 |
|      | 12:23 | 895, 992 | 14:1 | 329, 941 |
|      | 12:24 | 1019 | 14:2 | 424, 1015, 1025 |
|      | 12:25 | 317 | 14:2f | 869 |
|      | 12:26 | 870, 969, 1019 | 14:3 | 353, 690, 846 |
|      | 12:27 | 598, 843, 895, 1187 | 14:3f | 299 |
|      | 12:28. | 462, 845, 880 | 14:4 | 731 |
|      | 12:29 | 908, 1047, 1081 | 14:6 | 429, 583, 769 |
|      | 12:30 | 584 | 14:7 | 923, 1181 |
|      | 12:32 | 190, 597, 889, 1018 | 14:8 | 393 |
|      | 12:33 | 740 bis | 14:9 | 419, 528, 879 |
|      | 12:34 | 697, 704, 735 | 14:11 | 287, 395, 856, 1016, 1025, 1202 |
|      | 12:35 f | 976 | 14:13 | 243, 727, 729, 850 |
|      | 12:36 | 133, 807, 974 | 14:13 f | 956 |
|      | 12:37 | 1129 | 14:15 | 1019 |
|      | 12:39 | 699 | 14:16 | 613, 747, 1023 |
|      | 12:42 | 1155, 1188 bis | 14:17 | 233, 614, 857 |
|      | 12:43 | 301, 633, 1150, 1154 | 14:17 | 233, 614, 857 |
|      | 12:44 | 1135 | 14:19 | 395, 963 |
|      | 12:46 | 753 | 14:21 | 635, 688, 707, 708 bis, 769 |
|      | 12:47 | 234 | 14:21 | 739, 916, 965, 1001, 1034 |
|      | 12:48 | 698 | 14:22 | 802 |
|      | 12:49 | 698 | 14:23 | 419, 528, 879 |
|      | 13:1 | 498, 691, 843 | 14:24 | 685 |
|      | 13:1 ff. | 435 | 14:26 | 315, 777 |
|      | 13:1-5 | 435 | 14:27 | 234, 817, 923, 1015 |
|      | 13:2 | 309; 799 | 14:28 | 1091 |
|      | 13:3 | 562 | 14:3 | 308 |
|      | 13:4 | 188, 314, 597 | 14:31 | 777 |
|      | 13:5 | 716, 757, 976 | 15:1 | 243, 437 |
|      | 13:6 | 418, 420, 880, 915, 1175 | 15:2 | 437 |
|      | 13:8 | 915, 933 | 15:3 | 584 |
|      | 13:9 | 234 | 15:4 | 586, 587 |
|      | 13:10 | 458 bis, 466, 1028 | 15:5 | 437, 442, 1165 |
|      | 13:13 | 399, 845 | 15:7 | 850 |
|      | 13:14 | 633 | 15:8 | 324, 699, 837, 843, 984 |
|      | 13:15 | 516 | 15:9 | 992, 1078 |
|      | 13:16 | 850, 890, 1019, 1022 | 15:10 | 856, 968 |
|      | 13:17 | 560, 845 | 15:11 | 779 |
|      | 13:18 | 765, 978, 983, 1075 | 15:12 | 784, 1204 |
|      | 13:19 | 270, 416, 1018 | 15:13 | 699 |
|      | 13:20 | 675, 1136 | 15:14 | 393, 699, 992, 993 |
|      | 13:21 | 739 | 15:15 | 480, 769, 845 |
|      | 13:22 | 707, 708 | 15:16 | 309, 327, 729, 993, 1214 |
|      | 13:23 | 488, 664, 880 | 15:18 | 280, 670, 1008 |
John
15:19  559, 508, 921, 1013, 1014  17:15  598 bis
15:20  509, 716, 1009  17:17  768
19:13
15:22  921, 1013, 1169  17:19  360, 908
15:21  484  17:18  439
15:22, 24  336, 339, 887, 922, 921, 1013 bis  17:19, 23  983
15:24  1014, 1015, 1016, 1147  17:21  264
15:25  1033, 1203  17:21, 24, 25  462
15:26  561, 708, 795, 970  17:22  898
15:27  879, 1185  17:23  360, 593, 677, 908, 1049, 1116
15:28  561, 708, 795, 970  17:24  653, 713, 933, 969, 1048
15:25  1033, 1203  17:23, 24, 25  898
15:24  1014, 1015, 1016, 1147  17:24  234, 395, 249
15:22  653, 713, 933, 969, 1048
15:21  360, 593, 677, 908, 1049, 1116
15:20  561, 708, 795, 970  17:22  264 bis, 419, 461, 464,
15:19  1014, 1015, 1016, 1147  17:21  843, 1182
15:26  843, 845  17:24  478 bis, 482
15:25  1049  17:25  478 bis, 482
15:24  1019 bis  17:26  213, 275, 627, 680
15:23  409, 411, 437, 462
15:22  405, 529, 537, 707 bis  18:1  843, 1182
15:21  709  18:1, 5  859
15:20  871  17:14, 16
15:19  458 bis, 595, 871  18:13  548, 1127
15:20, 22  871  18:14  255
15:22  424 bis  18:16  746, 747 bis, 775, 777
15:21  405, 529, 537, 707 bis  18:17  708
15:23, 26  709  18:18  909 bis, 910, 1116
15:23  393, 515, 599, 698  18:19  589
15:24  703, 719  18:20  726
15:22  738  18:21  1116
15:19  .610 659, 699, 857, 1029  18:22  1009 bis
15:20  458 bis, 595, 871  18:23  841
15:20, 22  509, 716, 1009  18:24  1136
15:26  618  18:25  1136
15:28  598  18:26  1183
15:30  598  18:27  1183
15:31  579, 589, 699  18:28  500
15:32  1175  18:29  500
15:33  657  18:30  1015, 1016
17:1  135, 677  18:31  531, 740, 1029, 1043
17:1, 5, 11  462  18:32  288, 688
17:2  193, 309, 348, 409, 411, 437, 500, 713, 718, 876, 963, 984  18:33  1172
17:3  203, 699, 718, 776  18:34  992, 993, 1105
17:4  985, 992 bis, 1079  18:35  233; 599, 915, 917, 1165,
17:5  234, 418, 677, 682, 843  18:36  1175, 1192
17:6  418, 461, 678, 682, 716, 765, 891, 978 bis, 1074, 1075  18:37  411, 736
17:7  337, 598, 894, 895  18:38  430, 541, 876, 878, 924,
17:7 f.  337 bis, 820  18:39  935, 980, 992
17:7 f.  337 bis, 820  18:40  1112, 1173
17:8  1172, 1173  18:41  801
17:9  234, 337, 423  19:1  801
17:10  566, 567, 618, 619, 720, 721  19:2  408, 483, 521, 883
17:11  685, 770, 898  19:3  311, 465, 769, 884, 1214
17:11  463, 498  19:6  1190, 1200
17:11 f.  716  19:7  480
17:12  599, 1188  19:11  887, 906 bis, 921, 923
17:13  902  19:12  1014, 1015, 1016
17:14, 16  598  19:12  542, 573 885
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>John</th>
<th>19:13</th>
<th>20:25</th>
<th>258, 259</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>19:14</td>
<td>20:27</td>
<td>882, 1201</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:17</td>
<td>20:28</td>
<td>261, 461, 462, 466 bis, 779</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:18</td>
<td>20:29</td>
<td>859, 895, 1028</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:19</td>
<td>20:30</td>
<td>362, 655, 1181</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:20</td>
<td>20:31</td>
<td>540 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:21</td>
<td>21:1</td>
<td>603</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:22</td>
<td>21:2</td>
<td>405, 501, 767</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:23</td>
<td>21:3</td>
<td>353, 627, 882, 923, 990, 1062</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:24</td>
<td>21:4</td>
<td>593</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:25</td>
<td>21:5</td>
<td>155, 623, 917, 1168</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:26</td>
<td>21:6</td>
<td>408, 580, 593, 652</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:27</td>
<td>21:7</td>
<td>716, 810</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:28</td>
<td>21:8</td>
<td>268, 469, 499, 520, 521</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:29</td>
<td>21:9</td>
<td>533, 543, 575, 802</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:30</td>
<td>21:10</td>
<td>519, 577, 716, 843, 845</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:31</td>
<td>21:11</td>
<td>672, 1129</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:32</td>
<td>21:12</td>
<td>437, 885, 949, 1128</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:33</td>
<td>21:13</td>
<td>1205</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:34</td>
<td>21:14</td>
<td>702, 843</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:35</td>
<td>21:15</td>
<td>187, 516, 659, 667</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:36</td>
<td>21:15-17</td>
<td>501</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:37</td>
<td>21:16</td>
<td>255, 1201</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:38</td>
<td>21:17</td>
<td>1028</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:39</td>
<td>21:18</td>
<td>314 bis, 802, 884, 969 bis, 971, 1159</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:40</td>
<td>21:19</td>
<td>531, 740, 876, 891, 1029</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:41</td>
<td>21:20</td>
<td>1043, 1110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:42</td>
<td>21:21</td>
<td>724</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:43</td>
<td>21:22</td>
<td>395, 411, 697, 705</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:44</td>
<td>21:23</td>
<td>736 bis, 1202</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:45</td>
<td>21:24</td>
<td>395, 736, 978</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:1</td>
<td>21:25</td>
<td>976</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:2</td>
<td>21:26</td>
<td>593, 703, 870</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:3</td>
<td>21:27</td>
<td>137, 406, 416, 785</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:4</td>
<td>21:28</td>
<td>234, 369, 729, 877 bis, 891, 1030, 1040, 1082 bis, 1162</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:5</td>
<td>21:29</td>
<td>1205, 1210</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:6</td>
<td>21:30</td>
<td>Acts</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:7</td>
<td>21:31</td>
<td>280, 419, 440, 463, 663</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:8</td>
<td>21:32</td>
<td>669, 716, 954, 1152, 1179</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:9</td>
<td>21:33</td>
<td>1193, 1203</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:10</td>
<td>21:34</td>
<td>672, 841</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:11</td>
<td>21:35</td>
<td>1029, 1043</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Acts
1:11  398, 701, 718, 771  2:39  541, 593, 733
1:12  154, 232, 267, 269, 458, 469, 640, 778, 780  2:40  666, 813
1:13  592, 629, 760  2:41  283, 1151
1:14                                   2:42  542
1:15  283, 434, 602  2:43  541
1:16  399, 651, 859  2:44  581, 722, 884, 922, 958, 967
1:17  509  2:45  318, 891, 892, 1115, 1116
1:18  472, 510, 599, 775, 834, 1151, 1217  2:46  283, 1151
1:19  28, 219  2:47  666, 813
1:20  272, 939, 1116, 1214  2:48  905
1:21  721  2:49  210, 508
1:22  413, 639, 717, 974, 1126  2:50  313, 559, 877, 884
1:23  214  2:51  538, 828, 1036, 1127
1:23, 26  215  3:1  423, 1116 bis, 1136
1:24  678, 706, 861  3:2  1103
1:25  561, 692  3:3  1103
1:26  215, 562  3:4  698
2:2  261, 376, 966, 969, 1105, 1140  3:5  262, 626, 885, 887 bis, 1111, 1117, 1179
2:4  748  3:6  649, 707, 1151
2:5  593  3:7  210, 508
2:6  1042  3:8  334, 423, 818, 1065, 1068, 1078, 1140
2:7  224  3:9  210, 508
2:9  186  3:10  313, 559, 877, 884
2:9 f.  427, 788  3:11  538, 828, 1036, 1127
2:11  770, 1123  3:12  619, 739, 785, 818
2:12  692, 747, 883, 938, 1031  3:13  714
2:13  749, 903, 1127  3:14  609, 1128
2:14  1107  3:15  409, 858, 877, 1036, 1080
2:15  793, 1158  3:16  649, 1075
2:17  393, 531, 577  3:17  986, 1049
2:17, 21  1042  3:18  716, 1151
2:18  747, 1148  3:19  733, 1151
2:20  561, 1091 bis  3:20  148, 189, 598, 727, 959
2:21  720, 744  3:21  732
2:22  399, 534, 579, 698, 716  3:22  625, 716
2:23  317, 339, 698, 1113  3:23  538, 549, 800, 891 bis, 991, 1072, 1073 bis, 1116, 1128
2:24  122, 1058  3:24  587, 966, 1071
2:25  234 bis, 367, 594  3:25  538
2:26  224, 604  3:26  1047
2:27  591, 593, 792  4:2  214
2:27, 31  502  4:3  648, 655, 678, 740
2:28  510  4:4  500, 703, 780
2:29  234, 587, 612, 881, 1119, 1130, 1182  4:5  656, 698, 705, 715
2:30  479, 531, 877, 1205  4:6  1087, 1179
2:31  593  4:7  1202
2:32  701, 714  4:8  1035, 1197
2:34  652  4:10  656, 665 n., 880, 1152
2:36  772  4:11  531, 538, 1094
2:37  350, 1179  4:12  546, 550, 607
2:38  389, 592, 595, 780, 781, 782, 795  4:13  546, 550, 607
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

| Acts | 4:19 | 516, 666, 1045 | 5:37 | 835 |
| Acts | 4:20 | 312, 677, 1094, 1164, 1171 bis, 1173, 1174, 1214 | 5:38 | 547, 1018, 1019 |
| Acts | 4:21 | 766, 905, 966, 1031, 1046, 1128 | 5:39 | 995, 1009, 1096 |
| Acts | 4:22 | 268, 498, 602, 666, 905, 1214 | 5:41 | 632, 884, 1151 |
| Acts | 4:23 | 733 | 6:1 | 104, 626, 782 |
| Acts | 4:24 | 419 | 6:2 | 348 |
| Acts | 4:25 | 739 | 6:3 | 816, 989, 1149 |
| Acts | 4:27 | 905 | 6:5 | 173, 235, 275, 276 |
| Acts | 4:29 | 224, 560, 765, 772 | 6:9 | 788 |
| Acts | 4:30 | 1072, 1073 | 6:11 | 594, 634, 801, 897, 1042, 1113 |
| Acts | 4:31 | 905 | 6:13 | 1102 |
| Acts | 4:32 | 688, 691, 751 | 6:14 | 701 |
| Acts | 4:33 | 311 | 6:2 | 215, 419, 464, 1091 |
| Acts | 4:34 | 587, 884, 891, 892, 1115, 1116 | 7:1 | 546, 800, 916 |
| Acts | 4:35 | 190, 312, 318, 615, 922, 958, 967, 1214 | 7:2 | 203, 959 |
| Acts | 4:36 | 487, 530, 579 bis, 714 | 7:3 | 537, 587 |
| Acts | 4:37 | 891, 1116 | 7:4 | 589 bis |
| Acts | 5:1 | 215, 256 bis, 457 | 7:6 | 1036, 1131, 1138, 1139 |
| Acts | 5:2 | 256, 319, 517, 627, 810, 1116 | 7:10 | 308 |
| Acts | 5:3 | 1001, 1089, 1090 | 7:11 | 339, 480, 481, 640, 1100 |
| Acts | 5:4 | 541, 965, 1166 | 7:12 | 262, 536, 1042, 1093 |
| Acts | 5:4, 9 | 739 | 7:13 | 537, 833, 1116 |
| Acts | 5:5 | 833, 1116 | 7:14 | 589 bis |
| Acts | 5:7 | 460, 581 bis | 7:16 | 367, 510, 561, 716 |
| Acts | 5:8 | 308, 510, 710, 810 | 7:17 | 716, 968, 974 |
| Acts | 5:9 | 529, 601, 965, 1084 | 7:18 | 639, 748, 975 |
| Acts | 5:12 | 269 bis | 7:19 | 477, 703, 1002, 1068, 1090 bis |
| Acts | 5:13 | 529 | 7:20 | 537, 671, 718 |
| Acts | 5:15 | 194, 214, 928, 984, 1091 | 7:22 | 772 |
| Acts | 5:16 | 404, 412, 617 | 7:23 | 207, 392 |
| Acts | 5:17 | 261, 1107, 1108 | 7:24 | 805, 1204 |
| Acts | 5:19 | 408, 581, 791 | 7:25 | 315, 885, 1036, 1049 |
| Acts | 5:20 | 497, 706 | 7:26 | 313, 522, 739, 861, 885 |
| Acts | 5:21 | 635, 1086 | 7:27 | 367 |
| Acts | 5:22 | 800 | 7:28 | 206, 718 |
| Acts | 5:23 | 601, 603, 621 | 7:29 | 589 |
| Acts | 5:24 | 405, 736 bis, 789, 938, 940, 1021, 1044 | 7:30 | 760 |
| Acts | 5:25 | 233, 881 | 7:31 | 474 |
| Acts | 5:26 | 531, 995 | 7:32 | 187, 430, 932, 1110, 1147 |
| Acts | 5:28 | 224, 253, 510, 531 bis, 697, 760, 878, 895 | 7:35 | 253, 268, 649, 698, 778, 860, 863, 897, 1113 |
| Acts | 5:29 | 405, 747 | 7:36, 37, 38, 40 | 698 |
| Acts | 5:30 | 317, 603, 1127 | 7:36 | 794 |
| Acts | 5:31 | 480, 526, 1088 | 7:37 | 778 |
| Acts | 5:34 | 653 | 7:39 | 537 |
| Acts | 5:35 | 605 | 7:40 | 436, 459, 541, 697, 701, 703, 960 |
| Acts | 5:36 | 172, 233, 411, 540, 542, 581, 743, 1038, 1113 | 7:41 | 367 bis, 532 |
| Acts | 5:36, 37 | 732 | 7:42 | 409, 463, 800, 1087 |
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

Acts

7:43  244, 355, 517, 550, 642, 647  
7:44  268  
7:45  367, 409, 582, 716  
7:46  424  
7:47  735, 740  
7:48  300, 523, 542, 573  
7:49  502  
7:50  482, 596, 728  
7:51  1123, 1213  
7:52  339, 789  
7:53  256, 811  
7:54  834, 853  
8:1  581, 782, 787  
8:2  704, 769  
8:3  316, 743 bis, 888, 1038, 1121  
8:4  706  
8:5  375, 560, 906, 1103, 1121  
8:6  318 bis  
8:7  706  
8:8  327, 939 bis, 940  
8:9  743, 888, 1038, 1121  
8:10  704, 769  
8:11  1113  
8:12  523, 527, 533, 906, 909, 966, 1060, 1070, 1071  
8:13  92  
8:14  367, 995  
8:15  728  
8:16  367, 995  
8:17  1113  
8:18  523, 527, 533, 906, 909, 966, 1060, 1070, 1071  
8:19  339, 789  
8:20  256, 811  
8:21  834, 853  
8:22  581, 782, 787  
8:23  602, 743, 974, 1094, 1171  
8:24  578, 597  
8:25  349, 479  
8:26  218, 593, 643, 975, 979, 1060, 1074, 1092  
8:27  216, 507  
8:28  190, 482, 497, 1018, 1041  
8:29  538, 1072  
8:30  506, 7042  
8:31  762
# INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:32</td>
<td>399, 792, 794, 1105</td>
<td>12:13</td>
<td>990</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:33</td>
<td>861 bis, 990, 1080, 1088, 1113, 1121</td>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>231, 319, 358, 580, 621, 908, 1036, 1039, 1040, 1081, 1095, 1036, 1084, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:35</td>
<td>1108</td>
<td>12:15</td>
<td>695, 1036, 1084, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:36</td>
<td>438, 718, 723</td>
<td>12:16</td>
<td>551, 1102, 1212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:37</td>
<td>413, 458, 607</td>
<td>12:18</td>
<td>224, 411, 484, 736, 739, 916, 1131, 1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:38</td>
<td>219, 533, 1032</td>
<td>12:20</td>
<td>235, 790</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:39</td>
<td>339, 1113</td>
<td>12:21</td>
<td>522, 603</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:40</td>
<td>537, 794</td>
<td>12:25</td>
<td>235, 431, 835, 859 bis, 862 ter, 1099</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:40 f.</td>
<td>1095</td>
<td>12:25</td>
<td>608, 1107 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:41</td>
<td>612, 752, 960, 979, 1074, 1162, 1163</td>
<td>13:1</td>
<td>566, 816, 1149 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:41 f</td>
<td>833</td>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>682</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:42</td>
<td>419, 1035</td>
<td>13:3</td>
<td>862</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:43</td>
<td>1036</td>
<td>13:3,5</td>
<td>440, 686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:44</td>
<td>891</td>
<td>13:4</td>
<td>214, 258, 269, 480, 828, 885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:45</td>
<td>578, 782, 897, 1181</td>
<td>13:5</td>
<td>639, 800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:47</td>
<td>231, 728, 960, 1061, 1094, 1171</td>
<td>13:6</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:48</td>
<td>1084</td>
<td>13:7</td>
<td>620, 766</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:1</td>
<td>608</td>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>836</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:1, 20</td>
<td>1181</td>
<td>13:9</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:2</td>
<td>599, 766, 885</td>
<td>13:10</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:4</td>
<td>1102, 1126</td>
<td>13:10</td>
<td>165 bis, 219, 528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:5</td>
<td>315, 498, 639</td>
<td>13:11</td>
<td>523, 527</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:6</td>
<td>787, 838</td>
<td>13:12</td>
<td>458, 482, 501, 780, 1114, 1136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:7</td>
<td>1042</td>
<td>13:13</td>
<td>94, 621</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:11</td>
<td>188</td>
<td>13:13</td>
<td>720, 736, 738, 916, 996, 1036</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:13</td>
<td>1032, 1041, 1049</td>
<td>13:13 f.</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:14</td>
<td>402, 405</td>
<td>13:14</td>
<td>608, 858</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:15</td>
<td>566</td>
<td>13:15</td>
<td>1085, 1086, 1129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:17</td>
<td>658, 736, 968, 1008, 1181</td>
<td>13:16</td>
<td>429, 602, 728</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:18</td>
<td>1190</td>
<td>13:17</td>
<td>861, 1113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:19</td>
<td>605, 657, 696</td>
<td>13:18</td>
<td>392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:21</td>
<td>1107</td>
<td>13:19</td>
<td>360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:22</td>
<td>643</td>
<td>13:21</td>
<td>560</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:23</td>
<td>530</td>
<td>13:22</td>
<td>1153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:25</td>
<td>990</td>
<td>13:23</td>
<td>706</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:26</td>
<td>160, 192, 298, 659, 774, 833, 1043</td>
<td>13:24</td>
<td>566, 720, 721</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:28</td>
<td>253, 410, 603, 728, 877 bis, 891, 1036, 1082</td>
<td>13:25</td>
<td>409, 430, 933, 996</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:29</td>
<td>367</td>
<td>13:27</td>
<td>597, 849, 1019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11:30</td>
<td>714, 861, 862, 1113</td>
<td>13:28</td>
<td>313, 314, 594, 645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:1</td>
<td>578, 608</td>
<td>13:29</td>
<td>990</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:2</td>
<td>533, 534</td>
<td>13:30</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:3</td>
<td>411, 434, 551</td>
<td>13:31</td>
<td>810, 965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:4</td>
<td>629</td>
<td>13:32</td>
<td>862</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:6</td>
<td>408, 620, 621, 878</td>
<td>13:33</td>
<td>682</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:7</td>
<td>310, 328, 559, 597</td>
<td>13:34</td>
<td>862</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:8</td>
<td>314, 807, 811, 855, 950</td>
<td>13:35</td>
<td>440, 686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:9</td>
<td>855, 1153</td>
<td>13:36</td>
<td>214, 258, 269, 480, 828, 885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>477, 550, 728, 762, 777, 794, 1107, 1213</td>
<td>13:37</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12:11</td>
<td>339, 772</td>
<td>13:38</td>
<td>574</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Acts

| Acts   | 13:47 | 221, 482 | 15:22 f. | 413, 439, 655 |
|        | 13:49 | 582      | 15:22, 25 | 1084        |
|        | 13:50 | 578, 788 bis | 15:23 | 582, 649, 696, 787, 944, 1093, 1205 |
|        | 13:51 | 197      | 15:24     | 897         |
|        | 14:1  | 197, 502, 710, 789, 1000 | 15:24 | 432         |
|        | 14:3  | 649, 833 | 15:24-26  | 1039        |
|        | 14:4  | 695      | 15:25     | 518, 788, 1068, 1078 | 16:36 |
|        | 14:5  | 424, 625, 789, 1052 | 15:27 | 86, 891, 991, 1128-9 |
|        | 14:8  | 257, 521, 523, 1096 | 15:29 | 212, 299, 318, 330, 360, 364, 808, 908, 962, 1121, 1160, 1169 |
|        | 14:9  | 1042 bis, 1065, 1066, 1076 | 16:27 | 336, 993, 1219 |
|        | 14:10 | 423, 549, 656, 659, 789, 838 | 16:28 | 339, 530, 653, 659, 686 |
|        | 14:11 | 28, 104  | 15:32     | 349, 686 ter |
|        | 14:11-13 | 428     | 15:35     | 477, 655    |
|        | 14:12 | 258      | 15:36     | 546, 714, 1149 |
|        | 14:13 | 621, 1107 | 15:37    | 565         |
|        | 14:14 | 212      | 15:37 f.  | 857, 884, 1081 |
|        | 14:15 | 483, 736 bis, 738, 789, 1036 | 15:38 | 576         |
|        | 14:16 | 521      | 15:39     | 1000, 1091  |
|        | 14:17 | 204, 210, 300, 1129, 1154 | 15:41 | 788         |
|        | 14:18 | 606, 800, 1061, 1094, 1102 | 15:42 | 863         |
|        | 14:19 | 319, 489, 859, 908, 1030, 1039, 1040, 1081, 1216 | 16:1 f. | 566         |
|        | 14:21 | 475      | 15:43     | 1034        |
|        | 14:21 f. | 892     | 16:4      | 311, 476, 562, 788, 1214 |
|        | 14:22 | 524, 562, 892, 1035, 1036, 1047, 1113 | 15:44 | 524 bis     |
|        | 14:23 | 905      | 16:5      | 788, 862 bis, 863, 1110, 1113 |
|        | 14:24 | 905      | 16:6      | 781, 1156   |
|        | 14:25 | 905      | 16:7      | 863         |
|        | 14:27 | 611      | 16:8      | 561, 581    |
|        | 14:28 | 994, 1205 | 16:9      | 1034        |
|        | 15:1  | 530, 780 | 16:10     | 139, 244, 257, 367, 652, 1202 |
|        | 15:11 | 760      | 16:11     | 263, 412, 497, 728, 729 bis, 954 |
|        | 15:2  | 515, 788, 1084, 1205 | 16:12     | 792, 1039   |
|        | 15:3  | 787      | 16:13     | 408, 1036   |
|        | 15:3, 30 | 696, 1191 | 16:14     | 537, 1009   |
|        | 15:4  | 788, 818 | 16:15     | 728, 810, 1043, 1128 |
|        | 15:4, 20 | 789       | 16:16     | 578, 884    |
|        | 15:5  | 789      | 16:16 f.  | 1039, 1084  |
|        | 15:6  | 788      | 16:18     | 212, 609, 618, 628, 883 |
|        | 15:7  | 475, 1035, 1041 | 16:19     | 861, 863    |
|        | 15:8  | 861      | 16:20     | 278, 710    |
|        | 15:8, 9 | 1113     | 16:21     | 507, 608    |
|        | 15:9  | 219, 282, 580, 645, 750, 861 | 16:22     | 262 bis, 367, 1213 |
|        | 15:10 | 1089     | 16:23     | 431, 909, 1040, 1081, 1213 |
|        | 15:11 | 487, 531, 718 | 16:24     | 299, 484, 688 |
|        | 15:12 | 834      | 16:25     | 580, 924    |
|        | 15:13 | 834, 857, 1074 | 16:26     | 402         |
|        | 15:14 | 968, 1045 | 16:27     | 515, 576 bis, 771 |
|        | 15:15 | 529      | 16:28     | 170, 453, 530, 1122 |
|        | 15:16 | 1219     | 16:29     | 336, 993, 1219 |
|        | 15:17 | 653, 713, 723, 986 | 16:30     | 339, 530, 653, 659, 686 |
|        | 15:19 | 613      | 16:31     | 1120, 1187, 1190, 1213 |
|        | 15:20 | 518, 788, 1068, 1078, 1080, 1082 | 16:32     | 578         |
|        | 15:22 | 173, 214, 628, 808, 1039, 1127 | 16:33     | 578         |
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

Acts

17:1  1126  18:17  256, 508, 539
17:2  408, 537, 576  18:18  342, 1127
17:3  442, 1034 bis, 1035  18:20  1131
17:4  924, 669, 1163  18:22  1136
17:5  165, 885  18:23  788, 891, 892, 1113, 1136
17:6, 8  572, 1035, 1137, 1172  18:24  172, 189 bis
17:6  258  18:25  485, 524, 619, 816
17:7  639  18:26  665
17:9  763  18:27  818, 1036
17:10  313, 728, 760  18:28  311, 529, 582, 1036
17:10, 15  314  19:1  189, 233, 260
17:11  487, 890  19:1 f.  1047
17:12  1151  19:2  207, 234, 861, 916, 1024,
17:13  760  1045, 1113, 1179, 1186
17:14  643  19:3  739, 1179
17:15  279, 313, 316 bis, 339, 488,
669, 760, 968, 974  19:4  399, 416, 993
17:16  169, 224, 408, 613, 760,
885, 1041, 1123, 1204  19:8  431, 811
17:16-34  121  19:9  473, 891
17:18  201, 529, 695, 787, 788, 890,
938, 940, 1021, 1025, 1031,
1044, 1082, 1085  19:11  1205
17:19  187, 701, 785, 879  19:12  189, 192
17:20  559, 736, 742, 878  19:13  475, 484, 617, 759, 762, 791
17:21  749, 7.51, 773, 1087  19:14  236, 255, 742
17:22  362, 561  19:16  252, 559, 560, 607, 745 bis
17:23  518  19:17  418
17:25  772, 863, 1113  19:19  674, 828
17:26  244, 327, 508, 939, 1021,
1027, 1030, 1044, 1045, 1086,
1129 bis, 1138 bis, 1139,
1140, 1148, 1149, 1190 ter  19:20  224
17:27  920  19:21  224
17:29  550, 589, 590, 716, 860, 963  20:1  1074
17:31  187, 399, 464, 665  19:22  586, 593, 800
17:32  333  19:23  1166, 1187
17:33  313, 728, 760  19:24  1162 bis
17:34  1140, 1148, 1149, 1190 ter  19:25  395
17:29  920  19:26  1202
17:30  487, 629, 1084, 1152  19:27  510
17:31  550, 589, 590, 716, 860, 963  19:28  423, 885
17:32  333  19:29  295, 494, 643, 697, 701, 1035,
1166, 1187
17:33  187  19:30  1162 bis
17:34  187  19:31  395
18:2  236, 459, 487, 530, 909, 910 bis,
1040, 1047, 1049, 1071, 1116  19:32  1162 bis
18:3  367, 471, 486, 1039, 1215  19:33  436, 439, 1130, 1200
18:4  885  19:34  68, 253, 260, 653, 726, 892,
1041, 1123, 1159, 1190
18:5  529, 628, 808, 1036  19:35  212, 375 bis, 881, 909,
1119 bis, 1121, 1130
18:6  810, 1202  19:36  253 bis, 257, 410
18:7  263, 529  19:37  541
18:8  453, 884  19:38  515
18:9  583, 792, 890, 1173 bis  19:38 f.  1153
18:10  477, 1002, 1090  19:39  545, 618, 1000, 1154
18:11  672, 833  19:40  229, 511, 547, 815-16, 820
18:12  269, 296, 510  19:41  1074
18:13  616  19:42  1074
18:14  368, 877, 1014, 1015 bis,
1153, 1.193  20:1  1074
A GRAMMAR Of THE GREEK. NEW TESTAMENT.

Acts

20:3 497, 1002, 1060, 1068, 1076  21:18  561
20:3, 7 877  21:18, 26  313, 314
20:4 173, 205, 235 ter, 236, 501, 528, 529, 639, 813  21:19  746
      21:20  741
20:5 471  21:21  482, 521, 524, 773, 950, 1034, 1046, 1082, 1084
20:6 657  21:22  310, 337, 356
20:7 313, 529, 653, 672, 792  21:23  541, 1127
20:8 969  21:24  201, 324, 342, 412, 720, 809, 816, 984
20:9 235, 579, 580, 835, 891
20:11 1179  21:25  476, 483
20:12 1163  21:26  313, 314, 522
20:14 199  21:28  300, 526, 769, 783, 844, 894, 897, 901, 1107
20:15 199, 214, 221, 505, 573, 638, 653, 748, 1202  21:29  323, 362, 375, 883, 905, 906
20:16 470, 472, 613, 905, 986, 1021, 1030, 1058, 1085  21:30  774, 1179
      835, 1126, 1127
20:20 1094  21:32  251, 375, 736, 884, 938, 1031, 1044 bis
20:20, 27 1061, 1102, 1171, 1174, 1205  21:33  692, 747, 884
20:22 374, 523, 765, 878, 1118, 1172, 1213  21:34  392, 1043, 1058
      21:35  404, 407, 412, 655, 1104
20:23 262, 646  21:36  915, 916, 1175
20:24 480, 499, 811, 967, 987, 990, 1089  21:37  769, 917, 1157, 1176
      21:38  1151, 1163, 1205
20:27 807, 1089  22:1  507
20:30 687, 689  22:3  495, 497, 615, 1105
20:31 419, 1035, 1041  22:4, 22  639
20:33 282, 474, 508  22:5  299, 374, 548, 877, 1118, 1128
20:34 441
20:35 573, 663, 666, 679, 708, 1034  22:6  536, 539, 560, 617, 620, 792, 1085
      515
20:37 22:7  506, 1042
20:38 488, 659, 670, 716, 905  22:8, 13  235
      22:10  716 bis, 1084
21:2 f. 891  22:11  580, 1159
21:3 290, 486, 548, 817, 883, 1115  22:12  763, 1033
      22:14  720, 773
21:4 1046  22:15  329, 332, 808 bis, 1110
21:5 548, 643  22:16  1039, 1085, 1132
21:6 691  22:17  784
21:7 205, 582  22:18  608
21:8 339, 614  22:19  608
21:11 289, 690  22:20  799
21:12 1065, 1066, 1068, 1085, 1088  22:21  469, 593
21:13 593, 657, 1077, 1121, 1162, 1181  22:22  393, 886, 920, 1014
      22:23  863, 1084
21:14 862, 863, 1214  22:24  308, 718, 726, 861,
21:16 393, 502, 515, 519, 599, 614, 671, 721, 891, 955, 989, 1202  22:25  258, 533, 916, 1181
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Acts</th>
<th>Verse Numbers</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>22:30</td>
<td>615, 766, 815, 820, 1046</td>
<td>24:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:3</td>
<td>314, 340, 616, 678, 1201, 1216</td>
<td>24:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:4</td>
<td>473</td>
<td>24:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:5</td>
<td>234, 422, 473, 484, 874, 1040, 1200</td>
<td>24:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:6</td>
<td>511, 791</td>
<td>24:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:7</td>
<td>787</td>
<td>24:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:8</td>
<td>745, 1094, 1189</td>
<td>24:22-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:9</td>
<td>582, 1023, 1203</td>
<td>24:22-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:10</td>
<td>564, 995, 1214</td>
<td>24:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:11</td>
<td>221, 593</td>
<td>24:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:12</td>
<td>802, 1040, 1046, 1048</td>
<td>24:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:13</td>
<td>666, 802</td>
<td>24:25 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:14</td>
<td>473, 531, 689</td>
<td>24:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:15</td>
<td>490, 546, 659, 978, 1061, 1068, 1075, 1077, 1082, 1141</td>
<td>24:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:16</td>
<td>231</td>
<td>25:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:17</td>
<td>1087</td>
<td>25:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:17, 18, 19</td>
<td>696, 1151</td>
<td>25:5, 8, 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:18</td>
<td>736, 738</td>
<td>25:5, 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:19</td>
<td>547, 968, 1002, 1066, 1068, 1141</td>
<td>25:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:20</td>
<td>473, 517, 579, 976</td>
<td>25:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:22, 25, 30</td>
<td>1113</td>
<td>25:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:23</td>
<td>168, 232, 742, 793, 1047</td>
<td>25:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:23 f.</td>
<td>442</td>
<td>25:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:25</td>
<td>944, 1093</td>
<td>25:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:27 f.</td>
<td>243</td>
<td>25:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:29</td>
<td>511</td>
<td>25:15f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:30</td>
<td>330, 594, 603, 846, 877, 908, 1040, 1049, 1082, 1130</td>
<td>25:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:31</td>
<td>1151</td>
<td>25:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:34</td>
<td>578, 740, 1035</td>
<td>25:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:35</td>
<td>434, 861, 863</td>
<td>25:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:1</td>
<td>607</td>
<td>25:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:2</td>
<td>236</td>
<td>25:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:3</td>
<td>300, 530</td>
<td>25:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:4</td>
<td>782, 1135</td>
<td>25:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:6, 8</td>
<td>1181</td>
<td>25:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:9</td>
<td>319, 705, 1084</td>
<td>25:26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:10</td>
<td>597, 619, 811, 892, 1041, 1103, 1115, 1123</td>
<td>25:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:11</td>
<td>666, 714, 717, 877, 978, 1111, 1118</td>
<td>25:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:11, 17</td>
<td>374, 991, 1128</td>
<td>25:29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:12 f.</td>
<td>1165, 1189</td>
<td>26:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:13</td>
<td>511 bis, 720</td>
<td>26:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acts</td>
<td>26:3</td>
<td>439, 490, 608, 1130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:4</td>
<td>319, 773, 782, 792, 1215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:4, 6</td>
<td>1107, 1152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:5</td>
<td>280 bis, 670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:7</td>
<td>463, 465, 522, 550, 718, 763, 877, 1082, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:8</td>
<td>430, 614, 1024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:9</td>
<td>231, 688, 1038, 1039, 1049, 1085 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:10</td>
<td>714, 1113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:11-14</td>
<td>432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:12</td>
<td>885</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:13</td>
<td>550, 633, 775, 864</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:14</td>
<td>28, 104, 506, 1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:16</td>
<td>427, 700, 720, 724, 819, 871, 1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:16-18</td>
<td>432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:17</td>
<td>559, 713</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:18</td>
<td>566, 1088</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:19</td>
<td>272, 537, 962</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:20</td>
<td>585, 1047, 1135, 1179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:21</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:22</td>
<td>520, 640 bis, 720, 1138, 1139, 1179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:23</td>
<td>372 bis, 656, 1024, 1097</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:24</td>
<td>418, 420, 656, 661, 683, 774, 789</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:25</td>
<td>233, 812</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:26</td>
<td>219, 323, 750, 903, 1094, 1162 bis, 1165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:27</td>
<td>538, 915</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:28</td>
<td>192, 653, 880, 1079, 1081, 1084</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:29</td>
<td>291, 566, 646, 653, 660, 710, 732, 854, 886, 919, 923, 938, 1021, 1025, 1162, 1182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:30</td>
<td>314, 529, 786, 789</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>26:32</td>
<td>886, 887, 906, 909, 920, 1014, 1015, 1016, 1080, 1081</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:1</td>
<td>256, 311, 459, 743, 1002, 1060, 1068</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:11</td>
<td>342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:2</td>
<td>210, 223, 469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:3</td>
<td>532, 861, 1084</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:3, 17</td>
<td>476</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:4</td>
<td>1039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:4 f.</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:4 f.</td>
<td>634</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:5</td>
<td>212, 257, 263, 476, 563, 608, 787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:6</td>
<td>235, 585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:7</td>
<td>477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:8</td>
<td>186, 214, 538, 568, 613, 640</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:9</td>
<td>261, 884, 909, 1071, 1081</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27:10</td>
<td>162, 438, 877, 1036 bis, 1047, 1082</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<p>| Acts | 27:12 | 44, 60S, 792, 1021, 1024, 1027, 1030, 1044, 1045 |
|      | 27:13 | 1214 |
|      | 27:14 | 235, 634, 665, 909, 1060 |
|      | 27:16 | 799 |
|      | 27:17 | 312, 572, 1214 |
|      | 27:18 | 211, 263, 477, 618, 634, 834 |
|      | 27:19 | 235, 314, 633, 995 |
|      | 27:20 | 1179 bis, 1205 |
|      | 27:21 | 464, 886, 920, 1014, 1151, 1152 |
|      | 27:22 | 475, 517, 1204 |
|      | 27:23 | 497, 724, 758 |
|      | 27:24 | 1058 |
|      | 27:25 | 487, 718, 758 |
|      | 27:26 | 184, 284, 550, 581, 648, 775, 1036 |
|      | 27:27 | 672 |
|      | 27:28 | 231, 800 |
|      | 27:29 | 244, 266, 886, 919, 995, 1173 |
|      | 27:30 | 256, 476, 966, 1141 |
|      | 27:31 | 219, 244, 282, 471, 751, 877, 1102, 1121, 1173 |
|      | 27:32 | 451, 517, 570, 623 |
|      | 27:33 | 367 |
|      | 27:34 | 508, 519 |
|      | 27:35 | 773 |
|      | 27:36 | 508, 810, 818 |
|      | 27:37 | 940, 1021, 1031 |
|      | 27:38 | 157, 265, 309, 638, 653, 1140 |
|      | 27:39 | 145, 232, 256, 264, 580, 885 |
|      | 27:40 | 432, 828, 987 |
|      | 27:41 | 212, 313, 518, 797, 800, 835 |
|      | 27:42 | 601, 604, 696 |
|      | 27:43 | 836 |
|      | 27:44 | 189, 200, 298, 550, 657 |
|      | 27:45 | 1113 |
|      | 27:46 | 167, 258 |
|      | 27:47 | 1138, 1139 |
|      | 27:48 | 1140 bis |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Acts</th>
<th>Romans</th>
<th>INDEX OF QUOTATIONS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>28:20 316, 485, 562, 613, 815, 816</td>
<td>1:1 263, 496, 793</td>
<td>1333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:21 428, 752, 1139, 1164</td>
<td>1:1-7 432</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:22 1151</td>
<td>1:2 772</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:23 548, 792, 892, 1116</td>
<td>1:5 407, 500, 678</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:26 333, 356</td>
<td>1:6 504, 516</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:27 204, 819, 988</td>
<td>1:7 396, 504, 576</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:30 774, 833</td>
<td>1:8 583, 629, 1152</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4 654, 763, 880, 1035</td>
<td>2:9 549, 757, 1179</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5 497</td>
<td>2:10 1106</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6 714</td>
<td>2:12 589</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6 ff 441</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7 500, 1200</td>
<td>2:8 100, 599</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8 714</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9 1151</td>
<td>2:16 590, 718, 721, 763, 971, 1097 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25 796, 1019</td>
<td>2:17 341, 678, 796</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26 481, 683, 819, 1019</td>
<td>2:18 764</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:27 583 bis, 778, 782, 1022, 1129</td>
<td>2:19 489, 801, 1038, 1082</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28 712, 796</td>
<td>2:21-23 915</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28 f. 766</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28 f. 766</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:29 3:1 395, 408, 763, 1198</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:35 3:1, 9 739</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:39 413, 485, 659 bis, 816, 1152</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:39 413, 485, 659 bis, 816, 1152</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1 3:2 395, 739, 1190</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1 3:3 193, 986</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1 3:4 940, 1170</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2 3:5 315, 761, 876, 1108, 1199</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2 3:6 965 bis, 1022, 1025</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:6 759, 1188</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:7 3:7 f 678, 739, 1145</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8 3:7 f 433</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:9 234, 319, 678, 763, 1028, 1033, 1036, 1039, 1047, 1049</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:10 315, 764, 1106, 1216</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11 816, 1036</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11 751, 1164</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12 187, 638, 643, 751</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12 336, 343, 635, 1213</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13 1062, 1080, 1220</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14 500, 639</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15 771</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16 523, 781</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16 579, 1150</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:22 500, 567, 1184</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:22 500, 567, 1184</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23 476, 518, 814, 837, 847</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23 175, 401, 779, 782</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:24 154, 401, 480, 584, 589, 595, 781, 784, 810</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:25 567, 600, 624, 783</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:25 f. 547, 599, 766, 781, 1071</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:26 498, 582, 740, 780</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Rom.

3:30  301, 1025, 1027, 1154  6:3 f.  592
3:31  307, 316 bis  6:4  493, 496, 651, 850, 969
4:1  1175  6:5  528
4:2  739, 1009  6:6  496, 699, 990, 1002, 1067
4:3  393  1088 bis, 1128
4:3 ff  458  6:8  529, 872
4:4  523, 609, 757, 759  6:9  1128
4:5  258, 274  6:10  479, 541, 715
4:6  394, 722  6:10 f.  539
4:7  367, 720, 724  6:11  481, 537, 588, 1038, 1181
4:9  394, 1202  6:11, 23  587
4:10  1198  6:12  1090, 1097, 1192
4:11  498, 780, 781, 782  6:13  689, 855, 950, 968, 1140
4:11 bis, 16, 18  1066  6:13, 16  316
4:12  423, 521, 548  6:14  793, 796, 889
4:12, 16  423, 1095, 1162  6:14 f.  635
4:13  400, 499, 796, 1059, 1078, 1188  6:14-8:32  207
4:14  599, 766, 1023  6:15  850
4:17  644, 717, 719, 1028  6:16  720, 1150, 1154, 1188
4:18  207, 224, 616  6:17  461, 719, 721, 792
4:19  207, 215, 299, 674, 1114, 1146  6:18  518
4:20  334, 532, 594, 861  6:20  313, 523
4:21  724, 816, 964, 1035, 1114  6:21  714, 721 bis, 722
4:24  602  7:1  602, 733 bis, 978
5:1  200, 583, 598, 823, 850, 857  889, 928, 931, 1192  7:2  500, 529, 1019, 1,190
5:2  224, 900 bis  7:3  426, 515, 876, 996, 1002 bis, 1067, 1087, 1090
5:3  394, 1187  7:3, 25  1190
5:3-5  1200  7:4  499, 539, 1071
5:5  499, 500, 583, 896  7:5  312, 782
5:6  567  7:6  721, 1091, 1095, 1162 bis, 1164
5:6 f.  632  7:7  768, 874, 915, 921, 940, 1014, 1016, 1192
5:7  530, 652, 653, 763, 876  7:7-25  402, 678
5:8  315, 594, 784, 964, 1034  7:9  341, 1160
5:9  518, 659  7:10  232, 398, 539, 680, 698, 782
5:10  529  7:12  1152
5:11  394, 1134 bis  7:13  537, 550, 609, 940 n, 1102, 1121
5:12  348, 434, 438, 604, 684, 773, 833, 963  7:14  158, 1152
5:13  342, 796  7:15  1158
5:14  605, 833, 860  7:15, 19  1158
5:14, 16  348  7:15 f., 20  698
5:15  774  7:16  319
5:15 f.  1159  7:17  677
5:15, 19  660  7:18  234, 399, 416, 431, 705, 890, 1058, 1059
5:16  860  7:18 f.  1158
5:18  394, 438, 458, 500, 773, 1190, 1202  7:19  718
5:19  394, 969, 1201  7:20  683
5:20  613, 722, 998  7:21  539, 778, 1035, 1041, 1190
6:1  850, 876, 934  7:22  529, 780
6:1, 15  1192  7:23  295, 530, 551, 748, 780
6:2  539, 728, 889, 960, 966  7:23 f.  796, 1109
6:2, 15  940  7:24  461 bis, 497, 518, 706, 1203
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Index of Quotations</th>
<th>Rom.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7:2:5</td>
<td>287, 537, 540, 687, 770, 780 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:1</td>
<td>425, 1190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:2</td>
<td>402, 780, 784, 788</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:3</td>
<td>372, 419, 459, 491, 618, 654, 763, 780, 784, 978, 1096</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:4</td>
<td>778</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:5</td>
<td>767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:6</td>
<td>780 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:7</td>
<td>962</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:8</td>
<td>540</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:9</td>
<td>341 bis, 537, 996, 1067, 1076, 1087, 1095, 1162, 1192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:10</td>
<td>533, 698, 732</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:11</td>
<td>29, 465, 595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:12</td>
<td>584, 1009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:13</td>
<td>498, 503, 577, 687</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:14</td>
<td>448, 531, 533, 543, 742, 1105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:15</td>
<td>529, 1035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:16</td>
<td>395, 1023 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:17</td>
<td>49, 657, 720, 629, 722, 739, 766, 770, 967, 1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:18</td>
<td>609, 1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>224, 298, 349, 550, 1100, 1139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:20</td>
<td>503, 770, 780, 964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:21</td>
<td>639, 772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:22</td>
<td>498, 503, 577, 687</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:23</td>
<td>448, 531, 533, 543, 742, 1105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:24</td>
<td>529, 560, 565 bis, 573, 629, 722, 739, 766, 770, 967, 1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:25</td>
<td>609, 1046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:26</td>
<td>477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:27</td>
<td>480, 504, 528, 621, 841, 991, 1071</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:28</td>
<td>837, 841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:29</td>
<td>630, 1192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:30</td>
<td>1198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:31</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:32</td>
<td>1198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:33</td>
<td>432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:34</td>
<td>244, 291, 424, 509, 632, 724, 725, 773, 812, 960, 965, 1011, 1148 ter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:35</td>
<td>504, 607, 652, 779, 1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:36</td>
<td>916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:37</td>
<td>652, 765, 781, 878, 1118, 1119, 1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:38</td>
<td>793, 1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:39</td>
<td>481, 501</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:40</td>
<td>629</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:41</td>
<td>895, 1118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:42</td>
<td>427, 432, 1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:43</td>
<td>499, 749, 779, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:44</td>
<td>434, 444, 588, 886, 1035, 1132, 1148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:45</td>
<td>367, 575, 812, 886, 919, 1038 bis, 1148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:46</td>
<td>409, 427, 1182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:47</td>
<td>11:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:48</td>
<td>11:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapter</td>
<td>Verse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-----</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 1</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>6, 22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>723</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>824</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1126</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1227</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>15 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1731</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>1832</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2033</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2437</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>2740</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>3041</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>3142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>3243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>3344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>33-3645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>3646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 11</td>
<td>36, 3747</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>1 f.49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>452</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>6-855</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>756</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>857</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>958</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>9-1359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>9 f., 16 f.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>10-1361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>1162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>1263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>1464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>15-1665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>16-1966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>1767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>1768</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 12</td>
<td>2069</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Quotation</th>
<th>Line Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rom. 15:21</td>
<td>720, 1159</td>
<td>1:14, 235, 953</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:22</td>
<td>470, 487, 762, 765, 774, 884, 996, 1061, 1067, 1089, 1094, 1171</td>
<td>1:15, 744</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:23-28</td>
<td>434</td>
<td>1:16, 173, 255, 488</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:24</td>
<td>324, 974</td>
<td>1:17, 418, 987 bis, 1162, 1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:25</td>
<td>891, 1129</td>
<td>1:18, 500, 503, 537, 780, 827, 828</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:26</td>
<td>367, 502, 528, 782</td>
<td>1:19, 539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:27</td>
<td>529, 1009</td>
<td>1:20, 356, 1218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:28</td>
<td>582</td>
<td>1:21 f., 757, 764</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:29</td>
<td>589</td>
<td>1:22, 965</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:30</td>
<td>688</td>
<td>1:23, 962</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:31</td>
<td>166, 783</td>
<td>1:24, 174, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:32</td>
<td>529</td>
<td>1:25, 539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:33</td>
<td>396</td>
<td>1:26, 686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:1</td>
<td>315, 782</td>
<td>1:27, 654, 663, 667, 763, 962</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:2</td>
<td>232, 505, 680, 687, 718, 721</td>
<td>1:28, 962, 1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:4</td>
<td>633, 728</td>
<td>1:29, 1200 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:5</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>1:30, 409, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:6</td>
<td>728</td>
<td>1:31, 654, 1109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:7</td>
<td>172, 337, 622, 728</td>
<td>1:32, 752, 986, 987 ter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:8</td>
<td>172</td>
<td>1:33, 949, 985, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:9</td>
<td>236</td>
<td>1:34, 677</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:10</td>
<td>172, 255, 759, 783</td>
<td>2:1-3, 85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:11</td>
<td>258, 259, 274</td>
<td>2:4, 157, 566, 1206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:13</td>
<td>682</td>
<td>2:5, 566</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:14</td>
<td>172, 173, 235, 255 bis</td>
<td>2:6, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:15</td>
<td>173, 773</td>
<td>2:7, 418, 586, 589, 621, 784, 1107, 1110, 1117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:17</td>
<td>616, 758, 778, 783, 800, 954</td>
<td>2:8, 724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:18</td>
<td>771</td>
<td>2:9, 1015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:19</td>
<td>487, 605, 813, 919</td>
<td>2:10, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:20</td>
<td>611</td>
<td>2:11 f., 325, 983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:21</td>
<td>173, 504</td>
<td>2:12, 504, 516, 654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:23</td>
<td>235, 236 bis</td>
<td>2:13, 159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:25</td>
<td>230, 527, 609</td>
<td>2:14, 159, 208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:25f</td>
<td>1117</td>
<td>2:15, 724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:25-27</td>
<td>439</td>
<td>2:16, 158 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:26</td>
<td>772</td>
<td>2:17, 484, 1201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:27</td>
<td>437, 438, 776</td>
<td>2:18, 158, 159, 267, 1186 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Corinthians</td>
<td></td>
<td>2:19, 743, 750</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>459, 760</td>
<td>3:1, 783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>3:2, 838</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>765</td>
<td>3:3, 743, 1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>772</td>
<td>3:4, 691, 786</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>3:5, 616</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>792</td>
<td>3:6, 427, 560, 983, 1178</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>583, 782</td>
<td>3:7, 590, 731, 732 bis, 1176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>203, 360, 419, 983, 1046, 1186</td>
<td>3:8, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>265, 267, 502, 1035</td>
<td>3:9, 1008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>255, 401, 497, 699, 1153</td>
<td>3:10, 412, 728, 729, 960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>916, 1175</td>
<td>3:11, 658, 1038</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>3:12, 474</td>
<td>3:13, 762, 828</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Verse</td>
<td>Reference</td>
<td>Page Numbers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>497, 685, 949, 1000</td>
<td>6:13, 703, 704</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:22</td>
<td>793, 1189</td>
<td>6:14, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23</td>
<td>1027</td>
<td>6:15, 860, 940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>481, 710, 968</td>
<td>6:16, 233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>992, 993</td>
<td>6:18, 471, 640</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>458, 537, 670, 992, 1186</td>
<td>6:19, 497, 716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>319, 627, 688</td>
<td>6:20, 511, 1149 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>752, 757, 763</td>
<td>7:1, 619, 720, 721, 722</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>203, 260, 325, 342, 561, 587, 607, 622, 630, 675, 721, 749, 984, 987, 1202 bis</td>
<td>7:2, 408</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:3, 597, 751, 1010, 1023, 1025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>428, 529, 818, 841, 923 bis, 1004, 1148, 1149, 1199</td>
<td>7:4, 218, 1012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>148, 191</td>
<td>7:5, 518, 794</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:6, 440, 442, 724, 956</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:7, 587, 1026</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:8, 429, 948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:9, 264, 462</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:10, 1025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:11, 1181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:12, 1184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:13, 1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:18</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:14, 1190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:19</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:15, 1193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:20</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:16, 1195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:17, 1197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:22</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:18, 1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:23</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:19, 394, 654, 751</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:1</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:20, 716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:2</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:21, 430, 1023</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:22, 795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:4</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:23, 429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:24, 1128, 1140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:6</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:25, 320, 545, 1059, 1205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:7</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:26, 394, 654, 751</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:8</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:27, 432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:9</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:28, 536, 710, 846, 923, 1020, 1022, 1027</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:10</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:29, 319, 487, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:29 f., 1127, 1140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:30, 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:13</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:31, 476, 477, 533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:32, 767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:2</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:33, 523, 993</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:3</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:34, 287, 504, 537, 546, 547, 687, 689, 763, 1109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:35, 489, 629, 1204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:36, 440, 549, 656, 700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:6</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:37, 218, 299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:7</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:38, 291, 716, 720, 733, 897, 1076, 1080, 1082</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:39, 1019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:9</td>
<td></td>
<td>7:40, 1038</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:10</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:1-4, 435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:2, 1038</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:3, 698, 845</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:4, 424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:14</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:5, 793, 1025, 1026, 1181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:6, 440, 533, 724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:16</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:7, 500, 532, 743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:8, 537, 995</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:18</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:9, 778, 1072</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:19</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:10, 317</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

1 Cor.
8:13  268, 962, 1154  10:16  429, 488, 718, 880 bis
9:1   364, 587, 917, 1157  10:17  509, 773, 774, 962
9:2   244, 537, 1012, 1148,
1160, 1187  10:18  760, 783
9:3   537, 703, 704  10:19  233, 234, 743, 1035, 1036
9:4   1158  10:20  886, 1214
9:4 f. 1169, 1174  10:21  509, 791, 1183
9:4, 5 918  10:22  325, 516, 923
9:5   477, 480  10:24  394, 1203
9:6   402, 1068, 1164, 1177  10:25  263
9:7   478, 532, 770, 1147  10:27 f. 1018
9:8   208, 917 bis, 1158, 1174,
1177  10:29  688 bis, 694, 739
9:9   508, 541  10:30  402, 509, 530, 609, 632,
      678, 720, 721
9:9 f 223  10:31  1189
9:10  224, 996, 1061, 1067, 1076  11:2  479, 482, 487, 506, 881,
9:11   681, 1009, 1017, 1022  11:3  769, 781
9:12   500, 681, 1187  11:4  477, 606
9:12, 15 533  11:5  342, 530 bis, 656, 687, 789
9:13   521, 542, 623  11:6  342, 371, 809, 948, 1012,
      1059, 1218
9:14   598  11:8  793
9:15   439, 587, 704, 845, 984,
      996, 1058  11:9  565
9:16   270, 1012  11:11  584
9:17   485, 550, 816, 1100  11:11  1187
9:18   477, 656, 759, 784, 984,
      992, 1078  11:12  565, 582, 773
9:19   516, 540, 597, 660, 665,
      775, 1129  11:13  541, 687, 689, 890, 1086
9:19 f 539  11:14  686
9:19-21 1217  11:15  574
9:19, 20, 22 843  11:17  218 bis, 277, 663
9:19, 19, 20, 22 843  11:18  174, 487, 550, 585, 803, 881,
      893, 1042, 1103, 1152
9:21  232, 349, 504, 516, 1216  11:20  234, 562
9:22   742, 773, 1199  11:20 ff  1152
9:23   504, 843  11:21  342, 695, 854, 880
9:25   148, 478, 707, 880, 1153  11:22  918, 928, 934, 1072, 1090,
      1169, 1174
9:26   1127, 1138, 1139, 1140, 1154,
      1159, 1163  11:23  190, 312, 561, 579, 838, 1214
9:26 f. 880  11:23  1049
9:27   201, 244, 633, 988  11:23 f.  1049
10:1  419  11:24  234, 595, 685
10:9   808 bis  11:25  612, 1074, 1181
10:3   776  11:25 f.  974
10:3 f. 883  11:26  880, 975
10:4   201, 339, 418, 838  11:27  504, 787, 1188
10:5   418  11:28  519
10:6   488, 500, 704  11:29  880, 1023, 1129
10:7-9 931, 1088  11:29 ff  1201
10:7-10 403, 1185  11:30  880
10:9   317, 635, 1218  11:31  1015
10:10  189, 967  11:33  1000
10:11   404, 626, 703, 707  11:33 f.  562
10:12   320, 430, 933, 1000  11:34  521, 791, 974
10:13   598, 632, 996, 1060, 1067,
       1076, 1087  12:2  407, 412, 563, 922, 974, 1033
       116, 1034
10:14   471, 1154  12:6, 11  476, 773
1 Cor.

12:8  696, 770  14:22  458, 537
12:8, 10  746, 749  14:23  917, 1157
12:9 f.  747 bis  14:24  427
12:9-11  758  14:25  546
12:10  166  14:26  626
12:12  419  14:28  166
12:13  485, 757, 1189  14:29  775
12:13, 28  793  14:30  606, 608
12:15  550  14:31  972
12:15 f.  616, 1164  14:32  845, 1038
12:19  1015, 1023  14:33  948, 1011
12:22  663, 664, 777, 1107  14:34  765, 1059, 1061, 1094
12:23  668  14:35  427, 724
12:26  1179  14:36  954
12:27  550, 597, 792  15:1  425, 530, 640, 738, 1008,
12:28  300, 488 bis, 574, 696, 1152  15:1 f.  1011, 1018, 1169, 1188, 1205
12:29  757, 774  15:1-2  525, 550, 1034 bis, 1035
12:31  311, 551, 777, 784  15:2  844, 894, 896, 1182
13:1  129, 358, 1105  15:3  511, 548, 642, 666, 674, 848
13:1-3  758  15:4  820
13:2.  219, 316 bis, 609, 750, 751, 772 bis, 1090, 1163  15:5  233, 244, 516, 669, 757, 969,
13:3  201, 324, 484, 504, 764, 876, 984, 1216  15:6  1025, 1154
13:4  148
13:4-7  1178  15:7  279, 658, 669, 713, 779, 962
13:4, 8  758  15:8  411, 654, 712, 713, 720,
13:7  476, 477, 774  15:9  791, 1166
13:8  357  15:10  707
13:10  766  15:11  658, 820, 1008, 1034 bis, 1085
13:11  900, 971  15:12  1008
13:12  208, 564 bis, 582, 600, 625, 649, 792, 827  15:13  1012
13:13  281, 405, 668, 758  15:14  1008
14:1  993  15:15  607, 1154
14:1 f.  817
14:5  548, 640, 1017, 1039, 1188  15:16  783
14:6  483, 1188, 1189  15:17  204
14:7  233, 357, 423, 581, 778, 1109, 1140, 1155, 1188, 1189 bis  15:18  395, 794
14:7, 9  871  15:19  587, 827
14:7, 9, 16  876  15:20  872
14:8  807  15:21  767
14:8 f.  15:22, 28  312, 851, 1214
14:9  323, 353, 582, 889, 1110, 1115  15:23  870
14:10  392, 1021  15:24  244, 395, 658, 1034, 1106
14:10 f.  15:25  357, 657, 809, 819 bis
14:11  272, 588  15:26  630, 632, 963 bis, 965 bis, 1012, 1025, 1180
14:13  950, 955  15:27  876
14:15  533, 874  15:28  470, 677
14:15, 19  261  15:29  487, 685, 827, 1150
14:16  460, 691, 759, 765, 965 bis, 1026, 1159  15:30  539, 869, 931
14:17  1152, 1153  15:31  207, 422, 1200
14:19  233, 661, 792, 1188  15:32  626
14:20  524  15:33  740, 1022, 1184
14:21  207, 591, 748  15:34  264, 423, 463, 678
### INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Lines</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:37</td>
<td>374, 878, 892, 1021, 1106, 1119, 1187, 1213</td>
<td>1:10 212, 710</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:39</td>
<td>687, 747, 749, 752 bis, 770, 1153, 1163, 1187</td>
<td>1:12 297, 659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:40, 41</td>
<td>747 bis, 748</td>
<td>1:13 476, 643, 828, 1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:42</td>
<td>748, 749 bis</td>
<td>1:15 662, 886, 919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:43 f.</td>
<td>1178</td>
<td>1:17 547, 612, 765, 1150 bis, 1157, 1176, 1177, 1190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:44</td>
<td>234 bis</td>
<td>1:18 236, 424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:45</td>
<td>669</td>
<td>1:19 1034, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:46</td>
<td>1178</td>
<td>1:22 212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:47</td>
<td>243, 325, 343, 672</td>
<td>1:23 510</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:48, 49</td>
<td>429, 710, 731 bis</td>
<td>2:1 401, 539 bis, 700, 1059, 1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:50, 51</td>
<td>200, 349, 678, 819, 1212</td>
<td>2:2 1014, 1182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:52</td>
<td>334, 423, 753, 819, 1212</td>
<td>2:3 686, 699, 705, 706, 720, 721, 887, 920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:53</td>
<td>392, 587</td>
<td>2:3, 4, 9 846</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:54</td>
<td>429, 778</td>
<td>2:4 423, 583, 598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:54 f.</td>
<td>258</td>
<td>2:5 1008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:54-7</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>2:6 411, 537, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 15:57, 58</td>
<td>461, 1106, 1116</td>
<td>2:7 208, 532, 1090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:1</td>
<td>594, 619</td>
<td>2:8 194, 699, 1045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:2</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>2:9 720, 956</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:3</td>
<td>243, 325, 343, 672</td>
<td>2:10 474, 1156</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:4</td>
<td>408-9</td>
<td>2:11 364, 513, 595, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:5</td>
<td>992, 996, 1059, 1061, 1066, 1067, 1077</td>
<td>2:12 235, 490, 532, 536, 539, 688, 765, 900 bis, 901, 966, 1061, 1091, 1112, 1171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:6</td>
<td>488, 490, 551, 722, 969, 1109, 1121, 1127, 1130</td>
<td>2:13 407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:7</td>
<td>877</td>
<td>2:14 537</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:8</td>
<td>364, 800</td>
<td>2:16 626, 696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:9</td>
<td>795, 993</td>
<td>2:17 644, 881</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:10</td>
<td>244, 853, 856, 933, 943</td>
<td>3:1 307, 316 bis, 1175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:11</td>
<td>235, 423, 619</td>
<td>3:2 560, 778, 828, 1201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:12</td>
<td>488</td>
<td>3:2 f. 217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:13</td>
<td>173, 1034</td>
<td>3:3 404, 658, 1034, 1085-6, 1120, 1163, 1166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:14</td>
<td>233, 627</td>
<td>3:5 423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:15</td>
<td>173, 205, 235, 288, 685</td>
<td>3:6 367, 480, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:16</td>
<td>685</td>
<td>3:7 1204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:17</td>
<td>692</td>
<td>3:8-10 1136</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:18</td>
<td>416, 496, 685</td>
<td>3:10 f. 1109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:19</td>
<td>313, 939, 945, 1012, 1160 bis</td>
<td>3:11 583</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:20</td>
<td>3:12 532</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 16:21</td>
<td>3:13 318, 394, 883, 1003, 1075, 1159, 1171, 1203</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:1</td>
<td>774</td>
<td>3:14 244, 729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:3</td>
<td>396, 785, 945, 1133, 1182</td>
<td>3:15 602</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:4</td>
<td>716, 772 bis</td>
<td>3:15 300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:6</td>
<td>393, 632, 685, 784, 787</td>
<td>3:15 f. 971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:7</td>
<td>504</td>
<td>3:16 769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:8</td>
<td>518, 632, 765, 996, 1061, 1067, 1213</td>
<td>3:17 486, 503, 530, 789, 810, 820, 891, 967, 968, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Corinthians 1:9</td>
<td>325, 360, 498, 577, 687, 897, 900, 908, 983, 1186</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
2 Cor.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verse</th>
<th>page numbers</th>
<th>reference page numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4:1f</td>
<td>1128</td>
<td>7:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>316, 338, 771, 810</td>
<td>7:8, 14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>234, 587</td>
<td>7:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>503, 779, 1094, 1171</td>
<td>7:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>584, 1187</td>
<td>7:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>764, 962</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7</td>
<td>497, 514</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>596, 1138</td>
<td>7:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>1201</td>
<td>7:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>1139</td>
<td>7:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>1134</td>
<td>7:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>522, 681, 750, 766</td>
<td>8:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>297, 551, 654, 763</td>
<td>8:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>891, 1132</td>
<td>8:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:1</td>
<td>399, 418, 498, 762, 779, 882, 1019</td>
<td>8:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:2f.</td>
<td>563 bis, 600</td>
<td>8:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>244, 563 bis, 1027</td>
<td>8:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:4</td>
<td>604, 722, 762, 963</td>
<td>8:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5</td>
<td>498, 595</td>
<td>8:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:6</td>
<td>474, 560, 1135</td>
<td>8:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:7</td>
<td>440</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:8</td>
<td>625</td>
<td>8:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:9</td>
<td>582, 773</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:10</td>
<td>500, 877, 880, 909</td>
<td>8:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>316, 439, 626, 792</td>
<td>8:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>394, 539, 845, 1203</td>
<td>8:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:13</td>
<td>499, 699, 833, 1035</td>
<td>8:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>517, 539, 631, 773</td>
<td>8:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>654</td>
<td>8:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td>774</td>
<td>8:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:17</td>
<td>683, 964, 1033</td>
<td>8:18-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>1140, 1141</td>
<td>8:19 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:19</td>
<td>440</td>
<td>8:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:20</td>
<td>440, 497, 507</td>
<td>8:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:21</td>
<td>517, 528 bis, 529, 625, 890, 1051</td>
<td>8:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:22</td>
<td>442 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>582, 777</td>
<td>9:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>440, 827</td>
<td>9:3 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>442, 1136, 1140</td>
<td>9:3, 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:26</td>
<td>523, 828</td>
<td>9:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:27</td>
<td>895</td>
<td>9:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:28</td>
<td>486, 487</td>
<td>9:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:29</td>
<td>330, 375 bis, 528 bis, 529, 625, 890, 1051</td>
<td>9:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:30</td>
<td>217</td>
<td>9:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:31</td>
<td>1184</td>
<td>9:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:32</td>
<td>216, 528</td>
<td>9:11 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:33</td>
<td>853</td>
<td>9:11, 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:34</td>
<td>458, 595</td>
<td>9:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:35</td>
<td>576</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:36</td>
<td>415, 439 bis, 897, 900 bis, 1135</td>
<td>9:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:37</td>
<td>665, 1091</td>
<td>9:14</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2 Cor.</th>
<th></th>
<th>12:1</th>
<th>1092, 1130, 1149</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9:15</td>
<td>605</td>
<td>12:2</td>
<td>408, 622, 778, 793, 1035, 1041, 1103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:1</td>
<td>407</td>
<td>12:2f.</td>
<td>1045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:2</td>
<td>401, 407, 474, 481, 490 bis, 519, 743, 1035, 1038, 1059, 1060, 1083, 1123</td>
<td>12:3</td>
<td>710</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:3</td>
<td>407, 792 bis</td>
<td>12:4</td>
<td>212, 225 bis, 491, 881, 1139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:4</td>
<td>537, 626</td>
<td>12:5</td>
<td>519, 988</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:5</td>
<td>500, 593</td>
<td>12:6</td>
<td>532, 536, 538, 629, 960, 985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:7</td>
<td>407, 497</td>
<td>12:7</td>
<td>879, 897, 923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:7, 11</td>
<td>699</td>
<td>12:8</td>
<td>279</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:8</td>
<td>407</td>
<td>12:9</td>
<td>973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:8, 13</td>
<td>716</td>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:9</td>
<td>407, 597, 959, 969, 1025, 1040, 1091, 1095</td>
<td>12:11</td>
<td>478, 920, 1003, 1014, 1160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:10</td>
<td>233, 392, 434, 1206</td>
<td>12:12</td>
<td>408, 757, 772, 1151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:12</td>
<td>315, 401, 529, 687, 1201</td>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>702, 1077</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:12, 18</td>
<td>316</td>
<td>12:15</td>
<td>218 bis, 277, 596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:13</td>
<td>407, 719, 1078</td>
<td>12:16</td>
<td>392, 476, 856, 948</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:14</td>
<td>477, 561, 629, 1159</td>
<td>12:17</td>
<td>436, 474, 488, 718, 720, 744, 896, 893 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:16</td>
<td>244, 297, 517, 547, 550, 629 bis, 647</td>
<td>12:18</td>
<td>684, 770</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:18</td>
<td>315, 707</td>
<td>12:19</td>
<td>297, 644, 696, 879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:1</td>
<td>368, 486, 543, 886, 923 bis, 1004, 1186</td>
<td>12:20</td>
<td>267, 408, 534, 539, 731 bis, 929, 995 ter, 1159, 1161, 1174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:1 f., 16 f., 23</td>
<td>1199</td>
<td>12:21</td>
<td>193, 475, 621, 716, 910, 995, 1117, 1173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:2</td>
<td>261, 349, 1088</td>
<td>12:22</td>
<td>478, 674, 702</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:3</td>
<td>782, 995</td>
<td>13:1</td>
<td>674, 1035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:4</td>
<td>747, 748, 1151, 1186</td>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:5</td>
<td>297, 395, 519, 548, 550, 629</td>
<td>13:3</td>
<td>751, 1011, 1025, 1045, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:8</td>
<td>219, 1165</td>
<td>13:5</td>
<td>698, 703</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:9</td>
<td>750, 778</td>
<td>13:6</td>
<td>699, 845</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:10</td>
<td>1034</td>
<td>13:7</td>
<td>773 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:11</td>
<td>1180</td>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:16</td>
<td>203, 234, 743, 853 bis, 933, 1023, 1025</td>
<td>13:9</td>
<td>1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:19f.</td>
<td>1199</td>
<td>13:10</td>
<td>606, 802</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:20</td>
<td>434, 964, 1033, 1199</td>
<td>13:11</td>
<td>567, 582, 778, 795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:22</td>
<td>1198</td>
<td>13:12</td>
<td>773, 800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:23 ff</td>
<td>442</td>
<td>13:13</td>
<td>232, 618, 629, 778</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:23, 27</td>
<td>784</td>
<td>13:14</td>
<td>408</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:24</td>
<td>615, 635</td>
<td>13:15</td>
<td>747 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:25</td>
<td>212, 833, 897</td>
<td>13:16</td>
<td>764, 778, 785, 1011, 1107, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:25 f</td>
<td>793</td>
<td>13:17</td>
<td>313, 402, 406, 1010, 1026</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:26</td>
<td>501</td>
<td>13:18</td>
<td>616, 939</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:27</td>
<td>258</td>
<td>13:19</td>
<td>483, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:28</td>
<td>244, 537, 547, 646</td>
<td>13:20</td>
<td>922, 1015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:29</td>
<td>677 bis</td>
<td>13:21</td>
<td>474</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:30</td>
<td>475</td>
<td>13:22</td>
<td>582, 1189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:32</td>
<td>255, 258, 498</td>
<td>13:23</td>
<td>1134</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

Gal.

1.13 783, 885 3:23 857, 878, 978, 1074, 1075
1:14 298, 620, 633, 779 3:25 635
1:16 587 bis 3:28 313, 419, 558
1:18 561 4:1 733, 751, 757
1:19 224, 1025 4:4 820
1:20 538, 1034 4:5 960, 987
1:22 376, 487, 530 4:6 26, 231, 465
1:22 f. 412, 888 4:6 f. 441
1:23 659, 892, 1115, 1139, 1147 4:7 395
1:24 523 4:8 1172
2:1 955, 283, 581 4:9 879, 1111, 1199
2:1, 2 636 4:10 613, 810
2:2 542, 923, 988 ter, 995 4:11 995, 1169
2:4 613, 802, 984 4:12 482
2:5 367, 438 4:15 841, 921, 922, 1014, 1048
2:5 f. 434 4:17 203, 325, 342, 984
2:6 438, 731, 732 bis, 743, 751, 1115 4:19 186, 1162
2:6-9 130 4:20 713, 975
2:7 208, 485, 540, 546, 550, 816, 820 4:21 368, 784, 886, 919, 937, 1199
2:9 394, 1000, 1085, 1202, 1203 4:24 704, 729 bis, 760, 881
2:10 703, 714, 719, 723, 933, 960 4:25 254, 398, 411, 530, 547, 759, 766
2:11 608, 816, 1118
2:12 579, 978, 1075 4:25 f. 760
2:13 334, 530, 533, 1000 bis, 1181 4:26 398, 547
2:14 224, 626, 880, 1028, 1029 4:27 663, 892, 1138, 1139
2:15 530, 598 4:30 942
2:16 752, 796, 1025, 1204 5:2 399, 482, 484, 816
2:17 232, 916 bis, 940, 1176 5:3 1062, 1076
2:18 316, 402, 480, 678 5:4 518 bis, 562, 880, 960
2:19 402, 539, 796 5:6 583
2:20 479, 632, 715, 779 5:7 1094, 1171
2:21 1190 5:10 540, 727, 746, 957
3:1 349, 473, 608, 621, 723, 792, 1193 5:11 1008
3:2 579, 1060 5:12 809, 819, 873, 923, 940, 1004
3:4 710 5:13 605, 692, 1202
3:5 394 5:14 288, 419, 688, 766, 773, 874
3:7 698 5:15 933, 996
3:8 367 5:16 834
3:10 598, 631, 720, 744, 773, 1067, 1086, 1088, 1159 5:17 698, 850, 957, 994, 998
3:11 395 5:19 404, 729
3:13 317, 631 ter 5:20 265, 267
3:14 1049 5:20 f., 22 f. 794
3:15 423, 1155, 1188 5:21 290, 771, 1035
3:16 342, 604, 712 5:22 428, 1178
3:17 580, 672, 699, 1003, 1072, 1090 5:24 767
3:18 583 5:25 1009
3:19 221, 349, 411, 647, 736, 974, 975 5:26 541
3:20 777, 778, 940, 1015 6:3 439, 995, 1027, 1180
3:21 423 6:4 690
3:21 777, 7778, 940, 1015 6:6 486, 773
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:7</td>
<td>698</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>779</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:9</td>
<td>1023, 1102, 1121, 1129, 1170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>658, 670, 762, 763, 968, 974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>292, 533, 734, 741 ter, 846 bis, 917, 1045, 1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td>148, 201, 325, 532, 698, 732, 880, 885, 985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:14</td>
<td>401, 796, 854, 940, 1003, 1170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15</td>
<td>234, 743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>295, 495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ephesians</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>582, 1107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>780, 991</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>396, 763, 781, 785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3-14</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>297, 644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>226, 583</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>503, 716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>226, 766, 809</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>778, 1071</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>396; 453, 533, 540</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13f.</td>
<td>713</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>605, 766, 782, 783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>813, 1102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16-18</td>
<td>1086</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>309 bis, 326 bis, 327 ter, 398, 933, 940, 983 bis, 994, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>411, 909, 1072, 1087</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>778</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>408, 440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:21</td>
<td>413, 629, 647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>632</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>729, 1206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:23</td>
<td>805-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>789</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>497, 651</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>419, 497, 503, 530, 788</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>478 bis, 482, 584, 833</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:5</td>
<td>529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5, 8</td>
<td>533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>262, 784</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>582, 704, 705, 1182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>744</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>605, 681, 716, 776</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>774, 777, 783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>398, 516, 658, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:13</td>
<td>1115, 1139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>480, 498, 769 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14-18</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:15</td>
<td>589, 769, 783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>483, 547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>745, 769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>498, 560, 787, 1131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>488, 505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1-13</td>
<td>435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>424, 1045, 1148 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>845</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4, 13</td>
<td>783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:5</td>
<td>523, 787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:6</td>
<td>1089</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:6, 8</td>
<td>1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>278, 439, 474, 483, 516, 663, 670 bis, 773 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:10</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11 f.</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12</td>
<td>784</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13</td>
<td>412, 728, 729, 784</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14-19</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>309, 327, 593, 766</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16 f.</td>
<td>1086</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:17</td>
<td>1087, 1090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:17 (18)</td>
<td>212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:18</td>
<td>787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:19</td>
<td>401, 519</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:20</td>
<td>517, 548, 629, 647 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>408, 660</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4:1</td>
<td>478, 716, 783, 1201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2 f.</td>
<td>440, 807</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7</td>
<td>746</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>392, 479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>278, 298, 499, 665, 668, 735, 766</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>297, 550, 647, 806</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>424, 694, 1152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>624</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>503, 773, 975 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15</td>
<td>712</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16</td>
<td>589, 745</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>700, 1078</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17 f.</td>
<td>405, 407, 412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:18</td>
<td>412, 515, 523, 910, 1117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>507, 545, 588, 1027, 1148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:22</td>
<td>280 bis, 283, 662, 1038, 1089</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:25</td>
<td>746</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:26</td>
<td>605, 854, 949, 1023, 1173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:28</td>
<td>892, 1116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:29</td>
<td>626, 753, 994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:32</td>
<td>594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>541, 753, 1173</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDEX OF QUOTATIONS**
## A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

### Ephesians

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5:4</td>
<td>714, 887, 920; 1138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5</td>
<td>319, 330, 360, 406, 713, 753, 786, 890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:8</td>
<td>497, 651</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>530</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>310, 328, 422, 948, 1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15-22</td>
<td>440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>533, 854, 890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:19</td>
<td>690</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:21</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:22</td>
<td>393, 757, 946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>399, 416, 768, 781, 782, 794</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>394, 794</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:26</td>
<td>521, 784, 811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:27</td>
<td>687, 1023</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:29</td>
<td>1147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:30</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:31</td>
<td>560, 574, 623</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:32</td>
<td>677</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:33</td>
<td>330, 746, 766, 769, 933, 943, 994, 1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1</td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:2</td>
<td>793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:3</td>
<td>299, 875, 984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>757, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:6</td>
<td>792</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:9</td>
<td>315, 502</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>550, 816</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>502, 991, 1003, 1075</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td>566, 651, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13</td>
<td>563 ter, 777</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:14</td>
<td>409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:16</td>
<td>589, 605, 652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>412, 712, 954</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:18 f.</td>
<td>618</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:19</td>
<td>1090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:21</td>
<td>608, 785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:22</td>
<td>699, 846</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Philippians

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>394, 628, 763, 783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>604, 772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>478, 686, 705, 776, 889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6, 25</td>
<td>699</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>491, 504, 566, 632, 658, 787, 966, 1131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>1032</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>663, 699</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>594, 991, 1071</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

For further study, refer to the primary text for detailed information on page references and bibliographical sources.
### INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

| Phil. | 3:1 | 420, 487, 546, 550, 890, 1058, 1085, 1146, 1153 | 1:3, 4 | 860 |
|       | 3:2 | 471, 769, 949, 1100, 1178, 1200 | 1:4 | 783 |
|       | 3:2 f. | 1201 | 1:5 | 498 |
|       | 3:3 | 540, 769, 785, 1138, 1139 | 1:6, 9 | 717, 978 |
|       | 3:4 | 1129, 1154 | 1:7 | 172, 255, 781 |
|       | 3:5 | 523, 598, 657 | 1:8 | 764, 779, 859 |
|       | 3:6 | 261 | 1:9 | 483, 435, 576, 600, 721, 784, 993, 1049, 1102 |
|       | 3:7 | 396, 480, 481, 584, 698, 704, 1041 | 1:9-23 | 772 |
|       | 3:8 | 396, 481, 485, 504, 652, 764, 812, 983, 1036, 1109, 1145, 1148, 1151, 1186 | 1:10 | 1200 |
|       | 3:9 | 588, 598, 685, 782, 783, 784 | 1:10-12 | 212, 496, 497, 503, 818 |
|       | 3:10 | 150 bis, 990, 1002, 1067, 1088, 1200 | 1:13 | 233, 234, 772 |
|       | 3:11 | 1017 | 1:15 | 772 |
|       | 3:12 | 605, 811, 812, 845, 901, 916, 1017, 1024, 1030 | 1:16 | 567, 583, 588, 654 bis, 762, 763, 8474, 894, 896 |
|       | 3:13 | 472, 489, 506, 509, 807, 1038, 1060, 1202 | 1:17 | 234, 534, 622, 679, 774, 896 |
|       | 3:13 f. | 765 | 1:18 | 243, 375 bis, 890 |
|       | 3:14 | 146, 547, 608, 656, 782 | 1:20 | 226 |
|       | 3:15 | 395, 749, 931 | 1:21 | 375, 777, 910, 1115, 1117 |
|       | 3:16 | 329, 944, 1081, 1092, 1187 | 1:21 f. | 434 |
|       | 3:17 | 221 | 1:22 | 437, 496, 644 |
|       | 3:18 | 473, 718 | 1:23 | 243, 717, 1148 |
|       | 3:18 f. | 413, 1107 | 1:24 | 165, 565, 574, 712, 784 |
|       | 3:20 | 714 | 1:24, 23 f. | 724 |
|       | 3:21 | 496, 528, 906, 1061, 1066, 1067, 1076 | 1:26 | 440, 1135 |
|       | 4:2 | 235 | 1:27 | 262, 713 |
|       | 4:3 | 612, 728 | 1:29 | 714 |
|       | 4:5 | 546, 763, 1202 | 2:1 | 337, 364, 733, 886, 908 |
|       | 4:7 | 477 499 629, 800, 1183 | 2:11 | 116 |
|       | 4:8 | 698, 724, 733, 765, 812, 1146 | 2:2 | 243, 262, 439 |
|       | 4:9 | 698, 724, 1182 | 2:3 | 243 |
|       | 4:10 | 348, 476, 487, 604, 963, 965, 1019 1059, 1066, 1147, 1212 | 2:4 | 487 |
|       | 4:11 | 677, 687, 721 bis, 835, 845, 1038, 1041, 1060, 1103, 1166 | 2:5 | 651, 1026, 1187 |
|       | 4:11, 17 | 965 | 2:6 | 212 |
|       | 4:12 | 117, 342, 371, 1181 | 2:7 | 764, 787, 933, 995 bis, 1107, 1116, 1159, 1169 |
|       | 4:13 | 478 | 2:8 | 1164 |
|       | 4:14 | 1121, 1187 | 2:9 | 712 |
|       | 4:16 | 1183 | 2:10 | 215 |
|       | 4:17 | 594, 1166 | 2:11 | 152, 529 |
|       | 4:18 | 172 | 2:12 | 560, 789, 1205 |
|       | 4:19 | 962, 586, 783 | 2:13 | 658 |
|       | 4:20 | 785 | 2:14 | 524, 528, 634, 648, 783 |
|       | 4:22 | 548, 599, 670 | 2:15 | 226, 474, 589, 805 |
| Colossians | 1:2 | 185, 408 | 2:16 | 204, 1182 |
|       | 1:2, 6, 14, 16, 18, 20, 21, 22, 26, 27, 28 | 2:17 | 712 |
|       | 1:3 f. | 1128 | 2:18 | 65, 134, 477, 500, 551 bis, 535 |
|       | 1:3 | 3:1 | 2:19 | 478, 713, 1138, 1139. |

---

**Note:** The numbers in the table represent page numbers from the original document, and the text following indicates the specific verses or sections referenced.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Col.</th>
<th>1 Thessalonians</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3:1 f.</td>
<td>547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>588, 628 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:5</td>
<td>727, 728, 758 bis, 960</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:7</td>
<td>971</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:9</td>
<td>854, 890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11</td>
<td>657, 712, 1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13</td>
<td>508, 690, 692, 742, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>411, 605, 713</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>440, 560, 690, 946, 1133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:17</td>
<td>727, 729, 957</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:18</td>
<td>393, 807, 887, 920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:18 ff.</td>
<td>757</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23</td>
<td>550, 1140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>498</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:25</td>
<td>355, 1217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>788</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>407, 638 bis, 1086, 1090, 1140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>625, 810</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>699, 846</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>355, 547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>172, 630, 772, 994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>244, 257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>172 bis, 255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15</td>
<td>172, 257, 608</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16</td>
<td>600, 1204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>343, 983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:18</td>
<td>685</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15, 17</td>
<td>778</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>173, 780, 796</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>498, 503, 779 bis, 780</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>566, 731 ter, 1045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7 f.</td>
<td>787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>731, 732, 779, 795, 1032, 1045, 1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>475, 778, 1107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>1077</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>485, 1085, 1103, 1139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>505, 968</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>164, 198, 206, 225, 508, 722, 1162, 1215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>593, 1003, 1075</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>537, 545, 1032</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>787, 997, 1002, 1072</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>545, 560, 791</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>530</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:15</td>
<td>1205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>1220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>559, 665, 778</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Scripture Reference</th>
<th>Verse(s)</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2 Thessalonians</td>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>224, 749, 777, 1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>485, 776</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>1035, 1103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>1115, 1127, 1128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>629, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>657, 699, 771</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>776</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>261, 478</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>620</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:21</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:23</td>
<td>273, 431, 489, 886, 919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:24</td>
<td>242, 401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:26</td>
<td>510</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:27</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:28</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:29</td>
<td>613, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:30</td>
<td>876, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:31</td>
<td>664, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:32</td>
<td>765</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:33</td>
<td>580, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:34</td>
<td>811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:35</td>
<td>729, 880, 983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:36</td>
<td>242, 295, 401, 422, 428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:37</td>
<td>534, 546, 551, 713, 793, 954, 1109, 1199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:38</td>
<td>499, 518, 668</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:39</td>
<td>518, 785, 1121, 1201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:40</td>
<td>1022, 1129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:41</td>
<td>543, 717</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:42</td>
<td>272, 535, 547, 1128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:43</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:44</td>
<td>976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:45</td>
<td>508, 611, 854, 890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:46</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:47</td>
<td>1218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:48</td>
<td>772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:49</td>
<td>215, 1103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:50</td>
<td>302, 547, 565, 623</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:51</td>
<td>509, 516, 691, 1012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:52</td>
<td>218, 277, 488, 516, 666</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:53</td>
<td>163, 800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:54</td>
<td>512, 972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:55</td>
<td>232, 272, 273, 477, 617, 618, 638, 1040, 1103 bis, 1121, 1122, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:56</td>
<td>919</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:57</td>
<td>284, 511, 654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:58</td>
<td>223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:59</td>
<td>251, 603, 640, 1025, 1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:60</td>
<td>621</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### 1 Tim.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5:22</td>
<td>854, 890 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>779, 789</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>235, 620</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:2</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:3</td>
<td>609, 1011, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>167, 267, 405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>166, 483, 486, 518, 582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:7</td>
<td>1191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>324, 871, 889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>542, 617</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>476, 1186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td>478</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13</td>
<td>603</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15</td>
<td>495, 523, 660, 691, 785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15 f.</td>
<td>776</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>163, 493, 496, 651, 783, 908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:18</td>
<td>163, 204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:20</td>
<td>186, 261, 810, 856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:21</td>
<td>715</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>135, 309 bis, 327, 565, 983, 988 bis, 989, 996, 1044, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26</td>
<td>707</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>699, 769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4</td>
<td>661, 663, 666</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:6</td>
<td>148, 155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:7</td>
<td>1173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>255, 486</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:9</td>
<td>707, 708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11</td>
<td>212, 731 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>721</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>879</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>272, 772, 1097</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>484</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>328</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>895</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>498, 903</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>1205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>759</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>172, 184, 255, 547, 858, 861</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>172, 535, 549, 1127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>186, 221, 235, 255, 614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15</td>
<td>419, 949, 955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16</td>
<td>779, 854, 939, 940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>212, 818</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:18</td>
<td>1204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:19</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>235, 255, 621</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 2 Timothy

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>796</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>963</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5</td>
<td>485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>483, 718, 722</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6, 12</td>
<td>962</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>472, 529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8f</td>
<td>1107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>166, 594, 658, 718, 720, 726, 1102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>717, 782</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>613, 856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>214, 235, 269, 472, 484, 497, 772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>235, 367, 485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16, 18</td>
<td>309, 326, 854, 939, 940, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>277, 299, 488, 665, 733</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>583, 698, 856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5</td>
<td>850, 1019 bis, 1027</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>481, 1041</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>1008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>1119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>164, 605, 944, 947, 1162, 1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>620, 908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:19</td>
<td>262, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>1183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>597</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2 f.</td>
<td>441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>774, 962, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>273, 422, 692, 1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>472</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>1036, 1035, 1103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>203, 762, 943, 985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>480, 690, 811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>652, 1087</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>691, 944</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>311, 780</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>272, 537, 653, 656</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>788</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>82, 786, 787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>518, 618, 632</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:19</td>
<td>1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>261, 681, 715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Titus

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>224</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>774, 962, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>273, 422, 692, 1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>955</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:14</td>
<td>472</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>362</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>1036, 1035, 1103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>203, 762, 943, 985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>480, 690, 811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>652, 1087</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>691, 944</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>311, 780</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>272, 537, 653, 656</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>788</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>82, 786, 787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>518, 618, 632</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:19</td>
<td>1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>261, 681, 715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Titus</td>
<td>Hebrews</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:7 224, 707, 779</td>
<td>1:1 545, 546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8 509, 537, 764, 812</td>
<td>1:1 f. 422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:9 265 bis</td>
<td>1:1-3 432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11 687</td>
<td>1:2 408, 480, 671, 775</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12 172, 235</td>
<td>1:3 496 bis, 586, 651, 781, 792, 845, 860, 1099</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13 172 bis, 255, 260, 1217</td>
<td>1:3, 4 f. 422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14 1041</td>
<td>1:4 218, 420, 532, 615, 663, 667, 710 bis, 733 bis, 966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:5 420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:6 773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:7 626, 1202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:8 465</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:9 483, 528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:10 234, 792</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1 212, 279, 298, 3:50, 613, 996</td>
<td>2:1 212, 279, 298, 3:50, 613, 996</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2 583, 1107</td>
<td>2:2 583, 1107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2-4 432</td>
<td>2:2-4 432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3 710, 828, 1023, 1129</td>
<td>2:3 710, 828, 1023, 1129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4 151</td>
<td>2:4 151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7 484, 485, 602, 616</td>
<td>2:7 484, 485, 602, 616</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7, 9 218, 743</td>
<td>2:7, 9 218, 743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8 1073 bis, 1153</td>
<td>2:8 1073 bis, 1153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9 473, 485, 632, 1041, 1123</td>
<td>2:9 473, 485, 632, 1041, 1123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2:10 5:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Verse</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>523, 1076, 1081</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>233, 375, 482, 490, 584, 740, 903, 1038, 1039, 1061, 1076, 1082, 903, 1038, 1039, 1061, 1076, 1082</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:13</td>
<td>395, 516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>497, 514, 580, 584, 757, 789, 902, 910, 1108, 1117, 1122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:17</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:20</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1</td>
<td>498</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:2</td>
<td>501</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:3</td>
<td>1027, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>473</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4 f.</td>
<td>449, 507</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:6</td>
<td>539, 613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:7</td>
<td>584, 603, 708</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>640, 1134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:9</td>
<td>218, 485, 508, 637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>506, 716, 860, 998, 1001, 1060, 1080, 1082, 1090</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12</td>
<td>1153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13</td>
<td>475, 1159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13, 16</td>
<td>607</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:14</td>
<td>192, 551, 1004, 1024 bis, 1110, 1150 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:16</td>
<td>218, 277, 409, 654, 752, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>148, 654, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:18</td>
<td>778, 827, 828</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:19</td>
<td>258, 259, 274, 298, 418, 715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:1</td>
<td>697, 701, 1134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:2</td>
<td>714, 1153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:2 f.</td>
<td>1153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:3</td>
<td>594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:4</td>
<td>258, 292, 399, 418, 741 bis, 1177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:5</td>
<td>343, 371 bis, 412, 705, 1076, 1129, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:6</td>
<td>896</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:7</td>
<td>218, 277, 409, 654, 752, 763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:7 f.</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:8</td>
<td>1035, 1153</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:9</td>
<td>208, 967, 990, 1086, 1091, 1093</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:10</td>
<td>604, 1015, 1027, 1095, 1151, 1162, 1164</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:11</td>
<td>748</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:12</td>
<td>1023, 1129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:13</td>
<td>580, 721</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:14</td>
<td>719, 1034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:15</td>
<td>279, 659, 663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:16</td>
<td>158 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:17</td>
<td>763</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:18</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:19</td>
<td>733, 963</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:20</td>
<td>435, 967</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:20 f.</td>
<td>695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:21</td>
<td>334, 819</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:22</td>
<td>613, 1061, 1085, 1119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:23</td>
<td>187, 392, 439, 550, 716, 1135</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

Heb.

10:2 778, 963 bis, 965 bis, 1015, 1100, 11175, 1122 260, 812

10:6, 8 474 11:23 1036

10:7 895, 1088 11:24 529

10:9 895, 909 11:25 480, 500, 575, 594, 1202

10:10 719, 891 11:26 833, 1113, 1121

10:11 617, 687 11:27 148 bis, 189

10:13 487, 495 11:29 476, 563, 565, 582 bis,

10:14 891, 895, 1111, 1116 11:31 652, 800

10:15 909, 979, 1074 11:31 317, 529

10:15 f. 439 11:32 210, 420, 934, 1126

10:15, 26 1074 11:33 477, 509, 606

10:16 440, 1135 11:34 476, 748

10:22 211, 225, 340, 362, 485, 486, 1217 11:35 1138

11:6 501 11:36 749

11:25 124, 532, 710, 733 bis, 967, 1123 11:39 833

10:26 612 12:1 168, 420, 425, 524, 542,

10:27 743 12:1 f. 562, 583, 653, 810, 931, 1154

10:28 251, 566, 604 12:1, 2 432

10:29 434, 511, 859 12:2 764

10:31 1059 12:3 154, 502, 512, 574, 575, 1106

10:32 470, 475 12:4 524, 635, 1107, 1121

10:33 457, 705, 1153 12:6 368, 645, 975

10:34 218, 1035, 1036, 1038, 1041, 1103 12:7 508, 509

10:35 728 12:8 738, 794, 1159

10:36 998 12:9 420

10:37 395, 733, 978 12:9, 25 480, 532, 546, 1152

10:39 497, 515 12:10 664

11:1 234, 1138 12:11 625, 1109

11:1, 35 1139 12:11 448, 497, 515, 519,

11:3 423, 909 bis, 1003, 1036, 1049, 1070, 1072, 1090 12:12 625, 1109

11:4 667, 724, 1038, 1085 12:12 f. 315

11:5 365, 371 12:13 1200

11:6 234 12:13 f. 421

11:7 334, 1173 12:14 425, 648, 871

11:8 593 12:14 f. 422 bis

11:9 593 12:15 496, 774, 800, 934, 995

11:10 262 12:16 190, 308, 573

11:11 616, 686, 793 12:17 319, 360, 611, 941,

11:12 524, 704, 705, 777, 1129, 1140, 1181 12:18 1129, 1154

11:13 533, 833, 1137 12:18, 29 262, 536, 1118

11:14 1034 12:19 542, 793

11:15 887, 921, 923, 1015, 1062 12:19 261, 818, 1094, 1171

11:15 f. 1153 12:20 508, 581

11:15 f. 1153 12:21 168, 221

11:16 399, 416, 508 12:22 536, 760

11:16, 35, 40 218 12:23 792

11:17 359, 760, 885 12:24 218, 615, 667

11:17, 28 895 12:25 430, 472, 791, 810, 922,

11:18 1034 19:27 933, 996, 1160

11:19 818 19:28 766 bis, 1140

11:20 788 13:2 934, 955 bis, 956, 989

11:21 775, 827, 979, 1115 400, 472, 475, 509 bis, 551,

11:22 260, 812 860, 1102, 1120
Heb.

13:4  396  2:6  408, 510, 763
13:5  207, 930, 946, 1165, 1175  2:7  62, 776
13:6  217, 334, 819, 871  2:8  874
13:7  514, 949, 955  2:10  956, 957, 959, 897, 898
13:8  206, 395  2:11  1012, 1166
13:9  1095, 1162, 1166  2:13  162, 512
13:10  599  2:14  395, 1038
13:11  718, 719, 953  2:15  406, 412, 655, 1121
13:12  425, 1154  2:16  562
13:15  108, 203, 268, 399, 524, 541  2:19  404
13:16  532, 816  2:19 f.  430
13:17  374, 634, 877, 1119 bis  2:20  273, 464, 878
   1128, 1140, 1214  2:22  367, 477, 529, 1041
13:18  407, 678, 1035  2:24  1041
13:19  279, 545, 664  2:25  521, 526, 966, 1128
13:20  777, 778, 784  3:1  423, 1172
13:21  327, 940  3:2  488, 698, 1076
13:22  583, 845  3:3  418
13:22 f  407  3:4  290, 709, 1129
13:23  664, 910, 1041, 1103, 1110, 1123  3:5  991, 733, 737
13:24  548, 578, 766  3:6  233, 399

James

1:1  329, 394, 944, 1093  3:10  319, 920, 1220
1:2  524, 772  3:11  653, 786
1:3  763  3:12  417, 1189
1:5  518, 1023  3:13  738, 1045
1:6  149, 478, 801, 895  3:14  560, 1173
1:7  1035  3:15  881
1:8  580  3:17  273, 424, 1152 bis
1:10  837  3:8  124, 413
1:11  426  3:9  473, 500, 785
1:13  516, 579, 1034  3:10  319, 920, 1220
1:13f.  1186  3:11  653, 786
1:15  232  4:4  411
1:17  153, 233, 413, 421, 501, 655, 772, 1200  4:5  626
   4:7 f  948
   4:8  355, 538, 1214
1:18  742, 1071  4:9  561, 856
1:19  319, 328, 369, 429, 658 bis, 908, 941, 1003, 1052, 1071, 1072, 1076  4:10  512
   4:11  778, 1107
   4:12  289, 299, 328, 348, 474, 696, 770, 799, 1193, 1217
   4:13  728, 735, 740, 767, 770, 799, 1193, 1217
1:21  216  4:14  961, 1158
1:22  947, 1162  4:15  574, 697, 708, 1060, 1069, 1070
1:23  530, 698  4:16  710
1:24  731, 732, 844, 897, 1177  4:17  764 bis, 1106
1:25  496, 780  4:18  299, 391, 428, 430, 763, 854
1:26  231, 272, 1038, 1085  5:1  949, 1106, 1116
1:26  124  4:19  801
1:27  516, 700, 1059, 1078, 1219  5:2  405, 898
2:1  408, 503  5:3  769
2:2  124, 169  5:4  337, 579
2:2, 3  762  5:5  757
2:3  314, 329, 340, 1216
2:4  1175
2:5  480, 537, 716, 763, 917
| James        | 5:7 | 201, 652, 856 | 2:19 f | 411  |
|             | 5:9 | 394, 621     | 2:20   | 740  |
|             | 5:10| 480          | 2:21   | 633, 784 |
|             | 5:12| 328, 427, 471, 475, 484, 622, 853 | 2:21-24 | 954  |
|             | 5:13| 430, 515, 740, 1023 | 2:24 | 561, 723 |
|             | 5:14| 124, 328     | 2:25   | 787  |
|             | 5:15| 208, 325, 300, 375, 908, 1019 | 3:1 | 127, 324, 516, 638, 779, 946, 984, 1026, 1217 |
|             | 5:17| 392, 531 bis, 802, 1094 | 3:3 | 127, 498 bis, 779, 947, 949, 1161 |
|             | 5:18| 348, 799     | 3:4 | 200, 272, 274, 712, 779 |
|             | 3:6 | 479          | 3:7 | 1072 |
|             | 1 Peter | 3:7, 9, 16 | 1023, 1027 |
|             | 1:2 | 127 bis, 793, 854, 940 | 3:8 | 470, 487 |
|             | 1:3 | 774, 778, 783, 785 | 3:8 f. | 945  |
|             | 1:4 | 273, 535     | 3:9 | 208, 573 bis, 699 |
|             | 1:5 | 272, 769, 775, 783, 794 | 3:10 | 1061, 1171 |
|             | 1:6 | 881, 941, 949, 978, 1119 | 3:11 | 561  |
|             | 1:6-12| 724, 954 | 3:12 | 1106 |
|             | 1:7 | 654, 763, 778, 1107 | 3:13 | 127, 374, 878, 1118 |
|             | 1:8 | 127, 224, 531, 715, 1096, 1135 bis, 1139, 1172, 1212 | 3:13 f. | 1020 |
|             | 1:10 | 597, 719, 721, 778 | 3:14 | 127, 327, 478, 683, 1021, 1023, 1027 |
|             | 1:10 f. | 563 | 3:14, 17 | 1023 |
|             | 1:11 | 594, 735 | 3:15 | 482  |
|             | 1:12 | 195, 778, 1029, 1031 | 3:16 | 473, 721 |
|             | 1:13 | 314, 602, 777 | 3:17 | 127, 218, 1021, 1039, 1084 |
|             | 1:14 | 497, 782 | 3:18 | 523, 618 bis, 757, 1114 |
|             | 1:17 | 127, 997, 779 | 3:18-99 | 432  |
|             | 1:18 | 272, 412, 656, 774, 777 | 3:19 f. | 778 |
|             | 1:18 f. | 533 | 3:20 | 399, 416, 560, 656, 705, 779 |
|             | 1:19 | 127 | 3:21 | 714  |
|             | 1:20 | 603 | 3:22 | 792  |
|             | 1:20 f. | 1114 | 4:1 | 518, 816 |
|             | 1:24 | 837 | 4:2 | 348, 479, 1070, 1071 |
|             | 1:25 | 535, 778 | 4:3 | 127, 364, 909, 992, 1062, 1076 |
|             | 2:1 | 408, 773 | 4:5 | 793  |
|             | 2:2 | 349 | 4:6 | 699, 792, 1031 |
|             | 2:3 | 192, 1035 | 4:6 | 622, 789 |
|             | 2:4 | 424 | 4:8 | 694 |
|             | 2:5 | 338, 401, 941 | 4:8 ff | 946 |
|             | 2:6 | 392, 772, 800, 802 | 4:9 | 638 |
|             | 2:7 | 418, 715 | 4:11 | 396  |
|             | 2:8 | 714 | 4:12 | 532, 626 |
|             | 2:9 | xii, 101, 597 | 4:13 | 967  |
|             | 2:10 | 910, 1117, 1138, 1139, 1163 | 4:14 | 602, 767, 777, 779, 785 |
|             | 2:11 | 518, 728 bis, 1084 | 4:15 | 204  |
|             | 2:11 f. | 1039 | 4:16 | 192  |
|             | 2:12 | 497, 721, 789, 946, 1134 | 4:17 | 395, 512, 1061, 1076 |
|             | 2:13 | 772 | 4:18 | 357, 763, 871 |
|             | 2:13, 16| 1140 | 4:19 | 231  |
|             | 2:15 | 343, 400, 700 bis, 779, 1078 | 5:1 | 587, 779, 557, 878 |
|             | 2:16 | 127 | 5:2 | 551  |
|             | 2:18 | 946, 947, 1161 | 5:4 | 355, 498, 1217 |
|             | 2:19 | 500, 699, 704 | 5:5 | 808  |
# A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

## 1 Peter

- **5:6**: 258, 635
- **5:7**: 212, 539, 560, 946
- **5:8**: 740, 795, 1040, 1044, 1085
- **5:9**: 502, 505, 523, 541, 542, 687, 949, 955
- **5:10**: 195, 606, 778, 1126
- **5:12**: 173, 415, 583, 593, 846, 949, 1036, 1039
- **5:13**: 169

## 2 Peter

- **1:1**: 82, 127, 530, 785, 786 bis
- **1:2**: 127, 940
- **1:3**: 101, 127, 533, 778
- **1:4**: 279, 670, 783
- **1:5**: 126, 460, 487, 686, 705 bis
- **1:6**: 1184, 1200
- **1:8**: 315
- **1:9**: 127, 423, 542, 720, 962, 1169
- **1:10**: 787, 985
- **1:11**: 127 bis, 401, 785 bis, 786
- **1:12**: 483, 656, 1129, 1154
- **1:13**: 127
- **1:14**: 127, 333, 356
- **1:15**: 1191
- **1:16**: 1139
- **1:17**: 290, 438, 636, 709, 842, 1135
- **1:18**: 778, 864, 1097
- **1:19**: 185, 663, 1121
- **1:20**: 514, 518, 699, 772, 1039
- **1:21**: 751, 1165
- **1:22**: 127, 613, 1134, 1203
- **1:23**: 297, 440, 474, 551, 724
- **1:24**: 1012, 1160
- **1:25**: 438
- **1:26**: 275, 348, 672
- **1:27**: 257, 498, 539
- **1:28**: 212, 783
- **1:29**: 126, 434, 470, 597
- **1:30**: 127, 1122
- **1:31**: 205, 665
- **1:32**: 473, 721
- **1:33**: 473, 721
- **1:34**: 1125
- **1:35**: 355, 374, 485, 529, 560, 878
- **1:36**: 162, 185, 497, 516

## 1 John

- **1:1**: 713, 724, 791, 896
- **1:1-3**: 901
- **1:2**: 777
- **1:3**: 611, 713, 724
- **1:4**: 528
- **1:5**: 579, 699, 1033
- **1:7**: 518
- **1:9**: 961, 998
- **1:10**: 406
- **1:12**: 424, 441, 618, 685, 1185, 1199
- **1:13**: 590, 700, 850, 1079
- **1:14**: 904
- **1:15**: 500, 897
- **1:16**: 708
- **1:17**: 1038
- **1:18**: 884
- **1:19**: 713, 879
- **1:20**: 879, 1183
- **1:21**: 845
- **1:22**: 694
- **1:23**: 788, 963
- **1:24**: 573, 769, 794
- **1:25**: 753, 906, 922, 923, 1015, 1086
- **1:26**: 230
- **1:27**: 753, 845, 1166
- **1:28**: 1035, 1094, 1164, 1205
- **1:29**: 437
- **1:30**: 400, 416, 479, 538, 704
- **1:31**: 718, 777
- **1:32**: 845
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

### 1 John

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Quotations</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>135, 741, 999</td>
<td>5.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4, 11, 23</td>
<td>992</td>
<td>5.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>233 bis, 736</td>
<td>776, 984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4</td>
<td>769</td>
<td>5.21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:6</td>
<td>880</td>
<td>476, 689, 856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>699, 880 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:9</td>
<td>890, 1081</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:10</td>
<td>404, 1164, 1173, 1174, 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11 f.</td>
<td>1192, 1203</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11, 23</td>
<td>699, 1079</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12</td>
<td>425, 647, 652, 968, 1176, 6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13</td>
<td>532, 965, 6 f.</td>
<td>699, 992</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>586, 1041</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>753</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>632, 1033, 1079</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:19</td>
<td>871</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:19, 24</td>
<td>699</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:20</td>
<td>512, 667</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>512</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:22</td>
<td>850</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:23</td>
<td>850</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>442, 679, 716</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>752</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>480, 1103, 1116, 1123</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>546, 724, 962, 964, 1149, 1169</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>692, 931</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>794, 845</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>584, 777, 845-9</td>
<td>273, 269, 846</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9, 10, 13</td>
<td>699</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>845</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>1009</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>401, 519, 599</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>894</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:16</td>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>611, 699</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:18</td>
<td>758</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:19</td>
<td>549</td>
<td>2, 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>699, 992, 1079</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:22</td>
<td>432, 700</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:1</td>
<td>400, 699, 1034, 1079</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>704</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3, 4, 9, 11, etc.</td>
<td>704</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3, 9, 11</td>
<td>993</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:4</td>
<td>258, 409, 698</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:6</td>
<td>583, 589, 657, 659, 1166</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:8</td>
<td>593</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:9</td>
<td>393, 964, 1034, 1049</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:9, 11, 14</td>
<td>699</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:10</td>
<td>226, 963, 1159, 1169</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>400, 1033, 1034</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>1164</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:13</td>
<td>360, 401, 418, 699, 778, 845, 486, 983, 993, 1034</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>805, 1033</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>482, 805, 1010</td>
<td>22 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td>392, 477</td>
<td>22, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16 f.</td>
<td>234</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 2 John

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Quotations</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>1123 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:21</td>
<td>699</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>273, 657, 713, 1116</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>441, 1199</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>515, 902, 1041</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>339, 1140 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>699, 992</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:7</td>
<td>703</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>480, 1036, 1041, 1103, 1107, 1123 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>403</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>792, 1093, 1160</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>368, 625, 846, 919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>273</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### 3 John

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Quotations</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3:11</td>
<td>619</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12</td>
<td>968</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:13</td>
<td>277, 663, 685, 699, 704, 992, 1042</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>861, 1121</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>134, 633</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>235, 269, 846</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:17</td>
<td>1166, 1185, 1189</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:18</td>
<td>635</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:19</td>
<td>582</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:20</td>
<td>625</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Jude

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Quotations</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5:1</td>
<td>501, 588, 767</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:2</td>
<td>125</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>940</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:4</td>
<td>1106</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5</td>
<td>127, 265, 341, 613, 776, 786, 1107, 1214</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:6</td>
<td>125, 1032, 1035, 1129</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:7</td>
<td>125, 263, 486, 748, 1032</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:8</td>
<td>125, 232, 529</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:9</td>
<td>473</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:10</td>
<td>510</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>704</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>272</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:13</td>
<td>125, 589</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>716</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>439, 474</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td>603</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:17</td>
<td>280, 670 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>1153</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:19</td>
<td>696</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:20</td>
<td>342</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:21</td>
<td>505, 644, 1200</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page</td>
<td>References</td>
<td>3:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------</td>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>-----</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Revelation</td>
<td>258, 349, 780, 793</td>
<td>3:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>764, 788, 1108</td>
<td>3:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:3</td>
<td>135, 270, 394, 414, 459, 574, 764, 877, 1202</td>
<td>3:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>734, 735, 777</td>
<td>3:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:4, 8</td>
<td>136 ter, 202, 414, 458, 764, 777, 779</td>
<td>3:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>441</td>
<td>3:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:7</td>
<td>475, 1150</td>
<td>3:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>414, 769, 785</td>
<td>3:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>504, 785</td>
<td>3:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>645</td>
<td>3:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11</td>
<td>218, 257, 263</td>
<td>3:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>257</td>
<td>3:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13</td>
<td>216, 218, 219, 257, 258, 274, 485, 530</td>
<td>3:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>414, 1104</td>
<td>3:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>266, 414 bis, 1135</td>
<td>3:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>669, 762, 769 bis, 777, 785</td>
<td>3:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>231, 265</td>
<td>3:21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>404</td>
<td>4:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>512, 715</td>
<td>4:1 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>203, 216, 274, 289</td>
<td>4:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>135, 312, 857, 1214</td>
<td>4:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:3</td>
<td>309, 337</td>
<td>4:3 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>309, 337, 1035</td>
<td>4:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:5</td>
<td>538, 539, 1025</td>
<td>4:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6</td>
<td>1034</td>
<td>4:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:7</td>
<td>341, 414, 437</td>
<td>4:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>218, 775</td>
<td>4:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>1039</td>
<td>4:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>498</td>
<td>5:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:11</td>
<td>599, 1175</td>
<td>5:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>655, 777</td>
<td>5:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>172, 235, 255, 614, 712, 969</td>
<td>5:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>474, 482, 519, 1106</td>
<td>5:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>1105</td>
<td>5:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>534, 536, 590, 610</td>
<td>5:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>203, 270, 441, 519 bis</td>
<td>5:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:18</td>
<td>263, 441</td>
<td>5:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:19</td>
<td>789</td>
<td>5:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>136, 315, 414, 1216</td>
<td>5:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:22</td>
<td>203, 593, 1010</td>
<td>5:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:23</td>
<td>871</td>
<td>5:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:24</td>
<td>232, 392, 406, 654, 775, 866 bis</td>
<td>6:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>720, 975 bis</td>
<td>6:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26</td>
<td>136, 414, 416, 437, 683, 1130</td>
<td>6:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28</td>
<td>901</td>
<td>6:4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**INDEX OF QUOTATIONS**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 6:8, 13</td>
<td>635</td>
<td>11:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 6:9</td>
<td>910, 1118</td>
<td>11:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 6:10</td>
<td>465, 505</td>
<td>11:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 6:11</td>
<td>201, 213, 409, 802, 992, 1213</td>
<td>11:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 6:15</td>
<td>203, 268</td>
<td>11:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 6:16</td>
<td>338, 483</td>
<td>11:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:1</td>
<td>266, 752</td>
<td>11:9, 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:2</td>
<td>683, 722, 864, 1118</td>
<td>11:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:3</td>
<td>609, 975</td>
<td>11:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:4</td>
<td>672</td>
<td>11:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:6</td>
<td>263</td>
<td>11:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:9</td>
<td>136, 413, 441, 722, 816, 1135</td>
<td>11:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:9, 13</td>
<td>485</td>
<td>11:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:11</td>
<td>319, 339, 366, 644</td>
<td>11:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:12</td>
<td>427, 758, 787, 794, 1182</td>
<td>11:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:14</td>
<td>349, 899, 902 bis</td>
<td>12:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:16</td>
<td>752, 1175</td>
<td>12:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 7:17</td>
<td>170, 262</td>
<td>12:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:1</td>
<td>204, 958, 973, 1146</td>
<td>12:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:3</td>
<td>782, 876, 984</td>
<td>12:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:5</td>
<td>510, 899 bis, 901</td>
<td>12:6, 14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:7</td>
<td>350, 412, 502, 653, 779</td>
<td>12:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:11</td>
<td>253, 458, 598</td>
<td>12:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:12</td>
<td>341, 349, 350, 1220</td>
<td>12:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 8:13</td>
<td>135, 391, 487, 537, 674, 1193</td>
<td>12:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:1</td>
<td>231, 864, 910, 1116 bis,</td>
<td>12:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:1</td>
<td>1118, 1123</td>
<td>12:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:4</td>
<td>752, 992, 1159 bis, 1169</td>
<td>12:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:4, 20</td>
<td>1159</td>
<td>12:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:5</td>
<td>992</td>
<td>12:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:6</td>
<td>324, 709, 870, 873, 889</td>
<td>13:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:8</td>
<td>339</td>
<td>13:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:10</td>
<td>272</td>
<td>13:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:11</td>
<td>104, 458, 653, 1202</td>
<td>13:4, 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:12</td>
<td>270, 405, 410</td>
<td>13:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:13</td>
<td>782</td>
<td>13:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:14</td>
<td>255, 266, 412, 414, 604, 760</td>
<td>13:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:16</td>
<td>580</td>
<td>13:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:19</td>
<td>273</td>
<td>13:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 9:20</td>
<td>203, 998</td>
<td>13:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:1</td>
<td>485, 892</td>
<td>13:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:2</td>
<td>155, 414, 828, 1135</td>
<td>13:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:2, 8</td>
<td>1213</td>
<td>13:17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:4</td>
<td>853 bis</td>
<td>13:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:5</td>
<td>593</td>
<td>14:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:6</td>
<td>1034</td>
<td>14:1-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:7</td>
<td>474, 799, 847, 1215</td>
<td>14:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:8</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>14:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:9</td>
<td>155, 339</td>
<td>14:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:10</td>
<td>155, 563</td>
<td>14:6, 8, 15, 17, 18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 10:11</td>
<td>605</td>
<td>14:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 11:1</td>
<td>1135</td>
<td>14:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 11:2</td>
<td>642</td>
<td>14:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 11:2, 19</td>
<td>782</td>
<td>14:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 11:3</td>
<td>485</td>
<td>14:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Page</td>
<td>Verses</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:12</td>
<td>201, 518, 597, 992</td>
<td>18:92, 75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>658, 1135</td>
<td>18:24, 689</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:15</td>
<td>590</td>
<td>19:1, 205</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:18</td>
<td>265</td>
<td>19:2, 1220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:19</td>
<td>253, 410</td>
<td>19:3, 337, 902</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:20</td>
<td>469, 517, 575, 642</td>
<td>19:4, 283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:1</td>
<td>1106</td>
<td>19:5, 459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:1</td>
<td>762</td>
<td>19:7, 1212</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:2</td>
<td>341, 475, 529, 598, 881</td>
<td>19:8, 485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:3</td>
<td>461, 464, 465</td>
<td>19:9, 17, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:4</td>
<td>395, 930, 934</td>
<td>19:10, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:5</td>
<td>1213</td>
<td>19:11, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:6</td>
<td>485, 560, 620</td>
<td>19:12, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:1</td>
<td>339, 342, 352, 1220</td>
<td>19:13, 135, 211, 364, 374, 485, 533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:2</td>
<td>232, 342</td>
<td>19:14, 407, 412, 485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:5</td>
<td>414</td>
<td>19:15, 503, 680, 960, 1001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:6</td>
<td>339</td>
<td>19:16, 660</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:9</td>
<td>478, 485, 998, 1001, 1088,</td>
<td>19:17, 269, 949</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1089, 1090</td>
<td>19:20, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:10</td>
<td>214, 375, 598, 903</td>
<td>19:21, 260, 269, 599</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:11</td>
<td>598</td>
<td>20:1, 265, 892</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:12</td>
<td>255, 760</td>
<td>20:2, 414, 714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:16</td>
<td>104</td>
<td>20:3, 528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:18</td>
<td>546, 710, 723, 731 bis, 978</td>
<td>20:3, 5, 975</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:19</td>
<td>458, 503</td>
<td>20:4, 833, 834</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:21</td>
<td>599</td>
<td>20:8, 722</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:1</td>
<td>774, 777</td>
<td>20:12, 349, 714, 1213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:2</td>
<td>441, 724</td>
<td>20:15, 1008, 1012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:3</td>
<td>412, 414, 455, 474, 506, 510</td>
<td>21:1, 394, 413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:4</td>
<td>156, 485</td>
<td>21:2, 539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:5</td>
<td>233</td>
<td>21:3, 611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:6</td>
<td>478</td>
<td>21:4, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:7</td>
<td>532</td>
<td>21:5, 480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:8</td>
<td>334, 719, 819, 1216</td>
<td>21:6, 337, 785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:9</td>
<td>683, 723</td>
<td>21:8, 712, 1118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:10</td>
<td>234, 747, 750, 764</td>
<td>21:9, 777</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:13</td>
<td>311, 1214 bis</td>
<td>21:11, 150, 280, 670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:16</td>
<td>590</td>
<td>21:11f., 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:17</td>
<td>872, 975</td>
<td>21:13, 254, 494, 791 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:18</td>
<td>234, 604</td>
<td>21:14, 412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:1</td>
<td>892</td>
<td>21:14, 19, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:2</td>
<td>260, 269, 843, 1200</td>
<td>21:16, 263, 405, 732, 967</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:3</td>
<td>337, 599, 1218</td>
<td>21:17, 268, 672, 714</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:6</td>
<td>317, 580, 716</td>
<td>21:18, 201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:9</td>
<td>1217</td>
<td>21:18 (21), 253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:10</td>
<td>498, 1193</td>
<td>21:19, 262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:11</td>
<td>475</td>
<td>21:20, 168, 199, 204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:12</td>
<td>192, 280, 670</td>
<td>21:21, 282, 460, 555, 556, 568, 571, 673, 675, 746</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:13</td>
<td>441</td>
<td>22:1, 541</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:14</td>
<td>186</td>
<td>22:3, 793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:16</td>
<td>348, 873, 1165</td>
<td>22:4, 753, 1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:17</td>
<td>474</td>
<td>22:5, 258, 300 bis, 311, 745, 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:19</td>
<td>1193</td>
<td>22:6, 166, 753</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:20</td>
<td>461, 464, 786</td>
<td>22:7, 871</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

### (b) OLD TESTAMENT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Genesis</th>
<th>Exodus</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:24</td>
<td>574, 595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15f</td>
<td>680</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:22</td>
<td>1002, 1067, 1086</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:24</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:12, 14</td>
<td>889</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:24</td>
<td>673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:19, 30</td>
<td>1074</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:11</td>
<td>746</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:23</td>
<td>1024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:2</td>
<td>1061</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:17</td>
<td>916, 1176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:9</td>
<td>916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:8</td>
<td>967</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:19</td>
<td>1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:21</td>
<td>1002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:6</td>
<td>1061</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:26</td>
<td>1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:1</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:30</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:33</td>
<td>1074</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:45</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:24</td>
<td>696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:30</td>
<td>973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:16</td>
<td>1027</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29:13</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31:20</td>
<td>1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32:19</td>
<td>1073</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33:10</td>
<td>959</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34:12</td>
<td>481</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34:30</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37:9</td>
<td>888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37:10</td>
<td>916</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38:5</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38:11</td>
<td>973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38:27</td>
<td>696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40:5</td>
<td>745</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41:36</td>
<td>907</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43:8</td>
<td>907</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44:32</td>
<td>907</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47:29</td>
<td>1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49:12</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50:18</td>
<td>696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>972, 1075</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

Leviticus

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Leviticus</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Numbers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

Rev.

| 22:8   | 214  |
| 22:9   | 932, 1203 |
| 22:11  | 947  |
| 22:13  | 429, 777 |
| 22:14  | 757, 984 |
| 22:16  | 399, 762 |
| 22:19  | 356  |
| 22:20  | 105n. |
| 22:8   | 757, 984 |
| 22:14  | 399, 762 |
| 22:16  | 356  |
| 22:19  | 105n. |
| 22:20  | 105n. |

---

Numbers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

Rev.

| 22:8   | 214  |
| 22:9   | 932, 1203 |
| 22:11  | 947  |
| 22:13  | 429, 777 |
| 22:14  | 757, 984 |
| 22:16  | 399, 762 |
| 22:19  | 356  |
| 22:20  | 105n. |
| 22:8   | 757, 984 |
| 22:14  | 399, 762 |
| 22:16  | 356  |
| 22:19  | 105n. |
| 22:20  | 105n. |

---

Numbers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

Rev.

| 22:8   | 214  |
| 22:9   | 932, 1203 |
| 22:11  | 947  |
| 22:13  | 429, 777 |
| 22:14  | 757, 984 |
| 22:16  | 399, 762 |
| 22:19  | 356  |
| 22:20  | 105n. |
| 22:8   | 757, 984 |
| 22:14  | 399, 762 |
| 22:16  | 356  |
| 22:19  | 105n. |
| 22:20  | 105n. |

---

Numbers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Verses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Numb.</td>
<td></td>
<td>11:29 938, 940, 8:7 1061</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>14:2 1003, 11:1 1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4:8 880, 12:23 1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4:30 1024, 14:45 1024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20:3 1003, 14:47 1060</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>22:12 903, 17:34 973</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>17:42 680</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deuteronomy</td>
<td></td>
<td>3:21 263, 25:20 256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8:3 361, 649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8:5 1017, 2 Samuel (2 Kings)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:10 364</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:14 637, 6:20 739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:24 888, 10:11 878</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>19:15 649, 14:15 722</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>23:1 809, 15:2 649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>24:3 669, 18:33 940</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>28:1 95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>28:24ff 937, 1 (3) Kings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>28:29 889, 1:8 964</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>29:18 738, 4:19 254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>30:14 649, 8:18 1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>31:29 669, 8:39 670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>32:21 1163, 10:21 1165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>33:10 98, 12:18 1120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6:18 97, 822, 13:21 260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8:11 906, 18:33 95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8:33 1086</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:6 801, 1 Chronicles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:29 940, 4:9 633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11:9 1017, 5:10 643</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11:10 890, 17:6 729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16:20 637, 28:4 588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1:9 932</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2:10 1090, 2 Chronicles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3:3 1070, 3:1 98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6:7 1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4:1 1042, 28:22 966, 1062</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7:2 772, 33:9 1090</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: The numbers refer to page numbers in the book, and the sections are based on the English versions of the biblical books.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Nehemiah</th>
<th>Proverbs</th>
<th>Isaiah</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
<td>3:5, 11:31</td>
<td>903, 907</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:18</td>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>929</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Esther</td>
<td>24:21, 292, 750</td>
<td>1174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>964, 1033</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:3</td>
<td>27:15</td>
<td>929</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Job</td>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>198</td>
<td>595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:22</td>
<td>977</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:13</td>
<td>1003</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21:24</td>
<td>276</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:1</td>
<td>1010</td>
<td>595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:12</td>
<td>691</td>
<td>1004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:5</td>
<td>916</td>
<td>637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30:24</td>
<td>1003, 7.6</td>
<td>1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31:31</td>
<td>938</td>
<td>1024</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Psalms</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8:5</td>
<td>1:12</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:1, 3</td>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>498</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:9</td>
<td>1:31</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:8</td>
<td>3:5</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:10</td>
<td>5:9</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:1</td>
<td>29, 476</td>
<td>5:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32:1</td>
<td>367</td>
<td>1174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37:21</td>
<td>311</td>
<td>1067</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38:2</td>
<td>1061</td>
<td>1174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40:6</td>
<td>738</td>
<td>201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48:9</td>
<td>166, 8:14</td>
<td>907</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51:6</td>
<td>193, 463, 986 bis</td>
<td>9:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53:5</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>1024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62:2</td>
<td>198</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>68:24</td>
<td>1061</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>69 (68):23</td>
<td>174</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>72:14</td>
<td>903</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>77:18</td>
<td>1086</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90:11</td>
<td>1068</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>91:3</td>
<td>1067</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94:11</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1042</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>94-95:11</td>
<td>1024</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101:3</td>
<td>972</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103:15</td>
<td>437</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>108:4</td>
<td>1070</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>109:8</td>
<td>939</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>110:1</td>
<td>314</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117:23</td>
<td>655</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118 (119):5</td>
<td>1004</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118:22</td>
<td>718</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(117) 118:23</td>
<td>411</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118:23</td>
<td>704</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118:32</td>
<td>973</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119:7</td>
<td>973</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120(119):3</td>
<td>940</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122:2</td>
<td>1070</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>140:6</td>
<td>637</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

#### Jeremiah
- 1:8: 473, 2:22: 171
- 1:19: 929, 3:7: 973
- 2:8: 411, 3:22: 647
- 2:18: 1067, 4:30: 900
- 2:22: 96, 6:14: 512
- 4:10: 916, 10:5-7: 415
- 4:16: 337
- 5:23, 26: 335
- 6:8: 928, 929, 1016, 1161, 2:4, 23: 411
- 7:9: 411, 2:8: 411
- 7:10: 1061, 4:15: 475
- 9:2: 309
- 11:17: 1073
- 14:13: 415
- 17:26: 644, 3:2: 1148
- 18:3E: 287
- 18:8: 932, 1:1: 424
- 18:11: 932, 4:7: 424
- 23:15: 484, 5:27: 642
- 23:21: 1183, 9:12: 723, 986
- 23:24: 1174
- 24:6: 653, 3:3: 539
- 31:32: 746, 2:3: 733

#### Ezekiel
- 11:23: 775, 2:1: 671
- 16:21: 337
- 16:51: 655
- 17:24: 476, 2:2: 741
- 27:4: 759, 4:7: 265
- 33:27: 1024, 1150, 614: 265
- 34:8: 1024, 11:6: 599
- 36:30: 213
- 38:19: 1150, 3:3: 889

#### Hosea
- 1:8: 928, 929, 1016, 1161
- 2:8: 411
- 4:10: 916

#### Joel
- 14:13: 415

#### Amos
- 18:11: 932

#### Habakkuk
- 31:32: 746

#### Haggai
- 11:23: 775

#### Zechariah
- 16:51: 655

#### Malachi
- 36:30: 213

### APOCRYPHA

#### 1 Esdras
- 1:30: 185, 13:3: 938
- 1:49: 1074
- 2:24: 1072

#### 2 Esdras
- 2:24: 1072
- 3:5, 9: 722, 6:8: 225
- 4:54, 63: 722, 12:19: 311
- 6:32: 722
- 8:84: 1072

#### Sirach
- 6:8: 1059, 19:26: 274, 276
- 6:20: 643, 25:3: 268
- 17:3: 638, 37:2: 313

#### Prol. to Sirach
- 6:7: 341
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>INDOX OF QUOTATIONS</th>
<th>1365</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Baruch 3:9</td>
<td>1120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19 3:16</td>
<td>1043</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28 4:13</td>
<td>1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5 4:38</td>
<td>618</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tobit 5:10</td>
<td>729</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:5 7:14</td>
<td>1075</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:5 7:8</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15 97, 371, 822, 878 6:2</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:11 8:6</td>
<td>318</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:1 1070, 107 8:24</td>
<td>192 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:13 9:22</td>
<td>183, 370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:2 12:4</td>
<td>1141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:15 639</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:27 722</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judith 15:7</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10 979</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:15 1070</td>
<td>1141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:18 822</td>
<td>900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:34 1074</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:19 979</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:5 308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Maccabees 1:28</td>
<td>251</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Maccabees 2:9</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11 528</td>
<td>938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:52 1070</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:88 269</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:89 269</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:16 415 bis</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:30 1214</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:36 1090</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:23 260</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:28 415</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:9 1070, 1074, 1075 3:10</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Psalms of Solomon 8:23</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Maccabees 1:8</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:11 1141</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:31 974 54</td>
<td>741</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TESTAMENT OF THE TWELVE PATRIARCHS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Reuben 654 3:1 654 Joseph 664</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gad 654 664</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1 946 17:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Levi 972 7:4 673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10 Benjamin 673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:4 Naphtali 946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judah 424, 1185 3:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:1 946</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(c) INSCRIPTIONS

**Audollent**
- Defixionum tabellae, ed. Audollent (Paris, 1904)
  - No. 238, 29: 857

**Benndorf-Niemann**
- Reisen in Lykien and Darien
  - 129 N. 102: 1170

**B C H**
- Bulletin de correspondence hellenique
  - 1901, p. 416 (lead tablet at Amorgus): 109
  - 1903, p. 235: 522

**C I G**
- Corpus inscriptionum Graecarum
  - v, 8733: 1093

**Deissmann**
- Light from the Anc. East, p. 75
  - "Limestone Block from the Temple of Herod at Jerusalem": 1092

**Delphian Inscription**
- Inscriptions recueillies a Delphes (Wescher et Foucart)
  - 220: 1074

**Heberdey-Wilhelm**
- Reisen in Kilikien
  - 170, 2: 1094
  - 137: 1009

**Inscr. of Magn.**
- Die Inschrift von Magnesia am Maander (von 0. Kern)
  - 16, 29: 511
  - 215: 938
  - 90, 12: 994

**Inscription of Thera**
- Hermes
  - 1901, p. 445: 660

**I G**
- Inscriptiones Graecae
  - xii, 2, 562, 5: 1189
  - 7 N. 240, 13: 777
  - 5, 647: 849
  - 5, 590: 669
  - 1, 671: 959
  - 5,29: 579

**I M A**
- Inscriptiones Maris Aegaei
  - iii, 174: 1129
  - 325: 622

**J H S**
- Journal of Hellenic Studies (Hellenic Society)
  - xix, 14: 535
  - 92: 406
  - 299: 737
  - 1902, p. 349: 728
  - xxii, 1902, 369: 1061

**Kaibel**
- Epigrammata Graeca
  - 1878, p. 269: 274
  - p. 134: 592

**Letronne (Letr.)**
- Recueil d'inscriptions grecques et latines de l'E gypte, ed. Letronne (1842)
  - No. 70, 79, 92: 478
  - 149: 414
  - 220: 521

**Michel**
- Recueil d'inscriptions grecques, ed. C. Michel (Brussels, 1900)
  - No. 370: 1069
  - 622: 1024

**OGIS**
- Orientis Graeci inscriptiones selectae, ed. Dittenberger (Leipzig, 1903-5)
  - No. 41: 1069
  - 90, 23: 1141
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Book/Article/Work</th>
<th>Page(s)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>484</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>458, 71</td>
<td></td>
<td>222</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>223, 49</td>
<td></td>
<td>223</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>177, 15</td>
<td></td>
<td>213</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>748, 20</td>
<td></td>
<td>213</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117, 17</td>
<td></td>
<td>193</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>352, 66</td>
<td></td>
<td>193</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>458, 41</td>
<td></td>
<td>218</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>565, 19</td>
<td></td>
<td>204</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>515, 26 f.</td>
<td></td>
<td>204</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>618, 2</td>
<td></td>
<td>204</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>INDEX OF QUOTATIONS</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>Pontica</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Studia Pontica, (Anderson-Cumont-Gregoire)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>i, ii, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Priene</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Inschriften von (herausg. von F. Hiller von Gaertringen)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>112, 98 f.</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>50, 39</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>111, 177</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>Ramsay, C. and B.</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Cities and Bishoprics of Phrygia, by W. M. Ramsay, 2 vols. (Oxford, 1895, 1897.)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>ii, 3</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>292</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>317, 391, 395, 399</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>343</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>391 (No. 254)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>525</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>Syll.</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Sylloge inscriptionum graecarum, ed. Dittenberger</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>No. 326, 12</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>928, 52</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>Viereck</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Sermo Graecus quo senatus populusque Romanus . . . usi sunt, by P. Viereck (Gottingen, 1888)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>p. 38</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>958</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>Waddington</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Inscr. de la Syrie</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>2413</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>837</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>2614</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>595</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>(d) PAPYRI AND OSTRACA</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>A. P. (P. Amh. and Amh. Pap.)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>Amherst Papyri, part ii (1901)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>No. 11, 26</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>723</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>611, 994</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>154</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>928</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>470</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>527</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>1134, 1137</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>977</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>944, 1093</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td><strong>B. M. (P. B. M.)</strong></td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-</td>
<td>British Museum Papyri, ed. F. G. Kenyon (London, 1893, 1898)</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## A Grammar of the Greek New Testament

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Vol. i. Nos. 1-138</th>
<th>939, 994</th>
<th>303</th>
<th>928</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>No. 21</td>
<td>997</td>
<td>326</td>
<td>318, 410, 1010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>1033</td>
<td>341</td>
<td>691</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>290, 546, 618, 875, 909, 1081, 1145</td>
<td>350</td>
<td>318</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>69</td>
<td>529</td>
<td>No. 363</td>
<td>692</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>77</td>
<td>728</td>
<td>380</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>84</td>
<td>1120</td>
<td>385</td>
<td>592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>388</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vol. ii. Nos. 139 ff.</td>
<td></td>
<td>423</td>
<td>188, 419, 464, 514, 592,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 190</td>
<td>728</td>
<td>833, 834, 835, 846, 1132, 1151</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>233</td>
<td>1010</td>
<td>424</td>
<td>972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>239</td>
<td>318, 737</td>
<td>530</td>
<td>190, 963, 1147, 1181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>331</td>
<td>959</td>
<td>449</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>333</td>
<td>745</td>
<td>456</td>
<td>746</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>336</td>
<td>745</td>
<td>531</td>
<td>993</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>356</td>
<td>1122</td>
<td>543</td>
<td>475</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>417</td>
<td>869</td>
<td>546</td>
<td>1009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>854</td>
<td>979, 1074</td>
<td>596</td>
<td>361, 907, 1129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1178</td>
<td>907</td>
<td>607</td>
<td>730, 972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>623</td>
<td>671</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>664</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>665</td>
<td>1068</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. U. (B. G. U.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berliner Grieehische Urkunden</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vol. i. Nos. 1-361 (1895)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 1</td>
<td>522</td>
<td>No. 775</td>
<td>806</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>691</td>
<td>790</td>
<td>516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>470</td>
<td>814</td>
<td>874</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27</td>
<td>611, 1000</td>
<td>816</td>
<td>1210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>1061</td>
<td>822</td>
<td>737, 989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45</td>
<td>531</td>
<td>824</td>
<td>933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>1068</td>
<td>830</td>
<td>1068, 1082</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>931, 994</td>
<td>843</td>
<td>461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>86</td>
<td>689, 691</td>
<td>846</td>
<td>178, 414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>110</td>
<td>213</td>
<td>874</td>
<td>990</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113</td>
<td>509</td>
<td>903</td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114</td>
<td>962</td>
<td>925</td>
<td>513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>136</td>
<td>900</td>
<td>948</td>
<td>734, 737</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>146</td>
<td>478</td>
<td>956</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>164</td>
<td>997, 1061</td>
<td>970</td>
<td>513, 589, 1132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>168</td>
<td>691</td>
<td>998</td>
<td>614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>179</td>
<td>942</td>
<td>1002</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>183</td>
<td>691, 857</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>197</td>
<td>874</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 1015</td>
<td>901</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>222</td>
<td>991, 1069</td>
<td>1031</td>
<td>997</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>229</td>
<td>660</td>
<td>1040</td>
<td>1132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>242</td>
<td>479</td>
<td>1079</td>
<td>287, 488, 577, 582, 615,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>287</td>
<td>833, 843, 1124</td>
<td></td>
<td>692, 933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Source</td>
<td>Page(s)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------------------------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek Papyri from the Cairo Museum</td>
<td>817</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. P. R. and P. E. R.</td>
<td>690</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 11</td>
<td>12</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 12</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 24</td>
<td>24</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 150</td>
<td>156</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 137</td>
<td>237</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deissmann Ostracon, Thebes, 32-3 A.D.</td>
<td>828</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eudoxus Papyrus</td>
<td>692</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 110</td>
<td>110</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 112</td>
<td>112</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 118</td>
<td>118</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 119, 276</td>
<td>119, 276</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 121</td>
<td>121</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 124</td>
<td>124</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 136</td>
<td>136</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 137</td>
<td>137</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G. An Alexandrian Erotic Fragment</td>
<td>945</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 35</td>
<td>35</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G. H. Greek Papyri, series II (1897)</td>
<td>82, 786</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 15</td>
<td>23a</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 36</td>
<td>36</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 38</td>
<td>38</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hb. P. (P. Rib. and Rib. P.)</td>
<td>589</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 42</td>
<td>44</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 44, 45</td>
<td>974</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 45, 60, 168</td>
<td>986</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 56</td>
<td>851</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 78</td>
<td>1010</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K. P. Papyri from Karanis, ed. E. Goodspeed</td>
<td>458</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 46</td>
<td>481, 595</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L. P. Papyri Graeci Musei antiquarum publici</td>
<td>665</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lugduni-Battavi, ed. C. Leemans (1843)</td>
<td>518 bis, 939, 1062</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M. P. Papyri from Magdola, in B.C H 1902 ff., Jouget's ed.</td>
<td>274, 516, 983</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N. P. Geneva Papyri, ed. J. Nicole,</td>
<td>993</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 7</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 16 and 20</td>
<td>584</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O. P. (P. Oxy. and Oxy. P.)</td>
<td>977</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 34</td>
<td>34</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 36</td>
<td>36</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-------------------------------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>-------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>578, 963</td>
<td></td>
<td>No 654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48, 49, 722</td>
<td>635</td>
<td></td>
<td>834</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52</td>
<td>990</td>
<td></td>
<td>715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>79</td>
<td>484</td>
<td></td>
<td>716</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>86</td>
<td>1068</td>
<td></td>
<td>666</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>99</td>
<td>656</td>
<td></td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105</td>
<td>1010</td>
<td></td>
<td>742</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>533</td>
<td></td>
<td>743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>115</td>
<td>888</td>
<td></td>
<td>999</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117</td>
<td>723</td>
<td></td>
<td>71, 220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118</td>
<td>989</td>
<td></td>
<td>509, 535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119</td>
<td>70, 572, 1174</td>
<td></td>
<td>993</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120</td>
<td>414</td>
<td></td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>121</td>
<td>284, 993</td>
<td></td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>128</td>
<td>931</td>
<td></td>
<td>509, 993</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>999, 1024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>905</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1021</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>975</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>877</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1073</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>949, 967, 1085, 1154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>xii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>xii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>577</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>933, 1009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>869</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1066</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>550</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1108</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>576, 585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1009, 1180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1043, 1141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>995, 989, 1087, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1041</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>414, 508, 536, 682, 867</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>774</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>587, 590, 938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>727</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Par. P. (P. Par.)
Paris Papyri, in Notices et Extraiten, xiv, part 2, ed. Brunet de Presle (1865)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>1108</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>576, 585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>1009, 1180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>532, 574, 939, 972, 1031, 1043, 1141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>995, 989, 1087, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35, 37</td>
<td>517</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
<td>615</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49</td>
<td>995, 989, 1087, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51</td>
<td>414, 508, 536, 682, 867</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>774</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62</td>
<td>1009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>63</td>
<td>587, 590, 938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>574</td>
<td>727</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS

### P. Eleph.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>190, 640</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

### P. Fi.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Florence Papyri, ed. Vitelli</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(Lincei Academy: fast. 1.,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milan, 1905)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>991, 1069, 1071</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>624</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### P. Goodspeed (P. Goodsp.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No. 4</th>
<th>632, 877, 1022, 1119, 1129</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

### P. Grenf.

| No. 67 | 632 |
|        |    |
| 73     | 484, 687 |
| 77     | 1080 |

### P. Heid.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Heidelberg Papyri (mainly LXX), ed. G. A. Deissmann (1905)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>No. 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Pap. L.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Dieterich, Abraxas, 195, 9</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>789</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### P. Lond

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kenyon, Greek P. in British Museum</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xlii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>837</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### P. P.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Flinders Petrie Papyri, ed. J. P. Mahaffy (in Proc. Royal Irish Academy, Cunninghnam Memoirs, viii, 1891)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>No. 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 15, 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Rein. P.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Papyrus Th. Reinach (Paris, 1905)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7 (ii/B.C.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>922, 1014</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### R. L.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Revenue Laws of Ptolemy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Philadelphia (Oxford, 1896)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col. 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>726</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Rhein. Mus.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rheinisches Museum fur Philologie</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lxvii, 4, 1912</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Tb. P. (P. Tb., Tebt. P. and Tb.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tebtunis Papyri (University of California Publications, Part II)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>No. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>752, 983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1, 66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>689, 976</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>590, 594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19 &quot;f.&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>279, 669</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>877, 1119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>808, 811</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>613</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>162, 168, 654</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>588</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>91, 595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>689</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>861</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>406, 1009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>945</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>669</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1187</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>516, 669, 752</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>517</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>834, 932, 986</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>682, 748, 762, 1126</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### T. P.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Turin Papyri, ed. Peyron (1826)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>No. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Wess. P.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Papyrorum scripturae Graecae Specimen</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xxvi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1012, 1175</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### (e) GREEK LITERATURE

**Homer** (? x/viii B.c.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Iliad i, 137</td>
<td>958</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 262</td>
<td>1160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i 587</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 289</td>
<td>1016</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 410</td>
<td>1170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 501</td>
<td>981</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>x, 127</td>
<td>1170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xiii, 700</td>
<td>610</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xvi, 301</td>
<td>1170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xviii, 134</td>
<td>1170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xx, 139</td>
<td>1016</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xx, 335</td>
<td>972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxii, 349</td>
<td>674</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxiv, 38</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Odyssey iv, 684</td>
<td>1136, 1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xx, 52</td>
<td>1053</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Euripides** (v/B.c.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Play</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alcestis</td>
<td>386</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayes</td>
<td>1237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medea</td>
<td>627</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Aeschylus (v/B.c.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Play</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Prom. Vinct. 268 f.</td>
<td>1038</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>358</td>
<td>538 1214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Persae</td>
<td>981</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Sophocles** (v/B.c.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Play</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Oedipus Colonicus</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>317</td>
<td>738</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>816</td>
<td>878</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oedipus Tyrannus</td>
<td>1141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1146</td>
<td>878.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philoctetes</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>300</td>
<td>932</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Electra</td>
<td>817</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1078</td>
<td>1094</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ajax</td>
<td>1180</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Herodotus** (v/B.c.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>i, 21</td>
<td>1069</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii, 27</td>
<td>860</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv 44</td>
<td>722</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v, 108</td>
<td>783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vi, 67, 10</td>
<td>1110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vi, 68, 5</td>
<td>1110</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Thucydides** (v/B.c.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>i, 52, 2</td>
<td>706</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 122</td>
<td>1188</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 137, 4</td>
<td>1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 141</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 45, 1</td>
<td>1172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 52, 1</td>
<td>783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii, 36, 2</td>
<td>435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 93</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v, 50, 3</td>
<td>1163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vii, 26, 9</td>
<td>991</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quotation</td>
<td>Page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isocrates (iv/B.C.)</td>
<td>961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 44</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii. Koinh</td>
<td>1001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theocritus (iii/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 44</td>
<td>1001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii, 3, 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aristeas (iii/ii B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v, 9</td>
<td>974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vii, vii, 4, 9</td>
<td>974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demetrius (iii/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyrus i, 4, 3</td>
<td>1070</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xii, 3, 9</td>
<td>974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>De eloc. 21, 11</td>
<td>1017</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herondas (iii/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hellen. i, 1, 2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii, 2, 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polybius (ii/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oec. xi, 14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plato (iv/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apologia, 20 E</td>
<td>527</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21 A</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21 C</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36 B</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crito</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theat.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Protag.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repub.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crat.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soph.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polit. (p. 289 C)</td>
<td>973 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phaedr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gorg.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AEschines (iv/p.c.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eum.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aristotle (iv/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhet. iii, 9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aeneas (iv/B.C.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114, 5 H</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reference</td>
<td>Page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bell. ii, 16, 2</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v, 6, 3</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v, 12, 2</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vi, 2, 1</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apion iv, 21</td>
<td>900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vit. 17</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dionysius Thrax (i/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7, 34, 372, 492, 1101, 1146 bis,</td>
<td>1138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plutarch (i/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p. 256 D</td>
<td>1069</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 592 B</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 694 C</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quest. Conviv. i, 6, 1</td>
<td>697</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cons. ad Uxor. 1</td>
<td>752</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Barnabas] (i/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:28</td>
<td>1124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:9</td>
<td>773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>1141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clement of Rome (i/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. i, 21:9</td>
<td>723</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 45:1</td>
<td>946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 8:2</td>
<td>1102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 12:2</td>
<td>972</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dio Chrysostom (i/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xxxiv, 44</td>
<td>995</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marcus Aurelius (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vi, 42</td>
<td>595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Justin Martyr (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apol. i, 16, 6</td>
<td>839</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cohort., 5 (p. 253 A)</td>
<td>725</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arrian (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epictetus i, 9, 15</td>
<td>931</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 11, 32</td>
<td>585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 2, 16</td>
<td>999</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 17, 14</td>
<td>736</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 18, 11</td>
<td>1017</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 22, 24</td>
<td>933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 23, 1</td>
<td>937</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 1, 41</td>
<td>933</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 1, 50</td>
<td>1091</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 3, 9</td>
<td>999</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 4, 11</td>
<td>963</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 5, 8-9</td>
<td>963</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 10, 18</td>
<td>1092, 1095</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 10, 27</td>
<td>837</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 10, 34</td>
<td>963, 1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 10, 35</td>
<td>1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ascensio Isaiae (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 12</td>
<td>254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clement of Alexandria (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paidagogus iii, 1</td>
<td>989</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hermas (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vis. i, 1, 8</td>
<td>1148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 3, 2</td>
<td>1010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv, 1, 1</td>
<td>612</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii, 3, 5</td>
<td>348</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sim. v, 1, 1</td>
<td>611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii, 1, 4</td>
<td>739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii, 5, 1</td>
<td>424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix, 9, 1</td>
<td>880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix, 12, 4</td>
<td>1022</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mand. iv, 1, 5</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v, 1, 2</td>
<td>1010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>viii, 9, 11</td>
<td>278</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epistle to Diognetus (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p. 84</td>
<td>631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p. 7</td>
<td>533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irenaeus (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>584 A</td>
<td>984</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Clement] (iii/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Homilies i, 6</td>
<td>739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii, 33</td>
<td>737</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii, 69</td>
<td>875, 942, 1157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ix, 4</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xi, 3</td>
<td>929</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xvi, 20</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>xix, 12</td>
<td>750</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# Index of Quotations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pausanias (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td>ii, 35, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ignatius (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td>1017</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ep. to Romans 8:3</td>
<td>1020</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ep. to Ephesians 10:2</td>
<td>946</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ep. to Polycarp 5:2</td>
<td>1020</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lucian (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td>974</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexander 22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Origen (iii/A.D.)</td>
<td>1 Cor. 5:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contra Celsus vii, 59 f.</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heliodorus (iii/A.D.)</td>
<td>AEthiop. vi, 14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>595</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acta Christophori (iii/A.D. ?)</td>
<td>68, 18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theophilus (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td>994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ad Autolycum 2, 34</td>
<td>994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i, 6</td>
<td>1022</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acta Barnabae (iii/A.D. ?)</td>
<td>1000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eusebius (iv/A.D.)</td>
<td>Eccl. Hist. vi, xxv, 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P. E. vi, 7, 257d</td>
<td>725</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mark 16:9</td>
<td>672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epiphanius (iv/A.D.)</td>
<td>Matthew 13:30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theodoret (iv/A.D.)</td>
<td>iv, 851</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1069</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory of Nazianzus (iv/A.D.)</td>
<td>ii, 13 A</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory of Nyssa (iv/A.D.)</td>
<td>iii, 557 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Proklus (v/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Philoponus (v/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>De aetern. 430, 28</td>
<td>1007</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p. 85, 19</td>
<td>1011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Callinicus (v/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Achillius Tatius (v/A.D.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Priscian (v/A.D.)</td>
<td>Lib. V. de Casu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apophthegmata Patrum (vi/A.D.)</td>
<td>105 C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>725</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N. T. Apocrypha</td>
<td>ii, 24, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gospel of Pet. 35</td>
<td>923</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acta Thomae (Radermacher,</td>
<td>iv, 16, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N. T. Gk., p. 128)</td>
<td>996</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acta Pauli et Theclae</td>
<td>iv, 16, 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martyrium Pauli</td>
<td>961</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quaest. Barthol., pp. 24, 30</td>
<td>594</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apocalypsis Anastasiae</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6, 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acta S. Theogn.</td>
<td>412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diogenes of Oinoanda</td>
<td>Fragm. iv, 1, 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Theo</td>
<td>Progymn. 128, 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1093, 1097</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Usener

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Legende der hl. Pelagio</th>
<th>177, 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>860, 888</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>244, 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>1001</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Xenophon of Ephesus

| 393, 28 | 989 |
| 388, 31 | 1102 |

### Vettius

| 274, 11 | 1017 |

### iii. MODERN

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pallis</th>
<th>John 1:6-8</th>
<th>138</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>The very numerous illustrations of the vernacular modern Greek idiom (cf. p. 481) are not referred to authors.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### (f) LATIN

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cicero (i/B.C.)</th>
<th>Pliny (i/A.D.)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pro Archia 10</td>
<td>Nat. Hist. v, 15, 71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Att 6.5</td>
<td>933, 994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cato Maj. 23, 3</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### (f) LATIN

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cicero (i/B.C.)</th>
<th>Pliny (i/A.D.)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pro Archia 10</td>
<td>Nat. Hist. v, 15, 71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Att 6.5</td>
<td>933, 994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cato Maj. 23, 3</td>
<td>108</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ADDENDA TO THE SECOND EDITION


Page xxx. Among numerous other works that should be noted is A. Meillet's *Apercu de la Langue Grecque* (1913). So on p. xxxv some notice should have been made of the Greek Grammar by Prof. E. A. Sonnenschein, of Birmingham, and of his other writings. Note also W. Larfield, *Griechische Epigraphik* (2. Auflg., 1913); O. Hoffmann and P. Giirtchen, *Sammlung der griechischen Dialect-Inschriften*, Bd. IV, Heft 4, Abt. 2 (1913), with grammar and index to the whole group; M. N. Tod, "The Progress of Greek Epigraphy" (*Journal of Hell. Studies*, Jan., 1915).

Page 64, line 16. Add "a speaker" after "render,"

Page 138, line 1. Add "ends" after "usually."

Page 143. "In fact the study of language shows that man is not only a social animal, but an etymologizing animal as well." F. H. Lee, "Etymological Tendencies of the Romans" (*The Classical Weekly*, Jan. 17, 1914; p. 90).

Page 151. On words in –ισκός, --ίσκη like παιδίσκη (Gal. 4:22) see W. Petersen's "The Greek Diminutive Suffix —ΙΣΚΗ—" (1913). He makes παιδίσκη (p. 195) mean "girlie" (ἡ παιίς).

Page 172, note 6. Add: It should be noted that Ἐρμᾶς is the short form of any name that contains this name-element, like Ἐρμόδωρος, Ἐρμοκράτης, Ἐρμαρχος, Ἐρμόφιλος, Ἐρμογένης. In many cases the original unabridged name can only be guessed at. Cf. Fick-Bechtel, pp. 113, 132.

Page 180. On pp. 19-26 of the Washington Manuscript of the Four Gospels (Part I) by Sanders, there is a good discussion of the spelling, grammatical forms, and scribal errors of this interesting document. 'See also The Freer Gospels by E. J.
Goodspeed (1914) in which monograph W is carefully compared with Westcott and Hort's text.

Page 180. Of the inscriptions on the tombs in Phrygia, Ramsay says that the Greek was bad, even that of "persons of high rank in their cities" (Expos. T., Jan. 17, 1915, p. 174).

Page 202. On οὐ and οὐ see οὖαν ἄν Βουληθοῦμεν 0. P. 1126, 9 (A.D./v).

Page 266. Note ἀρα[ύρας] τέσσαρες 0. P. 1126, 6 (A.D./v).

Page 304. Add this from Westphall: "The noun is a verb at rest, and the verb is a noun in motion."


Page 326, line 16. It should have been noted that the middle optative uses only the suffix -ε- (τιθείμην, δοίτο) as originally did the active dual and plural (σταίμεν, τιθείτε).


Page 414. The sudden change from accusative with εἶδον to nom. so common in the Apocalypse is found in Ezek. 3:13, ἔδων φωνήν –και φωνή.

Page 417. Note the careful balancing of words in 1 Cor. 14:20. In 14:26 note the asyndeton and repetition of ἐχει.

Page 424 (i), line 7. Add "Mt. 23:28" as another example of in the fifth place and "Ro. 7:25" in sixth place.

Page 424 (i), line 12. Add "Mt. 22:28" as another example of οὖν in the fourth place.


Page 490. An example of τυχόν = 'perhaps,' appears in Epictetus, Ench. § 4.

Page 537, line 15 from bottom. Add γίος after μονογενής.

Page 539. A good instance of the ethical dative appears in Gal. 6:11 ὑμῖν ('mark you').

Page 560, line 6. With ἐπιβάλλει ἐπὶ ἰμάτιον (Lu. 5:36) compare ἐπιβάλλει ἐπὶ ἰματίῳ (Mt. 9:16).

Page 561. I gave no example of do-- followed by I note one in Rev. 11:11 πνεύμα ζωής εἰσηλθεν ἐν αὐτοῖς, the reading of A 18. 28** 36. 79. 95. But CP 1. 7. 12. 17. 38 have simply αὐτοῖς, while B al 30 give εἰς αὐτούς, and 49. 91. 96 have


\[ \text{ἐπ' αὐτοῦς. W. H. doubtfully print ἐν αὐτοῖς in brackets.} \]

The variation shows how iv is giving way before dc.

Page 576. The force of ar6 in composition as meaning 'in full' comes out finely in Lu. 16:25 ὁτι ἀπέλαβες τὰ ἀγαθὰ σου ἐν τῇ ζωῇ σου.


Page 587, line 4. Add: ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν (Lu. 5:17; 8:22; 20:1).

Page 594. On εἰς like a dative, note τὴς δεδομένης εἰς σέ (Ezek. 3:3).


Page 607, line 10 from bottom. With κατὰ τοῦ πνεύματος compare ἡ τοῦ πνεύματος βλασφημία in Mt. 12:31.

Page 608. The distributive use of ἀνά and κατὰ occurs in 1 Cor. 14:27.

Page 609. For κατὰ with acc. in sense of 'like' (standard), note Gal. 4:28 κατὰ Ἰσαάκ.


Page 644. Μέσον as preposition appears in Epictetus, Bk. II, ch. xxii, § 10, Βάλε καὶ σοῦ καὶ τοῦ παιδίου μέσον ἀγρίδιον (Sharp, Epict. and N. T., p. 94).

Page 657. On ἐχόμενα as possible preposition see Ezek. 1:15, 19.

Page 669. As examples of the true superlative in –τατος, note λαμπροτάτης πόλει 0. P. 1100 (A.D. 206), and ἐν τοῖς τῶν νομῶν φανερωτάτοις (ib.). Cf. also 0. P. 1102, 4 f. (A.D. 146).

Page 686, line 2 from bottom. After καὶ αὐτοῦς add Mk. 1:19.

Page 702. On the use of ταύτης without article in Acts 24:21, see the magical incantation in 0. P. 1152, 4 f. (A.D. /v–vi) βοήθη ἡμῖν καὶ τούτω ὁίκω

Page 720, line 9. In 1 Cor. 15:10 the neuter gender is to be noted.

Page 724, line 7 from bottom. In Lu. 7:43 ὁτι ὑπερηφάνεια is ellipsis of the verb.

Page 753. Sharp, in his Epictetus and the N. T. (1914), which is full of suggestive parallels between the idiom of Epictetus and that of the N. T., quotes (p. 13) Bk. II, ch. xxii, § 36, εἰδώς
τὸ τοῦ Πλάτωνος, ὥστε πᾶσα ψυχὴ ἄκουσα στέρεται τῆς ἀληθείας, 'knowing accurately the teaching of Plato that no soul is willingly deprived of the truth,' a striking parallel to πᾶς — οὐ in the sense of "no one." He quotes also from the Rylands Papyri, vol. II, a papyrus dated 133 A.D., the μὴ-πᾶς idiom, μὴ ἔχουσας πᾶν πρᾶγμα πρὸς ἐμέ.

Page 760. Note αὕτη ἡ Ἱερουσαλήμ in Ezek. 5:5.

Page 811. See example of redundant middle in Hos. 3:2, ἐμισθωσάμην ἐμαυτῳ.

Page 812. Ramsay notes εἰσῆλθοιτο on a tomb in Phrygia and adds that the middle voice was loved in Phrygia (Expos. T., Jan., 1915, p. 174).

Page 823. The aorist is a sort of flashlight picture, the imperfect a time exposure. Iterative action is like the repetition in moving pictures.

Perhaps a word more should be said as to the point of view of the speaker or writer. The same action can be viewed as punctiliar or linear. The same writer may look at it now one way, now the other. Different writers often vary in the presentation of the same action.

Prof. C. W. Peppier, of Trinity College, Durham, N. C., contributes this note: "Ἐσχον, 'I got,' is the only aorist that is always ingressive. Hence ἐχον, 'I had,' has to do duty as both imperfect and aorist."

Page 844. In The Expositor (May and June, 1915), Rev. Frank Eakin, of Allegheny, has a very interesting discussion of "The Greek Aorist" or more exactly "An Investigation into the Usage of the Greek Aorist in the New Testament, and its Proper Translation into English." By a study of 800 aorist indicatives in the Gospel of John he shows that Weymouth uses other tenses than the simple past in English in 21 per cent, Moffatt in 22, the A. V. in 18, and the R. V. in 8. He argues that modern knowledge as seen in Weymouth and Moffatt, is freeing itself from the bondage of Winer’s mistaken conception of the Greek aorist which was followed by the Revisers. Nothing is now clearer than that the Greek aorist indicative cannot be made to square regularly with the English past. It more commonly does so in narrative than elsewhere, but no ironclad rule can he laid down. Mr. Eakin concludes that the aorist is "to be regarded as what it essen-
tially is — an indefinite tense — except when it is seen to derive
definition from the context."

Page 880. With Jo. 13:27 ὁ ποιεῖς ποίησον τάχειον compare ποιεῖ
ὁ ποιεῖς (Epictetus IV. 9. 18).

Page 889. A good example of the linear future appears in Gal.
6:16 στοιχήσουσιν.

Page 895. Moulton (Exp., April, 1901, p. 280) quotes Plato,
Apol. 28C ὁσοὶ ἐν Τροίᾳ τετελευτήκασι, a reference to the Greek
Bible (Homer).

Page 907. Note ἵν’ ὤμεν εὑργητημένοι 0. P. 1117, 18 (A.D. 178).

Page 910. Note aorist and perfect participles in ὅ τὴν ὑπόσχεσιν
δοῦς καὶ ὅ τὴν σύνοψιν εἴληφός 0. P. 1117, 6 f. (A.D. 178).

Page 927. Prof. Sonnenschein's more developed theory of the
subjunctive is to be seen in his little volume on The Unity
of the Latin Subjunctive (1910). He plausibly argues that
originally the subj. and opt. were identical in meaning like
the first and second aorist tenses and "only gradually differ-
entiated in Greek through a long process of development."
He makes the subj. (p. 54) stand midway between the ind.
and the imper.

Page 929. Sonnenschein (Cl. Rev., April, 1902, pp. 165-169)
suggests "the interrogative imperative" or "the interroga-
tive prohibition" as the explanation of the origin of the use
of οὐ μὴ with the subjunctive and even for οὐ μὴ with the
future indicative by analogy or because of the future indica-
tive of command. But R. Whitelaw replies (Cl. Rev., June,
1902, p. 277) that the notion of a prohibitive μὴ with future
indicative is untenable. On the whole one must admit that
the origin of the οὐ μὴ construction is unsolved.

Page 932. Note ὅρα μὴ ἀμελήσῃς 0. P. 1158, 9 (A.D./iii).

Page 935. On the history of the subj. and opt. see further F.
Slotty, Der Gebrauch des Konj. and Opt. -in den griech. Dia-
lekten (1915).

Page 958. Note a Co in Ezek. 1:12, 20, and ὃς ἄν συνετελέσθησαν
in Job 1:5.

Page 959. Note καθὼς ἄν ἔσῃ in Ezek. 1:16.

Page 964. See declarative διότι (=_Utili) in Ezek. 5:13 ἐπιγνωσθῇ
diōtī ἐγὼ Κύριος λελάληκα. Cf. also 6:10, 13. Dr. James Moffatt (The Expositor, Feb., 1915, p. 187, "Professor Robert-
son's N. T. Grammar") says: "The use of διότι for ὅτι may be illustrated from Polybius, where the former seems to be used after a preceding vowel to avoid hiatus; a similar practice may explain the interchange of ὀς and ὅτι, and of πηλίκος and ἤλικος."

Page 968. For καθώς at the beginning of a sentence (1 Tim. 1:3) see καθως ἐνετιλάμην σοι Oxy. P. 1299, 9-10.

Page 994. J. Rendel Harris in a review of Moffatt's "New Translation of the N. T." (The Expositor, Dec., 1914, p. 537) commends his rendering of Eph. 3:17 (the inf. κατοικήσαται and of Jo. 17:21 and Col. 2:2 (ἵνα) as wishes, and adds: "These new renderings are a great improvement, even if for the present grammarians are ignorant of them and the classical scholars acknowledge them not."

Page 1018. In Lu. 16:31 we have the first and third class conditions side by side.

Page 1043. But μη γένοιτο and the inf. does occur often enough in the LXX, as in Gen. 44:7, 17; Josh. 22:29; 24:16; 1 Ki. 21:3; 1 Macc. 9:10; 13:5.

Page 1069. In the Papyrus de Magdala 11 three examples of παρά τό and the inf. occur: παρά τό ἐναχαί (line 5), παρά τό μη δύνασθαι (line 7), παρά τό ἐναχαί (line 15).

Page 1137. About negatives with the participle Robison (Syntax of the Participle in the Apostolic Fathers, 1913, p. 39) says that in the Apostolic Fathers μη with its compounds occurs 168 times, while οὐ with its compounds is found 29 times. He adds that about 5% per cent of the participles have negatives, an increase in comparison with classical Greek "and shows the growth of the feeling that a participle is equivalent to a subordinate clause." But Robison still endeavours to preserve the purely subjective meaning of μη with the participle like the classic idiom.

Page 1145. Add Lu. 14:26 ητε τε καί as a good illustration of particles bunched together.

Page 1154. Gildersleeve, Am. J. of Ph., 1912, p. 240; calls τοι "the confidential particle" and τοίνυν "doubly so." "Τοι is an appeal for human sympathy, as rov is a resigned submission to the merciless rerum natura."

Page 1179. The use of τε καί in pairs is well illustrated in Jas. 3:7.
Page 1183. The adversative use of Kai occurs in Ezek. 3:18, 19, 20.
Page 1186. In 1 Cor. 14:20, 22 note the use of ἀλλά--δὲ side by side where the main contrast is presented by δὲ and the minor one by ἀλλά.
Page 1200. The zeugma in Rev. 1:12 βλέπειν τὴν φωνήν appears in Ezek. 3:13 ἡδον ὕπνην πτερύγων.
Page 1206. An example of hendiadys occurs in Jas. 4:2, φονεύετε καὶ ζηλοῦτε.
Page 1286. Add "Mk. 5:22 . . . 502."
Page 1287. Add "Mk. 9:7 . . . 506."
Page 1292. Add "7:2 . . . 546."
Page 1349. Add "2 Macc. 6:21 . . . 184."
Page 37. In the *Expos. T.* for Dec., 1916, the late J. H. Moulton accepts the suggestion of Hrozný and E. Meyer that the Hittite language is a member of the Indo-European family as is true of the Tokharian.


Page 109, line 9 *ab imo.* Τὸ ἰκανὸν ποιεῖν (Mk. 15:15). Mr. J. F. Springer, of New York, furnishes me several citations of this Latin idiom in Greek for 350 years, so that Mark's use of it was neither at the beginning of the use nor when it was dying out. The examples appear in Polybius, *Historiae* 32. 3 (7). 13 (cited in J. Schweighauser) and in Diogenes Laertius, *De Vitis*, etc., 4. 50 (cited by Liddell and Scott); Hermas, *Pastor Sim.* 6. 5. 5; Appian, *Bell. Pun.*, p. 68; Arrian, *Exped. Alex.* 5, p. 370. Evidently Mark's idiom was current for centuries.

Page 115. Mr. H. Scott has counted the entire number of the words in the text of W. H. for Matthew as 18,302; for Luke 19,461; for Acts 18,296.

Page 118, line 10 *ab imo.* To Mk. 3:11 add "6:56; 8:35."

Page 119, line 5. Mr. Scott gives this table for ὅν in Synoptics:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MARK</th>
<th>MATT.</th>
<th>LUKE</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>In Narrative or Editorial</td>
<td>0 [16]</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In Speeches</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>without parallels</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>not used in the parallels</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>occurs also in parallels</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


1 Matthew has 4=with Mark and 7 with Luke. Luke 7=are with Matthew only. See Abbott, Johannine Vocabulary, p. 360.


Page 190 f. Prof. Walter Petersen calls attention to the fact that, so long as ἅνν (‘if’) and modal ἅν were distinguished in vowel quantity, there was little confusion. When they became alike in quantity, the syncretism in usage came. Mr. Scott furnishes this table:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>ἅν for ἅν (see Geden, p. 237) with</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ὅς</td>
<td>ὅςος</td>
<td>ὅπου</td>
<td>ὅστις</td>
<td>ὅσάκις</td>
<td>ὅδ</td>
<td>ἦνίκα</td>
<td>καθό</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Jo.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<p>| | | | | | | | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Total      | 32    | 9     | 7     | 5     | 4     | 1     | 1     | 1     | 60    |

Page 205, line 13. For example ἰσχύι.

Pages 208, 984. For καὶ=καί note these examples: Οὐκ [ἐ] ἤλωσάς μοι καὶν περὶ τῆς ὅλοκληρίας. Oxy. P. XII. (iv/AD.) 1593, 1. 5.

Καὶν νῦν, ἀδελφέ, πάντα ὑπερθέμενος ἀντίγραψόν μοι (ib 1. 7).

Καὶν μοσθίον οίνου μοι φολέτρισον (ib., 1. 16).

P. 78, 1. 17, B.C. 110-8; TO &k,ctir)poi, Tb. P. 119, 1. 17, B.C. 105-1; toû épheteıvou; Oxy. P. XII, 1482, 1. 12 (ii/A.D.).


Page 233, line 8. Per contra Mr. Scott notes his inability to find an aorist indic. with δς ἑαν(ἀν) in the N. T. Cf. Mt. 16:19. See Moulton's comment on p. 317 of the German Ed. of his Proleg.


Page 256 (c). Cf. τῷ θωμᾶ. (Jo. 20:27).

Page 264, end of (a). See γῦναι in 1 Cor. 7:16.

Page 266. An instance of πάντες (acc.) appears in τοῦ ἕν ὕκω πάντες Fay. P. 115, 1. 11, A.D. 101.

Pages 279, 516. For περισσός as a positive see Mt. 5:47; Jo. 10:10; 2 Cor. 9:1.

Page 292 (h), line 10. Note ἀπὸ τοῦ δ(ε) ἰ(να) in P. Par. 574, 1. 1244 (iii/A.D.).

Page 299, 4 (a). The use of ἐσχάτως ἔχειν (Mk. 5:23) appears, Mr. Springer reports, in Diod. Siculus (ii/B.c.), Bibl. Historica, 10. 3. 4. Cited by Toiller in note to ἐσχάτως ἔχειν, in Thomas Magister (Blancardi's edition, about 1757). Both Sallier and Toiller cite Artemidorus, Oneirocritica (iii/A.D.) 3. 60 (61) as using it. Phrynichus (grammarian) also gives it (ii/A.D.), Eclogae Nominum Atticorum ad ἐσχάτως ἔχει. There is also an example from Galen of doubtful genuineness ἐσχάτως ἔχουσιν and a genuine one in Vita Porphyrii 99 by Marcus Diaconus.

Page 308. The form γνώ imperative occurs in B. M. CXXI, 613 (iii/A.D.). Mayser (p. 327) says: "Die Endung --ηθι findet sich nur noch in ἵσθει (= ἵσθη, von ἵναι) und ἵσθη. (von οἶδα)."

Page 311, line 2 ab imo. Note δείδη=δίδος in Oxy. P. 1185, 1. 12 (A.D. 200) ἀν δὲ καὶ ὁ ὄνομ αἰτή, κοῦδόλους αὐτῷ δείδη.

Pages 325, 360. Mr. Scott offers the following table on the use of the perfect subjunctive in the N. T.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>μὴ ποτὲ</th>
<th>ἥνα</th>
<th>ἐὰν</th>
<th>μήν</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>eiδω</td>
<td>eiδω,etc.</td>
<td>eiδω</td>
<td>eiδω</td>
<td>1:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>14:8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>3:27</td>
<td>6:65,</td>
<td>16:24</td>
<td>17:9, 23</td>
<td>5:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>2:29</td>
<td></td>
<td>5:13</td>
<td>1:4</td>
<td>3:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Jo.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
<td></td>
<td>1:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>(active)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>1</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>14</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>14:11</td>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>4:10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>1:9 (active); 3:9</td>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>1:9</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>6:21</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1:20</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>3:15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1:15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>---</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>1</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Periphrastic: 12 (all passive, except Jas. 5:15; 2 Cor. 1:9).

Page 334, line 19. For ἀπεκρίνατο-form see also Mk. 14:61; Mt. 27:12; Jo. 5:17, 19.

Page 335 f. Examples of -οσα-ν-forms occur in ἐφάγοσας Oxy. P. 1007, 1. 29 (Gen. 3:16, vellum leaf of Gen. 2 and 3, iii/A.D.) and in a fragment of Xenophon's Hellenica in Oxy. P. 226, 1. 16 (i/ii A.D.) ἐπεπόμφοςας.

Page 337, line 16. For the --ες-form note 6.73 ὁς ἐπεμψες Oxy. P. 1489, 1. 4 (iii/A.D.); ἀφήκες and οἴδας Oxy. P. 1067, 11. 5, 20 (iii/A.D.); δείδωκες Oxy. P. 903, 1. 30 (iv/A.D.). It is not quite so rare in the papyri as Mayser thought.

Page 348, line 12. T. Nicklin (Cl. Rev., Aug., Sept., 1918, p. 115) says re ἤξα: "One would like to know if any other instances can be adduced, and to have some fresh consideration of the evidence." It so happens that I have just come across
ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION 1389

συνάξας in vol. XII, Oxy. P. 1414, 1. 21 (A.D. 270-5). I have learned to be chary about saying that the κοινή does not show this form or that. A fresh papyrus may turn up and prove me false. So we shall have to admit the ἡξα-form.

Pages 348, 1215. The form ἡξα, (from ἡκώ) occurs in Oxy. P. 933, 1. 13 (ii/A.D.). Note also the infinitive φάγαι, Oxy. P. 1297, 1. 10; μετηλθαῖ (note augment) P. Tor. i. 5. 27; ἐπενέγκαι B. G. U. 250. 8 (all iv/A.D.).

Page 360, 7, line 9. Mr. Scott counts 6 perf. imperatives out of 1623 imperatives and 22 perf. subjs. out of 1872 subjs. in the N. T. An undoubted perfect imperative occurs in Oxy. P. 1409, 1. 21 (A.D. 298) ἱστω.

Pages 360 (cf. 109), 361, 375, 480, 809, 818, 902, 1108, 1110, 1122. In these references to the idiom ἔχε με παρητημένον (Lu. 14:18, 19) it is not meant that this is what is usually called the periphrastic perfect, but only that it furnishes a kind of analogy to the modern Greek perfect and the modern English. The syntax of the Greek idiom is, of course, plain enough, the predicate participle agreeing in case with the object of ἔχω as in Mk. 3:1; 8:17; Lu. 19:20.


Page 375, line 15 ab imo. Mr. Scott counts 32 present passive and 6 active perfects in the periphrastic form.


Pages 392, 1058. Re subject. infinitive Votaw finds 289 anarthrous insfs. with 39 verbs as predicates. Scott notes that 6ε1, has 122 insfs., γίνομαι 36 (32 Lu.), ἔξεστιν 31 (Syns, and Acts 29), καλόν (ἔστιν) 21, ἐκοσμώτερον (Syn.) 13. Of verbs peculiar to authors Mk. has 2, Mt. 4, Lu. (Gospel and Acts) 14, Heb. 3, Paul 3, Jas. 1. For further details see Viteau, i. 151-2.

There are 23 subject τό insfs. (12 pres., 11 aor.) confined to Mt. 2, Mk. 4, Paul 16, Heb. 1.

Page 394, line 6. For εἰ δὲ μή Mk. has 2 exx. (parallels in Mt. and Lu. εἰ δὲ μήγε, Jo. (Gospel) 2, Rev. 2=6. For εἰ δὲ μήγε Mt.
shows 2 exx., Lu. 5, 2 Cor. 1=8. Mr. Scott observes that ἔδω ἐὰν μή (or μηγε) is not in the N. T.
Page 394, line 14 ab imo. If δῶτω is correct in 2 Cor. 9:7 Mr. Scott affirms that it is the only instance of μή and 3d sing. aor. imp. by Paul.
Page 395, line 10. For omitted ἔσμεν add "Jo. 17:11, 22; Gal. 2:15.
Page 404, 3. Mr. Scott notes that of the 174 N. T. examples of ὀξυς, sing. and plural, 118 are in the singular. Of these 63 are in an oblique case, 55 in nom. sing. Of these 55 there are 44 with singular verb and 11 with plural verb. When ὀξυς is subsequently referred to in narrative or by some speaker, the reference is always in the plural, whether verb or pronoun αὐτοῖς, etc., except Rev. 7:9 where proximity is probably the cause of the sing. That also is the only passage where the relative is used.

Of the 31 exx. of πληθος only one (Ac. 5:14) is in the plural; 12 are in oblique cases; 14 have nom. with sing. verb. Only 4 (Mk. 3:8; Lu. 2:13; 19:37; 23:1) have plural verbs. Where further reference is made (7 times), the verb is always plural (κατὰ σύνεσιν, p. 412).

As to λαός out of 141 exx. 123 are in oblique cases. Of 24 with sing. nom. only two (Ac. 3:11; Rev. 18:4) have plural verb and there are only four plural noms. Where repeated reference occurs, the reference is in the plural except Lu. 20:6; Ro. 11:2.

Mr. Springer finds numerous examples in LXX (Ex. 19:8, 9; Lev. 9:5; Dt. 22:18, 19, etc.) where a collective noun is used with singular and with a plural verb as in Mk. 5:24; Ac. 3:9, 10.

Page 404, line 2 ab imo. Add "1 Thess. 2:20."
Page 408, line 8 ab imo. Add ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆς (Rev. 21:13).
Page 414. Add "Ro. 12:6-8" for examples of acc. and nom. in apposition (after εἴτε).
Page 424 (i), line 6. For μέν in fourth place add "Lu. 22:22."
Page 460 (f). Mr. J. F. Springer furnishes the following note which is pertinent:

Mk. 13:19, ἔσονται αἱ ἡμέραι ἐκεῖναι θλίψις: This expression is abundantly supported whether we regard αἱ ἡμέραι ἐκεῖναι as subject or as the nominative of time.
I

As Subject

καὶ ἔστι ύμιν ὡς προφυλακή, καὶ ἡ ἡμέρα ἔργον (LXX Neh. 4:22 (16)); ὡς ἦν ἡ ἔκεινη εἰπὴ σκότος (LXX Job 3:4); οὐχὶ σκότος ἡ ἡμέρα τοῦ κυρίου καὶ οὐ φῶς; καὶ γνῶθος οὐκ ἐχων φέγγος αὐτή; (LXX Am. 5:20); ἓξάλειψις σοι ἡ ἡμέρα ἔκεινη (LXX Mi. 7:11).

II

As Expression of Time

LXX:  Job 1:6, 13; 2:1
       Esth. 4:11; 9:27
       Hos. 2:3 (5); 7:5
       Mi. 7 :14
       Is. 11:16
       Jr.  11:5; 39 (32) :20; 43 (36):2; 51 (44):6
       Ba.  1:15, 20; 2:6, 11, 26
Theodotion: Dn. 9:7, 15 (cf. LXX).
Examples of the formula, ὡς ἡ ἡμέρα ἀτη, are: LXX 1 Ki. 22:13; 3 Ki. 8:24, 61; Neh. 9:10.
   The plural ἐσονται in Mk. 13:19 may be explained, he supposes, as due to its position near αἱ ἡμ.
   Page 464 (d). Add Oapto-aie TvcbX (Mt. 23:26). With 7ra7-7),o SLKaiE in Jo. 17:25 compare κύριε μου πατηρ B. G. U. 423, 1. 11
   (ii/A.D.).
   Page 466 (b). Cf. "you" (ace. form) used as nom. like "ye."
   Page 475, line 6. Ὡρατεῖν τῆς χειρός occurs in the Gospels five times. Mr. Scott notes Hermas, Vis. 3. 8. 3 7) Kparoiio-a Tar χειρος and Lightfoot's translation "the woman with the strong hand." Cf. Mt. 28:9 τοὺς πόδας.
   Page 476, line 6. Mr. Scott reports that προσκυπνέω occurs 60 times in the N. T., 30 with dative, 14 with ace., 16 other constructions.
   Page 477, line 6 ab imo. Add πολλάς and read 12:47 f. in next line.
   Page 478, line 25. For ποιεῖν with acc. and inf. see Mt. 5:32;
       Mk. 1:17; 7:37; Lu. 5:34; Jo. 6:10; Ac. 17:26; Rev. 13:13.

1 ὡς ἦν is reading of B and S1, ἡ ἡμέρα of AS2 C. The example is suitable with either.
Pages 487, line 7 *ab imo*, 518, 3. For χρείαν ἐχω absolutely see Mk. 2:25, with ablative see Mt. 6:8, with τοῦ, and inf. see Heb. 5:12, with inf. see Mt. 3:14, with ἵνα Jo. 2:25.

Page 504, line 14 *ab imo*. Mk. 14:64 is probably the origin of ἐνοχὸς θανάτου in Mt. 26:66, but the idiom is still unusual.

Pages 514, 1132. Mr. Springer notes unnecessary genitive absolutes (like Mk. 6:22) in Thucydides 1. 114; Xenophon, Cyr. 1. 4, 20; LXX (Numb. 6:7; Dt. 15:10; 1 Ki. 9:11; 2 Mace. 9:2, etc.); (Aratus of Soli) Eratosthenes, Catasterismi 40.

Page 522, line 10. Add "Mt. 6 : 21 =Mt. 14:6" to γενεσίοις.

Page 527 (d), line 5. Prof. Robert Law, of Knox College, Toronto, sends me this example of χρόνῳ ἵκανῳ in Plato, Leges 678 D.

Page 530 (f), line 4 from end. It should be noted, Mr. Scott reminds me, that ὁμοιῶ is also used, with acc. of person (Lu. 7:31) or thing (Mk. 4:30), while to whom or to what the acc. is likened is put in the instrumental (assoc.). In the passive, as usual, the acc. becomes the nom. and the instrumental is retained (Mt. 13:24).

Page 535. The syncretism of the dative forms (locative, instrumental, true dative) is ably and clearly discussed by Prof. Walter Petersen under the caption "Syncretism in the Indo-European Dative" (*Am. J. of Ph.*, xxxvii and xxxix, 2, Jan. and April, 1918). With great pains and skill he shows how the psychology of the cases appears in the process of blending. He supports the thesis that the dative is not a purely local case in origin and is not a purely grammatical case, but syncretistic. Originally a case without ending, which "secondarily received its endings by association with local cases, and that these local cases then in turn thrust upon the dative certain meanings like that of direction which were foreign to it." It was originally a suffixless case of indirect object and borrowed its endings from certain local cases.


Page 566 (b). The preposition is not always repeated, even when words intervene as in Mk. 2:21 7-6 τῷ καινῷ τοῦ παλαιοῦ; Lu. 9:8; Ac. 26:18. Mr. Springer notes same idiom in Const. Ap. 7:25.

Page 570, line 9. Add "Mt. 27:48" λαβὼν σπόγγον πλήσας τε ὀξους
Page Note local sense in ἀντίς τοῦ μαρτυρίου opposite the martyr's shrine Oxy. P. 941, 1. 3 (vi/A.D.).


Page 596, 7. Mr. Springer notes examples in LXX (2 Ki. 14:4); N. T. (Mk. 1:10; Mt. 26:10; Lu. 6:20, etc.) and later writings (Didache 1:4; Hermas, Vis. 4. 3. 1) of εἰς where ἐπὶ would have been used in the earlier Greek. In the modern Greek Eis is very common in such constructions.


Page 604, 6, line 6. The reading of Text. Rec. in Mk. 2:4 ἐφ' ὦ is ἐφ' ὦ in Lu. 5:25.

Page 606, 3. Sharp (Epictetus and the N. T., p. 104) quotes Epict. IV, x, 20 τὰς χεῖρας καταφιλήσαι for weakened sense of κατα—, just "kiss."

Page 607, middle. Mr. Scott supplies some examples for the phrase ἐκεῖν ἡ κατά τινος Mt. 5:23; Mk. 11:25; Rev. 2:4, 14, 20.

Page 623, line 1. For καὶ πρός (adverb) = and more see Oxy. P. 488, 1. 18 (ii/iii A.D.).

Pages 625, middle, 626, line 9. For πρὸς αὐτόν rather than aural with verbs of speaking to, Mr. Scott gives this table based on Hawkins' Horae Syn., ed. 2, p. 45.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>ἐπισον</th>
<th>λαλεῖν</th>
<th>λέγειν</th>
<th>ἔφη</th>
<th>ἀπεκρίθη</th>
<th>OTHERS</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>ὄμιλεω</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paul</td>
<td>1 Th. 1</td>
<td>Ro. 1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Page 632, middle. The use of ὑπὲρ and εἰς with the same words is interesting in Fay. P. 77, ἐιργασταὶ ὑπὲρ χωματικῶν ἔργων (A.D. 147) and Fay. P. 78, 1. 4 ἐιργασταὶ εἰς χωματικὰ ἔργα (A.D. 147).

Page 643, 21, line 6. As prep. ἐως occurs 86 times, as conj. 62.
Page 643, line 12 *ab imo.* Of the seven examples of ἐκτο ρέτε
Mr. Scott observes that five Mt. 17:17 and =) have the
future, leaving Jo. 10:24; Rev. 6:10 with pres. ind.

701

Page 653, line 10 *ab imo.* It is, of course, possible that τόπος or
χρώνος may be supplied in some of these examples. In that
case they would come under (b), p. 652.

Page 661 (d). With καλόν . . . ἦ in Mt. 18:9 cf. καλόν . . . ἦ in
Ign., Ro. 6:1 Mt.

Page 671 (a). On the use of ἐίς=πρώτον in Mk. 14:10 see dis-
cussion concerning primacy of Judas Iscariot (ὁ ἐίς τῶν δώ-
δεκα Mk. 14:10) by A. Sloman, Jour. of Theol. Studies, Oct., Ac.
1916; A. Wright, *Jour. of Theol. Studies,* Oct., 1916, and
The Interpreter, April, 1917; A. T. Robertson, *The Expositor,*
April, 1917; J. Rendel Harris, *The Expositor,* July, 1917.
Harris notes that ὁ ἐίς τῶν ἀγίων ἀγγέλων, in Enoch xx does
not mean ὁ πρώτος.

Page 688, line 3 *ab imo.* ἐδικᾶν instead of ἐκτόν in Mk. 12:33.

Pages 695, 696. Mr. Scott furnishes some very informing data
concerning the use of the demonstratives ὁ and ἦς.

ồ, ὄι μὲν . . . .ordinal ồ, ὄι δὲ

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>ὁ</th>
<th>ὦ</th>
<th>δέ</th>
<th>ἄλλοι δέ</th>
<th>ἄλλοι δέ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>16:14</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>16:14</td>
<td>16:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>7:12</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>7:12</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>14:4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>14:4</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>..</td>
<td>28:24</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>28:24</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>7:21</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>7:21</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>12:10</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4:22</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4:22</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4:11 τοῖς</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>ἄλλοι ἤ</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1:16</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Hebrews *τοκ. όι ὠ . . . .ordinal ouser . . . .ordinal* are opposite: the rest partitive.
## ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION 1395

###  ámb, ámb, ámb, ámb, ámb of before-mentioned persons (from Geden)

#### W. H. text

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>PARTICIPLE</th>
<th>FUTURE VERB</th>
<th>GRAND TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>Aor.</td>
<td>Perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>12:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[81]</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>68</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### òs ámb ... òs ámb, etc.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>µév</th>
<th>ò</th>
<th>ìlòs ò</th>
<th>ìlòs ò</th>
<th>ò dì</th>
<th>òミュ</th>
<th>ò</th>
<th>ò</th>
<th>ò</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Singular</td>
<td>Plural</td>
<td>Singular</td>
<td>Plural</td>
<td>ìlòs ò</td>
<td>ìlòs ò</td>
<td>ò</td>
<td>ò</td>
<td>ò</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>ìlòs ò</td>
<td>ìlòs ò</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>ìlòs ò</td>
<td>ìlòs ò</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>27:44</td>
<td>27:44</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ju.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>11:21</td>
<td></td>
<td>11:21</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>12:28</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>14:2</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:20</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Line 6, 1 Cor. 12:8. Read ìlòs ò (6 times) ìlòs ò (24 times).
In Mt. 22:5 ò µév ... ò ò is completed by ò ò µév ò ò ò

1 Mt. includes 26:57, 67; 28:17 on p. 694.
Page 696. The use of relative Os and demonstrative ὁς in the same sentence appears in Oxy. P. 1189, 11. 6-7 (A.D. 117) ἐπιστολάς δύο ὁς ἔγραψα ἦν μὲν σοὶ ἦν δὲ Σαββαίῳ. So in ll. 11-16 we see demonstrative and article τὴν μὲν . . . τὴν δὲ εἰς τὸν κτλ. Mr. Springer notes καὶ ὁς (dem.) in Xenophon, Cyropedia 2. 2. 7; 2. 2. 30; 3. 2. 18; 4. 1. 11. So Agathias scholasticus (vi/A.D.) has καὶ ὁς Historiae 2. 9; 4. 18 and Menander Protector (vi/A.D.) Excerpta e Menandri Historia, 30.

Page 700, line 2 ab imo. Add "Mt. 12:45" (2d); Ac. 2:40 where οὗτος is last, and Mk. 9:38 where there are two adjectives. In Ac. 1:25 there are two nouns.

Page 701, line 6. Mr. Scott gives these examples of οὗτος in genitive absolute Mt. 11:7; Lu. 21:28; Ac. 19:36; 28:9; Heb. 9:6; 2 Pet. 3:11. An instance of οὗτος joined to an adverb appears in Ac. 15:8. In Rev. 19:9 the translation is "these are," but in 21:5 and 22:6 "these words are." In Ac. 17:6 Moffatt translates "these upsetters." See Rev. 7:13.

Page 702, line 1. Add "Jo. 4:54."

Page 709, line 10. Mr. Scott offers this table, showing Synoptics and Acts compared with John: 

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>έκείνος with articular noun</th>
<th>έκείνος as pronoun</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mark</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matthew</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luke</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acts</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 John</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td>131</td>
<td>77=208</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Page 730, line 5. With Mk. 2:16 see ὅτι. cf. διὰ τί in Mt. 9:11.

Mr. Springer notes that ὅτι----'why' in a direct question in Barnabas, Ep. 8:5 871, ὅτι δὲ τὸ ἔριον ἐπὶ τὸ ἔχωλον; ὅτι ἡ βασιλεία Ἰησοῦ ἐπὶ ἔχωλον κτλ.; 10:1; ὅτι ποιῶ; Aristophanes, Ranae 198; Gospel of Nic., Pass I, A. 14. 3. The use of ὅτι in a direct question seems clearly established by these examples. He finds ὅτι in indirect questions in Horn., Od. T. 464; Page Lucian, De Asino, 32; Aristophanes, Plutus, 965; Xenophon the Ephesian, De Anth. et Habr. 4. 2.

Page 738, line 2 ab imo. Moffatt translates τί in Mk. 2:24 by "what" and Scott argues ᾧδε as favouring "what."

---

1396 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

Page 759 f. Prof. Eakin (The Greek Article in First and Second Century Papyri, *Am. J. of Ph.*, July, 1916) shows that in the papyri, as the N. T., the article is frequently absent in titular expressions. He finds the same obscurity and uncertainty about the use of the article with proper names in the papyri as in classic Greek. He gives numerous examples of the anaphoric use (the aforesaid and the use of the article before the genitive of the father's or mother's name is very frequent as Deissmann showed, cf. p. 767). But Prof. Miller (*Am. J. of Ph.*, July, 1916, Article before Genitives of Father's Name) shows that in official language in the papyri the article only appeared (as in classic Greek, Gildersleeve's Synt. of Cl. Gk., § 580) before the genitive when the name of son or daughter is in the genitive (or ablative), and even this use vanished from the second century A. D. onward.

But the vernacular idiom has the article in nominative as in Mt. 10:2.

Page 760. On Ἰησοῦ with article see von Soden, p. 1406.

Page 762, line 11 *ab imo*. For full construction see Mt. 12:35.

Page 764 (c). In Col. 1:7 f. note ὃς ἐστιν and ὅ καὶ δηλώσας as parallel clauses.

Page 770, bottom. Mr. Scott gives this note: ὁ ... ὁτος ὁ ὁτος ὁ. ὁτος (and cases) stands last (296 times), three times as often as it stands first (98 times). The position of ὁτος (and cases) varies in the same phrase without any apparent reason, e.g., Ac. 23:17, 18; Mt. 26:31-34.

Ἑκεῖνος first 40 times, last 104 times.

Page 773, line 5 *ab imo*. Mr. Scott remarks that οἱ πάντες is subject of verb in 3d person in Phil. 2:21, apparently of verb in 1st person in 1 Cor. 10:17; 15:51; Eph. 4:13, etc., and of 2d person in Jo. 7:21; 1 Jo. 2:21; 1 Pet. 5:5; 1 Cor. 1:10 — apposition to the pronoun implied in the ending of the verb. See Jo. 1:16; 1 Cor. 12:13; Jas. 3:2.

Page 773, bottom. For ὁ πᾶς see Jo. 5:22; 16:13; Rev. 13:12.

Page 774. ὅλος. Add "Lu. 11:36 (bis)."

Page 774, line 4 *ab imo*. Mr. Scott notes that ὁχλος πολὺς occurs 22 times in N. T. and ὁχλοι πολλοί (Mt. 5, Lu. 2). ὅχλος ἱκανός occurs in Mk. 10:46; Lu. 7:12, and thrice in Acts.
Page 779, 2, line 6. It should be understood that this is the usual Attic idiom. See further Col. 1:8 τὴν ὑμῶν ἀγαπήν. In Phil. 1:25 note τὴν ὑμῶν προκοπήν, but τὸ καύχημα ὑμῶν, in 1:26.

Page 783, line 5 ff. Observe that all these examples are prepositional adjuncts.

Page 785, line 7. Add "Lu. 6:47" ὁ ἔρχομενος κτλ.

Page 788, line 21. Mr. Scott thinks we may over-refine on the use and non-use of the article with proper names, and cites the variations in Mk. 9:2; Mt. 17:1; Lu. 9:28 in the mention of Peter, James, and John as in point.

Page 791 (c). Prof. Eakin (Am. J. of Ph., July, 1916) shows that in the papyri "anarthrous prepositional phrases" are common as in the N. T. Many of the identical phrases are frequent like κατὰ καίρον, ἐν οἴκιᾳ, ἐν χερσίν, κτλ.

Page 807, line 3 ab imo. Mr. Springer cites examples of middle voice (ὑπάρχομαι=’observe’) from LXX (Ex. 12:25; 13:10; Lu. 18:4, 5; 18:26; 19:3; 19:19; Dt. 5:25; 10:12, 13; 3 Ki. 8:25; 1 Macc. 8:26; Aquila's translation Dt. 11:22 (ii/A.D.). He finds active in sense of 'observe' in Gen. 18:19; 19:5; Lev. 18:30; 22:9; Dt. 5:10; 6:17; 33:9.

Page 839, line 8 ab imo. Mr. Scott makes out 859 present imperatives and 760 aorist imperatives. in the N. T. It is Paul's usage that makes this situation, 323 presents and 99 aorists.


Page 848 (c). Mr. Scott counts 459 present subjunctives, 1409 aorists, 22 perfects=1890 subjunctives in N. T. Readers of this grammar have learned to be grateful to Mr. H. Scott for his statistical knowledge of N. T. syntax so freely furnished. Here follow some of his most valuable tables:
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>HORTATORY</th>
<th>INTERROGATIVE</th>
<th>ASSERTORY</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1st Plural 'Let us'</td>
<td>1st Plural 'τί...ι'</td>
<td>1st Pers. 'πανε...ι'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>3 15:36 }</td>
<td>6:37; 12:14, 14</td>
<td>6 8:37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>2 27:49 7:4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lk.</td>
<td>6 (6:42)</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>10 11:5, 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11 4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>2 7:34 Q</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>2 ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>6:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>.. 17:1; 21:9</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Pet.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>.. 4:1, 11 (1)</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6 3</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Th.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>3 ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>7:1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>.. 4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>.. ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8 ..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>25 7</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION

1399
## AORIST SUBJUNCTIVE — DEPENDENT

| Book | ίναι | δόκιμος | μή | μή ποτε | μή ποτε | εἰ | εἰ τίς | εἶναι | εἶ | τῶν | τῶν | πολλοί | πολλάχια | δόγμα | δός | δός ἢν | δός ἢν | ὅτι | ὅτι ἢν | ὅτι ἢν | ὅτι | ὅτι ἢν | ὅτι ἢν | ὅτι | ὅτι ἢν | τι | Total |
|------|------|------|----|---------|---------|----|-------|-------|----|------|------|-------|-------|-------|-------|-----|-------|-------|-----|-------|-------|-----|-------|-------|-----|-------|-------|-----|
| Mk.  | 54   | 1    | 2  | Q 2     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | 19 | 1    | 3    | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 113 |
| Mt.  | 43   | 17   | 1  | 12      | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | 38 | 1    | 1    | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 119 |
| Lu.  | 39   | 13   | ... | 6      | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | 21 | 3    | 1    | 1    | ...   | ...   | 1    | 14    | 1   | 1    | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 102 |
| Ac.  | 11   | 3    | 13 | 5      | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | 79 | 1    | 7    | 1    | 1    | 2    | 5    | 1   | 64   | 1   | 3    | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 375 |
| Jo.  | 114  | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | 45 | 9    | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 167 |
| 1 Jo. | 12   | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 23  |
| 2 Jo. | 2    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 2   |
| 3 Jo. | 1    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 2   |
| Rev. | 28   | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 26  |
| Heb. | 19   | 2    | 1  | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 31  |
| Jas. | 3    | 1    | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 16  |
| 1 Pet.| 1    | 1    | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 13  |
| 2 Pet.| 2    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 2   |
| 1 Th.| 6    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 9   |
| 2 Th.| 1    | 1    | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 9   |
| 1 Cor.| 34   | 1    | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 45  |
| 2 Cor.| 30   | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 45  |
| Gal.| 11   | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 16  |
| Ro. | 27   | Q 2  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 142 |
| Ph.| 8    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 10  |
| Col.| 1    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 12  |
| Phil.| ...  | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 1   |
| Eph.| 21   | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 22  |
| 1 Tim.| 8    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 9   |
| 2 Tim.| 3    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 9   |
| Tit.| 7    | ...  | ... | ...     | ...     | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 7   |
| Total | 171  | 1    | 7  | 7      | 2      | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | 51   | 3    | 3    | ...   | ...   | ...   | ...   | 3   | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...   | ... | ...   | ...       | 258 |

The table above shows the distribution of aorist subjunctive forms in the Greek New Testament according to various books or sections. The counts are noted under each form, with totals at the end. The annotation 'ιναι as aorists καλόν, Jo. 3:17; 12:47. μή ποτε, Lu. 12:58 counted as aorist.' indicates the specific usage criteria for these forms.
## ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION

| Book | ἐρωτ. | ἔρωτος | ἥπτομαι | ἥπτομαι ἐν | ἔπου | ἔποιη | ἐποίησαν | ἔθεμεν | ἐθέμενον | ἐθέμενον ἐν | ἐθέμενος | ἐθέμενος ἐν | ἐθέμενος ἐν Ἐρ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. | ἐθέμενος ἐν Θ. |
|------|-------|--------|---------|-----------|------|-------|----------|--------|-----------|-----------|-------|-----------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| Mk.  | 14    | 15     | 6       | 2         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| Lk.  | 23    | 1      | 1       | 2         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| Ac.  | 3     | 15     | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| Ro.  | 2     | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| 1 Th.| 2     | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| 2 Th.| 1     | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| 1 Cor.| 1    | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| 2 Cor.| 0    | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| Gal. | 1     | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| Eph. | 1     | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| 1 Tim.| 1    | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| 2 Tim.| 1    | 1      | 1       | 1         | 10   | 3     | 1        | 7      | 1         | 1         | 1     | 3         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |
| Total | 90   | 2      | 2       | 1         | 13   | 19     | 14       | 14     | 4         | 5         | 2     | 4         | 4                  | 4                  | 3                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  | 1                  |

Note: Mk. 13:28 = Mt. 24:32 counted as sor.θ.σ.
## Present Subjunctives in N.T.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INDEPENDENT</th>
<th>DEPENDENT</th>
<th>TEMPORAL</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1st Plural</td>
<td>1st Pl.</td>
<td>rt...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>'Let us'</td>
<td>Interr.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[8:5]</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Jo.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Jo.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>11:32</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

|      |            |          |        | 27     |
|      |            |          |        | 1      |
|      |            |          |        | 28     |

|      |            |          |        | 15     |

| Total| 38         | 3        | 3      | 199    |
|      | 5          | 1        | 2      | 107    |
|      | 3          | 5        | 3      | 34     |
|      | 1          | 4        | 1      | 372    |

|      |            |          |        | 35     |
|      |            |          |        | 1      |
|      |            |          |        | 3      |

*Ina* Mk. 6:8 counted as 4.
### Present Subjunctive — Pauline Epistles

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INDEPENDENT</th>
<th>DEPENDENT</th>
<th>TEMPORAL</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1st Plural</td>
<td>1st Pl.</td>
<td>1a</td>
<td>5:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td>'Let us'</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Th.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6:1</td>
<td>13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phil.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tit.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Gal. 4:17 counted present subjunctive.*
Pages 854 (c), 929, line 3 *ab imo*, 1174 (b), line 3. In Heb. 13:5 (LXX) ἐγκαταλείπω is read by ΝΑCDΚΙΜΠ 17. Mr. Scott thinks it odd that this reading escaped Text. Rec. But it is rather Alexandrian than Syrian.

Mr. Scott again presents useful data on οὐ μή constructions (see inset facing this page).
W. H. Marginal Readings for οὐ μὴ

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Margin</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk. 13:31 οὐ λόγοι μου οὐ παρελεύσονται ... οὐ μὴ παρελεύσονται</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt. 12:32 δὲς ἂν εἰπῇ ... οὐκ ἀφεθήσετα ... οὐ μὴ ἀφεθή</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:42 δὲς ἂν ... οὐ μὴ ἀπολέσῃ ... οὐ μὴ ἀπόληται</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu. 10:19 οὐδὲν ὑμᾶς οὐ μὴ ἀδικήσει ... οὐ μὴ ἀδικήσῃ</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:68 εἰ ἔρωτήσωσι οὐ μὴ ἀποκριθήτε ... οὐ μὴ ἀποκριθήτε - ἢ ἀπολύσητε -</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev. 3:3 καὶ οὐ μὴ γνῶσεις ποίαν ὦραν ... οὐ μὴ γνώσῃ</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:6 καὶ οὐ μὴ εὑρήσουσιν αὐτόν ... οὐ μὴ εὑρώσωσιν αὐτόν</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Of these 7 readings only 3 (Mk. 13:31; Mt. 12:32; Lu. 22:68), add to the examples of οὐ μὴ. The remaining 4 are only -| |- variations of existing examples. Readings -| |- are in the judgment of W. H. (Introduction, §385) “outside the pale of probability as regards the original text”: so that only Mk. 13:31 Mt. 12:32 can claim any right to be counted as additional examples of οὐ μὴ.

**SPEAKERS IN GOSPELS**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>Jesus</th>
<th>Peter</th>
<th>Thomas</th>
<th>Others</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>8 [16:18]</td>
<td>14:31</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>9 (10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>16:22, 26:35</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>20:25</td>
<td>8:52; 11:56</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>57 (58)</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>65 (66)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Page 854 (ζ). Mr. Scott gives the data for aorist and present optative. Aorist occurs 45, present 22 times. But Paul has aorist 31 and present 0 times, while the rest have aorist 14, present 22 times. Μὴ γένοιτο occurs 15 times and γένοιτο without μὴ twice. Opt. 67 times in all.

Pages 856, line 8 ab imo, 933, line 9. Mr. Scott notes that 3d sing. aor. imper. occurs 8 times in N. T.: Mk. 13:15 (twice) =Mt. 24:7=Lu. 17:31; Mk. 13:16=Mt. 24:18=Lu. 17:31; Mt. 6:3.

Page 858, line 12. Mr. Scott gives the data for aor. inf. with prepositions (μετά 14 times, πρὸ 8, εἰς 38, ἐν 12, διά. acc.
1, ἐνεκέν 1, ἐως 1 = 84). There should be added to the table on p. 858 for articular inf. in N. T.: pres. 164, aor. 148, perf. 10 = 322.


Page 891, line 10. Mr. Scott's figures for pres. inf. with preps. are with ἐν τῷ, 43 times, διὰ τὸ 24, πρός τὸ 3, εἰς 32, ἐκ τοῦ 1, πρὸ τοῦ 1, ἀπὶ τοῦ 1, διὰ τοῦ, 700 1 = 106.

Page 894, 2. Mr. Scott counts 868 perfect indicatives in the N. T. of which 37 are periphrastic (5 active and 32 passive). John (Gospel 205, 1 Ep. 60) has far the most and 1 Cor. (73) comes next. Ὁδα alone occurs 208 times (Gospel of Jo. 61, 1 Ep. 13).

Pages 903, 906, line 20. Mr. Scott reports his count of pluperfects in the N. T. as 142 in all. (Mk. 13 and one in 16:9, Mt. 11, Lu. 31, Ac. 33, Jo. 46, 1 Jo. 1, Rev. 3, Gal. 2, Ro. 1.) Of these 88 are simple and 54 periphrastic forms, divided again into active (simple 81, periphrastic 13) 94 and passive (simple 7, periphrastic 41) 48. These statistics are based on form only (ἡδείν gives 34, ἵστημι 20).

Page 908, line 4. Add "1 Cor. 1:10; 2 Cor. 9:3." There are 22 perf. subjs., 10 ἐνδῶ, 12 periphrastic (ten passive, two active).

Page 909. Mr. Scott, by the table on p. 1407, corrects Votaw's error as to the number of perfect infinitives in the N. T. Further investigation has shown that the number of perfect infinitives in N. T. is 47 (of which ten (10) are articular - 31 separate verbs, but 47 instances). This may account for Votaw's statement on p. 50, but he is undoubtedly in error in making only 8 articular instances.

Page 917, middle. MAL., Mr. Scott notes, occurs 54 times in N. T. It is a favourite word of Luke (Gospel 17, Acts 3) 20, Mt. 9, but not in Mk. It occurs in questions 43 times, 9 times in denials (qualified by ἀλλά) of a previous question or statement. In Lu. 18:30 it is the equivalent of οὐ μή. Ὑχί in Lu. 4:22 is οὐκ in Mt. and Mk., but Mt. has οὐχί like Lu. 12:6.
ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>διά τὸ</th>
<th>εἰς τὸ</th>
<th>μετὰ τὸ</th>
<th>TOTAL ANARTHROUS</th>
<th>GRAND TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>5:4 ter</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>. .</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>6:48</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>8:11; 18:2; 27:9</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. .</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>11:3 10:15</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Pet.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>2 (+ 4:1 mg.)</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1:18</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tit.</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Pages 927, 1381. Prof. F. H. Fowler (Class. Weekly, April 16, April 23, 1917) Subjects Sonnenschein's theory of "determined futurity" in "The Unity of the Latin Subjunctive" to a sharp critique. He objects that Sonnenschein makes no room for the personal determinant and ignores the Greek. Fowler holds that in Greek "the subjunctive, starting with the will meaning, developed the meaning of determined futurity, that the optative, starting with the wish meaning, did the same thing, and that the optative developed still another meaning, that of contingent determined futurity."

Page 928 (a). An instance of the futuristic subjunctive in an independent sentence Occurs in Oxy. P. 1069, 11. 13-18 (iii/A.D.) τὰ χαὶ γὰρ δυνασθῶμεν φορ[π] υπερίσει σοι δύο καμήλους [πυ]ροῦ καὶ πέμψε πρὸ σέν. The use of raxa with this subjunctive is to be observed.

Page 931, line 3 ab Jannaris, § 1914, quotes this and other examples from Epictetus.

Page 932, line 1. Add δεῦρο δεῖξι (Rev. 17:1; 21:9).

Page 934 (c). Mr. Scott notes that 7.1, in independent aorist subjunctive sentences occurs in Synoptics 28 times, Acts 3, John 1 (Jesus, τή ἐξ,) 1 Cor. 1, and not in any other book.
1408 A GRAMMAR OF THE NEW TESTAMENT


In independent present subjunctive sentences Ti occurs only in Jo. 6:28; Heb. 11:32.

Page 936. Mr. Scott has a complete table on page 1408 for the optatives in the N. T.

Page 936, 2. Sonnenschein (Cl. Rev., Feb., March, 1918, p. 211) says: "As in Latin .the past subjunctive, so in Greek the optative may be a, past prospective, owing to its inherent meaning. This I have recognised in my Greek Grammar, § 504 (c) (e.g., ἐτοιμὸς ἡν ταῦτα ποιεῖν δὲ εἴποις, 'the things which you should say'); for the corresponding meaning in present time see Demosth. de Pace 11, πλὴν δὲ ἄν ὑμῖν εἴπω δύο, 'the two things which I shall tell you,' where ay with the subjunctive expresses pure futurity, not generality."

Page 940 (c), line 7. Mr. Scott thinks that the direct question here would be τι ποιήσωμεν. I still adhere to my position in the text.

Page 940, line 7 ab In Lu. 1:29; 3:15 there is the optative without ἄν, the simple change of mode in indirect question (indicative to optative).

Page 941. Mr. Scott Offers this table for the imperatives in N. T.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>PRESENT</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>AORIST</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>PERFECT</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th>GRAND TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2d Pers.</td>
<td>3d Sing.</td>
<td>3d Pl.</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>2d Pers.</td>
<td>3d Sing.</td>
<td>3d Pl.</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>2d Pers.</td>
<td>3d Sing.</td>
<td>3d Pl.</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>2d Pers.</td>
<td>3d Sing.</td>
<td>3d Pl.</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>74</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>146</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>122</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>285</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>118</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>128</td>
<td>141</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>154</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>283</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>302</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>331</td>
<td>341</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>381</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>714</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>124</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo. and Epp. 1, 2, 3</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>76</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>146</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>88</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>Q 1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>29</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas. and 1, 2 Pet.-Ju.</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>99</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paul</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>323</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>422</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>405</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>528</td>
<td>338</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>379</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>908</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>707</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>889</td>
<td>679</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>760</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1822</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Lu. 9:3; 10:4; 14:12 are counted as one each.
1410 A GRAMMAR OF THE NEW TESTAMENT


Page 949, line 11. The other imperative in this idiom is in the aorist except Mt. 21:28 and perhaps Rev. 16:1 (durative present). The idiom is not used by Luke and the word is not used in Acts or by Paul. So Mr. Scott.


Page 956. Mr. Springer notes ὅς ἄν and future indicative in Athenische Mitteilungen 25. 470; Papers of the Am. School II. 159; Inscr. Graecae, Senats Dekr. 73 a.

Page 957, middle. The 122 indicatives with the indefinite relative are: pres. tense 52, imperf. 13, fut. 9, aor. 45, perf. 2, pluperf. 1. So Mr. Scott.

Page 958. Mr. Scott counts 191 examples (as against Moulton's 172, Prol., p. 166) of ἄν and ἐάν constructions in the N. T. according to the table on page 1410.

Page 966 (d), line 4: Luke διὰ τό and inf. 18 times out of the 32, pres. 14 (Gospel 8, Acts 6), perf. (Gospel 1, Acts 3).

Page 969, line 4: ἀπὸ occurs (Scott) in Mk. 15 times (10 in speeches), 13 in Mt. (12 in speeches), 5 in Lu. (all in speeches), 30 M Jo. (17 in speeches).

Page 969, line 6: ἀπὸ. Ellipsis also in Lu. 17:37; 1 Cor. 3:3; Col. 3:11; Jas. 3:16.

Page 969, line 8: ἀπὸ. Mr. Scott gives this table for ὅπου with subjunctives:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>MARK</th>
<th>MATT</th>
<th>LUKE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ὅπου ἐὰν εἰσελθήτε</td>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; ἐσέλθη</td>
<td>14:14</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; καταλάβῃ</td>
<td>9:18</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; κηρυχθῇ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον</td>
<td>14:9</td>
<td>26:13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; τὸ πάσχα...φῶγω</td>
<td>14:14</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>22:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>. . ὅποι ἔαν ἀρέχρη</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>9:57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ὅπου ἐὰν ἦ τὸ πτώμα</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>24.28</td>
<td>17:57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2 = 10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Page 971, line 11: ὅτε (only ind.) 101 times in the N. T. (Scott), pres., 3, imperf. 16, aor. 75, fut. 6, perf. 1.

Page 972, line 7: ὅταν with subj. 125 times (Scott), pres. 35, aor. 90, as given in the following table:
Page 972, line 18. Ὠτάν with the ind. only 5 times, pres. 1, aor. 2, imperf. 1, fut. 1. Mr. Springer notes Ὠτάν with incl. in Ignatius, Ep. ad Eph. 8:1; Barnabas, Ep. 10:3; 15:5. He also offers Ὠτάν δὲ πέμπεις in L. P. (ed. C. Leemans, 1888) III, 4.

Page 974 (c). Ἀχριτ(ς) prep. 30, conj. 18 (ind. 7, subj. aor. 11).

So Scott gives this table for Ἀχριτ(ς) as conjunction:

Note Oxy. P. 933 ll. 14, 15 (ii/A.D.) περὶ τῆς μικρᾶς ἐγενάμην ἀχριτον καταπλεύσῃ.

Page 975, middle. Ἐως as preposition (Scott) 86 times, conj. 62 (ind. 13, subj. 49)=148. Ἐως alone ind.” 7, subj. 13, gon ay subj. 19; Ἐως ὄτου ind. 2, subj. 3; Ἐως οὖν ind. 4, subj. 14 (Scott).

Page 977. HO) (ij). Scott notes in LXX as preposition πρὶν γενέσεως αὐτῶν Dan. Sus. 35 42 Θ; as adverb Aquila and Sym. Prov. 8:26 πρὶν ὅ; with subj. Ps. 57 (58):10; Jer. 40 (47):5; with inf. pres. 4 Mace. 9:27; Numb. 11:33 (B).
Page 978, line 3 *ab imo*. For data in N. T. see p. 107.

Page 983, line 1. Mr. Scott gives data for ἵνα μὴ in the N. T.

There are 117 instances of ἵνα with μὴ in N. T. (indic. 4, subj. pres. 37, aor. 75, perf. 1 (2 Cor. 1:10)). When the construction with ἵνα is continued in a further clause by μὴ, μὴ alone is repeated Mk. 4:12 LXX, Jo. 6:50, 11:50, 1 Jo. 2:28, 1 Cor. 1:10, 2 Cor. 4:7, Rev. 3:18, 8:12; and so with ἵνα μὴ Jo. 4:15, Rev. 7:1. In Rev. 18:4 ἵνα μὴ is repeated, but in Rev. 16:15 neither is repeated. When the construction is continued with ἀλλὰ 'but on the contrary,' ἵνα is not repeated, Jo. 3:16, 6:39, 18:28, 2 Jo. 8, 1 Cor. 12:25. So with ἰὲ Heb. 12:13. In Rev. 9:5 ἵνα is repeated.

Page 984, middle. See Oxy. P. 1068, 1. 19 (iii /A.D.) ἐίνα μοι μαρτυρήσω σου ἀνελθόντες, example of ἵνα and future indicative.

Page 986, line 6 *ab imo*. Mr. Scott notes that ὄπως is almost confined to Matthew and Luke, and gives the following data for ὄπως in N. T.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INDICATIVE</th>
<th>SUBJUNCTIVE</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Future</td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>3:26 bǐs, 28</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>24:24</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ae.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jns.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Th.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>8:11 (no verb)</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>9:17 Q (2)</td>
<td>3:4 Q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>3:4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phil.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ro. 3:4 (Ps. 50:6 Swete has aor. subj. twice).
[Of the 18 exx. in Matthew only two have any parallels: Mt. 12:14= Mk. 3:6; Mt. 9:38=Lu. 10:2]
Purpose inf. 7 times, pres. 3 (Mt. 10:1 bis; Lu. 24:24), aor. 4 (Mt. 15:33; 27:1; Lu. 4:29; 20:26).

\(\omega\sigma\tau\varepsilon\) with ind. aors. dependent twice (Jo. 3:16; Gal. 2:13).

\(\omega\sigma\tau\varepsilon\) not in James, 2 Pet., Jude, 1, 2, 3 Jo., Col., Phil., Eph., 1, 2 Tim., Titus (11 books).

\(\omega\sigma\tau\varepsilon\) RENDERINGS BY R. V.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>INDICATIVE</th>
<th>INFINITIVE</th>
<th>IMPERATIVE</th>
<th>CONJUNCTIVE</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>insomuch that</td>
<td>G. 2:13</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>so that . . .</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>so as . . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>as to . . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>Mt. 15:33</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to . . . . .</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>(4 Lu. 9:52) 3</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>that</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>therefore .</td>
<td>R. 13:2</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>wherefore .</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1 Cor. 5:8</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>so then . .</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total . 21 62 11 1 95
ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION

Page 988. Mr Scott gives this table for 147076 constructions in N. T.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INTERROGATIVE AND INDEPENDENT</th>
<th>DEPENDENT CONJUNCTION</th>
<th>GRAND TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Indicative</td>
<td>Opt.</td>
<td>Indicative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>14:2</td>
<td>5:23; 7:6; 13:15 Q</td>
<td>5:12 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>12:58 bis; 14:9</td>
<td>4:12 bis Q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>7:26</td>
<td>3:12</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>(9:17 mg.)</td>
<td>Subj.</td>
<td>1:5; 2:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total | 3 | 1 | 9 | 1 | 27 | 1 | 38 | 42 |

Lu. 12:58 has same form for pres. and aor. subj. I have counted it as aor.
Mt. 25:9 may be independent.
Page 990, middle. Blass, p. 235, points out that roS is added to the second infinitive. Add "Ac. 26:18."
Pages 995, line 6 *ab imo*, 1174, line 7. Mr. Scott thinks that οὐχ . . . οὖ simply belongs to θέλω according to ordinary rule.
Page 999 ((3)). Votaw counts εὐαγγελίζεσθαι with ὅστε, but it is more likely to be construed with the participle φιλοτιμούμενον which with οὔτως δὲ loosely carries on the ὅστε clause. Leaving out this example there are 95 exx. of ὅστε in the N. T. (See Mr. Scott's tables on page 1414).
Page 1001 (d), line 12. Moulton, Germ. ed. (p. 332 n.), says that Jo. 14:22 is consecutive.
Page 1003, 7. Note Oxy. P. 1489, 1. 6 (iii/A.D.) εἴθε πάντας πελπλήρωκα ὦς Ἀγαθὸς Δαίμων.
Pages 1007-16. Mr. Scott has valuable tables on pages 1416-17 for the constructions of εἴ with indicative. The examples cover both (α) and (β), the two first classes (determined as fulfilled and unfulfilled).
### Table: WITH PRESENT INDICATIVE IN PROTASIS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>Indicative</th>
<th>Aorist</th>
<th>Perfect</th>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Subjunctive</th>
<th>Aorist</th>
<th>Perfect</th>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>10:42</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>9:35</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lk.</td>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>11:30</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>11:30</td>
<td>17:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jn.</td>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>11:7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>6:30</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>2:14</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phil.</td>
<td>2:9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phm.</td>
<td>1:6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>2:24</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tit.</td>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Grand Total:** 60
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INDICATIVE</th>
<th>APODOSIS</th>
<th>IMPERATIVE</th>
<th>TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Future</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
<td>Imperfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>23:12:1</td>
<td>20:22:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>9:3:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>4:3</td>
<td>4:2:1</td>
<td>3:4:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>7:3:2</td>
<td>3:7:1</td>
<td>1:1:1</td>
<td>4:2:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>7:3:2</td>
<td>3:7:1</td>
<td>1:1:1</td>
<td>4:2:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phl.</td>
<td>5:10:1</td>
<td>1:1:1</td>
<td>2:1:1</td>
<td>3:4:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>1:1:1</td>
<td>2:1:1</td>
<td>3:4:3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>10:2</td>
<td>2:1:2</td>
<td>2:1:1</td>
<td>3:4:3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>Protasis: ει with Perfect Indicative</th>
<th>APODOSIS</th>
<th>ει with Pluperfect (8 protases)</th>
<th>APODOSIS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Future</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
<td>Imperfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>9:42</td>
<td>7:11</td>
<td>11:13</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>17:2</td>
<td>11:12</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6:5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>25:11</td>
<td>11:12</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>16:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>13:17</td>
<td>11:12</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>15:14:17:19</td>
<td>7:14</td>
<td>2:6:10:4:3</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>3:5</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phl.</td>
<td>5:2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ει οδηγεω-5, ειδοκαινα, 5.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INDICATIVE</th>
<th>APOSTOSIS</th>
<th>IMPERATIVE</th>
<th>SUBJUNCTIVE</th>
<th>GRAND TOTAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Future</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
<td>Perfect</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>1:40 (Triple)</td>
<td>14:31 σοφεύον</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>8:2</td>
<td>5:12 / 6:33</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>15:6, 6</td>
<td>20:23</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>5:2</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>2:25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>2:5</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The above is the number of apodoses.
### ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION

with the subjunctive Aorist in Protasis

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BOOK</th>
<th>INDICATIVE</th>
<th>APODOSIS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Aorist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[16]</td>
<td>13:21</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>18:17</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>15:6; 27:31</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20:23</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Jo.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2:3,3</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>3:6; 10:38 Q</td>
<td>12:20 Q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>3:13 Part.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>7:28,28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>5:1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1:8; 6:1</td>
<td>5:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>..</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### GRAND TOTAL

- Present: 149
- Aorist: 13
- Subjunctive: 11
- Total: 201
1420  A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

Pages 1011, line 15, 1012, line 4. Scott remarks that Moulton follows MG εἰ οὗ, p. 262, with addition of Jo. 1:25, but there are other doubtful examples (Jo. 3:12; 10:35; 2 Jo. 10; Lu. 14:26; Jas. 1:23) so that Jannaris with 34 may be correct.

Page 1011, line 16 ab imo. Mr. Scott doubts if Mk. 6:4 is a real condition, and thinks 1 Tim. 6:3 the only normal example of with first class condition.

Page 1016, line 10. Mr. Scott observes that Moulton (p. 171) divides εἰ μή into three classes:

1. in protasis
2. 'except' (1) without verb expressed:
   (a) preceded by negative
   (b) τίς ... εἰ μή ...
   (2) with verb expressed (Mt. 6:5; Gal. 1:7).
   εἰ μήτι
   ἐκτὸς εἰ μή
3. 'otherwise': εἰ δὲ μή 6, εἰ δὲ μήγε 8

Page 1017. Mr. Scott gives two tables on pages 1418 and 1419 for εάν and the subjunctive: one for the present subjunctive, one for the aorist subjunctive. He finds it difficult to be accurate, because of the compound protases and apodoses as in Mt. 5:23; 24:49; Lu. 20:28; 1 Cor. 13:1-3; Jas. 2:1-3.

Page 1019, line 16. As already seen, Eάν with present subjunctive has future apodoses 30 times; MP with aorist subjunctive has future apodoses 81 times. Mr. Scott adds figures for MI/ with perfect subjunctive and with the indicative.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>εάν WITH PERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE (Protasis)</th>
<th>(Apodosis)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Future</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo. 3:27 ἐάν μὴ ῃ δεδομένον</td>
<td>οὐ δύναται</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo. 6:65 &quot; &quot; &quot; &quot;</td>
<td>οὐδείς δύναται</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas. 5:15 κἀν ἁμαρτίας ῃ πεποιηκώς</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 13:2 καὶ (εάν) εἰδῶ</td>
<td>οὐδὲν εἰμί</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor. 14:11 ἐάν μὴ εἰδῶ</td>
<td>..</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo. 2 : 29 ἐάν εἴδητε</td>
<td>γινώσκετε</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Page 1023, line 7. For δεῦτε ὅπισω μου see 4 Ki. 6:19.

Page 1027 (6). Add to examples of ἔτι πως Ro. 11:14; Phil. 3:11 which can be construed as aorist subjunctive with σκοπῶν implied (so Thayer).

Page 1027 (a). Recitative ὅτι occurs in Oxy. P. 1066, 11. 11, 12 (iii/A.D.). Mr. Scott finds, taking R. V. as basis, 184 exx. of recitative ὅτι in N. T.

Pages 1028, line 1029, line 17. Mr. Scott considers Mk. 2:16 a doubtful example. In favour of the interrogative is the fact that Mt. and Lu. (the earliest commentators) read διὰ τί...

Page 1029. Mr. T. Nicklin (Cl. Rev., Aug.–Sept., 1918, p. 116) suggests that a case like Ac. 4:13 shows that a distinction was preserved between ἐστίνων and ἡσαν in the indirect discourse. The imperfect carries the idea of "had been." He insists on this meaning in Ac. 16:3; and even in Jo. 2:25; 6:6; 9:8. Something can be said for this view.

Page 1030 f. Note Oxy. P. 1204, 1. 24 (A.D. 299) ὅνα δὲ ἐννομώτερον ἀκουσθείη after an aorist imperative.


Page 1033. For double indirect discourse see Jo. 4:1.

Page 1034, line 1. In Mk. 1:34 =Lu. 4:41 ὅτι is treated as causal by some.

Page 1034, line 12. Subject clause. Add "1 Cor. 6:7."

Page 1035. Add γνωστὸν ἔστω... ὅτι Ac. 4:10; 13:38; 28:28;
χάρις τῷ θεῷ ὅτι Ro. 6:17; σύνφημι ὅτι Ro. 7:16; and perhaps μέλει ὅτι, Mk. 4:38; Lu. 10:40.

Page 1036, line 6. Mr. Scott observes that ἄκοαύ ὅτι occurs 32 times, dec. and inf. 2 (Jo. 12:18; 1 Cor. 11:18). Ἀποκρίνομαι ὅτι (recitative) 3 times (Mk. 8:4; 12:29; Ac. 25:16), acc. and inf. 3 (Lu. 20:7; Ac. 25:4 bis). Νομίζω ὅτι, 4 times, inf. 10 (Luke and Paul). Λέγω ὅτι, 162 (and about 900 object clauses without ὅτι, inf. 35. Οἶδα ὅτι 133, inf. 12. Πιστεύω ὅτι 25, inf. 2. Γινώσκω ὅτι 71, inf. 3. Βοᾷ ὅτι 1, inf. 1.

Page 1042, line 2. Mr. Scott has this table for the constructions of ἄκοαύ in N. T.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>1st Person Subject</th>
<th>2nd Person Subject</th>
<th>3rd Person Subject</th>
<th>4th Person Subject</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Jo.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Jo.</td>
<td>v. 1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Jo.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Pet.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phil.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>172</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Page 1042 (d), line 13. Mr. Scott's data for ἐγένετο construction with note of time and without follow here:
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Noun: έγένετο</th>
<th>έτος</th>
<th>έγένετο Infinitive</th>
<th>ἐτερ</th>
<th>Gen. Abs.</th>
<th>No note of time</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>1:9; 2:23</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4:4</td>
<td></td>
<td>9:10</td>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>18:13</td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


Mr. Scott expands the data for έν τῷ with έγένετο thus:

**Luke Gospel**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Καί έγένετο</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>έγένετο δέ</th>
<th>4=10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>&quot;καί&quot;</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>&quot;καί&quot;</th>
<th>3=10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

Lu. 9:29 "with noun as subj." "inf." 1=2

Total 14 8=22 out of 38

Act 0 2=2 2

Page 1043, line 8. Mr. Scott gives this table for έγένετο with infinitive: Mt. 1, Mk. 2 (2:15, 23), Lu. 9 (6:1, 6, 12; 16:22, 22; 3:21, 22, 22), Ac. 22 (4:5; 9:3, 32, 37, 43; 10:25; 11:26, 26, 26; 14:1, 1; 16:6; 19:1, 1; 21:1, 5; 22:6, 17, 17; 27: 44; 28:8, 17). Έγένετο with infinitive occurs 25 times, but 'governs' 34 infinitives. This raises the old difficulty of counting verb or construction. In this case, as it is a construction of έγέν- infin., the infinitive clearly should be counted.

Mk. 2:15 is the Only example of yiverac in this construction.
Page 1053. Meillet has a lucid article on "De Quelques Faits Grammaticaux" (Revue des Etudes Grecques, juillet, 1916, pp. 259-274). Page 264 he says: "L'histoire de l'infinitif grec est done celle d'un developpement entierement neuf, propre en grec, qui s'est fait avant l'epoque historique, suivi d'une elimination totale, dont les debuts remontent a la periode hellenistique."

Pages 1059, line 11, 1078, line 15. For τό infinitive as subject add "Ac. 27:1." Mr. Scott has this table for τό infinitive in N. T.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Subject</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Aorist</th>
<th>Object</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Aorist</th>
<th>Apportion</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td></td>
<td>12:33 bis</td>
<td>9:10</td>
<td></td>
<td>10:40</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15:20</td>
<td></td>
<td>20:23</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10:31</td>
<td></td>
<td>25:11</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3:3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>7:26;11:6</td>
<td>11:6</td>
<td>14:39 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td>4:6 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>9:1</td>
<td>7:11; 8:11</td>
<td>8:10</td>
<td>8:10,11</td>
<td>4:13;14:13</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>7:18 bis</td>
<td>14:21 bis</td>
<td>13:8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td>1:21, 13 bis</td>
<td>13 bis; 4:10</td>
<td>2:6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>22, 24</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>29 bis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>41</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

If Mk. 10:40 and were classed as subject the difference would be increased.

Mr. Scott notes that there are 992 anarthrous object infinitives in N. T. (Votaw's b.), occurring in every book of the N. T., but most numerous in Luke, and Acts (179) more than the Gospels (156); in Paul f235 times, in John and Epp. 102. There are 109 finite verbs producing these infinitives (Hvamai has 212, thelou 128, mellou 95, synergai, 91, boylou 137, zhtew 33, parakaléw 29, philelw 23). For the tenses see Votaw's table, p. 49.

Pages 1060, line 15, 1094. R. V. takes Mt. 5:34 as aorist middle imperative (mē δυσαί) instead of aorist active infinitive mē δυσαί.

Page 1061, line 5. In Ro. 11:8 bis the quotation here differs significantly from the LXX text of Dt. 29:4.
Page 1061, line 16. Lu. 48 (Gospel 24, Ac. 24), Paul 17, Mt. 7, Mk. 0, rest 8=80. So Mr. Scott counts.

Pages 1061, 1089, 1094. Mr. Scott presents this table for "verbs of hindering":

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>WORD</th>
<th>ANAPHRHOS</th>
<th>ARTICULAR</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>Lu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπειλέω</td>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>7:23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κολώ</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Votaw does not class Ac. 10:47 with "verbs of hindering," but with 'result,' and 1 Cor. 14:39 as an 'object' verb. See Votaw, p. 24.

Pages 1062-75. Mr. Scott's table for articular infinitive in N. T., W. H. text, is shown on pages 1426-27.

Page 1067, note 2. Mr. Scott expands his data for Ta-infinitives thus: 3 presents and 4 aorists in Mt., 6 presents and 18 aorists in Luke; 3 presents in 1 Cor., 2 in 2 Cor., 1 aorist in Gal. (quotation), 7 presents and 2 aorists in Ro., one of each in Phil.

Page 1068, line 8. Mr. Scott thinks Lu. 5:7 surely "aim or purpose."

Page 1069. See Tb. P. 27, 1. 73 (B.C. 113) ἀνέμυ τοῦ δοῦναι τὴν ἀσφαλείαν.

Page 1069, line 2. Cf. p. 647, 41 and note 5. There are examples of χάρααν τοῦ with infinitive in the papyri. See Tb. P. 38, 1. 17 (B.C. 113); Tb. 27, 1. 35 (B.C. 113); Tb. P. 6, 1. 37 (B.C. 140-39); T. P. 61 (a), 1. 47 (B.C. 118-7); Tb. P. 61 (b), 1. 44 (B.C. 118-7), ib., 1. 353.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>τό</th>
<th>εἰς τό</th>
<th>διὰ τό</th>
<th>μετά τό</th>
<th>πρὸς τό</th>
<th>τόν</th>
<th>διὰ τόν</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epp.-Jo.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Pet.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ju.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Th.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phil.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Col.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tit.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>25</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>41</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>80</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The "Prepositional Infinitive" = Votaw's k.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>ἐκ τοῦ</th>
<th>πρὸ τοῦ</th>
<th>ἀρτι τοῦ</th>
<th>τῷ</th>
<th>ἐν τῷ</th>
<th>ἐνεκτῷ</th>
<th>ἔστι τοῦ</th>
<th>Active</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Preterit Infinitive</th>
<th>Book</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>xvi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aor.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>27</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>73</td>
<td>49</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>31</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>116</td>
<td>79</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8:40</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Epp.-Jo.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Jas.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1 Pet.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 Pet.</td>
<td>Ju.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Heb.</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>91</td>
<td>57</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:11</td>
<td></td>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7:12</td>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1 Th.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2 Th.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1 Cor.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>19</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2 Cor.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Gal.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>35</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>Ro.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Ph.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>Phil.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Col.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Eph.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1 Tim.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 Tim.</td>
<td>Tit.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>115</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>322</td>
<td>200</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>55</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Present = 164; Aorist = 148; Perfect = 10. — Total = 322.
Page 1069, line 11. Mr. Scott gives exact figures for relation of prepositional infinitives to total articular infinitives: 0. T. 800 to 2107, Apocr. 161 to 349, N. T. 200 to 322, total 1161 to 2778.

Page 1070, line 9. The figures for Ev T4; and infinitive are: with pres. 43, aor. 12, perf. 0 in the N. T. (Scott).

Page 1070, line 10. Mr. Scott refers to Vulgate "postquam" as translation of μετά τό and infinitive as reason for taking the infinitive clause as "absolute." So Blass, p. 239, "an independent position." But the Greek idiom with the infinitive was not "absolute" and the principles of indirect discourse do apply. The acc. in Lu. 11:8; Ac. 18:3 is predicate adjective only. In Lu. 2:4; 19:11; Ac. 27:4 the ace. of general reference occurs for what would be subject with a finite verb. 

Δια τό is not repeated with the second infinitive (Mk. 5:4; Lu. 19:11; Ac. 4:2). Mr. Scott notes that δια τό with aorist occurs only in Mt. 24:12 (passive). There are 8 other passives (pres. 4, perf. 4).

Page 1075, line 13 ab imo. Four of Matthew's 5 examples are peculiar to him and in 26:12 =Mark has a different construction. In Mk. 13:22 (=Mt. 24:24, p. 990) Matthew has 60-Te ("pure purpose"). Paul has 4 examples.

Page 1084, line 12 ab imo. Prof. Walter Petersen thinks that γενέσθαι, not εἴναι, was the original idiom, loosely changed to εἴναι.

Page 1088 (cf. 990). Mr. Scott adds this note: Votaw shows on p. 46 how his 211 anarthrous purpose infinitives (d) are distributed in N. T. These infinitives are the product of 71 verbs; ἔρχομαι (40) and its compounds (36) [ἐξέρχομαι 17], ἀποστέλλω, 18, διδώμι 15, are the most frequent. I make 213 anarthrous infinitives: pres. 36, aor. 176, perf. 1 (Lu. 12:58 which Votaw has not counted, on p. 49). Matthew's 38 infinitives are all aorists, while Mark has 3 pres. and Luke 10. (It is odd that the passages with infinitive presents in Mark and Luke have no = in Matthew, or have not infinitive where the passages are =.)

Page 1106, line 7 ab imo. Add "Mt. 2:2" ὁ τεχθεῖς βασιλεύς.

ADDENDA TO THE THIRD EDITION

Page 1108 (c). Cf. Mk. 7:30 βεβλημένον ἔξεληλυθός,
Page 1126, line 9. Mr. Scott offers these tables:

Finite Verb followed by λέγων and καὶ εἶπεν:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>λέγων</th>
<th>καὶ εἶπεν</th>
<th>Object</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jo.</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rev.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paul</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Participles</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>εἰπεν</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἔφη</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>λέγει</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλεγεν</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐρεῖ</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>231</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Aποκριθεῖς (-έντες) followed by εἶπεν, ἔφη, λέγει, ἔλεγεν and ἐρεῖ:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>εἰπεν</th>
<th>ἔφη</th>
<th>λέγει</th>
<th>ἐλεγεν</th>
<th>ἐρεῖ</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mk.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt.</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lu.</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ac.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Page 1163, line 21. Οὐ belongs to implied θέλω in Mt. 9:13.
Page 1166, line 4. Note οὐχ ἦτι in Phil. 3:12; 4:11, 17 to correct misunderstanding and not in classic sense of "not only."
This is a, distinctive N. T. formula (cf. Jo. 6:45; 7:22; 2 Cor. 1:24; 3:5). When not followed by second clause in classic Greek the meaning is "although."
Page 1169, line 5 (cf. 1011). In Jo. 15:22, 24; 18:30; Ac. 26:32 εἴ μή is in condition of second class. Mk. 6:5 can be regarded as simply "except" ("if not" in origin, of course).

Page 1183 f. Gildersleeve is brilliant, as usual, in his comment on δὲ, γέ, ἄρα (Am. J. of Ph., July, 1916): "For generations δὲ has been translated with distressing uniformity by 'but'; and head-master of Grayfriars school apostrophizes Pendennis thus:

‘Miserable trifler! A boy who construes δὲ and instead of δὲ but, at sixteen years of age is guilty not merely of folly and ignorance and dulness inconceivable but of crime, deadly crime, of filial ingratitude which I tremble to contemplate.'

If the doctor had been spared to read Sir John Sandy's translation of Pindar in which the 'but' translation is dodged at every turn, one 'trembles to contemplate' the consequences."

Of γέ Gildersleeve says that "emphasis is the refuge of poverty" and gives it up. "As for ἄρα, science tells us that it is short for ἄραρότως. The full translation would be 'accordingly,' but what after it is reduced to the canina littera ρ? There is an ἄρα of accord, there is an ἄρα of discord, the familiar ἄρα of surprise."

Page 1177 (i). There is also Mt. 20:15 οὐκ . . . ; ἦ . . . ;
Page 1187, line 15. For ἀλλ᾽ ἦνα see also Jo. 13:18; 15:25.
Page 1187, line 8 ab imo. After Phil. 1:18 add "Ac. 20:23."
Page 1234. Add: Infinitive depending on infinitive, 1040, 1047, 1049, 1085.

Page 1378. Add to "Page 560, line 6," this: Cf. also Mt. 14:14
σπλαγχνῖζομαι ἐπ᾽ αὐτοῖς----Mk. 6:34 ἐπ᾽ αὐτοῖς and Mk. 9:22 ἐφ᾽ ἡμᾶς and Lu. 7:13 ἐπ᾽ αὐτῆ. With this verb Mark has accusative only, Luke dative (loc.?) only, Matthew accusative and dative. See also ἐξουσία ἐπὶ with genitive "i.d. accusative (Rev. 2:26; 16:9).

Jesus noticed small points of language (ἰώτα ἐν ἦ μία κερέα Mt. 5:18), though we have no documents from his pen. The preacher can be accurate in details and have all the more power in his speech. Τὰ δὴ μιατα ἐγὼ λειλαληκα ὤμιν πνεύμα ἐστιν καὶ ζωὴ ἐστιν, (Jo. 6:63). All the people still hang on the words of Jesus, listening (ἐξεκρέμετο αὐτοῦ ἄκούων) Lu. 19:48)
for hope and guidance in a world of disorder and despair. The world will find the way out if it follows the leadership of Jesus. I could not close these three years of further toil on this grammar without this tribute, from my heart to the Master, who makes all work worth while and who challenges us all to share his own work while it is still day, before the night comes when no one can go on with his work (p-yeq-EcrOat Jo. 9:4)."1

1 The Exp. Times for April, 1919, has the last article from the late Prof. Robert Law, of Knox allege, Toronto, on "Note on the Imperfect of Obligation, etc., in the New Testament." I find myself in hearty agreement with his explanation of an antecedent obligation a debitum, not always lived up to. It is already set forth in this volume, pp. 886-7, 919-21,1014.
INDEX OF SUBJECTS IN THE ADDENDA
B. O. HERRING

References to pages.

A

κ: see Sinaiticus.
Ablative: c. χρηστον, εχω 1392, 1397.
Absolute genitive: 139; c. ουτος, 1396.
Accent: of the vocati, 1387.
Accusative: change to nom., 1378; και ι and acc., 1379; o in 1 Cor. 15:10, 1379; nom. in apposition, 1390; c. προς κυνεω, 1391; c. infinitive after ποιειν, 131; of a person or thing, 1392; ace and inf. after verbs, 1422; as predicate adjective, 1428; general reference, 1428.
Action: iterative, 1364 bis.
Active voice: original suffix in opt., 1378; periphrastic perfects, 1389, 1406; in LXX, 1398; pluperfects, 1406; aorist inf., 1424.
Adjuncts: prepositional, 1398.
Adverb: και προς as adv., 1393; c. ουτος joined, 1396; πριν και in LXX, 1412.
Adversative use of και: 1383.
Anaphoric use of article: 1397.
Aorist: compared with imperfect, 1380; indicatives in John, 1380; participles, 1381; first and second identical, 1381; with ος εων, 1387; imperfect c. μη, 130; imperatives and subjunctives in N. T., 1398 ff.; table of subjunctives c. ου μη, opp. 1404; optative, 1405; inf. c. preposition, 1405; subj. c. εων, 1420; subj. c. ει πως, 1421; imperative in papyri, 1421; middle imperative, 1424; active inf., 1424; infinitives in Matt., 1428; indicative c. ου μη, 1430.
Apocalypse: 1378.
Apodosis: indicative and optative, a table, 1410; statistical tables, 1416 ff.; future, 1420.
Apostolic Fathers: 1382.
Apposition: acc. and nom., 1390; to pronoun in verb, 1397.
Article: 1379; c. demonstrative, 1396; absence in papyri, 1397; anaphoric use, 1397; c. Ιησους, 1397; c. proper names, 1398.
Articular infinitive: 1406; table of, 1426 f.; relation to prepositional infinitives, 1428.
Associative instrumental: 1392.
Asyndeton: 1378.
Attic idiom: 1398.
Augment: of an infinitive, 1389.

B

B: see Vaticanus.
Balancing of words: 1378.

C

Case: 1389; oblique, 1390, 1392; after σπλαγχνιζομαι, 1430.
Clauses: subordinate, 1382; parallel, 1397; subject, 1421; object, 1422; infinitive, 1428.
Collective noun: 1390.
Composition: όπως in, 1379.
Compounds: of μη and ου in Apostolic Fathers, 1382; protases and apodoses, 1420.
Conditions: first and third class, 1382; conditional ειπε, 1410; statistical tables, 1416 ff.; first class, 1420; second class, 1429.
Conjunctions: έως, 1393, 1412; έχρις, a table, 1412.
Construction: ου μη, a table, opp. 1404, 1430; ευ in N. T., 1410; ωστε, 1414;
μήποτε; 1415; ἀκοῦω, 1422; ἐγέτετο, 1422 f.
Contrast: c. ἀλλὰ δὲ ὅ, 1383.

D
Dative: ethical, 1378, 1379; c. προσ-
kυνέω, 1391; discussed, 1392.
Declarative διότι: 1381.
Demonstratives: tables, 1394 f.; 65, 1396; dem. and article, 1396.
Direct Questions: 1396.
Direction: in dative case, 1392.
Distributive use of διάς and κατάς: 1379.
Dual: original suffix in opt., 1378.
Durative present: 1411.

E
Ellipsis: of the verb, 1379; ellipses cited, 1411.
Epictetus: 1378, 1379 bis, 1381, 1407.
Ethical dative: 1378.

F
Finite verb: a table, 1429.
Future: linear, 1381; indicative, 1381, 1411, 1413; futurity in subj. and opt., 1407 bis; av c. subj., 1409; apodoses, 1420.

G
Genitive: 1387; absolutes, 1392; c. ὁδτος, 1396, 1397.
Gospel of John: 1380.
Grammar: grammatical forms of W, 1377; dative not a grammatical case, 1392; readers of, 1398.

H
Hendiadys: 1383.
Hiatus: 1382.
History of subj. and opt.: 1381.
Hittite language: 1385.

I
Imperative: 1381 bis; form γνῶ, 1387; perfect imperatives in N. T., 1389; aor. imp. c. p15, 1390; aor. and pres. imp. in N. T., 1398; table of, 1409; aor. imp. in Matt., 1411; in papyri, 1421; aor. middle, 1424.

Imperfect: compared with aorist, 1380; opt., 1405; periphrastic, 1406; in indirect discourse, 1421.
Indefinite: aorist, 1381; relatives, 1411.
Independent sentences: c. futuristic subj., 1407; τί c. aorist subj., 1407.
Indicative: 1381 bis; c. ὅς ἐδώ, 1387; perfect, 1406; future, 1411, 1413; c. indefinite relatives, 1411; c. ὅς, 1411; c. ὅς ἔδω, 1420; aor. c. οὗ μή, 1430.
Indirect discourse: 1421 bis; principles of, 1428.
Indirect Questions: 1396; change of mode, 1409.
Indo-European: family of languages, 1385; stem-suffixes, 1386.
Infinitive: 1382; c. μή γένοιτο, 1382; in Papyrus de Magdala, 1382; ἐν τῷ, 1385, 1428; c. augment, 1389; as subject, 1389; acc. and inf., 1391, 1422; c. τοῦ, 1392, 1415, 1424 f.; aorist c. prep., 1405; articular, 1406 bis, 1426 f.; present c. prep., 1406; perfect, 1406 f.; inf., and διὰ τό, 1411; in LXX, 1412; purpose, 1414, 1428; after ἐγένετο, 1423; aor. act., 1424; prepositional and articular related, 1428, 1430.
Inscriptions: in Phrygia, 1378.
Instrumental case: 1392 bis.
Interchange of ὅς and ὅς: 1382, 1389.
Iterative action: 1280

J
Judas Iscariot: primacy of, 1394.

L
Language: study of, 1377; small points of, 1430.
Linear action: 1380; future, 1381.
Locative case: 1392.

M
Margin: marginal readings for οὗ μή, 1405.
Middle voice: optative, 1378; re. dundant, 1380; in Phrygia, 1380; in LXX, 1398; aor. imp., 1424.
INDEX OF SUBJECTS IN THE ADDENDA

Mode: change of, 1 in indirect discourse, 1409; in conditionalsentences, a table, 1416 ff.

N
Names: name-element, 1377; c. article, 1398.
Negatives: c. participle, 1379 bis; preceding ει μη, 1420.
New Testament: idioms, 1379; perf. subj., 1387; anarthrous phrases, 1398; pres. and or. imperatives, 1398; articular in, 1406; imperatives, 1409; constructions c. ἀν, 1410; ἵνα μη, 1413; data for ὄπως, 1413.
Nominative: changed from acc., 1378, 1387; of time, 1390.
Noun: definition, 1378.

O
Object: clauses, without ὅτι, 1422; verb, 1425.
Obligation: verbs of, 1431.
Oblique case : 1390 bis
Optative: suf. for middle, 1378; c. subj., 1381; hist., 1381; aor. and imp., 1405; futurity, 1407; table, 1408; past prospective, 1409; without ἀν, 1409.
Origin: of οὗ μή c. subj., 1381; of Indo-European stem-suffixes, 1386.

P
Papyri: see List of Quotations.
Parallels: 1379; clauses, 1397.
Participle: aor. and perf., 1381; c. negatives, 1382 bis; bunched, 1382; "confidential participle," 1382; predicate, 1389; c. ὄπως δέ, 1415.
Partitive use of ἔκ: 1379.
Passive: 1392; pluperfects, 1406; perf. subjunctives, 1406, 1428.
Past tense: compared with aor. find., 1380; subj., 1409
Paul: style in preaching, 1386; use of μή and aor. imp., 1390; pres. and aor. imp., 1398; pres. subj., 1403; aor. and impf. opt., 1405.
Perfect: participles, 1381; subjunctives, 1388; imperatives and subjunctives, 1389; periphrastic, 1389 bis; subjunctives in N. T., 1398, 1406; indicatives, 1406; infinitives, 1406 f.; subj. c. ἐάν, 1420.
Periphrastic: number of forms, 1388; perfect, 1389 bis; impf., 1406.
Phrases: prepositional, 1398 bis.
Phrygia: inscriptions in, 1378, 1380.
Plato: teaching of 1380 1381.
Pluperfects: number in N. T., 1406.
Position of arms: 1397.
Positive: τερίσσομαι in cited, 1387.
Preaching: style of Paul, 1386.
Predicate: participle, 1389; adj., 1428.
Prepositions: μέσον and ἐξομενα, 1379; not repeated, 1392; ἔως, 1393, 1412; prepositional adjuncts, 1398; phrases, 1398; c. present infinitive, 1406; in LXX, 1412; prepositional infinitive, 1426 ff.; δε, γε, and ἀρα, 1430.
Present imperatives: number in N. T., 1398.
Present infinitive: c. prepositions, 1406.
Present perfect: periphrastic form, 1389.
Present subjunctive: number in T., 1398; tables, 1402 f.; c. τι in independent sentences, 1409; c. ἐάν, 1420.
Prohibitions: 1381 bis.
Protasis: c. relative or conjunction, 1410; in statistical tables, 1416 ff.
Punctiliar action: 1380.

R
Recitative ὅτι: 1421 bis, 1422.
Redundant middle: 1380.
Relative pronoun: 1390, 1396.
Repetition: of ἔχει, 1378; of ἵνα, 1413, of διὰ τό, 1428.

S
Scepticism: of Blass, re ἐδωσα, 1387.
Sentence: καθως at beginning of, 1382; independent, 1407 bis.
Septuagint: cited, 1382, 1390 f., 1393, 1397, 1412, 1424.
Sinaiticus codex: 1378, 1394.
Speakers: in Gospels, 1405.
Spelling: in W, 1377.
Statistics: on pluperfects, 1406; further, see Tables.
Subject: infinitive, 1389, 1424; in Mk. 13:19, 1390 f.; clause, 1421.
Subjective meaning of 1.1.71: 1382.
Subjunctive: theory of, 1381; c. οὐ μή, 1381; history, 1381; table on perf. subj., 1388, 1389, 1406; statistics, 1398 ff.; tenses, 1404; futurity, 1407; present subj. c. τί in independent sentences, 1409; οἴπου c. subj., 1411; οἴταν c. subj., 1411 f.; in LXX, 1412; ἔδω καὶ subj., 1418 f., 1420; aor. c. εἰ πως, 1421.
Subordinate clauses: 1382.
Substitutionary use of ἀντί: 1393.
Suffixes: for middle optative, 1378.
Summary: of subj. tenses, 1404.
Superlative: in —τατότατος, 1379.
Syncretism: 1386; of dat. forms, 1392.
Synoptics: uses of ἐκείνως, 1396; τί, in ind. aor. subj. sentences, 1407.
Syntax: 1378, 1389; statistical knowledge of, 1398.

Tables: οὐν in Synoptics, 1385; ἄν and ἔδω, 1386; uses of perf. subj., 1388; verbs of speaking, 1393; demonstratives, 1394 f.; uses of ἐκείνως, 1396; aor. subj., 1398 ff.; pres. subj., 1402 f.; aor. subj. in οὐ μή constructions opp. 1404; subj. tenses, 1404; speakers in Gospels, 1405; perf. inf., 1407; opt. in N. T., 1408; imperatives, 1409; άν constructions, 1410; οἴπου c. subj., 1411; οἴταν c. subj., 1412; ἔχοντες as conj., 1412; ὑπός, 1413; ῥοπτε, 1414; μήποτε, 1415; conditional sentences, 1416 ff.; ἔδω c. perf. subj., 1420; c. indicative, 1421; ἀκούω, 1422; ἐγένετο, 1423; τί infinitive, 1424; verbs of hindering, 1425; finite verb, 1429.
Teaching of Plato: 1380.
Tense: change of, 1398; subjunctive, a summary, 1404; in conditional sentences, a table, 1416 ff.
Theory: of subjunctive, 1381; of determined futurity, 1407.
Time: nominative of, 1390 f.

U
Uses: of τε καί, 1382; of ὠλλα-δέ, 1383.

V
Vaticanus codex: cited, 1378.
Vellum: leaf of Gen. 2 and 3, 1388.
Verb: definition, 1378; of speaking, 1393; finite, 1424; hindering, 1425.
Verbs of obligation: 1431.
Vernacular: 1397.
Vocative: accent, 1387.
Voice: middle, 1380; passive, 1392; middle and active in LXX, 1398.
Vulgate: translation of, 1389, 1428.

W
Washington MS.: 1377 f.
Wishes: 1382; in opt., 1407.
Words: number in Matt., Lu., Acts, 1385; of Jesus, 1430.

Z
Zeugma: 1383.
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS IN THE ADDENDA
R. B. JONES

References to pages.

A

άκουω: table of use, and c. ὅτι, 1422.

άλλα: c.—δὲ, 1383; ἵνα ... ἀλλά, 1413;
c. ὅνα, 1430.

ἄλλος (οὖ)—δὲ: table of use, 1394 f.

ἄν: in rel. clause, 1381; spelling, 1386;
tables c. subj., 1400, 1402; table c. opt., 1408; in indir. quest., 1409;
tables of constr., 1410 f.

ἀφά: distributive, 1379.

ἀντί: case of, 1393; (table c. anart. inf., 1427.

ἀνατολῆς: form, 1390.

ἀπείγε: c. anart. inf., 1425.

ἀπό: in composition, 1379.

ἀποκρίνομαι: form, 1388; c. ὅτι, 1422;
table c. verbs of saying, 1429.

ἀποστέλλω: c. anart. inf., 1428.

ἀρα: meaning, 1430.

ἀρχομαι: c. anart. inf. 1424.

ἀυτός, ἡ: without art., and in oblique cases, 1379; c. prop. noun, 1380;
case, 1392.

ἀφές: table c. subj., 1399.

ἀφίδω: spelling, 1386.

ἀχρις: tables of use, 1401, 1412.

B

βάλλω: predicate part 1429.

βοῶ: c. on 1422.

βούλομαι: table c. subj., 1399; c. anart. inf. 1424.

Γ

γέ meaning, 1430.

γενεσίως: case of, 1392.

γίνομαι: c. inf., 1389; γένοιτο, 1405;
ἐγέντο, tables of use, 1422 f.; γενέσθαι, 1428.

γινώσκω: form, 1387; c. ὅτι, 1422.

γίναι: case of, 1387.

Δ

δέ: ἵνα ... δέ, 1413; meaning, 1430.

δεῖ: subj. inf., 1389.

δεῖνα: indef. pronoun, 1387.

δεύρο: table, 1399; c. subj., 1407.

δεῦτε: in conditions, 1421.

διὰ: c. art. (table), and anart. inf., 1387.

διηκαιε: meaning, 1430.

διήθημα: form, 1388; c. inf., 1428.

δίκαιος: case of, 1391.

δίότι: for ὅτι, 1381 f.

δύναμαι: c. anart. inf., 1424.

Ε

ἐάν: table, for ὅν, 1386; tables c.

ἐὰν, 1400, 1402 f., 1418-20; c. δὲ
μὴ, 1389 f.; table c. πέρ, 1400;
table c. ind., 1421.

ἐαυτόν: replaced by στειρόν, 1394.

ἐγκαθαλείπω: reading, 1404.

ἐδωσα: form 1387.

ἐθέλωμι: ending, 1378.

ἐ: c. δὲ μὴ, 1389 f.; c. μὴ, 1399, 1402,

1420, 1429; table c. opt., 1408;
tables c. ind., 1415 ff.; c. οὖ, 1420;
c. τὸς and πῶς, 1400, 1421.

ἐδώ: constr., 1378; perf. subj., 1388,

1406.

ἐμί: subj. inf., 1389; constr., 1390 f.;
in indir. disc., 1421, 1428.

ἐς: c. ἐν, 1378 f.; like dat., 1379; for
ἐπί and ὑπέρ, 1393; c. inf., 1405 f.;
tables c. art. inf., 1407, 1426.

ἐς: for πρῶτος, 1394.

ἐσέλθωτο: voice of, 1380.

ἐπέ: constr., 1390; tables c. subj.,

1402 f.

ἐκ: partitive, 1379; table c. art. inf.,

1427.

ἐκείνος: table as pronoun, 1396; c.

1397.
έκτός: tables c. ei μη, 1402 f.
Έλαιων: case of, 1387.
έν: c. expressions of time, 1379; c.
art. inf., 1385, 1427; without art.,
1398; c. inf., 1405 f.; table c. τω
and ἐγένετο, 1423.
ἐνεκέν: c. inf., 1405 f.; table c. art. inf.,
1427.
ἐνκόπτω: c. anart. inf., 1425.
ἐξαπορεώ: c. gen., 1389.
ἐξαπορεώ: c. art. inf., 1425.
ἐξουσία: c. επί, 1430.
tables in dep. sent., 1401 f.
ἐπάν: repeated, 1362; c. loc., 1393; re-
placed by εἰς, 1393; constr., 1430.
Έρμᾶς: spelling, 1377.
Έρχομαι: c. anart. inf., 1428.
-ες: ending, 1388.
ἐγχάτως: c. ἔχω, 1387.
ἐτερος: table c. δέ, 1394 f.
ἐτι: c. τε καί, 1382.
εὐαγγελισθαί: constr., 1415.
ἐυκοπώτερον: subj. inf., 1389.
ἐψάλμενα: prep., 1379.
ἐχω: constr., 1378, 1389; meaning,
1380.
ἐως: prep., 1393, 1412; c. πότε, 1394;
tables c. διν, οὗ, and ὅτου, 1401; c.
inf., 1405 f.; c. art. inf., 1427.

Ζ
ζηλώ: hendiadys, 1383.
ζηλώ: c. anart. inf., 1424.

Η
ἡ: in comparison, 1394.
ἡδειν: form, 1406.
ἡκω: form, 1389.
ἡμέρα: case of, 1390.
ἡμέρα: form, 1406.
ἡταμε: tables c. τιν and Μν, 1401 ff.
ἡτοίκ: form, 1388 f.
ἡτοίκ: meaning, 1421.

Θ
θέλεις: table in interrog. sent., 1399.
θέλω: constr., 1415; c. anart. inf., 1424.
θερμαινόμενος: form, 1406.
Θωμᾶς: case of, 1387.

Ι
-ι- suffix, 1378.
ιβίων: case of 1387.
ιδε: meaning , 1396.
c. art., 1380.
τησοῦς: c. art., 1397.
ίνα: in wishes, 1382; tables c. subj.,
1388, 1400, 1402 f., 1413; c. fut.
ind., 1413.
-ισκος, -ισκη: suffix, 1377.
ιστημι: form, 1406.
ιστω: perf. impv. , 1389.
ισχύ: spelling, 1386.

Κ
καθώς: beginning sent., 1382.
καί: adv., 1383; erisas, 1386; c. 53,
1396; c. διαλογίζομαι, 1406; C. θς,
1429.
καλόν: c. έστιν, 1389; c. η in compar-
ison, 1394.
κατά: c. acc., 1379; in composition,
and c. gen., 1393; anart. prep.
phrase, 1398.
κατέχω: c. art. inf., 1425.
κατέχω: c. art. inf., 1425.
κατοικησαί: meaning, 1382.
κατέκω: c. gen., 1391; c. art. inf., 1425.
κωλόν: c. anart. inf., 1425.

Λ
λαός: case of, 1390 f.
λέγω: c. θτί, 1422; meaning, 1428;
table of λέγων c. finite verb, 1429.
λοιμοι: ending, 1378.

Μ
μέλλω: c. anart. inf., 1424.
μέν: postpositive in fifth and sixth
place, 1378; in fourth place, 1390.
c. inf., 1405 f.; tables c. art. inf.,
1407, 1426 ff.
μέσον: as prep., 1379.
μέχρις: table in dep. sent., 1401.
μή: c. πάς, 1380; after οὗ, 1381; c.
part., 1382; c. γένοιτο and inf.,
1382, 1405; table c. ποτε, 1388,
1390, 1400, 1402, 1408, 1415; table
c. τίς, 1399; tables c. subj., 1399 f.,
INDEX OF GREEK WORDS IN THE ADDENDA 1441

1402; table c. που, 1400; table c. πως, 1400, 1402 f.; c. ὑμοσαμ, 1424.

N

νομίζω: c. Orc, 1422.

and inf., 1391; constr., 1409.

O

ό, η, τό: c. ίκανόν and inf., 1385; subj. inf., 1389; tables c. μέν and δέ, 1394 f.; as rel. and dean. 1396 f.; c. πᾶς, 1397; not repeated, 1398; tables c. art. inf., 1415, 1425 ff.; tables c. inf., 1424, 14 6.

οίδα: c. ὢτι, 1422.

ὁμοιόω: constr., 1392.

ὁμόσαμ: form, 1424.

ὁπώς: tables c. (εάν) subj., 1399 f., 1402, 1411.

ὁπῶς: tables c. subj., 1400, 1402 f.; table of use, 1413.

ὁς: ὁ, 1379; c. εάν, 1387; tables c. subj., 1400, 1402 f.; οὗ ὄν, 1403; c. ὄν and fut. ind., 1411.

ὁσάκις: tables c. ὄν and εάν, 1401 ff.

-οσαν: ending, 1388.

ὁσος: tables c. ὄν, 1400, 1402.

ὁστις: tables c. subj., 1400, 1402 f.

ὁταν: tables c. subj., 1401 ff., 1411 f.

ὁτε: c. ind., 1411.

ὁτι: c. ὃ, 1379; in dir. quest., 1396; recitative, 1421 f.

ὦ: after πᾶς, 1379 f.; tables c. p.47, 1381, 1399; c. compounds, 1382; in-set facing 1404, 1405, 1430; constr., 1415, 1429; c. ὢτι, 1429; οὖκ ... ἦ 1430.

ὦν: postpositive in fourth place, 1378; table of use 1385.

ὦχι: use, 1406.

ὦτος: meaning, 1396.

ὦφιέλω: c. anart. inf., 1424.

ὦχλος: form, 1390; c. ίκανός and πολύς, 1397.

Π

παιδίσκη: meaning, 1377.

παρά: c. art. inf., 1382.

παρακάλεω: c. anart. inf., 1424.

πᾶς: c. οὗ and μη, 1380; case of πάντες,

περί: use, 1379.

περισσός: positive, 1387.

πηλίκος: for ήλικος, 1382.

πιστεύω: c. ὢτι, 1422.

πλήθος: use, 1390.

ποίεω: tense of ποιεῖ, 1381; c. acc. and inf., 1391; constr., 1409

ποῖος: table c. subj., 1400.

πολλάς: case of, 1391.

ποταπός: table c. opt., 1408.

πότε: table c. subj., 1401.

ποῦ: meaning, 1382; tables c. subj., 1399, 1402.

πρίν: table c. ἰν 1401; table c. ἦ 1408; use, 1412.

πρό: c. inf., 1405 f.; table c. art. inf., 1427.

πρός: c. καί as adv., 1393; table c. αὐτόν and verbs of speaking, 1393; c. inf., 1405 f.; table c. art. inf., 1426.

προσκυνέω: constr., 1391.

πρώτος: replaced by ἐς, 1394.

πῶς: tables c. subj., 1399 f.

Σ

σεαυτόν: for ἑαυτόν, 1394.

σπλαγχνίζομαι: c. 1430.

στοιχήσουσιν: linear fut., 1381.

Τ

-τατος: superlative ending 1379.

τάχα: c. subj., 1407.

τε: c. καί 1382.

τέσσαρες: case of, 1378.

τεχνεῖς: art. part. 1428.

τί: meaning, 1396; tables c. subj., 1399 f., 1402 f.; use, 1407 ff.

τίς: tables c. τί 1408; c. ὄν 1408, τοι: meaning, 1382.

τοίνυν: meaning, 1382.

τόπος: substantive, 1394.

τυφλός: case of, 1391.

τυχόν: adv. acc., 1378.

Υ

ὦμιν: case of, 1378.

ὦμον: case of, 1392
úper: for εἰς, 1393.
υποστέλλω: c. art. inf., 1425.

Φ

θάνω: meaning, 1429.
φοβέω: constr., 1378.
φονεύω: hendiadys, 1383.
φυλάσσομαι: voice of, 1398.
φωνή: case of, 1378; zeugma, 1383.

Χ

χάριν: c. art. inf., 1425.
χρεία: c. ἔχω, 1392.
χρόνος: substantive, 1394.

Ω

ώς: for ὅτι, 1382; tables c. (ἂν) subj., 1400-3.
ώστε: table of constr., 1414 f., 1428.
### INDEX OF QUOTATIONS IN THE ADDENDA

#### (a) NEW TESTAMENT

**KYLE M. YATES**

*Figures at end of lines refer to pages.*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matthew</th>
<th>12:17</th>
<th>12:31</th>
<th>Inset, 1405</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:22</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>1379</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>12:32,</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>12:35</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>12:45</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>13:14</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>13:15</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>13:24</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>13:25</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:18</td>
<td>Inset, 1430</td>
<td>13:28</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:20</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>13:35</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>1393, 1420</td>
<td>14:6</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>14:14</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>15:5</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:26</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>15:20</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:32</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td>15:33</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:34</td>
<td>1424</td>
<td>16:14</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:47</td>
<td>1387</td>
<td>16:19</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>16:22</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>1402, 1413</td>
<td>16:28</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>1420</td>
<td>17:1</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>17:17</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:6</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>18:3</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:11</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>18:9</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:12</td>
<td>1402</td>
<td>18:13</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:2</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td>18:15</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:17</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>18:17</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:19</td>
<td>1411</td>
<td>18:19</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:6</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>19:7</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:10</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>19:14</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:11</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>20:15</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:13</td>
<td>1429</td>
<td>20:23</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:16</td>
<td>1378</td>
<td>21:4</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:38</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>21:19</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:1</td>
<td>1414</td>
<td>21:28</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:2</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>22:5</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:23</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>22:28</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:25</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>23:26</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:42</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>23:28</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:7</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>23:33</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:7</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>23:39</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>24:2</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1443
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Notes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>24:7</td>
<td>1405</td>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>1413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:12</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>3:26</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:18</td>
<td>1405</td>
<td>4:4</td>
<td>1395, 1423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:21</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>4:12</td>
<td>1413, 1415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:24</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>4:26</td>
<td>1402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:28</td>
<td>1411</td>
<td>4:30</td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:32</td>
<td>1401</td>
<td>4:36</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:34</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>4:38</td>
<td>1422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:35</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>5:4</td>
<td>1407, 1428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:38</td>
<td>1406, 1412</td>
<td>5:22</td>
<td>1383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:43</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>5:23</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:49</td>
<td>1420</td>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:9</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>6:4</td>
<td>1420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:7</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>1429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:10</td>
<td>1393</td>
<td>6:8</td>
<td>1402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:12</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>1411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:13</td>
<td>1411</td>
<td>6:21</td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:24</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>6:22</td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:29</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>6:34</td>
<td>1430</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:31-34</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>6:37</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:33</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>6:56</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:35</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>7:30</td>
<td>1429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:54</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>7:37</td>
<td>1391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:57</td>
<td>1395</td>
<td>8:4</td>
<td>1422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:66</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>8:17</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:67</td>
<td>1395</td>
<td>8:35</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:1</td>
<td>1414</td>
<td>8:37</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:4</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>9:1</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:12</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>9:2</td>
<td>1398</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:48</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>9:7</td>
<td>1383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:49</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>9:10</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:55</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>9:18</td>
<td>1411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:61</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>9:22</td>
<td>1430</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:9</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td>9:35</td>
<td>1416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:17</td>
<td>1395</td>
<td>9:38</td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:9</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:45</td>
<td>1418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>1393</td>
<td>9:47</td>
<td>1418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:17</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td>10:15</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19</td>
<td>1379</td>
<td>10:40</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:32</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>10:46</td>
<td>1397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:34</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>11:25</td>
<td>1393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:40</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td>12:14</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>1393</td>
<td>12:15</td>
<td>1395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>12:29</td>
<td>1422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:16</td>
<td>1396, 1421</td>
<td>12:33</td>
<td>1394, 1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:21</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:23</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>13:15</td>
<td>1405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:24</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>13:16</td>
<td>1405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>13:19</td>
<td>1390, 1391, Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:32</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>13:20</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>1389</td>
<td>13:21</td>
<td>1419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:6</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>13:22</td>
<td>1428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>13:28</td>
<td>1401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11</td>
<td>1385</td>
<td>13:30</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS IN THE ADDENDA

### Mark

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>13:31</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>6:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:2</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>6:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:5</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>6:33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:9</td>
<td>1407, 1411</td>
<td>6:37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:10</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>6:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:12</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>6:47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:14</td>
<td>1399, 1411</td>
<td>6:48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:21</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>7:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:25</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>7:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:29</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>7:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:31</td>
<td>Inset, 1405, 1418</td>
<td>7:12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:61</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>7:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:64</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>7:31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:9</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>7:43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:15</td>
<td>1385</td>
<td>8:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:36</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>8:9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:9</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>8:17 bis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:11</td>
<td>1422</td>
<td>8:22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:18</td>
<td>1405, 1419</td>
<td>9:3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Luke

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:8</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:15</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>9:18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:20</td>
<td>1412</td>
<td>9:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:23</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:29</td>
<td>1408, 1409</td>
<td>9:31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:38</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>9:33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:41</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:59</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:62</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>9:51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:1</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:4</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>9:54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:6</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>9:57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:13</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>10:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>10:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:35</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>10:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:46</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>10:10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>1408, 1409, 1415</td>
<td>10:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:21</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>10:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:26 bis, 28</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>10:19 Inset, 1405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:11</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>10:40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:22</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>11:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:29</td>
<td>1414</td>
<td>11:5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:41</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>11:7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:42</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td>11:8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:7</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td>11:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:11</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>11:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:12</td>
<td>1418, 1423</td>
<td>11:20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:16</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>11:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:17</td>
<td>1379, 1423, 1425</td>
<td>11:36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>1393</td>
<td>12:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:34</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td>12:14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:36</td>
<td>1378</td>
<td>12:15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>12:39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:6</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>12:42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:11</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>12:44</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS IN THE ADDENDA

John

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Paragraph</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Paragraph</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9:4</td>
<td>1431</td>
<td>5:14</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:8</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>5:24</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:5</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>1389</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:10</td>
<td>1387</td>
<td>5:38</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:24</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>5:39</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:28</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>7:18</td>
<td>1412</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:35</td>
<td>1420</td>
<td>7:26</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:12</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>7:34</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:13-15</td>
<td></td>
<td>8:11</td>
<td>1407</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:26</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>8:20</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:50</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>8:31</td>
<td>1408,1421</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:56</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>8:36</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:18</td>
<td>1422</td>
<td>8:40</td>
<td>1427</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:27</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>9:2</td>
<td>1419</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:47</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>9:3</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>9:9</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:17</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>9:32</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:18</td>
<td>1430</td>
<td>9:37</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:27</td>
<td>1381</td>
<td>9:42</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:38</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>9:43</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:7</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>10:17</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14:22</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>10:25</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:6</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td>10:47</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:22</td>
<td>1417, 1429</td>
<td>11:17</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:24</td>
<td>1417, 1429</td>
<td>11:26</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:25</td>
<td>1430</td>
<td>13:38</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:7</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>13:41</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:13</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>14:1</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16:24</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>14:4</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:7</td>
<td>1419</td>
<td>14:18</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:9, 23</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>15:6</td>
<td>1419</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:11</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>15:8</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:21 ff.</td>
<td>1366</td>
<td>16:3</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17:25</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td>16:6</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:11</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>16:9</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:18</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>16:15</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:28</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>16:16</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:30</td>
<td>1429</td>
<td>17:6</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:39</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>17:11</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:11</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>17:18</td>
<td>1394,1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:23</td>
<td>1418, 1419</td>
<td>17:26</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:25</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>17:27</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20:27</td>
<td>1387</td>
<td>17:32</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>18:2</td>
<td>1407</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>18:3</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acts</td>
<td></td>
<td>1412</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:2</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>18:31</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:25</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>19:1</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:40</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>19:36</td>
<td>1389,1396</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:9, 10</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>20:16</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:11</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>20:20</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:2</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>20:23</td>
<td>1430</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:5</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>20:27</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:10</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>21:1</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td>21:5</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:17</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>21:33</td>
<td>1389,1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:25</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### 1448 A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT

#### Acts

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>22:6</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>11:8</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:17</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>11:14</td>
<td>1421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:20</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>11:17</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:9</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>11:25</td>
<td>1412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:17</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>12:6-8</td>
<td>1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23:18</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>12:18</td>
<td>1416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:19</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>13:8</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:21</td>
<td>1379</td>
<td>14:2</td>
<td>1395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24:23</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td>14:13</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:4</td>
<td>1422</td>
<td>14:21</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:10</td>
<td>1389</td>
<td>14:23</td>
<td>1419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:11</td>
<td>1417, 1424</td>
<td>15:19</td>
<td>1414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:16</td>
<td>1408, 1422</td>
<td>15:20</td>
<td>1414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25:20</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>15:22</td>
<td>1425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:5</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td>15:24</td>
<td>1403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:18</td>
<td>1392, 1415</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:29</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:32</td>
<td>1417, 1429</td>
<td>1:10</td>
<td>1388, 1397, 1406, 1413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:1</td>
<td>1424</td>
<td>2:8</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:4</td>
<td>1428</td>
<td>2:12</td>
<td>1388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:9</td>
<td>1407</td>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>1411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:12</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>3:14</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:31</td>
<td>1419</td>
<td>3:15</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:33</td>
<td>1412</td>
<td>5:8</td>
<td>1414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:39</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td>6:7</td>
<td>1421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27:44</td>
<td>1395, 1423</td>
<td>7:7</td>
<td>1394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:8</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>7:11</td>
<td>1419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:9</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>7:16</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:17</td>
<td>1423</td>
<td>7:26</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:24</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>7:28</td>
<td>1419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:26</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>8:13</td>
<td>1399, Inset, 1416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:27</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>9:12</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28:28</td>
<td>1421</td>
<td>10:17</td>
<td>1397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11:6</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11:18</td>
<td>1422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Romans</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:17</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>11:21</td>
<td>1395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>1418</td>
<td>11:23</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>11:26</td>
<td>1412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:8</td>
<td>1399, Inset</td>
<td>12:8</td>
<td>1395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:13</td>
<td>1424</td>
<td>12:13</td>
<td>1397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:14</td>
<td>1416</td>
<td>12:25</td>
<td>1413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:15</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>12:28</td>
<td>1395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:1</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>13:1-3</td>
<td>1420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:5</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>1388, 1420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:15</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>14:10</td>
<td>1408</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>1422</td>
<td>14:11</td>
<td>1388, 1420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:2</td>
<td>1419</td>
<td>14:20</td>
<td>1378, 1383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:16</td>
<td>1422</td>
<td>14:26</td>
<td>1378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:18</td>
<td>1424</td>
<td>14:27</td>
<td>1379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:25</td>
<td>1378</td>
<td>14:28</td>
<td>1418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:17</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>14:39</td>
<td>1424, 1425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:22</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>15:10</td>
<td>1379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:6</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>15:14</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:14</td>
<td>1399</td>
<td>15:17</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10:15</td>
<td>1419</td>
<td>15:19</td>
<td>1389, 1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:2</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>15:25</td>
<td>1412</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS IN THE ADDENDA

1449

1 Cor.
15:32
15:37
15:51
16:11

1416
1408
1397
1399

5:16
5:25
6:1
6:11
6:16

1399, Inset
1416
1419
1378
1381

2 Corinthians
1:8
1:9
1:10
1:24
2:1
2:5
2:10
2:13
2:16
3:5
3:7
4:3
4:7
5:1
5:16
5:19
7:1
7:8
7:11
7:12
7:14
8:10
8:11
9:1
9:3
9:4
9:7
10:2
10:6
11:16
11:30
12:11
12:20

1425
1388
1413
1429
1424
1417
1417
1427
1395
1429
1417
1417
1413
1419
1417
1406
1399
1417
1424
1417, 1427
1417
1424
1403, 1413, 1424,1427
1387, 1424
1388, 1406
1419
1390
1424
1417
1390
1416
1416
1403
Galatians

1:7
1:8
2:2
2:13
2:15
2:17
2:21
3:19
3:21
4:17
4:22
4:28
4:30
5:2
5:7

1420
1419
1403
1414
1390
1417
1416
1412
1417
1403
1377,
1379
Inset
1418.
1425

Ephesians
1:18
3:12
4:11
4:13
4:29
6:8
6:21
8:5
10:1

1407
1387
1394
1396, 1397
1416
1419
1388
1396
1396
Philippians

1:16
1:18
1:21
1:22
1:24
1:25
1:26
1:28
1:29
2:6
2:13
2:21
2:23
2:26
3:11
3:12
4:10
4:11
4:17

1394
1430
1424
1424
1424
1398
1398
1392
1424
1424
1424
1397
1386
1406
1421
1429
1424
1429
1429
Colossians

1:7f.
1:8
2:2
2:20
2:21
3.1
3:11
3:13
4:10

1397
1398
1382
1417
1399
1417
1411
1418
1419
Thessalonians

2 :7
2:16
2:20
3:3
3:8
4:6

1403
1425
1390
1424
1421
1424


1 Thess.
4:15 Inset 10:38 1419
5:3 Inset 11:3 1407
5:10 1403 11:32 1402, 1409
12:10 1394

2 Thessalonians
2:3 1399 12:20 1419
3:13 1399 12:28 1402
13:23 1418

1 Timothy
1:3 1382
2:15 1419 James
2:16 1425 1:23 1420
3:5 1417 2:1-3 1420
3:15 1388 2:7 1426
4:3 1425 2:16 1419
5:1 1399 3:2 1397
5:10 1417 3:7 1382
6:3 1420 3:16 1411
4:2 1383

2 Timothy
1:5 1399
1:6 1415 1 Peter
2:5 1418 2:6 1399, Inset 1417
2:12 1416, 1417 2:20 1417
2:13 1416 3:13 1419
2:20 1395 3:14 1408
2:21 1419 3:17 1408
2:25 1415 5:5 1397
5:7 1392

Titus
1:6 1416 1:10 2 Peter

Hebrews
2:1 1415 3:11 1396
2:15 1426 3:1,6 1419
3:6 1419 1 John
3:12 1415 1:4 1388
3:43 1412 2:21 1397
3:14 1419 2:28 1413
4:1 1399, 1415 2:29 1388, 1420
4:8 1417 4:12 1418
4:11 1399 5:13 1388
5:12 1392 5:15 1421
6:8 1418
6:9 1416 2 John
7:20, 23 1389 8 1413
7:21 1394 10 1420
7:23 1394, 1425 12 1388
7:24 1394
8:11 Inset Revelation
8:12 Inset 1:12 1383
9:6 1396 2:4 1393
9:17 1415 2:11 Inset
10:15 1407 2:14 1393
10:17 Inset 2:20 1393
10:31 1424 2:22 1421
## INDEX OF QUOTATIONS IN THE ADDENDA

### Rev.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference 1</th>
<th>Reference 2</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2:25</td>
<td>1412</td>
<td>15:4</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:26</td>
<td>1430</td>
<td>16:1</td>
<td>1411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:3</td>
<td>Inset, 1405, 1419</td>
<td>16:9</td>
<td>1430</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:5</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>16:15</td>
<td>1413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:12</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>17:1</td>
<td>1399, 1407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:18</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>17:17</td>
<td>1412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:10</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>18:4</td>
<td>1390, 1413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:1</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>18:7</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:9</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>18:14</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:13</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>19:9</td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7:16</td>
<td>Inset</td>
<td>19:10</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8:12</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>19:29</td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:5</td>
<td>1413</td>
<td>20:15</td>
<td>1417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9:6</td>
<td>Inset, 1405</td>
<td>21:5</td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:11</td>
<td>1378</td>
<td>21:9</td>
<td>1399, 1407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12:7</td>
<td>1426</td>
<td>21:13</td>
<td>1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:2</td>
<td>1414</td>
<td>21:25</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:10</td>
<td>1417</td>
<td>21:27</td>
<td>Inset</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:12</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>22:6</td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:13</td>
<td>1391</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### (b) OLD TESTAMENT AND APOCRYPHA

#### T. W. PAGE

**Genesis**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference 1</th>
<th>Reference 2</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3:16</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td>10:12</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:19</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td>10:13</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26:5</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td>11:22</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44:7</td>
<td>1382</td>
<td>15:10</td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44:17</td>
<td>1382</td>
<td>22:18</td>
<td>1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>22:19</td>
<td>1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>29:4</td>
<td>1424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>33:9</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Exodus**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference 1</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>12:55</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13:10</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15:26</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td>22:29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:5</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td>24:16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:8</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19:9</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>1 Samuel (1 Kings)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9:11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>21:3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Leviticus**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference 1</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9:5</td>
<td>1390</td>
<td>22:13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18:30</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22:9</td>
<td>1398</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>14:4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Numbers**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference 1</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6:7</td>
<td>1392</td>
<td>1 (3) Kings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11:33</td>
<td>14:12</td>
<td>8:24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>8:25</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Deuteronomy**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verse</th>
<th>Reference 1</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5:10</td>
<td>1389</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:25</td>
<td>1389</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:17</td>
<td>1389</td>
<td>6:19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Book</td>
<td>Reference</td>
<td>Addenda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1398</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1406</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1408</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1411</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(d) INDEX OF PAPYRI IN THE ADDENDA

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Index</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B. G. U. F. P.</td>
<td>No. 250</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>423</td>
<td>1391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>B.M.</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>No. 613</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

R. F. PALMER
INDEX OF QUOTATIONS IN THE ADDENDA

**L. P.**
III, 4 1412 1483 1421, 1430
M. P.
No. 11 1382 1489 1388, 1415
Par. P.
No. 574 1386

**O. P.**
No. 226 1338 1067, 1412
237 1389 1825
488 1393 1421
903 1388 1396
933 1389, 1412 1425
935 1429 1425 bis
941 1393 1425
1007 1388 1425 bis
1066 1387, 1421 1425 bis
1067 1388 1425
1068 1413 1425
1069 1407 1425 bis
1100 1379 1425
1102 1379 1425 bis
1117 1381 bis 1425
1126 1378 bis 1425 bis
1152 1379 1425
1158 1381 1425
1185 1388 1425 bis
1189 1396 1425
1204 1421 1425
1297 1389 1425 bis
1299 1382 1425 bis
1409 1389, 1393 1425 bis
1414 1389 1387, 1387 bis
1450 1393 1387, 1387 bis
1482 1387 1387 bis

**P. Tor.**
Papyri graeci regii Taur.
Musei Aeg., ed. A. Peyron. 2 vols. Turin, 1826, 1827
i. 5:27 1389

**P. Rylands**
Catal. of the Gk. Pap. in the
John Rylands Library,

(e) INDEX OF GREEK LITERATURE IN THE ADDENDA
R. F. PALMER

i. CLASSICAL
Homer (? x/viii B.c.) 1396
2. 2. 7 1396
Cyro. 2. 2. 7 1396
Odyssey T. 464 1396
2. 2. 30 1396
Aristophanes (vi/B.c.) 1396
3. 2. 18 1396
Plutus 965 1396
4. 1. 11 1396
Ranae 1396
Cyrus 1. 4, 20 1392
Hellen., Ox. P. 226, 1. 16 . 1388
Thucydides (v 'B.C.)
i, 114 1392
1392
Demosthenes (iv/B.c.)
de Pace 11 1409
Apol. 28C 1381
Leges 678D 1392
Plato (iv/B. )
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Author/Text</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Eratosthenes (iii/13.c.)</td>
<td>Catasterismi 40</td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ep. to Ephesians 8:1 . . . . 1412</td>
<td>1392</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Polybius (ii/B.c.)</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Diodorus Siculus (ii/B.C.)</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bibl. Hist. 10. 3. 4</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ii. KOINH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8:5</td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:1</td>
<td>1396</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10:3</td>
<td>1412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15:5</td>
<td>1412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Appian (ii/A. .)</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bell. Pun. 68</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Arrian (ii/A.)</td>
<td>1379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Epictetus ii, 22, 10</td>
<td>1379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ii, 22, 36</td>
<td>1379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>iv, 9, 18</td>
<td>1381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>iv, 10, 20</td>
<td>1393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ench. i, 4</td>
<td>1378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Exped. Alex. 5, 370</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Artemidorus (ii/A.D.))</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oneiro. 3. 60 (61)</td>
<td>1387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hermas (ii/A.D)</td>
<td>1391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Vis. 3.18. 3</td>
<td>1391</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4. 3. 1</td>
<td>1393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sim 6 5 5</td>
<td>1385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ignatius (ii/A.D.</td>
<td>Ep. to Romans 6:1</td>
<td>1394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lucian (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td>De Asino 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Phrynicus (ii/A.D.)</td>
<td>Eclogue Nominum Atticorum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Diogenes Laertius (? iii/A.D.)</td>
<td>De Vitis 4. 50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Agathias (vi/A. .)</td>
<td>Hist 2 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Menander Protector (vi/A.D.)</td>
<td>Excerpta e Men. Hist. 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Diaconus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Vita Porph. 99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>N. T. Apocrypha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Gospel of Nic., Pass I, A. 14. 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Didache 1:4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Xenophon of Ephesus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>De Anth. et Habr. 4. 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Const. Ap. (? A.D.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Please report any errors to Ted Hildebrandt: ted.hildebrandt@gordon.edu